HISTORY

OF

ESSEX COUNTY,

MASSACHUSETTS,

WITH

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

OF MANY OF ITS

PIONEERS AND PROMINENT MEN.

COMPILED UNDER THE SUPERVISION OF

D. HAMILTON HURD.

VOL. II.

MA 30 88

ILLUSTRATED.

PHILADELPHIA:
J. W. LEWIS & CO.
1888.

Copyright, 1887,
BY J. W. LEWIS & CO.

All Rights Reserved.

PRESS OF
JAS. B. RODGERS PRINTING COMPANY,
PHILADELPHIA.

CONTENTS.

VOLUME II.

CITIES AND TOWNS.

Chap.		Page
LXIII.	Boxford,	957
LXIV.	Topsfield,	972
LXV.	Peabody,	989
LXVI.	" continued	993
LXVII.	" "	998
LXVIII.	" "	1000
LXIX.	" "	1003
LXX.	" "	1006
LXXI.	" "	1008
LXXII.	" "	1013
LXXIII.	" "	1016
LXXIV.	" "	1023
LXXV.	" "	1027
LXXVI.	Marblehead,	1058
LXXVII.	" continued,	1060
LXXVIII.	" "	1063
LXXIX.	" "	1067
LXXX.	" "	1071
LXXXI.	" "	1078
LXXXII.	" "	1084
LXXXIII.	" "	1090
LXXXIV.	" "	1093
LXXXV.	" "	1097
LXXXVI.	" "	1101
LXXXVII.	" "	1106
LXXXVIII.	" "	1110
LXXXIX.	" "	1111
XC.	" "	1116
XCI.	Rowley,	1128
XCII.	Essex,	1153
XCIII.	" continued	1156
XCIV.	" "	1161
XCV.	" "	1179
XCVI.	" "	1186
XCVII.	" "	1198
XCVIII.	Hamilton,	1210
XCIX.	Wenham,	1229
C.	Manchester,	1249
CI.	" continued,	1259
CII.	" "	1272
CIII.	" "	1282
CIV.	" "	1291
CV.	Gloucester,	1298
CVI.	" continued,	1304
CVII.	" "	1322
CVIII.	" "	1325
CIX.	" "	1330
CX.	" "	1333
CXI.	Rockport,	1354
CXII.	" continued,	1361
CXIII.	" "	1370
CXIV.	" "	1389
CXV.	" "	1397
CXVI.	Nahant,	1408
CXVII.	Nahant, continued,	1423
CXVIII.	" "	1434
CXIX.	Salisbury,	1441
CXX.	Swampscott,	1472
CXXI.	" continued,	1474
CXXII.	" "	1481
CXXIII.	" "	1485
CXXIV.	" "	1486
CXXV.	Amesbury,	1495
CXXVI.	Merrimac,	1535
CXXVII.	Andover,	1556
CXXVIII.	" continued,	1558
CXXIX.	" "	1562
CXXX.	" "	1564
CXXXI.	" "	1568
CXXXII.	" "	1570
CXXXIII.	" "	1579
CXXXIV.	" "	1583
CXXXV.	" "	1590
CXXXVI.	" "	1592
CXXXVII.	" "	1610
CXXXVIII.	" "	1644
CXXXIX.	North Andover,	1657
CXL.	Groveland,	1694
CXLI.	Newbury,	1706
CXLII.	" continued,	1717
CXLIII.	Newburyport,	1737
CXLIV.	" continued	1756
CXLV.	" "	1771
CXLVI.	" "	1788
CXLVII.	West Newbury,	1890
CXLVIII.	Haverhill,	1893
CXLIX.	" continued,	1896
CL.	" "	1901
CLI.	" "	1905
CLII.	" "	1911
CLIII.	" "	1938
CLIV.	" "	1949
CLV.	" "	1965
CLVI.	" "	1971
CLVII.	" "	1984
CLVIII.	" "	1992
CLIX.	" "	1998
CLX.	" "	2002
CLXI.	" "	2007
CLXII.	" "	2014
CLXIII.	" "	2019
CLXIV.	" "	2050
CLXV.	Bradford,	2083
CLXVI.	" continued,	2088
CLXVII.	" "	2094
CLXVIII.	" "	2097
CLXIX.	" "	2102

THE

HISTORY OF ESSEX CO., MASSACHUSETTS.

CITIES AND TOWNS.

CHAPTER LXIII.

BOXFORD.

BY SIDNEY PERLEY.

FIRST SETTLEMENT, GENERAL HISTORY, ETC.—Originally, the present town of Boxford comprised a large portion of the western part of Rowley. About the middle of the seventeenth century there were several villages in Rowley, namely: Rowley, Rowley Village and Rowley Village by the Merrimac. The first of these is still Rowley; the last is now Bradford, and Rowley Village was given the name of Boxford.

The first settler within the present territory of Boxford was Abraham Redington, who came here as early as 1645, being an emigrant from England. The site of his residence was at or near Hotel Redington, in the East Parish Village. Other settlers came, and by the close of the next score of years there was quite a settlement here. The principal settlers in the seventeenth century, after the coming of Mr. Redington, were Robert Andrews, from England, about 1656; John Cummings, in 1658; Robert Stiles, from Yorkshire, England, in 1659; Joseph Bixby, from Ipswich, in 1660; Robert Eames, from England, in 1660; William Foster, from Ipswich, in 1661; Robert Smith, in 1661; Zaccheus Curtis, from Gloucester, in 1661; John Peabody, from Topsfield, in 1663; Samuel Symonds, in 1663; Daniel Black, a Scotchman, about 1665; Moses Tyler, from Andover, in 1666; John Kimball from Wenham, about 1666; Joseph Peabody, from Topsfield, about 1671; Samuel Buswell, from Salisbury, about 1674; George Blake, from Gloucester, about 1675; Daniel Wood, about 1675; John Perley, in 1683; Thomas Perley, from Rowley, about 1684; Thomas Hazen, from Rowley, in 1684; William Peabody, from Topsfield, in 1684; Timothy Dorman, from Topsfield, in 1688; Joseph Hale, from Newbury, about 1691; Luke Hovey, from Topsfield, in 1699; and Ebenezer Sherwin, about 1699.

August 12, 1685, Rowley Village, as the settlement had heretofore been called, was incorporated as a town. It was given the name of Boxford, probably, because the birth-place of the pastor of the parent town at this time was one of the Boxfords in England. The settlement then consisted of forty families. The territory of Boxford then included a part of the present towns of Groveland and Middleton.

Before, and at this date, the people here had very little to do with the principal settlement at Rowley. They trained at Topsfield, were chosen into office there; attended, belonged to and held offices in the churches at Topsfield and Bradford, and hardly any of their interests were in common with their fellow-townsmen.

Boxford happily escaped the depredations which many frontier towns suffered from the Indians. The only connection that the settlers ever had with them was when certain heirs of the old sachem of the

Agawams, Masconomet, laid claim to our soil. They were met at the house of Thomas Perley (now the residence of Mrs. Isaac Hale) in January, 1701, and a quit-claim deed was obtained from them upon the payment of some refreshment in the nature of "rum and vittels," and the sum of nine pounds in money.

The witchcraft delusion visited the settlement, and one of the wives and mothers of the town was condemned to pay the death penalty. The convicted woman was Rebecca, the wife of Robert Eames. She was in a house near Gallows' Hill, in Salem, when Rev. George Burroughs was executed, August 19, 1692, "and the woman of the house" felt a pin stuck into her foot, as she said. Mrs. Eames was accused of doing it, and convicted of witchcraft, but was afterward reprieved, having lain in jail more than seven months. She survived until May 8, 1721, when she died at the age of eighty-two years.

The settlers were buried at Topsfield until the settlement was incorporated, but no grave-stones remain, if any were erected so early, by which we can tell how early burials were had at home. The oldest cemetery in Boxford is that across the street from the residence of Mr. Walter French, which has not been used for more than a half a century. The oldest stone here is dated "1714." The cemetery near B. S. Barnes, Esquire's, and the oldest one in the West Parish, began to be used at the beginning of the eighteenth century. The cemetery near the First Church was laid out and first used in 1807; and the new one in the West Parish in 1838.

Boxford has been constantly reduced in population, by parts of the territory being annexed to other towns, and by emigration to new regions. The people have helped to settle Bridgton and other places in Maine, Harvard, Hopkinton, Oxford, Lunenburg and Brookfield, in Massachusetts, Amherst and other places in New Hampshire, the State of Ohio, the province of New Brunswick, and other places. From the Atlantic to the Pacific the sons of old Boxford are assisting as men ought in the affairs of human life.

The population of the town in 1765 was eight hundred and fifty-one. From that number it increased in 1860 to one thousand and twenty. The number of inhabitants, by the census of 1885, was eight hundred and forty. A century ago several negroes were numbered among the inhabitants, and the race can still be seen here. One by the name of Neptune served in the army of the Revolution.

Boxford has always been careful to be represented in the legislative halls. Two State Senators, Aaron Wood, in 1781, and Julius Aboyneau Palmer, in 1869, and thirty-four members of the House have been sent from this town, some of the latter serving for long terms of years. Major Asa Perley was a member of the Provincial Congress.

Boxford has had societies of various kinds, besides those mentioned in other portions of this sketch. "The Moral Society of Boxford and Topsfield" was established in 1815, and flourished for several years. Its purpose was the suppression of immorality of every description, particularly intemperance, Sabbath-breaking and profanity; and the promotion of piety and good morals. At present, the most prominent are the Boxford Natural History Society, the Rural Improvement Association, a local assembly of the Grangers and the Literary League.

The Danvers and Newburyport Branch of the Boston and Maine Railroad runs through the southeastern portion of the town, having been located here in 1853. There are two post-offices in the town, —Boxford, Mr. Frederic A. Howe, postmaster, and West Boxford, Mrs. Mary C. Cole, postmistress. The mail is transported to the first by the railroad, and to the second by a mail-stage, running from Georgetown to Lawrence.

The taxable property in the town is valued at about six hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The town debt is $4,857.59. The rate of taxation in 1887 was nine dollars and fifty cents on one thousand dollars.

The citizens of the town are in general quiet and orderly and possessed of good common-school acquirements. No lawyer ever expected to reap a competency from the practice of his profession here, and for several years past a physician has not had an office here.

The earliest member of the medical profession who practiced here was David Wood, a native of the town, who was born in 1677, and died in 1744. He practiced here thirty years. He had quite a large practice in the surrounding towns, yet the estate which he accumulated was in great part derived from his farm and mills. Dr. Wood was followed, in 1753, by Dr. Benjamin Foster, who was born in Ipswich in 1700, and died in 1775, of the asthma, having practiced here for twenty-two years. He was a successful and skillful physician, and a distinguished botanist. Dr. William Hale, the next one in the list, commenced practice here about 1770. He was a native of Boxford, having been born in 1741, and dying about 1785. Then came Dr. George Whitefield Sawyer, who was born in Ipswich in 1770. He settled in Boxford as a physician shortly after 1800, and continued in the practice of his profession until his

death, which occurred in 1855, at the age of eighty-five years. Dr. Sawyer lived in the East Parish; and in the West Parish Dr. Josiah Bacon practised for about twenty years contemporaneously with him. Dr. Bacon was doubtless a native of Bradford, and was born about 1780. He was in practice here from about 1820 to about 1840. He was an excellent physician, and highly cultured. Intemperance, however, caused the loss of his practice and character. Dr. Sawyer and Dr. Bacon died on the same day,—March 23, 1855. Dr. Bacon's brother John was the author of *Bacon's Town Officer*, one of the earliest works of the kind. During 1848 and 1849 another young physician lived and practised in the town. This was Charles P. French, who was born in Lyndsborough, N. H., in 1824. In 1849 he removed to Topsfield. No one has since endeavored to obtain a livelihood from the medical practice which the town would yield.

Boxford has always been noted, on account of its rural advantages, temperance and simple manner of living, as one of the healthfulest places in our region. The inhabitants live generally to old age. About forty-five persons are recorded as having died above the age of ninety years. The prevalence of fatal diseases is almost unknown. Small-pox was known here to a very limited extent in 1722, 1760 and 1854, and the throat distemper, in 1736 and 1737, took away quite a large number of the children of the town.

Boxford is a fine old farming community, pleasant and interesting, and, with the many natural beauties of her landscapes, the songs of the birds and the lovely sisterhood of flowers, continually attractive to all classes.

The history of the town was written and published in 1880, by Sidney Perley, in an illustrated volume of four hundred and eighteen octavo pages.

The bi-centennial anniversary of the incorporation of the town was celebrated August 12, 1885. The exercises were held in the First Church, and the dinner was enjoyed in the grove on the lawn in front of the church. Music was furnished by the Groveland Cornet Band. Several hundred people were present. The exercises were prefaced by a flag-raising on a square near the church, on which occasion Mr. George W. Chadwick made an address. The leading parts of the exercises in the church were as follows: Address on "The New England Town," by Rev. Charles L. Hubbard; "The History of the Town," by Sidney Perley; "The First Church," by Rev. Robert R. Kendall; "The Second Church," by Rev. Calvin E. Park; "Distinguished Natives," by Rev. William P. Alcott; "Schools," by Dr. Francis J. Stevens. Other addresses were made. Rev. William S. Coggin presided.

Religious History—As the settlers came, they attended divine worship at Topsfield, and many of them were admitted to and assisted in supporting the church there. This they continued to do until the early part of the last decade in the seventeenth century, when "contentious feelings" arose among the brethren, probably because the Boxford people were about to withdraw their support from the church, and to form a society among themselves. This unhappy state of affairs existed for several years after the connection was dissolved in 1702.

There have existed in Boxford three religious parishes, and of these we will speak in the order of their creation.

First Parish.—A church was thought of being built as early as 1692; but one was not begun to be erected until 1699. This was completed and presented to the town, which then constituted the parish, January 9, 1701. It was "thirty-four feet long, thirty feet wide, and eighteen feet stud between joints." The four surfaces of the roof met in one peak at the top, above which was a turret. This ancient edifice stood in the northerly corner of the cemetery near the First Church.

A parsonage was also built on the site of the present ancient Holyoke house. It was forty-eight feet long and twenty feet wide, two stories in height, and with a back room of sixteen or eighteen feet square. This house was finished and taken possession of July 22, 1702.. The old parsonage remained here until 1760, when the present house was erected.

The first pastor of the church was Rev. Thomas Symmes, who was ordained December 30, 1702, at which time probably the church was formed. Mr. Symmes was born in Bradford February 1, 1678, and graduated at Harvard College in 1698. He preached his first sermon in Boxford on Sunday, April 27, 1701. This was probably the first service ever held in Boxford. His salary was sixty pounds in money, thirty-five cords of wood and the use of the parsonage and ten acres of land.

Mr. Symmes met with uncommon difficulties in his pastorate here, but just what they were cannot be determined. Good feeling had always existed between pastor and people. He resigned May 21, 1708. He went to Bradford, and took his father's place in the church there, the same year he was dismissed from the church here. He died there October 6, 1725, aged forty-seven years. He was a man of much learning, and very active with his pen; several of his productions, both religious and secular, were published, and among them is the most authentic account of "Capt. Lovewell's fight at Pigwacket," in 1725. Increase Mather spoke highly of him.

The second pastor was Rev. John Rogers, of Salem, who preached here several months before his ordination, which occurred in 1709. His salary was at first sixty pounds, it being increased in 1717 to eighty pounds. He resided in the parsonage.

Mr. Rogers was a native of Salem, and graduated at Harvard College in 1705. He seems to have been born in humble life. He preached here until about

1743, when he removed to his son's in Leominster, where he died in 1755. He was an earnest, forcible preacher, and very successful in the ministry.

The people in the western portion of the town had been compelled, as a portion of the town, to assist in supporting the church here, and at the same time attended and helped to support the churches at Andover and Bradford. The meeting-house here had become needful of repair, and a new one was contemplated, but a vote to build a new one could not be obtained. The people living in the western part of the town desired a division of the town into two parishes, and that each should build a church. This was done in 1735. The first meeting held by the East or First Parish was on Monday, November 17, 1735. A new meeting-house was built and completed in 1745. It was forty-eight feet long, thirty-eight feet wide, and twenty-four feet stud. Its cost was about fifteen hundred pounds. The old church was used until January, 1747, when religious services were first held in the new meeting-house. This edifice stood a few rods in front of the present church.

From 1743 to '59 the church had no regular services. The next minister who was settled here was Rev. Elizur Holyoke. He graduated at Harvard College in 1750, and was ordained January 31, 1759. Mr. Holyoke was born in Boston May 11, 1731; and was prostrated by a paralytic shock in February, 1793, from the effects of which he died March 31, 1806, at the age of seventy-four years. He resided in the Holyoke house, which his father, a merchant of Boston, had built for him, a year or two after his settlement here, on the site of the old parsonage.

> "Lost to the world, adieu! our friend, adieu!
> Unblemished spirit, seek those realms of light,
> Where boundless Mercy only meets the view,
> Faith lost in wonder, Hope in full delight"
>
> —*Epitaph.*

The fourth minister was Rev. Isaac Briggs, of York, Me., who was installed on Wednesday, September 28, 1808. "Parson Briggs" was born in Halifax, Mass., about 1775, and graduated at Brown University in 1795. He was settled at York in the ministry, and resigned in 1807. Mr. Briggs lived in the old "Briggs house" during the twenty-five years he preached here. Contentions in the church made his service here unhappy, and his connection with the church and society was dissolved in 1833. Mr. Briggs afterwards preached in other places, but never again settled over a church. He came back to visit the friends and scenes of his early labors, and occupied the pulpit, several times after his departure from the town. He died in East Morrisania, N. Y., February 22, 1862, at the age of eighty-six years.

Mr. Briggs was followed by Rev. John Whitney, who was born in Harvard, Mass., September 1, 1803. He graduated at Amherst College in 1831, and from the Andover Theological Seminary in 1834. He was ordained here October 15, 1834, and dismissed in the summer of 1837. He boarded in the "Bunker house," with Colonel Charles Peabody and Elisha G. Bunker respectively. Mr. Whitney went to Waltham, where he was pastor for twenty years, then removed to Canaan, N. Y., and in 1867 to Newton Centre, Mass., where he died May 31, 1879. He kept up his studies to the end of his life.

At the close of Mr. Whitney's service here the present church was built and dedicated May 9, 1838. The bell was a gift from Gen. Solomon Low.

Rev. William Symmes Coggin, the next minister, was ordained May 9, 1838, the day of the dedication of the church. He was born in Tewksbury, Mass., Nov. 27, 1812, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1834. He resigned on account of ill health, and was dismissed May 9, 1868. He still resides with the people of his early charge.

Rev. Sereno Dwight Gammell, the seventh pastor, was ordained Sept. 9, 1868. He was born in Charlestown, Mass., March 2, 1842, graduated at Amherst College in 1865, and from the Andover Theological Seminary in 1868. He resigned and was dismissed Aug. 31, 1880. He is now settled in Wellington, Ohio.

Mr. Gammell's successor was Rev. William Penn Alcott, who was installed March 30, 1881. He was born in Dorchester, Mass., July 11, 1832; graduated at Williams College in 1861, and from Andover Theological Seminary in 1865. He had been tutor in chemistry in his alma mater, and settled in the ministry at North Greenwich, Conn., before coming to Boxford. He resigned and was dismissed May 18, 1883. He still resides near the church, and is at present the pastor of the Linebrook Parish Church in Ipswich.

The next and present pastor of the church is Rev. Robert Roy Kendall, who was installed Dec. 27, 1883. He was born in Ridgefield, Conn., March 28, 1849; graduated at Yale College in 1872, and at the Yale Theological Seminary in 1876. Before coming to Boxford, he had been settled in Bloomfield, Ohio, and Angelica, N. Y.

The parsonage was built by subscription, at a cost of about $4,000, in 1870. The church has one hundred and thirty-eight members, and a ministerial fund of $9,275.21. The Sunday-school connected with the church has one hundred scholars, and a library of three hundred volumes, called the "Mary Ann Peabody Sunday-school Library," the gift of Miss Mary Ann Peabody, an earnest worker in the field of the Master.

Second Parish.—The people in the western portion of the town erected a meeting-house for themselves in the summer of 1734, and were incorporated as a distinct parish June 28th of the next year. The first meeting of the parish was held July 22, 1735. June 13, 1740, the General Court added to the parish eight Andover families with their lands, and after-

wards several more Andover families were annexed, the parish being partly composed of North Andover families at the present time.

The founders of the church were dismissed for that purpose from the churches of Bradford, and the First Parish here. The church was organized Dec. 9, 1736, and on the 29th of the same month Rev. John Cushing, who had been preaching here for the year, was ordained. The salary of Mr. Cushing was fixed at one hundred and forty pounds in money and twenty-five cords of wood, with a settlement of three hundred pounds. The church stood in the "meeting-house lot" a short distance south of the new cemetery, and Mr. Cushing lived nearly on the opposite side of the road from Rev. Samuel Rowe's residence.

After 1763, he was not able to preach regularly, but he continued as the pastor of the church till his death, which occurred Jan. 25, 1772. Mr. Cushing was a son of Rev. Caleb Cushing, and was born in Salisbury April 10, 1709. He graduated at Harvard College in 1729. Mr. Cushing was a man of extensive learning, and a popular preacher.

The second meeting-house was built in 1774 by Stephen Barker. It stood where the present one stands. The old meeting-house was sold for what it would "fetch."

The second minister was Rev. Moses Hale, who was ordained November 16, 1774. He was born in Rowley February 19, 1749, and graduated at Harvard College in 1771. His salary was eighty pounds per annum. He resided across the street from the residence of the venerable Mr. Daniel Wood. Mr. Hale was stricken down by disease in the twelfth year of his ministry and thirty-eighth of his age, and died May 25, 1786, leaving five motherless children to mourn his loss, his wife having died April 24th of the preceding year. Mr. Hale's father was the Rev. Moses Hale of Newbury.

Mr. Hale's successor was Rev. Peter Eaton, D.D., of Haverhill, who was ordained on Wednesday, October 7, 1789. He erected the residence of the late Lawrence Carey, and lived in it during his long pastorate here.

It was during Mr. Eaton's ministry that the present church was erected. It was dedicated November 22, 1843. Its cost was $4,917.62. The bell was a donation from Charles Saunders, of Andover, its weight being eleven hundred and fifty-nine pounds.

After preaching here for fifty-five years, his health failing, Dr. Eaton asked to be dismissed; but it was voted that he should remain and preach when he felt able. This he consented to do, but shortly afterward again resigned. Then Rev. Calvin Emmonds Park was installed as his colleague October 14, 1846; and this relation continued as long as Dr. Eaton survived, which was but a short time. He quietly passed away April 14, 1848, at the age of eighty-three years. Dr. Eaton was born in Haverhill March 15, 1765, and graduated at Harvard College in 1787. He secured, during his long and quiet ministry, the respect and love of his people, who, as a memorial of their affection, erected a monument to his memory. Several of his sermons were published, among them the "Election Sermon," which he preached to the Legislature in 1819.

After Dr. Eaton's death, Rev. Mr. Park continued as the pastor until April 9, 1859, when he resigned. His farewell sermon was preached on the first Sabbath in June, 1859. Mr. Park's labors were judicious, faithful and unremitting. He continued to occupy the pulpit for some time after his dismission, and has ever since that time occasionally preached to his old congregation. Afterwards, for several years, he had a private school for young men, and is now mostly engaged in literary work. He resides in his old home near the church. Mr. Park was born in Providence, R. I., December 30, 1811. He first served for six years as pastor of the church at Waterville, Me., where he was ordained on October 31st, 1838.

The next minister was Rev. Charles M. Peirce, of Hinsdale, Mass., who was ordained September 2, 1863. He had sound discretion and Christian zeal, endowed with a fine scholarship and rich ministerial gifts. He resided in the Peter Pearl house. He was dismissed, at his request, July 17, 1867, and was soon after settled in Middlefield, Mass.

The poverty of the church and society was one of the principal reasons for the resignation of Revs. Messrs. Park and Peirce; but in 1872 a great change occurred in the financial condition of the society. Captain John Tyler, of this parish, who died that year, bequeathed to the parish a fund of thirty thousand dollars, the income of which to be appropriated annually to the support of the gospel here.

In 1875 the parish erected a handsome parsonage, in the Gothic style, on an eminence northeast from the church, at a cost of about five thousand dollars.

Ten years had elapsed since Mr. Peirce was dismissed, and no "call" had been accepted by a clergyman to settle here, though five invitations had been extended. The sixth one was accepted by Rev. James McLean, of South Weymouth, Mass. He was installed here on Wednesday, February 20, 1877. Mr. McLean was the first occupant of the new parsonage. He was a native of Scotland, and had been settled in the ministry at South Weymouth and several other places. He resigned, and was dismissed July 1, 1878. Mr. McLean afterwards preached in Groveland for three years, then went West, and died in Springfield, Mo., January 11, 1884.

The next and present pastor settled over this church is Rev. Charles Lawrence Hubbard, who was installed on Wednesday, January 15, 1879. Mr. Hubbard was born in Candia, N. H., July 4, 1839, and was settled over the church at Merrimac, N. H., for ten years before coming to Boxford.

The church has seventy-five members. The Sun-

day-school connected with it has eighty-five scholars and a library of two hundred volumes.

The churches of the First and Second Parishes are both orthodox Congregational, there being no other religious organization in the town. The members of the Third Parish, which existed for a few years only, were Liberals, though they styled themselves Congregationalists.

Third Parish.—This parish was founded on account of an extensive disaffection in the First Church while Rev. Mr. Briggs was settled here. They were incorporated by the name of the Third Congregational Society April 19, 1824. No church was ever organized, but the society existed, and religious services were held for a period of ten years. The last legal meeting of the society was held April 29, 1834. The academy building was erected, not only for the use of the school, but for a hall in which this new religious society could hold their services. In 1826 the society had ninety-eight members, eighteen of them belonging to Topsfield, thirty-five to Middleton, and forty-five to Boxford. Among those who preached to this society were Revs. Charles W. Upham, J. Bartlett, Ebenezer Robinson, Hubbard, Green and Loring. The preaching was of the Liberal kind, and mostly attended by that class of persons, who did not believe in Congregationalism.

Military History.—In the very first settlement of the town the men who were compelled by law to train performed their military duty with the company at Rowley, but being totally disregarded by that town for several years, they were ordered to train with the Topsfield company. In 1674 the General Court gave them liberty to train at either place, as they pleased. As soon as the town was incorporated a military company was formed here. Their first stock of ammunition was procured in 1689, and consisted of "poudr & bullets and flents." To the time of the division of the town into two parishes there was but one company in the town; after that time there was one in each parish. In 1762 the officers of the First Parish Company were: Asa Perley, captain; John Hale, lieutenant; and Thomas Andrews, ensign. Of the Second Parish Company: Isaac Adams was captain; Nathan Barker, lieutenant; and John Chadwick, ensign. A powder-house was built by the town in 1801, and in 1856 it was sold and taken down. It stood in a pasture, a short distance from and northeast of Stevens Pond. In 1832 the two companies were united, and continued so until the spring of 1840, when all the militia throughout the State were disbanded. A new and dashing company, calling themselves the "Boxford Washington Guards," was formed in 1836. In 1840 the town built them an armory. The company flourished for about ten years.

The first actual military service the settlers entered was King Philip's War, in 1675, when Philip and his allies were plundering and burning the buildings, and murdering the settlers in Swanzey and vicinity. Joseph Bixby served in the company of Capt. Samuel Brocklebank, of Rowley, and providentially escaped the fate of nearly all of that heroic band. Robert Andrews was a member of the company of the brave Capt. Gardner, and was killed at the storming of Fort Narragansett December 19, 1675. He was twenty-four years of age, and unmarried.

In 1689 several of the men, with other soldiers from the neighboring towns, went down into Maine to help defend the frontier settlements from the attacks of the savages, who had become very fierce. For several years some of the soldiers went into actual service against the Indians. Several of them were in the company of the brave Capt. Lovewell in 1725. Boxford men were stationed at Scarborough in 1748 and 1749, and at Gorhamtown and New Marblehead in 1749 and 1750. They were again on the eastern frontiers in 1754 and 1755.

Some of the Boxford soldiers assisted in depopulating Acadia (now Nova Scotia), of the *neutral French*, who, refusing to remain neutral, were brought by water to Boston, and distributed among the various towns in the colonies. Fifteen were sent to Boxford, six of whom were afterwards transferred to Middleton. This strange proceeding took place in 1755. The heads of the three families that were sent to Boxford were named Ommer Landry, Paul Landry and Renar Landry. They lived in town, being supported by the Province, until 1760, when many of them went to Canada. The cloud of their sorrows was never dispelled, and in a land of strangers many of them pined away and died.

The long and tedious "French and Indian War" drew into service many of the inhabitants. Boxford raised "a company of foot" for the "invasion of Canada," in 1758, which was placed under the command of Capt. Israel Herrick. This company, with another, under command of Capt Francis Peabody, of Boxford, were in service while the war lasted, 1758–60. Other men served in various companies. Of the dangers and sufferings endured by these soldiers, no one but themselves could justly tell. When the colonies were taxed so heavily by the mother country, just previous to the Revolution, in their correspondence with Boston, the committee of Boxford speak of the great amount of suffering, money and anxiety this war had cost them.

The citizens of Boxford resented the aggressive acts of Great Britain at a very early day in the uprising of the colonies. May 24, 1770, the town voted "that they will, to their utmost, encourage the produce and manufacture of all such articles as have formerly been imported from Great Britain, and used among them; that they will not use any foreign tea, nor suffer it to be used in their families (cases of sickness excepted), until the duty upon it shall be wholly taken off, the duty on

which has so largely contributed towards the support of such a ——[1] set of men; that they will not, by any means whatever, knowingly, have any sort of trade or dealings with those detestable persons who have preferred their own little interests to the good of the country in contriving to import goods contrary to the non-importation agreement of the merchants and traders on the continent; and that whosoever shall be found to trade with them knowingly, shall be deemed unworthy to hold any office or place of trust in the town forever hereafter."

In a letter to the committee of Boston, dated February 4, 1773, the committee of correspondence of Boxford write: "We are desirous to exert our utmost abilities in all legal and constitutional methods to break, if possible, the iron-band of oppression and prevent the welding of the last link in our chain of impending slavery."

December 27, 1773, they write: "It is the resolution of this town to do all that is in their power, in a lawful way, to heave off this yoke of slavery, and to unite with their brethren of the town of Boston, and the other towns in the Province, to defend our rights and charter privileges, not only with our estates, but with our lives; considering how dear those rights and privileges were purchased for us by our forefathers at the expense of their own blood and treasure."

Seventeen days before the Declaration of Independence was adopted, the town "voted unanimously that if the Honorable Continental Congress should for the safety of the colonies declare them independent of the Kingdom of Great Britain, they, the said inhabitants of Boxford, will solemnly engage with their lives and fortunes to support them in the measure."

The two militia companies, the East Parish Company, commanded by Capt. Jacob Gould, and consisting of fifty-seven men; the West Parish Company, commanded by Capt. John Cushing, and numbering thirty-three men; and the company of "Minute-Men," which had early been organized here, under the command of Capt. William Perley, numbering fifty-two men, marched to the scene of the Battle of Lexington, April 19, 1775, but too late to participate in the battle. The two militia companies returned home, but the "Minute-Men" followed in the rear of the British as they retreated to Boston,

> ". . . . . And gave them ball for ball,
> From behind each fence and barn-yard wall."

The "Minute-Men" camped in the vicinity of Boston, and on the 17th of June following took a prominent part in the memorable battle of Bunker Hill. Eight members of the company were left dead upon the battle-field. Capt. Knowlton, who so successfully defended the rail-fence there, was a native of Boxford; and Gen. Israel Putnam had called Boxford his early home.

In 1775, saltpetre was manufactured here for the purpose of making gun-powder; and the blacksmiths' forges were used for melting lead to be run into bullets.

Several men served in the famous Sullivan expedition formed to ravage the Indian settlements on the western frontier, and passed through the ordeal of suffering and death which became their lot. The names of Schoharie, Cherry Valley, Unadilla and others associated with them, will never be forgotten by the annalist of Indian history.

Boxford men served on Cape Ann, Winter Hill, Roxbury and Dorchester. Capt. Richard Peabody was stationed at Ticonderoga and Crown Point in 1776, with a company of volunteers, and took part in the fight at Ticonderoga. Others served in the disastrous expedition of Arnold to Quebec, in the fall of 1775, and suffered with the rest of that discouraged and emaciated band. One of the Boxford soldiers, Enos Reynolds, was one of the personal guard in the cell of Major André on the night before his execution.

The patriotism of Boxford all through the seven long years of the War of the Revolution never wavered. Scores of its most stalwart men had perished on the battle-field, or died from the fatigues and exposures of various expeditions, or at Valley Forge and Monmouth; while others in the hands of the savages were tortured into the valley of silence.

Shay's Rebellion, in 1787, called out several Boxford men; but into no active service.

The 1812 War was unpopular here, as the people believed it would be detrimental to their prosperity, happiness and morals. Several drafts on the militia companies were made for guarding the sea-ports along the Atlantic coast.

Boxford again had a trial of its patriotism in the War of the Rebellion; and sent forth more soldiers than had been asked for, as well as money, appropriating for this purpose $10,756.35, exclusive of State aid, and comforts for the soldiers at the front who were in the hospitals suffering from wounds or sickness.

The volunteers numbered ninety-two. Of these two died in Andersonville Prison and one in Libby Prison, twenty succumbed to the fatal rifle balls and Southern diseases, and thirteen others were wounded in battle, or contracted diseases of which they died soon after arriving home. In addition to these volunteers, thirty men were drafted, five more entered the navy, and faithfully served their country until they died or were discharged.

Entering the army at the beginning of the strife, several of the brave young spirits died on the field of battle at Bull Run, Cedar Mountain and other places. Others were wounded, some fatally, in the battles of Port Hudson, Blunt's Creek, Antietam, Spottsylvania,

[1] Hon. Aaron Wood, who was the town clerk, when these resolves were passed, being a moral man, left this word out, and inserted a dash in its stead.

Mechanicsville, Bull Run, Gettysburg, Lookout Mountain and other fierce conflicts of the Rebellion. Under the command of General Joe Hooker, some were numbered with the Army of the Potomac.

The following are the names of those who died in the war: Martin L. Ames (in Andersonville Prison), John Q. Batchelder, Samuel H. Brown, D. Butler, Charles W. Cole, John F. Cole, Oscar F. Curtis, Joshua G. Day, Murdock Frame (killed in battle at Cedar Mountain), Albert A. Frye, Charles L. Foster, George H. Gage, William A. Gurley, Harrison Hale, Matthew Hale, George P. Hobson, Horace A. Killam, Thomas A. Masury, Herbert C. C. Morse (in Libby Prison), Asa K. Perley, Thomas P. Perley, John Sawyer (in Andersonville Prison), Aaron Spofford (killed in last battle of Bull Run), and David M. Sullivan, in the army, and Benjamin S. Twisden in the navy.

In 1874, Jonathan Tyler Barker gave the West Parish one thousand dollars toward the erection of a soldiers' monument. Various persons in the town added the necessary amount of money, and a granite monument, about twenty feet in height, was erected in the spring of 1875, and dedicated on Memorial Day, May 29, 1875, with appropriate ceremonies, Governor Gaston and staff being present. The cost of the cenotaph was $2,017.19. The following is the inscription on its front face:

IN MEMORY OF
OUR PATRIOT SOLDIERS.
WAR OF 1861.
ERECTED BY THE
MUNIFICENCE OF THE LATE
J. TYLER BARKER
OF NORTH ANDOVER.
1873.

The other three faces of the monument are inscribed with the names and dates of death of the deceased soldiers and sailors of the town.

Camp Stanton.—During 1861 and 1862 several regiments were quartered here. The camp was named from the Secretary of War. The commandant was Colonel Edward F. Jones, now of Binghampton, N. Y. The Eighth, Forty-first, Forty-seventh, Fiftieth and other regiments were here. Musters of the State Militia have been since held on the old camp-ground.

Schools, Libraries, etc.—The first public school teacher in Boxford was the town clerk, Captain John Peabody, in 1701. The school was kept for many years in private houses in different sections of the town. In 1738 or 1739 the town was divided into districts, and a school-house built in each district. About 1796 new buildings took the place of the old. New buildings have since been built of a more commodious size and modern appearance, and the small red school-house of years agone is a thing of the past. The town is now divided into six districts, and the average number of scholars attending school is one hundred and twenty, $2,371.78 having been paid for their support the past year. The school fund now amounts to $3,467.59.

In 1826 Major Jacob Peabody, a native of Boxford, and a merchant of Boston, was instrumental in establishing an academy in the building used by the Third Congregational Society for their meetings. This building stood on the corner, across the street from the residence of Prof. Allen. The academy flourished for two or three years in a marked degree. The first principal was Prof. Leavenworth, and he was followed by Pratt, Wyatt and others. The average attendance was about fifty. The building was afterwards occupied as a dwelling-house, and was ultimately destroyed by fire on the night of December 26, 1867.

The Barker Free School was founded by a fund given by the late Jonathan Tyler Barker, of North Andover, in his will, in 1872. The fund amounted to thirty thousand dollars. In 1884 the trustees leased a building in the West Parish, and in it opened the school. Mr. Stephen C. Clark was chosen for the principal. In 1885 the trustees erected a large and tasteful house and stable for the residence of the principal. The school has about twenty members. The school building is to be built, when the fund is of sufficient magnitude, near the principal's house, which occupies the rising ground to the north of Fowler Pond.

From about 1865 to 1881, the Rev. Calvin E. Park, had a private school for young men near his residence in the West Parish.

The Proprietors' Library was established in the East Parish in 1794. This library was in use about forty years. The works composing it were principally of a religious and historical character. It contained about three hundred volumes. The standard works have been added to the new public library in the parish.

The Boxford Library Association founded the public library in the East Parish in 1873. The first contributions were made by Mr. Augustus E. Batchelder, of Boston, who has ever manifested much interest in the welfare of the library. It now contains eleven hundred volumes of well selected literature. At first, a chamber over the paint-shop of Mr. S. Frank Ayres was used as a library room. In 1880, the Bacon house, situated in front of the post-office, was purchased, and re-modeled to suit the requirements of the library, and was dedicated to its new use August 27, 1880, with appropriate exercises. The Association has a fund of about three hundred dollars, and is in a flourishing condition.

The West Boxford Library Association, established the West Boxford Public Library in 1881. It is situated near the church, the Association having purchased and remodeled the building used by Rev. Mr. Park for his school. The library now contains about seven hundred volumes, and is constantly increasing in size and usefulness. The works are

very carefully selected, and a better class of literature for general use in educating the public cannot be found in any library.

Thirty-five young men have taken full collegiate courses and graduated, sixteen at Harvard, fourteen at Dartmouth, two at Yale, and one each at Amherst, Brown and Union College, all having been natives of Boxford.

Business and Manufacturing.—From the earliest settlement of the town to the present time, the principal occupation of the inhabitants has been that of agriculture; and from the primitive soil of their plains and hillsides they have ever drawn, by their industry and well-adapted labor, an independent livelihood, while many of them have prospered so well that they have become comparatively rich.

The power which the several streams in the town afford was utilized quite early for driving saw-mills and grist-mills. The first saw and grist-mill in town was erected by William Peabody, about 1695, near the residence of the late William A. Herrick, Esq., and it existed until 1845. In 1710 the saw-mill which stood in the rear of the residence of Mrs. John Q. Batchelder, was built by Thomas Hazen, Jacob Perley and Dr. David Wood. It was allowed to decay and fall down about twenty years ago. Pegs were manufactured at this mill for a while about twenty-five years ago. Howe's saw and grist-mills were established in 1710 by Richard Kimball, Ephraim Dorman and Samuel Fisk, as a saw-mill, and the grist-mill was built by Asa Foster about 1795. The Andrews' saw and grist-mills were established quite early in the eighteenth century. The Day mill in the West Parish was first built as a grist-mill by Richard Pearl about 1740; it was changed to a saw and box-mill, about 1848, by John Pearl and James Carleton, and was destroyed by fire about three years ago. The Herrick saw-mill was established by John Hale about 1760. Capt. Porter's saw-mill was erected by himself in 1836, and the grist-mill in 1839.

The town has generally been supplied with blacksmiths' and wheelwrights' shops. The present blacksmiths' shops are carried on by J. Horace Nason, Henry Newhall and Perley Brothers, and the wheelwright shops by J. Horace Nason and Perley Brothers. There are three stores in town, all grocery, whose trade is conducted by Frederic A. Howe, Gardner S. Morse and John Parkhurst.

The first public house in town was kept by William Foster, under a license from the town, at the residence of Mr. Solomon W. Howe, from 1687 for several years. Solomon Dodge was an inn-holder about 1754; an inn was kept by Lieutenant Asa Merrill in 1788; another by Phineas Cole in 1800; one by Deacon Parker Spofford in 1800; one by Captain Josiah Batchelder in 1840; another in the West Parish by Elisha G. Bunker in 1836, and by John Brown in 1837; and another at the Bunker place by Mr. Bunker in 1840. Hotel Redington was opened by Mr. Daniel S. Gillis about three years since, and is the only public-house in town.

The earliest business in town, besides farming, was the "iron works," which were established by Henry Leonard of Lynn in 1669. The capital stock of the company which carried on the business was about a thousand pounds. Hubbard, in his History of New England, says that the ore here was "not inferior to that of Bilboa." The site of these works is just in the rear of the Andrews' mills. The business was discontinued shortly after 1680. Not only has mining for iron been carried on, but Mr. Nathan K. Fowler and D. Frank Harriman mined in 1875 and 1876 for silver and galena, and Mr. Harriman erected smelting works. Limestone has also been quarried in the town. The quarry lies about half a mile from and northeast of Stevens' Pond. The business was carried on about 1750 by Hon. Aaron Wood. The kiln, in which the limestone was burned, was situated near the pond.

Iron-smelting was established at the site of the match-factory, about 1770, by Samuel Bodwell of Methuen and Thomas Newman of Boxford, and iron-smelting was continued here until 1805. The site was afterwards used as a cotton-mill, then a grist-mill and for the manufacture of wooden trays, bowls, etc., then for cotton manufacturing again, this time producing yarn, wicking and batting. In 1867 the whole factory property was purchased by Messrs. Byam & Carlton, match manufacturers, who changed the machinery and the buildings themselves, and did the first day's work here at match-making September 2, 1867. About five years ago the factory was purchased by the Diamond Match Company, who have since conducted the business. The company have some thirty thousand dollars invested in the business here, and manufacture about three hundred and fifty gross per day, using some eighteen hundred tons of timber annually. A saw and box-mill is also run in connection with the factory. About forty hands is the usual number employed.

The late Captain Samuel Kimball established a peg-factory here in 1860, and afterwards, in company with Mr. William Sawyer, introduced box machinery. The mill was burned in the spring of 1875. On the same site, two years later, Mr. Henry M. Cross of Newburyport undertook the manufacture of silver polish from the marl deposits here.

Several shoe-manufactories have existed in the town. In 1837 the estimated value of shoes manufactured here was $52,975. Among the manufacturers were Samuel Fowler, Marion Gould, John Hale, Isaac Hale, and Edward Howe & Son. The only firm doing business now is Edward Howe & Son. Mr. Howe began business in 1838, and was joined by his son, Deacon William W. Howe, in 1876. Their trade is generally confined to the Southern and Middle States.

Distinguished Natives—Boxford has probably given birth to more distinguished and enterprising persons than any other town of its size in the commonwealth. A large majority of the young men leave the old, dull home of their fathers and enter into the busier scenes of life, most of them becoming successful in the business or professional career which they had chosen, and making themselves an honor to the dear old home of their boyhood. A list of some of the more distinguished and professional natives, not already mentioned, is appended.

Rev. Oliver Peabody (1698–1752) graduated at Harvard College in 1721; was the first settled pastor of the Indian Church at Natick, and a missionary among the Mohegan Indians. He was noted as a theologian, and a kind and useful pastor.

Rev. Moses Hale (1701–1760) graduated at Harvard College in 1722. He was the first minister of Chester, N. H.

Rev. James Scales (1707–1776) graduated at Harvard College in 1733. He was a minister at Hopkinton, N. H., and other places.

Rev. John Rogers (1712–1789) graduated at Harvard College in 1732. He was the first pastor at Leominster, Mass. Dr. Bancroft says, "he was a man of intellectual powers and an inquisitive spirit, possessed of a name fitted to make a man independent of his opinions, and prepared to encounter every difficulty in defence of religious truth."

Hon. Aaron Wood (1719–1791), State Senator in 1781. Resided in Boxford.

Col. Thomas Knowlton (1740–1776). He was a brave officer in the Revolution, and an intimate friend of General Putnam, with whom he had shared the perils and sufferings of the French and Indian War. He was slain in battle at Harlem Heights, September 16, 1776. Washington said of him, "he would be an honor to any country."

Rev. Stephen Peabody (1741–1819) graduated at Harvard College in 1769. First minister at Atkinson, N. H., and a chaplain in the Revolution.

Rev. David Jewett (1743–1783) graduated at Harvard College in 1769. Preached at Candia, N. H., and was the first minister of Winthrop, Me.

Rev. Benjamin Chadwick (1745–1819) graduated at Harvard College in 1770. He was a clergyman.

Dr. Edmund Chadwick (1751–18—). He was a physician.

Aaron Porter, M.D. (1752–1837). He was a physician of eminence at Biddeford and Portland, Me.

Major-General Amos Hovey (1757–1838) resided at Salem. Officer in the State militia.

Rev. Jacob Wood (1757–1790) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1778; A.M. at Yale, 1783. He was a clergyman at Newbury, Vt.

Rev. Humphrey Clark Perley (1761–1838) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1791. He was settled in the ministry at Methuen and Beverly.

Samuel Holyoke, A.M., (1762–1820) graduated at Harvard College in 1789. He was widely known as a composer and publisher of music. He was the author of "The Columbian Repository of Sacred Music" and other works.

Nathaniel Perley, Esq., (1763–1824) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1791. He was a prominent lawyer at Hallowell, Me.

Dr. William Peabody (1768–18—) was a physician at Frankfort and Corinth, Me.

Samuel Peabody, Esq., (1775–1859) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1803. He was a lawyer in Sandwich, Epsom, and Tamworth, in New Hampshire, and in Andover, in Massachusetts.

Joseph Hovey, Esq., (1776–1816) graduated at Harvard College in 1804. He was a lawyer in Haverhill.

General Solomon Lowe (1782–1861) was an officer in State militia, and resided in Boxford.

Rufus Porter Hovey, Esq., (1790–1820) graduated at Harvard College in 1813. He was a lawyer in Lynn.

Judge Enoch Wood Spafford (1791–18—) was a lawyer and judge in California.

Rufus Porter (1792–1884) was a most prolific inventor, and the founder of the *Scientific American*, the leading American journal devoted to science and mechanics.

Rev. Peter Sydney Eaton (1798–1863) graduated at Harvard College in 1818, and at Andover Theological Seminary in 1822. He was pastor at West Amesbury, now Merrimac.

Honorable Ira Perley, LL. D., (1799–1874) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1822. He practised law in Concord and Hanover, New Hampshire, and for several years was Chief-Justice of the Supreme Court of New Hampshire. He was also Treasurer of Dartmouth College, vice-president of the New England Historico-Genealogical Society, etc. In 1866, he delivered before the alumni of the college, the eulogy on the death of Rufus Choate and Daniel Webster, Dartmouth's two most distinguished sons. He was at the head of his class in college, and he held the same position in the bar, and on the bench.

Dr. Daniel Perley (1804–1881) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1828. He was a physician in Georgetown and Lynn.

Rev. John Hubbard Eaton (1806–18—) graduated at Harvard College in 1827. He was connected with the American Tract Society, at New York.

Rev. Samuel Hopkins Emery (1815) graduated at Amherst College in 1834. He is a clergyman in Taunton.

Joseph Elbridge Bartlett (original name *Killam*), *M.D.*, (1819) graduated at the University of the City of New York with the degree of M.D. in 1846. He was a physician in Somerville, Charlestown and Boston, and now resides in the last-named city.

Dr. Walter Henry Kimball (1820–1880) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1841. He was a physician at Andover.

Charles Israel Adams, Esq., (1823–1862) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1852. He was a lawyer in Boston.

Henry Oliver Peabody (1826) is the inventor of the famous "Peabody Rifle."

Rev. Albert Bradstreet Peabody (1828) graduated at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1859. He was pastor at East Longmeadow, in Massachusetts, and at Stratham, and now at Candia, in New Hampshire.

Cyrus Killam Bartlett (original name *Killam*), M.D., (1829) graduated at Harvard College with the degree of M.D. in 1852. He practised medicine at Newton and Charlestown, in Massachusetts, and is now superintendent and physician of the Minnesota State Hospital for Insane, at St. Peter.

William Augustus Herrick, Esq., (1831–1885) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1854. He was a lawyer in Boston, and also favorably known as a legal writer, having been the compiler of *Herrick's Town Officer*.

George W. Atherton, LL.D., (1837) graduated at Yale College in 1863. He was a professor in St. John's College at Annapolis, Maryland, afterwards in the State University at Champaign, Illinois, and in Rutgers College, New Jersey, and is now the President of State College, in Pennsylvania.

Professor James Hamilton Howe (1856) graduated from Musical Department of Boston University in 1882. He is dean of the Department of Music in De Pauw University, Greencastle, Ind.

Sidney Perley, Esq., (1858) graduated at Boston University with the degree of LL.D. in 1886. He is a lawyer in Salem.

MEMBERS OF THE STATE SENATE AND LEGISLATURE.

SENATORS.

1781. Aaron Wood.
1869. Julius A. Palmer.

REPRESENTATIVES.

May 8, 1689. John Peabody.
Feb. 12, 1690. John Perley.
Oct. 8, 1690. John Peabody.
Dec. 10, 1690. John Peabody.
Feb. 3, 1691. John Perley.
Oct. 14, 1691. John Peabody.
Dec. —, 1691. John Peabody.
June 8, 1692. John Peabody and Thomas Perley.
1695. John Peabody.
1698–99. John Peabody.
1700. John Peabody and Thomas Perley.
1702. Thomas Perley and William Foster.
1703. Thomas Perley.
1704. Samuel Symonds.
1707. Thomas Perley.
1709. Thomas Perley.
1710–13. John Peabody.
1714–17. Joseph Hale.
1718–19. Thomas Perley.
1720–25. Joseph Hale.
1727. Thomas Perley and Stephen Peabody.
1728–32. Joseph Hale.
1734. John Symonds.
1735. Joseph Hale.
1736–38. John Symonds.
1761–70. Aaron Wood.
1771–72. Asa Perley.
1773–74. Aaron Wood.
1775. Asa Perley (in Provincial Congress).
1776–79. Aaron Wood.
1780–81. Asa Perley.
1783–86. Isaac Adams.
1787. Nathan Andrews.
1788. Isaac Adams.
1792–1810. Thomas Perley.
1811–14. Parker Spofford.
1815–17. Israel Foster.
1819–21. Moses Dorman.
1823. Solomon Lowe.
1827–28. Solomon Lowe.
1831–34. Charles Peabody.
1835–36. Moses Dorman.
1838. Josiah Kimball.
1839–40. Moses Kimball.
1841. Solomon Lowe.
1843. Benjamin Peabody.
1846–47. William Lowe.
1849–50. Enoch Wood.
1851–52. Samuel H. Batchelder.
1857. George Pearl.
1858. Enoch Wood.
1862. John K. Cole.
1866. Jefferson Kimball
1869. Roscoe W. Gage.
1874. Charles Perley.
1879. William S. Goggin.
1883. Wm. R. Kimball.

TOWN TREASURERS OF BOXFORD.—In the early history of the town the constables performed the duties of the collector of taxes and town treasurer. The following is a list of constables who served as town treasurers:

1686. Robert Stiles.
1687. William Peabody.
1688. Thomas Perley.
1689. John Perley, Sr.
1690. Ephraim Curtis.
1691. Joseph Bixby.
1692. Joseph Andrews.
1693. Abraham Redington.
1694. John Kimball.
1695. John Chadwick.
1696. Daniel Wood.
1697. Thomas Andrews.
1698. William Watson.
1699. Samuel Symonds.
1700. Joseph Hale.
1701. Zacchens Curtis.

The following is a list of town treasurers:

1702–06. Thomas Hazen.
1708. Joseph Hale.
1709. Thomas Hazen.
1711. Samuel Fisk.
1712. John Woods.
1713–20. Jacob Perley.
1721–24. Samuel Foster.
1726. John Andrews, Jr.
1727–29. Joseph Symonds.
1731. Jacob Perley.
1732–35. Jeremiah Perley.
1736–43. Jacob Smith.
1745. John Dorman.
1746. Thomas Redington.
1747–48. Robert Andrews.
1749–51. Thomas Perley.
1752. Aaron Kimball.
1753–55. Francis Perley.
1756. Aaron Kimball.
1757–61. Francis Perley.
1762–71. Jonathan Wood.
1772–73. Aaron Wood.
1774–79. Nathan Wood.
1780–88. William Perley.
1789. Aaron Wood.
1790. Jonathan Wood.
1791–98. Asa Peabody.
1799. Parker Spofford.
1800. David Kimball, Jr.
1801–30. Ancill Stickney.
1831. Jacob Batchelder.
1832–34. Charles Peabody.
1835. Abijah Northey.
1836–37. Josiah Kimball.
1838–39. Amos Kimball.
1840. Moses Dorman.
1841. Thomas S. Hovey.
1842–43. Samuel H. Batchelder.
1844. Moses Dorman.
1845. Richard Spofford.
1846. Samuel P. Peabody.
1847. John F. Kimball.
1848–49. Oliver P. Killam.
1850. William E. Killam.
1851–53. John Brown.
1854–56. William E. Killam.
1857. William H. Wood.
1858–62. William E. Killam.
1863. William R. Kimball.
1864. Joseph H. Jones.
1865–71. Joshua T. Day.
1872–77. William E Killam.
1878–81. William R. Kimball.
1882–84. Edward E. Pearl.
1885–87. Warren M. Cole.

TOWN CLERKS OF BOXFORD.

1686–1710. John Peabody.
1711. Thomas Hazen.
1712–23. Thomas Perley.
1724–29. Joseph Hale.
1730. Thomas Redington.
1731. Joseph Hale.
1732. Thomas Redington.
1733–35. Joseph Hale.
1736–42. Joseph Symonds.
1743–49. William Foster.
1750–51. Thomas Redington.
1752–57. Thomas Perley.
1758. Aaron Wood.
1759–60. Thomas Andrews.
1761–79. Aaron Wood.
1780–88. Thomas Perley.
1789–90. Aaron Wood.
1791–92. John Dorman.
1793–96. Jonathan Wood.
1797–98. Parker Spofford.
1799–1811. Moses Dorman.
1812–13. Amos Kimball.
1814. Moses Dorman.
1815. John Kimball.
1816. Moses Dorman.
1817. Amos Kimball
1818. Moses Dorman.
1819. John Tyler.
1820. Moses Dorman.
1821. Amos Kimball.
1822. Moses Dorman.
1823. John Bacon.
1824. Moses Dorman.
1825. John Bacon.
1826. Charles Peabody.
1827. George Pearl.
1828. Phineas Barnes.
1829. Benjamin Robinson.
1830. Phineas Barnes.
1831. Benjamin Robinson.
1832. Phineas Barnes.
1833. William Farnham.
1834. Samuel Kimball.
1835. William Farnham.
1836. Samuel Kimball.
1837. Moses Kimball.
1838. Samuel Kimball.
1839. Joshua T Day
1840. Samuel Kimball.
1841. Joshua T. Day.
1842. Samuel H. Batchelder.
1843. George Pearl.

1844. Samuel H. Batchelder.
1845. George Pearl
1846. Moses Dorman.
1847. William R. Cole.
1848. William Lowe.
1849. William R. Cole.
1850. Moses Dorman.
1851. John F. Kimball.
1852. William E. Killam.
1853. Joshua T. Day.
1854. William Lowe.
1855. William H. Wood.
1856. William E. Killam.
1857. William H. Wood.
1858. William E. Killam.
1859. William R. Cole.
1860. William E. Killam.
1861. William H. Wood.
1862. William E. Killam.
1863. William H. Wood.
1864. William E. Killam.
1865. William R. Cole.
1866–68. Roscoe W. Gage.
1868–70. William R. Kimball.
1871–72. Thomas P. Dorman.
1872–77. Ancill Dorman.
1878–79. Benjamin S. Barnes.
1880–86. Ancill Dorman.
1886. Sidney Perley.
1887. Benjamin S. Barnes.

SELECTMEN OF BOXFORD.

1687.
John Peabody, Sr.
William Watson.
Daniel Wood.
John Andrews.
Abraham Redington, Jr.

1688.
John Chadwick.
Thomas Andrews.
Daniel Wood.
Abraham Redington, Jr.
Thomas Hazen.
John Peabody, Sr.

1689.
Joseph Bixby.
Thomas Hazen.
William Foster, Sr.
Joseph Andrews.
William Peabody.

1690.
John Peabody.
Nathaniel Brown.
Joseph Peabody, Sr.
Thomas Redington.
Thomas Perley.

1691.
John Perley
Moses Tyler.
Thomas Andrews.
Samuel Symonds.
John Kimball.

1692.
Samuel Symonds, Sr.
Thomas Hazen.
Joseph Peabody, Sr.
John Andrews.
Robert Eames, Sr.

1693.
John Peabody, Sr.
John Chadwick.
Zaccheus Curtis.
Daniel Wood, Sr.
Joseph Bixby.

1694.
Thomas Perley.
Thomas Hazen.
Moses Tyler.
William Foster, Sr.
Ephraim Curtis.

1695.
John Perley.
Moses Tyler.
Joseph Bixby
John Andrews.
Joseph Peabody.

1696.
John Peabody.
William Peabody.
Thomas Andrews.
Jonathan Foster.
Jonathan Bixby.

1697.
Joseph Bixby.
Joseph Andrews.
William Peabody.
John Chadwick.
Thomas Perley, Jr.

1698.
John Peabody.
John Andrews.
Samuel Symonds, Sr.
Joseph Hale.
Moses Tyler.

1699.
Thomas Perley.
John Peabody.
John Andrews.
John Eames.
William Peabody.

1700.
John Perley.
Joseph Bixby.
Joseph Andrews.
Josiah Bridges.
Joseph Peabody.

1701.
Samuel Symonds.
Thomas Perley.
Thomas Redington.
John Kimball.
Samuel Smith.

1702.
Samuel Symonds.
Daniel Wood.
Joseph Hale.
John Andrews.
John Stiles.

1703.
John Peabody.
Thomas Hazen.
Jonathan Foster.
Samuel Symonds.
Timothy Dorman.

1704.
Thomas Perley.
Joseph Bixby.
Abraham Redington.
Joseph Andrews.
Josiah Bridges.

1705.
John Peabody.
Joseph Peabody, Jr.
David Wood.
Nathaniel Perley.
Zaccheus Curtis.

1706.
Thomas Hazen.
David Wood.
Richard Kimball.
Samuel Symonds, Sr.
Jonathan Bixby.

1707.
John Peabody.
Thomas Perley.
Joseph Hale.
Samuel Foster.
Thomas Wilkins.

1708.
Thomas Hazen.
Abraham Redington.
Zaccheus Curtis.
Luke Hovey.
Jacob Perley.

1709.
Thomas Perley.
John Andrews.
Joseph Bixby.
Luke Hovey.
Samuel Fisk.

1710.
Samuel Symonds, Sr.
Thomas Jewett.
Jonathan Foster.
Daniel Kenney.
Samuel Fisk.

1711.
John Peabody.
Daniel Wood.
Timothy Foster.
Cornelius Brown.
Thomas Jewett.

1712.
John Andrews.
Samuel Symonds, Jr.
Samuel Foster.
Moses Tyler.
Jacob Perley.

1713.
Jonathan Foster.
Nathaniel Peabody.
Thomas Cummings.
David Peabody.
John Andrews.

1714.
Joseph Bixby.
John Tyler.
Jeremiah Perley.
Jacob Smith.
Thomas Perley, Jr.

1715.
Joseph Hale.
Timothy Dorman.
Samuel Symonds.
John Chadwick.
Thomas Spofford.

1716.
Thomas Jewett.
Jonathan Bixby.
Job Tyler.
John Symonds.
Daniel Kenney.

1717.
Thomas Perley, Jr.
Thomas Perley, Sr.
John Andrews.
John Howe.
Joseph Eames.

1718.
Joseph Bixby.
Cornelius Brown.
Joseph Peabody.
Samuel Symonds.
Ephraim Dorman.

1719.
Joseph Hale.
Thomas Killam.
Luke Hovey.
Joseph Symonds.
John Wood.

1720.
Thomas Perley, Jr.
Joseph Bixby.
Thomas Wilkins.
Nathan Eames.
John Andrews, Jr.

1721.
Joseph Bixby.
Thomas Jewett.
Thomas Cummings.
Richard Peabody.
Nathan Peabody.

1722.
Timothy Dorman.
Jeremiah Perley.
John Chadwick.
Thomas Redington.
Samuel Symonds.

1723.
Joseph Bixby.
Stephen Peabody.
Samuel Symonds.
Thomas Perley.
John Kimball.

1724.
David Peabody.
Stephen Peabody.
Daniel Kenney.
Timothy Stiles.
Nathaniel Perkins.

1725.
Stephen Peabody.
John Stiles, Sr.
John Symonds.
Joseph Hale, Jr.
Jonathan Tyler.

1726.
Thomas Jewett.
David Peabody.
Robert Andrews.
Jacob Hale.
Thomas Redington.

1727.
Thomas Perley.
Joseph Hale.
Samuel Pickard.
Nathaniel Symonds.
John Howe.

1728.
Joseph Hale.
Thomas Cummings.
Jacob Smith.
Timothy Stiles.
Moses Tyler

1729.
Stephen Peabody.
James Curtis.
Jacob Smith.
Jacob Perley.
John Stiles, Jr.

1730.
Joseph Hale.
Joseph Symonds.
Thomas Perley.
Thomas Andrews.
John Wood.

1731.
Joseph Symonds.
Stephen Peabody.
Thomas Cummings.
Jacob Smith.
Samuel Foster.

1732.
Jacob Perley.
Robert Andrews.
Joseph Hale, Jr.
Zebediah Foster.
John Bixby.

1733.
Stephen Peabody.
Nathaniel Symonds.
Jeremiah Perley.
Jonathan Foster.
Samuel Gould.

1734.
John Symonds.
Joseph Hale, Jr.
Thomas Redington.
Timothy Stiles.
Zebediah Foster.

1735.
Joseph Hale.
Jacob Smith.
Jonathan Foster.
Timothy Stiles.
Amos Perley.

1736.
John Symonds.
Luke Hovey.
Jonathan Foster.
Stephen Peabody.
John Killam.

1737.
Joseph Symonds.
John Kimball.
Joseph Hale.
Thomas Peabody.
Jeremiah Foster.

1738.
Joseph Symonds.
Thomas Peabody.
Robert Andrews.
Benjamin Porter.
Gideon Bixby.

1739.
Robert Andrews.
Benjamin Porter.
John Andrews.
Thomas Peabody.
John Dorman.

1740.
Thomas Andrews.
Joseph Hale.
Jonathan Sherwin.
Samuel Gould.
Nathan Kimball.

1741.
Robert Andrews.
Zebediah Foster.
Thomas Peabody.
Nathan Peabody.
Thomas Perley, Jr.

1742.
Robert Andrews.
John Kimball.
Thomas Andrews.
Luke Hovey, Jr.
Jeremiah Foster.

1743.
Robert Andrews.
Benjamin Porter.
Joseph Symonds.
Luke Hovey.
Thomas Redington.

1744.
Robert Andrews.
Benjamin Porter.
Joseph Hale, Jr.
Thomas Redington.
Job Tyler.

1745.
Joseph Symonds.
Zebediah Foster.
Nathaniel Perkins.
Thomas Peabody.
John Dorman.

1746.
Joseph Symonds.
Thomas Peabody.
Amos Perley.
Jonathan Foster.
Jeremiah Foster.

1747.
Jonathan Foster.
Thomas Redington.
Nathaniel Symonds.
Thomas Peabody.
Thomas Perley.

1748.
Benjamin Porter.
Joseph Symonds.
Luke Hovey, Sr.
Gideon Bixby.
Joseph Hale, Jr.

1749.
Thomas Redlogton.
John Hovey.
Nathaniel Symonds.
Aaron Kimball.
Isaac Adams.

1750.
Thomas Redington.
Jonathan Foster.
John Peabody, Jr.
Luke Hovey, Jr.
John Hale.

1751.
Jonathan Foster.
Joseph Hale, Jr.
Aaron Kimball.
Joseph Hovey.
Jacob Cummings.

1752.
Thomas Peabody.
John Dorman.
Francis Perley.
Richard Kimball.
John Hale.

1753.
Jonathan Foster.
William Foster.
Richard Kimball.
John Peabody.
Solomon Wood.

1754.
Thomas Peabody.
Thomas Perley.
Job Tyler.
Thomas Andrews.
Paul Prichard.

1755.
Thomas Perley.
Isaac Adams.
Jacob Cummings.
Joseph Hovey.
Solomon Wood.

1756.
John Peabody.
Luke Hovey.
Solomon Wood.
Nathan Barker.
Samuel Fisk.

1757.
Thomas Perley.
Joseph Hovey.
Aaron Kimball.
Moses Porter.
Jacob Cummings.

1758.
Jonathan Foster.
Asa Perley.
Ebenezer Killam.
Richard Kimball.
Solomon Wood.

1759.
Jonathan Foster.
Francis Perley.
Samuel Fisk.
John Chadwick.
Nathan Wood.

1760.
Thomas Perley.
Luke Hovey.
Aaron Kimball.
Gideon Tyler.
Jacob Cummings.

1761.
Thomas Perley.
Luke Hovey.
Aaron Kimball.
Gideon Tyler.
Jacob Cummings.

1762.
Aaron Wood.
Luke Hovey.
Jacob Cummings.
Isaac Adams.
James Andrews.

1763.
Aaron Wood.
Luke Hovey.
Israel Adams.
Jacob Cummings.
James Andrews.

1764.
Aaron Wood.
Isaac Adams.
Aaron Kimball.
John Chadwick.
Asa Perley.

1765.
Aaron Wood.
Joseph Hovey.
Jacob Cummings.
Moses Porter.
Ebenezer Killam.

1766.
Thomas Perley.
Samuel Runnells.
Abraham Redington.
Jonathan Foster.
Paul Prichard.

1767.
Asa Perley.
Richard Kimball.
Nathan Andrews.
Nathaniel Peabody.
James Peabody.

1768.
Asa Perley.
Joseph Hovey.
Ebenezer Killam.
Stephen Runnells.
Paul Prichard.

1769.
Asa Perley.
Isaac Adams.
Richard Foster.
Moses Porter
Nathaniel Perley.

1770.
John Hale.
Samuel Runnells.
Nathan Andrews.
Nathaniel Peabody.
Jacob Cummings.

1771.
Asa Perley.
Isaac Adams.
Jacob Cummings.
Joseph Hovey.
Paul Prichard.

1772.
Nathan Wood.
Isaac Adams.
William Perley.
Jonathan Foster.
Richard Peabody.

1773.
Nathan Andrews.
Isaac Adams.
Moses Putnam.
John Cushing.
William Perley.

1774.
Asa Perley.
Isaac Adams.
John Curtis.
John Robinson.
Benjamin Perley.

1775.
Nathan Andrews.
Isaac Adams.
Nathan Wood.
John Cushing.
Moses Putnam.

1776.
Nathan Andrews.
Isaac Adams.
Nathan Wood.
John Cushing.
Richard Peabody.

1777.
Asa Perley.
John Chadwick.
Benjamin Perley.
Samuel Spofford.
Jacob Andrews.

1778.
Asa Perley.
John Cushing.
Benjamin Perley.
Asa Merrill.
John Wallit.

1779.
William Perley.
Isaac Adams.
Benjamin Perley.
Lemuel Wood.
John Dorman.

1780.
Nathan Andrews.
Lemuel Wood.
John Curtis.
Bradstreet Tyler.
Asa Peabody.

1781.
Aaron Wood.
Isaac Adams.
Benjamin Perley.
Lemuel Wood.
Moses Peabody.

1782.
Asa Perley.
Asa Merrill.
John Dorman.
Lemuel Wood.
Francis Perley.

1783.
Nathan Wood.
John Robinson.
Stephen Symonds.
Jonathan Foster.
Francis Perley.

1784.
Nathan Andrews.
William Porter.
Francis Perley.
Samuel Carleton, Jr.
Asa Peabody.

1785.
Francis Perley.
Lemuel Wood.
Jonathan Wood.
William Porter.
Thomas Perley, Jr.

1786.
Francis Perley.
Samuel Carleton, Jr.
Thomas Perley, Jr.
Lemuel Wood.
Samuel Kimball, Jr.

1787.
Nathan Andrews.
Jonathan Foster.
Samuel Kimball, Jr.
Thomas Adams.
Amos Perley.

1788.
John Dorman.
John Robinson.
Francis Perley.
Ivory Hovey.
Aaron Perley.

1789.
Richard Foster.
Lemuel Wood.
Samuel Kimball, Jr.
Moses Carleton.
Daniel Nurse.

1790.
Nathan Andrews.
Lemuel Wood.
Richard Foster.
Moses Carleton.
Stephen Peabody.

1791.
John Dorman.
Ivory Hovey.
James Chute.
Parker Spofford.
Simeon Stiles.

1792.
John Dorman.
Ivory Hovey.
James Chute.
Parker Spofford.
Simeon Stiles.

1793.
Francis Perley.
Lemuel Wood.
David Kimball, Jr.
Parker Spofford.
Simeon Stiles.

1794.
Francis Perley.
Lemuel Wood.
David Kimball.
Moses Carleton.
Parker Spofford.

1795.
Francis Perley.
John Tyler.
David Kimball.
Samuel Chadwick.
Moses Dorman.

1796.
Thomas Perley.
John Tyler.
Timothy Dorman.
Samuel Chadwick.
Moses Dorman.

1797.
Thomas Perley.
Enos Runnells.
Samuel Perley.
Samuel Spofford, Jr.
Moses Dorman.

1798.
Thomas Perley.
Enos Runnells.
Moses Dorman.
Samuel Spofford.

1799.
Thomas Perley.
Israel Adams.
Nathan Andrews, Jr.
Israel Foster.
Amos Perley.

1800.
Thomas Perley.
Israel Adams.
Nathan Andrews, Jr.
Israel Foster.
Amos Perley.

1801.
Thomas Perley.
Moses Carleton.
Jacob Andrews.
John Kimball.
Joseph Symonds.

1802.
Thomas Perley.
Moses Carleton.
Jacob Andrews.
John Kimball.
Joseph Symonds.

1803.
Thomas Perley.
Lemuel Wood.
Jacob Gould, Jr.
Israel Adams.
Israel Herrick.

1804.
Thomas Perley.
Enos Runnells.
Joseph Symonds, Jr.
Thomas Spofford.
Israel Herrick.

1805.
Thomas Perley.
Isaac Barker.
Joseph Symonds, Jr.
John Kimball.
Israel Herrick.

1806.
Thomas Perley.
John Kimball.
Joseph Symonds, Jr.
Enos Runnells.
John Dorman.

1807.
Moses Dorman.
John Kimball.
Stephen Spofford.
Samuel Carleton.
Amos Perley.

1808.
Jonathan Foster, Jr.
Moses Dorman.
Stephen Spofford.
Jonas Runnells.
Jacob Gould.

1809.
Moses Dorman.
Jonathan Foster.
Parker Spofford.
Daniel Adams.
Daniel Chapman

1810.
Moses Dorman.
Jonathan Foster, Jr.
Parker Spofford.
Daniel Adams.
Daniel Chapman.

1811.
Moses Dorman.
Samuel Spofford.
Stephen Spofford.
Samuel Kimball.
Abraham Perley.

1812.
Stephen Spofford.
John Kimball.
Simeon Pearl.
Parker Spofford.
Joseph Symonds, Jr.

1813.
Moses Dorman.
John Kimball.
Joseph Symonds, Jr.
Simeon Pearl.
Jacob Gould.

1814.
Moses Dorman.
John Kimball.
Joseph Symonds, Jr.
Simeon Pearl.
Jacob Gould.

1815.
Moses Dorman.
John Kimball.
Israel Foster.

1816.
Moses Dorman.
John Kimball.
Amos Perley.
Simeon Pearl.
Solomon Lowe.

1817.
Moses Dorman.
Israel Foster.
Amos Perley.
John Tyler.
Artemas Kimball.

1818.
Moses Dorman.
Amos Kimball, Jr.
Jacob Gould.
Simeon Pearl.
Abraham Perley.

1819.
Moses Dorman.
Amos Kimball, Jr.
Jacob Gould.
Simeon Pearl.
Abraham Perley.

1820.
Moses Dorman.
Amos Kimball, Jr.
Jacob Gould.
Simeon Pearl.
Abraham Perley.

1821.
Moses Dorman.
Seth Burnham.
Charles Peabody.
Simeon Pearl.

1822.
Moses Dorman.
Jonathan Foster.
Simeon Pearl.
John Tyler, Jr.

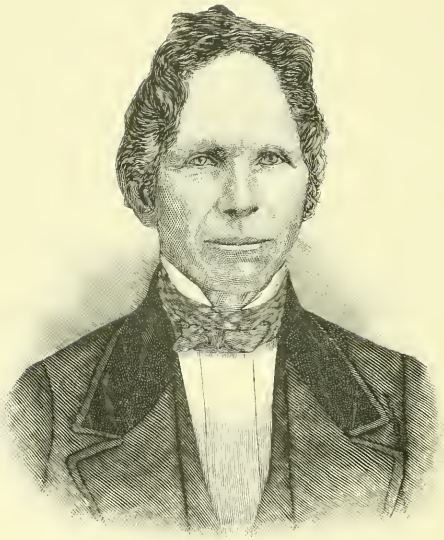
1823.
Moses Dorman.
Aaron Spofford.
Josiah Kimball.

1824.
Moses Dorman.
Simeon Pearl.
Aaron Spofford.

1825.
John Bacon.
Solomon Lowe.
Asa Foster.

1826.
Josiah Kimball.
Daniel Wood.
Benjamin Pearl.

1827.
Samuel W. Clement.
Josiah Kimball.
Charles Peabody.



Dance Wood

1828.
Samuel Kimball.
Samuel W. Clement.
Edmund Barker.

1829.
Samuel W. Clement.
Samuel Kimball.
Phineas Barnes.

1830.
Samuel Kimball.
George Pearl.
Benjamin Robinson.

1831.
Thomas S. Hovey.
Samuel Kimball.
Moses Dorman, Jr.

1832.
Moses Dorman, Jr.
Simeon Pearl.
Amos Kimball.

1833.
Amos Kimball.
Moses Dorman, Jr.
Phineas Barnes.

1834.
Moses Dorman, Jr.
Amos Kimball.
William Farnham.

1835.
Amos Kimball.
Moses Dorman, Jr.
George W. Sawyer.

1836.
Moses Dorman, Jr.
Amos Kimball.
Thomas S. Hovey.

1837.
Joshua T. Day.
Charles Peabody.
George W. Sawyer.

1838.
George W. Sawyer.
Joshua T. Day.
Amos Kimball.

1839.
Joshua T. Day.
Samuel Andrews.
John Sawyer.

1840.
Moses Dorman, Jr.
Joshua T. Day.
George Pearl.

1841.
Joshua T. Day.
Moses Dorman, Jr.
William H. Herrick.

1842.
Moses Dorman, Jr.
Samuel W. Clement.
George Pearl.

1843.
Joshua T. Day.
William H. Herrick.
John K. Cole.

1844.
Moses Dorman, Jr.
George Pearl.
William R. Kimball.

1845.
Joshua T. Day.
William H. Herrick.
Ancill Dorman.

1846.
Moses Dorman, Jr.
William R. Kimball.
S. W. Jenkins.

1847.
George Pearl.
Ancill Dorman.
Moses Dorman, Jr.

1848.
Moses Dorman, Jr.
George Pearl.
William R. Cole.

1849.
Joshua T. Day.
Ancill Dorman.
William Lowe.

1850.
Ancill Dorman.
Joshua T. Day.
Benjamin S. Barnes.

1851.
William R. Cole.
Ancill Dorman.
Benjamin S. Barnes.

1852.
Ancill Dorman.
William R. Cole.
John F. Kimball.

1853.
John F. Kimball.
Moses Dorman.
Benjamin S. Barnes.

1854.
Moses Dorman.
Oliver P. Killam.
John F. Kimball.

1855.
John F Kimball.
William Lowe.
Leonard Perley.

1856.
Moses Dorman.
George Pearl.
William R. Cole.

1857.
John F. Kimball.
William E. Killam.
William H. Herrick.

1858.
William E. Killam.
John F. Kimball.
William R Cole.

1859.
William R. Cole.
William E. Killam.
Benjamin S. Barnes.

1860.
William E. Killam.
William R. Cole.
Joshua T. Day.

1861.
William R. Cole.
William E. Killam.
John K. Cole.

1862.
William E. Killam.
George W. Chadwick.
Thomas L. Spofford.

1863.
John F. Kimball.
William E. Killam.
Israel Herrick.

1864.
William E. Killam.
Joshua T. Day.
William R. Cole.

1865.
John F. Kimball.
Benjamin S. Barnes.
Edward Howe.

1866.
Ancill Dorman.
John F. Kimball.
Oliver P. Killam.

1867.
John F. Kimball.
Ancill Dorman.
Roscoe W. Gage.

1868.
Roscoe W. Gage.
Joshua T. Day.
John Pearl.

1869.
George W. Chadwick.
William E. Killam.
John K. Cole.

1870.
Ancill Dorman.
George W. Chadwick.
Joshua T Day.

1871.
George W. Chadwick.
Ancill Dorman.
John K. Cole.

1872.
Thomas P. Dorman.
George W. Chadwick.
William R. Kimball.

1873.
Oliver P. Killam.
Ancill Dorman.
John K Cole.

1874.
Ancill Dorman.
George W. Chadwick.
Israel F. Spofford.

1875.
George W. Chadwick.
Ancill Dorman.
John K. Cole.

1876.
Ancill Dorman.
George W. Chadwick.
Isaac W. Andrew.

1877.
George W. Chadwick.
John K. Cole.
Ancill Dorman.

1878.
Ancill Dorman.
George W. Chadwick.
James H. Nason.

1879.
George W. Chadwick.
Benjamin S. Barnes.
John K. Cole.

1880.
John Parkhurst.
George W Chadwick.
Alonzo J. Henley.

1881.
George W Chadwick.
John Parkhurst.
Charles Perley, 2d.

1882.
John Parkhurst.
George W. Chadwick.
Israel F. Spofford.

1883.
George W. Chadwick.
John Parkhurst.
Charles Perley, 2d.

1884.
Ancill Dorman.
James W. Chadwick.
James H. Nason.

1885.
George W. Chadwick.
Charles Perley, 2d.
John Parkhurst.

1886.
John Parkhurst.
George W Chadwick.
William K. Cole.

1887.
George W. Chadwick.
John Parkhurst.
Stephen A. Bixby.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

DANIEL WOOD.

The parents of Mr. Wood were, Lemuel born October 25, 1745, and Frances (Tyler), born November, 20, 1753; they were married March 21, 1782. From this union there were seven children, and Daniel was the sixth child; he was born February 10, 1793, and when he was but six years of age his father had him helping about the shop in the making of shoes. Daniel was also brought up on the farm, which at his father's death was encumbered for about all it was worth, but having a love for the old home, he concluded to remove these claims, and by his industry and economy he soon succeeded.

His education was limited, as he only had the

advantages of the common schools of that period. He married first, Maria, daughter of Isaac Barker, November 20, 1820; by this union there was one child, William H. born in the year 1821, who still lives with his father, and is married. Mr. Wood was married the second time to Abigail S. the daughter of Abram Tyler, she died April, 1879; and by this union there were three children,—Maria Louise, Samuel Eaton and Louise Maria. They all died quite young.

CHAPTER LXIV.

TOPSFIELD.

BY SIDNEY PERLEY.

First Settlement, General History, etc.—The present territory of Topsfield was originally contained in Ipswich and Salem. The locality was called by the Indians Shenewemedy, and was the home of one of the clans of the Agawams. The first English settlers called it New Meadows, probably on account of the extensive tracts of meadow land in its immediate vicinity.

The English residents came here as early as 1635. The very first settlers were Allan Perley, an emigrant from England, and ancestor of the Perley family in America; William Towne, an emigrant from Bristol, England; Alexander Knight; Zaccheus Gould, from Hemel Hempstead, England, and ancestor of most of the American Goulds; John Wildes; John Redington; George Bunker; Lieut. Francis Peabody, an emigrant from England, and ancestor of the Peabody family in America; Daniel Clark, ancestor of the Topsfield Clarks; William Howard; and others. A very good list of the early settlers, with the dates of their first appearance, has been made up as follows: Thomas Averill, 1664; William Averill, 1666; Thomas Baker, 1661; Francis Bates, 1659; Benjamin Bixby, 1694; Daniel Bourman, 1666; Michael Bowden, 1669; John Bradstreet, 1661; Edmund Bridges, 1659; Thomas Browning, 1661; George Bunker, 1657; Isaac Burton, 1692; Anthony Carroll, 1658; Daniel Clark, 1645; Isaac Cummings, 1652; John Curtis, 1672; John Davis, 1672; Timothy Day, 1679; John Death, 1670; Thomas Dorman, 1661; Michael Dwinnell, 1668; Isaac Easty, 1658; Zerubabel Endicott, 1695; William Evans, 1661; John French, 1664; Zaccheus Gould, 1638; George Hadley, 1660; Thomas Hobbs, 1664; John Hobson, 1677; John Hovey, 1664; John How, 1661; William Howard, 1650; Samuel Howlett, 1658; John Kenney, 1683; Alexander Knight, 1645; John Lane, 1676; Jonathan Look, 1678; William Nichols, 1661; Francis Peabody, 1658; Thomas Perkins, 1658; William Perkins, 1655; Allan Perley, 1635; William Prichett, 1668; Abraham Redington, 1645; John Redington, 1649; John Robinson, 1668; Walter Roper, 1652; Peter Shumway, 1677; Robert Smith, 1661; William Smith, 1657; Matthew Stanley, 1659; William Towne, 1651; Luke Wakling, 1682; James Waters, 1669; Philip Welch, 1670; John Wildes, 1658; Josiah Wood, 1695; and Nathaniel Wood, 1693.

The first notice of Topsfield is contained in an order of the General Court, dated on the 4th of the 7th month, 1639. By this order certain lands lying near Ipswich River were granted for a village to the inhabitants of Salem. Although by this order Salem people alone had lawful authority to settle there, several families in Ipswich made their homes with the settlers from Salem; and "the Ipswich people" maintained preaching here for two years before they had liberty to take up grants of land in the settlement. September 4, 1643, the General Court ordered that

"Whereas at the Co^rt houlden at Boston the 4th 7th m^o, 1639, there was certaine land lying neare Ipswich Ryver granted f.r a village, eith^r to some of the inhabitants of Salem or to some of the inhabitants of Ipswich, who have farmes n ear unto the said land, to bee enioyed by those who first setteled a village there, they both pounding for it togeth^r; howsoev^r the ord^r mentioneth onely Salem inhabitants, & forsmuch as the said inhabitants of Ipswich, viz.: M^r. Bradstreete, M^r. Symonds, M^r. Whittingham, M^r. Willi. Paine, M^r. Robt Paine, & such oth^r of Ipswich or Salem as they shall associate to themselves, shall have liberty to settle a village near the ryver of Ipswich, as it may bee most convenient for them to w^ch the foresaid land shall belong, viz: all that w^ich lyeth near the said ryver (not formerly granted to any towne or pson), p^rvide that any of the inhabitants of Salem, who have farmes near unto the said land now granted, shall have liberty for one yeare next Comeing to ioyne w^th the said village & to have their equall and p^rportionable priviledge in the same; And whereas M^r. Bradstreete hath liberty granted him to take his farme of 50 ac. in the next Conveniant place that is fit for a farme, to that w^ch is granted to M^r. John Endecott w^ch may p^rve pludicial to the said village, it is therefore ordered that the said M^r. Bradstreete shall have liberty to take his said farme of 500 ac. in any other place not yet granted to any towne or p^rson, nor pludicial to any plantation made or to bee made, w^ch, when hee hath so done & manifested the same to this Co^rt, his aforesaid grant shall fourthw^th bee voyde & the said land shall belong to the village before mentioned, to bee disposed of by the inhabitants thereof for the good of the whole."

Most of the early settlers lived on the north side of the river. On the south side the meadows stretched away for a long distance; some of the upland was under cultivation, but most of it was covered by the "Salem woods," when Topsfield had been settled but a few years.

The General Court declare, October 18, 1648, that "the village at the newe medowes at Ipswich is named Toppsfeild."

The population increased, more houses were built, and the little hamlet of a few cottages had become a settlement of some consequence, when the General Court granted it a town charter, as the following copy of the record shows:

"At a third session of the General Court, held at Boston Oct. 18, 1650: In ans^r to the request of Zacheus Gould & William Howard, in the behalfe of Topsfeild, the Court doth grant that Topsfeild shall from henceforth bo a towne, & have power within themselves to order all civill affayres, as other townes have."[1]

[1] Cleaveland says that the date of incorporation is October 15, 1650. We find that the General Court also order, October 16, 1650,—"In answer to the petition of the inhabitants of Topsfeild, it is ordered by this

The town was called Topsfield, probably from Topesfield, a small parish, about four miles west-northwest from Castle Hedingham, in Essexshire, England, though no reason is known why that name should have been selected, unless some of the early settlers came from that place in England.

The records of the early town meetings are gone, so that the names of the first officers of the town cannot be ascertained. In 1661, however, we have found that "Ensigne Howlett, ffrances Pabodye and John Redington" were chosen selectmen. Lieutenant Francis Peabody was town clerk, probably, from the incorporation of the town until 1682, when John Gould was chosen his successor.

Topsfield was a part of the old sachem, *Muschonomet's*, territory; and although he gave a deed of the land then within the bounds of Ipswich, which included a part of what was afterwards Topsfield, to John Winthrop, Jr., in 1638, his grandson, Samuel English, made a claim upon the town for the land, claiming title thereto by descent. Upon the payment of three pounds in money, he gave the town a quit-claim deed, bearing date March 28, 1701.

Although the town was incorporated in 1650, its boundaries were not settled for a long time afterward, with the exception of Rowley. Rowley bounds were fixed so early that their exact location was partially forgotten in a few years; and after Boxford was incorporated in 1685, a contention, continuing for forty-six years, ensued before the line was agreed upon. Town meetings were held, committees and attorneys were appointed, prosecutions were begun in the courts, and the action even of the General Court was repeatedly invoked. The line between Topsfield and Salem was agreed upon in 1659,[1] and approved by the General Court in 1664. The Ipswich line was established after a short quarrel. With Wenham, the limits were easily settled, but the duty of the perambulators on that side of the town was rather severe. The course which they were compelled to take, as from time to time they went to renew or identify the bounds, carried them through a bog, in which they often got badly mired. To prevent this discomfort, the line was finally altered by an amicable adjustment.

At a town-meeting, held June 10, 1726, a petition signed by Thomas Caves, Edward Putnam, Joseph Knight and five others, praying that the town would grant them liberty to join with some families of Salem, Boxford and Andover, to be set off as a distinct town, was presented. The town would not listen to the petition. However, the petitioners, with the others mentioned, pre-ented their petition to the General Court, which duly considered, and, two years later, granted it. These families, thus set off from the towns named, were incorporated as the town of Middleton June 20, 1728. The four families on the east side of the river, now included within the town of Topsfield, originally belonged to Ipswich. The Lamson and Cummings places were settled nearly as early as the village of Topsfield, and helped to support the ministry at Topsfield from the earliest date. From 1729 to 1774 these families struggled to free themselves from Ipswich, and to be annexed to Topsfield. The town of Ipswich repeatedly opposed their petitions, and at last they asked the General Court that their prayer might be granted. This was satisfactorily answered by the Court, February 11, 1774, when it ordered that the families of Joseph Cummings, John Lampson, Israel Clark, Joseph Cummings, Jr, John Lampson, Jr., and Thomas Cummings, with their lands and buildings, be set to the town of Topsfield. These two instances form the only material changes in the original boundaries of the town.

In 1661 the common lands on the south side of the river were laid out to "m^r^ Bradstreet, m^r^ perkins, Zacheas Gould, m^r^ Baker, Tho Dorman, ffrances Pebody, Willi Evens, Daniell Clark, Isaac Cummings, sen^r^, Isac Cummings, jun^r^, Ensigne Howlet, Willi Smith, m^r^ Endicoat, John Wiles, John Redington, Tho Perkins, Tho Browning, Jacob Towne, Isace Estey, Willi Towne, Edmund Towne, matthew Standly, Anthony Carell, ffrances Bates, John How, Edmond Bridges and Willi Nichols." In 1664 some of the land on the south side of the river still remained undivided. The town voted that this should be granted to the several inhabitants that as-isted in supporting the minister in the following proportion, viz.: those that paid fifty shillings a year were to have one of the larger pieces; those who paid more than twenty and less than fifty shillings, to have a medium-sized piece; and those who paid less than twenty shillings, one of the least pieces. Thus it was divided among the following inhabitants, viz.: "John goold, m^r^ thomas baker, danel Clark, thomas dorman, senr, frances pabody, decon hovey, william Eevens, Isack Comings, senr, Isack Comings, iunar, Ensigne howlat, antoni Carol, thomas perkins, thomas browning, thomas averil, thomas hobes, John Redington, John wildes, william smith, Edman bridges, Jacob towne, Isack Este, william towne, Joseph towne, Edman towne, matthew stanle, william nicoles, m^r^ william perkeings, m^r^ Endicot, John how, Robart andros and frances bates."

In 1683 the alarming demand for the surrender of the provincial charter, under a threat of *quo warranto* in case of refusal, came from Charles II. On Christmas-day of that year the town voted that "We do hereby declare that we are utterly unwilling to yield, either to the resignation of the Charter, or to anything that shall be equivalent thereunto, whereby the foundation thereof shall be weakened." The next year the royal menace was put into execution, and

court that from henceforth the shall bee a towne, & have power within themselves to order all civill affayers, as other townes have, p. Curia." See the Colonial Records of Massachusetts for 1650.

[1] For a copy of this agreement see Massachusetts Bay Colony Records for 1664.

the letters-patent of Massachusetts Bay were cancelled by the Court of Chancery. To carry out the arbitrary measures thus begun, James II., in 1686, sent over the notorious Sir Edmund Andros to be governor of the Colony. Two years afterward the king fled to France, and the people, having no more to fear from him, pounced upon Andros and his assistants and sent them back to England. Lieutenant Thomas Baker was chosen by Topsfield to meet and consult with the "council of safety" about resuming the former government, according to the charter, which was now revived. His instructions were "to act for the public good and welfare and safety of their Colony, prohibiting any act or anything that may have any tendency to the infringement of any of our charter privileges whatsoever."

John Gould, captain of the Topsfield militia company at this time, was arrested and placed in the old jail in Boston, for uttering treasonable words against Andros and his government; but before his trial came on Andros was himself lodged in the same goal, preparatory to treating him to a trip to the mother country, with the advice to stay there. This was in 1689.

Three years later came the witchcraft delusion. It originated less than five miles from Topsfield, and it was not possible that the town should escape. Mrs. Nurse, who was executed at Salem Village, and Mrs. Howe, of Ipswich, were sisters, and natives of Topsfield. Another sister, who married Isaac Esty, lived in Topsfield at the Pierce farm, and another woman, Sarah Wildes, of Topsfield, were executed by hanging for the crime which they never committed. Mrs. Wildes was executed July 19, and Mrs. Esty September 22, 1692. Abigail Hobbs was also condemned to die September 17, 1692, and was pardoned some time afterward, when the light had burst through the inky cloud revealing to the astonished court and church the terrible errors they had made.

The laying out and making of roads were among the earliest duties of the town. The history of these as they advanced from foot-paths to bridle-paths, from these to cart-ways and the carriage-roads of today; and the progress made from sloughs to causeways, and from fords to bridges, might, perhaps, in most instances, be distinctly traced.

Stocks were used as a means of punishment here as late as 1757. December 27, 1720, the town "alowed to John Willds for makeing the Towns Stoock and for finding y^e lorns and Lock and bringing them to the meeting house and for seeting up sd stoocks £1, 4s."

The oldest cemetery in the town is that near the residence of Mr. Samuel Todd. The church once stood in the east corner, and the cemetery was, perhaps, originated by the introduction of the English custom of interring the dead around the church. The most ancient grave-stone, now standing here, is that of Capt. Thomas Baker, who died in 1718, at the age of eighty-one years. An addition was made to the cemetery in 1706, and the whole enclosed with a new stone-wall. Since then two additions have been made, and the yard greatly improved. The first grave-digger was John Hobson, who was chosen by the town, March 7, 1676–77, to "dig graves for such as shall require him." He was to have "three shilns sixten for ol graves abov for foot long and thre for ol under." The new cemetery in the south part of the town is about fifty years old.

Until 1822, the paupers were boarded out, as was the custom in early times. In that year the town purchased the "Ebenezer Dodge farm" of Cyrus Cummings for three thousand five hundred dollars, and fitted up the dwelling house for an alms-house. The present superintendent is Mr. Henry R. White.

According to the census of 1885, the population of Topsfield is one thousand one hundred and forty-one,—five hundred and seventy-five males and five hundred and sixty-six females. In early times there were some negroes here. In January, 1777, there were seven negro males in town above the age of seven years.

The Odd-Fellows have an assembly here, called the Fountain Lodge, and numbered one hundred and seventy. It has quite a good number of members, and is in a flourishing condition. In 1886, Mr. Joseph E. Stanwood presented the lodge with a large two-story house for a hall, which they have neatly fitted up.

The Ancient Order of United Workmen also have a lodge in the town, its number being sixty-five. This lodge was founded here in 1886. It has twenty-nine members, and holds its meetings in Bailey's Block.

The Danvers and Newburyport branch of the Boston & Maine Railroad runs through the centre of the town, and has one station, Topsfield, within its limits. The road was built in 1853. The trains run through to Boston without change. Mr. Frederic P. Merriam was the station-agent here from 1853 to 1886. His successor is Mr. William H. Goodwin from Boston.

The town has one post-office, which is named Topsfield. Mr. Salmon D. Hood is the postmaster.

The fire department of the town consists of a hook and ladder company.

The town hall was erected in 1873, at a cost of thirteen thousand dollars. The building committee were Charles Herrick, John Bailey, John H. Potter, William E. Kimball, Dudley Bradstreet, Joseph W. Batchelder and Ezra Towne. The hall has a seating capacity of five hundred. The stage arrangements are first class; and the whole building is one which much larger towns might be proud of. In the hall are located the public library, and offices of the board of selectmen, and town clerk and treasurer. In the tower is the town clock.

The taxable property in the town in 1887 amounted to $1,385,098; personal, $855,583; and real, $529,515. The number of polls was 296. The rate of taxation

was $6.60 per $1000. There were taxed 183 horses, 480 cows, 421 sheep, 56 oxen, 235 dwelling-houses and 7379 acres of land. The town debt is $21,200. The town has a fund of $5000 given to it by Miss Annah Pingree in 1876, the income of which to be devoted to the assistance of the deserving poor.

Topsfield has not been without its professional men. The clergymen will be mentioned in the next chapter. The resident lawyers have been two. One was Sylvanus Wildes, born in Topsfield in 1754, graduated at Harvard College in 1777, and died here in 1829, having, as Cleaveland says, "enjoyed the sweets of a perpetual vacation." The other lawyer was Charles H. Holmes, a native of Maine, and son of the Hon. John Holmes. He graduated at Brown University in 1829. He did but little more professional business than lawyer Wildes. While preparing this sketch the tall squire has been admitted to practice in the higher courts where quibbles are unknown.

The history of the medical profession here is more extended. The first physician, of which any record has been left, is Michael Dwinnell. His grandfather was said to have been a French Huguenot, of the same name, who settled here before 1668. Dr. Dwinnell was born here January 7, 1705–6. He was here as late as 1733, and probably later.

The next physician was Richard Dexter, who was born in Malden, Mass., June 15, 1713, and began practice here in 1740. He was an excellent citizen as well as physician. He died here November 25, 1783.

Dr. Joseph Bradstreet, who was born here in 1727, practised here contemporaneously with Dr. Dexter. His practice was rather limited, and he taught school for awhile, dying at last, a pauper, in 1790.

In 1783, the year of Dr. Dexter's death, two physicians settled here. The first of these was Nehemiah Cleaveland, and the second, John Merriam. Dr. Cleaveland was born in Ipswich in 1760. He was also engaged in public affairs, serving as a State Senator in 1812, '16, '17 and '18. In 1814 he was made a session justice of the Circuit Court of Common Pleas. From 1820 to 1822 he was associate justice of the Court of Sessions for Essex County, and in 1823 he was appointed chief justice. He retired in 1828; and in that year received the honorary degree of doctor of medicine from Harvard University. He died in this town February 26, 1837, aged seventy-six.

Dr. Merriam was born in Concord, Mass., August 10, 1758. He studied medicine in Charlton, and commenced practice in Topsfield in December, 1783. He built and occupied the residence of Mr. Samuel Todd. He died of consumption November 21, 1817.

The next physician here was Jeremiah Stone, who was born in Marlborough, N. H., November 2, 1798. He began practice here about 1825, and continued in it about a dozen years. He died in Provincetown, on Cape Cod, April 23, 1875, at the age of seventy-six, and his remains were brought to Topsfield for interment.

Dr. Joseph Cummings Batchelder succeeded Dr. Stone about 1838. He was a native of Topsfield. He began practice in Lynn, but stayed there but a short time. He went to Cambridge from Topsfield about 1849, and remained there seven years. He then removed to Templeton, Mass., where the remainder of his life was spent in the practice of his profession, excepting the six months that he served as assistant surgeon in the Twenty-Fifth Massachusetts Regiment in North Carolina in the Rebellion. He died in Templeton in 1884.

Dr. Royal Augustus Merriam, who also succeeded his father, Dr. John Merriam, in the medical profession in this town, was born here January 30, 1786, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1808. He was a good physician. He died here, of heart disease, November 13, 1864, at the age of seventy-eight years.

After Dr. Merriam was well along in years, other physicians came to this flourishing town. The first of these was Dr. Charles P. French from Boxford. He was born in Lyndsborough, N. H., in 1824, practised in Boxford in 1848 and '49, and then came to Topsfield, where he stayed four years. He now resides in the West.

He was succeeded by Dr. David Choate, a native of Essex, in 1854. Dr. Choate stayed till 1857. He is now in practice in Salem.

The present physician, Dr. Justin Allen, came here in the fall of 1857. He is a native of Hamilton, and graduated at Brown University in 1852 and at Harvard Medical School in 1857.

On August 28, 1850, was celebrated the bi-centennial anniversary of the incorporation of the town. An historical address was given by Nehemiah Cleaveland. A large number were present, and a very enjoyable time was had.

Religious History.—Hardly had a settlement been begun here before the preaching of the Gospel was established. As early as 1641 Rev. William Knight, a resident of Ipswich, began to preach to the little company. The Ipswich people paid him for his services, which he continued until his death, which occurred about 1655. His successor was Rev. William Perkins, who came hither from Gloucester in 1655, and preached here for several years. He was the son of a merchant tailor, and was born in London, England, August 25, 1607. In 1633 he was associated with John Winthrop, Jr., and eleven others, in the settlement of Ipswich. In 1640 he visited his native country, but soon returned and preached to the small band of worshippers living in Weymouth. He removed to Gloucester in 1646, and preached there from 1650 to '55, when he came to Topsfield. Here, after preaching till 1663, he spent the remainder of his life in the calm pursuits of husbandry. He died May 21, 1682, aged seventy-four years. Among the early settlers of the town he was probably the most accomplished person. He was a scholar and a man

of business,—a farmer, a clergyman, a soldier and a legislator. He represented the town of Weymouth in the General Court in 1644; was the leader of a military company and one of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company.

At what time in the ecclesiastical history of Topsfield the first meeting-house was erected cannot be definitely determined. At first it stood not far from the Newburyport turnpike, near the residence of the late Sylvanus Wildes, Esq., in the east part of the town. It was without a pulpit, but was probably a very good edifice for the times.

In 1663 the church was gathered here, and Rev. Thomas Gilbert was invited to settle over it. The church was composed of the Topsfield people and the "villagers" (the Boxford people). Mr. Gilbert agreed to the proposal on condition that the "villagers" would engage to assist in his support. This condition was agreed to by the "villagers" on condition that the meeting-house should be moved so as to be more convenient for them to attend divine service. The meeting-house was accordingly moved into the southeast corner of the cemetery near the residence of Mr. Samuel Todd. Several families in Ipswich, living near Topsfield, were also members of the church, which they helped to support.

The church was organized, and Rev. Mr. Gilbert installed November 4, 1663. He was born in Scotland, in 1610, and had been a clergyman of the established church at Chedlie and at Edling, in England. He was one of the two thousand clergymen who were ejected from their benefices by the Act of Uniformity; so that he came almost directly from an English vicarage, or curacy, to minister to the spiritual wants of the incipient church in Topsfield. Mr. Gilbert's pastorate here was far from being a smooth one. In 1666 he was charged with sedition, and in 1670 with intemperance. The latter trial was sadly disgraceful, and he was dismissed from the pastorate. This twice-ejected minister died in Charlestown October 28, 1673.

The next minister was Rev. Jeremiah Hobart, of Hingham, Mass., who was ordained October 2, 1672. He was born in England April 6, 1631, and graduated at Harvard College in 1650. His course here was no smoother than his predecessor's had been; and he was dismissed September 21, 1680. He was afterward installed at Hempstead, L. I., in 1683, where he preached about fifteen years, and finding that his congregation had nearly all left him, he concluded to go also. He was next installed at Haddam, Conn., November 14, 1700, and continued to preach there until his death, which occurred in March, 1715. His age was eighty-three years. Although little sanctity seems connected with this early pastor of Topsfield, he is, however, closely related to several distinguished divines; and Mr. Brainard, the celebrated missionary, was his grandson.

In 1682 a pulpit was built in the church, and the same year Rev. Joseph Capen, of Dorchester, began to preach here. The next year he was invited to settle over the church. He accepted the call, and was ordained June 11, 1684. His salary was sixty-five pounds—twenty pounds in silver and forty-five pounds in pork and beef—per year, with the use of the parsonage house.

A "minister's farm" had been early laid out, and a parsonage built upon it for the use of the pastor. The house was situated about one-fourth of a mile west of the residence of the late Dr. R. A. Merriam. The Revs. Gilbert and Hobart probably occupied the house while they preached here, and Mr. Capen moved into it in 1683. The house and its surroundings were not suited to the aristocratic tastes of Mrs. Capen, and so she pressed her husband to move nearer to the village. The town granted him twelve acres of land near the present Methodist Church, and on this land, about 1686, he built the house in which they afterward resided, and which is now occupied by Mrs. Alonzo Kneeland. The old parsonage was used as a residence by the schoolmaster, Goodman Lovewell, from 1693 to 1701, when the town voted to dispose of it. The house which Mr. Capen built is one of the oldest, and probably the oldest existing house in Topsfield; and the following story renders it interesting: In the witchcraft period, Mr. Capen, while preaching one Sunday, experienced a premonition that something was wrong at home, and leaving the congregation in the midst of the services he went to his house, and there found his worst enemy,—old Satan himself. Mrs. Capen had a servant-girl, who had been reading a book which ought not to have been read on the Sabbath day, and that caused the Devil to appear and claim her for his own. When Mr. Capen understood how matters were, he readily conceived a remedy. Bringing into the room a half bushel full of flaxseed, he turned it upon the floor, and told the old Imp if he (Satan) succeeded in picking up the seed, kernel by kernel, before Mr. Capen could read backward, word by word, what the girl had read, he (the Devil) might have her. But, so the story runs, before the Devil had picked up the seed, Mr. Capen had completed his part of the agreement, and the beaten king of imps had to leave, through a rat hole, it is said, which is plainly visible at the present day.

The old meeting-house was used as a place of worship until a new edifice was erected, in 1703. The old one was then sold for five pounds, to John Gould, who moved it down to the turnpike, and used it for a barn. It was afterwards removed to the "river meadows," where some of its decayed timbers could be seen a few years ago. The pulpit and some of the lumber of the old meeting-house had been used in the construction of the new one. The new meeting-house was forty-four feet long and forty-two feet wide. The site of this house was that occupied by the present Congregational Church, which was then

a knoll that had been levelled to some extent for the purpose of building the church upon it.

Rev. Mr. Capen continued to preach here for forty-three years. He died June 30, 1725, at the age of sixty-six years. He was born in Dorchester, Mass., December 20, 1658, and graduated at Harvard College in 1677. He was a good pastor, but his abilities as a preacher were moderate.

> "Dear Mr. Capen, that revered man,
> Who did the faith in Christ maintain;
> A learned man, and godly, too,
> None will deny this who him knew."—*Epitaph.*

Mr. Capen's successor was Rev. John Emerson, who was born in Charlestown, Mass., February 7, 1707, and ordained as pastor of the church here November 27, 1728, at the age of twenty-one years. His labors here closed just before his death, which occurred July 11, 1774, "having," as his epitaph says, "served God faithfully in the gospel of His Son upwards of forty-five years."

During Mr. Emerson's ministry a new church had been erected. It was raised in 1759, and finished in 1760. It was fifty-four feet long, and forty-two feet wide, with twenty-six feet posts. It had a steeple, and stood on the site of the old church. For the raising, the town furnished one barrel of rum and eleven barrels of cider. The cost of the meeting-house was £743 10*s.* 7¾*d.* The most interested agent in the erection of the new church was Deacon George Bixby. It is a fact worthy of notice, that a Mr. Ross, of Ipswich, who was present at the raising of this meeting-house, he being at the time but nine years old, was also present at the raising of the present church edifice, more than eighty-three years afterwards.

For five years after Rev. Mr. Emerson's death the society had irregular preaching. Then Rev. Daniel Breck, a native of Boston, was settled over the church. His ordination took place on Wednesday, November 17, 1779, the sermon being preached by the Rev. Mr. Lothrop, of the Old North Church, Boston, from 2d Corinthians iv. 5: "For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake." Mr. Breck was a man of fair talents and a good writer; but his ability as a preacher was small. He endeavored to introduce some reforms into the church, which created a strong feeling against him, and the result was an honorable dismission, after nine years of service, May 26, 1788. Mr. Breck removed to Hartland, Vt., where he was settled in the ministry, and died in extreme old age.

Mr. Breck's successor was Rev. Asahel Huntington, whose ordination took place on Thursday, November 12, 1789. He was born in Franklin, Conn., March 17, 1761, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1786. Rev. Dr. Hart, of Preston, now Griswold, Conn, preached the ordination sermon. Mr. Huntington's useful and acceptable service continued here until April 22, 1813, when, after four days' illness, he died of malignant sore throat, at the age of fifty-two years. His funeral sermon was preached by Rev. Isaac Braman of the West Parish of Rowley, now the town of Georgetown. This discourse was published, and, in connection with it, an unfinished sermon of Mr. Huntington, written on the very day he was seized with the fatal illness. It was from the text: "Be ye also ready; for in such an hour as ye think not, the Son of man cometh."

In 1817 the spire of the steeple of the meeting-house was taken down and a cap-tower erected in its place.

A bell weighing 938½ pounds was purchased of Paul Revere & Sons, for four hundred dollars, and suspended in the tower of the church, "to be rung on all public days and tolled for funerals." A copper vane was placed upon the steeple.

For seven years after Mr. Huntington's death the church had no settled pastor. Rev. Rodney Gove Dennis, of New Boston, N. H., accepted the invitation of the church and society to settle over them, and his ordination took place on Wednesday, October 4, 1820.

Several religious denominations being now represented in the town, the unanimity of the people in giving their support to the Congregational Church was gone. While affairs were in this state the leading members of the Congregational body petitioned the General Court to grant them a parish charter, which was accordingly done and approved by the Governor, February 19, 1824. The first legal meeting of the parish was held on Monday, March 29, 1824, at which Hon. Nehemiah Cleaveland was chosen moderator; Jacob Towne, Jr., clerk; David Perkins, Thomas Balch and Samuel Hood, committee; and Samuel Hood, treasurer. Deacon Daniel Bixby, who died the following year, bequeathed to this parish the farm known as the "Donation farm," for the support of the ministry. The principal of this fund in 1877 amounted to $5,592.55. The church has beside this fund two hundred dollars, the income of which is to be applied for the support of the ministry.

April 22, 1827, Rev. Mr. Dennis asked for his dismission, because, as he says in his letter, his success does not justify him in continuing here. The parish refused to dismiss him; but on a second application, April 9, 1829, his request was granted. The council for his dismission met May 18, 1829. Rev. Mr. Dennis was born in New Boston, N. H., April 17, 1791. After leaving Topsfield, he was settled at Somers, in Connecticut.

His successor was the Rev. James Frisby McEwen, who was installed on Wednesday, May 5, 1830. He was born in East Hartford, Connecticut, August 25, 1793, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1823. He was first settled at Bridport, in Vermont, where he stayed but a few years. A "root of bitterness," as the parish records call it, sprang up between Mr. McEwen and the church toward the close of the year 1840. A council to consider of his dismission

was held March 10, and his connection with this society ended May 5, 1841. He went to Rye, New Hampshire, where he was installed December 1, 1841. He was settled at Rye but a few years. He then went to West Brattleborough, in Vermont, where he died April 14, 1850.

The next settled minister was Rev. Anson McLoud, of Hartford, in Connecticut, who was ordained here December 8, 1841. He was born in Hartford June 21, 1813, and graduated at Yale College in 1838.

The present church was erected during the ministry of Mr. McLoud, in 1842, at a cost of five thousand dollars. The house was dedicated on Wednesday, February 22, 1843. It occupies the site of its predecessor.

After a period of twenty-eight years, Mr. McLoud's connection with the ministry here was dissolved October 1, 1869. He continued to reside in Topsfield, where he died February 21, 1883. His faithful labors here secured for him a large place in the affections of his people, and the fullest respect of the neighboring churches.

Another pastor was soon settled. This was Rev. Edward P. Tenney, of Boston, who was installed on Wednesday, December 1, 1869. Mr. Tenney found the place uncongenial to his tastes and desires, and resigned September 10, 1870. For several years he has been president of Colorado College, the enterprising and useful college of that state. Mr. Tenney is the author of those little volumes entitled "Agamenticus" and "Coronation."

The next pastor was Rev. James Hill Fitts, of Andover, who was installed June 12, 1871. Mr. Fitts was born in Candia, in New Hampshire, March 3, 1829, and graduated at the Bangor Theological Seminary in 1858. He was ordained as an evangelist November 2, 1859; and first installed at West Boylston, in Massachusetts, September 3, 1862. Mr. Fitts was dismissed here March 22, 1880. He has since that time preached in South Newmarket, in New Hampshire.

The pulpit here was then supplied until Rev. Lyndon S. Crawford was installed September 27, 1883. He was a native of North Adams, in Massachusetts, and was ordained as a missionary in 1879, being stationed at Marisiea, in Western Turkey. He was dismissed at his own request, to return to his missionary labors, October 17, 1886, and immediately entered upon his work in Brousa, in Turkey in Asia.

The present pastor is Rev. Charles Washington Luck, of Marion, Mass., who was ordained here on Wednesday, June 29, 1887. He was born in Cleveland, Ohio, February 2, 1857, and was educated at Harvard College and Andover Theological Seminary, graduating from the latter place in 1887.

The church membership now numbers about one hundred and forty-eight. The Sunday-school in connection with this church, has a membership of about one hundred and sixty-five, and a library of about one thousand volumes.

The parish has a ministerial fund now amounting to six thousand two hundred and ninety-seven dollars, which includes the "Donation Farm" fund of which we have spoken.

A house was presented to the parish by Mr. Joseph E. Stanwood for a parsonage a few years ago. For some reason it was not used for that purpose, and was afterwards sold to Charles H. Holmes, Esq. In the spring of 1886 the mansion house of Mr. Holmes was purchased by the parish, and has become the parsonage.

The parish of which we have been writing is known as the Congregational Parish, and its denominational religious belief is Orthodox Congregational. The only other parish that ever existed in the town is that of the Methodist Episcopal Church. There used to be quite a number of Baptists here, but no such church was ever established.

Methodist Episcopal Church.—Early in the summer of 1830 Charles Dodge and Ezra Glazier, members of the Methodist Church in Ipswich, held meetings in the North School-house in Topsfield, and also in the barn of Captain John Adams. Rev. Jacob Sanborn, who had charge of the Methodist Church in Ipswich, also preached here occasionally, and a number of conversions occurred. In September, 1830, Rev. William Nanseamen, the first regular minister, was sent here by the presiding elder, and October 20th, in the same year, the society was organized with fifteen members. They erected a house of worship the following year, it being raised October 19, 1831. Timothy Munroe, of Lynn, took the contract for building. Its site was on the Newburyport turnpike, near Springville. It was dedicated December 28, 1831. It was forty feet square, and cost six hundred and three dollars. In 1840, January 9th and 10th, the meeting-house was moved on wheels to land of Richard Phillips by fifty yoke of oxen. The new site was given by Mr. Phillips to the society. It was in the north corner of Mr. John B. Lake's house-lot. The present parsonage of the society was erected in 1850, at a cost of seven hundred dollars. Rev. John G. Cary was its first occupant. The present church was erected in 1853, and dedicated June 14, 1854. The church and parsonage are both free from debt. A fine and large organ was placed in the church in 1868, at a cost of nine hundred dollars. A Sabbath-school is held in connection with the church. The list of ministers who have been stationed here is as follows: William Nanseamen, 1830; Asa W. Swinerton, 1830–31; R. D. Esterbrooks, 1831; Thomas Stetson, 1832–33; David Culver, 1833–34; Benjamin King, 1834; Charles McReading, 1834; Henry B. Skinner, 1834–35; John E. Risley, 1836; S. E. Pike, 1836; G. F. Pool, 1836–38; George W. Bates, 1838–39; Chester Field, Jr., 1839–40; L. B. Griffin, 1840–41; Amos Walton, 1841–42; H. C. Dunham, 1842–43;

I. J. P. Colyer, 1843–45; Moses P. Webster, 1845–46; John Poulson, 1846–47; William R. Stone, 1847–49; Kinsman Atkinson, 1849–51; John G. Cary, 1851–53; A. F. Bailey, 1853–54, J. W. Bemis, 1854; S. G. Hiler, Jr., 1854–55; John C. Smith, 1855–56; Franklin Furber, 1856–57; Abraham M. Osgood, 1857–58; George Sutherland, 1858–60; J. W. Lewis, 1860–61; A. D. Merrill, 1861–62; E. S. Snow, 1862–63; F. G. Morris, 1864–66; George E. Chapman, 1866–67; William D. Bridge, 1867–69; S. F. Chase, 1869–70; J. F. Mears, 1870–72; S. A. Fuller, 1872–73; G. W. Buzzell, 1873–75; W. H. Meredith, 1875–77; Stephen Louis Rodgers, 1877–79; George H. Clarke, 1879–82; A. C. Manson, 1882–83; N. H. Martin, 1883–86; James T. Docking, 1886–87, and Paul Carnie, 1887.

Some of these pastors were principals of the Topsfield Academy while they preached here. The society was incorporated by an act of the Legislature, approved by the Governor April 26, 1847. The church has seventy-three members and a fund of two hundred dollars.

Military History.—In Topsfield, as elsewhere, the farmers carried weapons, as well as tools, into the field, and armed sentries used to walk around the church when the people were assembled. In 1673, when the church stood in the cemetery near Mr. Todd's house, a massive stone wall of five or six feet in height and three feet wide, was built around it. A space of ten feet, and on the south side, twelve feet, was left between the wall and the meeting-house. On the southeast corner of the wall was built a watch-house; and a space of four feet was left between the watch-house and the meeting-house, so that the space around the latter would not be obstructed. The watch-house was probably fitted up without windows, and the light was let in through the small loop-holes and the door, when open. It was called in 1706 the "old meeting-house fort." There was a watch-house built to the new meeting-house in 1703, but it was removed before 1738.

In 1676 the General Court ordered that each town should "scout and ward," and clear up the brushwood along the highways, "to prevent the skulking of the enemy," which order was not disregarded, probably, by such men as were the settlers of Topsfield. A garrison-house was built by the early settlers, but it is not known that it was ever needed as a place of resort in an attack by the Indians.

A military company was formed here very early, agreeably to the laws of the colony, with whom the soldiers in Boxford trained until the incorporation of that town in 1685.

An armory was early erected, of which William Smith was the keeper in 1682.

May 27, 1668, the General Court appoints or sanctions Francis Peabody to be lieutenant of the military company here.

October 13, 1680, the General Court order that the troops in this town be enlisted under Major Nathaniel Saltonstall.

In March, 1678-79, the town made a rate of £41 6*s.* 6*d.* to procure powder and bullets with. In 1818 the town voted to build a powder-house to keep the military stores in.

In 1840 all the old military companies belonging to the State were disbanded. A new company had been formed here, called the "Warren Blues," about 1836, which existed for about ten years. In 1841 the town voted to build an armory for them.

Topsfield assisted with the rest of the towns in furnishing men and means in carrying on the Indian wars and the French War. Cleaveland, in his bi-centennial address, says:

"The Rev. Mr. Barnard, of Marblehead, in his autobiography, makes honorable mention of a Captain Boynton, of Topsfield, who commanded a company in the Red Regiment of General March's Brigade, during the unsuccessful attempt upon Port Royal in 1707. In Gage's 'History of Rowley,' I find a notice of Captain Israel Davis, of Topsfield, as commanding a company in the French War. John Baker . . . was an officer in the same service. But enough,—the story of those wearisome and often bloody campaigns, so far as relates to the soldiers of Topsfield, has not come down to us. We know who and what they were; and we feel as well assured that they were faithful and brave, as if we had seen the record of their virtues and deeds on the historic page, or on monumental brass."

Several of the Topsfield soldiers perished at Cape Breton in 1744, and others in different services in the French War; while many, from enduring the fatigues and sufferings of the expeditions, destroyed their health and future usefulness.

In 1755 the removal of the French Acadians took place. The people of Nova Scotia, or Acadia, as it was then called, promised to be neutral between the French and English, but they broke their agreement, and the only way to put an end to the assistance they were rendering to the French, it was deemed by the English authorities, was to depopulate their country and scatter them through New England. The story of their sufferings has been told by Longfellow, in his poem, "Evangeline." One family was sent to Topsfield; it consisted of a man and his wife and five children. The father, aged forty-three years, was named Michael Dugoy; his wife, aged forty-three, was named Elizabeth Dugoy; and their children were Armont, aged fourteen; Mary, aged eleven; Modesty, aged eight; Joseph, aged six; and Anne, aged four years. They arrived in town October 21, 1756. They resided all the time that they lived in Topsfield in the house of David Balch, which stood a few rods south of the residence of Mr. Charles J. P. Floyd. They were supported, when not able to support themselves, by the Province. The head of this family was able to do but little work. In the summer of 1760 they removed to Newbury, and in 1767 Topsfield voted to give them thirty-two dollars to pay their passage to Canada and support them on the voyage.

Cleaveland says, "Tradition long preserved their memory as sad, retiring and inoffensive. Sad they

might well be,—torn from their property and happy homes,—separated from all their kinsfolk and countrymen, and cast among people who could sympathize with them neither in language, nor manners, nor religion."

Captain Samuel Smith, of Topsfield, was chosen by the town to confer with the committee of safety in Boston, in 1768. He was also a member of the Provincial Congress in 1775.

The people here were strongly opposed to the Stamp Act of 1765, and grateful to the Crown when it was removed. In 1770 the town votes to encourage and promote all home manufactures, and to "do every thing that is in their power to enable the merchants to continue in their agreement for the non-importation of goods from Great Britain."

January 20, 1774, the vote which follows was passed by the town: "that we will not buy nor sell any tea that has been or may be exported from Great Britain, until such time as there is a total repeal of the oppressive and unconstitutional act or acts of Parliament for imposing a duty on tea," etc.

October 11, 1774, the following instructions were given to Captain Samuel Smith, to guide him in the deliberations of the Provincial Congress, in which he was to represent the town:

1. "That you use your endeavors that King George ye 3d be acknowledged as our rightful sovereign.

2. "That you use your endeavors that all our constitutional and charter rights and privileges be kept good and inviolable to the latest posterity.

3. "That you do everything to the utmost of your power to prevent any of the late oppressive Acts of Parliament being executed; provided that you do not act anything that is repugnant to what the Continental Congress may resolve."

As independence seemed more and more certain, the town's people express themselves more openly in favor of the independence of the Colonies.

June 14, 1776, they vote "that in case the Honorable Continental Congress shall think fit, for the safety of the united Colonies to declare them independent of the kingdom of Great Britain, this town do solemnly engage to defend and support the measure, both with their lives and fortunes to the utmost of their power."

In March, 1775, the militia company in Topsfield was commanded by Captain Joseph Gould. It formed a part of Colonel John Baker's regiment, and consisted of sixty-three men. On recommendation of the Provincial Congress, a company of "minutemen" were raised, and placed under the command of Captain Stephen Perkins. It numbered forty-seven men. When the alarm of the Battle of Lexington came, April 19, 1775, these two companies immediately marched toward the scene of the conflict. They did not see active service on that day, however, as they arrived after the battle was over.

February 13, 1777, the town voted to give every volunteer eight pounds, in addition to what Congress grants, who will enlist in the American army to serve for three years. A month later the amount was raised to eighteen pounds.

In May, 1778, a rate of one hundred and twenty pounds was assessed to defray the charges of clothing for the soldiers in the continental army.

At different dates votes of the town to hire soldiers are found recorded. The town, in 1780, voted to purchase eight thousand four hundred and forty pounds of beef for the use of the army. In 1777 a committee to look after the soldiers' families, and to aid them, if need be, in procuring the necessaries of life, was appointed by the town.

The names of about three hundred men are found on the muster rolls of the Revolution. They served at Rhode Island, Bennington, Castle Island, Fort George, Ticonderoga and elsewhere. Twenty-seven men served in the company of Captain John Baker, of Topsfield, in Colonel Moses Little's regiment. Twenty served in the company of Captain Robert Dodge, of Ipswich, in Colonel Samuel Johnson's regiment, and General Warren's brigade, in 1777. Twenty-one served in the company of Captain Joshua French, of Salisbury, in Colonel Edward Wigglesworth's regiment in 1776, at Ticonderoga and elsewhere.

August 23, 1808, the town adopted an address to the President of the United States to have the Embargo Act of December 22, 1807, either wholly or partly removed. The declaration of war, five years afterward, was condemned as an unnecessary and useless measure. The town's quotas of men for this war were, however, raised and equipped for service in due time.

The War of the Rebellion came on in its course, and again were the men of Topsfield called to engage in the service of their country. A bounty of one hundred and twenty-five dollars, and later of two hundred dollars, to volunteer soldiers was paid by the town, which furnished one hundred and thirteen soldiers, a surplus of six over all demands. Five of these were commissioned officers.

> "And, with the faith that God would save
> The Union, He, the Father, gave,
> Not only unimpaired, but more
> Substantial than it was before," [1]

the soldiers entered and took prominent parts in the five years' conflict. Five of them perished in Andersonville Prison, how, we know too well. Others were imprisoned there, and in Libby Prison, on Belle Island. Several gave up their lives for their country on the battle-field of Fredericksburg, at Pamunkey River, in the last battle of the Wilderness, and other conflicts with the South. Many others moistened with their blood the soil of Winchester, Va., the banks of the Antietam, Donaldsonville, Port Hudson, and the battle-field of the second battle of Bull Run. Battles of Roanoke Island, Southwest Creek, Kingston, Whitehall, Goldsborough, Ball's Bluff, Edenburg, Mt. Jackson, Strausburg, Cedar Mountain, Rappahannock, Sul-

[1] From the pen of Charles H. Holmes, Esq., and forming part of some resolutions offered by him, and accepted by the town early in the war.

phur Springs, Chantilly, South Mountain, both battles of Port Hudson, and others, were also familiar to the Topsfield "Boys in Blue." At least half a score died in the service of Southern diseases. Several arrived home, only to breathe their last breath among their relatives and friends. The remainder of that brave number had their constitutions more or less undermined, and many who came out of the army apparently well and strong have since died from the effect of their service.

The following is a list of those who gallantly and patriotically gave up their lives for their country in the hospital at the front, in the rebel prison, and on the battle-field: John H. Bradstreet, James Brown (killed at battle of Fredericksburg, Va., December 13, 1862), Moses Deland (killed in battle near Pamunkey River May 30, 1864), Royal Augustus Deland, Swinerton Dunlap (killed in the battle of the Wilderness, 1864), Emerson P. Gould, William H. Hadley, George Prescott Hobson, Francis A. Hood, Daniel Hoyt (died in Andersonville Prison September, 1864), A. A. Kneeland, Henry Porter Kneeland (died in Andersonville Prison October, 1864), John Warren Lake, Lewis H. Perkins, Nathan Hanson Roberts (died in Andersonville Prison, 1864), Daniel H. Smith (died in Andersonville Prison August, 1864), John P. Smith (died in Andersonville Prison, 1864), John Stevens (killed in the last battle of the Wilderness May, 1864), Eugene H. Todd and William Welch, Jr. The town's quota for the navy was eleven, two of whom, William H. H. Foster and John Hoyt, died in the service. The memory of those soldiers and sailors who give up their lives in the service is preserved by having their names engraved on marble tablets, which are secured in a prominent position in the town hall.

The whole amount of money expended by the town, exclusive of State aid, was $14,746.35. The State aid paid to the soldiers' families during the war amounted to $7,634.10. The ladies of Topsfield worked heartily in the cause of the soldiers, and forwarded to the army money, clothing and hospital stores, to the value of five hundred dollars.

Schools, Libraries, Etc.—The first reference on the records of the town to the subject of education is dated March 6, 1693-94, and is as follows: "The Town have agreed that Goodman Lovewell, Schoolmaster, shall live in y^e^ Parsonage house this yeare ensewing, to kepe Schole and swepe y^e^ meeting house." A year later the town vote "that father Lovewell shall in Joy y^e^ house and orchard for y^e^ yeare ensewing on y^e^ same terms as formerly." The town, for a long period, had but a single schoolmaster. He was chosen at the annual town meeting, and was usually a citizen of the town. A room in some private house was hired for a school-room, even as late as 1750. The first school-houses of which the records speak were built between the years 1790 and 1794. In 1790 the town was divided into three school districts, and named the south, middle and north districts. A school-house was erected in each district. The east district was soon after added. The middle, since changed to "Centre" School-House, stood where the town hall stands. In 1867 the town purchased the academy building, and changed the Centre School to this building, having divided the school into a primary and a grammar school. The grammar school is kept in the second story, and the primary school in the first story of the building. The four districts still exist. During the past school year, one hundred and seventy-nine scholars have attended the town schools. The town paid for school expenses, repairs on school buildings, teaching, etc., during the last school year, $2,324.09.

Topsfield Academy.—The academy was established in 1828, and flourished for many years. The preceptors, in chronological order, were Francis Vose, E. D. Sanborn, Alfred W. Pike, Benjamin Greenleaf, Asa Farwell, William F. Kent, Edmund F. Slafter, B. O. Marble, O. Quimby, Joseph E. Noyes, Kinsman Atkinson, Joseph Warren Healey, O. D. Allis and Albert I.a Dutton. Mr. Dutton discontinued the school in 1860. The property came into the possession of Asahel Huntington, Esq., of Salem, of whom the town purchased it for a school-house in 1867.

In the list of preceptors given above are several who were quite distinguished in different ways. The well-known mathematician, Benjamin Greenleaf, the widely-known secretary of the New England Historico-Genealogical Society, Mr. Edmund F. Slafter, the Methodist clergyman, Rev. Kinsman Atkinson, and another clergyman, Rev. Albert I. Dutton, are deserving men. The academy occupied a central location, on an elevation, which made it the highest building in the village. Several of the young men who passed an academical course here have become distinguished, and many others have been making the world better for the instruction they received and the habits they acquired under the tutelage of these instructors.

Social Library.—A proprietor's library was established here in 1794, by several of the leading men of the town. It contained two hundred volumes. It existed until 1875, when the present public library was opened to the public, and the old library was incorporated with the new, but being kept separately in its old cases.

Public Library.—The public library was founded in 1875. A room was given to the use of the library in the town hall, and fitted up for its accommodation. The following-named gentlemen were appointed by the town, a committee for establishing the library: Sidney A. Merriam, Rev. Anson McLoud, Mr. Humphrey Balch, Rev. James H. Fitts and Dr. Justin Allen. Mr. Merriam, Mr. Blake and others contributed to the library. Mr. McLoud was librarian for several years from the organization of the library;

since his service ended several others have filled the office. The books are quite well selected, and the library contains some valuable works.

The library of the late Mr. McLoud, which was purchased by Mr. A. A. Low, of Brooklyn, N. Y., has been presented by him to the town intact. It is kept by itself, and forms a valuable and extensive addition to works already collated.

There are thirty-six hundred and thirty-six volumes now in the library. The late Sidney A. Merriam at his decease, bequeathed to the library a bond of one thousand dollars, the interest on which to be applied semi-annually, to the purchase of books. The fund of the library now amounts to two thousand dollars. Besides the interest on this fund, the town makes an annual appropriation for the library. The library is controlled by a committee consisting of four gentlemen. In its present flourishing condition the library cannot fail to be a great educator. It furnishes what is needed and desired by the young and the old, and is a continual blessing to the town.

Business, Manufacturing, Etc.—The leading business of Topsfield is, as it has always been, agriculture. Many other and important branches of business and manufacturing have at different times been carried on.

As early as 1648 mining was an interesting, if not profitable, pursuit here. Governor Endicott owned an extensive tract of land here in 1639, and in 1648 a copper mine was discovered upon it. Mr. Leader, a metallurgist, then superintending the Lynn ironworks, having expressed a favorable opinion of the ore, Mr. Endicott spent considerable money in working his mine, which is situated near the productive Peirce farm, on the turnpike. More than one hundred and twenty years after its discovery it was reopened and worked for a short time with considerable loss to the proprietors. Again, after another interval of about seventy years, a company of Salem capitalists caused the old shaft to be cleared out, and the ore subjected to analysis. The result was that the excavation was once more filled up, never again probably to be disturbed.

Iron ore was dug in the low-lands, to a considerable extent, by the early settlers. June 17, 1681, the town ordered "that there shall bee noe boge mine doge in ye Towne but by some townes men: and hee that dos dige et shall Carey et with his one teme or hieree a townes man to Carey et alwayes provieded hee that diges it a grees with the selectmen of the Towne to pay fouer pence a ton for the Townes Vse either in Silver or Iron and this order stands in force" only one year.[1] Ten days later "Ensign Gould" was granted liberty to dig twenty tons of bog iron. Lieutenant Francis Peabody also received the same liberty.

Bricks were manufactured in Topsfield before 1697.

[1] Town Records, Vol. I., p. 25.

Probably the earliest hotel in the town occupied the site of the shoe-factory of Mr. John Bailey. The Clark family carried on the business here for many years before 1780. Daniel Clark, Sr., and Daniel Clark, Jr., were the proprietors at different times. In 1784 the son removed to New Rowley, now Georgetown, and the hotel here came into the hands of Samuel Hood. Later it became the property of John Rea, who conducted the business for several years. On the night of October 16, 1836, the whole establishment, house, barn and store which were connected, were destroyed by fire. When the turnpike was built a large and substantial hotel was erected by the turnpike corporation on Town Hill. This flourished until the railroad was completed, in 1854. Several stages carrying many passengers ran over the turnpike daily. This was the popular and only public conveyance then existing to Boston, Newburyport and other places. The "Topsfield House" was built by Thomas Meady about 1807, for a store and a house of entertainment. In 1817 Mr. Meady removed to Philadelphia. Then Ephraim Wildes kept the hotel for about two years. In or about 1820 William Munday commenced the butchering business there, and after a few years reopened the tavern, his son, Thomas Perkins Munday, being engaged with him. The hotel has been retained in the family to the present time. Mr. Dalmer J. Carleton is the present landlord. It is now the only public house in the town.

The earliest blacksmith in the town, probably, was Samuel Howlett, who was invited by the town to set up his forge here in 1658. Mr. Ira Long carries on the only shop now in town.

The first mill in the town was erected by Lieutenant Francis Peabody in 1672, on the site of the present "Towne's grist-mill." The next mill was probably that erected by Thomas Howlett, on Howlett's Brook, in the east part of the town, in 1736. This was a grist-mill. He built a saw-mill there two or three years later. In 1746 he sold out to Nathaniel Hood, who, in 1748, transferred it to Abraham Hobbs. The mills remained in the Hobbs family until 1813, when they passed into the hands of the Perkinses. In 1878 the property was purchased and the grist-mill has since been run by Mr. Wellington Donaldson. The saw-mill was gone many years ago.

In 1835 there were three country grocery stores in the town. One of these was kept by Frederic and Nathaniel Perley. The store was built by Frederic Perley about 1828, and about 1841 the two brothers went to Danvers. Then the late Benjamin P. Adams and Samuel Adams carried on the business for several years, and after Samuel Adams left the firm his brother, Benjamin P. Adams, continued in the business until his death, in 1875. From the time of his decease to 1883 his son, Benjamin P. Adams, Jr., kept it. In the spring of 1883 the store was reopened by Mr. J. Bailey Poor, who had carried on the busi-

ness of a country store on the opposite side of the street for several years. The grocery of Mr. William B. Kimball was built by his father, Mr. William E. Kimball, in 1841. The latter gentleman conducted the business from that date to January 1, 1869, having Mr. Andrew Gould for a partner from 1848 to 1853, and his son, Mr. William B. Kimball, from 1864 to January 1, 1869, when the son purchased his father's interest, and has since carried on the business.

Mr. Benjamin P. Edwards is the apothecary and druggist, Mr. Abijah B. Richardson the tin-worker and hardware dealer, Mr. Thomas Leach and Mr. James Wilson wheelwrights, and Mr. Jacob Hardy is the harness maker. There are telephone and Western Union telegraph offices in the town.

The only shoe firm doing much business at the present time is that of Mr. Charles Herrick, who uses steam-power and carries on considerable business.

Mr. Isaac Woodbury and Mr. William P. Gould are quite extensive butchers.

Distinguished Natives.—Topsfield has been the birth place of many distinguished business, literary and public men. Among them are good numbers of clergymen, lawyers, physicians and statesmen. Through the instrumentality of its sons, the town has obtained a good reputation abroad. The following is a partial list of the more noted natives:—

Rev. Daniel Perkins (1696–1782[1]). He graduated at Harvard College in 1717; and was a minister at West Bridgewater, Mass.

Rev. Ivory Hovey, M.D. (1714–1803). He graduated at Harvard College in 1735. He was a clergyman and physician at Rochester and Plymouth, Mass.

Gen. Nathaniel Peabody (1741–1823). He was a soldier, statesman and physician.

Rev. Nathaniel Porter, D.D. (1745–1837). He graduated at Harvard College in 1768. He was the first minister of Conway, and also preached at New Durham, N. H.

Rev. Joseph Cummings (1752–91). He graduated at Harvard College in 1768. He was the first minister at Marlborough, N. H.

Rev. Daniel Gould (1753–1842). He graduated at Harvard College in 1782. He was a clergyman, and preached in Bethel and Rumford, Me.

Jacob Kimball, Esq. (1761–1826). He graduated at Harvard College in 1788. He practiced law at Amherst, N. H., and was quite distinguished as a composer of music. He was the author of the "Rural Harmony," published in 1793.

Judge David Cummings (1785–1855). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1806. He was a prominent lawyer in Salem, and judge of the Circuit Court of Common Pleas.

Hon. Daniel Breck, LL.D. (1788–1852). He was an able jurist, and a member of Congress from Kentucky, where he resided.

[1] The first date is that of the birth, the second that of the person's death.

Israel Balch, M.D. (1788–18—). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1811. He was a physician in Salisbury.

Dr. Josiah Lamson (1789–18—). He graduated at Harvard College in 1814. He was a physician in Essex.

Rev. Jacob Hood (1791–1886). He was a clergyman in Hopkinton, N. H., and in Middleton and Lynnfield, Mass.

Rev. Ebenezer Perkins (1794–18—). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1814, and was a clergyman in Royalston, Mass.

Prof. Nehemiah Cleaveland (1796–18—). He graduated at Bowdoin College in 1813. He was for twenty years principal of Dummer Academy.

Elisha Huntington, M.D. (1796–1865). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1815. He was a physician, the first mayor of Lowell, and lieutenant-governor of Massachusetts.

Dr. Humphrey Gould (1797-1874). He graduated at Williams College in 18—. He was a physician in Danvers and Rowe, Mass.

Asahel Huntington, Esq. (1798–1870). He graduated at Yale College in 1819. He was a lawyer in Salem, mayor of the city, and district-attorney.

Rev. Jonas Merriam (1803–71). He graduated at Bowdoin College in 1826; and was a minister in Barnard, Me.

John Cleaveland, Esq. (1804– —). He graduated at Bowdoin College in 1826; and was a lawyer in New York City.

Rev. David Peabody (1805– —). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1828. He was a clergyman at Lynn and Worcester, Mass., and a professor in Dartmouth College.

Rev. Elisha Lord Cleaveland, D.D. (1806–66). He graduated at Bowdoin College in 1829. He was an able divine, and preached at New Haven, Conn.

Rev. George Hood (1807–82). A clergyman at Chester, Pa., and Southport, N. Y.

Rev. Josiah Peabody (1807– —). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1836. He was a missionary to the Armenians at Erzroom, in Turkey.

Rev. Samuel Lamson Gould (1809). He graduated at Medical School of Bowdoin College in 1832; and was a physician at Sunapee, Searsport and Orrington, Me., and preached at Boothbay, Albany, Phillips and Bethel, Me.

Cyrus Cummings, Esq. (1816–8–). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1839; and was a lawyer in Boston.

Rev. Alpheus J. Pike (1828). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 18—. He is a clergyman in Dakota.

John Augustus Lamson, M.D. (1831). He was a physician in Boston.

Rev. Gustavus D. Pike (1831–84). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 185–, and was a clergyman.

Prof. Albert Cornelius Perkins (1833). He graduat-

ed at Dartmouth College in 1860; and is principal of Adelphi Academy, Brooklyn, N. Y.

Prof. John Wright Perkins (1841). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1866. He is the principal of Dummer Academy.

MEMBERS OF THE STATE LEGISLATURE.

REPRESENTATIVES.

1630. Lieut. John Gould.
1690-94. Lieut. Thos. Baker.
1694. John Gould.
1695-97. Cor. Tobijah Perkins.
1698. Lieut. Thos. Baker.
1699-1700. Q.M. Tobijah Perkins.
1702-3. Lieut. Eph. Dorman.
1704. Sergt. John Hovey.
Sergt. Dan'l Redington.
1705-6. Elisha Perkins.
1707. Isaac Peabody.
17 8. Lieut. Thos. Baker.
1709. Lieut. Tobijah Perkins.
1711. Lieut. Tobijah Perkins.
1712-13. Cor. Jacob Towne.
1714-15. Lieut. Tobijah Perkins.
1716. Sergt. Daniel Clark.
1717-18. Deacon Samuel Howlett.
1719. Ens. Timothy Perkins.
1720-21. Capt. Tobijah Perkins.
1721. Nathaniel Porter.
1722. Daniel Clark.
1723. Ens. Timothy Perkins.
1724. John Hovey.
1725. Deacon John Howlett.
1726. Capt. Joseph Gould.
1727. Q.M. Nath'l Bordman.
1728-31. Capt. Joseph Gould.
1732-33. Jacob Peabody.
1734-36. Capt. Joseph Gould.
1737. Nathaniel Bordman.
1738. Capt. Joseph Gould.
1739. Jacob Peabody.
1740-41. Nathaniel Bordman.
1742-45. Jacob Peabody.
1747-49. Jacob Peabody.
1751. David Balch.
1753-54. Elijah Porter.
1756. Elijah Porter.
1757-58. John Gould.
1760-61. John Gould.
1762. Elijah Porter.
1764-66. Lieut. Samuel Smith.
1767-72. Capt. Samuel Smith.
1773-76. Deacon John Gould.
1777. Capt. Samuel Smith.
1778. Deacon John Gould.
1779. Zaccheus Gould.
Eliezer Lake.
A. Hobbs (to Concord).
178[illegible]. Zaccheus Gould.
Capt. Stephen Perkins.
1781. Samuel Smith.
1783-85. Abraham Hobbs.
1786. Capt. Stephen Perkins.
1787. Thos. Emerson.
1792-93. Sylvanus Wildes.
1796. Sylvanus Wildes.
1799. Rev Asahel Huntington.
1802. Sylvanus Wildes.
1806-14. Nathaniel Hammond.
1816. Nathaniel Hammond.
1823. Col. Ephraim Wildes.
1827. Jacob Towne, Jr.
1829-30. Jacob Towne, Jr.
1833-35. Jacob Towne, Jr.
1837. Charles H. Holmes.
1838. Nathaniel Perley.
1839. Asa Pingree.
1840. Joseph W. Batchelder.
1842. Cyrus Cummings.
1843. Charles C. Brackett.
1844. Samuel Todd.
1846. Dr. Jos. C. Batchelder.
1848. Charles Herrick.
1849. Thos. Gould.
1852. Samuel S. McKenzie.
1854. Nathaniel Conant.
1863. Nathaniel Conant.
1867. Jacob P. Towne.
1871. Rev. Anson McLoud.
1874. Salmon D. Hood.
1878. Dudley Bradstreet.
1881. John H. Potter.
1884. John H. Towne.

SENATORS.

1811. Dr. Nehe. Cleaveland.
1815-18. Dr. Nehe. Cleaveland.
1842. Asa Pingree.

TREASURERS.—The constables generally served as treasurers until 1743.

CONSTABLES.

1672. John Hovey.
1673. Ephraim Dorman.
1674. Edmond Towne.
1676-77. John How.
1678. Samuel Howlat.
1679. Wm. Perkins, Jr.
1680. Cor. Wm. Smith.
1681. Tobijah Perkins.
1682. Daniel Redington.
1683-84. Cor. Wm. Smith.
1685. Elisha Perkins.
1686. Deacon Isaac Comings.
1687. Thos. Perkins.
1688. Lieut. Thos. Baker.
1689. Mr. Timothy Perkins.
1690. Ens. Jacob Towne.
John Towne.
Michael Dwinell.
1708. John French.
Amos Dorman.
1709. John Hovey.
Joseph Towne (treas).
1710. Thos. Robinson.
Zaccheus Gould.
1711. John Averell.
John Curtis.
1712. Nathaniel Borman.
Nathaniel Porter.
1713. Thos. Town.
Jacob Easty.
1714. Cor. Joseph Gould.
Thos. Cave.
1715. Jacob Peabody.
John Burton.
1716. Wm. Towne.
Job Averell.
1717. Thos. Gould.
Edward Putnam.
1718. Ivory Hovey.
Elisha Putnam.
1719. Symon Bradstreet.
1720. Wm. Porter.
Jesse Dorman.
1721. Joseph Robinson.
Michael Dwinell.
1722. Thos. Dwinell.
David Balch.
1723. Cor. Jacob Robinson.
Benj. Knight.
1724. Eliezer Lake.
Edman Towne.
1725. Jacob Dorman.
Benj. Towne.
1726-28. Nathaniel Porter.
1729-38. Ivory Hovey.
1739-42. Richard Towne.

TREASURERS.

1695-96. Cor. Tobijah Perkins.
1719. Ens. John Gould.
1743-48. Jacob Peabody.
1749. George Bixby.
1751-52. Benj. Towne.
1753 Nathaniel Porter.
1754-55. Capt. Thos. Baker.
1756-58. Richard Towne.
1759-63. Stephen Foster.
1764-75. Elijah Porter.
1776-81. Jeremiah Averell.
1782-87. Stephen Foster.
1788-89. Nathaniel Hammond.
1790-92. Daniel Bixby.
1793-99. David Perkins, Jr.
1800-9. Daniel Bixby.
1810-13. Jonas Meriam.
1814. Cyrus Cummings.
1815. Samuel Hood.
1816-17. Moses Wildes.
1818-22. Samuel Hood.
1824-25. John Peabody.
1826-30. Isaac Killam.
1831-33. Samuel Gould.
1834. Dr. Jeremiah Stone.
1835-36. Joel Lake.
1837. Joel Lake.
1837-38. Asa Pingree.
1839. John G. Hood.
1840. Wm. Hubbard.
1841-50. Benj. C. Perkins.
1850. John G. Hood.
1851-52. John Wright.
1853-61. Benj. Kimball.
1862-64. Nehemiah Balch.
1865-67. Jeremiah Balch.
1868-81. J. Porter Gould.
1882-87. John Gould.

TOWN CLERKS.

1676-81. Lieut. Francis Peabody.
1682-85. John Gould.
1686-1701. Sergt. Eph. Dorman.
1702-17. Samuel Stanley.
1718-20. Nathaniel Porter.
1721-34. Jacob Peabody.
1735-36. John Hovey.
1737-49. Jacob Peabody.
1749-62. Richard Towne.
1763. Elijah Porter.
1764-65. David Balch.
1766-75. Elijah Porter.
1776-77. Capt. Samuel Smith.
1778-90. Capt. Stephen Perkins.
1791-1809. Nathaniel Hammond.
1810-36. Jacob Towne.
1836-78. Jacob P. Towne.
1878. Ezra Towne (*pro tem.*).
1879-80. Edward S. Towne.
1880. Ezra Towne.
1881. Frank L. Winslow.
1881-87. John H. Gould.

SELECTMEN.

1659.
Ensign Howlet.
frances pebody.
John Redington.

1663.
John Gould.

1668.
frances Pabody.
John Gould.
Thomas Baker.
Daniel Borman.

1673.
Lieut. ffrances Pebody.
Thomas Perkins.
Thomas Baker.
Edman Townes.

1676.
Mr. thomas Baker.
Epheram dorman.
Sargen Redington.
francis Pabody.
decon Perkens.

1677.
Ensigne Goold.
Sargen towne.
decon Perkins.
John Redington.
frances pabody.

1678.
Mr. thomas baker.
Sack Comings.
John hovey.
frances Pabody.
Ensign Goold.

1679.
Ensign Gould.
mr. thomas baker.
Sargen Redington.
Jacob towne.
frances Pabody.

1680.
mr. thomas baker.
Sargen Redington.
Corpl. Jacob towne.
John hovey.
frances Pabody.

1681.
Ensign goold.
Isack Este.
Ephraam dorman.
frances Pabody.
Samuel howlet.

1682.
Lieut. Pebody.
Sargt. Redington.
Deckon Perkins.
Corpl. Townes.
John Gonld.

1683.
Mr. Thomas Baker.
Isacke Estey, clerke.
Sargt. Ephraim Dorman.
Samuel Howlett.
John Gould.

1684.
Sargt. Redington.
Corpl. Jacob Townes.
John Hovey.
Thomas Dorman.
John Gould, Sr.

1685.
Sargt. Redington.
Lieut. Thomas Baker.
Sargt. Ephraim Dorman.
Samuel Howlett.
John Gould.

1686.
Lieut. Gould.
Corpl. John Hovey.
Mr. Tobijah Perkins.
Ephraim Dorman.
Lieut. Thomas Baker.

1687.
Capt. John How.
Isaac Easty, Sr.
Sammuell Howlett.
Thomas Dorman.
Ephraim Dorman.

1688.
Sargt. Easty.
Sargt. Thomas Dorman.
Sargt. Samuell Howlet.
William Averell, Sr.
Mr. William Perkins.
Corpl. Daniel Redington.

1689.
Lieut. Baker.
Lieut Gould.
Sargt. John Hovey.
Mr. Tobijah Parkins.
Ephraim Dorman.

1690.
Corpl. Dan'l Redington.
Thomas Perkins.
Sargt. Thomas Dorman.
Sargt. Sammuell Houlet.
Corpl. Samuel Standly.

1691.
Capt. John How.
Mr. Tobijah Perkins.
Phillip Knight.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Ephraim Dorman.

1692.
Lieut. Thomas Baker.
Sargt. Hovey.
Corpl. Tobijah Perkins.
Corpl. Redington.
Ephraim Dorman.

1693.
Capt. John Gould.
Sargt. Thos. Dorman.
Sargt. Saml. Howlet.
Ens. Jacob Towne.
Corpl. Joan Gould.

1694.
Corpl. Tobijah Perkins.
Isaac Peabody.
Elisha Perkins.
Joseph Towne, Jr.
Ephraim Dorman.

1695.
Sargt. Thos. Dorman.
Corpl. Tobijah Perkins.
Elisha Perkins.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Ephraim Dorman.

1696.
Corpl. Tobijah Perkins.
Sargt. Samuel Howlet.
Eph. Dorman.
William Towne.
Isaac Easty, Jr.

1697.
Sargt. Redington.
Sargt. Howlet.
Corpl. Perkins.
Corpl. Standley.
Elisha Perkins.

1698.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Daniel Clarke.
Capt How.
Elisha Perkins.
Ephraim Wilds.

1699.
Q M. Tobijah Perkins.
Jac. Towne, Jr.
Sargt. Saml. Howlet.
Elisha Perkins.
Isaac Pabody.

1700.
Ens. Saml. Howlet.
Capt. John How.
Q.M. Tobijah Perkins.
Isaac Pabody.
Jacob Towne, Jr.

1701.
Capt. John How.
Sargt. Samuel Standley.
Elisha Perkins.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Ephraim Dorman, Sr.

1702.
Corpl. Joseph Towne.
Sargt. Saml. Standly.
Mr. Timothy Perkins.
Isaac Pabody.
Sargt. John Gould.

1703.
Deacon Thos. Dorman.
Corpl. Jacob Towne.
Elisha Perkins.
Isaac Estey, Jr.
Samuel Stanley.

1704.
Sargt. John Gould.
Thomas Perley.
John Cnmings.
Ebenezer Averell.
Samuel Stanley.

1705.
Ebenezer Averell.
Thomas Perley.
Sargt. Danl Redington.
Clerk Elisha Perkins.
Corpl. Joseph Towne.

1706.
Lieut. Eph. Dorman.
Sargt. D. Redington.
Clerk Elisha Perkins.
Sargt. John Hovey.
Corpl. John Curtis.

1707.
Deacon Saml. Howlett.
Ebenezer Averell.
Thomas Howlett.
Corpl. Joseph Towne.
Saml. Stanley.

1708.
Lieut. Tob. Perkins.
Corpl. Jacob Towne.
Ebenezer Averell.
Isaac Estey.
Saml. Stanley.

1709.
Lieut. Tob. Perkins.
Corpl. Joseph Towne.
Lieut. Eph. Dorman.
Thomas Howlett.
Saml. Stanley.

1710.
Clerk Elisha Perkins.
Jacob Towne.
Ebenezer Averell.
John Curtis
SamuelStanley.

1711.
Lieut. Tobijah Perkins.
Deacon Samuel Howlett.
Thomas Howlett.
Joseph Towne.
Samuel Stanley.

1712.
Sargt. Thomas Howlett.
Corpl. Joseph Towne.
Clerk Elisha Perkins.
Amos Dorman.
John ffrench.

1713.
Deacon Saml. Howlett.
Corpl. Jacob Towne.
Ebenezer Averell.
Joseph Towne (treas).
Samuel Stanley.

1714.
Nathaniel Porter.
John Hovey.
Ephraim Wilds.
Zaccheus Gould.
Samuel Stanley.

1715.
Corpl. Joseph Towne.
Ebenezer Averell.
Amos Dorman.
Joseph Borman.
Deacon Samuel Howlett.

1716.
Clerk Elisha Perkins.
Ebenezer Averell.
John Hovey.
Amos Dorman.
Thomas Robinson.

1717.
Deacon Samuel Howlett.
Corpl. Joseph Towne.
Michael Dwinell.
Jacob Peabody.
Samuel Stanley.

1718.
John Howlett.
Amos Dorman.
Ens. John Gonld.
Jacob Peabody.
Nathaniel Porter.

1719.
Jacob Towne.
John Hovey.
John Howlett.
Jacob Peabody.
Nathaniel Porter.

1720.
Ephraim Wilds.
Ivory Hovey.
Sargt. Joseph Gould.
Joseph Towne.
Eliezer Lake.

1721.
Thomas Gould.
Lieut. Thomas Baker.
Ivory Hovey.
Amos Dorman.
Jacob Peabody.

1722.
Sargt. John Howlett.
Isaac Peabody.
Lieut. Thomas Baker.
John Nichols.
Q.M. Ephraim Wilds.

1723.
Corpl. Nathaniel Borman.
Deacon John Howlett.
Thomas Gould.
Elisha Putnam.
Jacob Peabody.

1724.
Nathaniel Porter.
Deacon John Howlett.
Joseph Towne.
Elisha Perkins.
John Hovey.

1725.
John Hovey.
Jacob Estey.
William Porter.
Michael Dwinell.
Deacon John Howlett.

1726.
Ens. Amos Dorman.
Capt. Joseph Gould.
Sargt. Thomas Robinson.
Simon Bradstreet.
Jacob Peabody.

1727.
Q.M. Nathaniel Bordman.
Corpl. Jacob Towne.
Benjamin Towne.
Thomas Gould.
William Redington.

1728.
Eus. Amos Dorman.
Zaccheus Gould.
Q.M. Nathaniel Bordman.
Ivory Hovey.
William Redington.

1729.
Deacon John Howlett.
Benjamin Towne.
Eliezer Lake.
David Balch.
Jacob Peabody.

1730.
Benjamin Towne.
Jesse Dorman.
Q.M. Nathaniel Bordman.
John Willdes.
John Perkins.

1731.
Capt. John Howlett.
Joseph Herrick.
John Willdes.
Benjamin Towne.
Jacob Peabody.

1732.
Thomas Gould.
Q.M. Nathl. Bordman.
George Byxbe.
Richard Towne.
Joseph Dorman.

1733.
Capt. John Howlett.
David Balch.
John Wildes.
William Redington.
Tobijah Perkins.

1734.
Nathaniel Porter.
Capt. Joseph Gould.
Eliezer Lake.
Joseph Robinson.
Benjamin Towne.

1735.
Deacon John Howlett.
Deacon Jacob Peabody.
Richard Towne.
Benjamin Towne.
Mathew Peabody.

1736.
Deacon Ivory Hovey.
David Balch.
Jacob Redington.
George Byxby.
Luke Averell.

1737.
Jacob Dorman.
John Wilds.
Benjamin Towne.
Lieut. Zaccheus Gould.
Daniel Redington.

1738.
Joseph Herrick.
Daniel Redington.
David Cummings.
Benjamin Towne.
Joseph Perkins.

1739.
Benjamin Towne.
Lieut. Tobijah Perkins.
Daniel Gould.
John Wildes.
Daniel Redington.

1740.
Capt. Joseph Gould.
Benjamin Towne.
Daniel Redington.
Phineas Redington.
Thomas Baker.

1741.
Lieut. Benjamin Towne.
Capt. John Wildes.
George Byxbe.
Thomas Baker.
Daniel Redington.

1742.
George Bixby.
Thomas Baker.
Daniel Gould.
Mathew Peabody.
Richard Towne.

1743.
Thomas Baker.
Capt. Tobijah Perkins.
David Cummings.
Israel Clark.
Mathew Peabody.

1744.
Thomas Baker.
Mathew Peabody.
Benjamin Towne.
Israel Clark.
David Cummings.

1745.
Solomon Gould.
Capt. Tobijah Perkins.
Richard Towne.
Daniel Redington.
Capt. John Wildes.

1746.
Capt. John Wildes.
Capt. Tobijah Perkins.
Richard Towne.
Solomon Gould.
Daniel Redington.

1747.
Capt. John Wildes.
Richard Towne.
Thomas Baker.
Benjamin Towne.
Nathaniel Averell, Jr.

1748.
Capt. John Wildes.
Richard Towne.
Nathaniel Averell, Jr.
Thomas Baker.
Lieut. Benjamin Towne.

1749.
Richard Towne.
Capt. John Wildes.
David Balch.
John Gould.
George Bixby.
Mathew Peabody and Samuel Smith in place of G. B. and R. T.

1750.
Lieut. Benjamin Towne.
John Gould.
Mathew Peabody.
Capt. John Wildes.
Elijah Porter.

1751.
Elijah Porter.
Lieut. Benjamin Towne.
John Gould.
Samuel Smith.
Mathew Peabody.

1752.
Jacob Averell.
Capt. Benjamin Towne.
Clerk Samuel Smith.
Elijah Porter.
Q.M. Daniel Clark.

1753.
Capt. Benjamin Towne.
Jacob Averell.
Samuel Smith.
Dan Clark.
Elijah Porter.

1754.
Capt. Benj. Towne.
Jacob Averell.
Q. M. Dan Clark.
Samuel Smith.
Elijah Porter.

1755.
Capt. Benjamin Towne.
Dan Clark.
Elijah Porter.
Samuel Smith.
Jacob Averell.

1756.
Cornet Mathew Peabody.
Capt. Thomas Baker.
Lieut. Nathaniel Porter.
John Gould.
David Balch.

1757.
Samuel Smith.
Capt. Benjamin Towne.
John Gould.
Cornet Mathew Peabody.
Elijah Porter.

1758.
Lieut. Nathl. Porter.
John Gould.
David Balch.
Daniel Bixby.
David Perkins.

1759.
John Gould.
David Perkins.
David Balch, Jr.
Daniel Bixby.
Stephen Perkins.

1760.
Capt. Benj. Towne.
Elijah Porter.
Richard Towne.
John Gould.
David Balch, Jr.

1761.
Capt. John Bordman.
Stephen Perkins
Jeremiah Averell.
Capt. Thomas Baker.
Simon Gould.

1762.
Stephen Perkins.
Jeremiah Averell.
John Balch.
Simon Gould.
Joseph Andrews.

1763.
Jeremiah Averell.
Joseph Andrews.
Stephen Perkins.
John Balch.
Zaccheus Gould.

1764.
Jeremiah Averell
Daniel Bixby.
Zaccheus Gould.
Samuel Cummings
David Balch, Jr.

1765.
Jeremiah Averell.
Daniel Bixby.
Zaccheus Gould.
Stephen Perkins.
John Perkins, Jr.

1766.
Daniel Bixby.
Zaccheus Gould.
Jeremiah Averell.
John Perkins, Jr.
Stephen Perkins.

1767.
Zaccheus Gould.
John Perkins, Jr.
Jeremiah Averell.
Stephen Perkins.
Daniel Bixby.

1768.
Elisha Wildes.
Zaccheus Gould.
Jeremiah Averell.
Stephen Perkins.
Daniel Bixby.

1769.
Elisha Wildes.
Stephen Perkins.
Jeremiah Averell.
Daniel Bixby.
Zaccheus Gould.

1770.
Stephen Perkins.
Daniel Bixby.
Zaccheus Gould.
Solomon Dodge.
Joseph Gould.

1771.
Thomas Mower.
Capt. Saml. Smith.
Elijah Porter.
Abraham Hobbs.
Samuel Bradstreet.

1772.
Capt. Saml. Smith.
Abraham Hobbs.
Samuel Bradstreet.
Thomas Mower.
Stephen Perkins.

1773.
Stephen Perkins.
Thos. Mower.
Capt. Saml. Smith.
Daniel Bixby.
Zaccheus Gould.

1774.
Stephen Perkins.
Daniel Bixby.
Capt. Saml. Smith.
Zaccheus Gould.
Thomas Mower.

1775.
Capt. Saml. Smith.
Capt. Stephen Perkins.
Israel Clark, Jr.
John Peabody.
Thomas Mower.

1776.
Israel Clark, Jr.
Saml. Smith.
Capt. Stephen Perkins.
John Peabody.
Thomas Mower.

1777.
Capt. Stephen Perkins.
Thomas Mower.
John Peabody.
Israel Clark, Jr.
Saml. Smith.

1778.
Maj. Joseph Gould.
Joseph Cummings.
Thomas Porter.
Jacob Kimball.
Isaac Averell.

1779.
Maj. Joseph Gould.
Zaccheus Gould.
Daniel Bixby.
Joseph Cummings, Jr.
Isaac Averell.

1780.
Thomas Emerson.
Moses Perkins.
David Towne.
David Balch, Jr.
Stephen Foster.

1781.
Samuel Smith.
Zaccheus Gould.
Stephen Foster.
Nathaniel Averell, Jr.
Daniel Bixby.

1782.
Samuel Smith.
Zaccheus Gould.
Daniel Bixby.
Nathaniel Averell.
Josiah Lamson.

1783.
Daniel Bixby.
Zaccheus Gould.
Nathaniel Averell.
Josiah Lamson.
David Towne.

1784.
Zaccheus Gould.
David Towne.
Nathl. Averell.
Josiah Lamson.
Jonathan Cummings.

1785.
Zaccheus Gould.
Josiah Lamson.
Daniel Bixby.
David Perkins, Jr.
Jacob Kimball.

1786.
Daniel Bixby.
Josiah Lamson.
Jacob Kimball.
David Perkins, Jr.
Roger Balch.

1787.
Roger Balch.
Josiah Lamson.
Dr. John Merriam.
Daniel Bixby.
Henry Bradstreet.

1788.
Daniel Bixby.
Capt. John Baker.
Roger Balch.
Nathaniel Hammond.
Jacob Kimball.

1789.
Daniel Bixby.
Roger Balch.
John Batchelder.
Jacob Kimball.
Nathl. Hammood.

1790.
Nathl. Hammond.
Jonathan Cummings.
Jacob Kimball.
Isaac Averell.
Nathaniel Fisk.

1791.
Jacob Kimball.
Isaac Averell.
Nathl. Fisk.
Ezra Perkins.
Nathaniel Hammond.

1792.
Jacob Kimball.
Isaac Averell.
Nathl. Fisk.
Ezra Perkins.
Nathl. Hammond.

1793.
Daniel Bixby.
Josiah Lamson.
Ezra Perkins.
Nathaniel Hammond.
Zaccheus Gould.

1794.
Zaccheus Gould.
Josiah Lamson.
Daniel Bixby.
Lieut. Isaac Averell.
Nathl. Hammond.

1795.
Jonathan Cummings.
Benj. Bixby.
John Rea, Jr.
Lieut. Isaac Averell.
Samuel Bradstreet.

1796.
Benj. Bixby.
John Rea, Jr,
Samuel Bradstreet.
Nathl. Hammond.
Dudley Bradstreet.

1797.
Benj. Bixby.
John Rea, Jr.
Nathl. Hammond.
Samuel Bradstreet.
Dudley Bradstreet.

1798.
Thomas Perkins, Jr.
Elijah Averell.
Nathl. Hammond.
John Peabody, Jr.
David Cummings.

1799.
Thomas Perkins, Jr.
Nathl. Hammood.
David Cummings.
John Peabody, Jr.
Jacob Towne (3d).

1800.
Nathl. Hammond.
David Cummings.
John Peabody, Jr.
Jacob Towne (3d).
Moses Bradstreet.

1801.
Dudley Bradstreet.
Jonas Meriam.
Jonathan Cummings.
Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland.
N. Perkins Averell.

1802.
Jonathan Cummings.
Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland.
Jonas Meriam.
Dudley Bradstreet.
N. P. Averell.

1803
Jonathan Cummings.
Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland.
Lieut. Jonas Meriam.
Nathl. Hammond.
Jacob Towne (3d).

1804.
Nathl. Hammond.
Jonas Meriam.
Jacob Towne (3d).
Robert Perkins.
Joseph Batchelder.

1805.
Nathl. Hammond.
Jonas Meriam.
Jacob Towne (3d).
Robert Perkins.
Joseph Batchelder.

1806.
Nathl. Hammond.
Robert Perkins.
Josiah Lamson.
David Perkins.
John Peabody.

1807.
Josiah Lamson.
David Perkins.
Nathl. Hammond.
John Peabody.
John Conant.

1808.
Josiah Lamson.
David Perkins.
Nathl. Hammond.
John Peabody.
John Conant.

1809.
Nathl. Hammond.
David Perkins.
Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland.
John Peabody.
Jonas Meriam.

1810.
Nathl. Hammond.
David Perkins.
Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland.
John Peabody.
Jonas Meriam.

1811.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Nathl. Hammond.
Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland.
John Peabody.
Jonas Meriam.

1812.
Nathl. Hammond.
Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland.
John Peabody.
Jonas Meriam.
Jacob Towne, Jr.

1813.
Nathl. Hammond.
Jonas Meriam.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Cyrus Cummings.
Jacob Batchelder.

1814
Nathl. Hammond.
Samuel Hood.
Humphrey Clark.
Moses Wildes.
Joseph Bachelder.

1815.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Joseph Bachelder.
Moses Wildes.
David Towne.
John Peabody, Jr.

1816.
Nathl. Hammond.
Thomas Cummings.
Cyrus Cummings.
Daniel Bixby, Jr.
Samuel Cummings.

1817.
Nathl. Hammond.
Thomas Cummings.
Cyrus Cummings.
Daniel Bixby, Jr.
Samuel Cummings.

1818.
John Peabody.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Perley Balch.
Dudley Wildes, Jr.
David Perkins, Jr.

1819.
John Peabody.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Perley Balch.
Dudley Wildes, Jr.
David Perkins, Jr.

1820.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
David Towne.
Daniel Bixby, Jr.
Wm. Hubbard.
David Perkins, Jr.

1821.
Daniel Bixby, Jr.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Wm. Hubbard.

1822.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Joseph Batchelder.
Ephraim Wildes.
Royal A. Meriam.
Daniel Bixby, Jr.

1823.
Daniel Bixby, Jr.
Cyrus Cummings.
John Batchelder.
Moses Wildes.
Wm. N. Cleaveland.

1824.
Moses Wildes.
Cyrus Cummings.
W. N. Cleaveland.
John Peabody.
Samuel Gould.

1825.
Cyrus Cummings.
John Rea, Jr.
Daniel Bixby.
Porter Bradstreet.
John Lamson.

1826.
Cyrus Cummings.
Porter Bradstreet.
John Rea, Jr.
Samuel Bradstreet.
David Towne.

1827.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Samuel Bradstreet.
John Rea, Jr.
Joseph Batchelder.
Isaac Killam.

1828.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Joseph Batchelder.
Isaac Killam.
Amos Perkins.
Samuel Bradstreet.

1829.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Joseph Batchelder.
Isaac Killam.
Amos Perkins.
Samuel Bradstreet.

1830.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Joseph Batchelder.
Isaac Killam.
Samuel Bradstreet.
Moses Wildes.

1831.
Nehemiah Perkins.
Wm. Hubbard.
Joseph W. Batchelder.
Nathaniel Perley.
Wm. Munday.

1832.
John Lamson.
Wm. Munday.
Nehemiah Perkins.
Joseph W. Batchelder.
Nathaniel Perley.

1833.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
Wm. Hubbard.
Joseph Gould.
Moses Wildes.
David Towne.

1834.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
David Towne.
Wm. Hubbard.
Samuel Bradstreet.
Wm. Cummings.

1835.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
David Towne.
Wm. Hubbard.
Samuel Bradstreet.
Wm. Cummings.

1836.
Jacob Towne, Jr.
David Towne.
Wm. Hubbard.
Samuel Bradstreet.
Wm. Cummings.

1837.
Benjamin C. Perkins.
John Conant.
Richard Phillips, Jr.
Wm. E. Kimball.
Wm. Cummings.

1838.
Cornelius B. Bradstreet.
Nathaniel Perley.
William Ray.
Moses Wildes.
Augustine S. Peabody.

1839.
Benj. C. Perkins.
Asa Pingree.
Wm. Ray.
Wm. Hubbard.
John Hood.

1840.
David Towne.
Wm. Ray.
Wm. Hubbard.
Wm. Cummings.
John Hood.

1841.
Joshua Wildes.
Wm. Ray.
Nehemiah Perkins.
Joel R. Peabody.
Jacob P. Towne.

1842.
Wm. Ray.
Elbridge S. Bixby.
Asa Pingree.

1843.
Wm. Ray.
Elbridge S. Bixby.
Asa Pingree.

1844.
Wm. N. Cleaveland.
Nathaniel Perkins.
A. S. Peabody.

1845.
Wm. N. Cleaveland.
Nathaniel Perkins.
A. S. Peabody.

1846.
Thomas L. Lane.
John G. Hood.
Wm. Hubbard.

1847.
Samuel Todd.
Thos. L. Lane.
Nehemiah Balch.

1848.
John Wright.
Joseph W. Batchelder.
Thos. L. Lane.

1849.
John Wright.
Joseph W. Batchelder.
Thos. L. Lane.

1850.
John Wright.
Thos. Gould.
Joshua Wildes.

1851.
John Wright.
Thos. Gould.
Josbua Wildes.

1852.
John Wright.
Thos. Gould.
Josbua Wildes.

1853.
A. S. Peabody.
S. S. McKenzie.
Andrew Gould.

1854.
Andrew Gould.
S. S. McKenzie.
Benj. B. Towne.

1855.
Andrew Gould.
S. S. McKenzie.
Benj. B. Towne.

1856.
Andrew Gould.
S. S. McKenzie.
Benj. B. Towne.

1857.
John Wright.
Thos. Gould.
A. S. Peabody.

1858.
John Wright.
Thos. Gould.
A. S. Peabody.

1859.
John Wright.
Thos. Gould.
A. S. Peabody.

1860.
John Wright.
Thos. Gould.
A. S. Peabody.

1861.
John Wright.
A. S. Peabody.
Dudley Bradstreet.

1862.
A. S. Peabody.
Dudley Bradstreet.
Samuel Todd.

1863.
A. S. Peabody.
Dudley Bradstreet.
Samuel Todd.

1864.
A. S. Peabody.
Dudley Bradstreet.
Samuel Todd.

1865.
Jacob Foster.
J. W. Batchelder.
David Clark.

1866.
Jacob Foster.
J. W. Batchelder.
David Clark.

1867.
Jacob Foster.
Andrew Gould.
David Clark.

1868.
David Clark.
Jacob Foster.
Andrew Gould.

1869.
David Clark.
J. W. Batchelder.
Andrew Gould.

1870.
David Clark.
J. W. Bachelder.
Andrew Gould.

1871.
David Clark.
J. W. Batchelder.
Andrew Gould.

1872.
Dudley Bradstreet.
Moses B. Perkins.
Salmon D. Hood.

1873.
D. Bradstreet.
S. D. Hood.
Ariel H. Gould.

1874.
D. Bradstreet
S. D. Hood.
Ariel H. Gould.

1875.
D. Bradstreet.
S. D. Hood.
Ariel H. Gould.

1876.
D. Bradstreet.
S. D. Hood.
Ariel H. Gould.

1877.
D. Bradstreet.
S. D. Hood.
Ariel H. Gould.

1878.
D. Bradstreet.
S. D. Hood.
Ariel H. Gould.

1879.
S. D. Hood.
Baxter P. Pike.
John H. Potter.

1880.
S. D. Hood.
M. B. Perkins.
J. H. Potter.

1881.
S. D. Hood.
B. P. Pike.
J. H. Potter.

1882.
S. D. Hood.
B. P. Pike.
John H. Towne.

1883.
S. D. Hood.
B. P. Pike.
John H. Towne.

1884.
S. D. Hood.
B. P. Pike.
John H. Towne.

1885.
S. D. Hood.
B. P. Pike.
John H. Towne.

1886.
S. D. Hood.
J. H. Towne.
Joseph B. Poor.

1887.
S. D. Hood.
J. H. Towne.
Joseph B. Poor.

CHAPTER LXV.

PEABODY.

BY THEODORE MOODY OSBORNE.

Preliminary—Topography—Early Settlements.

THE town of Peabody occupies a part of the territory originally belonging to the old town of Salem. Its boundaries are nearly the same as those of the old Middle Precinct of Salem, which was set off in 1710, and it continued to be a part of Salem until the incorporation of the district of Danvers, in 1752. It was separated from Danvers under the name of South Danvers in 1855, (May 18), and the name of Peabody was assumed in 1868. Previously to 1710, it formed a part of the first parish of Salem, and was identified with Salem in every respect.

It will be seen, therefore, that the early history of Peabody is in many ways inseparable from that of Salem. Its farmers were represented in the Salem town-meeting, and some of them at times held office in the town. Its sturdy yeomanry formed part of the training bands of the old town, and was called out to do service in all the frontier warfare of that early period. Its religious interests were centred in the old First Church, and the record of its proprietary interests is found with that of all the other lands belonging to the town of Salem. There was therefore, during nearly a whole century of the settlement of the town, no occasion for any separate chronicle of the lives or interests of the families who lived in this part of Salem, and for nearly half a century after the establishment of the Middle Precinct, the people were still one with Salem in everything but parish affairs.

For more than another century the parish was part of the town of Danvers, and its history is largely one with that of Danvers. It has had only about thirty years of independent existence.

An effort, however, has been made to select from the historic archives of Salem and Danvers some portions belonging to this locality, and to trace the beginning and growth of the community which has developed into the busy manufacturing town of Peabody, as we see it to-day.

The limits of this sketch have not permitted the introduction of extended genealogical details, nor the description of the many old houses and localities whose interest belongs rather to family than to town history. It is designed to give an outline of the growth of the town, which it is to be hoped may be at some future time enlarged by others who are specially qualified to discuss the different branches of town history. If by means of this sketch an impulse may be given to the study of the history of his native town, the writer will be repaid for his efforts.

TOPOGRAPHY.—When Endicott and his companions arrived on the shores of Salem in 1628, their first settlements were made along the shores of the sea and the rivers which surround the present city of Salem. The struggle for existence was at first too severe to permit of extensive improvements in building roads and developing farming lands more remote from the natural highway which the water furnished from one group of houses to another.

Wood in his "New England's Prospect" says, speaking of Salem, "There be more canowes in this town than in all the whole Patent, every household having a water-horse or two." The canoes were inspected by order of the quarterly court.

But very soon the wonderful energy of those heroic Puritans led them to build roads and bridges which should open up the surrounding territory, and to improve the lands lying farther from the sea.

The country to the north and north-west of the first settlements was very early explored, and the region toward the boundary of Lynn and Reading was found to be an excellent agricultural country. Several large ponds of fresh water were found in this part of Salem, or on its boundaries, and the region about the head of the North River was distinguished by the confluence of several large brooks of clear and sparkling water, which probably gave rise to the name by which this locality, now the centre of the village of Peabody, was designated in the early grants—the name of Brooksby.

The middle precinct and the village were together often spoken of in early times as "The Farms," and the settlers were called "The Farmers," in distinction from the dwellers in the town proper of Salem, most of whom lived by commerce, or followed the sea, or plied the various trades and industries of town life.

Through the region of Brooksby a road was opened to Salem Village (now Danvers Centre), which had been at first accessible only by boat up the Wooleston River (now the Danvers River).

The ancient way, in use while Essex Street was still a wilderness, followed Broad Street up to the boundary of the commons. From a point on the Salem turnpike, some distance beyond where Boston Street now turns from Essex Street, a road turned sharply to the right, and coming round the head of the inlet which in those days extended to the south of Boston Street, went on toward Brooksby over the high land by Gallows Hill. By this road it is said that Governor Endicott used to ride from the town to his estate in the Village. The location of this old road may still be traced, and there are still some buildings on the line of the ancient way. Subsequently a branch of this road was made from what is now Proctor's Court, along the line of Goodhue Street to Trask's lower mills (now called Frye's Mills), whence, by turning in a southerly direction, the traveller came into the other road at a point on Trask's Plain, near the great elm which stands in the middle

of the street, with the date 1707 on a stone at its base, and which is known as the "big tree." In 1715 the road leading from the middle precinct meeting-house to Salem was referred to as "y^e^ highway that leads into y^e^ North field by Trask's Fulling-Mill."

At the lowest point on Boston Street, just about where Goodhue Street and Boston Street meet, an arm of the sea crossed the road, large enough to admit of boats passing up and down. Across this inlet a bridge was built, known as the Town Bridge, which became a historic landmark. At that time the salt water inlets were much more extensive than now. The changes of elevation caused by building the streets and houses of the city, the accumulation of soil brought down by the various streams, and, in later years, the construction of extensive systems of railroads have tended gradually to fill up many of the inlets which were then accessible. The sea has not for many years approached within a considerable distance of the place where the Town Bridge once stretched across the water, and the street now crosses the lowest part of the hollow (which bears the unctuous name of Blubber Hollow, from the materials used in the early manufacture of leather in that vicinity) on solid ground.

The general aspect of Brooksby at that early time may be imagined from its present characteristics, and from what has come down from the history of that day. While a large part of the town must have been much more thickly wooded, it is plain, from the language of the early grants, that there were considerable areas of meadow "fitt to mowe," and large extents of barren hillside, swamp and pasture, such as are seen to-day. The North River was open to boats at high tide nearly or quite to the mill-pond where Captain Trask built his first mill—one of the earliest in the Commonwealth. This stream, whose shores were doubtless wooded to the edge of the upland, carried down a large volume of fresh water from Brooksby, and was a beautiful bit of scenery, hard to reconstruct in imagination from the muddy and foul stream of to-day, crossed and recrossed by the railroad, and carrying the drainage of great manufactories. The brooks themselves were much larger than now. The stripping away of the forest about their sources, the intercepting of surface water by the streets and constructions of the town, and the use of large quantities of water for domestic and manufacturing purposes, have combined to diminish greatly the flow of water in the ancient beds; and if one of the early settlers were to look on the turbid streams that now flow by walled and underground channels through the town, he would find it hard indeed to realize that this was the beautiful Brooksby of old, with its clear and sparkling streams, green with woodland foliage to the water's edge, and surrounded at intervals with meadows dotted with herds of cattle. A considerable part of the woodland consisted of a heavy and valuable growth of oak timber.

A large variety of trees and plants are native to the soil, and many more have since been introduced. Two at least of the flowering plants which give character to its fields and hills were introduced by the early settlers—the woodwax or gorse, golden bright on the pasture slopes, and the *chrysanthemum leucanthemum*, or white weed, sometimes of late called daisy, which tradition says was brought in by Governor Endicott himself. There must, however, have been a very great similarity, at least in the outline and aspect of that part of the town which has never been occupied by dwellings, to its present appearance.

There are many interesting localities whose natural beauties are great, and which contain striking and peculiar geological formations. Ship Rock, a huge boulder in South Peabody, near the station on the South Reading Branch Railroad, is owned by the Essex Institute, and is surrounded by interesting marks of glacial action. There are several high hills, from whose summits are seen broad expanses of landscape and wide reaches of the sea, extending far down the northern shore of Massachusetts Bay.

Early Settlers.—It is not known where the very earliest settlement within the present limits of the town of Peabody was made. By 1633 there were some settlers in Brooksby.

Before 1635 Captain William Trask, the ancestor of the Trask family in this vicinity, received a grant of about fifty acres at the head of the North River, near the present location of the square in Peabody. Here he built his first grist-mill, at a point near where Wallis Street crosses the railroad. The mill-pond, originally of considerable extent, remained in use for some mechanical purposes until within twenty years, when it was filled and a street laid out across it. The pond collected the water of the three principal brooks from which Brooksby took its name. About this mill, near the meeting of the Boston road and the road to Salem Village (now Danvers), a small village soon sprang up, several house-lots having been granted near the mill. Richard Adams had a grant of five acres in the vicinity in 1637, and William Hathorne was given a ten-acre lot near the mill about the same time. Thomas Goldthwaite is believed to have settled in this vicinity.

Captain William Trask was one of the earliest settlers with Endicott. He was a man of much natural energy of character, and filled a variety of public stations. He owned several tracts of land, which he brought under cultivation, besides carrying on the mills. He was prominent as a military leader, and was the captain of the train-band from its beginning. His services in the Pequot War in 1636 and 1637 were rewarded with additional grants of land by the General Court, and his funeral in 1666 was observed with great military parade, and honored by the whole surrounding country. He was one of the surveyors or "layers out" of the lands granted by the town of Salem to

settlers in the vicinity. The land included in the limits of the settlement was considered as belonging to the community as a whole, and was granted by the town or the "seven men" to whom that authority was delegated, to such persons and in such quantities as seemed to them most likely to insure the healthy growth of the settlement, the establishment of various useful trades and occupations, and the gathering of an industrious, law-abiding and God-fearing community. These grants were generally made in the first instance with only a general indication of their locality, and the boundaries were then measured and defined by the "layers-out," who usually entered the record of their location soon after the first grant.

About 1640 Captain Trask built another mill about half a mile down the stream from the first, near where Grove Street now is, and soon after removed it to what is now known as Frye's Mills. On March 30, 1640, it is recorded that "Captain Trask hath leave to set up a tyde myll upon the North River, pvided he make passadge for a shalloppe from halfe flood to full sea." In October, 1640, the mill was completed, and half an acre was granted to him adjoining it. This mill also became the centre of a settlement. In September, 1640, while this mill was building, or soon after its completion, Captain Trask received a fatherly admonition from the court "to be more carefull about his grinding & Towle takeing." Previous to 1663 Captain Trask's mills held the monopoly of this business. John Trask, at one time, some complaint being made, agreed in behalf of his father with the town that they would "make as good meale as at Lin, and that when they could not supply the towne for want of water or in any other respect," then they would "provide to send it to Lin upon their own charge and have it ground there."

In 1636 Colonel Thomas Reed, one of the original company, received a grant of three hundred acres, including Buxton's Hill, formerly known as Reed's Hill, and extending to the present location of Endicott Street on the east, bounded southerly by the brook, and extending on the west and north to the Ipswich road, and across the road leading to Salem Village, including the Rogers' farm. This large and valuable tract of land afterwards came into the possession of Daniel Epps, who was prominent in the formation of the middle precinct in 1710.

December 21, 1635, it was ordered "that Mr. Cole shall have a farme of three hundred acres in the place where his cattle are by Brooksby and Captain Trask and the rest of the surveyors are to lay it out and bound it according to their discretion, provided in case Mr. Cole be disposed to part with it by sale that he make his first profer unto the towne upon reasonable terms." This was a common condition in the early grants. On the 28th of the same month we find the more formal record after the survey had been made. "Granted unto Robert Cole, his Heirs and Assigns three hundreth acres of land whereof forty acres in Marshe fitt to be mowed lying and being about three miles from Salem westward upon a fresh water brook called the North brook."

This grant included Proctor's corner and a part of Felton's Hill. It was sold in 1638 to Emanuel Downing, and was leased and cultivated by John Procter, who settled in Salem about 1660, and who was one of the most prominent victims of the witchcraft delusion.

John Thorndike had a very early grant in the northwestern part of the town, which he soon afterward gave up, taking land in Salem Village. He also owned land in Rockville, near Lieutenant Johnson's. The land given up by him was afterwards granted to other settlers in smaller lots, of twenty, forty and fifty acres, among others to John Sanders, Henry Herrick, William Bound, Edmund Marshall, Thomas Antrum, William Walcott, Robert Cotta and Edmund Batter, mostly in 1636 and 1637.

A considerable number of these small grants lying together were purchased of the owners by Robert Goodell, and with a grant to him of forty acres made up a farm of over five hundred acres, which was laid out to him in 1652. William King had a grant of forty acres in the northern part of Peabody in 1636.

On October 9, 1637, Edmund Batter received a grant of one hundred acres of upland and twelve acres of meadow. On December 25, (it seems the "seven men" did not observe Christmas Day), a farther grant of thirty acres was made to him, and the former grant is referred to as "at Brooksby," and as having been formerly granted to Mr. Thorndike. This shows that the whole region, even the northwestern part of the farms, was called Brooksby. Mr. Batter was prominent among the early settlers, and owned land in the town of Salem, near North Street, at one time.

Next to Robert Goodell's land on the west was a grant made to Rev. Edward Norris January 21, 1640, which was afterward bought by Joseph Pope, in 1664. This grant gave the name to Norris' brook. It was north of Brookdale.

Mrs. Anna Higginson had a grant of one hundred and fifty acres made in 1636, near the last-named grants, just south of Mr. Goodell's farm. It was sold to John Pickering in 1652, and two years later he sold it to John Woody and Thomas Flint. Some of the descendants of the latter still reside in the vicinity.

The farm of Job Swinerton, acquired partly by various grants from 1637 on, and partly by purchase, lay partly in the extreme northwestern part of the present town. Some of his descendants, of the same name, have continued to live in the vicinity.

Captain Samuel Gardner's farm was just west of Mr. Norris' grant, toward the extreme boundary of the town.

John Humphrey, one of the original grantees under the first charter, and a man of considerable importance in the early colony, received at various times from 1632 to 1658 grants of land, chiefly from

the General Court, amounting to fifteen hundred acres, of which five hundred lay in Salem, about the pond which bears his name, sometimes called Suntaug Lake. In May, 1635, he received a grant from the General Court of "500 acres of land and a freshe pond, with a little ileland conteyning about two acres." This island was so highly esteemed as a place of security in case of attack by Indians that the right was reserved for the inhabitants of Salem and Saugus (now Lynn) to build store-houses on it "for their vse in tyme of neede." Block-houses were erected there in 1676, but there is no record of any fighting there. The grant of this pond to John Humphrey is believed to be the only specific grant of a "great pond," that is, a pond over forty acres in extent, before the colonial ordinances of 1640 and '47, which made all such ponds free fisheries for the public, with right of access over the lands of those bordering on the water; and this pond is therefore the only great pond in the State in which fishing is not free to the public. The town of Lynnfield has, in recent years, acquired a small piece of land on the margin of the pond, whereby its inhabitants have the right to fish in it.

Mr. Humphrey was one of the justices of the Quarter Court, and was prominent in town and colony affairs. In 1642 a considerable part of his lands were sold on execution to Robert Saltonstall.

Near Mr. Humphrey's grant was William Clarke's farm, from whom Clark's Hill was probably named. April 17, 1637, it was "Agreed that Mr. Clarke shall have two hundred acres by Seder Pond, not exceeding twenty acres of meadow, to be laid out according to the discretion of the layers out." In 1642 a farther grant was made to William Clarke of sixty acres "South of Mr. Downing's greate medow towards Mr. Johnson's land." Clarke's land was near John Marsh's farm.

Joshua Verryn had a grant of one hundred and sixty-five acres in 1637, "next to Mr. Clarke's on the North side, laying down his former." The Very family is supposed to be descended from the Verryns.

Lieutenant Francis Johnson had a grant of two hundred acres in January, 1635–36, in Brooksby, in the region of King's Hill. The farm was described by the layers-out as bounded by Mr. Thorndike on the north side and the common on the other. "The farm is on the North side of the River Brooksbie" (evidently Goldthwaite's Brook), "about two miles from Salem westerly." This grant was relinquished by Lieutenant Johnson a few months afterward, at the same time at which Mr. Thorndike relinquished his grant. Mr. Thorndike settled in Salem Village; a new grant of the same extent was made to Lieutenant Johnson, in what is now South Peabody, including the crossing of the Lynnfield and Ipswich roads, and lying on both sides of Goldthwaite's Brook. This locality was known for many years as Johnson's Plain. The order for this new grant declared that Mr. Johnson "shall have six acres of Meadow ground and fourteen acres of other ground at Brooksby aforesaid, where his cow house now is, and nyne score acres more nere the Cedar Pond above a mile distant from it."

This part of Brooksby is referred to as early as 1635 as "The Rocks." This name has clung to the locality till very recently, and later the village which grew up in the southern part of Peabody was called Rockville.

In the same part of the town a grant was made in 1646 to Zacheus Cortis, who also bought land of Joshua Verryn. Cortis was a man of valor, for it is recorded that he was furnished with one of the few much prized steel corslets belonging to the town of Salem, "in good repayre."

Robert Moulton's grant, the boundaries of which are somewhat difficult to ascertain, lay to the north of Humphrey's farm, somewhere in the vicinity of the Newburyport turnpike. Moulton was a prominent citizen of the town; he was foreman of a jury in 1636, and his name appears in connection with various town affairs.

John Brown, Sr., had a grant of fifty acres, in 1673, near Humphrey's farm and Robert Moulton's, in the vicinity of Walden's Hill. It is stated by Hanson that Hugh, Samuel and Christopher Brown also settled in Brooksby.

Richard Bartholomew received a grant in January, 1637–38, near the beautiful pond which still bears his name.

Capt. William Trask had two grants of land in South Peabody, one of which, near Spring Pond, he sold in 1656 for a cow worth £5. The brook running from Spring Pond to Goldthwaite's Brook was then called "But Brook," and there were early settlements near where it crossed the Boston road.

Following the Boston road toward the main village of Salem, several early settlers located themselves, among them William Lord and Thomas Gardiner. Near the southerly boundary of the farms were lands granted to Lawrence and Cassandra Southwick, the latter name famous because of the persecutions which she suffered as a Quaker. Lawrence Southwick and Ananias Concklin were "glassemen," and it was hoped to foster this industry, whose works were situated in the vicinity of Aborn Street. William Osborne and William Wood were also granted house lots and small lots of land "lying nere Strong Water Brook or Mile End Brook."

John Pickering, though residing in the town proper, owned land in the farms, including a lot near Brown's Pond. Lieut. Richard Davenport, who lived in Salem near North Street, and also at the village, owned land near Brooksby, among other parcels being "2 acres or thereabout lying on the west side of the but brooke not far from the place that the way goeth over to Lin." Lieut. Davenport was a famous soldier of the early colony, and was concerned with Endicott

in cutting out the cross from the king's colors. John Marsh had a grant of twenty acres near one of Lieut. Davenport's grants.

John and Anthony Buxton also had early grants, and there are many whose lands it is not now easy to locate who settled in the middle precinct, and many settlers who obtained their lands by purchase, and whose names do not appear in the book of grants. The Flints, Popes, Uptons and Needhams had valuable farms; the Proctors removed here from Ipswich in 1660, the Pooles from Cambridge in 1690, the Fosters from Boxford, the Suttons from Rowley, the Jacobses in 1700, the Poors in 1770, and the Prestons, Shillabers and other prominent families came in at different periods. A part of the farm of George Jacobs lay in Peabody.

The early settlers were picked men. They received grants of land by reason of their supposed fitness to build up the prosperity of the settlement, and they were mostly eminent for their piety as well as for the qualities which make the enterprising and successful pioneer. Mr. Upham has preserved a curious document, which illustrates the rigid observance of Sunday restrictions, and indicates some of the men upon whom the community depended for the execution of its laws.

"At a general Town meeting, held the 7th day of the 5th month, 1644, ordered that two be appointed every Lord's Day, to walk forth in the time of God's worship, to take notice of such as either lye about the meeting-house, without attending to the word and ordinances, or that lye at home or in the fields without giving good account thereof, and to take the names of such persons, and to present them to the magistrates, whereby they may be accordingly proceeded against. The names of such as are ordered to this service are for the 1st day, Mr. Stileman and Philip Veren, Jr. 2d day, Philip Veren, Sr., and Hilliard Veren. 3d day, Mr. Batter and Joshua Veren. 4th day, Mr. Johnson and Mr. Clark. 5th day, Mr. Downing and Robert Molton, Sr. 6th day, Robert Molton, Jr., and Richard Ingersol. 7th day, John Ingersol and Richard Pettingell. 8th day, William Haynes and Richard Hutchinson. 9th day, John Putnam and John Hathorne. 10th day, Townsend Bishop and Daniel Rea. 11th day, John Porter and Jacob Barney."

The design of the plan, as Mr. Upham remarks, was not merely that expressed in the vote of the town, but also to prevent any disorderly conduct on the Lord's day, and to give prompt alarm in case of fire or Indian attack. The men appointed to this service were all leading characters, and we find among them six, at least, of the early settlers of Brooksby.

CHAPTER LXVI.

PEABODY (*Continued*).

Development of Settlement before 1700—*Witchcraft in the Middle Precinct.*

THE history of this locality during the seventeenth century is written with that of Salem. Its inhabitants were simply outlying citizens of the town of Salem, and they belonged to the First Church, except some who were included in the village parish when it was set off in 1672, for the line of the middle precinct does not exactly coincide with that of the town of Peabody, the latter including a small part of the territory of Salem Village. The dividing line between the village and the middle precinct was originally a line running almost due west from Endicott or Cow-house River to the Lynn line; but when the division was made between North and South Danvers, in 1856, the line was carried from the Endicott River northwesterly, to the sharp bend of the Ipswich River, a mile or more north of the old boundary at that point.

The military organizations engaged in the various early wars with the Indians were recruited indifferently from the various parts of the town, and some of the most famous officers lived at the Farms.

Captain William Trask and his company were prominent in the Pequot War in 1636 and 1637. The three commissioned officers of the company required to be raised in Salem for the Block Island Expedition, in 1636, lived in the middle precinct, or were landholders there,—Trask, Davenport and Read. Some of the men of Brooksby were with Captain Lothrop at Bloody Brook, in 1675, and among the names of those who fell on that disastrous day are those of Edward Trask, Joseph King and Robert Wilson. The Salem Company, under the lead of Captain Nathaniel Davenport, a son of Richard, were in the thick of the terrible hand to hand fight with the forces of King Philip, when the Indian fort was stormed at sundown of a winter's day; and were with the foremost in the pursuit of the escaping Indians through the wilderness, known to tradition as the *hungry march*. When it is remembered that the forces and even the officers of that memorable expedition were drafted hastily for the service, and that many of them left home without even time to arrange their private affairs, the heroic bravery of the Narragansett fight will bear comparison with any deeds of military prowess that history has recorded. The Puritans of New England fought as did the army of Cromwell, with no fear of death, and with the inspiration which came from their firm belief in the Divine protection.

A company of troopers was early formed, made up from the farmers and neighboring settlements. The ranks became thinned in course of time, and in October, 1678, a successful attempt was made to revive the company. Thirty-six men belonging to "the reserve of Salem old troop," and "desirous of being serviceable to God and the country," petitioned the General Court for reorganization as a troop of horse, and for the issuing of the necessary commissions. Among the signers of this petition are Anthony Needham, Peter and Ezekiel Cheever, Thomas Flint, John Procter, William Osborne, and others of the region afterward incorporated into the middle precinct. The officers appointed were men of property and energy, and the company of troops was kept in

efficient training until all danger from Indians or other foes had passed away. The William Osborne here mentioned is not the early settler, who acquired land in 1638, and is not known to be a descendant, but probably collaterally related. The earlier William Osborne is believed to have spent his later years in Boston, and died about 1662. The William Osborne whose name appears on the petition just spoken of, was born about 1644, and from him are descended most of the various families of Osbornes in the vicinity of Salem, Peabody and Danvers. The descendants of the earlier William are found in Connecticut and Long Island.

The second William Osborne, and his son, the third William, lived on the road to the Village, in "the lane," now Central Street, near Andover Street. An old house, built in 1680 and said by tradition to have belonged to one of them, was taken down in 1887.

In all the duties of citizenship the farmers appear to have been prominent; and citizenship was then regarded as a most serious and important allegiance, requiring the most faithful exercise of duty. The oath of a freeman, which was required to be taken by those seeking to share in the social and political privileges of the settlement, is full of the most striking suggestions of the clear and vigorous political views held by the founders.

"Moreover, I doe solemnly binde myselfe, in the sight of God, that when I shall be caled to give my voyce touching any such matter of this state in which ffreemen are to deale, I will give my vote and suffrage as I shall judge in my own conscience may best conduce & tend to the publique weale of y^e^ body without respect of persons or favour of any man. So help me God in the Lord Jesus Christ."

The policy which permitted every one who had a town lot of half an acre to relinquish it, and receive in its stead a country lot, of fifty acres or more, had the result of attracting to the forests and meadows of the Farms a population of a superior order. Men of property, education and high social position took the lead in developing the resources of the country, and they gave character to the farming interest and class. This process of selection is undoubtedly the source of the high character for industry, intelligence and energy, which has distinguished the descendants of these early settlers of the outlying lands of Salem.

Of the social life of the middle of the seventeenth century in the farming district of Brooksby we know little, except what we learn from the annals of life in Salem in those early days, and from the light thrown upon the time by the exhaustive investigations which have been made into the history of the following period of the witchcraft delusion. We know that their labors were severe and unremitting, and their social relaxations infrequent and carefully guarded against excess. The vigorous style of English merrymaking, though put down with an iron hand in the case of the roystering Morton, who tried to set up the Maypole festival at Merrymount, still asserted itself on such privileged occasions as house raisings and huskings. No vigor of Puritanical custom can wholly restrain the innocent joyousness of youth and healthful spirits, and in spite of their serious views of life, there is plenty of evidence that the magistrates and elders were wise enough not to attempt wholly to repress the natural and innocent enjoyments of country life and manners. The religious views of the people, though severe in doctrine, were not gloomy in practical application to the life of the colony, and the faith which had led them into the wilderness brightened and cheered their hard and simple life on the rocky and unpromising farms which so many were forced to receive as their portion of the soil. They had a spirit which was above repining, and which noted hardship chiefly as a providential opportunity for the development of Christian character. They belonged to that rare class of men who are never dominated by their surroundings, but who, by mental and spiritual vigor, rise superior to the most powerful forces with which they are obliged to cope. The short lapse of time in which farms were brought under cultivation, roads built, orchards planted, mills erected and churches and schools established, bears witness, both to the wisdom with which the authorities allotted their public lands, giving the large grants to those who were able to employ labor to improve them, and to the wonderful vigor and natural resources of the individual settlers.

Among the most remarkable men who lived in that part of the Farms within the limits of Peabody was Sir George Downing. His father, Emanuel Downing, had several grants of land, one of which in the town was bought of him by John Pickering, and is the site of the house on Broad Street, still standing, built by Pickering. Another, already referred to, near Procter's corner, was in the central part of Brooksby, and, as Mr. Upham points out, George Downing spent his later youth and early manhood there. Hunting and fishing were doubtless his amusements, and we may imagine him, fowling-piece in hand, traversing the woods which then thickly environed the scattered farms. He was one of the first class graduated from Harvard College in 1642; studied divinity; after various travels he was brought to the notice of Cromwell, having returned to England at a time when so many of the exiled Puritans seemed to see the promise of an ideal English Commonwealth, and from chaplain was promoted to scout-master general in Cromwell's army. He married a sister of the Earl of Carlisle, became a member of Parliament for Scotland, and undertook high diplomatic missions for the Commonwealth, going at one time as ambassador to the Hague. At the restoration he kept in favor with the new government, and received from his new sovereign the order of knighthood. On his return to

England he became a member of Parliament for Morpeth, and soon assumed control of the exchequer, in the management of which he displayed financial genius and statesmanship of a very high order. Mr. Upham ascribes to him the origin of the celebrated Navigation Act, and the credit of originating the principle of specific appropriations in Parliament, a principle which has been embodied in American constitutional law. His name is perpetuated in Downing Street, in London, and by the college in Cambridge, England, established by the gift of his fortune. Of all the young men who have gone from the historic region of the farms of the middle precinct of Salem, no one has left a more romantic and brillian record of political success. A sister, Ann, married Governor Bradstreet in 1680.

The farmers of Brooksby continued to develop the agricultural resources of the region with little of the eventful in their history, except their share in the military operations of the time. The descendants of the first settlers exhibited much of that love of the home soil which has ever characterized the race; new families came in from time to time, and remote as the region was from immediate danger of Indian invasion, its annals are a simple record of peace and thrifty comfort, if not prosperity.

The witchcraft delusion found some of its victims in the farms of the middle precinct. John Procter, who lived on the the Downing farm, was one of the most prominent of those who lost their lives in that strange uprising of superstition. He originally lived in Ipswich, where he had a valuable farm. He was a man of great native force and energy, bold and fearless in language, impulsive in feeling and sometimes rash and hasty in action. The vigorous training of what was then frontier life while it did not tend to lawlessness, cultivated a marked independence of mind and manners in many of the farmers. Procter was a man of good property. His name appears in connection with the establishment of the Salem troop of horse. Mary Warren, one of the "afflicted" girls, was a servant in his family, and it seems but too evident that she was affected by malicious feelings toward the family. He accompanied his wife, Elizabeth, the daughter of John Thorndike, who was first arrested, from her arrest to her arraignment, and stood bravely and resolutely by her side, trying to support her under the terrible trials which she had to endure, without regard to the consequences to himself. Mr. Upham says that it was probably his fearless condemnation of the nonsense and the outrage perpetrated by the accusers in the examination of his wife which brought the vengeance of the girls down on him. The account of the preliminary examination of these two good and brave people, before the magistrates in the meeting-house at Salem, on the 11th of April, 1692, stirs the blood to indignation against the folly of the courts and the malignity of the accusers. No counsel was allowed, however, to any of the accused. Every sort of irregular evidence, not to be excused by doubtful precedent in English courts, was freely made use of; the afflicted children were permitted not only to testify to seeing the spectral semblances of Goodman and Goodwife Procter in their chamber, but even to declare that they saw Goody Procter sitting in the rafters of the meeting-house in open court, while the awe-struck spectators gazed upward, straining their eyes to behold the witch. The most transparent trickery failed to be detected. Parris, in his report, quoted by Upham, says of the beginning of the accusation against Procter, which happened while his wife was being examined:

"(By and by, both of them [the accusing girls], cried out of Goodman Procter himself, and said he was a wizard. Immediately many, if not all of the bewitched had grievous fits.)"

"Ann Putnam, who hurt you?—Goodman Procter and his wife too."

"(Afterwards some of the afflicted cried,—'There is Procter going to take up Mrs. Pope's feet!' and her feet were immediately taken up.)

"What do you say, Goodman Procter, to these things?—I know not. I am innocent."

"(Abigail Williams cried out,—'There is Goodman Procter going to Mrs. Pope!' and immediately said Pope fell into a fit.)"

Some member of the court, who was wholly infatuated by the delusion, said to Procter,—"You see, the Devil will deceive you: the children could see what you was going to do before the woman was hurt."

One of the girls pretended to strike Goodwife Procter, and drew her hand back crying that her fingers burned.

On such evidence Procter and his wife, with Goodwife Corey and others, were held by the magistrates for trial, and sent to the jail in Boston. Procter and his wife were tried on the 5th of August, and Procter himself was executed on the 19th of the same month. His wife, owing to her condition, was reprieved for the time, and before the time arrived for her execution the storm had spent itself, and she was saved from the gallows. She gave birth to a child two weeks after her husband's execution. He made his will with the manacles on his hands. So bitter was the wrath of the persecutors against the Procters that they not only arrested and tried to destroy all the adult members of the family, but even relatives in Lynn. The children were left destitute and the home swept clear of its provisions by the sheriff. In spite of the danger of such a proceeding, upwards of thirty citizens of Ipswich and a considerable number of their neighbors at the Farms signed and sent in petitions for clemency in their case, testifying to the high standing of the couple. Notwithstanding his efforts, an appeal having been made by him to the ministers of Boston to protect him in his rights, he was condemned and executed,

and his body thrown into a hasty and dishonored grave, from which, Upham states, tradition says that, like some others of the more prominent victims, his body was taken secretly by his family and buried with the family dead. Years afterward, in 1711, the General Court, in a distribution of money to those who suffered from the fearful consequences of the wickedness of the accusers and the infatuation of the people, gave to John Procter and his wife, and those who represented them, the sum of one hundred and fifty pounds, the largest sum given to any of the sufferers.

At that time attainder, including forfeiture of property to the State, was an incident of conviction for felony; and it was doubtless the desire to save his property for his children which chiefly induced Giles Corey to stand mute and refuse to plead to his indictment; and so to submit himself to the horrible and barbarous form of death which has made his the most remarkable figure among the victims of that cruel conspiracy. Corey lived on a good farm of about one hundred and fifty acres, in what is now the northwestern part of Peabody. He was a man of great independence of character, careless of conventionalities, and hardened by the severities of farming life in that period to a cross-grained disregard for the opinions and talk of his neighbors. He was, throughout his life at the Farms, often in difficulties with others, sometimes seeking redress at law for injuries claimed by him, and sometimes dealt with for hard blows or unconcealed disregard of the rights of his neighbors. It is probable, as Mr. Upham thinks, that he was not nearly so bad as the reports of the day made him out, and that he was not essentially a lawless or unprincipled man. He was once or twice arrested on suspicion of serious offences, but always cleared himself, and continued to live on in his own way, with a fair share of prosperity. He and John Procter figure on the records as opponents in various disputes; indeed, Corey was examined at one time on suspicion of setting Procter's house on fire, but it appeared clearly that he was innocent, and he in turn instituted prosecutions for defamation against Procter and his accusers, in which he recovered against them all. His third wife, Martha, was a woman notable for piety, and a member of the village church; and it may have been owing to her influence that Corey himself, only a year or two before the witchcraft times, when he was eighty years old, offered himself and was received into membership at the First Church in Salem; and the records of that church state that though he was of a "scandalous life" he made a confession of his sins satisfactory to that body. He was completely carried away by the fanaticism of the time, and frequented the examinations of the accused and believed all that he heard. Martha Corey, on the other hand, did not approve of the proceedings, and did not hesitate to express her want of faith in the afflicted children. She spent much of her time in prayer, and her course was marked as peculiar and caused an estrangement between herself and her husband. As it happened in so many other cases, the accusers were quick to resent any opposition, and holding the power of life and death in their hands, crushed down opposition in a manner so unscrupulous and so remorseless that the arguments of Mr. Upham as to the deliberate character of the conspiracy seem unanswerable.

The accusation of one of the girls set two of the citizens to call on Goodwife Corey, and her innocent and sprightly conversation was tortured into evidence against her. On her appearance at Thomas Putnam's one of the girls fell in a fit, and declared that Goody Corey was the author of her sufferings. Upon this conclusive evidence a warrant was issued for her arrest on the 19th of March, and on the 21st she was examined in the meeting-house at the village. Her examination is preserved by Mr. Upham, and shows that she was a bright, fearless old woman, who hardly seemed to realize the danger in which she stood. The ridiculous accusations in some instances made her laugh, which was thought a most convincing proof of devilish light-mindedness. She was bound over for trial by Justices Hathorne and Corwin. At her examination she requested to be allowed to "go to prayer," which was refused by the magistrates, though the Rev. Mr. Noyes, at the beginning of the proceedings, had put up what might be described as an exceedingly *ex parte* petition. It is probable that the managers of the excitement feared the effect which such a prayer might have on the spectators.

The criticisms of her husband for her failure to fall in with the current delusion were made use of against her, and a deposition of his, not directly accusing her, but evidently intended to weigh against her, is found on the records. On the 9th of September she was tried and condemned. Two days after, she was formally excommunicated from the Village church. Mr. Parris, with two deacons and Lieutenant Putnam, went to convey this sentence to her, and found her "very obdurate, justifying herself, and condemning all that had done anything to her just discovery or condemnation. Whereupon, after a little discourse (for her imperiousness would not suffer much), and after prayer—which she was willing to decline—the dreadful sentence of excommunication was pronounced against her." Calef says that "Martha Corey, protesting her innocency, concluded her life with an eminent prayer upon the ladder." She was executed September 22, 1692.

The dwelling-house of Corey was near the crossing of the Salem and Lowell and Georgetown and Boston railroads on the south side of the former road, a little distance to the west of the crossing. He had lived previously in the town of Salem, and sold his house there in 1659.

Giles Corey, as has been remarked, was induced to give some sort of evidence concerning his wife, but it

does not appear to be of much importance. It is very probable, as Upham suggests, that the hostility of the accusers was incurred by him for his lukewarm deposition against her. It is very likely, too, that when the accusation was brought home to his own family, and his wife, whom it is evident he knew to be a good and pious woman, was subjected to examination and committed to prison, he began to see matters in their true light, and expressed himself with his usual freedom. He was examined April 19, 1692, in the meeting-house at the village. The usual performances of the accusers were gone through with; they fell into fits, and were afflicted with grievous pinches, at which the court ordered his hands to be tied. The magistrates lost all control of themselves, and flew into a passion, exclaiming, "What! is it not enough to act witchcraft at other times, but must you do it now in the face of authority?" He seems to have been dumbfounded by these inexplicable proceedings, and could only say, "I am a poor creature, and cannot help it." Upon the motion of his head again, they had their heads and necks afflicted.

One of his hands was let go, and several were afflicted. He held his head on one side and then the heads of several of the afflicted were held on one side. He drew in his cheeks, and the cheeks of some of the afflicted were sucked in. Through all this outrageous accusation he firmly asserted his innocence. His spirit is shown by the indignation with which he repelled one charge. Some of the witnesses testified that Corey had said that he had seen the devil in the form of a black hog, and was very much frightened. He denied the imputation of cowardice, and when "divers witnessed that he had told them he was frighted," he was asked "Well, what do you say to these witnesses? What was it frighted you?" He answered proudly, "I do not know that ever I spoke the word in my life."

He was much oppressed and distressed by his situation, and the share that he had had in promoting the excitement in the case of his wife and others doubtless added to his distress of mind. His sons-in-law, Crosby and Parker, were in sympathy with the crowd that pursued him, and he was accused of having meditated suicide.

He was bound over for trial and committed to jail. He was indicted by the grand jury upon spectral evidence chiefly, as appears by the few brief depositions on file.

What were his thoughts and feelings in his imprisonment there is little record to show, but there is reason to believe that in spite of his courage and fearlessness, he suffered greatly in mind. His eyes were fully opened to the wickedness, not only of his own accusation, but of that of all the other victims, and the utter injustice of the proceedings against him, and in the silence and gloom of his prison he made up his mind to that invincible determination which made his fate unique in the annals of legal procedure in America and shocking even beyond that of any of his innocent fellow-sufferers.

He resolved to stand mute at his arraignment, and so not only save his property from the effects of the attainder, but make a protest against the injustice of the courts and juries and the malignity of his accusers, which should stand as long as history continued to record the awful deeds then done in the name of the law against innocent and God-fearing men and women. He meant, also, to attest the strength of his feelings towards those who had been true to him and to his wife, and his vengeance toward those who had sworn and acted against him and her. He caused to be drawn up a deed of conveyance while he was in the jail at Ipswich, by which he conveyed all his property to his two sons-in-law who had been faithful to him, and executed it in the presence of competent witnesses. It was not certain whether this deed, though executed before the time of his trial, would stand against the attainder consequent upon his conviction; he had looked upon conviction as a foregone conclusion, for he had no faith in the justice of court or jury. When he was called into court to answer to his indictment, whether he was guilty or not guilty, he refused to answer. We do not know how often he was called forth, but nothing could shake him,—he stood mute. As Mr. Upham says:

> "He knew that the gates of justice were closed, and that truth had fled from the scene. He would have no part nor lot in the matter; refused to recognize the court, made no response to its questions, and was dumb in its presence. He stands alone in the resolute defiance of his attitude. He knew the penalty of suffering and agony he would have to pay; but he freely and fearlessly encountered it. All that was needed to carry his point was an unconquerable firmness, and he had it. He rendered it impossible to bring him to trial, and thereby, in spite of the power and wrath of the whole country and its authorities, retained his right to dispose of his property; and bore his testimony against the wickedness and folly of the hour in tones that reached the whole world, and will resound through all the ages."

In modern law, the prisoner who stands mute is deemed to have pleaded *not guilty*. But the English common law, to which the colony was subject in criminal matters, knew of no means by which the trial could proceed unless the accused answered to his indictment in open court. It is obvious that if any light penalty had attended such refusal to plead, many would have availed themselves of it; and so the policy of the old law was to provide an ordeal so awful that no one would deliberately undergo it. The prisoner was to be three times brought before the court and called to plead; the consequences of his refusal being solemnly announced to him each time. If he remained obdurate, the terrible sentence of *peine forte et dure* was passed upon him; and he would be laid on his back on the floor of a dungeon, mostly naked. A weight of iron would be put upon him, not quite enough to crush him. He would have no sustenance except on the first day, three morsels of the worst bread, and on the second day, three draughts of standing water from the pool nearest the prison door; and, still oppressed by the weight, he should

thus on alternate days eat and drink till he died or till he answered. If he answered, he was at once relieved, and tried in the ordinary way. It may well be imagined that when the only object of endurance was to save property from confiscation, few, indeed, would ever long endure such torture. But Corey had another motive, which lent strength to his spirit such as ranks him with the most courageous souls of all history.

Just what happened in his prison was never revealed; but according to tradition, Corey was at last taken out into an open field near Salem jail, somewhere between Howard Street Burial-ground and Brown Street. He gave his executioners to understand that it was useless to prolong the ordeal, for he would never yield. They piled the heavy stones on his body, and Calef says that some inhuman spectator or official forced his tongue, protruding in the agony of his suffocation, back into his mouth with a cane. His indomitable courage endured to the end, and he died firm, as he had declared he would. Such a scene, if imagined ever so faintly, will serve to bring back to us the crushing effect of the superstitious fears of the people, who could see in this most pathetic and marvellous instance, in a man over eighty-one years of age, of the power of a resolute will over the extremest agony of body, only a proof of devilish and malignant power.

His death produced a deep effect, and startled many into a feeling of growing repugnance and suspicion towards the witchcraft proceedings. He was excommunicated from the First Church, by the agency of the Rev. Mr. Noyes, at a meeting hurriedly called for that purpose, just before his death.

Such was the record of the victims of the witchcraft delusion and conspiracy, for it may fairly be believed that it was both, in the farms of the middle precinct. With the exception of the Shaffiin girl, whom a timely whipping brought to her senses before she did any harm, none of the accusers lived in the limits of Peabody. Of the public excitement, the fear, first of the witches, and then of the accusers,—the indignant sympathy of friends, the ready spirit of superstitious and credulous hatred toward the accused, which filled the region for so many long and awful months, little record remains. The Procters continued to live on their farms, and resumed their influential position in the society of the place; but it may well be imagined that the ties that bound the people to either the First Church, presided over by Mr. Noyes, or the village, where Parris was trying to retain his hold against the heartfelt indignation of the relatives of those whom he had been so active in persecuting, were never afterward so binding or so attractive.

CHAPTER LXVII.

PEABODY—(*Continued*).

The Separation of the Middle Precinct.

In February, 1709–10, a petition was laid before the selectment of Salem, signed by Captain Samuel Gardner and others, requesting the town of Salem to set off as a new precinct that part of the town outside of the town bridge and below the line of Salem Village. The reasons given are the distance of some of the families from the First Church in Salem, and the difficulty of general attendance on divine worship, and the growth of the district indicated. The boundaries of the proposed precinct were laid down in this petition, which was embodied in the warrant for a special town-meeting to be held March 6, 1709–10.

"Viz., on a streight line from y^e^ towne bridge to y^e^ Spriog Pond where y^e^ brook Runs out and soe along y^e^ northern shore of said Pond to Lyn line, and then northward on Lyn line to y^e^ Village Line, and then eastward on y^e^ Village line to frostfish River and then as y^e^ Saltwater Leads to y^e^ Towne bridge first named (Excepting only James Symonds, John Symonds, John Norton & Math. Whittimore), viz., for granting unto y^e^ inhabitants Dwelling within y^e^ limits above mentioned to be free from paying Rates to y^e^ Minister within y^e^ bridge Provided they do at their owne Cost and Charge build a Meeting-house for y^e^ Publick Worship of God among them and sustaine an Orthodox Minister to Preach in y^e^ same."

The meeting of March 6th was called of "those that live without or below y^e^ Village line that are Duely Qualified according to law for voteing." This call excluded the voters of Salem Village, who were probably deemed not to be interested in the separation of the middle precinct from the First Parish. The result was that the petitioners were in the minority, and the meeting was dissolved without action, as the record says, "because all the persons preluded by the Petitioners had not signed the petition."

The persons excepted lived in North Salem.

It is evident that this informality was merely a pretext seized upon by the majority to prevent further action at that time, and that a very decided opposition to the separation of the new precinct was developed at this meeting; for immediately on this rebuff in the town-meeting, the same petitioners decided to change their plans, to address the General Court, praying to be set off as a separate precinct, and to ask of the town of Salem simply a lot of land on which to build their meeting-house. As the next general town-meeting was to be held on March 20, they induced the selectmen to insert an article in the warrant authorizing the grant of a lot of land conditionally on the precinct's being established, there being at the time no petition or proceeding on foot, other than the one which had just been refused a hearing, before either the town or the General Court. Captain Samuel Gardner was a representative that year to the General Court, with Captain Jonathan Putnam, (they were paid £ 9 6*s.* apiece for their sixty-

two days' service at the assembly), and it is very likely that he felt more confident of success in the General Court than in the town-meeting. The following is the list of the Petitioners, as given by Hanson. Samuel Marble, John Nurse, Abraham Pierce, James Houlton, Samuel Cutler, Ebenezer Cutler, Samuel King, Samuel Stone, James Gould, William King, Stephen Small, Ezekiel Marsh, Benjamin Very, Ezekiel Goldthwaite, Nathaniel Waters, John Jacobs, Richard Waters, Samuel Cook, David Foster, Nathaniel Felton, John Waters, Israel Shaw, Jacob Read, John Trask, Nathaniel Tompkins, William Osborne, Jr., John O. Waldin, Anthony H. Needham, John Marsh, Benjamin Marsh, Samuel Stacey, Sr., Samuel Stacey, William Osborne, John W. Burton, Benjamin C. Procter, Elias Trask, John Giles, John Gardner, George Jacobs, John Felton, Robert Wilson, Eben. Foster, Jonathan King, Skelton Felton, Henry Cook, Joseph Douty, Thorndike Procter, Samuel Goldthwaite, Samuel Goldthwaite, Jr., John King, John King, Jr., Samuel Endicott.

The article in the warrant issued March 8, 1709–10, is "To answer the petition of severall of ye Inhabitants of this Towne, that live without y^e^ bridge and below y^e^ Village line, To grant them a Quarter of an acre of land to Set a Meeting-house upon Nigh Sam^l^ Golthrit's Jun. between that and y^e^ widow Parnell's in Case y^e^ Towne or General Court See Cause to Set them off."

The inhabitants of the village parish appear to have been in sympathy with the promoters of the new precinct, and the petitioners were able to secure a majority at the general town-meeting. A motion to proceed at once to the vote for granting one-fourth of an acre to the petitioners prevailed, and it was then voted that the land asked for be granted. A protest was immediately drawn up and signed by several of the most prominent citizens of the "Body of the Town," and was entered on the records. Its terms are curious and interesting. The grounds of the protest were that the inhabitants of the new precinct "have never been sett of, nor any Precinct or District for a Parish Prescribed by the Towne, and altho' this matter of theire petition was now urged and moved as preposterous and irregular, & that therefore y^e^ Towne might have time to Consider of it till another Towne meeting"; "Wee therefore" say the remonstrants, "Doe hereby dissent from and Protest against the Said Precipitate and Irregular vote or act therein for y^e^ reasons following, viz:

"1.—Because two of the Selectmen that order'd the Inserting this matter in the warrant were Livers without the Bridge, & one of them a Petitioner in said Petition, and both Subscribers for the there Intended meeting house.

"2.—Because two More of the Selectmen that were of the Village Parish ware absent from their Brethren when the said Petition was ordered in the warrant.

"3.—Because the Three Selectmen that are Livers within the Bridge at y^e^ Time of the Agitation about itt Declared againist the other Two Inserting s^d^ Petition in the warrant & Bring^s^ itt forward at this time.

"4.—Because Some of the voters were Livers without the Bridge, & Some Quakers, and cheifly those also belonging to the Village Perrish whome we humbly conceive ware not propper voters in this matter. Wee therefore pray this, our Protest, may be Entred with y^e^ said vote in the Towne Records."

Benjamin Lynde, Jonathan Corwin, William Gedney and Francis Willoughby were among the signers of this protest.

The next sitting of the General Court was convened May 31, and the petition for the new precinct having been duly presented, the General Court, upon reading it, issued an order of notice directing the petitioners to notify the town of Salem, by sending a copy of the petition to the Selectmen, to appear and show reason on the 16th of June, why the prayer of the petitioners should not be granted.

On the 8th of June, the selectmen called a meeting of freeholders below the village line, for the 12th. At this meeting, which was merely to give an opportunity to the remonstrants to appear against the petitioners, "at the motion of the moderator and Severall other gentlemen the Petitioners Liveing without the Bridge Drew of before voting. It was "voated that the Towne will Choose a Comitte or agents to Shew Reason why the Prayers of the Petitioners our Neighbours without the Bridge should not be Granted." A committee consisting of Major Samuel Browne, Benjamin Lynde, and Josiah Wolcot, was chosen to show reason in the town's behalf against the petition. The arguments of the remonstrants were filed in writing, and contain evidence of warm feeling. The committee for Salem do not hesitate to say to the General Court "Wee Cannott Butt think that Thatt Honourable Court will never want Buisness and Trouble If such Hasty and forward Petitioners be Encouraged and have their Desires." They also declare that "There was no such design until our Church had Chosen Mr. George Corwin for an assistant in the ministry to our Rev^d^. Mr. Noyes, which not being pleasing to One, or Two of the Chief of y^e^ Petitioners has occasioned this new undertaking, and a great unhappiness in the Town." It was objected also that the separation would take from the body of the town, so far as concerned parish matters, three fourths of all improved lands, and the best part of the common lands, and it would withdraw eighty or ninety families from the First Church.

On the 19th of June, the General Court referred the whole matter to the next session, and appointed a committee to repair to Salem, and upon a full hearing of the petitioners, and the selectmen and others in behalf of the town, and after taking a view of the place proposed for the new building, "to offer their opinion of the most convenient place for a new congregation, Making report upon the whole to this Court at their next session."

Tuesday, the 12th of September, was set for the hearing before the committee of the General Court in Salem. The selectmen determined to make the visit of the committee an agreeable one, for at a meeting of

the selectmen, September 9th, it was "ordered that John Pratt hee spoken to make Sutable Entertainment for y^e^ Comitte apointed by y^e^ General Court to come to Salem refering to y^e^ precinct petition for without y^e^ Bridge & that the Towne will defray y^e^ Charge thereof."

John Pratt was for many years the proprietor of the famous "Ship Tavern" on Essex Street, nearly opposite Centre Street, on the site afterward occupied by the Mansion House. He afterward removed, about 1750, to a house on the corner of Essex and Washington Streets. About 1773 another house of entertainment, on the corner of Washington and Church Streets, was called the Ship Tavern.

The meeting of the committee was probably held in the Town House, in the upper part of which was the court-room, and which was situated in the middle of Washington Street, anciently School Street, facing Essex Street, about where the eastern end of the tunnel now is.

At this hearing fresh papers were filed by the parties; the petitioners rejoined to the arguments of the respondents, and pointed out that the new parish would take only about one-fourth of the families of the First Parish, and that owing to the small means of those who lived by husbandry, compared to the merchants and tradesmen of the town, it would take away but "a little more than a fifth part of y^e^ proportion rated to the minister."

The full discussion has not been preserved, but it was doubtless animated, for these were people who took a deep interest in everything of public concern, and who were accustomed to vehement debate.

The committee were taken to the proposed site of the new meeting-house, and they were entertained by the town with great liberality; for John Pratt's bill "for Entertainment of y^e^ Committe & y^e^ Company that attended & accompanied them" for "Two dinners, expenses, &c.," amounted to £4 7*s.* 6*d.*, a very considerable sum for a junket in those days, which was approved the following January without comment, so far as the records show; perhaps because at the same meeting of the selectmen their patriotic ardor was stirred by an order to pay to the same landlord "For expense on Major Lee & his pylot bringing y^e^ first news of port Royalls being taken," amounting to 12*s.* 10*d.* It is probable that the item of "expenses, &c.," included a hospitable supply of liquors. The use of the same word in the order to pay for the celebration of the victory at Port Royal, shows that it had an ascertained meaning, like that of the word "sundries" in bills for celebrations of more recent date. It is interesting to note that in one respect at least we are more puritanical than our forefathers, for a town officer would hardly venture now to "treat" at the expense of the town in celebration of a victory.

On November 1, 1710, the legislative committee submitted a report, dated October 31, in favor of setting off the new precinct. The report was read in the council and left upon the board. The next day the report was again read and debated. On the 3d, upon the question "Whether the Council will now vote the said report," there was a tie. It was not till the 10th of November that the report was finally accepted. The recommendation of the committee was that "The said Precinct do begin at the great Cove in the North Field so to run directly to Trask's Grist Mill, taking in the Mill to the new Precinct; from thence on a Strait Line to the Mile Stone on the Road to Salem Meeting-house, and So along the Road to Lyn by Lindsay's; and then along the Line between Salem and Lyn Northward, till it comes to Salem Village line, & along by that line to Frost Fish River, & then by the Salt Water to the great Cove first mentioned; and that the Meeting-house be erected on that Piece of Land near Gardner's Brook, already granted by the Towne for that End."

The report of the committee, which was signed by Penn Townsend for the committee, was read and accepted by both houses and consented to by Governor Dudley the same day, November 10, 1710.

It seems that although the committee, in their report, speak of a piece of land as already granted by the town, there had been no location of the grant, which was indeed, by its terms, conditional.

On the 28th of December a formal vote was passed at a meeting of the selectmen, ordering that Captain Jonathan Putnam, Mr. Benjamin Putnam and Mr. John Pickering or any two of them be a committee to lay out the quarter of an acre and make return thereof.

It was undoubtedly a shrewd proceeding on the part of the petitioners to obtain the conditional grant in advance, and then locate it by the recommendation of the committee of the General Court before the layers-out had been appointed. The fact that the land had already been granted may be fairly supposed to have had some weight in the deliberations of the committee.

CHAPTER LXVIII.

PEABODY (*Continued*).

The Middle Precinct—Building the Meeting-house.

On the 28th of November, 1710, a general meeting of the inhabitants of the Middle Precinct was held. Captain Samuel Gardner was chosen moderator, and John Gardner was chosen "Clark." It was voted "That there be A Convenient Meeting hous Built for y^e^ Publick Worship of God w^th^ all convenient Speed in this Middle Precinct, and that it be Erected on y^e^ place of Ground granted by the Town for that End." The committee chosen to have charge of the

building of the new house were "Cap^{t} Sam^{ll} Gardner, M^{r} Jn^{o} Trask Sen^{r}, Mr James Holton, Mr Sam^{ll} Cutler, M^{r} Jn^{o} Nurse, Mr Jon^{a} Mash, Mr Jn^{o} Felton, Mr Will^{m} King, Mr Thorndick Procter, Mr. Abell Gardner, Mr Abr^{m} Pearse, M^{r} Jn^{o} Waters."

The site chosen for the new meeting-house is that now occupied by the South Congregational Church in Peabody. It is mentioned in the proceedings at the centennial celebration of the incorporation of Danvers that the original grant of a quarter of an acre was in some way increased to about an acre.

The committee on the building, which is commonly spoken of in the parish records as "y^{e} grate committy" met, with brief delay, on the 30th of November, and it was "Agreed that y^{e} Building be 48 feat Long and 35 feat wid and 24 feat stud so as to have two Galaris." It was "Agreed That M^{r} Sam^{ll} Cutler M^{r} Robert Willson M^{r} Jn^{o} Waters Be undertakers for y^{e} workmanship of y^{e} Hous and are to have 2^{s} 9^{d} ℔ Day for so many days as thay work from the present time till y^{e} 10 ^{day} of March next and then 3^{s} ℔ day so Long as y^{e} Committy sees good. Agreed That other carpenders have 2^{s} 6^{d} per day for so many days as they work, and men that work with A Narro Ax to have 2^{s} ℔ day."

On January 15, 1710–11, the committee called a general meeting of the inhabitants of the parish to petition the town for a lot for the minister, and it was voted "to move or petition for 10 acres of land or as much as y^{e} town sees meet to be laid out between Mr. Sam^{ll} Stones and Sam^{ll} Goldthrit's for y^{e} use of y^{e} Ministry for this Precinct. The location asked for would be between Washington Street and Foster Street, on the southerly side of Main Street. On March 12, 1710–11 the matter came before the general town meeting of Salem, and it was left to the select men to propose to the next annual town meeting "relating to a Sutable proportion of lands for y^{e} Ministry of y^{e} body of y^{e} Toune and y^{e} other two precincts to be set apart for y^{e} use of y^{e} Ministry of y^{e} severall Districts." It seems that the application of the new precinct for a minister's lot was the occasion of the other parishes' asking for lots also, and at the meeting on March 24, 1711–12, the town was asked to grant ten acres to each of the outlying precincts and twenty acres to the First Parish. This the voters refused to do; but it was voted to grant half an acre of land to "the New Chappell lately erected," for the use of the minister. This was shortly after Mr. Prescott had been called to the Middle Parish.

This grant of one-half acre was not laid out for several years. In 1715 application was made to the selectmen of Salem to lay it out, and they did so the same year, near the meeting-house. The location included the vicinity of the Universalist Church building, extending toward the square. Part of this land was afterward conveyed to the Rev. Mr. Holt, and the remainder continued in the possession of the ministry until 1818, when it was sold to Matthew Hooper for fifteen hundred dollars. The town of Salem refused to grant more land to the various precincts; but when in 1714 there was a division of common rights, five acres were granted to the commoners to each of the four churches. These appropriations were located, one above the other, on the left of the old Boston road, going toward Poole's bridge from Salem, between Glasshouse Field and the Sheep Pasture. The various church lots lay on the southerly side of the road now leading to Swampscott from Aborn Street, extending in a direction parallel to the Boston road. This land also was sold in 1845 for six hundred dollars and the proceeds of all the ministry lands of the Middle Precinct forms a fund which has at times been invested in a parsonage and at other times kept at interest. In the grants of these lands, in 1714 and 1715, the Middle Precinct is spoken of as Brooksby Parish or Precinct, showing that the ancient name was still in use at that time.

The original dimensions of the new meeting-house were enlarged at a meeting of the Great Committee in March, 1710–11, and it was agreed that the house should be fifty-one feet long and thirty-eight feet broad. The lower part of the "Galari Gurts" were to be eight and one-half feet from the floor; there were to be six seats in the front gallery and five seats in the end galleries. The pulpit was in the middle of one of the long sides, and the principal aisle, or "alley," ran at right angles to the sitters, lengthwise and in the middle of the house. The pews were nearly square; there were twenty of them, and they were mostly about five feet by six, though Samuel Cutler's pew was more than seven by six feet, and one pew occupied by Samuel and John Gardner was six feet by nine. The scarcity and costliness of window-glass made it necessary to economize greatly in the use of that luxury; and some of the pew-holders being inconvenienced by the darkness of their sittings, it was voted in May, 1712, "That thay which have no windos in their Puse have Leave to cut sum out Provided thay maintain them at their one Charge." If this liberty was largely availed of, it must have produced a picturesque irregularity in the appearance of the structure from the outside. One case, at least, is recorded; Daniel Marble was given leave to cut a window out of the side of the meeting-house against his pew, to be maintained by him. This was in 1726. In 1765 the proprietors of new pews were given liberty to cut or make windows at the east and west doors.

The building was raised June 6, 1711. Mr. Joseph Green, of the Village Church, has recorded in his diary that he went to the raising "at Col. Gardner's." Captain Samuel Gardner's house was on the northerly corner of Central and Elm Streets. The festivities of that occasion were probably paid for by private subscription, for the only item of refreshments which appears in the parish accounts at

that period is the very modest entry "p^d^ for Syder bread & Cheese when the planck was unloaden, 02^s^."

On October 5, 1711, a day of fasting and prayer was recommended "particularly in y^e^ Calling of A minister," and the wish was devoutly spread upon the record "That God would direct in that Waighty Consearn to such a person as may be a blessing to y^e^ place." A committee was chosen at the same time for granting pews and seating the house; so that the building was probably nearly or quite ready at that time. The record of the first seating is not entered till several years afterward, about 1721. The twenty pews were granted to some of the more important families, and the other seats were given with due consideration to age and rank, the men and women sitting separately. It would seem that even the owners of pews did not sit with their wives, for some of the pew-owners had other seats allotted to them, and it is recorded "That Ju° Waters shall have y^e^ Pew to y^e^ westward of Nath^l^ Felton's for his wife and family and that said Waters is seated in y^e^ front fore seat in y^e^ Galary." The women were seated in the east gallery and the easterly part of the house below, and the men had the west gallery and western part of the house. The sittings are described as "y^e^ three short seats before y^e^ pulput," "y^e^ west body of seats," "y^e^ body of long Women's seats belo," "The fore seat of the west end of the men's gallery," and so on.

On November 6, 1711, a committee was chosen to inquire after candidates and invite them to preach. It was resolved that candidates should be paid by contribution, or by rates if the contributions fell short.

Three candidates are mentioned in the records,—Mr. Benjamin Prescott, Mr. Sutchelif and Mr. Barnard. The latter was probably the Rev. John Barnard, who was a graduate of Harvard College in 1709, the class of Mr. Prescott. The name Sutchelif does not appear in the Harvard Catalogue; it may be that the Rev. Wm. Shurtleff was the person meant. On the 4th of March, 1711–12, a general meeting of the parish was held to choose a minister. Of course, only the qualified male voters of the precinct were allowed to vote, the qualification being the same as that for voting in town affairs; but those who could not attend on this occasion were allowed to vote by proxy. The names of the three candidates were brought forward, and the clerk makes the brief and important entry, "The person Chosen to be our Minister in Mr. Benj. Prescot." It was agreed "That if Mr. Prescott Cums and settles with us we will pay yearly to him y^e^ sum of Eighty Pounds in Province Bills or in silver money as it passes from man to man, So long as he continues to be our minister."

In February, 1711–12, Mr. Prescott was settled as the first pastor, and it seemed as if the long and bitter contest for separation from the First Parish was over. But the people of those days were sturdy controversialists, and it was too soon to expect peace.

The officers of the First Parish made out their list of rates, as usual, upon those who had formerly paid rates, although many of them had contributed largely from their slender means for building the new meeting-house and settling the new minister. The indignant voters of the middle precinct sent a committee to the General Court to acquaint that body with their grievance, and ask relief against the tax, which was being pressed with the full vigor of the law. This committee was chosen October 13, 1712, and they obtained speedy justice, for on the 30th of October it was by the General Court

"*Resolved* and declared that the said Precinct, being set off by Order of this Court, & having worthily performed their Engagement in erecting a convenient Meeting House for the publick worship of God, & settled a learned orthodox Minister & provided an honourable support for him, They are not further chargeable to the support of the Ministry in the Body of the Town, being no longer of the audience there; and the Assessment made lately upon the Inhabitants of the Precinct for the Ministry in the Body of the Town by the Selectmen and Assessors, & all warrants issued for the collection and distraining for the same be & hereby are superseded and made null and void."

It was not till 1713 that the members of the First Church who were included in the new parish sent in their request to be dismissed from the mother church.

"SALEM, April 24th, 1713.

"To the Rev'd Mr. Nicholas Noyes, Teacher of the Church in Salem, and to the Church of Christ there:

"Hon'd, Rev'd, and Beloved:

"WHEREAS it hath pleased our gracious God to smile upon our endeavors for the erecting of an house for the carrying on the public worship of God, and settling a minister amongst us, and we being called by divine providence (as we apprehend) to settle a particular church according to the Gospel, under the ministry of the Rev'd Mr. Benj. Prescot: Our humble request to yourselves is that you will please to dismiss us and our children with your approbation and blessing, to be a church of ourselves and until we are so, with the consent and approbation of the Elders and messengers of the churches that shall assist at the ordination of the Rev'd Mr. Prescot, to continue members of Salem Church, and as there shall be occasion assist and help us, especially by your prayers unto the God of all grace, that in so great an affair we may be directed and assisted to proceed in all things according to the will of God, unto whom be glory in the church by Jesus Christ, throughout all ages, world without end."

"Your unworthy brethren and sisters living within the bounds of the Middle District in Salem.

"Hanna King.	Martha Adams.	Sam'l Goldthwait, sen.
Judah Mackintire.	Elizabeth Cook.	Ebenezer Gyles.
Elizabeth Nurse.	Sarah Gardiner.	Abraham Pierce.
Sarah Robinson.	Elizabeth Gardiner.	John Foster.
Ales Shafflin.	Isabel Pease.	John Felton.
Hanna Snull.	Ha na Felton.	David Fester.
Hanna Southwick.	Hanna Foster.	Abel Gardiner.
Mary Tompkins.	Abigail French.	John Gardiner.
Elizabeth Tompkins.	Elizabeth Gyles.	Samuel Goldthwait.
Elizabeth Verry.	Elizabeth Goldthwait.	William King.
Jemima Verry.	Hanna Goldthwait.	Richard Waters.
Sarah Waters.	Deborah Good.	Robert Pease."
Elizabeth Waters.	Elizabeth King.	
Susanna Daniel.	Samuel Gardiner.	

The request for dismissal was granted, and the following letter of dismissal was issued:

"At a Church meeting at the Teacher's house, June 25th. The Church having received a petition from our brethren and sisters living in the District, wherein they desire a dismission from us for themselves and their children, in order to be a church of themselves. The Church giveth in answer as followeth: That although we cannot praise or justify our brethren's proceeding so far as they have done in order to be a church of themselves without advising with or using means to ob-

tain the consent of the Church they belonged to; yet at the request of our brethren and sisters, and for peace sake, we permit them and their children to become a church of themselves; provided they have the approbation and consent of the Elders and messengers of some other churches in communion with us, that shall assist at their church gathering and ordaining them a pastor. And until they have so done, they continue members of this church. And so we commit them to the grace of God in Christ Jesus, praying that they may have divine direction and assistance in the great work they are upon, and that they may become an holy and orderly and peaceable church, and that the Lord would add to them of such as are within their own limits, many such as shall be saved. The above answer was twice distinctly read to the brethren of the Church before it was voted, and then consented to by the vote of the Church, *nemine contradicente*."

Rev. Benjamin Prescott was accordingly ordained, September 23, 1713, and the separation of the parishes was at last complete. In all the history of the separation of towns and precincts, of which our legislative and municipal history furnishes many noteworthy instances down to the present time, there has rarely been a division more earnestly pursued or more stubbornly resisted than that which resulted in the formation of the Middle Precinct of Salem.

CHAPTER LXIX.

PEABODY—(*Continued.*)

The Separation from Salem—The District and Town of Danvers.

From this time forward the interests of the inhabitants of the middle precinct continued to be centred about their parish meetings. They were still subject to taxation for the general expenses of the town of Salem, and for educational purposes; but they very soon demanded and received separate schools under their own supervision. In 1714 the town granted money towards the support of a "Reading, writing and cyphering school" in the new precinct, and a committee was appointed to receive it "and distribute it to the Inhabitants according to their discretion."

The schools of that time were not entirely free, but those who were able to pay for the teaching of their children did so, and the town undertook to pay only for those whose parents could not afford to pay for their instruction. The education of children, while not compulsory, was universal, and the selectmen saw to it that children whose parents neglected their education and training in some useful calling were put out to service. It was not till about 1768 that schools were supported in this commonwealth wholly by taxation, and were free to all. This explains what was meant by the distribution of the school money.

As time went on there was a growing desire for independence in all municipal affairs. There had always existed a strong feeling of sympathy between the middle and the village parishes. A difficulty at one time arose by reason of an attempt, in 1743, by some of the inhabitants of the village to encroach upon the rights of the middle precinct by including within the village bounds some of those who belonged in the southerly parish. On August 16th, at a special meeting, it was voted to choose a committee of three men to appear at the General Court and answer to the petition of Captain Samuel Endicott, John Porter, Benjamin Porter and John Endicott, and also the petition of James Prince, agent for the Village Parish. Daniel Epes, Daniel Gardner and John Procter were chosen, and they were successful in resisting the encroachment.

With this exception, the two outlying parishes were united in their desire for separation from the town of Salem. In 1689, very shortly after the establishment of the village parish, there had been an attempt to establish a new township to include the village. The witchcraft excitement and the formation of the middle precinct delayed the plan, but it was revived from time to time. The inconvenience of attending town meetings from the outlying parts of the town, the gathering of local interests about the parish meetings and the desire to have separate schools under their own control, led the village and middle parishes to discuss the project from time to time. In 1732 the village precinct sent in a petition to the town of Salem, praying to be set off from Salem with some enlargement of boundaries; and in 1740 an attempt was made to unite the two outlying parishes in an effort for separation.

In the Middle Precinct, July, 1740, "It Being put to vote whither y^e^ Inhabitants of this parish will come off y^e^ town of Salem and Joyn with the Inhabitants of Salem Village, Provided that they See cause to take this Middle Parrish (the whole of itt) as itt is now Bounded, To Joyn Together both Parishes, and make a Township our selves, separate from y^e^ Town of Salem," a committee was chosen to manage the whole affair, and lay the proceedings before the next meeting. The people of Salem raised a committee to treat with the "ffarmers," and after consultation they reported that the village people might be pacified if the town would raise a sufficient amount of money "to maintain two schools within the bridges, and one at the Middle Precinct, that should draw their proportion of the school money, raise their own committees, and control their own affairs." The report was accepted, and the town raised £250, province bills. But the relief was only temporary. The farmers continued to renew their request; they desired to manage their own affairs, and as time went on the reasons for separation were increased rather than diminished. In April, 1742, at a meeting specially called, the middle precinct voted to choose a committee of the village "concerning comeing off from y^e^ town of Salem," and report their proceedings.

On May 9, 1751, it was again voted to join with the village parish in an attempt to separate from Salem. It was desired to form a new township, and not

merely a district, and the records show that such was the plan of the farmers. The committees from the two parishes consulted together, and prepared a memorandum of agreement for the separation, in July, 1751.

"Whereas y^e^ Village Parish and y^e^ Middle Parish in Salem have agreed to come of from y^e^ town as a seperate Town by themselves, as appears by y^e^ votes of their respective Meetings, and whereas we y^e^ subscribers being appointed and Impowered for and in behalf of Each parish to Confer together, and make Report att y^e^ meeting of sd parishes Respectively, relating to said Affair, have meet together and after due Consideration maks Report as follows: (viz.) That y^e^ Town meetings shall be one year in one parish and y^e^ next year in the other parish successively. That y^e^ major part of y^e^ selectmen and assessors shall be chosen one year in one Parish, and y^e^ next year in y^e^ other Parish successively. That each Parish shall share Equally in all profits and Benefits that shall happen or acrue.

July y^e^ 2d, 1751.

Daniel Epes, Jr, Malichi Felton, John Proctor } for the Middle Parish

Samuel Flint, Cornelius Tarball, James Prince } for the Village."

This report was accepted, and on the 9th of September, 1751, the same committee was authorized to join with the committee from the village, and prefer a petition to the town of Salem relating to the separation. The authors of the report were also instructed to "labour" with the people of Salem; for although, as Hanson states, the feeling in Salem was more favorable for separation than it has been, there was still a considerable opposition to the movement.

On the 25th of October, 1751, a town meeting was held in Salem to consider the petition, and it was voted "That the Prayer of said Petition be so far granted as that with the leave of the Great and General Assembly the Inhabitants and Estates of said Parishes be set off as a separate Township agreeable to the present boundaries of said Parishes; and that in view of the claim of the annual incomes of the Town they be allowed thirteen pounds six shillings and eight pence to be paid out of the Town Treasury when legally set off as a distinct Town beside their proportion of the sums due to them for the Incouragement of the schools by virtue of former votes." The new town was to care for its own poor. It was also voted to carry out the provisions of a previous vote, in 1747, by apportioning one hundred pounds in bills of the last emission to the inhabitants of the whole of the old town of Salem.

The plan was originally to form a town of the two parishes; but in 1743 the King had given an instruction to the Governor of the province, forbidding him to give his assent to any act creating a new town, without a clause inserted suspending the execution of such act until it should receive His Majesty's approbation. This was because it was thought undesirable by the crown to increase the number of representatives in the General Assembly. The popular branch was gaining in power, and their increase had given them the control of all matters which were determined by a joint session of the two Houses. Governor Bernard, in a letter to the board of trade, in 1761, says that the number of representatives had then increased from eighty-four in 1692, when the charter was opened, to about one hundred and seventy, while the Council kept the same number, twenty-eight. By the charter the Council was chosen in joint convention, and by usage many other officers were so chosen. It is probable, however, that the spirit of independence had already begun to manifest itself in the colonies, and it was felt in England that the growth of the power of the popular branch of the assembly was too favorable to such independent ideas. It seems that the petitioners yielded to this policy, and that the petition presented by them to the General Court asked only for the establishment of a district; a district being a town in all respects except the right to choose a representative. When a district was established, it was allowed to join with the town from which it had been separated in the choice of a representative. On the 22d of January, 1751–52, a memorial of Samuel Flynt, Daniel Epes, Jr., Esq., and others, in behalf of the Village and Middle Precincts, praying to be incorporated into a district, was read in Council, and the petitioners were ordered to serve notice on the town of Salem. This was not concurred in by the House of Representatives, but on January 28th, an act was passed establishing the district of Danvers. This act recited that the causes for the separation were the distance of the inhabitants of the outlying parishes from that part of the first parish in Salem where the public affairs of the town were transacted, the distance from the grammar school in Salem, and also the fact that most of the inhabitants of the First Parish were either merchants, mechanics, or traders, and those of the Village and Middle Parishes chiefly husbandmen, which was the cause of many disputes and difficulties in the management of public affairs. It was provided by the act that the agreements of the town of Salem, which had been made conditional on the parishes being incorporated into a town should be binding, although only a district had been incorporated.

The name of the parish now became the "Second Parish in the district of Danvers," which was soon changed to the "South Parish in Danvers," which continued to be its name for more than a century. The church was called "The Second Congregational Church in Danvers."

About a year after the erection of the district of Danvers, the boundary between it and Salem was run, corresponding generally with the boundary of the Middle Precinct. The line took Trask's grist-mills into Danvers, and ran from the mills "To the Easternmost Elm Tree on sd plain and by the Northerly side of the highway there called Boston Road."

There was at that time a row of elm trees extending along Boston Street in a direction not quite parallel to the present line of the street, the easternmost tree being the boundary tree, and the tree at the other end being in the vicinity of Humphrey Case's house, near the residence of the late James F. Caller.

A stone with the date 1707 stands at the foot of the "big tree;" but as the tree was a boundary in 1712, it must have been more than a young tree at that time, and probably dates back to 1660 or 1670. The intermediate trees in this row were cut down many years ago for fire-wood, during a very severe winter when there was great dearth of fuel in Salem; and within the memory of living men the ridge caused by their stumps was to be seen in the road. The stone marked 1707 may have been the mile-stone mentioned in the legislative report on the separation of the middle precinct.

On March 30, 1752, it was ordered that fences be erected across the highway at the town bridge and the bridge by the south mills, and that all persons from Boston or suspected of bringing contagion should be excluded from the town by a guard kept at the barriers.

The first joint election of a Representative from the town of Salem and district of Danvers was named to take place May 18, 1752. At that time the small-pox was raging, both in Boston and Salem; and the meeting voted not to send a Representative to the General Court, which was to be held at Concord on account of the pestilence in Boston. It was declared that no disrespect or designed affront was intended to the honorable house, and that they would submit to whatever fine should be imposed; but that owing to dissensions between the town and the lately established district, it was impracticable to choose a Representative, and not consistent with the peace of the inhabitants; that small-pox was prevalent in several of the families of the town, and that it might be carried to the General Court by a Representative if chosen; and that the expenses attending the sickness had been so heavy in many instances that many persons could not bear the charges of sending a Representative.

Although the district was not entitled to send a Representative, it sent a delegate, who was allowed to vote on certain matters. In 1754, when the colonies proposed a plan of union for mutual safety and protection, the district voted against it through its delegate, Daniel Epes.

On February 3, 1754–55, it was voted that Daniel Epes, Jr., should carry the renewed request of the district to become a town before the General Assembly. This request was continued from time to time, and the last presentation of it was by Daniel Epes, June 8, 1757. The bill was passed and signed on June 9th, but the date of its publication is June 16, 1757.

This act did not contain any clause suspending its operation until the king should approve it; it was plainly in contravention of the instructions given to the Governor. The feeling of independence on the part of the province was beginning to show itself. At the time there was no Governor or Lieutenant-Governor in the province. Thos. Hutchinson, afterwards Governor, was then a member of the Council, and he caused his protest against the act to be entered on the records. He gave for the reasons of his dissent,—

"1st. Because the professed design of the Bill is to give the Inhabitants, who now join with the Town of Salem in the choice of a Representative a power a chusing by themselves, and the number of which the House of Representatives may at present consist, being full large; the increasing the number must have a tendency to retard the proceedings of the General Court, and to increase the burden which now lyes upon the People by their long Sessions every Year, and must likewise give that House an undue proportion to the Board in the Legislature where many affairs are determined by a joint Ballot of the two Houses.

"2d. Because there being no Governor or Lieutenant-Governor in the Province, it is most agreeable to his Majesty's Commission to the late Governor: to the message of this Board to the House of Representatives at the opening the Session; and is in itself a thing most reasonable that all matters of any importance, and not necessary to be acted upon immediately, which is the case with the present Bill, should be deferred until there be a Governor or Lieutenant-Governor in the Chair.

"3d. Because the Board by passing this Bill as the Second Branch of the Legislature necessarily bring it immediately after, before themselves for their Assent, or Refusal, as the first Branch, and such Members as Vote for this Bill in one capacity, must give their Assent in the other directly against the Royal Instruction to the Governor, in a case in no degree necessary for the public Interest, or else their Actions will be inconsistent and Absurd.

"Council Chamber, 9th June, 1757. THOS. HUTCHINSON."

It appears that complaints of "long sessions" were prevalent even then.

The acts of this session were not forwarded to the Privy Council until the next January, owing to the absence of the Governor at the time of their enactment. They were received by the Privy Council in May, 1758, and referred to the Board of Trade. The Board of Trade did not act upon the laws of this session until July, 1759, when they prepared a draught of the acts which ought to be allowed, and made a special report that the act of incorporation of Danvers ought to be disallowed, on the ground that it had been passed in contradiction to the royal instruction. On August 10, 1759, an order was passed in the Privy Council, disallowing the act, and declaring it null and void.

It is believed that for some reason, now unknown, the provincial authorities never received notice of the disallowance of the act. Hutchinson certainly did not know that it had been disallowed, and he surmises in his history of Massachusetts, that as the Council kept no correspondence by letters with the King's ministers, this bill, with others, received the royal allowance probably without being observed to be contrary to the instructions. The act of incorporation was valid till disallowed; the town of Danvers was annually represented in the General Court from and after the year 1758, and later legislation expressly recognized Danvers as a town. No official notice of the disallowance being ever received, and the records of the Privy Council not having been searched by any one having the facts in mind, it was not discovered till long after the Revolution had rendered the discovery unimportant that the act of incorporation of Danvers was void after 1759.

There has been considerable speculation as to the origin of the name Danvers. Hanson says that the region was called Danvers as early as 1745; but nothing appears on the records to indicate that such was the case, or how the name came to be given. The discussion is one which belongs more appropriately to the history of Danvers than to that of Peabody, but it may be mentioned that two theories of its origin have been suggested. It has been thought by some the solution was found in the fact that Lord Danvers was connected with the Osborne family in England, and the names are united in more then one branch of the Osborne family. It has been surmised that the Osbornes from whom the families of that region in Danvers originated, may have come from one of these branches of the Osborne family in England, and that they suggested the name. This however, is a pure guess, inasmuch as it is not certainly known where the founder of the Osborne family in Danvers was born or lived before coming to this country. Felt, in his Annals, says that Lieut.-Governor Phipps suggested that name out of gratitude to one of his patrons. But the last Lord Danvers died before 1660, and the name afterward appears only in connection with other families, so that we are quite in the dark as to who the patron was. It would seem at least probable that the people of the new town had something to do with selecting a name for it, but the real cause of its selection is still conjectural.

The mill belonging to Trask nearest to Salem town is spoken of in 1715, as the fulling mill; so that it appears some business was done in fulling cloth made in the vininity, probably by individuals on hand looms. It does not appear that the glass making industry, from which so much had been hoped, had survived till this time. The potteries, for which Danvers afterward became so famous, were not in operation until the latter part of this period, if at all during this time. One of these was located where the business is still carried on, on Central Street. There was at one time another on the south parish, in the vicinity of Holten Street. The business of tanning is said to have been begun about 1739, by Joseph Southwick, a Quaker, who lived in the house opposite the Lexington monument on Main Street, which was standing within twenty-five or thirty years. This house was among the first to adopt the comparatively modern square panes of glass, in the place of the diamond leaded pane, and from this circumstance was called the "glass house." Mr. Southwick began the infant industry, which now employs thousands of men and occupies acres of space in the town, by using half hogsheads for vats. After a while, as his business increased, he obtained a gondola, which he used until after a few years he sank three or four vats. The location of his tanyards, which continued for many years in his family, is still occupied in the same industry.

CHAPTER LXX.

PEABODY—(*Continued*).

Social Life and Customs in the Middle Precinct.

In the period from 1710 to 1757 the Middle or South Parish suffered but little change in the character or occupation of its inhabitants. They were mostly farmers; with the exception of the Trasks, who carried on their mills, there was little or no mechanical employment. According to the best authorities, there were, in 1752, about fifteen hundred inhabitants in both the Village and Middle Precincts. As there were eighty or ninety families in the Middle Precinct in 1710, there could not have been any great increase of the population in these forty years. There were some wealthy land-owners, but most of the people of the South Parish were of limited means. The social relaxations of the time were few. Outside of the religious meetings there were few opportunities for social gatherings, except on the rare occasion of a house raising, or some such friendly meeting. The village singing school, which began to be introduced into New England during this period, was the beginning of the lecture and entertainment system, which afterward became so important a factor in the social life of New England. The psalm singing of the Puritans of the beginning of the eighteenth century was by rote; there were no instruments used in the churches, but the hymn was "lined out" by one of the deacons. The first mention of organs in churches is contained in the diary of Rev. Mr. Green, of the Village Parish, in 1711, when he says of a visit to Boston and Cambridge, "I was at Mr. Thomas Brattle's, heard the organs and saw strange things in a microscope." This may have been the organ which Mr. Brattle gave, in 1714, to King's Chapel, in Boston.

The people generally were opposed to the introduction of singing by note, fearing that it would lead to the use of instrumental music and other musical frivolities. In 1723 several members of a church in Braintree were excommunicated because they advocated the reformed method of singing. A council, however, shortly afterward, reinstated them, and effected a compromise. An equally strong feeling was formed elsewhere in regard to the matter; but the new school prevailed, and the young people had their singing schools, at which they learned hymns of surprising rapidity and complication of movement, in contrast to the severe music of the elders. The choir began to make its appearance, though there is no record of it in the South Parish till 1763, when it was voted "that there be two seats on the easterly side of y^e^ broad ally in the Meeting-house be sett apart for a number of persons to sett in for the better accommodating singing in y^e^ Meeting-house, and that the same be under the regulation of the Parish

committee from time to time, as there shall be occasion, for carrying on that part of Divine service."

After the bell was procured, about 1720, the curfew called all to early slumbers.

Samuel Stacy was the first "bellman" of the parish. The title "sexton" does not appear in the old records, perhaps because the Puritans of that day thought that sexton (or as it was then and is sometimes still pronounced, "saxton" or "saxon," being a shortening of "sacristan"), savored too much of church formality. After 1750 we find the "saxsen" or "saxton" spoken of in the records.

The duties of caring for the meeting-house were very simple; no fires, no carpets, no lights, with very little paint and window glass, made the position a very simple one. At first "the widow Parnell," who lived close by, swept and garnished the meeting-house; and there appears from time to time an article in the warrant for the parish meeting "to consider of paying the widdow Parnell." The committee, which was formally empowered "to agree with some sutible person to sweep the meeting-house," agreed with Stacy that he was to ring the bell "every night at nine of the clock, and every Sabbath day, and to sweep the meeting-house for what the Inhabitance will give him." He is spoken of in 1726 as the "bell man," though that title was sometimes applied to the night watch, for in 1710 the selectmen of Salem agreed with a bell man at 36s. (thirty-six shillings) per month, who was "to walk y^e^ Streets from Ten of y^e^ clock at Night till day light, & take care that there bee no Mischeife Done whilst people are asleep, but to doe his utmost to prevent fire, thieves, enemies or other danger." The custom of ringing the nine o'clock bell was kept up for more than a century and a half, having been discontinued in 1885.

Samuel Stacy continued to hold his office for many years; but the careful committee thought it best to ascertain how much the "Inhabitance" were giving him, and accordingly he was directed in 1731 to keep an account of what the people gave him. In 1758 and 1759 Mary Goldthwait was engaged to ring the bell and sweep the meeting-house. The bell was hung in a small belfry or "turret" over the body of the house, probably in the middle like that of the Village Meeting-house. This turret was repaired in 1740, and again in 1750, and gave place to the tower or steeple, built in 1774.

Soon after getting a bell, the parish began to feel the responsibility of their acquisition; for we find in several warrants an article "to consider of some way to goe up to Bell or Belfrey within side of the meeting-house in case anything should happen to bell or rope." The gentle and insinuating suggestiveness of this article brings vividly before us the difficulty of raising money at that time. It was not till 1727 that the parish boldly voted "to make a way up to the Bell," and to raise the money for it. Indeed, the whole history of the dealings between the parish and their minister show how scarce money was. It was customary to have a box near the entrance of the meeting-house in which strangers were expected to put some contribution, according to their means, toward the support of the worship whose privilege they enjoyed. The disposition of this fund was a grave question; and the inhabitants were called together in April, 1713, "to consider of some way to put a conclusion to y^e^ discours about y^e^ mony contributed by strangers." It was finally put to vote "whether M^r^ Prescott shall have one halfe of y^e^ mony contributed by Straingers and y^e^ Inhabitants y^e^ other half," and "Voted in y^e^ Afermitive."

The expenses of the parish at the beginning were paid partly by rates or taxes, and partly by voluntary contributions. In May, 1712, a meeting was called at the meeting house "to see about the contribution and allso to Consider of Bulding A Dwelling hous for y^e^ minister or els to allow sumthing to Mr. Prescott and he Buld A hous for himself." It was voted "that y^e^ Contribution be upheld; that y^e^ inhabitants will put their mony in papers; that y^e^ inhabitants will subscrib to y^e^ bulding of A hous for y^e^ minister." It was afterward voted "that y^e^ Inhabitants will Give M^r^ Prescott y^e^ Rocks except y^e^ Horsblocks, y^e^ Timber allso except y^e^ Joyce and will Give him allso about 8000 of Shingle nails that ware left." It does not appear that the house was built; Mr. Prescott afterward lived in a house on Central Street built for him by the brother of his third wife,—Sir William Pepperell, about 1750.

In 1731, it was again voted that the money in the free contributions should be "papered," that is, it seems, that each contributor should keep his gift separate, so that it could be known who gave and how much each contributed. This custom is a curious one, in view of its revival in the "envelope system" of offerings so common in churches at the present day. In 1736, £50 was raised by rates, and £100 by subscription, for the minister. From the very first, the collection of parish rates was difficult. In 1717 it was voted that the committee "take the directions of the law to gather the minister's rates this year." In 1720, the warrant commands John Tarball, Collector, to collect the amounts due the parish, and on failure to pay he is to "distrain the goods or chattles of the person or persons soe refusing, for y^e^ payment of y^e^ same, and for want of goods or chattles, whereon to make distress, you are to seize the body or bodyes of the person or persons so refusing, and are them to commit to y^e^ common gaoll in Salem, untill he or they pay or satisfie the sum or sums that they are Rated or assessed." Such was the severe language of the precept to the constable; but public opinion did not support the imprisonment of individuals for non-payment of parish rates. There was great delay on the part of the collectors; a list of rates given to Mr. Bell for collection in 1728 was

not completed until 1743. During the whole period of Mr. Prescott's settlement, there was constant difficulty about his salary. The sum agreed upon was slow in coming in; from time to time, as the depreciated currency of the time fell in value, additions were made to the amount granted to him, but not proportionate to the depreciation nor to his needs; and the result was a bitter controversy extending over many years, and a lawsuit, in which the courts upheld Mr. Prescott's claims.

These facts, gleaned from the parish records, throw a strong light on the state of the community at the time; the simple public interests of the people, centering about their parish affairs, and the great scarcity of money among a farming population who supported themselves upon the soil, but had no means of exchanging their crops and productions for ready money. The clothing was mostly home-made, spun and woven from their own wool, by the women of the household, dyed with such coloring as could be obtained at home or in the shops of Salem, and made up by wife or daughter in the plain fashion of the day. Linen, woven by the same hands, was laid up against the marriage of the daughters. All the industries necessary for their simple life were practiced by exchange of labor or commodities among themselves with little use of money. Food was of the plainest; there was little fresh meat; no tea or coffee in most families; great scarcity of white bread; and, in general, an absence of those luxuries which seem to the descendants of these plain farmers the very necessities of living. Potatoes began to be used about 1730, though they were known to the colonists long before; but they did not come into general use till the middle of the eighteenth century. Furniture, except in the few houses of the wealthy, was plain and bare, often home-made. Earthen-ware and wooden vessels, with pewter plates and cups, were the table-ware of the farmers. Spoons of pewter and horn were in use, and the few silver utensils were cherished as precious heirlooms. The bare floors knew no carpets, though they were scoured white, and sometimes decorated with sand sprinkled in fanciful designs; the great fire-places, even when the owners made no stint of firewood, only half-warmed the inmates in the coldest weather; and the idea of warming a bed-room, except so far as a warming-pan would thaw the sheets, would have been surprising to our ancestors. There were no fires in the churches; old or sick people took little foot-stoves in their hands, but most sat out the two and three-hour sermons without a ray of artificial heat, by sheer endurance. Woolen underclothing was not worn at all at that period, nor indeed generally until within forty or fifty years of the present time in New England. But in spite of the hard circumstances of their lives, they were a hardy, courageous and vigorous race, and many among them possessed unusual physical strength and stature, and not a few attained great length of days.

CHAPTER LXXI.

PEABODY—(*Continued*).

The Revolutionary War.

During the years before the Revolution the town went quietly on its way. At one time, in 1772, the inhabitants of the North Parish were obliged to apply to the General Court for relief against the encroachments of the South Parish. In December, 1771, the South Parish voted to hold the town-meetings in the South Meeting-house, and the next town-meeting was held there; and a majority of the town officers were chosen from the South Parish, without regard to the agreement before mentioned between the parishes, entered into before the district was established. It would seem that the South Parish must have had a majority of votes at the time. The Legislature, considering the agreement as binding upon the parishes, enacted the substance of it as a law.

With this exception, there is little to note in the internal affairs of the South Parish during this time. The town was early awakened to a thoroughly patriotic feeling. In 1765, at a town-meeting in October, they gave instructions to their representative, directing him to remonstrate against the stamp act, but to do all in his power to suppress or prevent riotous assemblies, and not to give his assent to any act of assembly that should imply the willingness of his constituents to submit to any internal taxes imposed otherwise than by the General Court of the province, and not to assent to any extravagant grants.

On December 23, 1765, additional instructions were sent to Mr. Porter, the Representative then in the General Court, similar to those already given, and concluding with an eloquent affirmation of the rights of the colonists and a denunciation of the oppressive character of the movement to deprive them of their right of managing their own internal affairs.

It is declared that taxation and representation must go together, and an argument is made of the impossibility of regulating the affairs of the colonies properly in England. "It is not in their power (the Parliament) to make the Easterly Banks of America contiguous to the Westerly Banks of Great Briton, which banks have lain and still ly one Thousand Leagues distant from Each Other, and till they can do this, they cannot (as we Humbly Concieve), Provide for the Good Government of His Majesty's Subjects in these two Distant Regions, without y^e^ Establishment of a Different Power, Both Legislative and Executive, in Each." They then urge Mr. Porter to demand a repeal of the Stamp Act. They say they are willing to be subject to the "Greatest and best of Kings," and to assist him always, but they think men of "Envious and Depraved Minds" have advised him wrongly. They think their grievance is such as "cannot but be resented by every True Englishman who has any

Spark of Generous Fire Remaining in His Breast." This was ten years before the battle of Lexington.

Samuel Holten, the Representative for the year 1768, was requested to join a convention to be gathered in Faneuil Hall, Boston, on the 22d of September, to consist of delegates from the adjacent towns in the Commonwealth. It was held during several days, and the differences between the colonies and the mother country were fully discussed. Dr. Holten took an active part in the deliberations, and distinguished himself for his vigor and acuteness of mind and excellent judgment, which characterized him throughout his long and useful public life.

The people of the town shared in the patriotic excitement of the times. The daily converse of the people was upon the signs of the times, and all were of one mind in the firm determination to resist the new laws which were in derogation of their chartered rights. It was hoped that war might be averted, but if it must come they would prepare for it as best they could.

In 1770 the merchants of Boston passed the non-importation agreement. The obnoxious tax, though repealed as to several articles, still existed upon tea, and the agreement expressed a determination to import no goods from Great Britain that were subject to the tariff, particularly tea. The people of the town, on May 28, 1770, voted their approbation of this action of the Boston merchants, and further voted "that we will not ourselves (to our knowledge), or by any person, for or under us, Directly or Indirectly, Purchase of such Person or Persons, any goods whatever, and as far as we can effect it, will withdraw our connection from every Person who shall Import Goods from Great Brittain, Contrary to the Agreement of the Merchants aforesaid. Voted that we will not drink any Tea ourselves, and use our best endeavors to prevent our Families and those connected with them, from the use thereof, from this Date, until the Act imposing a Duty on that Article be repealed, or a general Importation shall take place. Cases of Sickness excepted." A committee of twelve was raised to convey a copy of this resolution to every family in the town, to receive the signatures of the people. The committee was instructed to write the names of all who refused to append their signatures to these articles, and publish them as enemies to the country. The resolutions were printed in the *Essex Gazette*. Hanson says that Isaac Wilson seems to have been the only one who opposed the popular enthusiasm.

In June, 1772, a committee was chosen to take into account our civil liberties. They drew up a series of resolutions which were presented to the town and adopted by it unanimously. The resolutions are full of the spirit of the times, and set forth clearly and vigorously the oppressive nature of the legislation directed against the liberties of the colonies by Parliament, the various irregular and oppressive acts of the Royal governor, the changes in judicial tribunals and all the grievances which so wrought upon the minds of our forefathers; they ended by instructing the representative of the town to contend, in a constitutional way, for the just rights and privileges of the people, to labor for a union of the provinces, to refuse to yield chartered privileges, and to use his endeavors that honorable salaries be granted to the Governor, the Judges of the Superior Court and others, adequate to their dignity, with a view to lessening the influence of the crown over such officers.

Dr. Samuel Holten, Tarrant Putnam, and Captain William Shillaber were chosen a committee to correspond with the committees of correspondence for Boston and other towns. These committees of correspondence and safety were chosen in almost every town, and are often mentioned in the legislation of the period. In some instances great and unusual powers were granted to them, particularly in the acts passed with the endeavor to prevent speculation in the necessaries of life at a time when the depression of the currency gave rise to great variations of prices. In one of these acts "To prevent Monopoly and Oppression" it is enacted that these grants of extraordinary powers should not be a precedent for the future. Such were the prudence and forethought of the men of those times, even in the heat of civil war. Indeed, the most remarkable thing about the public proceedings of those days, both in towns and in the General Court, is the moderation and sober judgment by which their feelings were tempered, even when profoundly aroused. The same spirit which led the General Court to surround those accused of being enemies of the country with every safeguard for a fair and impartial trial, to make provision for the families of Tories who had fled from the State, to modify the severities of attainder for treason, and to guard the execution of the death penalty with the wisest restrictions, is seen in the public acts of towns during this period. All extravagance is avoided, and calmness and deliberation stamp all the proceedings. There is much in the records of Danvers during this time of which the patriotic citizen has a right to be proud, and which belong as much to one locality as to another. The Rev. Mr. Holt, who had been settled in the South Parish in 1758, was an ardent patriot, and he is reported to have declared that he would rather live on potatoes than submit. He procured a musket and performed drill-service regularly in the ranks of Captain Eppes' company.

On the 27th of September, 1774, Dr. Holten, the representative to the General Court to be held in Salem in October, was instructed to adhere firmly to chartered rights, not to acknowledge in any way the Act of Parliament for altering the government of Massachusetts Bay, and to acknowledge the council chosen by the last General Court. He was also authorized, if the General Court should be dissolved, to meet in a General Provincial Congress and there "to

act upon such matters as may come before you, in such a manner as shall appear to be most conducive to the true Interest of this Town and Province, and most likely to preserve the liberties of all America."

On November 21, 1774, the town voted to adhere strictly to all the resolves and recommendations of the Provincial Congress, thereby repudiating the government of England.

On January 9, 1775, it was voted to comply with the provincial recommendation, and arm and equip each man, and to provide for frequent discipline; and it was provided that each man should be paid one shilling for each half-day he was in service. On January 19, a committee was appointed to see that the citizens of Danvers were obedient to the provincial recommendations. It was voted "that the meeting of the inhabitants of this town in parties at Houses of Entertainment, for the purpose of Dancing, Feasting, &c., is expressly against the Eighth Article of the American Congress Association. Therefore the Committee of Inspection are particularly instructed to take care that the said eighth article in the Association is strictly complied."

When Col. Leslie marched toward Danvers for the purpose of destroying certain stores, a company from Danvers, under Capt. Samuel Eppes, marched to Salem to repel the expected attack. It was on Sunday, February 26, 1775, when the alarm was sounded; it is said that the sermon was cut short, and the remaining services deferred to a more convenient season. Rev. Mr. Holt is said to have been among those who marched in line on this occasion. The sober judgment of Col. Leslie, aided by the counsels of the more prudent among the inhabitants, avoided an encounter at the time, but the men were given a foretaste of the excitement of gathering in arms at the alarm of invasion.

The 19th of April arrived, and the news of the advance of the British soldiers to Concord and Lexington was brought to Danvers at about nine o'clock in the forenoon. The ringing of bells and the beat of drums communicated the tidings to the citizens. The appointed meeting place was near the South Church, at the bend of the old Boston road by the Bell tavern, and thither the men thronged from every direction.

The rendezvous of the minute-men was on the very spot where the Lexington monument was afterward erected, at the junction of the Boston road and the main street. Gen. Foster, then twenty-six years of age, had been appointed captain of the minute-men from the southern part of the town about ten days before; these minute-men were to be in readiness at a moment's warning. They were ready, and all to a man assembled at the appointed place. The Rev. Mr. Holt gave his parting benediction to them, and they started for the field of death. The women gathered about and assisted to prepare their husbands or brothers or lovers for the fight.

There had been three companies of militia in Danvers, but on March 3d it had been voted, agreeably to a vote of the Provincial Congress, that a quarter of the soldiers in the town should be *minute-men*. These minute-men were given in part to Israel Hutchinson, and in part to Gideon Foster. Foster's company was made up chiefly from Capt. Samuel Eppes' company of militia, and partly by volunteers.

By some mistake in the records these men were never formally separated from Capt. Eppes' company, so that the muster rolls of the State show only Capt. Hutchinson's company of minute-men and three companies of militia. But Captain, afterwards General, Foster, who lived to the advanced age of ninety-six, gave a full account of the affair to many people now living, and it is certain that he acted as captain at the battle of Lexington. It would seem that Capt. Samuel Eppes' company was made up from the south parish, while Capt. Jeremiah Page commanded a company from the north parish, and Capt. Samuel Flint's company included those in the northwestern part of the town, probably in both parishes. Capt. Hutchinson's company of minute-men was made up mostly of men from the New Mills, while Capt. Foster's company included his own neighbors from the south parish. The list of Capt. Foster's minute-men, given from memory by him in 1837, is as follows:

Samuel Cook, Jr.
George Southwick, Jr.
Henry Jacobs, Jr.
John Collins.
Benjamin Eppes.
Samuel Webber.
James Stone.
Solomon Wyman.
Robert Stone.
Isaac Twiss.
Samuel Reeves.
Thomas Gardner, Jr.
Joseph Twiss.
Jonathan Howard.
William Rice.
Joseph Bell.
John Setchell.
Jonathan Newhall.
Stephen Twiss.
Stephen Small.
Uriah Harwood.
Jacob Reed.
Abel Mackintire.
James Goldthwait.
John Eppes, Jr.
John Needham.

Besides these, there were certainly others, as Gen. Foster's memory was probably unable to recall from memory his entire company. Dennison Wallis and Ebenezer Goldthwaitt are mentioned by Hanson as belonging in this company, and James Osborne, whose name appears in Capt. Eppes' company, is known to have fought under Capt. Foster on that day; Benj. Daland appears also to have been with the minute-men.

The names of those from the North Parish are given in the history of Danvers, in another part of this work, including the companies of Captains Page and Flint, and Capt. Hutchinson's company of minute-men.

The names of those in Capt. Eppes' company, exclusive of the minute-men, who went with Capt Foster, are as follows:

Eben Goldthwaite.
Jona. Tarbell.
Benj. Douty.
Aaron Osborn.
John Jacobs.
Sylvester Osborn.
Amos King.
Jonathan Nurse.

Andrew Curtis.	Jonathan Felton.
Wm. Tarball.	Jonathan Procter.
Abraham Reddington.	Tim. Felton.
Israel Osborn.	Asa Felton.
Nathan Upton.	Eben Felton.
Richard Phillips.	Thos. Andrews.
Joseph Whiteman.	Joseph Osborn, 4th.
John Wilson, Jr.	Daniel Reed.
Samuel Small.	Jona. Southwick.
Joseph Eppes.	Thomas Day.
James Eppes.	Joseph Ingles.
Wm. Southwick.	David Newhall.
John Southwick.	Nath'l Fitts.
Jon Curtis.	Wm. Frost.
Job Wilson.	Newhall Wilson.
Robert Wilson, 3d.	Jonathan Wilson, 3d.
Isaac Wilson, 3d.	Bartholomew Molton.
Joshua Moulton.	Habbakuk Lynse.
Nath. Goldthwaite.	Eben Molton.
Daniel Moulton.	Jona. Ridney.
John Reed.	Ab'jah Reed.
Daniel Marsh, Jr.	Thos. Bond.
Wm. Goldthwaite.	John Getchell.
Marble Osborn.	Samuel Stone.
Joseph Osborn, 3d.	Wm. Perkins.

There were about two hundred men in all, from Danvers, who started for the battle of Lexington.

When the news of the intention of the British reached Danvers, Foster sent one of his lieutenants to Col. Timothy Pickering, of Salem, and obtained permission to start with his minute-men without waiting for the movement of the regiment. Capt. Hutchinson's company is supposed to have started at the same time; and tradition says that the other three companies followed Foster's example, and went without waiting for Pickering's regiment. The two companies of minute-men, however, bore the brunt of the engagement, and all of those killed, wounded and taken prisoners were from Hutchinson's and Foster's companies.

The minute-men started over the fences and across the fields, and arrived at West Cambridge, a distance of sixteen miles, in four hours. There they met the retreating British. Hon. Daniel P. King has given a description of the scene, doubtless gathered from the lips of those who took part in it.

"Our townsmen heard the roar of the artillery and the rattle of the musketry, and they panted to join in the deadly combat. A little west of the meeting-house is a hill, around which the road wound in such manner as to conceal the British. Many of the men of Danvers went into a walled enclosure, and piled bundles of shingles, which were lying there, to strengthen their breastwork; rumor had deceived them as to the force of the enemy; it was certainly their expectation here to have intercepted their retreat. Others selected trees on the side of the hill, from which they might assail the enemy. But they had little space for preparation; they soon saw the British in solid column, descending the hill on their right, and at the same moment discovered a large flank guard advancing on their left. The men in the enclosure made a gallant resistance, but were overpowered by numbers—it was here that several of these whom we are proud to claim for our townsmen were slain—some sought shelter in a neighboring house, and three or four, after they had surrendered themselves prisoners of war, were butchered with savage barbarity."

"Capt. Foster, with some of his men on the side of the hill, finding themselves nearly surrounded, made an effort to gain the pond—they passed along its margin, and crossed the road directly in front of the British column. On the north side of the road, they took position behind a ditch wall. From this casual redoubt they fired upon the enemy as long as any of them were within reach of their muskets. Some of them fired eleven times, with two bullets at each discharge, and it cannot be doubted that these winged messengers of death performed their destined work. The bodies of the slain were scattered along the road—the British were followed till they reached Charlestown neck. Mortifying and severe to them were the defeat and losses of that day. Their killed, wounded and missing amounted to about three hundred. According to an account published at the time, in the form of a hand-bill, forty-two Americans were killed and twenty-two wounded,—afterwards ascertained to be fifty killed."

Seven of the minute-men of Danvers were among the killed. Their names were Samuel Cook, George Southwick, Henry Jacobs, Ebenezer Goldthwaite, Benjamin Daland, Jotham Webb and Perley Putnam. Of these the first five belonged to Capt. Foster's company, and the last two to Capt. Hutchinson's. Sixty years afterward a granite monument was erected to the memory of those who fell in this battle, upon the very spot where the minute-men had gathered together at the alarm of invasion. It stands at the corner of Main and Washington Streets in Peabody, inscribed with the names of those who fell on that day, with the stirring motto "Dulce et decorum est pro patria mori." It was originally placed in a little inclosure of green; but the requirements of travel have narrowed its limits to the simple base of the shaft. A movement was once made in behalf of some who begrudged the space which it occupies in the road, to have it moved aside, out of the travelled way. Long may it be before the spirit of utilitarianism shall so prevail over the sentiment which built this simple and appropriate monument and placed it where its location has a deep significance, as to push it aside like a thing whose meaning is outworn and whose time is past.

On the evening after the battle, the men of Danvers collected the bodies of their comrades, and lodged that night in Medford. The British had retreated to Boston. On the next day the returning minute-men brought their melancholy burden home. The citizens went out to meet them, and as they came into town, a carriage escorted by the sexton of the South Parish conveyed the bodies of the slain. Four of the fallen, Samuel Cook, George Southwick, Henry

Jacobs and Ebenezer Goldthwaite, were taken to the house of Samuel Cook, on Central Street, and buried from the South meeting-house on the Friday after the battle. The others, according to tradition, were taken to the house of Capt. Hutchinson, at New Mills, where the whole neighborhood gathered in grief to view the familiar faces. At the church on Friday the gallery was occupied by armed men. Two companies of minute-men from Salem joined with the comrades of the slain to do them military honor, and after the impressive service at the meeting-house, the soldiers, with reversed arms, muffled drums and measured steps, led the long procession. On the way they were met by a band of soldiers from Newburyport, Salisbury and Amesbury, marching to join the army which was besieging Boston; these formed in single ranks on each side of the road, and the mournful procession passed between them. Three volleys were fired over their graves, and so the earthly part of the first victims of the Revolutionary War in Danvers was consigned to its last repose. Although Danvers was situated farther from Lexington than any of her sister towns which were represented at the battle, yet she lost more of her children than any other town except Lexington. Many are the family traditions of heroic deeds on that day, in the fatal inclosure and on the hillside under the apple-trees, where the men of Danvers fought against such desperate odds.

Dennison Wallis and Joseph Bell, of Capt. Foster's Company, were taken prisoners. Bell was carried into Boston, and imprisoned two months in an English frigate. Wallis, fearing that the infuriated British were about to kill their prisoners, made a desperate attempt to escape. He received thirteen bullets, and falling by the side of a wall which he was leaping, was left for dead. He recovered and effected his escape. He lived for many years after the Revolution, and his name is perpetuated by a bequest for the cause of education in his native parish. Nathan Putnam was wounded in the shoulder.

Capt. Foster's company suffered more heavily than did Capt. Hutchinson's. When Foster's men threw themselves behind the inclosure from which they fired, Hutchinson, whose experience in the French Wars gave him knowledge, warned them to beware of the flank guard. In their lack of acquaintance with military affairs, they knew nothing of a flank guard, and firing on the main body as it passed, they rushed out to harass its rear, when, of course, they found themselves between two fires, where several fell. Job Wilson, it is recorded by Hanson, on examining his pocket after the engagement, found his coat and a square foot of gingerbread perforated by a bullet.

Capt. Eppes' company met and captured two wagons near Medford, escorted by eleven British soldiers, carrying supplies to the British. Sylvester Osborne, with others, was detached to escort the prize to a place of safety, and they heard the firing, immediately after leaving the main body.

Col. Pickering's regiment did not march to the scene with the same alacrity which characterized the movements of the Danvers minute-men. At the Bell Tavern, they halted to arrange their places, and there was some farther delay in their movements.

The action of Colonel Pickering was afterward fully explained by the circumstances, but, as remarked by Mr. Hanson, if he had been able to advance with the rapidity shown by the Danvers companies, the presence of so large a force might have materially changed the result, and perhaps even resulted in the capture of the invaders. There is an account of the engagement, which was republished in the *Boston News Letter*, referred to by Hanson, which states that the attack of the Danvers companies was one of the occasions of the greatest loss to the British; and, with an increased force, they might have succeeded in actually intercepting the column returning from Lexington.

It is related that while Colonel Pickering's company was halted at the Bell Tavern, Elias Haskett Derby, who afterward became one of the wealthiest men in Salem, and one of the founders of its mercantile prosperity, went in to see Mrs. Southwick, the wife of Edward Southwick, who lived in a house standing within the memory of the writer, directly opposite the monument on Main Street. The Southwicks were Quakers, and could not consistently afford assistance to soldiers; but the sympathy of Mrs. Southwick so far prevailed over her non-combative principles that she said to Mr. Derby,—"Friend Derby, thee knows that my principles will not allow me to do anything to encourage war; but as there is a long and tedious march before thee, and thee and those with thee may be in need of refreshment, this batch of bread, just taken from the oven, thee may take if thee please; for it never can be wrong to feed the hungry." And she put into his knapsack a cheese, also.

Her willingness to render assistance in a good cause, in the most efficient manner which her principles would permit, calls to mind an anecdote of Squiers Shove, a Quaker afterward well known in the South Parish, who when asked, half in sport, to contribute to the purchase of a bell, which it was known was not favored by the Quaker sect, replied,—"No, I won't give thee anything for the bell, but I'll give thee a rope to hang the old thing with;" which he did.

On the 17th of June Colonel Pickering's regiment, on its way to the field of battle at Bunker's Hill, passed through Danvers, and halted at the Bell Tavern for refreshment. The bystanders, impatient of the delay, remonstrated at the loss of time; and Mrs. Anna Endicott, the wife of Samuel Endicott, walked up to the colonel, and with the voice of an Amazon, as Hanson describes it, said,—"Why on earth don't you march? Don't you hear the guns in Charlestown?"

The next January Nathan Putnam and Dennison

Wallis applied to the Legislature for remuneration for their losses and the expense of their sickness from wounds received at Lexington, and a moderate appropriation was made for the purpose. In February, 1776, the House voted to Captain Eppes the following sums for the use of individuals who had lost guns, etc., on the 19th of April: Jonathan Tarbell, £2, 11*s.*; Henry Jacobs, £3, 8*s.*; heirs of Benjamin Daland, £2, 4*s.*; Samuel Cook, £2, 12*s*; Thomas Gardner, £1, 4*s.*; Nathaniel Goldthwaite, £2, 0*s.*

On February 6th and March 6th contributions were taken up for the army besieging Boston, and the South Parish gave £13, 13*s.* 6*d.*

On June 18, 1776, it was "Voted that if the Hon'ble Congress for the Safety of the United States Declare them Independent of the Kingdom of Great Brittain, we, the inhabitants of this town, do solemnly Engage with our Lives and Fortunes to support them in the measure." At the same time a bounty of £13, 6*s.* 8*d.* was given to each man who would enlist in the service of the colonies. The Declaration of Independence was unanimously adopted and copied at length in the town record.

During the whole war one hundred and ninety-seven men from Danvers served in the Continental army out of a population of about eighteen hundred. Probably about half of this number were from the South Parish.

CHAPTER LXXII.

PEABODY—(*Continued*).

From the Close of the Revolution to the Separation from Danvers.

After the close of the Revolution the South Parish continued on a quiet and uneventful course; contributing little for many years to the material of history. Its people united their action with that of the other parish in many public matters which came before the town-meeting. They contributed men toward a company for the suppression of "Shay's Rebellion;" they joined in resolutions commendatory of John Adams' administration in 1799; and in 1808 they successfully contested an effort to unite the North Parish to Salem. They sent some in the company which left Danvers in December, 1787, and settled in Washington County, Ohio, as they had previously taken part in the settlement of New Salem in 1734, and in other emigrations.

The war of 1812 with Great Britain was very unpopular in the town, and on the 13th of July the town passed resolutions strongly condemning the war. Several companies were, however, raised to resist invasion, and that from the southern and western part of the town was commanded by General Foster, with Johnson Procter and Nathan Felton as lieutenants, Daniel King, ensign, John Upton, orderly sergeant, and as privates many of the well-known and substantial citizens of the town. Hanson gives a partial list of the company, including William Poole, Eben S. Upton, Rufus Wyman, Eben King, Amos King, John Goldthwaite, John Osborn, Oliver Saunders, Joseph Griffin, Stephen Procter, Asa Bushby, Asa Tapley, James Wilson, Elisha Wilson, John Needham, Jonathan Osborn, Amos Osborn, W. W. Little, James Southwick, Joseph Shaw, George Southwick, Sylvester Osborn, Jr., Benjamin Stephens, Benjamin Gile, Elisha Gunnison, Eben Osborn, Solomon McIntire, William Sutton, Samuel Buxton. There were about as many more whose names cannot be ascertained.

There were two alarms when this company, together with one from the northern part of the town, was called out. One was caused by a boat laden with sea-weed passing by Hospital Point, where the Artillery was posted. The boat was mistaken for a British barge, and as it returned no answer on being hailed, it was fired upon. The alarm of invasion spread far into the country. On the other occasion, September 28th, the Artillery was alarmed by some men who were drawing a seine, and fired again, spreading a false alarm, which is said to have travelled far into New Hampshire. The companies in both instances marched without delay to the post of supposed danger.

The Lexington Monument.—The sixtieth anniversary of the battle of Lexington was chosen for the dedication of a monument to those citizens of Danvers who fell on that memorable day. It is built of hewn sienite, and was formerly surrounded by an iron railing, which inclosed a small square of grass in which the monument stood. But with the increased use of the streets it became more difficult to keep this little strip of turf in proper condition; the fence fell to decay, and as the travel and the introduction of the horse railroad to Lynn demanded more room, a simple foundation of hewn stone was substituted for the turf and iron railing, and the monument still occupies its old site, on the very place where the minute men gathered on the morning of the battle, and from which they took up their hurried march to Cambridge. The monument is twenty-two feet high, and seven feet broad at the base. On the easterly side is the following inscription, on a slab of white marble set into the face of the monument:

Battle of Lexington,
April 19, 1775.

Samuel Cook.....Æt. 33
Benj. Daland.....Æt. 25
George Southwick.....Æt. 25
Jotham Webb.....Æt. 22
Henry Jacobs.....Æt. 22
Eben'r Goldthwait.....Æt. 22
Perley Putnam.....Æt. 21

Citizens of Danvers
Fell on that day.
"Dulce et decorum est pro patria mori."

On the westerly tablet is inscribed "Erected by Citizens of Danvers on the 60th Anniversary, 1835."

As the nineteenth fell on Sunday, Monday the twentieth was selected for the laying of the corner-stone. At ten o'clock a procession of Revolutionary patriots and citizens of Danvers and vicinity was formed in the square before the Old South Meeting-House under the direction of the marshals of the day. The Danvers Light Infantry, commanded by Capt. William Sutton, and the Danvers Artillery under Capt. A. Pratt, with military music, escorted the procession, which proceeded through Main Street to the old burial ground near the Salem line, where several of the slain were buried. Three volleys of musketry were fired over their graves, and the procession then marched to the site of the monument, then called Eagle corner. The order of services was announced by John W. Proctor, Esq., and Rev. Charles C. Sewall, of the First Unitarian Church, offered prayer. The venerable General Foster, with the surviving officers and soldiers of the Revolution, proceeded to place the corner-stone, beneath which was deposited a box containing various memorials of the times specially prepared for the occasion, including late copies of some of the newspapers of the vicinity, printed on cloth, and records durably engrossed upon parchment.

General Foster then briefly addressed his fellow-citizens with a few words full of simple eloquence, and the stone was put in its place. The artillery fired a salute of twenty-four guns, and amid the ringing of church-bells and to the stirring strains of "Auld Lang Syne," the procession marched to the Old South Church, the very building in which, sixty years before, the solemn and impressive funeral services of four of the young heroes had been held with the subdued clank of arms in the gallery full of soldiers and amid the deep and passionate stirrings of patriotic emotion which realized that the war of freedom had indeed begun. The church, though enlarged from its dimensions at that earlier time, was crowded in every part, and hundreds were unable to gain admittance. The following was the order of services: 1, 100th Psalm, tune Denmark; 2, Hymn, by R. S. Daniels; 3, Prayer, by Rev. Geo. Cowles; 4, Hymn, by Fitch Poole, Jr.; 5, Address, by Hon. D. P. King; 6, Patriotic Ode, by Jonathan Shove; 7, Concluding Prayer, by Rev. J. M. Austin. At the close of the services at the church, the original honorable discharge of J. B. Winchester from the Revolutionary Army was presented and read, bearing the signature of George Washington. Mr. Winchester entered the Continental Army at the age of fourteen, and was only just of age when discharged. Nineteen survivors of the Lexington fight and of the Revolutionary Army occupied the pews in front of the pulpit, and added greatly to the interest of the occasion. Of these the following were natives of Danvers: Gideon Foster, Sylvester Osborne, Johnson Proctor, Levi Preston, Asa Tapley, Roger Nourse, Joseph Shaw, John Jocelyn, Ephraim Smith, Jonathan Porter, Joseph Tufts, William Flint.

After the services at the church a procession was again formed and escorted by the Danvers Light Infantry to the Essex Coffee House, where about two hundred, including the Revolutionary veterans, were served with a collation. Patriotic sentiments and toasts followed, in which the veterans and the company present joined. The projector of the monument was John Upton, and its architect Asher Benjamin.

It was noted as a curious coincidence that there appears on the western side of the monument, above the marble slab, a dark marking on the face of the sienite caused by the mingling of some darker stone, which the cutting of the stone has brought to a striking resemblance of the Phrygian cap—the liberty-cap, so-called, for ages the symbol of freedom, and ever worn by the statued representations of the Goddess.

On the 6th of May, 1852, Kossuth, the Hungarian patriot, visited the town, and made a brief but eloquent address at the Lexington Monument, in which with the happy facility for historical allusions which was one of his most remarkable characteristics, he referred pertinently to the heroic deeds of the Revolution, and spoke of the honorable part which the men of Danvers bore in the battle of Lexington and their readiness in hurrying to the scene of Leslie's retreat. He was received by a committee chosen by the town, and was welcomed in an address by John W. Proctor, Esq., a son of Capt. Johnson Proctor, of Revolutionary fame, and a descendant of that John Procter who fell an early victim to the witchcraft delusion.

The Great Fire.—On September 22, 1843, a very destructive fire occurred in the South Parish, and consumed a large amount of property in the vicinity of the square, including the Second or South Congregational Church, a new building partially completed, the Essex Coffee-house, and twelve other stores and houses, with a large number of sheds and outbuildings. The Unitarian Church and several other buildings caught repeatedly, but by great exertions of the citizens assisted by help from neighboring towns, the progress of the fire was checked after property valued at seventy-five thousand dollars had been destroyed, of which twenty-five thousand dollars was insured. The blow was a severe one, but the enterprise of the community soon replaced the burned buildings, and the town gained in appearance from the misfortune.

The war with Mexico was very unpopular throughout the town. Hon. Daniel P. King, of the South Parish, was at that time the Representative of the district in Congress, and he maintained the strongest opposition to the war, in which he was fully supported by his constituents. On December 16, 1847, the town held a meeting, and resolutions drafted by John W. Proctor were passed condemning the war as an unrighteous one, and declaring against the

acquisition of territory by conquest; and among other resolutions was the following:

"While we acknowledge 'all men to be born free and equal,' we cannot consistently with this principle do anything whatever that shall have a tendency to extend that most disgraceful feature of our institutions, *Domestic Slavery*."

Only five men from the whole town of Danvers were engaged in the Mexican War.

CENTENNIAL CELEBRATION.—On the 16th of June, 1852, the town of Danvers celebrated the one hundredth anniversary of its separate municipal existence. A procession illustrating the manners and customs of the early settlers, and brilliant with allegorical figures and representations of foreign costume, was escorted by military forces and by the firemen of the town; it was made up largely from the pupils of the public schools. An address by John W. Proctor and a poem by Andrew Nichols were delivered in the old South Church with music and religious exercises. After the exercises in the church a dinner was given in a canvas pavilion on the Crowninshield estate, at which many interesting addresses were given by the invited guests of the town, many of them distinguished in public life or eminent for historic learning. The full account of this very interesting anniversary celebration belongs more properly to the history of Danvers; but it was at this dinner that the first gift of George Peabody to his native town was offered, in a letter acknowledging his invitation to the centennial celebration. In this letter he inclosed an envelope with a direction that its seal was not to be broken till the toasts were being proposed at the dinner. After a toast to George Peabody, the letter of acknowledgment was read, and the seal of the inclosed envelope broken. It contained a sentiment by Mr. Peabody, which has become the the motto of the endowments made by him for the benefit of education: "Education—A debt due from present to future generations. The letter continued:

"In acknowledgment of the payment of that debt by the generation which preceded me in my native town of Danvers, and to aid in its prompt future discharge, I give to the inhabitants of that town the sum of twenty thousand dollars, for the promotion of knowledge and morality among them.

"I beg to remark, that the subject of making a gift to my native town has for some years occupied my mind, and I avail myself of your present interesting festival to make the communication, in the hope that it will add to the pleasures of the day.

"I annex to the gift such conditions only as I deem necessary for its preservation and the accomplishment of the purposes before named. The conditions are, that the legal voters of the town, at a meeting to be held at a convenient time after the 16th June, shall accept the gift, and shall elect a committee of not less than twelve persons, to receive and have charge of the same, for the purpose of establishing a Lyceum for the delivery of lectures, upon such subjects as may be designated by a committee of the town, free to all the inhabitants, under such rules as said committee may from time to time enact; and that a Library shall be obtained, which shall also be free to the inhabitants, under the direction of the committee.

"That a suitable building for the use of the Lyceum shall be erected, at a cost, including the land, fixtures, furniture, &c., not exceeding Seven Thousand dollars, and shall be located within one-third of a mile of the Presbyterian Meeting House occupying the spot of that formerly under the pastoral care of the Rev. Mr. Walker, in the South Parish of Danvers.

"That Ten Thousand dollars of this gift shall be invested by the town's committee in undoubted securities as a permanent fund, and the interest arising thereupon to be expended in support of the Lyceum.

"In all other respects I leave the disposition of the affairs of the Lyceum to the inhabitants of Danvers, merely suggesting that it might be advisable for them, by their own act, to exclude sectarian theology and political discussions forever from the walls of the institution.

"I will make one request of the committee which is, if they see no objection, and my venerable friend Capt. Sylvester Proctor should be living, that he be selected to lay the corner-stone of the Lyceum building."

As was stated by Mr. Proctor at the dinner, Mr. Peabody had been a generous contributor to the building of the Lexington Monument and also to the rebuilding of the old South Church when destroyed by fire. The same letter which inclosed the gift also contained a liberal subscription toward the erection of an appropriate monument at the grave of General Gideon Foster. Mr. Peabody soon afterward added ten thousand dollars to his original donation, and before 1856 had increased the foundation to fifty thousand dollars. During his last visit to this country, in 1869, he increased the amount of his gift to this Institute to two hundred thousand dollars.

For some years the difficulties which had been felt even in the early years of the town by reason of the distance between the North and South Parishes, and which had led to remedial legislation as long ago as 1772, had been increasing; and the time was soon to come when the division of the two districts became necessary. By an act of the Legislature, passed May 18, 1855, the new town of South Danvers was incorporated, with boundaries nearly corresponding with those of the old middle precinct of Salem. The old northerly line of the South Parish was changed, adding a strip of territory to South Danvers; instead of the ancient line, running nearly east and west, the line now runs from the same easterly boundary northwest to the sharp bend of the Ipswich River, so that some of the historic localities of Salem Village are now within the limits of the newer town.

Shortly afterward, by an act of the Legislature, passed April 30, 1856, the ancient boundary between Salem and South Danvers was changed, and the boundaries of the new town have since been undisturbed.

It has already been noted that when the original petitioners for the setting off of the middle precinct prepared their draft of a boundary, they asked to have a line run from Trask's mills to Spring Pond. The strong opposition shown in Salem to having so large a part of their common land thrown into the new precinct was no doubt the cause of the change made by the Legislative committee, who recommended that the line, after reaching what is known as Boston Street, should continue in the street along the Boston road to the Lynn line. This recommendation was adopted; no change was made at the time of the incorporation of Danvers as a district and as a

town; and from 1710 to 1856, the houses on the opposite sides of a road more than three miles long were in different municipal jurisdictions. The inconveniences of such a boundary line were not so marked in the lower portion of the street, as the inhabitants belonging to Salem were there not far separated from the other inhabited parts of Salem; but as the road, well occupied with substantial houses, continued on towards Lynn, the Salem inhabitants became more and more remote from the interests of the town to which they belonged, and in the settlement at South Peabody, known from the earliest times as "the Rocks," neighbors whose interests were otherwise identical were forced to carry on double schools on opposite sides of the same street, and voted in different municipalities at places miles apart. It was a deep grievance, too, for the ardent temperance reformers of Danvers, who had succeeded in suppressing the open sale of liquor in the town, to be confronted by liquor-selling taverns, such as the Naumkeag House and others of those times, which could be reached by thirsty Danvers men by merely crossing the street into Salem.

The line from Trask's, or Frye's, mills reached Boston Street at the tree known as the "Big Tree." From this boundary tree, the line of division ran along the easterly side of the road to Lynn. At the time of its establishment, in 1710, the main road to Lynn from Salem did not follow any of the now existing streets in its turn to the south after crossing Poole's bridge over Strong Water Brook, but diverged from what is now Main Street at a point near Pierpont Street, and continued in a southwesterly direction till it joined what is now Washington Street near Aborn Street. This diagonal course of the old road appears very plainly on the rough map, on file in the State archives in the State library, which accompanied the petition for setting off the middle precinct in 1710; and also upon a map of the division of the common lands of Salem, made about 1720, in the possession of Andrew Nichols, Esq., of Danvers. As time went on, the road which left Main Street at the Bell Tavern, or Eagle corner, where the Lexington monument now stands, became most used, and the old road at that point fell into disuse and was eventually abandoned, though traces of it may still be found. The boundary line, of course, remained unchanged; and in 1810 the line was changed by act of the Legislature, by adding a strip to Danvers, bringing the boundary line two feet north of Sutton's store in Poole's Hollow, and then following near the brook to Aborn Street, and so to the Boston road. It was not till 1856 that the line between South Danvers and Salem was finally established, coinciding very nearly, in that part between Boston Street and Spring Pond, with the line marked out by the wisdom of the farmers of Brooksby in their petition for the incorporation of the middle precinct. In exchange for this concession of territory, part of the territory of South Danvers on the northerly side of Boston Street, between the Big Tree and the old burial-ground, was annexed to Salem by the same act. The inhabitants of the territory belonging to Danvers at the time of Mr. Peabody's gift to the town are, however, still entitled to the privileges of the bequest. The present boundary line crosses the street near the westerly end of the old burial-ground.

It is stated in an article in the *Wizard*, published in 1862, that previously to the last change of boundary, the line ran through a house on Main Street, through a bed-room and across a bed, so that the heads of the occupants were in the city and their feet in the country.

CHAPTER LXXIII.

PEABODY—*Continued.*

Review of the Period from 1757 *to* 1855.

THE period from 1757 to 1855, during which the present township of Peabody was the South Parish of the town of Danvers, was marked by great changes accompanying the growth of a large town from the community of six or seven hundred people dependent on agriculture for their support. The aspect of the old time village is still remembered by the older citizens, as it was described by Mr. George G. Smith at the Centennial Celebration: "It was a pleasant place, then, this old town of ours, when there were green fields and shady walks where now are dusty streets and busy factories. I shall never forget the old back way by the pond, with its locust-trees, loading the air in the season of blossoms with their honey-like fragrance. And the pond, not as now shorn of its fair proportions, its green banks sloping gently down to the clear water, and bordered with bright rushes and flowery water-plants." The pastures came down toward the centre of the village, and a country quiet rested over all. In 1800 the population of the whole town of Danvers was 2643, and in 1820 it was 3646. The South Parish could claim about half of these numbers.

GROWTH OF MANUFACTURES.—The tannery begun in 1739 by Joseph Southwick, the Quaker, continued to be carried on by the same family during the whole of this period. About 1770 Joseph Poor began to tan near "the lane," now Central Street, and several of his descendants are still prominent in the same branch of productive industry. Dennison Wallis, the Revolutionary patriot, had a tannery near the street which bears his name; and early in the present century Fitch Poole, Sen., and his brother, Ward Poole, had tanneries near Poole's hollow, on the stream running into the North River. In 1855 there

were twenty-seven tanneries in South Danvers, with an annual product of 131,000 hides, valued at $660,000; 122 men were employed in this industry. There were also, in 1855, 24 currying establishments, finishing leather of the value of $805,000, and employing 153 hands.

The manufacture of morocco and lining-skins grew up in the second quarter of the present century, and in 1855 there was a product of 80,000 skins, valued at about $25,000, employing 117 hands, with a capital of $50,000.

The boot and shoe trade, which also had its principal growth as an industry since 1830, produced, in 1855, in the town, 747,600 pairs, valued at $597,259, and gave employment to 1043 hands, a considerable number of the employees being women.

The manufacture of chocolate was carried on by General Foster in the early years of the century at his mill-pond, off Foster's lane (now Foster Street), where were also bark-mills for grinding tan for the tanneries, and grist-mills. General Foster developed the water-power at his command with much skill and ingenuity, building a system of dams and canals. His mills were destroyed by fire in 1823. The manufacture of chocolate was also carried on by Francis Symonds, the host of the Bell Tavern; but the industry was long ago discontinued.

At one time there were upwards of thirty potteries in the South Parish, mostly on "the lane," called "Garp Lane," or "Gape Lane," and also on Southwick's lane, now Lowell Street. During the War of 1812 the pottery from this region attained a wide celebrity, and great quantities were sold. The demand for the ware, which was chiefly of the coarser variety of brown ware, from which the bean-pots, flower-pots and jugs of the present day are made, diminished after the war, owing to the cheapness with which a higher grade of imported ware could be obtained; and in 1855 only two establishments remained on Central Street, where the last surviving pottery is still carried on; their product was then valued at $2300.

The Danvers Bleachery, an enterprise begun in 1847 by Elijah Upton and the Messrs. Walker, in 1855 bleached or colored 100 tons of goods, employing 60 men, with a capital of $150,000.

Glue was first made in South Danvers by Elijah Upton in 1817. Mr. Upton was one of the pioneers in manufactures, and was very successful in various branches. He made many improvements in methods, and in the glue business anticipated modern ideas, among other things being the first to grind glue for convenience in packing and use. In 1855 three glue factories, with a capital of $40,000, produced glue of the value of $120,000, employing 21 men.

Besides these larger industries, and the ordinary activity of a growing town in building, cabinet-making and other domestic occupations, there were, in 1855, two bakeries, producing articles valued at $35,000 yearly; two soap-factories, with a product worth $18,000, a patent-leather factory, a last factory, whose product was valued at $16,000, a box-factory, and working quarries of valuable stone, from which $5,000 worth of building and mill-stones were cut. In the days when the extensive commerce of Salem make communication with foreign countries by vessel easy, the soap business was largely developed, and an export trade was built up by Henry Cook, then the principal manufacturer.

During the last half century of this period, the preparation of wool for manufacture was carried on, the wool being in part supplied by the skins used in the manufacture of morocco. William Sutton carried on the business at the brick store, on Main Street, in Poole's hollow, and the figure of a sheep, which still stands over the door, was to be seen in the same place as early as 1815. At one time Ward Poole, Jr., carried on the same business in another brick building, near Pierpont Street. Another wooden sheep was placed over the store in Poole's hollow, occupied by Warren M. Jacobs and Fitch Poole as a morocco-factory, and this image was afterward placed on the larger factory erected by Jacobs, on Main Street. The business of "wool-pulling," as it was called, did not reach large dimensions, and was at times partially or wholly suspended.

East and West India Trade.—At one period, during the commercial prosperity of Salem, there were a number of traders in the South Parish who did a large business in supplying dealers in the interior with imported goods, sometimes buying a whole cargo at a time for wholesale and retail trade.

Some of these merchants, who dealt principally in West India goods, had their stores on Boston Street, on the Danvers side of the road, near the big tree; there were other stores near the square, and one at least, that was carried on by Mrs. King, on the Reading road. With the decay of the commerce of Salem, and the change in methods of transportation, this branch of business fell into disuse, and only those stores which supplied local needs remained. The results of these comparatively extensive dealings, however, enriched some of the families which carried on the business.

Banks.—The Danvers Bank (now the South Danvers National Bank) was incorporated in 1825 with a capital of $150,000. The first president was William Sutton.

The Warren Bank (now the Warren National Bank) was incorporated in 1832 with a capital of $250,000. The first president was Jonathan Shove.

The Warren Five Cents Savings Bank was incorporated in April, 1854.

Insurance.—The Danvers Mutual Fire Insurance Company (now the South Danvers Mutual Fire Insurance Company) was instituted in 1829. The first president was Ebenezer Shillaber. It is an extremely conservative and sound institution.

FREEMASONRY.—Jordan Lodge, F. & A. M., was instituted in 1808.

AGRICULTURE.—The agricultural industries of the town still continued to be of importance, and in 1855 the dairy and farm products were estimated at about $128,000, of which the onion crop constituted the largest part in value, being estimated at $77,080.

It was stated at the Centennial celebration of Danvers that the whole industrial product of the town at the beginning of the century was not more than $100,000, and this is probably a large estimate.

The valuation of the whole town of Danvers in 1827 was $1,870,800. In 1855 the valuation of South Danvers was $2,944,500.

SOCIAL CHANGES.—Such a growth in the industries and resources of a community must necessarily be accompanied by great changes in the social conditions of the inhabitants. Even with the slender historical material available, we can trace some of these changes.

At the beginning of this period the people of the south parish of Danvers were almost entirely of pure American blood of English descent. They were one in race, in social customs, in political traditions and religious belief. There was but one church in the parish, to which all were not only expected but compelled to contribute and which every good citizen must attend. In worldly estate there were no wide extremes, for, though some had much larger holdings of land than others, the diversity of living was not great. The distinctions of rank were punctiliously observed on important occasions, yet age was reverenced even above rank, and the Christian fellowship of the church and the pure democracy of the town meeting brought all to a common level. After the stirring events of the Revolution, the district settled back into its quiet ways, chiefly a farming community, and supplying from its own sons the labor necessary for carrying on the beginnings of its manufacturing career. For almost half a century after the Revolution the community preserved the same characteristics,—a simple and neighborly society where all were personally known, in which there were few very poor and fewer very rich; where a foreigner was a curiosity and a vagrant liable to active inquisition. The parish system of support for the church was abandoned in 1793, and a system of pew taxation substituted; but there was no other religious society till the Unitarians came off in 1825. In 1832 the Universalist Society was organized, and the Methodists, though they had meetings in the south parish as early as 1833, had no appointed minister till 1840. The Baptist Society completes the list of those existing in 1855, having been organized in 1843. The Quakers have never had a stated place of worship in the parish, but the many worthy and esteemed families which have held that faith have worshipped in other towns, chiefly with their brethren in Salem.

More than sixty years ago, when all the village went to the one meeting-house, and nearly all were natives of the soil, there was a familiarity of social intercourse which can exist only in such a community. Almost every individual of consequence, and some whose only distinction was their eccentricity, were commonly known by familiar names, sometimes by nicknames descriptive of some peculiarity of appearance or character. Amusing hoaxes were perpetrated on certain ones whose simplicity encouraged the attempt, and practical jokes, which sometimes verged upon rudeness, were often carried out by a select band of choice spirits, among whom were some of the best known citizens, led by one or two of the keenest and most inventive of their number. Many rare stories are told by the older citizens of the jollities of those times.

Then, too, there were some who cultivated a refined literary taste, and met to read and discuss original articles on literature or the topics of the times. Rufus Choate opened his first law office here, and resided in the south parish for several years, going as one of the town representatives to the General Court in 1826 and '27. He was married while living here, and left town to practice law in Salem in 1828.

He at one time delivered an address on the Waverly novels before the Literary Circle, a society including many of the active minds of the place; and during his residence in town he twice delivered the Fourth of July oration.

With Dr. Andrew Nichols, and the Rev. Mr. Walker, and John W. Proctor, and Fitch Poole, who was then just beginning his unique literary career, with Rufus Choate, and Joshua H. Ward, and Daniel P. King, and other gifted and cultured minds, there was surely a sufficiency of literary ability to impress the social life of the parish with high ideals of thought and expression; and the effect of the impulse which these men gave to the intellectual life of the town may still be felt. Not only in matters of literary taste, but in dealing with the great problems of the times, with intemperance, and slavery, and educational needs, the town and the parish kept always in the foremost ranks of progress.

The rapid increase of manufacturing and the severe and comparatively unskilled labor required in some departments brought about the importation of immigrant laborers. Mr. Richard Crowninshield, who carried on a woolen-mill just below the pond which bears his name, is said to have been the first to bring Irish laborers to the town. The construction of the railroads also brought in a foreign element of population.

With the increase of manufactures came the amassing of larger fortunes by some, and the increased values of real estate and the rising tide of enterprise and improvement throughout the country following the introduction of the railroad systems, gave opportunities of investment which still farther increased the

means of the wealthy. The old simplicity and uniformity of social life and customs passed away never to return, and in its place began to grow up the more complex relations of town life resulting from greater variety of employment and greater differences in fortune, and in part from the mere increase of numbers.

Education.—From the earliest years the Middle Precinct was careful and earnest in the cause of education. Soon after the separation of the precinct the parish gave its attention to the support of schools, and claimed and received from the town its proper part of the school money. We find the school fund a common subject of discussion in the parish meeting, and the people themselves contributed liberally from their slender means toward the schools. In 1734 the parish raised £47 4*s*. 11*d*. for its schools. In 1737 there were four schools in the parish, and six male teachers and ten female teachers were employed during the summer; the men received two pounds a month, and the women sixpence each week. In 1739 a grammar school, where Latin should be taught, was projected. In 1748 a school-house was built near Procter's corner, eighteen by twenty-two feet. In 1765 it was voted to build a school-house on the land belonging to the parish. A school was kept six months in each parish that year. In 1783, when Revolutionary troubles had subsided, the condition of the schools received renewed attention. Complaint was made against Danvers for neglecting to sustain a proper number of schools, and means were taken to remedy the neglect. In 1793 Dr. Archelaus Putnam made a report to the town on the reorganization of the schools. In 1793 and 1794 an effort was made to divide the town into districts, and a division was made pursuant to a plan proposed by Gideon Foster, Samuel Page and John Kettelle. In 1802 the districts were remodeled at the suggestion of Sylvester Osborn.

According to the plan then in force, the general supervision over all the schools was retained by the town; but in 1809, the modern system of school districts was established, with nine districts in the whole town. This continued up to the time of the separation of South Danvers, the number of districts having been increased.

The development of the highly organized public schools of the present time from the old district school in which all were in the same room was gradual, and can only be traced by observing the increase of numbers and the systematization of methods and growth of text-books which accompanied the grouping of several schools in graded association. The town kept well abreast of the improvements in other places. In 1814 an order was adopted requiring an annual report of the condition of the schools to be made to the town. This was in advance of the same regulation afterward made by the State, as was also the taking of the census of school children, instituted in Danvers in 1820. These reports began to be printed in 1839.

High schools were established in 1850, and in 1852 a system of superintendence was established, which did not long continue.

The character of the instruction given and the standard of work performed in the various schools have been maintained at a high degree of excellence, and the town always displayed a spirit of liberality and progress in educational affairs which accorded with the principles of its earliest settlers. Mr. Proctor, in his address at the centennial celebration, in 1852, called attention to the fact that Danvers expended forty per cent. of all its outlay of public money on its schools, paying, in 1855, ten thousand dollars for support of public schools, on a valuation of three million dollars. Among the teachers of Danvers were some whose names have become widely known. Daniel Eppes, in the early times of the town, was a famous teacher. In 1836 Charles Northend, the well-known writer on educational matters, began to teach school in the town, in a school-house close by the old burying-ground; he taught about twenty years in the South Parish, and was the first superintendent of schools in the town.

Newspapers.—The *Danvers Eagle* was published for about a year, beginning in 1844. The *Danvers Whig*, a political sheet, was published during the Presidential campaign in 1844.

The *Danvers Courier*, edited by George R. Carlton, was established in March, 1845. It continued to be published till September, 1849.

Temperance Movements.—In 1812, when the first temperance society in America was formed, —"The Massachusetts Society for the Suppression of Intemperance,"—Joseph Torrey, Samuel Holten and Benjamin Wadsworth, from Danvers, were members. Edward Southwick and Deacon Fitch Poole, from the South Parish, were among the pioneers in temperance reform. A strong impulse was given to the movement by the adhesion of many of the leading citizens of the place. The principle of total abstinence was upheld by these earliest supporters of the movement. The Danvers Moral Society, for the suppression of intemperance, was formed in February, 1814. The language of the Constitution was moderate, being directed against "the daily use of ardent spirits." Rev. Samuel Walker, Fitch Poole, Dr. Andrew Nichols, Sylvester Osborne, James Osborne, William Sutton and others, from the South Parish, were prominent in the formation of the society. In 1833 the word "daily" was stricken from the article of the Constitution above referred to. Some of the pledges formerly circulated were very moderate in form. It is said that one which was extensively circulated bound the signer to an agreement "to use intoxicating liquor with cautious prudence." In 1818 the thanks of the town were voted to the selectmen for their zeal in endeavoring to prevent a portion of

the people from wasting "health, time and estate in drinking;" and they were earnestly requested to continue their efforts.

In 1818 Dr. Andrew Nichols delivered an address entitled Temperance and Morality.

In 1827 a committee of nine was raised to prosecute all licensed persons who infringed the laws, and all unlicensed persons who sold ardent spirits. Dr. Ebenezer Hunt this year delivered the first public address in Danvers advocating total abstinence.

In 1831 the overseers of the poor were forbidden to furnish alcohol to the town poor, except by order of a physician. On March 4, 1833, Danvers refused to grant licenses for the sale of liquor; Mr. Proctor claimed that she was the first town to take such action, and it is certain that she was among the first. This policy was adhered to until the separation of South Danvers in 1855.

The peculiarities of the boundary line between the South Parish and Salem made it easy for those living near the line to obtain liquor, it being necessary only to cross the street in many places to be free from the restrictions of "no license."

In 1837 resolutions were unanimously adopted by the town, on motion of John W. Proctor, calling the attention of the Salem authorities to the objectionable character of these border dram shops. The change of line in 1856 did much to obviate this evil; and very lately the city of Salem, in putting in force the plan of restricted area for the granting of licenses, has removed all cause for complaint in this respect, so far as official action is concerned.

Slavery.—At the time of the separation of Danvers from Salem there were within the limits of the town twenty-five slaves—nine men and sixteen women. Slaves continued to be held until the adoption of the Constitution in Massachusetts in 1789. Most of those who were thus freed remained in the service of their former owners. The last survivor of the slaves of Danvers died in extreme old age in the South Danvers Almshouse in 1863,—Sibyl Swinerton, once a slave of John Swinerton.

A strong anti-slavery feeling grew up in Danvers in the early part of the century. In 1819 citizens of the town addressed a communication to the Hon. Nathaniel Silsbee, in which their attitude as opposed to slavery is forcibly presented, and the hope expressed "that every practical exertion will be made, to hasten the time when the republic shall witness the complete emancipation of the African," and that "ere long this infernal traffic in human flesh will be completely and entirely abolished." This letter was signed, among others, by Edward Southwick, William Sutton, Andrew Nichols and John W. Proctor, from the South Parish.

In 1847 a resolve, drafted by Mr. Proctor, relating to the Mexican War, was unanimously adopted, in which it was declared "that the town would not in any manner countenance anything that shall have a tendency to extend that most disgraceful feature of our institutions,—*domestic slavery*."

Anti-slavery meetings were held, and many of the citizens were prominent workers in the early days of the abolition movement.

The Old-Time Taverns.—In the old days before the time of railroads the various taverns were important centres of interest. There strangers visiting the town on business made their headquarters; there the news of the day was received from the passing stage, or repeated by the traveller from a distance, and eagerly discussed by the politicians of the parish; there public events were celebrated, and meetings were held of organizations and patriotic citizens. Of these the Bell tavern, which stood for many years on Eagle corner, now the southeast corner of Main and Washington Streets, at the bend of the old Boston road, was one of the most famous. Here, in the south room, on election days and other occasions of privileged merrymaking, the dance was led by the fiddle, and in the days before temperance was agitated as a special virtue, the convivial bowl flowed freely. Even the officers of the town sometimes consulted here over stimulating refreshment or entertained visitors of importance with the moist hospitality of the times.

In the days before the Revolution, the time of the spring election, beginning on the last Wednesday in May, was recognized by custom as a sort of jubilee of the colored people, and was celebrated by them with great festivities, in which they were allowed considerable license in the way of sports and entertainment. The Bell tavern was one of the localities where the merrymakers gathered. This festival, known traditionally as "Nigger 'lection," was continued by roystering young people among the natives long after the colored people had become few and far between, and did not wholly cease to be observed till after the spring elections were abolished.

To quote from an article on the Bell tavern by Fitch Poole:

> "The loyal neighbors here collected to mourn the demise of the good Queen Anne, and rejoice in the accession of the first George. His departure and the rise of his son, George II, were here celebrated in the same bowl of punch. George III was also welcomed with a zeal that was only equalled by that with which they drank confusion to his ministers. The odious Stamp Act and all Parliament taxes on the colonies were patriotically denounced. Tea was proscribed and its sale forbidden under penalty of a ride on a rail and the brand of Toryism. One conviction only took place, and the unlucky wight obtained a reprieve from his sentence by furnishing the villagers with a bucket of punch. His neighbors kindly gave him a share of the beverage, obliging him to repeat over his cup three times the following elegant couplet:
>
> "'I, Isaac Wilson, a tory I be;
> I, Isaac Wilson, I sells tea.'"

Francis Symonds, one of the hosts of early times, displayed a wooden bell as a sign, and he informed the people of his good cheer by the following strain:

> "Francis Symonds makes and sells
> The best of chocolate; also shells—
> I'll toll you in if you have need
> And feed you well, and bid you speed."

There was a printing office in the building, in which were printed the earliest news letters of the town. One of these, which has been preserved, issued September 27, 1777, contains news of the Revolutionary battle at Stillwater. Among the other works known to have been published here are Amos Pope's Almanacs, "A Price current for Wenham," and "An account of the captivity and sufferings of Elizabeth Hanson, wife of John Hanson, who was taken prisoner by the Indians," published in 1780. Mr. Russell, the printer, afterward removed to Boston.

It was at the Bell tavern that the heroine of the novel, "Eliza Wharton, or the Coquette,"—a work almost forgotten, but of great interest to a former generation—spent her last days and gathered about the tragic ending of her unfortunate life a veil of mystery and romance which long gave her a place among the memories of the simple and kindly villagers. Here was the appointed rallying place of the minute-men of the Revolution, and from this corner they started out across the fields on their hurried march to Lexington. Here the regiment commanded by Col. Timothy Pickering halted for refreshment on the way to Bunker Hill. Up to 1815 there were few houses in the immediate vicinity, and the road was separated from the open fields by a low stone wall.

Even on Sundays the inn retained its hospitable appearance, for the farmers from the outskirts of the town dismounted there and walked to the meeting house.

Southwick's tavern, on the Reading road, was also a well-known baiting place in the old days of turnpike and post-roads, and in later years the Essex Coffee House, kept by Benjamin Goodridge, on the corner of Foster Street near the square, was a favorite resort. Oliver Saunders kept a tavern on Main Street, near Washington Street.

Dustin's Hotel, sometimes called the Sun Tavern, from the sign of a blazing sun which formally hung on a post before the door, was built in 1825, on the square, where it still stands. It was occupied as an inn or hotel for about sixty years; at present it is used for stores and other purposes, the post-office being located in a portion of the building.

As time went on, the decaying commerce of Salem made trading journeys to Salem and its vicinity from the interior more rare, and the new era of railroads left the old taverns empty and deserted, and the hostelries were useful only for local convenience. The Bell tavern was taken down about 1840, and a building containing stores was built on the site, which was removed about twenty years ago to make room for an ornamental grass plot. The old South room of the Bell Tavern is still in existence as a dwelling. The Southwick tavern became a private dwelling, and the Essex Coffee House was burned in the great fire of 1843. Other places of refreshment and accommodation for travellers have been built and occupied by the town, but the age of historic taverns has passed away.

The Poor.—Almshouse.—Throughout the whole town of Danvers, a liberal and enlightened spirit has always been manifested toward the poor, and there is no place where the unfortunate are regarded with more sympathy and kindness.

Previous to 1808, the town owned a building for its poor, with part of the Gardner estate on Central Street. In that year a farm and buildings were procured of Nathaniel Nurse for seven thousand dollars for the use of the poor.

The present Almshouse, built in the South parish in 1844, at a cost of about thirteen thousand dollars, is a commodious and cheerful house, situated in a pleasant farming district. Beside the Poor-House and Hospital, there are over two hundred acres of land belonging to the farm, the value of the whole establishment at the time of the erection of the building being about twenty-four thousand dollars.

Miss D. Dix, of Boston, took a deep interest in promoting the action of the town toward establishing this institution. It has been carefully and humanely conducted, and its inmates find many comforts in their simple life on this quiet farm. It was stated by the orator of the centennial celebration of the town that in fifty years of the history of the poor department of the town, a careful analysis showed that at least three-fourths of those who had received relief at the hands of the town had been brought to that necessity by reason of intemperance, notwithstanding the unremitting efforts of the town to protect its inhabitants, to the extent of the law, from the devastations of this debasing vice.

The Female Benevolent Society.—During the earlier part of the period in question there were few very poor persons in the parish. In 1814, at a time when there was unusual distress among the poor owing to the high prices of the materials of clothing and the general stagnation of business caused by the war with Great Britain, the Danvers Female Benevolent Society was formed; the first two clauses of its original constitution read as follows:

"Sensible of our obligations to imitate our blessed Saviour, and prompted by a desire to promote the comfort and happiness of the poor, the subscribers have agreed to associate together. The principal object of this association shall be to provide suitable articles of clothing, for those who are unable to provide for themselves."

The Society at once commanded the support of the charitably inclined, and it was enabled at the outset, by means of liberal contributions made to it of second-hand clothing and money, to relieve much of the destitution of that period. Its original members, forty-eight in number, were all connected with the South Church, that being then the only religious organization in the parish. The society has since drawn its forces from all the Protestant societies, and has served as a means of uniting the various denominations in practical Christian work. It is still in vigorous life, and its public meetings and entertainments, while serving to increase its funds for chari-

table purposes, have for many years been a prominent feature of the social life of the place.

Until 1831, the work of the society was confined exclusively to distributing clothing among the poor. Since that time, its means have enabled the managers to make occasional gifts of money to worthy beneficiaries, but its main work continues the same, and throughout all the years of its history, there has been no period of inactivity, but every year has been witness to its clothing the poor and relieving misery and destitution. A careful organization of its methods was long ago effected, and a wise discrimination is shown in its bestowal of charity. It cares mainly for those who would receive aid from no other source, or for such wants as cannot be supplied by the poor department of the town or the funds of the various churches. Its work does not interfere with that of any other organization. For these reasons, it is likely to continue to receive the merited support of the citizens of Peabody.

The society has been favored with several bequests and donations from friends and from members.

Military Companies.—Much interest was taken in military matters, and at the time of the War of 1812 there were three companies in Danvers, the Artillery, the Militia company of Infantry and a company of Exempts, composed of volunteers from those exempted from military duty. This last was commanded by the veteran General Foster. The Artillery company was under command of Capt., afterward Col. Jesse Putnam, who lived almost to see the next war, dying in 1860. David Foster was first lieutenant and Benjamin Goodridge second lieutenant. Lewis Allen, afterward a prominent citizen of Peabody, who lived to an advanced age, was one of the youngest of the company. The uniform of the Danvers Artillery consisted of a chapeau bras cap, with a long white plume, tipped with red, a long skirted red coat with white trimmings, white waistcoat, buff breeches, buckled at the knees, and long boots. They each wore a sword in a belt over the shoulder, and each soldier had his hair powdered. As it was then the fashion to wear a queue hanging down over the coat collar, the latter was whitened by the powder. The cut of the coat was such as is represented as worn by officers in the Revolution.

The Militia company of Infantry was commanded at that time by Capt. Daniel Preston. Robert S. Daniels was a lieutenant. The meeting-place of the company in time of alarm was the green,—then really a green,—in front of the Old South Meeting-House.

The Danvers Light Infantry, a military organization of high repute in its time, was organized in 1818, its first officers being Robert S. Daniels, captain; Abner Sanger, lieutenant; Allen Gould, ensign. There were originally forty-eight members, chiefly from the South Parish. The uniform consisted of a blue "swallow-tail" coat, with gold buttons, white or buff waistcoat and pantaloons, and a high stiff cap, larger at the top, adorned with gold trimming and a tall plume. At one time, helmets were worn by the company.

The armory of the company was for many years a building standing at the end of Cabbage Lane (now Holten Street), at a point near where Sewall Street now intersects Holten Street.

A spirited representation of an encampment of the Danvers Light Infantry in 1826, on the green in front of the Old South Meeting-House, painted by Gideon Foster, the son of General Foster, was for many years in the possession of Gen. Wm. Sutton, and was presented by his son, Gen. Eben Sutton, to the town. It now hangs in the selectmen's room, in the Town House. This very interesting picture gives an excellent idea of the uniform and individual appearance of the members of the corps, and it contains also the best representation known of the original meeting-house, with its three rows of windows and its western tower and belfry. The district schoolhouse, near the meeting-house, whose position afterward gave rise to some litigation between the society and the town as to the ownership of the land on which it stood, is seen in the painting, and also the Sun Tavern, then recently built, with its sign, and Gardner's Bridge, at the head of the mill-pond. A sight of this picture carries one back to the old days of the town, and helps one to realize the extent of the changes that have been wrought in the physical aspect as well as the social characteristics of the place.

The Danvers Light Infantry continued as an active organization till about 1850.

On the 10th of September, 1862, the past and present members of this veteran company were called together to do escort duty to a company of volunteers for the War of the Rebellion, led by Capt. Robert S. Daniels, Jr., a son of the first captain of the old company. On a very brief notice, over a hundred of the past members gathered together, including sixteen of the original forty-eight. Capt. Robert S. Daniels, the first commander, led the parade, and Gen. Wm. Sutton acted as lieutenant, and other well-known citizens were chosen to fill the various offices. Abner Sanger and Ralph Emerson, of the early officers, rode with the veterans of 1812, and the procession attracted great notice as it passed from the Square to the Eastern Railroad Station in Salem, accompanied by a large number of the citizens, with fire companies and other organizations in line. This was the last appearance of the Danvers Light Infantry, and probably not one of the original members now survives.

Aqueduct Water.—The South Parish was one of the earliest communities in the State to enjoy the privileges of water conveyed by aqueduct. The Salem and Danvers Aqueduct Company, incorporated March 9, 1797, with a capital of ten thousand dollars, sup-

plied water from a group of natural springs near Spring Pond. The first primitive reservoir consisted of a large hogshead sunk in the ground, from which wooden logs of three inch bore conducted the water through Danvers to Salem. William Gray, the famous merchant of Salem, was the first president of the company. The operations of the company were gradually extended as the demand for water increased; the wooden logs were replaced by others; in 1834 an iron-pipe was laid, in 1850 a twelve inch iron-pipe was laid directly to Salem, and in 1867 an iron and cement pipe sixteen inches in bore was laid. The reservoir was several times increased, and about 1850 a stone reservoir was built, with a capacity of six hundred and fifty-two thousand gallons. In 1850 a connection was made with Spring Pond, a sheet of water covering fifty-nine acres, and whose surface is about sixty-four feet above mean high-water, and a filtering box was placed in the pond. This pond is fed by natural springs, and is of great depth. The water is very pure; an early analysis of the supply from the springs showed in ten thousand pounds of water only $\frac{99}{1000}$ of a pound of solid foreign matter, consisting of silicious earth, sulphate of soda and common salt, the salts constituting about one-half of the solid matter. A sample of the water sealed up with a piece of lead for many years did not perceptibly affect the lead, such was its purity and freedom from corrosive qualities. The water of Spring Pond is about equally pure.

The supply proved inadequate to the needs of Salem, and the water from Wenham Lake, introduced in 1869, took the place of the old aqueduct water to a large extent in Salem. In 1873, the town of Peabody bought the aqueduct from the company for one hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars, and the town authorities have since greatly improved the facilities for supply, and have increased the head by the construction of pumping-works and a large tank or stand-pipe on Buxton's Hill, the top of which is one hundred and eighty-four feet above mean high-tide. The cost of the high service was eighty-five thousand dollars, and the town has expended in all on its water-works about two hundred and ninety thousand dollars. By judicious management on the part of the water board, the income from the use of water has more than paid for the cost of maintenance and the interest on the cost of the water-works, while the town has the free use of one hundred and sixty-three hydrants for fire and other purposes. The service is highly efficient, and the quality of water furnished as fine as any in the State.

CHAPTER LXXIV.

PEABODY—(*Continued*).

South Danvers—The Civil War.

THE new town of South Danvers began its corporate existence in 1855, with a population of about six thousand, a territory of about fourteen square miles, and with thriving manufacturing interests firmly established. The valuation in 1856 was two million nine hundred and forty-four thousand nine hundred dollars. In spite of the depression of the times before 1860, the town had gained both in valuation and population, the population in 1860 being six thousand five hundred and forty-nine, and the valuation three million six hundred and thirteen thousand four hundred and eight dollars.

There is little of the eventful to chronicle in the history of the town until the time when the fall of Sumter startled the land, and President Lincoln issued his call for seventy-five thousand men for immediate emergencies. Then the old time spirit of patriotism which inspired the Minute-men of Lexington and the defenders of Bunker's Hill flamed up with ardent enthusiasm. Forty-two of the citizens of the town started on the first call; nine members of the Salem Zouaves, formerly the Salem Light Infantry, under Capt. Devereux, starting on Thursday morning, April 18th, to join the Eighth Regiment, and ten men in the Mechanic Light Infantry, Capt. Peirson, and twenty-one in the City Guards, Capt. Danforth, including four commissioned officers, setting out on the following Saturday to join the Fifth Regiment, under Col. Lawrence. One South Danvers man enlisted in the New York Fire Zouaves, and one in the First Iowa Regiment. The following are the names of those who responded to this first hurried call as given by the town records;

Salem Zouaves, Company H, Eighth Regiment.

Privates.

Moses Shackley.	David G. Lake.	Leonard D Cobb.
Geo. B. Symonds.	Henry Symonds.	Sullivan J. Wiley.
Wm. F. Wiley.	Daniel Bruce, Jr.	Frank Plumer.

Salem Mechanic Infantry, Company A, Fifth Regiment.

2d Sergeant, James H. Estes. *2d Corporal*, David N. Jeffries.
3d Corporal, John W. Hart.

Privates.

Elbridge H. Hildreth.	Dennison T. Moore.	Wm. W. Stiles.
Samuel H. Buxton.	Henry W. Moulton.	Albert J. Crane.
	James Poor, Jr.	

City Guards, Company H, Fifth Regiment.

1st Lieutenant, Kirk Stark. *2d Lieutenant*, Wm. F. Sumner.
3d Lieutenant, Geo. H. Wiley. *4th Lieutenant*, John E. Stone.
2d Corporal, John A. P. Sumner.

Privates.

B. Hardy Millett.	David H. Pierce.	John W. Lee.
Wm. F. Guilford.	Oliver Parker.	C. G. Marshall, Jr.
John G. Estes.	George O. Hart.	Henry O. Merrill.
James W. Kelley.	Wm. Tobey.	Samuel Wiley.
Thomas G. Murphy.	Thomas B. Kelley.	S. W. Williams.
	Geo. H. Peart.	

Beside these there were about twenty members of the Salem Cadets and Light Artillery who held themselves in readiness to start at a moment's warning.

On Thursday evening, April 18, a crowded meeting was held in the Town Hall to discuss the events which so profoundly stirred the community, and to adopt measures for raising money to fit out volunteers and to provide for the families of those who left home on such short notice for the defense of their country. The deepest feeling was shown as the speaking progressed, and a subscription paper started at this meeting realized the sum of three thousand dollars. A committee was appointed to consider the expediency of forming a military company in South Danvers, and a report was made at the same meeting recommending the enrolment of two companies, one for immediate service and another to enter upon a course of drill to become a home guard or to enter the Federal service whenever they should be required.

On April 24th a call was issued to the patriotic ladies of South Danvers to meet at the vestry of the old South Church to take measures for making garments for soldiers. Donations were solicited of money, flannel, yarn, etc., old linen and cloth. This was the beginning of the "Ladies' Soldiers' Aid Society," an organization which co-operated with the United States Sanitary Commission and other agencies for relieving the necessities of the soldiers during the whole war, and which, during the war, dispensed over three thousand four hundred dollars in money, besides large contributions of clothing, one hundred blankets and other supplies. The society also conducted one of the tables at the great fair of the Sanitary Commission at Boston in 1863, at which about seven hundred dollars was realized for the cause. Mrs. Henry Cook was for a long time the active and efficient president of the society. The society was disbanded October 11, 1865, after nearly four years and a half of enthusiastic and vigorous effort.

The first legal town meeting on the war was held May 21, 1861, when two thousand dollars was appropriated for the aid of families of soldiers, and a committee was appointed to solicit subscriptions to compensate the members of Captain Bancroft's company for time spent in drilling, many of them being mechanics and workmen dependent on their earnings for support.

The enthusiasm of the times spread among all classes. Drill clubs were organized for instruction in military tactics. In accordance with the recommendation of the town committee, a company called the Foster Guards, under the command of Captain S. C. Bancroft, was enrolled and uniforms and equipments were procured. The company went into camp at Camp King, near Tapley's Brook, on the 29th of June, 1861, and about a fortnight afterward went into the State Regimental Camp at Lynnfield, Camp Schouler, where it became Company B of the Seventeenth Regiment, commanded by Colonel Hinks.

On the 4th of July, 1861, a flag was raised on a new flagstaff in the square. Benjamin Goodridge, who had been an officer of the old Danvers Artillery, assisted by the surviving veterans of the War of 1812, John Price, B. D. Hill and Edward Hammond, raised the flag, and Mr. Goodridge made a brief speech; Hon. A. A. Abbott acted as president, and delivered an eloquent address; and the school children sang a patriotic song, beside music by the band and a glee club. The Foster Guards and some of the fire companies were present, and the scene was one of the most characteristic of the early days of the war.

A considerable number of South Danvers volunteers joined the Essex Cadets, and on July 22d the company marched from camp at Winter Island to South Danvers, where they were entertained by a collation in front of the old South Church, and a sword was presented to Lieutenant F. W. Taggard. The company was mustered into the service the same day, and formed part of the Fourteenth Regiment, which went to the front August 7.

On the 31st of July the Mechanic Infantry and City Guards returned to Salem, and on the next day the Salem Zouaves arrived. A public reception was given to the returning volunteers. The enthusiasm was great, and the bells were rung incessantly for six hours at a stretch, while one hundred and fifty rounds were fired by the Light Artillery during the day.

The drill club of young men, under Captain R. S. Daniels, Jr., began in September to organize for the purpose of forming a company for active service, but this purpose was not carried out till the next year.

A number of South Danvers men enlisted in the summer and fall of 1861 in the Ninth Regiment, and there was a good representation from the town in the Twenty second, Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Regiments, while there were South Danvers men in the First, Second, Eleventh, Twelfth, Eighteenth, Nineteenth and in some other organizations, besides enlistments in the Navy.

During the first six months of the war, more than three hundred men enlisted from the town.

At a town meeting held on Friday evening, October 5, 1861, $5,000 was voted for the relief of those dependent upon the volunteers; $1,000 was voted to be used in any emergencies where those authorized may think proper, and $2,500 for the support of the poor.

The *Wizard*, a weekly paper, edited by Fitch Poole, and containing many of his characteristic and humorous sketches, was full of information on war topics, and from time to time published many letters from soldiers.

The work of the Soldiers' Aid Society continued to increase, and the various religious societies organized their forces in further assistance to the cause. The church sewing society were busied with knitting socks for the soldiers, and in one of their consignments of articles was a large number of mittens made by the school children.

The first recorded death of any citizen of the town in the war was that of Daniel Murray, who lost his life in the famous engagement with the Merrimac. He was an officer on board the "Cumberland," was wounded and went down with the ship on the 7th of March, 1862.

On the 1st of July, 1862, President Lincoln issued his call for three hundred thousand men. Enthusiastic war meetings were held in the Town Hall on July 11 and 25. At a special town meeting July 21, 1862, it was voted to give a bounty of $150 to each man who enlisted as part of the quota of the town. To provide funds for the payment of this bounty, it was decided to borrow $12,000, and a committee was appointed to obtain a loan on the notes of the town at six per cent. At the adjourned town meeting, July 31, it was announced that Eben Sutton, a citizen of large means and patriotic spirit, was ready to lend the whole amount needed at five and a half per cent. A committee of five from each school district was chosen to co-operate with a committee chosen at a general meeting of citizens in obtaining recruits. The three years' quota of seventy-five men was filled by the last of August.

On the fourth of August the President issued a call for 300,000 men for nine months. War meetings were held in the town on August 24th and 29th. Captain Robert S. Daniels, Jr., announced his readiness to enlist as one of a nine months' South Danvers Company, and other prominent citizens came forward and offered their services amid the greatest enthusiasm, including one gentleman far beyond the age at which he could be required to serve—Mr. James Perkins.

At a special town meeting held August 25, 1862, a bounty of $100 was authorized to be paid to each volunteer who should enlist for nine months' service in the company then being recruited by Captain Daniels. At the same meeting the following resolutions were passed:

"*Resolved* that the Citizens of South Danvers desire once more to pledge their fidelity to the sacred cause of American union, and their unalterable determination never to falter in their efforts to maintain its integrity and perpetuate its blessings; that they will not measure their legal obligations nor pause to inquire whether they have done more or less than their neighbors; but that, like their fathers in Revolutionary days, *they will do all they can*, to the extent of the means with which God has endowed them, in behalf of the cause of Constitutional government and the salvation of their beloved country.

"*Resolved*, That South Danvers, expressing in her municipal capacity the feelings and wishes of her individual citizens, hereby declares her hearty appreciation of the patriotism of her sons who have enlisted, and are now enlisting, to serve in defence of the Union, and faithfully pledges her fostering care in time of need of the families of her brave soldiers, and her lively gratitude for the services and her blessings upon the lives of those who, in serving their country in the hour of danger, confer enduring honor upon their native or adopted town; their names will illumine her annals, and be handed down in affectionate remembrance to future generations."

Among the volunteers in Captain Daniels' company were two of the school teachers of the town, Mr. Wm. L. Thompson, of the Peabody High School, and Mr. Geo. F. Barnes, of the Bowditch School. In April, 1863, there were said to be thirty-two members and two teachers of the High School in the service.

One hundred and one of Captain Daniels' company were from South Danvers, and the town took the deepest interest in the company, which included in its ranks many representatives of the most esteemed families of the place, some of whom had made great sacrifices to go, giving up honorable and lucrative positions or business connections.

On the 10th of September, 1862, the company went into camp at Wenham, and it was escorted by a grand parade of the people of the town, among which marched the surviving members of the old Danvers Light Infantry, organized in 1818, Robert S. Daniels, the father of the captain of the new volunteer company, being captain of the old company. Fire companies in uniform were in the procession, and the pupils of the schools whose teachers had enlisted marched or rode in line. A carriage bore the three Dartmoor prisoners, and Abner Sanger, the venerable abolitionist, and Ralph Emerson rode with these veterans of 1812. The old Danvers Light Infantry attracted great attention on the march to the depot in Salem. The new company was enrolled as Company C, of the new fifth regiment.

The battle of Antietam was of great interest to the town's people, as two of their townsmen were killed and three wounded at that engagement.

For some months, although the interest in the war was unabated, there was a remission of the activity in enlistments and patriotic meetings. At the draft, on the 10th of July, 1863, at Salem, 109 names of South Danvers men were drawn; of these 69 were exempted, 21 furnished substitutes, 12 paid the fine of $300, and only 7 actually entered the service.

A great war meeting was held on October 28, 1863, to promote enlistments under the call for three hundred thousand men issued October 17. On October 17 the South Danvers Union League was formed. Other war meetings were held on December 1, December 3 and December 28, and on January 4, 1864, at which time fifty-four men had responded to the last call. On February 1, 1864, a new call for two hundred thousand men was issued, and renewed efforts were made to induce enlistments which resulted in filling the quota of the town. In spite of the large number of men already sent and the continued drain on the resources of the town, every call for men was met with a manly and determined spirit; the call for five hundred thousand men July 18, 1864, was responded to by the enlistment of one hundred and thirty-eight men, a surplus of forty-nine, and for the whole war the town had a surplus over its quota. The following statement from a table compiled by Amos Merrill, Esq., from official sources, gives the statistics of enlistments. The method of computation of quotas and surplus was by reducing all enlistments to the basis of three years, one man for three years counting as three men for one year.

Statement showing the number of men furnished by the town of South Danvers from April 16, 1861, to April 30, 1865.

Previous to the draft of July 10, 1863, the following enlistments were made to the credit of South Danvers:

Fifth Regiment (three months)	28
Eighth Regiment (three months)	12
First Iowa Regiment (three months)	1
New York Fire Zouaves (three months)	1
Total	42
Salem Cadets at Fort Warren (six months)	13
Seventh Regiment, Co B (six months)	3
Total	16

THREE YEARS' MEN.

First Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	5
Second Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	5
Ninth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	29
Eleventh Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	2
Twelfth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	3
Fourteenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	55
Seventeenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	88
Nineteenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	48
Twenty-second Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	9
Twenty-third Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	34
Twenty-fourth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	21
Twenty-eighth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	2
Thirtieth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	1
Thirty-fifth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	2
Thirty-eighth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	1
Thirty-ninth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	45
Fortieth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers	11
Saunders' Sharpshooters	7
Wentworth's Sharpshooters	7
First Battalion	2
Second Maine	2
Fourth Maine	2
Fourth Battery	7
Fifth Battery	1
Tenth Battery	1
Total	390
Fifth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers (nine months)	88

Product of draft of July 10, 1863:—

Served in person	7
Furnished substitutes	21
Paid commutation fee	12
Total	40
One hundred days' men furnished	38

Quota of March 14, 1864, for seven hundred thousand men, including calls of October 17, 1863, and February 1, 1864, amounted to one hundred and fifty-two:

Credit product of draft of July 10, 1863	40
Credit Naval Enlistments	11
Credit Re-enlistments of Veterans	36
Credit New Enlistments, Army	63
Credit product of draft of May 10, 1864	3
	153
Less surplus carried forward	1
Total	152
Quota of July 18, 1864, for five hundred thousand men	92
Less error in former call at State House corrected	3
Total	89
Credit surplus on former call of March 14	1
Credit substitutes furnished by enrolled men	7
Credit Enlistments in July, Army	50
Credit Enlistments in July, Navy	2
Credit Enlistments in August, Army	21
Credit Enlistments in August, Navy	3
Credit Enlistments in September, Army	2
Credit Enlistments in October, Army	3
Credit Enlistments in November, Army	12
Credit Enlistments in December, Army	4
Apportioned at the State House, { Naval claims	3
{ Allowance for Navy at large	30
Total	138
Deduct Quota	89
Surplus	49

By reducing the above one hundred and thirty-eight men to three years of service for each man, and adding thereto the town's proportion on call of December 19, 1864, for three hundred thousand men, the above surplus was extinguished, and a quota assigned of eight (8) men.

Quota under call of Dec. 19, 1864	8
Credit Enlistments in January, 1865	3
Credit Enlistments in February, 1865	7
Credit Enlistments in March, 1865	1
Credit Enlistments in April, 1865	2
Total	13
Surplus April 30, 1865, in number of men	5
Years of service of the thirteen men, viz, five for three years and eight for one year, [reduced to three years of service]	$7\frac{2}{3}$

SUMMARY STATEMENT OF MEN FURNISHED.

Under call of March 14, 1864, including product of draft of July 10, 1863, viz., forty men	152
Under call of July 18, 1864, including thirty men, the town's proportion of navy at large apportioned at State House	138
Under call of December 19, 1864	13
Total	303
Three years' men furnished prior to draft of July 10, 1863	390
	693
Number of one and three years' men furnished, including product of draft of 1863, and 30 men navy at large apportioned at the State House	693
Nine months' men furnished	88
Six " " "	16
Three " " "	42
100 days' " "	38
	877

TABLE SHOWING THE NUMBER OF MEN FURNISHED AND THE AMOUNT OF BOUNTY PAID UNDER EACH CALL.

Date of Call.	Bounty paid by the town.	Bounty paid by substitute.	Total am't of bounties paid.	Total No. men furnished.	Enlisted for 3 yrs.	2 Y.	1 Y.	9 M.	3 M.
April 16, 1861.				42					42
May 3, 1861. }									
June 17, 1861. }				314	314				
May 28, 1862. }									
July 14, 1862. }	$10,950		$10,950	73	73				
August 4, 1862.	8,800		8,800	88				88	
October 17, 1863. }									
February 1, 1864. }									
March 14, 1864. }	1,155		1,155	109	109				
July 18, 1864.	11,225	$19,130	30,355	105	77	1	27		
December 19, 1864.	1,625	150	1,775	13					
	$33,755	$19,280	$53,035	744					

The above table does not include the following:

Product of draft of July 10, 1863	40
Products of draft of May 13, 1864	3
Naval apportionment under the call of July 18, 1861	33
Six months' men	16
100 days' men	38
	130

[1] Including amount paid by enrolled men not drafted, for substitutes.

Adding this number to the total of the table, there is a discrepancy of only three men between the table and the statement above given. The irregularities of enrolment during the earliest months of the war make it extremely difficult to arrive at entire exactness in these statistics.

The following list contains the names of the citizens of the town who died in the war, as contained in the marble tablets at the entrance of the Town Hall, which were headed with the inscription :

"In commemoration of the patriotic services of the citizens of this Town who died in defence of the Liberties of their Country in the Great Rebellion."

	AGE
Capt. Samuel Brown (3d)	24
Lieut. Charles B. Warner	27
Orlando E. Alley	29
Robert Andrews	30
William Andrews	24
Sampson W. Bowers	49
Leverett S. Boynton	25
John W. Boynton	21
James H. Bryant	18
Philip O. Buxton	20
Thomas Buxton	36
James Byrne	39
Lewis P. Clark	22
John Costello	22
James Crowley	34
Henry H. Demeritt	25
John P. Dodge	31
Thomas Campsey	20
Jeremiah Donnovan	18
John Fitzgibbon	22
Alfred Friend	32
Frank Gardner	22
John K. Gibbs	45
Luke Gilmartin	26
Austin A. Herrick	23
Joseph S. Iogalls	37
Eben N. Johnson	24
Horace Manning	43
John Manning	26
Joseph B. Maxfield	25
Gregory T. Morrill	35
Tyler Mudge	35
David Mulcahy	23
Jeremiah Murphy	26
Andrew D. Murray	21
Daniel Murray	36
George W. Nason	18
Theron P. Newhall	35
Paul Osborn	25
Oliver Parker	23
George H. Pearte	19
James Powers	25
John Price 3d	31
Jonathan Proctor	51
Leonard Reed	42
Richard H. Reome	19
Patrick Scamell	18
Moses Shockley	21
Albert Shepard	30
William H. Shore	22
Donald Sillers	44
William Sillers	20
Charles H. Sawyer	23
Benjamin A. Stone	20
John Smith	18
John Stott	30
Horace C. Straw	44
Terrence Thomas	20
Charles W. Trask	25
George H. Tucker	32
Peter Twiss	31
Joshua Very	33
Caleb A. Webster	24
Frederick Weeden	15
William J. White	32
George C. Whitney	20
Samuel Wiley	22
Charles M. Woodbury	22
Charles C. Woodman	29
Henry Parker	29
Alfred Hopkirk	24

CHAPTER LXXV.

PEABODY—(*Continued*).

The Town of Peabody.

At the close of the war the population of the town had diminished from that of 1860, and was six thousand and fifty.

The valuation was $3,819,766. Manufacturing had been carried on in most of the branches in which the town is active; the times of business activity succeeding the war, largely increased the volume of manufactures.

In 1868, by an act of the Legislature, passed April 13, the name of the town was changed from South Danvers to Peabody, in honor of George Peabody, who had given so largely to the town for library and educational objects. The change was not without some opposition, and was not at the expressed desire of Mr. Peabody ; but twenty years of customary use have familiarized all with the change, and it certainly serves to give prominence to the name of the town's benefactor, and at the same time to make the locality known to some who have known Mr. Peabody as a benefactor of other cities and regions.

The leather industry continued to be the largest department of manufacturing, and many of the tanners and curriers lost heavily, as a result of the great fire in the business district of Boston, November 10, 1872. The blow was a severe one to some of the oldest and strongest firms, but most of the manufacturers rallied from its effects, and continued to operate the tanyards and currying shops. A large amount of leather is produced yearly, including calf skins, kip and grain leather, harness leather and sole leather. The manufacture of morocco and sheep skins is also of considerable importance.

The following statistics from the census of 1880 give the condition of the productive industries of the town at that time. There has probably been an increase in most of the manufactures since that time, and some wholly new manufactures, among which is a metallic thermometer-factory employing twenty-one workmen, have been established since that census was taken.

	No. of establishments.	Persons employed.	Capital.	Value of product.
Boots and shoes	2	31	$9,000	$32,000
Building	3	28	25,000	106,000
Carriages and wagons	2	20	27,000	40,350
Clothing	1	1	200	12,000
Corks	1	22	6,000	18,309
Food preparations	1	5	1,100	5,000
Glue	2	70	125,000	99,200
Grease and Tallow	1	5	4,000	14,750
Leather	29	768	638,370	3,042,387
Machines and machinery	2	13	9,000	36,300
Metals and metallic goods	3	6	3,800	5,300
Printing and publishing	2	10	6,500	12,564
Printing, dyeing and bleaching	1	196	200,000	800,000
Soap and candles	1	12	6,000	37,434
Tobacco	2	8	2,700	6,750
Totals	53	1,195	1,063,670	4,268,344

There were, in 1880, three hundred and forty-three persons engaged in agricultural pursuits, and the value of agricultural products was one hundred and twenty-one thousand four hundred and fifty-seven dollars.

The valuation of Peabody in 1887 was :—

Personal estate	$2,685,850
Real estate	4,501,050
Total	7,186,900

The town of Peabody has continued the process of development begun half a century ago, and has be-

come distinctively a manufacturing town. Large numbers of operatives, many of them of foreign birth, labor in the various factories, and the dwellings and buildings of the principal village extend constantly over a larger area. Many of the heads of families are occupied during the day in Boston, the facilities of railroad communication making the town a convenient place of residence for such as do not wish or cannot afford to live in the city. There have been many changes in social affairs, some of the families whose names are identified with the earlier history of the town having removed from it, while others have come in and brought elements of energy and business success. The general aspect of the town is suggestive of a thriving, active and successful business community, with many evidences of cultivated taste and judgment in the dwellings on the principal streets, and manifestations of an enlightened public spirit seen in excellent streets, commodious and well kept public buildings and school-houses, a thoroughly equipped fire department, and effective police regulations.

The town has continued to take deep interest in educational matters, and has spared nothing to bring its schools to a high standard. Within the last twenty-five years, large sums of money have been expended in building new school-houses, the Peabody High School has been furnished with largely increased facilities, now occupying the whole of the building formerly used in part as a town-house, and the number of schools and teachers has been increased from time to time as the needs of the growing community have demanded. The town maintains a high reputation for the general efficiency of its school system.

The spirit of temperance reform, so early welcomed by the old town of Danvers, has been faithfully cherished. With the large increase of operatives, the liquor sellers were enabled to extend their pernicious social and political influence; but by the vigorous and unremitting efforts of the friends of temperance, public opinion has been kept upon an enlightened plane, and a steady resistance has been made to the inroads of intemperance. The various temperance organizations and movements for temperance reform have received warm and effective support from the churches and from individuals. At one time the liquor sellers appeared to be gaining in strength, and a large number of saloons some of them of large extent and notorious in character, were maintained to the great injury of the town, and with the result of placing large political influence in the hands of the leading liquor-sellers, and making the liquor party an offensive element in town affairs, and a serious menace to the welfare of the community. To check this evil, a Law and Order League was organized in Peabody in 1881, which received the support of the best citizens of all shades of opinion on temperance matters, and after a vigorous campaign the new organization succeeded by the use of conservative methods, which received the approval of the community, in effectually checking the violation of the law.

Among the temperance organizations in the town are the Father Matthew Catholic Total Abstinence Society, instituted March 3, 1881; the St. John's Catholic Total Abstinence Society, instituted March 3, 1882; the Women's Christian Temperance Union, formed December 10, 1875, and the Young Women's Christian Temperance Union, formed April 19, 1886.

There have been two extensive strikes among the men employed in the manufacture of leather in the town; one in 1863, and another, lasting several months, in 1886. The relations between labor and capital seem to be well established at the present time.

In 1881 a soldiers' monument costing eight thousand dollars, was erected in the square. It is a substantial design of white granite, containing tablets inscribed with the names of the citizens of the town who died in the war, above which a circular shaft supports a figure of heroic size.

Shortly before the town of South Danvers was incorporated, a Town House was built on Stevens Street, the upper story being used for High School rooms. The hall became entirely inadequate for the purposes for which it was designed, and the town offices were greatly cramped for room. In 1882 a new Town House was begun on land purchased for the purpose on the corner of Lowell and Chestnut Streets. It was finished in 1883, at a cost of one hundred and eight thousand dollars. It is a substantial building of brick and granite, with convenient and ample offices for the town officials; the lower hall, for ordinary municipal gatherings, accommodates five hundred and twenty, and the large hall, one of the finest auditoriums in the county, seats fifteen hundred persons. A police station and justice's court-room are located in the basement.

Representatives and Town Officers.—By the act of incorporation of South Danvers, the new town was to remain a part of Danvers for the purpose of electing State officers, Senators and Representatives to General Court, Representatives to Congress and Electors of President and Vice-President of the United States, until the next decennial census should be taken, or until another apportionment of Representatives to the General Court should be made. A new apportionment was made in 1857, and in that year the first election for State and Federal officers was held in South Danvers.

The following is a list of the Representatives to the General Court from South Danvers and Peabody:

Richard Smith.....1857	Robert S. Daniels 1868-70
Eben S. Poor.....1858	Charles V. Hanson.....1871-72
John V. Stevens.....1859-60	Stephen F. Blaney..... 1873-74
D. Webster King.....1861	James E. T. Bartlett.. 1875-77
William H. Little.....1862-63	Henry Wardwell.....1878
Caleb Warren Osborn.....1864-65	Edward Trask.....1879
Capt. John W. Stevens.....1866-67	Henry Wardwell.....1880

John Pinder.....1881	William H. Brown.....1884
Aaron F. Clark.....1882–83	Cyrus T. Batchelder.....1885–86

The following are lists of some of the principal town officers of South Danvers and Peabody since the incorporation of the town, those marked with an asterisk (*) still holding office:

SELECTMEN.

Lewis Allen.....1855–56	Geo. W. Taylor.....1876–78
Nathan H. Poor*.....1855–62, '71	Charles F. Goodrich.....1876
Daniel Taylor.....1855–58	Lyman Osborn.....1879
Kendall Osborn.....1857, '59	Otis Brown.....1880
William Wolcott.....1858–61	S. Aug. Southwick.....1881–86
Miles O. Stanley.....1860–62	John E. Herrick.....1881–86
John C. Burbeck.....1862, '67–68	Wyman B Richardson.....1881
Joseph Poor.....1863–70	Thomas J. Reliban.....1882–86
Alpheus W. Bancroft.....1863–64	Willard Spaulding.....1886
Dana Woodbury.....1863–66	Charles H. Goulding*.....1887
Geo. F. Sanger.....1865, '73–75	Albert A. Messer*.....1887
Amos Merrill.....1866, '69–75	Philip H. Coleman*.....1887
Jas B. Foster.....1867–72	Warren A. Galencia*.....1887
Levi Preston.....1876–85	

ASSESSORS.

Same as selectmen through. ..1885	John C. Herrick.....188
Willard Spaulding*.....1886	Thos. H. Jackman*.....1887
Lyman Osborn*.....1886	Alonzo Raddin*.....1887
Nathan H. Poor.....1886	Nicholas M. Quint*.....1887
Thos. J. Reliban.....1886	

TOWN CLERK.

Nathan H. Poor*.....1855

TREASURERS.

Francis Baker.....1855–70	Nathan H. Poor*.....1871

COLLECTORS.

Wm. Wolcott.....1855–77	Levi Preston.....1878–86
Lyman Osborn*.....1886	

OVERSEERS OF THE POOR.

Wingate Merrill....1855–64, '66–68	Alpheus W. Bancroft.....1866–80
Henry A. Hardy.....1855–58	Amos Osborn, 2d.....1869–74
James P. King*.....1855	John S. Walcott.....1875
Wm. Sutton.....1859	Caleb F. Winchester.....1876
Moses A. Shackley.....1860	Samuel Swett.....1877–78
Stephen Blaney.....1861–62, '65	Geo. F. Sanger*.....1879
Mayhew S. Clark.....1863, '65	James Fallon*.....1881
Alerson Galencia.....1864	

Societies and Organizations.—There are many organizations now existing for social improvement, and for mutual care and protection of members.

The *Holten Lodge of Odd Fellows*, originally instituted in January, 1846, was reinstituted February 22, 1878, and is now a flourishing and important lodge.

The *Exchange News Room*, instituted in 1855, and the *Essex Club*, instituted in 1860, are social clubs.

Among the societies for mutual insurance and benefit, are the *American Legion of Honor*, Fitch Poole Commandery, founded 1881; the *Peabody Mutual Benefit Association*, founded 1880; the *Improved Order of Red Men*, Masonomos Tribe No. 11, founded 1886; the *Massachusetts Catholic Order of Foresters*, Emerald Court No. 53, founded 1883; the *Equitable Aid Union*, founded 1879; the *Ancient Order of United Workmen*, George Peabody Lodge, No. 18, organized 1879.

The *Peabody Woman's Suffrage Club* was organized in 1879.

The American Hibernian Benevolent Association was organized in 1858, and reorganized in 1871.

The *West Peabody Farmer's Club* was instituted in 1881.

Among the literary and dramatic associations are the *Brooksby Club*, connected with the South society, the *Peabody Dramatic Club*, and the *Cushing Debating Society*.

Newspapers.—In 1859 *The Wizard*, a weekly newspaper edited by Fitch Poole, was established. Mr. Poole continued to be editor only for a few years. In 1869 the name was changed to "The Peabody Press." It was at first a folio sheet, but since 1877 has been an eight page paper.

The *Peabody Reporter*, originally published in 1876, and then wholly printed out of town, was printed partly in town about 1879, under the management of Mr. Thomas McGrath. Under its present management, the paper is wholly printed in town, and contains generally two pages of original matter.

The rivalry between these two principal papers is probably for the benefit of the community, as each is incited to continually renewed enterprise and plans of improvement.

Fire Department.—The first fire-engine in South Danvers was one of two purchased by the town of Danvers about 1800. It was kept at Eagle Corner, by the Bell Tavern. In 1822 the "Niagara" was bought, and it was kept in an engine-house on Main Street, where Sutton's Block is now located. In 1830 a Fire Department was organized in the town by legislative act, and the "Torrent" was bought. It was at first kept near the square, on Central Street; afterward at Wilson's corner. The "Torrent" was the first suction engine in town. In 1836 the "Eagle" was purchased, and it was kept at the same place as the "Niagara." In 1844, the year after the great fire, the "General Foster" was purchased; it was kept at first near the location of the present steam fire-engine house on Lowell Street, and afterward on Washington Street. Shortly afterward the "Volunteer" was bought, and kept at first on the corner of Main and Grove Streets, and afterward on Pierpont Street. The "Volunteer" was originally the private property of General William Sutton, and was manned by a private company.

At the separation of South Danvers in 1855, the fire engines which the new town owned were the Niagara, No. 1; the General Foster, No. 2; the Torrent, No. 3; the Volunteer, No. 4; and the Eagle, No. 5. These were all hand engines, and with the hose carriages belonging with them, a sail carriage, and with five hydrants connected with the Salem and Danvers Aqueduct, and a number of reservoirs and pumps, constituted the resources of the town in case of fire. The "Niagara" was placed in the western part of the town.

In 1865 the first steam fire engine was bought; it was a Button engine, and cost three thousand five hundred dollars.

In 1874 another steamer was bought, and both were placed in a new engine-house, near the Square on Lowell Street, built the same year. It was a Button engine.

In 1876 a new hand engine, the S. C. Bancroft, was bought for South Peabody; it was also a Button machine.

In 1882 the organization of the fire department was changed; the increased head given to the water by the building of the stand-pipe made it possible to use the hydrants in many cases without an engine, and the old hand engine companies were organized as hose companies, occupying the same locations as the former companies. In 1887 a new steamer was bought from the La France Fire Engine Company.

The chief engineers have been as follows:—

Stephen Osborne, Jr.	1855
John V. Stevens	1856-57, 59
Jonathan E. Osborne	1858
Wm. H. Little	1860-67
Geo. C. Pierce	1868-70
D. S Littlefield	1871-85
[1] Wm. J. Roone	1885
John H. Tibbetts	1885
Samuel Buxton	1886
Daniel B Lord	1887

Burial Grounds.—The oldest burial ground in the South parish was Gardner's Hill, which was situated a little west of Grove Street. The remains of about one hundred and fifty persons were removed from thence to Harmony Grove, when the latter was established. Among the stones removed at that time is the oldest grave stone in Danvers. It bears the inscription:

1669.
R. B.

It is probably the grave stone of Robert Buffum.

The old burying ground, or Old South burying ground, is on Poole's Hill, next to the Salem boundary. It was originally given by Lydia Trask, to the South Parish. The oldest stone, that of Thomas Pierpont, M.A., bears date of 1755. It contains a very large number of graves, including those of Rev. Nathan Holt, buried in 1792, and Rev. Samuel Walker, in 1826. Dennison Wallis is also buried here; and for many years the sentimental pilgrim visited the place to view the last resting-place of Eliza Wharton, the heroine of the famous old time novel, "The Coquette."

The Friends' burial ground, nearly opposite the old burying ground, was in Salem until the change of boundary. It took the place of a half acre of land on the "mill plain," acquired in 1713, and was obtained some years later.

Monumental Cemetery, on Wallis Street, was laid out in 1833. It is divided into one hundred and twenty-two lots, thirty-two feet by sixteen, with regular avenues, and is owned by proprietors. The oldest stone, removed from another place, bears the date of 1805. The grave of Schoolmaster Benjamin Gile, above which is inscribed "I taught little children to read," is one of the most noteworthy of the early interments. The cemetery is well kept, and contains many fine stones and monuments.

Harmony Grove Cemetery, though now in Salem, is largely owned in Peabody. It was purchased in 1839, for about six thousand dollars, and then contained thirty-five acres. It has since been considerably enlarged. The proprietors were incorporated in 1840. Its extensive grounds are finely kept, and it contains a great variety of monumental stones, some of them exceedingly artistic and impressive.

Emerson Cemetery, in South Peabody, on the corner of Washington Street and Allen's Lane, has been in use about fifty years.

Cedar Grove Cemetery, in South Peabody, contains one hundred and thirty-three acres. It was purchased by the town in March, 1869, when five thousand dollars was appropriated for the purpose. It is held for the town by seven trustees, chosen for five years. Lots are sold to individuals, and the grounds have been greatly improved, and the location is fine. It is reached by a road from Lynn Street.

Oak Grove Cemetery, in West Peabody, near the school-house, contains about ten acres. It was bought in 1886, by the town, and is held by a board of trustees similarly constituted to that of Cedar Grove Cemetery.

There are many private burial grounds in the town, some of them of a very early date. The King family have a cemetery of this kind on Lowell Street, which contains a number of finely built tombs.

RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

South Parish (Second Congregational Church).—The early history of the "Middle Precinct" has been embodied in another part of this historical sketch.

The Rev. Benjamin Prescott, a graduate of Harvard College in the class of 1709, was settled as the first minister of the parish in February, 1712, at a salary of £80 "in Province bills or in silver money as it passes from man to man So long as he continues to be our minister." Afterward it was agreed to give him one-half of the money contributed by strangers. In consideration of repeated deaths and extraordinary changes in Mr. Prescott's family, his salary was increased £20 in 1723. Besides his regular salary and the "strangers money" he was allowed all the proceeds of voluntary quarterly contributions.

About 1727, there began to be difficulty between Mr. Prescott and the parish on account of his salary. The growing depreciation of the paper currency of

[1] Resigned from town during the year.

the province made the sum given him less and less adequate to his needs. From time to time an increase of salary was voted him, but the increase was hardly sufficient to keep pace with the deterioration of the paper money, and, moreover, even the payments voted him seem to have been always in arrears. In 1735 his salary was increased to £150, and in 1738 it became £200, old tenor. In 1741 it was voted to cart for Mr. Prescott twenty-five cords of firewood for his year's use from Hart's farm or nearer, "Mr. Prescott finding the wood ready cut." It would seem that the carting was the larger part of the expense of firewood in those days, for this act of the parish, continued for several years, is spoken of as "finding Mr. Prescott's firewood."

In 1742 he was voted £240, old tenor, and in 1743 £270; these sums did not represent more than the original salary granted him.

The long controversy with Mr. Prescott, extending over more than twenty-five years, is interesting chiefly as showing the different and more lasting nature of the tie that bound together pastor and people in those days. It seems to be assumed throughout all this unfortunate affair that the relation was one which was made for life, and which was so far mutual that it could not be broken except by consent of both parties.

In 1747 the parish upon the question whether they would dismiss Mr. Prescott if he would not give the parish a discharge, voted no. In 1748 they increased his salary to £500 old tenor, and in 1749 to £640 old tenor.

In September, 1749, Mr. Prescott addressed a letter to his parish, in which he sets forth the loss that he has suffered by his payments falling short in value of the original grant to him, and offers to accept two-thirds of the actual amount found due to him since 1727 in full satisfaction. If this offer should be accepted, he goes on to say "it shall be in your Power (when you please) to call or settle another minister of sound knowledge and a good Life among you, and the Day his Salary shall begin, mine shall cease, and upon your Discharging me of my Obligation to Minister to you in holy things, I will discharge you of all Obligations thenceforward to Minister any thing to me for my support." This language clearly shows what his view of the pastoral relation was. This offer was declined, and three men were deputed to treat with Mr. Prescott; but negotiations failed, and in 1750 he brought a law-suit against the parish for his arrears. The parish met and appropriated £20 to defend the suit. This suit appears to have been dropped, and a new one was begun in December, 1751, which came to trial in September, 1752, and resulted in a judgment for Mr. Prescott in the sum of £594 19*s.* 9*d.* At a meeting in December an effort was made to induce Mr. Prescott to settle for a less sum, without success; and it was voted to pay Mr. Prescott no salary and to dismiss him. Up to this time the parish had regularly voted a salary to the pastor every year. In January, 1752–53, they voted him his salary for the past year, and in accordance with the order of court they proceeded to tax the parish for the large amount of the judgment against it. But it was not easy to make up the amount; Mr. Prescott still insisted on performing the duties of the ministry, and in 1754 they tried to settle with him for £100, which he refused.

In December, 1752, Mr. Prescott made an offer on condition of a satisfactory settlement for the years 1749–51, to leave the pulpit for three months, and if in that time a minister was settled, he would relinquish his pastorate. "Tho," as he says, "Quitting my ministry over you is not so light a matter in my understanding as perhaps it may be in some of yours." This offer was renewed in March, 1754, and accepted.

In July, 1754, a call was given to Rev. Aaron Putnam to settle over the parish, but he declined, probably on account of the difficulties prevailing. In September another attempt was made—this time by the parish—to arbitrate the matter, but without success. Mr. Prescott still continued as minister, until in September, 1756, an ecclesiastical council considered the whole matter, and decided that the parish ought to pay Mr. Prescott £405, besides, as Hanson says, the costs of the council, amounting to £118, 14*s.* The parish voted to accept the advice of the council, provided Mr. Prescott would immediately ask a dismission from his pastoral office of the church and the council, and give a full discharge. But the money was not forthcoming, and it was not till November, 1756, that Mr. Prescott, on receiving a bond for the balance due him, signed by six of the responsible men of the parish, finally discharged the parish and ceased to be its pastor. Agreeably to the advice of the council, he was excused from all parish dues for life.

So ended this unhappy controversy, which greatly hindered the Christian work of the parish for a long time, and gave rise to much bitterness of feeling.

Mr. Prescott, who was born September 16, 1687, married, as his first wife, in 1715, Elizabeth, daughter of John Higginson. His second wife, married in 1732, was Mercy Gibbs, and his third wife, married in 1748, was Mary, sister of Sir William Pepperell, who built a house for Mr. Prescott. He lived on the road to the village (now Central Street), near Elm Street. He was a man of ability, and faithful and conscientious in the performance of his pastoral duties. Among other pamphlets, he published a "Letter to the First Church in Salem in 1735, and "Right Hand of Fellowship," delivered at the ordination of Rev. J. Sparhawk, in 1736. In 1768, at the age of eighty-one, he published "A free and calm consideration of the unhappy misunderstanding and debates between Great Britain and the American colonies." He died May 28, 1777.

The Rev. Josiah Stearns was called as pastor in the fall of 1757, by the church on September 27th, and

the society on October 18th. He was offered £80 in lawful money, a parsonage with land and barn. He desired more, and finally declined.

On August 4, 1758, the church called the Rev. Nathan Holt as pastor, which was concurred in by the parish, on the 13th. He was offered a salary of £80 and a settlement of £150, payable £50 a year for the first three years; also a house and garden. He was ordained January 3, 1759.

There is no record of any difficulty with Mr. Holt, who was greatly beloved, and was prominent for his patriotism during the Revolution.

In June, 1763, it was voted "that there be two seats on the easterly side of y^e^ broad ally in the meeting-house be sett apart for a Number of persons to sett in for the better accommodating singing in y^e^ Meeting-house, and that the same be under the regulation of the Parish Committee from time to time as there shall be occasion for carrying on that part of divine service." In October, 1765, the singers were given a place in the front gallery. In May, 1784, the front seat in the women's gallery, on the eastern end of the house, was given to the singers.

In 1764 some difference arose between the North and South Parishes in reference to the inhabitants of New Mills, who wished to be set off to the North Parish. The Legislature decided that the boundary of the Village Parish established in 1700 must be adhered to. This left the New Mills in the South Parish. Some of the inhabitants of New Mills petitioned the South Parish to be set off, but their petition was refused, "because we think y^t^ y^e^ North Parish is as able, if not abler, to maintain their minister without said petitioner's assistance, as we are in y^e^ South Parish with s^d^ Petitioners' assistance, Because we have a considerable Number of the People called Quakers, some Churchmen and some Baptists, &c."

In 1764 certain members of the parish were authorized to increase the size of the house lengthwise, in order to make more room for floor pews. In April, 1771, John Procter, Jr., Robt. Shillaber and others were authorized to widen the house fifteen feet, by moving out the back side, "the wall pews to be wall pews still." The persons who made the addition were to have the additional floor space for pews. The increased width added three seats on each side to the galleries.

The bell was originally hung in a "turret" or cupola, probably like that of the Village meeting-house, on the middle of the building. In 1763 some effort was made to have a steeple built; and in 1774 a steeple, or rather tower, was built on the western end of the house; it was a tall square tower with a belfry roof. The house as finally enlarged had three rows of windows; it was placed with the length running nearly east and west, on the ground in front of the present location of the South Church in Peabody; there were two doors on the southern side, near together. The general arrangement of the interior was preserved in a similar manner to that of the original house.

The parish was very zealous in sustaining the Revolutionary War, constantly furnishing men and money. In 1777 a bounty of £20 per man was paid to those serving in the quota of the parish, and £1200 was raised. In 1778 about £400 was raised, and in 1779 £8000. These last sums were probably in paper currency.

In 1780, a suit of clothes, consisting of "coat, jacket, breeches and hat" was given to Mr. Holt to make up the deficiency of his support.

In 1790 three pews were added to the house, and a part of the meeting-house land was let to the "Proprietors of the duck manufacture." The Artillery Company had leave in September, 1791, to erect a gun-house on land belonging to the parish.

Mr. Holt died August 2, 1792, and the parish voted to continue his salary to the end of the year for the benefit of his family, besides assuming the expenses of his sickness and funeral.

In March, 1793, the house was thoroughly repaired. September 28, 1793, the old parish was dissolved, and the society was incorporated by the Legislature as "The Proprietors of the South Meeting-House in Danvers."

Rev. Samuel Mead was settled as pastor October 31, 1794, and continued till 1803. In August, 1805, Rev. Samuel Walker was settled as minister. He labored in his pastorate for twenty-one years, and died July 7, 1826, after a painful illness of three months. He was interested in all the affairs of the town, and was prominent in temperance and other reforms. His public spirit and his eminent piety made him highly respected and beloved. His uncompromising adherence to the severe doctrines of the theological faith in which he had been educated made his preaching unwelcome to some, and it was during the last years of his pastorate that the movement to establish other religious societies began.

In 1813 the society was much vexed by some person who "sacriligiously and repeatedly robbed this house of God of the tongue of its bell," and a reward of twenty dollars was offered for his apprehension. In 1814 a new bell was purchased and erected at an expense of six hundred and seventy-five dollars. In 1819 the land in the rear of the meeting-house was leased to the proprietors of a chapel, and certain persons were authorized to erect sheds around the house. The house was repaired in 1824, at an expense of four hundred dollars.

On September 12, 1827, Rev. George Cowles was settled as pastor. It was voted to exclude all wines and spirituous liquors from the councils and ordination services. Mr. Cowles was dismissed in September, 1836, at his own request, and travelling south in pursuit of health was lost in the wreck of the "Home."

It is recorded in a memorandum in the records of

the society "that while ringing the Bell on the — of April, 1829, at noon, said Bell did crack, to that extent, as to destroy Its usual Pleasant and Harmonious sound, and was thereby rendered useless." It was soon afterward replaced.

In September, 1830, the school-house, No. 11, on the society's land just west of the meeting-house, was ordered to be removed, and after some controversy and the threat of legal proceedings the house was removed to a piece of land in another place offered by the society for a trifling consideration.

In 1835 it was voted to build a new church, and measures were taken to effect that object. The Unitarian Society offered the South Society the use of its house during the time it was without one, but the offer was not accepted, and services were carried on in a hall while the new house was in process of construction.

In 1836, the old edifice, the greater part of which had been standing one hundred and twenty-five years, was taken down. The last service held in the old meeting-house was very crowded; the galleries had been shored up, and during the services a thin piece of wood used as a wedge cracked with a loud noise. A panic at once followed, persons jumping from the windows, and some being injured in the confusion.

Rev. Harrison G. Park was invited in December, 1836, to succeed Mr. Cowles. The new church, which cost twelve thousand dollars, was dedicated February 1, 1837, and on that day Mr. Park was installed. In October, 1838, he resigned the pastorate.

In June, 1840, Rev. Thomas P. Field was unanimously invited to take the pastoral charge, and he was ordained October 1, 1840. In 1843 the church was sold to the Methodist Society for two thousand five hundred dollars, and a new church was begun. It was only partly finished when it was consumed in the destructive fire of September 22, 1843. The loss was about seven thousand dollars, and there was an insurance of five thousand dollars, effected only the day before the fire. It was determined to go on at once with a new house, and the present edifice was finished and dedicated August 10, 1844, at a cost of one thousand three hundred dollars.

Mr. Field resigned his pastorate in September, 1850, and terminated his connection with the society November 1, 1850.

In 1850 Mary Osborn gave one hundred dollars to the ministers' fund.

In January, 1851, Rev. J. D. Butler was invited to become the pastor of the society, under a contract which permitted either party to terminate the connection on a prescribed notice. In April, 1852, the society gave notice to Mr. Butler that they wished to terminate the connection, which was accordingly done July 12, 1852.

In 1853 the society took into consideration the matter of the "minister's fund," arising from the sale of parsonage lands, and it was decided that the fund, then amounting to $2200, should be kept separate. This was invested in a parsonage in 1869, which was sold in 1877, and the proceeds invested in securities. In November, 1887, Mrs. Florence (Peabody) Holman gave to the society a valuable lot of land on Chestnut Street, on which it is proposed to build a parsonage with the minister's fund.

In 1854 it was voted to buy a new bell, and a clock was given to the society by Francis Dane, Henry Poor and Elijah W. Upton, and placed upon the tower of the church.

In May, 1854, Rev. James O. Murray was called as pastor, and he was ordained October 26, 1854. He tendered his resignation in February, 1861, which was accepted, and he terminated his pastorate in March following.

In July, 1861, Rev. William M. Barbour was called to the pastorate, and he was ordained October 3, 1861. A new bell was bought in 1862, which is the one at present in use.

Mr. Barbour resigned his pastorate in September, 1868. In December, 1868, the Rev. George N. Anthony was invited to become pastor, and he accepted the following month. He was installed March 11, 1869.

He resigned his position in September, 1876. In the spring of 1877 the debt of the society, amounting to about $7000, was raised by voluntary contributions, and the society has ever since been free from debt.

In December, 1877, Rev. Willard G. Sperry was called to the pastorate. The call was accepted, but he was not ordained till July 2, 1878, beginning his labors in September following.

In 1880 extensive changes were made in the interior of the church. The organ was removed to a space added behind the preacher's desk; the white marble pulpit, which had been in the church since it was built, was removed, and a simple reading-desk, with a larger platform, took its place. On the floor below additional rooms were made for the convenience of the pastor and the Sunday-school library.

In 1885 Mr. Sperry received a call to Manchester, N. H., and although the church and society formally requested him to remain, he resigned in September.

In February, 1886, Rev. George A. Hall was called to the pastorate. He accepted, and was ordained April 13, 1886.

The society is vigorous and the congregation large; and, after a century and three-fourths of existence, it still remains an important factor in the religious and social life of the community.

First Unitarian Church.—This church was organized January 1, 1825, "for the purpose of having a place in the South part of Danvers where an opportunity could be had of hearing sentiments more liberal and congenial with the true spirit of Christianity than is now afforded." At the beginning it had thirty-three members. The first church edifice was

dedicated July 26, 1826. The dedicatory sermon was by Rev. Mr. Brazer, of Salem, from the text, "Finally, be ye all of one mind." Others who took part in the services were Rev. Mr. Upham and Rev. Mr. Colman, of Salem, Rev. Dr. Abbott, of Beverly, and Rev. Mr. Bartlett, of Marblehead.

The pulpit was supplied for some months by Mr. Alonzo Hill, after which Rev. Charles C. Sewall, of Dedham, was called to be pastor on a salary of seven hundred dollars a year, and a present on his settlement of two hundred dollars. In April, 1827, a church was formed of seventy-one members, and on April 11th Mr. Sewall was installed. The sermon was by Rev. Mr. Lamson, of Dedham, and a large party of delegates was present, including twenty-one clergymen. Two original hymns were sung, one written by Dr. Andrew Nichols, a member of the society, and the other by Dr. John Pierpont, of Boston.

In 1829 a bell was placed on the church. In 1830 a movement toward obtaining a parsonage was begun. The first organ was a gift from Eben and William Sutton.

In May, 1831, a singing-school was established for the benefit of the young people of the society, and an appropriation of sixty dollars was made therefor. During this year Mr. Sewall's salary was raised to one thousand dollars a year.

In 1836 the current expenses of the society were raised by voluntary contributions, but the next year the society returned to its former method of raising money by taxation of the pews.

Mr. Sewall resigned his pastorate in 1841, leaving July 11th. He was greatly beloved by his people, and at his departure he was presented with a testimonial of five hundred dollars.

Rev. Andrew Bigelow was installed as pastor February 15, 1843. The sermon was by Rev. Dr. Lothrop, of Boston. His salary was to be one thousand dollars,—eight hundred from the treasury and two hundred from voluntary subscriptions. Mr. Bigelow, against the expressed regrets of his society, resigned his pastoral charge March 20, 1845.

Rev. Frank P. Appleton was installed as the next pastor January 14, 1846. The sermon was by Rev. Nathaniel Hall, Jr., and several other clergymen took part in the services; but the installation was not indorsed at the time by the Ecclesiastical Council (of which the late Rev. Dr. Gannett, of Boston, was a prominent member), on account of certain informalities in the preliminary proceedings. Mr. Appleton's pastorate closed in 1853.

October 4, 1854, Mr. C. H. Wheeler was installed as pastor, Dr. Ephraim Peabody preaching the sermon. In June, 1862, Mr. Wheeler's pastorate expired, but he continued to supply the pulpit for a while afterward.

Rev. David H. Montgomery was the next occupant of the pulpit, but he resigned on account of ill health April 20, 1867.

On May 13, 1868, Rev. E. I. Galvin became pastor of the church, the sermon of the occasion being preached by Rev. James Freeman Clarke, of Boston. Mr. Galvin tendered his resignation June 7, 1871, to take effect three months later.

In 1872 some twelve thousand dollars was expended on the church edifice, great improvements being made without and within. A new organ was also purchased and placed in the rear of the pulpit. At the reopening the sermon was delivered by Rev. E. E. Hale, of Boston.

The church was without a pastor until 1873, when Rev. John W. Hudson, the present pastor, was called September 26th. He was formally installed and began the duties of his pastorate December 7th.

In January, 1886, the standing committee was authorized to procure a new organ. The organ was purchased at an expense of three thousand dollars, and dedicated in September, 1886.

In October, 1887, a new bell was procured and placed in the belfry of the church.

First Methodist Society. – In July, 1830, Amos Walton established a prayer-meeting and Sunday-school in Harmony Village (Rockville) in connection with the South Street Methodist Episcopal Church in Lynn.

In 1832 meetings were held in Sanger's Hall, sometimes known as Goodridge's Hall. Subsequently Armory Hall, which formerly stood on Holten Street, near Sewall Street, was rented for Methodist services. The leader in this movement was Mr. Alfred N. Chamberlain; he undertook the responsibility of renting the hall and furnishing the preachers. During the first three years seventeen different preachers conducted the services, among whom were A. D. Merrill (Father Merrill), Joseph A. Merrill, Sanford Benton and John E. Risley. These were all conference preachers; Mr. Risley had the honor of forming the first church society and baptizing the first converts. Among the local preachers were Jesse Filmore, Benjamin F. Newhall, of Saugus; Elijah Downing, of Lynn; Benjamin King, who preached the opening sermon in the hall; Shadrach Ramsdell and James Mudge.

A class was formed here, and after three years of service Mr. Chamberlain induced the Lynn Common Church to assume the responsibility of worship. Rev. Charles K. True, the preacher in charge, advertised in *Zion's Herald* for a young man to take charge of the services here, and, as a result, Rev. Mr. Arnold, of Rhode Island, was sent here by Mr. True, and was the first minister who attended services here and resided among the people.

Later on the responsibility of the charge of the services was transferred to the South Street M. E. Church in Lynn, who had conducted the meetings in Rockville.

In 1839 Amos Walton began preaching regularly for the society, and in July, 1840, he was appointed

by the Conference sitting in Lowell as pastor. At this time the membership of the church was twenty-three. In 1840 the Sabbath school was organized.

While worshipping in Armory Hall, a building on Washington Street, above Oak Street, formerly used as a pottery, was bought and fitted up. The lumber and labor necessary were contributed by interested parties, and the new house of worship was dedicated, but soon proved too small. Plans were proposed for a new house, the lumber purchased and a part of it hauled to the ground, the site of the present church. This was in 1843, and at this time the South Society was about building a new house of worship. Their old house, which had been built in 1836, and was in excellent condition, was offered to the Methodist Society for twenty-five hundred dollars, and it was thought best to dispose of their lumber and accept the offer. The building was moved from the Square to its present location, near the corner of Washington and Sewall Streets; the Lexington Monument was set off to allow its passage, and afterward replaced. The following year vestries were built under the church, at an expense of seven hundred and fifty dollars.

The society at this time was under great financial embarrassment. The mortgage on the church, held by the South Society, was heavy, and at the annual meeting in 1848 it was voted to relinquish the property; Timothy Walton took up the mortgages and the property passed into his hands. The society known as the Methodist Episcopal Chapel Society, which had held the property, became extinct.

The church was allowed by Mr. Walton, who was one of the leading brethren, to continue the use of the building at an annual rental. They had no Conference preacher that year; but a local preacher, Dr. Booth, supplied for them a portion of the time.

In 1853 during the pastorate of William Gordon, a board of trustees was appointed, and organized according to law, under the name of the "First M. E. Society of Danvers." At this time the society purchased the church property from Mr. Walton on liberal terms.

In 1859, during the pastorate of Rev. E. S. Best, the house was raised up and remodeled, at an expense of about six hundred dollars. Part of this expense was contributed by outside friends.

In 1862, when Rev. Mosely Dwight was sent by the Conference to this society, he found a debt of over four thousand dollars, and the society very much depressed. The Church Aid Society lent its assistance, and Mr. Dwight was allowed to collect all the contributions raised in the Boston district for church aid. Through his endeavors the debt on the church was reduced to fifteen hundred dollars.

In 1867 Rev. J. O. Knowles was sent to the Society. He was very active in his efforts, and there was a large increase in the interest and the membership of the church during the two years of his pastorate.

The interior of the church was tinted and painted at this time. Through the efforts of Mr. Knowles and others interested, a Stevens clock was placed in the tower of the church; and at this time, too, a bell was given to the Society by an anonymous friend, who was afterwards known to have been the late General William Sutton. In 1868 the parsonage on Sewall Street was purchased by the Society for two thousand dollars.

During the pastorate of Rev. G. Leonard, who succeeded Mr. Knowles, a social and literary society, similar to the Oxford League, was started and greatly encouraged by the pastor. Mr. Leonard was especially interested in Sabbath-school work, and succeeded in making the school very successful and awakening much interest in its exercises.

During the pastorate of Rev. Albert Gould the debt of the Society was extinguished, and the Society enjoyed a time of prosperity. A deep religious interest was manifest in the town, and union services of the Congregational, Baptist and Methodist Churches were held. Mr. Gould was himself a good musician, and did much for the encouragement of music in the services of the church. A new reed-organ was purchased during his pastorate. Mr. Gould, with the aid of the brethren, started the church in Tapleyville. During his pastorate he published a paper called the *Town of Peabody*, a single issue, which contained much valuable historical information.

Rev. F. T. George was the pastor of the church in 1873–74, and Rev. Daniel Wait in 1875–76–77. During the pastorate of Mr. Wait improvements were made in the furnishing of the vestry.

During the pastorate of the Rev. V. M. Simons, in 1878–79, a pipe-organ was placed in the front part of the church, behind the altar, and the choir seats were removed thither.

Rev. Dr. Steele was pastor of the church in 1880–81–82, and during his pastorate the outside of the church edifice was painted, and the interior repaired and re-carpeted, at an expense of thirteen hundred dollars. At this time, also, the Stevens clock was removed and a Howard clock, the gift of the late Mrs. Lydia P. Proctor, substituted.

Rev. C. N. Smith was the pastor in 1883–84–85, and the time was one of great harmony and prosperity in the church.

The following is the list of preachers stationed by the Conference over the church from the beginning:

Amos Walton	1839–40	E. S. Best	1859–6
Daniel Webb	1841	Franklin Furber	1861
H. G. Barras	1842	Mosely Dwight	1862–63
Amos Binney	1843	S. R. Sweetser	1864–65–66
Reuben Ransom	1844	J. O. Knowles	1867–68
I. J. P. Collyer	1845–46	William G. Leonard	1869
Z. A. Mudge	1847	Albert Gould	1870–71–72
Thomas Street	1848–49	F. T. George	1873–74
O. S. Howe	1850	Daniel Wait	1875–76–77
W. C. High	1851–52	V. M. Simons	1878–79
William Gordon	1853–54	Daniel Steele	1880–81–82
Edward A. Manning	1855	C. N. Smith	1883–84–85
George Sutherland	1856–57	Geo. Alcott Phinney	1886
H. C. Dunham	1858		

In 1886 extensive repairs and improvements were undertaken; the vestries were painted and refurnished; an addition was built on the back of the building, making room for the organ and giving additional space below. The choir seats were rebuilt and the preacher's platform refurnished. The pews and interior fittings were renovated, the walls and ceilings frescoed and various improvements and additions made to the conveniences of the house. A large number of memorial windows have been given in honor of deceased friends and relatives; the Oxford League assumed the expense and management of the improvement of the windows, and their efforts have been seconded by gifts of money from various individuals and societies. The entrance and approaches have been improved, and the house now is one of the most commodious in town. The expenditures for the recent improvements were about twenty-six hundred dollars. The society is large and flourishing, and active in Christian work and service.

Second Universalist Society.—The First Universalist Parish of Peabody was organized on the 6th of April, 1832, under the title "The Second Universalist Society of Danvers." Universalist meetings had been held occasionally in private houses, sometimes in a small hall in the building now occupied in part by the *Peabody Press* office, in the school-house then located near the Old South Church, and also in Joseph Shedd's Hall, a small hall in a building on Main Street, then occupied by Mr. Shedd as an apothecary shop. Previously to this organization some families had attended the Universalist meeting in Salem.

On January 31, 1832, a preamble and resolution were adopted and signed by forty-three persons, with reference to building a church and forming a Universalist Society. It was proposed to erect a meeting-house in the vicinity of the South Church, and a subscription was opened for shares of one hundred dollars. On March 26th, a meeting of subscribers was held, and a committee appointed to find a suitable site for a house. An agreement for organization was drawn up and signed by forty-seven persons, pledging the united action of the signers for the formation and maintenance of a religious society under the name of the Second Universalist Society in Danvers. In accordance with a petition drawn up at this meeting a warrant was issued by John W. Proctor, Esq., for a meeting to be held in Shedd's Hall, April 6, 1832. On that day the members met and organized.

A church building was completed in January, 1833, and was dedicated January 10th. On January 21st, an invitation was given to Rev. John Moore to become pastor at a salary of six hundred and fifty dollars. It was accepted, and he was installed April 4, 1833. He resigned November 16, 1834, leaving at the end of the year. During his ministry a Sunday-school was organized, beginning with about fifty members. A church was organized by Mr. Moore April 30, 1834, consisting of twenty-four members.

February 15, 1835, the Rev. John M. Austin was invited to become pastor. He was installed April 29th.

When the church building was completed the vestry was left unfinished. There was then no public hall in town large enough for town purposes. In 1836 the vestry was finished by an association called the Union Hall Association, partly in the interest of the church, and was used for public purposes. In February, 1843, the subject of enlarging the meeting-house by galleries was considered, which was done soon afterward.

Mr. Austin resigned his pastorate in September, 1843. The affairs of the society were in a highly prosperous condition during his ministry, and particularly at its close. A religious revival affecting this with other societies prevailed during the latter part of his ministry.

On October 20, 1844, Rev. John Prince was invited to become pastor, and was installed January 15, 1845. Mr. Prince was very progressive in his ideas, and during his pastorate there was a division in the society, arising from differences in belief, which resulted in the withdrawal of Mr. Prince, in June, 1848, and the closing of the church as a house of public worship for several years.

In October, 1853, Rev. J. W. Talbot made a successful effort to revive the society, and worship was regularly begun October 30, 1853, and has ever since been maintained. Mr. Talbot resigned at the close of a year, having accomplished his object. During his stay the church building, including the vestry, was enlarged and improved, and an organ purchased.

In November, 1855, Rev. Orville Brayton began his pastorate; he was installed February 6, 1856. He continued as pastor until September 1, 1859. Rev. C. C. Gordon was pastor of the society for a year, beginning November, 1859. He left the parish united and in good condition. In February, 1862, Rev. O. F. Safford was invited to become pastor, and he began his work in May. He was installed June 17, 1863. His pastorate closed May 1, 1865.

Rev. A. B. Hervey became pastor in April, 1866. In September, 1867, the society voted to remodel the church, which was done in a thorough manner, at an expense of about nine thousand dollars. A bell was presented to the society by a friend who desired that his name should be withheld. The church was rededicated March 4, 1868. Mr. Hervey's ministry closed in November, 1872, leaving the society united and in good condition, and the Sunday-school larger than at any other period of its history.

The Rev. S. P. Smith became pastor on the first Sunday in October, 1873, and continued until the 12th of March, 1876, when he resigned his charge. During his ministry additions and improvements were made

to the vestry at a cost of about twelve hundred dollars.

On April 30, 1876, Rev. E. W. Whitney began his pastorate. He was installed November 8, 1876. The church, which had been greatly reduced in number and inactive, was reorganized by Mr. Whitney on the 6th of May, 1877, with forty-one members. At the annual meeting in January, 1879, the society voted to raise the church in order to give more height to the vestry and improve the entrance, which was done at a cost of about two thousand five hundred dollars. Mr. Whitney resigned his pastorate in December, 1879.

On January 26, 1880, Rev. G. W. Harmon was invited to the pastorate, and began his labors in March, 1880. During the summer of 1881 further improvements were made on the church. Mr. Harmon closed his work with the society in July, 1882.

Rev. F. W. Sprague, the present pastor, began his ministry on the last Sunday in September, 1882.

Second Baptist Society.—The Baptist Church was organized February 16, 1843, having sixteen members. The church was recognized February 22, 1843, with twenty-seven members. The sermon was by Rev. Joseph Banvard. The first deacon, O. E. Pope, was elected February 24, 1843. Various persons supplied the pulpit till September 15, 1843, when Rev. Phineas Stowe accepted a call to the pastorate. He was ordained pastor December 5, 1843; the services were in the Unitarian Church, and the sermon was by Rev. R. H. Neal, D.D.

In the spring of 1843, a chapel was erected, sixty-five by thirty-two feet, and publicly dedicated June 15, 1843, Rev. Messrs. Banvard, Anderson and Carlton assisting in the services. In August, 1844, the society was incorporated, consisting at that time of thirty-one members.

The pastorate of Mr. Stowe ended May 9, 1845, after which the pulpit was supplied by Rev. J. G. Richardson, who was installed as pastor January 28, 1846, Rev. Joseph Banvard preaching the sermon. This pastorate ended in October, 1847. From April 23, 1848, to March 4, 1849, Rev. I. E. Forbush supplied the pulpit, after which Rev. B. C. Thomas supplied it.

December 3, 1848, P. D. Perkins became deacon of the church. November 11, 1849, Rev. F. A. Willard became pastor, and he resigned that office February 3, 1854. T. W. Carr became deacon May 12, 1851. Rev. N. Medbury regularly supplied the pulpit after the expiration of a year from Mr. Willard's resignation, and did much toward obtaining the present house of worship. October 4, 1857, Rev. T. E. Keely became pastor.

The present house of worship was dedicated November 19, 1857, Rev. T. D. Anderson preaching the sermon. R. R. Emerson was chosen deacon February 9, 1860. Mr. Keely resigned his pastoral relation August 29, 1861.

Rev. C. E. Barrows was ordained pastor December 25, 1861, Rev. Heman Lincoln preaching the sermon. He resigned January 12, 1865, and was succeeded by Rev. N. M. Williams July 9, 1865. During Mr. Williams' pastorate the house was repaired at an expense of one thousand one hundred dollars.

Mr. Williams was succeeded by the Rev. C. V. Hanson, who was ordained over the church October 6, 1868. The sermon was by Rev. W. H. Shailer, of Portland, Maine. February 4th, of the following year, Thomas N. Barnaby was chosen Deacon.

Mr. Hanson was a most active and efficient Christian worker, and the church, under his pastorate, was greatly prospered. During the first three years of his ministry, fifty members were added to the church. He was also greatly interested in the affairs of the town, and was widely respected by all denominations for his progressive and intelligent co-operation in matters of education, temperance reform and charities of every kind. He was twice sent as representative to the Legislature by the town in 1871 and 1872, and was during both those terms chairman of the committee on the Liquor Law.

In 1877, Edward H. Wilson, a member of the church, died, and gave in his will the sum of one thousand dollars to the society, and also gave a piece of land on Andover Street and the sum of two thousand dollars to build a chapel, to be used by the several evangelical societies of the town. A chapel was erected in accordance with the terms of the bequest, and meetings are held there weekly by members of the societies interested. There being no other place of worship in the vicinity, the gift has been the means of doing much good.

In the summer of 1879 Mr. Hanson resigned the pastorate. November 24, 1879, the church and society voted to give the Rev. L. L. Wood a call. Mr. Wood accepted, and began his labors accordingly. In August, 1882, he tendered his resignation, which was accepted.

April 16, 1883, the church and society voted to give Rev. W. P. Chipman, of Davisville, R. I., a call, which was accepted. In January, 1885, Mr. Chipman was compelled to resign owing to illness in his family, which made his removal from the town necessary.

March 9, 1885, the church and society voted to call Rev. J. N. Shipman, of Moosup, Conn., to the pastorate. The call was accepted, and Mr. Shipman is now acting in that office.

In the fall of 1887, repairs and improvements were begun in the building, which will greatly improve the beauty and convenience of the house.

Rockville Congregational Society and West Congregational Society.—For many years the people of the South Church carried on Sunday-school and prayer-meeting services in Rockville or South Peabody. Some of the meetings were held as early as 1832.

Mr. Caleb Frost was superintendent of this early Sunday-school, which was held in a chapel built by Mr. Elijah Upton, standing on Needham's corner, opposite Samuel Brown's estate. In 1854 Sabbath-school was again held by members of the South Church in an old house owned by Mr. John Marsh. A prayer-meeting was sustained for many years at private houses by Deacon Richard Smith, Mr. John Stevens and Mr. Isaac Hardy. Deacon Jacob Perley was also interested in these early meetings.

The South Street Methodist Episcopal Church of Lynn had conducted such services in Rockville as early as 1830, but they were not regularly carried on after 1840, when a regular preacher was sent by the Methodist Conference to the central part of the town, and the Methodists worshipped there.

In 1855 a substantial chapel was built by friends of the movement, on Lynnfield Street. Services were held here in which members of the South Church assisted, acting as teachers in the Sunday-school, and assuming the financial responsibility of the enterprise. The ministers of the various Congregational Societies of the vicinity conducted preaching services from time to time, and by degrees the people of the vicinity were interested in the movement, and lent their support to the extent of their ability.

A mission Sunday-school and prayer-meeting had been carried on for some years in West Peabody, where there was a small manufacturing settlement. It was decided to unite the new two enterprises, and in 1873 Rev. W. A. Lamb, a recent graduate of Andover Seminary, was engaged as pastor of both the South and West Peabody Churches. At this time there was neither Society nor Church organization—simply Sunday-school, prayer-meetings and preaching services. The two congregations agreed each to give a definite part of the pastor's salary.

The ministry of Mr. Lamb extended from July 1873 to July, 1875. On April 14, 1874, the Rockville Church was organized. A very powerful revival had attended the efforts of Mr. Lamb, and great interest was felt in the new church. A number of members of the South Church, some of them residents of South Peabody, and some from the central part of the town, were so greatly interested that they joined the new organization to aid in its support and management. In all thirty-nine members were received into the new church. At the time the church was recognized, Mr. Lamb was ordained as evangelist. Prof. John L. Taylor was the moderator of the council and Rev. Joshua Coit scribe.

Rev. C. C. Carpenter, of Andover, succeeded Mr. Lamb. His ministry extended from July 1, 1875, to July 1, 1880—five years. His was a quiet, earnest, successful ministry. The church in South Peabody grew and became stronger; and during the last year of his ministry a new site was acquired for a larger and more commodious church building. The old chapel was removed to the new site, and remained there until the present church edifice was erected in its place.

For several months the church was without a pastor; on February 1, 1881, Rev. John W. Colwell began his ministry.

July 6, 1881, the Rockville Congregational Society in Peabody, was duly organized. The site for the new church was in the hands of trustees, who were authorized to convey the property to the Society on certain terms, which was done, and the Society, with the assistance of many outside friends, built the present church edifice.

In February, 1882, a building committee was appointed, whose efforts in obtaining funds were so far successful that the old chapel was removed and building operations begun in the fall. In the spring of 1883 the edifice was completed with the exception of the auditorium, and the Society which had been worshipping in the school-house opposite, began services in the new vestry. By continued effort, funds were secured to finish the auditorium, and the church was dedicated May 22, 1884; Rev. W. G. Sperry, then of the South Church, preached the dedicatory sermon, and Rev. C. C. Carpenter took part in the services.

The church edifice is 40 x 50 feet, with a pulpit recess 4x13 feet. The tower is 15 feet square and rises 75 feet above the underpinning.

The cost of the building, finishing and furnishing of the house was about $7,100. Great interest was taken, both by the church in South Peabody and the parent church, in securing the amount; subscriptions were received from above three hundred persons. One thousand dollars were contributed in sums of ten dollars and less. About two thousand seven hundred dollars were secured in South Peabody, and the South Church people gave about two thousand seven hundred and fifty dollars; of the remainder, five hundred dollars came from the American Congregational Union, and the rest from outside friends. The Society is nearly or quite self-supporting, and is the centre of active Christian work.

At West Peabody the West Congregational Church was duly organized as a branch of the Rockville Church, September 6, 1883, with fifteen members. Rev. C. B. Rice, of Danvers, was moderator of the council, and Rev. H. L. Brickett, of Lynnfield, scribe. The church has the same articles of faith and covenant as the Rockville Church, and the same pastor, but it chooses its own standing committee and makes its own by-laws and controls its own membership.

The West Congregational Society in Peabody was incorporated October 26, 1885, and on December 11 the new chapel was dedicated free of debt at a cost of one thousand four hundred and sixty dollars. The large and beautiful lot of half an acre was given to Mr. Joseph Henderson, of Salem, formerly a resident of West Peabody. The churches in the Essex South Conference (Congregational), and the American Con-

gregational Union assisted the people in building the chapel, and outside friends contributed generously. The dedicatory sermon was preached by Rev. C. B. Rice, of Danvers.

The two societies act in conjunction; they meet yearly and decide upon the proportionate part which each shall pay toward the pastor's salary. In matters of common interest, such as the calling or dismissal of a pastor, a joint vote is taken.

June 5, 1887, Rev. Mr. Colwell terminated his pastorate, going to Barrington, R. I. Great progress was made during his active and efficient labors in South and West Peabody, and his enterprise and energy did much to encourage the people of his double flock to the efforts which have been so successful in building up these churches upon a secure foundation. The membership of the Rockville Church is sixty-eight, and that of the West Church twenty-four.

On November 9, 1887, Rev. Israel Ainsworth was installed as pastor of the Rockville Congregational Church, and the West Congregational Church, the relation between the two societies remaining as has been explained before.

Many devoted men and women of the South Church labored earnestly in the early days of these churches, whose names will long be remembered by the people whom they strove to assist, but of whom the limits of this sketch do not give room for adequate mention.

In 1860 Mr. Elijah W. Upton placed in the hands of the officers of the South Society four hundred dollars, which he had been requested by his father, Elijah Upton, to contribute to the Rockville mission; and that sum is still held in trust for the benefit of the society in Rockville.

St. John's Church (Roman Catholic).—Before 1850 there were very few Catholics in the town, and until 1871 the Catholics of South Danvers and Peabody worshipped at St. James' Church, on Federal Street, Salem.

In 1868 Rev. John J. Gray, the pastor of St. James' Church, formed the idea of establishing a new parish in Peabody. In May, 1870, a fair was held in Mechanic Hall, Salem, to aid in establishing the new parish, which continued for two weeks, and was very successful, over seven thousand dollars being realized. Sufficient money having thus been obtained to begin the work, a lot of land, formerly used for manufacturing purposes, was purchased of Thomas E. Procter for ten thousand dollars, and in May, 1871, a contract was made for building the new church, which is of brick, with granite trimmings, and is about seventy-two feet wide by one hundred and forty-six long, with a tower. It is the largest and most expensive church edifice in the town.

The laying of the corner-stone took place on Sunday afternoon, August 20, 1871, and an immense crowd assembled to witness the ceremonies. All the Catholic societies of Salem were present, and marched in procession with their distinctive badges. Bishop Williams, of Boston, officiated, and Rev. I. T. Hecker, of New York, preached an able sermon in relation to the progress of the Catholic Church in America.

On Christmas day, December 25, 1871, services were first held in the basement of the church, although the building was in a rough and unfinished condition. Rev. Father Gray celebrated mass, and preached an interesting sermon, in which he congratulated the congregation and the Catholics of Peabody on being able to worship for the first time in this town in an edifice worthy of their efforts, and one on which was raised the emblem of their religion. A large congregation attended, although there were no pews for their accommodation, and the weather being very cold, it was impossible to warm the place.

The church was not opened again for public worship until September, 1872, when the basement was entirely finished and over two hundred pews put in. After that time services were regularly held every Sunday by one of the St. James' clergymen, until 1874, when Rev. M. J. Masterson became the pastor.

The building was finished and dedicated with impressive ceremonies November 30, 1879. The large auditorium presents a fine interior, with its lofty ceiling, beautifully frescoed walls and fifteen mullioned windows of stained glass, most of them being memorial windows contributed by individuals or societies. There are fourteen large paintings between the windows, representing the stations of the cross. The altars, of white marble, are richly furnished. The large auditorium seats twelve hundred persons.

The whole cost of the edifice was about one hundred thousand dollars. The architect was James Murphy, of Providence. The assistants at present are Rev. Patrick Masterson and Rev. Vincent Borgialli.

St. Paul's Mission (Episcopal).—The first service of this mission was on Sunday, April 2, 1874, the first Sunday after Easter. At this service morning prayer was read by Mr. Edgar W. Upton, and the chants and hymns were sung by a choir of boys, who had been trained by Mrs. Edgar W. Upton. There has been no interruption in the Sunday services since that time.

At first the Rev. John W. Leek, rector of St. Michael's, Marblehead, Rev. E. M. Gushee, of St. Peter's, Salem, and Rev. Mr. Magill, of Calvary, Danvers, had joint charge of the mission, and took turns in preaching on Sunday evenings. The mission was brought to the attention of the diocesan convention in May, 1874, and considerable cold water was thrown upon it. It was ably defended by its three reverend sponsors, and was adopted by the Missionary Board, who granted it some money for a missionary.

In the summer of 1874 Allen's Hall was hired by the mission, and fitted up by the help of friends in neighboring parishes. Rev. Mr. Magill was put in charge of the work, which charge he kept till August,

1875, when the present missionary, the Rev. George Walker, took the cure of Peabody, in addition to that of a new mission in Wakefield.

Ground was broken for the church on Lowell Street on January 1, 1876. It is worthy of note that there was no frost in the ground then. The first service in the new church was held on Quinqnagesima Sunday, the 27th of February following. The church building has been added to from time to time as the needs of the mission grew. In 1880 a vestry was built. Inadvertently the east wall of this addition was built several inches over the line of the next estate. In 1885 this mistake was mended by putting the wall where it belonged, after trying in vain to hire or buy the land so unfortunately covered. In 1886 the roof of the north end of the church was replaced with a gable end, and the door moved from the west side to the end of the church, thus adding about thirty seats to the church, which now will seat about one hundred and fifty persons. The seats were rebuilt at the same time.

The congregation from a beginning of twenty has grown to a membership of over two hundred souls, and an average attendance of over one hundred every Sunday. The Sunday-school has grown from ten to seventy, with an average attendance of more than fifty. A boy choir has been maintained almost without any break, from the first service. In 1878 the boys were vested in Cassock and Surplice.

Services are held every Sunday. The Holy Communion is celebrated every other Sunday, alternating between an early celebration and one after morning prayer. As the mission is now joined with Danvers in the cure of Rev. Mr. Walker, it has to share his time with the Danvers Church, so that every alternate Sunday there has to be a lay service in the morning. This duty has fallen chiefly upon Mr. Upton, though not infrequently Mr. George R. Curwen, of Salem, has performed it.

In 1879, the Rev. Amos Ross, a deacon of the church and a full blooded Santee Indian, was in the family of the missionary several months. The acquaintance thus begun has been kept up, and every year since, a missionary box has been sent to Mr. Ross and his people.

INSTITUTIONS AND SOCIETIES.

THE PEABODY INSTITUTE.—Mention has been made in another part of this sketch of the circumstances under which Mr. Peabody's original gift of twenty thousand dollars was announced, and the communication which accompanied the gift, on the 16th of June, 1852. On June 28, 1852, a town-meeting was held at which resolves prepared and submitted by Dr. Andrew Nichols were unanimously adopted, accepting the gift and pledging the town to the conditions imposed by the donor. It was voted "That the institution established by this donation be called and known as the PEABODY INSTITUTE, and that this name be inscribed, in legible characters, upon the front of the building to be erected, that, in future years, our children may be reminded of their father's benefactor, and that strangers may read the name of him whom Danvers will always be prond to claim as her son."

It was also determined that two of the "Committee of Trustees" should be elected each successive year for a term of six years, and "That the aforesaid Committee of Trustees appoint annually, from the citizens of the town at large, another Committee, who shall select books for the library, designate the subjects for lectures, procure lecturers, enact rules and regulations, both in regard to the lectures and the library, and perform all such other duties as the Committee shall assign to them."

The proceedings of the town relative to the gift were transmitted to Mr. Peabody, and received his approval. The scheme thus determined became, therefore, what may be called the charter of the Institute, and constituted as the officers of the institute, a board of trustees chosen by the town in whom are vested the funds and other property, for the purpose of maintaining a lyceum and library; and another board, chosen annually by the trustees, called the lyceum and library committee, whose duties are to superintend and direct all its active operations.

Soon after the first, Mr. Peabody gave to the trustees a further donation of ten thousand dollars, stipulating that seventeen thousand dollars should be used for land and building, ten thousand dollars as a permanent fund, and three thousand dollars for the library.

The westerly part of the Wallis estate was purchased for the Institute, and afterward considerable additions were made to the land, Mr. Peabody giving fifteen thousand dollars additional to purchase and improve the land. He also during his visit to this country in 1856, paid one thousand five hundred dollars for other improvements to the land, and one thousand one hundred dollars for liquidating all liabilities against the Institute on account of the building.

The original building was about eighty-two by fifty feet, of brick and treestone, with a library room and committee rooms on the lower floor, and a lecture hall above. It cost fifteen thousand three hundred dollars. The corner-stone was laid, with appropriate ceremonies, August 20, 1853; as Capt. Sylvester Proctor had deceased, Hon. Abbott Lawrence performed the part assigned to him. The building was finished in the course of the following year, and dedicated to its future uses September 29, 1854. Rufus Choate, who always maintained a warm interest in the place where the early years of his professional life had been spent, delivered the address at the dedication, one of the most eloquent and thoughtful of his occasional addresses, containing many brilliant and impressive passages on the valne of

reading and the function of a public library and lyceum.

The library was opened on October 18, 1854, for the delivery of books on Wednesday and Saturday afternoons and evenings. There were then about one thousand five hundred volumes on the shelves.

In December, 1854, a donation of books was received from Mr. Peabody, containing about two thousand five hundred volumes, selected by Mr. Henry Stevens, agent of the Smithsonian Institution.

Subsequent additions to the library by purchase and gift brought the number of volumes in 1856, at the time of Mr. Peabody's visit to the town, to above five thousand three hundred, including two hundred and fifty volumes received from the Danvers Mechanic Institute, an association that had existed in the town since 1841. The town also contributed one hundred and ten volumes to the library, and many of the citizens gave books from their own libraries.

The first course of lectures began November 29, 1854. Among the lecturers for the first season were George S. Hillard, Theodore Parker, E. P. Whipple, Prof. R. D. Hitchcock, Ralph Waldo Emerson, A. A. Miner, T. Starr King, Josiah Quincy and Richard H. Dana. Truly a brilliant group of names! Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes lectured during the second season.

The one to whom the managers of the Institute naturally turned in seeking a librarian was Fitch Poole, whose literary abilities were highly esteemed by his townsmen. He was elected to the position January 3, 1854, but being then engaged in business, found it necessary to resign the position, which he did September 27 of the same year. His successor was Mr. Eugene B. Hinckley, then principal of the Peabody High School, who gave much time to his duties, and rendered valuable service during the early days of the library, when its valuable collections were just begun. Upon the resignation of Mr. Hinckley Mr. Poole was again elected, May 17, 1856, and continued to hold the office until his death, in 1873. He was a most courteous and efficient officer, and his kindness to students, and readiness to assist all in the selection of books, with his genial personal qualities, made him the friend of every borrower of books.

Mr. Peabody had, from the beginning of the active work of the Institute, set aside a fund in his own hands, amounting to twenty thousand dollars, of which he gave the trustees the income in addition to the income from the invested funds of the Institute. In 1866, while on a visit to this country, he gave another donation of one hundred thousand dollars to the Institute, at the same time making provision for the establishment of an entirely distinct branch library in Danvers. The year before he had sent to the two libraries a large number of volumes of books purchased by him in London, from which the South Danvers library received about three thousand five hundred volumes. October 6, 1867, shortly before his return to England, he made a final donation to the Institute of fifty thousand dollars, making the total of his gifts to the Peabody Institute of South Danvers, or Peabody, upward of two hundred thousand dollars. An extensive addition was made to the building in 1867 and 1868, including an enlargement of the library room by an extension of forty-six feet in the rear of the building, the erection of a tower on the western side and the addition of a portico on the front of the building. The entire cost of these changes was about forty-five thousand dollars. The whole value of the invested permanent funds of the Institute after Mr. Peabody's last donation, including the real estate, from which an income is derived by its occupation for dwelling-houses, was one hundred and thirty thousand three hundred dollars.

In accordance with a wise plan approved by Mr. Peabody, twenty thousand dollars of this fund was set apart in 1870 as a reserve fund, the interest of which was to accumulate for the purpose of meeting any unusual necessity, such as the erection of new buildings or the making of permanent additions to the Institute, or the arising of some great emergency. This fund has now increased to more than forty-three thousand dollars. In 1885, it was decided by the trustees that the great decrease of income consequent on lower rates of interest obtainable was an emergency calling for a use of the income of this fund, and that the maintenance of the active usefulness of the Institute was of greater importance than the rapid accumulation of the reserve fund, particularly as it does not appear likely that any new buildings will be needed for many years; and a part of the income of the reserved fund is accordingly used for current expenses, a considerable sum being still added to the principal every year. The general funds of the Institute, exclusive of the land and building of the Institute, the library, curiosities and cabinets of valuables, and not including the reserved fund or the Eben Dale Sutton Library Fund, amount to about one hundred and twenty-two thousand dollars.

After the decease of Fitch Poole, Theodore M. Osborne was appointed librarian of the Peabody Institute in September, 1873. He resigned the position in 1880, leaving in October, and was succeeded by Mr. J. Warren Upton, the present librarian, whose long service on the Lyceum and Library Committee had made him thoroughly acquainted with the needs of the library, and whose systematic methods and unwearied industry in improving the resources of the library and promoting the cultivation of the best reading in the community render him a most efficient and valuable officer. A thorough and exact system of cataloguing is constantly kept up to date, and great care is taken to furnish the public with accurate lists of books.

When the Institute building was first thrown open, Mr. John H. Teague was the janitor, and he continued to occupy the position until his death in 1880. He became identified with the institution, and his marked characteristics made him a well-known and prominent figure in the administration of its affairs. His sphere was not solely a humble one, for as was remarked by the Chairman of the Lyceum and Library Committee, for a large part of the time he was the only representative of the government of the Institute on the ground to receive the throngs of visitors who were drawn to the Institute by the fame of its founder. His urbanity and native politeness, and the remarkable memory, shrewd wit and knowledge of human nature which he often displayed made him a most attractive figure to all with whom he came in contact. He maintained a watchful care over all the interests of the Institute, and with admirable discretion contrived to keep each department informed of any necessity for action or improvement. In the exercise of his functions he became the friend of all who desired to use rightly the advantages of the institution which he loved so well. He was succeeded for a short time by Mr. I. A. Drowne, and then by Mr. John D. McKeen, the present efficient janitor.

Mr. Peabody made this institution the depositary of the most cherished and valuable gifts which he had received in recognition of his munificent and remarkable charitable donations. When the building was enlarged a large fire-proof safe was built with an ingenious arrangement of sliding case, in which are displayed the most valuable of these gifts,—the portrait of Queen Victoria enamelled upon gold, her own gift to him in recognition of his friendly gift for homes for the poor of London; the gold box containing the freedom of the city of London and that given him by the Fishmongers' Company, one of the ancient Guilds of London, in recognition of his charities; the gold medal presented to him by Congress in commemoration of his gift to the Southern Education Fund, and that awarded at the Paris Exposition for the work of that Fund. Valuable autographs, including letters from the hand of Queen Victoria, and a collection of American autographs obtained by Mr. Peabody in London, illuminated memorials from various societies and portraits of great interest, form part of the treasures of the Peabody Institute in Peabody. A fine portrait of Mr. Peabody, his own gift, hangs in the hall. Other interesting portraits, including those of Rufus Choate, Edward Everett, General Foster and President Harrison, have been presented to the Institute by its friends, several of them being the gifts of Elijah W. Upton.

The number of volumes in the Peabody Institute Library in February, 1887, was twenty-six thousand two hundred and twenty-five. It is estimated that the whole amount expended for books from year to year up to the present time, including books bought by Mr. Peabody for the library, is upward of thirty-seven thousand dollars, making an exceedingly useful and well-selected library for practical use in a community like that of Peabody.

THE EBEN DALE SUTTON REFERENCE LIBRARY.—In October, 1866, Mr. Peabody met the school children of the town in the Peabody Institute Hall; and in the afternoon the hall was filled by the adult population, and the medal scholars of the Peabody High School. It was announced by Mr. Peabody that he had a communication for them, which he should make "with a degree of pleasure and satisfaction which could only be equalled by that felt by his hearers," and then with a few happy words of introduction, he read the following letter from Mrs. Eliza Sutton, of South Danvers:

"SOUTH DANVERS, Oct. 15, 1866.

"*To the Trustees of the Peabody Institute:*

"GENTLEMEN—The rare advantages conferred on our community by the establishment of the Peabody Library are fully appreciated and gratefully acknowledged by all who have been privileged to enjoy them. Having had favorable opportunities for observing its beneficent results hitherto, I could but cherish a deep interest in its continued prosperity and success. This interest has ripened into a feeling akin to personal affection, through recollection of the delight and improvement which its treasures afforded to my dearly beloved son, now deceased, Eben Dale Sutton.

"As a memorial of this departed son, I have desired to make to the Institute some offering, which should permanently connect his name with this noble public benefaction.

"Having received from Mr. Peabody a kind and cordial approval of my plan, I propose to present for your acceptance, as Trustees of the Peabody Library, the sum of Twenty Thousand Dollars, for the furtherance of the objects had in view by its founder. In making this gift, it is my wish not to trespass upon the ground already so successfully occupied by the present library for circulation.

"I desire that it may be invested as a permanent fund, to be called the Eben Dale Sutton Fund, the income of which, as it accrues, shall be devoted exclusively to the establishment of a Reference Library; that the books purchased for it shall be of enduring value, and such only as are desirable and indispensable for the use of scholars; that they shall be kept together in some room of the Institute Building, especially assigned for their accommodation, from which they shall never be loaned or taken. It is not my purpose to attach any onerous conditions to this donation; but at a future time, should my proffer be acceptable to you, I will express more fully my wishes and plans for its disposition and management.

"I shall place this gift in your hands, gentlemen, associated as it is with tender memories, with full assurance that it will be wisely administered, and will prove a lasting blessing to the present, and to future generations.

"Yours, respectfully,

"ELIZA SUTTON."

This letter was formally answered, and the gift accepted, by the trustees on January 5, 1867, and the trustees indicated their intention to accede to the donor's views and wishes in accordance with any suggestion that she might wish to make as to the disposition of the funds.

On January 28, 1867, Mrs. Sutton placed the fund in the hands of the Trustees, together with a communication in which she embodied some additional suggestions as to the plan of the Reference Library. The income, without any abatement, is to be "passed to the credit of the Lyceum and Library Committee

of the Institute, and is to be wholly expended in the purchase of books of practical and enduring value, together with charts, maps, diagrams, models and such other helps to the acquisition of knowledge as are to be found in the best libraries established for the use of students and scholars; and in defraying such incidental expenses as may become necessary for the preservation and perpetuation of the books and apparatus constituting the library; and for no other purpose." The books are to be substantially bound, and to be kept together in a room from which they are not to be loaned or taken. A seal is to be affixed to the inside of the cover of each volume, indicating the source of the fund. The committee are prohibited from accumulating more than one year's income at any time. The privilege of consultation of the collections is extended to "any desirous of profiting by their use," though the design is primarily and chiefly for the use and improvement of the townspeople.

The room assigned to this Reference Library in the enlarged building was richly and conveniently furnished by Mrs. Sutton, and a fine portrait of the son, in whose memory the gift was made, was placed on its walls. The room was thrown open to the public June 14, 1869. Besides the books purchased from the income of the fund, Mrs. Sutton has, from time to time, given to the library many rare and valuable volumes and collections, including fine sets of Audubon's "Birds of America," "The Description of Egypt," the famous work prepared at the direction of the First Napoleon, Kingsborough's "Antiquities of Mexico," and other important works.

On the opening of the library Mr. Fitch Poole, the librarian of the Peabody Library, was appointed superintendent, and Miss Mary J. Floyd, of Peabody, was chosen librarian. After the decease of Mr. Poole, in 1873, no other superintendent was appointed, but Miss Floyd continued to be the librarian until June, 1881. Miss S. E. Perkins acted as librarian until November, 1882, when Miss Augusta F. Daniels, the present librarian, assumed the duties of the office.

Since the foundation of the Eben Dale Sutton Reference Library, about twelve thousand dollars has been expended upon books, besides the books given to the library by Mrs. Sutton and others. Fine sets of the Greek and Latin Classics and other useful books are on the shelves; there are rare and beautiful collections of engravings and works on art, architecture and design, and standard works on literature, science and all subjects embraced within the objects of the library. The beautiful and artistic bindings of the books make their appearance exceedingly attractive; and the rich furnishings and the unusual character of the books make the room an object of interest to many visitors, while its quiet seclusion gives it great attractions for the student. The control of the library is in the hands of a sub-committee of the Lyceum and Library Committee of the Peabody Institute, whose management has been most judicious and efficient.

Grand Army of the Republic.—Before 1870 there was an association of veterans called the Army and Navy Union, organized with objects similar to those of the Grand Army.

Post 132, Grand Army of the Republic, was organized under charter from department of head-quarters, July 7, 1870, and the installation of officers took place in Masonic Hall, at the same date. The officers were:

Commander	R. S. Daniels.
Senior vice-commander	J. W. Stevens.
Junior vice-commander	Wm. F. Wiley.
Adjutant	E. C. Spofford.
Quarter-master	L. A. Manning.
Surgeon	F. G. Kittredge.
Chaplain	E. I. Galvin.
Officer of the day	R. B. Bancroft.
Officer of the guard	W. H. Hildreth.
Quarter-master's sergeant	Benj. Beckett, Jr.
Sergeant major	P. L. Winchester, Jr.

The Post was at first named for Gen. Grenville M. Dodge, a former resident of the town, who won an enviable record in the war, and rose to the rank of major-general. Its name was afterward changed to that of a former townsman, a young man who fell early in the war, and whose letters from the front were marked by more than usual ability—Mr. William H. Shove.

Owing to difficulties in the Post, a part of the members left it, and on November 19, 1872, the society known as the "Veteran Soldiers' and Sailors' Association" was formed for the declared object of "Charity and Brotherly Love." Citizens of the town contributed liberally to the fund of the Association, and many cases of necessity were relieved through its means. On April 19, 1875, this Association did escort duty for a company of citizens that went to Lexington to celebrate the one hundredth anniversary of the battle of Lexington. On July 3, 1876, the name of the Association was changed to the "Army and Navy Union." The last meeting of the Union was May 31, 1879.

Successful efforts were made to unite the organizations, and April 12, 1879, Union Post No. 50 was organized, with one hundred and forty-two charter members, and the following officers were chosen:

Commander	Cyrus T. Batchelder.
Senior vice-commander	Winsor M. Ward.
Junior vice-commander	Frank E. Farnham.
Chaplain	Volney M. Simons.
Surgeon	Charles C. Pike.
Quarter-master	Levi Preston.
Officer of the day	Alfred E. Johnson.
Officer of the guard	Benj. Beckett, Jr.
Adjutant	Wm. H. Hildreth.
Sergeant major	George O. Pierce.
Quarter-master's sergeant	Albert H. Whidden.

A large amount of money has been expended in charity from the Post fund, aided by liberal subscriptions from comrades. The organization is in a flourishing condition, and is so conducted as to sub-

serve the interests which it is the object of the Association to care for and protect. Although there are none to replace the comrades who fall out as death thins the ranks of this veteran organization, the Post still presents a fine body of soldierly men in its annual parade on Memorial day, and whenever the order is called on for public service.

The Women's Union Relief Corps (G. A. R.), was organized May 27, 1885.

OLD LADIES' HOME.—At a public meeting of the Ladies' Benevolent Society at Warren Hall, February 14, 1867, the following letter was read, addressed to Messrs. Henry Poor, Warren M. Jacobs and Elijah W. Upton.

"GENTLEMEN,—having noticed a suggestion made by a prominent member of the Ladies' Benevolent Association, that it would be expedient and proper to provide suitable homes or houses for elderly women of American parentage of this town who are in destitute circumstances, where they can be made comfortable and happy in their declining years, we, the undersigned, this day jointly agree to place in your hands, as trustees, the sum of $2000 as the commencement of a fund for the purpose above indicated, the said amount to be securely invested until enough is added to this fund by donation or otherwise, to accomplish this object.

"In the event of the death or resignation of either of the above named Trustees, the remaining Trustees may appoint his successor. We would suggest that the Trustees, together with the President, Vice-President and Treasurer for the time being, be constituted a board of managers to carry out the intentions of the donors, whose acts shall be subject to our approval.

"In making this gift we wish it to be understood as being the foundation of a benevolent enterprise, and we solicit the aid of those of our people who are blest with means, to unite with us in the furtherance of this object.

"Respectfully Yours,

"ELIZA SUTTON.
"MARY UPTON."

The trustees petitioned the General Court for an act of incorporation as "The Charitable Benevolent Association of the town of Peabody," which was granted April 27, 1869.

Initiatory steps were taken at a meeting held November 1, 1871, towards building a house for the purpose specified in the act, and a contract was awarded for two thousand dollars, for a house on Washington Street, above Oak Street. A levee was held at Pierpont Hall on December 31, 1861, at which there was realized for the purposes of the association the sum of $847.53, including a contribution from Elijah W. Upton.

In 1883 renewed interest was taken in the movement, and it was decided to reorganize the association on the basis of the original trust. An auxiliary society was formed, and earnest efforts were made to increase the funds; the house built for the Charitable Tenement Association was sold in 1875, and the proceeds, with other funds, were employed in purchasing the former residence of the late General William Sutton, with the intention of fitting it up at some future time as a Home for Aged Women. Until the resources of the society shall be sufficiently great to undertake the active support of such a home, the building is let by the society, and the income accumulated. It is hoped, at no very distant day, to open the home for the beneficiaries who will share in its protection and support.

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

GEN. GIDEON FOSTER.—Gideon Foster was born in the house which formerly stood on the corner of Lowell and Foster Streets, February 24, 1749. His father, Gideon Foster, was a native of Boxford; his mother, Lydia Goldthwait, of the middle precinct. He improved the opportunities of education furnished by the schools of the parish; he wrote a handsome hand, was a correct draughtsman and skilful surveyor. He was employed for several short periods in keeping school. He was a mechanic of more than common ingenuity; the machinery of his mills was of his own planning and construction.

On the breaking out of the Revolution, he marched to the scene of the battle of Lexington in command of a company of minute-men which had been drafted from Capt. Samuel Eppes' company of militia a few weeks before, - February 27. The company arrived in season to give the retreating British considerable trouble at West Cambridge. Captain Foster served as a captain in Col. Mansfield's regiment in the siege of Boston. At the battle of Bunker's Hill, Captain Foster's company was stationed at Brighton, then called little Cambridge. He was ordered by Gen. Ward to escort a load of ammunition to Charlestown. In carrying out this order he met the Americans when on their retreat. Their powder was consumed, and he supplied them with ammunition loose in casks. In his old age he revived the reminiscence thus:

"We took the ammunition in casks, and conveyed it in wagons, and delivered it freely with our *hands* and our *dippers*, to their *horns*, their *pockets*, their *hats*, and whatever they had that would hold it. I well remember the blackened appearance of those busy in this work,—not unlike those engaged in the delivery of coal on a hot summer's day. At the same time we were thus occupied, the enemy's *shot* were constantly whistling by; but we had no time to examine their character or dimensions. I have often thought what might have been our condition, had one of these *hot shot* unceremoniously come in contact with our wagons."

Another favorite reminiscence was of the time when Col. Mansfield's regiment was stationed on Prospect Hill, where Gen. Putnam was in command. The captains were called together, and a volunteer was called for to engage in a very arduous enterprise. When Foster found no one willing to offer his services, he presented himself and was accepted. Several soldiers were drawn from each company, and properly armed, they repaired to Gen. Putnam's quarters to receive instructions. After reviewing them, "Old Put" deprived them of their equipments, and furnishing them with axes sent them into a swamp, where they were engaged in cutting fascines and bringing them in on their backs. "The men expected to gain honor by their exposure to unknown dangers: but their greatest danger was from the attack of musquitoes, and their greatest exposure was to the mirth of their fellow soldiers."

Capt. Foster served throughout the war, and held an honorable place as a good soldier and brave officer. In 1792 he was promoted to the rank of colonel; in 1796 he was chosen brigadier-general; in 1801 he was elected major-general by the Legislature. In the War of 1812 he was chosen commander of a company of exempts, and assumed the duties of his command with the same enthusiasm that he showed in his early days, taking an active part in the movements of the militia on the two or three occasions when an alarm was spread. It is recalled that the old soldier's tactics and drill orders were somewhat antiquated, and the order "shoulder firelocks" spoken from early habit, furnished amusement to himself as well as to his little command; but he never lost his military ardor, and as was said by Hon. Daniel P. King in his eulogy,—

"To the last, the sound of the drum and trumpet was music to his ear; indeed for almost a whole century, there has been no day when the sword of the old soldier would not have been drawn and a vigorous blow struck for the defence of his country's rights; nurtured in that school of patriotism which taught that opposition to tyrants is obedience to God, and which inculcated love of country next to love of heaven, his strong indignation was roused by any wrong done her or danger threatened. Liberty and love of country were his early and abiding passions. His country's free institutions, good order, good laws and good rulers were the objects of his strongest affections; he not only loved them but he did what he was able, according to his judgment and understanding, to maintain and perpetuate them. No distance of place, no severity of the weather, no bodily infirmity, from the adoption of the constitution till the day of his death, more than sixty years, detained him from depositing his ballot for State Officers."

For the last thirty years of his life it was his ambition readily indulged by his fellow-citizens, to be the first to vote in all important elections. So unerring was his judgment, that he never failed to be the file leader of the majority, nor wavered from the genuine Whig principles of '76. In his time as Mr. Proctor observes, there was no doubt where Danvers would be found.

For more than seventy years, he was one of the most active and influential citizens of the town. He was called upon to hold all the important offices in the gift of his townsmen; he was nine times a Representative to the General Court, in 1796 and from 1799 to 1806. He served as town clerk from 1791 to 1794. He was deeply interested in the schools of the town, and in 1794 was one of those who proposed the division into school districts. He was also interested in the Fire Department of the town, and one of the early fire-engines was named for him.

Gen. Foster developed the water power of Goldthwait's Brook. In ancient times, the whole region in the vicinity of what is now Foster Street was marshy land. He acquired the ownership of a large tract of land in this region, and about 1817 built a dam which can still be seen, from which he conducted a part of the water through a canal along the edge of the upland to the north of the low ground. He had a bark-mill at the upper dam, and a mill used as a grist-mill at the end of the canal, and he also had a mill for the manufacture of chocolate. The water-works thus constructed by him furnished water for manufacturing purposes to those located on the lower land along the course of the canal. Foster's lane, near Foster Street, led to these mills and manufactories, and was extended to the old Boston road.

General Foster was an enterprising and successful manufacturer, and his improvements increased the value of the land owned by him, and enabled him to sell it at fair prices; but he twice suffered loss by fire, and on October 23, 1823, his mills were totally consumed. He never fully recovered from this loss, and in 1828 he sold his mill property. He continued to assert the same spirit of independence which always supported him. He had a small pension, quite inadequate to his needs, and up to a short time before his death he cultivated with his own hands his little farm, guiding the plow over his scanty acres till more than ninety-five years had bowed his venerable form, content so long as he was self-supporting.

He was a sincere and devout Christian. He joined the Unitarian movement, and was to the time of his death an officer of that church, constant in attendance and faithful in his duties, and himself harnessing his horse in his later years to go from his farm to divine service.

His private virtues, no less than his distinguished services to his country, endeared him to his townsmen, and his death, which occurred November 1, 1845, at the age of nearly ninety-seven years, was sincerely mourned. On the third of November a funeral oration was pronounced in the Unitarian Church by Hon. Daniel P. King, and he was buried with military and civic honors, suited to the brave soldier and the faithful citizen. The following order of procession has been preserved, and may be of interest from its local references:

ESCORT,

Consisting of the Salem Artillery, the Danvers Light Infantry, the Salem Light Infantry and the Lynn Rifle Corps (the latter bearing a banner presented by the bands of Gen. Foster to the company in 1836. This banner was shrouded in crape. The escort was a detachment from Gen. Sutton's brigade, and was under the immediate command of Col. Andrews).

Hearse, flanked by a military guard.

Family of the deceased in Carriages.

Brig.-Gen. Sutton and staff, and Military Officers in uniform in Carriages.

Committee of Arrangements.

Officiating and other Clergy.

Civil Officers of the town.

Danvers Mechanic Institute.

Fire Department.

"Gen. Foster" Engine Co., No. 7, in dark dress with badges.

"Volunteer Engine Co., No. 8, with badges and in firemen's uniform.

Citizens of the neighboring towns.

Citizens of Danvers.

General Foster was buried in Harmony Grove Cemetery, in a lot given by General Sutton, near the Peabody entrance on Grove Street.

A fine portrait of General Foster hangs in the trustees' room at the Peabody Institute. It was painted by Osgood, of Salem, and is the gift of Elijah W. Upton.

Dr. Andrew Nichols.—Andrew Nichols, the son of Andrew and Eunice Nichols, was born in the North Parish of Danvers November 22, 1785. He worked on his father's farm till he was eighteen years old, gaining his education from the common schools of the town. He took a course of study at the academy in Andover, and in April, 1805, he began the study of medicine with Dr. Manning in Billerica, going with him to Cambridge and Harvard. In July, 1807, he became a student with Dr. Waterhouse, of Cambridge; and a year later, in July, 1808, he began the practice of medicine in South Danvers.

He soon attained a leading position as a practicing physician, and his energetic disposition and sincere public spirit brought him into prominence in town affairs.

He was a progressive and original thinker, a man of vigorous mental fibre. He was an enthusiastic votary of natural science, a fearless advocate of temperance reform, and an early adherent of the anti-slavery movement. He undertook many offices of public trust in the town, and was particularly interested in educational matters. With all the requirements of his profession, he found time not only for the pursuit of scientific knowledge, but for the study of local history and antiquities, for active engagement in temperance and other reform movements, and the faithful performance of duties assumed by him in town affairs, especially in the conduct of the schools.

In his relations with others, whether in the practice of his profession or the participation in the social life of the town, he was marked by noble personal qualities, by unblemished purity of character and a high sense of honor, sincere religious convictions, and a broad and kindly sympathy for all who needed it. His life in South Danvers covered the period of its development from a quiet village to a manufacturing community; he was the literary friend and companion of Fitch Poole and of Rufus Choate, and a prominent figure in the intellectual life of the town at the time when the standard of thought was high in New England towns—the era of plain living and high thinking, before the lecture system had degenerated into elocutionary athletics, and while the foremost thinkers of the country spoke directly to the people.

He was a student of literature, and was the author of several poems and addresses. In 1811, he delivered a Masonic address in Danvers. He was deeply interested in Freemasonry; he was the first master of Jordan Lodge of Free Masons in Danvers instituted in 1808, and in 1831 he wrote and published a poem entitled "The Spirit of Freemasonry." In 1819 he delivered an address in Danvers entitled "Temperance and Morality," in which he took advanced ground. In 1836 he delivered the annual address before the Massachusetts Medical Society, of which he was a member from 1811 to 1846, and a councillor. The subject of the address was "Irritation of the Nerves." At the Centennial Celebration of the town of Danvers, in 1852, he delivered a historical poem, entitled "Danvers," which shows his intimate acquaintance with old-time customs and traditions.

He was an enthusiastic student of the growing science of geology, and a learned and skillful botanist, and spent much time from a leisure by no means extended in exploring the woods and fields of his native town and county, in search of geological specimens and rare flowers and plants; taking an especial interest in native wild flowers. Although his farming experience was confined to his early years, his interest in agricultural matters and his knowledge of the subject was so great that he was a member and at one time the treasurer of the Essex Agricultural Society. He was the orator of the society at Topsfield, October 5, 1820.

In 1833 the Essex County Natural History Society, afterward merged in the Essex Institute, was formed; a project in which Dr. Nichols took great interest, from his enthusiastic devotion to all branches of scientific research. He presided at the meeting of organization, December 16, 1833, and was elected the first president of the society, a position which he held till 1845, remaining a member till his death. He was also, for many years, the president of the Essex South District Medical Society.

Dr. Nichols died at his residence in South Danvers, in the house which now stands back of the building of the Essex Club, on Main Street, near the square, on the 30th of March, 1853. A funeral discourse was delivered by Rev. F. P. Appleton, at the Unitarian Church, where he attended worship, on April 3, 1853, and his death was formally noticed by the societies and organizations in which he had taken so active a part; an obituary sketch was prepared by Dr. Samuel A. Lord, and published in the proceedings of the Massachusetts Medical Society; but no adequate memorial of his life has been compiled.

A striking portrait of Dr. Nichols hangs in the rooms of the Essex Institute in Salem, painted by his niece, Mrs. Berry, of Danvers. It conveys a strong impression of the vigor and individuality of the man, and gives token of a character which might well have left a lasting impression even on a larger and more cultured community than his native town that he loved so well.

Hon. Daniel P. King was born January 8, 1801, in the South Parish of the old town of Danvers, which afterwards became the town of Peabody. His parents, Daniel and Phœbe (Upton) King, came of families long settled in that vicinity. William King, the ancestor of the King family, was one of the original settlers, having received a grant of land in 1636, and from that day to the present the King family has maintained its ownership of land in the vicinity, and in every generation its representatives have held an honorable place among their townsmen for those qualities of industry, intelligence and sturdy independ-



Daniel P. King

ence of character which mark the descendants of so many of the pioneers in the Puritan settlement of New England. For reasons remarked in the historical sketch of the town, the policy of those who undertook the direction of the settlement of this region had for its result the growth of a community marked by the superior character of its individual members. Though they chose the agricultural life, and their lot was cast amid the simplest of social customs and methods of living, they not only maintained among themselves an unusual degree of intellectual development, but by wise forethought in educational affairs and careful home-training these same qualities, along with the loyalty to their native soil, which was an early characteristic, have been perpetuated to the present time. By intermarriage, Mr. King numbered among his ancestors not only those families whose names were borne by his father and mother, but he was allied with the Pages, the Putnams, the Townes, the Nurses, the Jacobses and Flints, and others of those who have dwelt in that region since the earliest settlement. As Mr. Upham remarks, in his memoir to Mr. King, he may be considered as a specimen of the manhood developed by the influences long operating in this locality upon the generations which have occupied it.

His family had from the first held a respectable position as farmers, and in later times had been enriched by extensive trading, so that the father of the subject of this sketch was possessed of means large for that time, and Daniel P. King was enabled to enjoy the advantages of a thorough academic education. His early training in the district school was continued at Saco in Maine, and at Phillips' Academy in Andover, where his preparation for college was completed. He took his degrees at Harvard University, graduating in the class of 1823. As a boy he showed the same traits which marked his mature life. His exactness of mind, clearness of memory for personal and historic details, quiet and courteous bearing, and respectful observance of the wholesome regulations of school life, attracted attention even from his schoolmates, who never failed to be won by the charm of his thoughtful and warm-hearted personality. His college life illustrates the peculiarity of his character, that he cared little for rivalry with his classmates, and had small ambition to attain eminent distinction as a scholar. He quietly pursued his college course, acquiring by careful study a knowledge more practical than showy, and enriching his mind with a culture which enabled him to make the fullest use of his natural powers, and which gave him a mental grip and vigor that never failed of honorable attainment in the responsibilities which his singularly successful public life brought to him. Though known to be a young man of ample means, his taste and judgment avoided luxury and display, and made him rather a representative of the plain farming community from which he sprung. Notwithstanding his quiet and unassuming manner of life, the respectful good will of his classmates toward him was shown by his election as marshal at the commencement exercises.

After graduation, he began the study of the law, but did not develop a taste for that profession, though his qualities and attainments would undoubtedly have insured success as a lawyer. The agricultural life had the greatest attractions for him, and after his marriage, in 1824, to Miss Sarah P. Flint, he took up his residence on the excellent and beautifully situated farm near his home, left by her father, Hezekiah Flint, which had been in the possession of the Flint family for two centuries, and became a practical and successful farmer, employing his leisure time in reading the masters of English literature, not neglecting the pursuit of classical studies, which he greatly enjoyed. It was a life not common then, and still more uncommon now in this country; but he was not a man who could easily be spared from public duties, and it was not long before his townsmen learned to intrust their most important interests to his charge. It is to be remarked of this period of his life, which was surely the happiest, that while there was nothing of the speculator or money seeker about his ways, he had a shrewdness and conservatism which saved him from the extravagant mistakes of most gentlemen farmers, and gave him a well-earned reputation among his neighbor husbandmen.

In 1835 he was elected a representative of his native town in the State Legislature. He had been put forward several years before, but failed of his election by one vote. He did not take this much to heart, but observed in his quiet way that he owed his fortunate escape to having himself voted for the successful candidate; and he claimed thereby the right to share in the satisfaction and congratulations of the winning party.

In 1836, he was selected by his townsmen to deliver the address at the laying of the corner-stone of the monument erected in honor of those who fell at the battle of Lexington; a duty which he performed with the same careful historical research and happy facility of speech which marked his later efforts. He afterward, in 1845, delivered a eulogy on General Foster, the hero of that fight.

While a member of the House of Representatives, he rendered a great service to the cause of education by introducing and carrying into effect an order instructing the Committee on Education to consider the expediency of providing by law for the better education of teachers of the public schools. This movement, followed up and enforced by able coworkers, led to the establishment of the Board of Education, and of the several Normal Schools in the commonwealth.

Mr. King's chief efforts as a State legislator were in aid of the agricultural interest, which was through life an object dear to him. He was impressed with the opinion that there was great need of more scien-

tific teaching and application in agriculture, and he lost no opportunity of aiding plans for meeting this need. He brought forward a proposition, since carried into effect, of establishing a college for this department of instruction, and for providing a professorship of the same in Harvard College. While in Congress in 1848, he resisted successfully an attempt to reduce the number of copies printed of the Annual Agricultural Report prepared by the Commissioner of Patents.

He served two years in the House, and was then returned as a Senator from Essex County. He continued in the Senate four years, during the last two of which he was President of that body, and won the highest opinions by his performance of the duties of the office.

In 1842 he was again elected to the House, and after an exciting contest for Speaker, Mr. King, though not at first a candidate, was elected by a majority of one vote. His known devotion to advanced views in opposition to slavery was the means of attracting votes which could not be commanded by the other Whig candidate. This success gave him a commanding position in the Commonwealth, and was not the only occasion on which, though an undeviating Whig, he received support outside of party lines. He began to be called the "man of luck," and his good fortune, which was in reality the result of a trust in his ability and uprightness going beyond party lines, followed him all his life through.

After seven years' service in the legislature, he was elected a representative to Congress in 1843. There had been two unsuccessful attempts to elect a congressman from the district of which Danvers was a part. At that time, a majority of the votes was necessary to elect, and after the two contests the Whig candidate withdrew, and Mr. King took his place. At the next special election, the Democratic plurality was greatly reduced, and the Democratic candidate, a man distinguished in his party, withdrew rather than meet the defeat which he foresaw. In the fourth trial, Mr. King received a majority of eighty-two votes, and he held the district by secure majorities to the end of his life.

He early took a part in the important and exciting debates of the period. Within a few days after he took his seat, he presented the resolves of the Legislature of Massachusetts against the annexation of Texas, and shortly afterward he took part in a warm debate in behalf of slaves and free negroes in the District of Columbia.

He was one of the foremost champions of the anti-slavery cause, and was ever fearless in his efforts and speech. While he was yet a new member, in January, 1844, a southern member interrupted him while he was presenting, as the voice of Massachusetts freemen, certain resolves of the Legislature of Massachusetts, relating to slavery, to ask whether the petitions had not been signed and prepared by a runaway slave from Virginia. Mr. King replied, that "he presumed the petition was signed by freemen only, for in Massachusetts they had no slaves, but every man, created in the image of his Maker,"—at this point the whole of the angry violence of the friends of slavery was exerted to intimidate and suppress him; but raising his voice to the full power and height for which it was remarkable, he continued in tones distinctly heard above the uproar "owes allegiance to Him alone."

So great was the impression of personal power then exhibited, that although he was declared out of order by the Speaker, he was allowed to continue his speech, and no attempt was ever again made to overawe or silence him. The incident made a deep impression in his favor not only among the friends of liberty, but with all who admired courage and address. From that day he was marked as a leader.

In 1844 he introduced and carried an amendment prohibiting spirit rations in the navy, and also used his influence toward the completion of coast improvements at Rockport, Mass. He was placed upon important committees of the House, and was successful in urging reforms, and in securing support for enterprises of education and public improvements. He was an earnest supporter of the continuance of the fishing bounties, and a sincere friend of the hardy and patriotic fishermen of his native state; and on more than one occasion his voice and influence were successful in securing relief for wronged or disabled fishermen and seamen, and for the necessities of the Naval Hospital. He was deeply interested in the application of the Smithsonian Fund, and urged the claims of agriculture to its assistance. He attempted to obtain from Congress provision for the erection of a monument to General Warren, and he reported a bill to erect a monument to General Herkimer.

The Mexican War met with his persistent and uncompromising opposition. He lost no opportunity to vote against it from first to last. On the passage of the bill to raise volunteer and other troops for the war, there were one hundred and fifty-nine yeas to four nays, two of which were those of John Quincy Adams and Daniel P. King. His opposition to the war endeared him to the Society of Friends, and on two occasions he presented to Congress the memorials of the society against the war, and succeeded in obtaining recognition for them; and in the second instance, in 1848, he obtained, in the face of vigorous opposition, not only a proper reference of the memorial, but a vote to print it. In a speech delivered on the 4th of February, 1847, he declared that he wished his epitaph might say of him,—"A Lover of Peace, of Liberty, of his Country—he voted against the Mexican War." His objection to the Mexican War did not prevent him from being a sincere friend to the patriotic soldier, and in 1850 he made an earnest effort to extend and complete the provisions of law in favor of the veterans of 1812.

He held for a long time the chairmanship of the Committee on Accounts, and distinguished himself by instituting reforms in contingent expenses. On one occasion a member of the opposing party was appointed by Mr. Winthrop, then Speaker of the House, to the chairmanship of that committee, but declined it in favor of the pre-eminent qualifications of Mr. King for the place. In 1849, under a Democratic Speaker, he still retained this chairmanship. He also served as chairman and member of other important committees, and was frequently entrusted with the duty of making up their reports, and conducting the management of them in the House, in which he was remarkably successful.

While in Congress Mr. King confined himself mostly to incidental debates and to discussions arising from hour to hour. But on the few occasions when he essayed a more elaborate effort, he displayed marked powers as a speaker, and was fluent in style and thought, and always impressive from the unmistakable sincerity and profoundness of his convictions. His success as a public speaker, and indeed as a public man, rested not so much upon any exterior or apparent qualifications as upon the native vigor of mind and force of personal character, which never failed to exert a powerful influence over those with whom he came in contact, and to command attention and respect even from his strongest political opponents.

During his last years in Congress he fearlessly espoused the cause of liberty, and his name was known throughout the country, not merely for his opinions, but for his readiness in argument and his skill and success in debate. In his last elaborate speech, in May, 1850, he reaffirmed the principles to which he had always been so consistent, and eloquently announced his unalterable determination to oppose the spread of slavery.

Such was his devotion to his public duties that he would suffer no private interest to interfere with his presence at important junctures. On one occasion, as related by his colleague, the Hon. John G. Palfrey, he received news of the severe illness of a beloved daughter. At the time the debate upon an important measure of public policy was drawing to a close, and he refused to leave his post until the final vote on the question was taken. He then set out at once, but arrived at his home too late to see his child alive. Such heroic devotion to duty in one so affectionate and warm-hearted ranks with the noblest examples of history.

His religious life and character were sincere and earnest. He attended the Unitarian Church in the South Parish of Danvers, and was most faithful in his duties there. While the presiding officer of the Senate of Massachusetts he confided to an intimate friend that he never left his lodgings to take his place in the State-House without first invoking in prayer guidance from above. He carried his religious principles into the smallest details of life, and was always ready for occasions to do good, either by the thoughtful and liberal bestowal of charity, or by kindly interest and advice. In paying tribute to his character upon the occasion of the formal announcement of his death in the House of Representatives, Mr. Joseph R. Chandler, of Philadelphia, summed up a most feeling and appreciative speech by saying, "If I were called upon to present, from public life, the true exemplification of the Christian gentleman, I know of no character that would more beautifully illustrate the idea, and supply the model, than that of Daniel P. King."

On the 10th of July, 1850, he left Washington to attend to some business requiring his presence at home. He had previously been somewhat unwell, though his indisposition had not been considered dangerous. He seemed, for a few days, to improve with the rest from public duties; but very soon the disease took on a more serious form, and he died on the 25th of July. His return and illness had hardly become known beyond the immediate neighborhood, and the announcement of his death brought a shock deeply felt throughout the whole country.

His health had generally been good, and his well known simplicity of living apparently had its effect in a still youthful freshness of complexion and appearance. But it is probable that his long residence away from his beloved farm, and the pressure of irregular hours and responsible duties, had slowly undermined his powers of resistance to illness, and when he at last broke down, the end came quickly.

In Congress, and by the press and individuals throughout the land, the most sincere tributes were paid to his memory; and nowhere more deeply than in his native town and among his own kindred and neighbors, was his loss felt and grieved for, and his character appreciated and lauded. He was in the truest sense a representative of the best element of New England; stainless in private character, unassuming in life and manners, clear and vigorous in intellect and while not seeking advancement, not shrinking from any responsibility which came as his duty; inflexible in principles and fearless in their utterance, yet never desirous of useless quarrels; having "*malice toward none* and *charity for all.*" His character gathered weight with years, until he wielded an influence which seemed inexplicable to those who looked at the surface and saw only the plain, quiet and unobtrusive man, not marked by striking qualities of appearance or address, and hardly suggesting in his kindly and genial face that intellectual and moral vigor and energy which always rose to the full height of the occasion. Without laying claim to the title of a great man, he filled every position to which his remarkable fortune called him, nobly and with effective results.

Beside his political honors, he was for many years a trustee of the Massachusetts Lunatic Asylum, a member of the Essex Historical Society, of the Es-

sex Natural History Society and of the New England Historico-Genealogical Society. He was a member and trustee of the Massachusetts Society for promoting agriculture, and an officer of the Essex Agricultural Society.

His political life seemed to be in its very prime of successful vigor when he left Washington never to return. Mr. Upham, to whose very interesting and valuable memoir the writer of this brief outline is chiefly indebted for his materials, believed that if Mr. King had lived he would have been within no long time Governor of Massachusetts. Certain it is, that in the stormy times which followed, his voice and his influence would ever have been found on the side of liberty, union and equal rights for all.

GEORGE PEABODY, the son of Thomas and Judith Peabody, was born February 18, 1795, in a house still standing in Peabody, on the northerly side of Washington Street, the old Boston road. The Peabody family is one of historic distinction, both in England and in this country. George Peabody was a descendant of Lieut. Francis Pabody, who emigrated from St. Albans, Hertfordshire, England, in 1635, and settled in Topsfield, then a part of Salem Village, in 1667, where he died in 1698. The name of Peabody is found in the early annals of the province, and several of the name served honorably in the various wars in which the mother country enlisted the services of her colonists; and in the Revolution from Bunker's Hill and the siege of Boston, to the end of that triumphant struggle, the name is borne upon the roll of honor of those who faithfully served their country.

The branch of the family to which George Peabody belonged, was but poorly endowed with worldly goods at the time of his birth. He gained his early education in the district school of the town, and when but twelve years of age he went to work in the grocery store of Captain Sylvester Proctor, in 1807. Captain Proctor's store stood for many years in the place now occupied by Mr. Grosvenor's apothecary store. It was a small building, the upper part being used as a residence; and in the attic George had his room while he worked with Captain Proctor. His treatment here was kind, and Mr. Peabody always retained a warm feeling for Captain Proctor, and when in 1852 he gave the beginning of the fund which was to found a public library in his native town, he requested that the venerable Captain Proctor should be selected to lay the corner stone of the edifice. Unfortunately, the old gentleman did not live to perform that ceremony, to which he had looked forward with the deepest interest.

Mr. Peabody is said to have told the story that the first dollar he ever earned was while he was yet a school-boy, for tending a little booth for the sale of apples and other delicacies at some celebration. He stuck to his post, in spite of the fascinations of the country sports about him, and was rewarded for his faithfulness with a dollar, which he said gave him more pleasure than any transaction in all the great and successful financial operations of his later days.

After remaining with his first employer about three years, he went to Thetford, Vt., where he lived for a year with his maternal grandfather, Jeremiah Dodge, a farmer. In 1811 he became a clerk in the store of his brother David, in Newburyport. It is recalled that his superior penmanship, a characteristic which he preserved throughout his life, caused him to be selected, while in Newburyport, to write ballots for the Federal party, for which he received payment outside of his scanty wages as clerk.

He had not been long in Newburyport, when a disastrous fire, which he himself is said to have been the first to discover, caused great injury to that town, and so affected his brother's business that he was again thrown upon his own resources.

Although but sixteen years of age, he was gifted with a manly and vigorous frame, a handsome face and figure, and a prepossessing manner and address, which with his previous experience, enabled him successfully to venture in business by himself. He obtained from Mr. Prescott Spaulding, of Newburyport, letters which enabled him to purchase on credit from James Reed, of Boston, two thousand dollars worth of goods, which he disposed of to advantage. He always spoke with gratitude of Mr. Spaulding and Mr. Reed, and ascribed to their kindly assistance his first success in commercial life.

In 1812 he accompanied his uncle, Gen. John Peabody, to Georgetown, D. C., where the two engaged in business together for two years. After his establishment in business here, the first consignment made to him was by Francis Todd, of Newburyport. He entertained a warm regard for that town, though he had lived there so short a time; and in after years he made a donation to the public library of the town.

He manifested unusual ability as commercial assistant in his uncle's business. His unfailing courtesy and affability won him many friends. It was said of him in after life that he would be "a popular man if he was not worth a dollar;" and that quality was no small factor in his success. Even in the height of his commercial importance he was remarkably unassuming in dress and deportment; he was scrupulously exact and punctual in the discharge of his obligations, whether business or personal; and his success was no more than the natural result of a life singularly well-planned to effect financial success.

He was a good writer and speaker, and some of his speeches and letters are remarkable for a simple and natural eloquence of style and expression. His conversational powers were of a high order.

He never married, and when living in London he never had a house of his own, but lived in lodgings; and his personal expenses were never, even in his

latter days, large, for he cared little for luxuries, and his tastes were simple. At the sumptuous dinners which he often gave, he was wont to fare simply from some common dish, though he was particular about the appointments of his table, and prided himself on its excellence. Fruit was almost his only table luxury. Until his failing strength made it a necessity, he kept no valet.

He had a very retentive memory, particularly in regard to names and places, and would give the most minute particulars of events that had occurred many years before.

He was very fond of singing, Scottish songs being his favorites.

In 1814, when only nineteen years of age, he entered into partnership, in the wholesale dry goods business, with Mr. Elisha Riggs, in Georgetown; Mr. Riggs furnishing the capital, and Mr. Peabody conducting the business as active partner.

During the War. of 1812, although under age, he joined a volunteer company of artillery, and did military duty at Fort Warburton, which commanded the river approach to Washington. For this service, together with a previous short service at Newburyport, he long afterward received one of the grants of land bestowed by Congress upon the soldiers of that time.

The war over, he entered heartily into the development of his business, and frequently took long journeys alone on horseback to extend the sales of the house. In 1815 the house removed to Baltimore, and in 1822 branch houses were established in New York and Philadelphia.

The business proved very successful, owing chiefly to the talent and industry of Mr. Peabody; and when by the retirement of Mr. Elisha Riggs, in 1830, Mr. Peabody became the senior partner of the firm, the house of Peabody, Riggs & Company, took rank with the leading concerns of the country. In the course of his business he made several visits to Europe, going to London first in 1827.

In 1837, having withdrawn from the firm of Peabody, Riggs & Company, he began business with others as a merchant and money broker, by the style of "George Peabody & Co., of Warnford Court, City." The firm held deposits for customers, discounted bills, negotiated loans and bought or sold stocks. He was remarkably successful in his operations, and soon began to accumulate the foundation of the large fortune which he eventually attained.

He never forgot his American citizenship, but was known throughout his life as the upholder of the credit of American securities; his assistance availed to carry the finances of his adopted State, Maryland, safely over a critical period, and at a time when faith in American securities was depressed in London, his far-sighted and patriotic action helped greatly to re-establish confidence and credit. Speaking at Baltimore, in November, 1866, he said, "Fellow-citizens, the Union of the States of America was one of the earliest objects of my childhood's reverence. For the independence of our country, my father bore arms in some of the darkest days of the Revolution; and from him and from his example, I learned to love and honor that Union. Later in life, I learned more fully its inestimable worth; perhaps more fully than most have done, for, born and educated at the North, then living nearly twenty years at the South, and thus learning, in the best school, the character and life of her people; finally, in the course of a long residence abroad, being thrown in intimate contact with individuals of every section of our glorious land, I came, as do most Americans who live long in foreign lands, to love our country as a whole; to know and take pride in all her sons, as equally countrymen; to know no North, no South, no East, no West. And so I wish publicly to avow, that, during the terrible contest through which the nation has passed, my sympathies were still and always will be with the Union; that my uniform course tended to assist, but never to injure, the credit of the government of the Union; and, at the close of the war, three-fourths of all the property I possessed had been invested in United States Government and State securities, and remains so at this time." During the war he gave liberally to various sanitary fairs.

At the time of the Great Exhibition of 1851, in the absence of appropriations by Congress, the American exhibitors at the Crystal Palace found themselves in serious difficulty for lack of funds to fit up the American department, and for a time the exhibitors were disheartened. At this critical moment, Mr. Peabody did what Congress should have done, and by the advance of a large sum enabled his countrymen to take their proper place in the Exhibition. It was an act which earned the gratitude of all Americans. In the same year he gave his first great Fourth of July feast, at Willis's Rooms, to American citizens and the best society of London, headed by the Duke of Wellington. Mr. Peabody, after this, extended his hospitality to a larger extent than ever before; he invited to dinner every person who brought a letter of credit on his house; and celebrated every Fourth of July by a dinner to the Americans in London, inviting some distinguished English friends to meet them.

Mr. Peabody had now accomplished the object of his life, so far as concerned the acquisition of a large fortune. He had always been liberal in giving to worthy objects; in 1836, when the Lexington Monument in Danvers was erected, he contributed the balance of several hundred dollars necessary to complete the work. When the South Church in Danvers was destroyed by fire, he made a liberal contribution toward rebuilding it; and the spirit which he afterward showed had already been manifest in smaller things.

But about this time he seems to have conceived the idea of giving his great wealth in such a way that he

might direct the application of it while he yet lived. In 1852, he made the gift to the town of Danvers, of which an account has been given elsewhere, of $20,000, which was increased before his death to $200,000.

The same year, he provided the means of fitting out the "Advance," Dr. Kane's ship, for the Arctic voyage in search of Sir John Franklin.

In 1857, he made his first donation to the Peabody Institute in Baltimore, to which he gave in all upwards of $1,000,000.

In 1856, Mr. Peabody visited this country. He was tendered a public reception by a committee of distinguished Americans but declined all public receptions except in his native town.

On the 9th of October, 1856, a reception and dinner was given to Mr. Peabody by the people of Danvers. The children of the schools made up a procession brilliant with emblematic costumes and banners; elaborate decorations were placed upon public and private buildings, and across the streets arches of welcome were placed. A distinguished gathering of invited guests met in the Peabody Institute, and among the speakers were Gov. Gardner, Edward Everett, President Walker, Prof. C. C. Felton and other eminent men. A full account of this reception, including a sketch of the Peabody Institute to that time, was published by the town.

Mr. Peabody did not long remain in this country at this visit.

In 1859 he set about carrying out a long cherished purpose of establishing homes for the deserving poor of London; for this purpose, he gave in all, including a bequest in his will, £500,000. This great charity has been admirably managed by the trustees, and the value of the property nearly or quite doubled, by the investment of income. Over twenty thousand persons are accommodated in the tenements comprised in this charity, the average rent of each of the five thousand separate dwellings being 4*s.* 9½*d.* per week. The tenants are not paupers, but artisans and laboring men and women of a great variety of occupations. There are eighteen different locations where blocks of buildings have been erected under the trust.

In 1866 Mr. Peabody again returned to this country, and set about the arrangement of a series of gifts to charities and institutions of learning which was without a parallel, and which doubtless formed the inspiration for later gifts by wealthy men during their lifetime.

He first turned his attention to his native town of South Danvers, and by a gift of one hundred thousand dollars, placed the institute there on a substantial foundation. He gave fifty thousand dollars to the Peabody Institute in Danvers in September, 1866. About the same time, he established libraries on a smaller scale at Thetford, Vermont, and at Georgetown, Mass., the residence of his mother.

In October, 1866, he made a donation of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars to Yale College to found a museum of natural history; and the same month he gave one hundred and fifty thousand dollars to found a museum of American archæology and ethnology in connection with Harvard University.

In January, 1867, he gave twenty thousand dollars to the Massachusetts Historical Society; and during the next month he gave one hundred and forty thousand dollars to found the Peabody Academy of Science in connection with the Essex Institute in Salem. At about the same time he gave twenty-five thousand dollars to Kenyon College, of which his friend, Bishop Mellvaine, was then president. In 1867, too, he gave fifteen thousand dollars to Newburyport, for the public library. He gave to Phillips Academy, at Andover, Mass., the sum of twenty-five thousand dollars.

During this visit he began the erection of a memorial church in the name of his sister, Mrs. J. P. Russell, and himself, to the memory of his mother, in Georgetown, at a cost of one hundred thousand dollars. It was dedicated in 1868, and John G. Whittier wrote a poem for the occasion.

The greatest of his American charities, the Southern Education Fund, was begun by him during this visit to America; by the gift to a board of trustees of one million dollars in available funds, and one million dollars in bonds of the State of Mississippi, which it was hoped the nature of the gift might impel that State to redeem, as it had been decided she was legally bound to do. But this hope has never yet been realized; and on his last visit, in 1869, Mr. Peabody added one million to the cash capital of the fund, making the whole gift three million dollars.

His health had already begun to fail before his last visit, in 1869. He was very desirous to meet once more the various boards which had in charge his princely charities, and particularly the trustees of the Southern Education Fund; and he accomplished that object.

The last visit of a public nature which Mr. Peabody made to his native town was in the summer of 1869, when he invited a number of personal friends, and several of the trustees of his various charities, to meet him at the Peabody Institute. Among the guests were Charles Sumner, Robert C. Winthrop, Ex-governor Clifford, and Oliver Wendell Holmes. Brief remarks were made by several of the guests, and Mr. Holmes read a short poem.

A remark of Mr. Peabody's, spoken at the reunion, is characteristic of his life and its objects. "It is sometimes hard for one who has devoted the best part of his life to the accumulation of money, to spend it for others; but practise it, and keep on practising it, and I assure you it comes to be a pleasure."

His last appearance in public was during the great Peace Jubilee, 1869, when he made a speech. He sought rest and renewed health at White Sulphur Springs, in Virginia, but without success, and re-

turned to London in the hope that the change of air to his accustomed haunts might be of benefit to him. But he did not rally as he hoped, and, growing rapidly worse, he died November 4, 1869.

The highest honors were paid him, both in England and in his native country. A funeral service was performed over his coffin in Westminster Abbey, and the Bishop of London preached a funeral sermon in the Abbey on the Sunday following. The British war-ship "Monarch," one of the finest ironclads in the British navy, was ordered by her Majesty's government to convey the remains of the philanthropist to his native land, and it was convoyed by an American war-ship, and also a French vessel detailed by the Emperor for that service. One of the royal princes, Prince Arthur, accompanied the expedition, and attended the funeral exercises in this country as the representative of his mother, the Queen.

The funeral fleet brought the body to Portland, Me., where it lay in state; thence it was brought to his native town, then called by his own name, where, after lying in state in the building which he had given, it was buried in the family lot which he had selected in Harmony Grove Cemetery. The funeral exercises were held in the Old South Church, on the site where in a former edifice he had attended divine service as a boy. The whole town was in mourning; great crowds of strangers filled the streets; the funeral oration was eloquently and fittingly pronounced by Robert C. Winthrop; and amid a wild snow-storm, which sprang up during the ceremonies, the solemn procession wound its slow way to the burial-place.

The following is a list, not wholly complete, but giving most of his larger contributions to charity, education and progress:

To the State of Maryland, money due him for negotiating State loan of $8,000,0 0	$60,000
To the Peabody Institute, Baltimore, including accrued interest	1,500,000
To the Southern Education Fund	3,000,000
To Yale College	150,000
To Harvard College	150,000
To the Peabody Academy of Science, Salem	140,000
To Phillips Academy, Andover	25,000
To the Peabody Institute, Peabody	200,000
To the Peabody High School, Peabody	2,000
To the Peabody Institute, Danvers	50,000
To the Massachusetts Historical Society	20,000
To Kenyon College, Ohio	25,000
To Newburyport for the Public Library	15,000
To the Memorial Church in Georgetown, Mass	100,000
To the library in Georgetown	5,000
To the library in Thetford, Vermont	5,500
To Kane's Arctic expedition	10,000
To different sanitary fairs	10,000
To unpaid moneys advanced to uphold the credit of States	40,000
To homes for the poor in London	2,500,000
Total	$8,007,500

Besides these, Mr. Peabody made a large number of donations for various public purposes in sums ranging up to one thousand dollars, and extending back as far as 1835.

His great charitable gifts brought world-wide recognition during his life-time. The Queen, on his refusal of a baronetcy, sent him an autograph letter, which he had indicated as a gift which would be specially valued by him, and accompanied it by a miniature portrait of herself in enamel on gold, by Tilb, which is deposited at the Peabody Institute, Peabody, as a recognition of his munificent gift to the poor of London. In 1866 Congress ordered that a gold medal valued at five thousand dollars be given him for his great gift to the South. The city of London presented him with the freedom of the city in a gold box, and the Fishmongers' Company and Merchant Tailors' Fraternity, of the ancient London Guilds, honored him with membership in their bodies, the Fishmongers presenting their memorial in a gold box. These valued gifts were presented by Mr. Peabody, with other valuable papers and memorials, to the Peabody Institute in Peabody, where they are treasured in lasting remembrance of his benefactions.

Fitch Poole, the son of Deacon Fitch Poole, was born June 13, 1803, in the house in Poole's Hollow in the South Parish of Danvers, built by his great-grandfather, John Poole, about 1757. He was educated in the common schools of the town, and having learned the trade of sheepskin and morocco manufacturer, he engaged in that business in a store close by his birth-place, and during many years was interested either by himself or in company with others in that branch of industry. He very early developed a decided taste for literary pursuits, and became a correspondent of the newspapers of the vicinity, sometimes treating of political matters and sometimes of the early history and traditions of the locality, in which he was deeply versed, and which he made a life-long study, becoming a recognized authority on antiquarian matters, and displaying a never-failing enthusiasm in research and in the discussion of all that pertained to town and early colonial history.

His reading was varied and extensive, and his writing was marked by a natural and expressive style, which showed the originality of his thought, and was constantly flavored with a piquancy of idea and expression springing from his keen and delicate sense of humor, a quality which entered largely into his genial and winning personality, and which made him through life a delightful companion whose everyday greeting had a cheerful and sunny influence, and who brought smiles into every company.

The artistic temperament was clearly shown in him, not only in his literary work, but in various other directions, particularly in a cleverness for caricature and humorous sketches with the pencil, and an aptitude for modelling in plaster, which was remarkable considering his lack of elementary training for such work. Some portrait busts, and also some original conceptions in plaster, particularly a series of representations of humorous characters in Irving's

"History of New York," show traces of distinct power and originality.

His fondness for the humorous, and his quickness of wit, made him, particularly in his younger days, the centre of a little band of choice spirits, whose amusing exploits are still remembered by many of the people of South Danvers.

The familiarity of intercourse in those early times, and the comparatively slight differences of social rank in the community, encouraged a sort of practical joking, which was as harmless as practical joking ever is, and more than usually original and witty in its methods. Many were the individuals who unwittingly made sport for these practical jokers, but it was rarely that any ill will grew out of their doings. The exhibition to friends for their criticism (sometimes adverse), of a portrait of Mr. Poole really made up by the subject's inserting his living head into a place cut in the canvas; orders given to new recruits in the militia to parade at novel seasons, and with surprising equipments; half the town induced to visit the scene of a remarkable chasm formed in the Square on April-fools' day—such were some of the odd fancies which furnished amusement for the town's people. One of the most characteristic and successful of these practical jokes was carried out by Mr. Poole in later life. In the early days of the Peabody Institute lectures, Professor Hitchcock, the eminent geologist, delivered a course of lectures on geology, and while in town he was entertained by Mr. Poole, and a large number of the people of the town were invited to meet him. When the time for refreshments arrived, the company was ushered into a well supplied supper room, and just at that moment the host was called away for a moment, and excused himself with a cordial invitation to his guests to help themselves to the good things before them. After the first descent upon the table a strange embarrassment stole over those who endeavored to dispense the refreshments. One would take off the cover from a dish, and hastily replace it; another found the oysters of surprising weight and texture; the cake could scarcely be lifted; the ice creams and custards could be carried about bodily by the spoons inserted in them; each new dish was more puzzling than the last. At length it dawned upon the brighter spirits, that here was truly a geological feast, and the laugh began. The oysters were pudding-stone; the cake was brick, frosted with plaster of Paris; custards and creams were of plaster colored, and moulded; sugar, cream, every detail of the banquet was of mineral origin, of plaster, or stone, or clay. When the fun began to subside, another door was thrown open, and a more edible repast was spread before the guests.

His intimate knowledge of the early history of his native place, and his facility in imitating the ancient style of writing, enabled him to reproduce more vividly than any other writer of his class the peculiar life and color of those early times, with all its quaintness of diction and spelling, and its apparently unconscious humor of expression. Several of his poems and sketches, relating to the witchcraft times, are of unusual merit, particularly a ballad, widely circulated, entitled "Giles Corey and Goodwyfe Corey," which is an admirable reproduction of the old ballad style. Another well-known poem is that which was written for the centennial celebration at Danvers, "Giles Corey's Dream," which attained a wide celebrity, both for its poetical merits and the keen and thoughtful humor which pervades it. Mr. Poole's enjoyment of an innocent hoax induced him occasionally to introduce his old time sketches under the guise of veritable antiquities. One of the most remarkable of his efforts in this direction was brought out at the time of taking down the old South Meeting-house, in 1836, when a communication was received by a Salem paper, purporting to contain a copy of an old letter written by one Lawrence Conant, which described the ordination of the Rev. Mr. Prescott at the new meeting-house in the middle precinct of Salem in 1713, as seen by the writer. So perfect was the reproduction of the quaint language and spelling of the time, and so admirable the color of the composition and the apparent truthfulness of the details, describing personages prominent in the province, that it at first passed everywhere as genuine, and it was not till some acute antiquary detected a discrepancy of dates in the document that the deception was detected; and even long afterward the letter of Lawrence Conant was occasionally referred to as genuine. The paper is full of delightful touches of humor, and was only intended as a facetious *jeu d'esprit*, and was promptly and publicly acknowledged as such by Mr. Poole; but no amount of explanation has ever been able to destroy the authenticity of the document. About the same time he wrote a poem in the Scotch dialect called "Lament of the Bats inhabiting the old South Church," which has been greatly admired.

He was an ardent Whig, and afterwards a strong Republican, deeply interested in the anti-slavery movement, and always progressive in his ideas.

Some of his political papers were pointed and effective productions. During the Mexican War he wrote a series of articles for a Salem paper entitled "The Trial of James K. Polk for Murder." These were collected and printed in a pamphlet as a pleasant satire; a copy found its way to Mexico, where it was translated and circulated as a genuine historical document. Another political satire was his parody on "John Gilpin's Ride," written as the Carrier's Address of the Salem Register in 1852, beginning,—

> "George Boutwell was a citizen
> Of credit and renown."

He was frequently induced to favor the carrier boys by writing their annual address, which was sure to be sold if signed or known to be written by him. One



Eben Sutton

of these addresses was a poem of witchcraft times, entitled, "Witch-Dance and Banquet on Gallows Hill."

In 1859 he became the editor of a weekly paper in South Danvers called *The Wizard*, in whose columns appeared many of his best productions and most characteristic bits of humor, in which passing events were depicted with a spirit and wit which made the paper widely known.

In 1856 Mr. Poole was appointed librarian of the Peabody Institute Library in South Danvers, a position eminently congenial to his taste, and in which he won universal respect and esteem for his helpfulness and unfailing courtesy. He continued in this position during the remainder of his life.

His extremely modest and retiring disposition prevented him from making the use of his literary powers which others possessing abilities far less striking and unique might have made of them. He never attempted any large literary work, nor even collected such of his scattered pieces as might surely have won popular favor if they had been published in book form. He was happiest in his loved home, the old family homestead in which he was born and lived through all his three-score and ten years, and in which he died; among his friends, or quietly watching the effect of his writings on the small audience of his town's people. He cared little for public office, but his interest in education made him for many years a valued and progressive member of the school committee of the town; he represented Danvers in the General Court in 1841 and 1842, and was for a short time postmaster of Peabody under President Lincoln.

He died after a short illness on the 19th of August, 1873. It is to be hoped that some competent hand may undertake to collect his writings and gather the materials for an adequate memorial of his life, which would illustrate much that is deeply interesting of the life and growth of his native town.

Sources of Information.—The principal sources from which the writer has attained the facts for this sketch, are the History of the Town of Danvers, by J. W. Hanson, 1848; Salem Witchcraft, by Charles W. Upham, 1867, from which some passages have been taken directly; Annals of Salem, by Joseph B. Felt, 1849; "The Town of Peabody," a newspaper published March 25, 1873, by Albert Gould, pastor of the Methodist Church; the notes to the new edition of the Acts and Resolves of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, by A. C. Goodell, Jr.; the Life of George Peabody, by Phebe A. Hanaford, 1870; The Danvers Centennial Celebration, 1852; The Life of Daniel P. King, by C. W. Upham; and many historical sketches by Fitch Poole.

The original records of the Salem Book of Grants and of the Town of Salem, and the records of the South Parish, have been carefully examined; and by the courtesy of Mr. Nathan H. Poor, the efficient town clerk of Peabody, the records of the town have been examined for various data, and especially the war records. The files of the *Wizard*, during the civil war, furnished much valuable information.

The writer also desires to express his acknowledgments to Dr. Henry Wheatland for much kindly assistance; to Mr. William P. Upham and Mr. A. C. Goodell, Jr., the President of the Historico-Genealogical Society, for valuable information and suggestions; to Mr. J. P. Fernald for the use of articles on the Methodist and Catholic Churches; to Mr. Edgar W. Upton, who furnished the sketch of St. Paul's Mission; to Rev. J. W. Colwell, for full information relative to the South and West Peabody Churches; to Amos Merrill, Esq., for information relative to war records, and for an article on the Universalist Church; to Mr. J. Warren Upton, the Librarian of the Peabody Institute in Peabody, Mr. William H. Little, Mr. Arthur F. Poole, Mr. George F. Osborne, Mr. Nathan A. Bushby, and Mr. A. P. White, the historian of Danvers in this volume; and to the pastors and officers of the various churches, who readily furnished information in their power.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

EBENEZER SUTTON.

Ebenezer Sutton was born in Danvers, September 11, 1803. In 1855 Danvers was divided into two towns, North and South Danvers, and in 1868 the name of South Danvers was changed to Peabody. It was in that part of Danvers which is now Peabody that Mr. Sutton was born. The father of Mr. Sutton, William Sutton, married April 14, 1799, Elizabeth Treadwell, and had William, who was the late General Sutton, July 26, 1800, and Ebenezer, the subject of this sketch, as above stated, September 11, 1803. William Sutton, the father of William and Ebenezer, was a leather-dresser by trade, but during many years before his death carried on, aside from his legitimate trade, extensive woolen mills at North Andover. He was at one time representative to the State Legislature, and was for some years president of the Danvers Bank. He died at Danvers, February 26, 1832.

The father of William Sutton was Richard, who was born in Ipswich, December 12, 1736. His trade also was that of a leather-dresser, and he lived and died in Ipswich. He married in 1758 Elizabeth, daughter of Nathaniel and Elizabeth Foster, of Ipswich, and had the following children: Elizabeth, 1759; Susanna, 1761; Mary, 1763; Catherine, 1764; Catherine, 1765; Catherine, again, 1766; Mary, again, 1770; William, February 15, 1773; Sarah, 1775; Richard, 1777, and Richard again, 1780. He married, second, October 25, 1807, Rebecca, daughter of

William and Elizabeth Foster, and had no children. He died December 12, 1825.

The father of Richard was William Sutton, who was born at Ipswich, October 5, 1699. He married in 1725 Susanna, daughter of Moses and Susanna Kimball, and had the following children: Ebenezer, baptized December 29, 1728; Richard, December 12, 1736; Susanna, July 20, 1740, who married Thomas Kimball, and died September 16, 1828. The father, William Sutton, died at Cape Breton in 1745.

The father of the last William was Richard Sutton, who was born in Reading, August 5, 1674, and removed to Ipswich before February, 1695–96. In the records he is called both shoemaker and farmer. By a wife Susanna he had Richard, born in Ipswich, February 9, 1696–97, who became a leather-dresser; William, born in Ipswich, October 5, 1699, and perhaps others. He died in Ipswich April 23, 1702.

The father of the last Richard was Richard Sutton, who was born, perhaps, in Roxbury about the year 1650. He removed to Reading about 1673, where he bought an estate, which he sold January 8, 1679, to Nathaniel Goodwin and Thomas Nichols. He served while in Reading in King Philip's War, and after the sale of his estate removed to Charlestown. The name of his wife was Katharine.

The father of the last Richard was Richard Sutton, an early settler in Roxbury. Various records in England disclose the name of Richard Sutton; but the English family, to which the American ancestors belonged, has never been precisely defined. Nor is the date of his arrival in New England known. He is spoken of without date in the ancient book of records of houses and lands in Roxbury as having sixteen acres of land more or less, lately the land of Henry Farnum. On the 7th of October, 1650, as shown by the Suffolk Deeds, Book I., page 128, he conveyed, for the consideration of two oxen, six acres of land in Roxbury to Governor Thomas Dudley. In 1656 he was a surveyor of highways. On the 10th of March, 1658, he bought of Simon and Ann Bradstreet, of Andover, a dwelling-house in Andover, with an orchard and land, including about eight acres, and is called in the deeds husbandman and weaver. He probably removed to Andover about 1658, and remained there until he sold his estate, February 6, 1664, to George Abbot. The signatures to the deed are Richard Sutton and Rachael Sutton, thus disclosing the name of his wife. On the 14th of May, 1670, he bought of Samuel Hutchinson, of Reading, for the consideration of three hundred pounds, a house with lands in Reading, and removed to that town about 1673. Between 1670 and 1673 his wife died, and there are indications in the records that he was married a second time. Nothing is known of him after the last date, except that he served in King Philip's War with his son, and there is no record of the place and date of his death.

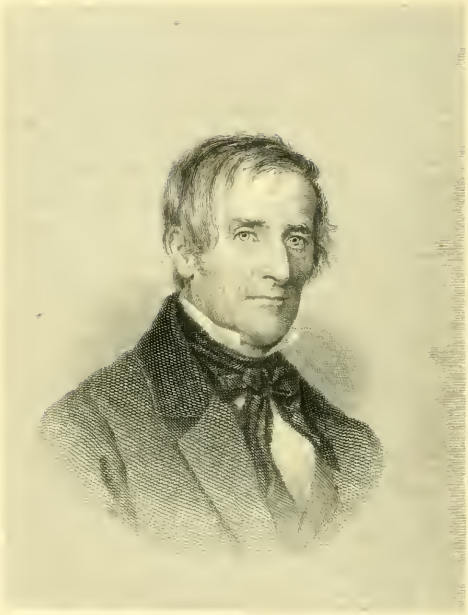
Ebenezer Sutton, the subject of this sketch, was a man of marked and positive characteristics. Entirely independent in thought and action, he pursued his own methods quietly and unostentatiously, but with a constantly pushing vigor, which measured and overleaped every obstacle in the way of success. Like all men of that stamp, he formed accurate estimates of character, and in accordance with those estimates he was drawn irresistibly towards some and away from others; and persuasion and argument failed to change either his estimates or treatment of the men whom his unerring judgment had measured.

He was liberal and generous in the truest sense. He did not give of the large wealth he had accumulated because gifts were asked, or because he was expected to give, or because refusal would be likely to affect his popularity. There is too much of such generosity in the world,—indeed, so much that it is impossible to decide where it is genuine and where it is false. The generosity of Mr. Sutton followed his heart, and where that went his hand went also.

Aside from his regular business, he had avocations in which he felt an earnest interest. He was a director in the Eastern Railroad, the colonel at one time of the Essex Regiment, and generally interested in the affairs of his native town. He married, April 4, 1829, Eliza, daughter of Jonathan Dusten, of Danvers, and had two sons,—Ebenezer, who died August 24, 1839, and Ebenezer Dale, who was born February 7, 1848, and died November 13, 1862. Thus, when Mr. Sutton died, December 11, 1864, he died childless, leaving a widow, who is still living in a serene old age, passing the summer months at her summer residence at Centre Harbor in New Hampshire, and the remainder of the year in Peabody.

ELIJAH UPTON.

Elijah Upton is a descendant of John Upton, the ancestor of all the name in this country as far as known. Tradition (apparently well supported) relates that he came from Scotland, and that he was one of the Scottish prisoners taken by Cromwell, either at the battle of Dunbar, September 3, 1650, or at the battle of Worcester, twelve months later. Tradition also reports that his wife's name was Eleanor Stuart, a woman of Scottish birth, and a strong adherent of the unfortunate royal house of Stuart. We are told that she had anticipated his coming, and was here upon his arrival, in about 1652. It would seem probable that all of their children were born in Salem Village (now Peabody). We first find his name on the records at Salem December 26, 1658. It is pretty certain he was not a member of any Congregational Church, for, though a man of large means and good character, he was not admitted a freeman of the colony until April 18, 1691, after the revolution in England, and after some modifications had been made in the freeman's oath in Massachusetts.



Elijah Upton



E. W. Upton



Joseph Poor

About 1678 John moved to Reading, Mass., where he had previously built a large and substantial house, which in his will he called "the homestead." It is still in a good state of preservation, and is owned by some of his descendants. *Elijah Upton*, the chief subject of this sketch, was a son of Benjamin and Rebecca (Putnam) Upton, born in North Reading, Mass., August 4, 1785; married, first, July 2, 1809, Phebe Wood, born in what is now Peabody March 23, 1787, and died there July 12, 1821; married, second, November 9, 1821, Ruth (Harrington) Downing, who died June 1, 1842. Elijah came to what is now Peabody in his youth, and served his apprenticeship as a tanner with Captain Dennison Wallis. He was at different times in partnership with Joseph Tufts and Caleb L. Frost. Mr. Upton was the first man in this town to manufacture glue, and by his sagacity and enterprise built up an extensive business in this article. He was a large owner and operator in real estate, and this town is more indebted to him than any other man for erecting dwellings, for opening streets and avenues, levelling hills and raising valleys, to make elligible sites for buildings. He was much interested in missionary and denominational enterprises, the abolition of slavery and the temperance reform, being a liberal donor to objects which commended themselves to his regard. He was a man of extensive reading and sound judgment. He died at Brattleboro', Vermont, March 25, 1860. His only child, Elijah Wood, was born February 24, 1811.

ELIJAH WOOD UPTON.

Elijah Wood Upton, only child of Elijah and Phebe (Wood) Upton, was born February 24, 1811. He received as a youth more educational advantages than was usual at that time. He was three years in Hopkinton, N. H., at Mr. John O. Ballard's school, where he made many life-long friends. He afterwards, for several years, attended a private school in Salem, Mass.

When quite a young man, he took an active interest in the business enterprises of his father, and at the early age of twenty years became a partner in the glue business, and later, after the retirement of his father, he assumed the entire charge of what has since been known as the Essex Glue Company. In 1847 he formed a partnership with Theophilus W. and Nathaniel Walker, and they further increased the business until it has been an important branch of the business enterprises of Peabody. About the same time the firm built and established the Danvers Bleachery, which has always done an extensive business. It remained under the control of this firm until about twenty years ago, and then was made into a stock company.

Mr. Upton, from his early connection with his father's tannery, was always interested in that branch of industry in this town. He was not largely engaged in public affairs, preferring a business life, which was congenial to him. He was, however, sent for two years as representative to the General Court of Massachusetts, and was director and for a considerable time President of the Warren National Bank of Danvers. He was also, for many years, a director in the National Bank of Redemption in Boston. He visited Europe several times, his first visit being in 1851, at the time of the First International Exhibition, in which he was much interested. He was the person consulted by George Peabody in London in regard to the first donation made by him to the South Danvers Public Library, and also concerning the building erected for its accommodation.

He was a man of public spirit, of generous impulses and of refined manners. Mr. Upton died October 6, 1881.

JOSEPH POOR.

Joseph Poor was born July 7, 1805, in Danvers. That part of Danvers in which he lived was incorporated May 18, 1855, as South Danvers, and its name was changed to Peabody by an Act of the General Court passed April 13, 1868. His father, Joseph Poor, carried on the business of a tanner, and he was brought up to the same trade, attending the schools of his native town, and, when old enough to be of service, working a part of the time in the tannery of his father. At the age of eighteen his time was given to him, and from that time he earned his own support.

After his father's death he carried on the tanner's business alone, and from that time until his death his business career was one of uninterrupted success.

Mr. Poor married Eliza Munroe, of Danvers, and had eleven children. These were Sally, born in 1830; Warren Augustus, in 1832, who married Harriet Waterman; Mary E., in 1834; Ellen, in 1835, who married James W. Kelley; Leverett, in 1838, who married Jennie Emerson; Lizzie, in 1840; Lucinda, in 1842; George H., in 1844, who married Susie R. Bond; Albert F., in 1846, who married Sarah F. Weed; Joseph H., in 1848, who married Maggie Linehan, and Martha H., in 1850.

His sound business traits were often called into the service of his fellow-citizens, and for many years he was Chairman of the Board of Selectmen of South Danvers and Peabody. He was also a Director of the Warren Five Cents Savings Bank of Peabody, and one of the original trustees of the Peabody Institute. No better estimate of his character can be given than that of one of his fellow-citizens who, during more than forty years enjoyed his acquaintance and friendship, and had the best opportunities for forming it. He says: "Many were the valuable traits of character possessed by Mr. Poor that might be dwelt upon with interest. I knew him from my youth, was when a boy of twelve years of age employed by him, and was intimate with him until his death. As he ad-

vanced in age he became a strong advocate of moral reform in all its branches, an earnest Abolitionist, a warm-hearted, sincere Temperance man, always carrying out his opinions at the ballot-box, even if he stood alone. He never shrank from saying and doing, as a politician, what he believed to be right, and calmly and sternly moved forward towards the accomplishment of his aim. As a business man, he did not exhibit that headlong activity and bustle which are so often mistaken for business capacity, but moved slowly on, seeing his way clear as he went, and keeping himself safe in all business transactions.

He was a thoroughly religious man, always contributing liberally to purposes of benevolence and charity, and when the feebleness of advancing age compelled him to relinquish business, he felt even a deeper interest than before in those higher pursuits which chasten and ennoble life."

Mr. Poor died in Peabody, August 24, 1884.

JAMES PUTNAM KING.

James Putnam King was born in that part of Danvers which is now Peabody, November 8, 1817. His father, Samuel King, and his grandfather, Zachariah King, were hard-working successful farmers.

The subject of this sketch was one of five brothers, three of whom were farmers, all located in the same neighborhood, which, by reason of the large and valuable land-holdings of the King family, for more than, a hundred years, has by common consent been given the name of "The Kingdom."

James attended the district school until sixteen years of age, then worked on his father's farm until his marriage, at the age of twenty-two, to Wealthy M. Ferrin, of Madison, N. H., by whom he had two sons.

At the time of his marriage he commenced his career as a farmer on his own account by working on shares, a most excellent farm in the neighborhood. By his great physical powers, temperate habits, industry and prudence he became one of the most successful farmers in the county, and his life has answered emphatically in the affirmative, that question so often asked by agricultural writers and speakers, "Does farming pay?" He followed Salem Market for twenty-five years, selling his own vegetable products.

Mr. King early took an earnest interest in the Abolition cause, was a Whig in politics, and has been a strong Republican since the formation of that party.

He was a member of the Legislature of 1854, has been overseer of the poor for thirty-three consecutive years, and a trustee or vice-president of the Essex Agricultural Society for more than twenty years.

Mr. King is a forcible and effective speaker, and his long practical experience ennables him to add much interest to the discussions at Farmer's Institutes, and being a strictly temperate man in principle and practice, he renders efficent aid to the temperance cause.

His judgment of farm property is valued so highly that his services are in frequent demand in appraisals. Late in life he married for a second wife, Mrs. Elizabeth A. Bancroft, who was a sister of his first wife.

He is known and respected throughout the county as few men are, and now, at seventy years of age, is in the full vigor of life and presents a living example of what may be accomplished by a temperate, industrious, prudent farm life in Essex County.

CHAPTER LXXVI.

MARBLEHEAD.

BY SAMUEL ROADS, JR.

Indian History—Nanepashemet the King—Relics found in Marblehead.

THE exceedingly unique and interesting peninsula which forms the subject of this sketch, is situated at the south-eastern corner of Essex County, Massachusetts, sixteen miles north-east of Boston. The township comprises three thousand seven hundred acres, and is about four miles in length, from north-east to south-west, being from one and one-half to two miles in breadth. The surface is to a great extent irregular and rocky, and considerably elevated above the land of the surrounding country. Connected by a narrow isthmus with the mainland is a smaller peninsula, rather more than a mile in length and about half a mile wide, containing about three hundred acres. This peninsula, from the earliest settlement of the town, has been known as the "Great Neck."

Between the "Neck" jutting out so boldly into the Atlantic Ocean and the rocky coast of the main land, is a beautiful sheet of water, a mile and a half long, and a half a mile wide, forming one of the most excellent harbors on the New England Coast.

At the time of the landing of our fathers upon a coast so barren and uninviting, as it must have appeared to them, they found the entire section of Eastern Massachusetts inhabited by a race of men, the remnants of what but a few years before the coming of the white man had been a large and powerful tribe of Indians. They were of the tribe of Naumkeags, then under the jurisdiction of the Squaw Sachem of Saugus, the widow of the great Nanepashemet, who, in his lifetime, had been a chief whose power and authority no neighboring tribe dared question. But war and pestilence, those two dread enemies of the human race, had made sad havoc among the Naumkeags; and however desirous they



James P. Kerry

might have been to resist the encroachments of the white men upon their domain, they were but little prepared to do so. The great war in which they had engaged with the Tarrentines in 1615, had proved disastrous to them, and Nanepashemet, their chief, had been obliged to retreat from his settlement at Saugus to a hill on the borders of the Mystic River, where he resided till the time of his death. The plague which broke out among the Indians in 1617, raged with especial severity among the Naumkeags. Hundreds of them were destroyed, and those who remained were rendered an easy prey to their enemies. The Tarrentines, well aware of the weakness of their great opponents, seized the earliest opportunity to attack him. In 1619 they besieged his fortifications at Mystic, where, after a most heroic resistance, Nanepashemet was killed.

Two years later a party from the Plymouth Colony, while ranging about the country, came across some of his forts, one of which was undoubtedly in Marblehead, near Forest River, the remains of which may still be seen. Mr. Winslow, in his account of the journey, writes:

"Having gone three miles, we came to a place where corn had been newly gathered, a house pulled down, and the people gone. A mile from hence Nanepashemet, their King, in his life-time had lived. His house was not like others; but a scaffold was largely built with poles and planks, some six foot from the ground and a house upon that, being situated on the top of a hill. Not far from hence, in a bottom, we came to a fort built by the deceased King, the manner thus: There were poles, some thirty or forty feet long, stuck in the ground as thick as they could be set one by another, and with them they enclosed a ring some thirty or forty feet over. A trench, breast high, was digged on each side; one way there was to get to it with a bridge. In the midst of this palisade stood the frame of a house wherein, being dead, he lay buried. About a mile from hence we came to such another, but seated on the top of a hill. Here Nanepashemet was killed, none dwelling in it since his death."

After the death of Nanepashemet the general government of the Naumkeags was continued by his widow, who became the squaw sachem. She was assisted by her three sons, Wonohaquaham, Montowampote and Winepoyken, or Winnepewecken, all of whom became sagamores. The squaw sachem lived on terms of friendliness with the whites, and finally submitted to their government.

The three sons of Nanepashemet, after the death of their father, had each his separate jurisdiction as sagamore. Wonohaquaham, called by the English John, was located on the Mystic River; Montowampote, called by the white people James, had jurisdiction of the territory now comprised in Lynn, Salem and Marblehead, or, as Mr. Lewis, in his "History of Lynn," says: "Saugus, Naumkeag and Massabequash." The last was the Indian name for Forest River, but whether it was applied to the territory comprised in the township of Marblehead there appears to be no means of ascertaining except on the authority of Mr. Lewis. Winepoykin, called by the English George, was the youngest son of Nanepashemet. He was born in 1616, and was a boy when the white men made their settlement on his territory.

The Rev. John Higginson, in writing of this sagamore, says:

"To ye best of my remembrance, when I came over with my father to this place, being then about thirteen years old, there was a widow woman called squaw sachem who had three sons. Sagamore John kept at Mystic, Sagamore James at Saugust, and Sagamore George here at Naumkeke. Whether he was actual sachem here I cannot say, for he was about my age, and I think there was an older man, yt was at least his guardian. But ye Indian town of Wigwams was on ye north side of ye North River, not farre from Simondes, and ye north and south side of that river was together called 'Naumkeke.'"

In 1633 both Sagamore John and Sagamore James, with many of their people, died of the small-pox, which broke out among them and raged to such an extent as to nearly exterminate the entire tribe. So disastrous were the effects of the disease among them that is stated "that Mr. Maverick gave Christian burial to thirty of them in one day."

After the death of his brothers, Winepoykin became Sagamore of Lynn and Chelsea, as well as Naumkeag; and after the death of his mother, which took place in 1667, he became sachem of all that part of Massachusetts which is north and east of the Charles River. Winepoykin married Ahawayet, a daughter of Poquanum, who lived at Nahant. He died in 1684, and on the sixteenth of September of that year, the inhabitants of Marblehead procured a deed of their township from his heirs. It is signed by Ahawayet, who is called "Joane Ahawayet, squaw, relict, widdow of George Saggamore, Alias Wemepauweekin."

Of the manners, customs and habits of life of these Indians little is known, except such as can be gathered in extracts from the writings of the early settlers. That they lived, generally, in peace with their white neighbors, there can be little doubt. The great reduction in their numbers would seem to be of itself evidence that they were obliged to keep the peace; and the testimony of the white men proves this theory correct.

The Naumkeags are described as a tall, strong-limbed people, whose only wearing apparel was a beast-skin thrown over one shoulder, and another about the waist. Their wigwams were small, and were constructed of poles set in the ground and fastened at the top, being covered with mats made from the boughs of trees.

Like all the Indians of North America, the Naumkeags compelled their squaws to do the greater part of the manual labor, while they, the lords of the forest and the mighty waters, spent their time in fishing, hunting and idleness. Their wants were few. With plenty of corn, raised by the women, the forests abounding in game, and the waters about their coast filled with fish of almost every variety, there was no reason why they should suffer hunger, save only from their own indolence and inactivity.

Kind and docile in their disposition, and generous in their treatment of the whites, they in time became the wards of the settlers; and forsaking the gods of good and evil whom their fathers had taught them to

worship, many were baptized and embraced the Christian religion.

That Indians formerly occupied the land now comprised in the territory of Marblehead, there can be no doubt.

Relics of the villages, grave-yards, shell-heaps and an Indian fort have been found from time to time, which, were other evidence wanting, would be sufficient to prove the fact. Numerous arrow-heads, spears, clubs and various utensils made of stone have also been found.

The largest shell heap is near the "Pine" Grove, on the line of the railroad to Salem. This contained by actual measurement thirty cords of shells, placed in layers of stone and ashes.

Excavations found in the "Small Pox Pasture," at the Harris farm, and in fields on Atlantic Avenue, have been thought to indicate the former location of Indian wigwams. These cellars are always to be found near some reliable supply of water; they are from six to eight feet across, and were orginally from two to four feet in depth.

The Bessom Pasture, near Salem Harbor, was probably the site of an Indian village. Excavations, supposed to have been the cellars of wigwams, are to be found everywhere in the vicinity.

In November, 1874, an examination of the hill in this pasture revealed a grave containing five skeletons, four being those of grown persons, and the other that of a child. They were all in a remarkable state of preservation, except that of the child, one being very large, evidently that of a man. The bodies were all buried on their backs with their heads to the west except one, which lay with its head to the east; the legs being drawn up so that the knees nearly touched the chin. The grave contained, besides the skeletons, a lot of trinkets, an earthen cup, a small bell, two sea-shells, and a quantity of beads, proving conclusively that the bodies were buried after the white settlers came to America.

By reliable tradition we are informed that Indians dwelt in Marblehead as late as one hundred and seventy years ago. The location of an Indian stockade in the Lower Division Pasture is still pointed out by some of the older inhabitants. They received their information many years ago from aged citizens, then about to depart for their final rest, whose memories fondly cherished the traditions transmitted to them by their fathers.

CHAPTER LXXVII.

MARBLEHEAD—(*Continued*).

EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

Probable Origin of First Settlers—The Fishing Industry Established—Grants of Land—First Ship Built in the Colony—Slaves Imported—The First Meeting-house.

MARBLEHEAD was settled about the year 1629. Authorities differ as to the exact part of England from whence these settlers emigrated, though all agree that they were English, and that they made their settlement in the northeastern part of the town, near the headland now known as Peach's Point. From their manners and customs, but more especially from their peculiar dialect, it would seem that they were natives of the Island of Guernsey and Jersey in the British Channel. Their numbers were undoubtedly increased from time to time by people from the west of England, which would account for many of the idiomatic peculiarities which for more than two centuries characterized the speech of their descendants. They were fishermen, a rough, illiterate race, accustomed to a life of toil and hardship, probably from infancy, and they were therefore neither dismayed nor disheartened at the difficulties attending the founding of a settlement in the wilderness.

A few years before the coming of these settlers a settlement four miles north of their landing place, and the village thus formed had been named Salem. This township included in its boundaries a large portion of the land now comprised in nine or ten towns of Essex County, one of which is Marblehead. Though a corporate part, and within the limits of Salem, the little peninsula seems to have been known even at that early day by a distinct name. The Rev. Francis Higginson, writing of the place in 1629 or '30, speaks of the rocky headlands which line the shore as "marble stone, that we have great rocks of it, and a harbor hard by. Our plantation is from thence called Marble Harbor."

Though "Marble-Harbor" is the name most frequently applied to the settlement in the earlier records, it is evident that it was equally well-known as Marblehead from the beginning. William Woods in his description of Massachusetts, written in 1633, speaks of the locality as "Marvill Head," and describes it as "a place which lieth four miles full South from Salem, and is a very convienent place for a plantation, especially for such as will set up the trade of fishing. There was made here a ships loading of fish the last year, where still stand the stages and drying scaffolds. Here be a good harbor for boats, and a safe riding for ships." Thirty years later, Samuel Maverick, one of the first settlers in this section, in writing an account of the towns east of the Hudson River, referred to the town as follows: "Two miles below this Towne on the South side of the Harbor by the sea side lyeth Marblehead or ffoy the greatest Towne for fleishing in New England."[1] This is the only instance, of which we have any knowledge, in which the name of "Foy" was applied to the peninsula.

From the records of the Massachusetts Colony, under date of October 18, 1631, we learn that it was

[1] From a valuable manuscript discovered in the new British Museum by Mr. Henry F. Walters, of Salem, agent of the New England Historico-Genealogical Society.

ordered "that Thomas Grayes house at Marble-Harbor shall be puld downe, & that noe Englishemen shall hereafter give house roome to him or intertaine him, under such penalty as the court shall thinke meete to inflicte." It is evident, however, that the sentence was not executed, as the name of the offenders is frequently mentioned in subsequent records.

In September, 1631, Isaac Allerton, one of the most prominent men of Plymouth Colony, having had some difficulty with his associates, set sail in the White Angel for Marblehead, where he established a Fishery Station. His son-in-law, Moses Maverick, accompanied him; and a short time after their arrival it is recorded that "this season Mr. Allerton fished with eight boats at Marble-Harbor." It was probably with reference to the business thus established, that in April 1633, the court ordered:

"That if any swine shall in fishing time come within a quarter of a myle of the stage at Marble-Harbor, they shall be forfeited to the owners of sd staidge, & soe for all other stages within their lymitts."

The name Marblehead is mentioned for the first time in the Colonial records of 1633 under circumstances not particularly flattering to the inhabitants, though it is by no means certain that the persons named were residents among them.

"July 2d, 1633, James White is fined XXXS for drunkennes, by him comitted att Marblehead, on the Sabbath day. John Bennet is fined XS for being drunke att Marblehead."

The early records of the colony abound with references to Allerton and his doings. Under date of September 1, 1633, Governor Winthrop makes the following entry in his journal:

"Mr. Craddock's house at Marblehead was burnt down about mid night before, there being in it Mr. Allerton and many fishermen whom he employed that season, who were all preserved by a special providence of God, with most of his goods therein, by a tailor, who sat up that night at work in the house and, hearing a noise, looked out and saw the house on fire above the oven in the thatch."

The brief period of Allerton's residence in Marblehead were evidently years of misfortune to him and his family. During the same year in which his house was destroyed, a pinnace which he had sent on a trading voyage to France, was lost with its entire cargo. Two years later, in March, 1635, the court ordered that he shall be sent for to the intent that he may understand the desire of the country for his removal from Marble Harbor. Accordingly, in May, of that year, he conveyed to his son-in-law, Moses Maverick, all his houses, buildings, and stages at Marblehead, and departed, it is presumed, for New Haven, Conn.

But his misfortunes were not to end with his removal. During the same year a shallop which he had sent to Newbury to convey the Rev. John Avery and his family to Marblehead, was lost off Cape Ann, with nearly all on board. Shortly after his arrival in New England Mr. Avery had been invited to take up his residence at Marblehead, "but" as Mr. Mather says in his "Magnalia" "there being no church there, and the fishermen there being generally too remiss to form one," he had declined the invitation. It seems, however, that he had been induced to reconsider his determination, and had embarked with two families, his own, and that of his cousin, Mr. Anthony Thacher. On their passage a storm arose, and the vessel was lost; the only persons in the entire company who were saved being Mr. Thacher and his wife, who were cast ashore by the waves.

On the 6th of May, 1635, the court ordered:

"That there shalbe a plantacion at Marble-Head, and that the inhabitants now there shall have liberty to plant and imp've such grounds as they stood in neede of, & that as sd plantacion increaseth, the inhabitants of Salem shall p'te with such ground as shalbe imp'vd by them thereabouts, being payed for their labor and costs."

It was also ordered that Mr. John Humphrey should improve the land between the Clifte and Forest River, and dispose of it to the inhabitants of Marblehead as they stood in need; the only charge to the purchaser being enough to recompense him for the labor and costs bestowed upon it.

"June 3, 1635. It is ordered that Mr. Holgrove shall have power to presse men to help him unlode the salt at Marblehead."

In March, 1636, the court agreed that Mr. Humphrey's land should begin at the Clifte, in the way to Marblehead,

"Which is the bound between Salem and Linn, and so along the line between the said townes to the rocks, one mile, by estimation, to a grate red oake, from wch, the said marked tree, all under & over this rocks vpon a streight line to the runniog brooke by Thomas Smyth's house, all the which said ground wee alow him for his owne, & soe from Thomas Smyth's to the sea."

The records of Salem, with the records of the colony, give the only authentic information concerning the town and its people, at this early stage of its history. The first mention of Marblehead in the records of Salem, is as follows:

"By vote of the towne representatives, viz: the 13 Men Deputed—the 28th of the First month, 1636. John Peach, fisherman, and Nicholas Marriott having fenced about five acres of ground on Marble Neck [1] (though contrarie to the order of the towne), yet it's agreed that they may for the present improve the said place for building or planting, providing always that the propriety thereof be reserved for the right of the towne of Salem, to depose in the p'cesse of tyme to them or any other fishermen or others, as shalbe thought most, yet soe as they may have reasonable consideration for any chardge they shalbe at."

In 1636, the building of a college was projected, and the site proposed for its erection was in Marblehead, evidently in the vicinity of Mr. Humphrey's farm. At a town-meeting held at Salem, in May of that year, in an order for the division of Marblehead Neck, Mr. Humphrey made application for some land beyond Forest River. The request was referred to a committee of six gentlemen, who were authorized to view the land and "to consider of the premises, least it should hinder the building of a college, which would be many men's losse."

[1] In the early records the land between Forest River and the ocean, near the boundaries of what is now the town of Swampscott, was called the Plains or Marblehead Neck. The peninsula now known by that name was then called Greate Neck.

In October following, the court granted four hundred pounds towards the erection of a college, and the next year a committee was chosen to superintend its erection. Among the members of this committee were Mr. Humphrey and the Rev. Hugh Peters. The court subsequently ordered the college to be built at Cambridge, then called Newtowne, and to be named "Harvard College," in honor of the Rev. John Harvard, who made a bequest of several hundred pounds towards its erection, and donated his library for the use of the students.

Not only did the General Court encourage education and learning by the establishment of schools, but every industry and enterprise having for its object the general welfare of the colony, was fostered and aided by wise legislation.

The year 1636 was an important epoch in the history of the little community at Marblehead. During that year, a ship of one hundred and twenty tons burden, the third ship ever built in the colony, was constructed on the shore, probably on the harbor side of the plantation. This vessel was known as the "Desire," and for more than two years was employed in the fishing business. A few years later, she was sent to the West Indies, on a commercial voyage, and returning brought a cargo of "salt, cotton, tobacco, and negroes." They are supposed to have been the first slaves brought into the colony.

On the second of the eleventh month (January), 1636, the town of Salem ordered, "for the better furthering of the fishing trading, and to avoid the inconvenience found by granting land for fishermen to plant, that none inhabiting at Marblehead shall have any other accommodation of land than is usually given by the town to fishermen, viz.: A house lott and garden lott or ground, for the placing of their flakes, according to the company belonging to their families: to the greatest family not above two acres, and the comon of the woodes nere adjoining, for their goats & their cattle."

The same day, Mr. William Knight was received for an inhabitant, but no land was to be appropriated unto him but "a ten-acre lott & comon for his cattle & hay."

On the 27th of this month, another meeting was held, at which it was ordered:

"That all the land along the shore of Darby Fort[1] side up to (Mr. Humphrey's land) the Hogsties, and so to run along the shore towards Marblehead 20 pole into the land, shall be reserved for the Comons of the towne, to serve them for wood & timber."

The next year, 1637, Erasmus James, Nicholas Listen, Richard Granaway and Philip Bere were allowed as inhabitants "with them at Marblehead, and were granted two acres of land each." John Hart and William Charles were granted five acres each, and a house-lot of half an acre between them. "John Deverekxe" was also granted half an acre for a house-lot.

At a town-meeting held on the 21st of August, 1637, then the sixth month in the year, John Gatchell, of Marblehead, was fined ten shillings for building upon the town's land without permission. In case, however, that he should "cut of ye long har off hys head into a sevil frame," it was agreed that half his fine should be abated, and that he should have permission to go on with his building in the meantime.

The prejudice of the Puritans against the habit of wearing long hair is well known, and it seems that they were willing to enter into any compromise with Mr. Gatchell in order to remove the obnoxious habit.

It appears, however, that he was not a man to submit to any such interference with his personal appearance, and, it is said, "continued the custom to his dying day, in spite of popular opinion and all the formal denunciation of church and State.

On the 1st day of January, 1837, a meeting was held at Salem and a vote of one hundred and twenty pounds was ordered, of which eight pounds were to be assessed upon the following inhabitants of Marblehead: Moses Mavericke, William Steephens, Archibald Tomson, William Charles, John Heart, John Peach, John Lyon, Anthonie Thatcher, John Coite, Richard Seers, Richard Greeneway, John Gatchell, Samuel Gatchell, John Bennet, John Wakefield, Erasmus James, Thomas Gray, John Devereux, Nicholas Meriatt, Abraham Whitehaire, George Vickary, John Russell, Nicholas Listen, Philip Beare.

Under date of September 6, 1638, the records of the colony have the following entry:

"Moses Maverick is permitted to sell a tun of wine at Marblehead and not to excede this year."

As the number of inhabitants increased the records of grants made at the town meetings became more numerous. On the 14th of October, 1638, the following grants of land were made to the inhabitants of Marblehead:

"To Mr. Walton, eight acres on the Main: to Moses Maverick at the same place ten acres; to John Coite on the Neck three acres; to Will Keene and Nich. Listen on John Peach's Necke, three acres; more to them on the Greate Necke, five acres; to Richard Seers three acres, where he had planted formerly; to John Wakefield four acres on the Necke; to John Gatchell and Samuel Gatchel six acres on the Necke; to Tho. Sams, three acres on the Necke; to John Lyon four acres near his house; to the Widow Blancher six acres on the Necke; to Ralph Warrin two acres on the Necke; to George Ching three acres on the Necke; to Phillip Beare three acres near the Widow Tomsons; to John Bennet four acres on the Necke; upon John Peach's Necke; to Rosamond James four acres on the Main."[1]

[1] The Main was the part of the town near the harbor; John Peach's Neck was from "Naugus Head" to what is now called "Peach's Point," and from Naugus Head to Forest River was known as the "Forest Side."

The "Mr. Walton" to whom the first grant was made was Mr. William Walton, who was then preaching at Marblehead, though without ordination. This is the first mention of his name in the records, and it is therefore probable that he began his ministrations in Marblehead during the year 1638. Through his

[1] Darby Fort was a fortification at Naugus Head, built by the people of Salem as a place of refuge in case of attack by the Indians.

endeavors, succeeded by Maverick and other influential inhabitants, a meeting-house was erected, and religious services were regularly held on the Sabbath. This edifice, which was a crude, farm-like structure, stood upon one of the most rocky hills of the town; and about it, after the manner of their forefathers, the simple fishermen made their burial ground.

Marblehead at this time has often been described as a place barren of trees and abounding in nothing but unproductive land. The records of the general town meetings and other commoners prove conclusively that this is a mistake. The fact of its settlement is also of itself evidence of the fallacy of this theory, for emigrants in those days could not have settled on a coast where there were no trees from which they could build their houses. At a town meeting held in Salem on the 11th of November, 1640, it was ordered that all who should cut timber trees within two miles of Salem and one mile of Marblehead, and prepare them for shipping, should be paid for their labor. The last record of grants in the records of Salem concerning land in Marblehead is in 1640, when the inhabitants were granted "all such lands near adjoining them as have not been formerly granted to other men."

The state of affairs in Marblehead seem to have occupied much of the attention of the General Court at its session in May, 1644. The people were negligent of many of the laws of the colony, and treated others with contempt; and as laws which were readily obeyed by the Puritans in other towns could not be enforced among them, special legislation was found necessary for their government. According to the Puritan law no one could become a freeman without first becoming a church member; and none but freemen could vote at elections or hold any office whatever in the colony. The inhabitants of Marblehead were far from being a religious people, and, though they supported a religious teacher and maintained the ordinances on Sunday, no church had been formed, and there were few church members among them. As a consequence there were no magistrates or officers in their community, and, being some distance from the settlement at Salem, they knew no law save that of their own will.

This fact, and the necessity that there should be some officer in the place to enforce the laws of the colony, led the court to relax somewhat of its accustomed strictness in such matters, and to order: "That in defect of freemen at Marblehead, the inhabitants of Salem shall have libertie to command some honest and able man, though he be not a freeman, and the Deputy Governor shall have power (if he think him fit to give him the oath for constable of that place till the Court shall take further order." Accordingly, on the 25th of the same month, the inhabitants of Salem elected David Curwithin, who was duly sworn as constable of Marblehead for one year from the date of his election.

On the same day that the order for the election of a constable was adopted, the court also voted to grant leave to Marblehead to "'fortify itself by a breastworke or otherwise,' and directed two guns to be delivered unto them with convenient ammunition thereto." It is uncertain whether this order was executed by the refractory Marbleheaders, but that they were not considered as sufficiently instructed in the arts of war, in accordance with the laws of the colony, is evident from the following order adopted on the 23d of May:

"In consideration of the great default and neglect of the inhabitants of Marblehead in Not exercising themselves in Martial discipline, it is ordered that the inhabitants of Marblehead shall make choyce of some one who shall exercise the rest, that they may not be to seeke when special occasions call for their assistance."

CHAPTER LXXVIII.

MARBLEHEAD—(*Continued.*)

Incorporation of the Town—Division of the Common Lands—Customs of Fishermen—Ordination of Rev. Samuel Cheever—Township Purchased of the Indians—A Trial for Witchcraft.

THE year 1648 was one of the most momentous in the entire history of Marblehead. Early in March, the town of Salem ordered:

"That Marblehead with the allowance of the General Court shall be a town, and the bounds to be to the utmost extent of the land which was Mr. Humphries' farme, and soe all the land to the sea."

On the 2d of May, 1649, the General Court granted the petition of the inhabitants, and the town was duly incorporated as follows:

"Upon the petition of the inhabitants of Marblehead for them to be a town of themselves, Salem having granted them to be a town of themselves, and appointed them the bounds of their town which the Court doth grant."

Shortly after the separation from Salem, a meeting of the inhabitants was held, and the following town officers were chosen, or as the record faintly expresses it, "these men were chosen for the towns business:"

"Seven men or Selectmen:—Moses Maverick, Samuel Daliber, Francis Johnson, Nicholas Merritt, John Peach, Senior, John Doverox, John Bartoll."

"To gather Mr. Walton's Pay.—James Smith, Joseph Doliber."

This was probably the first meeting of the inhabitants after the action of the town of Salem, though there is no record of the date on which it was held, except that of the year.

The earliest date in the town records, is that of a meeting held December 22, 1648, when it was:

"agreed by the Towne that all such as are strangers fishing or employed about fish shall pay unto the Towne for their wood and flake stufe and other conveniencies, the sum of ten shillings a year for every man."

By the records of this year, it appears that the inhabitants acted as an independent town before obtaining the act of incorporation, and that in antici-

pation of the event they were busy in settling and arranging their affairs. The swamp running from John Legg's to Timothy Allen's, was laid out into eight lots and divided among the inhabitants. A rate was made for the meeting-house, and John Hart was authorized to collect it and to "take what course the law will afford against such inhabitant as shall refuse to pay." In order that there might be an equal way of "maintaining the ordinance by Mr. Walton," it was agreed that "a rate should be established according to requite." This rate was to include strangers, "Who have benefit by the plantation by fishing, and make use of wood and timber, and enjoy the benefit of the ordinance." Mr. Walton was to have forty pounds for his services this year, and the sum of eighteen pence was ordered to be added to every man's rate for his wood.

The earlier records of the town refer principally to the common lands, cow leases, land sales, etc., though occasionally there are very quaint entries to be found. In March, 1657,

"It is ordered that all swine about the towne shall be sufficiently ringed by the first of Aprill next, upon the penaltie of 2s. 6d. for every defect, and Edward Pittsford is to see this order to be observed."

In 1658 the town had evidently increased in numbers, and had been blessed with prosperity to a greater degree than had ever been its fortune before. Mr. Walton's salary was increased to seventy pounds, and varied afterward from sixty pounds to eighty pounds yearly. This money was usually collected by persons chosen annually at the town meetings for the purpose, and those who had not the ready money to pay, were allowed to make up the amount of their proportion of the rate in provisions.

Mr. Walton rendered an account yearly of the amount received from each person, and these reports abound in such names as "Ould Harwood, Ould Lander, Ould Bennett," and others equally as curious. Occasionally in these reports we find such items as these:

"By half a cow of Mr. Brown, £2. 2s. 6d.; by ½ ton of Muckrocl, £5.; by Richard Rowland in pork, £2; by Smith in cheese, 13 shillings; by Christo. Codner in liquor, 15 shillings."

At this time the only public conveyance to and from Salem, was a ferry-boat which was rowed across Salem harbor as often as there were passengers who desired to cross, the fare being regulated by a town meeting as "two pence for the inhabitants of Marblehead." Thomas Dixie was the ferryman, and he was required to keep a boat and an assistant.

In 1660 there were only sixteen houses in the entire township. During that year the inhabitants voted to lay out a highway between Marblehead and Salem, which is the first of which there is any record. Seven men were made choice of "for the placing and seating of the inhabitants of the town, both men and women in the meeting-house," and it was agreed that the townsmen have liberty to consider what way is to be taken for the accommodation and entertainment of strangers, if it cannot be that one house is sufficient, then to consider of another, that strangers may be the better accommodated."

The following year the court invested the commissions with—

"Magistritticall power, refering to Salem and Marblehead, there being more than ordinary need thereof, that iniquity may not pass unpunished."

One of these commissioners was Major William Hathorne, who, for several years previous had been a magistrate of Salem and several other towns, and who now appears to have assumed special charge of Marblehead. Before this august personage the select-men summoned several of the most prominent citizens, for refusing to keep their cattle in accordance with a vote of the town.

In March, 1662, a contract was made with Robert Knight and John Salter, carpenters, to build a gallery at the southwest of the meeting-house. "Sufficient for four seats, with columns, and a board at the bottom to keep the dust from coming down; and to be arched sufficient to strengthen the house with stairs and other necessaries." For this labor the Selectmen agreed to pay them twenty-one pounds "in such necessaries as they should have occasion of," and, if when the work was ended, they had any of the pay to take up, the balance was to be paid in fish or mackrel at the market price.

At a town meeting held October 21, the commoners agreed "that the cove lying between John Codners and John Northies stage, shall be for a common landing-place for the use of the public good of the town forever." The agreement was signed by Moses Maverick, Joseph Dolier, John Peach, Senior, Christoph. Lattemore, John Waldron, John Codner, John Bartoll and five others, who were probably all of the Commoners, who could write, and signed in the name of the rest.

"The records of this period abound in allusions to those who were appointed to keep the cows. In February, 1663, an agreement was made with John Stacie to "keep the cattell the year ensuing, and to fetch the cattell of the lower end of the towne at William Charles by the sunn half an hour hie and to deliver them their at night, half an hour before sunn sett." If any were lost he was to use his endeavors to find them the next day, and for his services he was to receive corn and provisions to the value of sixteen pounds. The scarcity of money among the inhabitants cannot be more truly illustrated than in this and numerous other votes to pay the town's indebtedness to individuals in provisions, fish and other articles. In their intercourse with the outside world they were obliged to barter to an almost unlimited extent. Depending entirely upon the fishing trade for their sustenance, they had little else to offer for the commodities of which they were in need, and their fish became almost their only medium of exchange.

In 1666, the court, considering the exposed condition of the harbor of Marblehead, voted that if the inhabitants would erect a suitable fort or breastwork,

their country rate should be abated, and that two or three guns should be furnished as soon as the fortification was finished. That the fishermen might be drilled and disciplined in military movements and tactics, the court ordered that a company should be organized, and Major Hathorne was appointed commander, with Samuel Ward as Sergeant. The fort was finished the following year, the cost to the town being about thirty-two pounds, New England money.

The year 1667 proved disastrous to the people of Marblehead. Owing to the inclemency of the weather during most of the season when fish were plenty they were unable to venture out in their boats to any distance, and in several instances those who did so were lost. The court therefore, with considerate sympathy, voted to abate their proportion of the county tax for one year.

In October, 1668, William Walton, the faithful and zealous missionary, died, after having served his Master and the poor people of Marblehead for a period of thirty years. Coming to them as a missionary to preach the Gospel, he became, without ordination as a clergyman, a loving pastor, a faithful friend, and a wise and prudent counselor. His advice was sought on all matters of public or private importance, and when obtained, was usually followed without question. His loss was felt as a public bereavement by the entire community.

Mr. Walton was succeeded in his noble work by Mr. Samuel Cheever, a young man who but a few years before had graduated at Harvard College with the highest honors. The meeting-house had recently been repaired, and the young preacher was received with marked attention and every possible evidence of respect. The town voted to pay him £40 for his services the first six months, and after that £80 yearly.

In March, 1669, another gallery was built at the north-eastern end of the meeting-house, Robert Knight, Francis Collings and Jeremiah Neal being the builders. The contract was, that the gallery should be built with "five seats, stairs and other necessaries as the other gallery was," and the carpenters were to receive £23 New England money for their services.

The road leading to the Great Neck was evidently laid out during this year, as on the 18th day of December it was voted that "on the next convenient day as many of the commoners and proprietors as can shall see that a convenient way may be laid out for drift of cattle to the Neck on the other side of the great harbor."

To the early settlers, and for many years, the harbor was known as the "Great Bay," or "Great Harbor," while the cove at the lower end of the town, known as "Little Harbor," was on account of its convenience, and because it was so much nearer the settlement used almost exclusively as *the* harbor.

On the 6th of April, 1672, the town "ordered by general consent that a 'Lentoo' be built adjoining to the back side of the meeting-house, twenty foot in breadth and forty foot in length, with three gable ends in the same, with timber work," etc. The building of this addition to their house of worship was the cause of great controversy and disagreement among the inhabitants. The town voted to instruct the selectmen to "seat the men and women in the 'Lentoo,'" but after vainly endeavoring to assign seats to the fault-finding and jealous worshipers, they declined to have anything to do with the matter, and were with difficulty persuaded not to resign their offices as selectmen. The disagreement now assuming the phase of a downright quarrel, a town meeting was called, and the matter was put into the hands of a committee, consisting of Mr. Maverick, Mr. John Devereux, John Peach, Senior, and Nicholas Merritt. These men were fully empowered "to seat the Lentoo men and women in ye seats, cut an alley-way through ye ould part, dispose of any persons who shall want seats or lose their seats by means of ye alley, in ye most convenient places in ye ould or new part, and rectify any disorders with due care that such as have been formerly seated may keep their places as many as conveniently can." It was also ordered, for "ye regulating and preventing of disorders in seats," that Richard Norman should have power to "look after all persons, men and women, that they keep their seats upon penaltie of two shillings, five pence for every single offence upon every Sabbath day." These fines were to be "destrained upon legal warning given to the parties offending," and one-third of the amount was to be given to Mr. Norman, and the remainder to be appropriated for the poor of the town.

However sadly the inhabitant may have disagreed in regard to the seating of the "lentoo," as they termed the addition, it is evident that the day on which it was raised was one of general rejoicing. Those who are familiar with New England customs in the olden time know that it was thought next to impossible to have a "house raising," without extending an invitation to the entire community to assist. These occasions were generally observed as holidays, and were devoted by the younger people to merry-making and the most joyous festivities. The wine and other liquors flowed freely, and, while many partook of the beverage temperately, an opportunity was given to the weak and thoughtless to indulge in a reckless round of dissipation and drunkenness. The raising of the lean-to was no exception to the general custom. In the report of the expenses incident to the occasion we find the following item: "Paid for rum and charges about fish at raising the Leantoo at the Meeting-House, . . . £4 2*s*. 6*d*."

The custom of using intoxicating liquors as a beverage, which prevailed throughout New England until a comparatively recent date, was one of the besetting sins of the people of Marblehead from its earliest settlement. Not a vessel went from its harbor,

whether for a long trip to the "Banks" or for a few days fishing in the bay, without a plentiful supply of liquor. Not a vessel arrived with a fare of fish without providing "something to take" for washing-out day. The custom was so universal that even at the town-meetings liquor was provided as a matter of course.

As a consequence many persons were disorderly, and the meetings were frequently disturbed.

In 1674 the town had increased to such an extent that there were then one hundred and fourteen householders, whose names with their common age are recorded in the records. At a town-meeting, held during this year, it was voted that "all these fifteen or sixteen houses built in Marblehead, before ye year 1660, shall be allowed one cows common and a halfe."

In 1675 the war between the Massachusetts Colonists and the Indians, known as King Philip's War broke out. This terrible and bloody war lasted three years, and ended only at the death of King Philip. The whites had so diminished before its close that they began seriously to apprehend total extinction. During the year 1677, while the war was at its height, two Indians were brought as captives to Marblehead. Their fate is thus portrayed by Mr. Increase Mather in a letter dated 23d of fifth month, 1677,—

"Sabbath night was sennight, the women at Marblehead, as they came out of the meeting-house, fell upon two Indians that were brought in as captives, and in a tumultuous way, very barbarously murdered them. Doubtless if the Indians hear of it the captives among them will be served accordingly."

The first school in town, of which there is any record, was opened in 1675, Mr. Edward Humphries being the teacher, and receiving forty pounds yearly for his services.

In March, 1679, it was agreed at a town-meeting "that Robert Knight shall be clearly requited and discharged from paying his Town Rates during his life for his workmanship done in the meeting-house in building the gallery. It was also voted at the same meeting "that Robert Knight hath libertie for to flow the ferry Swamps as to the benefit of his mill, and it is to continue during the townes pleasure." These votes illustrate the impulsive and generous disposition of the people of Marblehead, traits which have characterized their descendants to a marked degree ever since. But a few years before the passage of these votes, Mr. Knight, in building the lean-to, had found it necessary to cut away a post under the gallery. For this he was severely censured, and ordered to replace it under a heavy penalty. Naturally resenting the indignity he delayed his work somewhat, and the town voted if it were not completed before a certain date "to sue him, and to prosecute him from Court to Court until the case was ended." Like many others who have suffered from the temporary unpopularity which their actions have occasioned, Mr Knight lived to see the excitement of his fellow-citizens abate, and had the pleasure of experiencing the popular reaction in his favor, of which the votes were an evidence.

Sailors and fishermen are proverbial for their sympathy and disinterested benevolence in behalf of the distressed. The people of Marblehead have ever been a conspicuous example of this class of men, and their generosity and good-heartedness is shown on nearly every page of their history. A vote passed by the commoners in 1682, gives an evidence of their kindness which should serve as an example worthy of emulation by their posterity. Richard Reed, a man advanced in years, having forfeited his land for a fish-fence, by being in arrears for rent, the town "voted in consideration of his age and losses, that he might pay two pounds, and the rest should be abated; and that he should enjoy the privilege of using the land for a fish-fence for the rest of his natural life."

The year 1684 was made memorable by the public ordination of Mr. Cheever, and the organization of a church in Marblehead. Mr. Cheever had been preaching for sixteen years, and the number of communicants had increased to fifty-four, who were in the habit of going to Salem to have the sacraments of baptism and the Lord's Supper administered. This having been found inconvenient, a vote was passed by the congregation, after the afternoon service on the 6th of July, to request Mr. Cheever to be ordained, and to take measures for the organization of a church. On the 16th of July a solemn fast was observed for the blessing of God on the undertaking, the exercises being conducted by the Rev. Mr. Hall, of Beverly. The ordination took place on the 13th of August in the presence of the Deputy Governor, five of the assistants, twenty elders and a large concourse of people.

For some time previous to the period of which we are writing, certain Indians, heirs of the squaw sachem of Saugus, had presented claims of ownership in the lands comprised in the township of Marblehead, and after several years of controversy it was decided to hold a town-meeting and take appropriate action in regard to the matter. Accordingly on the 14th of July a meeting was held, and Moses Maverick, John Devereux, Captain Samuel Ward, Thaddeus Ridden, William Beal, Richard Read and Nathaniel Waltown, with the selectmen, were chosen a committee to investigate the matter and search after the pretended claims. Messrs. John Devereux and Samuel Ward, as a sub-committee, were authorized to purchase the land and take a deed of it in the name of the town in case the claim should be found valid. The committee reported that the claim was valid, and that they had purchased the land. The town therefore appointed a committee, one of whom was the Rev. Samuel Cheever, to "proportion each Mans part according to his privilege in the township." The committee, after attending to the duty assigned them, reported that after "proportioning the amount by

cow leases, they found it to amount to nine pence per cow in money."

Passing over the events of the intervening years between 1684 and '92, of which there is no record of any importance, we come to the period when the great witchcraft delusion spread with such terrible and deadly effect among the people of Essex County. The people of Marblehead, credulous and superstitious as were the inhabitants of nearly all maritime towns, listened with awe to the tales of distress which were brought, from time to time, from their neighbors in Salem, and, clustered about their firesides or in the shops along the shore, whispered of ghosts and goblins, and told blood-curdling tales of the sea.

At this time there lived in Marblehead an old woman, the wife of a fisherman, of whose supernatural powers many weird and dreadful stories had been told. "Mammy Red" was considered a witch, and had been known to afflict those whom she disliked in various ways. To some she sent sickness and distress by wishing that a "bloody cleaver" might be found on the cradles of their infant children; and it was said that whenever the wish was uttered the cleaver was distinctly seen, and the children sickened and died. At other times, it was said, she caused the milk to curdle in the milk-pail as soon as it had left the cow; and numerous instances were cited to prove that she had often caused the butter churned by her enemies to turn to "blue wool."

In spite of the grievous manner in which they believed themselves afflicted, the kind-hearted people of Marblehead had made no complaint to the authorities of the matter, and it was reserved for several deluded young women of Salem, who had already caused much suffering in that community by their ready accusations, to cause her arrest and imprisonment. Early in the month of May, 1692, a warrant was issued by John Hathorne and Jonathan Curwin, two of the assistants, for the arrest of Wilmot Read, wife of Samuel Read, of Marblehead, who was charged with having "committed sundry acts of witchcraft on the bodies of Mary Walcot and Mercy Lewis, and others, of Salem Village, to their great hurt," etc. The examination took place on the 31st of May, at the house of Lieutenant Nathaniel Ingersoll, of Salem. After listening patiently to the evidence the grand jury brought in two indictments against the woman. In one she was charged with "certain detestable arts called witchcraft and sorceries wickedly, maliciously and feloniously used, practiced and exercised at and in the town of Salem. . . . in, upon and against one Eliza Booth of Salem, single woman, by which said wicked arts ye said Eliza Booth was tortured, afflicted, consumed, pined, wasted and tormented." The other indictment charged her with practicing her "detestable arts" upon one Eliza Hubbard, of Salem.

After the examination usual in such cases at the time, with no defense, save her own vehement protestations of innocence, the poor woman was condemned and sentenced to be hanged. She was executed at Gallows Hill, Salem, on the 22d of September.

CHAPTER LXXIX.

MARBLEHEAD—(*Continued*).

Superstitious Beliefs—The Screeching Woman—Weird Legends—St. Michael's Church—New Meeting-House Built—Marblehead in 1714—The Marblehead Dialect—Seamen Captured by Pirates.

In the preceding chapter an evidence has been given of the superstition of the people of Essex County at the time of the ever-memorable witchcraft delusion, but it would be almost impossible to relate half the superstitious traditions firmly believed by the inhabitants of Marblehead then and for more than a century after.

Stories of phantom ships seen at sea before the loss of a vessel; of the appearance on the water of loved ones who had died at home; foot-steps and voices heard mysteriously in the still hours of the night, coming as warnings from another world; signs and omens which foretold the approaching death of some member of a family, or prophecies whispered by the wind that those away on the mighty deep would find a watery grave.

These, and other stories of pirates met on the seas and smugglers who secreted their treasures along the shore, formed the burden of conversation during the long winter evenings. Of the many traditions of this kind, told with simple faith and sincere belief by our ancestors, few have come down to their descendants, and of these, the story of the screeching woman is perhaps the most vividly remembered. It was said that during the latter part of the seventeenth century a Spanish ship laden with rich merchandise was captured by pirates and brought into the harbor of Marblehead. The crew and every person on board the ill-fated ship had been murdered at the time of the capture, except a beautiful English lady, whom the ruffians brought on shore near what is now called Oakum Bay, and there barbarously murdered her. The few fishermen who inhabited the place were absent, and the women and children who remained could do nothing to prevent the crime. The screams of the victim were loud and dreadful, and her cries of "Lord, save me! oh, Lord Jesus, save me!" were distinctly heard. The body was buried where the crime was perpetrated, and for over one hundred and fifty years, on the anniversary of that dreadful tragedy, the screams of the poor woman were repeated in a voice so shrill and supernatural as to send an indescribable thrill of horror through all who heard them.

There were other beliefs as firmly held, which, though equally as superstitious, were much more agreeable and romantic. The young women, on the

nights when a new moon was to appear, would congregate at one of the houses in the neighborhood, and, putting a huge pot of tallow over the fire, would drop "hot nails" into the boiling fat, firmly believing that the young man who should appear while the nails were dropping would be the future husband of the fair damsel who dropped them. At other times the young women would go to an upper window, and, reaching half-way out, throw a ball of yarn into the street, believing that the lucky youth who picked it up would surely come forward with an offer of marriage.

Until the ordination of Mr. Cheever nearly all the marriages in town had been solemnized by Mr. Maverick, who had been appointed one of the magistrates, and was for many years the only Justice of the Peace in the place. Mr. Maverick was a selectman, town clerk, tything man, and a member of every important committee chosen by the town. Owning a considerable portion of the township, and being largely interested in the fishing trade, he was a man of great influence in the community, and his advice, when given, was followed with implicit confidence by the simple fishermen with whom he lived.

The customs of the people at this time, and for many years after, were, some of them, of the most curious nature. A marriage was the scene of the most joyous festivities, and the occasion of a season of merry-making for an entire week in duration. Everybody in the community who chose attended the wedding, and when, at a late hour in the night, the guests were ready to depart for their own homes, the bride and groom were put to bed by their maids and groomsmen, and the entire company marched around their bed, throwing old shoes and stockings, and various other missiles at them, for good luck, and by way of a parting salute.

As the town increased in importance and prosperity, the custom, so prevalent throughout New England, of presenting the pall-bearers at funerals with gloves and gold finger-rings, became very fashionable among the wealthier families. These rings were often of a very curious and unique design, and there are several of them held as heirlooms by some of the older inhabitants to-day.

For some years previous to the year 1698 it appeared that no school had been kept in Marblehead for any length of time exceeding a few brief months. In November of that year a school was opened by Mr. Josiah Cotton, who came to Marblehead at the urgent request of several of the influential inhabitants. Mr. Cotton was a young man, not quite nineteen years of age, who had but a short time before graduated from Harvard College. He was a grandson of the Rev. John Cotton, and a nephew of the celebrated Dr. Cotton Mather. The town agreed to pay him fifteen pounds a year for his services, and he received "six pence and a groate a week" from each of the scholars who attended the school. As the inhabitants generally sent their children to the school it soon increased to seventy-five pupils, and the income of the teacher was increased to about fifty pounds per annum in silver money.

During his stay in Marblehead Mr. Cotton lived for the greater part of the time in the family of the minister, Mr. Cheever, though for a short time he boarded in the families of Captain Edward Brattle and Captain John Browne. While here he studied theology, and preached his first sermon November 23, 1701. In 1704 Mr. Cotton took his final leave of Marblehead, and some years after wrote the account of his life while here, from which we are permitted to extract the following:

"When I came to this place I was raw and young, not 19 years old, and therefore it is not to be wondered at if I gave way too much to that extravagance Intemperance, Negligence in Religion and Disorderliness that is too rife in that place. I desire to thank God that it was no more, and to be humbled that it was so much, and to be thankful that after so much Vanity God brought me to myself and did not suffer me to be utterly ruined. In the latter end of 1703, I had thoughts of removing from Marblehead, supposing the place (then being under decay) not likely to afford me a settlement, and accordingly I left it about two months. In that time I went to Sandwich and Dartmouth, in the county of Bristol, to which I had been directed by the Boston ministers. I tarried and preached at Boston but one Sabbath.

"After my coming from thence, I had several letters from my brother, Cushing and Samuel Penhallow, Esq., inviting me to keep school at Portsmouth, on the Piscataqua River, towards which I steered my course; but calling at Marblehead, and they remaining still destitute of a schoolmaster, I agreed with them again (upon the advancement of my salary from the Town, under the former regulation for particular scholars, for they would not make it a free school) and tarried half a year longer in ye school, and desire to acknowledge it as a favor that my services therein as well as before was acceptable and successful.

"The people there being generally if not universally inclined to give their children common learning, the scholars rise but thin amongst them. There was but one that went from thence, whilst I kept school, to the college, and that was the minister's son, Mr Amos Cheever, now minister at Manchester. There was another designed, viz: John Browne son of Capt. Browne, but death put an end to the design. Some of the verses composed on that sorrowful occasion are as follows:—

> 'Death is a tribute which by nature we
> Are bound to pay unto Mortality;
> A lovely plant crop't in his tender years
> Lyes here, a subject not of prayer, but tears;
> A youth who promis't much, but awful death
> Hath snatched him from us and hath stopt his breath,
> And now he's gone you'll scarce his equal find,—
> On all accounts few equals left behind.'

"I have heretofore thought of writing a particular character and description of Marblehead, or rather, history of my observations there, but upon the attempt, finding that I could not do it without too much satyr and reflection (perhaps to some to whom I was obliged) I laid it aside and shall only say that the whole township is not much bigger than a large farm, and very rocky, and so they are forc't to get their living out of the sea, not having room to confound the fisherman with the husbandman, and so spoil both as they do in some places. It has a very good Harbour, which they improve to the best advantage for Fishing both Summer and Winter. . . . And, finally, it is one of the best country places to keep school in, provided a man be firmly fixt in principle of Virtue and religion, which I hear ily wish were more abundant among them in the life and power of it.

"My greatest intimacy whilst at Marblehead was in the family of Col. Legg, whose lady was a gentlewoman of great gravity, integrity and prudence, and with the families of Capt. John Browne and Capt. Edward Brattle, who married Col. Legg's two daughters,—by which means I had some uncomfortable jars with Colonel N. and his lady, who held no great correspondence with other families. And I would, from my own experience, advise all men, and especially young men, upon their first setting out in life, to avoid all meddling too far, and to carry it with an equal hand towards all."

There were days when pirates infested the high seas, and Marblehead from its isolated position became a place of frequent resort for this class of outlaws. The simple-minded inhabitants, naturally hospitable, cordially welcomed all who came among them, little dreaming that at times they were harboring some of the most heartless and bloodthirsty villains that ever sailed the ocean. In July, 1703, the Brigantine Charles, Captain Daniel Plowman, Commander, was fitted out at Boston, as a privateer, to cruise against the French and Spaniards, with whom Great Britain was then at war. When a few days out Captain Plowman was taken suddenly ill, and the inhuman crew locked him in the cabin and left him to die. His body was thrown overboard, and John Quelch, the lieutenant, assumed command. With the consent and co-operation of the crew Quelch seized the vessel, and proceeded on a piratical cruise sailing to the coast of Brazil. He confined his operations to that locality, plundering several Portuguese ships and brigantines, killing the Captains and taking several negro slaves as prisoners, besides gold and other booty. In May of the following year, (1704), the brigantine arrived at Marblehead, purporting to have come from New Spain. The suspicions of the owners had been aroused, however, and a search of the vessel revealed several Portuguese flags and other articles, which confirmed the evil reports that had been heard concerning the vessel. Finding that they were detected, Quelch and his crew attemped to escape, and secreted themselves along the shore. They were hotly pursued by the authorities, and were finally captured. Some were found at Gloucester, others at the Isle of Shoals, while Quelch, it is said, was discovered in Marblehead. Twenty men in all were captured, and were subsequently convicted of piracy. Of these, only one, a youth of nineteen years, gave Marblehead as his birth-place. Quelch, with four of his associates, was executed at Boston June 30, 1704.

The town records of this period are very incomplete, and furnish little information concerning the customs or habits of life of the inhabitants.

In April, 1709, the commoners leased all that great head of land on the northwest side of Charles Island in Little Harbor to Edward Dimond, "shoreman," for thirteen shillings yearly. This person was probably the famous "old Dimond," of whom such fabulous stories were told and believed. It was said that he was a wizard and possessed the "black art," which enabled him to foretell coming events, to avert disaster from his friends, and bring distress upon his enemies. When the night was dark and stormy, and the wind gave evidence of blowing a gale, "old Dimond" would wend his way to the "burying hill," and there, among the graves and tomb-stones, "beat about" and give orders for the management of his vessels at sea. In a voice loud and clear, distinctly heard above the roar of the tempest, these orders would be given, and no one dared question their power to save from shipwreck. The advice of "old Dimond" was sought by people far and near who believed in his great powers; but woe betide the evil doer who came into his presence. Once, when a guilty fellow, who had stolen wood from a poor widow, came to him for advice, the wizard "charmed" him, and caused him to walk all night with a heavy log of wood on his back. At another time, when a sum of money had been stolen from an aged couple, "old Dimond" told where it could be found, and gave the name of the thief. Let not the reader think that these stories illustrating the superstitiou of our ancestors are exaggerated in the least. They were told by aged people living in Marblehead but a few years ago, now at rest, who remembered with what faith and earnestness they were told by their mothers and grandmothers.

Of the same class are the stories told of the man who was chased by a corpse in a coffin, and shortly after sickened and died; of the poor fellow who was chased by his Satanic majesty himself, seated in a carriage drawn by four white horses; and of the young fisherman who arrived home in the night, and meeting the young woman to whom he was betrothed, gave her a few of the fish he had caught only to see her fade away and vanish from his sight. The next morning the heart-broken lover learned that the girl he loved had died during his absence, and became convinced that he had seen an apparition. What the ghost did with the fish has never been satisfactorily explained.

Of the events of the intervening years between 1709 and 1714 little can be ascertained. A few years previous an Episcopal Church had been gathered and a parish organized, and during the year 1714, a church edifice was erected. The funds for the erection of the building were subscribed by thirty-three gentlemen who pledged themselves in various sums to the amount of one hundred and seventy-five pounds. The list was headed by Colonel Francis Nicholson, who subscribed twenty-five pounds, and the remainder was made up by several captains of vessels in sums varying from two pounds to twelve pounds each. The frame and all the materials used in the construction of the building were brought from England. The first rector was Rev. William Shaw, who arrived and took charge of the parish on the 20th of July, 1715.

In 1714, the Rev. Mr. Cheever having become very old and infirm, his church voted to settle a younger minister with him as an assistant. Accordingly, a meeting was held, and two candidates were presented for the choice of the church, one of whom was Mr. John Barnard, of Boston, and the other Mr. Edward Holyoke. Mr. Barnard was chosen by a small majority, and at a town meeting convened for the purpose, the choice of the church was ratified by the town. This action on the part of the town was far from satisfactory to the adherents of Mr. Holyoke,

and occasioned a controversy which resulted in a division of the church and the withdrawal of the disaffected members. The town voted to grant permission for the organization of another church and the erection of a new meeting-house, and a charter was obtained from the General Court. The members of the First Church sent an earnest and solemn protest to the Governor and the Legislature against the formation of a new church, declaring that as there was already one "church and one meeting-house in the place," the erection of a third place of worship would disturb the peace of the town. They also charged their brethren who desired to form the new church with the grave offense of going about the town and "defaming and vilifying the character of Mr. Barnard." On the 9th of November, 1715, Mr. Barnard entered upon his duties as the assistant pastor of the First Church, and on the 25th of April, 1716, the new meeting-house having been erected, the Second Congregational Church was organized, and Mr. Holyoke was ordained as pastor. The ordination of Mr. Barnard took place on the 18th of July of the same year.

The condition of the town at this time is described by Mr. Barnard in his autobiography as miserable in the extreme. He says: "When I first came in 1714, there were two companies of poor, smoke dried, rude, ill clothed men, trained to no military discipline but that of 'Whipping the Snake,' as it was called. There was not so much as one proper carpenter, nor mason, nor tailor, nor butcher in the town, nor any market worth naming; but they had their houses built by country workmen, and their clothes made out of town, and supplied themselves with beef and pork from Boston, which drained the town of its money. And what above all, I would remark, there was not so much as one foreign trading vessel belonging to the town, nor for several years after I came into it; though no town had really greater advantages in their hands. The people contented themselves to be slaves that digged in the mines, and left the merchants of Boston, Salem and Europe, to carry away the gains, by which means the town was always dismally poor in circumstances, involved in debt to the merchants more than they were worth; nor could I find twenty families in it that upon the best examination could stand upon their own legs; and they were generally as rude, swearing, drunken and fighting a crew as they were poor."

Though the influence of Mr. Barnard the people were finally induced to send their own fish to market, Mr. Joseph Sweett being the first man to engage in the enterprise. He fitted out a small schooner, which he sent to the Barbadoes with a cargo of fish, and, being successful was in a few years enabled to build vessels and send his to European markets. In a short time others, encouraged by his success, engaged in the business, and the town enjoyed an era of prosperity such as it had never known before. Good workmen of every description now abounded in the place, and from their more frequent intercourse with the outside world, the air of isolation which had so long characterized the inhabitants, began to wear off to a certain extent, and though their manners were somewhat rude, they became noted for their kindness and hospitality to strangers.

At this time, and several generations later, the town was noted throughout New England for the peculiar dialect of its people. So broad and quick was their pronunciation, and so strange were the idioms characterizing their speech, that a native of the town was known wherever he went. Nor was this peculiarity confined to any class or condition of men residing in the town. All showed it alike, of whatever rank or condition in life. The words were clipped off very shortly, and in some sections there was a slight difference in the dialect noticeable. The "Cunny Land" people always dropped the "*h*" in speaking, and their vernacular was much like that of a Cockney Englishman, in addition to that which betrayed them "to the manner born."

Hardly a family in the olden time escaped with the correct pronunciation of its name. So accustomed were many of the inhabitants to the cognomen, by which they were known, that in some instances they did not recognize their own names when called by them. An instance of this kind is related in the "Life and Letters of Judge Story," who was a native of the town.

"Once while he was trying a case in the Circuit Court, in Boston, the clerk called out the name of one of the Jury as Michael Treffery (it being so spelt. No answer was given. Again he was called, and still there was silence. 'It is very strange,' said the clerk, 'I saw that man here not two minutes ago.' 'Where does he come from?' asked the judge. 'Marblehead, may it please your Honor,' said the clerk. 'If that's the case,' said the judge, 'let me see the list.' The clerk handed it up to him. He looked at the name a minute, and, handing back the list, said 'call Mike Treeve' throwing the accent on the last syllable.) 'Here!' answered a gruff voice. 'Why did you not answer before?' said the clerk. 'Treffery is no way to pronounce my name,' said the juryman, 'my name is Mike Treeve, as the judge knows.'"

Another anecdote to the same purpose is related in the work.

On one occasion, when some of our fishermen were in court to settle a mutiny which had taken place on the Grand Banks (of Newfoundland), one being called upon to state what he knew, said 'that the skipper and one of his shipmates had what he called a "jor of ile." The presiding judge in vain endeavored to get a more intelligible answer, and finally Judge Story was called upon, as usual, to act as interpreter to his townsman, which he did, telling the court that the 'jor of ile,' in the Marblehead dialect, was a 'jaw awhile,' which, being interpreted, meant that the two men abused each other grossly for some time."

Though the dialect once so general among the people is now almost extinct, there are many words used occasionally, to know the meaning of which would puzzle a stranger. Often when any of the natives feel slightly cold or chilly they will say that they are "*crimmy*." If they lose their way in the dark and become confused or bewildered, they will say they were "pixelated." In speaking of the ceiling of a room some of the older people still call it the "*planch-*

ment." When a lady, on examining of sewing, finds that it is carelessly, or improperly done, it is not unusual to hear her pronounce the work "a *froach.*" When food has been improperly prepared, or is not sufficiently cooked, it is spoken of as "*cautch.*"

When very angry for any reason, it is a common occurrence to hear some one exclaim "Squael 'im up!" "Squael something at him!" or "He ought to be squaeled up!" which being interpreted, means "Throw something at him!" "Stone him!" or "He ought to be stoned."

A crumb or a small piece of anything to eat, is called a "*grummet,*" and a sulky or ill-natured person is said to be "*gruty.*"

The difficulties against which the fishermen and sailors on board the merchant vessels of the colony, were obliged to contend were for many years greatly augmented by pirates, who infested the waters on the coast of North America. In June, 1722, Edward Low, a noted pirate, while cruising near Cape Sables, took possession of the schooner Mary, of Marblehead, Thomas Trefry, master, and after robbing several other vessels in the vicinity, made prisoners of Nicholas Merritt, master of the Shallop Jane; Philip Ashton, Jr., master of the schooner Milton; Joseph Libby, one of the Ashton's crew; and Lawrence Phabens, one of the crew of the schooner Rebekah. These were all active men about twenty years of age, and though they pleaded tearfully to be released, were forced into the service of the pirates. Unfortunately no record had been preserved by which the experience of the prisoners can be narrated, except in the case of Ashton. Confined on board the pirate ship, narrowly watched, and continually in fear that his life would be taken, he was obliged to perform the most menial services. His sufferings from hardship and the cruelty of the crew at length became so unendurable, that he resolved to make his escape even at the risk of his life. For months, no opportunity presented itself; but in March, 1723, the vessel stopped at a small desolate island off the West Indies to obtain fresh water. Here Ashton was sent on shore to assist in rolling the hogsheads to the watering-place. Watching his opportunity, he at length succeeded in eluding the vigilance of his captors, and running to the woods, concealed himself in the thick brush with which the island abounded. Supposing at first that he had gone to gather cocoanuts, the pirates made no search for him, but finding that he did not return, they made a diligent search, coming several times so near his place of concealment that he could distinctly hear their conversation. At length, getting out of patience, they decided to leave without him, and to his great joy, Ashton saw the vessel sail away from the island.

But though liberated from the pirates his hardships were not an end. Alone on a desert island, with no shelter from the weather, and with very scanty means of subsistence, his sufferings at length became very intense. His feet became sore and blistered from exposure, and at length, to add to his misfortunes, he was nearly prostrated by sickness.

While in this condition, he was attacked by a company of Spaniards who visited the island, and narrowly escaped with his life.

Finally, in March, 1725, nearly three years after he fell into the hands of the pirates, he was taken from the island by Captain Dove, of Salem, who had put in there for water. When released from his perilous situation the *poor* fellow had scarcely a rag of clothing left, and the kind-hearted sailors were obliged to clothe him from their own scanty wardrobes.

On his arrival in Marblehead, Ashton was received as one from the dead. On the following Sunday, the Rev. John Barnard preached a sermon concerning his miraculous escape, the text being: Daniel iii. 17, "If it be so, our God whom we serve, is able to deliver us from the burning fiery furnace, and he will deliver us out of thine hand, O King."

Nicholas Merritt had a similar experience. After being with the banditti several months, he found means to escape, though he did not return to Marblehead for more than a year after.

CHAPTER LXXX.

MARBLEHEAD—(*Continued*).

Town House Built—Ravages of Small Pox—Rev. Edward Holyoke—Pirates in Marblehead—The Story of Agnes Surriage—A Boy's Apprenticeship—Fire Department Organized—The French and Indian War.

In 1724, the town having developed into a comparatively prosperous and enterprising community, various measures of public utility and improvement were adopted. The old meeting-house was enlarged by an addition twenty feet long built at the southeast end. Permission was granted to Nathan Bowen to open a public school, and it was voted to increase the salary of the schoolmaster and to adopt some "proper method of paying Mr Cheever his salary." The town seems to have experienced great difficulty in obtaining school-teachers, and finally, at a town meeting held March 4, 1727, it was voted to authorize the selectmen to hire a schoolmaster at a salary of not more than eighty pounds the first year. At the same meeting it was voted to build a town-house, and the selectmen were chosen a committee to "treat with some workmen in order for the building said house and make return to ye next town-meeting." It was also voted that "the Town House shall be built on ye land where ye Gale and Cagge now stands on."[1] At a subsequent meeting, on the 17th of April, the town voted, in accordance with the report of the

[1] Jail and cage.

selectmen, to build "the town house fifty feet long, thirty feet wide and thirty-three feet stud." The selectmen were chosen to superintend the erection of the building, and the following year, 1728, the work was completed. The first town-meeting held in the town-house after its completion, was probably held March 17, 1728, as that is the date of the first meeting called there of which there is any record.

On the 22d of November, 1728, Governor Burnet visited the town. He was met at the "bounds of the town" by about fifty gentlemen on horseback, and the local militia, under arms, and escorted to the residence of John Oulton, Esq., where dinner was served. "The streets being lined on both sides"—we are informed by a Boston paper of the period—"for the Cavalcade to pass thro', after which the Militia were drawn up before the Door and fired three volleys (the Hon. Samuel Browne, Esq., Col. of the Regiment being present and gave the words of command) and then all the Cannon of the several ships in the harbor were discharged; the like appearance was never known in this place before."

During the month of May, 1730, intelligence was received in Marblehead that the small-pox was raging in the town of Boston. As rumors of the fatal effects of this dread and loathsome disease became more prevalent the excitement of the people approached almost to frenzy. A town-meeting was called and it was voted to build a fence across the road near the entrance to the town. This fence was provided with a gate, which was kept locked and four men were stationed as a guard, with instructions to "restrain all strangers from Boston entering the town." The guard was kept on day and night for over two months, being relieved every twenty-four hours. Negroes, Indians and mulatto slaves were forbidden to walk the streets after nine o'clock at night, and every possible precaution was taken to prevent the disease from making its appearance. But in vain. In October a young woman named Hannah Waters was taken sick, and the disease to the consternation of the inhabitants proved to be the small pox in its most contagious form. The pestilence, having obtained a foot-hold, spread from house to house in defiance of the almost superhuman efforts of the panic-stricken inhabitants, and ere long nearly every family was afflicted by sickness or death. Many of the people in their terror fled from the town. Business of all kinds was suspended, and quarantine was declared against Marblehead by all the neighboring towns. Nurses in attendance upon the sick were forbidden to appear in the streets, and all dogs running at large were ordered to be killed. The disease continued its fearful ravages till late in the summer of 1731, and gathered its victims with an unsparing hand. Rich and poor, old and young, the learned and the unlettered, were alike afflicted by this unsparing agent of death, and finally only two members of the Board of Selectmen remained to discharge the duties of their office. A meeting was called by a justice of the peace, for the first time in the history of the town, and others were elected to fill the vacancies. The town was not declared free from the disease until nearly a year after its appearance. The number of deaths caused by the pestilence is not recorded, but it is certain that few towns in the country have ever been visited by a calamity more fatal or disastrous in its effect.

The people had not recovered from the blighting effects of the terrible visitation to which they had been subjected, when another burden was laid upon them. As soon as the fishing business began to resume its accustomed activity a law was passed by the General Court, requiring a tax of six pence per month from every fisherman in the province. The penalty for the non-payment of this tax was a fine of twenty pounds sterling. The passage of this act was regarded as a great hardship by the fishermen of Marblehead, who complained that they could barely obtain a livelihood, and could ill afford to pay the tax. Finally, Benjamin Boden, a man more daring than his associates, determined to resist what he termed "the imposition," and flatly refused to comply with the requirements of the law. The collector, William Fairchild, Esq., after vainly demanding the tax, brought a suit against the delinquent for the amount. This action on the part of the collector caused great excitement throughout the town, and finally a town-meeting was called to consider the matter. At this meeting the tax was denounced as unjust and oppressive, and the town voted to pay the penalty and the cost of any suit or suits arising from a resistance to the six-penny act.

On the 30th of May, 1737, the Rev. Edward Holyoke, pastor of the Second Congregational Church, was unanimously chosen by the Board of Overseers of Harvard College to fill the office made vacant by the death of President Wadsworth. At first his people strenuously objected to his acceptance of the office, but after several meetings for prayer and conference had been held, they gave their consent, and Mr. Holyoke departed for Cambridge. At the last of these meetings prayer was offered by the Rev. John Barnard, who prayed long and earnestly that the people might be reconciled to part with their pastor. The prayer had the desired effect, and when some of the people were asked why they consented to part with so valuable a man and so excellent a pastor, the quaint reply was,—"Old Barnard prayed him away."

In April, 1712, the General Court granted the sum of five hundred and fifty pounds for the purpose of erecting a fortification for the defense of the harbor against the French cruisers. This action, though in accordance with a petition from the town presented a few years before, was the cause of a great deal of contention, and not a little ill feeling, among the inhabitants.

Three gentlemen were chosen treasurers of the

fund, and a committee of five were elected to call upon the captain-general and receive the money, with instructions to pay it over to the treasurers. The most careful preparations were made for the security of the money when it should be received. An iron-bound chest was provided, fastened with two locks, and the town voted that it should not be opened except in the presence of all three of the treasurers. A few days after the passage of this vote two of the treasurers announced their refusal to serve, and Thomas Gerry and Nathan Bowen were chosen to fill the vacancies, the other treasurer being Captain Joseph Swett. The committee chosen to receive the money did not pay it over to the treasurers as soon as was thought proper, and finally, at a meeting held in November, the treasurers were authorized to sue them in the name of the town. This vote does not appear to have been carried into effect, however; and at a meeting held in January, 1743, the selectmen were authorized to call upon the committee and demand a report of what had been done with the money. It is probable that the committee held the money in their hands upon some legal technicality, for at another meeting the town treasurer was authorized to receive it, and no more is said of the matter in the records. Another grant of one hundred and sixty-six pounds had been made by the General Court in November, and the fort was probably completed in the latter part of the year 1742. This fort, which is still standing, was afterwards ceded to the United States, and for many years has been known as Fort Sewall, having been named in honor of Chief Justice Samuel Sewall, a distinguished citizen of Marblehead. It was fortified during the Revolution and in the War of 1812, and again during the Rebellion, when it was remodeled.

At the time of which we write Marblehead boasted a public house or tavern, known as the "Fountain Inn." To this house the captains of vessels and the gentry of the colony resorted when they visited the town, and there the fishermen, many of them, spent their evenings and their money when they returned from successful voyages. It was whispered that certain pirates and smugglers who were known to have visited the town had found a friendly shelter beneath its roof. These stories may or may not have been true, but there were those living who remembered when a gang of pirates had been apprehended and arrested in the streets of Marblehead. They remembered also, with what a lavish hand these pirates expended their money, and the excitement caused in the town when several of the inhabitants were arrested for receiving it. The "Fountain Inn," however, was to be made famous by a more romantic tale than any yet related by the gossiping girls and women of the village. One day in the autumn of 1742 a "coach and four" drove up to the door of the inn, and a young and handsome gentleman alighted and entered. The guest was Sir Henry Frankland, then collector of the port of Boston, who had come to Marblehead to superintend the building of the fort, which was then in process of erection. As he entered the house he was impressed by the surpassing beauty of a young girl, apparently about sixteen years of age, who, on her bended knees, was scrubbing the stairs. Noticing that her dress was poor and scanty, and that her feet were destitute of shoes and stockings, he called her to his side and presenting her with money, told her to purchase a pair of shoes. The artless simplicity, the beauty, and exceedingly musical voice of the young girl interested Frankland, and he at once made inquiries concerning her history. Her name, he learned, was Agnes Surriage, and that she was the daughter of Edward Surriage, a poor but honest fisherman. A short time after, when Frankland again visited the town, he was surprised to find the little maid still working without shoes and stockings, and to his inquiry why she had not purchased them she replied: "I have indeed, sir, with the crown you gave me; but I keep them to wear to meeting." Sir Harry's heart was touched. Taking the blushing girl by the hand, he said: Would you like to go to school? Will you go with me if I will take you from this life of toil and drudgery? I will educate you, and you shall be a lady." Then seeking her parents, he obtained their permission to remove her to Boston, where she was permitted to enjoy the best educational advantages the place then afforded. For several years she pursued her studies at school, and acquired a knowledge of all the graces and accomplishments then thought necessary for a well bred and fashionable lady.

The beauty of Sir Harry Frankland's ward was for some time the theme of conversation in the aristocratic circles of Boston. A few years, and their relations were discussed in a far different manner. Charges of improper intimacy were freely made, and with Puritanic firmness the polite society of the town refused to recognize one whom they believed to be guilty of transgressing the most holy laws of God and man. Poor Agnes. Her benefactor had indeed succeeded in gaining her affections, but the pride of race and position prevented him from wedding one whom he considered of ignoble birth. The indignation of the people against "an alliance unsanctioned by the holy rite of matrimony" at length became so great that "the young collector resolved to seek a residence for himself, Agnes and her relatives, in the seclusion of the country. Accordingly he purchased a tract of land in the village of Hopkinton, where, on a hill commanding a full view of the surrounding country, he erected a commodious manor house. The grounds were laid out in a beautiful and artistic manner. Trees and shrubs, and choice plants of almost every description were set out to adorn the estate, which soon became one of the finest country seats in the province. For several years Frankland and Agnes Surriage resided at Hopkinton, surrounded with every comfort which

wealth could command, and devoting themselves wholly to the pleasures of a life of ease. The labor of the plantation was performed by slaves, upon whom the entire care of the vast estate devolved, while their master was hunting, riding or fishing with his lady.

During the year 1754 Frankland was unexpectedly called to England to transact business of importance, and embarked with Agnes Surriage, for London. On his arrival he attempted to introduce his fair ward into the circle of his family, but in spite of his most earnest solicitations in her behalf she was treated with the utmost disdain.

Having settled the business upon which he had been called to London, the young baronet spent a few months in making a tour of Europe, and then, with his ward, proceeded to Lisbon, the capital of Portugal, where he hired a house and entered at once into the gay round of fashionable life. It was during their residence in Lisbon that the great earthquake of November, 1755, occurred, which brought Frankland to a realization of the wicked and dissolute life he was leading, and caused him to do all in his power to repair the wrongs he had done poor Agnes Surriage. The day was All-Saints-day, one of the greatest festivals of the Roman Catholic and Anglican churches, and almost the entire population of the great city had assembled in the churches, when the shock of the earthquake burst upon them, burying thousands in the ruins of the falling temples. Frankland was riding with a lady to attend the services at one of the churches, when the walls of a building tottered, and fell over them, enveloping horses, carriage, and its occupants in the ruins. The death agony of the unfortunate lady was so great that she bit entirely through the sleeve of the scarlet coat of her companion, and tore a piece of flesh from his arm. The horses were instantly killed, and only Frankland was spared alive. Buried beneath the ruins he made a solemn vow that if it pleased God to deliver him from death he would thence forth lead a better life. Meanwhile, where was Agnes Surriage? Left alone in the house of her lover, she ran into the street upon the first intimation of the impending danger, and so, miraculously, her life had been spared. Wandering almost frantic with grief among the ruins, the sound of a well known voice arrested her attention, and, recognizing it as Frankland's, she worked with almost superhuman strength to secure his release. In the course of an hour her efforts were successful, and the baronet was rescued from the horrors of a living tomb. He was carried to a house near by, his wounds were dressed, and then, faithful to his vow a priest was sent for, and Agnes Surriage received the reward of her love and self sacrificing devotion, and became the Lady Agnes Frankland.

Sir Harry and his wife set out for England shortly after their marriage, and then, to make the solemn rite doubly sure, they were again married on board the boat during their passage, by a clergyman of the Church of England. On their arrival in London the Lady Agnes was received with every mark of esteem by the family of her husband, and her charming manners readily gained access to the most cultivated and aristocratic circles of the city.

After a brief residence in London and Lisbon, Sir Harry and Lady Frankland returned to Boston, where they bought an elegant mansion in the most aristocratic portion of the town for a winter residence, spending their summers on the beautiful estate at Hopkinton.

Frankland was appointed consul-general of Portugal in 1757, and in that capacity resided in Lisbon for several years. In 1763 he, with Lady Frankland, returned to America, and resided at Hopkinton, until his declining health caused him to leave the country and take up a residence at Bath, England, where he died in 1768, at the age of fifty-two years. After the death of her husband, Lady Agnes returned to her estate at Hopkinton, where she continued to reside respected and beloved by all who knew her, till the summer of 1775, when the breaking out of the Revolution caused her to return to England. As her carriage was on the way to Boston it was stopped by a company of Continental Soldiers, under command of Abner Croft, a zealous patriot, and Lady Frankland and her goods were held in custody until released by order of the Committee of Safety. Defended by a guard of soldiers her carriage was finally permitted to enter Boston, and while there she witnessed, from the windows of her residence, the terrible conflict at Bunker Hill. Shortly after, she sailed for England, and after residing in the Frankland family for several years, was married to John Drew, Esq., a wealthy banker of Chichester. She died April 23, 1783, at the age of fifty-seven years. The estate at Hopkinton was bequeathed, at her death, to her sister, Mrs. Swain, and finally passed into the hands of her brother, Isaac Surriage, the last member of her family who owned it.

Such is the story of Agnes Surriage, the daughter of a poor fisherman of Marblehead.

During the year 1744, Whitefield the celebrated evangelist visited the town. Here, as elsewhere throughout the province his labors produced the most violent and intense excitement. The Rev. Mr. Malcolm, rector of St. Michael's Church, engaged in an exciting discussion with him relative to some of his teachings, and the cause of Whitefield was warmly espoused by the pastors of the Congregational Churches.

The controversy incident to the advent of Whitefield had not closed when the difficulties which had long been threatening with France developed into a declaration of war. An expedition was planed for the conquest of Louisburg, an important French stronghold, and the plans were rejected by the legislature. Upon the petition of the merchants of Boston and Salem, and the fishermen of

Marblehead, the vote was reconsidered, and the plans were adopted by a majority of a single vote. The expedition, consisting of three thousand men and several frigates and gun-boats, was at length fitted out, and the command was given to Sir William Pepperell. Many of the sailors who manned the gun-boats were fishermen from this port. The town records bear testimony to the interest manifested by the inhabitants in the result of the contest. The fort was put in readiness to repel an attack at any moment. Breast-works were erected along the coves and beaches of the town. Parapets to "cover our men," and to "oppose and annoy the enemy should they attempt to land" were constructed at every vulnerable point. For days the men were summoned at the beat of the drum early in the morning to assist in erecting these fortifications, and it was determined to give the enemy a deadly reception. But for once the heroic fishermen did not have a chance to display their bravery. Their warlike preparations were hardly completed before the news was received of the success of the expedition, and the surrender of Louisburg.

In May, 1747, a school for poor children, was established through the generosity of Mr. Robert Hooper, Jr., who agreed to pay the necessary expences and the salary of the teacher, if the town would fit up and furnish a school-house. The proposal was accepted and the selectmen were instructed to "fit up the school-house and grant a lease" of it for the purpose.

The town at this time is estimated to have contained about four hundred and fifty houses. The fishery had increased to such an extent that over eighty schooners sailed from the harbor, and six hundred men and boys were employed in the industry. This comprised, probably nearly the entire male population of the town. When a boy had attained the age of eleven or twelve years he was sent to sea, and there were many instances where children of not more than nine years of age were taken to "the banks" to assist in the support of a large family. During the first four years of a boy's life at sea he was termed a "cut-tail," from the fact that he received pay only for the fish actually caught by himself, and was obliged to cut a small piece from the tail of every fish he caught to distinguish them from the others when the fare was weighed and sold. A full crew consisted of eight persons, four of whom were "sharesmen," the others being boys in various stages of apprenticeship. When, after an experience of four years, a boy was considered competent to catch a full share of fish, he was promoted to the important post of "header," and was admitted to the rights and privileges of a "sharesman." As he became qualified he could then assume the duties of "splitter" or "salter" if he chose; but it was necessary for him to pass through all the various grades of labor in order to obtain a thorough knowledge of the business before he could be permitted to take command of a vessel, and became a "skipper."

The fishermen lived on equal terms on board their vessels. Every man was personally interested in the result of the voyage, and all worked with untiring energy for a successful trip and as large a fare as possible. Dory and trawl fishing were then unknown. The fishing was done entirely from the vessels, and every man had his appointed station and was expected to be at the lines during the entire trip.

The boats usually went to the banks twice a year, in the spring and in the fall, and remained from three to five months, or until a full fare was obtained. On their return the salt was washed from the fish and they were then cured on flakes in the open air.

The year 1751 marks an important era in the annals of Marblehead. During that year the fire department was organized. As the township was composed almost entirely of wooden buildings, the necessity of procuring a fire engine was considered of the utmost importance, and in November, 1750, a vote was passed authorizing the selectmen to purchase an engine of the third size, with the necessary pipes and a dozen leather buckets. This vote does not appear to have been carried into effect, however, nor was there any necessity for so doing. Robert Hooper, Esq., a wealthy and generous merchant, anticipating the needs of the community in which he resided, ordered an engine at his own expense, and on its arrival, in March of the following year, presented it to the town. The simple record of the fact speaks volumes for the unostentatious manner of its presentation, and the gratitude with which it was received. "March 19, 1751, voted the thanks of the town to Robert Hooper, Esq., for his donation of a Fire Engine, this day made to the town."

At the same meeting the fire department was organized by the election of a board of firewards as follows:

"*Voted.* That Capt. Nathan Bowen, Capt. George Newmarsh, Robert Hooper, Esq., Capt. Richard Reed and Mr. Jeremiah Lee, be Firewards for the year ensuing." The firewards were authorized to appoint a suitable company for the engine, or any other engine which should belong to the town, "and to covenant with those appointed to work and govern them that they shall be exempt from Military duty and from serving as fence-viewers, hog-reeves, or tything men, so long as they shall serve in said company."

There appears to be no record of the names of those assigned to the engine, but a few years later (1755) the firewards appointed Robert Harris, captain of the "Great Fire Engine," with the following company: Will. Bowden, John Bowden, Henry Trevett, John Pearce, Richard Wood, William Bassett, John Andrews, Robert Harris, John Neal, Joseph Bubier, Benjamin Darling, 3d, Benjamin Doe, 1st.

The engine presented by Mr. Hooper, was undoubtedly the "Friend," which was located on Front Street near Goodwin's Court. The next engine, which was purchased for the town in London, and was probably that named the "Endeavor." It was

located for many years near "Newtown Bridge," on the corner of Washington and School Streets.

During the year 1752, the small-pox again broke out in Boston, and the usual precautions were adopted to prevent the disease from making its appearance in Marblehead. A board fence was placed at the entrance to the town, strangers were forbidden to enter, and it was voted to send "no representative to the General Court that year." In spite of every precaution, including a general inoculation of the inhabitants, the disease again made its appearance and raged for several months with great severity, though not with the fatal effect of the pestilence of 1730.

The bill imposing an excise duty on spirituous liquors, wines, lemons, oranges, etc., which became a law, by act of the General Court, in 1754, was strenuously opposed by the inhabitants of Marblehead. The town had now become one of the most important ports of entry in the province. The foreign trade was yearly assuming proportions which gave the most encouraging signs of a prosperous future. The wealth of the merchants was increasing rapidly, and the people were reaping a rich reward from their industry. The wharves teemed with shipping, and the merchants of Marblehead were to be found in almost every port of importance in Europe.

Under these circumstances, the granting of an excise to the King was considered as especially burdensome to the people of Marblehead, and several town meetings were held to consider the matter, and to protest against the passage of the act. The representative in the General Court was instructed to use all proper means to prevent it from becoming a law; and finally, at a town meeting, held in January, 1755, six of the most prominent merchants were chosen a committee to "petition His Majesty to disallow the act." The members of this committee were Robert Hooper, Esq., Mr. Ebenezer Stacey, Colonel Jacob Fowle, Colonel Jeremiah Lee, and Captain Isaac Freeman, who were authorized to employ an eminent London lawyer to act as the agent of the town and petition the King in its behalf.

In 1755, the war known as the "French and Indian War" broke out. As soon as hostilities were actually begun, the town took measures for its defense. "A powder-house or magazine, suitable for securing ammunition," was built by vote of the town, Colonel Jacob Fowle, Colonel Jeremiah Lee, and Major Richard Reed being members of the building committee. The depredations of the French on the sea against the commerce and fisheries of the English colonies, during the following year were severely felt in Marblehead. Several vessels with their crews, belonging here were captured while on the fishing banks, causing great distress among their families and great excitement in the town. The exposed condition of the harbor caused serious apprehensions of an attack from the enemy when the people were least prepared to meet it, and it was finally voted to present a petition to the lieutenant-governor, praying for the protection of the province. The petition of the fishing interest stated that "In time of war the fishery is prosecuted with much greater difficulty and risk than any other branch of business, as will appear by the late capture of many of our vessels by the French, while on the fishing banks."

The disadvantages to which the commercial and fishing interests of the colonies were subjected cannot be better illustrated than by the seizures by the French of merchant and fishing vessels belonging in Marblehead.

In December, 1756, the schooner Swallow, owned by Robert Hooper, Esq., and commanded by Capt. Philip Lewis, sailed from Marblehead to the West Indies. On the 13th of the month, having been out but a few days, the schooner was captured by two French cruisers, and carried into Martinico. The crew was imprisoned, and the officers, Capt. Lewis, Mr. Ashley Bowen and Mr. George Crowninshield, the first and second mates, were confined in a public house and closely guarded. Watching their opportunity, they finally succeeded in eluding the vigilance of the guard, and escaped from the house. Seizing a small schooner which lay in the harbor, they sailed away under cover of night, and at length reached St. Eustatia, where they found friends and were kindly treated. Among others who were there was Mr. Lewis Freeman of Marblehead, who had purchased a sloop, and was looking for some competent person to take command and go to Marblehead in her with a cargo of molasses. As Capt. Lewis did not wish to undertake the voyage, Mr. Bowen was appointed, and the vessel reached Marblehead in safety. The unfortunate crew of the Swallow, who were imprisoned in Martinico, were detained as prisoners until the close of the war.

They were then released, and were obliged to work their way home on board of vessels bound for various ports in the colony.

Early in the month of April, 1759, messengers were sent to Marblehead to obtain recruits for the naval service. Active preparations were then in progress for the siege of Quebec, and the town's proportion of men needed for this service was forty-five able seamen. Mr. Ashley Bowen engaged as a midshipman, and in a short time thirty-two others enlisted as common sailors. Each man received a bounty, and a certificate signed by the Governor, promising that they should not be detained in the service longer than the time for which they enlisted; that they should be free from imprisonment, and landed in Boston after their discharge. On the 12th of April, they sailed from Marblehead for Halifax, where they arrived on the 16th, and the next day were assigned to their respective ships. Sixteen were placed on board the Pembroke, a frigate of sixty guns, under command of Capt. Wheelock, and the others were assigned to the ship Squirrel. These ships in com-

pany with a fleet under command of Rear Admiral Darrell, sailed for the St. Lawrence and arrived before Quebec with the expedition commanded by Gen. Wolfe during the latter part of June. On the night of June 28th a raft of fire barges was sent down from Quebec for the purpose, if possible, of destroying the fleet. The raft was grappled by the sailors before it approached near enough to do any damage, and was towed near the shore and anchored, the sailors continually repeating "All's well!" From a remark in "Knox's Journal" concerning the affair we are led to believe that some of the men detained for this work were from Marblehead. "A remarkable expression from some of these intrepid souls to their comrades, I must not omit from its singular uncouthness. 'Damn me, Jack, didst thee ever take hell in tow before?"

On the 13th of September, in the darkness of the early morning, the boats of the fleet moved down the river, and when the sun rose the astonished French commander beheld the army of Wolfe upon the Plains of Abraham. Without a moment's hesitation Montcalm began preparations for the battle. At sunset the contest was over, Quebec was in possession of the English, and the gallant commanders of both armies were mortally wounded. With this victory the war was virtually ended. With the fall of Quebec, Canada was lost to France forever, and with it the last hope of further possessions in America.

Just one week from the day of the battle the men of Marblehead were discharged from the service, and with others, to the number of one hundred and sixty, were put on board the ship "Thornton," and transported to Boston. On the passage homeward many of the men were sick, and thirty-five of them died. The following are the names of the Marblehead men engaged in the siege of Quebec. On board the "Pembroke:" Ashley Bowen, midshipman; William Horn, Edward Akes, Jonathan Welch, Robert Bartlett, Garrett Farrel, John Bateman, Isaac Warren (died) Robert Thompson (died), Thomas Woodfin, Miles Dollan, Edward Kendeley, Benjamin Nichols, Arthur Lloyd, Edward Soverin, Zachary Paine, Frederick Swaburgs.

On board the "Squirrel:" John Melford, Thomas Dove, William Matthews, John Stateman, John Goldsmith (died), Thomas Valpey, Samuel Look (did not return), Francis Misalt, Robert Lineteed (did not return), William Corkering (did not return), Charles Jacobs, William Uncals, Walter Stevens (did not return), Samuel Linir (died), Thomas Peach (died).

On the 2d of January, 1761, the schooner "Prince of Orange," Nathan Bowen, master, sailed from Marblehead for same port in Spain or Portugal. While on the passage, February 10th, she was overtaken and captured by the French brig "Gentile," of Bayonne. Mr. Bowen, in an account of the affair, written while in prison, says, "I was robbed of chest and clothes, and was in other respects ill-used. On Tuesday, 17th, we arrived at St. Andreas; on Monday, 23d, sailed from thence in company with my schooner bound for Passage, and on the next day arrived there. The next morning we were all sent to France, and on the next day were twenty in number confined in this castle, and when we shall get clear God only knows." The prison was Bayonne Castle, France. The only men of the crew whose names can be ascertained were Samuel Levis, William Hannover, Joseph Lye, Thomas Trefry, Amos Grandy and Edward Hallowell.

It is a matter of sincere regret that no more can be learned concerning this war, of a local nature. But that the town of Marblehead suffered as much from its effects as any other town in the province, and that its people behaved with a heroism and bravery which shed lustre upon their annals, is sufficient for us to know.

At the annual town-meeting, held in March, 1761, it was voted, on account of the increasing "poor, idle, vagrant and disorderly persons," to erect a workhouse on the back side of the piece of ground called "the negro burying-place." The sum of five hundred pounds was appropriated to build it, and the selectmen were instructed to petition the Legislature for permission to use a part of the new building as a house of correction. The building was erected on what is now known as Back Street, opposite the head of Pearl Street.

The following year the selectmen were instructed to name all the streets and alley-ways in the town, and to cause the names to be recorded in the records and published at the town-house. Previous to this, the streets had been known by the most curious names, some of them not suitable for ears polite. In many instances some prominent landmark gave the name to the lane on which it stood or which led to it. New Meeting-House Lane, Wharf Lane, Pond Lane, Frog Lane, Ferry Lane, and others of a similar nature made up the simple list, and answered every purpose as well as the more pretentious titles by which many of these very streets are known at present. They were properly denominated lanes, for they were nothing else. The laying out of a street was an action undreamed of in the simple and unpretending community. The inhabitants built their houses anywhere, provided only that they owned the land, and there was no arbitrary custom to dictate which end should be the front or which the back. The lanes were made afterwards for convenience, and to name the narrow paths would to them have seemed an absurdity.

As the town increased in population and various improvements were made, the old meeting-house was removed to a more convenient locality, at the junction of what are now known as Orne, Franklin and Washington Streets. A house owned by Richard Ireson was found to project so far into the street which led to the meeting-house that it was impossible

for a carriage to pass it, and finally the town voted to remove the northwest end. Several feet were accordingly cut off, the house being sawed nearly in halves. The end towards the street was boarded up, and there it remains to this day,[1] with not a single window in it except a very small one near the roof. During the year 1762 the town voted to open a market in the lower part of the town-house, and eleven very stringent rules were adopted for its government, a clerk being chosen annually to see that they were enforced. These rules provided that no putrid or impure meat should be offered for sale, and that the market should be opened every Tuesday and Thursday in the year till one o'clock in the afternoon, and till sunset on Saturdays. All persons were forbidden to buy provisions in the market with intent to sell the same at a greater price. All meat left in the market after the hour for closing, through the negligence of the seller, was to be forfeited, and the clerk was authorized to appropriate it to his own use, "without any account to the owner. No "hucksters" were to be allowed to sell provisions of any kind in the town before one o'clock in the afternoon on a market-day. The penalties for violating these rules varied in amount from ten to twenty shillings, and all fines were to be given to the poor of the town. The market was opened on the first Tuesday in August, 1763. Richard Reed was chosen clerk, and a salary of ten pounds per annum was voted for his services.

The well at the northeast end of the town-house, in which the town pump has been placed for so many years, was, in all probability, sunk during the month of May, 1763. At a meeting held on the 9th of that month, it was voted,

"To make a well at the northeast end of the Town House, for the [illegible] especially in case of fires."

In February, 1764, the small-pox again broke out in Boston. The appearance of the disease in that town was regarded as a sure warning of a reign of the pestilence in Marblehead. The disease, in spite of every precaution taken to prevent it, broke out during the following May. A town-meeting was immediately held, and it was "voted to erect a small-pox hospital on the pasture northwesterly from the almshouse about sixty poles distant." This action was deemed necessary, as the almshouse was considered too near the body of the town for use as a hospital. The vote was promptly carried into effect, and all patients taken with the loathsome disease were removed to the hospital as soon as it was in readiness.

CHAPTER LXXXI.

MARBLEHEAD—(*Continued*).

Contests with the Crown—Condition of the Town in 1768—Slavery in Marblehead—Resistance of Marblehead Seamen to Impressment—Patriotic Action—The Small-Pox War—The Non-Importation Agreement—Storehouses offered to Merchants of Boston—Delegates to the Continental Congress—British Soldiers on the Neck—The Marblehead Regiment—Provincial Congress—The Loyalists.

THE year 1765 found the people of Marblehead, in common with their countrymen throughout the American colonies, greatly excited in regard to the contests with the Crown over the right of Parliament to tax the colonies for a revenue.

Though they sympathized fully with the spirit of resistance to the Stamp Act, which certain riotous demonstrations in Boston were intended to show, they were at that time unprepared to sanction such a violent method of proceeding. They were loyal to the King, and though they bitterly denounced the act, they laid the entire blame for its passage upon the shoulders of the ministry and the Parliament of Great Britain. On the 24th of September the town voted to instruct its representatives "to promote and readily join in such dutiful remonstrances and humble petitions to the King and Parliament, and other decent measures as may have a tendency to obtain a repeal of the Stamp Act, or alleviation of the heavy burdens thereby imposed upon the American British Colonies." They were also instructed to do all in their power "to suppress and prevent all riotous assemblies and unlawful acts upon the persons or substance of any of His Majesty's subjects." And not to give their assent to any act of Assembly that would imply "the willingness of their constituents to submit to any internal taxes that are imposed otherwise than by the Great and General Court of this Province, according to the constitution of this government."

For a time the attention of the people of Marblehead was diverted from public affairs by the disasters to their fishing fleet at sea. During the year 1768 nine vessels, with their crews, were lost, and the following year fourteen others met a similar fate, making a total of twenty-three vessels and one hundred and twenty-two men and boys. Besides these, a large number were drowned by being washed overboard from vessels which returned. A large number of widows and orphans were thus left to the care of the town, and the grief and suffering caused by these terrible calamities was very great.

There were, at this time, about sixty merchants engaged in the foreign trade, besides a large number of shoremen, who prosecuted the fisheries. Some of the houses built by these merchants were among the finest in the province, and one, the palatial residence of Col. Jeremiah Lee, is said to have cost over ten thousand pounds. Nearly every family of sufficient wealth

owned several negro slaves, and Col. Lee is said to have owned a large number, whom he employed in the work of loading and unloading his ships as fast as they arrived in foreign ports.

Slavery, so far from being considered an evil, was regarded as the only normal condition of the negro, and the institution was fostered and encouraged throughout the province. The church records of Marblehead bear evidence that even the clergymen of the town owned negro servants, some of whom were baptized and received into the church. Slave marriages are recorded also on the records of all three of the earlier churches.

A very interesting tradition is related concerning the Rev. Peter Bours, one of the earlier rectors of St. Michael's Church. It seems that among other servants, the reverend gentleman owned a very ill-tempered and vicious woman. One night, in a fit of ugliness, she attempted to take the life of her master, and the next day, having some regard for his personal safety, he sold her. With the money thus obtained, Mr. Bours procured a life-size portrait of himself, painted by one of the most celebrated artists in the country.

The newspapers of this period and for many years previous offered abundant evidence of the existence of negro slavery in Marblehead. A few of the advertisements copied from their files will doubtless be found of interest:

"Ran away from his master, Capt. Richard Trevett, of Marblehead, a Negro Man Named Pompey, about Twenty two years of age; a Lusty-Tall fellow. He had on when he went away a striped homespun jacket, cotton & Linen shirt, dark coloured Kersey Breeches, gray yarn stockings, round To'd Leather heel shoes and Felt Hat.

"(Note).—He deserted his Master's service in the Shallop Ann at Plymouth. Whoever shall apprehend the said Runaway and him safely convey to his said Master at Marblehead or to Mr. Francis Miller in Boston, near the Green Dragon, shall have fifty shillings reward and all necessary charges paid.

"Aug. 6, 1724."

"To be sold by Jacob Fowle, Esq., and Mrs. Susannah Palmer, Administrators of the estate of John Palmer, late of Marblehead, deceased, a likely Negro Man, about 25 years old, and a fine Negro Boy, about 14.

"Marblehead, Oct. 16, 1750."

"Ran away from Capt. John Diamond, at Marblehead, on Tuesday, the 11th of September Instant, a Spanish Negro Fellow named Cuffe, about 25 years old; speaks broken English, and can talk Spanish Language. He is a tall, slim Fellow; had on a new felt Hat, striped homespun Jacket and Breeches, New Shoes with square Buckles. Whoever will bring or send the said Negro to Mr. Norwood, Innholder at Lynn, shall have Two dollars Reward and all necessary charges paid. All masters of vessels and others are cautioned not to conceal or carry off the said Negro, as they would avoid the penalty of the Law.

"Sept. 29, 1759."

The excitement incident to the passage of the Stamp Act did not cause the citizens of Marblehead to forget other matters of local importance. At the annual meeting in March, 1767, a board of trustees was chosen to direct and manage the affairs of the schools. There were several public schools in the town, but they were in a deplorable condition, and the well-to-do families preferred to send their children to private teachers. The town appropriated the sum of £350 for the use of the schools, and the trustees were instructed to report annually as to their condition. At a meeting held by adjournment, it was voted to establish three new schools for teaching reading, writing and arithmetic. Messrs. Jayne, Phippen and Ashton were selected as teachers, and the trustees reported that about one hundred and sixty scholars attended each of these schools. A few years later the town voted to erect two new schoolhouses on account of the crowded condition of the schools. Children were expected to be qualified to read before entering these schools, and, as a consequence, the children of the poor, whose parents in many instances could not read themselves, were denied admission. The town elected a committee to investigate the matter, and it was found that one hundred and twenty-two boys were untaught. To remedy this evil, it was voted that the children of the poor should be taught the necessary branches to qualify them for entrance into the schools at the expense of the town. This was the foundation of primary schools and the beginning of the present system of public instruction in Marblehead.

Governor Barnard having dissolved the Legislature of Massachusetts, and refusing to call it together again, a convention was held in Boston, in September, 1768, "to deliberate on constitutional measures to obtain redress of their grievances." The day after the convention adjourned, a body of British troops landed in Boston and marched to the Common. The selectmen were requested to furnish quarters for the soldiers, and, as they refused to do so, the State-House was opened for their reception. The presence of British soldiers in the capital town and the frequent impressment of American seaman by ships of the British Navy, excited the indignation of the people throughout the province. These attempts to bring the people into subjection to the will of the ministry of Great Britain were firmly resisted by the colonists, with a determination never to yield.

During the spring of 1769 a brig belonging in Marblehead was boarded off Cape Ann by a lieutenant and a party of seamen from the British sloop-of war "Rose," and an attempt was made to impress some of the crew into the British naval service. The brig was the "Pitt Packet," commanded by Captain Thomas Powers, returning from Cadiz to Marblehead. The crew at once determined to resist the transfer of any of their number to the British sloop, and a hand-to-hand fight followed. A party of marines was sent to the assistance of the lieutenant, and for over three hours the heroic sons of Marblehead defended themselves against every attempt to compel them to surrender. During the struggle two of the Americans were severely wounded and the British lieutenant was killed by a blow from a harpoon thrown by a sailor named Michael Corbitt. At length, overpowered by force of numbers, the brave men surrendered, and Corbitt was taken to Boston to be tried for murder.

He was imprisoned, but a jury of inquest finally vindicated his conduct and he was released.

This may be said to have been the first act of forcible resistance to British tyranny in defense of American liberty. It occurred several months before the people of Boston were fired upon by the British troops, and six years before the battle at Lexington.

On the 22d of May, 1769, the inhabitants of Marblehead again assembled in town-meeting for the purpose of electing representatives to the General Court and passing suitable instructions. Joshua Orne and John Gallison were elected representatives.

The instructions were almost entirely devoted to a review of the troubles between the colonies and the mother country, concluding as follows:

"That we do not allow, by any vote or resolution whatever, a right in any power on earth to levy taxes on the people of the province, for the support of government, or any other purpose, but in the General Assembly of the province.

"Finally, embrace every opportunity of manifesting our allegiance to our rightful sovereign King George; acknowledge the supreme legislative authority of the British Parliament over the whole empire, except the power of levying taxes in the province for the purpose of a revenue, and endeavor to wipe off that reproach for disloyalty and disobedience which has been so liberally cast upon us by malicious and malevolent persons, at the same time vindicating the just rights and privileges of the country from the insults and designs of wicked and arbitrary men."

During the summer assurances were received from the British ministry that it was their intention at the next session of Parliament to remove the duties upon glass, paper and colors, "upon consideration of such duties being contrary to the true principles of commerce." These concessions, instead of pacifying the people, had a far different effect. The repeal of the duty on tea was demanded as an evidence that the government had abandoned the right to tax the colonies. An agreement was made not to import any British goods until the tax was repealed, and not to purchase goods of any person who should import them contrary to the non-importation agreement. All the inhabitants of Marblehead, with four exceptions, signed this agreement. Those who refused were bitterly denounced as blindly preferring the chains of slavery to our most valued inheritance, *English Liberty*. During the excitement caused by this controversy a chest of tea was brought into town, but so indignant were the people that the purchaser reluctantly consented to reship it the next day. The patriotic citizens assembled early on the following morning, and forming a procession, paraded about town with the obnoxious merchandise, and it was then carried to Boston.

The events of the winter of 1770 produced the most intense excitement among the people of Marblehead. The presence of troops in Boston, making the capital a garrisoned town, was considered an insult to the province, and when, on the 5th of March, the soldiers fired on the people, killing three and mortally wounding others, an uprising of the masses seemed inevitable.

Early in May a town-meeting was held, and a committee was chosen to circulate an agreement against the use of India tea. A series of votes were adopted in favor of the enforcement of the non-importation agreement, and expressing the "highest indignation and resentment that a lawless, ignorant and bloody soldiery should attempt of its own authority to fire upon and destroy so many of our brethren of ye town of Boston, and *we hereby declare our readiness with our Lives and Interest*, at all times to support ye civil authority of this Province in bringing to justice all such high-handed offenders against ye wholesome laws of this land."

The committee chosen to circulate the agreement for the discouragement of the use of foreign teas reported that seven hundred and twelve heads of families had signed it, and only seventeen had refused, a list of whose names was reported for the action of the town. Of the seventeen who refused their signatures, seven appear afterwards to have repented, as their names are erased from the report. The punishment of the ten who were reported for their refractory disposition was both novel and amusing. The town voted that they should be recorded in the clerk's office and published in the *Essex Gazette* as "Unfriendly to the community, and the Selectmen were desired not to approbate any of them to the sessions for license to sell spirituous liquors."

In 1771 nearly one thousand men and boys were employed in the fisheries, besides those who cured fish. The year is chiefly memorable in the annals of the town on account of the suffering caused by the disasters at sea. A large number of widows and fatherless children had been left in a helpless situation, and the town, unable to provide for so large a number, applied to the provincial government for assistance. By means of a "Brief" issued by the authority of the Legislature, £117 were collected for their relief.

During the month of November a circular letter was received from the Committee of Correspondence of Boston, relating to the rights of the colonists and soliciting "a free communication of the towns" of "our common danger." The response of the people of Marblehead was prompt, hearty and characteristic. A petition was sent to the selectmen requesting them to call a town-meeting on the 1st of December, which was couched in such patriotic and vigorous language that it was inserted entire in the warrant. On the day appointed, the inhabitants assembled at the town-house, and Thomas Gerry was chosen moderator of the meeting. The circular letter from the town of Boston and the pamphlet of "State Rights" were read by the town clerk, and it was voted to choose a committee "to take the whole warrant into consideration." Col. Azor Orne, Elbridge Gerry, Thomas Gerry, Jr., Joshua Orne and Capt. John Nutt were the members of this committee. The meeting then adjourned to meet again on the following Tuesday,

when the committee reported several resolutions, which were read separately and unanimously adopted. These resolutions denounced in the strongest terms the "recent act of Parliament and the British Ministry in sending troops and ships to parade about the coast and in the streets of the towns of the Province;" characterized the granting of stipends to the provincial judges as "an attempt to bribe the present respectable gentlemen to become tools to their despotic administration," and to "turn the seats of justice into a deplorable and unmerciful inquisition." The dissolution of the Provincial Legislature was condemned in language equally as forcible, and the resolutions concluded by declaring "that this town is highly incensed at the unconstitutional, unrighteous, presumptuous and notorious proceedings, detesting the name of a Hillsborough, Barnard and every minister who promoted them. And that it not only bears testimony against, but will oppose these and all such measures until some way for a full redress shall be adopted and prove effectual." It was voted to elect a Committee of Grievances now, and from year to year as long as may be necessary, to correspond with like committees in Boston and other towns in the province. The committee consisted of Azor Orne, Elbridge Gerry, Joshua Orne, Thomas Gerry, Thomas Gerry, Jr., Capt. John Nutt, Capt. John Glover and Deacon William Doliber.

The circular letter of the town of Boston was referred to this committee, with instructions to prepare a reply, and the meeting adjourned to meet on the 15th of December. When the meeting again assembled, Azor Orne, chairman of the committee, presented a letter in which every patriotic sentiment contained in the circular letter of the town of Boston was indorsed. The reply of the Committee of Grievance of Marblehead was worthy the patriots who composed it and the town which adopted its language as its own. "We beg leave," it concludes, "to bid adieu for the present, by assuring you that a determined resolution to support the rights confirmed to us by the Great King of the Universe engages the minds of this people, and we apprehend that all who attempt to infringe them are, in obedience to wicked dictates, violating the sacred statutes of Heaven. And for the honor of our Supreme Benefactor, for our own welfare, and for the welfare of posterity, we desire to use these blessings of Liberty with thankfulness and prudence, and to defend them with intrepidity and steadiness."

There were those among the merchants of Marblehead who, though firm friends of their country, and sympathizing fully with every proper method taken to obtain a redress of grievances, were unprepared to indorse the language of the resolutions adopted at these meetings. To their conservative minds the action of the town appeared "rash and inconsiderate," and they accordingly protested against it. The protest was signed by twenty-nine well-known merchants, and was published in the *Essex Gazette*. It was claimed that but a small faction of the inhabitants voted in favor of the resolutions, and that they therefore "did not fairly represent the sentiments of the people of Marblehead." To this a reply was made in the next issue of the paper, in which it was claimed that the resolves "were fully and fairly discussed for more than an hour, and that when the vote was taken there was but one person found in opposition." The writer also stated that the protest was faithfully circulated four days before the twenty-nine signatures were obtained.

During the year 1773 the attention of the people was for a time occupied in considering their danger from another source than the oppressive acts of the British Parliament. In June the wife of Mr. William Matthews was taken sick and treated for "poison." Her husband having recently arrived home from a voyage to the Grand Banks, it was supposed that she had been poisoned by washing his clothing with some soap which he had procured on board a French fishing vessel. In a short time other members of her family were afflicted, and in less than a month nearly all who had taken care of them were prostrate with the "poison." The kind-hearted neighbors of these unfortunates took their turn in watching with and caring for them, when, to their consternation and alarm, the disease which had thus far baffled all their skill was pronounced the small-pox in its most malignant form.

A very small number, comparatively, of the inhabitants had ever had the disease, and their excitement was increased when it was known that an old lady who had died with it had been visited by more than one hundred and fifty persons. The town—as an old gentleman expressed it in his journal—was now in an "uproar." The selectmen ordered all houses where the disease had appeared to be closed and guarded, and "all the dogs in town to be killed immediately." Many of those who were sick were removed to a house at the "Ferry," and in less than two months twenty-three persons died there. Eight others, who died during two weeks of July and August, were buried at the Neck in the plain, just above what was then known as "Black Jack's Cove."

In August a town-meeting was held, and Azor Orne, Jonathan Glover, John Glover and Elbridge Gerry petitioned the town to build a hospital on Cat Island for the treatment of small-pox patients by inoculation, "or allow certain individuals to build it at their own expense." The town voted not to build the hospital, but gave the desired permission to the petitioners to undertake it as a private enterprise, provided that the consent of the town of Salem could be obtained, and that the hospital should be so regulated that the inhabitants of Marblehead would be "in no danger of infection therefrom."

The consent of the selectmen of Salem was readily obtained, and early in September preparations were

made for the erection of the building. The work had barely commenced, however, before the people of Marblehead began to manifest great uneasiness, through fear that by means of the hospital the dread disease might take the form of a pestilence among them. The opposition at length became so great that a town meeting was held on the 19th of September, and the vote whereby permission was granted for the erection of the building was rescinded. The report had been freely circulated that the proprietors desired to establish the hospital for their own personal gain, and "to make money by means of the dangerous experiment." To allay the indignation created by these rumors, and to show their disinterestedness, the proprietors proposed to sell the materials for the building to the town at their actual cost. The citizens, unreasonable now in their opposition, not only refused to buy the materials, but demanded that the work be abandoned.

Indignant at the injustice of this action, the proprietors continued their work in spite of all opposition, and in a short time the hospital, a large two-story building, was completed. Dr. Hall Jackson, an eminent physician of Portsmouth, New Hampshire, who had attained a distinguished reputation for his success in treating the small-pox, was appointed superintendent, and, on the 16th of October, entered upon his duties and began the work of inoculation. Several hundred patients were successfully treated, but, unfortunately, a few, who had taken the disease more severely than the others, died at the hospital.

The opposition to the enterprise which, from the beginning, had been very great, now took the form of the most bitter and angry hostility. The boatmen had landed patients at places nearer the town than those appointed by the selectmen, and for this the excited citizens demolished their boats. Four men, who were caught in the act of stealing clothing from the hospital, were tarred and feathered, and, after being paraded in a cart and exhibited through all the principal streets of the town, were carried to Salem, accompanied by a procession of men and boys, marching to the music of five drums and a fife.

The fears of the people were still further increased when, a short time after this affair, it was announced that twenty-two cases of small pox had broken out in the town. The storm of indignation which for months had been brewing, and manifesting itself at intervals, now burst upon the proprietors of the hospital in all its fury. Threats of lynching them were openly made, and the angry populace demanded that the doors of the "detested Castle Pox" (as the hospital was ironically called) should be closed forever. The proprietors momentarily expected to be mobbed and it is said that one of them, Colonel Jonathan Glover, placed two small artillery pieces in one of the rooms on the second floor, fronting the street, intending to give the crowd a warm reception from the windows should they attempt to molest him.

At length, unable longer to resist the importunate petitions of their fellow-citizens, the proprietors closed the hospital and promised that no more patients should be received.

For a time the excitement was somewhat allayed, but the injudicious remarks of one of the proprietors excited the suspicion of the people that the promise would not be kept, and the opposition broke out afresh. On the night of January 26, 1774, a body of men closely disguised visited the island, and before they left the hospital and a barn adjoining were in flames. The buildings and all their contents were completely destroyed.

Naturally indignant at this outrage, the proprietors determined to secure the speedy punishment of the incendiaries. John Watts and John Gulliard were arrested as being implicated in the affair, and were confined in Salem jail. As soon as the news of the arrest became generally known in Marblehead, the cause of the prisoners was earnestly espoused by the inhabitants, and measures were adopted to rescue them from the hands of the authorities. A large number of men at once marched to Salem, and in a short time the jail was completely surrounded. At a given signal the doors were broken open, the jailer and his assistants were overpowered, and the prisoners were rescued and conducted in triumph to their homes. A few days after, the sheriff organized a force of five hundred citizens, intending to march to Marblehead and recapture his prisoners. A mob equally as large at once organized in Marblehead to resist them. Fearing the disastrous consequences to life and property which a conflict would engender, the proprietors decided to abandon the prosecution, and the sheriff abandoned his purpose.

Some time after this affair a man named Clark, one of the persons who had previously been tarred and feathered, went to Cat Island and brought a quantity of clothing into the town. He was at once ordered to take the bundle to the ferry for examination. On his return to the town he was surrounded by an angry crowd, who threatened to inflict summary punishment upon him. The selectmen appeared upon the scene, however, and he was released. At about eleven o'clock that night, by a delegation of twenty men, he was taken from his bed, conducted to the public whipping-post in front of the town-house, and was there unmercifully beaten. One of the perpetrators of the outrage was subsequently arrested, but the others were not detected. The town having been disinfected of the disease, and the hospital, the great cause of all the contention, having been removed peace was once more restored to the community.

The events of the winter and spring of 1774 were full of exciting interest to the people of Marblehead. On the 16th of December the famous "Tea Party" occurred in Boston harbor, when the sturdy patriots of that town emptied three hundred and forty-two chests of tea into the sea, rather than allow them to

be landed contrary to the terms of the non-importation agreement. In March Governor Hutchinson resigned, and Thomas Gage was appointed in his stead. One bill after another was passed by Parliament and readily sanctioned by the King, having for their object the subjection of the people of Massachusetts. The quartering of troops in Boston was legalized; town-meetings were abolished, except for the choice of officers, or by special permission of the Governor. Finally, the infamous Port Bill was passed, which closed the port of Boston to commerce, and removed the seat of government to Salem.

On the 23d of May, 1774, a town-meeting was held for the purpose, according to the warrant, "of takeing into consideration the alarming situation to which we are all reduced (it being no less than this, *whether we shall hereafter be freemen or slaves*), to choose a committee of correspondence; and to adopt any other measures that may appear to be constitutional, and calculated to procure relief from the difficulties which are hastening in all the colonies of America by acts of Parliament taxing and unjustly depriving them of their interest."

After organizing by the choice of Deacon Stephen Phillips as moderator, the meeting adjourned to meet in the afternoon, when a Committee of Correspondence was elected, as follows: Joshua Orne, Deacon William Dolliber, Deacon Stephen Phillips, Edward Fettyplace, Capt. John Nutt and Ebenezer Foster. The meeting then adjourned to meet again May 31st.

Under the last clause of the warrant for these meetings, the town could legally take action upon almost any political measures; and, in order to avoid the necessity of calling new meetings to consider the various issues as they arose, they were held by adjournment from time to time under this warrant. Forty-six meetings, the largest number ever held in Marblehead under one warrant, were held pursuant to adjournment, the last taking place on the 3d of April, 1775, ten months and ten days from the time the first meeting was convened.

On the 31st of May, 1774, the very day that the adjourned meeting was to be held, an exceedingly complimentary address to the late Governor Hutchinson appeared in the columns of the *Essex Gazette*. This address was signed by thirty-three citizens of Marblehead, and declared, among other things, "that the public good was the mark at which the ex-governor had ever aimed in his administration, and that this judgement was sustained by the opinions of all dispassionate, thinking men." The publication of the address caused great indignation, and as soon as the citizens assembled in town-meeting it was referred to a committee, who were instructed to take it into consideration and report at an adjourned meeting.

On the 2d of June, at ten o'clock in the forenoon, the citizens again assembled, and the committee presented a long report concerning the address, which was unanimously adopted. The report denounced the signers as enemies of the province, and declared that the address was "insulting to both branches of the Legislature and effrontive to the town;" "that it was false as it was malicious, and that its signers should only be forgiven by a public recantation of the sentiments contained in the address." One of the signers publicly recanted at the meeting, and the town thereupon voted "that any of the subscribers who shall signify before the further adjournment of this meeting that they are desirous of detracting themselves from all enemies in ye address so affrontive and justly obnoxious to the inhabitants of this town, shall be viewed in the same light as if they had not signed the address."

Other recantations soon followed, and in a short time all but ten of the subscribers had publicly expressed their sorrow for signing the address. Two of the signers, John Fowle and John Prentiss, through the columns of the *Essex Gazette*, expressed the wish "that the address had been to the devil before they had either seen it or signed it."

At the annual election in May John Gallison, Esq., had been elected representative to the General Court, and on the 6th of June a town meeting was held to adopt instructions which had been prepared by the Committee of Grievances. The instructions were similar in tone to all the votes of the town in relation to the troubles with the mother country. They declared that "We dare aver, will assert and maintain the invaded rights of a free people, however surrounded by a hostile band, pointing at their breasts glittering bayonets and threatening instant destruction." The sympathy of the town was expressed "for the metropolis of this Province under the operation of the detestable Port Bill." "Our hearts bleed for the distressed but truly respectable Bostonians. The sacrifice now making of their liberties is a sacrifice of the liberties of this province and of all America; therefore, let it be borne, if not by the provinces in general, by this in particular."

In July subscriptions were solicited by order of the town in aid of the poor of Boston, who were suffering from the operation of the Port Bill, and, among other contributions, eleven cart-loads of Jamaica fish and a cask of oil were donated. The town-house and powder-house were placed at the disposal of the merchants for the storage of goods, and the citizens generally tendered the use of their wharves, storehouses and other unoccupied buildings for this purpose. As soon as the determination to hold a "Continental Congress" was made known, the town voted to send one representative, and appropriated nine pounds and eight shillings for the use of the Congress. Jeremiah Lee, Azor Orne and Elbridge Gerry were in turn elected to represent the town, but all three declined the honor, "as the condition of their private affairs was such as to prevent their acceptance." At a subsequent meeting the town voted that "inasmuch as all three of the gentlemen chosen

had been unable to accept the choice," in case any one of them should find it convenient to set out for Philadelphia, "he was authorized to draw upon the town treasurer for the amount of his expenses." Eldridge Gerry, the youngest of the three who had been chosen, then only thirty years of age, was finally induced to accept the position, and thus began that distinguished public career which did not close until he had attained the office of Vice-President of the United States. During the month of July the constables were instructed to notify the inhabitants personally to be held on the 26th of that month, as the "disuse of tea" was to come under consideration. On the day appointed the town voted that "the use of tea at a time when our inveterate enemies are causing it to be enforced on the American colonies in the most violent methods, even by armed bands, is no less an injury offered to the colonies by all who vend or purchase it, than affording assistance to those enemies to raise revenues to pay dragoons who are to enslave us." It was also voted "that this town highly disapproves the vending or use of any India Tea . . . . and views all persons who shall offer it for sale as enemies to America and this town in particular." A tea committee of eleven persons was chosen to warn the inhabitants not to sell or use India teas, and it was voted that all who refused to discontinue the sale of the article after being warned by the committee, "should have their names posted at the Town-House and at the several churches, that the town may know their enemies."

In defiance of the act of Parliament for the suppression of town-meetings, the people of Marblehead continued to assemble, and to express their sentiments concerning the great questions then agitating the country. Nor were they awed by the presence of a company of "British Regulars," which had been stationed on the Neck for the purpose of enforcing submission to this act, by order of the Governor.

The presence of the British soldiers was a source of constant irritation to the inhabitants, and several times a collision between them seemed imminent. The excitement and indignation which their insolent encroachments occasioned was fermented almost to fury when Captain Merritt, a worthy citizen, was wounded by one of the guards. The citizens hastily assembled, intending to march to the Neck and "exterminate the entire body of soldiers," but wiser counsel prevailed and the officers in command, in order to pacify the angry populace, promised that the offender should be punished with five hundred lashes.

In September Governor Gage issued a proclamation dissolving the Massachusetts Legislature, which had been called to meet at Salem on the 5th of October. Notwithstanding this order, the Legislature convened on the day appointed, and immediately resolved itself into a Provincial Congress. As soon as this action was made known, a town-meeting was held, and Jeremiah Lee, Azor Orne and Eldridge Gerry were chosen delegates from Marblehead. At the same meeting a Committee of Observation and Prevention was chosen, with instructions "to co-operate with other towns in the province for preventing any of the inhabitants from supplying the troops with labor, lumber, spars, pickets, straws, bricks or any other material whatever, except such as humanity requires."

The militia of Marblehead consisted at this time of a regiment of seven companies of well-disciplined, active men. This regiment was under the command of officers, all of whom had been commissioned by Governor Gage or former Governors, and the town voted that it was "not expedient for the people to be led or influenced by any militia officers who conceive themselves obliged to hold and execute these commissions." The regiment was therefore reorganized, not, however, without considerable excitement caused by the refusal of several officers to resign in accordance with the request of the town.

CHAPTER LXXXII.

MARBLEHEAD—(*Continued*).

MARBLEHEAD IN THE REVOLUTION.

The Minute-Men—British Frigate in Marblehead Harbor—British Troops Land on Homan's Beach—Battle of Lexington—Jeremiah Lee—Expedition to Rice's St. Lawrence—The First American Privateer—Captain John Manly in the Schooner "Lee"—First Naval Victory of the War—Daring Exploit of James Mugford in the Schooner "Franklin"—Loyalists Driven from the Town—Sufferings of the People—Deeds of Daring—Return of the Refugees—Demonstrations on the Declaration of Peace.

In accordance with a recommendation of the Provincial Congress, providing for the organization of an army, a town-meeting was held at Marblehead on the 2d of January, 1775, "to make provision to pay the persons who may enlist as minute-men, and to take other suitable steps for perfecting the militia in the arts of war." The subject was referred to a committee, of which Gerry, Orne and Lee were members, and they reported that as a large proportion of the inhabitants would soon be called upon to "assist in defending the charter and Constitution of the Province, as well as the Rights and Liberties of America, it was necessary that they should be properly disciplined and instructed; and as those who were first to take the field would be required to devote a large proportion of their time to this exercise, it was but just and reasonable that they should be remunerated for their extra services." The sum of eight hundred pounds was accordingly granted for the purpose, and Captain James Mugford was appointed paymaster for the detached militia or minute-men. A compensation of two shillings a day was allowed to each private; sergeants, clerks, drummers and fifers re-

ceived three shillings each; second lieutenants four shillings; first lieutenants four shillings six pence, and captains six shillings. A service of four hours a day was required, but compensation was allowed for but three days in each week.

During the month of January the British soldiers were withdrawn from the town, and on the 9th of February His Majesty's ship "Lively," mounting twenty guns, arrived in the harbor and anchored off the fort. All vessels arriving in the harbor were diligently searched by the officers of this ship, and arms, ammunition and military stores of every description found on board them were confiscated by order of the Governor. A vessel containing a chest of arms was compelled to anchor near the "Lively;" but a few nights after her arrival the prize was boarded by a party of intrepid young men, under the lead of Samuel R. Trevett, and the arms were removed and concealed on shore. Though a diligent search was made by the British officers, the muskets could not be found, and, as was supposed, were afterwards used in completing the armament of the Marblehead regiment.

On the afternoon of Sunday, February 26th, while the people were at church, a transport sailed into the harbor. Soon after a regiment of British soldiers, under command of Colonel Leslie, landed on Homan's Beach. After loading their guns, they marched through the town. An alarm gun was beaten at the door of each of the churches, and as the people came into the streets, the Marblehead regiment was mustered, and active preparations were made for the defense of the town. Suspecting the object of their expedition to be the seizure of several pieces of artillery secreted at Salem, Major John Pedrick hastened on horseback to that town, and gave the alarm at the door of the North Church. He was soon joined by a party of young men from Marblehead, and together they proceeded to the North Bridge, over which the regulars were obliged to pass. On their arrival the troops found the draw raised and a large body of people determined to resist their passage. Colonel Leslie demanded that "the draw be lowered in the King's name," but was told that it was "not the King's highway, but a private road." Several of the soldiers then attempted to cross in boats; but were told that, should they do so, the boats would be immediately sunk. While Colonel Leslie and his officers were debating with the citizens, Robert Wormsted, one of the young men from Marblehead,—who afterwards distinguished himself by his daring and bravery,—engaged in an encounter with some of the soldiers. He was a skillful fencer, and, with his cane for a weapon, succeeded in disarming six of the regulars. Finally, upon their agreement to march a short distance and then return, the draw was lowered, and the soldiers were allowed to proceed. Finding himself frustrated in his design, the disappointed colonel returned with his regiment to Marblehead, and re-embarked on board the transport. Their discomfiture was rendered the more complete, as they were obliged to pass the Marblehead regiment, and realized that, had their mission proved successful, it would have resulted only in bloodshed and utter defeat on their return.

The events which followed in rapid succession, during the months of March and April, were such as to cause the utmost excitement in Marblehead. On the 19th of April the battle of Lexington was fought, and the news of the disastrous rout of the British was received with the greatest enthusiasm. The war for freedom had commenced, and the patriots everywhere declares themselves ready for the struggle.

The day before the battle the province Committee of Safety and Supplies, of which Jeremiah Lee, Elbridge Gerry and Azor Orne were members, held a meeting at Wetherby's Black Horse Tavern, on the road between Cambridge and Lexington. After the session was concluded, several members of the committee, including John Hancock and Samuel Adams, went over to Lexington to pass the night, while the gentlemen from Marblehead remained at the tavern. Without the slightest thought of personal danger, Gerry and his associates retired to rest. During the night an officer and a file of soldiers of the British army marched towards the house to search for the members of the rebel Congress. While the officer was posting their files the gentlemen found means to escape half-dressed into an adjoining cornfield, where they remained for over an hour until the troops were withdrawn. The night being very cold, the gentlemen suffered very keenly from their exposure, and Colonel Lee was soon after attacked by a severe fever, from which he never recovered. He died on the 10th of May following, at Newburyport, but his body was brought to Marblehead for interment.

The death of this eminent patriot, at a time when his inestimable services were of more value than ever to the town and province, was universally lamented. In the various positions of trust and honor which he had held, as an enterprising and successful merchant, and as "an ardent, active and able advocate for the Liberties and Independence of his country," he inspired the confidence and esteem of all who knew him. In his private intercourse with his fellow-men, he was admired for the urbanity of his manners, and beloved for his generous disposition and benevolence to the poor.

During the month of May the disturbed condition of public affairs caused great commotion throughout the town. Press-gangs prowled about the streets, seeking to impress seamen for the royal navy. An attack from the gun boat in the harbor, whose officers and men were irritated almost beyond endurance by the successful resistance of the people to their arbitrary measures, was considered as not unlikely to occur. This, together with the unprotected position of the harbor, led many of the inhabitants to remove

the [illegible] to places not so dangerously exposed. On the 21st the artillery company, commanded by Capt. Samuel R. Trevett, marched to the "Old Meeting-House" where a sermon was delivered by the Rev. Mr. Whitwell. The next day recruiting officers marched about the town with drums and fifes, enlisting recruits for the Continental Army.

On the last day of May the frigate "Lively" sailed for Boston, and her place was taken by the sloop-of-war "Merlin." A few days after the arrival of this ship, a merchant vessel from the West Indies, belonging to Col. Glover, arrived in the harbor. The commander of the "Merlin" sent an officer on board to order the captain to anchor his vessel near the ship; but the vigilant owner had boarded her before him, and, disregarding the imperative commands of the officer and the threatening guns of the ship, had his vessel brought directly in to Gerry's wharf. Crowds of people were gathered along the wharves and headlands, expecting that the schooner would be fired into by the "Merlin;" but the angry commander, knowing that the people were determined to defend the owner at all hazards, wisely refrained from an act which must have resulted disastrously to himself and his men.

Colonel Glover's regiment consisted of ten companies, numbering in all four hundred and five men. On the 10th of June the valiant commander received orders to continue with his regiment at Marblehead until further orders; and to hold it "in readiness to march at a moment's warning to any post where he may be directed."

Having been stationed at Marblehead until "further orders," the brave seamen of the marine regiment were deprived of an opportunity to distinguish themselves at the battle of Bunker Hill, which took place on the 17th of June. But there were other sons of Marblehead who participated in that memorable engagement and fought like heroes in defense of their country. The company of artillery under command of Captain Samuel R. Trevett, forming a part of Colonel Gridley's regiment, arrived on the field in season to engage in the latter part of the action. Captain Trevett lost a small four-pound cannon in the action, but made up for his loss by capturing two of larger size from the British, the only cannon captured by the Americans. Two men of the Marblehead company were killed and three were wounded. Of the killed, one was William Nutting; and of the wounded, one was the intrepid Robert Wormstead, who was struck in the shoulder by the [illegible] of a bursting shell. He narrowly escaped having his head blown from his shoulders, the fate which had overtaken the man who he was assisting from the [illegible].

On the 21st of June Colonel Glover received orders to [illegible] his regiment and report to General Ward at Cambridge. A general muster was [illegible] The regiment fully armed and equipped, made an imposing appearance as it marched through the town. Every officer, soldier and musician in the entire regiment of ten companies were citizens of Marblehead, except one captain and seven privates.

The officers, chosen some months before, were: Colonel, John Glover; Lieutenant-Colonel, John Gerry; Major, Gabriel Johonnet;[1] Adjutant, William Gibbs; Surgeon, Nathaniel Bond; Surgeon's mate, Nathaniel Harrington; Quartermaster, Joseph Stacey. The uniforms of the regiment consisted of a blue round jacket and trousers, trimmed with leather buttons; and Colonel Glover was said to be the most finely-dressed officer of the army at Cambridge. As no arrangements had been made for fitting out a naval armament, and as the army at Cambridge was greatly embarrassed by the scarcity of ammunition, General Washington, who had assumed command, was instructed by Congress to intercept and capture two English transports, which were bound to Quebec with ammunition and stores for the British Army. Accordingly, Nicholas Broughton and John Selman, both captains in Glover's regiment, were ordered to take command of a detachment of the army, and proceed at once on board the schooners "Lynch" and "Franklin," then lying in Beverly Harbor. On the 21st of October, having fitted their vessels for sea—the "Lynch" with six guns and the "Franklin" with four,—they sailed on the first naval expedition of the war. Each commander took his own company for a crew, and Broughton as commander hoisted his broad "pennant on board the 'Lynch.'" After a long passage, being detained by adverse winds and weather, they reached the river St. Lawrence, but found that the transports for which they were in search had escaped. They, however, captured ten other vessels as prizes, and hearing that the authorities on the Island of St. John were raising recruits for the British Army, the zealous commanders, thinking to do essential service to their country, landed their troops on the island, besieged a fort, and detained and brought off as prisoners the governor (Wright) and Judge Colback as prisoners of war. In December the expedition returned, when, much to their astonishment, the two naval officers were severely reprimanded by the commander-in-chief for exceeding their instructions, and the prisoners and prizes were released. It was the desire of Congress to adopt a conciliatory policy towards the Northern Provinces, and Washington feared that this hasty action of the brave but over-zealous seamen would cause a rupture of the friendly relations existing between these colonies, which might be fraught with serious consequences.

In the mean time the Legislature of Massachusetts had passed an act authorizing the fitting out of armed vessels to protect the sea-coast, and to cut off the sup-

[1] William L. Lee afterwards became major and Gabriel Johonnet, lieutenant-colonel.

plies intended for the British army. This act, which was adopted on the 15th of November, was chiefly due to the efforts of Elbridge Gerry, one of the representatives from Marblehead, by whom the preamble was drawn up. The first vessel to put to sea under this arrangement was the schooner "Lee," commanded by Captain John Manly, of Marblehead. On the 29th of November he fell in with the brig "Nancy," a vessel of two hundred and fifty tons burden, bound to Boston, with military stores, which he captured and sent into Gloucester harbor. Her cargo consisted of several brass field-pieces, two thousand stand of arms, one hundred thousand flints, thirty-two tons of lead, a large quantity of ammunition, and a thirteen-inch brass mortar, besides a complete assortment of tools, utensils and machines, necessary for military operations. Manly's schooner sailed under the Pine-Tree flag of Massachusetts, and this was the first naval victory in which the British flag was struck to American colors. The prize was of inestimable value to Washington, and the ordnance stores and field-pieces were at once forwarded to the army at Cambridge.

Early in the month of May, 1776, James Mugford, a young man who had previously sailed as master of a merchant vessel, applied to General Ward for permission to fit out the Continental cruiser "Franklin," then lying in ordinary at Beverly. During the previous year Mugford had been impressed into the British service and confined on board a gunboat then lying in the harbor. He was soon released, however, through the interposition of his wife, who went on board the ship and represented to the captain that they had been recently married, and that she was dependent upon him for support. While a prisoner, the young sailor learned from the conversation of his captors that a "powder ship" was soon to sail from England, with ammunition and stores for the British army. Immediately upon his release, he communicated the important intelligence to the proper authorities, and requested permission to attempt the capture of the transport. After much importunity, his request was granted. Without delay, the intrepid commander collected a crew, and after fitting his vessel for sea, pushed into the bay. On Friday, the 17th of May, the British ship "Hope," of three hundred tons, six guns and seventeen men, hove in sight. Notwithstanding the fact that a British fleet lay at anchor in Nantasket Roads, only a few miles off, and in full sight, Mugford at once bore upon the ship and carried her by boarding. While the crew of the "Franklin" were engaged in taking possession of their prize, the captain of the "Hope" ordered his men to cut the top-sail halyard ties, with a view to impede the sailing of the ship, and thereby give the boats of the squadron time to come up. Mugford, sensible of the danger of the situation, threatened the captain and all on board with instant death should the order be executed. His resolute manner terrified the crew, and they refused to obey the commands of their officers. The prize was then taken through Pudding Point Gut,—a channel then but little known,—beyond the range of the guns of the British squadron, and arrived safely in Boston harbor. This was the most valuable capture that had been made during the war. The cargo consisted of one thousand carbines with bayonets, several carriages for field-pieces, fifteen hundred barrels of powder, and a most complete assortment of artillery implements and pioneer tools.

Having seen his prize safely in port, the gallant commander of the "Franklin" took a supply of ammunition, and on the following Sunday again put to sea. In sailing through Pudding Point Gut, the same channel through which the prize was brought up, the vessel grounded. This being perceived by the officers on board the ships of the British fleet, fourteen boats, manned by two hundred sailors fully armed, were sent to capture the unprotected schooner. Mugford, however, was prepared to meet them. Waiting until they came within range of his guns, he fired, and with such deadly effect that two of the boats were immediately sunk. The men in the remaining boats then surrounded the schooner and attempted to board. Seizing picks and cutlasses and whatever implements they could obtain, the heroic crew of the "Franklin" fought with desperation in defense of their vessel. Many of the British were shot as soon as the boats came alongside, while others had their hands and fingers cut off with sabres, as they laid them on the gunwales of the schooner. The brave Mugford, who throughout the conflict had been fighting wherever his presence seemed most needed, encouraging and animating his men by voice and example, was shot in the breast by an officer in one of the boats. With the utmost composure, and with that presence of mind which ever distinguishes heroes, he called to his lieutenant and exclaimed: "*I am a dead man; don't give up the vessel; you will be able to beat them off.*" In a few minutes he expired. The death of their gallant commander nerved the crew of the "Franklin" to still greater effort, and in a short time the men in the boats were repulsed and gave up the attack. The engagement lasted half an hour. The British lost seventy men, while the only person killed on board the schooner was its heroic captain.

With the advancing tide the Franklin floated from the soft ground where she had struck, and taking advantage of the fresh breeze that had sprung up, the crew brought her in safety to Marblehead harbor. The news of the capture of the powder ship, and of the death of the captain in the contest with the boats, had preceded the arrival of the schooner, and the wharves and headlands were thronged with people as the victorious seamen sailed up the harbor.

On the following Wednesday the funeral took place from the "New Meeting-House," the Rev. Isaac Story officiating. Amid the tolling of bells and the firing of minute-guns, the body was conveyed to its

resto[illegible] on the "Old Burying Hill," where a volley was fired by the Marblehead regiment, which did escort duty on the occasion.

On the 17th of June, the first anniversary of the battle of Bunker Hill, the citizens of Marblehead, in town meeting assembled, declared:

"That if the honorable Congress think it for the interest of these [illegible] to declare them independent of Great Britain, and should [illegible] to, the inhabitants of this town will support them [illegible] with lives and fortunes."

The patriotic citizens had not long to wait. Early one morning in July—so runs the tradition—a horseman rode into town, bringing the joyful tidings that independence had been declared. The joy of the people knew no bounds. The bells of the churches were rung for an entire week and every evening fires were lighted on the hill-tops, in honor of the great event. During the excitement occasioned by these demonstrations St. Michael's Church was entered, and the royal coat of arms was removed from its place above the chancel, while the bell was rung till it cracked, to punish some of the communicants for their loyalist sentiments.

In a few weeks printed copies of the Declaration of Independence were received, and Benjamin Boden, the town clerk, transcribed the entire document on the records of the town.

The year 1777 opened with little encouragement for the success of the American Army. True, glorious successes had been achieved at Trenton and Princeton, but the disheartening failures of the various expeditions north and south, and the extreme sufferings to which the soldiers in the army had been subjected, were rapidly breeding discontent and discouragement among the people. On the 1st of January two thousand of the regular troops were entitled to a discharge, and a general apprehension prevailed that their places might not be readily filled. But the people of Marblehead were not despondent; and though a large proportion of the able-bodied men were already in the service of the colonies, either on land or water, a meeting was held early in February for the purpose of enlisting one-seventh of the remaining male inhabitants "for the defense of the American states." An additional bounty was offered for volunteers, and in a short time the requisite number was obtained.

The treatment to which the loyalists should be subjected had been seriously discussed by Congress and by the State Legislature, and in May the latter body passed an act authorizing the towns to procure information against those who were known to be of an unfriendly disposition towards the colonies. A town meeting was accordingly held in Marblehead on the 26th of May, and Thomas Gerry, Esq., was chosen to report the names of persons who were inimical to the American States. The names of seven persons were reported, among them those of the Rev. Joshua Wingate Weeks, the rector of St. Michael's Church, and Mr. Winwood Voreham, who conducted the services as a lay-reader for several years after the close of the war.

But the zealous inhabitants had taken it upon themselves to punish the "Tories" in their own effective manner, and a suggestion from the Legislature was hardly necessary to induce them to establish "an inquisition,"—the term applied by one of the sufferers to the measures of his fellow-citizens. Nearly two years before, Thomas Robie, one of the most defiant of the loyalists in Marblehead, had charged an exorbitant price for about twenty half-barrels of powder, purchased of him by the town, and the indignant citizens voted that no interest should be allowed him for the time of the town's indebtedness. The ill-feeling thus engendered continued to increase, until Robie and his wife rendered themselves so obnoxious that they were obliged to leave the town and take refuge in Nova Scotia. Crowds of people collected on the wharf to witness their departure, and many irritating remarks were addressed to them concerning their Tory principles and their conduct towards the Whigs. Provoked beyond endurance by these insulting taunts, Mrs. Robie angrily retorted, as she seated herself in the boat that was to convey her to the ship: "I hope that I shall live to return, find this wicked rebellion crushed, and see the streets of Marblehead so deep with rebel blood that a long boat might be rowed through them."

The effect of this remark was electrical, and only the sex of the speaker restrained the angry populace from doing her personal injury.

Another of the loyalists who suffered keenly from the displeasure of the townspeople, during these exciting times was Mr. Ashley Bowen. He had seen active service in the French and Indian War, and was a midshipman on board the frigate "Pembroke," at the siege of Quebec. So indignant were the citizens at his steady resolution in defending the King, and denouncing the acts of the colonists as treasonable, that at one time during the war it was with great difficulty that he obtained the necessaries of life. The store-keepers were afraid to sell their goods to him for fear of incurring the displeasure of their patrons, and he feared, with good reason, that the attempt would be made to starve him into submission. In 1778 he made the following entry in his journal, which tells its own story:

"This has been a year of trouble to me. I was drafted twice as a soldier, and taken by Nathan Brown before old Ward on ye 25 of March. Then they trained with me so much that they would have me to get bondsmen for me not to speak nor look, nor deny them my money when drafted. As I would not get bondsmen, it was determined to send me on board the Guard ship at Boston."

Fortunately for Mr. Bowen, he met with an old friend, the captain of a merchant vessel, with whom he shipped as a mate, and so, as the journal expresses it, "was taken out of their way."

Whatever else may be said of the loyalists of Marblehead, it cannot be said that they were cowardly. They were sincere in their convictions, and had the

courage to declare them in defiance of an overwhelming public sentiment in opposition. To do this required a strength of character such as is seldom exhibited except by heroes in times of public peril. They were actuated by no mercenary motives. Estranged from friends and kindred, liable at any moment to be imprisoned or to have their property confiscated, many were obliged to leave the home of their childhood and seek a residence among strangers. Time has removed the prejudice, the last actor in the great drama has long since passed from earth, and to-day, though the impartial reader of history may not indorse the sentiment nor applaud the acts of the zealous loyalists, he will find much to admire in their evident sincerity and the fortitude with which they encountered danger and endured adversity.

The hardships and sufferings to which the people were subjected during the summer months of 1777 were severe in the extreme. Many of the soldiers in the army had been paid for their services in depreciated Continental notes, which passed for less than half their face value, while others had not been paid at all. As a consequence, their families at home were deprived of many of the necessaries of life, and the town was obliged to adopt measures for their relief. The family of each soldier was allowed to draw provisions to the amount of half the wages due him, and for a time the distress was alleviated.

The terms of enlistment of many of the soldiers in the army having expired, the Legislature voted, on the 1st of May, to raise two thousand men for a service of eight or nine months, and apportioned the number upon the town. Ardent and spirited appeals were made to the people, and, as usual, the reply of Marblehead was prompt and decisive. Three days after, a town-meeting was held, and the sum of twenty-five hundred and fifty-two pounds was appropriated "to pay the bounty due the Guards at Winter Hill, and to raise thirty-four more men to serve in the Continental Army."

Though the people had assented willingly to the numerous assessments made upon them for war purposes, the collectors, in many instances, were unable to obtain the full amount of the tax levied by the town. The patriotic treasurer, Jonathan Glover, supplied the deficiency from time to time with private funds of his own, rather than the town should be delinquent, and interest was allowed him for the use of the money.

The financial embarrassment of the country, and the depreciated state of the currency, led the people, during the following year, to adopt measures for the prevention of extortion, and for the regulation of the prices to be charged by dealers and mechanics. "Any person guilty of buying or selling silver or gold for rent or otherwise" was to be deemed an enemy of the country, and treated accordingly. The price of wood was regulated at eighteen shillings per cord and candles at eighteen shillings a pound. "Best made men's shoes were to be eight pounds a pair," and other shoes in proportion. Farriers, for shoeing horses all round, were to receive six pounds, and for shifting a single shoe, fifteen shillings. A committee of forty persons was chosen to detect any violation of these regulations, with instructions to deal summarily with every offender.

Though the condition of national affairs at the close of the winter of 1780 was far from encouraging, the patriotic citizens were determined that nothing should be left undone by which the war could be brought to a successful termination. On the 15th of June the sum of forty thousand pounds was appropriated to hire twenty-four men to reinforce the Continental army; and a few days later one hundred bushels of corn and one hundred hard dollars, or the equivalent of either, were offered to every man who would enlist in the army for six months. At the same time a committee was chosen to solicit subscriptions of cash (in specie) or provisions to be used as a bounty in raising recruits.

During the entire trying period of the war the people of Marblehead had submitted with becoming fortitude and resignation to the inevitable deprivations and distress incident to the struggle. Houses, stores and fish-fences were necessarily demolished and used for fuel; and in November, 1780, a committee was appointed "to estimate the value of those used since the beginning of the war. The whole number of men in town at this time was reported to be 831, of whom 477 were unemployed or out of business. There were 166 in captivity, and 121 were missing. The whole number of women was 1069, of whom 378 were widows, and of 2242 children, 672 were fatherless. Eight years before, the number of ratable polls was 1202, while at this time there were but 544. At the beginning of the war there were 12,313 tons of shipping owned, employed and manned by the citizens of Marblehead, while at its close the entire amount owned in the town was but 1509 tons.

The signal success of American arms during the year 1781, culminating in the surrender of Cornwallis and his army at Yorktown on the 19th of October, excited the utmost joy and exultation in Marblehead. Nowhere in the country had such sacrifices been made as those to which this people had uncomplainingly submitted. Nowhere was the dawn of peace more heartily welcomed. Their commerce was ruined; many who had been wealthy before the war were reduced to poverty, and the blood of their sons had been poured out like water. But there was no complaint. No sorrowing now, even for those who would not return. Only joy that the great struggle was ended, and that the independence for which they fought had been achieved.

Upon the publication of the preliminaries of peace, many of the refugees were glad to avail themselves of the opportunity to return to their former homes in America. During the month of April the town

was thrown into a state of the greatest excitement by the return of Stephen Blaney, one of the most objectionable of the loyalists who had left Marblehead. Rumors were prevalent that other refugees were also about to return, and, on the 24th of April, a town-meeting was held to consider the matter. Resolutions severely condemning the acts of the loyalists were adopted, and a committee of twenty-one persons was chosen to take measures to prevent their return. All refugees who made their appearance in town were to be given six hours' notice to leave, and any who remained beyond that time were to be taken into custody and shipped to the nearest port of Great Britain.

The restoration of peace to the United States was hailed throughout the land with every demonstration of joy, and nowhere with more hearty enthusiasm than at Marblehead. On the 29th of April a grand celebration took place in honor of the event. The day was ushered in by the ringing of bells, and a Federal salute from the battery at the fort. At noon the bells were accompanied by salutes from artillery on Training Field Hill. At two o'clock P. M. a large number of the most prominent citizens, together with invited guests from other towns, assembled "at the Coffee-House, and partook of a genteel entertainment." After dinner toasts were drank, with a discharge of thirteen cannon after each toast. Nor were the people in general forgotten. An ox, which had previously been provided and cooked, was sent to the town-house, where a sumptuous dinner was served. A large vessel filled with liquor—"rum punch," the tradition has it—was placed in front of the building, and the beverage was freely dispensed to all who chose to imbibe, the vessel being duly replenished throughout the day. In the evening many of the houses were brilliantly illuminated, and a beacon which had been erected at the beginning of hostilities was surrounded with combustibles and converted into a bonfire.

CHAPTER LXXXIII.

MARBLEHEAD—(Continued).

[illegible] the exploits of the men of Marblehead who served during the War of the Revolution must of necessity be very much abridged for this work. While the events related in the last chapter were transpiring in Marblehead and elsewhere, the brave men of the Marblehead regiment were winning unfading laurels by their valorous achievements in the service of their country.

The regiment left town on the 22d of June, 1775, and at once reported to General Ward, then in command of the army at Cambridge.

Early in October, Colonel Glover was appointed by General Washington to superintend the equipment and manning of armed vessels for the service of the colonies. Through his agency the expedition to the St. Lawrence River, under Captains Broughton and Selman, and the privateer "Lee," under command of Captain Manly, had been fitted out.

On the 27th of November a long, lumbering train of wagons, laden with ordnance and military stores, and decorated with flags, came wheeling into the camp "at Cambridge," escorted by Continental troops and country militia. They were part of the cargo of a large brigantine laden with munitions of war captured and sent into Cape Ann by the schooner "Lee," Captain Manly, one of the cruisers sent out by Washington.

"Such universal joy ran through the whole camp," writes an officer, "as if each one grasped a victory in his own hands." "Surely, nothing," writes Washington, "ever came more *apropos*."

Shortly after this event an affair occurred in the camp, in which the Marblehead regiment figured rather prominently. It seems that "a large party of Virginia riflemen, who had recently arrived in camp, were strolling about Cambridge and visiting the collegiate buildings, now turned into barracks. Their half-Indian equipments, and fringed and ruffled hunting garbs, provoked the merriment of the troops from Marblehead, chiefly fishermen and sailors, who thought nothing equal to the round jacket and trousers. A bantering ensued between them. There was snow upon the ground, and snow-balls began to fly when jokes were wanting. The parties waxed warm in the contest. They closed and came to blows; both sides were reinforced, and in a little while at least a thousand were at fisticuffs, and there was a tumult in the camp worthy of the days of Homer. At this juncture (writes our informant) Washington made his appearance, whether by accident or design I never knew. I saw none of his aids with him; his black servant just behind him, mounted. He threw the bridle of his own horse into his servant's hands, sprang from his seat, rushed into the thickest of the melee, seized two tall, brawny riflemen by the throat, keeping them at arms-length, talking to and shaking them."[1]

This prompt and energetic action on the part of the general quickly put an end to the tumult, and in

[1] Memoir of an eye-witness. Irving's Washington, Vol. II.

a few moments order was restored throughout the camp.

On the 19th of December an express arrived at General Washington's headquarters from Marblehead, with information that three British ships-of-war were standing in the harbor. Colonel Glover's regiment, with Captain Foster's company of artillery and a corps of riflemen, were ordered to march with all expedition for the defense of the town. As no attempt was made by the enemy to land troops, and the squadron having left the coast soon after, the artillery and rifle companies returned to camp and the regiment was sent to Beverly for the defense of that town, which was considered in imminent danger of attack.

On the 1st of January, 1776, the regiment was reorganized as the Fourteenth Continental Regiment, and the term of enlistment having expired, nearly every soldier enlisted for the war.

In July, Glover and his regiment were ordered to proceed at once to New York. They marched from Beverly on the 20th, and having arrived at New York on the 9th of August, were ordered to join General Sullivan's brigade.

During the memorable battle of Long Island, on the 27th of August, Glover's regiment was stationed on New York Island. It was not until the battle was over that the brave men of that distinguished corps performed the difficult feat, which saved the American Army from total destruction. Early in the morning of the 28th of August the regiment crossed over to Long Island and was stationed at an important post on the left of the American Army.

"Every eye brightened as they marched briskly along the line with alert step and cheery aspect." On the morning of the 29th, being convinced that the only safety of his army lay in a successful retreat, General Washington called a council of war. The council decided upon a speedy withdrawal of the troops. The embarkation was to take place in the night, and preparations were made with the utmost secrecy, Colonel Glover being called upon with his entire regiment to take command of the vessels and flat-bottomed boats.

The colonel went over to Brooklyn with his officers to superintend the embarkation, and at about seven o'clock in the evening the officers and men went to work with a spirit and resolution peculiar to that brave corps. The retreat was conducted in silence and with the utmost precaution against discovery. With muffled oars and steady strokes, the hardy seamen of the Marblehead regiment rowed with such precision and regularity, that not a sound broke upon the stillness of the night. When the morning broke the whole embarkation had been happily effected.

"This extraordinary retreat," writes Washington Irving, "which in its silence and celerity equaled the midnight fortifying of Bunker's Hill, was one of the most signal achievements of the war, and redounded greatly to the reputation of Washington." But without the aid of Glover and his heroic fishermen from Marblehead, by whose skill and activity the orders of the commander-in chief were successfully executed, the retreat would have been impossible. By their efforts alone the American Army was saved from destruction.

It is impossible in the limited space at our command to recount the valorous deeds of the Marblehead regiment during the memorable campaign of the summer and autumn of 1776.

On the night of December 25th, when General Washington and his army crossed the Delaware River to attack the British army at Trenton, "Colonel Glover, with his amphibious regiment of Marblehead" to again quote Washington Irving—"was in the advance,—the same who had navigated the army across the Sound in its retreat from Brooklyn, on Long Island, to New York. They were men accustomed to battle with the elements; yet, with all their skill and experience, the crossing was difficult and perilous. Washington, who had crossed with the troops, stood anxiously, yet patiently, on the eastern bank, while one precious hour after another elapsed until the transportation of the artillery should be effected. The night was dark and tempestuous; the drifting ice drove the boats out of their course and threatened them with destruction." Before daybreak the transportation had been effected.

The story of the successful attack upon Trenton, which resulted in the capture of nearly one thousand prisoners, with their arms and ammunition, and compelled the British army to abandon New Jersey and retreat to New York, needs no repetition here. Years afterwards, in a speech before the Massachusetts Legislature, General Knox, who was chief of artillery at Trenton, paid the following tribute to the brave men of the Marblehead regiment: "I wish the members of this body knew the people of Marblehead as well as I do. I wish that they had stood on the banks of the Delaware River in 1776, in that bitter night when the commander-in-chief had drawn up his little army to cross it, and seen the powerful current bearing onward the floating masses of ice, which threatened destruction to whosoever should venture upon its bosom. I wish that when this occurrence threatened to defeat the enterprise, they could have heard that distinguished warrior demand, '*Who will lead us on?*' and seen the men of Marblehead, and *Marblehead alone*, stand forward to lead the army along the perilous path to unfading glories and honors in the achievements of Trenton. There, sir, went the fishermen of Marblehead, alike at home upon land or water, alike ardent, patriotic and unflinching wherever they unfurled the flag of the country."

Shortly before the engagement at Trenton, Congress had clothed General Washington with additional powers, and as soon as practicable, measures were adopted for recruiting new regiments of cavalry and artillery. The gallantry and meritorious conduct of

the officers and men of the Marblehead regiment had not escaped the notice of the commander-in-chief, and on the 1st of January, 1777, William R. Lee, major of the regiment, who for some time had been acting as brigade-major, was promoted to the rank of colonel. Immediately upon receiving his commission, Colonel Lee returned to Massachusetts to recruit and organize his regiment. Many of the officers and men of the new regiment were from Marblehead. Joseph Swasey was major, Joseph Stacey quartermaster, and Joshua Orne was captain of one of the companies. Among the lieutenants were William Hawkes, Samuel Gatchell, Jeremiah Reed, John Clark and John Barker.

In March, the office of adjutant general having become vacant, Colonel Lee was recommended by Congress for that office. General Washington conferred the appointment, however, upon Colonel Pickering, of Salem, and upon his refusal to serve, Colonel Lee was immediately summoned to headquarters. Upon his arrival Lee, with becoming modesty, declined the honor, and recommended Colonel Pickering, "whom he considered, from a very friendly and intimate acquaintance, as a first-rate military character, and that he knew of no gentleman so well qualified for the post."

Washington afterward declared, in a letter to Congress, that nothing derogatory to the merits of Colonel Lee, who held a high place in his esteem, and who had "deservedly acquired the reputation of a good officer," influenced him in giving the preference to Colonel Pickering.

On the 23d of February, Colonel Glover, who had temporarily left the army to attend to his private affairs, was appointed a brigadier-general by Congress. Receiving orders from General Washington to join the army at Peek-skill, he immediately set out from home, and took command of his brigade on the 14th of June. From this time until the 27th of July the men under his command rendered efficient service in resisting the encroachments of the enemy at New York.

On the 7th of October, during the battle which resulted in the disastrous rout of the British, Glover's brigade, being a part of the right wing of the army, under command of Gen. Lincoln, was held in reserve. A part of the brigade, however, including the Marblehead regiment, were engaged under General Arnold during his impetuous assault upon the British camp during the latter part of the day. The British having abandoned their artillery, and knowing that the field was lost, retreated to their camp, which they were determined to preserve at all hazards. Scarcely had they entered their lines when they were attacked by the intrepid troops under Arnold. The attack was made by a determined charge with the bayonet, resulting in one of the most desperate hand-to-hand fights ever known. The camp was defended with great bravery, the Americans being greeted with a tremendous fire of grape-shot and small arms. "Even the stolid Hessians," says a writer of the affair, "expressed their amazement when they saw these brave Marbleheaders dash through the fire of grape and canister, and over the dead bodies of their comrades, through the embrasures, over the cannon, with the same agility with which they had formerly climbed to the main-top or traversed the backstays, bayoneting the cannoneers at their posts." During the engagement Gen. Glover had three horses shot under him.

On the following evening the British army retreated to Saratoga, and on the 13th of October Gen. Burgoyne surrendered to Gen. Gates. The duty of guarding and conducting the prisoners to Massachusetts were assigned to Gen. Glover and the men under his command, whose brilliant achievements during the campaign had made them famous throughout the country. The prisoners arrived at Cambridge on the 7th of November, and were received by Col. William R. Lee, as the commanding officer of the cantonment. Gen. Glover was detained in Massachusetts a much longer time than was expected would be necessary to finish the business with which he had been intrusted by Gen. Gates, and did not again join the army until the following summer. During that ever-memorable winter of 1778 his brigade formed a part of the army of Washington, and experienced all the suffering which must forever make the camp at Valley Forge famous in American history. But through it all they behaved like men. Neither want, nor hunger, nor nakedness, nor all combined could induce them to forsake the service of their country. To the patient forbearance and fidelity of men like these we owe the foundation of the American Republic.

We must pass, though regretfully, over the events of the intervening time to the summer of 1780, when, with the exception of a few weeks spent in Massachusetts, Gen. Glover was with his brigade at West Point. At the time of the capture of the unfortunate Major Andre, Glover had rejoined his brigade, and on the 29th of September was a member of the court which sentenced the spy to death. On the 2d of October, when the execution took place, General Glover was officer of the day, and was deeply affected by the scene. Even old soldiers, who had many times braved death on the battle-field, shed tears on the occasion. But though the necessity of the execution was sincerely regretted, no one questioned the equity of the sentence.

The surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown in October, 1781, decided the great contest in favor of the Americans, and though the army was not disbanded, nor the treaty of peace signed till two years later, the war was virtually at an end. Enlistments for the army went on, however, for some time, and in the spring of 1782 General Glover was ordered to Massachusetts "to take charge of the mustering and forwarding recruits." This was the last service rendered

by Glover as a general in the American army, and with it must end our account of the part taken by the men of Marblehead in the various movements upon the land. Throughout the war they were distinguished for their bravery and the faithful performance of duty. Whether in camp, or on the march; leading the advance in an attack, or covering a retreat; everywhere, and under all circumstances, the same steady resolution characterized their actions.

CHAPTER LXXXIV.

MARBLEHEAD—(*Continued*).

Naval History of Marblehead in the Revolution—Exploits of Heroic Marbleheaders—Commodores John Manly and Samuel Tucker—Captain John Lee in the Privateer "Nancy"—Prizes Taken—Murder of Capt. John Harris—The Letter of Marque "Freemason"—Exploit of Robert Wormsted—Capt. Cowell's Victory—The Last Naval Battle of the Revolution.

HAVING followed the men of Marblehead as far as possible through the various campaigns of the Revolution, let us now turn our attention to their exploits upon the water. The naval history of the war for Independence can never be fully written. Many of the most daring exploits of men in private armed vessels must forever remain unknown. The information to be obtained from the records of the period is very meagre, and reliance must be placed principally upon newspaper reports of engagements, and the log-books and private journals of seamen. The rest is traditionary.

In another chapter an account has already been given of the early captures by Captains Broughton, Selman and Manly, in privateers fitted out by order of General Washington, and of Captain Mugford's heroic capture of the transport "Hope," and his subsequent death while defending his vessel against the boats of the British fleet.

On the 1st of January, 1776, Captain Manly was given the command of the armed schooner "Hancock," and became commodore of a fleet of six vessels fitted out by order of General Washington. The other schooners were the "Lee," Captain Waters; the "Franklin," Captain Samuel Tucker; the "Harrison," Captain Dyer; the "Lynch," Captain Ayres; and the "Warren," Captain Burke. Captains Waters, Tucker and Dyer were commissioned on the 20th of January, 1776, while the last three commanders did not obtain their commissions until the 1st of February.

It is related of Captain Tucker, that when the express with his commission rode up to his door, the gallant captain, with his sleeves rolled up, and with a tarpaulin hat slouching over his face, was engaged in chopping wood in the yard. The officer thought that he must have mistaken the direction, and exclaimed, somewhat roughly—

"I say, fellow, I wish you would tell me if the Honorable Samuel Tucker lives hereabouts!"

"Honorable! honorable!" said Tucker, with a shrewd look at the stranger; "there is not any man of that name in Marblehead. He must be one of the family of Tuckers in Salem. I am the only Samuel Tucker there is here."

The gallant look and deportment of the young man convinced the officer that he could not be mistaken, and, after handing him his commission and partaking of refreshments, he returned to the camp at Cambridge.[1]

On the following day Captain Tucker was at Beverly, superintending the fitting out of the "Franklin," and in a short time sailed on his first cruise. The small arms necessary for the proper armament of his vessel were purchased with his own private funds, and the banner under which he sailed was the handiwork of his wife. In a short time he fell in with the British ship "George" and the brig "Annabel." The two vessels were transports, and had on board about two hundred and eighty Highland troops under command of Colonel Archibald Campbell. It was about ten o'clock in the evening, and a conflict ensued which lasted nearly two hours and a half. At length the British, having lost a large number of men, including the commander of one of the transports, struck their colors and surrendered. The prizes had on board a large amount of ammunition and military stores. Tucker sustained no damage in the loss of men, but the sails of his schooner were completely riddled.

During the month of April, Commodore Manly was transferred to the command of the frigate "Hancock," of thirty-two guns, and, on his promotion, the command of the schooner "Hancock" was given to Captain Tucker. Shortly after taking command of this schooner Tucker captured two brigs within sight of a British man-of-war, and carried them into Lynn. One of the brigs was from Cork, ninety-two tons burden, laden with beef, pork, butter and coal; the other, of about one hundred tons burden, was from the Western Islands, and laden with wine and fruit.

Early in the spring of 1776, Captain John Lee, of Marblehead, was commissioned commander of the privateer "Nancy," a small vessel carrying six guns. One afternoon, just before night, he discovered a heavy armed merchantman, which, though much larger than his own vessel, he resolved to capture. The "Nancy" was so low in the water that she was not discovered by the enemy. As soon as the night became sufficiently dark, Lee sailed up to the ship, having extended indistinct lights beyond the bowsprit and from the stern of his vessel, which gave her the appearance of great length. The English captain, thinking it idle to contend with a force so much superior to his own, as he thought her from this stratagem, struck his colors. His men were sent on

[1] Sheppard's "Life of Tucker."

[illegible] Captain Lee's small vessel in boat-loads, and were easily secured. The captain was among the last to leave the ship; and when he stepped on to the deck of the schooner, and saw how he had been deceived, he attempted to kill himself. He was prevented by Captain Lee, who, by courteous and gentle treatment endeavored to soothe his wounded feelings. During this cruise Lee captured thirteen prizes, which were sent into the port of Bilboa, in Spain. The last of these he followed, in order to superintend the trial, condemnation and sale of the vessels and cargoes, and to repair his own vessel.

After refitting, he sailed into the British Channel on a cruise, and was chased by the flag-ship of Admiral Jarvis. Captain Lee made every effort to increase the speed of his vessel by throwing his guns and other heavy ordnance overboard; but finding it impossible to escape, ran her on shore. The wreck was immediately surrounded by the boats of the ship; and the officers and crew were captured, and ultimately landed in England and sent to Forton Prison.

During the latter part of the month of October, Tucker captured the brig "Lively," bound from Air to Newfoundland, which, together with the cargo and crew, was sent into Boston. Mr. Sheppard, in his "Life of Commodore Tucker," states that during the year 1776 the number of prizes captured by that daring commander was from thirty to forty, including ships, brigs and smaller vessels, many of them with very valuable cargoes, and some of them armed vessels.

In March, 1777, Captain Tucker was received into the navy, and was commissioned as commander of frigate "Boston." It is probable that he did not assume the command of the frigate for some time after, however, as would seem from the following incident of naval warfare, during which the "Boston" was commanded by Captain Hector McNeil:

"In May of this year, the 'Hancock,' 32, Captain John Manly, and the 'Boston,' 24, Captain Hector McNeil, sailed in company from Boston, on a cruise to the eastward. A few days out, or in the month of May, the 'Hancock' made a strange sail, early in the morning, and succeeded in getting near enough to exchange broadsides, on opposite tacks, the 'Hancock' using her starboard and the enemy her larboard guns. At length the 'Boston' was out of gunshot. Finding that he had to deal with a vessel of superior force, the English vessel, which was a remarkably fine sailing craft, made all sail to escape. The 'Hancock' now went in pursuit, which Captain Manly sent his people from the guns, and they [illegible] breakfasts. As the 'Hancock' was one of the fastest ships that ever sailed, she quickly drew up abeam of the chase, and was soon within reach of her guns would bear. Captain Manly, however, had given orders not to discharge a gun until fairly alongside, and a close and severe cannonade ensued that lasted an hour and a half, during which the Englishman struck. The 'Hancock' had lost [illegible] guns. In this action the 'Hancock' had thirty-two men killed and wounded. The 'Boston' did not get into action until the 'Fox' had struck, when she is said to have fired into the 'Hancock' being in the act of lowering her colors. The 'Boston' then turned up on the beam of the 'Hancock,' and continued firing into the 'Fox' until she struck. The 'Fox' and continued in company with the 'Hancock' and 'Boston' until the 8th of June, when they fell in with the 'Rainbow,' a [illegible] Halifax to New York, and the 'Hancock,' the 'Boston,' the 'Flora' and the 'Fox' while the 'Boston' had so much the start as to be able easily to keep aloof. The 'Flora' first closed with the 'Fox,' which ship she recaptured after a short but spirited action. The wind being very light, Captain Manly attempted to lighten his ship by pumping out the water, and is believed to have hurt her sailing by altering her trim. Finding the 'Rainbow' closing, that gallant officer made his disposition for boarding, and, doubtless, would have made a desperate effort to carry his powerful antagonist, had the wind permitted. The air remained so light, however, that the 'Rainbow' got him fairly under her guns before he could get near enough to accomplish the object, the 'Victor' getting a raking position at the same time the 'Hancock' struck.

"Captain McNeil was much censured for abandoning his consort on this occasion, and was dismissed the service in consequence."[1]

Shortly after this event Captain Tucker, upon whom the rank of commodore had been conferred, sailed on a cruise in the "Boston." While out he fell in with a frigate much larger than his own and carried her by boarding. The marines were led by Lieutenant Magee, a brave young officer, who was killed the moment his feet struck the enemy's deck. Captain Tucker, who had brought his ship gun to gun with the British frigate, leaped into the midst of his adversaries, cutting down all before him. The loss of life on board the frigate was very great, and she soon struck her colors and became the prize of the "Boston."

During the latter part of October, or early in the month of November, 1777, the brigantine "Penet," Captain John Harris, of Marblehead, master, sailed for the port of Nantes, in the kingdom of France. Captain Harris was charged by the Board of War with the important duty of conveying Mr. Austin, who carried important papers from the government, to the first port that could be made in France or Spain. The passage was made in safety, and the "Penet" returned with a cargo and several seamen who had been discharged from American ships in France. Captain Harris subsequently sailed in private armed vessels, and in 1779 was sailing master on board a ship commanded by Captain John Conway, of Marblehead. On the 19th of November of that year they fell in with and were captured by a British ship of a larger size than their own, though not without a spirited engagement. The American vessel was at length obliged to strike her colors. After the battle was over, and the American seamen had surrendered themselves as prisoners, a lieutenant of the British ship seized a musket, and aiming at Captain Harris, shot him through the head, killing him instantly. The murder was deliberate and intentional, and is only one of many instances of brutality on the part of British officers.

On the 10th of February, 1778, Commodore Tucker, who had again been commissioned as commander of the "Boston," received orders to carry the Hon. John Adams as envoy to France. Mr. Adams took with him his son, John Quincy Adams, then about eleven years of age. The "Boston" experienced a great deal of unpleasant weather during the passage, and

[1] "Cooper's Naval History."

was several times chased by British cruisers which had been sent out to capture her. Commodore Tucker succeeded in eluding them all. On the 11th of March he fell in with the armed ship "Martha," bound from London to New York with a valuable cargo. As the "Boston" sailed up to her, the decks were cleared for action, and the men were at the guns ready for battle. Noticing Mr. Adams standing among the marines with a gun in his hand, Commodore Tucker, in tones of authority, ordered him to leave the deck. Mr. Adams, however, continued at his post, when, at last, Tucker seized him and forced him away, exclaiming as he did so, "I am commanded by the Continental Congress to deliver you safe in France, and you must go down below, sir." Mr. Adams accordingly left the deck. The "Boston" fired but one gun at the enemy, who returned three, and then struck his colors. The prize was manned and sent into Boston, and Tucker kept on his course to France, arriving at Bordeaux on the 31st of March.

During the spring and summer of 1779, Commodore Tucker, in the frigate "Boston," sailed on several remarkably successful cruises. In the month of June alone he captured seven prizes, six of which were armed vessels. Of these, the most important were the "Pole," a frigate of two hundred tons burden, mounting twenty-four guns, and the sloop-of-war "Thorn," mounting sixteen guns. The "Pole" was captured without the firing of a gun on either side. As soon as Tucker saw the ships in the distance he knew her to be an English frigate, and boldly sailed up to her.

Disguising his own ship with English colors, he prepared for action, and, having obtained a commanding position, hoisted the American flag and ordered an instant surrender. The commander of the British frigate, seeing that resistance was in vain, struck his colors. The prize was subsequently sold for one hundred and three thousand pounds, the sale of the coal and provisions found on board increasing the amount to nearly one hundred and twenty thousand pounds.

In the meantime, Commodore Manly, who two years before had been captured by the British and sent to prison, was exchanged. Upon regaining his freedom he at once assumed command of the privateer "Cumberland." While cruising in her he was captured by the British frigate "Pomona," and carried into Barbadoes, where he and his officers were imprisoned. All their applications to obtain paroles were rejected. They finally succeeded in effecting an escape, and seizing a sloop, sailed for Martinico, where they arrived in safety. Manly was afterwards in command of the privateer "Jason," which had been captured by the British shortly before his escape. While on a cruise, during the month of July, he was attacked by two British privateers, one of eighteen guns, and the other of sixteen. In the engagement which ensued, Manly behaved with great bravery, and reserved his fire until he came close up with his adversaries. Running between them, he first discharged a broadside into the eighteen-gun vessel, killing and wounding nearly thirty of her crew. He then gave her consort the other broadside, when both vessels surrendered, and became his prizes.

In November of this year the letter of marque "Freemason," Captain Benjamin Boden, sailed from Marblehead to Martinico. She carried six guns and fifteen men. On her passage she was taken by a British privateer sloop, mounting sixteen guns. The captain, second mate and a boy were left on board the "Freemason," but the first mate, Robert Wormsted, with the rest of the crew, was carried on board the privateer. The prisoners were handcuffed and thrust into the hold, and at night the hatchway was closed. Here Wormsted conceived a plan of escape which was successfully executed. His handcuffs were so large that he could with little exertion get rid of them and set the rest at liberty. He proposed rising upon the privateer the next day, when the captain should be taking the sun. At first the attempt was thought to be too desperate, they being so few in number compared with the crew on board. At length, however, Wormsted prevailed with his companions, and they solemnly bound themselves to do their utmost. His plan was to spring upon deck and knock down the captain, and they were to follow and do their part. At twelve o'clock the next day their courage was put to the test, and in a few moments the captain and many others were laid prostrate upon the deck. Their pistols were taken and aimed at the enemy in the cabin, who surrendered without opposition. Wormsted then bore down upon the schooner and ordered her to strike her colors. Captain Boden cried for joy, and his captors were as much chagrined as astonished at this unexpected reverse of fortune Wormsted, as commander, had the English flag lowered and the American hoisted. Having ordered the British officers and sailors to be handcuffed and thrust into the hold, he appointed Captain Boden prize-master, and directed him to steer for Guadaloupe. There in due time they arrived in triumph, and were received with unusual testimonials of exultation. The crew of the privateer were sent to prison and the prize was sold at auction. Having loaded his vessel, Wormsted sailed for Massachusetts, and on the second day was again captured and lost everything.

On the second cruise of the sloop-of-war "Thorn," Capt. Richard Cowell, of Marblehead, was appointed commander, and she had a crew of one hundred and twenty men. Being a very enterprising and brave officer, he made many captures, to man out which took so many of his seamen that his crew was reduced to only sixty, including officers and boys. He therefore concluded to return to port for the purpose of obtaining a reinforcement of seamen.

Within a few days after having commenced his homeward passage he fell in with the British letter of marque "St. David," of twenty-two guns He first asked the opinion of his officers as to the expediency

engaging a ship of such superior size and armament, and apparently fully manned. Finding that the officers were in favor of attacking her, he ordered the crew to be mustered, and having represented to them the great disparity of force between the two ships, he observed, "Still your officers are anxious to attack her; are you ready to go into action?" They instantly gave three hearty cheers, as an emphatic affirmative response. The "Thorn" immediately ran down alongside of the enemy, and began a desperate engagement at close quarters. The contest lasted an hour and a half, when the "St. David" struck her colors. On boarding her it was found that she had a crew of one hundred and seventy men, having taken on board seventy marines from a transport, which she had fallen in with in distress. The captain was mortally wounded, and one-third of the crew killed or wounded. The cargo consisted of six hundred puncheons of Jamaica spirit. Captain Cowell put an officer and twenty-five men on board the prize, and ordered him to make the nearest port; but the ship was never heard of again.

On the next cruise of the "Thorn," she was commanded by Commodore Tucker, who had been released from his parole given at Charleston by being exchanged for a British officer of equal rank. The crew of the "Thorn" was composed of eighty-one men and eighteen boys. "She had been cruising about three weeks, when they fell in with the 'Lord Hyde,' an English packet of twenty-two guns and one hundred men. As the two vessels drew near, the commanders hailed each other in the customary way when ships meet at sea, and the captain of the English packet cried out roughly from the quarter-deck—

"'Haul down your colors, or I'll sink you.'

"'Ay, ay, sir, directly,' replied Tucker, calmly and complacently; and he then ordered the helmsman to steer the 'Thorn' right under the stern of the packet, luff up under her lee quarters, and range alongside her. The order was promptly executed. The two vessels were laid side by side within pistol-shot of each other. While the 'Thorn' was getting into position the enemy fired a full broadside at her, which did but little damage. As soon as she was brought completely alongside her adversary, Tucker thundered to his men to fire, and a tremendous discharge followed, and, as good aim had been taken, a dreadful carnage was seen in that ill-fated vessel. It was rapidly succeeded by a fresh volley of artillery, and in twenty minutes a piercing cry was heard from the English vessel. 'Quarter, for God's sake! Our ship is sinking! Our men are dying of their wounds!' To this heart-rending appeal Commodore Tucker replied, 'How can you expect quarter while that [illegible] flag is flying?' The sad answer came back: 'Our halliards are shot away!' 'Then cut away your [illegible] mast, or you'll all be dead men.' It was immediately done, down came the colors; the din of [illegible] ceased, and only the groans of the wounded and dying were heard. Thirty-four of the crew of the prize, with the captain, were either killed or wounded. Her decks were besmeared with blood, and in some places it stood in clotted masses to the tops of the sailors' slippers.'[1] On going on board the prize, Commodore Tucker is said to have exclaimed, as he witnessed the suffering of the wounded, "Would to God I had never seen her!"

During the year 1780, while cruising in the ship "Marquis" of sixteen guns, many of which were small four-pounders, Captain Richard Cowell fell in with a British letter of marque. She mounted twenty-four guns, and a complete set of men, far superior in numbers to his own. Relying, however, on the spirit and bravery of his officers and crew, he laid his ship alongside the enemy, and continued there for nearly three hours. So near were the two ships in this situation that the sponges were frequently taken from one to the other while the men were in the act of loading. One man on board the "Marquis" was nearly taken out of the port at which he was stationed, by one of the crew of the enemy. This gallant and heroic action would undoubtedly have resulted in a glorious victory for Captain Cowell; but the enemy, after having expended all his ammunition, hauled off from his opponent, and the disabled state of the spars and rigging of the "Marquis" prevented the gallant captain from pursuing him.

In the spring of 1781, Commodore Tucker, in command of the "Thorn," captured the English ship "Elizabeth" of twenty guns. The ship was bound for Halifax under convoy with the brig "Observer" of sixteen, and the sloop-of-war "Howe," of fourteen guns. Ascertaining that two smaller vessels with valuable cargoes were sailing under protection of the convoy, Tucker determined to intercept them. On the appearance of the fleet Tucker hoisted the English flag and boldly sailed into the midst of them. Coming up between the "Elizabeth" and the "Observer," he made friendly inquiries of them, and then, as if by accident, managed to get his vessel entangled with the "Elizabeth." When all was in readiness, Tucker lowered the English flag and hoisted the American, at the same time giving orders to fire a broadside. The "Elizabeth" fired at the same time. Before the English captain had time to discharge another gun, thirty picked men from the "Thorn" boarded his vessel. Obtaining possession of the deck, they drove the crew below, and hauled down the colors. The brig and the sloop-of-war then attempted an attack upon the "Thorn," but Tucker assumed a threatening attitude, and after the sloop-of-war had discharged a broadside both vessels sailed away. During the engagement the "Thorn" had nine men killed and fourteen wounded.

During the latter part of the month of July the "Thorn" was captured by the British frigate "Hind."

[1] Sheppard's "Life of Tucker."

She was captured near the mouth of the River St. Lawrence, and Commodore Tucker, with his crew of eighty men, was landed at the Island of St. John's, to be conveyed to Halifax.

Shortly after they were landed at St. John's, Tucker and the officers of the "Thorn" were placed in an open boat for the purpose of being carried to Halifax. A verbal promise was exacted from Tucker, that he would coast along the shore and proceed direct for Halifax; but he was overpowered by his officers, who were determined to escape. They accordingly sailed across Massachusetts Bay, and about the middle of August arrived at Boston in safety.

This was the last cruise made by Commodore Tucker during the Revolutionary War. His biographer claims that he "took more prizes, fought more sea-fights and gained more victories than, with a very few exceptions, any naval hero of the age." And it is true.

During the month of November, 1782, the ship "St. Helena," commanded by Captain John Stillwell, sailed with a fleet from Havana for Philadelphia. She mounted twenty guns between decks,—ten of which, however, were of wood,—and had under convoy fifteen American vessels, which had previously been subjected to an embargo. On the day they were permitted to leave port the "St. Helena," in attempting to get under way, met with a disaster which detained her till sunset. The fleet was beating backward and forward during the night, which was dark, waiting for the convoy. The "St. Helena" passed and repassed a number of the vessels. In the meantime several guns were heard, supposed to be from one of the fleet At length, about midnight, she was saluted with a broadside. It was something wholly unexpected; the men were fatigued; no one seemed to know his station, and great confusion ensued. Some of the guns, however, were soon got into operation, and the firing continued till daylight, when the antagonist was found to be His Britannic Majesty's brig "Lively," commanded by Captain Michael Stanhope. The "St. Helena" was also within reach of the guns of the "Jupiter," a ship of the line. Of course, her colors were lowered, and the men taken on board the "Lively." Six days afterwards it was discovered that the crew of the "St. Helena" were preparing to rise. All the men were consequently confined below, and were suffered to come up only through a narrow grating, one at a time, the hatchway being constantly guarded by a sentinel. After six days' close confinement, five of the Americans—namely, Anthony Carner, John Prince,[1] Seth Farrow, Lewis Russell[1] and Nathan Walker—concerted a plan for taking the brig. Accordingly, about noon, Walker disarmed the sentinel, took out the bar which fastened the hatchway, and the other four instantly rushed upon deck, fought in a most desperate manner and in a few moments took the vessel.[2] The number of Americans on board the "Lively" was forty-six. They immediately bore away for Havana, and upon their arrival at that port a committee was chosen to sell the prize and settle with the crew.

The end of the year 1782 closed the maritime war of the American Revolution. As it had been begun by the men of Marblehead, so it was reserved for a Marblehead commander to close it with a brilliant achievement. Commodore Manly, who in 1775 hoisted the first American flag, and on board the little schooner "Lee" made the first important capture of the war, had been appointed to the command of the United States frigate "Hague." While cruising about the West Indies he was chased by an English seventy-four, and grounded on a sand-bank near Guadaloupe. Three ships of the line having joined the seventy-four, they came to anchor within gunshot of the "Hague." With springs on their cables, they opened a most tremendous fire. Commodore Manly supported this cannonade for three days. On the fourth day he succeeded in extricating his ship from her perilous position, when, hoisting Continental colors at the maintop-gallant-mast, he fired thirteen guns as a farewell defiance, and boldly sailed away. In due time the "Hague" arrived safe in Boston.

CHAPTER LXXXV.

MARBLEHEAD—(*Continued*).

Attempts to Restore Prosperity—Visit of General de Lafayette—The Federal Constitution—Gift and Address of Marblehead to Vice-President John Adams—The Marblehead Academy Established—The First Collector of the Port—Visit of President Washington—Poverty of the Town—The Grand Lottery—Methodist Church Organized—The First Postmaster—Death of Colonel Azor Orne—Hon. Samuel Sewall elected a Member of Congress—Bequest of John Marchant—Exercises on the Death of Washington—Doctor Elisha Story's Fatal Mistake—Ravages of Small-Pox—Marblehead Bank Incorporated—The English Ship "Jupiter"—Depredations of British Cruisers.

On the return of peace, with that determined spirit of enterprise for which they had always been distinguished, the people of Marblehead entered at once upon their accustomed commercial pursuits. Under the direction of merchants of the character and ability of Colonel William R. Lee, John Hooper, Thomas and Knott Pedrick, and a score of others equally well known and respected, large ships were fitted out, some of which made successful voyages to France, Spain, Portugal and the West Indies. The Grand Banks fisheries were also, in a measure, revived, and every attempt was made to restore the prosperity which the town enjoyed before the war. It was not until these attempts were found to be well-nigh futile that the disastrous effects of the great struggle were realized. The days when Marblehead gave promise of being a great commercial port were gone, and they

[1] Of Marblehead.

[2] Alden's "Collections.

were gone forever. The only recourse of the inhabitants was to prosecute the fishing business, and in a few years it became almost the sole industry of the town.

On Tuesday, November 2, 1784, the Marquis de Lafayette visited the town. The general was accompanied by the Chevalier Grandchamps, the Chevalier Caraman and Samuel Breck, Esq., of Boston. The distinguished visitors were met on Salem Road by a procession of prominent citizens, and escorted to the entrance of the town, where they were received with a band of music by a large concourse of people. As the procession marched into town, the church-bells were rung, and the marquis was received on all sides with prolonged cheers and cries of "Long life to the Marquis de Lafayette!" Arriving at the residence of one of the citizens, he was introduced to "the gentlemen of the place," and was presented with an address of welcome, to which he feelingly and appropriately responded. He was then escorted to another private residence, represented in the newspaper reports as a "genteel house," where a grand dinner was served. After dinner, an hour was devoted to speeches, and the customary thirteen toasts were drunk, the sentiment offered by Lafayette being "The Town of Marblehead, and Unbounded Success to its Fisheries." At six o'clock the distinguished visitors departed amid the booming of cannon, the ringing of bells and the joyful acclamations of the people.

On the 29th of May, 1787, the Constitutional Convention, composed of delegates from all the States, met in Philadelphia. Elbridge Gerry, of Marblehead, was one of the delegates from Massachusetts, and labored earnestly throughout the entire session of the convention to "secure a Constitution adequate to the exigencies of the government and the preservation of the Union." He was, however, one of the sixteen members who withheld their signatures from the document when completed. When the instrument was referred to the States for ratification, Isaac Mansfield, Azor Orne, Jonathan Glover and John Glover, as members of the Massachusetts Convention, voted in favor of its adoption.

The election of George Washington and John Adams as President and Vice-President of the United States gave unbounded satisfaction to the people of Marblehead. For Mr. Adams, especially, they entertained feelings of the deepest gratitude for his inestimable services "in preserving to the United States of America in the Treaty of Peace the extensive advantage of the cod-fishery." These advantages were considered as especially beneficial to Marblehead and the citizens, in the fullness of their hearts, resolved to present Mr. Adams with an address and some slight testimonial of their appreciation of his efforts in their behalf. Accordingly, on the 6th of March, 1789, a town-meeting was held, at which it was voted to present his Excellency John Adams, Esq., with six quintals of table fish." The gift was presented, together with an address, which concluded as follows:

"We therefore, being now legally assembled in Town-meeting, pray your Excellency to accept this, our unanimous address, as expressing our sense of those essential benefits which we now enjoy in the preservation of the fishery, for which we believe ourselves more especially indebted to your Excellency. While we are enjoying the fullness of those benefits, we pray your Excellency will indulge us to furnish your table with a small share of the fruits of your good services, which we wish may be acceptable as a mark of our gratitude."

During the year 1788, or during the year 1789, several influential citizens, who appreciated the necessity of greater educational advantages for the youth of the town, contributed the funds for the establishment of an academy. These gentlemen, who styled themselves "benefactors," were Samuel Sewall, Robert Hooper, Samuel Hooper, William Raymond Lee, Elisha Story, Samuel Russell Trevett, John Humphreys, John Goodwin, Marston Watson, Richard Homan, Joseph Sewall, Samuel Bartoll, John Dixie, Richard Pedrick, Ebenezer Graves and Burrill Devereux. In a short time a building was erected on Pleasant Street, and Mr. William Harris was employed as preceptor.

For many years previous to the Revolution Marblehead had been a port of entry, but as the records were taken away by the Tory refugees during the war, we are thereby deprived of much valuable information concerning the commercial and maritime history of the town. The first collector after the organization of the national government was Richard Harris, who was evidently commissioned in the autumn of 1789. The district comprised all the waters and shores in the towns of Marblehead and Lynn, though since that time the towns of Swampscott, Nahant and Saugus have been set off from Lynn and are still included in the district. The first entry made in the records is under date of October 2, 1789. The number of licenses granted during the year ensuing was one hundred and thirty-two, twenty-seven of which were sloops, schooners and brigantines registered in the foreign trade

On the 29th of October President Washington, who was making a tour of the New England States, visited the town. He was accompanied by Major Jackson and Mr. Lear, gentlemen of his family, and was received at the entrance of the town by a procession composed of the selectmen, the clergymen of the town and a large body of citizens. The accounts of the celebration on this important occasion are very meagre; but we are informed that he "was conducted to the house of Mrs. Lee, where a collation was provided, of which he very cheerfully partook with the gentlemen of his suite, the selectmen, clergymen and other gentlemen of the town." President Washington was welcomed by the selectmen, who presented an address in the name of and on behalf of the town, in which he was assured that his presence "inspired the inhabitants of Marblehead with the most unbounded

joy; but they cannot express as they would wish, their great sense of the honor done them on this occasion. The too visible decay and poverty of this town must be their excuse that they have not offered to the illustrious character who now visits them a reception more answerable to his dignity and more expressive of their own veneration."

Before leaving the town President Washington visited one of the fish-yards and several other places of interest, after which he proceeded on his journey. Two days later, having arrived at Portsmouth, N. H., he forwarded a letter, saying that "the reception with which you have been pleased to honor my arrival in Marblehead, and the sentiments of approbation and attachment which you have expressed of my conduct and of my person, are too flattering and grateful not to be acknowledged with sincere thanks, and answered with unfeigned wishes for your prosperity."

The plea of poverty, offered in apology for not receiving the President of the United States in a manner more becoming to his station, gives but a faint conception of the condition of the town at this time. For two years the fishing business had failed to be remunerative, and many of the inhabitants were reduced to a state of extreme wretchedness. There were four hundred and fifty-nine widows and eight hundred and sixty-five orphan children in the town, nearly all of whom were dependent in some degree upon the tax-paying inhabitants for support. As the winter of 1790 advanced, their sufferings were greatly augmented, and several perished from hunger and exposure.

Added to the general distress from this cause, was the anxiety produced by the visible decay of property, both public and private. Houses, barns and fences were falling to pieces, and without the means to repair them, their owners were powerless to prevent it. The town-house and work-house were in a ruinous condition, and River-Head Beach had been so long out of repair that it was in great danger of being entirely washed away by the constant inroads of the sea. The people knew not where to seek relief, and various expedients were resorted to for the purpose of obtaining money for the assistance of those in distress. At length, driven to desperation by the misery about them, the citizens, in town-meeting assembled, voted to petition the Legislature for permission to hold a lottery for the relief of their necessities. Permission was readily granted, and the final drawing took place on the 3d of June. By means of this lottery, and two others subsequently held, the beach at the head of the harbor was repaired; the distress of the inhabitants was alleviated and the general appearance of the town was greatly improved.

During the year 1790 the Methodist Church was organized in the house of Mr. Prentiss, on Mugford Street. The new society consisted of seven members only, but so rapidly did it increase in numbers that in a few years a pastor was settled and religious services were regularly maintained.

The Marblehead Academy had now become an established institution. Education was encouraged in Massachusetts, as in no other State in the Union, by wise laws and judicious appropriations, and when, in 1792, an act of incorporation was applied for, it was readily obtained. The act became a law on the 17th of November of that year, and the corporation was established by the name of "The Trustees of the Marblehead Academy." Shortly after the Legislature granted a township of land, six miles square, lying between the rivers Kennebec and Penobscot, in the county of Hancock, for the purpose of supporting the academy. This land was subsequently sold to Samuel Sewall, Esq., for one thousand five hundred pounds.

The mails had been carried to Marblehead from Salem, regularly twice a week, for many years, and on special occasions it had been customary to dispatch a messenger on horseback to carry important news or documents. On the 20th of March, 1793, the first post-office was established, and Thomas Lewis was appointed postmaster.

On the 6th of June, 1799, Colonel Azor Orne, beloved and respected as one of the most prominent of the Revolutionary patriots, died in Boston, and his remains were brought to Marblehead for interment. On the Sunday following his death the Rev. Ebenezer Hubbard, pastor of the First Congregational Society, preached an appropriate sermon, taking for his text the words found in chapter eleven of the gospel according to St. John, thirty-fifth verse,—"Jesus wept."

Another event to which considerable local importance was attached was the election of the Hon. Samuel Sewall as a member of Congress. Mr. Sewall was an eminent member of the Essex bar, and had for several years represented Marblehead in the General Court. Having been prominent in all local matters, and deeply interested in the welfare of his fellow-citizens, his election gave the most sincere pleasure to the people of Marblehead, who felt that in him they had an able advocate of their interests at the national capital.

The first bequest made to the town was the sum of nine hundred and thirty-seven dollars, given by Captain John Marchant, for the benefit of the poor. During the month of June, 1797, Captain Marchant, who was about to sail on a foreign voyage from Philadelphia, placed a promissory note for that amount, which he held against a citizen of Dorchester, in the hands of Colonel William R. Lee, with instructions to collect it, and in case he never returned, to donate the amount to the poor of the town. Captain Marchant died in Batavia during the following year, and the note was collected in accordance with his instructions. It is doubtful, however, whether the benevolent intentions of the donor have ever been carried into effect.

After an unsuccessful attempt to invest the fund, the overseers of the poor turned it over to the town, and it was appropriated for the erection of two grammar school-houses.

On the 14th of December, 1799, George Washington died at Mount Vernon in the sixty-seventh year of his age. The day of the funeral was appropriately observed by the tolling of bells, the firing of minute-guns and a general suspension of business. In the afternoon a procession of the Lodge of Masons and the pupils of the public schools marched to the new meeting-house, where an oration was delivered by Joseph Story, then a student of law in the office of Hon. Samuel Sewall.

In the autumn of 1800 the town was once more thrown into a state of excitement, by the breaking out of the small-pox. Doctor Elisha Story, who had for many years been a popular and successful physician in the town, having learned of the important discovery by Dr. Jenner, that contagion from small-pox could be averted by inoculation with cow virus, sent to England and procured a quantity of virus, with which he inoculated several of his own children and those of some of his friends. It was soon evident that a fatal mistake had been made.

The virus proved to be that of the genuine small-pox, and as the disease spread from house to house, the people were panic-stricken with fear. Several town-meetings were held to consider the matter, and the town-house being too small to contain the crowd of excited citizens that assembled, the meetings were adjourned and again convened at the "New Meeting-house." All intercourse with other towns was prohibited, and a committee was chosen to adopt other necessary measures of precaution against the spread of the pestilence. The wrath of the unreflecting and ignorant portion of the community was directed with especial severity against Doctor Story, to whom they attributed the cause of the entire trouble. Threats of lynching him were publicly made, and fears were entertained by his friends that some serious injury would be done him either in person or property.

The counsels of the wise prevailed, however, and the good doctor, who suffered keenly in his mind on account of the distress which he had innocently caused, was unmolested.

To add to the general distress, a large proportion of the community were suffering from the most extreme privations of poverty. "Melancholy indeed," wrote the town's committee a few weeks later, "was the prospect of six hundred inhabitants (one-twelfth of our population), who, independent of disease, were destitute of the common comforts of life; who had little else than hunger and cold in prospect, with the approaching inclement season." The town had voted to care for the poor and destitute, but it was found impossible to furnish relief proportionate to such a demand. Succor was at hand, however, for upon their necessities being known, contributions began to pour in from several of the neighboring towns, and in a short time the distress was alleviated. On the 13th of January, 1801, a little less than two months after the breaking out of the disease, the town was declared cleansed, and the inhabitants of other towns were invited to resume their usual intercourse. But before this could be done, the grave had received sixty-four victims of the pestilence, twenty of whom were adults.

Early in the month of January, 1804, the principal business men and capitalists of the town subscribed $100,000, as the capital stock of a bank, and applied to the Legislature for an act of incorporation. The act received the signature of the Governor on the 7th of March, and the institution was established as the Marblehead Bank. Capt. Joseph Barker was elected president, and Mr. John Pedrick (3d) cashier. The "Lee Mansion" was subsequently purchased of Hon. Samuel Sewall for five thousand dollars, and has ever since been owned and occupied by the bank.

Instances of great bravery are not uncommon when men are fighting for the honor of their country or in defense of their homes. The deeds of the soldier who bravely faces death upon the battle-field are recorded on enduring monuments, and all men unite in doing honor to the hero. But there are deeds of heroism when the country is at peace, and the home is free from danger, when the ocean is the battle-field and the mighty wind the foe. These, too often, are allowed to fade from the memory, and to perish in oblivion. Thus there are few persons living to-day who have ever heard of the many acts of heroism performed by the Marblehead fishermen while at sea. Much has been done to perpetuate the memory of an act of injustice to an innocent man, who had been accused by a cowardly crew of wilfully refusing to assist a vessel in distress; but the following incident so worthy to be held in rememberance, has been almost forgotten:

In the spring of 1805 the English ship "Jupiter" foundered at sea, and three days after the sad event Skipper "William Powers" fell in with her long boat, having on board thirty-nine of the passengers and crew. The fresh wind and heavy sea rendered it impossible for the boat to board the schooner, and for a time it was feared that all attempts to rescue the unfortunate occupants must be abandoned. Finally, as a last resort, the heroic "skipper" placed a rope about his waist, and by flinging himself over the "lee quarter," succeeded in lifting each person separately on board the vessel. It was nobly done; but the disinterested skipper performed the act of mercy at the risk of his own life, and, though a strong and powerful man, was completely exhausted and severely bruised. The rescued passengers were shortly after distributed among three other vessels, commanded by Skippers John Powers, Green and Dennis, by whom they were brought in safety to Marblehead. Their arrival was the signal for similar acts of generosity on

the part of the inhabitants, who vied with each other in supplying their necessities, and making them as comfortable as their friendless situation would permit.

Shortly after this event the town was again thrown into a state of excitement by the news of an outrage committed by the British frigate "Ville de Milan" upon several fishing vessels from Marblehead, Salem and Beverly. The frigate was cruising on the banks, and her commander, Captain Lowrie, boarded the vessels and impressed twelve or fourteen of their best men into the British naval service. Though only one of many similar outrages, this incident is important as an illustration of the depredations committed by British cruisers upon American seamen, which resulted in the passage of the Embargo Act, and the subsequent war between the United States and Great Britain.

CHAPTER LXXXVI.

MARBLEHEAD—(*Continued*).

The Embargo—Seizure of Marblehead Vessels—The True Story of Skipper Ireson—Action of Marblehead in Support of the Embargo Law—Reception of Marblehead Resolutions in Congress—Marblehead Light Infantry Organized—Elbridge Gerry Elected Governor—Baptist Church Organized—War Declared Against Great Britain—Patriotic Action of Marblehead—First Privateer Fitted Out—Marbleheaders Man the Frigate "Constitution"—Heroism of William Furness—Battle Between the "Constitution" and the "Guerriere"—Elbridge Gerry Elected Vice-President—Engagement Between the "Constitution" and the "Java"—The "Chesapeake" and the "Shannon"—The Town Fortified—Two Men Shot in the Streets—British Cruisers Chase the "Constitution" into Marblehead Harbor—Heroic Death of Lieutenant John G. Covell—Demonstration on the Declaration of Peace—Marblehead Men in British Prisons.

THE repeated indignities to which American vessels were subjected by British cruisers had the effect to impress upon Congress the necessity of legislation for the protection of the commerce of the country, and on the 8th of January, 1808, the famous embargo law was passed. This act, which was adopted at the instance of the President, detained all vessels in American ports, and required all American vessels then away to return home. But the depredations of the British continued in spite of the embargo. Vessel after vessel was captured and confiscated, and many were overhauled while returning from foreign ports in compliance with the law. Among these were the schooners "Minerva" and "Perseverance," of Marblehead, commanded by Captains Poor and Messervey. The captain of the "Perseverance," on his arrival home, reported that he had left sixty American vessels at Plymouth, among which was the schooner "Betsy Hooper," of Marblehead, which had been confiscated.

Though firmly in favor of the embargo, and sincerely believing in its necessity as a measure of precaution, the inhabitants of Marblehead were among the greatest sufferers from its effects. With a population of six or seven thousand, nearly all of whom were entirely dependent upon the fishing business for subsistence, the condition of the town was deplorable. Eighty-seven vessels, averaging eighty tons each, were necessarily idle; and the warehouses were stored with the fish caught during that and the previous year. The law prohibited their exportation and there was no market for them at home; consequently they could not be sold, and there was great distress among the people.

On Saturday, the 30th of October, the schooner "Betty," commanded by Skipper Benjamin Ireson, arrived from the Grand Banks. Shortly after their arrival the crew reported that at midnight on the previous Friday, when off Cape Cod light-house, they passed the schooner "Active," of Portland, which was in a sinking condition; and that the skipper had refused to render any assistance to the unfortunate men on board the wreck. The excitement and indignation of the people upon the reception of the news can be better imagined than described. Two vessels, manned by willing volunteers, were immediately dispatched to the scene of disaster, with the hope of their arrival in time to save the shipwrecked sailors. But their mission was a failure and they returned with no tidings of the wreck. The resentment of the people was still further provoked when, on the following day, the sloop "Swallow" arrived, having on board Captain Gibbons, the master of the ill-fated schooner. He corroborated the story told by the crew of the "Betty," and stated that the "Active" sprung aleak at about eleven o'clock on Friday night. An hour later the "Betty" was spoken, "but contrary to the principles of humanity," she sailed away without giving any assistance. On Saturday, Captain Gibbons and three of the passengers were taken off the wreck by Mr. Hardy, of Truro, in a whale-boat. Four other persons were left on the wreck, but the storm increased so rapidly that it was found impossible to return to their rescue. Captain Gibbons was placed on board the revenue cutter "Good Intent," and afterwards went on board the "Swallow," in which he came to Marblehead. This statement by one who had so narrowly escaped a watery grave made a deep impression upon the fishermen, and they determined to demonstrate their disapproval of Skipper Ireson's conduct by a signal act of vengeance. Accordingly, on a bright moonlight night, the unfortunate skipper was suddenly seized by several powerful men, and securely bound. He was then placed in a dory, and, besmeared from head to feet with tar and feathers, was dragged through the town, escorted by a multitude of men and boys. When opposite the locality known as Work-house Rocks, the bottom of the dory came out, and the prisoner finished the remainder of his ride to Salem in a cart. The authorities of that town forbade the entrance of the strange procession, and the crowd returned to Marblehead.

Throughout the entire proceeding Mr. Ireson maintained a discreet silence, and when, on arriving at his own home, he was released from custody, his only remark was "I thank you for my ride, gentlemen, but you will live to regret it." His words were prophetic. When too late to make reparation for the wrong they had committed, the impulsive fishermen realized that they had perpetrated an act of the greatest injustice upon an innocent man.

At this late day, when for years his memory has been defamed throughout the land, and the fair name of the women of Marblehead has been sullied by the fictitious story of one of our best New England poets, it is but just that the true history of the affair should be written. Skipper Ireson was not more to blame than his crew, and, it is believed, not at all. When the wreck was spoken, and the cry of distress was heard, a terrible gale was blowing. There was a consultation on board the "Betty" as to the course to be pursued, and the crew decided not to endanger their own lives for the sake of saving others. Finding that they were resolute in their determination, Skipper Ireson proposed to lay by the wreck all night, or until the storm should abate, and then go to the rescue of the unfortunate men. To this they also demurred, and insisted upon proceeding upon the homeward voyage without delay. On their arrival in Marblehead, fearing the just indignation of the people, they laid the entire blame upon the skipper. This version of the affair is generally accepted as true; and for the credit of the town, be it said, that it is one of the few incidents in its entire history that its citizens have any reason to regret.

The embargo, which had now been in operation nearly a year, had been strongly opposed by the Federalists from the beginning, and as the ill effects of the measure began to be felt, their hostility increased. Town-meetings had been held in nearly all principal sea-ports to remonstrate against the law, and many of the speeches at these meetings were seditious and inflammatory in the extreme. Not so in Marblehead. Though starvation stared them in the face, the citizens were loyal to the government, and at a town-meeting, held on the 7th of December, the following resolutions were unanimously adopted:

[illegible] that we [illegible] unitedly steadfast in the faith that the measure was a wise one, and that the President and Congress [illegible] entitled to and shall receive our warmest [illegible] to the Independence, Liberty and just [illegible] particularly the commercial part thereof.

[illegible] will use all the energy they possess to carry [illegible] the present Congress have enacted or may [illegible] against the unjustifiable [illegible] Europe by profiteering [illegible] Europe by profiteering [illegible] measures.

Captain William Story, Nathan B. Martin and Joseph Pedrick were elected a committee to forward the resolutions to the Hon. Joseph Story, member of Congress from this district. The resolutions were forwarded accompanied by a letter signed by every member of the committee.

"Having learned that the government intends employing some cutters as gun-boats, to prevent evasions of the laws of the Country (they wrote), we with humility beg leave to suggest to you our opinion, that on this coast (that is to say, from Cape Cod to Cape Sable), any cutter which the government may send will not so well answer the purpose; the gun-boats will be useless, for they would not, in this inclement season of the year, be able to keep at sea without great risk. From the knowledge we have of our fishing-vessels, we think they will answer every purpose and be a saving to the government to employ them in defense of their laws. We also beg leave to offer the government as many vessels of this description as will prevent any evasion whatever, from any ports or places between the above-mentioned capes, or wherever otherwise wanted, knowing, as you do, the peculiar situation of the people of this place, that they have now on hand two years catching of fish and no vent for the same. Notwithstanding this, they look upon the measures of the government as the only means of retaining our future commerce. They therefore feel disposed, to the utmost of their abilities, to support the general government with the risk of their lives and property, and beg leave through you to tender their services to man out, and have manned, any vessels which it may please for the service of the United States."

This action of the town gave great satisfaction to the friends of the administration throughout the country. The resolutions were published by Republican (Democratic) newspapers everywhere; and from one and all the town received words of praise and encouragement. Of the manner of their reception in Congress, Representative Story wrote to his brother, under date of December 21, 1808:

"This day I had the pleasure of presenting the Marblehead petition, and as a part of my address on this occasion, which was short, I read in the hearing of the House the resolves of Marblehead. The effect was electrical. It gave a degree of delight, it awakened a sensation of admiration far beyond what I ever knew in a public body. On every side the patriotism, the honorable, the tried and uniform patriotism of Marblehead resounded. All the Republicans declare their determination to assist in some way to honor and relieve the citizens of the Town, and I feel an assurance that some of our fishermen will be employed as protectors of our coasts. One able Republican member from South Carolina (Mr. D. R. Williams) declared that such was his sense of the virtue and character of the town, that he would willingly give them a thousand bushels of corn from his plantation. But all the friends of the Government rejoiced that in this day of disaffection in the Eastern States a people could be found who were so true to the honor and rights of their country. Mr. Giles, of the Senate, hearing of my having the resolves, sent for them, and, in a speech which he made to-day in the Senate, read them, and complimented you all. You may depend that a more reasonable and welcome resolution never came to Congress. It is an example worthy to be followed. When I named the facts to the President he appeared highly delighted."

The anxiety expressed concerning the effect of the opposition to the embargo, manifested by the people of the Eastern States, was not without reason. Senator Adams expressed his belief, in a communication to the President, that "from information received by him, and which might be relied upon, it was the determination of the ruling party in Massachusetts, and of the Federalists in New England generally, if the embargo was persisted in, no longer to submit to it, but to separate themselves from the Union, at least until the existing obstacles to foreign commerce were removed." This, it has been said, was a false alarm; but that such was the sincere belief of the citizens of Marblehead, is evident from the following resolutions adopted at a town-meeting, held on the 9th of February, 1809:

"*Resolved*, That we view with the utmost abhorrence and indignation the conduct of a party among us, who are continually endeavoring to

excite the good people of this commonwealth to a disobedience of the laws of the Union, by false and libellous publications respecting the motives and measures of the general government, and gross misstatements of the nature and sources of our present embarrassments; that the real object of this party is to separate the United States, and excite rebellion and civil war for the purpose of establishing a monarchy under the pretence of a Northern Confederacy, or force us into a destructive war with the continent of Europe, and consequently a fatal alliance with the corrupt monarchy of Britain, whose embrace is death.

* * * * * * * * * *

"*Resolved*, That we are determined never to yield our Liberties and Rights, purchased by the best blood of our country, either to external foes or domestic traitors; but we are determined, at all hazards, to maintain the Constitution of the United States and all laws made in pursuance thereof; and we do most solemnly pledge our lives, our property and our sacred honor for their support, through every peril of insurrection, rebellion or invasion.

"*Resolved*, That we hold sacred those inestimable privileges resigned to our hands by a numerous class of brave and hardy townsmen, who sacrificed their lives for the achievement of our glorious independence; that in order to protect and defend these privileges, ever to be held sacred by Americans, we will arm and equip ourselves in such a manner as our circumstances will admit, and do hereby publicly declare that we will die Freemen, and never live slaves."

The people of Marblehead did not forget their resolution to arm and equip themselves, and during the month of June the company known as the Marblehead Light Infantry was organized. Joshua O. Bowden was the first commander, and the company has maintained its organization ever since.

The events of the year 1810 were of more than ordinary interest to the people of Marblehead. Early in the month of January two schooners were captured by British cruisers and carried into St. Jean de Luce. This was considered an evidence that the British government intended to continue its policy of seizing American vessels and impressing American seamen, and had the effect to increase the indignation felt by the people. "Free Trade and Sailors' Rights" was the cry everywhere, and when, in the month of May, the annual State election took place, Elbridge Gerry, the Democratic candidate for Governor, received four hundred and seventy-one of the five hundred and twenty-four votes cast in Marblehead. Mr. Gerry was elected, and in both branches of the Legislature the majorities were Democratic.

By the census of this year, it appeared that the number of inhabitants in the town was five thousand eight hundred and forty-two, of whom sixty-three were people of color.

During the month of February the First Baptist Church was organized, twenty-one persons being regularly dismissed from the First Baptist Church of Salem for this purpose.

On the 18th of June, 1812, war was formally declared against Great Britain by the Congress of the United States.

From the moment when was was declared, the citizens of Boston, the metropolis of New England, "clamored for peace and reprobated the war as wicked, unjust and unnecessary." Many other towns in the State were only too ready to follow the example set by Boston, and on the 29th of June the citizens of Newbury declared:

"We consider the war ruinous to the property as well as the happiness and morals of the nation. It is brought on the country by surprise; it was conceived in darkness and secret conclave; the people were kept in profound ignorance of their impending destruction."

Far different were the resolutions adopted by the citizens of Marblehead. On the very day that the meeting was held in Newbury a town-meeting was held in Marblehead and the following resolutions were unanimously adopted:

"*Resolved*, That we view the late solemn act, declaring war against Great Britain and her dependencies, as the last resort of a much injured people, freely persuaded that its justice and necessity will be acknowledged by all who candidly pass in review the doctrines of our enemy; and nothing short of a base submission would have prolonged peace.

"*Resolved*, That, whatever sacrifices may result, we pledge ourselves to support our government, our laws, and our Liberty, through the present arduous conflict. We also pledge ourselves to support and protect the Union of the States as the ark of our political safety; and that we view all those who dare intimate a wish for the separation of the Union as the worst enemies to our peace, prosperity and happiness."

As soon as the news of the declaration of war was received in Marblehead the town was the scene of the utmost activity. Nowhere in the country did the people spring to arms with more alacrity. Four privateers, namely—the "Lion," the "Thorn," the "Snowbird" and the "Industry"—were immediately fitted out, and began a series of remarkably successful cruises against the ships of the British nation. This was not all. Forty private armed schooners were soon fitted out in Salem, a large proportion of which were manned by Marblehead seamen. One schooner, the "Growler," was commanded by Captain Nathaniel Lindsey, of Marblehead, and had an entire crew of Marblehead men. Of the ship "America," one of the most conspicuous and successful cruisers during the entire war, thirty were from Marblehead.

The fishermen of Marblehead were also largely represented on board the frigates of the United States Navy. Eighty men of the crew of the "Constitution" were from Marblehead, and were on board her throughout the entire period of her brilliant career.

The war had now begun in earnest. On the 20th of July the ship "Orient," of Marblehead, Captain Andrews, commander, while on the passage home from a merchant voyage to Gibraltar, was captured on the banks of Newfoundland by the British sloop-of-war "Harvard." The "Orient," which had on board a rich cargo and about thirteen thousand dollars in specie, was sent into St. John's, N. B. The crew, ten in number, were placed on board a prison-ship, from which they were subsequently released by the United States frigate "Essex," and sent to New York on board a cartel ship.

Early in the month of August the schooner "Dolphin," of Salem, was captured by the British cruiser "Belvidera." Among the crew of the "Dolphin," who became prisoners of war, was Joseph Furness, of Marblehead. Shortly after his confinement on board the "Belvidera" he was carried on board the ship

San Domingo," where an attempt was made to impress him into the British naval service. With manly heroism, Furness declared that he would not fight against his country, and told his captors to shoot him as he stood if they chose to do so. They then placed him on board the guard-ship, where his steady resolution and undaunted courage inspired the admiration of the British officers. Soon after, documents were sent down for his release and he returned home.

On the 19th of August the celebrated battle between the United States frigate "Constitution" and the British frigate "Guerriere" took place, which resulted in a glorious victory for the "Constitution." The loss on board the "Guerriere" in killed, wounded and missing, was one hundred and one. The loss on board the "Constitution" was seven killed and seven wounded.

The news of this engagement was received in Marblehead with the greatest enthusiam; and so large a proportion of the crew of the "Constitution" were citizens of the town, it was considered almost a local victory.

The Presidential election of 1812 resulted in another triumph for the Democratic party, and the re-election of President Madison. This was accepted as an indorsement of the war policy of the administration and gave great satisfaction to its friends throughout the country. In Marblehead, especially, the event was hailed with great rejoicing. Elbridge Gerry, who was revered and honored as a patriot and a statesman, had been elected Vice-President of the United States, and nowhere was the honor conferred upon him and Massachusetts more sincerely appreciated than in his native town.

On the 29th of December a desperate engagement was fought off San Salvador between the United States frigate "Constitution," then commanded by Commodore Bainbridge, and the British frigate "Java," of thirty eight guns. The combat lasted more than three hours, and when the "Java" struck she was reduced to a mere wreck. Of her crew, one hundred and sixty were killed and wounded, while on board the "Constitution" there were only thirty-four. Among the killed on board the "Constitution" in this action were two brothers named Cheever, of Marblehead, the only sons of a poor widow.

On the 1st of June, 1813, a battle was fought in the bay south of Marblehead Neck, in sight of a multitude of anxious spectators, between the United States frigate "Chesapeake," commanded by Captain Lawrence, and the British frigate "Shannon," commanded by Captain Broke. The action terminated fatally for the "Chesapeake," and the intrepid Lawrence was mortally wounded. Of the crew of the "Shannon" twenty-four were killed and fifty-six wounded. Of the crew of the "Chesapeake" forty eight were killed and nearly one hundred wounded. When carried below and asked if the colors should be struck, Captain Lawrence replied "No; they shall never while I live." Delirious from excess of suffering, he continued to exclaim: "Don't give up the ship!" an expression consecrated by the people of Marblehead as the last words also of the heroic Mugford thirty-seven years before. During the engagement three Marblehead sailors were on board the "Shannon" as prisoners of war, by whom the progress of the battle was watched with the utmost interest. They had been taken on board a prize of the privateer "America," several days before, and their hopes of a speedy delivery were suddenly brought to an end by the capture of the "Chesapeake."

The body of Captain Lawrence was carried to Halifax, but was subsequently brought to Salem, and reburied with great parade, the Hon. Joseph Story, a native of Marblehead, acting as orator of the day.

The large number of British sloops-of-war which were cruising about the bay, caused the inhabitants to fear an attack upon the town, and in the spring and summer of this year active preparations were made for its defense. Fortifications were erected, and batteries were stationed on Twisden's Hill, Goodwin's Head, Hewitt's Head and on the Neck. The town was divided into two wards, and all the able-bodied men remaining at home were enlisted into companies and detailed for general duty. The Marblehead Light Infantry, which now numbered one hundred men in its ranks, acted as a reserve force to be called upon in case of an attack. A company was also recruited and mustered into the service of the United States for duty at Fort Sewall. This company was under command of Captain John Bailey, and Joshua O. Bowden, the efficient commander of the Light Infantry, was its first lieutenant.

Guards were stationed along the coast, on the Neck and at various localities in the town, for the purpose of alarming the inhabitants should an attack be made.

These precautionary measures were not adopted without sufficient cause. The British cruisers had become so bold that in several instances unarmed American vessels were captured within full sight of the shore, and almost within range of the guns of the fort. On one occasion, during the month of August, two English ships-of-war sailed close to the Neck and captured six coasting-vessels which were bound to Boston.

During this period of excitement two men were killed by the guards in the public streets of the town. Both of the unfortunate incidents occurred in the night, when it was impossible for the sentinels to see who was approaching. One of the victims was a young man named Joseph Butman, who was foolishly trying to alarm the sentinels stationed at the town-house. The other was a negro known as Black Charley, who was shot by the sentinel stationed at Lovis's Cove. Charley was on his way home from a

[illegible] of Marblehead were impressed into the British [illegible]

dancing-party, where he had performed the important service of fiddler, and being somewhat deaf, it is presumed did not hear the challenge of the guard. These sad events cast a general gloom over the community, and were deeply regretted; but the stern necessities of war demanded that the guards should be commended for the faithful performance of duty.

On Sunday, the 3d of April, 1814, the people were alarmed by the sudden appearance of three ships-of-war, which appeared to be sailing directly for Marblehead harbor. Two of the frigates were ascertained to have British flags at their mast-heads, while the third, which was in advance of the others, carried the stars and stripes. It proved to be the frigate "Constitution," which for three days had been chased by the English frigates "Tenedos" and "Endymion." As the three stately ships neared the land, and the exciting chase could be more distinctly witnessed, the headlands and house-tops were filled with interested and anxious spectators. The "Constitution" succeeded in escaping from her pursuers, and as she majestically sailed into the harbor cheer after cheer rent the air, and from many a heart a prayer of thanksgiving went forth for the preservation and safety of "Old Ironsides." When about three miles out the commander of the "Constitution" inquired if any of the Marblehead seamen felt competent to pilot the ship into the harbor. "Aye, aye, sir!" was the answer from a score of volunteers, and from the number Samuel Green was selected, by whom the good ship was successfully brought in. Towards evening she again weighed anchor and sailed into Salem harbor, where she was not so much exposed, and was less liable to attack.

While these events were transpiring at home, the heroic sons of Marblehead were winning unfading laurels by their valorous conduct upon the water. In the spring of 1814, Capt. David Porter, in the frigate "Essex," engaged the British frigate "Phœbe," of fifty-two, and the sloop-of-war "Cherub," of twenty-eight guns, in the harbor of Valparaiso. For more than two hours he sustained the unequal encounter before he surrendered, and his crew fought with a bravery never exceeded. Of his intrepid officers and seamen, fifty-eight were killed, thirty-one were missing, thirty-eight were severely and twenty-five slightly wounded. During the action Lieutenant John Glover Cowell, a son of the intrepid Captain Richard Cowell, and a grandson of General John Glover, of Revolutionary fame, was wounded. After having the wound dressed a second time he returned to his station, where another shot severely wounded him in the leg. He was taken up to be carried below, but peremptorily refusing to go, he continued at his post until loss of blood rendered him insensible. He was then taken below and placed under the care of the surgeon.

After the battle he was taken on shore, where his leg was amputated, and after suffering with exemplary fortitude for twenty-one days, he expired in the presence of his gallant companions. "His case excited in Valparaiso the liveliest interest. The whole city most feelingly and deeply sympathized in his sufferings, and lamented his fate. His heroism had made everyone his friend and his mourner. He was buried with the most distinguished honors, both military and civil, that the place could afford. All the American and British officers, the crews of the 'Essex' and the 'Essex Junior,' of the 'Phœbe' and 'Cherub,' and of every other vessel in port, joined to swell the funeral procession. But the chief pomp that was displayed on this solemn and interesting occasion arose from the attention of the inhabitants of the place. It would be scarcely hyperbolical to say that the ashes of the gallant Cowell were watered by the tears of all Valparaiso. The concourse of Spaniards, headed by the Governor of the district and a large military escort, was immense.

"Followed by this vast and magnificent procession, and attended by solemn music and lighted tapers, the remains of the hero were carried to the principal church of the city. Here, after having been exposed to public view for two days, shrouded in elegant funeral apparel, they were interred in consecrated ground within the walls of the building, an honor never perhaps before conferred on a stranger in that part of the world."

The war virtually ended in December of this year, when the treaty of peace was signed at Ghent by the representatives of the United States and Great Britain. In February, 1815, the treaty was ratified by the two governments, and President Madison issued a proclamation to that effect. On the reception of the news in Marblehead, every house in town was illuminated and from nearly every house-top something was set flying to the breeze; those who could not procure flags, hoisting sheets, pillow-cases, and in some instances even petticoats, in honor of the great event. For an entire week the church-bells were rung, and as day after day their merry peals rang out, they left full conviction on every heart of the sincere joy and most ardent patriotism of the people.

Though peace had been declared, over seven hundred citizens of Marblehead were confined in British prisons. Halifax, Chatham, Plymouth and the loathsome prison-ships each had their quota, while in Dartmoor Prison alone more than five hundred were confined. The majority of these men were captured in privateers of many times their size and armament. Many, however, were taken from unarmed merchant vessels on their voyages to and from the various foreign ports.

During the massacre in Dartmoor Prison on the 6th of April, 1815, when the soldiers fired on the defenseless prisoners, John Peach and Thomas Tindley, of Marblehead, were wounded. Over one thousand men from Marblehead were engaged in the war

for "Free Trade and Sailors' Rights." Of these, seven hundred and twenty-six were on board privateers, one hundred and twenty were in the navy, fifty-seven were in the army, and one hundred were members of the Marblehead Light Infantry.

CHAPTER LXXXVII.

MARBLEHEAD—*Continued*.

Services Held by the Town—Visit of President Monroe—Sabbath-schools Organized—Visit of General de Lafayette—The Columbian Society—Public Streets Named—Shoe Manufacturing Established—First Local Newspaper Established—Grand Bank Incorporated—Marblehead Savings Bank—Temperance Society Organized—Female Humane Society Organized—Visit of President Jackson—Rival Celebrations on the Fourth of July—Reorganization of the Fire Department—High School Established—The Neptune Rotation Controversy—Eastern Railroad Opened—Liberty Pole Erected—Lyceum Hall Built—The Great Gale of 1846—Licensed Druggists—1848—Ship-Building in Marblehead—Presentation of Medals to Pickett—Presentations to Infantry Companies—Celebration of American Independence—Third Congregational Church Organized—Hibernian Friendly Society—Waterside Cemetery Dedicated—Catholic Church Founded—Fire at Bassett's Hall—Great Storm of 1851.

At the close of the war the people applied themselves earnestly and industriously to the task of restoring their shattered fortunes. There were now only forty-eight vessels employed in the bank fisheries, eighteen of which were of less than fifty tons burden. When the embargo of 1807 went into operation there were one hundred and sixteen vessels engaged in the business, ninety-eight of which were of more than fifty tons burden. This great reduction in the number of vessels engaged in the industry, by which the inhabitants obtained a livelihood, is the best evidence that can be given of the sacrifices made by the town during the period of controversy and war with Great Britain.

On the 4th of March, 1817, James Monroe, of Virginia, was inaugurated President of the United States. A few months after his inauguration he made a tour of the Eastern States, and in so doing, honored the town of Marblehead with a brief visit. He was received at the entrance of the town by a procession consisting of the military, the boards of town officers, the pupils of the public and private schools, the clergy, and a large concourse of citizens. He was escorted to the "Lee Mansion, where a large number of prominent citizens assembled" to pay their respects, and afterwards visited Fort Sewall and other points of interest.

The organization of Sabbath schools in Marblehead, began in the spring of 1818, when measures were taken for the formation of the "Sabbath-School Union Society." Hon. William Reed was chosen president of the society. The schools of the several churches continued under the direction of this society for eleven years, when each church assumed control of its own school.

The year 1824 was marked by an event of the greatest interest to the people of Marblehead. The venerable Marquis de Lafayette, who had come to the United States at the express invitation of Congress, was traveling through the country, and the citizens voted unanimously to invite him to visit the town. The invitation was accepted, and a day late in the month of August was appointed for his reception. The distinguished visitor, accompanied by his son, George Washington Lafayette, was received at the entrance of the town by a procession of civic and military organizations, and escorted through the principal streets amid the joyful acclamations of the people. He was then conducted to the "Lee Mansion," where a grand dinner was served, and a public reception was given to the citizens. The dinner-table, it is said, presented a magnificent appearance. All the "well-to-do" families of the town contributed their silverware to grace the festal board, and neither pains nor expense were spared in its arrangement. General Lafayette remained in Marblehead several hours, and before departing made a brief call upon Mrs. Mary Glover Hooper, the wife of Robert Hooper, Esq., and the only surviving daughter of his old friend and companion-in-arms, Gen. John Glover.

Among other interesting incidents of this memorable day was the first appearance of the military company known as the Lafayette Guards, which had been organized a short time before, under command of Capt. William B. Adams.

Early in this year a society was incorporated by the name of the "Columbian Society," which, for more than fifty years, exercised a perceptible influence upon the political sentiments of the citizens. For many years the best moderators of our town-meetings were graduates of the president's chair of the Columbian Society, and the most skillful debaters who participated in town-meeting discussions obtained their experience at the weekly meetings of that institution.

During this year the public streets were named by vote of the town. Nearly all of them had been known as "lanes," from the time of the settlement of the town, and Mugford, Green and State Streets are still familiarly known to many of the older inhabitants as "New Meeting-House," "Ferry," and "Wharf" Lanes. Previous to the breaking out of the Revolution, State Street was known as "King Street," but the patriotic citizens declined to recognize the name after the close of the war.

As early as 1825 the manufacture of misses' and children's shoes was introduced into Marblehead. Previous to this time the only boots and shoes made in town were heavy leather boots for the use of fishermen and custom shoes for ladies and gentlemen. The first manufacturer to engage in the new enterprise was Mr. Ebenezer Martin, who made his own shoes and sold them at retail. His work-shop was in the old "Reynolds House," on Darling Street. It was his custom to carry his goods about in a cart, and

drive from one town to another, until he disposed of them. The next earliest manufacturer was Mr. Thomas Wooldredge, whose factory was on Orne Street; and a few years later Messrs. Benjamin Hawkes, Thomas Garney and Adoniram C. Orne engaged in the business as a firm. Shortly after, Messrs. Samuel and Peter Sparhawk began business.

On Saturday March 13, 1830, the first local newspaper ever established in town made its appearance. It was called the *Marblehead Register*, and was published by Henry Blaney. For three years the editor struggled heroically to make the enterprise a success; but his efforts were futile, and he was obliged to suspend publication. Several newspapers have since been established, but a similar fate has befallen them all except the *Marblehead Messenger*, which was established in 1871, and is still published.

During the year 1831 several important local institutions were established.

On the 18th the Grand Bank was incorporated with a capital of $100,000. Joseph W. Green was the first president, and John Sparhawk, Jr., cashier.

On the 30th of August the town voted to petition Congress for the erection of a light-house on Point Neck. The light-house was erected in accordance with the wishes of the town, Mr. Ezekiel Darling being the first keeper.

Early in this year the Marblehead Seamen's Charitable Society was organized. This society is still in existence, there being only one older society in town. The Marblehead Female Humane Society antedates it, having been organized in 1816.

In the summer of 1833, President Andrew Jackson, who had entered upon his second term as the executive of the nation, made a tour of the Middle and New England States. On the 28th of June, accepting the urgent invitation of the citizens, he visited Marblehead. He was received at the entrance of the town by a procession consisting of the military companies, a cavalcade of fifty horsemen, the Fire Department, pupils of the public schools and a large concourse of citizens. Along the route of the procession triumphal arches, decorated with flowers and bearing appropriate mottoes, were erected, and many private residences were elaborately decorated. President Jackson rode through the principal streets in an open carriage, after which the procession halted at the "Lee Mansion" where an address of welcome was delivered by Frederick Robinson, Esq. A dinner had been provided for the occasion, but to the great disappointment of the citizens, their distinguished visitor was obliged to proceed as soon as possible to Salem, and they were deprived of the pleasure of his company.

The violent opposition to the measures of President Jackson's administration gave rise to a new political organization, known as the Whig party. Between this party and the Democrats there existed a feeling of the most bitter hostility. This was especially true of the adherents of both parties in Marblehead. Their opposition to each other was so intense that on the occasion of a Fourth of July celebration in 1834, they refused to act in concert, and the result was two rival celebrations. The Democrats formed a procession, and, escorted by the Lafayette Guards, with a drum and fife and two bugles, proceeded to the Methodist Meeting-House, where an oration was delivered by Mr. Frank Knight, a native of the town. They then marched to Fort Sewall, where a dinner was provided, and appropriate speeches were made by prominent members of the party. The Whigs were escorted by the Marblehead Light Infantry, a majority of whose members were of that political faith. Led by a band of music, they marched to the old North meeting-house, where an oration was delivered; after which they sat down to a dinner at Academy Hall.

During the year 1835 the Fire Department was thoroughly reorganized. The town at this time owned four hand-engines,—the "Friend," the "Endeavour," the "Union" and the "Liberty." Beside these, there were two engines owned by private parties, one of which was named the "Torrent," and the other the "Relief." A committee, appointed by the town to examine the several engines belonging to the Fire Department, reported that only one, the "Liberty," was "worth spending a dollar on." That engine was accordingly repaired, and refitted with all the modern improvements, and two new suction engines—the "Marblehead" and "Essex"—were purchased.

During the year 1836 the Universalist Society was organized. For a time the meetings were held in the hall on the corner of Washington and Darling Streets; but the following year, so rapid had been the growth of the society, that a church edifice was erected on the corner of Pleasant and Watson Streets.

For years the town had maintained three grammar schools, known as the North, Centre and South Schools. In 1837 it was voted to establish a High School, with separate departments for boys and girls. The school was established in accordance with the vote of the town, and the building known as the Masonic Lodge was rented for its accommodation.

It was during this year, also, that the famous controversy over the "Surplus Revenue" took place. During the administration of President Jackson a large amount of money accumulated in the treasury of the United States. By an act of Congress the Secretary of the Treasury was authorized to distribute the amount among the several States, and the State of Massachusetts, on the reception of its proportion, distributed it among the towns of the commonwealth. By this act of the Legislature the town of Marblehead received about thirteen thousand dollars. The town voted to appropriate the money for the purchase of a town farm and the erection of a new almshouse. A controversy ensued in regard to the matter, and after the vote had been several times reconsidered,

it was ascertained that the town was under legal obligation to purchase the farm belonging to Humphrey Devereux, Esq. The farm was accordingly purchased for thirteen thousand dollars. Two years later the farm was sold for eleven thousand dollars, and the money was turned over to the treasurer, the town losing two thousand dollars by the transaction.

The date of the regular establishment of stage communication between Marblehead and Boston was about the year 1768. The establishment of a regular line of stages between Marblehead and Salem, however, did not take place until twenty-six years later. The first proprietor of a line of stages in Marblehead, of whom we have any knowledge, was Mr. Hooker Osgood, who drove regularly to Boston for many years previous to the War of 1812. He died in 1811, and the business was purchased by Messrs. Israel Putnam and Jonathan Cass. This firm subsequently sold out to a company, under whose management the business was conducted for several years. Upon the abandonment of the enterprise by the company, Mr. Cass resumed the business with Mr. Increase H. Brown as a partner. In 1829 Mr. Cass withdrew, and Mr. Brown entered into a co-partnership with Messrs. Stephen P. Hathaway and Benjamin Thompson, the style of the firm being I. H. Brown & Co. A stage was driven to Boston daily, and to Salem twice a day, Mr. Thompson being the driver of the former, and Mr. Hathaway of the latter. On the opening of the Eastern Railroad between Salem and Boston, in 1838, the stage to Boston was discontinued, and, instead, stages were driven four times a day to the Marblehead Depot, then located in Swampscott, on what is now known as the "Old Lynn Road." On the opening of the Marblehead and Salem Branch of the Eastern Railroad, in 1839, the stage to Salem was discontinued.

The year 1839 may be said to have been the period when the fishing business of Marblehead reached the zenith of its prosperity. At that time ninety-eight vessels, only three of which were under fifty tons burden, were employed in the business—a larger number than had ever sailed from this port since the time of Jefferson's embargo.

In February, 1841, an Anti-Slavery Convention was held at Georgetown, Massachusetts, and, as a result of its deliberations, the political organization known as the Liberty party came into existence. This party advocated the total abolition of slavery in the District of Columbia, over which Congress had the sole legislative power. The only person from Marblehead who attended the Convention at Georgetown was Mr Samuel Goodwin, a gentleman who had long been an earnest and outspoken Abolitionist. Three years later, at the Presidential election of 1841, six votes were cast in Marblehead for the candidates of the Liberty party. These voters appeared regularly at the polls at each recurring State election, and their party gradually increased to fifteen members. For years they made little or no progress, but they succeeded in maintaining their organization, forming the nucleus of the great anti-slavery party, which, under two names, has assumed such proportions in Marblehead.

The year 1844 was marked by the erection of the building known as "Lyceum Hall," and by the organization of two of the most prominent and influential societies in the town. These were Samaritan Tent of Rechabites and Atlantic Lodge of Odd Fellows.

In 1845 another engine was added to the Fire Department. This engine was the "Gerry," and upon its reception the engine company of that name was organized.

The year 1846 marked a memorable period of distress in the annals of the town. On the 19th of September of that year one of the most terrible gales ever known took place on the Grand Banks of Newfoundland, and ten vessels belonging in Marblehead, containing sixty-five men and boys, were lost. Forty-three of these unfortunate seamen were heads of families, leaving forty-three widows and one hundred and fifty-five fatherless children. This great calamity may be said to have given the death-blow to the fishing interests of the town. Gradually, as the years have passed, one vessel after another has dropped from the roll of "Bankers," until not one remains, and the great industry of former years is but a memory of the past.

In 1848 the Marblehead Seamen's Charitable Society erected a monument in the "old Burying Hill," in memory of its deceased members, fourteen of whom were lost in the September gale of 1846. The monument is of white marble, fifteen feet high, and stands upon the highest point of ground on the hill, being visible from ten to fifteen miles at sea.

The inhabitants had not recovered from the calamity of 1846, when another of a different nature, but not less appalling, cast a gloom over the entire community. The Presidential campaign of 1848 had nearly drawn to its close, when, on Thursday evening, November 2d, two large political gatherings were held, one in Lynn and the other in Salem.

The Hon. Daniel Webster was advertised to address the Whigs at Lynn, and Gen. Caleb Cushing the Democrats at Salem. Special trains were run to these places from all the towns in the vicinity, and more than two hundred citizens of Marblehead availed themselves of the opportunity to listen to the eloquence of the great orators. At twelve o'clock that night, as the Marblehead train was returning from Salem, a collision took place with the down train from Lynn. The engine, tender and forward car of the Marblehead train were utterly demolished. Six of the occupants of the car were killed, and five were seriously wounded.

During the year 1849 the ship "Robert Hooper," owned by Mr. Edward Kimball, was built at "Red

Stone" Cove. The launching, which took place on the 31st of October, was witnessed by hundreds of people, many of whom came from the neighboring cities and towns. Business was generally suspended, and the day was observed as a general holiday throughout the town. The enterprise thus begun, for a time, gave promise of becoming one of the permanant industries of the town. Six other ships, of from eight hundred to twelve hundred tons burden, were subsequently built for Mr. Kimball; and within a period of nine years twenty schooners, of from eighty-seven to one hundred and twelve tons burden, were built for various persons engaged in the fishing business.

In 1850 a hook-and-ladder carriage was bought and placed in the Fire Department. It was named the "Washington," and a company was organized for its management.

In 1852 the infantry company known as the Glover Light Guards was organized. The first captain was Mr. William H. Hooper, a descendant of General Glover.

On the 31st of March, 1853, Mr. Moses Allen Pickett, a gentleman who had for years been a noted character in the town from his odd, eccentric manners, died and was buried. The event attracted little or no attention at the time beyond the circle of his few immediate relatives and friends; but when his will was opened it was found that he had bequeathed the entire residue of his estate, after paying a few small legacies, to be used as a fund to "comfort the widow and the fatherless, the aged, the sick and the unhappy." His house he directed should be kept in repair and "let to widows at a moderate rent." The entire amount of the bequest was about $13,400.

In his lifetime Mr. Pickett had been considered a man of a very penurious and miserly disposition; but when the contents of his will were made known, the mouths that for years had been sealed were opened. Then, for the first time, his quiet and unostentatious charities were made known. The widow, the fatherless, the aged and the sick had many times been the recipients of his never-failing help in time of need. They had not known the name of their mysterious benefactor, and the local dealers who were the almoners of his charity had been pledged to secrecy. It was not until he had been called to his reward that his fellow-citizens saw and appreciated the true worth of the man who had lived among them.

The remainder of the year 1853 is chiefly memorable on account of the three great military festivals which took place before it closed. On Tuesday, June 28th, the Marblehead Light Infantry, which had adopted the name of "Sutton," in honor of General William Sutton, appeared under command of Captain Knott V. Martin. Among the distinguished visitors present were His Excellency, Governor Clifford, the Hon. Charles W. Upham, who at that time represented the Essex District in Congress, and a large number of military officers from other towns. The Glover Light Guards, under Captain John M. Anderson, appeared in a grand parade on the 29th of September, and on the 19th of October the Lafayette Guards, under command of Captain John Carroll, Jr., made a similar demonstration. On each of these occasions the company parading was presented with a silk banner, the gift of the ladies of the town.

The anniversary of American independence had been celebrated from time to time with great parade, but probably the greatest celebration of the kind ever known in town up to this time was that which took place on the 4th of July, 1856. At nine o'clock in the morning of that day a procession was formed in seven divisions, consisting of the three military companies, the entire Fire Department, the pupils of the public schools, the town officials and their predecessors in office, aged citizens in carriages, a party of mounted Indian warriors and a cavalcade of horsemen. Mr. Joseph P. Turner acted as chief marshal. The procession moved through all the principal streets to the "Old North Church," where an oration was delivered by W. C. Endicott, Esq., of Salem. The other exercises consisted of prayer by the Rev. B. R. Allen, and reading of the Declaration of Independence by Mr. Franklin Knight. An ode, written for the occasion by Mrs. Maria L. Williams, was sung by the choir. In the evening there was a brilliant display of fireworks, under the direction of a Boston pyrotechnist.

In 1856 a lodge of the "Sons of Temperance," was organized, known as "Washington Division, No. 3." The following year the Marblehead Musical Association was organized.

In 1858 several communicants of the First Congregational Church withdrew from that body and organized the society which, for nearly twenty years, was known as the "Third Congregational Church." During the year 1860 the society erected the house of worship known as the "South Church," on the corner of Essex and School Streets. This building was destroyed in the great conflagration of 1877, and the society united with the First Congregational Church.

On the 5th of December, 1858, the Hibernian Friendly Society was organized.

The year 1859 was as remarkable for local events as any in the history of the town. On the 1st of January a new engine, named the "Mugford," was added to the Fire Department, and the engine company of that name was organized.

A controversy had arisen relative to the purchase of another hand-engine, and many of the firemen were loud in their praises of a machine known as the "Button Tub." The town decided adversely to the proposition to obtain one, however, and the engine known as the "General Glover" was purchased. The "General Glover" Engine Company was organized upon its reception.

On the 16th of October the Waterside Cemetery was consecrated with appropriate exercises, consisting of prayer, singing and an address by the Rev. Benjamin R. Allen, pastor of the North Congregational Church.

For several years the people professing the faith of the Roman Catholic Church had maintained occasional services at private houses and in various halls in the town, going to Salem to receive the holy communion. In 1859 the Church "Our Lady Star of the Sea" was erected, and since that time services have been regularly held. During the same year Washington Lodge of Good Templars and the Young Men's Christian Association were organized.

On the 26th of January, 1860, a large building on Essex Street, known as Bassett's Hall, was totally destroyed by fire. This hall had been erected but a short time before, and was dedicated to the use of the Spiritualists of the town. The house of the General Glover Engine Company was also destroyed. Another house was erected on Pleasant Street, for the use of the company, and at the same time a house was built on State Street for the use of the Gerry Engine Company.

A reduction in the price paid for labor by the shoe manufacturers of Lynn and Marblehead in the spring of the year 1860 resulted in one of the greatest strikes ever known in either place. Nearly every man, woman and child employed in the manufacture of shoes in Marblehead participated in the movement, and there was a general determination not to submit to the reduction. On the 2d day of March the "strikers" made a grand demonstration, and in their parade about town they were escorted by the entire Fire Department and the three military companies. Five days later a similar demonstration took place in Lynn, when the shoemakers of Marblehead, escorted by the firemen and military, visited that city and participated in the proceedings. On the 29th of March the "women strikers" paraded about town and one of their number acted as drummer. With commendable gallantry the firemen and military again tendered their services as an escort, and the affair passed off very pleasantly for all concerned. At length, after a strike of six weeks in duration, the shoemakers accepted the terms of the manufacturers, and returned to their labor.

CHAPTER LXXXVIII.

MARBLEHEAD—(Continued).

[illegible] the Railroad to Salem [illegible] New Streets Opened [illegible] Joseph Howard [illegible] Mansion Sold [illegible] by the People—The [illegible] Bank.

The close of the year 1860 closed a quarter of a century of great industrial development in the history of Marblehead. For a period of fifty years previous to the year 1835 not a street or road was laid out in the town. Nearly every street was overcrowded with houses, and there were few vacant lots to be obtained in the settled portion of the township. A general apathy seemed to have settled over the entire community. Those who owned land would not sell it for business enterprises or other purposes, and, as a natural consequence, there came to be little or no demand for it. In 1835 a new order of things was inaugurated. During that year, through the persistent efforts of Mr. Adoniram C. Orne, a road was laid out by the county commissioners, which may properly be called an extension of Pleasant Street. This road began at a point near the corner of Spring Street, and extended through a field known as the "tan-yard," in which the "Brick Pond" was situated, into Washington Street. This was a great improvement, as previous to that time Pleasant Street opened into Washington Street through what is known as Essex Street.

With the opening of the railroad to Salem in 1839, an impetus was given to the manufacturing interests of the town and an era of prosperity began. One of the first to avail themselves of the advantages presented by this ready means of transportation by rail was Mr. Joseph R. Bassett, an energetic and enterprising young man, who had established himself in the shoe business a few years before. As his business increased he built a factory near the depot, and began to devise measures for the improvement of the town. For years a twine-factory or rope-walk had been situated in a field fronting on Washington Street, and a few feet back of this building there was a tan-yard and cordage-factory. The only access to these buildings, until another way was opened by the extension of Pleasant Street, was by means of a narrow foot-path which led from Washington Street to a gate at the entrance to the pastures on Reed's Hill. The first venture of this enterprising shoe manufacturer was to purchase the field in which the rope-walk stood, and in a short time the foot-path was transformed into a street, now know as School Street. A short time after he purchased the "Sewall Lot," through which a street was laid out from the Cornish and Evans estate to a point on "Reed's Hill." This street was accepted by the town in 1844, and has since been known as "Sewall Street." "Spring Street" was laid out during the following year, and was so named from a spring of pure water on the premises. Mr. Bassett's next movement was to lay out and build four streets over Reed's Hill and in that vicinity.

The question which now perpexed the people was, "How could the house-lots on all these streets be sold, and by whom would they be purchased?" The problem was soon solved. On every street that he had laid out Mr. Bassett began to build neat and comfortable cottages, agreeing to furnish those of his

workmen who purchased them with constant employment, and to deduct a certain proportion from their earnings every week, until the houses and lots were paid for. This proposition was readily accepted by many of his workmen; and in a few years the entire section in the vicinity of the new streets was covered with houses.

During the year 1847 Mr. Bassett erected a steam saw-mill on the shore in the section known as the Ship-yard. This was for the manufacture of wooden shoe-boxes; but it had an effect little dreamed of, even by the sanguine projector. The necessity of a good road to the mill suggested the laying out of streets, and the founding of a new settlement. The idea was speedily put in execution. A large tract of land in the vicinity was purchased, and Commercial Street, the two streets running parallel with it, and the cross-streets intervening, were laid out. The growth of the settlement in this section was hardly less rapid than that of those in or near the depot and on Reed's Hill.

As before, houses were erected and sold to workingmen at reasonable prices, and in a short time there was a village of comfortable homes and where once there were vacant fields and pasture lands.

There were other manufacturers who were contemporaries of Mr. Bassett during all these years; of some of them we have already written, and space will permit mention of but two of the principal firms. These were Messrs. William T. Haskell & Co. and Joseph Harris & Sons. The founders of both these firms began business as poor men. It is said of Mr. Haskell that he obtained the money with which he established his business by a fortunate rise in the price of wood. He was a clerk in his father's grocery-store, and one day a coaster with a load of wood arrived in the harbor, and the owner, after vainly endeavoring to sell his load, turned it over to young Haskell, telling him that all the money he could obtain for it over a certain amount should be his own. Shortly after there was a scarcity of wood in the market, and the wood was sold for a good price. With the capital thus obtained, the young man at once began the manufacture of shoes. His first place of business was in a building on the corner of Front and State Streets. He subsequently removed to a building on Washington Street, near the "Lee Mansion," and finally to a small building on Pleasant Street, which was enlarged from time to time as his business increased. Here he conducted operations during the remainder of the period of his residence in Marblehead. In 1861 he removed his business to Lynn. Mr. Haskell was eminently successful as a business man. By his energy and perseverance he built up an industry which gave employment to hundreds of his fellow-citizens and brought to him a rich reward.

Mr. Joseph Harris, the founder of the firm of Joseph Harris & Sons, began business in the year 1841. His workshop was an upper chamber of his dwelling-house in Harris's Court, where for years he conducted his business. The sons of Mr. Harris, of whom he had a large family, entered heartily and with the utmost sympathy into all the plans he projected. With untiring industry they toiled, making all the shoes manufactured by their father until, by rigid economy and self-denial, they laid the foundation of a successful business. As the business increased a large number of workmen were employed and a factory was erected on Pleasant Street. This building was enlarged from time to time until it became one of the largest shoe manufactories in the town.

The shoes manufactured in Marblehead during the period of which we write were made almost entirely outside the factories. With the introduction of the sewing-machine the division of labor and the factory system began. This has had the effect to abolish nearly all outside labor. It was very gradual in its growth, beginning with having a certain proportion of the upper stitched or bound in the factory. Then, in 1859, came the McKay Sewing-Machine, introduced by Mr. Bassett for sewing uppers to the soles. Campo work began at about the same time.

CHAPTER LXXXIX.

MARBLEHEAD—(*Continued*).

Breaking out of the Civil War—Marblehead Companies first to Respond to the Call for Troops—Provisions for the Families of Volunteers—Action of the Ladies—Marblehead Soldiers at the Seat of War—Departure of the Mugford Guards—Return of the Three-Months' Men—First Marblehead Men Killed in Battle—Death of William B. Hubbard on board the "Cumberland"—Activity in Recruiting—Bounties paid the Soldiers—The Nine-Months' Men—The Drafts—Fort Sewall Reconstructed—Forts Miller and Glover Erected—One Hundred Days' Men—Work of the Ladies—Capt. Michael B. Gregory—Capt. Josiah P. Cressey—Marblehead Men in the Navy—Capt. Samuel B. Gregory—Demonstrations on the Surrender of Gen. Lee—Death of President Lincoln—The Tenth Battery—Reception to Gen. Kilpatrick.

It is not the province of this work to treat of the causes which led to the great Civil War which for four years threatened the life of the republic. The opening of the year 1861 found the people of the United States excited, as they had never been before, over the question of slavery and State sovereignty. Abraham Lincoln, the candidate of the Republican party, which advocated the abolition of slavery, had been elected President of the United States, and seven States had passed ordinances of secession. Nearly all the United States forts and arsenals within the boundaries of these States had been seized and fortified, and a large proportion of the arms, ammunition and military stores belonging to the general government were in their possession. On the 12th of April, General Beauregard, commanding the Confederate forces at Charleston, South Carolina, opened fire on Fort Sumter, a United States garri-

son commanded by Major Robert Anderson, in the harbor of that city. Major Anderson and the small force under his command fought nobly in defense of their flag, but at length, after sustaining a bombardment which continued two days without cessation, while their fort was on fire, and the magazines were beginning to explode about them, they were obliged to surrender and evacuate.

The news of the fall of Fort Sumter aroused the entire North to action. The war which had so long been threatened could no longer be averted, and in every town and hamlet from the Atlantic to the Pacific the people rose as one man to defend the integrity of the Union.

On the 15th of April President Lincoln issued his first proclamation calling for seventy-five thousand militia for a three months' service. Late in the afternoon of that day Lieutenant-Colonel E. W. Hinks, of the Eighth Regiment, came to Marblehead and personally notified the commanding officers of the three militia companies to be in readiness with their commands to take the early morning trains for Boston. These companies were the Marblehead Sutton Light Infantry, Company C, Eighth Regiment, commanded by Captain Knott V. Martin; the Lafayette Guards, Company B, Eighth Regiment, commanded by Captain Richard Phillips; and the Glover Light Guards, Company H, Eighth Regiment, commanded by Captain Francis Boardman. Captain Martin was found in his slaughter-house, with the carcass of a hog, just killed and in readiness for the "scald." Taking his coat from the peg, he seemed for a moment to hesitate about leaving his business unfinished, and then, impatiently exclaiming, "Damn the hog!" put the garment on with his arms yet stained with blood and his shirt-sleeves but half rolled down, left the premises to rally his company.

The morning of the 16th of April broke cold and stormy. Notwithstanding the rain and sleet which rendered the weather cold and uncomfortable in the extreme, the streets of Marblehead were filled with a throng of excited people. Wives and mothers and fathers and children were represented there in the dense crowd, all anxious to speak a word of farewell to the [illegible] on their departure. The first companies to leave town were those commanded by Captains Martin and Boardman, which marched to the depot and took the 9.45 train. Seven o'clock train for Boston. Captain Phillips' company took the train which left Marblehead about an hour and a half later.

Of the arrival of the Marblehead companies in Boston, Adjutant-General William Schouler wrote as follows:

[illegible] had been properly attended to. Messengers had also been stationed at the different depots with orders for the companies, on their arrival, to proceed at once to Faneuil Hall, as a northeasterly storm of sleet and rain had set in during the night and had not abated in the morning. On my return from Cambridge I stopped at the Eastern Railroad Depot. A large crowd of men and women, notwithstanding the storm, had gathered there, expecting the arrival of troops. Shortly after eight o'clock the train arrived with the Marblehead companies. They were received with deafening shouts from the excited throng. The companies immediately formed in line and marched by the flank directly to Faneuil Hall, the fifes and drums playing 'Yankee Doodle,' the people following and shouting like madmen, and the rain and sleet falling piteously, as if to abate the ardor of the popular welcome. And thus it was the Marblehead men entered Faneuil Hall on the morning of the 16th of April."

On the morning after the departure of the companies, thirty more men left Marblehead to join them. The greatest enthusiasm prevailed throughout the town, and men everywhere were ready and anxious to enlist. Of the patriotic spirit of the people, no better evidence can be given than that contained in the reply of Governor Andrew to a gentleman who asked him if any more men would be needed. "For heaven's sake," replied the governor, "don't send any more men from Marblehead, for it is imposing on your goodness to take so many as have already come!"

The citizens were not less prompt to act than those who had rallied for the defense of the nation. On the 20th of April a town-meeting was held to provide for the families of the soldiers, and the old town-house was crowded to repletion. Mr. Adoniram C. Orne was chosen moderator. The venerable town clerk, Capt. Glover Broughton, a veteran of the War of 1812, was there beside the moderator, his hands tremulous with emotion, awaiting the action of his fellow-citizens. "It was voted that the town treasurer be authorized to hire the sum of five thousand dollars, to be distributed for the relief of the families of those who have gone, or are going, to fight the battles of their country." The town was divided into districts, and a committee of ten persons was chosen to act as distributors of the fund. The patriotism of the ladies of Marblehead at this time, and throughout the entire period of the war, cannot be overestimated. With loving hearts and willing hands, they contributed their time, their labor and their money for the benefit of those who had gone forth to battle. The work of some was of a public nature, and the deeds of these are recorded; but the only record of hundreds who worked quietly in their own homes was written on the grateful hearts of the soldiers for whom they labored.

On the 22d of April a meeting of the ladies was held at the town-house, and a Soldiers' Aid Society was organized. The object was to perform such work as was necessary for the comfort of the soldiers, and to furnish articles of clothing, medicines and delicacies for use in the hospitals. Mrs. Maria L. Williams was elected president. That lady subsequently resigned, and Mrs. Margaret Newhall became president, and Mrs. Mary M. Oliver, secretary.

On the following day eighteen ladies met at the

Sewall Grammar School-House, on Spring Street, and organized a committee to solicit money for the benefit of the soldiers. In less than one week from the time of their organization the ladies of this committee had collected the sum of $508.17.

The teachers of the public schools generously contributed six per cent. of their salaries for the year in aid of the object; and there was a disposition manifested by the people generally to give something, however small the amount.

Stirring reports were now received from the companies at the seat of war. The blockading of the railroad to Baltimore by the Secessionists; seizure of the steamer "Maryland;" and the saving of the old frigate "Constitution," in which their fathers fought so valiantly, caused the hearts of the people to swell with pride, as they related the story one to another.

The sufferings of their soldier boys, who were obliged to eat pilot bread baked in the year 1848, brought tears to the eyes of many an anxious mother. But the tears were momentary only, and the sufferings of the boys were forgotten in the joy that Marblehead soldiers had been permitted to lead the advance on the memorable march to Annapolis Junction, and to relay the track which had been torn up to prevent the passage of the troops. The arrival of the troops in Washington; the new uniforms furnished in place of those worn out in eight days; and the quartering of soldiers in the United States Capitol building, was all related in the letters that came home.

During the latter part of April active measures were taken to recruit another company to join those already in the field. In a few days the "Mugford Guards," a full company of fifty-seven men was organized, and Captain Benjamin Day was commissioned as commander. Every effort was made to get the new company in readiness for departure as soon as possible. The men were without uniforms and the school-teachers at once voted to furnish the materials for making them at their own expense. Mr. John Marr, the local tailor, offered his services as cutter and they were gratefully accepted. On Sunday, May 5th, the ladies of the Soldiers' Aid Society, with a large number of others, assembled at Academy Hall and industriously worked throughout the entire day and evening to make up the uniforms.

On the following day the town voted to appropriate the sum of four hundred dollars to furnish the company with comfortable and necessary clothing.

On the 7th of June another meeting was held, and the town voted to borrow a sum not exceeding ten thousand dollars, to be applied by the selectmen, in aid of the families of volunteers.

On the morning of Monday, June 24th, the new company took its departure for the "seat of war." The soldiers were escorted to the entrance of the town by the Mugford Fire Association and a large concourse of citizens. Almost the entire community assembled in the streets to say "farewell," and to bid them "God speed." On arriving at the locality known as Workhouse Rocks the procession halted, and the soldiers were addressed by William B. Brown, Esq., in behalf of the citizens. Captain Day, in reply, expressed the most patriotic sentiments in behalf of the company.

The soldiers embarked for Boston in wagons which were in waiting, and departed amid the deafening cheers of the citizens. This company was known in the army as Company G, First Regiment Heavy Artillery.

On Thursday, August 1st, the three Marblehead company arrived home. Arrangements had been made to give them an enthusiastic welcome. At three o'clock in the afternoon a procession was formed, consisting of the Marblehead Band, the "Home Guards," the boards of town officers, the entire Fire Department, and the pupils of the public schools. An interesting feature of the procession was thirteen young ladies, representing the original States, wearing white dresses, and red, white and blue veils. The arrival of the train bringing the soldiers was announced by the ringing of bells, the firing of guns and the joyful acclamations of the people. They were received at the depot at about six o'clock P. M., and escorted to the Town-House, where an address of welcome was delivered by Jonathan H. Orne, Esq., a member of the Board of Selectmen. On the afternoon of the following day the veterans were given a grand reception. The procession was again formed, and they were escorted about town to Fort Sewall, where a dinner was served.

Shortly after the return of the companies Captain Knott V. Martin resigned as commander of the Sutton Light Infantry, and recruited a company for the Twenty-third Regiment. More than half the number of this company were enlisted in Marblehead. They left for the seat of war during the month of November.

On the 21st of December the town voted to appropriate the sum of three thousand dollars in aid of the families of volunteers.

The news of the splendid triumph of General Burnside in his expedition against North Carolina, resulting in the capture of Roanoke Island on the 8th of January, 1862, sent a thrill of exultation through every loyal heart in the country. But the joy of the people of Marblehead was turned to grief by the news that three of their bravest citizens had fallen in the battle. These were Lieut. John Goodwin, Jr., Sergt. Gamaliel H. Morse and Private John Show, of Company B, Twenty-third Regiment. Messrs. Goodwin and Morse were killed instantly; but Mr. Show was mortally wounded, and died after several days of severe suffering.

Just one month from the date of the battle of Roanoke Island the famous battle occurred between the United States frigates "Cumberland" and "Congress" and the Confederate ram "Merrimac," in Hampton

Roads, Va. After an engagement of fifteen minutes the "Merrimac" ran into the "Cumberland," crushing in her side. The frigate immediately began to sink. Over one hundred seamen on board the ill-fated vessel went down in her. One of the bravest of the heroes who lost their lives in this engagement was William B. Hubbard, of Marblehead. He was captain of one of the guns on board the "Cumberland." When the ship was sinking, and death stared them in the face, the first thought of many was naturally that of self-preservation. Not so with Hubbard. His powder-boy had become frightened and could not be found.

"I am determined to have one more shot at them," cried the gallant Hubbard, and immediately went below to procure ammunition. On his return, as he approached his gun to reload it, a shot from the enemy laid him on the deck. He went down with the ship, nobly dying at his post.

Among the crew of the "Cumberland" were David Bruce and John Hazel, of Marblehead. Nathaniel Roundey and John Flemming were on board the "Congress" throughout the action.

Late in the month of April the people received the precious bodies of their earliest dead, the first slain in battle. Then, for the first time, they realized the magnitude of the sacrifice to be made. Only the life blood of their best and bravest could preserve the institutions for which their fathers fought. The funeral services over the bodies of Messrs. Goodwin and Morse took place on Thursday, April 24th, at the Unitarian Church.[1] The services consisted of singing by the choir, prayer by Rev. George W. Patch, and an address by the Rev. Samuel R. Colthrop, pastor of the church. The remains were accompanied to their last resting-place in the Green Street Burying-ground by the three companies of the Eighth Regiment belonging to Marblehead and a large concourse of people.

It is seldom that heroes are so honored as were these dead soldiers. His Excellency John A. Andrew, the war Governor of Massachusetts, was there in the procession, accompanied by Adjutant-General Schouler and the members of his staff. Major-General Sutton and the field and staff officers of the Eighth Regiment were also in attendance.

On the 2d of July President Lincoln issued a call for three hundred thousand more volunteers to serve for three years or during the war. In accordance with this call the most earnest efforts were made to recruit them in Marblehead. On the 19th of July the town voted to offer a bounty of one hundred dollars to every man who would volunteer on the quota of the town, and Captains Richard Phillips, Samuel C. Graves, Francis Boardman, Messrs. Samuel Roads and John Devlin were chosen a committee to assist [illegible] in recruiting. On the 31st of July the

[1] Of these, Mr. Goodwin was a sea-faring man.

town treasurer was authorized to hire the sum of fourteen thousand four hundred dollars, to be used as bounties for volunteers in the sum of one hundred dollars each. A committee was chosen to wait upon the Governor and request him to appoint an additional recruiting agent. On the 1st of August Governor Andrew issued the following permission to recruit:

"In consequence of the request of the town of Marblehead, made by a legal town meeting held yesterday,—a copy of the record of which is handed me, attested by the town-clerk,—I appoint at the nomination of the other gentlemen who came to represent the town, Samuel Roads, Esq., additional recruiting agent for Marblehead. He will co-operate with the town's committee and use his influence to forward the enlistments, and I ask the good people of Marblehead to support and help him with all their hearts and hands."

Mr. Roads at once established his headquarters at an office on Washington Street, and the enlistment progressed rapidly. In a short time sixty-nine men had enrolled themselves for a service of three years, or during the war. Of these, thirty-two were assigned to the Tenth Battery, then recruiting at Lynnfield; ten to the Thirty-second Regiment; eight to the Seventeenth Regiment; seven to the Twenty-third Regiment; and the others were distributed among the First Massachusetts Cavalry, and the Twentieth, Twenty-fourth, Fortieth and Forty-first Regiments.

On Tuesday, August 26th, the town voted to pay a bounty of one hundred dollars "for each volunteer enlisting in the service of the United States for a period of nine months, until the quota of the town shall be full." It was also voted to request all shoe manufacturers, all store-keepers and all others to close their places of business each day during the remainder of the week from two to six o'clock P.M.; and that all citizens be entreated to abstain from customary labor during these hours, and assist the authorized agent in procuring recruits." It was ordered that the bells be rung each day from two o'clock to three o'clock P.M.

The Marblehead Band was invited to be present at the town-hall, and give their services during the hour in which the bells were to be rung.

On the 27th of September another meeting was held, at which it was voted to pay one hundred dollars as a bounty to every volunteer enlisting over and above the quota of the town for a service of nine months. This action was intended for the benefit of the two Marblehead companies—the Sutton Light Infantry and the Lafayette Guards. The company known as the Glover Light Guards was disbanded shortly after its return from the three months' campaign, in consequence of the enlistment of a large proportion of its members in the various three years' regiments.

On the 25th of November the Sutton Light Infantry, under command of Captain Samuel C. Graves, and the Lafayette Guards, under command of Captain Richard Phillips, left the State with the other companies of the Eighth Regiment for Newbern, N. C.

The town had made generous provision for the families of soldiers from time to time since the beginning of the war. As the proportion of men who were absent in the army and navy increased, additional appropriations were found necessary, and in March, 1863, the treasurer was authorized to hire twenty-five thousand dollars for this purpose. In the spring of 1863 Congress authorized a draft to obtain reinforcements for the army.

The draft took place at Salem on the afternoon of July 10, in the presence of a large and deeply interested audience. The names of one hundred and eighty citizens of Marblehead were drawn from the box. Of these, a large proportion were exempted by the examining surgeons on account of physical disability, or other causes. Many procured substitutes, and others paid the commutation fee of three hundred dollars. A very few—not more than twenty, it is said—of the number originally drafted were mustered into the United States service.

When the war broke out old Fort Sewall was in ruins. The exposed condition of the harbor and the fact that Confederate gunboats were cruising about the coast, caused the citizens to turn their attention to the fortification of the town. At a town-meeting, held on the 15th of August, it was voted to appropriate the sum of four thousand dollars, to be paid to laborers employed upon the repairs of Fort Sewall. In a short time the fort was thoroughly repaired and considerably enlarged. The government also erected two other fortifications, one at the head of the harbor, overlooking the River-head Beach and the Neck, known as "Fort Glover," and another on Naugus Head, overlooking Salem Harbor, known as "Fort Miller." All three forts were garrisoned by companies from other parts of the State until the end of the war.

On the Fourth of July, 1864, Congress passed an act authorizing the enlistment of recruits for the Union army in the insurgent States. On 23d of July the town of Marblehead voted to deposit five thousand dollars with the treasurer of the Commonwealth for the purpose of obtaining a portion of these recruits to serve on the quota of the town; it was also voted to pay a bounty of $125 to every recruit enlisting in its quota.

On the 24th of July the Eighth Regiment, which had returned from the nine months' campaign several months before, again left the State for a service of one hundred days. The regiment at this time was under the command of Colonel Benj. F. Peach, Jr., a Marblehead boy who had risen from the ranks. The Sutton Light Infantry took its departure with the regiment. The Lafayette Guards subsequently left town as an unattached company, and was assigned to the Fourth Regiment of Artillery, being known as Company A.

During the month of August the ladies of the Unitarian Society held a fair for the benefit of the soldiers. The people responded nobly,—as they had done to every patriotic appeal,—and the sum of one thousand five hundred dollars was netted. Of this sum four hundred dollars was given to the Sanitary Commission, and the balance was distributed among the sick and wounded soldiers and the needy families of those in the navy.

The desire to do something to alleviate the sufferings of those in the army was almost universal. Nearly every organization in town sent boxes of luxuries and medicine to the soldiers in camp. Early in the year the members of the Gerry Fire Association presented eighty-two dollars to the Soldiers' Aid Society, the proceeds of a dancing-party held under their auspices. The members of Washington Lodge of Good Templars presented thirty-five dollars, the proceeds of a social party held at their hall. These donations were applied to the purchase of materials which were made up into quilts, comforters and dressing-gowns for soldiers in the hospitals.

In November of this year the ladies of Marblehead supplied a table at a fair held in Boston for the benefit of the sailors, and by their efforts alone the sum of thirteen hundred dollars was netted.

Shortly after the return of the Eighth Regiment from the one hundred days' campaign, Captain Samuel C. Graves resigned as commander of the Sutton Light Infantry, and organized an unattached company. The company left town in February, 1865, and was stationed for some time at Fort Warren, Boston harbor. It was then ordered to Plymouth, where it remained several months after the close of the war.

We have written only of the companies actually organized or enlisted in Marblehead. But it is impossible to do otherwise. The history of the part taken by the men of Marblehead in the great Civil War can never be fully written. They were in nearly every regiment that went from Massachusetts. In every battle of importance, from Bull Run to Appomattox Court-House, they proved themselves worthy of their ancestors, and of Marblehead.

Though the citizens of Marblehead did not take so prominent a part in the naval service of the country during the Civil War as in the wars against Great Britain, the record of those who enlisted is, as a whole, creditable to the town. Captain Michael B. Gregory rendered efficient service at the Charlestown Navy-Yard in the summer of 1861, during which he was distinguished for his promptness and ability in fitting out government vessels. He afterwards commanded the United States ship "R. B. Forbes," during a short cruise along the Atlantic coast. Captain Josiah P. Cressy commanded the United States ship "Ino," eighty members of his crew being from Marblehead.

After cruising in the North Atlantic, his ship sailed to the Straits of Gibraltar and there formed a blockade for the Confederate steamer "Sumter." He subsequently sailed to the Island of Tangiers,

Marion and captured two Confederate officers, who were made prisoners of war. The distinguished services of Captain Samuel B. Gregory, in the U. S. steamer "Western World," and of his brother, Capt. William H. Gregory, in the steamer "Bahia," along the southern coast, are deserving of much more space than is at our disposal. Both were noted for their zeal, and were among the most successful commanders in the United States Navy. Their names are recorded, with honorable mention, in the archives at Washington.

Throughout the entire period of the war the news of every Union victory was announced to the people by the merry peal of the church bells. On Saturday, April 8, 1865, news was received of the surrender of General Lee, at Richmond, Va., and the bells rang out their joyful tidings. The event, however, did not take place until the following day. On Monday, April 10th, the citizens formed in procession and headed by a band of music, marched through the principal streets to Lyceum Hall, where addresses of congratulation were delivered by Dr. Briggs, of Salem, and other speakers. In the evening many of the houses were illuminated, and beacon-fires were lighted on the hills in honor of the great event.

The assassination of President Lincoln, on the night of April 14th, gave a tragic ending to one of the greatest civil wars recorded in history. In Marblehead, as elsewhere throughout the country, every mark of respect was paid to the martyred President. On the day of the funeral many of the shoe manufactories, private residences and other buildings were appropriately draped in mourning; the church bells were tolled, and public services were held at the Baptist Church, where an address was delivered by the Rev. George W. Patch.

Though actual hostilities ceased in April, the soldiers who had enlisted for a service of three years were not discharged until June, when the war was considered as finally ended. On the 20th of that month the people of Marblehead gave a reception to the members of the Tenth Massachusets Battery, a large proportion of whom were citizens of the town. This battery had been engaged in all the most important battles of the army of the Potomac, and had become distinguished for efficiency and bravery.

On the 19th of December, a reception was given to General Kilpatrick, who delivered an address on the steps of the town-house.

During the war Marblehead furnished for the army and navy one thousand and forty-eight men, which was a surplus of ninety-one over and above all demands. Eight hundred and twenty-seven were in the military service, and two hundred and twenty-one were in the navy. Of these, one hundred and ten were killed in battle, or died from wounds and sickness, and eighty-seven were wounded, many of whom received honorable mention after months, and, in some instances, years of suffering.

The whole amount of money raised for war purposes by the town, exclusive of State aid, was $139,725. The sum of $107,800.65 was raised by the town and paid to families of volunteers as State aid during the four years of the war. This sum was afterwards refunded by the Commonwealth.

CHAPTER XC.

MARBLEHEAD—(*Continued*).

Improvements in the Shoe Business—New Streets—Increase of Business—Fire on Pleasant Street—First Observance of Memorial Day—John Goodwin, Jr., Post 82, G. A. R., Organized—Other Local Organizations—First Steam Fire Engine—Atlantic Avenue Opened—Firemen's Demonstration—Catholic Church Burned—Small Pox Excitement—Munaburg House Burned—Swampscott Branch Railroad Opened—William B. Brown—The Gregory Fund—Bequest of Benjamin Abbot—Abbot Hall—Generosity of the Citizens—Celebration of Mugford's Victory—Mugford Monument Dedicated—Dedication of Soldiers' and Sailors' Monument—Abbot Public Library—Great Fire of 1877—New Local Newspaper Established—Murder of William Frank Hathaway—Marblehead Improvement Society Organized—Exercises on the Death of President Garfield—President Arthur Captured—The Lockout of 1883—Celebration of the Fourth of July—Horse Railroads Extended from Lynn and Salem—Attempts to Divide the Town and Form a New Township—Memorial Services on the Death of Ex-President U. S. Grant—Development of the Town as a Summer Resort—Marblehead as a Yachting Centre.

During the war, and the years immediately following its close, the shoe business of Marblehead was in a more prosperous condition than it had ever been before. With the introduction of the McKay Sewing Machine, a division of labor became necessary, and the entire system of manufacturing shoes was revolutionized. All work was now performed in the factories, and instead of the old system, under which boys were taught a thorough knowledge of shoemaking as a trade, they were taught to be simply proficient in some particular branch of the work. By the improved method of manufacturing, thousands of cases of boots and shoes were made in a much shorter time than it had formerly taken to produce as many hundreds. As the business increased and became remunerative, the effect was apparent in the improved condition of the town. Large buildings were erected in the vicinity of the depot for manufacturing purposes, while handsome residences in various parts of the town gave evidence of the prosperity of the people. The town was also greatly improved by the building of new streets, and by removing buildings and widening several of the older highways.

On the night of February 5, 1867, the town narrowly escaped a destructive conflagration. A fire broke out in the shoe manufactory of Joseph Harris & Sons, on Pleasant Street, destroying the building, together with the Baptist Church and the dwelling-house of Increase H. Brown. The flames were communicated to several other buildings in the vicinity, but the fire was fortunately controlled before doing further damage. The work of rebuilding began early in

the spring. A commodious factory was erected by Messrs. Harris & Sons on Elm Street, and the Baptist Society erected a new church on the site formerly occupied by their old house of worship. On the 14th of October, eight men at work on the new church edifice were thrown to the ground by the breaking away of a staging. One man was killed instantly, and another died from his injuries after several days of extreme suffering.

The custom of decorating the graves of soldiers with flowers was observed in Marblehead for the first time on the 13th of June, 1868, under the auspices of the "Soldiers' and Sailors' Union League." Nearly every organization in town participated in the procession. The exercises, which took place on the common, consisted of an oration by William B. Brown, Esq., an address by the Rev. William G. Haskell, and reading a poem written for the occasion by Benjamin K. Prentiss, Esq., of Lynn, a native of Marblehead. The procession then marched to the several cemeteries, where the graves of those who gave their lives in defense of the country were reverently decorated. This beautiful custom has been annually observed on the 30th of May under the auspices of the "Grand Army of the Republic."

The most notable events of the year, besides the excitement attending a presidential election, were the organization of the Liberty Hose Company, and the action of the town in authorizing the lighting of the public streets at night.

Little of importance marked the passage of the year 1869. A prominent local organization was chartered, however: John Goodwin, Jr., Post 82, Grand Army of the Republic. During the following year, Unity Degree Lodge, Daughters of Rebekah, and Neptune Lodge, No. 31, Knights of Pythias, were organized.

In 1871, the town voted to purchase a new steam fire engine, which resulted in a controversy among the firemen as to which company should have the custody of the new machine. At the annual March meeting, the citizens elected a board of fire-wards, in accordance with the time-honored custom of the town. This action was resisted by the Board of Selectmen, who appointed another set of fire-wards, and claimed that the election by the citizens was illegal.

The question was finally carried before the courts, and a decision was rendered declaring the election by the people to be the only legal method of appointment. The new engine arrived on the 8th of September, and was given the name of "Marblehead, No. 1."

The Marblehead Savings' Bank was incorporated early in the year, and in December a new local newspaper, known as the *Marblehead Messenger*, made its appearance.

During the year, also, Atlantic Avenue, which had been the cause of great controversy for several years, and which the town had been ordered to build by the County Commissioner, was completed and opened for travel.

On New Year's night, 1872, the fire department made a grand demonstration in honor of the satisfactory ending of the controversy concerning the new steam fire-engine. After a torchlight procession about town, the several companies assembled at the rooms of the General Glover Fire Association, where a dinner was served. The Marblehead Steam Fire Engine Company was organized the same evening.

On the 8th of July, a new church, which had been erected a short time before on Gregory street, by the Roman Catholics, was burned to the ground. Soon after, a parsonage was erected on the same site for the use of the parish priest.

During the month of August, Manataug Tribe, Improved Order of Red Men, was organized.

The year 1873 was one of the most eventful in the annals of the town. Early in the winter several persons were reported sick with the small-pox, and great excitement prevailed among the people. The first to die with the disease was George Hatch, Esq., a member of the Board of Selectmen, and a gentleman well known and highly respected in the community. Shortly after, a house on Water street was taken for a small-pox hospital, and several persons were placed there for treatment. The management of this hospital was not satisfactory to the citizens, and a controversy ensued which continued until the close of the annual town meeting.

On Thursday morning, September 11, a fire broke out in a stable on Darling Street, belonging to Mr. Thomas T. Paine, and before it could be extinguished a large hotel on Washington Street, known as the "Manataug House," and a dwelling-house adjoining, belonging to the estate of Samuel Homan, were destroyed. Several other buildings in the vicinity were badly damaged.

On Monday, October 19th, the railroad from Marblehead to Lynn, known as the Swampscott Branch, was opened for travel, and the event was celebrated in an appropriate manner. Five hundred persons were conveyed over the route in the first train, and on its return a dinner was served at Allerton Hall. The Marblehead Band was in attendance, and speeches were made by many of the prominent citizens and invited guests.

At the annual town meeting in March, 1874, William B. Brown, Esq., who had served as a member of the school committee for a quarter of a century, declined a re-election. As soon as his determination was made known to the citizens the following resolution was unanimously adopted:

"WHEREAS, Our beloved fellow-citizen, William B. Brown, has served his native town as a member of the School Committee for the long period of twenty-five years; as Chairman of the Board writing the annual report, and giving most freely of his time, his intelligence and his hearty sympathy to the cause of education in our midst, without one cent of remuneration, even to the prejudice of his pecuniary interest and bodily health; and whereas, for the present high standing of our public schools, we gratefully acknowledge a large indebtedness for his direct personal efforts, therefore be it

"*Resolved*, That we, the citizens of Marblehead, in town-meeting

[illegible] our most hearty thanks, for these rare [illegible]."

At a town meeting held on Wednesday, May 27th, Mr. James J. H. Gregory generously presented two thousand dollars to the town, to be used as a fund, the interest of which is to be applied once in four years to promote the moral, mental and physical welfare of the inhabitants. The method of investment for this purpose is to be decided by a committee consisting of the chairman of the selectmen, the chairman of the school committee, and all the ministers of the gospel settled over religious societies in the town. The income of this fund has been appropriated to the use of the trustees of the public library.

During the year the selectmen were formally notified that Mr. Benjamin Abbot, who died in Boston, in September, 1872, had bequeathed all the residue of his property, after the payment of several other legacies, to the town of Marblehead. The property consisted of United States bonds and other securities to the value of one hundred and three thousand dollars. The will of the donor concluded as follows:

"I have made this provision for the town of Marblehead, because it was my birthplace. And it is my desire that a building shall be erected for the benefit of the inhabitants of said town, but I do not intend to limit the use of the legacy to that purpose or to impose conditions which would prevent the use of it for such other general objects as the citizens of said town may determine upon in their discretion. I desire that my name may always be attached to said fund."

The legacy was formally accepted by the town, and it was voted unanimously to erect a building in accordance with the wishes of the donor, to be known as Abbot Hall. This building, which is of brick, with stone trimmings, was completed during the year 1877. It is situated on the Common, on Training-field Hill, one of the highest points of land in the town and is visible for several miles at sea. It contains a large audience hall which is capable of seating fully twelve hundred persons, a public library and reading-room, a fire-proof vault for the storage and security of the records, and rooms for the use of the various boards of town officers. Its total cost was $75,000. Great credit is due to Messrs. Simeon Dodge and Moses Gilbert, of the building committee, under whose supervision the building was constructed. Many of the conveniences which render the new hall superior to most public buildings, are due to the faithful manner in which these gentlemen performed the work assigned them by the town. Upon the completion of the building several of the citizens and natives of the town residing abroad, generously contributed pictures and other articles to add to its attractiveness. The Hon. James J. H. Gregory presented a clock and bell for the tower and a large oil painting for the reading-room. Mr. Thomas Appleton also gave a picture for the reading-room, a piano for the use of the hall was presented by Mr. Henry L. Pitman; and a carpet for the stage by Mr. Joel Goldthwaite of Boston. Mr. Nathaniel Bridgeman, of Boston, gave a clock for the hall, and Mr. William F. Joy, of Boston, a bookcase for the use of the town clerk. Subsequently, General John H. Devereux, of Cleveland, Ohio, presented Willard's famous painting, "Yankee Doodle, or the Spirit of '76." The dedication of the building took place on Wednesday, December 12, 1877, under the direction of a committee of thirteen gentlemen elected for that purpose. The exercises consisted of instrumental music by the American Band, of Providence, R. I.; prayer by Rev. George Pierce, Jr., of Milford, N. H.; singing by the Marblehead Musical Association; an original ode written for the occasion by Miss Marcia M. Selman; and an oration by the Hon. Edward Avery, of Braintree, Mass. The benediction was pronounced by the Rev. Edward Crowninshield, of West Dedham, Mass. In the evening a concert was given by the American Band, of Providence, R. I.

Wednesday, May 17, 1876, the one hundredth anniversary of the capture of the British transport "Hope," by Captain James Mugford, in the Continental schooner "Franklin," witnessed one of the greatest celebrations ever known in the history of Marblehead. The day was ushered in by the ringing of all the church bells for an hour at sunrise, and a salute of thirty-nine guns from a battery on "Workhouse rocks." The bells were also rung and salutes were fired at noon and sunset. At nine o'clock, A. M., a procession was formed, consisting of military companies of Marblehead and Lynn, seven bands of music, distinguished visitors, soldiers and sailors of the War of 1812, veterans of the Civil War, town officers, secret societies, pupils of the public schools, and the entire fire department. The procession marched through the principal streets to the square at the junction of Pleasant and Essex streets, where a monument, which had been placed in position the day before, was dedicated with appropriate exercises. The monument is a shaft of Hallowell granite, eighteen and one-half feet high, and four feet, nine inches square at the base. It is inscribed on all four sides as follows:

On the northern side,—

"A TRIBUTE OF MARBLEHEAD.

"To the memory of the brave Captain Mugford and his heroic crew, who, in the 'Franklin,' of sixty tons, and four four-pounders, May 17, 1776, under the guns of the British fleet, captured and carried into Boston the transport 'Hope,' three hundred tons, ten guns, loaded with munitions of war, including 1,500 barrels of powder."

On the eastern side,—

"CREW OF THE 'FRANKLIN,' AS FAR AS KNOWN.

James Mugford.....Captain.
Thomas Russell.....Lieutenant.
Jeremiah Hubbard.....Lieutenant.
William Thomas.....Gunner.
Samuel H. Green.....Quartermaster.
James Topham.....Carpenter.
John Powers.....Boatswain.

SEAMEN.

John Dove
Thomas Dove.
John Witham.
Samuel Roff.
James Quilty.
Quinn Bettis."

On the western side,—

"CAPTAIN JAMES MUGFORD.

"Born in Marblehead May 19, 1749; killed May 19, 1776, while successfully defending his vessel against thirteen boats and two hundred men from the British fleet."

On the southern side,—

"ERECTED MAY 17, 1876."

After the dedication of the monument the procession moved to the Unitarian Church, where the other exercises took place. They consisted of singing by the Marblehead Musical Association, prayer by the Rev. Benjamin H. Bailey, an ode written for the occasion by the Rev. John W. Chadwick, an oration by the Hon. George B. Loring, of Salem, and an ode written by Miss Marcia M. Gilman.

On the Fourth of July another celebration took place. At nine o'clock, A.M., a procession was formed consisting of the Marblehead Brass Band, the Mugford Monumental Association, the Hibernian Friendly Society, a delegation of the Mugford Fire Association, the Board of Selectmen, the clergy and the children of the North and South Church Sabbath Schools in carriages. The procession moved through the principal streets to the square at the junction of Mugford and Elm Streets, where a monument erected in memory of the soldiers and sailors of Marblehead who fell in the Civil War was dedicated with appropriate ceremonies. The monument is of Hallowell granite, being thirty-four feet high, and eight feet square at the base. It bears four tablets containing the names of one hundred and thirty-eight soldiers and sailors. On the face, directly in front, is the following inscription:

IN MEMORY OF OUR COUNTRY'S DEFENDERS.

1776, 1812, 1861.

ERECTED BY THE CITIZENS OF MARBLEHEAD.

Dedicated July 4, 1876.

The other exercises of the day took place at the Unitarian Church. They consisted of prayer by the Rev. Julius H. Ward; singing by the Marblehead Musical Association; reading the Declaration of Independence, by Mr. Charles H. Litchman; and addresses by Messrs. James J. H. Gregory and William B. Brown. At the close of the exercises a dinner was served at Allerton Hall.

The local events of the year 1877 were among the most memorable in the entire history of the town. At the annual March meeting the town voted to appropriate twenty thousand dollars from the Abbot fund, to be placed in the hands of trustees and devoted, principal and interest, in their discretion, to the founding and maintenance of a reading-room and library to be called "Abbot Library." It was also voted to place the unappropriated balance of the Abbot fund at interest, and to devote the income to the payment of the annual expense of maintaining the Abbot building, including heating, lighting, and the care of the building and grounds. The library was opened to the public early in the year 1878.

On the 15th of May the town voted to make a reservoir of Read's Pond, and to lay water-pipes therefrom, with hydrants in suitable places for use in case of fires. The sum of ten thousand dollars was appropriated for the purpose and a committee was elected to carry the vote into effect. The work was finished during the summer of that year.

The most extensive conflagration ever known in the annals of the town took place on the morning of June 25, 1877. At about half-past one o'clock a barn in the rear of a large three-story building known as the "Marblehead Hotel," situated on Pleasant Street, in the midst of the largest and finest buildings of which this town could boast, was discovered to be on fire. Before assistance could be summoned the fire had communicated to the hotel, and when the firemen arrived on the scene the building was in flames. Every effort was made to stop the progress of the destructive element, but without avail. The General Glover engine-house, situated directly over the Brick Pond reservoir, was soon in flames, cutting off the supply of water from that source. The fire was now beyond the control of the firemen, and in spite of their almost superhuman efforts to stop it, spread from building to building with lightning-like rapidity. In a few moments a large shoe manufactory, known as Pope's Block, was on fire, the flames spreading to a barn owned by E. V. Bartlett & Co., and from thence to a shoe manufactory owned and occupied by that firm. The fire now defied all efforts at control. Leaping around the corner of School street, the conflagration extended all the way from Rechabite Building to a shoe manufactory owned by Nathaniel Glover, thence to a large block owned by Wormsted and Woodfin, and soon the shoe manufactory of William Stevens, a stable owned by Thomas T. Paine, and fifteen other buildings, mostly dwelling houses, comprising every building on Sewall Street, from the corner of School Street, to Spring Street were in flames. Extending along the North side of Pleasant Street, the fire consumed a building belonging to T. T. Paine, a small dwelling-house owned by William Humphrey, the beautiful depot erected a few years previously, said at that time to be the finest on the line of the Eastern Railroad, a barn and dwelling-house owned by Benjamin G. Hathaway, a boarding-house owned by Henry F. Pitman, a large shoe manufactory owned and occupied by Jonathan Brown, the dwelling-house of William C. Lefavour, and a barn belonging to the estate of the late Dr. H. H. F. Whittemore. On the South side of Pleasant Street every building save one was consumed, from a house belonging to the estate of Mrs. Leonora Chapman, nearly opposite the place where the fire originated, to the Mugford Monument at the junction of Essex and Spring Street. These included a large block owned by Joshua O. Lefavour,

a house owned by John H. Brown and occupied by G. W. Forsyth as a boarding-house, a large and commodious four-story building known as "Allerton Block," a shoe factory owned by M. J. Doak, and several dwelling-houses. On the southern end of School Street every building was destroyed, including a large building owned by Henry O. Symonds, the frame and materials of a new engine house, in process of construction, a stable owned by Enoch A. Perkins, the South Congregational Church, a dwelling owned by Edward Glover, and several smaller buildings. On Essex Street, every building was destroyed, including a large shoe manufactory, belonging to the estate of John H. Wilkins, a small shop occupied by a marble-worker, and several dwelling-houses. On Spring Street, two shoe manufactories owned by William O. Lefavour, and four dwelling-houses were destroyed; the only building left standing being the Sewall School-house. On Bassett Street, two dwelling-houses were consumed, together with a barn, belonging to Henry F. Pitman, was destroyed, and several other buildings were seriously damaged.

At one time every church in town was on fire except the Baptist and Roman Catholic. Then it was that strong men trembled, fearing that the town would be destroyed. But their desperation only nerved them to greater effort, and at length, reinforced by assistance from Salem, Lynn, and other cities, the firemen were successful and conquered the fire. But what a scene of devastation met the eye when the morning sun broke forth. Where but a few hours before had been large factories and comfortable homes—monuments of the enterprise and industry of the people—were only stone walls and tottering chimneys. The entire business portion of the town had disappeared in a single night. Seventy-six buildings, with all their contents, representing over half a million dollars' worth of property, had been consumed. Only four of the large shoe manufactories were left standing in the town, while ninety families were made homeless, and fifteen hundred men and women were thrown out of employment.

During the afternoon a meeting was held at the town hall to devise measures of relief for the sufferers by the fire. The meeting was called to order by Capt. Knott V. Martin, and a citizens' relief committee was chosen to solicit donations of money and clothing. Before an appeal could be issued, however, donations began to pour in from all parts of the country, and in a short time the committee reported that enough had been received to alleviate the distress. The total amount of contributions received was $[illegible]. The clothing was distributed by a society of ladies known as the Women's Centennial Aid Society, who rendered efficient assistance to the committee in its charitable work.

We cannot close our account of this terrible visitation without a few commendatory words concerning the fortitude and enterprising energy which characterized the business men throughout the entire trying period. They had received a blow, from which it was thought they could not recover; but with steady resolution they set themselves to the work before them, and in less than three months had rebuilt more than one-third of the number of buildings destroyed by the fire. During the years which have elapsed since the great conflagration every building destroyed has been replaced by a new and commodious structure.

Beyond the excitement incident to the State and Presidential elections, which intervened between this period and the year 1881, there is little of interest to record. On the 6th of January, 1881, a new local newspaper known as the *Essex Statesman*, and published by Charles H. Litchman, made its appearance. This paper was issued regularly for a period of three years, when it ceased publication.

Early on the morning of Tuesday, May 3, 1881, a gloom was cast over the entire community by the news that Mr. William Frank Hathaway, an estimable citizen, had been murdered during the night. His body was discovered lying face downward in a ditch in a field near the old Powder House on the "Ferry Road." A bruise on the forehead, evidently inflicted with a stone or some other blunt instrument, gave rise to the theory that he was accosted on his way home and stunned by a blow on the head. He was then placed in the ditch and held down until death ensued from drowning. Robbery evidently was the motive for the deed, as his pocket-book, known to contain considerable money, was missing. No clue to the perpetrators of the deed has ever been discovered.

On Tuesday, May 10th, the Marblehead Improvement Society was organized, and within a short time began its beneficent work by setting out shade trees in various parts of the town.

On the 2d of July President James A. Garfield was shot by Charles Guiteau. The news was received in Marblehead on the afternoon of that day, and the next morning arrangements were hastily made for a mass-meeting of the citizens to take action in regard to the matter. The meeting was held at Abbot Hall, on the evening of that day, and was called to order by Henry A. Potter, chairman of the selectmen. Benjamin F. Pierce was elected chairman, and Thomas Swasey, Jr., secretary. After prayer by the Rev. Benjamin H. Bailey, appropriate resolutions were read by Samuel Roads, Jr., and remarks were made by Capt. Benjamin Pitman, Jonathan H. Orne, Rev. J. H. Williams, William B. Brown and Charles H. Litchman.

September 26th, the day of the funeral of the murdered President, was observed by a general suspension of business. The public buildings and many private residences were draped in mourning. In the afternoon public exercises were held at Abbot Hall, consisting of singing by the Marblehead Musical

Association; prayer by the Rev. J. H. Williams; singing by the Marblehead Glee Club; remarks by Charles H. Litchman, chairman of the meeting; singing by the Glee Club; eulogy by the Rev. Benjamin H. Bailey; singing by the Marblehead Musical Association; and the benediction by Rev. Sanford P. Smith.

On Friday, September 8, 1882, the United States steamer "Despatch" arrived in the harbor. It was soon rumored that President Chester A. Arthur was on board the steamer and that he would take a carriage at Dixie's wharf for Salem. In a short time quite a goodly crowd had gathered at the wharf, and on the appearance of the distinguished visitor he was greeted with hearty cheers. After his departure arrangements were hastily made for a public reception on his return, and a messenger was sent to Salem to request him to meet the citizens at Abbot Hall. This the President at first declined to do; but as his carriage neared Marblehead he was accosted by Capt. Benjamin Pitman, who informed him that he had been instructed to capture the President and his entire party in the name of the people of Marblehead. Seeing that escape was impossible, the President laughingly consented on condition that he should not be subjected to the ordeal of handshaking. As the carriage entered the town a signal was rung on the electric fire alarm, and the church bells were rung. A detachment of the Marblehead Light Infantry marched to Work-house Rocks to act as escort. Fearing that an attempt would be made to drive rapidly through the town and thus deprive the people of an opportunity of seeing the President, some of the enthusiastic citizens brought out the Washington Hook-and-Ladder truck and placed it across the street near the side entrance to Abbot Hall to stop the progress of the carriage. This was unnecessary, however, as the President had no desire to escape. On his arrival he was escorted to Abbot Hall, where fifteen hundred persons had assembled and organized a meeting with Jonathan H. Orne as chairman and Samuel Roads, Jr., secretary. On his appearance, the President was greeted with a perfect ovation. The people cheered themselves hoarse in their delight and enthusiasm. After a brief address of welcome by the chairman of the meeting, and a few pleasant words in reply by President Arthur, the party again took the carriage for the wharf, where they embarked on board the steamer. As the boat in which the Presidential party was rowed to the steamer proceeded down the harbor, it was lustily cheered by hundreds of people who lined the wharves and headlands. Shortly after the "Despatch" steamed out of the harbor. This was probably one of the most hearty, enthusiastic and spontaneous welcomes a President of the United States ever received.

The year 1883 was marked by one of the greatest industrial disturbances ever known in the history of the town. In the spring several of the manufacturers formed a combination to resist the power of the "Lasters' Protective Union," a prominent labor organization, and a general lock-out was ordered in nearly all the factories. This was attended by considerable excitement and was of about seven weeks' duration, a few of the manufacturers removing a portion of their business from the town before the contest ended. Fortunately for the town, an amicable settlement of the differences between the manufacturers and their workmen was arrived at early in the summer.

No special observance had been made of the anniversary of the declaration of American Independence in Marblehead for a period of twenty-eight years. The Fourth of July, 1884, was accordingly celebrated in a manner never to be forgotten by those who witnessed it. The bells were rung at sunrise, noon and sunset. At 7.30 A.M. a band concert was given at the stand at the Brick Pond Reservoir on Pleasant Street for one hour. At nine o'clock a procession, under the direction of Chief Marshal John Quiner, and headed by the Salem Cadet Band, moved through the principal streets. This was without exception the finest procession ever seen in Marblehead. There were six divisions, consisting of town officers, invited guests, veterans of 1812 and the orator of the day in carriages; secret societies; an industrial display; the pupils of the public schools; the entire Fire Department; and the Marblehead Bicycle Club. All the societies illustrated their teachings and precepts by tableaux. The industrial display taught the lesson of the nation's progress in the mechanic arts; and the public schools by appropriate tableaux beautifully illustrated every important epoch in the nation's history.

All the public buildings and many private residences along the route of the procession were decorated with flags and bunting.

At two o'clock the exercises of the day took place at Abbot Hall, consisting of an address by William B. Brown, Esq.; music by the Salem Cadet Band; prayer by the Rev. William R. Harris; reading the Declaration of Independence by Joseph W. Chapman; an original ode, written for the occasion by N. Allen Lindsey; oration by the Rev. John W. Chadwick, of Brooklyn, N. Y.; singing, "America," by the audience; and the benediction by the Rev. Frank R. Sanborn. Later in the day there were boat races and bicycle races, open to all who chose to participate. In the evening there was a grand display of fire-works from "Skinner's Head."

Early in the summer of this year the Lynn and Boston Street Railway Company extended its tracks to Marblehead and began running regular cars to and from Lynn. Shortly after, the Naumkeag Street Railway Company extended its tracks from Salem through the town to Franklin Street, establishing regular horse-car connection with that city.

In the session of 1884 great excitement was caused by the petition of Caleb Chiles and others to the General Court, praying for a division of the town of Marblehead and the incorporation of a separate township to include Marblehead Neck and the section known as the "Farms district," the line being drawn near the village of Devereux. A similar petition was sent to the Legislature from certain citizens of Swampscott, who desired to have the sections known as Phillips Beach and Beach Bluff annexed to the proposed town. This movement was vigorously resisted by the inhabitants of both towns in interest. The subject occupied the attention of the "Committee on Towns" of the Legislature of 1885 for several weeks, and after a full, fair and impartial hearing, the petitioners were given "leave to withdraw." Another attempt to divide the town before the Legislature of 1886 resulted in a similar report.

On the 8th of August, 1885, memorial services were held at Abbot Hall in honor of ex-President U. S. Grant, whose death had recently occurred. Capt. Knott V. Martin presided. The exercises consisted of singing by a double quartette; reading of resolutions by Jonathan H. Orne, Esq.; remarks by Hon. James J. H. Gregory; an ode by Miss Marcia M. Schman; prayer by the Rev. William R. Harris; oration by Capt. Benjamin Pitman; singing, "America," by the audience; and the benediction by Rev. William R. Harris.

During the period of which we have written in this chapter, the town has gradually developed into a popular summer resort. Nearly every available spot along the shore has been purchased and built upon by summer residents, and every year brings a larger number of pleasure seekers to our shore than its predecessor. The growth of the settlement on Marblehead Neck has been rapid and constant. Wide and well-kept avenues have been laid out in various directions, commanding a full view of the ocean, the town and the coast from Thacher's Island to the South Shore. There are one hundred and fifty houses already occupied during the summer, and others are being erected. The beautiful club-house of the Eastern Yacht Club, on the harbor side, is the finest club-house on the New England coast. The harbor, being the headquarters of the boats of this club, has attracted a fleet of yachtsmen to its superior facilities, and in a few years past the most famous yachts of America and Great Britain have been frequent visitors. The advantages offered for yacht-racing have been recognized, and several regattas have been held by the great yacht clubs of the country. [illegible] of our coast. What is true of Marblehead Neck is also, though in a lesser degree, of [illegible] of the town. Peach's Point has grown within a few years into a beautiful village of cottages. Every year new houses are erected, and the sections known as Devereux and [illegible]. The boarding-houses in these sections are always well filled during the summer, and the future prominence of Marblehead as a watering-place seems to be assured.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

URIEL CROCKER.

Uriel Crocker belonged to a family which has been well known in Barnstable County during its entire history. In 1634 two brothers, John and William Crocker, arrived in New England, and soon after settled in Scituate. William removed to Barnstable, October 10, 1639, and John followed soon after, dying there in 1669. He left a wife, Jane, and after providing for her he gave his estate to the sons of his brother. William Crocker, the ancestor of the subject of this sketch, was a deacon in the church, an influential citizen, and the owner of a large landed estate. He first settled in the easterly part of Barnstable, but in 1643 removed to the westerly part, where, in 1655, he owned one hundred and twenty-six acres of upland and twenty-two acres of meadow. His first wife, whom he married in Scituate in 1636, and who was the mother of all his children, was named Alice and died soon after 1683. His second wife was Patience, widow of Robert Parker and daughter of Henry Cobb, who had removed from Plymouth, where he had appeared as early as 1629. William Crocker died in Barnstable in September, 1692, probably about eighty years of age. His children were John, born in Scituate May 1, 1637; Elizabeth, born in Scituate September 22, 1639; Samuel, born in Barnstable June 3, 1642; Job, born March 9, 1644–45; Josiah, September 19, 1647; Eleazer, July 21, 1650, and Joseph, 1654.

Of the above children Job was also a deacon and a prominent business man. He lived on the estate of his uncle John at the northeast corner of the West Parish of Barnstable and there died in March, 1719. His first wife, whom he married in November, 1668, was Mary, daughter of Rev. Thomas Walley of Barnstable. She died in 1676. His second wife, whom he married July 19, 1680, was Hannah, daughter of Richard Taylor of Yarmouth. She died May 14, 1743, in the eighty-fifth year of her age. His children were a son born in 1669, who died early; Samuel, May 15, 1671; Thomas, January 19, 1674; Mary, June 29, 1681; John, February 24, 1683; Hannah, February 2, 1685; Elizabeth, May 15, 1688; Sarah, January 19, 1690–91; Job, April 4, 1694; David, September 5, 1697; and Thankful, June 14, 1700.

Of the above children Samuel, of Barnstable, married, December 10, 1696, Sarah, daughter of Robert Parker, who died in 1718. He afterwards married, April 12, 1719, Judith Leavet of Rochester. His children were Samuel, born December 12, 1697; Cornelius, October 24, 1698; Mary, April 8, 1700; Pa-



Uriel Crocker

tience, April 18, 1701; Elizabeth, February, 1702–03; Cornelius again, March 23, 1704; Rowland, June 18, 1705; Gershom, December, 1706; Ebenezer, June 5, 1710; Benjamin, July, 1711; Rebecca, Rachel, David, Sarah and Tabitha.

Of these children Cornelius, of Barnstable, married, November 9, 1727, Lydia, daughter of Joseph Sturgis Jenkins, and died December 12, 1784, his wife having died August 5, 1773, at the age of sixty-eight. His children were Elijah, born April 12, 1729; Elisha, September 14, 1730; Samuel, July 29, 1732; Joseph, April 12, 1734; Lydia, April 14, 1739; Cornelius, August 21, 1740; Josiah, December 20, 1744; and Sarah, 1749.

Of these children Josiah graduated at Harvard in 1765, and was for some time a teacher in the Barnstable Academy. He married, October 6, 1765, Deborah, daughter of Daniel Davis and sister of Daniel Davis, the distinguished solicitor-general of Massachusetts, and died in Barnstable, May 4, 1780. His widow afterwards married Benjamin Gorham. His children were Deborah, born 1766; Robert, 1767; Uriel, 1768; Josiah and Mehitable. Of these Uriel removed to Boston and served an apprenticeship to Joseph Eaton, whose relative, Mary, daughter of Israel Eaton of Marblehead, he afterwards married. After his marriage he removed to Marblehead, making that town his home and place of business until his death in 1813. His wife died within a year after their marriage, and he afterwards married in February, 1792, Mary, daughter of Captain Richard James of Marblehead, who died in August, 1811. His children were Mary, born November 22, 1792; Richard James, October 19, 1794; Uriel, the subject of this sketch, September 13, 1796; Deborah, November 12, 1798; Richard James again, October 29, 1800; Josiah, November 9, 1802; Abigail, October 15, 1805; Francis Boardman, April 17, 1808; and Elizabeth James, October 9, 1809. Of these Josiah and Abigail alone survive.

Capt. Richard James, above-mentioned, the grandfather of Mr. Crocker, was a ship-master and performed distinguished service in the War of the Revolution in bringing munitions of war for our armies from foreign neutral ports. His commission from the State of Massachusetts, appointing him to that special service, is in the possession of Mr. Crocker's family. He married Mary, daughter of Colonel Jonathan and Abigail (Burnham) Glover of Marblehead. Colonel Glover was a brother of Brigadier-General John Glover, whose statue stands in Commonwealth Avenue, in Boston. The sword of General Glover and the portraits of Colonel Jonathan Glover and his wife are also in the possession of the family of Mr. Crocker.

Colonel Glover was the treasurer of the town of Marblehead during the whole war, and at the close it was found that a debt of twenty-seven hundred pounds had accumulated, more than half of which was due to the treasurer for advances made by him in behalf of the town. The services of General Glover, his brother, at the head of the Marblehead (or Twenty-first) Regiment, designated by the army as the "Marine Regiment," in transporting the army across the East River, after the battle of Long Island, and saving it from further disaster, and also in crossing the Delaware on the eve of the victorious battle of Trenton, have been revived in our memories by the deeds of the soldiers of Marblehead on land and sea in the late war, deeds which deserve a repetition of the words of the gallant General Knox: "There went the men of Marblehead, alike at home, on land, or water; alike ardent, patriotic, and unflinching, wherever they unfurled the flag of their country."

Mr. Crocker in his earliest youth attended the common schools of Marblehead, his native town, and closed his education at the Marblehead Academy, under the preceptorship of Samuel Greeley, from whom he received the certificate for the best scholarship. Mr. Greeley, well known in Boston in his later years as deacon of the Berry Street Church, pursued in middle life the business of type-founder, and his former scholar became one of his chief customers.

Mr. Crocker's childhood and early life in Marblehead were peculiarly happy. He was the second of eight children, and relatives, old and young, were about him, bound together by the strongest ties of affection. Like every other Marblehead boy, the sea presented strong temptations to his youthful tastes, and his desire to adopt a sailor's career, approved by his father, was only checked by his grandfather, Captain James, who had seen enough of sea life to know its hardships and perils. One of his early memories was the tarring and feathering of skipper Floyd Ireson, celebrated by the ballad of Whittier, which occurred when he was twelve years of age. A later memory, though still a memory of his youth, was the death of his mother, which occurred in August, 1811, at the age of thirty-seven. A still later one, but immediately following the last, was a ride to Cambridge in the old family chaise, with his grandfather, to attend the commencement of 1811 at which his schoolmate, Robert Hooper of Marblehead, graduated. The class of that year was a notable one, including, besides Edward Everett, who gave the English oration, Thomas G. Cary, Charles P. Curtis, Nathaniel L. Frothingham, Samuel Gilman, John C. Gray, Robert Hooper, George Morey, Harrison Gray Otis, Edward Reynolds, and John Fothergill Waterhouse. It is needless to say that the occasion made a deep impression on his mind. It is interesting, however, to note that the modest boy of fourteen, looking for an opportunity in some occupation more humble than that to which the graduates from an academic life were that day aspiring, became in later years their trusted and honored friend.

On Saturday, the 14th of September, 1811, the day after his fifteenth birthday, his father carried him again to Boston, and on the following Monday he entered as an apprentice the book-store and printing-

office of Samuel T. Armstrong, then numbered 50 Cornhill, the new building on the same lot being now numbered 173 and 175 Washington Street. He was the youngest apprentice, the so-called "printer's devil," and so remained until the Monday following the next Thanksgiving, when Osmyn Brewster, a boy eleven months younger, entered the office as an apprentice and Uriel Crocker received his first promotion. It was by his own choice that he was employed in the printing instead of the book-selling department. From the first he devoted himself with diligence to his work, and early acquired that knowledge and skill which qualified him to direct, afterwards, the labors of many others. His faithfulness and industry won the confidence and friendship of his employer, and at the age of eighteen, on the retirement of Ezra Lincoln, the old foreman, to set up an office for himself, he was made the foreman, though four of his fellow apprentices were his seniors in age and apprenticeship. When the apprenticeship of Mr. Crocker and Mr. Brewster ended, Mr. Armstrong, with a just perception of their ability and trustworthiness, and with a wise foresight as to his own interests, took them into partnership, November 1, 1818. The articles of partnership were drawn up by Jeremiah Evarts, the father of William M. Evarts of New York, and included the printing-office alone, Mr. Armstrong reserving, temporarily, sole possession of the book-selling business. On the first of April, 1825, Mr. Armstrong retired, and the firm of Crocker & Brewster established in 1818, assumed the entire business. Mr. Armstrong was connected with them, however, in several joint interests until 1840, and his warm friendship and almost daily visits to their counting-room continued until the very day of his sudden death, in 1850.

Crocker & Brewster continued in the building to which they had come as boys in 1811, until 1865, when their lease from Mrs. Armstrong, widow of their late partner, terminated, and they moved into the adjoining building. In 1876 they gave up business as publishers and booksellers, and sold out their stereotype plates and other partnership property to H. O. Houghton & Co. In the business of the firm Mr. Crocker had, from the first, the special charge of the printing office and Mr. Brewster of the book store. Mr. Crocker was always zealous for the credit of their press, and eager to introduce every improvement. Crocker & Brewster were the first in Boston to use the new iron and power presses, the product of the Adams Press Co., more than tenfold that of the old hand-presses, which were both slow in their operation and imperfect in workmanship.

Most of their publications were sprinkled largely with Hebrew, Greek, and Latin, but they were always [illegible] and their publications, and their publishing were of the highest character, especially those in the department of religious learning and practical religion. Their edition of "Scott's Family Bible," in six volumes, royal octavo, containing 1200 pages, is believed to have been the first stereotyped issue of any large work in America. Their issues of the works of Professor Robinson and Andrews & Stoddard have largely contributed to the progress of sound learning.

Mr. Crocker himself has said,—"It is not for me to speak of the character of our publications. We believe they have done some good in the world, and it is pleasant to an old printer, when thinking of the many millions of pages issued from his press, to know there is

> "Not one immoral, one corrupting thought,
> No line, which, dying, he could wish to blot."

On the 11th of February, 1829, he married Sarah Kidder, daughter of Elias Haskell, of Boston. After his marriage he occupied for a few months a house at the corner of Atkinson and High Streets, in Boston, and then bought the house numbered 26 Lynde Street, being the house adjoining the West Church, where he lived until 1847. He then moved to 23, afterward 29, Somerset Street, where he lived until, in 1885, when his house, with others, was taken by the city to make room for the court-house now in process of erection. He has, since 1885, lived in the house numbered 319 Commonwealth Avenue, spending the warm weather in Cohasset, where he died July 19, 1887, having nearly completed his ninety-first year. His wife died in Boston, January 4, 1856, and his surviving family now consists of a daughter, who was devoted to the health and comfort of her father in his declining years, and two sons, Uriel Haskell Crocker and George Glover Crocker, both of whom have made their mark at the Suffolk bar and as writers on law. Uriel was one of the three commissioners who revised the statutes of Massachusetts in 1882. George was president of the Massachusetts Senate, in 1883, and in the early part of the present year succeeded Thomas Russell as chairman of the Massachusetts Railroad Commissioners.

Aside from his legitimate business career Mr. Crocker, though never holding public office, was connected with many public enterprises. The Massachusetts Charitable Mechanics Association owes much of its prosperity to his valuable service in its behalf, and the final success of the Bunker Hill Monument Association, of which he was a director since 1833 and several years vice-president, in raising funds for the monument, was in no small degree due to his ingenious plans and personal effort. His efficiency in the management of the Old Colony Railroad Company, in which he was director, with the exception of a few years, from the date of its formation till his death, and his services in rescuing from threatened disaster the Northern Railroad Company of New Hampshire, of which for more than thirty-five years he was a director, have been fully appreciated by the stockholders of the various companies. He was at various times director, vice-president, and president of the South Pacific Railroad, director and president of the United



Benjamin P. Ware

States Hotel Company for many years, president of the Revere House Association, and trustee in the Boston Dispensary and in other institutions too numerous too mention. As recently as 1884 a list of corporations showed him to be president of four, vice-president of two, treasurer of two, and director in several others.

In accepting these positions, which in early years were much more numerous, he declined a merely nominal official title. The institution or association to which he lent his name was sure of having a careful oversight and a rigid inspection, and thus with his name went confidence and trust.

On the evening of November 1, 1868, the fiftieth anniversary of the co-partnership of Crocker & Brewster was celebrated at the house of Mr. Crocker, on Somerset Street by a gathering of a large number of their friends, on which occasion Rev. Dr. George W. Blagden made an appropriate address, which was responded to at length by Mr. Crocker. In the course of his remarks Mr. Crocker said: "Of Mr. Brewster and myself the fellowship in business and in friendship will, I trust, never be dissolved. During all the days of the seven years of our apprenticeship and of our fifty years of partnership, I have never received one unkind word from him, nor do I believe that he ever received one from me If he did, I certainly never intended it, as I know that he never deserved it."

The ninetieth birthday of Mr. Crocker occurred on the 13th of September, 1886, while at his summer residence in Cohasset. During the day he received the congratulations of his neighbors and friends, and in the evening he was serenaded by the band of the Cohasset Musical Association. Again, on the 29th of November, 1886, the friends of the two aged partners celebrated the seventy-fifth anniversary of their business connection at the house of Mr. Crocker in Commonwealth Avenue. The gathering was a most distinguished one, including Governor Robinson, Lieutenant-Governor Ames, ex-Governor Rice, A. W. Beard, treasurer of the Commonwealth, Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes, Hon. Sidney Bartlett, Hon. Leopold Morse, Hon. Samuel C. Cobb, Hon. R. R. Bishop, and other gentlemen well known in public service. Their fellow-citizens could not have shown more emphatically their appreciation of the fidelity and conscientiousness with which Mr. Crocker and Mr. Brewster had performed the work of life. The words of Hon. Robert C. Winthrop, the president of the Bunker Hill Monument Association, in his address to the annual meeting in 1883, still further emphasize the respect and honor in which the subject of this imperfect sketch was held.

"I cannot forget that first in the order of seniority on our roll of living directors, and at the head of our vice-presidents, stands the name of a venerable printer, bookseller, and publisher of our city, the imprint of whose firm, 'Crocker and Brewster,' has been the guaranty of a good book for more years than I can count; who has always been held and is still held in the highest regard and respect by our whole community; and who, having been elected a director in 1833, has this day in the eighty-seventh year of his age completed a half century of faithful service. I call upon you all to rise and unite with me in offering our thanks and congratulations to our valued associate and excellent fellow-citizen and friend, Uriel Crocker, and in expressing the earnest hope that he may long be spared in health and strength, not only to this association, but to the community in which he has been so conspicuous an example of that industry, integrity, public spirit, and patriotism, which have characterized and distinguished the mechanics of Boston from the days of their illustrious leader, Paul Revere."

BENJAMIN POND WARE.

The subject of this sketch was born in Salem on the 9th day of April, 1822. He was of the seventh generation from Robert Ware, whose enterprise and recognized ability secured a land grant in Dedham on the 12th of July, 1642.

Robert Ware was undoubtedly a native of Wrentham, Suffolk County, England; from which place he emigrated to America.

The family of Ware, or Weare (as it is written in the early records), is easily traced to a great antiquity by the records of the counties of Devon and Somerset, England.

The three oldest sons of Robert Ware were settled in that part of Dedham now known as Wrentham, in 1673. The youngest, Robert by name, was the father of Michael; and the direct descent of the subject of this sketch is Jabez, Amos and Erastus, from Michael.

In the long line of ancestry, the Wares were owners as well as tillers of the land; and many of the descendants of Robert have been noted as leading teachers in ethics and practicing physicians.

Erastus Ware, the father of Benjamin P., moved from Paxton to Danvers in 1810, he, at that time, being a young man of twenty-two years of age; ambitious and full of manly hope and enterprise, he commenced work on a milk farm and soon made himself a recognized leader and authority in all that appertained to agricultural industry.

In 1831 he purchased the Hinkley Farm in Marblehead, and commenced work on the same in 1833, Benjamin P. at this time being eleven years of age. This farm had been greatly abused by tenants who had cultivated it for fifty years with a single eye to securing the best crop for the tenant, with the least outlay of either capital or labor, and with a total disregard of the good of the land or the interest of the owner. Erastus Ware saw the possibilities of good husbandmanship upon the worn-out land; and ably seconded by his son, Benjamin P., and a brother, commenced work in good earnest to repair the waste places and bring back this neglected soil to a much better than its primitive condition. The best methods of agriculture learned by reading and observation were adopted in this work, and the systematic and well-ordered labor soon made Erastus and his sons the observed of all observers. It is not too much to say that the production of vegetables for the market was a leading feature (as well as a novelty in the town) in the Ware system of farming.

With long-neglected buildings, poor fences, neglected orchards the outlook was little better than that of a new country. But energy, frugality and persistent industry soon produced a transformation from negligence and shiftlessness to thrift and prosperity.

So much physical exertion was required of the subject of this sketch that three months in the winter was all that he could be spared for intellectual training and supplementary to this public school education, two terms at Phillips' Academy, concluded his opportunities for rudimentary education. At the age of twenty-five, Benjamin P. married Hannah Clifton, of Salem, having the year previous built the beautiful Clifton House as a seashore summer resort, being a pioneer in the adaptation of the coast-lined land of Marblehead as resorts for recuperation of professional and business men from the cares and anxieties incident to city life. This digression from the routine life of the farmer was the cause of many criticisms of doubt expressed by short-sighted and narrow-minded men. But the increased value of the land on the North Shore, and its now world-wide reputation as a place for rest and recuperation have convinced the most incredulous that the work has been that of a well-balanced and far-seeing mind, and the distinguished guests from this and other countries who have sought rest and repose amid the cooling breezes on this rock-ribbed coast gives full endorsement to this statement.

Nor has the enterprise of Mr. Ware been limited to the little spot which he has so beautifully adorned. The grand Atlantic Avenue connecting Swampscott and Marblehead is one of his early conceptions; and its completion was largely the work of his own enterprise. This great ocean boulevard met with violent opposition in its construction from both Swampscott and Marblehead and but for the energy of Mr. Ware and a few others, the great increased valuation caused by its construction would have been long deferred.

The Swampscott Branch of the Eastern Railroad owes its construction and completion largely to his individual work.

Mr. Ware was also a valuable co-operator of John P. Pierce in what seemed, at the time, a most presumptuous scheme,—the making free to the public of the Essex Turnpike. This act was unquestionably the initial step of securing freedom by legislation of our highways and roads of the State.

In matters of public education, he has long been prominent, having served sixteen years on the school committee of Marblehead, and ten years a trustee of the Massachusetts Agricultural College. He has also served as director on the Marblehead Savings Bank and Marblehead Co-operative Bank, president of Marblehead Social Union, president of Marblehead Farmers' Club four years; Master of Salem Grange Nine years; Master of the State Grange of Massachusetts two years; president of the Essex Agricultural Society thirteen years, and a leading member of the State Board of Agriculture.

From the first of his public life he has recognized the necessity and importance of exact knowledge in every department of agricultural industry. With this end in view he was first and foremost by speech and resolution to urge the establishment of an Experiment Station by the commonwealth, and is a prominent member of its Board of Management. The acknowledged usefulness of the station, as now established, is a happy indication of his good judgment.

In his own farm industry he has never feared new methods; patiently watching and learning, he has often proved a leader where at first he appeared to be only a timid and distant follower. The adoption and introduction of the Silo and its successful result in the preparation of ensilage on his own farm, is a remarkable instance of his readiness and ability to adapt himself to new conditions in agriculture.

As a public speaker Mr. Ware has filled an important gap in the wants of the agricultural population. With a rich, full voice, an easy flow of language, an ability to express in a concise and readily understood manner the results of both observation and experience, he is an ever-welcome guest on all public occasions where words of counsel from practical standpoints are needed or desired. As one of the committee of the Massachusetts Ploughman Association he has been prominent by suggestion and speech, in making these well-known public gatherings pre-eminently useful and instructive. He has often presided and led at these gatherings, and his practical talks have had a wide reading as they have been reported phonographically in the *Massachusetts Ploughman*.

Mr. Ware has made many other addresses on agriculture and other subjects which have been reported to a greater or less extent in the daily and weekly papers.

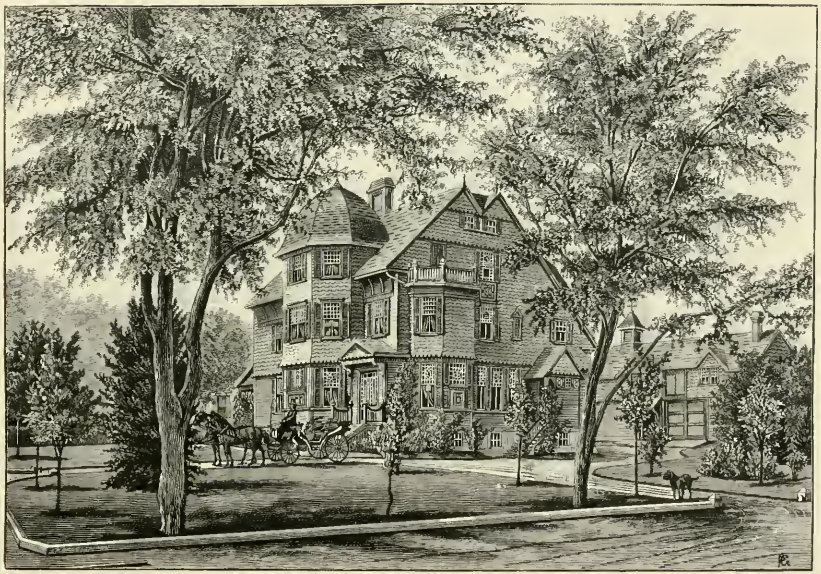
At the age of sixty-five, he is in the prime of life and in full harmony and sympathy with every developing feature of science and art which has to do with the welfare of mankind and the prosperity and building-up of men and communities.

JACOB M. CROPLEY.

Jacob M. Cropley was born at Mt. Handly, Annapolis County, Nova Scotia, July 4, 1845. He remained there until he was twenty years of age. He then, in 1866, came to Massachusetts, and six years later, in 1872, commenced shoe manufacturing in Marblehead. This factory was burned in 1877 in the disastrous fire which swept the business portion of Marblehead. He commenced manufacturing again, and in 1882 formed a co-partnership with his younger brother, William W. Cropley, under the firm name of Jacob M. Cropley & Brother. A factory in which they were interested at Wolfboro', N. H., was burned August 9, 1887. It was soon after rebuilt, and is now



M. Crapsey



"BELLAIR."

RESIDENCE OF JACOB M. CROPLEY,

MARBLEHEAD, MASS.



Yours truly, Martin



Francis Boardman

the largest in the State. At the two factories in Wolfboro' and Marblehead, about seven hundred operatives are employed, and the business of the firm, which has steadily increased since first established by Mr. Jacob M. Cropley, is now one of the largest in its line in the country.

Although a young man, Mr. Cropley already occupies a prominent position among the leading shoe manufacturers of New England. He is a clear-headed, practical, thoroughgoing business man. He is alive to the demands of his business, energetic in a marked degree, and with an indomitable will that commands success. Mr. Cropley is open-hearted and benevolent, and all measures tending to advance the general welfare of his adopted town find in him an earnest advocate.

In May, 1872, Mr. Cropley united in marriage with Sarah D. Lyle, of Marblehead, and their family consists of five sons, viz.: Eugene L., Jacob H., Walter L., Sydney M. and Ralph E.

KNOTT V. MARTIN.

Knott V. Martin was born in Marblehead July 11, 1820. His early education was received at the public schools of his native town. At the age of thirteen years he left school and learned the trade of shoemaking, at which he worked until his twenty-seventh year, when he was forced to abandon it on account of ill health. An out-of-door occupation of some kind being necessary for his recovery, he engaged in business as a butcher. A taste of military life led him while still a boy to join the Marblehead Light Infantry, as a member of which he became so proficient that he was rapidly promoted from one position to another, until on the 6th of October, 1852, he was commissioned as its captain. Under his command the company soon reached a high standard of excellence, and was recognized throughout the State as one of the best disciplined organizations in the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia.

It was while he was in command of this company that the Civil War broke out. Fort Sumter had been fired upon, and President Lincoln issued his famous call for troops to march to the defense of the National Capital. Late in the afternoon of April 15, 1861, Lieutenant-Colonel Hinks, of the Eighth Regiment, arrived in Marblehead, and notified the commanding officers of the three companies of that regiment located in that town to have their commands in readiness to take the first train for Boston on the following morning.

He found Captain Martin in his slaughter-house, with the carcass of a hog just killed and in readiness for the "scald." The captain was advised to have the bells of the town rung and to obtain as many recruits as possible. Taking his coat from a peg, he seemed for a moment to hesitate about leaving his work unfinished, and then, with the emphatic exclamation, "D—n the hog!" put the garment on, with his arms yet stained with blood, and his shirt sleeves half-rolled down, left the premises to rally his company. The patriotic impulse which inspired the words of the gallant captain was but a reflex of that which animated the men of the three Marblehead companies. The readiness with which they sprang to arms has been told again and again in the history of the opening days of the Rebellion. Leaving Marblehead on the early morning train, they had the great distinction of being the first companies to reach Boston in response to the orders of Governor Andrew, and Captain Martin, with his sword-hilt, was knocking at the door of Faneuil Hall before it was opened for their reception. At the close of the first three months' campaign Captain Martin returned with his company to Marblehead, having been mustered out of the service, and immediately recruited Company B, Twenty-Third Regiment, which left Massachusetts for the seat of war November 11, 1861. While in command of this company he participated in the battles of Roanoke Island, Newbern, Kinston, Whitehall and Goldsborough, in North Carolina. In May, 1863, he resigned his commission. On the 24th of February, 1864, he re-enlisted in Fifty-eighth Massachusetts Regiment, but was transferred to the Fifty-ninth Regiment, in which he went to the front as acting first sergeant of Company I. In June of the same year he was again transferred; this time to Company K of the same regiment, being warranted as first sergeant. While a member of this regiment he took part in the battles of the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, North Anna River, Cold Harbor and Petersburg, Va. In the battle before Petersburg, July 27, 1864, he was wounded by a spent ball, by which he became permanently disabled, losing eight inches from the main bone of the right leg.

Immediately after the close of the war Captain Martin was elected a member of the Massachusetts House of Representatives, serving the people of his district in that capacity during the years 1866 and 1867. He was then appointed messenger to the House of Representatives, a position which he held for two years.

In May, 1869, he was appointed postmaster of the Marblehead post-office, retaining his place by successive reappointments until May 16, 1885, when he resigned and engaged in the business of raising poultry for the market. On the 14th of November, 1858, Captain Martin was united in marriage to Miss Mary P. Thompson, of Marblehead. His last connection with the military, as a member of which he had spent so large a portion of his lifetime, was during a period from June, 1866 to January, 1868, when he had command of the Marblehead Sutton Light Infantry.

FRANCIS BOARDMAN.

Francis Boardman was born in Marblehead, April 28, 1826, and was educated in the public schools and by private tuition. He came of patriotic stock, his father, Thomas Boardman, and his grandfather, Abel Boardman, having served in the militia during the War of 1812, while his maternal grandfather, Samuel Giles, was one of the many heroic privateersmen for whom the town of Marblehead was noted in the second great contest between the United States and Great Britain. After receiving as much instruction as was then thought necessary for a boy in his walk of life, he went to work with his father as a baker. Becoming a member of the Marblehead Light Infantry while yet a minor, he took an active interest in everything pertaining to the militia, and in 1852 was largely instrumental in recruiting and organizing the company formerly known as the Glover

Light Guards, of which he became second lieutenant. In 1857 he was commissioned captain of this company, and was in command when the War of the Rebellion broke out, becoming distinguished as one of the two Marblehead captains whose companies were first to reach Boston on the 19th of April, 1861, in response to President Lincoln's call for troops. On his return from the first three months' campaign he rendered valuable service to the government in recruiting volunteers for the army, and was for several months the commanding officer in charge of the recruiting camp at Readville, Mass. Offering himself for duty in one of the regiments about to leave Massachusetts for the front, he was three times promised a command, only to be deprived of it by partisan intrigue. Then, resigning his commission, he went to New York and Philadelphia, engaging in business in both cities for a time; finally going to Baltimore, where he kept a hotel for several years. After an absence of twelve years he returned to Marblehead, and resumed his former occupation as a baker. In the winter of 1886 Captain Boardman received a very complimentary vote from the Democrats of the Massachusetts Legislature for sergeant-at-arms of that body. At the annual State election of the same year he was elected by the people of Marblehead as their representative in the General Court, serving during the session of 1887 so acceptably that on his renomination for the office he was re-elected by a largely increased majority. He is now serving his second term as a member of the Massachusetts House of Representatives.

On the 19th of December, 1847, Captain Boardman was united in marriage to Miss Susanna G. Harris, of Marblehead.

CHAPTER XCI.

ROWLEY.

BY GEO. H. BLODGETTE, M. A.

The town of Rowley, Mass., was founded in 1639, by the Reverend Ezekiel Rogers and his company. The original grant was from Ipswich on the south to Newbury on the north, and from the ocean on the east to the Merrimack river on the west.

Mr. Ezekiel Rogers was the son of the Rev. Richard Rogers, a distinguished Puritan, of Weathersfield, Essex county, England, was bred at Cambridge, where, in 1604, he was of Corpus Christi, when he was graduated as a Bachelor of Arts, and of Christ's College, in 1608, when graduated as Master of Arts.

After leaving the University he became chaplain in the family of Sir Francis Barrington, of Essex, exercising himself in ministerial duties for about a dozen years.

He then was called to a public charge, at Rowley, in Yorkshire, where he continued with great favor for about seventeen years, when he was compelled to relinquish his charge, as he tells the story in his will, "for refusing to read that unreasonable book that allowed sports on Lord's days." Sabbath, or Lord's day, I was accounted, and by diverse other sad signs of the times, driven with many of my hearers, into New England."

The landing was made at Salem, Mass., in the autumn of 1638, and the new town founded in April, 1639—the act of incorporation reading as follows:

"The 4th Day of the 7th Month (September) 1639, Mr. Ezechi: Rogers' plantation shalbee called Rowley."

Mr. Rogers was a man of great note in England for his piety and ability; while the members of the company he brought with him to Rowley, were called, by Gov. Winthrop, "Godly men, and most of them of good estate."

In the tract set off to Rogers' Company several farms had been laid out; these were purchased by the company for £800. The purchase money was contributed by such as were able to pay, and in the laying out of house lots, all who paid nothing were given one acre and one half, while those who paid were given lots in proportion to the amount they contributed. The distinction became more apparent when the rule of the assignment of rights—called "gates"—in the commons is known.

One and one-half acre house-lot was entitled to one and one-half gates.

A two acre lot to four and one-half gates.

A three acre lot to thirteen and one-half gates.

A four acre lot to twenty-two and one-half gates.

A six acre lot to forty-five gates.

The time of laying out the several house-lots is unknown. On the 10th of Eleventh Month, 1643, Mr. Thomas Nelson, Mr. Edward Carlton, Humphrey Reyner and Francis Parrat, appointed by the town for that purpose, made a survey of the town and registered the lots to all the inhabitants as granted and laid out. The names of the fifty-nine persons to whom house-lots were registered in this survey, together with a brief account of each, is here given,

1. George Abbott, two acres. No further mention of him is found of record. The will of his son Thomas, dated 5th of Seventh Month, 1659, and a deed recorded with the Essex Deeds 1 Ipswich, 625, show four sons old enough to have been brought with him in 1639.

2. William Acy, two acres. Had wife Margaret and four children all brought with him 1639. His death is not of record. He made his will 22d of April, 1689, "being very aged;" it was proved 30th of September, 1690. (Essex Probate).

3. Thomas Barker, four acres. Freeman, 13th of May, 1640. Had wife Mary, no children. He was buried 30th of Nov., 1650. His will was proved 25th of First Month, 1651.

4. James Barker, one acre and one-half. Freeman, 7th of October, 1640. Had eight children. Buried 7th of September, 1678. His will, dated 3d of Seventh Month, 1678, proved 24th of September, 1678, mentions himself as "born at Stragewell, in Low Suffolk, in old England." (Essex Probate).

5. William Bellingham, four acres. No mention of wife or children. Freeman, 12th of October, 1640. His will was proved 24th of Seventh Month, 1650. Death not of record. He was brother of Gov. Richard Bellingham.

6. Matthew Boyes, two acres. Freeman 22d May, 1639. He was deacon of our church December 3, 1639. Had wife Elizabeth; ten children born here. He went back to England, and in 1661 was of Leeds, and about fifty-two years old.

7. William Boynton, one acre and one half. Was about fifty-six years old in 1652. Had wife Elizabeth and seven children. Died December 8, 1686.

8. John Boynton, one acre and one half. Was brother of William above. About forty-eight years old in 1662. Had wife Ellen (or Ellenor) and seven children. Buried February 18, 1670–1. His will was dated February 8, 1670, and proved March 28, 1671.

9. Edmund Bridges, one acre and one half. Was a blacksmith. Sold out and moved to Ipswich in 1644. Had wife Alice. One child born here.

10. Sebastian Brigham, four acres, was captain of the first military company. Had wife Mary. Returned to England before 1657. Four children born here.

11. Widow Jane Brocklebank, two acres. Brought with her two sons. Buried December 26, 1668.

12. John Burbank, one acre and one half. Death not of record. Will dated April 5, 1681, proved April 10, 1681, mentions himself as being "aged & decreped." Had wife Jemima and five children. Descendant in male line now residing here.

13. Edward Carlton three acres. Had wife Ellen and four children. Returned to England.

14. Hugh Chaplin, one acre and one half. Had wife Elizabeth and four children. Buried 22d of First Month, 1653.

15. Peter Cooper, one acre and one half. Had wife Emma (or Ame) and four children. Buried January 15, 1667–68. Will dated January 3, 1667–68, proved March 31, 1668.

16. Widow Constance Crosby, one acre and one half. She was buried January 25, 1683–84. Four children.

17. Thomas Dickinson, one acre and one half. Had wife Jennet and six children. Buried 29th of First Month, 1662. Will dated March 8, 1661–62, proved April 17, 1662. Descendant in male line now here.

18. John Dresser, one acre and one half. Had wife Mary and six children. Buried April 19, 1672. Will dated March 5, 1671–72. Descendants in male line now here.

19. Thomas Elithorp, one acre and one half. Had wife Abigail and four children. Death not of record. His widow petitioned the General Court for probate of his will May 14, 1654.

20. Widow Jane Grant, one acre and one half. Death not of record. In the settlement of the estate of her son an affidavit was filed in Essex Probate containing so much of history of the family, that it is copied in full as follows: "I Sam[ll] Stickney S[r] of Bradford do testify & say That I came over from England to New England in the same ship w[th] Thomas Grant & Jane Grant his Wife, who brought over w[th] them Foure Children, by name John, Hannah, Frances, & Ann, whom I was well acquainted with, & next or near neighbours unto in Rowley. And y[e] said John being deceased, I do affirm that the Sisters of John Grant above named, now by marriage known by y[e] names of Hannah Browne, Frances Keyes, & Ann Emerson are y[e] same y[t] came over w[th] their Father & Mother, & by them owned w[th] said John for their children" Sworn to July 20, 1698.

21. John Harris, two acres. Freeman May 26, 1647. Brought with him wife Bridget. Had six children. Died "aged" February 15, 1694–95. Will dated January 8, 1691–92, proved March 27, 1695.

22. Thomas Harris, two acres. Moved to Ipswich with his wife Martha 1644.

23. William Harris, two acres. Had wife Edee or Edith. One child born here. Moved to Middletown, Conn., about 1652.

24. Robert Haseltine, two acres. Freeman May 13, 1640. Married 23d of Tenth Month, 1639, Anna ——, being the first couple married here. One of the three first settlers of Bradford, where he died August 27, 1674. Will dated October 25, 1673; proved September 29, 1674. Ten children.

25. John Haseltine, two acres. Brother of Robert above. Had wife Jane and four children. One of the three first settlers of Bradford. Died in Haverhill, December 23, 1690, aged about 70 years. Will dated August 17, 1689; proved March 31, 1691.

26. Michael Hopkinson, one acre and one half. Was admitted to the First Church in Boston 6th of Eleventh Month, 1638; dismissed to "y[e] gathering of a church at Rowley," 24th of Ninth Month, 1639; freeman May 13, 1640. Had wife Ann and five children. Buried February 28, 1648–49.

27. Robert Hunter, two acres. Freeman October 7, 1640. Had wife Mary; no children. Buried 5th of Sixth Month, 1647. Will dated 5th of Sixth Month, 1647. (Essex Deeds, 1 Ipswich, 87.)

28. William Jackson, one acre and one half. Had wife Joan and four children. Buried May 5, 1688.

29. John Jarrat, two acres. Freeman May 13, 1640. Had wife Susannah and one child. Buried 11th of Twelfth Month, 1647. Will dated 11th of Eleventh Month, 1647; proved 27th of Seventh Month, 1648.

30. Maximilian Jewett, two acres. Son of Edward and Mary (Taylor) Jewett, of Bradford, England. Baptized in Bradford, England, October 4, 1607. Freeman May 13, 1640; very early a deacon of the church. Had wife Ann and nine children. Died October 19, 1684. Will dated 17th of Eighth Month, 1684; proved 25th of Ninth Month, 1684. Is on file in office of Clerk of Courts, Salem, Vol. XLIII, page 46.

31. Joseph Jewett, two acres. Brother of Maximilian above and baptized in Bradford, England, December 31, 1609. Freeman May 22, 1639. Brought with him wife Mary Mallinson, whom he married in

Bradford, England, October 1, 1634. Had nine children. Buried February 26, 1660–61. Will dated February 15, 1660; proved March 26, 1661, and on file in Essex Probate.

32. George Kilbourne, one acre and one half. Freeman May 13, 1640. He was a son of Thomas and baptized at Wood Ditton, County Cambridge, England, February 12, 1612. Had wife Elizabeth and six children. Died October 14, 1685.

33. Francis Lambert, two acres. Freeman May 13, 1640. Had wife Jane and six children. Buried September 23, 1647. Will dated September 20, 1647; proved 28th of First Month, 1648. Descendants in male line now living here.

34. Thomas Leaver, one acre and one half; "linen weaver." Married September 1, 1643, Mary Bradley. Had four children. Died December 26, and was buried December 27, 1683. No will.

35. Thomas Lilforth, one acre and one half. Moved to Haverhill before 1649. On Haverhill records he is called "Linforth."

35. Thomas Mighill, three acres. Was first of Roxbury, probably in 1637, thence to Rowley, where he was ordained deacon December 3, 1639, of the church then formed. Freeman May 13, 1640. He brought with him wife Ellen, who was buried July 12, 1649, and the first person buried here. He married second, Ann Parrat, sister of Francis Parrat. The date of his burial, of record, is 14th of Fifth Month, 1654, but as the inventory of his estate was taken June 24, 1654, doubtless the true date of burial is 14th of Fourth Month, 1654. Will dated June 11, 1654; proved 27th of First Month, 1655. Nine children. Descendants in male line now in Rowley.

36. John Miller, two acres. Was a minister and assistant to the Rev. Mr. Rogers, and first town clerk. Freeman May 22, 1639. Had wife Lydia and one child of record here. Moved to Yarmouth 1641, thence to Groton, where he died June 12, 1663.

37. Thomas Miller, one acre and one half. Was licensed to draw wine 1647, paying fifteen shillings annually. In 1651 he was of Rowley, with wife Isabel, and was then a carpenter. Soon removed to Middletown, Conn.

38. Thomas Nelson, six acres. Freeman May 23, 1639. The wealthiest of Rogers' Company. He married here a second wife, Jane Dummer. Brought with him two children, second wife had two. Went to England on business and there died August 6, 1648. Will dated December 24, 1645; proved 21st of Tenth Month, 1649. Descendants in male line now in Rowley.

39. John Newmarch, two acres. Was first of Ipswich, thence to Boston, soon returned.

40. Thomas Palmer, one acre and one half. Had wife Ann and three children. Death not of record. Will dated August 2, 1669; proved September 28, 1669.

41. Francis Parrat, two acres. Freeman May 13, 1640. Had wife Elizabeth and seven children. Was town clerk and deacon of the church. Went to England on business and there died in 1656. His will, dated November 18, 1655, proved September 30, 1656, mentions himself as "intending to take a journey to England."

42. John Remington, two acres. Freeman 22d of Third month, 1639. He was first of Newbury. Lieut. of the military company. Brought his wife, Elizabeth; had five children born here; sold out and left town in June, 1659.

43. Humphrey Reyner, three acres. Was "Ruling Elder" of the church from its formation and the only elder of record. He was born at Gildersome, in West Riding of Yorkshire, near Leeds. Brought with him wife Mary and three daughters. Buried 14 Sept. 1660. Will dated Sept. 10, 1660.

44. Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, six acres. He was the founder and first minister of Rowley.

45. Henry Sandys (called Sands in town record), two acres. Was dismissed from the first church in Boston "to ye gathering of a church at Rowley" 24th of Ninth Month, 1639; freeman October 7, 1640. Brought with him wife Sybil; had two children born here. Returned to Boston before 1647.

46. Edward Sawyer, one acre and one-half. Had wife, Mary, and four children. Buried March 9, 1673–74. His nuncupative will was sworn to March 31, 1674.

47. William Scales, one acre and one-half. Freeman May 13, 1640. Had wife, Ann, and two (perhaps three) children. Buried July 10, 1682.

48. Widow Margery Shove, two acres. She was the mother of the Rev. George Shove, who was ordained and settled at Taunton November 16, 1665.

She sold her lot to Elder Reyner before 1661. I have heard a traditional story that her husband was a minister and intended assistant to the Rev. Mr. Rogers; that he died on the voyage from England, and Mr. John Miller was employed in his stead.

49. Hugh Smith, one acre and one half. Freeman 18th of Third Month, 1642. Brought with him wife, Mary, and had six children. Death not of record. Will dated 19th of Ninth month, 1655, proved 26th of First month, 1656.

50. John Spofford, one acre and one-half. Full genealogy in Historic Gen. Register, vol. viii., page 335.

51. Margaret Stanton, one acre, and the only lot of less than one acre and one-half laid out. No further mention of her found save this entry in the town record, "Anno 1646, Margaret Stanton, buryed the Second Moneth, the 15th day."

52. William Stickney, one acre and one-half. See "The Stickney Family, a Genealogical Memoir of the descendants of William and Elizabeth Stickney, from 1637 to 1869. By Matthew Adams Stickney, Salem, Mass., 1869."

53. Thomas Sumner, one acre and one-half. The

only further mention of him found is a petition and inventory on file in the office of the clerk of courts for Essex as follows:

"Petition of Robert Coates, Sr., of Lynn, and Jane Coates, his wife and daughter of George Sumner, who died by Small-Pox some forty years since, in Rowley, for administration of estate of Thomas Sumner, her brother, who married and died without issue; his wife is also dead, she having married twice, and said Jane is only heir living, she being about ten years old when her father died. To the Court to be held 1st Tuesday November, 1691.

"Inventory of above estate amounting to £106, returned by Robert Coates, administrator, 3 November, 1691. ('Historical Collections,' Essex Institute, Vol. V., page 141)."

54. Richard Swan, two acres. Was admitted to the first church in Boston, 6th of Eleventh Month, 1638; dismissed to "y^e^ gathering of a church at Rowley, 24th of Ninth Month, 1639;" Freeman, May 13, 1640; brought with him wife Ann, and here married Ann, widow of John Trumble; had eight children; buried May 14, 1678; will dated April 25, 1678, proved May 23, 1678.

55. Thomas Tenney, one acre and one-half. Brought with him wife Ann; had six children; died in Bradford, February 20, 1699-1700. Descendants in male line now in Rowley.

56. Richard Thorley (now Thurlow), two acres. Sold out, and in 1651 was of Newbury with wife Jane.

57. John Trumble, one acre and one-half. Freeman, 13th of Third Month, 1640; brought with him wife Ellen; he married, second, Sixth Month, 1650, Ann, widow of Michael Hopkinson; he had seven children, and was buried 18th of Fifth Month, 1657; his family received pay from the town for his "keeping of a scoolle."

58. Richard Wicom, one acre and one-half. Had wife Ann and three children; buried January 27, 1663-64; no will.

59. William Wild, one acre and one-half. He was first of Ipswich, and again of Ipswich in 1661, and probably earlier.

In 1640 Mr. Thomas Nelson had erected a saw-mill where Glen Mills now are, and soon after, certainly as early as 1643, he added a grist-mill.

John Pearson came about this time with quite a company, and erected, near Mr. Nelson's grist-mill, a fulling-mill, the first in this country.

Many of the first settlers were weavers. Johnson, in his "Wonder-Working Providence" (London, 1654) says of the Rowley people:

"These people being industrious every way, soon built many houses, to the number of about three-score families, and were the first that set upon making Cloth in this Western World; for which end they built a fulling mill, and caused their little-ones to be very diligent in spinning cotton-wool, many of them having been clothiers in England."

Gov. Winthrop, under date of 12th of Fourth month, 1643, says: "Our supplies from England failing much men began to look about them, and fell to a manufacture of cotton; whereof, we had a store from Barbadoes, and of hemp and flax; wherein Rowley, to their great commendation, exceeded all other towns."

Before 1660 other families appear of record as residents—some had come with Mr. Rogers as minors, others to work about the mills. Few of them were given rights in the commonage.

The following are all the new comers who appear to have actually resided here before 1660.

1. James Bailey, 1644; had wife Lydia and eight children; was fifty-one years old 1663; buried August 10, 1677; will dated August 8, 1677, proved September 25, 1677. Descendants in male line now resident in Rowley.

2. Richard Bailey, 1644; brother of James above. See "Historical and Genealogical Researches" by Alfred Poore, also "Reminiscences of a Nonagenarian" by Sarah A. Emery, page 139, and "Northend Family," Historical Collections of Essex Institute, Vol. XII.

3. Samuel Bellingham, son of Governor Richard Bellingham, of Boston, and nephew of William Bellingham (above). Had wife, Lucy. Moved away July 23, 1650.

4. Rev. John Brock, Harvard College, 1646; was assistant to Mr. Rogers from 1648 to 1650.

5. Charles Browne, 1647; had wife, Mary, daughter of William Acy, and nine children. Buried December 16, 1687. Will recorded with Essex Deeds, 5 Ipswich, 303.

6. Thomas Burkby (now Burpee), 1651; had six children. Died June 1, 1701.

7. Richard Clark married here, Sixth Month, 1643, Alice ————; the second couple married in town. Had five children. Death not of record. Will dated February 7, 1673-74, proved March 31, 1674.

8. Tobia Colman, 1653, then a minor, was a son of Thomas Colman, of Newbury. Removed to Newbury about 1673.

9. Isaac Coussins, 1644, blacksmith. He bought the rights of Edmund Bridges, and 30th of First Month, 1652, sold the same to John Pickard and removed to Haverhill.

10. Margaret Crosse, "a widdowe," admitted to the First Church in Boston 6th of Eleventh Month, 1638; mentioned 5th of Sixth Month, 1647, in the will of Robert Hunter as of our church; also mentioned 1650 in the will of William Bellingham. No other mention of her is found. Perhaps she married John Palmer.

11. Thomas Crosby, 30th of Second Month, 1656. Had wife, Jane. Came from Cambridge, Mass. He was buried May 6, 1661.

12. Jeremiah Ellsworth, 1657; had three children. Died May 6, 1704. Descendants in male line are now residents here.

13. Leonard Harriman, 1650; had wife, Margaret, and five children. Died May 6, 1691. Will proved September 29, 1691.

14. Daniel Harris, 1651, wheelwright; had wife, Mary, and one child. Moved to Middletown, Conn., in 1652.

15. Edward Hazen (see full genealogy in "Historic Gen. Register," Vol. 33, page 229).

16. Andrew Hidden, 1654, was about forty years old in 1662; had wife, Sarah, and twelve children. Died February 18, 1702 (Town Record); February 20, 1701-02, "an old man" (Church Record). Will dated February 18, 1701-02; proved April 1, 1702.

17. John Hill, 1640. "At a Towne Meetting held twenty third of the second moneth 1651 It was granted by Towne that the parcel of ground which was Given vnto John hill vpon Condition of his abideing in the towne and doeing service thering he being now removed from the towne should be henceforth Thomas burkbees he satisfiieing John hill for the cost of fence and Agreeing with the select men for the ground" Town Record Book No. 1, page 154).

18. William Hobson, 1652, was son of Henry and from Yorkshire, England; married 12th of Ninth Month, 1752, Ann, daughter of Elder Humphrey Reyner. Had three children. Buried July 17, 1659. Descendants in male line are now residents here.

19. Richard Holmes, 1644, millwright, was eighty-eight years old March, 1692. Had wife, Alice, and eight children. Death not of record. Will dated July 15, 1695; proved January 13, 1695-96.

20. Nicholas Jackson, 1645; had four children. Died February 13, 1697-98. Descendants in male line now live here.

21. Robert Johnson, Jr., 1649, son of Robert Johnson, who came with Mr. Rogers, but settled in New Haven, Conn. Death not of record. Will dated 18th of Seventh Month, 1649; proved 26th of First Month, 1650. Legacy to poor in the church.

22. John Johnson, 1650, brother of Robert Johnson, Sr., mentioned above; came with Rogers' company, but first sat down at New Haven. Had wife, Hannah, and five children; was captain of the military company. Died January 29, 1685-86. No will.

23. Henry Kingsbury was of Ipswich, 1648, of Rowley 1650 and '63, and of Haverhill 1668.

24. Abel Langley, 1647; had three children, all by his third wife. In a deed dated October 7, 1693, beginning "Joseph Quilter of Ipswich. . . . in behalfe of his cousin Abell Langley who dwells with him, son of Abel Langley of Rowley, deceased." Quilter is called executor of the will of Abel Langley, deceased. I find no record of the will or death of Abel Langley.

25. William Law, 1645; had eight children. Buried March 9, 1668.

26. Roger Leighton, 1650; had wife Mary and five children, buried June 2, 1682; will dated May 27, proved September 26, 1682.

27. Richard Longhorne, 1647; was about forty-five years old, 1662; had wife Mary and nine children. He was in Haverhill while there on business August Twelfth Month, 1668; will dated February 10, 1668-69, proved March 30, 1669.

28. Jeremiah Northend came from Yorkshire, England, with Mr. Rogers' company, then but twelve years old. He returned after a few years, and was buried in Rowley, England, April 14, 1702.

29. Ezekiel Northend (see full genealogy in Historical Collections of Essex Institute, Vol. XII).

30. John Palmer, 1645; married Ruth, daughter of William Acy; and for second wife married Margaret Northend, sister of Ezekiel above. Had six children; he was about seventy years old, 1693, and died "aged" June 17, 1695; will dated August 23, 1693; proved July 1, 1695.

31. John Pearson, 1644; had wife Dorcas and thirteen children; was ordained deacon of our church October 24, 1686, and died December 22, 1693.

32. Rev. Samuel Phillips, 1651; settled colleague with the Rev. Mr. Rogers as second minister of Rowley; had wife Sarah and nine children; died April 22, 1696; will on file in Essex Probate.

33. John Pickard, 1644, "carpenter." His mother, widow Ann Lume, died here March 19, 1661-62. He had wife Jane and eight children; buried September 24, 1683. An abstract of his will is printed in Historical Collections of Essex Institute, Vol. IV, page 20. Descendants in male line now in Rowley.

34. Samuel Platts, 1654; had wife Sarah and six children. I find no record of his death or settlement of his estate. His widow married April 9, 1690.

35. Jonathan Platts, 1655; cousin of Samuel Platts above; had wife Elizabeth and eight children; buried July 18, 1680; will proved September 28, 1680.

36. Mark Prime, 1645; had wife Ann and two children; buried December 21, 1683 (see Essex Probate Book 4 leaf 76 for his will); descendants in male line now live in Rowley.

37. Jachin Reyner, 1651; nephew of Elder Humphrey and son of John, of Plymouth. Had wife Elizabeth and six children; died July 8, 1708; will dated July 1, 1708; proved August 2, 1708.

38. Henry Riley, 1656; was the village blacksmith; died May 24, 1710, "in his eighty-second year" (grave-stone); "not in full communion" (church record); no children; will in Essex Probate, Book 10, leaf 123.

39. Daniel Rouse had in 1652 an estate valued for taxation £19, 10*s.* 0*d.* He soon left town.

40. John Scales, 1650; had wife Susanna and one child; buried January 12, 1683-84; will dated January 9, 1683-84; proved March 27, 1684.

41. Benjamin Scott, 1651. Brought with him his wife Margaret. She was the Widow Margaret Scott who was executed in Salem September 22, 1692, as guilty of certain detestable arts called "Witchcraft and Sorceries." He had nine children; death not of record; will dated June 6, 1671; proved September 26, 1671; inventory taken July 14, 1671.

42. Henry Sewall; a very early settler; the ancestor of three chief justices of our highest court; he was buried the "First Month, 1656."

43. JOHN SMITH, 1649; married Faith Parrat, sister of Francis Parrat; had three children, and was buried 19th of Fifth Month, 1661; will dated July 13, 1661; proved November 14, 1661.

44. HENRY SMITH was taxed here 1652–53, when his estate was valued £15, 3*s.* 4*d.* I find no other mention of him except the inventory of his estate taken 16th of First Month, 1655; personal property amounted to £14, 3*s.* 0*d.*; no real estate.

45. WILLIAM TENNEY, 1645; ordained deacon of our church February 3, 1667–68; had wife Katherine and six children; died August 5, 1685; will dated August 3, 1685.

46. JOHN TILLISON, 1645; had removed to Newbury in 1651.

47. JOHN TODD, 1648; had wife Susannah and ten children; he kept the "Ordinary;" died February 14, 1689–90; will dated February 13, 1689–90; proved March 25, 1690; descendants in male line now in Rowley.

48. THOMAS WOOD, 1654; had wife Ann and eleven children; buried September 12, 1687.

49. JOSEPH WORMWELL, 1642; lived a short time on a parcel of ground belonging to Thomas Nelson; not identified with our people and soon removed; had, while here, wife Miriam and one child; he died in Scituate.

As time advanced, a doubt existed as to the ownership of the several rights apportioned to the house-lots, so that in 1661 the second survey was taken of the commonages and entered of record, a true copy of which, taken from the "Book with Clasps," is as follows:

[Page 83.]

A Survey of the Severall Gates or commonages belonging vnto The Severall Inhabitants of The Towne of Rowley as They are now in possesion haveing beene Transefered and soulde from one to another since the beginning of the said Towne and soe diverted from that first order and stiot that was Then made whereby they were proportioned vnto the Severall Lots acording to the purchase and divission that then was made.

By order and appoiotment of The Towne Taken (By the Selectmen, Richard Swan, Thomas Tenney, Abell Lngley, John Dreser, John Brocklebanke, with Samuell Brocklebanke joyneing with them) vpon the fourth of february, 1661, That there may be a True Record of them according to ther present state they now are in, which is as followeth:

In primis The Towne did Grant and Give vnto Mr. Samuell Phillips vpon The said Towoe Commons, Nine Gates.

There belonged To William Acie, his Lot foure Gates and one halfe; and more That he purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett, Two oxe Gates; purchased of the towne, one gate and one halfe gate.

To James Bayley his lot and halfe a gate purchased of the Towne Two Gates; purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett, of them that belonged to Mr. William Bellingham's lot, Two Gates and a halfe; purchased of Mr. Jewett, as belonging To Mr. Edward Carlton's lot, One Gate; purchased of the Towne, one half a gate.

To Thomas Leaver his lot and halfe one Gate; he purchased of the towne Two Gates; purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett, of Them that belonged to Mr. William Bellingham's lot, one Gate; and of Mr. Jewett's own property, Two Gates; also purchased of Mr. Anthony Crosbie, one Gate.

To John Pallmer as to a halfe Two Acre lot, Two Gates And one quarter; purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett, of Them that belonged to Mr. William Bellingham's lot, Two Gates; purchased of Mr. Sewell, Senior, One Gate; purchased of Danniell Harris, One Gate; And of William Hobson, halfe One Gate; purchased of the towne, one quarter of a gate.

To William Tenney as to his acre and halfe lot and halfe a gate purchased of the town, two gates..... 2 Gates
Purchased of Mr. Edward Carlton that he had of the towne for consideration of money lent..... 1 Gate

William and Thomas Tenney, purchased of Mr. Phillip Nelson..... 2 gates
And of John Harris, one; and of Thomas Crosbie, one..... 2 gates
William purchased of the Towne one gate..... 1 gate

[Page 84.]

To Richard Holmes as belonging to a half two Acre lot, two gates and one quarter; and a quarter purchased of the towne..... 2 and halfe
Purchased of Mr. Edward Carlton, that Mr. Jewett as his Attorney sould halfe one Gate.. ..... One halfe
Purchased of John Jonson, of Richard Thurley's propriety..... 2 gates

To John Jonson left of his two Acre lot that was Richard Thurley's, One Gate and a halfe..... 1 halfe
And as belonging to the lot that was Edward bridges 1 halfe
Purchased of the Towne One Gate..... 1 Gate

To Edward Hassen his halfe two Acre lot that he purchased of John Smith, two gates and one quarter..... 2 one quarter
purchased of John Tod one Gate. ..... 1 Gate
purchased of the town one, and of Thomas Crosbie one..... 2 gates
purchased of Thomas Nelson one, and one that he had of the towne for land laid downe..... 2 gates

To George Kilborne as belonging to his Acre and halfe lot, and halfe a gate purchased of the towne 2
as also one gate he had for land laid down at New plaine..... 1
purchased of Mr. Jewett by exchange of village land..... 2

To Thomas Pallmer as to his Acre and halfe lot and halfe a Gate purchased of the towoe..... 2 Gates
purchased of Mr. Phillip Nelson, one Gate..... 1
purchased of Thomas Nelson, two Gates..... 2

To Richard Longborne as to a halfe two Acre lot purchased of John Newmarch, two Gates and one quarter..... 2 and quar
purchased of Mr. Phillip Nelson, one Gate..... 1
purchased of Samuell Mighill, two Gates..... 2
purchased of The Towne, three quarters of on[e] gate 3 quarters

To Abraham Jewett as purchased of Thomas Nelson, Two Gates..... 2 gates
purchased of the towo, one Gate..... 1 gate

To Thomas Nelson as Reserved to himselfe, Seaven Gates and one quarter..... 7 quarter

[Page 85.]

To John Pickard as belonging to the two Acre lot that was vxor Crosbie's, foure Gates and one halfe 4 halfe
also as to the priviledge belonging to one acre and halfe lot Given by the towne to Isaac Cousins and what the said Isaac purchased of the towne, two gates and one halfe..... 2 halfe

To Richard Clarke as to an acre and halfe lot that he purchased of Thomas Elathrope, one gate and halfe..... 1 halfe
purchased of the towne, one gate and one halfe gate 1 halfe

To William Law as belonging to a halfe two Acre lot that he purchased of John Newmarch, two gates and one quarter..... 2 quarter
purchased of the Towne three quarters of one gate 3 quarters

To John Burbanke as to his Acre and halfe lot and halfe a gate purchased of the towne, two gates... 2 Gates
purchased of Mr. Phillip Nelson, foure Gates..... 4 gates

To [illegible] as belonging to the Acre [illegible] was Jerie Spofford's, and what [illegible] of the town, two Gates..... 2 Gates

[illegible] Northend, three Gates ..... 3 Gates

To Thomas Barklie, as purchased of Mr Joseph Jewett three Gates ..... 3 Gates

To Ezekiell Northend as belonging to a halfe two Acre lot purchased of Thomas harris, and a halfe two Acre lot purchased of John harris, foure and a halfe, purchased of Francis parrat, one gate; purchased of Mr. Anthony Crosbie, foure and a halfe, purchased of Dannell harris, one gate; purchased of william hobson, one gate; purchased of Thomas Nelson, one; purchased of Mr. Phillip Nelson, one, and purchased of Thomas Miller, three, two of which three the said miller purchased of Mr Jewett, all these seaventeene gate appeared under hand and seale, of from which the said Ezekiell hath sould to severall men, soe that ther is left Remaining vnto himselfe Eleven Gates. ..... 11 Gates

[Page 86.]

To Andrew Hilden as by land lande downe by way of exchainge the which land was given by the towne vnto the said Andrew, one gate; purchased the gate of Dannell Rouse..... 2 Gates

To Thomas Dickenson as belonging to a two acre lot, foure gates and one halfe ..... 4 halfe
purchased of william hobson, two Gates..... 2
purchased of Mr Phillip Nelson, one gate 1

To Charles Browne as to an acre and halfe lot and given by the towne to be at rest to beate the [illegible] for the benefit of the towne, two Gates..... 2 gates
purchased of the Towne one Gate..... 1 gate

To Peter Highill as Remaineing to her of a three Acre lot, nine Gates and one halfe..... 9 halfe

To Peter Smith as to a two Acre lot that was purchased of Mr John Miller, foure Gates and one half ..... 4 halfe
purchased of Mr Jewett, one Gate and a halfe ..... 1 halfe

To John Trumble, one gate that was given to his father in Reference to keeping of a scoolle..... 1 gate
purchased of the Towne, one gate..... 1 gate

To Abel Dungley as to a two Acre lot given him by Robert Hunter, foure Gates and one halfe..... 4 halfe
purchased of Mr Jewett, one Gate and a halfe ..... 1 halfe

To Nicholas Jackson as given by the towne, one gate, and two gate that he had by his wife William Hudsons daughter that were purchased of Thomas Miller A [illegible] halfe lot..... 3 gates
purchased of the Towne two gates..... 2 Gates

To Thomas Terry as to an acre and halfe lot and [illegible] given by the towne, two and a halfe..... 2 halfe
purchased of Francis parrat, one gate..... 1 gate
purchased of the towne, one halfe gate..... halfe gate

Page 87.

To [illegible] Terry as Francis parrat, as belonging to [illegible] two Acre lot, seaven gates [illegible] ..... 7 Gates
purchased of [illegible] hobson, Six gates..... 6 gates

To [illegible] as belonging to the Acre and halfe lot and [illegible] two gates..... 2 Gates
purchased of Mr [illegible] Jewett, one gate..... 1 Gate
purchased of the Towne one Gate..... 1 Gate

To [illegible] as belonging to [illegible] Northend, Jewett [illegible] the gates [illegible] was
Mr William [illegible] the gates..... 2 gates
purchased of [illegible] ..... 1 Gate

To [illegible] as belonging to the towne two gates 2 gates
purchased of Mr Anthony Crosbie, two gates..... 2 gates

To John Grant as Given by the Towne to his mother Jane Grant, one Gate..... 1 Gate
purchased of The Town, one Gate..... 1 Gate

To Edward Sawyer as Given by the Towne, one Gate 1 Gate
purchased of The Towne, two Gates..... 2 Gates

To Richard Swan as belonging to his two Acre lote foure gates and one halfe gate..... 4 halfe
and as by purchase of one acre and halfe lot of Thomas Lilforth, one gate and one halfe gate..... 1 and halfe
purchased of Mr. Thomas Nelson one gate, given the said Mr Nelson by the towne for forbearance of money lent for the use of the towne..... 1 Gate
and as by privelidge of marriage belonging to one acre and halfe lot and halfe a gate purchased of the towne that were John Trumble's 2 gates, as also one Gate more the said John Trumble purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewet..... 3 Gates
also as to the halfe two Acre lot that was micaell Hobkinson's, two Gates and three quarters..... 2 and 3 quarters

[Page 88.]

To John Tod as to one halfe two Acre lot that he purchased of William Harris Reserved vnsould one gate and one quarter of a gate..... 1 and quarter
and for land purchased of Mr. Carlton and exchanged with the towne for one gate..... 1 gate
purchased of the towne one Gate and three quarters of a gate..... 1–3 quarters

To Maxemillion Jewett as to his two Acre lot, foure Gates and one halfe gate..... 4 one halfe
purchased of Mr. Phillip Nelson, one gate..... 1 Gate
purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett, halfe one gate..... halfe one gate
purchased of william hobson and assured by his wife as administrator, one gate..... 1 Gate

To James Barker as to his Acre and halfe lot and halfe one gate purchased of the towne, two gates 2 gates
purchased of william wild as to his acre and halfe lot, two gates..... 2 gates
purchased of Danniell Harris, two gates..... 2 gates
and by exchainge of land with the towne, one gate 1 gate

To John Pearson as purchased of the towne, one gate..... 1 gate
purchased of Thomas wood, two Gates ..... 2 gates
purchased of Thomas Crosbie that belonged to John Heseltine's lot, two Gates..... 2 gates
also purchased and injoyed by leafe from Mr. Richard Dumer, of Mr. Thomas Nelson's propriety belonging to Mr. Nelson's Childeren in England, Mr. Dumer being exeqtor, foure Gates..... 4 Gates

To John Mighill as purchased of Ezekiell Northend one gate; purchased of Mr. Jewett one Gate; purchased of Thomas Nelson one gate..... 3 Gates

To Dorrity Chapman as belonging to the halfe of a two acre lot was Gorge Abbots, being the right of her former husband, Thomas Abbot, deceased, belonging to his property in the north east field two gates and one quarter of a gate..... 2 gates one quarter
and one gate that the said Thomas purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett..... 1 Gate

[Page 89.]

To William Stickney as to his Acre and halfe lot and one halfe gate purchased of the towne two gates..... 2 gates
and as by gift from the towne one gate..... 1 gate
and more purchased of the towne, three gates..... 3 gates

To John Scalles as belonging to the two Acre lot that was John Jarrats, his by right of marriage, four gates and one halfe gate..... 4 one halfe
and as belonging to his owen Acre and halfe lot and halfe one purchased of the towne, two gattes..... 2 gates
purchased of the Towne, one halfe Gate..... halfe gate

To Mrs. Mary Rogers as belonging to the foure acre lot, that was her former husband's, Thomas Barker, Twenty gates and one halfe gate..... 20 one halfe

To Richard Lighton as by gift from the towne one gate..... 1 gate
purchased of the Towne, one gate..... 1 gate

To John Boiuton as belonging to his acre and halfe lot and halfe one gate purchased of the towne two gates..... 2 gates
purchased of the towne, two Gates..... 2 Gates

To Mr. Phillip Nelson as Reserved vnsould of his part of the proprietie of Mr. Thomas Nelson's lot, his father deceased, eight gates and one quarter of a gate..... 8 gates one quarter

To William Scalles as to his acre and halfe lot and halfe one gate purchased of the towne two gates..... 2 gates
purchased of the Towne, one Gate..... 1 Gate

To Jachin Rainer as belonging to the part of a two Acre lot he purchased of Leiftennant John Remington foure gates..... 4 gates

To Samuell Plats as purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett three gates..... 3 gates
purchased of the Towne, one gate..... 1 Gate

[Pags 90.]

To marke prime as purchased of Mr. Phillip Nelson one gate; purchased of John Jonson belonging to Richard Thurleys lot one gate; purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett of from McCarlton's propriety, he being attturney, three Gates..... 5 gates

To John Dreser as belonging to his Acre and halfe lot and purchased of the towne halfe a gate two gates..... 2 gates
purchass of the towne, two gates..... 2 Gates

To Samuell Brocklebanke as to a two Acre lot was his mother's, foure gates and one halfe gate..... 4 one halfe
as to a two acre lot he purchased of Mathew Boyes Reserved two gates and one halfe gate..... 2 one halfe
purchased of daniell harris one gate..... 1 gate

To John Brocklebanke as purchased of Samuell Brocklebanke, two gates..... 2 gates
purchased of leiftenaant John Remington, two gates..... 2 gates
purchased of The Towne, one gate..... 1 gate

To William Boynton as to his acre and halfe lot and one halfe gate purchased of the towne, two gates..... 2 gates
purchased of The Towne, two Gates..... 2 Gates

To Vxor Hobson as to a three Acre lot of her father's, Mr. humphray Rainers, and to a two Acre lot he purchased of Mrs. Margery Shove eighteene gates..... 18 gates
and as Remaineing vnsould of the right of a foure acre lot that her husband, william hobson, purchased of Captaine Sebastin Brigham, twellve gates..... 12 gates

To moyses Brodstreet purchased of John Pallmer that was of Mr. Nelson's propriety, two gates and one halfe gate..... 2 ao halfe

To Mr. Ezekiell Rogers foure acre lot twenty-two Gates and one halfe gate..... 22 gates one halfe

To Samuell mighill Reserved of them he had of his father's propriety two gates; purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett of the Right of Mr. William Bellingham's lot, two gates..... 4 gates

[Pags 91].

To John Harris as belonging to halfe two Acre lot two gates and one quarter; purchased of Ezekiell Northend that were Mr. Anthony Crosbie's two gates; purchased of Mr. Jewett one gate..... 5 one quarter
purchased of the towne three quarters of one Gate 3 quarters

To Jeremiah Elsworth as belonging to an Acre and halfe lot of hugh smith and halfe a gate purchased of the towne, two gates..... 2 gates
purchased of Mr. Jewett assured by the excequtors two gates..... 2 gates
purchased of Thomas Nelson three gates..... 3 gates

To John Lambert as belonging to a two acre lot and one his father purchased of the towne five and a halfe..... 5 one halfe
purchased of Thomas Barker two gates..... 2 gates
purchased of the towne one halfe Gate..... halfe gate

To petter Couper as belonging to his acre and halfe lot and halfe one gate purchased of the towne two gates..... 2 gates
purchased of Leiftenant John Remington one gate 1 gate
purchased of the towne two Gates..... 2 Gates

To Richard Wickam his acre and halfe lot and one halfe Gate purchased of John Tod..... 2 Gates
and as from The towne for worke done for Mrs. Margery Shove when she was in her illness..... 2

To Jonathan Plats purchased of the Towne two Gates..... 2 Gates
[1] To Daniell Wicom purchased of Thomas Lambert.. 2 Gates
To Danniell Wickam purchased of the Towne two Gates..... 2 Gates
[1] To Daniell Wicom purchased of Thomas Remington..... 2 gates

To Thomas Remington purchased of The Towne two Gates..... 2 Gates

To Samuel Stickney purchased of The Towne two Gates..... 2 Gates

THE FIRST CHURCH.—Soon after the incorporation of the town a church was regularly gathered, and on the 3d of December, 1639, the Rev. EZEKIEL ROGERS was settled as pastor and the formal covenant adopted. Mr. Rogers brought with him his first wife, Sarah, daughter of John Everard, a citizen of London, who died in ten years; he married, second, Joan, a daughter of the Rev. John Wilson; she was buried on the 8th of May, 1649; he married, third, on the 16th of July, 1651, Mary, widow of Thomas Barker; she was buried on the 12th of February, 1678–79.

On the 10th of Third Month, 1643, Mr. Rogers preached the Election Sermon.

On the 5th of Eighth Month, 1647, he preached before the Synod at Cambridge.

In 1651, on the night of his marriage, his dwelling-house was burned, with his goods and the library he brought from England. Soon after, a fall from his horse so injured his right arm that it was ever after useless. Amid all these distressing calamities he held to his Christian fortitude and resignation. His house was rebuilt; his library replenished; his left hand substituted for the right; his ministerial labors were continued. But to him, as to the aged of to-day, the Golden Age is in the past; the wicked flourish like green bay-trees; even the servant-maids are an affliction, as shown by the following letter to his friend, the Rev. Zechariah Symms, of Charlestown:

"6th of the 12th month, 1657.

"DEAR BROTHER,—Though I have now done my errand in the other paper, yet methinks I am not satisfied to leave you so suddenly, so barely. Let us hear from you, I pray you. Doth your ministry go on comfortably? Find you fruit of your labors? Are new converts brought in? Do your children and family grow more godly? I find greatest trouble and grief about the rising generation. Young people are little

[1] Interlined in different hand in original.

[illegible] they strengthen one another in evil, by example, by [illegible] I have with my own family, hard to get a servant [illegible] or family duties. I had a rare blessing of [illegible] and those I brought over were a blessing; but [illegible] the children of the godly, [illegible] affect me. Even the children of the godly, [illegible] where, make a woful proof, so that I tremble to think what will become of this glorious work we have begun, when the ancients [illegible] gathered unto their fathers. I fear grace and blessing will die with them if the Lord do not show some sign of displeasure even in our days. We grow worldly everywhere; methinks I see little godliness, but all in a hurry about the world; every one for himself; little care of public or common good. . . . Oh! that I might see some sign of good to the generations following, to send me away rejoicing! This I could wearily say and myself, and my left hand, but I break off suddenly. O good brother, I thank God, I am near home; and you, too, are not far off. Oh the weight of glory, that is ready waiting for us, O ye poor exiles! We shall sit next the martyrs and confessors. Oh the embraces, when Christ will embrace us. . . .

"Your affectionate brother,

"EZEKIEL ROGERS."

It is said that a traveler, passing through the town, inquired of Mr. Rogers, "Are you, sir, the person who *serves* here?" Promptly came the reply, "I am, sir, the person who *rules* here."

Mr. Rogers died on the 23d of January, and was buried on the 26th of January, 1660–61 (not *June*, as appears on his present monument, erected 1851).

What he was to his people is truthfully shown in the inscription on the first monument erected in Rowley over his remains, which is as follows:

"Sacred to the memory of the Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, first minister of the gospel in Rowley, who emigrated from Britain to this place, with his church and flock, A. D. 1638. He finished his labors and life, January 23, 1660–1, in his seventieth year.

"He was a man of eminent piety, zeal, and abilities.

"His strains of oratory were delightful. Regeneration and union to Jesus Christ by faith were the points on which he principally insisted; these remarkably described the feelings, exercises, motives, and characters of his hearers, that they were ready to exclaim, 'Who hath told him all that we did?' With the youth he took great pains, and was a tree of knowledge, laden with fruit, which the children could reach.

"He bequeathed a part of his lands to the town of Rowley, for the support of the gospel, which generous benefaction, we (in the first parish only to the present day), and here gratefully commemorate, by raising this monument to his memory, A. D. 1805."

The bequest above mentioned appears in his will as follows:

"Item. The rest of my estate in lands that are not given unto my wife during her natural life, that is, the land at planting-hill, the land called Shad-well's ground, and all the rest, be it meadow, fresh or salt, and not upland whatever, and one-third part of gates or commonage, I [illegible] the church and town of Rowley."

A part of this gift still remains to the use of the church.

He also bequeathed to them other lands, as follows:

"Item, I do bequeath and give to my well-beloved wife, Mary Rogers [illegible] corn on half the out-houses, also, my orchard, gardens [illegible] and pasturing adjoining to the orchard on both sides of the house, also, the hop-yard, also the upper house-lot on the other side of the highway, with all the land as I horse pasture adjoining to the same land. I give her also, six acres of arable land, by the house of [illegible] Nathaniel, and my part of the ware-house pasture; also, I give her two cows milk and fresh, so much as my overseers shall judge sufficient for her [illegible] one year with another, thirty loads of hay, [illegible] it, and all this only for her natural life. . . .

"All my houses, both at Rowley and all my lands, pastures and meadows, as I meadows woods, I have given unto my wife, Mary [illegible] after her decease, I do bequeath and give unto the church and town of Rowley, to enable them the better to maintain two teaching elders in the church forever, and upon that condition, I do give them; the time which I allow them for the settling of an elder shall be four years, and so, from time to time, as God makes any changes either by death, or removal, or any other way; and in case that the church and town of Rowley fail of the conditions of providing themselves of two teaching elders, according to the time prefixed, that is, within four years after they have this to enable them the better, and so from time to time, within the said time of four years, after God, by His providence, has made any change, my will is that the above said housing and lands shall be to the use of Harvard College, at Cambridge, in New England."

This condition was broken in 1700 for reasons given by the Rev. Mr. Payson below, and Harvard College took possession and sold the lands.

During Mr. Rogers' ministry Humphrey Reyner was the ruling elder, and the only person who has ever been appointed to the office in this church. The deacons were Thomas Mighill, Matthew Boyes, Maximilian Jewett and Francis Parrat. The Rev. John Miller assisted in the ministry during the first two years, and the Rev. John Brock assisted in 1648–50.

SAMUEL PHILLIPS, second minister, son of the Rev. George, of Watertown, born at Boxted, in Essex, England, 1625, came with his father in the "Arbella," 1630; was graduated at Harvard College, 1650; settled colleague with Mr. Rogers, June, 1651; died April 22, 1696. The many distinguished men in Massachusetts who have for generations made the name of Phillips illustrious are his descendants.

During the ministry of Mr. Phillips, when without a colleague, he was assisted by the Rev. Samuel Brackenbury for two years, and by Mr. Jeremiah Shepard, brother of the Rev. Samuel Shepard, for about three years. Samuel Brocklebank, William Tenney, John Pearson, John Trumble and Ezekiel Jewett were ordained deacons.

SAMUEL SHEPARD, third minister, son of the Rev. Thomas, of Cambridge, born October, 1641; was graduated at Harvard College, 1658; ordained and settled November 15, 1665; married, April 30, 1666, Dorothy, youngest daughter of the Rev. Henry Flint, of Braintree. He died April 7, 1668. He began a "Record of matters in the church of Rowley" with the day of his ordination. This record, the oldest extant, on the death of Mr. Shepard, passed to Mr. Phillips, as he wrote on the title-page "ex dono mei Josiah Flint April 22, 1668." From this record we gain some idea of the state of society in the town at that time; thus, January 8, 1665–66, Robert Swan, a leading citizen of Haverhill, though still a member of this church, is charged with the theft of corn from his neighbor Webster, and also charged by his father, Richard Swan, with "writing a letter full of lies."

October 6, 1667, a member was excommunicated, and the pious Shepard adds: "Afterward pray[r] was made that God would ratify the sentence & let loose Satan on him" (page 17).

December 19, 1667, Jonathan Platts desired his children baptized on his own account, he not being a member of the church nor having owned the cove-

nant; he is described as a man of bold carriage and an uncivil tongue. His request was denied until July, 1668, when he desired that the children should be baptized on account of his wife. She was admitted to full communion and her request granted. Some objected, as she had slandered Faith Parrat in accusing Faith *of being guilty of burning Mr. Rogers' house.* February 4, 1671–72, John Jackson was called upon to acknowledge his sin of breaking the Sabbath "by cutting up a bundle of small olders."

July 2, 1673, (page 44) Thomas Watson was excommunicated for several reasons, among which was this curious agricultural one: "He told Robert Shelato that his wife milkt 7 cows & made 20 pounds of butter a week, whereas she milkt but 3 & made but 6 pounds a week."

In 1678 Mr. Philip Nelson, the first graduate of Harvard College from this town, and a magistrate, "charged Deacon Jewitt, his aged uncle (who hath used the office of a deacon well, above thirty years), for unrighteousness and Rogury; . . . our other Deacon William Tenney he charged him with lying."

During this period members of the church were frequently charged with adultery, "unclean behavior" and drunkenness. That the charges were true we may believe from the usual entry in the register at the end of the case, "he confessed his sin and was restored."

Edward Payson, fourth minister, son of Edward and Mary (Eliot) Payson, of Roxbury, where he was born the 20th and baptized the 28th of June, 1657, was graduated at Harvard College 1677, came here to preach in 1680 and was ordained and settled colleague with Mr. Phillips, October 25, 1682. He married, November 7, 1683, Mr. Phillips' daughter Elizabeth, by whom he had seventeen children, of whom ten survived him. The second meeting-house was built in his time and the date is shown by the following extract from his record: "This was y^e^ last child baptized in the old meeting-house, Which house we left, & went to worship God in our new house Nov. 7, 1697."

From the death of Mr. Phillips, in 1696, Mr. Payson continued as sole minister, and the bequest from Mr. Rogers vested in the college in 1700. Mr. Payson entered in the church register the following statement:

"Transactions about Ma. Rogers' Donation.

"About two years after M^r^ Phillips's decease; The Town had two meetings to try y^e^ Towns mind ab^t^ holding M^r^ Rogers' Donation upon y^e^ Termes expressed in his Will: at neither of which a vote in the affirmative could be obtained. at Their last meeting, y^e^ Town choose a comittee to send to me to know what Sallery I would be willing to take up with, both while alone, & also in case another Minister should be called, by which comittee (viz^t^ Deacon Jewett, Cap^t^ Weicom, Cap^t^ Boynton, Lieu^t^ Dresser, Corn^t^ Pierson) I returned propositions to y^e^ Town on both Articles abovesd. But nothing was acted upon them, & so y^e^ matter lay silent; till y^e^ last winter in y^e^ year 1699 sometime in Octob^r^ 1699 I fell ill, my aile continuing, and seeming to be of a threatning nature; The Town, sometime in Novemb^r^ or Decemb^r^, had a meeting, and obtained a vote for holding y^e^ abovesd Donation upon y^e^ condition that it was given upon, presently upon which, y^e^ church conveend to consid^r^ w^t^ Minister to invite and did pitch upon Mr. Richard Brown of Nubury. At w^ch^ time two Brethren viz^t^ Cap^t^ Bointon and Lieu^t^ Dresser were chosen Messeng^rs^ to send to M^r^ Brown to signifie y^e^ churches Act calling him to y^e^ work of y^e^ Ministry amongst us. About y^e^ latter end of Decemb^r^ y^e^ Lord was pleased to give me liberty to come amongst my people agen, & to exercise y^e^ whole Sabbath, and so continued to do. After some time, some of o^r^ Brethren signifyed to me their desire y^t^ something further might be done as to calling M^r^ Brown amongst us. I told them y^e^ chh had proceeded as farr in y^e^ matter as was convenient, not having as yet acqnainted y^e^ Town with w^t^ had bin done, nor obtained their concurrence w^th^ y^e^ churches choice; therefore I thought y^e^ next step must be to consult y^e^ Town in y^e^ matter. upon which a Town meeting was quickly warned, after y^e^ warning w^r^ off, & before y^e^ time appointed for s^d^ meeting came I received a letter from M^r^ Brown, in which he writes as followeth viz^t^ be pleased s^r^ to understand, y^t^ to come at present I canot; and to tarry longer, as yo^r^ case is circumstanced, would be phaps greatly to yo^r^ detriment, & bec[ause] I would not to yo^r^ damage decsive you, pray s^r^ be pleas^d^ to take it in good part, if I hereby Intreat you not to expect my coming at all. This letter I totally concealed from all psons living, till after y^e^ aboves^d^ meeting was past, that none might any way be Influenced thereby. Att this meeting nothing could be done in y^e^ matter. The Lord having bin pleased to restore my healtb Again, the Generality of y^e^ Town appeared very dull ab^t^ acting anything on my Proposition referring to calling another Minister, so y^e^ meeting issued in words, sed preteria nihil. Some of the Brethren being still unsatisfyed, motioned for another meeting, w^r^upon some of the selectmen came to me, and Informed that some desired another Town-meeting to settle me a Sallery if I continued alone & they would know of me whether I did desire it, my Answ^r^ was, that the time for settling my sallery while I was alone, being lapsed, I did not desire y^t^ y^e^ Town should be conveend meerly on y^t^ account; But if they had anything further to transact in reference to calling another Minister & saving their Living, I would hinde nothing of that, they might warn a meeting as soon as they pleas^d^. The Select men seemed satisfyed, and not Inclinable to warn any meeting on that acc^t^. But the aboves^d^ unsatisfyed Brethren continuing to urge their former motion ab^t^ another Town-meeting: one was at last appointed to Be on, or ab^t^ y^e^ twenty-third day of Feb^ry^. At this meeting my aboves^d^ propositions were brought a foot many appeard as willing to comply with y^e^ first, while I was alone but as to y^e^ latter y^t^ referred to calling another Minister y^e^ most were dull and would not stirr to decide a vote. I had told some of the chief of y^e^ Town before this meeting y^t^ seeing they had not taken up with my propositions, it was now their turn to make proposalls to me; accordingly y^e^ Deacon in The Towns behalfe abated five pounds from my 2d proposition refering to calling another Minister which took off 30 pounds from my Sallery then & so y^e^ proposition was agen put to vote, but with as little success as at first, & so y^e^ meeting ended without doing anythiog at all as to y^e^ holding y^e^ aboves^d^ Donation. So the matter lay till the College officer took possession of the several parcells of Land and meadows which they have improved since. At y^e^ aboves^d^ chh meeting to chuse a Minister, I proposed to make choice of M^r^ Jn^o^ Emmerson because I concluded he would surely come; which had they done they had certainly secured their Donation, if the Town had concur'd, and sallaries had been agreed on; But there was no likelyhood that m^r^ Brown would come, & so it proved.

"I did count it necessary to know before hand, what the Town would do for me in case they saved their donation by calling another Minister; and that for sundry Reasons First We are bound to provide for our own house. 2^ly^ soon After my Settlem^t^ my father Phill: was uneasie about his sallary, and told me y^t^ y^e^ Town was not able to keep two ministers. 3^ly^; I was Informed not long after my Ordination, That a chiefe man then in Town (viz Cap^t^ Phil: Nelson) declared in a Town Meeting, that y^e^ Town could not maintaine two Ministers, proposed to let one of them go. And 4^ly^ I found my own salary very scanty while we were two together. fifty & three pounds in grain was my whole allowance (w^th^ my Wood) by y^e^ year; five of w^ch^ was yearly taken off for Parsonage Lands y^t^ I Improved so I had but forty-eight pounds in Graine p^r^ annum, for sundry years after I had a family. Not long before my father Phill: decease, the Town added seven pounds to my sallary, so made it Sixty in Grain, which in those times was allw[ays] counted a third at least Inferiour to money. finally I was informed when y^e^ aboves^d^ things ab^t^ calling another Minister, were in agitation, that it was said amongst some y^t^ I must take what the Town would give me. I tho't it needfull therefore to know before hand a little about the matter, to prevent uneasiness afterwards. but as is above specified,

[illegible] and be [illegible]. Now let any Indifferent persons Judge how this Donation came to be forfeited, and lapse to y^e^ colledge."

Postscript.

The Reason [illegible] my not retaining Mr Brown's Letter [illegible] mentioned in the above Record was, because the condition of holding s^d^ Donation was never expressed, so that there was then no time to apply to any body else. Therefore if y^e^ Town had known before s^d^ Town meeting was over that he would not have me, They might have counted it a sufficient reason to Act nothing about the case. Therefore I kept the knowledge of it from them, till a meeting was past. Yet nothing was done about it, tho they knew not but he might come—and did know y^t^ they could go to no other."

All things considered the pastorate of Mr. Payson was more successful than that of any other minister of this church. From the death of Mr. Phillips to the settlement of Mr. Jewett, a period of thirty-three years, nothing appears of record in church or town denoting any differences between Mr. Payson and the people under his charge.

Samuel Palmer, Timothy Harris, Humphrey Hobson and Joseph Boynton were ordained deacons while Mr. Payson was alone in the ministry.

The record of his death, entered in the church register by his colleague and successor, is as follows:

"The Rev^d^. M^r^. Edward Payson died Aug. 22, 1732, about y^e^ rising of y^e^ Sun, In y^e^ 76 year of his age, after about a month's Languishment and after He had preached y^e^ Gospel in Rowley more than 51 years."

"Beati Mortui ii qui Domini causa moriuntur etiam dicit Spiritus ut requiescant a laboribus suis & opera eorum sequuntur eos."

Jedidiah Jewett, fifth minister, son of Jonathan and Mary (Wicom) Jewett, of Rowley, where he was born 1705, baptized June 3, 1705, was graduated at Harvard College 1726 and ordained and settled colleague with Mr. Payson November 19, 1729. The third meeting-house was built during his ministry, and was occupied in October, 1749. The last child baptized in the old house was Joanna Todd, October 15, 1749, while the first persons owning the covenant in the new house did so October 29, 1749.

The number of church members in 1744 is given by him in the church register as follows: "About 208 persons at present in full communion with this church, 83 males 125 Females."

Mr. Jewett married, November 11, 1730, Elizabeth, only child of Richard and Dorothy (Light) Dummer, of Newbury, by whom he had three children *Dummer*, baptized April 30, 1732; *Paul*, baptized June 18, 1734; *Dorothy*, baptized May 9, 1736. In his time some men expressed their own opinions. On the 24th of October, 1718, the church voted that they were offended with the Hon. John Hobson, a leading citizen, who had been frequently a member of the General Court and Speaker of the House in 1711, for that Hobson had said in the meeting house on the Lord's day October, 1718, That the Doctrine of Election as preached by Rev^d^. M^r^ Jedidiah Jewett, in November, and Because in explaining himself upon the matter of his said assertion s^d^ Hobson further said to s^d^ Jewet, 'That you preach That there is certain number elected, and another number are passed over, and if it be so, say s^d^ Hobson,' the consequence is that man does act necessarily." An investigating committee was chosen April 2, 1749; the committee reported that Hobson write out his explanation.

December 27, 1749, Hobson refused to write out any explanation of his speech, and the church voted the acknowledgment was satisfactory.

August 20, 1749, James Hidden was accused of having said that part of a sermon by the Rev. Moses Hale was false. The church voted his conduct disorderly.

December 21, 1768, Deacon Bailey complains that Eben Hidden had charged him with "telling a positive lye, and when he [Hidden], was asked why he sung a few Sabbaths ago, his answer was y^t^ he did it to let y^e^ congregation Know, y^t^ he knew and y^t^ fool did not." He also said, at the same time, when Deacon Bailey set the tune, "that he was serving the Devil."

Several of the church were admonished for their sin of "disorderly walking" and many others for fornication.

Mr. Jewett died May 8, 1774. The Parish voted to pay the expense of the funeral and erect a suitable monument at his grave.

Ebenezer Bradford, sixth minister, born in Canterbury, Conn., May 29, 1746, was graduated at Princeton College 1773, settled August 4, 1782, died January 3, 1801. The funeral charges were paid by the Parish.

Here ends the permanent ministry of Rowley. They were able and godly men; the tie binding them to the church was severed only by death. Every minister since settled has been dismissed. Of the period since 1801, I may well use the language of a former pastor: "Pastors, since the commencement of the present century have been, themselves, more uneasy than before, and the people have been more uneasy, regulating their zeal for the truth, by their interest in the man who proclaimed it."

David Tullar, seventh minister, was graduated at Yale College 1774, settled 7th December 1803, dismissed October 17, 1810. He is said to have been a meek and godly man, better fitted to love his Lord than to fight the devil with fire. He died at Sheffield, 23d August, 1839, aged ninety years. Probably it would have been better if Mr. Tullar had declined his call to preach here, as he began with opposition in both church and parish. While Mr. Tullar slept his people did not sow tares in his wheat-field as there was no tare-seed to be obtained here but they did sow flax-seed over all his garden and cultivated land; cats were drowned in his well, his swine let loose, his gates destroyed, his fruit trees girdled, and he, himself twitted, before an ecclesiastical council, of inability to propagate his species.

JAMES W. TUCKER, eighth minister, was graduated at Yale College 1897, settled June 24, 1812, dismissed June 24, 1817, as the salary was insufficient to meet his necessities. He was much respected and beloved. He died at Springfield, N. J., February 11, 1819, aged thirty-two years.

WILLARD HOLBROOK, Brown University 1814, was the ninth minister, settled July 22, 1818, dismissed May 12, 1840. During his ministry the Sunday-school was established; and a stove placed in the meeting-house. Many opposed heating the meeting-house as a sinful innovation. The first Sunday, a very cold day, after the stove was set in the meeting-house many left the house, overcome with the intolerable heat, yet there was no fire or funnel connected with the stove.

JOHN PIKE, Bowdoin College 1833, was the tenth minister, settled November 18, 1840, dismissed January 5, 1869. The fourth meeting-house was built during his ministry; it was formally dedicated on Wednesday, July 13, 1842; the day was warm, nearly one hundred degrees in the shade. On the 19th February, 1853, the widow Hannah Kilbourne died here. She had been a consistent member of this church more than sixty-five years.

LYMAN H. BLAKE, eleventh minister, was settled November 9, 1869, dismissed April 27, 1874.

WM. R. JOYSLIN, twelfth minister, was settled December 2d, 1874, dismissed December 22d, 1875.

CHARLES C. BRUCE, thirteenth minister, was settled July 2, 1878, dismissed November 28, 1882.

Since the dismission of Mr. Bruce the church has had no settled minister.

This church now having in full communion about one hundred and sixty-six persons, forty-six males and one hundred and twenty females, still maintains the faith of the fathers and still retains as a part of its "Confession of Faith"—

". . . that God created man upright, that our first parents freely sinned and fell, and that all their posterity are born destitute of holiness, dead in trespasses and sins, and justly exposed to the wrath and curse of God.

". . . that God, in his mercy, has not left all mankind to perish forever, but of his mere good pleasure has, from eternity, elected some to everlasting life; and has determined to deliver them out of a state of sin and misery, and to bring them into a state of salvation by a Redeemer.

". . . that without a change of heart, wrought by the special agency of the Holy Ghost, who is truly God, no one can be an heir of eternal life.

". . . that there will be a general resurrection of the righteous and the wicked and a general judgment; at which all the righteous will be received to everlasting happiness, and the wicked sentenced to misery without end."

Tempora mutantur, nos et mutamur in illis

From December 3, 1639, to the present time this church has had deacons, elected for life, as follows: The dates of appointment and death are given.

Thomas Mighill, appointed December 3, 1639; died July [June] 14, 1655.
Matthew Boyse, appointed December 3, 1639; returned to England.
Maximilian Jewett, appointed December 3, 1639; died October 19, 1681.
Francis Parrat, appointed December 3, 1639; died in England 1656.
Samuel Brocklebank, appointed January 8, 1665–66; died April 21, 1676.
William Tenney, appointed February 3, 1667–68; died August 5, 1685.
John Pearson, appointed October 24, 1686; died December 22, 1693.
John Trumble, appointed October 24, 1686; died March —, 1690–91.
Ezekiel Jewett, appointed October 24, 1686; died September 2, 1723.
Samuel Palmer, appointed February 1, 1707–8; died June 21, 1719.
Timothy Harris, appointed February 1, 1707–8; died March 24, 1722–23.
Humphrey Hobson, appointed April 21, 1723; died June 23, 1742.
Joseph Boynton, appointed April 21, 1723; died November 25, 1755.
Edward Payson, appointed February 12, 1739–40; died March 1, 1769.
Francis Pickard, appointed February 12, 1739–40; died September 12, 1778.
David Bailey, appointed February 18, 1761; died May 12, 1769.
Moses Clark, appointed May 15, 1769; died April 20, 1791.
Thomas Mighill, appointed May 15, 1769; died August 26, 1807.
Jeremiah Jewett, appointed May 15, 1769; died December 3, 1809.
George Jewett, appointed March 9, 1791; died May 5, 1829.
Joshua Jewett, appointed April 4, 1807; died January 3, 1862.
Nathanial Mighill, appointed December 10, 1828; died August 3, 1845.
James T. Plummer, appointed October 1, 1845; now in office.
Nathaniel Bradstreet, appointed June 27, 1862; died June 4, 1879.
Daniel W. Bradstreet, appointed January 8, 1880; now in office.

THE CHURCH IN BYFIELD PARISH.—The inhabitants living in the northwesterly part of Rowley, as early as 1702, joined with such of the inhabitants of Newbury as were living near the "Falls" in the erection of a meeting-house, and in 1706 gathered in church order by themselves.

MOSES HALE, the first minister, was settled 17th of November, 1706, died 16th of January, 1743—44. The parish paid the expense of his funeral.

The present meeting-house of this parish is in Georgetown.

THE CHURCH IN LINEBROOK PARISH.—The inhabitants in the southwesterly part of Rowley, joining with a part of the inhabitants of Ipswich, organized a church 30th of November, 1749, with GEORGE LESLIE as first minister.

The present meeting-house of this parish is in Ipswich.

THE BAPTIST CHURCH.—This church was organized 16th of November, 1830, with twelve members.

In 1830 their present meeting-house was built. The following year a Sunday-school was established.

From the date of organizing, this church and society gradually increased in numbers, so that during the pastorate of the Rev. Mr. Carr the meeting-house was enlarged and beautified.

The regular pastors of this church have been as follows:

Caleb Clark.....1831 to 1834
Jeremiah Chaplin.....1834 to 1836
Benjamin C. Grafton.....1839 to 1841
Cephas Pasco.....1841 to 1848
Zenas Wildes.....1848 to 1850
Alexander W. Carr.....1851 to 1862
James W. Lathrop.....1862 to 1867
Edwin T. Lyford.....1868 to 1870
Robert G. Farley.....1870 to 1871
Andrew Dunn.....1871 to 1874
Patrick Galeher.....1876 to 1878
John W. Chase.....1879 to 1881
James H. Gannet.....1881 to 1884
Jonathan Tilson.....1884 to

THE FIRST UNIVERSALIST PARISH.—This parish was regularly incorporated 1877, and a meeting-house

built, but it has never had a church or a settled minister.

EDUCATION.—When the first school was established in town is not known. In 1647 it was made an indictable offense for towns not to maintain schools.

Charles Browne taught school here before 1650, and John Trumble taught for several years before his death, 1657.

February 3, 1656—57, the town agreed with William Boynton to teach school, and advanced money to enlarge his house for that purpose.

Boynton continued as the town school-master for more than twenty years.

In 1682 Simon Wainwright was employed to teach the town school.

About 1696 Mr. Richard Syle was employed as town school-master, and so continued to the time of his death, 1721—22.

Mr. Samuel Payson succeeded Mr. Syle, and continued in service, with the exception of a few years, to 1757.

In the years 1742, 1746 and 1747, Mr. Benjamin Adams was the school-master.

From 1757 various persons were employed for short terms, until 1789, when the town was divided into school districts and continued so divided until school districts in towns were abolished by law in 1869.

The town now maintains seven schools. Below is given the names of those born in Rowley, or going out from our schools, who have been graduated at some college. Those in *italics* were ordained ministers:

Philip Nelson	Harvard, 1654
Thomas Mighill	" 1663
John Hoyman	" 1667
Samuel Shepard	" 1685
[illegible]	" 1686
Spencer Phips (name changed from Bennett)	" 1703
Samuel Payson	" 1716
Caleb Jewett	" 1726
[illegible] Hubert	" 1748
Dudley Jewett	" 1752
[illegible]	" 1755
Joseph Pearson	" 1758
[illegible]	" 1761
[illegible]	" 1764
[illegible]	" 1767
[illegible]	" 1768
[illegible]	" 1769
[illegible]	" 1771
[illegible]	" 1771
[illegible]	" 1772
[illegible]	" 1772
[illegible]	Dartmouth, 1773
[illegible]	" 1784
[illegible]	Brown Univ., 1786
[illegible]	" " 1787
[illegible]	Dartmouth, 1784
[illegible]	" 1790
[illegible]	" 1791
[illegible]	" 1791
[illegible]	" 1794
[illegible]	" 1795
[illegible]	" 1795
Thomas Jewett	Harvard, 1797
Isaac Adams	" 1798
Samuel N. Gage	Dartmouth, 1798
William Lambert	" 1798
Jeremiah Chaplin	Brown University, 1799
Parker Cleaveland	Harvard, 1799
John M. Bradford	Brown University, 1800
Nathaniel Todd	" " 1800
David Jewett	Dartmouth, 1801
Paul Jewett	Brown University, 1802
John Pike	Dartmouth, 1803
Samuel Adams	Harvard, 1806
Jonathan Cogswell	" 1806
Joseph Merrill	Dartmouth, 1806
William Todd	Yale, 1806
Charles Wheeler	Brown University, 1807
Nathaniel Merrill	Dartmouth, 1809
David Mighill	" 1809
John Richards	" 1809
Daniel Chute	" 1810
John Scott	" 1810
James Bradford	" 1811
Henry C. Knight	Brown University, 1812
Thomas C. Searle	Dartmouth, 1812
James Chute	" 1813
Humphrey Hobson	" 1814
Alfred W. Pike	" 1815
Joseph Searle	" 1815
Richard S. Spofford	Harvard, 1816
John S. Tenney	Bowdoin, 1816
Joseph Torry	Dartmouth, 1816
Milton P. Braman	Harvard, 1819
John P. Cleaveland	Bowdoin, 1821
Jeremiah Searle	Union, 1821
Moses C. Searle	Princeton, 1821
Henry C. Jewett	Brown University, 1824
Daniel Perley	Dartmouth, 1828
Charles Proctor	Harvard, 1828
Moses P. Stickney	Amherst, 1830
Ariel P. Chute	Bowdoin, 1832
Charles C. Taylor	" 1833
Benjamin Proctor	" 1834
Thomas E. Payson	Amherst, 1834
George W. Cressey	Bowdoin, 1835
Isaac G. Braman	" 1836
James W. Tucker	Yale, 1836
Richard T. Searle	Union, 1837
Charles N. Todd	Amherst, 1839
Amory Holbrook	Bowdoin, 1841
Francis P. Hale	" 1845
Daniel W. Pickard	" 1848
Amos J. Saunders	Brown University, 1855
Nathaniel Mighill	Amherst, 1860
Alfred Maddock	" 1861
James H. Foss	Brown University, 1863
John L. Ewell	Yale, 1865
George B. Blodgette	Brown University, 1866
William Greenwood	Amherst, 1871
John M. Potter	Brown University, 1874
Edward H. Potter	" " 1875
Jeremiah J. Cressey	Nashotah, 1879

Of Rowley men of recent times, none deserve mention more than FREDERICK KNIGHT, bred here, lived here, died here, educated in our school and at Harvard College and the law school at Litchfield, Conn. He was a poet and philosopher, a lover of nature and of nature's God. Those who had cultivated only the bigotry they inherited from an ignorant ancestry said he was "crazed in his understanding," but the poor and the children loved him. He died November 20, 1849, aged fifty-eight years. A marble shaft marks his grave. About thirty years ago was published a memorial volume, entitled "Thorn Cottage,

or the Poet's Home," containing a few of his poems and aphorisms. He wrote:

"He that eats his own wood is twice warmed; he that earns his own bread is twice blest. The labor procures and sweetens the food. Let him try every other method—send to the Indies for condiments, and he will fail."

"While shallow brooks and slender rills,
Derived from rains and little hills,
Go tinkling on their way,
As if they thought their noisy thanks,
Would please the springs along their banks,
As shallow things as they;
Deep rivers, by the mountains fed,
Exhaustless as their fountain-head,
Roll silent to the sea."

ROWLEY MEN IN THE WARS.—In 1640 a military company was formed. Sebastian Brigham was captain, with John Remington as lieutenant. Rowley men were in service in September, 1642, to disarm Passaconaway, who lived near the river Merrimack.

In August, 1653, the town furnished men for the scouting party for service at Piscataqua.

In 1673 the court appointed Samuel Brocklebank captain, Philip Nelson lieutenant, and John Johnson ensign of the Rowley foot company. In service in "King Philip's War" in 1675–76.

In Captain Thomas Lothrop's company, called the "flower of Essex," was Joseph Pearson, who was killed at Hatfield, August 25, 1675, and John Harriman, Jacob Kilborn and Ezekiel Sawyer were slain with Lothrop September 18, 1675, at Bloody Brook.

In this war our Deacon Samuel Brocklebank was captain, and under him were John Hopkinson, William Brown, Joseph Bixby, Simon Gawin, Caleb Jackson, John Jackson, Joseph Jewett, John Leighton, Stephen Mighill, Thomas Palmer, John Stickney, Samuel Tiller.

On Friday, April 21, 1676, at Sudbury, Captain Brocklebank and a part of his company, and Captain Wadsworth, with his company, were entirely destroyed by Philip and his warriors.

In 1689 Moses Bradstreet was captain, with John Trumble for lieutenant. This year Rowley furnished men for a guard at Haverhill and Dover.

In the expedition against Quebec, 1690, Rowley furnished one captain (Philip Nelson), one lieutenant (Abel Platts) and thirty non-commissioned officers and privates. All their names cannot now be found.

The town record May 6, 1691, shows payments to the following for military service in Canada, viz.:

	£	s.	d.
"To Samuel Platts for Lieutenant Platts	13	1	2
To Joseph Scott for Samuel Brown	4	17	7
To Captain Fisk for Robert Claflin	4	12	7
To Deacon Jewett for Ezekiel Jewett, his son	5	0	3
To Thomas Nelson, Jr., for Samuel French	4	15	11
To Goody Swan for Richard Swan, her husband	4	15	17
To Widow Wood for Ebenezer Wood, her son	10	1	2
To Margaret Wood for Samuel Wood, her husband	4	12	9
To Mrs. Hammond and Nathl. Crosby for Jonathan Crosby	5	5	7
To Goody Bradstreet for Nathaniel Bradstreet, her husband	3	14	3
To Sergeant Jewett for William Jewett, his son	4	14	1
To Grace Harris for William Searle	6	2	0
To Sergeant Nelson for Jonathan Nelson, his son	4	15	5
To Nathan Wheeler for Benjamin Wheeler	2	10	0
To John Pickard for Jeremiah Chadwell	4	11	2
To John Platts for James Platts, his brother	5	2	7
To Caleb Boynton for William Boynton, his son	4	15	3
To Goody Todd for Timothy Todd, her son	4	12	3
To Goody Todd for Samuel Todd, her son	1	3	2
To Goody Todd for Timothy Todd, her son, to Quochicha	0	18	0
To Widow Wood for Solomon Wood to Quochica	0	18	0
To Nathl. Crosby for Jonathan Crosby, his brother to Quochica	1	12	6"

John Bailey died November 19, 1690, and Samuel Wood died November 25, 1690, on their way home from Canada. Others died during campaign; among them were Samuel Smith, Nathaniel Bradstreet, Lieutenant Abel Platts and William Searle.

In the Indian wars from 1690 to 1750, Rowley furnished men, but few names can be found.

Joseph Kilborn, Sr., and Jeremiah Nelson were "slain by ye Indians at Dunstable" 10th of July, 1706.

John Pickard "being wounded by ye enemy, dyed at Billerica" 5th of August, 1706. Ezekiel Northend was at Dunstable.

Lieut. Thomas Gage died at Port Royal August, 1707.

Samuel Ayres "slain by ye Indians at Winter Harbor," near Saco River, February, 1710–11.

Jeremiah Hopkinson was at Norridgewock in 1723–24, under Capt. Samuel Wheelwright. In 1745 James Jewett was "killed with a cannon ball."

Moses Davis, Jr., "with sickness."

Moses Platts "died of his wound" at Cape Breton before the place was taken, and John Platts, Humphrey Woodbury and Joseph Saunders "with the sickness" after the place was taken. Martin Ayers, Samuel Smith, Richard Harris and Moses Jewett also died at Cape Breton in 1745.

During the year 1754 Stephen Boynton was in service under Capt. John Lane. Lieut. Benj. Plumer, Sergt. Moses Richards, Sergt. Thomas Johnson, Nathaniel Getchell, Mark Cressey, Joseph Wallingford, Samuel Duty and Jonathan Trask were at the eastern frontier under Capt. Nathan Adams.

In 1755 a company was raised in this town for service at Lake George.

Captain, Thomas Gage; Lieutenant, Israel Davis; Ensign, Thomas Poor; Sergeants, Jacob Barker, John Smith, Israel Hazen; Corporals, Eliphalet Danforth, Samuel Stickney, William Hobson, James Smith; Privates, Isaac Burpee, Stephen Boynton, Caleb Brown, John Bowman, Timothy Burbank, Samuel Brackenberry, John Bradley, Asa Ladd, Jeremiah Hutchins, Edward Holland, Samuel Hoyt, Daniel Haseltine, Andrew Hood, Samuel Luskin, Samuel Palmer, Jr., Stephen Poor, Benj. Priestly, Matthew Pettengill, William Russell, Samuel Spiller, Samuel Stevens, Edward Saunders, Samuel Smith, David Woodman, Abraham Yone. This company was in

service from 7th of August to 17th of December, 1755. During this year Jabez Blackledge and Symon Chapman died in the army destined to Crown Point, and Thomas Johnson and Samuel Sterry died in the army at Menis.

July 26, 1756, Captain John Pearson, of Rowley, enlisted a company for service under him at Fort Edward; among them the following Rowley men: Ezekiel Mighill, Jonathan Rogers, John Boynton, Jonathan Stickney, James Tenney and Joseph Cressey.

James Jewett, of Rowley, served in a Gloucester company. Humphrey Saunders was a corporal under Capt. Israel Davis. Edward Saunders and Joseph Whitton were privates in the same company, for six months' service.

Jonathan Hidden died at Lake George, January 6, 1756.

Jonathan Stickney and John Boynton were under Capt. Jonathan Pearson, of Newbury.

Daniel Wood was in Capt. Israel Herrick's company.

Jonathan Bailey was at Fort William Henry.

August 9, 1757, Jonathan Bailey, Joseph Poor and Jedidiah Stickney were in Fort William Henry, and in the massacre which took place after the surrender.

In 1758, Thomas Gage, of Rowley, was lieutenant-colonel, and at Lake George, where, on the 20th of July, David Payson was slain by the Indians. James Cressey, Richard Easty and Joseph Whitten were out under Capt. Israel Davis, of Topsfield.

In 1759, Thomas Barker, Robert Gragg, Francis Nelson and John Smith were in Capt. Israel Herrick's company. Benj. Sawyer, John Searle, Jr., Ezra Clough, Nathaniel Clough, William Cheney, Abijah Dickinson, Abner Moores, Thomas Perrin and Thomas Pike were under Capt. Joseph Newhall, of Newbury.

Humphrey Saunders, lieutenant, and Daniel Scott, Joseph Spiller, Ezra Burbank, Samuel Stickney, Samuel Spiller, Anthony Bell, James Cressey, Moses Lowell, Mark Cressey, Thomas Tenney, Peirce Bailey, John Bennett, Samuel Hidden, Francis Palmer, David Plumer, Asa Todd, John Plumer, James Boynton, Stewart Hunt and William Bailey, privates, were under Capt. Thomas Poor, of Andover.

In the autumn of 1759 the following men were enlisted for service in Col. Daniel Appleton's regiment: Thomas Tenney, Benjamin Dresser, Thomas Barker, Nathaniel Wallis, Moses Lowell, Joseph Spiller, Jonathan Gragg, Clement Pingry, William Hobson, Benjamin Winter, John Boynton, Abijah Spofford, Wyman Johnson, Dudley Tyler, Amos Nelson, Abner Burbank, Moses Harriman and James Lawton.

During the year 1759, Benjamin Dresser and Clement Pingry died at Louisbourg, and Peter Cooper [illegible] October 24, coming from Quebec.

[illegible] Mighill enlisted for service in Canada: Joseph Smith, captain; Jonathan Stickney, first lieutenant; John Searle, second lieutenant; John Bailey, Peirce Bailey, Abel Cressey, Jr., Moses Duty (3d), Abijah Dickinson, Joseph Hobson, John Jackman, Ebenezer Martin, Abner Moores, John Plumer, David Plumer, Thomas Pike, Benjamin Sawyer, Ezekiel Stevens, Mark Thurlow, privates.

Also this year, under Captain Israel Herrick, of Boxford, Jacob Hazen, William Johnson, James Boynton and Abel Dodge.

Under Captain Stephen Whipple, of Ipswich, Benjamin Winter, Thomas Barker, Jonathan Gragg, Moses Lowell and Rufus Wheeler.

Under Captain Francis Peabody, of Boxford, Ezra Clough, John Easty, Peter Hardy and Jedidiah Stickney.

Under Captain Nathaniel Bailey, of Gloucester, was Oliver Bailey, who died at Crown Point in 1760.

Under officers unknown, Moses Platts, Samuel Spiller, John Bailey, Jr., and Ezekiel Mighill.

Of these, Captain Joseph Smith and Peirce Bailey died in the fall of 1760, at Albany, of small-pox. Samuel Spiller died the same year, at Glascow, of small-pox; and William Bailey was drowned at the Isle of Sables on the 16th of November, 1760.

In 1761 Asa Plumer was in service under Captain Joshua Moody, of Falmouth.

In 1762 Benjamin Mansfield, James Cressey, Caleb Cressey, John Cressey, John Cromby and Moses Jewett were in service under Captain Gideon Parker, of Ipswich. James Martin, John Hart, Ezra Burbank, Abel Dodge and Moses Duty were also in the service.

Doubtless many others were soldiers whose names have not been found.

THE REVOLUTION.—April 19, 1775, word reached Rowley of the battle at Lexington, and the two Rowley companies, commanded by Capt. Thomas Mighill and Capt. Edward Payson, started immediately for the scene of conflict, arriving in Cambridge on the morning of the 20th; after remaining a few days, they returned home.

The following were in Capt. Thomas Mighill's company, Col. Baldwin's regiment (the Thirty-eighth Infantry), at Sewall's Point, 26th September, 1775:

Thomas Pike, first lieutenant; Mark Cressey, second lieutenant; Amos Bailey, Stephen Jewett, Samuel Searle, Ezekiel Sawyer, sergeants; Daniel Brocklebank, David Poor, Ephraim Hidden, Jonathan Stickney, corporals; Samuel Todd, drummer; Samuel Bailey, fifer; John Bailey, Ezekiel Bailey, Joseph Brown, Joseph Brown, Jr., Edward Bishop, Jeremiah Chandler, William Chandler, Abel Dodge, John Gage, David Hobson, William Harriman, Moses Howe, Edward Ellsworth, Thomas Ellsworth, William Ellsworth, Nathaniel Johnson, Amos Jewett, Jr., Nathan Kilburn, Samuel Lancaster, Samuel Pillsbury, Jonathan Pickard, John Pickard, Thomas Plumer, John Pearson, Thomas Pearson, Benjamin

Pike, Humphrey H. Richards, Thomas Smith, John Sawyer, Paul Stickney, John Spiller, Benjamin Scott, Benjamin Smith, William Smith, Josiah Stickney, Dudley Tyler and Benjamin Willett, privates.

Of the above, Amos Jewett, Jr., died at Cambridge, 28th December, 1775; John Pearson died at Cambridge, and his brother Thomas Pearson returned from Cambridge sick, and soon after died at home.

William Searle, aged twenty-six years, a sergeant, and Jacob Dow, aged eighteen years, a private, enlisted 24th of April, 1775, under Captain Jacob Gerrish, Colonel Moses Little's regiment.

In Captain John Baker's company, Colonel Little's regiment, enlisted 2d May, 1775, were Daniel Dresser, aged thirty-five years, second lieutenant; and privates George Abbot, aged twenty-two years; Amos Jewett, Jr., aged twenty-one years; Joseph Nelson, aged thirty years; Moses Foster, aged twenty-two years, and David Sterry, aged twenty-two years.

Jonathan Ellsworth was in Captain John Kettle's company, and Thomas Pee was in Captain Stephen Pearl's company.

They were enlisted for what was called the eight months' service, ending December, 1775; no others having been enlisted to take their places, the following Rowley men enlisted for six weeks, viz., Daniel Foster, David Elwell, Paul Todd, Moses Richards, Moses Smith, Nathaniel Bradstreet, Jeremiah Dodge and Jeremiah Hobson.

At the close of the year 1775, men were enlisted for one year. The following is a copy of the roll of Capt. Thomas Mighill's company, March, 1776: Thomas Mighill, captain; Mark Cressy, first lieutenant; Caleb Clap, second lieutenant; Jonathan Stickney, Abner Whitney, John Morse, Daniel Coolage, sergeants; John Sawyer, Ansel Pope, Abner Hoyt, corporals; William Green, drummer; Edward French, fifer and privates William Adams, John Bailey, David Chaplin, Daniel Chaplin, David Clark, Benjamin Emerson, Moses Howe, Jeremiah Hobson, Nathaniel Johnson, Humphrey H. Richards, Moses Richards, John Spiller, Benjamin Spiller, Moses Smith, Joseph Stickney, John Thomas, Benjamin Willet, John Blandsen, Thomas Champney and Nathaniel Chase.

Others were enlisted in 1776, by Capt. Mighill, viz.: Joel Coolage, William Cushing, Jacob French, Nathaniel Bradstreet, Thomas Jones, Abner Hinds, Daniel Kimball, Timothy Kendell, William McIlvain, Benjamin Morse, George Dunlap, William Davis, Follensbee Dow, Thomas Giles, James Greely, Ezra Ross, Samuel Remick, William Simmons, Paul Todd, Nathan Willard, Comfort Whipple, Charles Flagherty, James Gray, James Barnes, Michael Irish, Thomas Harris, Philip Merchant, Enoch Jackson, William Jackson, John McIlvain, Daniel Wight, David Story, Edward Morrison, Elnathan Pope, Nathaniel Perry, Thomas Pee, Benjamin Richards, Samuel Russell, Samuel Burnet. At the close of the year 1776 men of Capt. Mighill's company were enlisted for six weeks as follows: Abner Whitney, sergeant; Ansel Pope and Abner Hoyt corporals; David Clark, Nathaniel Chase, Jeremiah Hobsen, Nathaniel Bradstreet, Thomas Giles, Benjamin Morse, Paul Todd, Moses Richards, William Jackson, John McIlvain, and Moses Smith as privates.

At the same time William Symons, Benjamin Richards, Thomas Pee, and Charles Flagherty were enlisted for a longer time.

In March, 1777, the town was called upon to raise fifty-eight men for the Continental Army to serve three years or during the war. The names of fifty-five of these men are here given from a roll made October, 1779:

Benjamin Elwell, Ebenezer Redington, David Redington, William Hancock, John Elwell, John Dorce, Thomas Payne, Stephen Staples, Samuel Procter, Ebenezer Stone, John Wilson, William Robinson, Samuel Plumer, Thomas Goodall, Timothy Pratt, George Graves, William McGill, John Witten, Samuel Starboard, James Wier, Edward Pratt, David Guston, John Parker, Winthrop Knight, John Romley, Josiah Millikin, Henry Warren, Thomas Pee, Paul Kilborn, John Kilborn, Francis Nelson, Elisha Dodge, Jeremiah Ellsworth, Benjamin Tenney, Samuel Clough, Asa Low, Jonathan A. Powers, Thomas Harris, Aaron Crombe, Daniel Elliot, William Batchelder, John P. Frost, William Mitchell, Moses Moore, Abner B. Lunt, James Page, Samuel Bailey, John D. Davis, William Harkman, Thomas Pingree, Thomas Stinson, James Blair, Samuel Turner, Joseph Applebee, Joseph Lovell.

In December, 1776, the following persons belonging to Rowley were enlisted to serve under Capt. John Dodge, of Wenham, for three months, in the State of New York:

John Tenney first lieutenant; Moses Scott, second lieutenant; Jedidiah Stickney, Humphrey Hobson, Moses Smith, sergeants; and as privates, John Bailey, Moses Chaplin, Moses Dickinson, John Daniels, John Gage, Reuben How, James Jewett, Caleb Jackson, Thomas Kilborn, Moses Lull, Asa Low, David Payson, Bradstreet Pearson, John Scott, David Searle, Daniel Safford, Daniel Tenney, Moses Wood, Phineas Dodge and Joshua Dickinson.

This company consisted of fifty-three men. They marched December 16, 1776, and were discharged April 1, 1777, in the State of New York, three hundred and forty miles from their homes.

In May, 1778, the town was called upon to raise twenty men to serve eight months, and nine men to serve nine months; the names of but twenty-one are found, viz.: John Ely, Thomas Pingree, Thomas Pike, Jr., Amos Pilsbury, William Chandler, Jr., Samuel Bacon, Jeremiah Andrew, William Priest, Abel Hardy, Samuel Woodsum, Joseph Brocklebank, Moses Clark, Thomas Ellsworth, Benjamin Bishop, John Pickard, Joseph Stickney, John Gage, Samuel

Hidden, Benjamin Pike, Stephen Pingree and Moses Wood.

They served six months from July 1, 1778, at North Kingston, Rhode Island, under Captain Jonathan Evans in Colonel Wade's regiment.

Other Rowley men served at some time during the war, but a complete list cannot now be given. It is known that the following named were in service, viz.: Moses Hobson and Jonathan Stickney served three months and fifteen days from April 24, 1775; Joseph Brocklebank and Joseph Todd were in service two months from April 29 to June 29, 1777, in Rhode Island, under Captain Benjamin Adams; Nathaniel Burpee (drummer), Ezekiel Lancaster and David Nelson were in service, under Captain Adams, from August 15 to November 30, 1777, in New York; Thomas Pike was drafted June 11, 1778, and served nine months at Fishkill, N. Y.; William Rutherford and David Pickard were drafted and served from July 6 to December 13, 1780.

Joshua Jackson, Nathaniel Smith, Joshua Saunders, Edward Saunders, Jonathan Lambert and John Crombee were stationed at Castle Island, under Captain James Maloon.

Samuel Bailey, Jr., Moses Merrill and Daniel Merrill served three years.

Paul Jewett died in the army in 1777 in New York.

Samuel Clough returned from Albany sick, and soon died in 1778.

John Crombee died in the service in New York of small-pox in 1781.

William Todd died while privateering in 1781.

Solomon Lowell, David Poor, Silas Dole, Moses Boynton and James Phillips were in the army. Samuel Burbank died of small-pox soon after his return from the army.

Jeremiah Ellsworth, Asa Low and Thomas Pingree were enlisted for three years.

Adoniram Hidden was in service and a prisoner in the old Mill prison in England, where he died August 8, 1781, of small-pox.

Rowley furnished its full proportion of men for the army of the Revolution, among them three captains, viz. Thomas Mighill, Benjamin Adams and Edward Payson, nine lieutenants, viz.: Amos Bailey, Mark Cressey, Daniel Dresser, Thomas Green, Thomas Pike, Benjamin Stickney Moses Scott, John Tenney and Ralph Wheeler, and many sergeants and corporals.

SHAY'S REBELLION.—To make up the army of four thousand four hundred men in January, 1787, Rowley was called upon to furnish one lieutenant and twenty-three non-commissioned officers and men. Ezekiel Sawyer was the lieutenant, and he enlisted men as follows: Abner Bailey, William Bailey, Pearce Bailey, Jacob Ellsworth, Humphrey Hobson, Nathan Jewett, Stephen Knight, David Pickard, Samuel Purdue, John Perley, Stephen Pearson, Josiah Pike, John Pike, David Rollins, Elliot Sawyer, Samuel Searle, John Searle, Thomas Stedman, and John Tasket.

1812.—In the War of 1812 the following men were paid by the town for services in the war, viz.: John Bridges, Jr., David Brocklebank, Moses Daniels, Bradstreet Emerson, Daniel Harris, Benjamin Spiller, Thomas Cressey, Francis Dole, Edmund Dole, Paul Dole, Jr., Ralph Dole, James Dickinson, Darius Dickinson, Nathaniel R. Farley, Nathan Hobson, Phineas Hardy, Matthew Johnson, Samuel Jewett, Thomas Merrill, jr., Nathaniel Pickard, John Prime, Daniel Palmer, Isaac Pickard, David Perley, Paul Stickney, Jr., Mighill Spofford, Benjamin Todd, Jr., Richard Davis, Parker G. Thurlow, Nathaniel Bradstreet, Daniel N. Prime and Nathaniel Prime. Some of the above named furnished substitutes. William Ellsworth and Joseph Haskins were in service as substitutes.

THE REBELLION OF 1861-65.—The following list of soldiers in the late war is arranged in the order of their first muster into the service of the United States; it is intended to include all who were credited to Rowley on any enlistment, and also those of our citizens who, when our quota for the time being was full, enlisted on the quota of other towns.

The "Record of the Massachusetts Volunteers" is taken as authority for names, dates, etc.

Those to whose name a * is prefixed are now (1887) deceased.

1. Asa Warren Emerson, son of Timothy W. and Mary (Conant) Emerson, born in Rowley, June 23, 1839; Co. C, 2d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in May 25, 1861; detailed as wagon-master; pro. April 1, 1863, q.m.-sergt; re-en. Dec. 30, 1863; pro. July 3, 1865, 1st lieut.; disch. July 14, 1865, exp. of service.

2. *Nathan H. Hutchinson, son of Ira and Mary A. (Hobson) Hutchinson, born in Rowley, age 21 years; Co. C, 2d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in May 25, 1861; died Sept. 25, 1862, at Annapolis, Md.; unmarried.

3. *William H. Jellison, son of Moses and Dolly B. (Bradstreet) Jellison, born in Rowley, January 30, 1839; Co. H, 2d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in May 25, 1861; capt'd May, 1862, near Winchester, Va., and held pris. of war at Belle Isle, Va., four months, then paroled; died Oct. 13, 1862, at Washington, D. C.; unmarried.

4. Josiah M. Kneeland, son of Levi and Margaret (Seward) Kneeland, born in Ipswich, age 36 years; Co. C, 2d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in May 25, 1861; re-en. Dec 31, 1863; wd. in action and pris. of war; disch. July 14, 1865, exp. of service.

5. David H. Saunders, son of David and Elizabeth S. (Howe) Saunders, born in Rowley, Nov. 29, 1839; Co. H, 2d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in May 25, 1861; corp.; capt'd May, 1862, near Winchester, and held pris. of war at Belle Isle, Va., four months, then paroled; severely wd May 8, 1864, at *Chancellorsville;* disch. May 28, 1864, exp. of service.

6. *Irville L. Smith, son of William and Elizabeth H. (Warburton) Smith, born in Danvers, age 22 years, Co. H, 2d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in May 25, 1861; died April 28, 1862, at Harrisonburg, Va.; unmarried.

7. *Thomas M. Todd, son of Thomas and Joanna (Chapman) Todd, born in Rowley May 9, 1840; Co. F, 2d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in May 25, 1861; trans. Feb. 28, 1862, to gunboat service and honorably discharged; en. (2) Oct. 14, 1862, (quota of Melrose) in Co. D, 48th Regt. Mass. Inf. (nine months); mus. in same day; pro. sergt.; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service; died Dec. 10, 1867, in Leominster, Mass; unmarried; buried in Rowley.

8. *John Hale, son of M. P. and Nancy (Mead) Hale, age 34 years, Co. G, 11th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in June 13, 1861; disch. Dec. 17, 1864; exp. of service. This record is taken from the "Record of Massachusetts Volunteers," but see the following:

" Department of the Interior, Pension Office.
" Washington, D. C., March 9, 1877.

" *Sir*:—

" In reply to your letter of the 24th ultimo, I have to inform you that James Higgins was a pensioner by certificate No. 90,961, on the rolls of the Boston, Mass., agency, and whose name was dropped because of his failure to claim his pension for three years. The evidence on file in his case shows that one John Hale, on the 8th of March, 1879, was burned to death at Newburyport, Mass., and that the name of John Hale and James Higgins was for the same person. That John Hale enlisted and served in the late war as James Higgins, private, Co. A, 3d N. H. Vols.

" Very respectfully,
" John C. Black,
" Commissioner.

" Geo. B. Blodgette,
" Rowley, Mass."

9. *George W. Williams, age 18 years; Co. C, 11th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in June 13, 1861; killed July 21, 1861 at *Bull Run*; unmarried.
10. *Joseph D. Todd, son of Calvin L. and Mary J. (Todd) Todd, born in Rowley, Jan. 13, 1844; Co. A, 12th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in June 26, 1861; killed Dec. 13, 1862, at *Fredericksburg*; unmarried.
11. *Ira Thompson, son of Ira and Hannah (Miller) Thompson, born in Newburyport, Oct., 1827; Co. A, 1st Regt. Mass. H. Art.; mus. in July 5, 1861; re-en. Nov. 5, 1863; killed in action June 16, 1864 near Petersburg, Va.; left a widow and four children.
12. *Alvin O. Cressey, son of Thomas B. and Rhoda A. (Whittier) Cressey, born in Rowley, age 28 years; Co. A, 17th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in July 21, 1861; disch. Aug. 3, 1864, exp. of service; died Oct. 30, 1885, in Boston; buried in Rowley; left a widow.
13. *John P. Morrison, son of Daniel and Harriet (Elwell) Morrison, born in Rowley, Jan. 20, 1842; band of the 17th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Aug. 24, 1861; disch. Aug. 30, 1862, by order of the War Dept.; died March 15, 1870, in Rowley; unmarried.

On the 26th of June, 1861, the company of militia long established here, and known as Company C, First Battalion Rifles, volunteered for the war. The company went into camp July 5, 1861, at the "Gage place," in Rowley; was soon transferred to the camp at Lynnfield, Mass., where it was enrolled July 26, 1861, as Company C, Nineteenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers, and mustered into the service August 28, 1861, for three years. The Rowley men of this company were as follows:

14. (1) Joseph Scott Todd, captain, son of Caleb and Susan (Todd) Todd, born in Rowley, July 6, 1828; resigned March 20, 1862; en. (2) Aug. 18, 1862, in Co. D, 48th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Sept. 24, 1862 (nine months); detailed as post-adj. in camp at Wenham, Mass.; pro. Dec. 30, 1862; capt. Co. K, 48th Regt.; wd. June 14, 1863, in an assault on Port Hudson, La.; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service.
15. (2) Samuel S. Prime, 2d lieut., son of Daniel N. and Mehitable (Scott) Prime, born in Rowley, May 31, 1829; pro. July 1, 1862, 1st lieut.; resigned Jan. 21, 1863.
16. (3) Solomon L. Cummings, 1st sergt., son of George and Elizabeth (Lowell) Cummings, born in Rowley, July 23, 1834; disch. Sept. 24, 1862; disability; en. (2) in Co. M, 4th Regt. Mass. H. Art. (1 year); mus. in Aug. 20, 1864; 1st sergt.; disch. June 17, 1865, exp. of service.
17. (4) John W. Emerson, sergt., son of Timothy W. and Mary (Conant) Emerson, born in Rowley, July 19, 1836; disch. Oct. 28, 1861; disability, from injuries received in camp at Lynnfield, Mass.; en. (2) in V. R. C.; mus. in July 20, 1864; sergt.; disch. Nov. 17, 1865; exp. of service.
18. (5) Paul N. Hale, sergt., son of Thomas and Agnes (Bean) Hale, born in Rowley Oct. 4, 1836; disch. Oct. 30, 1862; disability.
19. (6) *John F. Tarr, sergt., born in Salem, age 32 years; disch. May 16, 1862, disability; en. (2) in V. R. C.; mus. in July 18, 1864; 1st sergt.; died Feb. 19, 1865, in Newburyport, while on furlough; buried in Newburyport; left a widow.
20. (7) *David S. Cressey, corp., son of Thomas and Mary (Saunders) Cressey, born in Rowley, Jan. 10, 1839; died May 28, 1862, at Douglas Hospital, Washington, D. C.; buried in Rowley; unmarried.
21. (8) Joseph Johnson, 2d, corp., son of Joseph and Hannah (Tappen) Johnson, born in Newburyport, May 1, 1830; pro. sergt.; disch. June 10, 1862, disability; en. (2) in Co. H, 3d Regt. Mass. H. Art. (3 years), corp.; disch. Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
22. (9) *Moses R. Littlefield, wagoner, son of Japheth and Lucy (McIntyre) Littlefield, born at Deer Isle, Me., Jan. 1, 1824; re-en. Dec. 22, 1863; disch. June 30, 1865, exp. of service; died in Rowley Jan. 31, 1866, of disease contracted in service; left a widow and four children.
23. (10) Stephen Armitage, son of George and Elizabeth (Nowell) Armitage, born in Newburyport Nov. 2, 1838; pro. corp., sergt. and 1st sergt.; wd. July 2, 1863, at *Gettysburg*; disch. Aug. 27, 1864, exp. of service.
24. (11) George W. Brown, son of William V. and Anna O. (Pulsifer) Spiller, born in Rowley, Jan. 5, 1821; trans. Oct. 1, 1863, to V. R. C.; disch. Oct. 1, 1864, exp. of service.
25. (12) Samuel Cole, age 24 years; disch. Oct. 17, 1863.
26. (13) George E. Cross, son of Benjamin and Mary Cross, born in West Newbury, age 28 years; disch. Dec. 17, 1862, disability; en. (2) in Co. H, 3d Regt. Mass. H. Art. (3 years); mus. in Nov. 20, 1863, artificer; disch. Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
27. (14) *Edward F. Currier, son of Daniel R. and Sally (Merrill) Currier, born in Georgetown June 26, 1818; trans. Sept. 27, 1863, to V. R. C.; re-en. in V. R. C.; disch. Nov. 17, 1865, ex. of service; died April 22, 1872, in Georgetown, Mass.; buried in Byfield Parish; left a widow and one child.
28. (15) John C. Dailey, son of John and Mary Dailey, age 18 years; disch. Aug. 28, 1864, exp. of service.
29. (16) Milton Ellsworth, son of Simeon and Hannah (Jewett) Ellsworth, born in Ipswich, July 7, 1843; pro. corp., and, for bravery at *Gettysburg*, 1st sergt; re-en. Dec. 22, 1863; disch. June 28, 1865, order of War Dept. The service of this man deserves mention. He was always on duty with his regiment, never in hospital, never wounded, was corporal of color-guard that terrible day at *Fredericksburg*, and the only one unhurt. Besides the frequent reconnoissance and skirmish, so costly in human life, he was in the following battles: *Ball's Bluff, Yorktown, West Point, Fair Oaks, Peach Orchard, Savage Station, Glendale, White Oak Swamp, Malvern Hill, Second Bull Run, Antietam, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Bristoe's Station, Mine Run, Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Tolopotomy, Cold Harbor* and *Petersburg*, to about three o'clock P. M. June 22, 1864, when he, with his whole regiment and brigade, was captured by the enemy. From this time he experienced the horrors of Andersonville and other Southern prisons until, with about four thousand other prisoners of war, he reached our lines at Jacksonville, Fla., on the evening of the 28th of April, 1865. The war was over. Broken in health, he was ordered to his home to await discharge.
30. (17) *Horace A. Fisher, son of Horace and Jane (Hill) Fisher, born in Georgetown, age 19 years; wd. June 30, 1862, at *White Oak Swamp*; disch. Nov. 27, 1862, disability; en. (2) in Co. B, 59th Regt. Mass. Inf. (3 years); mus. in Jan. 5, 1864; disch. Jan. 25, 1865, disability; died Feb. 12, 1865, in Rowley, of disease contracted in service; buried in Byfield Parish; left a widow.
31. (18) Richard Russell Foster, son of Philemon C. and Hannah (Pickard) Foster, born in Ipswich, Nov. 11, 1842; re-en. Dec. 22, 1863; pro. corp. and sergt.; capt'd May 15, 1864, and was in Andersonville and other Southern prisons for about ten months; disch. June 30, 1865, exp. of service.
32. (19) Joseph H. Frame, son of William and Margaret Frame, born in Montpelier, Vt., May 18, 1834; disch. Sept. 6, 1862, disability; en. (2) in V. R. C.; mus. in July 25, 1864; disch. Nov. 17, 1865, order of War Dept.
33. (20) *Michael Gallagher, born in Ireland, age 23 years; wd. June 30, 1862, at *White Oak Swamp*; disch. Nov. 28, 1862, disability; en. (2) in V. R. C.; mus. in July 19, 1864; disch. May 4, 1865, exp. of service; died ——; unmarried.
34. (21) James H. Heath, born in Haverhill, age 18 years; re-en. Dec. 22, 1863; disch. June 30, 1865, exp. of service.
35. (22) *David Bradford Jellison, son of Moses and Dolly B. (Bradstreet) Jellison, born in Rowley July 2, 1843; wd. Sept. 17, 1862, at *Antietam*; pro. corp. and sergt.; re-en. Feb. 24, 1864; disch. June 30, 1865, exp. of service; died Jan. 18, 1869, in Haverhill; buried in Rowley; left a widow.
36. (23) *William Littlefield, son of Japheth and Lucy (McIntyre) Littlefield, born on Deer Isle, Me., age 42 years; died Sept. 15, 1862, at Newport News, Va.; left children.

37. [illegible] Edward W. Merrill, son of Edward W. and Sophia (Fowle) Merrill, born in Newburyport, Nov 15, 1827; wd. in thigh Sept. 17, 1862, at *Antietam;* disch. March 20, 1863, disability.

38. [illegible]25) *Luke Murphy, son of John Murphy, born in Salem, age 18 years; killed June 25, 1862, at *Fair Oaks;* unmarried.

39. 26) Edward Parker, son of Samuel and Mary Parker, born in New York City, age 27 years; disch. June 10, 1862, disability; en. (2) in Co. H, 3d Regt. Mass. H. Art. (3 years); mus. in Nov. 20, 1863; disch De[illegible], 1864, disability.

40. 27) Edward D. Saunders, son of Amos N. and Elizabeth (Pickard) Saunders, born in Rowley, Oct. 12, 1834; re-en. Dec. 22, 1863; disch. April 28, 1864, disability.

Enlistments in other organizations in 1861:

41. *Charles H. Sawyer, age 21 years; Co. B, 23d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Sept. 28, 1861, re-en. Dec. 3, 1863 (quota of Peabody); killed May 16, 1864, at *Drury's Bluff.*

42. Thomas B. Cressey, son of Richard and Dolly (Bradstreet) Cressey, born in Rowley, Oct. 16, 1804, Co. I, 23d Regt. Mass. Inf., mus. in Oct. 9, 1861; trans. June 1, 1864, to V. R. C.; re-en. in V. R. C., disch. Nov. 15, 1865, order of War Dept.

43. Walter C. Foster, son of Philemon C. and Eliza (Felton) Foster, born in Ipswich, July 28, 1836; Co. I, 23d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Oct. 15, 1861, quota of Ipswich; disch. Sept. 30, 1862, disability; en. (2) in Co. C, 19th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in March 31, 1864, (quota of West Newbury; pro. corp. for bravery in action; disch. June 30, 1865, exp. of service.

44. Zoeus W. Clark, son of Isaac and Catharine (Mahar) Clark, born in Pembroke, Me., June 23, 1839; Co. M, 3d Regt. Mass. Cav.; mus. in Oct. 19, 1861; pro. corp. and sergt. wd. and capt'd; in action June 3, 1863, at Clinton, La.; re-en. Feb. 19, 1864; pro. 1st lieut.; disch. Sept. 28, 1865, exp of service.

45. Levi N. Call, born in New Brunswick, Canada, age 18 years; Co. M, 3d Regt. Mass. Cav., mus. in Oct. 19, 1861; re-en. Feb. 19, 1864.

46. Samuel A. Haskell, son of Samuel and Harriet (Dickinson) Haskell, born in Rowley, Sept. 5, 1837; Co. M, 3d Regt. Mass. Cav.; mus. in Nov. 22, 1861; pro. corp. and sergt.; re-en. Feb. 19, 1864; disch. Sept. 28, 1865, exp. of service.

47. *Nathaniel B. Jellison, son of Moses and Dolly B. (Bradstreet) Jellison, born in Rowley Aug. 22, 1837, Co. M, 3d Regt. Mass. Cav; mus. in Nov. 22, 1861; disch. June, 1862; disability; en. (2) in V. R. C.; mus. in July 20, 1864, and honorably disch.; died July 9, 1870, in Rowley; left a widow and one child.

48. * Edward P. Cressey, son of Bradstreet and Sarah W. (Hooper) Cressey, born in Rowley July 20, 1836, Co K, 13th Regt. Maine Inf. (3 yrs.); en. Nov. 1, 1861; mus. in Dec. 13, 1861; disch. Jan. 15, 1864, disability, died Dec 31, 1873, in Rowley; left a widow.

The following-named men enlisted in the First Regiment Massachusetts Heavy Artillery for three years:

49. * Hiram Guilford, son of Nathaniel and Abigail Guilford, age 31 years, Co. D, mus. in Feb. 17, 1862; re-en. Feb. 22, 1864; died Oct. 17, 1864, at City Point, Va.; buried in Rowley; left a widow and one child.

50. * Nathaniel Downes, born in Rochester, N. H.; age 35 years; Co. L; mus. in Feb 20, 1862, disch. July 15, 1862, disability; died March 3, 1865, in Georgetown, of consumption; was married twice; left a large family by first wife

51. John Kneeland, Jr., son of John and Lydia (Peabody) Kneeland, born in Ipswich June 4, 1840, Co. L, mus. in Feb. 20, 1862; disch. Nov. 4, 1862, disability; re-en. (2) in Co. H, 3d Regt. Mass. Heavy Art., mus in Nov. 20, 1863, disch. Feb. 10, 1865, disability.

52. Lowell G. Wilson, son of Asa and Martha Blunt Wilson, born in Methuen March 26, 1838, Co. L; mus. in Feb. 20, 1862; disch. Feb. 20, 1865, exp. of service

The following enlisted in Co. A, First Battalion, Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, for three years, stationed at Fort Warren, Boston Harbor, Mass.:

53. James T[illegible]an, age [illegible] years, mus. in Feb 18, 1862.

54. Henry P. Bennett, son of Henry and Elizabeth W. (Chamberlain) Bennett, born in Rowley May 27, 1840, mus. in Feb. 22, 1862; disch Feb 27, 1[illegible], exp. of service.

55. Moses Bartlett, son of George and Elizabeth (Merrill) Bartlett born in Newburyport; age 23 years; mus. in Feb. 25, 1862; promoted corp., sergt., 1st sergt., and Feb. 18, 1864, 2d lieut.; disch. June 29, 1865, exp. of service.

56. * Joseph W. Clark, son of Edward and Sarah (Tucker) Clark, born in Ipswich; age 32 years; mus. in Feb. 25, 1862; re-en. March 1, 1864; disch. Oct. 20, 1865, exp. of service; died June 16, 1887, in Salem; buried in Ipswich.

57. Benjamin G. Cressey, son of Richard and Mary E. (Harris) Cressey, born in Rowley Feb 8, 1841; mus. in Feb. 25, 1862; disch. Feb. 29, 1865; exp. of service.

58. * George H. Farnam, son of Stephen and Susan (Smith) Farnam, born in Newburyport Sept. 13, 1831; mus. in Feb. 25, 1862; disch. Feb. 27, 1865; exp. of service; died March 20, 1885, in Rowley; left a widow.

59. William M. Hale, son of Daniel and Lydia (Merrill) Hale, born in Rowley Dec. 29, 1835; mus. in Feb. 25, 1862; promoted corp., sergt., and 1st sergt.; disch. Oct. 16, 1863, for promotion as 2d lieut. in 3d Regt. Mass. Heavy Art.; promoted Oct. 13, 1864, 1st lieut.; disch. Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.

60. Thomas W. Hicken, son of Thomas and Hannah (Reynolds) Hicken, born in Georgetown, Prince Edw. Id., June 1, 1837; mus. in Feb. 25, 1862; pro. corp. and sergt.; disch. Feb. 27, 1865, exp. of service.

61. Aubrey C. Nelson, son of David O. and Eunice T. (George) Nelson, born in Newbury, July 23, 1842; mus. in Feb. 25, 1862; disch. Oct. 8, 1862, order of War Dept.; en. (2) in Co. B, 2d Reg. H. Art. Mass. Vols. (3 years); mus. in July 29, 1863; disch. Sept. 3, 1865, exp. of service.

62. Charles B. Cressey, son of Richard and Mary E. (Harris) Cressey, born in Rowley, Sept. 19, 1843; mus. in Feb. 26, 1862; disch. Feb. 27, 1865, exp. of service.

63. Moses Dole, son of Sewell and Jane M. (Knight) Dole, age 18 years; mus. in Feb. 27, 1862; re-en. March 1, 1864; disch. Oct 20, 1865, exp. of service.

The following enlisted in Company H, Thirty-second Regiment Massachusetts Infantry, for three years, and were mustered in August 11, 1862:

64. * Benjamin W. Pingree, son of Benjamin B. and Hannah (Patch) Pingree, born in Haverhill, Aug. 24, 1841; wagoner; died Dec. 14, 1862, at Falmouth, Va.; unmarried.

65. Gorham B. Hardy, son of Silas and Sarah (Savory) Hardy, born in Dracut, Dec. 24, 1826; (quota of North Andover) wd. Dec. 13, 1862, at *Fredericksburg;* trans. April 10, 1864, to Vet. Res. Corps; disch. Jan. 1, 1865, order of War Dept.

66. Hiram Kneeland, son of Hiram R. and Rhoda (Kneeland) Kneeland, born in Rowley, July 12, 1841; re-en. Jan. 5, 1864; wd. and a pris. of war in Andersonville; disch. June 29, 1865, exp. of service.

The following were enlisted in Company K, Fortieth Regiment Massachusetts Infantry, for three years, and mustered in September 3, 1862.

67. Charles A. Riggs, age 19 years, corp.; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service.

68. * Alvin T. Conant, son of Joseph and Ruth (Guilford) Conant, born in Ipswich, age 35 years; died Oct. 16, 1863, at Folly Island, S. C.

69. Cyrus W. Conant, son of William F. and Martha (Perley) Conant, born in Ipswich, age 25 years; disch. ————, disability.

70. George W. Conant, son of Joseph and Anna (Foster) Conant, born in Ipswich, age 33 years; disch. Feb. 6, 1864, disability.

71. * Proctor S. Dwinnells, son of Jacob and Dorothy (Rogers) Dwinnells, born in Newbury, May 31, 1831; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service; died Oct. 20, 1874, in Georgetown, Mass.; left a widow and children.

72. Cyrus Foster, son of Philemon and Abigail (Hobbs) Foster, born in Ipswich, age 39 years; disch. March 25, 1864, disability.

73. George A. Francis, age 21 years; trans. Dec. 8, 1862, to Bat. K, 4th Regt. U. S. Art.

74. William H. Hanson, age 21 years; disch. Feb. 25, 1863, disability.

75. David O. Nelson, son of Isaac and Sybil (Rice) Nelson, born in Winthrop, Me., March 24, 1819; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service.

76. George W. Poole, son of James D. and Nancy (Burrill) Poole, age 23 years; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service.

77. David A. Reed, son of Philip and Priscilla N. (Saunders) Reed, born in Newburyport, June 3, 1845; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service.

78. * Philip Reed, son of Richard M. and Susan (Stackpole) Reed, born in Newburyport, age 39 years; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service; died Sept. 1, 1874, in Rowley; left a widow and children.
79. Robert D. Ricker, son of Ira and Hannah (Downs) Ricker, born in Gloucester, Aug. 31, 1826; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service.
80. Moses S. Saunders, son of Amos N. and Elizabeth (Pickard) Saunders, born in Rowley, March 9, 1841; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service.
81. Alonzo M. Spiller, son of Daniel E. and Sarah (Emerson) Spiller, born in Rowley, March 30, 1834; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service.
82. Alfred G. Worthley, son of Jonathan and Mary (Favor) Worthley, born in Bradford, Vt., May 30, 1820; trans. Feb. 10, 1865, to Vet. Res. Corps; disch. July 12, 1865.

The following enlisted August 18, 1862, for nine months in the Forty-eighth Regiment Massachusetts Infantry. They were mustered in September 24, 1862. This regiment was in the First Brigade, First Division, Nineteenth Army Corps, was stationed in Louisiana, took part in the siege and capture of Port Hudson, La., May 18 to July 9, 1863, and the engagement, July 13, 1863, at Donaldsonville, La.

83. Calvin R. Titcomb, son of Solomon and Eliza G. (Woodman) Titcomb, born in Newburyport, March 1, 1839; Co. D, sergt.; pro. May 1, 1863, first sergt.; in the Port Hudson campaign to May 23, 1863; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service.
84. George B. Blodgette, son of Sherburne C. and Mary (Cressey) Blodgette, born in Georgetown, Dec. 6, 1845; Co. D, corp.; in the Port Hudson campaign as corp. of color-guard, and taken pris. in action July 13, 1863, at Donaldsonville, La.; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service.
85. * Joseph B. Hale, son of Daniel and Lydia (Merrill) Hale, born in Rowley, Nov. 18, 1840; Co. B, corp.; died July 16, 1863, at Baton Rouge, La.; unmarried.
86. Ezra Hale, Jr., son of Ezra and Rebecca (Adams) Hale, born in Newburyport, Feb. 1, 1845; Co. B, corp.; in the Port Hudson and Donaldsonville campaigns; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service; en. (2) in Co. A, First Batt'n Mass. H. Art. (3 years); mus. in Nov. 17, 1863, corp.; disch. Oct. 20, 1865, exp. of service.
87. Charles R. Todd, son of James P. and Lydia M. (Gerrish) Todd, born in Rowley, July 25, 1843; Co. D, corp.; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service.
88. Lewis H. Hale, son of Ezra and Rebecca (Adams) Hale, born in Newburyport, Jan. 31, 1843; Co. B; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service; en. (2) in Co. A, First Batt'n Mass. H. Art. (3 years); mus. in Nov. 17, 1863; disch. Oct. 20, 1865, exp. of service.
89. Bartlett Kelley, son of Patrick and Mary (Conley) Kelley, born in Boston, July 21, 1847; Co. D; severely wd. May 27, 1863, in an assault on Port Hudson, La.; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service.
90. * David H. Kneeland, son of Hiram R. and Rhoda (Kneeland) Kneeland, born in Rowley, May 9, 1843; Co. D; in the Port Hudson and Donaldsonville campaigns; disch. Sept. 3, 1863; exp. of service. En. (2) in Co. D, 1st Regt. Mass. H. Art. (3 years); mus. in July 20, 1864 (quota of Northampton); disch. Aug. 16, 1865, exp. of service; died June 6, 1884, in Ipswich; buried in Rowley.
91. Edward Millett, son of Joshua and Deborah (Howe) Millett, born in Rowley, March 27, 1821; Co. D; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service.
92. * George D. Millett, son of Edward and Lucinda (Dodge) Millett, born in Ipswich, Nov. 5, 1845; Co. D; in the Port Hudson and Donaldsonville campaigns; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service; died Oct. 12, 1869, in Rowley; unmarried.
93. Greenleaf A. Pickard, son of James and Mary (Foster) Pickard, born in Loudon, N. H., Oct. 10, 1844; Co. D; in Port Huron and Donaldsonville campaigns; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service; en. (2) in Co. H, 3d Regt. Mass. H. Art. (3 years); mus. in Nov. 20, 1863; disch. Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
94. * James A. Potter, son of Edward H. and Sarah A. (Prescott) Potter, born in Rowley, Oct. 17, 1845; Co. D; killed May 27, 1863, in an assault on Port Hudson, La.; unmarried.
95. * James Tibbetts, son of William and Mary Tibbetts, born in Wolfborough, N. H., age 44 years; Co. D; died May 16, 1863, in Baton Rouge, La.; left a widow and three children.
96. John F. Titcomb, son of Solomon and Eliza G. (Woodman) Titcomb, born in Newburyport, May 1, 1828; Co. D; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service; en. (2) in Co. H, 60th Regt. Mass. Inf. (100 days); mus. in July 23, 1864, corp; disch. Nov. 30, 1864, exp. of service.

Other men were in the nine months' service as follows:

97. Ignatius S. Dodge, son of Phineas and Sophia (Chaplin) Dodge, born in Rowley, Aug. 31, 1836; Co. E, 50th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Oct. 18, 1862 (quota of Topsfield); detailed as member of the band of Third Brigade, First Division, Nineteenth Corps; in the Port Hudson campaign; disch. Aug. 24, 1863, exp. of service.
98. Leach Clark, son of Ichabod and Esther D. Clark, born in Leroy, N. Y., age 25 years; 1st lieut., Co. K, 48th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Nov. 1, 1862 (quota of Boston); in the Port Hudson and Donaldsonville campaigns; disch. Sept 3, 1863; exp. of service; en. (2) in Co. H, 3d Regt. Mass. H. Art. (3 years); mus. in Nov. 20, 1863; disch. Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.

Enlistments for three years:

99. Lyman Whittier, son of Moses T. and Julia (Hobson) Whittier, born in Rowley, Dec. 31, 1841; Co. B, 1st Batt'n Mass. H. Art.; mus. in Oct. 11, 1862; disch. June 29, 1865, exp. of service.
100. William H. Fisher, age 28 years; 15th Bat. Mass. L. Art.; mus. in Dec. 11, 1862; no record of discharge.
101. John O'Neal, age 23 years; 15th Bat. Mass. L. Art.; mus. in Dec. 11, 1862. Deserted Dec. 24, 1862.
102. Frank Newell, age 22 years; 15th Bat. Mass. L. Art.; mus. in Feb. 17, 18 3. Deserted Feb. 1, 1864.
103. Charles W. Rogers, son of Eben P. and Elizabeth (Woodman) Rogers, born in Rowley, Feb. 3, 1839; Co. A, 1st Batt'n Mass H. Art.; mus. in May 9, 1863; disch. Oct. 20, 1865, exp. of service.
104. Edward Welch, age 19 years; Co. C, 32d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Aug. 19, 1863; disch. May 22, 1865, order of Dept.
105. William Thede, age 21 years; Co. G, 32d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Aug. 21, 186-; disch. June 29, 1865, exp of service.
106. Calvin L. Todd, son of Calvin L. and Mary J. (Todd) Todd, born in Rowley, May 23, 1847; Co. F, 3d Regt. Mass. H. Art.; mus. in Sept. 16, 1863; disch. Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
107. Thomas H. Risk, son of William and Sarah (Thomas) Risk, age 21 years; Co. A, 1st Batt'n Mass. H. Art., corp.; mus. in Nov. 17, 1863; disch. Oct. 20, 1865, exp. of service.

New enlistments in 1864:

108. David O. Nelson, Jr., son of David O. and Eunice T. (George) Nelson, born in Rowley, Feb. 17, 1846; Co. K, 40th Regt. Mass. Inf. (3 years); mus. in Jan. 4, 1864; trans. to Co. G, 24th Regt. Mass. Inf. (3 years); pro. corp.; disch. Jan. 20, 1866, exp. of service.
109. Levi Kneeland, son of Josiah M. and Lydia Kneeland, age 18 years; Co. B, 59th Regt. Mass. Inf. (3 years); mus. in Jan. 5, 1864; trans. June 1, 1865, to Co. B, 57th Regt. Mass. Inf. (3 years); disch. July 30, 1865, exp. of service; wd. in action.
110. Amos Goodhue, son of Moses and Rebecca Goodhue, born in Andover, age 31 years; Co. C, 59th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Jan. 14, 1864; trans. June 1, 1865, to Co. C, 57th Regt. Mass. Inf.; disch. July 30, 1865, exp. of service.
111. Robert B. Risk, son of William and Sarah (Thomas) Risk, born in Georgetown, age 23 years; 14th Bat. Mass. L. Art. (3 years), sergt.; mus. in Feb. 27, 1864; disch. June 15, 1865, exp. of service.
112. John L. Ewell, son of Samuel and Mary (Stickney) Ewell, born in Rowley, Sept. 4, 1840; Co. F, 60th Regt. Mass. Inf. (100 days), corp.; mus. in July 20, 1864; disch. Nov. 30, 1864, exp. of service.
113. Andrew Ellsworth, son of Simeon and Hannah (Jewett) Ellsworth, born in Ipswich, July 7, 1847; Co. H, 60th Regt. Mass. Inf. (100 days); mus. in July 23, 1864; disch. Nov. 30, 1864, exp. of service; en. (2) in Co. C, 1st Batt'n Mass. H. Art.; mus. in Feb. 14, 1865; disch. June 24, 1865, exp. of service.
114. Daniel W. Dresser, son of Daniel and Alice (Cook) Dresser, born in Georgetown, July 24, 1844; 17th Unat. Co. Mass. Inf. (100 days); mus. in Aug. 5, 1864; disch. Nov. 12, 1864, exp. of service.
115. Benjamin S. Nelson, son of George M. and Eliza M. (Dodge) Nelson, born in Georgetown, June 4, 1846; 17th Unat. Co. Mass. Inf. (100 days); mus. in Aug. 5, 1864; disch. Nov. 12, 1864, exp. of service, en. (2) in same company for 1 year; mus. in Nov. 13, 1864, corp. (quota of Haverhill); disch. June 30, 1865, exp. of service; afterwards se. in U. S. Army.

116. William H. H. Spiller, son of Daniel E. and Sarah (Emerson) Spiller, born in Topsfield, Nov. 12, 1846; 17th Unat. Co. Mass. Inf. (hundays), mus. in Aug. 5, 1864; disch. Nov. 12, 1864, exp. of service, en (2d) in Co. F, 1st Batt'n Mass. H. Art. (1 year); mus. in Feb. 14, 1865; disch. June 24, 1865, exp. of service.

117. Alfred K. Blackinton, son of Oliver and Paulina (Bradstreet) Blackinton, born in Rowley Jan. 10, 1844; Co. H, 6th Regt. Pa. Cav. (3 years), mus. in Aug. 7, 1864; disch. June 5, 1865, exp. of service.

118. Jacob Dwinells, son of Jacob and Dorothy (Rogers) Dwinells, born in Rowley, June 28, 1838; Co. M, 4th Regt. Mass. H. Art. (1 year); mus. in Aug. 19, 1864, disch. June 17, 1865, exp. of service.

119. * George A. Howe, son of George W. and Olive (Jewett) Howe, born in Ipswich, Aug. 29, 1843; Co. M, 4th Regt. Mass. H. Art. (1 year), mus. in Aug. 19, 1864; disch. Dec. 4 1864, disability; died Nov. 12, 1876, in Rowley, left a widow and three children.

120. Asa F. Howe, son of William F. and Susan E. (Potter) Howe, born in Rowley, Jan. 31, 1845; Co. M, 4th Regt. Mass. H. Art. (1 year); mus. in Aug. 22, 1864 (quota of Dracut); disch. June 17, 1865, exp. of service.

121. Alfred Chaplin, son of Jeremiah and Eunice (Stickney) Chaplin, born in Rowley, May 29, 1817; Co. M, 4th Regt. Mass. H. Art. (1 year); mus. in Aug. 25, 1864 (quota of Boxford); disch. June 17, 1865, exp. of service.

122. Lyman M. Cressey, son of Bradstreet and Susan W. (Hooper) Cressey, born in Rowley, January 23, 1846; Co. M, 3d Regt. Mass. H. Art. (3 years), corp., mus. in Aug. 26, 1864 (quota of Worthington), disch. June 17, 1865, exp. of service.

123. * Joseph W. Jellison, son of Moses and Dolly B. (Bradstreet) Jellison, born in Rowley, July 19, 1836; Co. C, 3d Regt. Maine Cav.; en and mus. in Oct. 18, 1861 (1 year); joined the regt. as a recruit Feb. 1, 1865; disch. Oct. 12, 1865, exp. of service; died Oct. 31, 1865, in Rowley, unmarried.

Three men enlisted in the Twenty-fifth Unattached Company Massachusetts Infantry (one year); mustered in December 9, 1864; discharged June 29, 1865, expiration of service, viz:

124. Benjamin J. Howe, son of George W. and Olive (Jewett) Howe, born in Ipswich, age 26 years.

125. George W. Millett, son of Joshua and Deborah (Howe) Millett, born in Rowley, May 2, 1826.

126. John P. Millett, son of Joshua and Deborah (Howe) Millet, born in Rowley, Sept. 15, 1839.

Enlistments in 1865:

127. George H. Dresser, son of Daniel and Alice (Cook) Dresser, born in Newburyport, January 18, 1847; Co. C, 1st Bat. Mass. H. Art.; mus. in Feb. 14, 1865 (1 year), disch. June 24, 1865; exp. of service.

128. Timothy A. Emerson, son of Timothy W. and Mary (Conant) Emerson, born in Rowley, April 29, 1845; Co. C, 1st Bat. Mass. H. Art.; mus. in Feb. 14, 1865 (1 year); disch. June 24, 1865, exp. of service.

129. Daniel S. Todd, son of Calvin L. and Mary J. (Todd) Todd, born in Rowley, Nov. 21, 1848; Co. F, 1st Bat. Mass. H. Art.; mus. in Feb. 18, 1865 (1 year); disch. June 24, 1865, exp. of service.

130. Richard R. W. Cheny, son of John C. and Mary S. (Perley) Cheny, born in Rowley, Dec. 25, 1848; Co. D, 62d Regt. Mass. Inft. (1 year), mus. in March 4, 1865; disch. May 9, 1865, exp. of service.

131. Noah Speight, age 18 years, 1st Regt. N. C. Art.; mus. in March 13, 1865, on the quota of Rowley.

132. Caleb Williams, age 18 years; 1st Regt. N. C. Art.; mus. in March 18, 1865, on the quota of Rowley.

The town has filled its quota upon every call made by the President for troops, and a surplus of fourteen men remains to its credit. So Rowley stood at the end of the war!

The doings of the men at home in the dark days of the Civil War should be known to the generation then unborn. In this town the real Democrats, as well as the whole Republican party, did all in their power to aid enlistments and to care for the families of those who had become soldiers. All our citizens of foreign birth were loyal. Of the men who enlisted, probably there were as many of one political party as of the other.

But there were a few political Ishmaelites who claimed affiliation with the Democratic party; these favored the enemy. They styled themselves "copperheads." They were cowards, blatant and harmless. When our army met defeat and our men lay bleeding on the red field of war, these craven miscreants rejoiced. Such was the respect for law and order that they were unmolested.

From the beginning Rowley was a manufacturing as well as a farming town.

Many of the first settlers were weavers, and in connection with the fulling-mill, the production of cloth was long a profitable industry.

As early as 1680 ship-building was carried on at the warehouse landing by the Stewarts, who continued in this trade until they sold to Edward Saunders, about 1710. Saunders and his descendants continued the business for more than a century. About 1813 Capt. Nathaniel Perley built a vessel of ninety tons measurement, on Rowley common, one mile and a half from the river. This ship was named "Country's Wonder," and was drawn to the river in one day, by more than one hundred yoke of oxen. At the head of the warehouse road the teamsters stopped for lunch and Capt. Perley emptied a barrel of old Jamaica rum into the Saunders well that all might drink.

Deacon Thomas Mighill had a malt-kiln as early as 1645.

Tanneries were established here within a few years after the settlement. In 1800 there were nine tanners in town, and in 1839 about six hundred cords of bark were brought by ship.

Since the railroad passed through the town (1840) a gradual change has been going on in the farming interests—few oxen are now kept; less land under cultivation; less proportional profit in old style farming; less farmers.

The manufacture of boots and shoes was begun here by Abraham Jewett about 1703. He continued in the business to the time of his death, 2d of November, 1722. Among his old papers is this memoranda:

"The two sides of leather which I had of Capt. Osgood, Salem, Decem: 31: 1717; I waid Janu: 6: and they waid but 17 p^d and half, one 7 p^d: one 10 p^d and I left 01—14—00 in money for them: they came to 1—6—3: there is due me from Capt. Osgood 0—7—9."

This business so begun was continued by various persons to the present century, and to Moses Dole, who, with his son, Lewis H. Dole, continued it to our day.

To-day F. W. Henderson & Co. are by far the largest manufacturers. Wm. C. Foster, John F. Todd and D. N. Prime & Sons are also engaged in the business. The total value of the yearly product of these four manufacturers is about $200,000.

Within a few years the manufacture of *heels* and *rands* has been largely carried on here. So far as the total disbursements for local labor is concerned this exceeds any industry in town. F. L. Burke has the most employees. The total value of his average yearly product is about $100,000. Milton Ellsworth and S. A. Boynton are also engaged largely in this business.

The manufacture of *inner-souls* is carried on by Bernard Damon.

Henry P. Boynton, John Boynton, Timothy W. Emerson, George Kimball, D. N. Prime & Sons, and Jeremiah M. Todd have general stores. Albert E. Bailey has a well filled drug-store. George E. Daniels has built up a good business in the manufacture of common-sense wagons and farmers' carts.

THE GLEN MILLS.—The grist-mill erected by Thomas Nelson and the fulling-mill erected by John Pearson became the sole property of John Pearson, Jr., and continued in the Pearson family until purchased by Samuel Dummer, father of the present owner, Nathaniel N. Dummer, in 1820. Mr. Dummer, Sr., introduced the carding of rolls to supply the county demand, also the manufacture of snuff. Since 1856 the milling of grain exclusively has been carried on by N. N. Dummer, and the mills now include not only the machinery and fixtures of all first-class establishments of this kind, but many original and important processes not elsewhere adopted.

The mills are now driven by three turbine wheels and a sixty horse-power engine. They have elevator capacity for fourteen thousand bushels of grain, beside storage-room for manufactured products. These products include almost everything produced from cereals for table use.

TOWN RECORDS AND TOWN CLERKS.—The town records of Rowley are very full and complete. Not a leaf is missing from the books containing the entries of births, marriages and deaths. All the births, intentions of marriage, marriages and deaths, from 1639 to 1844, have been lately copied, indexed and bound in two volumes.

The record of the doings of the town is contained in eight volumes.

The clerks have been as follows:

John Miller	1639–40
Francis Parrat	1641–55
John Trumble	1656; Fifth Month, 1657, died in office
Thomas Leaver	1657–82
Joseph Boynton	1683–86
Samuel Platts	1687–89
Robert Greenough	1690–93
Thomas Nelson	[1]1694–96
Joseph Boynton	1697–1700
Samuel Platts	1701–18
Thomas Lambert	1719–54
Humphrey Hobson	1755; August, 1773, died in office
Thomas Mighill	August, 1773–99
Joshua Jewett	1800–21
Thomas Gage	1822–37
Oliver Blackinton	1838–41
Nathaniel Mighill	1842; August, 1845, died in office
Daniel N. Prime	August, 1845–46
John Proctor	1847–48
Thomas E. Payson	1849–52
John S. Prime	1853–82
Albert E. Bailey	1883–85
Benjamin P. Mighill	1886

[1] The list of clerks prior to 1694 is given as correctly as the records will permit, but is believed to be incomplete.

POST-OFFICE DEPARTMENT,
OFFICE OF THE FIRST ASSISTANT POSTMASTER-GENERAL.
Washington, D. C., July 31, 1886.

SIR:—Complying with your request of May 28, 1886, I transmit herewith the history of the post-offices of Rowley and Byfield, Essex County, Massachusetts.

Very respectfully,
A. E. STEVENSON,
First Assistant Postmaster-General.

GEORGE G. BLODGETTE, ESQ., Rowley, Mass.

POST-OFFICE AT ROWLEY, ESSEX COUNTY, MASS.

Postmaster.	*Date of Appointment.*
James Smith	December 14, 1806
Edward Smith	March 16, 1825
Frederick Lambert	November 11, 1829
Benjamin H. Smith	March 17, 1835
Oliver Blackinton	August 23, 1847
Richard Herbert	November 17, 1851
Joseph Johnson	December 21, 1853
Oliver Blackinton	March 28, 1854
Ezekiel Bailey	May 12, 1854
Thomas B. Cressey	April 18, 1861
J. S. Todd	April 19, 1869
Frank E. Jackson	April 13, 1881
Albert E. Bailey	January 27, 1886

BYFIELD.

Benjamin Coleman	January 11, 1826
Samuel W. Stickney	April 11, 1827
Benjamin Coleman	May 26, 1828
Martin Root	April 1, 1847
Henry Durant	May 3, 1851
George C. Lincoln	September 23, 1852
Paul Titcomb	June 23, 1853
Samuel S. Moody	July 5, 1854
Benjamin Pearson	March 1, 1862
Harriet L. Moody	March 30, 1868
Justin O. Rogers	October 17, 1873

From Rowley, as originally incorporated, has been set off Bradford (then including Groveland) in 1675, Boxford in 1685 and Georgetown in 1838, while the Bradstreet, Hammond and Harris farms were annexed from Ipswich in 1784. For many years the population has been about twelve hundred.

AGGREGATE OF POLLS, PROPERTY, TAXES, ETC., MAY 1ST, 1886.

Number of polls for taxation	360
Tax on each	$2 00
Total value of personal property	87,441 00
Total value real estate	466,782 00
Total valuation	554,223 00
Increase in valuation	8,789 00
Total tax assessed for 1886	7,359 33
Rate per thousand	12 00
Number of tax-payers	602
Number of persons paying only poll tax	114
Number of persons paying tax on property	488
Number of horses	228
Number of cows	394
Number of sheep	27
Number of other neat cattle	115
Number of swine	90
Number of dwelling-houses	279
Number of acres of land for taxation	10,310

The following is a list of all persons qualified to

vote in the town of Rowley, November 2, 1886, as certified by Milton Ellsworth, Francis D. Henderson, George F. Kimball and Benjamin P. Mighill, registrars.

Adams, Edwin H
Adams, Frank H.
Adams, Lewis A
Adams, Warren H
Armitage, Stephen

Bailey, Albert E.
Bailey, Edward.
Bailey, Frederick
Bailey, George G.
Bailey, Willard L.
Bartlett, Benjamin W
Bartlett, Morrill C.
Bean, Josiah W
Bedee, Appleton G.
Bishop, Amos
Bishop, Arthur
Blackinton, Alfred K.
Blackinton, Jacob P.
Blackinton, Oliver A
Blodgette, George B.
Boyce, Frank A
Boynton, Henry
Boynton, Henry P.
Boynton, John.
Boynton, John E.
Bradstreet, Alfred K.
Bradstreet, Charles W
Bradstreet, Daniel W
Bradstreet, Frank W
Bradstreet, George H
Bradstreet, Moses
Bradstreet, Moses B
Bradstreet, Thomas.
Brown, George W
Brown, Judson W
Burbank, Joseph H
Burke, Solomon F L.
Burke, Tom Winthrop

Campbell, Augustine.
Carpenter, Almon E.
Carter, John Q A
Coby, Henry A.
Chadbourne, Lewis G.
Chaplin, Alfred.
Chaplin, Charles
Chapman, Benjamin D.
Chapman, John
Child, Thomas F
Chisholm, Willis E
Clark, John P
Collins, Charles.
Comats, Gilbert B
Cook, Arthur L.
Cook, Charles E.
Cook, James H
Cook, Jeremiah
Cressy, George H
Cressy, George J
Cressy, Moses B

Davenport, Byron S.
Davenport, John L.
Dillon, Edward.
Dodge, Ignatius S.
Dodge, Joseph D.
Dodge, Paul A.
Dodge, Phineas.
Dodge, Phineas A.
Dole, Charles.
Dole, Charles L.
Dole, Enoch L.
Dole, Frederick S.
Dole, John P.
Dresser, Charles P.
Dresser, Daniel W.
Dresser, George H.
Dresser, John M.
Dresser, Samuel P.
Dummer, Joseph N.
Dummer, Nathaniel N.
Dunn, Patrick.
Durgin, Samuel A.
Dwinnels, John E.

Edgerly, Charles R.
Ellsworth, Milton
Ellsworth, Simeon.
Elwell, William O.
Emerson, John W.
Emerson, Leslie M.

Foss, Benjamin W.
Foss, Joshua.
Foss, Joshua N.
Foss, William A.
Foster, Harland C.
Foster, Walter C.
Foster, William C.
Foster, William S

Gilday, John.
Gilday, Patrick.
Goodwin, George P.
Goss, Frank M.
Gove, Charles.
Hale, Charles W.
Hale, Daniel H.
Hale, Everett B.
Hale, Ezra.
Hale, James O.
Hale, Joshua.
Hale, Thaddeus.
Hale, Thomas
Hale, Thomas P.
Hale, William M.
Hardy, Gorham H.
Hardy, Gorham R.
Hazen, John G.
Hazen, Nathan T.
Henderson, Daniel S.
Henderson, Francis D
Herbert, Charles.
Hewson, Albert A.
Hooker, Thomas W
Hopkinson, Jonathan
Howe, Amos W
Hubbard, Calvin
Hutchinson, Lewis.

Jackson, Daniel K
Jackson, Frank L.
Jaques, Edwin L.
Jaques, Harry A.
Jellison, Nathan H.
Jewett, Edward W.
Jewett, Herbert.
Jewett, Herbert L.
Jewett, Mark.
Jewett, Moses C.
Jewett, Oscar A.
Johnson, George J.
Johnson, Joseph.
Johnson, Joseph (2d).
Johnson, Nehemiah.
Johnson, Samuel P.
Johnson, Walter N.
Johnson, William.
Johnson, William G.

Kelley, Bartlett.
Kelley, William W.
Kent, Jacob.
Keyes, Eben S.
Keyes, Henry E.
Kimball, Charles.
Kimball, Edward A.
Kimball, George.
Kimball, George F.
Kimball, William.
Kneeland, Hiram.

Lambert, George N.
Lambert, John.
Lee, William.
Littlefield, George D.
Littlefield, Moses F.
Lunt, Charles A.
Lunt, George A.

Maguire, Edward.
Mahony, Edward L.
Mahony, John.
Marshall, Charles E.
Marshall, John.
Marshall, John A.
Merrill, Byron J.
Merrill, Daniel.
Merrill, Frank.
Mighill, Benjamin P.
Mighill, Charles P.
Millett, Austin L.
Millett, Edward.
Millett, Edward A.
Millett, George W.
Millett, John P.
Millett, Joshua R.
Morrill, Edward W., Jr.

Nelson, David O.

O'Brien, Daniel.

Peabody, Willard.
Perley, Allen.
Perley, Charles H
Perley, David E
Perley, James M
Perley, William.
Pickard, Charles A.
Pickard, Josiah T.
Pickard, Moses.
Pike, Daniel P
Pike, John.
Pilsbury, Amos D.
Plummer, James T.
Poore, George F.
Potter, Amos B.
Potter, Benjamin B.
Potter, Edward H.
Prescott, George.
Prescott, George K.
Prime, Daniel B.
Prime, George B.
Prime, John S.
Prime, Samuel S.
Prime, Thomas.

Richards, John M.
Richardson, Edward.
Richardson, Edward H.
Ricker, Robert D.
Riley, William J.
Rogers, Charles W.
Rogers, Harry B.
Rogers, William H.
Rundlett, James P.
Rundlett, Oliver A.

Saunders, David.
Saunders, John P.
Searle, Elijah P.
Searle, Samuel.
Sheehan, John.
Smith, David E
Smith, Edward C.
Smith, Jacob J.
Smith, James H.
Smith, Walter E
Smith, Woodbury.
Spiller, Alonzo M.
Spiller, Thomas.
Spiller, William H. H.
Stewart, James C.
Stockbridge, Seth.
Stockbridge, A. J.
Swaney, William.

Taylor, Nathaniel C.
Tenney, Francis.
Tenney, John.
Tenney, John H.
Tenney, Silas M.
Thompson, Charles S.
Tilson, Jonathan.
Titcomb, Andrew.
Titcomb, Calvin R.
Titcomb, Calvin R., Jr.
Todd, Charles H.
Todd, Frank P.
Todd, Frederick.
Todd, James N.
Todd, Jeremiah M.
Todd, John F.
Todd, Joseph S.
Todd, Lewis C.
Todd, Moses.
Todd, Nathan.
Todd, William.
Travis, Thomas.

Vining, Frank M.

Walker, Charles H.
Walton, Augustus L.
Worthley, Alfred G.

In the beautiful valley Rogers selected, with Muzzy and Prospect Hills to the south, Bradford Street and Hunsley Hills to the west, and Ox Pasture Hill to the north, on the same house-lots the first settlers laid out, their houses embowered in trees, dwell the Rowley men of to-day. For centuries from out this peaceful vale Rowley's sons have gone forth to mingle in the turmoil of the world; some in foreign lands, some in busy marts of trade, some to build new homes in far-off States, some to delve in mines, some to stand, as on Zion's Hill, pointing in the Master's name the way to life eternal, some 'mid clash of arms and cannon's roar to breast the death-shots of their country's foe. Aged grandsires sitting by the open fire, snow bound, tell to willing ears the story of these wanderers, how they succeeded, suffered or succumbed.

When summer has clothed in green the good old town, her sons return to view again the home of their ancestors or of their youth; they bring their little ones to roam in field and wood and mossy glens; they tell again the story of some old rock or rugged oak, and at even-tide listen to the resounding sea, until the curfew warns them of closing day.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

REV. JOHN PIKE, D.D.

The character of a man depends much on his ancestors, and to sketch one's life, in such a manner as to have an appreciative knowledge of it, we must look back to the characteristics of his fathers. The Pikes, from the first settlement of the town of Newbury to which they came pioneers with Parker and his followers in 1635, have been noted for intelligence, liberality of opinions and independence of action. John and Robert were here in time to listen to Mr. Par-



Very truly your Pastor
John Pike.

ker's first sermon, delivered under the wide-spreading branches of a majestic oak, on the north side of the river, now called Parker, near where the bridge stands. They were men of education, and at once had influence in civil and religious affairs. They were the partisans of Winthrop for Governor as against Vane, and one of them went on foot to Cambridge, forty miles, to take the oath of a freeman and qualify to vote. They were men of ability and sterling virtues, ready to express and maintain their opinions with great power. Robert Pike, in Salisbury, was one of the first men of Massachusetts at that day, and more than a century in advance of his times. He resisted the dogmatic authority of the clergy and suffered excommunication from the church; he opposed the action of the General Court against the Quakers and was disfranchised; he condemned the witchcraft delusion with much efficiency; and in all these issues finally triumphed. Still all the time he was a Puritan of the Puritans, unshaken in his faith.

We should expect to find the descendants of such men, what we have found them, energetic, not appalled at difficulties, determined for what was right in their minds, and brave in defense of their sentiments. Such was Nicholas Pike, author of the first arithmetic published in America, the friend of George Washington, and the planter of the liberty tree in front of his residence in 1775, the branches of which arch State Street to this day. Such was Gen. Zebulon Montgomery Pike who explored the Rocky Mountains, gave name to Pike's Peak, and died in battle in the War of 1812–15. Such is the poet-soldier, Albert Pike, one of the heroes at Buena Vista of whom Gen. Taylor made honorable mention. The family has given us scholars, poets, clergymen, teachers, statesmen and jurists.

Of this family is Rev. John Pike, D.D., minister at Rowley for a whole generation; a high-minded gentleman and a devout Puritan, who has honored his profession and performed its duties under disabilities that would have long since retired a weaker mind. He was born in Newburyport, July 3, 1815, and is consequently seventy-four years old. His father, Richard Pike, a well-known and honored citizen, possessed of those Christian virtues that adorn and endear the individual, resided in the house, afterwards occupied by Hon. Caleb Cushing, on one of the finest streets of New England. His mother was Mary, daughter of Jacob Boardman, tender, benevolent and pious, who after her husband's death, devoted all her energies to secure for her son, a liberal education that should fit him for the highest usefulness in any calling he might pursue. It was by her, in that singularly Puritan home, yielding instruction in the Bible, the catechism and other books which secure clear thinking and correct living, such as formed the eminent characters in the early days of New England, that the lad's mind was moulded. Carefully she blended amusement and work, and he has borne the marks of gravity and mirthfulness, each in its own place, ever since. His school instruction was largely committed to Alfred W. Pike, an excellent classical scholar and a thorough teacher. By him he was fitted for college; and while under him the greater light of the Holy Spirit broke upon his mind, and led him to accept Jesus Christ as his Saviour. This was the pivotal point of his life.

He entered Bowdoin College in 1829, when Parker Cleaveland was at the height of his intellectual achievements and glory; and when the youthful poet, Longfellow, was entering upon his career as professor of modern languages. In college he was diligent and brilliant, with a character mature above his years. He was graduated in 1833, and the next day, with six others of his class, elected a member of the Phi Beta Kappa Society, and was afterwards made president of his class. Bowdoin College has honored him as among her distinguished sons. From 1863 to 1887, when he resigned, he was a member of the board of overseers, and served on the committee that secured for the college two valuable presidents. He was also on the committee for the reception of President Grant, when he honored the college by his presence at its commencement, and was himself honored by it, with one of its highest degrees. Dr. Pike has always kept up his interest in his *alma mater* which bestowed on him the title of D.D. in 1866. We may say the same of many other institutions of learning with which he has had connection. He has been a trustee of Dummer Academy since 1842, and for thirty-five years president of the board. He was also a trustee of the Theological Seminary at Hartford, Conn., for some years. To all endeavors to advance education from the primary school to the college he has lent a willing hand and an eloquent tongue.

Leaving college he soon commenced his theological studies, entering the Andover Seminary in 1834. Here a formidable obstacle was to be encountered. In his last year at Bowdoin his eyesight weakened, and that weakness had so increased that he was obliged to employ a young man to read to and write for him; nor was it ever fully restored, but finally ended in total blindness. So strongly, however, was he impressed that he must be about his Master's work, that he resolutely persevered, graduated with honor in 1837, and at once entered upon his calling.

His first engagement was, for a few weeks, at North Falmouth; but he was induced by the excellent families with which he became acquainted; the varied and abundant assistance in reading and writing given him; the remarkable healthfulness of the village; the beauty of its scenery, its seashore and forests; and the zealous religious feeling that prevailed, to remain there three years. In 1840 he accepted the call of the Congregational Church at Rowley to become their pastor, and there has been his life-work, so beautiful in its results and so pleasant in all its relations. The

year following he married Dehorah, only child of Hon. Daniel Adams, of Newbury, a lady every way adapted to the work which was before her. Carefully educated, of fine tastes and industrious habits, she continued the reading and writing for him; and thus was eyes and hands unto him. This pastorate at Rowley, we may not narrate in all its details; but this one fact he established, that the right man in the right place may continue his usefulness to old age or death. He had examples near at hand to follow, as Rev. Mr. Braman's, at Georgetown, and Rev. Dr. Withington's, at Newbury; but without such examples he was wedded to the Christian and Puritan idea, that when the minister accepts the pastorate, it is as much a life engagement as when he marries a wife. Thenceforth he belongs to the parish and the parish belongs to him; he is to serve the people, and the people to make due and proper returns therefor. He is to baptize, receive into communion, to marry, to teach the children, to counsel and encourage the adults, bury the dead, and stand by and assist them to the portals of heaven, unless first called to enter himself. All of this he has done, and in the doing had continuous reward. He has won the respect of the town and the affections of the people, so that now when blindness is upon him the little boys and girls even delight to hear him and listen to his pleasant words. We know of no man who has a more abiding place in the hearts of the community, or who has more formed the living generation by his labors among them and their parents. Widely known in the churches he has had many opportunities, in the almost half century of his busy life to go to more wealthy and fashionable parishes, but promptly he has returned answer: "It is not a thought to be entertained. Here are my people, faithful and true; and I am their servant in the Lord. So I promised to be, and so I shall remain to the end." That end came to him in 1868, when blindness made it necessary to terminate a pastorate of twenty-eight years, during which the church had a constant religious growth and many seasons of revival.

Since his resignation, not to be idle, or cease to act for the good of others, he has preached every Sunday for twelve years, at the house of correction in Ipswich, nor have his labors been in vain. His blindness, shutting out the light of the material sun seems to have given greater internal and spiritual illumination, which has fitted him for this later field of usefulness among what are termed the criminal and dangerous classes.

As a pulpit orator, Dr. Pike excelled. What he had to do he endeavored to do well. There was no lack of careful preparation. The end to be reached was to leave a thought in the mind that might germinate and bear fruit, rather than a word in the ear that would pass quickly away. He was always impressive. Say what his voice, his action suited to the words as the words were to the occasion that he left the imprint of ability and full confidence in his sincerity and love for souls. His sermons were frequently of a very high order, combining the logic of the bar, the rhetoric of the school, and that pathos that so becomes the pulpit. His election sermon before the legislature of 1857, and that delivered on the twenty-fifth anniversary of his settlement are good specimens of his work. He was frequently called on for sermons and addresses for special occasions.

We have called Dr. Pike a Puritan, a designation honorable and fitting. From the beginning he has been fully identified with the doctrines and ecclesiastical polity of the Congregational Churches of Massachusetts and the country. He has been longer connected with the Essex North Association than any other member, and with one exception is the oldest man in it; was a member of the National Council at Boston in 1865, and presided over the State Association of Ministers at Westfield. He has presided over many councils and conferences, in which he has not failed to urge upon the churches the value of the faith of their fathers. Conservative by nature and tender in action, he has been highly useful in reconciling churches and pastors, when at variance, and restoring fellowship between different churches. He was one of the actors whose labors terminated the division of the Congregationalists of Massachusetts into two religious bodies and reuniting the Boston and American Tract Societies. His voice has always been for peace and harmony where they could be had without a sacrifice of principle: hence he was an admirable presiding officer and his services were invaluable on committees and at councils. He was a member of the famous Storrs-Buddington council at Brooklyn, N. Y. It was also upon his report, at the general Association of Churches, at Lowell, that the Board of Ministerial Aid, which was afterwards chartered by the Commonwealth, was formed, and on the executive committee he has been ever since.

There is something very beautiful in the picture of such a life—the life of a village clergyman, whose praises are in all the churches, but whose home and heart are in his own parish; who can look around upon the fruits of his labors and be cheered in ripened age by the voices of friends and comforters who welcomed him to their firesides as children would a father, feeling that they are purer and wiser for his words and acts. For twenty-eight years he stood with and for them; and now when retired, afflicted, but not discouraged, blind, but cheerful, he has the respect, good wishes and love of all classes and all ages. As years gather the world narrows, and we think less of what is distant and more of home and immediate friends. May Dr. Pike be long spared to enjoy the calm twilight of a well spent life.

CHAPTER XCII.

ESSEX.

BY JOHN PRINCE.

Introductory—First English Residents (White, Bradstreet and Cogswell)—The Other and Earlier Settlers—Original Land-holder—An Early Inhabitant of Essex—Indian Cunning—Masconomo's Earliest Interview with the Elder Winthrop—Further English Settlers.

ALTHOUGH classed among the smaller towns of the county, this place may nevertheless take rank in historical interest and significance with some of the larger towns, and also with some of the cities.

Its ecclesiastical annals, its military record, and its progressive industrial development, furnish conspicuous examples of courageous resistance to the encroachments of prerogative in civil administration; of the sturdy, unyielding maintenance of the functions and independence of the separate parish and church organizations, which at an early and formative period materially helped to save New England Congregationalism from degenerating into virtual prelacy; of patriotic devotion to the common weal, unheedful of deprivation, exposure and personal danger, through all the alternating seasons of temporary triumph and disheartening defeat, in the different wars; and of patient endurance in manly toil, and of advancement in constructive skill, which in so many instances have secured worldly competence, and nurtured the steadfastness and reliability of character which are among the elements of the strength and prosperity of the nation.

Our people have been enabled to afford their sons the facilities for classical training and culture, which will readily recall some brilliant illustrations in mature scholarship and in legal and forensic ability.

From among the natives of this place have emanated two judges of the Court of Common Pleas, one of them of the colonial period; four judges of the Court of Sessions, one of them the chief justice; three judges of Probate, one of them of the colonial time; two college professors, besides one other of much distinction, who, though born in another part of the county, was the son of a native of Chebacco, of high repute as a physician, and for some time a surgeon in the Revolutionary army; six commissioned officers in the French and English War; seven commissioned officers in the Revolution, four of them of distinction; thirteen clergymen, nine of them college graduates, two of them doctors of divinity, and one a presiding elder; fourteen physicians, all regular graduates in medicine and surgery; eight members of the legal profession; two delegates to the State Constitutional Convention of 1780; two delegates to the State Convention of 1788, which ratified the Constitution of the United States; one delegate to the State Constitutional Convention of 1820; three State Senators, and one Senator of the United States.

A native citizen, who commanded a regiment at the siege of Louisburg, was a member of the colonial House of Representatives (sometimes called deputies) for fifteen years, and at one session was chosen Speaker of that body, but the Governor, actuated by political hostility, negatived the election in the exercise of a power then vested in the executive. Afterwards, under the administration of another incumbent, this citizen was elected for six consecutive years a member of the Governor's Council. Of the native members of the colonial Legislature from the first settlement, a full enumeration is not here attempted.

One native clergyman, a graduate of Harvard College, officiated a few years as chaplain at a garrison during the wars with the Indians.

Of the earlier resident clergymen not natives, one of whom was pastor here for forty-five years, and another for more than half a century, four were army chaplains, three of them serving as such in two wars —one in King Philip's war and in an expedition against Quebec, and two in the war between the English and French and in the American Revolution. Two of the present pastors of churches in the town were army chaplains during the late Civil War.

FIRST ENGLISH RESIDENTS—WHITE, BRADSTREET AND COGSWELL.—Dr. Crowell, in his history of Essex, designates 1634 as the date of the beginning of the settlement of this place. He states that in that year, "William White and Goodman Bradstreet removed toward Chebacco River." He then says: "History gives us no account of these two families." But whether these data were given on the authority of tradition or of some brief entry in the town records of Ipswich, is not mentioned.

Two different persons, each named William White, are alluded to in those records as immigrants to Ipswich, but no particulars are stated as to their first abiding place. Reference is likewise made to two families of the name of Bradstreet. One of them was the family of Simon, afterwards Governor Bradstreet. He "possessed a planting-lot in High Street," in Ipswich town, in 1638, and "seven acres on the hill on the north side of the river," in 1647. Before 1658, he had removed with his family to Andover. There is no reason to believe that he was ever at any time a resident of Chebacco. Of the other Bradstreet, some personal details will be found further along in these pages.

A William White came from England, in the ship Mary-and-John, in 1634, and, as is recorded of him, "first sat down at Ipswich." He removed to Newbury, in 1635, with several of his fellow passengers, among them Rev. Thomas Parker, Nicholas Noyes, (ancestor of Rev. Nicholas Noyes, of Salem, so active and bitter in the witchcraft trials of 1692), Henry Sewall, William White, William Moody and Richard

Kent. They left thus early to begin a new settlement, the General Court having in that year ordered the bounds of Ipswich and Quascacunquen (Newbury) to be laid out. From Newbury, William White removed to Pentucket, now Haverhill; of which place, with the latter name, he was one of the original founders, his signature being appended to the deed of conveyance, as a witness to the signatures, by mark, of the Indians, Passagus and Saggahew, who sold the land to the English settlers in 1642.

It is not impossible that he may have been the identical William White, the early immigrant to Chebacco, tarrying there but a short time. He had one son, John White, who died in 1668, at the age of twenty-nine, leaving a son John, who had fourteen children, of whose numerous posterity many are still living in various parts of the country, some of them very distinguished people. He married, as his second wife, in 1682, widow Sarah Foster, of Ipswich, stepmother of Reginald Foster, Jr., of Chebacco. He died in Haverhill, in 1690, at the age of eighty years.

The eminence in Essex known as White's Hill, is supposed to have been originally so called, from its having been at some time owned by a resident of that name, but whether an early or later resident is not indicated by any record.

In 1647, a William White sold to Ralph Dix, of Ipswich, a farm at Chebacco containing two hundred acres; and in 1691, Thomas White sold to William Goodhue, Jr., eighty-two acres, comprising house, orchard, plowing and pasture adjoining Mr. Cogswell's farm—probably the present Marshall farm, in the angle of the road on Northern Avenue. But whether Thomas White himself or a tenant had occupied the premises at the time of the sale, does not appear.

An immigrant named Humphrey Bradstreet came in the ship Elizabeth, from Ipswich, in England, in 1634, with his wife Bridget and four children, one son and three daughters,—John, Hannah, Martha and Mary; and there were subsequently born to them in this country, three more—a son and two daughters—Moses, Sarah, and Rebecca. This Humphrey was, I am satisfied, the Goodman Bradstreet who was one of the first two settlers mentioned.

Humphrey Bradstreet was made freeman, May 6, 1635, and was thereafter entitled to be called Mr. Previously, he was, of course, termed Goodman. He was evidently the Bradstreet who came to Chebacco, and, according to the Ipswich records, had a house lot granted to him, not long after his arrival, the precise locality of which, however, is not mentioned. Ten years afterwards, he had another house-lot granted him which was in the central or western part of Ipswich, and still later he owned a farm, which was subsequently annexed to Rowley; in which latter place he died in 1669, leaving several children, one of whom, Moses, became a physician.

The John Bradstreet, of Rowley, of whom it is mentioned in Winthrop's Journal, that he was whipped for having "familiarity with the Devil," was one of this Humphrey's sons. He was accused of having bewitched a dog, and the dog was hung as a witch. The witnesses against him were Francis Parat and wife, of Rowley, and William Bartholomew, of Ipswich; who testified that he told them that he had read in a book of magic, and that he heard a voice asking what work he had for him; and the voice answered, "Go make a bridge of sand over the sea; go make a ladder of sand up to heaven, and go to God and come down no more." It is supposed that Bradstreet had related to these witnesses what he had heard in a dream; and yet, upon that testimony, principally, he was held on a charge of witchcraft, and, according to Winthrop, publicly whipped.

Felt mentions that in 1652, for the same alleged offence "familiarity with the Devil," a person was sentenced at the court in Ipswich, to pay a fine of twenty shillings *or* be whipped; but he does not give the name of the culprit. He may have been the John Bradstreet referred to, and perhaps he chose to have the "charge" "scored" upon his back, rather than to pay cash down as a fine. But, alas! what a degradation, not only to him, but to his silly and credulous accusers and the barbarously deluded jury or magistrate.

John Cogswell, an ancestor of Ralph Waldo Emerson, Oliver Wendell Holmes, and many other distinguished persons, came from England in the year 1635, and early in 1636 settled in that part of Ipswich which is now the town of Essex. He at first resided for a short time in the central part of Ipswich, upon a grant of land of eight acres, which comprised what was afterwards the site of the Ipswich court-house. In Chebacco he had a grant of three hundred acres.

He was a native of Westbury, Wilts County, England, and had been an extensive manufacturer of broadcloths and other woolen fabrics, having inherited mills and other valuable property which had been owned in the family for two or three generations.

With his wife and seven children he sailed June 4, 1635, from Bristol, England, in the ship Angel Gabriel, on which he had embarked May 23d. Winds delayed the vessel, which touched at Milford Haven, in Wales, sailing finally from that port, June 22d. Arriving off the coast of Maine in August, she was cast away in a storm, at Pemaquid,—Mr. Cogswell and other voyagers, among them Captain Andrews, commander of the vessel, and his three nephews, John, Thomas and Robert Burnham, losing valuable personal property, though escaping with their lives.

The Angel Gabriel was of two hundred and forty tons burthen, and carried fourteen guns, of what calibre is not stated. She was strongly built, but a slow sailer. It is said that the famous Sir Walter Raleigh sailed in her, on two voyages from England to South America. She was of the quaint model and rig of

the time of Elizabeth and James I, and would have made a grotesque appearance by the side of one of our modern vessels.

Of the residence here of Mr. Cogswell's predecessors, White and Bradstreet, already mentioned, little is definitely known beyond the tradition that they had been the only white inhabitants of the place previous to his arrival. The precise localities of their original dwelling-houses cannot now be determined with certainty, and there are no descendants from them now living in Essex, at least none bearing either of their surnames.

John Cogswell died in 1669, at the age of seventy-seven. His daughter Hannah had married Cornelius Waldo, and from them descended Ralph Waldo Emerson, the sage of Concord.

THE OTHER AND EARLIER SETTLERS.—The first occupants of this region of whom we have any account, either oral or written, were, of course, those swarthy or bronze-complexioned people, who occasionally improved their appearance, as they thought, but horribly disfigured themselves, as we think, by grotesquely painting or staining their faces. They lived in huts called wigwams, and subsisted upon corn and by hunting and fishing, and dressed themselves principally in the skins of wild beasts.

If any of their descendants survive, they might trace their genealogy to a source as aristocratic as that of any other people on the globe, for they were not in any sense democratic, but were monarchists in their ideas of government, and believers in the distinctions of caste.

ORIGINAL LAND HOLDER.—An Indian chief named Masconomo, sometimes written Masconomet, who was called the Sagamore of Agawam, claimed the ownership of the land of this entire township. In the year 1638 he sold his right, or "fee," in the soil of Ipswich to John Winthrop, Jr., son of Governor Winthrop, for twenty pounds, which would be the equivalent of about one hundred dollars, as pounds are now reckoned.

AN EARLY INHABITANT OF ESSEX.—The words which I have italicized in his deed of conveyance, which is as follows, indicate that he was a resident of that portion of the territory of Ipswich called Chebacco. The town of Essex can therefore claim, upon the most indubitable record-evidence, that he was one of its primitive inhabitants, as well as its original proprietor.

MASCONOMO'S DEED.

"I Masconomet, Sagamore of Agawam, do by these presents acknowledge to have received of Mr. John Winthrop the sum of £20, in full satisfaction of all the right, property & claim I have, or ought to have, unto all the land lying & being in the Bay of Agawam, alias Ipswich, being so called now by the English, as well as *such land as I formerly reserved unto my own use at Chebacco*, as also all other land, belonging to me in these parts, Mr. Dummer's farm excepted only; and I hereby relinquish all the right and interest I have unto all the havens, rivers, creeks, islands, huntings and fisheries; with all the woods, swamps, timber, and whatever else is, or may be, in, or upon the said ground belonging: and I do hereby acknowledge to have received full satisfaction from the said John Winthrop for all former agreements, touching the premises & parts of them; and I do hereby bind myself to make good the aforesaid bargain and sale unto the said John Winthrop, his heirs and assigns forever, and to secure him against the title and claim of all other Indians and natives whatsoever. Witness my hand, 28th of June, 1638.

Masconomet his × mark.

"Witness hereunto, John Joyliff, James Downing, Thomas Catytimore, Robert Harding."

INDIAN CUNNING.—This Indian Sagamore, Masconomo (or Masconomet, as the name is here signed), and his associate sagamores, seem to have taken a utilitarian and politic view of religious subjects generally, and especially of the distinctive theological tenets of the English settlers.

Masconomo and four other chiefs or sagamores, for the sake of being defended against their enemies, the Tarratines, and other hostile tribes, placed themselves under the protection of the government of Massachusetts, and agreed to obey its laws and receive instruction in the Christian religion.

The questions propounded to them by the government authorities were nine in number.

The answers to two of them evince the wary, cautious instinct of the Indian, and his disinclination to commit himself too strongly upon points of doctrine. They show that he viewed such subjects mainly from the practical standpoint of his own personal self-interest:

"*Question 1st.*—Will you worship the only true God, who made heaven and earth, and not blaspheme?"

"*Answer.*—We do desire to reverence the God of the English and to speak well of Him, because we see He *doth better to the English* than *other gods do to others*."

"*Question 3d.*—Will you refrain from working on the Sabbath, especially within the bounds of Christian towns?"

"*Answer.*—It is easy to us,—we have *not much to do on any day*, and we can well rest on that day."

These replies could hardly be excelled by any civilized adept in adroit evasiveness.

MASCONOMO'S EARLIEST INTERVIEW WITH THE ELDER WINTHROP.—John Winthrop, Sr., in his journal, under date of June 13, 1630, while the ship "Arbella," in which he was a passenger, lay at anchor off Salem, near Beverly shore, which he called "the land of Cape Ann," has this entry:

"Lord's day, 13.

"In the morning, the sagamore of Agawam and one of his men came aboard our ship and staid with us all day."

On the previous day, Saturday, the 12th, Winthrop had landed at Salem, but at night returned to the ship.

The acquaintance between him and Masconomo, originating at that time, may have been one of the circumstances which led to the subsequent settlement at Ipswich, by John Winthrop, Jr., the Governor's son, and his ultimate purchase of the territory of Agawam from that Indian chief.

FURTHER ENGLISH SETTLERS.—Several other immigrants became residents of this place not long after Mr. Cogswell took up his abode here, but the dates of their arrival can be now only approximately known.

In the town records of Ipswich, for the year 1648, there is a list of one hundred and sixty-one persons who subscribed the sums severally set against their names, as an annual contribution to a fund for expenses of military instruction, to be paid to Major Denison "so long as he shall be their leader." Eight of this number were at that time undoubtedly residents of Chebacco, viz.: John Burnham, 4s.; Thomas Burnham, 3s.; William Cogswell, 4s.; John Choate, 5s.; Robert Crosse, 4s.; William Goodhue, 3s.; Thomas Low, 2s.; William Story, 2s. Probably the following, in the same list, were also inhabitants of this place at that time: John Andrews, Jr., 3s.; John Perkins, Jr., 5s.

More persons of the name of Burnham than those of any other family surname, have inhabited the place from a very early period; and they have all descended from the elder two of the three Burnham boys or youths, who were brothers, and who came from Norwich, England, in 1635, the first two mentioned, John and Thomas, settling here, and the youngest, Robert, residing in Chebacco about nine years, then at the age of twenty removing to Boston, where he was married to Frances Hill, and after ten years' residence there removing, in the year 1654, to Dover, N. H., where he settled and left numerous descendants. He died, however, at the residence of his brother Thomas in Chebacco, June 13, 1691, at the age of sixty-seven. His will, or an abstract of it, is on file with the court records in Salem.

CHAPTER XCIII.

ESSEX—*Continued*.

Interesting Incidents, from the First Settlement to the Present Time—Important in General—Early Modes of Tillage—Fence Masters of the Ipswich Commons—Sale of Masconomo.

FARMING.—The tilling of the soil was, of necessity, the first industrial pursuit of the majority of the early residents of this, as of the other New England settlements generally.

FISHING was their next occupation, as they drew their subsistence in part from the rivers and the sea; and this they were not long content to pursue merely with the use of single hooks and lines. So we find that a more comprehensive and expeditious method of fishing both were adopted at an early date, as appears by the following extract from the Ipswich town records.

"*December* 29th, 1634. It is consented unto that John Perkins, junior, shall build a ware [fish-trap] upon the river of Quasycung, [now Parker river, Newbury] and enjoy the profits of it, but in case a plantation shall there settle, then he is to submit himself unto such conditions as shall by them be imposed."

The northern boundary of Agawam, or Ipswich, which had been purchased of Masconomo, was not then positively determined. Some claimed that the territory extended as far as Parker River. In a year or two from this time, a settlement was begun at a place called Quascacunquen, now Newbury. The General Court, in 1635, ordered that the bounds of Ipswich and Quascacunquen be definitely laid out; and in the same year William White, who came from England in 1634, and, according to the records, lived for a short time at Ipswich, removed northward, in company with Rev. Thomas Parker, Nicholas Noyes, Henry Sewall, William Moody and Richard Kent, and settled what is now the town of Newbury. Instead of the Indian cognomen the name of Parker was given to the river, in compliment to the clergyman of the new settlement.

John Perkins, Jr., surrendered his privilege upon that river, in accordance with the terms on which it was originally given, said river being no longer a hypothetical boundary of Ipswich, and the new settlers claiming the control of the stream, as within the limits of their grant.

Mr. Perkins, in 1636, was granted the right to build another ware, and also "5 and 40 acres of ground lying beyond Chebacco river, right against the Ware, bounded by the river on the northwest and by a swamp on the southeast." There was liberty granted to build a ware "which he hath built and is to enjoy the profits for 7 years, beginning 1636, for the which he is to sell alewives he there has taken at 5s. per 1000, according to his agreement with the town expressed in the town book."

It is recorded later that the "5 and 40 acres and the wares the said John Perkins hath sold to Mr. John Cogswell, his heirs and assigns."

John Perkins, Jr., was manifestly a stirring, enterprising inhabitant.

The records of Ipswich still further say: "John Perkins, Jr., is possessed of an Island having on the south the Chebacco river, on the north an arm of the same running between the said Island and another Island, called Hog Island, bounded east by Chebacco Bay, west by a meeting of many brooks coming out of the marshes."

Precisely when fishing began to be carried on in boats either upon the river or on the ocean, cannot now be known, but it was probably at an early period—as early, perhaps, as the building, in this place, of the first boat; though exactly when that was nobody can tell.

In 1721 three men from Chebacco, Gifford[1] Cogswell, Jacob Perkins and James Smith bought of John Babson, of Sandy Bay, twenty-seven acres of land at Straitsmouth. The land had originally been granted to Babson, who was the earliest settler in that region, "to sett up fishing upon."

Hon. John J. Babson, one of his descendants, says of the purchasers: "These were probably the Chebacco fishermen, concerning whose visits to the Cape tradition yet preserves remembrance, though it is said that fishermen from that place were accustomed, at an early date, to frequent the shores of the Cape for the purpose of landing and drying their fish. One circumstance keeps alive the memory of Babson and the Chebacco fishermen. The former, or some member of the family, was attacked one day by a bear, and, after a terrible struggle with his antagonist, succeeded in slaying him with a knife. He then flayed the animal, and spread out his skin to dry upon the rocks near the sea, at the end of a neck of land where it was seen by the fishermen, who gave the place the name of Bearskin Neck."[2]

The Chebacco men, after occupying the land for fishing purposes for about twenty years, sold it to Joshua Norwood, who settled upon it with his family. His wife was Elizabeth Andrews, daughter of Ensign William Andrews, of Chebacco.

Codfish.—At one time there were fourteen vessels, owned in Essex, employed in the cod-fishery, though not one is now fitted out from this place for that business.

Shell Fish.—The digging of clams, for bait and for food, has for a long time been a source of considerable income to a portion of the inhabitants of this place.

As early as the year 1763, the commoners of the town of Ipswich issued a regulation that no more clams should be taken from the flats than might be necessary for the use of the people of the town, and for supplying vessels engaged in fishing. The stipulated allowance was at the rate of one barrel for each of a crew to the Newfoundland banks, and a proportionably less quantity to boats in the bay, which made shorter trips.

The prices obtained have increased somewhat within a half century, dressed clams, so-called—that is, the clams taken from the shell—bringing, in 1837, from two dollars and fifty cents to three dollars per barrel, exclusive of the cost of barrel and salt; while during the year from February 15, 1886, to February 15, 1887, the net price realized was upwards of four dollars. The aggregate amount of sales from Essex during the last named period was twelve thousand eight hundred dollars.

Very recently, a controversy has arisen between residents of Ipswich and residents of Essex, as to which of these two towns has lawful jurisdiction over a portion of the contiguous territory where the clams are dug.

At a special town-meeting held in Essex, October 3, 1887, the following citizens were chosen as a committee to take such action as may be needful on account of this controversy: Wm. Howe Burnham, George J. Sanger, Enoch B. Kimball, Daniel W. Bartlett and Moses Knowlton; and money was appropriated to defray the expenses of any litigation necessary to defend the rights of the town and settle the division line between Essex and Ipswich, and decide to which town belong certain clam-flats, at the present time and prospectively of great value. The territory in question is said to contain about one hundred and fifty acres.

Malting or Brewing.—As, in accordance with the English custom, everybody drank beer, coffee and tea being then unknown in the colonies, the business of a maltster was established early in most of the settlements. In many townships one person of this trade was probably sufficient for the inhabitants of the place, who would take their barley or other grain to his establishment to have it malted, as they took their corn to the grist-mill to have it ground, the maltster receiving his compensation, as did the miller, by taking toll.

At the beginning of the eighteenth century, and probably much earlier, a malt-house stood upon the premises, now owned and occupied by Daniel Winthrop Low, the business having been carried on by one or more of his early ancestors. This fact concerning that locality is derived from the tradition of the family.

OTHER TRADES.

House-wrights, blacksmiths, rope-makers, tailors and shoemakers (the latter sometimes termed "cord-winders" in the Ipswich records), were prime necessities in the new settlements, and undoubtedly came here early; but the dates at which they severally arrived, it would be impossible now to determine. Farmers then, as a long time afterwards, may have had a shop on their own premises, for amateur shoemaking and shoe-mending.

Early Boat-Building. — Ship-carpenters and joiners came early to the settlements near the seaboard, and, of course, appeared in Chebacco not very long after the first-comers. The traditions which my wife's great uncle, Parker Burnham (the first), received from his grandfather, David Burnham (1st), who was born October 20, 1688, and was a grandson of Thomas, first settler, had been often repeated in the family for years prior to its publication anywhere. The story, which I have no doubt is entirely authentic, is

[1] Babson's "History of Gloucester," conforming doubtless to the local record, gives the name as *Jefford* Cogswell. His first name, however, was Gifford, his mother's maiden name. His father was John Cogswell, who was a grandson of John, the first Chebacco settler of that surname, and he married Margaret Gifford.

Gifford Cogswell married, in 1722, a daughter of Jeffrey Parsons, of Gloucester; and the local recorder may have confusedly written the name Jefford, which is a sort of cross between Jeffrey and Gifford.

[2] "History of Gloucester," pp. 331, 332.

this. A man named Burnham built the first Chebacco boat in the garret of a house which stood on an eminence at the right of what is now the road to Manchester, and not very far beyond the corner or beginning of that road, which is near the residence of Aaron Low, Esq.; and that the garret window-frame had to be removed, and the aperture enlarged, before the boat could be launched.

CORDAGE.—The manufacture of cordage for rigging, as well as for fishing-lines, was an essential auxiliary to vessel-building, and was pursued here quite early, upon a moderate scale. In the last quarter of the last century, it began to be carried on somewhat extensively at the Falls by the late Capt. Nathaniel Burnham; and Mr. Samuel Hardy, Sr., who had come from England with the knowledge of some valuable improvements in the method of making lines, and who married his sister, became associated with him in their manufacture. Mr. Hardy's sons, Daniel and Samuel, Jr., also conducted the same business for several years. There have since been several large rope-walks here, with machinery propelled for some time by steam, for the manufacture of lines, etc., owned and conducted by David, Wm. H. and H. W. Mears. Ship's cordage of the heavier sort, for Essex vessels, is now, however, made elsewhere.

SAW-MILLS AND GRIST-MILLS.—Saw-mills were early established here,—the first in 1656, on Chebacco River,—said to have been the first erected anywhere in the town of Ipswich. Two others were, afterwards, built in Chebacco, in the same part of this precinct, called the Falls; and in 1693 a grist-mill was established in the same neighborhood.

The saw-mill and grist-mill, erected about the year 1823, near the bridge over the Chebacco River, in the centre of the town, in connection with which woolcarding was for some years carried on, which were destroyed by fire, some years since, were the largest that had been built in the place prior to the establishment of the two steam saw-mills, one on Southern Avenue, built in 1872 by the Essex Steam Mill Company, and under the management of the late Jacob Burnham; and the other at the Falls, owned and operated by Edward Story.

EARLY SAW-MILL IN THE EAST DISTRICT.—About five hundred yards northeast of the ship-yard of the late Ebenezer Burnham is a piece of marsh which is known to-day as "Saw-mill island." The late Samuel Lufkin stated that he had heard his father say that John Burnham, who owned a farm near Haskell's Creek (which included the premises now owned by David L. Haskell), built a saw-mill on that island. The mill-dam was formed by obstructing the creek in a manner similar to that at the great bridge, and the rise of the tide furnished the water.

According to Mr. Lufkin's testimony, which doubtless rested upon authentic tradition, the saw-mills at the Falls were not all that were established in Chebacco.

The John Burnham here alluded to was the eldest of the three brothers who came in 1635. He was one of the first two deacons of the first church here. He was an *uncle* of the John Burnham, who owned a saw-mill at the Falls, and *father* of John Burnham, Jr., who, as late as 1693, was granted "liberty to set a Grist-mill on Chebacco river, at the launching place."

SHIP-BUILDING.—For a century this has been the most important mechanical industry of the place. Originally it was confined principally to the building of Chebacco boats, a species of small craft, without bowsprit, having two masts, and two sails only, a foresail and mainsail, and being sharp at both stem and stern. At one time towards the close of the last century, there were, it is said, no less than one thousand nine hundred of this class of vessels, many of them, of course, of small tonnage, employed in the fishery business, and sailing from Cape Ann.

The name, "Chebacco boat," was derived from the original Indian name of the territory of Essex, though it is a curious coincidence that in France there is in use a small vessel called a *chabek*.

In 1668, the town of Ipswich set apart an acre of land for the use of the inhabitants as a ship-yard. This land, which was the first granted by the town for that purpose, was situated in Chebacco; and as nearly as can now be ascertained from the phraseology of the grant, and from a consideration of what would then have been an available and eligible locality, with ready access to the water, it comprised in part the premises now occupied for the same use by Arthur D. Story, and perhaps also a part of the premises of Moses Adams.

Larger Vessels.—The building of the Chebacco boats began to be discontinued in the first quarter of the present century, larger vessels, with a square stern and bowsprit and full-rigged as schooners, generally superseding them.

Half a century ago, for the period of five years next preceding 1837, there were built two hundred and twenty vessels, aggregating twelve thousand five hundred tonnage, and valued at three hundred and seventy-five thousand dollars.

Vessels of much greater tonnage are now built, and a larger amount of capital is employed. Several three-masted schooners of large size and two steamers, one for General B. F. Butler and the other for Captain Lamont G. Burnham, have been built here within a few years.

Essex vessels, for staunchness of construction, symmetry, skillful workmanship, and all sea-going qualities, are everywhere of high repute.

Yachts.—Several yachts, as swift-sailing as any in the country, have been launched from the Essex ship-yards; and one of about two hundred tons was built here by Moses Adams for an officer of the Uni-

ted States Navy, who, with his family, made a voyage in it to Europe. Another, the "Gevalia," was built by John James & Co., for G. M. Winslow, of Boston. She was sixty feet in length, six feet in depth and nineteen feet and four inches in width. The first summer after she was launched, she sailed in three races and took three prizes.

A Historic Vessel.—Messrs. John James and Leonard McKenzie built here the vessel afterwards so widely known, in which Dr. Elisha K. Kane went to the Arctic regions in 1853, on the Grinnell expedition in search of Sir John Franklin, and incidentally to find, if possible, an open polar sea. She was originally called "Spring Hill," but when secured for Arctic service her name was changed to the "Advance." She was of one hundred and forty-four tons burthen, carpenter's measurement. Dr. Kane, in the first volume of his narrative of the voyage, says of her: "She was a good sailer and easily managed."

Some Statistics of Former Years.—The following are among various items gathered by Deacon Caleb Cogswell, a gentleman of long experience and extensive knowledge of the business, and contained in an exceedingly well written, comprehensive and interesting chapter contributed by him to Dr. Crowell's town history. Some of the statistics were furnished by members of the family with which the writer of this is connected:

Parker Burnham, 1st, was the builder of the first square-stern vessel; and his nephew, Captain Parker Burnham, built the largest square-stern vessel in the place, prior to the war of 1812. It was a brig of two hundred and twenty tons, named "Silk-worm;" and he made several voyages in it, as commander, the first one to Lisbon. He also built the schooner "July," of fifty tons burthen, which was commenced and entirely finished in the month of July, 1837,—the shortest space of time in which any vessel of that size had ever been begun and completed.

The largest number built by any one person was about two hundred, by Adam Boyd. The largest number built by one person in any year was thirteen, by Andrew Story.

In 1842, the ship "Ann Maria," of five hundred and ten tons, was built by a company of Essex shipwrights, of which Ebenezer Burnham was the agent, and his brother Jacob was the master-workman. She was purchased by David Pingree, of Salem, a prominent merchant of that time. This was the largest vessel that had been built in the place up to that date.

Later Vessels of Larger Tonnage.—Since the publication of Dr. Crowell's History, however, still larger vessels have been built here,—among them a three-masted schooner, named "Mattie W. Atwood," of seven hundred and seventy tons custom-house measurement, but having a carrying capacity of one thousand one hundred tons. She was built in 1872 by Messrs. James & Mackenzie. Of still larger tonnage was the steamer "Vidette," built for Captain Lamont G. Burnham, as before mentioned. She was of eight hundred and nineteen tons' burthen, and was launched from the yard of John James & Co. in 1880. She had two propellers.

Principal Active Builders at Present.—Moses Adams, Arthur D. Story, James & Co., Joseph, Samuel and Charles Oliver Story, Willard Burnham, Daniel Poland.

Spar-making.—Those essential adjuncts to a sailing vessel, the masts and spars, must have given employment to more or less persons, a part of the time at least, soon after the building of boats was begun here. This business is now conducted by Messrs. Timothy Andrews and Son.

Printing.—The first printing-office in the town was established by the writer of this history, in 1843, and a newspaper entitled *The Essex Cabinet* was published by him for several months of that year; and later, for a considerable length of time, a religious publication, entitled *The Universalist Cabinet*, was issued. Pamphlets, circulars, &c., were likewise printed, with a variety of other work.

Many years afterwards a printing-office, which is still continued, was established by Erastus S. Burnham, who for a short time published a weekly sheet entitled *The Essex Enterprise.*

Attorney and Counsellor at Law.—Frank C. Richardson, Esq., a native, resides here and has an office at Salem. He was for some time a student at law in the office of Hon. Charles P. Thompson, now Judge of the Superior Court. He has appeared, in recent cases, in behalf of the town and its territorial rights.

In preceding years, the late Obed B. Low, Esq., a native, who studied with Rufus Choate, conducted several cases in this place, and appeared in some instances in behalf of the town, in courts and before legislative committees.

The late George F. Mears, Esq., a native, was also a recognized practitioner here, in addition to his legal business elsewhere.

If others of this profession were located here at an earlier time, I have found no distinct record of them.

Notary Public.—Daniel W. Bartlett.

Justices of the Peace.—Ezra Perkins, Nehemiah Burnham, Ebenezer Stanwood.

Blacksmithing.—This branch of mechanical industry must have been introduced here early; and during the hundred years and more in which boat-building has been carried on, it has been an essential auxiliary of that business. It is worth noting that, for a long term of years, the blacksmiths of the place were of the names of Andrews, Goodhue and Story, and lineal descendants of the primitive settlers of those names. Those at present of that occupation here are Francis Haskell & Sons, John Gilbert and Otis Story.

Wheelwright.—Deacon Caleb S. Gage, son of

Thomas Gage, Esq., the historian of Rowley, is still proprietor of the business he established here half a century ago.

PAINTERS.—Daniel W. Bartlett, Sr., Story & Closson, Charles A. Burnham, John P. Story.

TELEGRAPHIC OPERATOR.—Daniel W. Bartlett, Jr.

TANNING.—The manufacture of leather was carried on here early in the last century, and possibly in the century preceding. In 1743, Joseph Perkins and his father-in-law, Thomas Choate, Jr., bought, for £928, Old Tenor, twenty-six acres of land of Francis Cogswell, tanner, and Hannah, his wife: "one-half of this land to go to said Thomas, and the other half to said Joseph." The latter was for some years engaged in tanning upon these premises. His grandsons, the late John and James Perkins, pursued the same business for several years. Their tan-vats were near the brook, in the rear of the old burying-ground. Captain Francis Burnham followed the same occupation for many years at the Falls, the business being since conducted on the same spot by Francis Goodhue. Those adopting this trade, it will be observed, have all borne the surnames of primitive settlers.

SHOE-MANUFACTURING.—In 1872, a shoe-factory was established here, which is now under the executive management and control of Messrs. S. B. Fuller & Son, proprietors; with Frank E. Gilbert as general superintendent, and William S. Perkins as foreman of construction. A building, 35 by 65 feet, and three stories in height, with a basement, was erected in that year, which was enlarged in 1880 by an addition of the same height, and 28 by 75 feet. There is a box-maker's department, in which are made all the boxes used in the business. The whole number of persons employed in all the departments and divisions is about one hundred and twenty-five, to whom are paid in wages about fifty thousand dollars a year. Four hundred thousand pairs of shoes are made annually. The machinery of the establishment is, of course, propelled by steam.

The uppers of the shoes are now cut and fitted in Lynn; and for that part of the work about sixty-five thousand dollars are paid yearly. The labor of this branch was formerly done at the factory in Essex; but, as the result of a strike, a few years since, it was transferred to the city mentioned, thus withdrawing from Essex a considerable portion of the money previously disbursed, although a number of those from this town, who had been employed there, are still employed on the same branch in Lynn.

TWO STEAM CIDER-MILLS.—One at the Falls Village and the other on Southern Avenue, in connection with the saw-mills in those localities, manufacture annually some forty thousand or more gallons, in the cider making season; which are sold, in part, for the purpose of being turned into vinegar.

MEAT AND PROVISION DEALERS.—Wm. B. and Caleb Low, Jacob Quimby, Chas. H. Story.

The extensive establishment of Messrs. Low Brothers has facilities for furnishing fresh meats not surpassed by establishments in the same line in the larger towns and cities generally, having an extensive refrigerator and other conveniences.

EXPRESS BUSINESS.—Joseph M. Marshall was the pioneer in this line, having begun the carrying of packages, etc., between this place and Boston, by stage-coach to Manchester, and thence by railroad, about forty years ago. He is still interested in it.

Thomas M. Procter and Horace Quimby have also for many years been engaged in this branch of business.

Elisha B. Annable has conducted, by private conveyance, for several years an express between Essex and Salem.

STORES, TRADERS, ETC.—*Groceries.*—Jona. M. Richardson, Henry F. Dodge, Arthur D. Story, Geo. A. Fuller, J. M. Marshall, Herbert P. Andrews.

Dry-Goods.—H. F. Dodge, Geo. A. Andrews.

Cutlery, Fancy Goods, Books, Periodicals, Etc.—Geo. F. Burnham.

Furniture, Clocks, Watches, Watch-Repairing, and Printing.—Erastus S. Burnham.

Hardware, Mechanics' Tools, Etc.—Joseph M. Marshall.

Drugs and Pharmacy.—B. F. Raymond.

Stoves, Tin and Sheet-Iron Work.—J. F. Smith.

Dealer in Tin Ware, Oil Cloths, Household Utensils, Etc.—Wm. C. Howard.

Hair-dressing Saloon.—Edward Warren Lander.

AN AGRICULTURAL AND HORTICULTURAL ASSOCIATION, formed several years since, continuing its operations with well sustained interest, has done much to encourage and stimulate the culture of fruit, of which some of the finest specimens are displayed annually at its own exhibition in town, as well as at the county fair.

In the department of small fruit raising, especially of strawberries, of which, in this town, the late Abel Burnham was the pioneer,—Sylvester Dade and Miles S. Andrews have been extensive cultivators, disposing of very large quantities in various parts of the county and elsewhere.

VEGETABLE GROWING, GRAPES, SEED FOR PLANTING.—Aaron Low, Esq., widely known as an extensive cultivator of choice vegetables of the mammoth varieties, who has often taken premiums for his products at the annual fairs of the Essex County Agricultural Society, and who has given much attention to grape-culture, has also carried on, upon a considerable scale, the business of a seedsman.

HAY—MILK—BUTTER.—English hay from this place is sold in as large quantities, probably, as from any other place of its size in the county.

Milk is daily furnished in large quantities to the summer watering-places in the vicinity; and with choice butter and other farm products is sent throughout the year to the neighboring City of Gloucester.

ICE BUSINESS.—This is carried on here quite ex-

tensively, large quantities of ice cut from Chebacco Pond or Lake being transported abroad by the Essex Branch Railroad to Wenham, and beyond in various directions over the lines of the Eastern Branch of the Boston and Main Road. Ice is also delivered to order about town.

This industry alone contributes a very large proportion of the freight traffic of the Essex Railroad.

There are two establishments, one comprising two buildings with an aggregate storage capacity of twenty thousand tons, conducted under the auspices of the Drivers' Union Company; Manning Story and Enoch Story, managing proprietors.

The other establishment is conducted by its proprietor, Charles H. Mears, cutting usually in the ice season about fifteen hundred tons.

Improvement in General.—Since the advent of the branch railroad, now just extended to the shoe-factory in the village on the south side of the river, the town is well nigh as eligible for the purposes of either a residence or business, as most of the larger places. An impetus has also been given to trade; and great is the change from the time, many years after the first settlement, when the residents must send out of town for most but the commonest commodities, to the present period, when the finest watch can be repaired and regulated as skillfully in town as elsewhere.

Early Misdemeanors.—"1641. Jo: Lee, accused for stealing of a Bible of the widow Haffield, is found gnilty; he shall restore 15s. to the widow, and pay 10s. fine for lying."[1]

"Jo:" must have been an obdurate person. There is no record of his having read the book, after he had stolen it.

How far from the border of Chebacco this widow Haffield may have lived is not specified; but six years before the commission of the theft mentioned, as the records show, Richard Haffield "had an house-lot granted to him in 1635, beyond Mr. Hubbard's, having the highway to Chebacco on the south, and an houselot of Robert Andrews on the east." The widow Haffield mentioned was probably the Goodwife Haffield, from whom the name of "Haffield's Bridge" was derived.

"1670, March 29, Thomas Bragg and Edward Cogswell, for *fighting in the meeting-house on the Lord's day*, in time of exercise, fined 10s. a piece and costs and fees."[2]

This Edward was a son of John Cogswell, first settler. The number of rounds fought, which of the two combatants received the worse pummelling, and which threw up the sponge, are points not stated.

Essex Masters of the Ipswich Grammar School.—Of this venerable institution, sometimes styled in the early records the Feoffees' Latin School, established about 1651, by the munificence of the wealthy Payne brothers and William Hubbard, Sr., father of the historian, and afterward liberally endowed by grants of land, six of the teachers have been of Essex origin,—the aggregate of their terms of service being about sixty years, or more than one-quarter of the time since it was founded. Those only of first-class qualifications were selected for this position.

Thomas Andrews, son of Capt. Robert Andrews, and cousin of the three Burnham brothers, immigrants, taught for twenty-three years from 1660. He was the immediate successor of the famous Ezekiel Cheever, the first teacher. *Henry Wise*, a graduate of Harvard College, son of Rev. John Wise, taught for eight years from 1720. *Major Thomas Burnham*, also a graduate of Harvard, taught about twenty-four years in all, beginning in 1774,—leaving the school for several years, to serve in the field in the Revolutionary War, and on retiring from the army, again taking charge of it. *Amos Choate*, afterward Register of Deeds, taught seven years from 1800. *Geo. Choate*, late Dr. George, of Salem, taught two years from his graduation in 1818; and *Charles Choate*, two years from 1823.

Fate of Masconomo.—The sagamore of Agawam, who disposed of Chebacco and the rest of Ipswich for such a trivial sum, became in his later years very poor, and dependent upon charity—virtually a pauper, though I do not know, from direct statement in any record, that he was an inmate of an alms-house. He died about the year 1658.

It is said that some years after his burial, on Sagamore Hill, his bones were taken up and his skull was carried around on a pole by a reckless person who was arrested and held to answer for it. What was the motive for such sacrilege, other than wanton mischief, we are not informed.

CHAPTER XCIV.

ESSEX—(*Continued*).

RELIGIOUS ORGANIZATIONS.

First Preaching, First Settled Minister and First Church in Chebacco—The First Meeting-house—The Second Minister—Whitefield's Power as an Orator—Rogers, of Ipswich, in Salem—Davenport, the Fanatic, who, in his Prayers in Chebacco, insulted Mr. Pickering—Great Disorders in Ipswich—The Disorders Described—Pickering Street—Third Minister of the Original Church—Mr. Porter the only Chebacco Minister Recognized in Manchester—Last Minister of the Church of Wise and Pickering—A Dispute about Cleaveland Precipitates a Division of the First Church in Ipswich—The Church of the Separatists and its Ministers—Cleaveland's and Murray's Army Chaplaincies—Persecution of Murray—Cleaveland's Family—His Genealogy—Ruling Elders and their Functions—Cleaveland's Successors—Later Preachers—Seating the Congregation—First Baptist Preaching—Christian Church—Elder Elias Smith—First Religious Newspaper in the Country—Other Christian Preachers—The Universalist Meeting-house—Formation of a Church—A Deacon Descended from Deacons—A Valuable Bequest by a Goodhue Descendant—Methodist Society and Church.

First Preaching, First Settled Minister, and First Church in Chebacco.—For about forty-

[1] Ipswich Records—Hammatt Papers, III. 127.
[2] Ibidem, II. 59.

four years after its first settlement by English immigrants in 1634, there was no preaching in this place at any time, by any regularly ordained minister. Either the pastor or teacher, and perhaps both, of the first church in Ipswich, doubtless occasionally made pastoral visits to the people here, and counseled, consoled and prayed with them, at their dwelling-houses, and probably offered prayer on funeral occasions, after which the dead were carried upon the shoulders of the bearers to the primitive burial-place in Ipswich. But there is no record of their having officiated here at any general and public religious meeting prior to 1667 or 1668. The missionary spirit does not seem to have been manifested in those days.

Early in the year last named, Rev. Jeremiah Shepard, a son of Rev. Thomas Shepard, of Cambridge, in response to an invitation of the people, came and preached here in a private dwelling-house; but he declined to remain and preach continually, because of the opposition of the Ipswich church, which was ostensibly, in part at least, based upon the fact that Mr. Shepard had not then formally connected himself with any Congregational church or other ecclesiastical body. But the members of the church were influenced by other considerations, practical and sentimental. Besides the disinclination to lose so much taxable property from the original parish, they undoubtedly felt a tender regret at the thought of severing the social ties and breaking up the associations of their early communion and fellowship.

The people here, however, felt so seriously the inconvenience, as well as the hazard to their health as they advanced in life, of being obliged, year in and year out, in all vicissitudes of the weather, to travel to and fro the distance of four and five miles between their homes and the place of worship in the centre of the town, that they petitioned to be set off as a separate parish, and allowed to erect a meeting-house. The first meeting for consultation, which led ultimately to the organization of the Second Parish in Ipswich, was held in February, 1677.

The church and town authorities having repeatedly refused to grant their request, some of the inhabitants, early in the year 1679, concluded to recur to first principles of natural justice and equity, and take the matter directly into their own hands for adjustment.

The First Meeting-House.—Three intelligent and energetic women, who seem to have been largely endowed with the executive faculty, with the connivance if not active aid of their husbands, successfully managed the whole business of superintending the raising of the frame of a meeting-house,—the sills and joists having been clandestinely prepared under their direction,—without leave or license of the civil or ecclesiastical authorities.

A few days afterwards, three women—Mrs. Goodhue, wife of William, Jr.; Mrs. Varney, the wife of Thomas,[1] and Mrs. Martin, wife of Abraham, and Abraham Martin[2] himself and his hired man, John Chub,—were placed under arrest, tried before a magistrate at Ipswich, found guilty of "contempt of authority in helping to raise a meeting-house at Chebacco," and bound over to a higher court. At that court, which subsequently met in Salem, the offenders appeared, pursuant to an order from the "Great and General Court" at Boston, and made humble acknowledgment of their offence, and confessed that they were sorry, and so all were legally forgiven.

The meeting-house frame thus surreptitiously raised, was allowed to stand, and permission was given for the completion of the building and its occupancy for public worship.

The site of this edifice was the spot now occupied by the house of the late Capt. Joseph Choate. This point would seem to be satisfactorily settled by the statement of Rev. Dr. Crowell, in his history of Essex. He came to this town to reside in 1814, and was then told that this was the location of the building by aged persons, whose parents had attended worship within it forty years after its erection.

The building is described as a plain, substantial structure, with a frame of white oak, and having a cupola surmounting the centre of the ridge-pole, and within it a bell.

The First Minister.—The first resident clergyman of Chebacco, Rev. John Wise, has for two hundred years been a prominent figure in the history of not only this little parish, but of the country. He was born in Roxbury, Mass., August 15, 1652, and was the son of Joseph Wise, who at one period of his life followed the occupation of a butcher. His mother was a daughter of Rev. William Thompson,[3] who came to this country from England in 1637, and after preaching for awhile at Kittery or York (now Maine), was in 1639 ordained as minister of the church in Braintree, Mass., in that portion of it which is now the town of Quincy. The parish of Mr. Thompson was substantially the same that is now the Unitarian parish in that place,—the place of worship of President John Adams and his descendants.[4]

Joseph Wise, in 1635, came over from England as the servant of Dr. George Alcock, and was held by an agreement to labor for him for a definite period, unless earlier released by his virtual master, in ac-

[1] [2] Thomas Varney and Abraham Martin were ancestors of the writer of this historical sketch of Essex.

[3] Savage, Vol. IV., p. 289.

[4] A grandson of this Rev. William Thompson (who was, of course, a nephew of Mrs. Joseph Wise and first cousin of Rev. John Wise) was the Rev. Edward Thompson, who died March 16, 1705, at the age of forty years, and over whose grave, near the Winslow tomb in Marshfield, Mass., is the following quaint epitaph:

"Here, in a Tyrant's hand, doth captive lie
A rare synopsis of Divinity.
Old Patriarchs, Prophets, Gospel Bishops meet
Under deep silence in this winding sheet:
All rest awhile, in hope and full intent,
When their King calls, to meet in Parliament."

cordance with a rule somewhat similar to that involved in the contracts made with the Chinese coolies brought to the Pacific coast, within a few years past,—though the bargain of the Puritan settlers was upon a higher moral plane, the motives for emigration of both parties to the agreement, being above merely commercial or sordid considerations.

Joseph Wise was set free from the legal bond of service by a clause of the last will and testament of his master, Dr. Alcock, who died in 1640, expressly giving him "the rest of his time" from after the next following summer,—in the same way in which indentured apprentices to a mechanical trade were freed from the obligation of servitude, sometimes for meritorious conduct and sometimes because they had paid for their freedom a stipulated sum. The phrase "bought his time" I occasionally heard in my boyhood, when a custom prevailed, which is now entirely obsolete; the Young America of these days scorning the thoughts of any such trammels.

In December of the year he was set free, he voluntarily entered the more enticing servitude of matrimony, by uniting in wedlock with Miss Mary Thompson, whose parentage is hereinbefore mentioned.

Of their thirteen children, eleven lived to maturity; of whom John was the fifth. When he was ten years old, his mother's brother, Benjamin Thompson, graduated at Harvard College, and not long afterward became master of the Free School in Boston. We do not find recorded any particulars of his childhood and youth; but it is not an unwarrantable supposition that this uncle may have rendered him essential aid in his earlier years in acquiring rudimentary knowledge. This same uncle was an early tutor of the subsequently noted Cotton Mather.

John Wise graduated at Harvard College, in 1673. That institution was then probably not much (if any) superior in its facilities for a "liberal education," to a respectable academy of a later period—not the equal, as a whole, of the present Normal Schools of this State, or the High Schools, or even of some private institutions in our cities and larger towns.

Mr. Wise preached first, so far as is now known, at Branford, in Connecticut, and, under a regular appointment of the colonial authorities, officiated as a chaplain to a military expedition in King Philip's War. He afterwards preached at Hatfield, Mass., in the years 1677 and 1678; and there, as had been the case at Branford, he was urgently solicited to settle as pastor. It is stated that he was almost persuaded to remain at Hatfield and grow up with the place, which was then a new settlement. But he finally declined.

In December of 1678 he was married at Hatfield to Miss Abigail Gardner, daughter of Thomas Gardner, of Roxbury.

He came to Chebacco to preach in the spring of 1680, officiated at the dedication of the meeting-house, which had been raised a year previously, and was from that time the recognized minister, though he was not regularly ordained, nor was the church organized, until three years later.

The narrative of his residence in this place, and of his ministerial career of forty-five years' duration to his death in 1725, at the age of seventy-three, has an interest which is in some respects romantic.

A notable incident of his pulpit ministrations, often mentioned in local notices and commemorative discourses, was his fervently uttered wish in public prayer for some of his neighbors then held captive by pirates, that if there were no other way of release, they might rise and slay their captors. On that same day they arose and, killing the pirates, effected their escape.

This may have been only a coincidence, or, for aught we may positively know, it may have been something more. While not assuming anything either way as a settled conclusion, we should not be disquieted by anybody's adoption of the sentiment expressed in one of Tennyson's idyls of King Arthur,—

> "More things are wrought by prayer
> Than this world dreams of. Wherefore, let thy voice
> Rise like a fountain for me night and day.
> For so the whole round earth is every way
> Bound by gold chains about the feet of God."

Mr. Wise's published writings, "The Church's Quarrel Espoused" and "A Vindication of the Government of the New England Churches;" the oft-repeated and accredited tradition of his easy and speedy disposal of the doughty athlete Chandler, who had jogged all the way from Andover on horseback to try his hands and arms with him at wrestling, and who was at the very first bout laid upon his back on the ground, and at the second lifted over the fence, and who then said that if Mr. Wise would be kind enough to pass his horse over, he would go home; and his spirited resistance to the usurpation of Sir Edmund Andros, with his keen and incisive affidavit and petition for redress for the wrongs inflicted upon him and his associates by that despot, which have given him a national reputation, all demonstrate that in strongly marked individuality of character, as well as in physical strength, he surpassed the occupants generally of the Congregational pulpits of his time.

He was evidently what would be called, in the irreverent phraseology of the present time, a "muscular Christian." If the modern champion slugger, John L. Sullivan, had lived at that early day, and had undertaken to "fool" around Mr. Wise, his laurels would doubtless have soon withered, for he would probably have been knocked out of time in the first round.

Though above the average stature, he was well proportioned, and though of dignified and commanding aspect, he was free from arbitrary assumption of authority, and seems to have had a singularly modest estimate of his own intellectual powers, which, as evinced by his printed discourses and essays, were

decidedly superior. While of a lively fancy and a somewhat ardent temperament, which would have rendered him fearless of carrying all sail in a mental yacht-race, he was at the same time thoroughly ballasted with sound, practical sense.

In everything pertaining to ecclesiastical order and church government, he was thoroughly and consistently a Congregationalist. He was in favor of leaving each church and society to regulate and manage its own affairs, without dictation or interference from without, whether by Presbyteries or Associations. In his published writings on the subject he employed wit, sarcasm and invective, as well as sober argument, in controverting the position of those in his time who proposed a more stringent sectarian organization, with standing councils, to be empowered with what he regarded as a semi-popish authority over individual ministers and their congregations. Then, as has often since been the case, there was manifest a pruriency for a domineering sway over the many by the few.

But the most important event of his public career, which, at the time, gave him not only a colonial but also, to some extent, no doubt, a transatlantic distinction, wherever abroad the affairs of these new settlements were regarded with any interest, and which now secures for him an abiding national reputation, was his manly and courageous resistance to the assumption of the colonial Governor, Sir Edmund Andros, who, in 1687, levied upon the colonists, without warrant or authority of any deliberative assembly, a tax of one penny upon every pound of their estates.

Not the First.—The fact that he was not, as he is commonly supposed to have been, the *first* person in the colonies to protest against taxation without representation, should not detract in the slightest degree from the pre-eminent merit of his heroic action; for which, with five others, he was fined and imprisoned.[1]

Those who suffered with him in this persecution were John Appleton, at whose house was held the first meeting to consider the question of resistance to the collection of the unlawful tax; John Andrews, William Goodhue, Robert Kinsman and Thomas French. Wise and Appleton were fined £50 each; Andrews, £30; Goodhue and Kinsman, £20 each; and French, £15. Wise and Appleton were required to give bonds in the sum of £1000 each, and the others £500 each, for their good behavior for one year. Mr. Wise was suspended from his clerical functions, and they were all debarred from holding any civil office.

At a town-meeting held in Ipswich, pursuant to an order from the treasurer of the colony, acting under the command of Governor Andros, for the purpose of choosing a commissioner to join with the selectmen in assessing the inhabitants, the citizens, after having been forcibly and eloquently addressed by Mr. Wise, voted unanimously not to choose such commissioner, or take any steps whatever to collect the tax.

The whole town itself, of course, thus became as much responsible for the position taken as were the six men singled out for prosecution; but as an attempt to arrest and imprison the entire people of the place would have been undertaking too large a contract, they seized upon those whom they considered to be ringleaders.

In his petition for redress of his grievances, which accompanied his suit for damages, brought against the chief justice, Joseph Dudley, some two years afterwards, when Andros had been driven from the Governorship, in consequence of a change in the occupancy of the British throne, Mr. Wise told of the insolence of one of the judges at his trial, who said, "Mr. Wise, you have no more privileges left you than not to be sold for slaves."

King James II., of whom Andros, now deposed, had been the pliant tool, was now in exile; and William and Mary of Orange having acceded to the

[1] The first person in the New England colonies who remonstrated against taxation without representation, so far as can be known from any historical record, was Rev. George Phillips, ancestor (by his first wife) of Wendell Phillips, the orator and philanthropist, and (by his second wife) of the late Hon. Stephen C. Phillips, of Salem. He uttered his protest in 1632, fifty-five years before that of Mr. Wise, and twenty years before the latter was born.

Rev. George Phillips came from England in the ship "Arbella," in 1630, with John Winthrop, Sir Richard Saltonstall, Major William Hathorne, John Warren and others all worthy and some knightly.

Mr. Phillips settled in Watertown, Mass., and was minister of the church there fourteen years, until his death in 1644, at the age of fifty-[illegible].

He was not so liberal and tolerant than some of the other Puritan fathers, in the respect [illegible] with his distinguished parishioner and near kinsman the honorable Sir Richard Saltonstall, who resided in Watertown about a year prior to his return to England. He found that [illegible] was of civil and religious liberty led him early to the [illegible] advocacy of [illegible] in church order and government.

In [illegible] Winthrop, their Governor (who, notwithstanding [illegible] was of a spirit of liberality, was fond of the [illegible] and [illegible], ordered the collection of a tax from the people of the colony, without consulting them. Mr. Phillips and the Ruling Elder of his church, Richard Brown, called the people of Watertown together, and gave it as their opinion that it was dangerous to submit to the order of the Governor and his assistants to tax the people without their consent. For so doing they were arraigned before the Governor, and it is recorded that there was "much debate" on the subject.

Their action would seem to have had a beneficial effect; for not long afterward, before any further attempt to levy a tax, the court, on the 19th of May, 1632, ordered that "two of every plantation be appointed to confer with the Court about raising of a public stock;" and this led, a short time afterward, to the establishment of a representative body in the government of the colony.

Governor Winthrop claimed that Mr. Phillips afterwards "acknowledged his error." I cannot find, however, in any record, the slightest evidence that he ever made any such acknowledgment. Possibly, his respect for the Governor's really good qualities, and a compassionate feeling towards him on account of his mortification at the failure of his tax-raising scheme, may have induced Mr. Phillips to let him down easily.

As all this occurred twenty years before John Wise was born, it is possible that he may not have heard of it.

throne, the relative political and legal status of the oppressor and his victims had entirely changed. Mr. Wise recovered damages of Chief Justice Dudley, who had been Sir Edmund's companion-sycophant to royalty; and the town of Ipswich reimbursed the persecuted men for their pecuniary losses.

In 1689 he was chosen by the town as a Representative in an assemblage convened that year in Boston, for advisory purposes.

Mr. Wise lived thirty-six years after this triumphant vindication, and continued preaching until within a short period before his death, which occurred at the age of seventy-three years. The following is the inscription upon his memorial stone in the old burying-ground in Essex:

"UNDERNEATH LIES THE BODY OF THE
REV. JOHN WISE, A.M.,
FIRST PASTOR OF THE 2D CHURCH IN IPSWICH.
Graduated at Harvard College, 1673.
Ordained Pastor of said Church, 1681.
And died April, 8, 1725,
Aged 73.

For talents, piety and learning,
He shone as a star of the
First Magnitude."

He had seven children, five sons and two daughters, who survived him several years. His wife's death occurred only a few months after that of her husband.

The eldest son, Jeremiah, was a preacher, and was for forty-eight years, until his death, pastor of a church at South Berwick, Maine. A daughter became the wife of Rev. John White, of Gloucester. Ammi Ruhami was a military man, with the rank of major, and he and his brother Henry were actively engaged in secular business pursuits.

During the appalling witchcraft delusion in 1692, Rev. John Wise, with an equal, if not even greater, degree of intrepidity than when opposing Gov. Andros, interposed in behalf of one of the victims and his wife by heading a petition of thirty-two inhabitants of Chebacco, attesting the irreproachable character of the accused persons, who had for some years resided among them prior to their removal to Salem. This furnishes no proof that he did not share the general delusion of the times on the question of the existence of witches; but it demonstrates his bravery and generosity, in incurring the hazard of losing his own life by an effort to save the life of another.

A further mention of his friendly interposition, and the principal reason for it, will be found under the head of Witchcraft, in this history.

THE SECOND MINISTER.—Mr. Wise's immediate successor was Rev. Theophilus Pickering, a native of Salem, born in the Pickering mansion of several gables, still standing in Broad Street, in the vicinity of the State Normal School building. He was an uncle of Timothy Pickering, distinguished as an officer in the Revolution and as a member of the Cabinet of President Washington, and likewise of that of the elder Adams. John Pickering, distinguished as a lawyer and scholar, author of "Pickering's Synonyms," and Octavius Pickering, who were brothers, I think, were also, I believe, nephews of Theophilus.

With Octavius, when he was a resident of Boston, I was personally acquainted, having first met him when he appeared as a witness before a legislative committee, and having had some conversation with him relative to the family traditions concerning the Chebacco minister, and his personal traits and characteristics.

I judge that the Rev. Theophilus Pickering was a person of varied learning and accomplishments; of fine literary tastes; intellectually able; dignified in manner, staid and decorous in his style of public speaking, yet animated and interesting; of strict integrity and a nice sense of personal honor; from natural temperament not so effusive and enthusiastic as some others, and having a constitutional abhorrence of rant and sensational utterances. He was devout and sincere, frank in the avowal of his exact opinions, and averse to a tacit or seeming acquiescence in anything of which he did not fully approve.

He had considerable mechanical skill, and found agreeable recreation in manual labor. Some of the interior finishing of the dwelling-house, which he owned and for some time occupied, now the residence of Mr. Edwin Hobbs, is said to be the product of his workmanship.

For fifteen or sixteen years after his settlement, the relations between him and his church and society were entirely harmonious and cordial, so far as can be known. About the year 1740, when the famous Rev. George Whitefield first preached in Ipswich, and visited Chebacco, or soon after, signs of discontent and disaffection towards him began to be manifested, first like drops of a slight sprinkling from the outermost fringe of a cloud, the cloud gradually increasing in density till it became dark and frowning, and the rain began to fall pitilessly. It chilled Mr. Pickering; and I have no doubt that like chills to the physical system, in damp and malarial regions, it shortened the number of his days on earth.

The story is too long to be given here in particularity of detail. The dissatisfaction of a portion of his church grew into a schism. Conferences and consultations were ineffectual to heal the breach, and at length the disaffected members withdrew and organized a separate society and church, of which Rev. John Cleaveland became the settled pastor.

The charge against Mr. Pickering was principally that he did not adopt nor approve of the measures introduced by Whitefield for the promotion of religious revivals. The controversy which had arisen was not professedly about theological *doctrines* so much as about *methods*—methods of impressing the doctrines upon the minds of the listeners and of testing the fitness of persons to become church mem-

bers, although some of the "specifications" of the charge against the minister, as they are termed in military trials, were to the effect that the distinctive doctrines of grace had not been presented with the frequency and cogency considered desirable and essential.

A majority of a council of neighboring ministers and churches, which had been called by the original church, with a view, if possible, to reconcile and harmonize the conflicting elements, while approving of Mr. Pickering's course in general, and censuring his opposers for withdrawing and setting up a separate assembly, nevertheless expressed the opinion that he had been "negligent about examining candidates for admission to the church respecting their religious experiences;" in other words, that he had opened the church door too widely and let people in too easily. Mr. Pickering probably judged them more by the rectitude of their lives and a calm expression of their hope and trust, than by a volubility of emotional and fervid utterance. The maxim that "still waters run deep" might appropriately have been adopted by him; and perhaps he would have applauded the man who, when asked, somewhat imperatively, by an over-zealous proselyter,—Have you got religion yet? quickly answered, "Not much to *speak* of."

Both parties in the controversy, however, were doubtless equally honest and sincere. A difference of temperament was probably, in part, the cause of their separation. People who were naturally enthusiastic and emotionally susceptible were "carried away" by the preaching of Whitefield.

Whitefield's Power as an Orator.—To judge of his public speaking from a description of it by the wise and philosophical Benjamin Franklin, who heard him address a vast out-of-door assemblage in Philadelphia, he was unquestionably gifted in a wonderful degree as a brilliant, impassioned and persuasive orator. He was also gifted histrionically, and in pantomime especially could probably have become a star performer. Even the calm and reflective sage acknowledged himself to have been charmed and fascinated while listening to his discourse. But the magic influence was in the voice and manner of the speaker more than in the substance of the sermons. On reading some of them we wonder at the thought of the effect upon the hearers which tradition uniformly ascribes to them, and we think of the disappointment of the venerable lady, who, on perusing a printed copy of a discourse of her favorite minister, exclaimed: "They can never print that godly one." As compared with Jeremy Taylor, Chalmers, or Channing, each materially different in style, Whitefield, in regard to anything like depth of thought and the affluence of illustration and expression which instruct and enliven when read as well as when heard, is like the sparkling effervescence of light beer contrasted with the flavor of old and mellow wine.

Nevertheless, Whitefield was always devout, elevated in tone, circumspect in phraseology, and in keeping with the proprieties of civilized life. But this cannot be truthfully said of all his early followers in this country, a fact which was lamented by some of the better class of his admirers and adherents. Some of his disciples, particularly some of the preachers and exhorters, were fanatics and cranks. Especially was this the case with Rev. James Davenport, who preached for some time to the Separatist Church in Boston, to which Rev. John Cleaveland preached, and which invited the latter to settle as its pastor. Davenport preached also in Ipswich, and seems to have been a favorite with the minister there, the Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, who, with him, came to Chebacco, and virtually insulted Mr. Pickering by holding forth in his pulpit without his consent, and alluding to him in their prayers as a man blinded, and asking God to open his eyes and cause the scales to fall from them. Mr. Pickering doubtless had reference to such persons, when, in a letter, he wrote of "the conceit of some that the sudden starts of their fancy are immediate impressions from the Holy Spirit." We can judge of the feeling cherished by some of the conservative ministers of that time by their strictures upon these Whitefield "New Lights," as they were termed.

Rogers, of Ipswich, in Salem.—Rev. Mr. Brockwell, agent of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, wrote thus to the secretary of that organization at London:

"Salem, Feb. 18, 1741-42.

"Rogers of Ipswich one of this Pseudo Apostles displayed his talent in ye Town on Sunday ye 24th January & continued here so doing until ye Thursday following, when he left his auditory in charge to one Elvins a Baker, who holds forth every Thursday, and tho a fellow of consummate ignorance is nevertheless followed by great multitudes & much cried up. But I thank God, that few of my church went to hear either of them, and those yt did wholly disliked them."[1]

Davenport, the Fanatic, who, in his Prayers in Chebacco, insulted Mr. Pickering.—In Barber's Historical Collections of Connecticut, Mr. Rogers' associate is thus portrayed: "Mr. James Davenport, of Southhold, on Long Island, who had been esteemed a pious, sound and faithful minister, now became zealous beyond measure: made a visit to Connecticut, and preached in New Haven, Brandford, Stonington, and various other places; and went on as far as Boston. He gave an unrestrained liberty to noise and outery, both of distress and joy in time of divine service. He promoted both with all his might, raising his voice to the highest pitch, together with the most violent agitations of the body. With these he united a strange singing tone which mightily tended to raise the feelings of weak and undiscerning people, and consequently to heighten the confusion among the passionate of his hearers. This odd, disagreeable tuning of the voice, in exercises of devotion, was caught by zealous exhorters, and became a characteristic of the separate preachers. The whole

[1] Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., xvii. 254.

sect were distinguished by this sanctimonious tone. It was Mr. Davenport's manner, when a number had cried out, and there had been great agitations of body, to pronounce them tokens of divine favor; and what was still worse, he would pronounce those persons who were the subjects of these outcries and agitations, to be converted; or that they had come to Christ; which were gross and dangerous errors. * * * What had still more mischievous influence than all the rest, was his undertaking to *examine his brethren in the ministry*, as to their spiritual state, and publicly to decide concerning them, whether they were converted or unconverted. Some whom he had privately examined, and to all appearance were of as much grace as himself, he would *in his public prayers pronounce unconverted.* Thus, disorder, jealousy, and confusion were sown in the churches. He represented it as a dreadful thing to hear unconverted ministers; that their preaching was worse than poison; and he warned the people against it.

His brethren remonstrated against these wild measures, and represented to him that he must be under the influence of a wrong spirit; but he persisted in his measures. At Charlestown, in Massachusetts, he withdrew from the communion, on the Lord's day, pretending that he had scruples as to the conversion of the minister. The Boston ministers disapproved of his conduct, and rejected him. He was complained of, and brought before the General Court of Massachusetts, and was dismissed as not being of a sound mind. His conduct had a pernicious influence on the people."

Still further illustrations of the semi-lunacy of some of the unbalanced Separatists of those days are furnished in the documents which follow:

"GREAT DISORDERS AT IPSWICH.

"From the MS. diary of Rev. Ebenezer Parkman,[1] of Westboro', Mass., in the Library of the American Antiquarian Society in Worcester:

"N. B. Great Disorders (we hear) were lately at *Ipswich* by means of one *Woodbury* who wth Mr. Gilman of Durham has sent Letters to many Ministers of ye Province as from ye K. of K. & L. of L.'s [King of Kings and Lord of Lords.]

"N. B. I transcribed a letter at Mr. *Newman's* Study from Mr. C. Wainwright, of Ipswich to Mr. Dudley of *Roxbury* respecting ye Ipsw. Disorders in ye last month, horrible to relate. My Br. Saml P——n [Parkman] was present at Ipswich while some of these acts were done."

THE "DISORDERS" DESCRIBED.—The nature and character of the "great disorders" alluded to by Mr. Parkman, appear to be explained in the following extract from the diary of Rev. Samuel Chandler, of Gloucester, Mass., in which, it will be observed, he speaks of Woodbury and Gilman:

"Aug. 20, 1746. I set out on a journey to Durham to a fast, at ye desire of the church there, they being under difficulty. I called upon Mr. Wise[2] [of Berwick] by the way. We got to Durham about 10 o'clock, cloudy, rainy weather, and the people, not much expecting any minister would come, had got into the meeting house and were praying.

"When we went into the pulpit Mr. Gilman went out and went into the pew. I began with prayer. I was under some restraint. Mr. Wise preached from John 15, 5, and concluded with prayer. In the exercise were a number, 4 or 5, that were extraordinarily agitated. They made all manner of mouths, turning out their lips, drawing their mouths awry, as if convulsed, straining the eye-balls, and twisting their bodies in all manner of unseemly postures. Some were falling down, others jumping up, catching hold of one another, extending their arms, clapping their hands, groaning, talking. Some were approving what was spoken, and saying aye, that is true, 'tis just so, and some were exclaiming and crying out aloud, glory, glory. It drowned Mr. Wise's voice. He spoke to them, entreated them, condemned the practice, but all to no purpose.

"Mr. Gilman came in, and after him a number of these high-flyers, raving like mad men, reproaching, reflecting. One, Hannah Huckins, in a boasting air, said she had gone through adoption, justification and sanctification and perfection and perseverance. She fell to dancing round the room, singing some dancing-tunes, jiggs, minuets, and kept the time exactly with her feet.

"August 21 I preached from Gal. 2. 20. The people appeared very devout, excepting those that were of Mr. Gilman's party. They, as yesterday, made wry mouths and extraordinary gestures of body. I desired and entreated, if they loved the souls of sinners, that they would suffer them to hear what I had to offer to them, but all to no purpose.

"Mr. Gilman says he has a witness within him that I neither preached nor prayed with the Spirit. I told him I had a witness within myself that I did both. He said, 'how can that be when you have your thumb papers and you can hardly read them?' He says he can't receive those who don't receive Woodbury and all those persons, with their extravagancies."

To the credit of Mr. Cleaveland, it is to be said that he does not seem to have fallen into the extravagances of speech of some others, but in this respect was decorous and discreet. But the views of his newly organized Separatist Church, upon the subject of testing the reality and thoroughness of the conversion of preachers before employing them, seem to have corresponded substantially to those of Mr. Davenport. One article in a code of faith and discipline adopted by said church was as follows:

"Neither Pastor nor Elders shall invite any person to preach, until they are satisfyed that he has a work of grace wro't on his soul."

To judge him impartially, it must be admitted that Davenport was really acting in accordance with the *spirit* of this article, although he was doing it in a wild and disorderly way.

Mr. Pickering published a pamphlet, entitled "A Bad Omen to the Churches in the Instance of Mr. John Cleaveland's Ordination over a Separation in Chebacco Parish;" and he was preparing for publication another document in reply to "A Plain Narrative by the New Church," when he died suddenly, October 7, 1847,—a little more than seven months after Mr. Cleaveland's ordination.

His church, on the 31st of the following December, approved a Letter in defence of their Pastor and themselves.

Mr. Pickering was never married. He was long remembered by devoted friends. An elderly lady, who, from her parents had heard the story of the opposition to him, and who a hundred years after its occurrence, pathetically told it to me, was wont to repeat some elegiac verses written soon after his departure, commencing with the words,

[1] Ancestor of late Rev. Francis Parkman, of Boston, and of his brother, Dr. George Parkman, who was murdered by Dr. John W. Webster.

[2] Rev. Jeremiah Wise, minister of the church in Berwick, Me., a son of Rev. John Wise, of Chebacco.

"Mourn and lament!
Your excellent
Theophilus is dead."

Pickering Street.—A street leading from Martin street to Western avenue, not far from the house erected and occupied by Mr. Pickering, has been named in memory and in honor of him.

Third Minister of the Original Church.—In January, 1749, about a year and a quarter after the death of Mr. Pickering, Rev. Nehemiah Porter, a native of Hamilton, was ordained as his successor.[1] He was a graduate of Harvard College; and though less is recorded of him than of his predecessors, yet he is reputed to have been a man of force and decision of character, and of highly acceptable talents, as a preacher, as evinced by his having sustained himself here for seventeen years in the same village with the energetic rival minister Cleaveland.

In 1766 he removed to Yarmouth, Nova Scotia, which had been settled in part by people of Chebacco origin; where he organized a society and church to which he preached for several years; and then removing to Ashfield, Mass., he became the pastor of the church there, continuing in the active discharge of his duties until his eighty-eighth year, and preaching occasionally for years afterwards. He died in 1820, in the one hundredth year of his age.[2]

He is said to have left, at his decease, more than two hundred surviving descendants. Rev. Charles S. Porter, first pastor of the present Congregational Church at Gloucester Harbor, was his grandson.

Mr. Porter the only Chebacco Minister Recognized in Manchester.—Mr. Cleaveland, in a printed pamphlet, gave an extract from a letter addressed to him by Rev. Benjamin Tappan, pastor of the church in Manchester, in the summer of 1751, more than four years after Cleaveland's ordination, declining to recognize his "society," as he called it, "as a regular church."

Mr. Tappan's Church, in a previous communication, had said: "We know of no more than *one* Congregational Church at Chebacco, viz., that under the pastoral care of the Rev. Mr. Porter."

Last Minister of the Church of Wise and Pickering.—Mr. Porter was the last settled minister of the society and church which from their original formation had been known respectively as the Second Parish and Second Church in Ipswich. In about eight years after his withdrawal, both society and church ceased to exist as distinct organizations, having become merged respectively in the society and church of Mr. Cleaveland, which had previously been known as the Sixth Parish and Fourth Church in Ipswich; and the corporate name of each was changed to the numeral designation of Second Parish and Second Church, by which the united organizations were always afterwards recognized until the incorporation of the Second or Chebacco Parish into a separate town; when, of course, they each became the First in Essex.

A Dispute about Cleaveland Precipitates a Division of the First Church in Ipswich.—In the same year in which Mr. Cleaveland was ordained in Chebacco, Rev. John Walley, Jr., preached for several months to the First Church and Society in Ipswich town, and was invited by a large majority of the parish to settle with them as pastor; but the friends of Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, who had also preached there, and was himself a candidate for the same position, strenuously objected to such an arrangement, partly because Mr. Walley declined to exchange pulpit services with Mr. Cleaveland; whereupon a considerable number withdrew, and organized a separate church and parish, over which Mr. Walley was ordained November 4, 1747. Thus, in part, from a controversy concerning affairs in Chebacco, was created the South Church in Ipswich.

It is true that a proposition had been made some time before, and repeatedly, for a second church and for a meeting-house the other side of the river; but the Cleaveland-controversy element appears to have hastened somewhat, the divisionary movement.

The Church of the Separatists and its Ministers.—Rev. John Cleaveland, who was for fifty-two years minister in Chebacco, first visited the place and preached a few times early in 1746,[3] while

[1] Mr Porter was of the same lineage as the writer of this historical sketch of Essex,—both being descendants of John Porter, who came from England to Hingham, Mass., in 1635, and to Salem in 1641; was of the first church in Salem, and afterward of that in Salem Village (Danvers), was Representative from Hingham and Salem; was a farmer and the largest land-holder in Salem Village.

His son Joseph married Anna Hathorne, daughter of Major Wm Hathorne, who came to Salem, in 1630, in the Arbella, with Winthrop; and their granddaughter, Mary Porter, married Dr. Jonathan Prince, my great-grandfather. It is thus that I am a direct descendant of Hathorne, as of Porter.

Of the same Porter lineage also was Mrs. Helen Olcutt Choate, wife of the late Hon. Rufus Choate. Her maternal grandfather was Asa Porter, who graduated at Harvard College in 1732, and settled in New-York as a merchant. About 1780, he removed to Haverhill, N. H., where he became a large land-holder. His daughter Sarah married Hon. Mills Olcutt.

Asa Porter's brother, Dr. Aaron Porter, who settled in Portland, Me., [illegible] eminent as a physician, married Paulina King, sister of Hon. Rufus King, delegate from Massachusetts to the Convention that framed the United States Constitution, and United States Senator from New York, and of Hon. William King, first Governor of Maine. Dr. Porter's daughter Harriet became the second wife of Rev. Dr. Lyman Beecher, and by him had four children, viz., one who died [illegible], Rev. Edward Beecher, now deceased, Rev. Thomas K. Beecher, of Elmira, N. Y., and Mrs. Isabella Beecher Hooker, of Hartford, [illegible] was all seven children of Mrs. Choate.

[illegible] the statements in regard to his exact age [illegible] the Hon. [illegible] and his son, Professor E. P. [illegible] to the Historical Address, State of Maine, [illegible] Joseph W. Porter, of Burlington, [illegible] Anniversary Address, state it as ninety-nine [illegible] years, three [illegible] in the date of his birth, which [illegible] on the 21st November, 7th.

[2] It is not improbable that he may have been recommended, and perhaps introduced here by William Story, a member of the Boston Separatist Society, who was of Chebacco origin or descent, and whom Mr. Cleaveland, in his army journal, speaks of as "my good and cordial friend."

officiating as minister of a Separatist Church in Boston, which worshipped in an edifice in School Street, which had been used by a society of the Protestant refugees called Huguenots, who had fled from France after the repeal of the edict of Nantes.[1]

Later in the same year, his brother, Rev. Ebenezer Cleaveland, preached here for several months, but does not seem to have "filled the bill" of the expectations of the people. Some years afterwards, he became the first settled minister of the Fifth Parish in Gloucester, Sandy Bay (now Rockport), where he resided many years, and where he died, in 1805. His grand-nephew, Hon. Nehemiah Cleaveland, says of him: "From all that I have been able to learn, Ebenezer Cleaveland fell a good way short of his brother John, both in natural and acquired talents. With a very large family, with very moderate means and many adverse circumstances, his life seems to have been one long and hard struggle."[2]

To the church in Boston, John Cleaveland preached for some time in the years 1745 and 1746, and received an invitation to become its settled pastor. This he declined, and accepted an invitation to settle in Chebacco. His distinguished grandson, Hon. Nehemiah Cleaveland, of Brooklyn, N. Y., in his notes and comments upon his grandfather's *Army Journal*, which he edited and furnished for publication in the Essex Institute Historical Collections,[3] thus intimates the probable reason of his preference for the latter place:

"From a social and worldly point of view the Boston invitation must have been more attractive than the Chebacco call. But he found in that plain community of farmers and fishermen one magnet of superior power. I have no doubt that it was the bright and comely Mary Dodge,[4] known in these papers as his 'dear and loving spouse,' who virtually determined the question where he should stay. That the young minister was not without earnest competitors for her hand is still shown by documentary evidence."

His ordination took place in February, 1747, the services being held out-of-doors, in front of the dwelling-house in the North District of the town, substantially the same building now owned by Capt. Lamont G. Burnham, and occupied by him as a summer residence. The place was then owned and occupied by Francis Choate, great-grandfather of the late Hon. Rufus Choate. He had been one of the most zealous originators of the new-light organization, and was a ruling elder of the new church.

It was an inclement season of the year for religious exercises of any length to be held in the open air; but there was no building in the place sufficiently large to accommodate the audience, except the meeting-house of Mr. Pickering's society; and the bitter feeling toward the secessionists in all probability precluded the offer of a loan of that edifice for the occasion.

Of the subsequent ministerial career of Mr. Cleaveland, extending over half a century until his death, upon his seventy-seventh birth-day, April 22, 1799, I shall present here but little more than an outline.

While not intellectually the equal of either Wise or Pickering, and not a person of the scholastic attainments and culture of the latter especially, he was, nevertheless, a man of very respectable talents. His army journal and published discourses and controversial pamphlets, as well as his narrative of remarkable religious phenomena in his parish, while exhibiting some carelessness by their occasional lapses in grammar, show that he was a ready and vigorous writer, with considerable power and skill in graphic description.

His Oratory.—As a public speaker, I judge, from authentic accounts of his manner in the pulpit, that he was usually more forcible than elegant. A lapidary might have figuratively classified him as a diamond in the rough. Rev. Dr. Crowell, who became one of his successors as pastor about fifteen years after his death, and who conversed with many who for years had been regular attendants upon his ministrations, has described him as speaking so loudly while preaching, that "persons sitting at an open window on the opposite side of the street, when the windows and doors of the church were open, have distinctly heard the greater part of his sermon." Rev. Dr. Daniel Dana, son of the minister of the South Church in Ipswich, who in his youth must have often heard him in his father's pulpit, said of him: "He was by no means a graceful preacher. His manner sometimes bordered on the rough and even the boisterous. In those good days, elegance in preaching was less in demand, and its absence less a topic of complaint, than in these fastidious times."[5] In the diary of Rev. Dr. Cogswell,[6] minister of the parish in Connecticut where Mr. Cleaveland spent his early life, is the following allusion to him, under date of October 26, 1766: "Mr. John Cleaveland preached for me to good acceptance in general. He was very loud and earnest, and preached without notes. His doctrines were good. The greater part of the Separatists went to hear him."

He was magnetic in his oratory, and from the recorded effect of it upon his hearers he was evidently at times pathetic. If unpolished, his elocution was probably in somewhat better taste than that of

[1] The same pulpit, years after Mr. Cleaveland preached in it, was, for awhile, occupied by the celebrated Universalist, Rev. John Murray. It was while discoursing here on one occasion that some bigoted and disorderly persons endeavored to create a disturbance, and one of them, to show his hostility to Mr. Murray's theological sentiments, threw a stone at him. It did not strike him, but fell upon the pulpit floor. Picking it up and holding it in his hand before the audience, Murray said: "This argument is solid and weighty, but not convincing."

[2] Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., XII. 93.

[3] Vol. xii., p. 86.

[4] The lady who, five months after his ordination, became his wife. She was a daughter of Parker and Mary (Choate) Dodge, and granddaughter of Capt. Thomas Choate, of Hog Island. Her mother was a sister of my great-great-grandmother, Rachel (Choate) Martin.

[5] Sprague's "Annals of the American Pulpit," vol. i.

[6] A descendant of John Cogswell, early settler of Chebacco.

Dickens's Rev. Melchisedec Howler, upon whose public services Captain Bunsby's landlady was such a constant and devout attendant.

Discomfort in the Pulpit in Winter.—The intensity of emphasis, in voice and accompanying gesture, with which Mr. Cleaveland occasionally expressed himself, was sometimes an impulse of the moment, representing his mood of mind and feeling. An elderly resident, who passed away many years since, told me that in her youth she attended church on an unusually cold Sunday, when he preached; and there being neither stove nor furnace in the meeting-house, everybody present suffered from the keenness of the temperature. He appeared to be bravely enduring it as long as he could, and then pausing in his discourse, he stamped with his feet, and exclaimed, "O God! who can stand before thy cold?" (Psalm cxlvii. 17.)

His Account of a Revival.—One of his publications was entitled "A Short and Plain Narrative of the late Work of God's Spirit at Chebacco in Ipswich in the years 1763 and 1764." Of this the following is an extract:

"After I had concluded the public service I went down among the Distressed: the whole Congregation tarried: and found Divers in the deepest Agony of Soul Distress; young Women pleaded with the greatest Importunity for Mercy. And I found several who received Comfort that Afternoon, and these were immediately filled with Bowels of Compassion for others, and were pleading with their Equals to give up their Hearts, their All, their whole Selves, to the Blessed Jesus, saying, 'Christ is able and willing to save you—he came into the World to save lost Sinners. If you will not give up yourself, your All, to Christ, you must be damned.' * * Some that were brought into Soul Distress that Afternoon continued praying and crying for Mercy for three Days and Nights, without sleeping or taking any Thing for the Support of their Natures, and were brought to be very weak in Body before they found Consolation in Christ. The Kingdom of Heaven most evidently suffered Violence, and the Violent took it by Force; People pressed into it! Such a Day and Evening I never saw before for the display of God's powerful Grace! it is beyond Description! * *

"On Monday early in the Day, many came to my House, both young men and women, bowed down under a sense of their lost and perishing Condition and my House was filled all that Day; some found Comfort before the Evening, and by sun-setting, or a little after, so many resorted to my house that it could not hold them, and we repaired to the Meeting-House, which was soon filled, and by that Time we had prayed and sung in Hymn, the Awakened were in such an Agony of Distress [illegible] Part of the Meeting-House, above and below, that there was no [illegible] the Congregation in general a Word of Exhortation that they could hear, and what Exhortations were given were given in a private way to [illegible] Pew to Pew and you might find Pews full of young Men in the greatest Anguish of Soul, as tho' the very Torments of Hell were [illegible] others crying out, saying, 'Oh, what a sinner I have been! Oh, what a stubborn Will and hard Heart I have!' And [illegible] Lay in a Heap and Mass in Corners of the House, in the Galleries, [illegible] and Scattered under the Seats, upon their Faces, crying for Mercy."

Evidently Mr. Cleaveland was deeply sincere in the belief that these manifestations resulted from the direct influence of the Spirit of the Infinite Being.

Written Experience of One of his Converts.—Appended to the "Narrative" is a communication written by a young woman of his congregation, to be read at the public service in the church. It is here given as copied *verbatim*. It illustrates the common religious thought and phraseology of that time:

"Ipswich, Feb., 1765.

"What follows is a Relation of some of the gracious Dealings of God with my Soul.

"I was from my Youth (or Childhood) at Times under Awakenings and Thoughtfulness about the Salvation of my Soul, which, I believe, were from the Spirit of God, knocking at the Door of my Soul; sometimes by awakening Providences; at other Times by his Word; and after living some time in this Manner, I went about to establish a Righteousness of my own, and so settled down upon a sandy Foundation, short of Union to, or saving Faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, the only Way of Salvation, and should have perished forever, if God, who is rich in Mercy, had not opened mine Eyes and showed me my fatal Mistake before it was too late! But the God of all Grace, who, I believe, had a design of Love, Grace and Mercy to my Soul from Eternity, did not suffer me to rest here; but sometime in December, 1763, when it pleased God to visit this place (Chebacco) in such a wonderful Manner by his blessed Spirit in the Conviction and hopeful Conversion of a Number of precious Souls, I was bro't to some serious Reflections about the state of my Soul.

"I saw that Christ died for me, as much as if there had been no other Person upon Earth, and my Soul was filled with Astonishment at the dying Love of Christ. I found the Love of Christ shed abroad in my Heart, and I felt a sweet Calm in my Soul.

"But this View of Things was but short before a dark Cloud overspread my Mind again; but I still had Longings of Soul after Discoveries of Christ, and that I might be more and more established; at Length, the LORD appeared in a more wonderful Manner; these Words were brought to me, 'I can do all Things through Christ strengthening me;' I believed that I could do all Things through Christ strengthening me; and that all Things were possible with God, and that God could freely pardon the greatest Sinner, that ever was, through the Merits of His Dear Son; and my Soul was so filled with the Love of Christ, that I was ready to cry out with the Spouse, '*Stay me with Flagons and comfort me with Apples, for I am sick of Love!*' I seemed to myself like a little mote swallowed up in the Ocean of Love! I saw those that were interested in the Covenant of Grace were interested in a sure Covenant, and that Heaven and Earth shall pass away before one Word of God's Promise shall fail."

It is evident that at the time this was written it was customary to allude to the ocean as a symbol of Divine Love.

In this and other publications of that period, Mr. Cleaveland followed the old English usage of beginning each of the principal nouns with a capital letter. In his later writings he deviated from this rule.

His Opposition to Rev. John Murray.—He published, about 1774, a pamphlet entitled, "An Attempt to Nip in the Bud the Unscriptural Doctrine of Universal Salvation, and some other Dangerous Errors connected with it; which a certain Stranger, who calls himself John Murray, has of late been endeavoring to spread in the First Church in Gloucester."

The substance of this he had preached in Chebacco; and in it he had made a statement, which, though he doubtless believed it, was a transparent absurdity, as well as a falsehood. He was naturally a confiding man, and his credulity had probably been imposed upon by some less gullible and more crafty person. He represented that Murray, when preaching in Gloucester, turned towards that part of the gallery where sat some rough sailors, and told them to go on, do just as they pleased, swear, drink, and commit any sin, and it would be just as well with them hereafter, as if they had lived virtuously;—they would all go to heaven. The story was based upon an utter misconception of Murray's character, and of his doctrine; for he taught explicitly, so that no intelligent hearer

could possibly misapprehend, the "final *holiness* and happiness" of all human souls. I say nothing here of the respective merits or demerits of the theology of either of the preachers, who were, I believe, equally honest and sincere; but I now aim only to state accurately the precise facts.

He did not have the secretiveness of a fox, but on the contrary had a confiding simplicity and openness that were truly Arcadian and refreshing. For instance, in the sermon referred to, he exhorted the young especially not to hear Murray preach, and added that if they did, they would be in danger of getting some ideas into their heads which they would never be able to get out of them!

He and Murray had some traits in common. They were both decidedly frank and open in manner and bearing; both fearless in utterance of the opinions they sincerely cherished. In temperament, they were considerably alike, both being ardent and enthusiastic. Could they have met and shaken hands with each other, some degree of cordiality would inevitably have sprung up between them, and prejudice would have been softened if not dispelled. What a pity that the Chebacco minister had not ridden the short distance of seven miles which separated them, and called upon the man whom he deemed in error, even if only to reprove and warn. Murray was an elegant gentleman; and I picture to myself what a gracious and hospitable welcome Cleaveland would have received.

Substantially alike in faith, except on one point.—Besides their resemblance in personal characteristics, it should be noted that in its general features the *theological system* of the one was exactly the same as that of the other, the only difference between them in belief being Murray's conclusion that finally the benefits of the Divine Atonement would surely be universal in extent. Murray had been a member of Whitefield's church and congregation in London, before his adoption of Universalism. He still believed in the trinity and a sacrificial, vicarious atonement; and this belief he retained to the last of his days on earth. In the Universalism of Rev. Hosea Ballou, these tenets are discarded; and on this account Mr. Murray's widow would not recognize him as sound in faith. The late Ellis Gray Loring, Esq., (brother of Hon. Charles G. Loring) once told me in conversation that he found among the papers of his grandfather Faxon, who was a deacon of Mr. Ballou's church, a letter from Mrs. Murray, addressed to him, in which she said: "I cannot sit under Mr. Ballou's preaching, because he has taken the crown from the head of my Redeemer."

She was Murray's second wife, his first having died in England when he was a young man. She was Mrs. Judith (Sargent) Stevens, the widow of John Stevens, and daughter of Winthrop Sargent, then an opulent merchant of Gloucester, afterwards of Boston. She was a lady of considerable literary talent and culture, and of much force and individuality of character.

His Frankness.—Mr. Cleaveland was always outspoken and straightforward. The word sneak had no application to him. He had strong doctrinal convictions, and he adhered to them tenaciously. Moreover, he had the *courage* of his convictions, as was shown by his refusal to acknowledge that he had done any thing wrong in attending a Separatist meeting, for which he was, with his brother Ebenezer, who had done the same, expelled from Yale College, while in his junior year.[1]

Cleaveland's and Murray's Army Chaplaincies—Persecution of Murray.—Murray was appointed as a chaplain in the army of the Revolution, and was popular with both officers and soldiers. He was a more graceful speaker than Cleaveland, and was especially gifted and sympathetic in devotional exercises. The brothers Cleaveland, John and Ebenezer, served at the same time in that capacity,—as they had done previously in the French and English war. If they joined in the unjust personal warfare instituted against Murray on account of his theological belief, they undoubtedly did it openly. Several of the chaplains petitioned Washington, the Commander-in-chief, to remove Murray from his position, on account of his opinions.

The duty assigned to army chaplains was not to confuse the minds of the soldiers by speculative doctrinal discussions, or to proselyte them to any particular sectarian standard, but to inspire them with hope and endurance, to give them good counsel, and to pray with and console them when sick, wounded or dying.

The illustrious General Nathaniel Greene, Washington's favorite adviser and right-hand man, was a warm friend and admirer of Murray, and he and General Varnum earnestly advised his retention. Greene was of Quaker descent, and had learned from his ancestors the lesson of toleration. Those who opposed the friend of Greene did but bump their heads against a stone wall. But in addition to these influences Washington himself carried a level head, and sought union and harmony among all the supporters of the patriotic cause; and so he quietly disposed of the matter by directing that Murray be transferred from the chaplaincy of a regiment to that of a brigade; which change was a promotion. And he officiated thereafter as the chaplain of three combined regiments of Rhode Island troops. History furnishes no more signal instance of a rebuke of bigoted intolerance.[2]

[1] Years afterward reparation for the wrong thus done him and his brother was made, so far as then possible to make it, by granting both the degree of A. M. and enrolling them among the graduates.

[2] Washington was governed in his action by broad and national considerations. So far as his individual opinions were concerned, he was not in unison with the Calvinistic form of doctrine which Cleaveland and Murray both adopted. He was a reverent believer in the Supreme Being and the Hereafter; but, although he attended Episcopal services, and sometimes served as warden and vestryman, he did not accept the theory of vicarious, sacrificial atonement. This fact is shown by the

Alas! for the blinding influence of prejudice. The persecutors do not seem to have perceived the assumptious impropriety of their conduct in insulting not only Murray himself but also his devoted friends, the enterprising and patriotic merchants of Gloucester and Boston, who cheerfully endured sacrifices and gave freely of their worldly substance to protect and defend the liberties of America.

Theological opinions did not disqualify a man from carrying a musket. How could they alone have unfitted a person to pray for that man, to a Being in whose existence he believed?

Cleaveland's Family.—Mr. Cleaveland was twice married: first in 1747 to Mary Dodge, by whom he had four sons and three daughters, and with whom he lived nearly twenty-one years. She died in 1768. His second wife was a Widow Foster, of Manchester.

Of his sons, three were in the Revolutionary war, with himself—one, Dr. Parker Cleaveland, being an assistant army-surgeon, and another, Lieutenant John Cleaveland, Jr., serving throughout the entire war. The latter became a preacher, and was settled at Stoneham and afterwards at Wrentham, Mass., where he died in 1815, at sixty-five years of age. Dr. Parker Cleaveland settled in Byfield, and lived there till the age of 74. He had two sons, Professor Parker Cleaveland, of Bowdoin College, and Rev. John P. Cleaveland, for several years minister of the Tabernacle Church in Salem, whose ruddy countenance and general air and manner corresponded with descriptions given of the appearance of his grandfather. Nehemiah Cleveland, M. D., settled as a physician in Topsfield, and became eminent as a civilian—serving as Associate Justice and Chief Justice of the Court of Sessions, and also as a member of the State Senate. He had several sons who became distinguished—Nehemiah, widely known as a classical scholar and instructor; John, a lawyer in New York; and Rev. Dr. Elisha L. Cleaveland, for some time minister in New Haven, Conn. Wm. N. Cleaveland, Esq., another son, was a few years since a resident of Boxford; and a daughter was the wife of Rev. O. A. Taylor, for some years minister at Manchester, Mass.

His Genealogy.—Mr. Cleaveland was of the same lineage as that of Grover Cleaveland, the twenty-second President of the United States. Both descended from Moses Cleaveland, who came, when a boy, in 1635, from Ipswich, Suffolk County, England, with a master joiner, of whom he was an apprentice.

This Moses Cleaveland settled in Woburn, Massachusetts, where he married a lady whose surname was Winn.

[illegible] Gouverneur Morris, one of the few persons with whom Washington [illegible] upon the [illegible] subjects.

Among Mr. Cleaveland's papers an autograph note from Washington, [illegible] with him, was found by his grandson Nehemiah. It is quite probable that a similar courtesy was extended to other chaplains as [illegible] united, by proximity of their stations to the General's headquarters. And then, [illegible] like Lincoln, Washington had tact as a [illegible]

If there is luck in names, as some say there is in numbers, the maiden name of the first ancestress in America of the Chebacco minister and the United States President, may have foreshadowed that the latter would win in the great national race of 1884.

The exact relationship between them is this: Rev. John Cleaveland was a second cousin of President Cleaveland's great-great grandfather, Rev. Aaron Cleaveland. Each was of the fourth generation from the immigrant Moses—John through two Josiahs, and Aaron through two other Aarons.

John Cleaveland had also a brother named Aaron, who served in the French War in 1758, as a subaltern officer, when John and Ebenezer were chaplains. He was also in the Revolutionary War, commanding a company from Canterbury, Conn., and serving under the famous Gen. Israel Putnam. He was afterwards a colonel in the Connecticut State Militia. He was a farmer. He is thus alluded to in a letter from Chaplain John to his wife at Chebacco: "Our Surgeon, Dr. Rea, Ebenezer, and I went through Springfield to Sheffield, where we came across the Connecticut forces in which was our brother Aaron."

This Aaron was the father of Moses Cleaveland, who laid out and founded the city of Cleaveland, Ohio. The name is now spelled without the letter a.

The founder of that city was, of course, a *nephew* of Rev. John Cleaveland.

Ruling Elders and their Functions.—During Mr. Cleaveland's ministry, four members of his church, were in succession chosen to the office of Ruling Elder, viz.: Francis Choate, Daniel Giddings, Eleazer Craft and Seth Story. The office, which once existed in several of the churches, has long been extinct, having been either formally abolished or allowed to fall into desuetude.

This officer usually read the psalm at the public service, and sat with the minister at the communion; and when any person present from some other church desired to partake of the sacrament, he applied to him and he proposed his name to the church to obtain their consent.

When a minister from another church occupied the pulpit, either on exchange or otherwise, the Ruling Elder, after the singing of the psalm, signified his permission by saying, "If this present brother hath any word of exhortation for the people at this time, in the name of God let him say on."

He also had jurisdiction, to a certain extent, in cases of complaint against church members, which were presented to him in private; which he had discretionary authority to adjust, if the circumstances warranted, without reporting them to the church.

When complaints had been submitted by him to the church he would, after the hearing, ask the church if they were satisfied. If they said yes, the case would be dismissed without censure; but if they said no, he committed it to the pastor to pronounce the sentence

of admonition, suspension or excommunication, whichever had, by vote of the church, been decided upon.

Whenever any person expressed a desire to become a member of the church, the Ruling Elder would give public notice of such request and specify the time for the admission, if no adequate objection should be offered; and at the church-meeting for the purpose, he would call upon all persons who knew any just cause for objecting, to state it, or forever after hold their peace.

Ruling Elders were consecrated by the laying on of hands.

Cleaveland's Successors.—In November of the year of Rev. John Cleaveland's death, 1799, Rev. Josiah Webster, a native of New Hampshire, was ordained as his successor, and preached for nearly seven years, resigning in the summer of 1806. He was a very acceptable preacher, and personally much esteemed.

Rev. Thomas Holt, a native of Connecticut, a very worthy man, was the next minister ordained in 1809. He preached here a little more than four years, leaving in 1813. A funny circumstance occurring during his pastorate, was the request of the people that he would *write* his sermons instead of preaching extemporaneously, as he had been accustomed to do, as they thought his discourses were not up to the mark of their wishes and expectations, in interest and instructiveness. Their proposed method of remedying the defect complained of, recalls the good story of a constant attendant upon public worship (the town and State of whose residence I am unable to specify) who sold his pew, which was in the rear part of the church, not far from the door, and purchased one located very near the pulpit and in front of it, alleging as a reason for the change that he thought that perhaps the sermons might have some strength if he could take them in immediately after they issued from the minister's lips; whereas always before, by the time they reached his ears in the back pew, they had become weak and flat.

Rev. Dr. Crowell.—Mr. Holt's first successor, the seventh in succession of the settled ministers of the place, and the third in length of pastorate,[1] was Rev. Robert Crowell, a native of Salem, who was ordained August 10, 1814, and died here November 10, 1855.

An intimate personal acquaintance with him for many years, would prompt me to present here a more extended sketch of him than the limits assigned me in this book will admit. As, however, his tastes and inclinations were not controversial, and circumstances did not bring him into personal or professional conflict with others, his career was not, in these respects, so eventful as that of some of his predecessors.

He was the model parish-minister. He had no aim nor ambition but to discharge worthily the duties of that station. With him, it seemed more a consecration than a professional pursuit. Thoughtful and dignified in his demeanor, he was yet always accessible to old and young, and uniformly courteous, genial and social in his intercourse with parishioners or strangers.

When a youth, he was employed for a few years in a store in Boston, probably with a view to being ultimately engaged permanently in a business occupation. But an incident, which he once related in conversation, gave him, I have always supposed, a distaste for a life of trade. He said that a man came in one day to purchase cloth for a suit of clothes, and the proprietor of the establishment showed him his variety of fabrics, and recommended to him what he considered the finest piece of goods in the store, setting upon it, however, only a moderate and fair price. The customer, although seeming half inclined to buy, demurred, saying he would like something better in quality, and finally went out without making any purchase, the dealer assuring him that if he would call again soon, he would, he felt confident, be able to show him something which would give him entire satisfaction. After the man had gone out, the dealer turned to his young employee, and said, "Now, Robert, I am going to sell that man a suit off that same roll of cloth! You see if I don't. It is of the very finest quality. The only trouble was, I offered it at too low a price. Next time, I shall ask more for it." In course of a few days the man came in again; and the dealer, bringing forward one-half of the same roll (which he had cut into two equal parts, so that one end was literally a piece of cloth that the customer had not before seen), said, with animation of voice and manner, "Now I've got something that will suit you; but it comes higher in price." He then unrolled it, held it up in the light, and descanted earnestly upon its merits; and the customer was so much pleased that he bought a suit from it without hesitation, paying considerably more than the sum for which he might have had it when the uncut roll was first exhibited!

As a public speaker Dr. Crowell was clear and distinct in utterance, and while earnest was modest and unassuming in manner. He had not the inclination, if indeed he had the organization and temperament, for anything like impassioned oratory.

As a writer he was able and perspicuous; and his published discourses and especially his history of the town, are specimens of remarkably vigorous and pure English, never characterized anywhere by a weak line or an inappropriate or infelicitous epithet. His diction was never ambitiously ornate but always harmoniously rounded. His fancied visits to the houses of the early settlers, and imaginary attendance at a wedding and upon public worship in the primitive meeting-house; his narrative of a fishing voyage and his animated account of a deer hunt; the description of the clandestine raising of the first meeting-house,

[1] Mr. Cleaveland preached here fifty-two years, Mr. Wise forty-five, and Dr. Crowell forty-one,—their three pastorates covering a period of one hundred and thirty-eight years.

of the first training day, and of a visit to the farmer of Hog Island,—all evince that if he had chosen to devote special attention to descriptive literary effort, or to have wrought in the humorous vein, he would have been decidedly a success.

As a grammarian he was always faultlessly accurate, notwithstanding the fact that (as he once told me, while we were visiting a public school) he had never in his life formally studied English Grammar. He said he had studied the Latin Grammar pretty thoroughly; and while teaching a common school in Manchester, a comprehension of the structure of the English was readily gained, partly from the analogy of the languages and partly by familiarizing himself with the rules of the English text book while hearing recitations.

As a citizen his personal influence was uniformly upon the side of good causes, he having been an active member of the first temperance organization in the town, when it required moral courage to advocate total abstinence, and always manifesting an unabated interest in the education of the young, serving upon the board of town's school committee for a large portion of his long residence here, and officiating for many years as its chairman.

Mr. Crowell was a graduate of Dartmouth College, of the class of 1811, and that institution conferred upon him, in 1850, the title of Doctor of Divinity.

He was twice married—first, in the year of his ordination, 1814, to Miss Hannah Frost, of Andover, by whom he had a daughter. His first wife died in December, 1818. The daughter has since deceased. His second wife was Miss Hannah, sister of Hon. Rufus Choate, to whom he was married September 2, 1822, and who died February 9, 1837, and by whom he had six children, three of whom survive—two daughters and a son, Rev. Prof. Edward Payson Crowell, of Amherst College.

Dr. Crowell died November 10, 1855. He was, in theological belief, a Calvinist; and his last words, which were inscribed upon his monument, express his faith in the doctrine of the perseverance of the saints.

His Ancestry.—According to tradition he was of Welsh extraction, his first ancestor in this country having come from Wales to Charlestown, Mass., in 1635, removing thence, in 1638, to Yarmouth, then a new settlement within the Plymouth Colony; where he was a man of some distinction, who had a grant of land, and became a magistrate. He died in 1672 or 1673. His grandson John removed from Yarmouth to Salem, Mass.

In this latter place, Robert, the subject of this notice, was born December 9, 1787. He was a great-great-grandson of the last mentioned John, and son of Captain Samuel, who commanded a privateer during the war of the Revolution, and was lost at sea while master of a merchant vessel, on a voyage to the East Indies.

Dr. Crowell's mother, Lydia (Woodbury) Crowell, was a daughter of Josiah Woodbury, and a native of Hollis, N. H. It is not improbable that she may have been of the same lineage as that of the late Hon. Levi Woodbury, of New Hampshire, who was a Judge of the Supreme Court of that State, U. S. Senator, Secretary of the Navy during President Jackson's administration and Secretary of the Treasury under President Van Buren, and who was at the time of his death a Judge of the Supreme Court of the United States. He was a descendant of John Woodbury, one of the first settlers of Beverly, as are most, if not all, of the Woodburys in New England, whose genealogy is clearly traceable. Of the same lineage was the late Robert Woodbury Burnham, of Essex, whose paternal grandmother's maiden name was Woodbury. She was a native of Beverly Farms.

His Publications.—A few of his discourses were published in pamphlet form soon after their oral delivery, the two most notable being a historical sermon, preached in 1815, with the words from Job, viii. 8, as a text or motto.—"*For enquire, I pray thee, of the former age, and prepare thyself to the search of their fathers*,"—relating chiefly to the persons and events of his parish and church;—and a sermon delivered in the year 1818, upon the occasion of re-interring the coffins which had been robbed of their contents. This discourse is noticed more fully in another chapter of this history.

A discourse on the death of Rev. Joseph Dana, of Ipswich, and one upon the death of Rev. David Jewett, of Sandy Bay, were also printed; and likewise his address delivered October 27, 1852, at the consecration of Spring Street Cemetery.

His most voluminous publication was his history of Essex, the first chapter of which, covering the period from its first settlement to the year 1700, was issued in a small, bound volume, in 1853, two years prior to his death.

He had, at the time of his decease, completed, in manuscript, his continuation of it as far as the year 1814, leaving some materials for its extension yet further,—his plan contemplating, as appears by the statement of his son, its close with the year 1819, when this parish of Ipswich was incorporated as a separate town.

In 1867, the manuscript, which had been completed only as far as the year 1814, was purchased by the town, and a committee, consisting of Edwin Sargent, John C. Choate and Hervey Burnham, made arrangements for its publication,—the work being continued down to the year 1868, by the author's son, Professor E. P. Crowell, of Amherst College. It was issued from the press in the autumn of that year, and is an octavo volume of four hundred and eighty-eight pages, comprising a memoir of the author, by his son, and some valuable contributions by Hon. David Choate, the principal of which is an elaborate account of the action of the town in sustaining the Union cause during the late Civil War, with inter-

esting personal notices and sketches of the soldiers. The work is, in general, lucidly arranged, and one of the best written of town histories. Dr. Crowell's fancy sketches of visits to the abodes of the early settlers, with descriptions of their household utensils, the usages and habits of their daily life, their wearing apparel, their English customs and their personal appearance, bring them vividly before us, as living, breathing entities of flesh and blood, instead of shadows. We seem drawn near to them, and have a more distinctive and quickening idea of their character and their experiences of despair and hope, of sorrow and joy, and their deep religious faith and trust, than would be derived from an impersonal and bare matter-of-fact recital of outline historic detail.

His Criticism of the Quakers.—Dr. Crowell so revered the memory of the Puritan settlers of New England, that he was unwilling to admit that they were deserving even of censure for their treatment of the Quakers. His entire sincerity will not be questioned by those of his acquaintances who dissent from his conclusions relative to those people, as expressed on pages thirty-nine and forty of his town history. I presume that he had been prejudiced against them by reading some of the unjust accusations of their enemies.

I shall say nothing in this connection but what I should have said in his presence, and to which he would have candidly listened, I have no doubt, as he more than once did, without the slightest jar in our amicable personal relations, when conversing upon some of our divergent opinions.

A stranger to him might perhaps suppose that if he had lived in the early period referred to, he would have been active and relentless in persecuting the Quaker immigrants. The probability is, however, that the genial old gentleman wouldn't have done any such thing! He was naturally very humane, and would not intentionally have given pain to a fly. On one occasion a young woman, who came into the town to attend an anti-slavery convention, arose in his meeting, on Sunday morning, just as he was about to commence the delivery of his sermon, and insisted upon speaking. He very properly declined to be forcibly interrupted, but told her that if she would wait until he had finished his discourse, he would not object to her speaking, but would hear what she had to say. This was certainly very gentle and liberal treatment, but as she pertinaciously insisted upon talking at that particular point of time, some members of the congregation led her out.[1]

I believe that some of the charges of Quaker extravagance of speech and impropriety of conduct are gross exaggerations, though I doubt not that they may have been tinged with fanaticism; while it is difficult to see how they could have materially damaged anybody. They were charged with having made "rude and contemptuous answers" to questions before the Court of Assistants. But after carefully reading the said answers, as recorded by the court itself, I assert, without fear of contradiction, that they are in every particular as respectful, and not so defiant, as the answers of the famous John Rogers, the martyr, to the questions of the Ecclesiastical Court, that condemned him to be burnt at the stake. The answers in both cases were fearless and incisive, but entirely proper. Why should Rogers be pictured in the primer as the immaculate saint, expiring amid the flames, with his wife and "nine small children and one at the breast" in the foreground, to excite our sympathy; and the poor Quakers be at the same time denounced as contumacious criminals? The same argument which could justify the barbarous cruelty in the one case would justify it in the other.

Entirely impartial and just, I think, is the conclusion concerning this portion of New England history, adopted by a distinguished grandson of Rev. John Cleaveland. In speaking of the Colonial Governor, John Endicott, who signed the death-warrant of the four Quakers hung on Boston Common, he says:

"This was the time of the Quaker persecution—an affair which says little for the liberality, or even the good sense, of our fathers In the indelible reproach, then incurred by Massachusetts, our Governor must bear his share. Let us see that he does not bear more."[2]

In 1661, King Charles the Second sent an order or letter to the General Court, requiring them to discontinue all proceedings against the Quakers, and to send to England such as were then under arrest. The royal order was brought to Massachusetts by a Quaker, Samuel Shattuck, who had been banished. According to Macaulay's "History of England, that illustrious Quaker, William Penn, had great influence with King Charles II., as well as with his brother and successor, James II.

Later Preachers.—Seven different persons have been pastors of the Congregational Church here since the death of Dr. Crowell—Rev. James M. Bacon, who remained thirteen years, and who died in Ashby, Massachusetts, in 1873; Rev. D. A. Morehouse, four and a quarter years; Rev. Edward G. Smith, one year and seven months; Rev. John L. Harris, between one and two years; Rev. F. H. Boynton, two years and five months; Rev. F. H. Palmer, for a short period; and Rev. Temple Cutler, the present pastor.

Mr. Cutler was born in Lynn, Mass., May 4, 1828. His father was Temple Cutler, son of Rev. Dr. Manasseh Cutler, so long the minister of the Hamlet Parish, both before and after its incorporation as a

[1] Miss Maria French, of Salem, in December, 1842; an undoubtedly sincere person, who had become fanatical upon what she regarded as the indifference of the church to the wrongs and woes of the slave. She had, herself, been a member of a Congregational Church, but had joined a class termed "come-outers," who felt burdened with a mission to cry aloud and spare not, anywhere and at any time, —much like some of the early Quakers, who were, no doubt, equally harmless.

[2] Hon. Nehemiah Cleveland, in Appendix to Topsfield Bi-Centennial Address, 1850.

town.[1] His mother was Hannah Appleton, daughter of Captain Oliver Appleton, of Ipswich, a descendant of the John Appleton who in 1787 joined with Rev. John Wise and others, in resistance to the illegal tax levied upon the colony by Governor Andros. John Appleton's wife was Priscilla, daughter of Rev. Joseph Glover, to whom he was married in 1651. Mr. Cutler is, therefore, descended from clerical stock of the olden time, as well as of a more recent period.

He matriculated at Yale College in 1853, and graduated at Marietta College in Marietta, Ohio, in 1857. He studied also at Andover Theological Seminary, graduating from that institution in 1857. His first settlement was at Skowhegan, Maine, where he was ordained and installed, February 20, 1861. He was chaplain of the Ninth Regiment of Maine Volunteers for nine months during the recent war, and in 1864 was for several months in the service of the Christian Commission. He was settled in Athol, Massachusetts, from 1868 to 1876; and was afterwards, for five years, in the service of the American Missionary Association, at Chattanooga, Tennessee, and Charleston, South Carolina. In 1881, he returned to Hamilton, where he preached for two years. In 1883, October 1st, he came to Essex, where he still officiates as pastor.

Seating the Congregation.—In this place, as also throughout the Puritan settlements, it was for some time the custom to assign the most eligible seats in the meeting-house according to wealth and high social position, or official rank. This usage was an expression of the aristocratic exclusiveness engrafted upon their minds in England, and which they did not immediately outgrow. I have sometimes wondered if they ever read in their public services the first four verses of the second chapter of the Epistle of that radical believer in human equality, the Apostle James:

"My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with *respect of persons*. For if there come into your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a *poor man* in vile raiment; and ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, *Sit thou here in a good place*; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool: are ye not then *partial in yourselves*, and become judges of evil thoughts?"

First Baptist Preaching.—For more than one hundred and seventy years after its first settlement, there were no religious meetings in Chebacco, but those of Orthodox Congregationalists.

No meeting-house was erected in the place for any other sect, for one hundred and thirty years, from 1679, (the year the first house was built, without leave), to 1809. In the latter year, a plain, flat-roofed structure, without steeple or tower, was erected upon the site of the house now occupied by the Methodists. It was in dimensions about thirty-five feet square. Its pulpit was plain and of pine, and, instead of pews, it had long benches.

Christian Church.—The Christian Baptist Society and Church, which occupied this building, had been organized in the spring of the preceding year. The church had no written creed, and the members styled themselves Christians, without prefix or affix, citing the historical statement of the New Testament, that "the Disciples were called Christians first in Antioch." They accepted the Bible, especially the New Testament, without note or comment, as their confession of faith and practical guide. They were, in faith and organization, substantially the same as the Church of the Disciples, in Pennsylvania and in some of the Western States, the church of which the late President Garfield was a member and at one time a lay preacher. Its adherents are sometimes styled Campbellites, after Alexander Campbell, the principal founder of the sect at the West.

Elder Elias Smith.—The most distinguished of the preachers of this denomination in New England, who assisted in the formation in Chebacco of this Church of Christian Baptists, or Christians, as they preferred to be called, was Elder Elias Smith, father of Rev. Daniel D. and Rev. Matthew Hale Smith, and uncle of Dr. Jerome V. C. Smith, long the Port-Physician of Boston, for several years Mayor of that city, at the same time a Professor in the Berkshire Medical College, and widely known as a successful and entertaining lyceum-lecturer.

First Religious Newspaper in the Country.—It was while preaching to the Christian Church in Chebacco, that Elias Smith commenced the publication of the first religious newspaper in the United States. The first number was issued in September, 1808, between seven and eight years prior to the establishment of the Boston *Recorder*. It was printed in Portsmouth, N. H., though much of the editorial

[1] While pastor at Hamilton, Manasseh Cutler became qualified as a physician, often practicing gratuitously for the benefit of the poor. He was also a member of Congress. He was doubly entitled Doctor, as Yale College, from which he had years before graduated, conferred upon him the title of LL. D.

Two incidents of his life, perhaps now known to but few persons, are of sufficient general interest to be related in a book upon Essex County:

1 In 1788, while journeying in a chaise between Hamilton, Mass., and the pioneer settlement at Marietta, Ohio, of which he was projector and leader, riding a distance of more than seven hundred miles each way, he called upon Dr. Franklin, in Philadelphia, and was entertained by him at tea; and the weather being warm, the supper-table was set in the garden. What a charming scene for the imagination to recall! The venerable sage and patriot, whose fame as philosopher, statesman and wise economist filled two hemispheres, entertaining his worthy guest from the east with such unpretentious cordiality and pastoral simplicity.

2 Dr Cutler was probably one of the most thoroughly informed botanists in the country. When Dr Samuel Thomson, once widely known as a botanic physician, was tried, in Salem, for alleged mal-practice in causing the death of a young man in Beverly, named Lovett, by administering poison as a medicine, and two physicians, one from Beverly and the other from Salisbury, testified against him, exhibiting a specimen of what they termed lobelia, which they declared was a dangerous poison, Dr Cutler, who appeared as a witness for the defence, was not afraid to show it in court to the surprise and amusement of the bench and bar. He said it was rather a savory, which he had often used for relief in sickness. Amid the guffaws of the spectators, the case was thrown out of court, and Thomson was discharged.

writing was done in this place. It was entitled "Herald of Gospel Liberty." Its publication was continued for about nine years.

Elder Smith was at first a Calvinistic Baptist. On the incorporation of the Free Will element in his theology, he joined the Christian denomination: or rather, he was, in fact, one of the founders of that religious order, particularly in New England. He afterwards became a Universalist, and is said to have been, later in life, of Rationalistic tendencies.

His early advantages for obtaining an education were limited, but he made amends for any deficiency in this respect by the force of his remarkable natural abilities. He was specially quick of apprehension and quick-witted. On one occasion, soon after he had left one sect and joined another, an adherent of his former faith greeted him in public, unexpectedly, and rather sharply, with the question, "Mr. Smith, why did you *turn* from us to another denomination?" Perceiving that it would be idle and useless to enter upon an elaborate explanation before a chance-gathered group of persons, listening from motives of curiosity, he merely replied that he did it in obedience to an injunction of Scripture. "Ah!" said his questioner, "how's that? What particular passage of Scripture was it?" Smith answered: "Your denomination gives such poor support to its preachers, that I couldn't live among you and provide for my family; and so I obeyed the command which says: 'Turn ye, turn ye, for why will ye die?'"[1] The questioner collapsed.

Mr. Smith finally became a physician, and was quite successful, using botanic remedies exclusively; for the sale of which he kept a store in Hanover Street, Boston, where, in passing, I often observed the sign of "Elias Smith," over the door.

One day, in a railroad car, an old acquaintance, by way of jocose reference to his changes of sectarian connection, saluted him with the abrupt question, "Brother Smith, what's your doctrine *now*?" He replied: "My doctoring now is for the body. I have done with doctrine for the soul."

He died in 1846, at the age of eighty-five.

Other Christian Preachers.—Elder John Rand sustained the relation of regular pastor of this church for a longer period, I believe, than any other minister. He resided here about seven years. He was very acceptable as a speaker, and was personally popular. The only criticism of him that I ever heard of, was that of one of his people, who, it was said, expressed the opinion that he "spent rather too much time in currying his horse."

At various times, Elders Stinchfield, Jones, Boothby, Swett, Robinson, Banfield, Sylvanus Brown, Elam Burnham and his brothers, Wesley, Edwin and George, have officiated here for brief periods. With the exception of Mr. Rand, those preaching here the longest time continuously, were probably, Elder Swett and Elder Elam Burnham.

The people of this society and church were from the first sincere and consistent believers in human equality. One of their preachers was a colored man named Tash, who is said to have been an interesting speaker, and of considerable mental ability. He preached here fifty or more years ago; and it is a curious circumstance that he used in one of his discourses a figure of speech which occurs in one of the printed sermons of the present celebrated London preacher Rev. C. H. Spurgeon, and has been cited in compilations of some of his particularly bright sayings. It was repeated to me in 1840 by the late Gilman M. Burnham, who had some years previously heard it from Tash's lips, at a time when Spurgeon could have been only a child, if indeed he had then been born, as his birth did not occur until 1834, and he commenced speaking in public as an exhorter as late as 1851, and the next year first preached to a Baptist society at the age of eighteen.

Speaking of the neglect of some people to read the Bible, Mr. Tash said they would lay it aside "till the dust gathered so thickly on it that you could, with the finger, write the word 'damnation' on the cover." Spurgeon expresses the same idea exactly in very similar, if not precisely the same phraseology.

Of the members of this society and church, it can with truth be stated that no more sincerely devotional and honest-minded people, and no better citizens, ever lived in the town. Of the early founders of the church, one of the most prominent was the late Deacon Aaron Burnham, whose zeal and devotedness have often been mentioned by those who heard him sing in the public meetings his favorite hymn, beginning with the lines,—

> "How firm a foundation, ye saints of the Lord,
> Is laid for your faith in his excellent word."

Of the twenty-two original members of the church, probably not one is now living. Of those who were afterwards members of the society or church, or of both, Moses Knowlton, Frederick Andrews, William H. Burnham, John C. Burnham, and perhaps a few others, are survivors.

In 1849 a new edifice was built upon the site of the first meeting-house, which had been taken down a year or two previously. This building is styled the Century Chapel, from the circumstance that the land on which it stands was leased by the proprietors for one hundred years.

It is now occupied as a place of public worship by the Methodist Society and Church.

The Universalist Society was organized in 1829 by forty-three persons, who signed its constitution and agreed to its general statement of belief.

Clergymen of that faith had occasionally preached in this place before that date, among whom were Rev. Ezra Leonard, of Annisquam, originally settled there as an Orthodox Congregationalist, but who, having

[1] Ezekiel, xxxiii. 11.

become converted to the doctrine of universal salvation, went over, with his church and society, to that communion; and the successor of Murray, at Gloucester Harbor, Rev. Thomas Jones, a native of Wales, one of the best educated ministers of that town, having graduated at the famous institution founded in England by the munificence of Lady Huntington.

After the formation of the society, meetings were held more frequently. Of the preachers who from time to time officiated here were Rev. Fayette Mace, who some years afterwards joined the Shakers, Rev. Robt. L. Kilham, Rev. Henry Belden, Rev. Lemuel Willis, then pastor at Salem, and others.

In 1835 Rev. Joseph Banfield, who had been preaching statedly for the Christian Baptists, adopted the faith of the Universalists, and was by them employed for some time, being the first minister who preached for them regularly and consecutively.

Mr. Banfield was the father of Hon. Everett C. Banfield, a lawyer of some note, who during President Grant's administration was Solicitor of the United States Treasury Department at Washington.

The society held its meetings a part of the time in the Christian Baptist meeting-house, which was loaned them for the purpose, and on other occasions in the school-houses, at the Falls, and in the Thompson Island District, and a few times, as had been the case with Mr. Cleaveland's society in the preceding century, in a barn.

The Universalist Meeting-House.—In 1836 the edifice, now standing, was erected under the superintendence of a building committee, consisting of Jacob Story, John Dexter, Sr., Parker Burnham, (2d), Oliver Low and Samuel Hardy. The sale of the pews yielded five hundred dollars more than the entire cost of the land, house and furniture, which was the sum of four thousand five hundred dollars. The overplus of five hundred dollars was, by vote of the society, presented to the builder, Mr. Benjamin Courtney, who found, at the finishing of his faithful work, that he had lost money by his contract. Thus the society crowned the completion of its temple of worship by a deed of practical Christianity.

The house was dedicated December 14, 1836, Rev. Thomas Whitemore preaching the dedicatory sermon.

The preachers to this society have been as follows: Rev. Augustus C. L. Arnold, from the spring of 1837 till early in 1840, when he became minister of a Unitarian parish in Fall River; the writer of this sketch, from May, 1840, to November, 1844, and again from May, 1852 to July, 1856, when he resigned and engaged in secular business; Rev. H. B. Baker, for about four years; Rev. Willard Spaulding, one year; Rev. C. H. Dutton, for about the same period; Rev. Lemuel Patrello, for one season; Rev. S. Goff and Rev. J. H. Fuller, for about two years each; Rev. F. F. Lovell; Rev. C. C. Clark, for a short time; Rev. D. F. Pember for nearly four years; Rev. Benton Smith, for a few months; Rev. Harrison Closson, for about four years; and Rev. George J. Sanger, the present pastor.

Mr. Sanger was born in Framingham, Mass., August 27, 1826, and was the son of Daniel and Clarissa Sanger. His education was received in the common schools of his native town and in the academies of Framingham and Marlboro'. He was ordained as a minister of the Universalist Church in Sippican, a village in the town of Rochester, Mass., September 8, 1847. He has been settled in Sandwich, Gloucester, Hardwick, Webster, Danvers and Essex. He served as chaplain of the Forty-second Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers in the War of the Rebellion, and was taken prisoner at the battle of Galveston, January 1, 1863, and was discharged from the service August 20, 1863. He was a member of the Massachusetts Legislature in the years 1869, 1873 and 1874, representing the towns of Webster and Danvers. He commenced as pastor of the Essex Universalist Church September 1, 1884.

Formation of a Church.—During the ministry of Mr. Pember a church was organized, separately from the society. Before that time, the communion was administered to all of the congregation who chose to partake of it. This was the usage of the writer of this, who believed then, and believes still, that this manner of observance was consistent Universalism. With those who conscientiously think that the "covenant of grace" is limited in its scope, a separate organization within the society is entirely consistent, and may be considered as a logical necessity. But where it is held that the covenant embraces all souls, all may be communicants, if for the time they choose so to be; and if then sincere, (and who shall judge them?) the observance is one good act;—and of any insincerity I never saw nor heard of any sign or token.

When, in 1840, I stated these views of the communion service to the venerable Father Jones, then the minister of the Universalist Society at Gloucester Harbor, he said that he entirely agreed with me.

A Deacon descended from Deacons.—The late Mr. John Goodhue, Sr., who officiated for some years as one of the Universalist deacons, a sincere and blameless man, was a descendant of William Goodhue, a deacon of the first church organized in Chebacco, whose brother Joseph and father William had both been deacons of the first church in Ipswich.

A Valuable Bequest by a Goodhue Descendant.—About the year 1845, the society received, by the will of Mrs. Betsey Story, wife of Jacob Story, the gift of a large tract of land within the township; which, after having been let for twenty years or more, was sold for a large sum, a part of which was expended in remodelling and fresco-painting the interior of the church-edifice, leaving as a balance the sum of one thousand five hundred dollars, which was added to the society fund.

Before becoming the second wife of Mr. Story, the donor was the widow of Col. William Andrews. Her maiden name was Goodhue, and she was of the same lineage as those of that surname before mentioned.

Methodist Society and Church.—In February, 1874, a church of the Methodist Episcopal denomination was instituted here by Rev. Daniel Sherman, Presiding Elder. A society was also organized at or about the same time, and both are in a prosperous condition. They hold their public religious services in the Century Chapel.

The preachers, who, according to the established usage of that religious body, are customarily appointed by the Conference for a period of two years, have thus far been as follows; Revs. A. J. Pettigrew, Abner Gregory, Wm. Merrill, Frank T. Pomeroy, E. H. McKenney, Walter Wilkie, George E. Hill, O. E. Poland and Putnam Webber.

CHAPTER XCV.

ESSEX—(*Continued*).

ESSEX SOLDIERS IN VARIOUS WARS.

The Pequot War—King Phillip's War—Narraganset—Mr. Wise's First Chaplaincy—Later Conflicts with the Indians—Hostilities with Spain—Siege of Louisburg—French War—Expedition to Fort Ticonderoga—Mention of Cleaveland Brothers—Dr. Prince—War of the Revolution—One Chebacco Man Killed and one Wounded on Bunker Hill—Col. Burnham's Autobiography—Spartan Mothers of Chebacco—War of 1812—War of the Rebellion—Surnames of Early Settlers—Commissioned Officers from Essex, who served as such in War—Chaplains—Officers and Privates—"The Rank and File."

The Pequot War.—The soldier-record of Essex commences at an early date. In 1637 John Burnham and his brother, Thomas Burnham, Robert Crosse and Andrew Story were drafted to serve in the war against the Pequot Indians; and in consideration of the service thus rendered, they each received, two years later, a grant of land of several acres.

This was, no doubt, the beginning of the bounty-land system in this country, as a reward for military service.

1643.—John Burnham and his brother Thomas were again soldiers, this year, in an expedition against the Indians.

In King Philip's War.—As well as in the immediately preceding hostilities, this place was represented, though to what extent precisely, as regards the number of men engaged, we are not definitely informed.

John Bennet was one of those killed at Deerfield, Massachusetts, in September, 1675. He was a son of Henry Bennet, and grand-son of John Perkins, the first permanent settler of that name in Ipswich, who was the ancestor of all of that surname now residing in Essex. Henry Bennet had a farm, of which the southern boundary was Castle Neck Creek, and a part of the dividing line between Essex and Ipswich. He also owned land upon Hog Island, upon which his son Jacob lived, and which Jacob's widow and children sold to Captain Thomas Choate.

John Bennet was a member of the company from Essex County, styled, in the New England histories, "The Flower of Essex," which was commanded by Captain Thomas Lathrop, of Beverly, and which was surprised by Indians, at Deerfield, at the locality ever since known as "Bloody Brook;" where he and most of his command were slaughtered. The company numbered eighty-four. Seventy-six of them were killed, having been ambuscaded by about seven hundred Indians, said to have been led by King Philip in person.

Captain Lathrop's widow married Joseph Grafton; and in 1683, being again a widow, she became the third wife of Deacon William Goodhue, of Ipswich, the first settler of that name in that place, and father of Deacon William Goodhue, jr., of Chebacco, as well as first ancestor in America of the Goodhues generally throughout this region. Her maiden name was Bethiah Rea, and she was of the same lineage as that of my great-great-grandmother Prince, whose maiden name was Sarah Rea. Both were descended from Daniel Rea, whose name, with those of John Endicott and Hugh Peters, is signed to the covenant of the First Church in Salem.

Narraganset.—Of the ninety-five names borne upon the roll of the company of Captain Joseph Gardner, of Salem, organized to join the expedition against Narraganset, were those of Robert Andrews, Zaccheus Perkins, John Prince, Samuel Rust, Samuel Story, and Joseph Soames. Rust and Story were from Chebacco. Andrews was probably of Chebacco kinship. Prince and Soames were from Gloucester. Prince was a kinsman of my first ancestor in this country, who was an early settler of Salem, where he had a grant of land. Andrews and Perkins were enlisted from Topsfield. The latter was a grandson of John Perkins, (1st), of Ipswich, and a nephew of John Perkins, jr., of Chebacco.

This company was mustered at Dedham, Massachusetts, December 10, 1675, and marched to the general rendezvous of the forces at a place called Wickford in Rhode Island. Captain Gardner, Robert Andrews, Joseph Soames, and six others of the company, were subsequently killed in battle in the Narraganset Swamp; and the command devolved upon the lieutenant, William Hathorne, of Salem.[1]

[1] Son of the Major William Hathorne, who came, in 1630, in the Arbella, with Winthrop, and who was the ancestor of Nathaniel Hawthorne, the distinguished author, who uniformly inserted the letter *w* in the surname, which had sometimes been so written in England, and was so spelled by Governor Endicott, in his will, in 1659, where he designated certain real estate as having been purchased by him of "Captain Hawthorne." Rev. Dr. Wm. Bentley spelled the name Harthorne. Of this Wm. Hathorne, or Hawthorne, senior, the writer of this sketch of Essex is a lineal descendant.

MR WISE. FIRST CHAPLAINCY.—Rev. John Wise officiated for a short time as chaplain, in this war, a companying some forces sent from Connecticut. At the time of his appointment to the chaplaincy, he was preaching in Branford, Conn., where he was urgently invited to settle This was five years before he commenced preaching in Chebacco.

LATER CONFLICTS WITH THE INDIANS.—Upon a recurrence of Indian hostilities about the year 1708 Chebacco furnished its proportionate number of the troops required; and in detachments of soldiers for defense at various points, and for aggressive service, this place was from time to time represented, although minute particulars in this respect are not now accessible.

Rev. Benjamin Choate, a native of this place, and son of John Choate, the first settler of that name, was for some time stationed as chaplain at the garrison in Deerfield, in this State; where, nearly thirty years before, Lathrop and his men were captured and destroyed by the savages.

HOSTILITIES WITH SPAIN.—Among the officers in a military expedition to the Spanish West Indies, in the year 1740, was Major Ammi Ruhami Wise, son of Rev. John Wise, and a native of this place. It is not improbable that others also from Chebacco accompanied that expedition, though we have no record of their names.

THE SIEGE OF LOUISBURG.—In this famous expedition, under Pepperell and Warren, in the year 1745, were several men from this place. In the Eighth Massachusetts Regiment were Colonel John Choate, Lieutenant Thomas Choate, Jr., William Andrews, Aaron Foster (maternal grandfather of Hon. Rufus Choate) and Daniel Giddings.

On the roll of Captain Prescott's company, of Colonel Moore's regiment, was the name of Jonathan Choate, undoubtedly a descendant of the first settler of that surname in Chebacco, whether he was at that time a resident of this place, or had previously emigrated to New Hampshire; from which State several of that regiment were enrolled. Among other soldiers in this campaign were Abraham Martin and four others of his surname, whose residence, however, is not designated.

FRENCH WAR—EXPEDITION TO FORT TICONDEROGA.—In the company commanded by Captain Stephen Whipple, in Colonel Jonathan Bagley's regiment, which was the third of the regiments raised by the colony of Massachusetts to operate against Canada, and which participated in the disastrous campaign to Lake George, in 1758, three of the officers,—the first and second lieutenants and the ensign, Nathan Burnham, Stephen Low and Samuel Knowlton, respectively,—the chaplain, Rev. John Cleaveland, were from Chebacco. Five of the privates of the company, two of the name of Burnham and one each of the names of Andrews, Foster and Marshall, and doubtless others, were likewise from this place.

The two lieutenants, Nathan Burnham and Stephen Low, were fatally wounded in the attack upon Ticonderoga, July 8th.

The following letter of Lieutenant Burnham was written from the western part of Massachusetts, to his wife, while he was on his way to the seat of war:

"HADLEY, June 7, 1758.

"TO MY DEARLY-BELOVED WIFE:

"I hope, through Divine goodness, you are in health, as I am at this time, and I pray God to be with you, and preserve you and our dear children from all evil. My duty to Mother Choate. My love to all my friends. We came into town last Sabbath day, about two o'clock, and billeted the company at private houses, and we are very kindly entertained at the widow Porter's. Her husband was a member of the General Court about thirty years. Yesterday the captain, I, and Lieutenant Low, went over Connecticut River to Northampton, to see about the affair, and returned at night. We expect to go over to Northampton to-morrow, to take seven days' provisions, to march near to Albany.

"I remain your loving husband,

"NATHAN BURNHAM.

"P. S.—I should be glad to hear from you. I have had blisters on one foot, but they are better. Colonel Bagley came to town yesterday. Colonel Dooty's regiment is coming in, and it is supposed both regiments are to march together. We have twelve of our own guns, and had twenty-two at Worcester, and other companies are much so. It is supposed there is no great danger. The arms are at Albany."

This letter was directed "To Nathan Burnham, of Chebacco, in Ipswich."

One month later, his wife received the following letter:

"MRS. BURNHAM: I send you these lines to let you know the heavy news that you have to hear from the camp, and I pray God give you grace and strength to hold up under such heavy tidings. The truth is your husband, our lieutenant, Nathan Burnham, being in the fight at the narrows of Ticonderoga, July the 8th, 1758, received a ball in the bowels, which proved mortal. He came to me and told me that he was wounded, and that he would soon be in eternity. I desired him to retreat down the hill. I followed him, and found some help to carry him off the ground, namely, James Andrews, John Foster and Jeremiah Burnham. We carried him that night four miles to our boats. The doctor did what he could, but vain was the help of man. Next day, being the ninth day upon our passage up the lake, about eleven o'clock, after many heavenly expressions and prayers, he departed this life, and, I believe, made a good exchange. Please tell Mrs. Low the same heavy news. Stephen Low, being in the same fight, was, without doubt, shot dead on the spot. We had not the opportunity to bring off our dead.

'NEHEMIAH BURNHAM.

"Lieutenant Burnham desired me to take care of some things that he had with him, which I will do in the best manner I can. Our Captain Whipple is wounded in his left thigh. I hope he will soon be out again."

This Lieutenant Nathan Burnham was a son of Thomas, grandson of John and great-grandson of Thomas, the second of the three Burnham brothers, early settlers. His wife's maiden name was Hannah Choate.

The following is from Roderick H. Burnham's notice of Nathan Burnham's army service, in his "Burnham's Geneology," published in 1879:

"Tradition has it that before leaving for the war he took his sword on his hand to try the metal, and it broke. Turning to his wife, he said, 'I shall never come back.' He went on, but returned to pray with his family before taking final leave."

Chaplain Cleaveland, in his army journal, under date of July 9th, says:

"This evening Lieut. Burnham (Nathan) was buried, having died upon the water, of his wound. I understood he inquired much for me,

and desired to see me before he died; but I was in another bateau, and could not be found, the lake being full of them."

THE SURGEON MENTIONS THE CLEAVELAND BROTHERS.—Dr. Caleb Rea, of Danvers, the surgeon of the regiment, kept a journal[1] during the entire campaign, in which he thus alludes to John Cleaveland, for whom he evidently had a personal admiration, and also to his brother Ebenezer, who was likewise an army chaplain, in another regiment, Colonel Preble's.

"*12th.*—This day Mr. E. Cleaveland returned to Greenbush in order to proceed home with at least half a bushell of Letters."

"*18th.*—Sabbath. Mr. Cleaveland preach'd in ye afternoon from Math. 3, 8, in which he showed what Repentance is and what ye fruits yt evidence it, and urged it upon ye Auditory as specially necessary to those engaged in a martial enterprise. There was a general attendance of ye Regiment on Divine Service, and I doubt not but many seriously affected."

HE MENTIONS DR. PRINCE.—In the same journal Dr. Rea thus alludes to my great-uncle, who was the surgeon of another regiment, in the same campaign:

July 1st.—"We arrived at ye Lake an hour by Sun, and Col. Ruggles very kindly treated ye Field and Staff Officers, as Col. Nichols also did at ye half way brook between F. E.[2] and ye Lake, where he had been sometime stationed and had got a Piquated Garrison; here I borrow'd some medicine of Doct^r Prince, viz. Pul. Rhei one dr., Crm Tartar one oz., Laud. Liquid one oz., Diascord one oz., Pil Cochia one oz., Pul. Corte one oz."

July 3d.—"I this day delivered one Johannes[3] to Major Gage to keep till my return from ye expedit^n or deliver my executor in case I return not. Present Doct^r Prince and Capt. Moors."

July 18th.—"Paid Dr. Prince ye medicine I borrowed of him ye first instant at Half-way Brook."

Dr. Rae was manifestly of careful habits, and punctiliously exact in keeping memoranda of indebtedness. As far as I have been able to trace the relationship, it appears that he and Dr. Prince were second cousins.

The discipline of the English army at that time was not only strict, but terribly severe. Dr. Rea records a case of hanging for theft of a few buckles, though it was said that the man hung had stolen before. This is probably the same case mentioned by Chaplain Cleaveland in his army journal. For comparatively trivial offences men were severely whipped.

Captain Caleb Low, a native of Chebacco (an uncle of Colonel Joshua), served in the English army at Ticonderoga. In the Revolutionary War he was promoted to the rank of major; at which time he was a resident of Danvers.

In 1659 Mr. Cleaveland, as chaplain, accompanied his regiment to Cape Breton, where it had been ordered for garrison duty in the famous fortress of Louisburg, which had been captured from the French. Here he stayed a few months, until the taking of Quebec, when he returned to Chebacco.

[1] Contributed to the Essex Institute Historical Collections, by his great-grandson, F. M. Ray, Esq., of Westbrook, Maine.

[2] Fort Edward.

[3] A servant, I suppose.

WAR OF THE REVOLUTION.—This place furnished, in all, for various periods of service in the army during the long Revolutionary struggle, more than one hundred men. Crowell's "History of Essex" gives a list of one hundred and five names, accompanied by the remark that "it is not to be supposed that the roll is a complete one." To this number may be added one more, a soldier who died in a military prison in Nova Scotia, making one hundred and six, at the least.

Seven men from this place, who bore the surnames of early settlers, were in the battle of Bunker's Hill, viz.: James Andrews, Benjamin Burnham, Francis Burnham, John Burnham, Nehemiah Choate, Aaron Perkins and Jesse Story, Jr.

ONE CHEBACCO MAN KILLED AND ONE WOUNDED AT BUNKER HILL.—The last-named was killed in the engagement. He was a brother of the late Ephraim Story, Sr., and uncle of Hermon Story and John Cleaveland Story. Francis Burnham was wounded at the same action. I was told by his sister, Mrs. Hardy, who died forty-five years ago, that she had heard him say that before the battle began he felt frightened; but when young Story, who stood by his side, was shot down, the sight of his blood made him desperate in the determination to avenge his death; and during the remainder of the battle he had no fear.

He was a brother of Capt. Nathaniel Burnham, the grandfather of Luther, Calvin, Nehemiah and Nathaniel Burnham, of Essex, and of Dr. Caleb Burnham, of Lynn.

Two others from this place, Aaron Low and Samuel Procter, were employed during the night preceding the battle in making cartridges. Mr. Low was the grandfather of Aaron Low, Esq., and Warren Low, Jr. He was one of the seven from this place who were with the forces sent to suppress Shay's Rebellion; when his rank was that of sergeant. Subsequently he was recorded as lieutenant.

In the army of Gen. Gates, at the defeat of Burgoyne, were twenty-eight soldiers from Chebacco, and five of them were among those detailed to guard his forces, after their surrender, while they were on their way to Charlestown, Mass., and during their encampment there for a short time prior to their embarkation for England.

Among the officers from Chebacco, Col. Jonathan Cogswell served throughout the war, and won honorable distinction. When at the battle of White Plains, N. Y., Rev. John Cleaveland was the chaplain of his regiment. Major John Burnham (a descendant in the fifth generation from the first John, the eldest of the three boy-immigrants) had a varied and eventful experience. He was a lieutenant at the battle of Bunker's Hill, when two men of his company were killed and three wounded. He was also in the battles upon Long Island, and was with the forces that

captured the Hessians, when, in the words of an old war ballad sung by our fathers,—

"Through storm and ice at Trenton they,
They crossed the Delaware;
And routed the immortal Washington,
Ere long, and they fear."

He was with Washington at Valley Forge in the hard winter of 1777; served, at different times, under Generals Greene and Lafayette; was highly complimented upon the fine appearance of his regiment, by Baron Von Steuben, while inspecting it; and was spoken of as an officer in strong terms of commendation, by Gen. Benjamin Pierce, father of President Franklin Pierce, and by Col. John Brooks, afterwards Governor of Massachusetts.

He was among the early settlers of Marietta, Ohio, and commanded a military company of sixty persons organized for the protection of the infant settlement.

He removed to Derry, N. H.; where he died, in 1843, at the age of ninety-four years.

Major Caleb Low, of Danvers, who served as one of the line officers in Washington's army, and was present at the execution of the British spy, Major André, was a native of Chebacco, and had two brothers in this place, who also served in the army of the Revolution, rendering efficient service to their country. They were uncles of the late Col. Joshua, Capt. David, Thomas, Jeremiah, Caleb, Jonathan and Josiah; all residents of Essex.

Capt. David Low was commander of the Chebacco Company, which was the third company of the Third Regiment of Essex County Militia.

Other commissioned officers from Chebacco were as follows: Lieut. Samuel Burnham; Lieut. John Cleaveland, Jr., and his brother, Assistant Surgeon Parker Cleaveland; Capt. Francis Perkins, and Capt. William Story. Dr. Cleaveland's rank may have been equivalent to that of lieutenant, if the same rule of gradation now in vogue was adopted then; unless he may have been employed as a contract-surgeon, as were many in our latest war, whose rank, if any, was merely honorary, and in effect and significance, though not technically the same, was somewhat like that of a rank and title by brevet.

Col. Jonathan Burnham, who commanded a regiment of the Continental line, which had been raised in New Hampshire, was a native of Chebacco, and resided here and in Ipswich until after his marriage with Miss Ross of that place; when he removed to Hampton Falls, N. H.; from which town he entered the Revolutionary army. He had served in the French war, at Ticonderoga, and under Gen. Wolfe at Quebec. He was an uncle of the Francis Burnham who was wounded at Bunker's Hill

[illegible] page 1181 [illegible] the only states [illegible] Hampshire was [illegible] Jonathan [illegible] Burnham [illegible], pages [illegible].

Some years after the Revolutionary War, he removed to Salisbury, Mass., where he died in 1823, at the age of eighty-five.

Col. Burnham's Autobiography.—In 1814, he wrote an autobiographical sketch, which is decidedly interesting, and brings vividly before us the scenes and events and some of the prominent personages of his time. His allusion to Rev. Theophilus Pickering, whom, in his boyhood, he heard preach; the incident of an earthquake-shock during the services at the church in Chebacco; the gratification of General Washington, on the arrival of the New Hampshire reinforcements, with his complimentary exclamation which gives us a momentary glimpse of the by-play of Washington's mind, on one of the few occasions when he unbent from his usual stateliness of manner and became slightly jocular,—and the writer's *naïveté* and transparency of character,—all render the narrative highly entertaining as a specimen of life-like naturalness in personal description.

The title-page (which may have been written by another hand, possibly that of the printer), is as follows:

"The Life of Col. Jonathan Burnham, now living in Salisbury, Mass.; being a Narrative of his long and useful Life. Containing a Recital of highly interesting Incidents relative to the Revolutionary Services and Private Life of this distinguished Soldier and Friend of the departed and beloved George Washington. Portsmouth: Printed and sold at S. Whidden's Printing office, Spring Hill. May, 1814."

Copies of this narrative are probably now very rare. I know of none but the one I have here transcribed, which I found among the valuable historical accumulations of the late Peter Force, in the Congressional Library at Washington.

Its insertion here, in full, is deemed appropriate, as a part of the blended military history and biography of Essex.

A HISTORY
of the
Most Remarkable Things of my Life.

I, Jonathan Burnham, the fourth, was born at Chebacco, June the 9th, 1738, where I saw many remarkable things. The first, I went with my parents a Sunday morning to hear the Rev. Mr. Pickering preach, and as I got to the meeting-house the minister and people ran out for fear the house would fall on them, for the earth did shake, and after sometime the minister says to the people, we will go in, for we are as safe there as anywhere, and the whole of them went in and were very attentive to hear him pray and preach, and the people were greatly alarmed and were concerned what they should do to be saved, and went from house to house to pray with and for one another, and the Lord sent two brothers, Mr. John and Ebenezer Cleaveland, and the people built a house and settled John Cleaveland, whose labors were greatly blessed, for in one year ninety persons were taken into his church; and many more wonderful things happened; the throat distemper killed many of my mates and many little children; and two other things: I merely escaped being drowned, but the Lord preserved me from a watery grave; and many more wonderful things I remembered; and when I was but fifteen years old I went to live at Ipswich town with Mr. Samuel Ross, to learn a blacksmith's trade, and was bound to him,—a good old man that built his house upon a rock and brought his family up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord,—where I lived till I was nineteen years of age, and then I bought my time, and enlisted in the service of King George, the second, and flung my pack and marched to Fort Edward, where I slept sweetly; and the next day I flung my pack and followed my colonel seven miles to Brook Fort, half-way to Lake George, where my colonel was ordered to halt and keep that fort, and

guard the teams to Lake George that sold provisions to General Abercrombie's army. Early one morning the Indians gave us battle, and killed twenty-six of our brave men, and scalped them, and ran into the woods to Canada, and sold their scalps for a guinea a scalp to the French, who were worse than the Indians themselves, as it was said; then Gen. Abercrombie ordered my colonel to lead on his men to Lake George and he crossed the lake of a Thursday and landed, and Friday marched his army to take Ticonderoga Fort, where he was beat and retreated back to his old encampment with his weed on his hat dragging on the ground, with the loss of more than nineteen hundred men; where I tarried till my time was out; this was in the year of '58, and then I was honorably dismissed and returned back to my good old master in Ipswich, who was glad to see me alive, where I remained till the year '59, and then I enlisted again under the brave General Wolf, who went and did take Canada, and I enlisted again in the year '60 to finish the war, which gave me much pleasure, and then I was honorably dismissed at Lewisburg, and shipped with Capt. John Potter, of Ipswich, to sail with him to the place of my nativity, and we sailed a Friday and lost our sails in a gale of wind, and a Sunday was close to the Isle of Sables, where we dropt anchor and rode until our windlass bitts gave way and cut our cable and ashore we went on the island cald Sables; this was the fifth of December, '60, where we all got ashore alive, and glad were we for God's goodness was wonderful to us in preserving our lives from a watery grave, and we all laid down on a sand knoll and slept alike. A boar that was shot when he was asleep we carried home and sent a part to Capt. Furlong's men, of Newbury, who were cast ashore three weeks before we were, who hoisted a flag on a pole; and a vessel belonging to Marblehead carried the news, and as two fishermen were missing, the Lord and King Hooper sent the good old Archelaus Silman to come to the Isle of Sables after us, and the Lord rewarded him for his good works, for he took seventy men and women; but while we waited on the island for the good old Silman, I shouldered my gun and went fourteen miles toward the northwest barr—up jumped a sow and I shot her through the heart, and had it and the liver and lights for supper, and it was sweet as honey; and then I killed a bull eighteen miles from our house and carried it home, which was January, '61; and then I shouldered my gun and was all alone, and I shot eight balls into a great bull who tried to kill me, but I was his master, and glad was I, for the bull and I had it rough and tough, and then I was beat out, but got home that night and told my messmates to take the hand-sled and haul the bull home; and three days after, which was January 18, come the good old Silman and took us all off the Isle of Sables, seventy in number, and carried us to Halifax, and left Furlong and sixty men and women; and then good old Archelaus Silman brought Captain Potter and his crew, ten in number, into Marblehead, where we rejoiced and were glad, and gave him, the good old man, one hundred silver dollars and as many thanks, and got home to Ipswich, the place of our nativity, where we had gladness and joy for God's goodness in preserving us from a watery grave and returning us home to our friends, who were glad to see us alive; and my good old master, that built his house upon a rock, says to me, Jonathan, we read that a faithful servant shall be a dutiful son at length, and gave me his eldest daughter to wife, who was a beauty and loved me as her eyes; where we lived till July, '63, and then we moved to Hampton Falls in New Hampshire, on a place I bought, where we lived and did prosper for a most forty years; and as I had been in the British service three years to learn the art of war, the town of Hampton Falls chose me to be their captain, and I received my commission signed by Gov. Wentworth and sealed with King George's seal, and all things went on very well till King George sent that foolish Gage to Boston, who was neither weight nor measure, to burn our towns and kill our men at Lexington; and Governor Wentworth joined the British and I was angry and raised a liberty pole on the hill as high as Haman's gallows was to hang Mordecai on; which was my alarm post; and in the morning news came to me, that the British marched to Lexington and killed our men; and I ordered my drums to beat, and gave my company something to drink, and marched on to Ipswich that night, which was twenty miles, in half a day; and in the morning we mustered about two hundred men, who chose me to be their captain, and the town was alarmed because two Men of Wars' tenders were in the river, full of men and would land and take twenty British soldiers out of a gaol, that was taken prisoners at Lexington battle, and would burn the town; so we stayed that day and night, and that night was rainy, and the British landed at Marshfield, to steal cattle and left the woods afire; and the Newbury people heard that Ipswich was burnt and that I and my men were all killed, and that the British were coming to burn Newbury; and the people were afraid and got boats to get over the river to run into the woods, and that news went to Exeter that night, and very soon to Concord, that I and my officers were all killed; and in a few days I had a Colonel's commission to raise one-quarter part of Portsmouth, Dover, Hampton and Exeter militia as minute men, and General Sullivan came to me to march off to Portsmouth with a thousand men to fortify and defend it from being burnt, as the British had burnt Falmouth; and in twenty-four hours I and a thousand men were at Fort Washington to give the British battle; where we stayed about three months; then came a fifty gun ship to anchor one night, and in the morning, at break of day, I and my men were ready to give her battle, but she was afraid and went off; and in a few days the committee of safety, that set at Portsmouth in recess of Congress, sent for me to hear two letters read from General Washington and General Sullivan; the contents were that they expected the British would give them battle, and for the committee to send me on to Mistick, with thirty-one companies of New Hampshire militia, and the committee desired me to enlist four companies of my men that were in Fort Washington, and when I asked my men, four companies, they said, "yes, we will go with you," and marched that day and got to Mistick in three days and nights, and twenty-seven companies followed on, and were into Mistick in a few days; and the committee delivered me the two letters to carry to the two Generals to Winterhill and Cambridge, and I mounted my horse which carried me in less than a day, and WASHINGTON smiles and says, "NEW-HAMPSHIRE FOREVER;" and further says to SULLIVAN, "Mount your horse, and ride on with Col. Burnham to Mistick, and open all your stores to New Hampshire militia, without weight or measure, and go to the good men of Mistick, who will be glad of Col. Burnham's men, for they were afraid that the British, that burnt Charleston, will come and burn Mistick;" and says to Col. Burnham, "Do your best for the honor of New-Hampshire, and kill the British if they dare to come;" but they were afraid of my Brigade; and towards the last of January, '76, I received orders from General WASHINGTON that he would meet New-Hampshire militia to morrow, at Winterhill, to review them; and I mounted my horse and, at 9 o'clock, formed my Brigade and marched to Winterhill with my band of music, fifty fifes and drums, that the British might hear and see we were come on to Winterhill, to try our skill, which gave the British a fright to quit Bunkerhill in the night, and the British army and fleet made a quick retreat, and the Boston people were glad to see it. Where we remained 'till honorably dismissed by our Hon. General Washington, and received his thanks for our services and love, being ready at his call from New-Hampshire, and his blessings that we might return to our families and friends in safety, where we rested awhile and then part of us went to help take Burgoyne, Cornwallis and their armies; and then we had our independence from Great Britain, and peace and plenty and the love of the whole world, and were the happiest nation in the world. But God must have all the glory;—and our ministers were worthy, like Jacob, who wrestled 'till break of day, that God would bless Washington and America, and the world of mankind. Amen and Amen. And now I am an old man, this day seventy-five years old, and but just alive, and what I have written I have seen and know to be true.

SPARTAN MOTHERS OF CHEBACCO. — Three instances of female patriotism and fortitude are related by the local historians,—two by Felt, concerning one and the same person, and the other by Crowell.

Elizabeth Choate, a native of Chebacco, a great-granddaughter of the first settler John, married Gen. Michael Farley, of Ipswich; and during the Revolution, three of her sons, as well as her husband, were in the military service of their country. When her son Robert, about sixteen years of age, was about starting for the seat of war, she assisted him in putting on his accoutrements, and said to him, "Behave like a man." And on another occasion, when a regiment was about to march, in expectation of soon meeting the enemy and needed ammunition, she with her own hands filled every man's powder-horn, from a supply which had been stored in the garret of her dwelling-house.[1]

[1] Felt's Hist. Ipswich, p. 184, Hammatt Papers, III. 99.

The other incident is thus given by Dr. Crowell: "During this year [1777] a British frigate was off our bay. Boats were sent from her into the harbor of Annisquam. Mrs. Marshall, a resident on Hog Island, said to the author that she distinctly saw the flashes of the guns in their boats and of the guns of our people on shore. A guard of twelve men, she said, was quartered upon the island to prevent their landing. At one time their boats were seen approaching to effect a landing, when all upon the island fled, except one resolute woman, the wife of William Choate, grandmother of the late Hon. Rufus Choate, who declared she would stay and keep house if all the rest ran.[1] She stayed with two of her children, and received no harm."[2]

This paragraph, without explanation, might, perhaps, to the casual reader, give an impression that probably the writer did not intend to leave. The statement that "all upon the island fled," undoubtedly referred to the women and children and to the military guard stationed there,—the words "stay and *keep house*," implying that other females who were housekeepers were among those who departed. President Brown's life of Rufus Choate makes the statement, which I have no doubt is entirely authentic, that the resident men of the island had previously left to drive the cattle and probably the other live stock to a place of safety. This sensible precaution was taken, I suppose, to avert the danger of their being seized to replenish the British commissariat.

Other women of Chebacco, no doubt, evinced the same patriotic spirit and an equal devotion to the cause of national liberty, willingly sacrificing personal ease and comfort to encourage and sustain their husbands, sons and brothers in active service.

IN THE WAR OF 1812.—This place was represented by nineteen men,—sixteen in one company and three in another. Among them was the well-known citizen, the late Abel Andrews, who was a sergeant.

Andrew Burnham, the centenarian, who was a native of Essex, and died here in 1885, at the age of one hundred years and two months, was also a soldier in this war. He was then a resident of Boston.

During this war, Enoch Burnham and Benjamin Andrews, of Essex, were captured in the Bay of Biscay, while on board the privateer brig "Essex," and were incarcerated for two years in Dartmoor Prison in England. The former was a brother of Captain Parker Burnham, and was himself for many years a ship-master, sailing from Boston and Baltimore, in which latter city he married and resided for the last forty or more years of his life, and where he died in 1876, at the age of eighty-five.

WAR OF THE REBELLION.—During the four years' struggle for the perpetuity of the Union, Essex furnished, in all, for longer or shorter periods of service, one hundred and eighty-two men, of which number one hundred and forty-four were her own citizens. Of these three served in the Navy. Twenty-three never returned, three of them having been shot dead in battle, and five dying of wounds received in action; one was accidentally drowned and fifteen died of disease contracted in the service, two of them perishing in a Confederate prison. Twenty-two were wounded in battle, (including the three instantly killed, and the five whose wounds proved fatal, as just previously mentioned); and of those who returned to their homes, six at least have since died of illness resulting directly or indirectly from the incidental hardships and exposures of the service. One who died in the army was wounded three times, once at Fredericksburg and twice in the Wilderness; and one who survived and is living at the time of the writing of this, was wounded twice—once at Antietam and once at Gettysburg.[3]

Essex soldiers participated in battles and skirmishes in no less than seven different states of the South, and in the one great battle fought upon the soil of Pennsylvania; their active service extending from the first Bull Run engagement in Virginia, to the battle of Olustee in Florida. They were on the field in thirty-seven of the more important conflicts of the war, including McClellan's series of struggles upon the Peninsula, and at South Mountain and Antietam, and all the battles of Grant's last campaign in Virginia.

ROLL OF ESSEX MEN IN THE WAR OF THE REBELLION.

In the Army.

Allen, Horvey.	Burnham, Andrew F.	Burnham, Wilbur.
Allen, Joseph G.	Burnham, Charles A.	Burnham, W. Howe.
Allen, Robt. Wallace.[4]	Burnham, Constantine.	Burnham, Zenas.
Andrews, Albert.	Burnham, Daniel.	Burnham, Wm. H. H.
Andrews, Albuin.	Burnham, D. Brain'd.	Butman, Ancill K.
Andrews, Charles E.	Burnham, Francis.	Butman, John C.
Andrews, Lt. Cyrus	Burnham, Francis.	Callahan, Daniel.
Andrews, Frank E.	Burnham, Geo. Foster.	Callahan, Maurice.
Andrews, Gilman.	Burnham, Geo. F., 2d.	Chase, Lyman H.
Andrews, H. Nelson.	Burnham, Geo. Wash.	Channel, John C.
Andrews, Ira, Jr.	Burnham, Horace.	Claiborne, Geo. C.
Andrews, Israel F.	Burnham, Harlan P.	Clifford, David E.
Andrews, Lyman B.	Burnham, Ira F.[6]	Cogswell, George.
Andrews, Monsieur M.	Burnham, James H.	Cogswell, Addison.
Andrews, Prince A.	Burnham, Jas. Howe.	Coose, Wm. D.
Andrews, Reuben	Burnham, Jesse.	Coy, Michael.
Andrews, Rufus.	Burnham, John B.	Crafts, Franklin.
Andrews, Stephen P.	Burnham, Lamont G.[7]	Crafts, John, Jr.
Andrews, Timothy, Jr.	Burnham, Leonard.	Crockett, Charles P.
Andrews, Wm. A.[5]	Burnham, Lewis.	Cook, Moses.
Andrews, Wm. H.	Burnham, Mark F.	Dugan, Daniel
Bartlett, Jacob O.	Burnham, Osgood E.	Dugan, Morty.
Burnham, Abner.	Burnham, Otis.	Dodge, George.
Burnham, Albert F.	Burnham, R. W., Jr.	Dodge, Wm. G.[8]
Burnham, Alb. F., 2d.	Burnham, Rollins M.	Fields, Charles H.
Burnham, Alfred M.	Burnham, Rufus.	Gilbert, John F.

For more minute details and particulars, see the carefully prepared and ably written chapter relative to the late war and its soldiers, contributed by the Hon. David Choate to Crowell's "History of Essex."

[1] Enlisted September, 1862, at the age of fourteen.

[5] Enlisted December 2, 1861, at the age of fifteen.

[6] Enlisted September, 1862, aged seventeen years and ten months.

[7] Enlisted September, 1862, aged eighteen years and one month.

[8] Enlisted August, 1862, at the age of fifteen.

Guppy, Geo. F.
Hardy, Geo. C.
Hart, John F.
Haskell, Albert A.
Haskell, James F.
Haskell, Nathaniel.
Haskell, Wm. A.
Haskell, Wm. P.
Hatch, Jason.
Hayden, Luther.
Hayden, Wm. H.
Howard, Wm. C.
Howes, Charles.[1]
Howes, Edwin A.
Howes, Erastus.
Howes, Webster.
Hull, Wm. H.
Jackson, Andrew.
James, W. Wilkins.
Jones, John S.
Jones, Samuel Q.
Kelleher, John.
Kimball, James B.
Lander, Edward W.
Lee, John E.
Low, Aaron.
Low, Edward.
Low, Wm. B.[2]
Low, Wm. E.
Lufkin, Albert E.
Lufkin, Alfred.
Lufkin, Charles P.
Lufkin, Hervey.
Lufkin, William.
Mahoney, Thomas.
Marston, Charles E.
Martyn, John L.
McEachen, John.
McIntire, Edward E
McIntire, Wm. H.
Mears, Francis G.
Mears, Henry C.
Mears, Rufus E.
Mears, Samuel, Jr.
Morse, Charles F.
Morse, Thomas A.
Parsons, John J.
Poland, Jeremiah, Jr.
Prest, Robert.
Procter, Charles W.
Procter, Joseph, Jr.
Ross, George.
Ross, George, Jr.
Riggs, Solomon A.
Sargent, Geo. H.
Sargent, Oliver H. P.
Story, Aaron Herbert.
Story, Asa.
Story, David Lewis.
Story, Otis.
Swett, Simon.
Tucker, Joseph W.
Varnum, John.
Wentworth, Geo. S.

Of the foregoing, six were taken prisoners by the enemy, viz.: Geo. W. Burnham, John B. Burnham, Lewis Burnham, Albert A. Haskell, James B. Kimball and Rufus E. Mears. Three were released.

One soldier, Mark Francis Burnham, of the Second Massachusetts Cavalry, who was in fifteen or more different engagements, had four horses shot under him, two of them in the battle of Winchester, Va., under General Sheridan.

Wounded Soldiers who recovered.—Lieutenant Cyrus Andrews, H. Nelson Andrews, Stephen P. Andrews, George F. Burnham, D. Brainard Burnham, James Horace Burnham, David E. Clifford, Daniel Duggan, Erastus Howes, Wm. C. Howard, Wm. B. Low (wounded twice), Wm. E. Low, Thomas A. Morse, John Varnum.

Death Roll.—*Killed*—Charles Edwin Andrews, Daniel Burnham, Jason Hatch.

Died of Wounds.—Wm. A. Andrews, Osgood E. Burnham, Jeremiah Poland, Jr. (wounded three times), Charles P. Lufkin, O. H. P. Sargent.

Died of Illness in the Army.—Reuben Andrews, Wilbur Burnham, Charles P. Crockett, George Dodge, James Frederick Haskell, Wm. P. Haskell, W. Wilkins James, Wm. Lufkin, John L. Martyn, Francis Gilbert Mears, Charles F. Morse, Asa Story.

Died in a Confederate Prison.—Albert A. Haskell, Rufus E. Mears.

Drowned.—George Ross, Jr.

Died soon after his arrival home.—John C. Channel.

In the United States Army.—Albion Burnham was first mate of ship "Carnation," which was stationed off Port Royal, and afterwards of the squadron blockading Charleston, S. C.

Ezra F. Burnham served in United States steamer "Gettysburg," having enlisted at the early age of twenty years. He was in the engagement at Fort Fisher.

Gustavus S. Perkins served throughout the war (four years) first, for fifteen months as second assistant engineer on board the United States steamer "Colorado," which had been ordered to Mobile; afterwards, having been promoted to the position of first assistant engineer (virtually the acting head engineer), he was on board the steamer "Donaldson," and later on board the "Gettysburg," stationed for blockading duty off Wilmington, N. C. He was also in the engagement at Fort Fisher.

Engineer Perkins was a machinist by trade, and was therefore from the start, by his practical knowledge, thoroughly equipped for the duties of his appointment. He was undoubtedly one of the best qualified and most efficient men in the service.

Surnames of Early Settlers of Chebacco reappear to a considerable extent in the lists of those citizens of the place who have taken part in the different wars of the country, from the early hostilities of the Indians down to the conflict for the American Union. Of these names I find, in the aggregate, among those serving in the several wars the numbers following: Andrews, 32; Burnham, 68; Bennett, 1; Choate, 14; Cogswell, 7; Cross, 1; Foster, 5; Goodhue, 2; Haskell, 5; Jones, 5; Low, 9; Lufkin, 8; Perkins, 4; Proctor, 5; Story, 17; White, 3.

Of the names of the later residents from time to time,—Cleaveland, Howes, Marshall, Mears (four each), Putnam, Crafts, Eveleth, Knowlton, Poland, Ross (three each), Callahan, Dodge, Duggan, Hayden, McIntire, Morse, Sargent, Wise (two each).

Commissioned Officers From Essex, Who Served, as such, in War.—*Colonels*, Jonathan Burnham, John Choate, Jonathan Cogswell.

Majors, John Burnham, Thomas Burnham, Caleb Low.

Captains, Charles Howes, David Low, Francis Perkins, William Story.

Lieutenants, Cyrus Andrews, Nathan Burnham, Samuel Burnham, Thomas Choate, Jr., John Cleaveland, Jr., Stephen Low.

Ensign, Samuel Knowlton.

The names of these officers are not here given in the chronological order of their service, but alphabetically, by surname, under each separate title.

Chaplains.—Seven clergymen who for some time resided here, and one of whom was a native of the place, officiated as army-chaplains,—one, Mr. Wise, in both King Philip's and the French war, and two others, the brothers Cleaveland, serving also in two wars, the war between the French and English, and the Revolution. Rev'ds John Wise, Benjamin Choate, Ebenezer Cleaveland, John Cleaveland, Nehemiah Porter, Temple Cutler, George J. Sanger.

Aggregate Number in all Wars.—This place, as Chebacco and Essex, has from time to time contributed for the military service of the country no less than three hundred and forty-two men. The names of that number are positively known from authentic records. There were others, no doubt, especially in

[1] Captain Company E, Massachusetts Forty-Eighth Regiment.
[2] Enlisted December 3, 1861, at the age of seventeen.

the earlier wars, whose names cannot now be ascertained.

In view of this record of patriotism of a community so limited in population, the people here, to use a Scotch phrase, can "stand unbonneted" in the presence of those of any other town in the county.

OFFICERS AND PRIVATES.—Among the entire number who served in the various wars, seventeen, at least, were commissioned officers, ranking from ensign to colonel,—all of good repute as gallant, brave and trusty; with an aggregate private soldiery equally true and meritorious.

A spirited and sensible tribute to the latter grade, found floating upon the current of periodical literature, (the authorship of which, I regret to say, I have been unable to ascertain,) is presented as an appropriate conclusion to this chapter:

"THE RANK AND FILE.

"O blow for the Hero a trumpet!
Let him lift up his head in the morn;
A glory of glories in battle;
It is well for the world he was born.
Let him joy in the sound of the trumpet,
And bask in the world's proud smile;
But what had become of the Hero,
Except for the *rank and file*?

"O, grand is the earth in her progress,
In her genius and art and affairs;
The glory of glories is progress;
Let the great find a joy in their cares.
Let the kings and the artists and statesmen
Look round them and proudly smile;
But what would become of the nation,
Except for the *rank and file*?

"And when the brief days of this planet
Are ended and numbered and told,
And the Lord shall appear in his glory,
To summon the young and the old,
For the Hero there'll be no trumpet,
For the great no welcoming smile;
Before the good Lord in his glory
We shall all be the rank and file."

CHAPTER XCVI.

ESSEX—(*Continued*).

Witchcraft—Disagreement Among Heirs—Slavery in Chebacco—Grave-yard Robbery—Incorporation of Chebacco Parish as the Town of Essex—First Church—Physicians—College Graduates—Other Learned Professions—Members of the Legislature—Temperance Organizations—Public Houses—Boston & Essex Railroad—Hog Island—Capt. L. G. Burnham—Natural Curiosities—Noteworthy Persons—Summer Resorts—Historic Homes and Localities—Significance of the Indian Name "Chebacco"—Closing Remarks.

THE WITCHCRAFT DELUSION.—*Petition of Chebacco People in Behalf of one of the Victims.*—John Procter, one of the twenty persons judicially murdered during that appalling eclipse of common sense and cyclone of superstition, madness and depravity, which passed over Salem in 1692, had for several years been a resident of Chebacco, where he had the respect and confidence of all his neighbors and acquaintances; thirty-two of whom signed a petition, which was headed with the signature of Rev. John Wise, and addressed to the Court of Assistants, appealing for clemency for him and his wife, who had both been convicted and sentenced. The petition failed of its object. Procter, as is well known, was hanged, but his wife escaped, simply on account of her condition at the time, which, under the English law, secured for her a reprieve; and before its expiration, the storm of delusion, frenzied malice and falsehood, had spent its force.

Procter was, in part, the victim of the spite of a servant girl, named Mary Warren, who had a grudge against him. She was one of eight female witnesses in several trials, of whom only two could write their names. She admitted, in private, to more than one person, that in her testimony in some of the cases she had lied, and that the accusers, who said they were afflicted by the accused, "did but dissemble;" and another, who cried out against Mrs. Procter, acknowledged afterward that she had spoken falsely, and did so "for sport," saying also, "we must have some sport."

Much of the so-called "evidence," in all the trials, was sheer drivel and inane twaddle, upon which no person now, upon any charge whatever, could be held two minutes in a police court.

The Chebacco petitioners admitted the reality of witchcraft itself, but interposed in behalf of Procter and his wife as persons innocent of it. Their friendly action, in this instance, is therefore no indication that they did not believe in the common superstition of that day. They said that they "reckoned it within the duties" of their "charity, to offer this much for the clearing of our neighbors' innocency;" saying that they "never had the least knowledge of such a nefarious wickedness in our said neighbors;" neither did they "remember any such thoughts concerning them," nor "any action by either of them directly tending that way." They further said: "What God may have left them to, we cannot go into God's pavilion clothed with clouds of darkness round about. But as to what we have ever seen or heard of them, upon our consciences, we judge them innocent of the crime objected."

The following are the names of the thirty-two signers, spelled as they were written: John Wise, William Story, Sen., Reinalld Foster, Thos. Choate, John Burnum, Sr., William Thomsonn, Tho. Low, Sen'r., Isaac Foster, John Burnum, Jun'r., William Goodhew, Isaac Perkins, Nathaniil Perkins, Thomas Lovekin, William Cogswell, Thomas Varney, John Fellows, William Cogswell, Ju'r., Jonathan Cogswell, John Cogswell, Jr., John Cogswell, Thomas Andrews, Joseph Andrews, Benjamin Marshall, John Andrews, Ju'r., William Butler, William Andrews,

John Andrews, John Chote, Se'r., Joseph Proctor, Samuel Gidding, Joseph Eveleth, James White.

The petition was evidently written by Mr. Wise As printed, the spelling is modernized. In the original, of which a verbatim copy is in my possession, there is, in accordance with the usage of the time, as liberal a use of capital letters at the beginning of words as in Cotton Mather's Magnalia. The following sentence is an illustration: "We cannot Go into God's pavilion Cloathed with Cloudes of Darkness Round About." Satan is spelled "Sathan."

Of the signers, three were near family connections of Procter, one of them being his brother Joseph, which fact will account for their special activity in his behalf, as well as for the visit of one of them, Thomas Choate, to Procter's cell, in the jail at Salem, where he witnessed the signing of his will. Thomas Varney's wife was a sister, whose maiden name was Abigail Procter; and Thomas Choate's wife was her daughter, Mary Varney. Three of the signers were ancestors of the writer of this history,—viz. Thomas Varney, John Choate, Senior, and Thomas Choate.

John Procter was born in England, and at the age of three years came in the ship "Susan-and-Ellen," in 1635, with his father, mother and a sister one year old. He had subsequently three brothers and four sisters, all born in this country; of whom Joseph was the eldest.

The family lived first at Salem, afterwards in Ipswich town, at one time occupying the house near the stone bridge, which was long the residence of the late Capt. Samuel N. Baker, and was standing a few years since. He went to Chebacco, probably, with others of his family, at what time is not known. Here he became owner of a farm, upon which he lived for several years, leaving this place for Salem Village. His age, at his tragical death, was about sixty.

It was his second wife, much younger, who with him was condemned, but reprieved.

Disagreement among Heirs.—In the court records of the county, under date of March 15, 1696-97, John Choate, eldest son of John, first settler, entered "caution to ye Honored Judge of probate of wills," saying, "I have matters of weight to offer that my father's Will may not be approbated while I have opportunity to allege against it, as witness my hand, John Choate."

What the point or points of objection may have been, we do not know from anything in the entry; but some time later Rev. Benjamin Choate, his brother, "in consideration of having received a college education," renounced all claim to his father's estate.

It was in those times insisted upon as equitable, that where a son received a liberal education he should be content with that as his share of the property, or at least have the cost of it deducted from his share.

Slavery in Chebacco.—Persons of African, and sometimes of Indian, descent were held as property in this place at an early period; but the precise or even approximate number of them I have not been able to ascertain, after the most diligent research and inquiry. I think, however, that they were never more than a small proportion of the entire population.

In 1755, twenty-five years before the adoption of the State Constitution of 1780, there were in the entire township of Ipswich, including this parish, of course, sixty-two persons, over sixteen years of age, comprising both sexes, held as slaves.

The following specific allusions to four persons who invested in this species of personal estate were originally derived from a public journal, printed at the seat of the colonial government, and from written public records.

I. Mr Wise's Runaway—The *Boston News-Letter*, in the year 1713, contained an advertisement informing the public that a slave had run away from *Rev. John Wise*, of Chebacco, and that at the time of his departure he had on "wooden-heel shoes." A reward was offered for his capture and return. However wooden he may have been about the heels, he was not so wooden-headed but that he discovered a method of enlarging the area of his own personal freedom. Possibly he may have been reading, if he knew how to read,[1] or at least may have heard, of certain proceedings in 1787, when his master revolted against Sir Edmund Andros, who thereupon restrained him of his personal liberty, for exercising the gift of free speech.

I have not found any recorded evidence that the runaway ever complained of any ill treatment from his master; and from the known liberality and magnanimity of Mr. Wise, we might reasonably suppose that the fugitive had always had enough to eat and drink and wear, and had not been over-tasked. Perhaps he was allowed a pair of *leather*-heeled shoes to wear to meeting on Sundays; although leather may have been scarce and costly in those days, as compared with its abundance and cheapness at the present time.

II. *Jonathan Cogswell*, a grandson of John, the first settler of that name, in his will, dated July 9, 1717, mentions "my Negro man slave called Jack, and also my Indian maid slave called Nell," both of whom he bequeaths to his wife Elizabeth.

III. and IV. Three weeks later, July 30, 1717, *Capt. Jonathan Burnham*, of Chebacco, grandfather of the late Capt. Nathaniel, and great-great grandfather of Luther, Calvin, Nehemiah, Nathaniel and Dr. Cœleb Burnham, paid £64 to Joshua Norwood, of Gloucester, for a negro boy. Norwood had previously bought him of *Capt. Thomas Choate*, of Hog Island. The wife of Norwood, Elizabeth Andrews, daughter of Ensign Wm. Andrews, was a native of Chebacco.

[1] A law or regulation of the colony required that servants be taught to read; and in 1681, an inhabitant of Ipswich was complained of for neglecting to so instruct his servant.

ONE OTHER CASE, LEARNED FROM AN ORAL SOURCE.—An elderly inhabitant, who passed away many years since, informed me that a family of the *ancestors of the late Mr. Jacob Story*, senior, held originally at least two slaves, a man and his wife; to whom several children were born while the parents were inmates of the Story household. These children followed their mother in legal status, as chattels personal.

Mrs. Story, the mistress, during the same years, also gave birth to several children; and during these recurring periods she and the slave-mother alternately nursed each other with equal care and patient faithfulness. This last-mentioned circumstance indicates that the relation of bond and free, in this instance, existed, probably, as much in name as otherwise.

In fact, slavery existed, in this precinct, in a mild form, the subjects of it, as a rule, being humanely treated; and it was, no doubt, maintained more from conformity to the usage and custom of the time than from any pertinacious desire for its permanent continuance.

In a mortuary record kept by John Cleaveland, there is, under date of July 8, 1795, less than four years prior to his decease, a mention of "Titus, a black belonging to Rev. Mr. Cleaveland," who, at an accident at a barn-raising, where one man was killed, was "disasterd, but like to recover." As the State Constitution of 1780, was held to have abolished slavery in Massachusetts, this Titus must then have served Mr. Cleaveland voluntarily. Perhaps he had been his slave previously to 1780.

LEGAL BASIS OF SLAVERY IN THE COLONIES.—It would seem from the reports of the ultimate results of the judicial proceedings in the two following cases, copied from the court records of Essex County, that the reliance of the claimants of slaves in this vicinity, failed entirely when sought to be based upon any express statutory provisions. It is probable that in the Massachusetts colony, at least, the common law of England, re-affirmed occasionally by a court decision, was regarded as the principal legal sanction of the institution.

Jenny Slew, a mulatto, brought suit against *John Whipple*, of the *Hamlet*, Ipswich (now Hamilton), for restraining her of her freedom and compelling her to labor as his slave.

The Inferior Court of Common Pleas, sitting at Newburyport, in September, 1765, gave judgment in favor of the defendant, Whipple.

The plaintiff, Jenny Slew, appealed to the Superior Court of Judicature, sitting at Salem, in November, 1766, which reversed the decision of the lower court—a jury giving a verdict in her favor, entitling her to damages in the sum of four pounds, besides costs to the amount of £9 16s. 5d.

In the Inferior Court of Common Pleas for the County of Essex, for the July term of 1774, a negro servant brought suit against *Mr. Caleb Dodge*, of *Beverly*, to obtain his freedom; and a verdict was given in favor of the servant, "there being no law of the province [that is, no statute law], to hold a man to serve for life."

GRAVE-YARD ROBBERY.—In the month of April, 1818, the year immediately preceding the incorporation of this parish into a town, the people of Chebacco were startled and excited to an unparalleled degree by the announcement of the discovery that eight human bodies had been surreptitiously taken from their resting-place in the village burying-ground.

At this distant point of time, a verbal detail of the occurrence hardly conveys to those who have since come upon the stage of life an adequate idea of the intensity of feeling in regard to it at an earlier period. When I came first to reside here, twenty-two years after the event, there was still a pungency and acerbity in every occasional allusion to it by the majority of the adult population, who freshly remembered all the circumstances.

Hand bills with startling head lines, and printed verses of various degree of literary merit, were soon after the discovery, scattered throughout this and the neighboring villages. A printed sheet, the paper browned by age, given to me many years ago by a friend, who was a resident here at the time of the occurrence, contains two of these metrical compositions, from each of which I present an illustrative stanza:

LINES ON A RECENT INHUMAN, BARBAROUS AND ATROCIOUS AFFAIR PERPETRATED AT CHEBACCO IN IPSWICH.

Hark! the sad tidings from the bell now sounding,
To warn the people of some wretched monster,
Who, for the sake of gain and filthy lucre,
Robbed the grave-yard!

O! what is this mine eyes are now beholding?
See the graves open and spectators mourning,
Friends and relations stand amaz'd to see this
Sad profanation!

THE INNOCENT MAN.

The man whose conscience feels no wound
Is not alarm'd to hear the sound
Of Satan's jarring strings;

Pure innocence, like Noah's dove,
Mounts on her wings to realms above,
And joy and comfort brings.

At the reinterment of the empty coffins, a solemn religious service was held in the Congregational Meeting-house, a few months after the discovery, and a discourse was delivered by the parish minister, from the touching and appropriate text in John xx. 13: "*They say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.*"

The title-page of the discourse is as follows:

"Interment of the dead, a dictate of natural affection, sanctioned by the word of God, and the examples of the good in every age. A Sermon delivered in Ipswich, Second Parish, July 23, 1818, on the occasion of Re-Interring the Coffins which had been Robbed of their Contents. By ROBERT CROWELL, Minister of said Parish. Preached and Published at

the Particular Request of the Inhabitants of the Place. Andover: Printed by Flagg and Gould. 1818."

The pamphlet is an octavo, of forty pages; and the subject indicated is ably and exhaustively treated.

The preface, which is here given in full, contains as concise and at the same time as circumstantial an account of the transaction as could be otherwise presented.

"ADVERTISEMENT.

"The following sermon was necessarily written in great haste, to meet the occasion for which it was designed, and without the most distant view to its publication. In revising it for the press, therefore, it was found necessary to condense some parts of it, and to enlarge upon others; but, in regard to the sentiments which pervaded the discourse, as it was delivered, no alterations, it is believed, have been made.

"The history of the occasion is briefly this: Some time in the course of the past winter, suspicions were excited, it should seem by no very definite circumstances, that the body of a young woman had been taken out of her grave, for anatomical purposes. These suspicions made such an impression upon several in the place, and particularly upon her parents and neighbors, that it was determined, in the Spring, to make an examination. An examination was accordingly made, and the painful discovery evinced that their suspicions were too well founded. Her body was gone! and the melancholy tidings gave such a shock to all in the place, as was never before felt. Further examinations, which were made to ascertain, if practicable, the extent of the evil, but chiefly with a view of quieting the troubled minds of those, who had recently buried friends, if peradventure they might be there, only deepened and confirmed the distress. Before the examination was closed, it was ascertained that the bodies of not less than eight persons had been sacrilegiously stolen, viz: Mrs. Mary Millett, aged 35; Miss Sally Andrews, 26; Mr. William Burnham, 78; Mr. Elisha Story, 65; Mr. Samuel Burnham, 26; Isaac Allen, 10; Philip Harlow, 10; the eighth was not certainly known, but supposed to be Cæsar, a colored man, buried several years since. Thus, within the short space of five months, was the heavy draught of seven made upon the burying-ground of a country village, containing little more than a thousand inhabitants. This number, including as it did young and old, male and female, parent and child, brother and sister, spread the unusual distress through a very extensive and respectable circle of relations and friends. Meetings of the inhabitants were held on the occasion, and resolutions passed, expressing their abhorrence of the deed, and adopting measures to detect, if possible, and to bring to justice, the perpetrators of it; and the sum of five hundred dollars, or more, was subscribed by individuals to carry these measures into effect. A vote was also passed authorizing the standing committee of the parish to inter the empty coffins, in a grave to be prepared for the purpose, and to request the minister of the parish to deliver a discourse suited to the occasion. The request was accordingly made, and the following is the discourse preached on that occasion."

From the following extracts the reader will obtain an accurate idea of the light in which the whole subject was viewed, at the time and on the spot.

"It is presumed that all who hear of the graves of the dead being disturbed and their bodies drawn out of them, must experience a degree of violence done to their own feelings, though the dead thus treated may have been strangers to them, and the scene remote from them. We, of course, except from this general sympathy those whose business it is to distrain the dead for filthy lucre's sake, and those who employ them in this unholy traffic. To whatever good purpose the latter may appropriate these stolen bodies, they certainly partake of all the guilt of the former, if the maxim be true that the receiver is as bad as the thief. Nor ought they to be screened from any of the odium which is attached to a stealth and merchandize of the dead; since, if it were not for their patronage and suggestion, none would be guilty of this outrage upon decency and humanity." Pages 11, 12.

"It surely cannot be our duty to inter our dead merely to give others the trouble of going in the night and stealing them away. Much less can it be the duty of a poor man to be at the expense of a funeral solemnity for the burial of his wife or children, merely that others may have the profit of selling their bodies." Pages 27, 28.

"If a single soul is hardened in sin by the practice of stealing dead bodies, the evil thus occasioned must infinitely outweigh all the good which the science of Anatomy ever did or ever will do to the bodies of men." Page 31.

"It is far from being the only satisfaction we enjoy in the burial of our friends to lay them in the grave; it is another and equally great to know that they are resting there undisturbed; to know that they have not been torn from their coffins for moneyed and scientific speculation, and exposed to the rude gaze of unbearded youth." Pages 33, 34.

During the entire public solemnities an individual towards whom suspicion of having been concerned in the transactions had then begun to be directed, and who was afterwards adjudged in a court of law to pay a heavy fine and costs, sat among the audience and listened to the discourse. This was Dr. Thomas Sewall, the resident physician of the place; whose usefulness here in that capacity was, of course, immediately at an end.

The next year he removed to Washington, D. C., where he lived to the age of 59 years, and became very eminent in his profession; and where, in addition to his practice as physician, he discharged for several years, with distinguished ability, the duties of two professorships to which he had been appointed, in the Medical Department of Columbia College.

He was doubtless unsurpassed in this country or abroad, in proficiency in anatomy and surgery, if not also in clinics. His published and widely circulated lectures upon Phrenology, originally delivered before a class at the Medical College in Washington, illustrated by his own examinations and measurements of the brain and skull, and showing the variable widths of the frontal sinuses, had the effect to modify somewhat, so far at least as *craniology* was concerned, the views of some who had adopted the general conclusions of Gall and Spurzheim, and who still adhered to the theory that the brain is the organ of the mind.

Of surgical and anatomical science he was a devotee; and it is said that the immediate cause of his death was blood-poisoning, which resulted from an accidental inoculation through a cut or abrasion upon one of his hands, while making an autopsy of the body of Hon. Isaac C. Bates, United States Senator from Massachusetts, who died suddenly in Washington, in 1845.

It is probable that a very few persons only had any knowledge, either beforehand or during its progress, of this desecration of the village cemetery,—perhaps, no one besides those engaged directly in the labor of exhumation, pursuant to the direction of their employer; who, at that time, it is but just to say, had no connection with any church organization, nor had made any profession of religion. Years afterwards, at the National capital, he joined the Methodist church, and continued steadfast in his membership during the remainder of his life.

History does not originate circumstances nor occurrences, but simply states them as they actually took place. It is, therefore, deemed eminently proper that this impartial and truthful account should be here given of one of the most notable of the events that have transpired in this place since its first settlement.

The tradition of it, more or less minute in detail, has been and is continuously being transmitted from one generation to another of the resident population of the town and its vicinity. A permanent record, unlike mere oral narrative, can acquire no accretions, through decades or centuries. *Neque falsi dicere, nec veri reticere.*

INCORPORATION OF CHEBACCO PARISH AS THE TOWN OF ESSEX.—Chebacco was set off from Ipswich in 1819, and incorporated as the town of Essex by an act of the State Legislature of the 5th of February of that year, pursuant to a clause of which the new town paid thirty-one per cent. of the aggregate debt of the original town then due, which, after deducting the proportionate share of Chebacco in the public property of Ipswich, amounted to $3,000. The committee of the town of Essex, who, with a corresponding committee of the town of Ipswich, adjusted the details of the final settlement, were George Choate, William Cogswell, Jr., and Elias Andrews.

Population and Valuation Then and Now.—The population in 1819, when thus set off as the new town, was 1107, including 21 paupers.

Population, according to United States decennial census for the year 1880, 1670,—a gain of 56 from 1870. Number of pauper inmates of the Alms-house in 1887, 13.

By the United States census for 1860, the population was 1701—the largest by any national census before or since that year.

In 1830, the number was 1333; in 1840, 1432; in 1870, 1614.

Valuation in 1819, $248,813; valuation in 1887, $836,717.

Boundaries.—At one time a part of the parish or precinct of Chebacco bordered upon the town of Wenham. But that portion of its territory having been set off to Hamilton, the town of Essex is now bounded only by Ipswich on the North, Hamilton on the West, Manchester on the South, and Gloucester on the South and East.

Dimensions of Area.—The territorial surface of the town, as nearly as can be ascertained by measurements and estimates, comprises about 9000 acres; 7000 acres of which are divided into tillage, upland-mowing, fresh meadow, salt marsh, woodland and roads. The remaining 2000 acres are under water.

Organization.—At the first town-meeting, the moderator was George Choate, father of the late Dr. Geo. Choate, of Salem, and grandfather of Joseph H. Choate, law-partner of U. S. Senator Evarts; Wm. G. Choate, distinguished lawyer of New York city, for some time a U. S. District Judge; Dr. Geo. C. S. Choate, formerly Superintendent of the Insane Asylum at Taunton, Mass., and proprietor as well as superintendent of the private lunatic asylum, in New York State, at which Horace Greeley died; Charles F. Choate, President of the Old Colony Railroad Co.; and Geo. F. Choate, Judge of Probate of Essex County. The last named is a cousin of the four brothers previously enumerated. His father was William, brother to Dr. George.

First Town Officers.—Joseph Story, who served as a soldier throughout the entire Revolutionary War, was the first town clerk; George Choate, Jonathan Story, 4th, Elias Andrews, William Cogswell, and William Andrews, were chosen as the first selectmen, assessors and overseers of the poor; Nathan Choate was first town treasurer; and Rev. Robert Crowell and the selectmen were, by vote at the town meeting, designated as the first school committee.

George Choate was chosen as the first representative of the new town to the State Legislature; in which body he had three times previously occupied a seat as one of the representatives from Ipswich.

Town Clerks.—Joseph Story, the first town clerk, served six years; Jonathan Story, 3d, nine years; William Andrews, Jr., seven; David Choate, four; Aaron L. Burnham, thirteen; O. H. P. Sargent, six; John C. Choate, twenty-five; Noah Burnham, present incumbent.

POST-OFFICE.—The post-office was established in 1819, the year of the incorporation of the town. The first postmaster was Dudley Choate, appointed in 1819; the next, Amos Burnham, 1826; Enoch Low, 1832; Albert F. Low, 1854; Charles W. Procter, 1864; Daniel W. Bartlett, Sr., and Daniel W. Bartlett, Jr., from 1868 to 1881; Leighton E. Perkins, 1881.

PHYSICIANS.—The first resident physician was Dr. Ebenezer Davis, who came here in 1770. He was succeeded in 1788 by Dr. Parker Russ, a native of the place. After him, in 1805, came Dr. Reuben D. Mussey, later in life distinguished in medical professorships in different States. His youngest son, Gen. Reuben D. Mussey, who served with distinction in the late war, is now a lawyer, residing in Washington.

Dr. Thomas Sewall, who succeeded Dr. Mussey, was practicing physician here for ten years. In 1818 Dr. Josiah Lamson was invited by a committee of the citizens to settle here, where he passed the remainder of his life.

Dr. Oscar F. Swasey came here in 1853, and after a few years removed to Beverly, where he now resides. He was expert in surgery, having had hospital experience at Deer Island. Dr. William H. Hull commenced practice here in 1859. He served in the war, and, on leaving the army, resumed his practice here, which was quite extensive. Dr. Towne succeeded Dr. Hull in his practice and in the occupancy of his residence.

Dr. John D. Lovering succeeded Dr. Lamson on his retirement in 1861, removing, in 1880, to Manchester, N. H., his successor being Dr. A. P. Woodman.

JOSIAH LAMSON, M.D.—The memory of this excellent physician and estimable citizen, who prac-

ticed his profession here for more than forty years, will long be cherished. In him everybody had implicit trust. Always patiently attentive and assiduous, his long experience rendered his services of great value; and the unvarying cheerfulness and promptitude with which he responded to every call, even "in the dead waist and middle of the night,"[1] in the most inclement season, and when sometimes the gratitude of the patient might be his only requital, should place his name upon the list of those who, without show or pretension, have been substantial benefactors of mankind.

He was a graduate of Harvard College, of the class of 1811. Among his class-mates who became distinguished were Rev. Alvan Loamson, D.D., many years pastor of the Unitarian Church in Dedham, and editor of the *Christian Examiner;* William H. Prescott, the historian; Judge Pliny Merrick; Professor B. A. Gould; Rev. Dr. F. W. P. Greenwood, for years minister of King's Chapel, Boston; and Rev. Dr. Andrew Bigelow.

College Graduates.—Of the natives of this place there have been twenty graduates of different colleges since Chebacco was first settled; of whom six are now living, viz.: George F. Choate, Esq., who has been judge of probate for thirty years; Rev. Edward P. Crowell, professor in Amherst College, of which he was a graduate; Rev. Edward Norton; Rev. David O. Mears, D.D.; Celeb Burnham, M.D.; Rev. Michael Burnham.

Of the graduates deceased, among the Essex natives, was Rev. Thomas Sewall, D.D., the only son of the distinguished physician of that name. He was an eminent clergyman of the Methodist Church, and long a presiding elder. His mother was Mary, eldest sister of Rufus Choate.

Others of the Learned Professions.—Jacob Story, Esq., judge of probate, residing in Winona, Minn., studied at Yale College and graduated at the Cambridge Law School. David Choate, Jr., M.D., was a graduate of Massachusetts Medical College, and has long been in successful practice in Salem. J. Howard Burnham has been for several years a teacher in the State Normal School at Bloomington, Ill.

The brothers, Edward S. and Philemon Eveleth, are successful physicians, the former at Gloucester, and the latter at Marblehead. Dr. Alvin Story, after graduating in medicine in this country, traveled abroad, visiting hospitals and other institutions in Europe, and settled in Natick. Leverett Mears, who studied chemistry in Germany for some years, is professor of that science at Garfield's *alma mater*, Williams College, Williamstown, Mass.

Members of the Legislature.—The following have been Representatives to the General Court, since the adoption of the State Constitution in 1780, as members from Chebacco of the Ipswich delegation until the incorporation of Essex, and since that date as members from this separate town until 1860, when, under an amendment of the State Constitution, this town became a part of a Representative District, first with Manchester, afterwards with that place and Hamilton, and since with a part of Gloucester:

John Choate, 1781, '83, '85, '86, '88; Jonathan Cogswell, 1792, '93, 1800, '13; George Choate, 1814, '17.

From Essex, after incorporation.—George Choate, 1819; Jacob Story, 1824; Jonathan Story (3d), 1827–30, '33, '34; Charles Dexter, 1835, '36; Oliver Low, 1837; George W. Burnham, 1838; David Choate, 1839; Samuel Hardy and Aaron L. Burnham, 1840; Grover Dodge, 1841; John Burnham, 1842; John Prince, 1843, '53, '55, '60; Moses Burnham, Jr., 1844; Ezra Perkins, Jr., 1845; Gilman P. Allen, 1851; William Burnham (2d), 1852; Samuel Story, 1856; O. H. P. Sargent, 1857; Charles Howes, 1858; Ebenezer, Stanwood, 1862; Nehemiah Burnham, 1864; Timothy Andrews, Jr., 1866; Leonard McKenzie, 1868; William H. Mears, 1870; John C. Choate, 1872; Aaron Low, 1874; Daniel W. Bartlett, 1876; John F. James, 1879; Stephen P. Andrews, 1882; David L. Haskell, 1885; William Howe Burnham, 1888.

State Senators.—Hon. Stephen Choate, 1781–83; Hon. David Choate, 1840, '41; Hon. John Prince, 1858; Hon. Charles Howes, 1876, '77.

Temperance Organizations.—The first temperance society was organized here in 1829, on the basis of total abstinence from all distilled spirits. It soon afterwards took the ground of abstinence also, as a beverage, from fermented liquors.

In 1842, the Washington Total Abstinence Society was formed. The writer of this, as one of a committee appointed for that purpose, drafted the constitution, of which brief extracts are given on page 322 of Crowell's town history, and also engaged the first five lecturers, four of whom were reformed men, the first of the four being a native Englishman, Dr. Henry H. Northall, a British vice consul, and a man of remarkable ability.

Public Commemorations.—Seven public celebrations of events of more or less interest to the people generally, have taken place in the town.

1. A celebration of the fourth of July, in 1807, when an oration was delivered by Dr. Reuben D. Mussey, then the resident physician of the place—afterwards the distinguished medical professor at Dartmouth, and later of a medical college in Ohio.

2. February 17, 1815, the declaration of peace after the war of 1812 was celebrated by a military parade, a public dinner, and an illumination in the evening, and an address at the church by the pastor, Rev. Mr. Crowell.

3. In 1825, the fiftieth anniversary (strictly speaking, the forty-ninth of the declaration) of our national independence was commemorated here, with considerable eclat, by a parade of the Essex Light

[1] Horatio, in Hamlet, Act i., Scene 2.

Infantry, and a public dinner in a pavilion on the grounds of Colonel William Andrews. The oration was delivered by Rufus Choate, Esquire, then a young lawyer practising his profession in Danvers, and comparatively unknown to fame.

4. On the fourth of July, 1838, Rev. A. C. L. Arnold delivered an oration at the Universalist Church, and a dinner was served in a tent on the premises of Enoch Low.

5. The one hundredth anniversary of the declaration of independence was celebrated on the fourth of July, 1876; when an oration was delivered out of doors, on the premises of Daniel Winthrop Low, to a large concourse, by Rev. David Otis Mears, D.D., a native of the town, now pastor of the Piedmont Church in Worcester.

An interesting coincidence was the presence on this occasion of two persons who had taken part in the celebration of a half a century before, when Mr. Choate was the orator. One was the late Robert W. Burnham, who was President of the day, at this later celebration, and the other was Denmark Procter, the venerable musician of Gloucester.

6. April 20, 1879, the fiftieth anniversary of the organization of the Universalist Society was celebrated by an address by Rev. Benton Smith, then acting pastor, from the text, "Ye shall hallow the fiftieth year." The church was tastefully decorated with flowers and plants, and there was a large audience in attendance, comprising many from other places, especially from Gloucester.

Addresses were also delivered by Rev. E. F. Pember, who presided on the occasion, and others; and the exercises were participated in likewise by Rev. F. T. Pomeroy, of the Methodist church, and Rev. J. L. Harris, then acting pastor of the Congregational church.

7. On the 22d of August, 1883, the Congregational church commemorated the two hundredth anniversary of its organization, as well as that of the parish, by a public memorial meeting, and a social festival. The occasion was one of more than ordinary interest, recalling as it did the varied events of so long a period of time, and the vast changes that had taken place, not only in the parish, but in the state and nation.

The audience-room of the church edifice was profusely adorned by wreaths, crosses and other floral designs, but for the accommodation of the audiences too large for the building, the public exercises were held in a mammoth tent, on the grounds of Daniel Winthrop Low.

In the forenoon, two interesting historical discourses were delivered: the first by Rev. Professor E. P. Crowell of Amherst College, son of the seventh pastor of the church,—a thoughtful production, admirably written, and eminently fair and discriminating in the statement of the discussions that had arisen;—and the second, a scholarly and appreciative tribute to the memory of Rev. John Wise, the first pastor, by Rev. Dr. Henry M. Dexter, of Boston.

A particularly interesting incident was the introduction, at the close of the forenoon meeting, of a native resident, Mr. Andrew Burnham, then in his ninety-ninth year, (who lived to be over one hundred,) and who well remembered John Cleaveland, and the raising of the meeting-house in 1792.

The congregation then visited the grave of Rev. John Wise, in the old cemetery, where a prayer was offered by Rev. Prof. Edwards A. Park, of Andover.

In the afternoon, addresses were delivered by Rev. E. B. Palmer, pastor of the parent church, at Ipswich; Rev. F. G. Clark, of Gloucester; Rev. Dr. Jeremiah Taylor, then of Providence, R. I., for some years previously minister at Wenham, who gave personal reminiscences of Rev. Dr. Crowell; and Prof. Park, of Andover.

At the social re-union in the evening, brief addresses were delivered by Rev. F. H. Palmer, acting pastor, who was president of the day; ex-pastor Rev. J. L. Harris; Rev. George L. Gleason, of Byfield; John Howard Burnham, of Bloomington, Ill., a native of Essex, a descendant of John Choate, first settler, and of Deacon William Goodhue, who was fined and imprisoned with John Wise and others, under the despotic rule of Sir Edmund Andros; and Rev. D. O. Mears, of Worcester, a native of Essex. An original poem, written for the occasion by Mrs. Elizabeth (Choate) Lane, of Boston, a native of this town, was read by Miss Ida P. Howes.

William C. Choate, organist of the church, a descendant of the early settler, John Choate, conducted the musical exercises of the day.

A hymn was lined off, after "ye ancient style," by Rufus Choate.

Letters were received from several who were unable to attend, among them Rev. John Pike, of Rowley; Rev. Wm. S. Coggin, of Boxford: Rev. J. C. Webster, of Illinois, son of a former minister of this parish; and a letter peculiarly interesting in reminiscence and full of heart, from Rev. Michael Burnham, written while travelling abroad and dated at Paris.

Essex Branch Railroad.—Until 1872, no railroad track crossed any part of the territory of this town; and the nearest railroad station was at Manchester, on the line of the Gloucester branch road, upwards of four miles distant, the next in point of nearness, in the direction of Salem and Boston, being that at Wenham, a distance of about six miles, on the main line of what what was then the Eastern road, but is now the Eastern branch of the Boston and Maine road.

On the 1st of July of that year, the first train of cars was run over the track of the Essex Railroad, which extended from Wenham to this town, and the building of which, just then completed, had been commenced in the preceding year.

It was built by the Essex Railroad Company, of



L. G. Burnham.

which Leonard McKenzie was President, and John C. Choate, Secretary; the town, in its corporate capacity, contributing the larger portion of the capital. It was afterwards sold to the Eastern Railroad Company, and is now held and operated by the Boston and Maine Company.

A continuation or extension of the road across the river and marshes to the Thompson Island settlement, near the junction of Southern and Eastern Avenues, has recently been completed; and on the evening of October 10, 1887, there was a jubilation over the event of the opening of the extension on that day, for the first time, for regular travel. Many buildings were illuminated, and a procession, preceded by the Essex brass band, marched to the residence of Addison Cogswell, to whom, more than to any other person, the success of the enterprise was due, and escorted him to a hall where a banquet was served; after which Elias Andrews, chairman of the committee of arrangements, called successively upon Mr. Cogswell, Morris C. Fitch, Rev. Mr. Sanger, J. R. Pringle, of the Boston Globe, and Aaron Low, Esq., who each responded in an appropriate speech. In the course of his remarks, Mr. Cogswell signified his intention to present to the town a building for a public library. This gratifying announcement was received with much enthusiasm.

It will be conceded that the persevering efforts of the late Leonard McKenzie, Esq., president of the company, contributed more than those of any other one individual at the time, to the pushing forward of the building of the original road.

Hog Island.—This island is located in the bay, a short distance from the main land, and is said to have received its name from its fancied resemblance to a hog's back, as seen in the distance from certain points. It is now divided into three farms.

Portions of it have at various times been in possession of different persons. One of my ancestors, Robert Day, who came from England in 1635, in the ship Hopewell, was the owner in 1664, of four and a half acres on this island. The statement in the Ipswich records is, that he owned a share and a half; and it appears from other entries in the same records, that by an established rule a "share" contained three acres.

Philip Fowler is likewise recorded as the owner of shares in Hog Island, as well as on Castle Neck and Plum Island, in the same year, 1664.

Jacob Bennett, grandson of John Perkins, 1st, owned several acres here, with a house, in which he and his family lived, which his heirs, in 1704, sold to Captain Thomas Choate, who had long been a resident of the island. This Bennett was a son of Henry, an ancestor of the late Captain Parker Burnham, whose mother's maiden-name was Hannah Bennett.

Matthew Whipple, son-in-law of William Cogswell, grandson of John, first settler, was, at Mr. Cogswell's decease, appointed guardian of his minor children and administrator of his estate; and one charge upon the estate, under date of May 16, 1717, was for "dividing the Island with Mr. Choate." From this it may be reasonably inferred that William Cogswell had been a part owner of Hog Island.

Captain Thomas Choate, it is generally understood, became finally the exclusive owner of the island; and from this circumstance, it is said, he was called Governor Choate.

In 1886, a road was constructed from the mainland to Hog Island by Captain Lamont G. Burnham, for the proprietors, Messrs. Marshall, Choate, and himself. The road across the marsh, about one-half mile long, from Low's to Dean's Island, was located and built, a few years previously, for his own use, by Rufus Choate, who also built a small ferry-boat, upon which he could drive a horse and light carriage, and, by the use of ropes and pulleys, could cross at any time of the tide. A substantial plank-road, thirteen hundred feet long and about twelve or fifteen feet wide, has been built to take the place of the ferry-boat. There are two bridges intersecting the plank-road, one of three hundred and eighty feet, the other of one hundred feet, left open underneath for the current on each side of the great thatch-bank. There are also spaces left between the piles which form the foundation of the road, for the passage of hay-boats and floating ice. All the lumber used about the bridge is hard pine, excepting the piles, which are of hemlock. The bridge and repairs upon the marsh road, which had gone somewhat to decay, cost between six and seven thousand dollars.

Change of Name.—The proprietors of the three farms upon the island, Rufus Choate, Nehemiah Choate Marshall, and Lamont G. Burnham, in October, 1887, changed the name to *Choate Island,* and requested the Selectmen to so record it upon the town books. The former inelegant name will, therefore, become obsolete.

It is said that no less than eighty-two persons of the name of Choate have been born upon this island.

The three present proprietors of the island are kinsmen, Captain L. G. Burnham being a descendant of George Giddings, who was ancestor also of Mary (Giddings) Choate, wife of Captain William Choate, and great-grandmother of Rufus, now the resident owner of one of the three farms.

Lamont Giddings Burnham—Was born in Essex, August 5th, 1844, and is the son of Washington and Mary (Giddings) Burnham, and a great-grandson of Benjamin Burnham, who was a soldier at the battle of Bunker Hill and served throughout the entire Revolutionary War, living to the age of ninety-two years. By two separate lines of ancestry, he descended from John Tuttle, sometimes written Tuthill, who came to Ipswich, from London, in the ship Planter, in 1635, of whose daughters one was the wife of George Giddings, who came in the same vessel, and another married Thomas Burnham,

seconded the three Burnham brothers, early immigrants. Tuttle and Giddings became large land owners in Ipswich.

He received his education in the public schools in Essex, the Putnam school at Newburyport, and a business school in Boston. He enlisted, at the age of eighteen, in Company E, Forty-eighth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, which joined General Banks' command in New Orleans, taking part in the battle before Port Hudson and at Donaldsonville. He was afterwards appointed Captain, First Brigade, Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, on the staff of General J. S. Burrill, and later, on the staff of General Hobart Moore, and elected Captain of Troop D, First Battalion of Cavalry, still later.

In 1868, he established himself in the coal business in Boston. Commencing in a moderate way, his business so increased that he is now the owner of several iron and other steamers, one of which, of eight hundred and nineteen tons, was built at Essex, and became proprietor of several large coal establishments, the most extensive, covering two acres, with buildings of storage capacity of eighty thousand tons.

He is President of the Boston Board of Trade, and fills many other prominent official positions in various business companies and corporations.

In 1880, he married Mrs. M. A. Wood. They have improved their summer residence in Essex, formerly in the possession of the Choate family, where Governor Robinson and wife were entertained by them, in 1886. In 1878, the farm adjoining the birth-place of Rufus Choate, on Hog Island, was purchased by him; and in 1886, a road and bridge from the main land to the Island, were constructed by him for the proprietors, Messrs. Marshall, Choate, and himself.

Capt. Burnham is a valued and esteemed citizen, liberal, public-spirited and hospitable, whose successful career is the result, not only of his remarkable business capability and enterprise, but of strict integrity and honorable dealing.

LONGEVITY.—The proportionate number of persons of advanced age, at different periods since the settlement of this place, has probably been as large as the average of that of other towns in the vicinity. Of 676 who died during one period of 43 years, 80 were upwards of 80 years old, and 20 were over 90. Of these *Joseph Marshall* was over 96.

CENTENARIANS WHO WERE NATIVES OF THIS PLACE.—*Mrs. Joanna Andrews*, who was born in Chebacco, and whose maiden name was Burnham, died in Gloucester January 20, 1847, at the age of one hundred and two years and three months. Her mother died at the age of ninety-two, and a sister was living at ninety four

Lydia Cogswell, a descendant in the sixth generation from John Cogswell, first settler, died in Essex in 1834, at the age of one hundred years. He was a soldier of the Revolutionary War, and was with General Gates at the surrender of Burgoyne.

Andrew Burnham, a descendant in the fifth generation, from John, the eldest of the three Burnham boy brothers, who came from England in 1635, died in Essex in 1885, at the age of one hundred years and two months. It is said that during his long life, a large portion of which was passed in active business pursuits, he was never seriously ill. He was a soldier in the war of 1812. He had ten children—nine by his first wife and one by his second. He was the father of George P. Burnham, Esq., of Melrose, and of Susan H., wife of Judge Benjamin Kingsbury, of Portland, Me. He was a merchant in Boston for many years, in business at one time on May's wharf, in old Federal Street, and subsequently in Green Street. He was at first engaged in the shipping business and importing of West India goods; then in the wholesale tobacco and West India trade, in company with Jonathan Carlton, and later in the retail family grocery line. He was one of a family of thirteen children, of whom several lived to a very advanced age—one, a brother, to his eighty-seventh year, and a sister to her eighty-ninth year. His father lived to be seventy-nine, and his grandfather eighty-eight. His great-grandfather died at the early age of thirty years and five months, but his great-great-grandfather John, his first ancestor in this country, lived to be seventy-six. This ancestor was one of the first two deacons of the First Chebacco Church, of which Rev. John Wise was pastor. The centenarian was a member of the Methodist Church.

By his descent from Abigail Varney, who married his great-grandfather, Josiah Burnham, and who was the sister of Mary Varney, who became the first wife of Captain Thomas Choate and mother of all his children, Andrew Burnham was a third cousin of David Choate, 1st, father of Rufus.

A CENTENARIAN WHO LIVED AND DIED HERE, BUT WAS NOT A NATIVE.—*Joseph Eveleth*, who was born in Gloucester, about 1640, when about 34 years of age removed to Chebacco, where he spent the remainder of his life, dying here in December, 1745, at the age of one hundred and five years.

He was a son of Sylvester Eveleth, who immigrated to Boston from England, where he for some time carried on the trade of a baker; and who removed to Gloucester, where for some years he was a selectman. The name was frequently written Eveleigh, and is said to have been originally derived from an estate in England called Yeverleigh.

ALMOST A CENTENARIAN.—Widow *Hannah Ayres*, who had been a school-mistress, died here in 1776, at the age of nearly one hundred years.

A FORMER RESIDENT, NOT A NATIVE, ALMOST A CENTENARIAN.—*Rev. Nehemiah Porter*, born in the Hamlet (Hamilton), who preached here seventeen years and owned a house here, died at Ashfield, Mass., in 1820, in the one hundredth year of his age.

Some of the Nonogenarians.—*Anne Choate*, widow of John, first settler, was ninety years old, at her death in 1729.

Ned Choate, a negro, a member of the church, died in the year 1800 at the age of ninety. He had been employed upon the Choate farm on Hog Island, and early in life may have been a slave.

Thomas Giddings, who died in 1802, at the age of ninety-four, walked nine miles in one day within a year of his death.

A widow Smith died in 1816, at the age of ninety-seven years and three months.

Daniel Choate died in 1820 at ninety-one.

Mrs. Deborah Burnham, widow of Wesley Burnham, 1st, a native of this place, a daughter of Deacon Zechariah Story, died here in 1821, at the age of ninety-eight. She was of the same lineage as that of Judge Story. She lived in the ancient house long occupied by Aaron Story, son of Ephraim, who was also of the same lineage. This house is the first on the left, after turning to the right from Western Avenue into the old road around the Falls village.

Mrs. Anna Andrews, who died in 1823, *Jesse Story*, who died in 1824, and *Major John Burnham*, the distinguished officer in the Revolutionary War, who many years after its close removed to Derry, N. H., where he died in 1843, all attained the age of ninety-four.

A recent instance is that of *Mrs. Lucy Boyd*, widow of John Boyd, who died in 1887, at the age of ninety-six. Her brother, *Aaron Burnham*, survives in his ninety-first year.

The list of nonogenarians might be considerably enlarged from among those deceased at different dates from fifteen to fifty-five years ago—a few notable instances being those of *James Andrews*, not far from ninety-seven; the three brothers, *David Burnham*, at 94 (whose wife survived him two years, and also reached ninety-four), *Benjamin Burnham*, at ninety-two, and *Parker Burnham*, 1st, at ninety-one years and eight months; and their nephew, *Captain Parker Burnham*, at ninety years and two months.

Summer Resorts.—"Conomo Point," so named, it is said, at the suggestion of Daniel W. Bartlett, Esq., in honor of Masconomo, the Indian-Chief, who owned the land in all the region round about, has for some time been an attractive place for persons of wealth and leisure, as well as active business men who have there built for themselves summer homes. Its nearness to the alms-house farm, from which can be obtained plenty of fresh eggs, genuine butter, and rich milk and cream, with other products of a fertile and well conducted farm, makes it exceptionally desirable in this respect. Cross Island, another refuge from the heat and dust of city and town, is exactly opposite to Conomo Point, across Chebacco River, and, of course, shares with it the advantage of having the poor-farm as its base of supplies. There were, at first, merely cabins of one room here, but there are now quite comfortable houses, each containing several rooms.

On the line of the Essex branch of the Boston and Maine Railroad, which has a station near its entrance, in the western part of the town is located Centennial Grove. It is the most popular summer resort in the county. Religious Societies and Sabbath Schools of every denomination visit annually these beautiful grounds, as do also military organizations, benevolent associations and pleasure parties of every description. Picnic parties, including thousands of people, have frequently found abundant accommodation here. Upon the lake are boats of various descriptions, among others one called a Catamaran, built of two narrow, air-tight gondolas planked over and fitted with sails. There also has been a small steamer running there at times.

Mr. J. Leverett Story, one of the proprietors, was for some years business manager, as was also Mr. Charles W. Procter.

"Cross Island" derived its name from Robert Cross, an early settler, who is reputed to have been the owner of it, but of whom little is known, either from record or tradition, except that he was a soldier in the Pequot expedition in 1637, and in 1639 was awarded a grant of land for his services. His name, "Robert Cross, Senior," was signed to a petition of the inhabitants of Chebacco, in 1679, to the General Court, for permission to build a meeting-house here. Whether he died here or removed to some other settlement is not known. The family name has long been extinct in this place. In 1710, two married daughters, Mrs. Mary (Cross) Herrick and Mrs. Anna (Cross) Fellows, were living in Connecticut.

Historic Houses and Localities.—1. The house now owned and occupied by Mr. Edwin Hobbs was built and owned by Rev. Theophilus Pickering, and was his residence until his death. It was afterward the home of Rev. John Cleaveland for two years; and was then purchased and occupied by Rev. Nehemiah Porter, who sold it to Dr. Davis, the first resident physician of the place; from whom it passed into the possession of Col. Jonathan Cogswell, and was inherited by his daughter Mary, afterward Mrs. Choate, who occupied it during her life.

In this house, on the night of July 18, 1817, occurred the first burglary in this parish of which there is any tradition, which was long spoken of because of the novel manner in which it was effected. The sum of one hundred dollars was taken from a desk in a room on the lower floor. Col. Cogswell, then the owner and occupant, slept in a room over it, and awaking in the night heard what he supposed to be the gnawing of wood by rats or mice. In the morning he found that his desk had been opened by sawing around the lock, so that the cover or top could be lifted, lock and all, without the necessity of using a key.

2. The farm at the North End, fronting on Northern

Avenue, upon which Capt. Lamont G. Burnham resides during the summer season, was formerly owned by Francis Choate, Esq., and afterward by his son, Hon. John Choate; and the dwelling-house on the premises is substantially the same in which they lived. It was here that Capt. Burnham entertained Gov. Robinson and his wife, during their visit to Essex, in 1886.

In this house, in 1747, assembled the ecclesiastical council at the ordination of Rev. John Cleaveland; and the public ordaining services took place out-of-doors in front of the house. Francis Choate, the occupant at that time, great-grandfather of Rufus, was a Ruling Elder in Mr. Cleaveland's church. The council which ordained Rev. Robert Crowell, in 1814, also met in this house, which was then occupied by George Choate, Esq., grandson of Francis and father of Dr. George, Senior, and Francis, so long residents of Salem.

3. On Hog Island, in an ancient house, on the farm now owned and occupied by his nephew and namesake, was born the distinguished lawyer and statesman, Rufus Choate. From time to time, the walls of the room in which he was born, resembling in this respect the cupola of Washington's Mansion at Mount Vernon, and the birthplace of Shakespeare at Stratford-upon-Avon, have been inscribed with the names of numerous visitors from abroad. Names are now recorded in a book kept for that purpose. Governor Robinson visited this house while the guest of Capt. L. G. Burnham.

Rachel Choate, the great-great-grandmother of the writer of this historical sketch, was born in this house in 1703.

4. The house owned and occupied by the late William H. Mears, Esq., was built in 1695, by Nathaniel Rust, Jr., who taught the first school known to have been established in Chebacco. A room of this house was presumably used for the purpose, there having been previously no school-house built.

5. The house of the late Colonel David Story, on the road to Hamilton, is a place of public interest, from its having been occupied for some days, in the summer of 1775, by Rev. John Murray, who took refuge in Chebacco, with several families from Gloucester, who brought their silverware and other portable articles of value during a panic caused by the appearance of a British sloop-of-war, which had chased an American vessel into their harbor, and sent several boat loads of men to seize and carry her away. They were repulsed by the quickly-mustered local militia, who made a gallant resistance, and captured several prisoners who were attempting to land. The sloop-of-war opened fire on the town, but, failing of the chief object, finally withdrew.

6. A place of great historic interest is the spot on which stands the house lately occupied by Rev. Dr. Crowell and Hon. David Choate, and which is still in the possession of their families. It was the site of the house built for the Rev. John Cleaveland and owned by him, in which he lived for half a century, and in which he died.

7. The ancient house near the margin of Chebacco Lake, occupied by the late Abner Burnham, Sr., was the residence of David Burnham (1st), who was the maternal grandfather of Hon. Nathan Dane, LL. D., the eminent jurist, author of the Digest of American Law, and author of the famous Ordinance of 1787, which secured to freedom the great Northwestern Territory, and to whom Daniel Webster paid such a magnificent tribute in his great speech in the United States Senate, in reply to Hayne, of South Carolina. It was in reference to the Ordinance mentioned, as well as to his high character and abilities, that Dane County, in Wisconsin, was named in his honor. He was the founder of the Dane Professorship of Law in Harvard University, and was frequently consulted as of high authority in the legal profession. His residence in Beverly, where he lived to the age of eighty-two, was on the Southwestern corner of Cabot and Federal Streets, opposite the Unitarian church, the latter street being said to have been named in honor of him, as virtually among the fathers of the Federal Constitution.

He was not what would be termed an orator, but, like Franklin, was an embodiment of sterling, practical sense. Whenever he spoke in public, it was with brevity and exactly to the point. On one occasion, in a Beverly town-meeting, when a local measure occasioned an animated debate, he said a few words, when an excited townsman on the other side of the question sought to counteract the manifest influence of his remarks by reminding him that he had, at some previous time, expressed a different opinion on the same subject. The hush of the listening voters was turned to merriment when Mr. Dane simply said, "Any man has the right to change his opinion every five minutes, *if he can give a good reason for it.*" He carried his point.

He was a man of method and punctuality in every thing. Frequently, in my boyhood, in the street in Beverly, have I, with my mates, paused in the midst of our play, and, with a feeling somewhat like awe, looked up at "lawyer Dane," as he passed in his daily walk for exercise, at about the same hour in each day, with his deliberate step and dignified manner, in his wide-brimmed hat and black suit, with small clothes buckled at the knee, and his high Suwarrow boots with black silken tassels.

To the now time-worn house in Essex, where his mother, Abigail Burnham, was born, Nathan Dane often came, in his childhood, on a visit to the old homestead, and played about the premises. His father was Daniel Dane, of the Hamlet, now Hamilton, where Nathan was born in 1752.

Nathan Dane was a lineal descendant of John Perkins, the first of that name to settle permanently in

Ipswich. His grandmother Burnham's maiden name was Elizabeth Perkins.

8. In this same old house lived Abner Burnham, a quaint, eccentric man, who was a zealous exhorter in the Christian Baptist meetings in Essex, and who had a large family, including several sons who became preachers, Elam, Wesley, Hezekiah, Edwin and George W., the last two residing several years in Newburyport.

9. The site of the first meeting-house in this place, which was raised furtively, as so often told, was the spot on which stands the dwelling-house of the late Capt. Joseph Choate, on Northern Avenue.

10. About opposite, on the northern corner, stood the parsonage, the first home of Rev. John Wise, the first minister, which he occupied for twenty years.

11. Afterwards he had built for himself a house on the spot where now stands the dwelling of the late John Mears, senior. In this second house, Mr. Wise resided during the remainder of his life.

The Congregational Meeting-House—a Marblehead man's idea. 12. This edifice, as well as its site, may properly be termed historic. Rev. John Cleaveland preached in it during the last seven years of his life, as he had previously done for forty years in a former structure which stood on the same spot. He and Dr. Crowell preached upon this spot for ninety years.

Everybody who knew the present house prior to its being re-modeled in 1842, will remember that the audience room was then on the ground-floor of the building, and the pulpit, instead of being, as now, at the end, was in the middle of one side, as was originally the case with New England meeting-houses generally.

An amusing illustration of the fact that people frequently derive their figures of speech from their business occupation, is afforded by the following incident, which I guarantee to be authentic, as I had it from the person to whom the droll comparison was addressed.

One day a sea-faring man from Marblehead came to Essex, with a friend, on business concerning a vessel. The front door of the meeting house being open, he looked in, and glancing at the pulpit at the side, said to his companion, "Here's a craft that carries her rudder midships."

13. The ancient house built in 1732, now occupied by Jonathan Cogswell and the family of the late Albert Cogswell may be considered historic, having sheltered five generations of the descendants of John Cogswell, first settler, and standing upon land belonging to the farm originally owned by him.

Significance of the Indian Name, "Chebacco."—In the summer of 1878, while attending a picnic at Centennial Grove, on the margin of Chebacco Pond or Lake, in Essex, I was asked by Rev. Elias Nason, what was the meaning of the original Indian name of the place Chebacco. I replied that the only definition I knew of was that which I received from Maungwudaus, the Ojibway Chief, who, about 1849–50, visited most of the towns and cities of New England, and lectured upon the habits, customs, manners, beliefs, language and other peculiarities of his people, presenting some novel and interesting illustrations of their speech, music, costumes, etc. He told me, in conversation, that from his acquaintance with Indian words, he thought it meant *place of spirits*. He was not only the most intelligent, generally speaking, but the most able intellectually, and the best educated Indian I had ever heard address a public audience; and I had heard many.

Mr. Nason, to whom, at his request, I furnished several data concerning the town, in his subsequent contribution to a county history, applied the term, as thus defined, to that particular location only where we had met; whereas the Indians designated by it a much larger part of the territory of this region.

Rev. Dr. Henry M. Dexter, of Boston, in his address, in 1883, at the bi-centennial celebration of the founding of the First Church in E-sex, gives the following, as the interpretation of "Chebacco," furnished him by Hon. J. Hammond Trumbull, distinguished as a scholar, and specially as a student of Indian dialects: "The greatest pond, or principal source of some stream." This Dr. Dexter poetically and appropriately applied to Rev. John Wise, the first minister of this place, whose early and ultimately triumphant resistance to the despotic assumptions of the Colonial Governor, Andros, became, as he aptly states it, "the principal source of the great river of that democratic polity which now gladdens so largely our land."

The two somewhat varying definitions can both be favorably considered,—for one of them is applicable to the pond or lake, as the source of the river; and the other will fitly characterize the entire settlement, which, for more than two centuries, has been a "place of spirits,"—peopled by choice spirits of devotion, heroic patriotism, industry, integrity and personal worth, and the social virtues, of whose memories the place will long be redolent.

Grand Army.—*O. H. P. Sargent Post*, of the Grand Army of the Republic, named in honor of a member of the Twenty-second regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers, who died of wounds received at McClellan's first advance on the peninsula, in May, 1862, and *W. A. Andrews Camp* of the Sons of Veterans, named in honor of a member of the Nineteenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers, who died of wounds at the battle of White Oak Swamp, in June, 1862, are flourishing organizations which keep alive the patriotic memories and associations of the war.

CHAPTER XCVII.

ESSEX (*Continued*).

Prominent Personages and Public Events Associated with Essex and Essex People—Deed of Land from John Cogswell, Early Settler of Ipswich—Deed of Land from Native Sarnoums—Orthography and Significance of Sarnoum's Name—The Perkins Family—Ancestral Acres—Rufus Choate—House Occupied by Choate—Capt. Parker Burnham—The Andrews Family—The Burnhams—The Choate Family—The Goodhues—The Story Family—Miscellaneous—Retrospective.

Prominent Personages and Public Events Associated with Essex and Essex People.—James Fennimore Cooper, in his sea-romance of "The Pilot," gives an account of a colloquy between Captain Barnstable, commander of the privateer-cruiser Ariel, and Master Coffin, the boatswain of the vessel, in relation to the pilot they were expecting from shore, in which the boatswain says: "Give me a plenty of sea-room and good canvas, where there is no occasion for pilots at all, sir. For my part, *I was born on board a Chebacco-man*, and never could see the use of more land than now and then a small island to raise a few vegatables and dry your fish. I'm sure the sight of it always makes me feel uncomfortable, unless we have the wind dead off shore."[1]

The use of the werd Chebacco in Cooper's story was erroneously stated by a correspondent of the *Boston Traveller*, of June 20, 1867, cited in the continuation of Crowell's History of Essex, on page 448, and repeated by Rev. Elias Nason in a note to his article on Essex, in a work upon the County. It will be seen, by reading the Pilot, that Captain Barnstable does not hail from Chebacco; neither does his boatswain Coffin: but the latter claims merely to be a native of a Chebacco *boat*, and says: "I was born while the boat was crossing Nantucket shoals."[2]

Thomas O. H. P. Burnham, of Boston, the proprietor of the well-known Antiquarian book establishment in that city, probably the most extensive of the kind in the country, is a native of Chebacco. The people of his native town have always felt a laudable gratification at his successful and honorable business career. Perhaps few of the general public know of the essential aid he has rendered to men of letters, and others, among them some of the most eminent persons of the times, by his wide range of acequaintance with whatever is valuable in the world of literature.

Hon. Daniel Clark, formerly United States Senator from New Hampshire, and since United States District Judge, taught school for some time in the South district in this town, when a young man.

The mother of the distinguished jurist, Nathan Dane, was a native of this place, as more fully noticed under the head of historic houses.

Samuel Dudley owned for some time a farm in Chebacco. He was son of Thomas Dudley, for several years Deputy Governor and Governor of the Colony, and was a brother of the noted Joseph Dudley, who was the chief justice of the court before which John Wise and others were tried for resisting Governor Andros. His sister Ann was the gifted writer who married Simon Bradstreet, Governor of the colony. He married Mary Winthrop, daughter of Governor John Winthrop. He finally moved to Exeter, New Hampshire, where he became the minister of the town, and where he died.

Dr. Elisha Kent Kane, the renowned Arctic explorer, sailed upon his famous voyage on the Grinnell Expedition in search of Sir John Franklin and an open polar sea, in a vessel launched from the shipyard of Messrs. James & McKenzie, in Essex. She was originally called the "Spring Hill"; but when first fitted out for the Arctic region, she was named the "Advance." In his published narrative of the voyage, Dr. Kane wrote in praise of her sailing qualities.

She was selected on account of the peculiarity of her construction, which enabled her to sail near the shore with less liability of running aground, than a vessel of a different model.

Captain John Low, commander of the ship Ambrose, and rear admiral of a fleet of twelve ships which sailed from England, for Salem, in April, 1630, was the father of Thomas Low, the first settler of that name in Chebacco, and ancestor of the late Captain Winthrop Low, Enoch Low (so long the postmaster), Oliver Low, and others.

Sir Jacob Perkins, inventor of the steam-gun, and other ingenious forms of mechanism, who spent the later years of his life in England, where he received the honors of knighthood, although a native of Newburyport, was the grandson of Matthew and Phebe (Burnham) Perkins, of Chebacco, and a lineal descendant of John Perkins and Thomas Burnham, first settlers.

Rev. Samuel Phillips, who taught school in Chebacco, for a year after his graduation from Harvard College, became distinguished as a pastor in Andover for sixty years, and preached the annual election sermon in Boston in 1750. He was the father of John Phillips, who founded Phillips' Academy in Exeter, N. H., and of Samuel Phillips, who, with the aid of his brother John, founded Phillips' Academy in Andover, Mass.

The father, Rev. Samuel, was a brother of Deacon John Phillips, of Boston, who was the great-grandfather of Wendell Phillips, the orator and philanthropist. He was a benevolent man, giving to the poor annually one-tenth of his income, of which he kept an exact account, and yet at the same time so economical as to blow out the candle when he commenced his evening prayer.

Sarah Foster, daughter of Reginald Foster, 1st, of Ipswich, and sister of Reginald, Jr., of Chebacco, married William Story, who owned and occupied a farm here, and who was the ancestor of the eminent

[1] 1823, chapter 9, p. 78.
[2] 1831, chapter xvii p. 108.

Joseph Story, long associate justice of the United States Supreme Court, professor of law in Harvard University, and distinguished in both hemispheres, by his legal commentaries and other works, which are standard authorities in jurisprudence; and whose son, William W. Story, is the sculptor who designed and modeled the statues of Chief Justice Marshall, at the west front of the United States Capitol, and that of Professor Henry in the Smithsonian grounds, at Washington.

Major Andrew Story journeyed with his family in an ox-wagon from Chebacco to Marietta, Ohio, in 1778, with a party of emigrants from this and neighboring towns, who became permanent settlers of Dr. Manasseh Cutler's infant colony. One of his children was instantly killed by falling from the wagon under one of the wheels; and while on the way a child was born.

Rev. Daniel Story, uncle of Judge Story, was also one of the settlers.

Colonel Joseph D. Webster, son of Rev. Josiah Webster, who was for several years pastor of the Congregational Church in Chebacco, was chief of General Grant's staff at the battle of Pittsburg Landing, April 6, 1862.

Dr. John Dennison Russ, a native of Chebacco, and grandson of Colonel Jonathan Cogswell, of Revolutionary distinction, was a graduate of Yale College in 1823. He was as distinguished for his philanthropy as for his skill as a physician. After his graduation in medicine, two years later, and spending a year in the hospitals of Paris, London and Edinburgh, he settled in New York city. Soon after, having his sympathies enlisted for the suffering Greeks, then at war with the Turks, he carried to them and distributed a vessel load of provisions, visiting for that purpose, it is said, nearly every town in Greece, and establishing a hospital there. He took seven blind children to educate at his own cost, that being the first attempt to enducate this unfortunate class in this country, and invented maps in geography and arithmetic for them, which are still in use wherever the blind are taught. His services for the Greeks and his efforts for the blind, place him on the same lustrous roll with the distinguished Dr. Samuel G. Howe. He devised a plan for the abolition of slavery in the country, which he submitted, in 1837, to Henry Clay, by which he thought slavery could be abolished and slaves educated for freemen at the expense of three hundred million dollars in twenty-five years.

George P. Burnham, of Melrose, though born in Boston, is of Essex descent, being a son of Andrew, the centenarian, noticed more fully under the head of longevity. He received his education in the public schools of his native city, and at the age of fourteen years, at the Mayhew School, was awarded the Franklin medal. Though now living in quiet retirement, he led for many years an active and busy life. For several years a commercial book-keeper in New York city, he was afterwards, for some years, assistant cashier and clerk in the Boston Custom-House. He was for some time one of the most extensive dealers in fancy poultry in this country; and in everything relative to the rearing, management and comparative values of the different varieties of this class of live stock, he was considered a connoisseur and an authority. He published no less than nine different handbooks, and descriptive and practical treatises upon these topics, some of them pictorially illustrated, and several of them being very extensively sold throughout the United States. He also published a volume upon song-birds, and other domestic pets. His other and more voluminous printed works consist of a book showing how to detect and avoid counterfeits; a "History of the United States Secret Service," and a volume of miscellaneous selections from a portfolio of his own writings upon various subjects. These books are all numerously illustrated by plates and engravings. He has had much experience as an editor, having for some time conducted a daily newspaper, and contributed at different times to various other journals and periodicals.

During the late Civil War he was, by President Lincoln, commissioned as a brigade commissary in the army, with the rank of captain, serving for two years in that capacity.

Parker and Elias Burnham, natives of Essex, established the first marine railway in Gloucester.

Distinguished Descendants of John Cogswell, early settler of Chebacco.—Ralph Waldo Emerson, who was descended from Cornelius Waldo, who married John Cogswell's daughter, Hannah; Oliver Wendell Holmes; United States Senator John J. Ingalls, of Kansas; Rev. Francis T. Ingalls, his brother; William Cogswell, the distinguished artist; Hon. John Wentworth, Congressman from Illinois and mayor of Chicago; Rev. Daniel Waldo, a soldier in the Revolutionary War, who lived to the age of one hundred and two years; Rufus Cogswell, a Revolutionary soldier, who died at the age of one hundred years; Horace Maynard, member of Congress from Tennessee, Minister to Turkey and Postmaster-General; Loren P. Waldo, member of Congress and judge of the Supreme Court of Connecticut; P. Brainard Cogswell, editor and author; O. B. Matteson, Congressman from New York; Elisha Whittlesey, Congressman from Ohio and long the first comptroller of the United States Treasury; Dr. Henry Daniel Cogswell, philanthropist and millionaire of California, who presented public drinking-fountains to the city of Washington and thirty other cities of the United States; Samuel S. Fisher, colonel in War of Rebellion and commissioner of patents under Grant; Arthur Orcutt Jameson, graduate of Dartmouth College, a brilliant scholar, died in early manhood; Edna Dean Proctor, distinguished as a writer of prose and verse; Rev. Dr. James Cogswell, who died

at the age of eighty-seven years, at the home of his son in Hartford, Conn., of whom it is related that in his last illness, when his memory had so far failed that he forgot that he had a son, on being asked if he remembered anything about Jesus, said promptly and with animation, "O yes, I *do* remember *him*;" the five brothers, Rev. Drs. Nathaniel and William, Judge Thomas, Francis, and Dr. George Cogswell; General William Cogswell, Congressman from Massachusetts, Seventh District; Hon. John B. D. Cogswell; Frederick Hull Cogswell, expert phonographer, founder of a school of phonography, and author of works on the art; William S. Robinson, the politician, editor and correspondent over the signature of "Warrington;" and many others of more or less note in different parts of the country.[1]

PERPETUATION OF EARLY SURNAMES.[2]—Of one hundred and ninety-six families residing in this town in 1820, one year after its incorporation, fifty-two were of the name of Burnham; and of the residue, a proportionately large number were of the names of Andrews, Choate, Cogswell, Goodhue, Low and Story. On the list of legal voters here in 1887 are the following: Andrews, 13; Burnham, 80; Choate, 4; Cogswell, 13; Goodhue, 3; Low, 22; Story, 47.

ORTHOGRAPHY AND SIGNIFICANCE OF SURNAMES.—Some of the early settlers spelled their names differently at different times, and sometimes differently in one and the same document. Andrews is sometimes signed Andros. Burnham was sometimes written Burnam and Burnum. In the eleventh century it was spelled Bernham and Byrnham.

On file in the office of the clerk of the courts in Salem is an affidavit, dated June 28, 1664, signed "John Chont." He was the first of the name here. In his signature to the witchcraft petition it is spelled "Chote," while that of his son Thomas is as now uniformly written, Choate. John, Jr., in an entry at the Probate office, signed himself "Chote."

Goodhue was sometimes written Goodhew, as in the witchcraft petition.

Mears is written Meares, Meeres and Meers.

Lufkin is sometimes written Lovekin, as in the witchcraft petition.

The origin and significance of some of the names have not been traced, while those of others are clearly traceable, as well as obvious.

In books on English surnames the first syllable of Burnham is said to signify chief, hero and man; also a knight, a noble; and sometimes a small river or brook, as now in Scottish song—"the wimpling burn." Ham, the terminal syllable of a large number of names of localities, signifies a town, a village; and the two syllables combined mean a town by a river. Applied to a man, the word signified a lord of a town or village. In Shakespeare's "Macbeth" the same name, spelled Birnam, is applied to a forest, in act iv., scene 1, and in act v., scenes 3, 4, 5 and 7; and scene 4 of act v. describes how "Birnam wood" did "come to Dunsinane."

The meaning of Goodhue is, obviously, good color; and so the name was construed in a published tribute, in Latin, to Rev. Francis Goodhue, who died in 1707: "*Bonitas conjuncta colori cognomen præbent.*"

Lufkin or Lovekin implies attachment to kindred.

The name Mears, in England and sometimes in this country, has been written Meres, as the plural of Mere, which has two significations—one, a boundary; the other, a lake; as Grassmere and Windermere, and likewise as in Tennyson's, poem of the Two Voices, when, on the Sabbath morn,

> "Like softened airs that blowing steal,
> When *meres* begin to uncongeal,
> The sweet church bells began to peal."

Rev. Francis Meres was a distinguished clergyman and belle-lettres scholar of Shakespeare's time, who was probably a personal acquaintance of the great bard. He wrote appreciatingly of him when both were living, exhibiting fine literary taste, acuteness, and judgment; and were he now here, he would, I think, dissipate into vapor the idiotic hypothesis that Bacon wrote Shakespeare.

In the following verbatim copy of the will of John Mears, who at the age of three years, came in the ship Abigail, in 1635, from London, with his father, Robert Mears, the name is spelled in no less than three different ways:

"BOSTON: 26: 7 mo. 1663. I, John Meers, lying sick—declare this as my last will, if no other after this doe appeare. I make my dear vnkell, James Johnson, executor of this my last will. I give to my wife, Mary, my dwelling-house during her life & if she marry, her next husband to give to her Child she now goes with, yt said house and ground, & after both her & her child's decease, then to my two brothers, or ye survivor of them. Morover, I give to my beloved wife ye bed I now ly on with all ye furniture thereto belonging, six greene Chairs, a round table and two paire of sheets, besides them I had with her, with a Long table in the house. To my father Meares my best suit and Cloak and four Cord of wood, with my Wedding hat. To my dear mother Meares my Chest

[1] "The Cogswells in America," by Rev. Ephraim O. Jameson, of Millis, Mass., son-in-law of the late Rev. Dr. William Cogswell, is a large and elegant volume, finely illustrated, containing the foregoing details, besides much interesting history.

[2] I believe that the late Edwin P. Whipple, the brilliant essayist, literary critic and popular lecturer, was a descendant of John Cogswell, of Tobacco, and a kinsman of Ralph Waldo Emerson and Wendell Phillips. His father was Matthew Whipple, and he had also a brother Matthew, long employed in John M. Ives' book store in Salem, and for years afterwards a dealer in artists' materials, in Cornhill, Boston. The father died in Gloucester when Edwin was an infant, and the boy was well nurtured and removed with her children to Salem.

In 1658 William Cogswell, grandson of John Cogswell, first settler, married Martha, daughter of Rev. John Emerson, of Gloucester, son of Thomas, of Ipswich, who was an ancestor of Ralph Waldo Emerson.

Matthew Whipple married the eldest daughter of this William Cogswell and wife, I think, an ancestor of Edwin P. Whipple, whose older brother was given the name of Matthew, which was the first name of the father-in-law of Mrs. Cogswell.

Another daughter of Rev. John Emerson, of Gloucester, married Samuel Phillips, goldsmith, of Salem, and was the great great grandmother of Wendell Phillips.

[illegible] Rev. [illegible], of the same Phillips line[illegible] great great grandchild, Sarah (Phillips) White, was a [illegible] Phillips [illegible] Salem gold and silver-

of drawers, two paire of sheets and bed ticking. To my brother, Samuel Meers, a pair of blew Curtaines; & my 2d suit and Coat to James Mears, with my musket and arms; to my wife, all the rest of my estate. John Meers.

"Witness, JAMES JOHNSON,
"JAMES OLIVER."

THE PERKINS FAMILY.—Crowell's "History of Essex," on pages 130 and 255, is in error in giving the name of *William* Perkins as that of the first ancestor in Ipswich, of those of that surname in Essex. John Perkins, Sr., was their primitive ancestor in this country.

The mistake is noted here, let it be distinctly understood, not in any sense or degree whatsoever, as an imputation upon the general accuracy of that meritorious work, to which every one who writes historically of this place must be indebted for valuable information, the result of careful and conscientious research.

It occurred very naturally, as the records show that a William Perkins came early in 1633, as one of the company of John Winthrop, Jr., that made the first settlement at Agawam, afterwards called Ipswich. He was a preacher, who had no family, being then a single man; and he remained only about one year, when he removed first to Roxbury, where he married Elizabeth Wotton, and subsequently to Weymouth, which he represented in the General Court, and afterwards to Gloucester, and next to Topsfield.

John Perkins came later in the same year, 1633, to Agawam, from Boston, where he had lived for about two years, having arrived there in 1631, in the same vessel with the famous Roger Williams. He came from Newent in Gloucestershire, in England; whereas the Rev. Wm. Perkins came, in 1632, from London.

This William left a few descendants in Topsfield; but most of the surname in that town and all who came from that place to Essex, were descendants of John, 1st, whose son Thomas, went from Ipswich to Topsfield, and about 1640 married Phebe, daughter of Zaccheus Gould.

Dr. George A. Perkins, of Salem; Horatio N. Perkins, of Melrose; and Frederick B. Perkins, of Hartford, Conn., have collated and arranged authentic lists of his posterity. Horatio N. Perkins has the original manuscript of his last will and testament and his ancient Bible.

His descendants are very numerous, especially in this State and Connecticut, many of them highly distinguished in the learned professions and successful in business pursuits. One of them, Dr. Elisha Perkins, of Plainfield, Conn., was the inventor of the famous "metallic tractors," consisting of two small pointed rods, one of steel and one of brass, used for curing or alleviating rheumatism, sprains, etc., by touching with the points the pained limb or spot. About the beginning of this century, the use of them occasioned a great furor, some zealously approving and others violently opposing. Their discoverer and proprietor had anticipated, by many years, the magnetic shields, rings, belts, and other appliances of the present time, for the relief of similar ailments. Dr. Perkins was grandfather of Hon. George P. Marsh, of Vermont, the distinguished scholar and diplomat, for some time Minister to Italy, and also to Turkey.

ON ANCESTRAL ACRES.—Miles S., Elias and Elihu Burritt Andrews are living on land purchased by one of their ancestors, Joseph Andrews, in 1678, of John Cogswell, who was a descendant of John, the first settler; from whom they are also descended, through Hannah Cogswell, whose daughter, Rachel Burnham, married the Joseph Andrews above mentioned.

Among others who are living on land which has been owned in the family between two and three centuries, are the family of the late Winthrop Low, Jonathan Cogswell and the family of the late Albert Cogswell, and persons of the names of Andrews, Burnham, Low and Story, too numerous to specify.

RUFUS CHOATE, LL.D.—The older portion of those who may chance to read these pages remember more or less of the brilliant career of this remarkable man, though more than a quarter of a century has elapsed since he passed away. I shall not, by attempting anything like an elaborate delineation of him, seek to "add another hue unto the rainbow,"[1] but beyond a brief summary of his personal history, shall merely note a few points and characteristics, chiefly from my own observation.

He and Judge Joseph Story, of the United States Supreme Court, professor at Harvard Law School, and eminent authority in jurisprudence, had a common ancestor in Reginald Foster, who came from England in 1638. He was born in this place, October 1, 1799; graduated at Dartmouth College at the age of twenty, and studied at the Harvard Law School, and in the office of Judge Cummings, of Salem, and afterwards at Washington for a year, with the distinguished William Wirt, United States Attorney General.

Mr. Wirt resided then in a house still standing in Washington, in G Street, opposite the United States Signal Service office, (head-quarters of "Old Probabilities,") and near the War Department. The edifice, in recent years, has been occupied as an Asylum for Soldiers' Orphans. Often, in passing the building, have I thought of Choate, Chief Justice Salmon P. Chase and other law-students of Mr. Wirt, who afterwards became distinguished.

His practice at the bar extended over a period of thirty-five years, from the opening of an office in Danvers, in 1824, to his decease, in 1859. He represented that town in the Legislature, and one year was a member of the State Senate. He removed in a few years to Salem, and in 1832 was elected to the United States House of Representatives. Declining to serve a second term in Congress he removed, in 1834, to

[1] King John, act iv., scene 2.

Boston. He was a Senator of the United States from 1841 to 1845, filling an unexpired term of Daniel Webster, who was Secretary of State in the cabinets of Presidents Harrison and Tyler. He also occupied for some years the honorary position of Regent of the Smithsonian Institute. He was once Attorney General of Massachusetts, and was a member of the State Constitutional Convention of 1853. These comprise all the official positions at any time held by him. In these he evinced distinguished ability; but his fame rests chiefly upon his wonderful achievements as an advocate at the bar, and in orations and addresses upon special occasions.

1. He owed nothing whatever at the outset of his legal career, to adventitious aids or circumstances, but made his way solely by force of his own genius and ability,—those of his family name who had in some instances been distinguished, having been principally of the colonial days, and at a remove of at least two, or even three and four generations.

2. An eloquent pleader and fascinating orator, he was at the same time a profound lawyer, a combination not always met with, even in men of distinction at the bar. If there was anything in law which he did not know, it was probably not worth knowing.

3. His rhetoric was peculiar. As I recall the unique, picturesque, and sometimes gorgeous sentences in some of his speeches, I think of the song of Ariel, in the Tempest:

> "Nothing of him that doth fade,
> But doth suffer a sea-change
> Into something rich and strange."

How apt was the allusion to the aged whaleman of New Bedford, as "tired out with the chase of his gigantic game!"

He had a faculty for saying things which nobody else said, which would at once attract attention and be widely commented on and remembered. One instance was his saying, in an address before the New England Society of New York City, forty years ago, on the anniversary of the landing of the Pilgrims, that they founded here "a State without a King, and a Church without a Bishop." Some will doubtless recollect the animated discussion which took place soon afterwards between two prominent divines, Rev. Drs. Potts and Wainwright, one a Presbyterian and the other an Episcopalian—one contending that there *could* be, and the other that there could *not* be, a true church without a bishop. The disputation was reiterated by the religious press of this country and of England, and the secular journals had a good time over it in a less serious vein. Very funny also was the device of a storekeeper on Broadway in that city, who suspended a cage, containing a parrot, upon each side of his doorway, after having trained the loquacious birds to participate in the controversy—one exclaiming, "There can be a church without a bishop," and the other correctively retorting, "There can*not* be a church without a bishop."

His copious vocabulary, like his chirography, was occasionally the subject of good-natured, jocose allusions, which he enjoyed as much as did others. Horace Mann related to me that one day when he was present at the Supreme Court, in Boston, during a temporary recess, one of the lawyers mentioned, incidentally, that a new edition of Webster's Quarto Dictionary was about to appear, containing seventeen thousand new words. Chief Justice Shaw, whose eyes had been closed, apparently in a drowse, groaned and with mock gravity said, "I hope Rufus Choate won't get hold of it!"

4. His nationality, and his belief that to the question of the maintenance of the Union all else should be subordinate, which in his time were criticized in some quarters as ultra-conservatism, were somewhat differently judged after the late Civil War broke out. When the war-cloud was gathering, before the storm had actually burst upon the country, Mr. Seward took substantially the same position in his last speech in the Senate, just before he took his seat in Lincoln's Cabinet, when he said, "Republicanism is nothing, Democracy is nothing, in the presence of the Union." Choate, years before, had said in a speech, "We stand by the shipping articles and the ship, the whole voyage round. We go for the Union to the last beat of the pulse and the last drop of blood." I presume no one doubts that had he lived until the Rebellion, he would have stood with Everett, whose position previously had been the same as his. His utterances had contributed to strengthen and deepen that intense devotion to the Union which nerved millions of American people to sustain it by sacrifice and treasure, through the tremendous struggle. As it was with the son and grandson of Webster, so was it with the son and representative of Choate. His son and a son-in-law marched at the country's call, and the son incurred in the exposures of the service the malady that shortened his days. In the battle of Cedar Mountain, he stood shoulder to shoulder with comrades when several of his company were killed and others fell wounded.

Choate was at heart always anti-slavery. This is evident from some of his private correspondence, in which he could not reasonably be accused of saying anything for public effect. When Edward Everett was in the Senate, he said to him, in a private letter, under date of February 4, 1854, "We hope you may defeat the further extension of slavery, on grounds and by reasoning that will not lose you one American heart or judgment anywhere." In another strictly private letter to the same person, under date of November 17, 1857, he wrote thus in reference to President Buchanan, whom he had materially aided to elect: "I entreat you to give him and all conservative men an idea of a patriot administration. KANSAS MUST BE FREE—*sua sponte*—and the nation kept quiet and honest, yet with a certain sense of growth, nor unmindful of opportunities of glory."

5. His estimable personal qualities won the friendship of all who knew him. He was always unpretending, free from hauteur, accessible and genial. He was modest in his estimate of himself, and especially moderate in his charges for his professional services. President Brown, in his biography of him, says that his largest fee in any one case was $2,500, and his largest retainer $1,500; the largest amount of receipts in any one year was a little more than $22,000; average for the last eleven years of his life, nearly $18,000; and in one year only did they fall below $13,000.

The late Hon. Matthew H. Carpenter, the brilliant lawyer of the West, and United States Senator from Wisconsin, used to speak with emotion of Mr. Choate's kindness to him, when, poor and unknown, he came from Vermont to Boston, and applied for admission to his office as a law-student. Although he had already as many students as his rooms would accommodate, he took him into his own room, bestowed upon him every attention, and when he started to begin a career at the West, he supplied him with money without solicitation or even intimation. This Mr. Carpenter promptly repaid as soon as able to do so. In some other cases, however, his generosity and good nature were imposed upon.

6. What may interest the people of this town, perhaps, as much as anything else concerning him personally, is the fond attachment he manifested for his native place. How naturally, when in the U. S. Senate, he expressed this sentiment in a letter to his son, then a little boy, at school in Essex. After telling him how warm the weather was, in the month of May, in Washington, where the grass was then mown and roses were in bloom, he added: "Give me the sun of Essex, however, I say, for all this. One half hour, tell grandmother, under those cherished button-woods, is worth a month under these insufferable fervors." Similar associations and memories were uppermost in his mind, only a short time before he died. He had for some time been an invalid; and in hope to regain health, he took passage, with his son, in a steamer, for Europe. On arriving at Halifax, he was too ill to proceed any further; and so he tarried there, intending, as soon as sufficiently recovered, to return to Boston. Only the day before his death, he considered himself better and gaining; and the surgeon of the Admiral's flagship of the British fleet then on that station, who had been called in, expressed himself encouragingly. But a little before two o'clock, the next morning, July 13, 1859, he ceased to breathe. In reply to a question, his last words were, that he felt very faint. An autopsy revealed that his death was due to granular dissolution of the kidneys, commonly called Bright's disease.

Nothing could be more touching than his conversation in his last hours, as thus recorded by his son: "He talked much of home, making little plans about the best way of getting there; talked of sending for his family to come to him, but thought he should recruit so soon that it would be of no use; *talked about Essex*, of *wanting to go down there*, and *having a boat built for him*, discussing her size and rig."

He who had held juries spell-bound, and charmed multitudes, thought not at this time of courts or listening crowds, but tenderly recalled the scenes of his old home, the ancient town where he drew his first breath.

Hon. David Choate.—The experiences of this distinguished native and life-long resident were so interwoven with the affairs of the inhabitants, both civil and religious, that a personal sketch of him is a legitimate part of the history of the town. As surveyor, conveyancer, adjuster of estates, and adviser, his services were often in requisition; and his educational influence upon the place was greater, as a whole, than that of any other person, the recollection of him being ineffaceable from the minds of the large number, of both sexes, still living, who were among his pupils.

While firm and steadfast in adherence to his deliberately formed and cherished opinions, he was every mindful of the amenities of social life; and in his personal intercourse with any and all of those who entertained differing convictions, he never forgot to be a gentleman.

The elder brother of Rufus, he was born in the ancient house on the island, November 29, 1796, and was married, January 14, 1828, to Elizabeth, daughter of Col. Thomas Wade, of Ipswich. They had six children, of whom the following survive: Dr. David Choate, of Salem, Hannah, principal of one of the public schools in that city, Rufus and William C., who reside in Essex, and Rev. Washington Choate, pastor at Irvington-on-the-Hudson, N. Y.

He was a descendant, in the sixth generation, from John Choate, who came to this country in 1645, and also from John Perkins, 1st, George Giddings, John Procter 1st, Reginald Foster, and Thomas Varney.

As a Teacher.—As an instructor Mr. Choate was in his native element. He had not only a due appreciation of the dignity of this vocation, which he followed nearly thirty years, but he had a sympathetic and devoted attachment to it. He performed its duties not in a merely perfunctory manner; his heart was always in it. He gave to it more hours of preparation, labor, care and solicitude than any contract would require, and throughout his long career in this calling, he rendered vastly more than an equivalent for any remuneration. He was never a hireling who careth not for the flock. He shrank from no extra toil or effort to assist and encourage those of his pupils who might wish to gain knowledge beyond the established routine of school-studies in his time. He was the first in the town to introduce the study of Astronomy, which he made especially attractive.

He invited all who desired to learn some of its

sublime facts to meet at the school-house on cloudless evenings, when the starry host appeared undimmed; where, without fee or reward, he would, with the aid of a geography of the heavens and celestial maps, spend hours, first in familiar descriptive lecturing, and afterwards out of doors, pointing out the different constellations, explaining their geometric relations to each other and their mythological signification. He also imparted, in the same practical way, a knowledge of surveying and mensuration, in which he was an expert. A lady has often recalled how, in happy girlhood, she learned to designate readily every constellation above the horizon at any hour or season, and also how she had learned to find with exactness the area of any plat of ground, however irregular its shape or outlines.

His school, in educational advantages, had the status of an academy. He introduced illustrative apparatus and other appliances to aid in promoting the advancement of the scholars. His interest in educational matters extended beyond the periphery of his school. He was one of the originators of the Essex County Teachers' Association, and for years one of its most efficient members; and while chairman of the committee on education in the higher branch of the Legislature, he introduced, and carried through, some beneficial and important educational measures. He received an invitation to become the principal of the State Normal School at Albany, which he declined from apprehension that his impaired health would not warrant his assuming the charge of so responsible and laborious a position.

As a Writer.—Mr. Choate was facile and easy, having ready command of the most appropriate words for every occasion. He was never dull nor obscure, but always animated and translucent in his style; and he wrote as well upon one topic as upon another. His contributions to Crowell's completed town history, are favorable specimens of his literary manner. His descriptions, especially of the successive efforts and successive failures to procure railroad facilities, are pervaded by natural and genuine humor; and his chapter upon the transactions of the town relative to the late Civil War is, in more than one particular, very remarkable. Written when he was considerably past the age of seventy years, there is no falling off from the freshness and vivacity of his earlier days. To collect and methodically arrange the statistical details of enlistments and terms of service, and accompany them with personal descriptions more or less extended, of one hundred and forty three soldiers, obtained in part from their oral statements, with occasional extracts from their correspondence and private journals, and make it all readable and attractive, could not have been a diminutive labor.

As a Public Speaker.—He was animated sympathetic and interesting, and at times eloquent; and in an argument on a practical subject he could be very forcible and convincing. A prominent instance of this kind was his speech before the county commissioners in behalf of the petitioners for a new road (now Martin Street), which the voters at a town-meeting, by a large majority, had refused to lay out, on account of taxation. The writer of this, who was one of the petitioners, heard the speech, and thought it one of the clearest, most compact and telling array of facts and figures, with the most cogent arguments based upon them, that he had ever previously listened to in any discussion of projected public improvements, and he had had opportunities of listening to arguments upon practical questions before legislative committees, when the counsel on each side were attorneys of large experience and much repute.

If Mr. Choate had chosen the profession of the law, and established himself in some large town or city, under the stimulus of varied practice, in attrition with opposing counsel, and in the widened sphere of the courts, he would, I have no doubt, have arisen to distinction as an attorney. He did, in some instances, conduct cases in court as counsel.

A Remark upon Lightning.—In 1856, two persons having been killed by lightning in this town, in two separate thunder-storms, within one week, a proposition was made in a Congregational parish-meeting, to have a lightning-rod placed upon the meeting-house. A very sincere member arose and objected to it, saying that it might seem like defying Providence, as he thought that lightning went only where it was sent. Mr. Choate arose and said that the Bible taught that God "sends the rain," but, notwithstanding this, we hold up umbrellas to keep it off our heads.

As Civil Magistrate.—He served for a long series of years; first as justice of the peace, then justice of the peace and quorum, and later as trial justice; in the latter office conducting many trials in Gloucester, before the establishment of a Police Court there.

In Agriculture.—In youth and early manhood he had his father's farms to care for, and throughout life retained his interest in agricultural affairs. He wrote essays and reports upon the culture of various products, and was for some time vice-president and trustee of the Essex County Agricultural Society, attending its meetings and frequently taking part in its discussions. In 1860 he wrote an agricultural and geological survey of Essex County, which was printed among the transactions of the Massachusetts Society for the promotion of Agriculture.

Various Offices.—To the civil and ecclesiastical public positions held by Mr. Choate, at various times, he seemed to have gravitated naturally, being drawn to them by the desire of his neighbors and townsmen, and his associates in the various organizations of which he was a member. He served in both branches of the State Legislature, and the church, of which he was more than forty years a deacon, often delegated him to represent it in councils, at ordinations and on other occasions; and he was Superin-

tendent of the Sunday-School for many years. He was, for some time, a trustee of Dummer Academy, and also of the Mount Holyoke Female Seminary at Hadley, of which latter he was an early and efficient friend and patron. He was in succession corresponding secretary, vice-president and president of the Essex County Teachers' Association. He was repeatedly chosen town clerk and town treasurer, and was for a long time an efficient member of the School Committee, and often its chairman.

As a Musician.—Having a fondness for music, he became a skillful performer upon more than one instrument, and did much to encourage and promote musical culture in the church choir, and in the town. Those who ever heard him play St. Martin's, on the flute, at the evening meetings in the old chapel, in the years so long gone by, will remember that restful and devotional melody.

Personal and General.—Mr. Choate was free from envy. The success of others, in any walk or sphere of life, seemed always to give him unalloyed pleasure, more especially if they had risen under adverse circumstances and by their own energy and perseverance. He had an admiration for eloquence, learning and intellectual ability, which he cordially recognized and acknowledged, whether in his own sect or party or in that of another. Horace Mann's educational reports he considered models in that line, and I remember on one occasion how charmed he was by the brilliant oratory of Burlingame. He was a most agreeable social companion, and enjoyed interchange of thought with those of kindred literary tastes. Once only did I ever know his equanimity to be disturbed or jostled. He was an admirer of the writings of Cowper; and at the time referred to he had just read, among some literary criticisms by a noted American writer, a depreciatory remark concerning the works of that gentle and contemplative poet. It was unjust, though half jocose, and its author, quite probably, as other brilliant men have done in regard to other authors, made the observation inconsiderately; for it would seem incongruous that one so tenderly susceptible as the critic himself was, at times, could for once seem to speak indifferently of him who wrote the lines to his mother's picture commencing, "O that those lips had language." Elizabeth Barrett Browning's tribute to him is profoundly and sympathetically appreciative.

Mr. Choate always felt a deep and hearty interest in everything pertaining to the welfare of the town. He was one of the original projectors of the branch railroad, and performed much gratuitous labor in connection with surveys to ascertain the most practicable route and in urging the importance of the enterprise upon his townsmen, as well as having the subject presented to the Legislature, on applying for a charter. When these cumulative efforts had at length, in 1872, culminated in the successful completion of the road, to no one were the sounds of the bell and the whistle of the locomotive more welcome than to him. On the 1st of July of that year, when the road was opened to the public, he was able only to ride in his carriage to the Falls station, where he entered a car of the first train from Wenham, and came in it to the terminus of the road. Although of advanced age and feeble, he was, in relation to this enterprise, the fortunate Simeon, who, while others "died without the sight," had full realization of his long-expectant vision, surviving the event until the 17th day of the following December.

Capt. Parker Burnham.—This veteran shipmaster, who as youth and man sailed the seas for thirty years, and lived until 1871, when he had attained the age of four-score and ten, was in one particular unparalleled,—building, as he did, in 1811, and owning, the largest vessel which at that date had ever been built here, and then sailing in her for five consecutive years as captain, making voyages to Lisbon, and to various ports in the Mediterranean, with which he became as familiarly acquainted as with Boston harbor. He became one of the most skillful and trusted navigators of his time, sailing in the employ of the Sargents and other prominent merchants of Boston. He was never shipwrecked, and never met with disaster of any kind, though he experienced many terrific gales and tempests.

His crews attributed his good luck in this respect to the fact that he never procrastinated in his preparations for bad weather, giving orders instantly to reef all sails at the first portent of a violent storm, so that when it reached his ship he was ready for it. This promptness and punctuality continued through his life, enabling him sometimes to turn to advantage what delay might have made a business reverse. As we used to say of him, when on a business errand, he always took passage by the first boat.

His retirement from a sea-faring life was occasioned or at least hastened by a singular circumstance, which, to himself as to others, was always a wonder and a puzzle. He had been growing somewhat weary of life on the ocean, and had about concluded to become permanently a landsman; but yielding to the earnest solicitation of his employers, he had consented to go one voyage more. He had his sea-chest sent aboard, and the ship waited only for a fair wind. On entering the cabin, however, he felt suddenly a presentiment that if he sailed then he would never return. The impression was so strong that at the last moment, his engagement was, with the reluctant acquiescence of the owners, cancelled. Another captain was procured, and the ship started on her voyage; but neither she nor the crew were ever afterwards heard from!

After retiring from the sea, he engaged for many years in ship-building. He was the first of the builders in the town to discontinue the custom of furnishing rum to the workmen at luncheon. He was led to do this from a single circumstance. He

observed that an apprentice-boy was eager for the luncheon hour, and drank his ration of liquor, each day, with an apparently increasing relish. He proposed to the men that if they would acquiesce in the change, he would add the cost of the rum to their wages, and furnish hot coffee as a substitute. They all promptly assented.

He was a person of great equanimity, and no losses in business ever deprived him of a night's sleep. One instance will serve as an illustration. He had sold a new vessel, entirely on credit, to Coolidge, Head and Poor, an apparently prosperous business firm, in Boston. Soon afterwards, they made a disastrous failure, and he lost the entire debt of several thousand dollars. He had then recently bought a horse which had been recommended to him as a first-class steed, with which he started, in a carriage, for Boston, to ascertain if there was a chance of recovering anything. He found that everything was swamped, and his loss was total and absolute. On reaching Salem, upon his return, his horse dropped dead. The first question asked him on his arrival home, was, "What luck?" He answered, "Coolidge, Head and Poor old horse have all gone together." He was never known to mention the subject afterwards, unless questioned about it.

He was of the most transparent truthfulness and integrity, and the white line of personal honor in his soul was never even faintly overshadowed. In his religion he was a Universalist, in the best sense of that term. An over-zealous but unquestionably well-meaning person once solemnly said to him, "Captain Barnham, have you made your peace with God?" He quietly replied, "I was never at war with Him."

As an instance of his good will and freedom from resentment, his compassionate treatment of one who had done him an unprovoked injury, is worth recording. A most unwarrantable and vexatious civil suit was brought against him for alleged trespass upon premises which he had sold, but over which, in the express language of the deed of conveyance, he had reserved a right of way. He won the suit, as defendant the jury visiting the spot, and having the deed before them. On some technical point, a new trial was granted, in which he again won the case. The plaintiff then appealed to the Supreme Court, on a point of law; but that tribunal sustained the double decision of the lower court.

The plaintiff subsequently had continuous ill luck in business, and finally became dissipated, and removed to Boston, where he lived some years in needy circumstances. Captain Burnham met him in the street there one day, and he looked so forlorn and faint that he cordially invited him to the hotel where he was stopping and gave him a dinner, which he ate with the avidity of one half-famished. Overcome by the kindness of the man he had wronged years before, he broke down with emotion, cried like a child, and declared that he would never have brought the suit if he had not been "put up to it." It was the offspring of envy.

That chivalric gentleman, the late Hon. Leverett Saltonstall, who conducted the case all through as counsel for the defendant, declared to him that the suit was the most outrageously unjust of any that he had known in his practice; and when the captain handed to him his fee, Mr. Saltonstall took from it a considerable sum and returned it, positively refusing to accept the whole amount.

Captain Burnham was a descendant of Thomas, second of the three Burnham brothers, early settlers. He was also descended by two lines of ancestry from John Perkins, first, whose daughter Lydia married Henry Bennett, ancestor of Captain Burnham's mother, Hannah Bennett; and one of whose later descendants, Elizabeth Perkins, became the wife of David Burnham, first, who was Captain Burnham's great-grandfather.

The Andrews Family.—From all that can be authentically learned, the progenitor of all of this surname in Essex was John Andrews, a first cousin of the original three Burnham brothers and a son of Captain Robert Andrews, who commanded the ship "Angel Gabriel," wrecked at Pemaquid in 1635.

It is not improbable that he may have been a kinsman of another Robert Andrews, who was in Ipswich as early as May 6, 1635, when he was made freeman, and of that still other Robert, at one time living in Topsfield, who was killed in King Philip's war. There were also two persons of the name of John Andrews in Ipswich, who in 1648 subscribed to pay Major Dennison for military instruction, one signing himself John, Sr., and the other John, Jr. What relationship, if any, they may have borne to John, son of Captain Robert, does not appear in any record that I have seen.

John Andrews, of Chebacco, was lieutenant of a military company here in 1683. He was the one who was fined and imprisoned with Rev. John Wise and others, for opposing the usurpation of Governor Andros. He died in 1709, leaving a widow named Judith, with four sons, John, William, Thomas and Joseph; and a daughter Elizabeth, who married James Giddings. He appointed "William Giddinge of Jebacco" executor of his will.

I have a copy of the will of his father, Captain Robert Andrews, dated March 1, 1642, from the original on file at the office of the Registry of Deeds in Salem; in which he refers to his eldest son John as "yet under age." If he was then twenty years old, he was about fifty-five when appointed on a committee to confer with the authorities of Ipswich relative to being allowed to have a preacher in Chebacco. On page 46 of Professor Crowell's bi-centennial address, his age at that time is given as 60.

Numerous inaccuracies and discrepancies of this sort are frequent in the early records, where in some instances they are probably given as approximations merely, so that they do not affect any general accuracy of statement.

THE BURNHAMS.—These are too numerous to be particularized to any considerable extent. The branches of the families of Seth, Josiah, Andrew, the centenarian, Abel, &c., are descendants from the first John; most of the rest are from the first Thomas. In the "Burnham Genealogy" they are given in minute detail.

THE CHOATE FAMILY.—John Choate, the first of the surname in Chebacco, came here, it is believed, in 1645, at the age of about twenty-one years.[1] He was from Sudbury, or its neighborhood, in Suffolk, near the boundary of Essex County, England. The tradition is, that his house stood within a few rods southeast of the spot where that of the late John Low now stands or formerly stood. His wife's first name was Anne, but her surname is unknown. He died December 4, 1695, at the age of about seventy-one. His wife survived him till 1729, reaching the age of ninety.

They had several children. Of these, John, the eldest, was a deacon. He had six sons and two daughters. Thomas settled upon Hog Island, where he had four sons and five daughters. Benjamin was a clergyman.

Of Thomas' children, John became very distinguished; he was a colonel in the French and English war; was fifteen years a member of the General Court; was chosen Speaker, but the election was annulled for political reasons by Governor Belcher, under a power that officer then had; but he was, under another Governor, an executive counsellor for six years. His advice was often sought in matters ecclesiastical, as well as civil, being a prominent member of the South Church in Ipswich. He planned and superintended the construction of the stone bridge, in 1764, at Ipswich Centre, where he resided. He was, no doubt, an uncommon man. It is said that he used to wear a scarlet cloak, and at his side a silver-hilted sword, in accordance, probably, with an old English custom. He was for some years judge of Probate, and judge of the Court of Common Pleas.

Thomas' daughter Mary, who married Parker Dodge, of Hamilton, was mother of John Cleaveland's first wife. Rachel, his seventh child and third daughter, was ancestress of the writer.

Thomas' son Francis was a ruling elder in Mr. Cleaveland's church. His wife was Hannah Perkins, a descendant of John Perkins, (1st.) They had eight children. Their daughter Hannah Choate married Rufus Lothrop, and it was probably in compliment to him that her nephew, David Choate, (1st), gave his son, the eminent advocate, the name Rufus. Lothrop was living in Connecticut as late as 1795, only four years before Rufus Choate's birth, and probably later. He is referred to in Cleaveland's army journal at Ticonderoga, where he says: "I received a letter from my dear friend Rufus Lothrop."

Francis' son William was a sea captain, as well as farmer on Hog Island. He was father of David, (1st), and grandfather of Rufus. He had also sons George, William and Job. Descendants of Job are living in Washington, D. C., children of Warren, who died there, in 1876, at the age of seventy-seven, leaving a widow, four sons and two daughters. His son, Dr. Rufus, is in the practice of medicine in Herndon, Va.

Stephen Choate, son of Lieutenant Thomas, Jr., and grandson of Captain Thomas, was for many years a deacon of Mr. Cleaveland's church. He was for several terms Representative to the General Court, and also a State Senator. He married, as his second wife, Widow Elizabeth Potter, my great-grandmother, who was his first cousin, and by whom he had four children. Her daughter by her first husband, Elizabeth Potter, who became the wife of Abner Day, long a deacon of the South Church in Ipswich, was my grandmother; and the fact that here she resided in her girlhood, and here attended church and school, and the circumstance that my mother was born at Ipswich Farms, not very far from the Chebacco line, as well as my long residence here, where my children were born, would seem to identify me personally with this place almost as fully as if I had been a native of Essex, instead of originating in the neighboring town of Beverly.

There are now residing in Essex but four adult males of the name of Choate, viz.: Francis and John C., sons of our late prominent and respected citizen, John Choate; and Rufus and William C., sons of the late Hon. David. Many of the Choate lineage, however, both male and female, of various other surnames, are still inhabitants of the town.

THE GOODHUES.—In 1636, Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, who had been a minister in Assington, England, came to Boston, and in 1638 settled as pastor in Ipswich, Mass.; and soon afterwards he was followed by seventeen others who had been members of his church in England, including William Goodhue and Robert Lord, ancestor of the late Judge Otis P. Lord.

The former is alluded to in the Ipswich records as "William Goodhue, weaver." He became deacon of the first church in Ipswich, as did also his son Joseph. He was married four times: 1st, to Margery Watson; 2d, to Mary Webb; 3d, to Bethiah, widow of Captain Thomas Lothrop, of Beverly, killed at Bloody Brook; and 4th, to Widow Remember Fisk, of Wenham. The maiden name of his third wife was Bethiah Rea, and she was of the same lineage as

[1] There is a tradition (how authentic, I am unable to say) that he came to this country, when a child, with his father, and that they lived awhile in Newbury.

It is supposed that his father was the "goodman Choate" mentioned, as one desiring to emigrate to this country, in a letter to John Winthrop, Jr., sent from England as early as 1633, by Rev. Henry Jacie.

my great-great-grandmother Prince, whose maiden name was Sarah Rea. As I trace the relationship, the Bethiah mentioned was her aunt.

William Goodhue died at the age of eighty-five, in 1699 or 1700, leaving two sons, William and Joseph, and a daughter Mary, who married Thomas Giddings. These children were all by his first wife.

The Essex Goodhues.—The son William settled in Chebacco, and became deacon of the church here. He married Hannah, daughter of Rev. Francis Dane, of Andover, and granddaughter of John Dane, Sr., who came from England with his sons, John, Jr., and Francis. John Dane, Sr., was an ancestor of the celebrated Nathan Dane: so that all the descendants of William Goodhue, of Essex, are of the same lineage as that of the distinguished jurist. William and Hannah (Dane) Goodhue had five sons and five daughters. The fourth son, Francis, graduated at Harvard College, and became a clergyman, settling at Jamaica, L. I. He died suddenly in 1707, while on a journey, at the age of thirty-five.

This was the William Goodhue who was fined and imprisoned by Governor Andros, with his pastor, Rev. John Wise, and others. Felt, a conscientious and generally accurate historian, is in error in supposing that it was his father, of Ipswich, who was thus persecuted.

This William Goodhue, jr., was selectman, and for several years member of the General Court. He was also a military captain. He lived on what is now the Marshall Farm, on Western Avenue, at the bend of the road, where he died in 1712. His son John lived till 1773, when he was eighty-seven years and five months old.

THE STORY FAMILY.—From all that I have discovered, by such records as I could obtain access to, I believe that all the families of the name of Story in Essex descended from William Story, who came, in 1637, from Norwich, England, the same place from which came the first Burnhams.

Some have supposed that a portion of the Story residents of this place descended from Andrew Story, the early immigrant, who served in the Pequot War. This I think, is a mistake. I do not find any proof that he lived here for any length of time, if at all, after the close of his service in that conflict. I can find no record of his having had a family here, nor of his having been married. It is said that he went to Connecticut, and never returned. Though he had a land-grant for his military service, I have seen no record that he took up or improved any land hereabout.

William Story is thought by some to have been a brother of the first Andrew mentioned. Although this is not impossible, I have not found any positive evidence to that effect in any early record. He came to this country about two years after the arrival of Andrew.

Of William Story the record is clear that he married Sarah Foster, daughter of Reginald Foster, who came to Ipswich in 1638, one year after he himself had arrived. He was the first ancestor, in this country, of the distinguished Judge Story. Reginald Foster was a lineal ancestor of Miriam Foster, mother of Rufus and David Choate.

William Story was an extensive land-owner in Chebacco. He bought of Henry Archer, of Ipswich, a farm of ninety acres "beyond Chebacco Falls." The deed of conveyance was signed by said Archer and his wife, Elizabeth, May 10, 1649. This probably included what is now known as the farm of the late Captain David Low. He also owned land elsewhere in this place, bounded in part by Belcher's Lane, embracing the premises of the late Adoniram Story, and extending to the river.

He had three sons, Andrew, Seth and William, who are mentioned in his will; in which it is said that the price for which William sold to Andrew one-half of Perley's meadow, was a just price.

He is believed by some of his descendants to have built the first saw-mill in Chebacco, in 1656, which is said to have been the first erected anywhere within the town of Ipswich. Two circumstances render this probable: he was by trade a carpenter, and he had bought the farm "beyond the Falls" seven years before that date.

ADDISON COGSWELL, a lineal descendant in the 8th generation from John Cogswell, the first permanent settler of Essex, is a son of William and Lucy (Choate) Cogswell, was born November 11, 1815, in Essex, Mass., and married Miss Elvira Dike, of Montague, Mass., January 6, 1886.

He is by occupation a farmer, and resides in Essex. His educational opportunities were limited to about twelve weeks annually in a district school, in which reading, writing, arithmetic and a partial initiation in grammar and natural philosophy, constituted the curriculum.

He has a taste for reading, with a preference for the solid rather than for the lighter kinds, and is a man of much and varied information, being specially well posted upon subjects of public interest.

Prompted by the spirit of business enterprise and a desire to promote the prosperity and welfare of the town and its people, he was led to associate himself with others like-minded in building an extensive saw and planing-mill,—which, so far, has not proved as successful as was desired. Mr. Moses Knowlton, a substantial and reliable citizen, joined with him in building an extensive shoe-factory, at great cost and risk, for the purpose of introducing the shoe-business into the town. This has met with such a measure of success as abundantly compensates for the risk and anxiety incurred in its introduction.

His energy and perseverance have since been directed through another channel, in part auxiliary to the enterprise last-mentioned, but also of much wider scope in the public benefit conferred. Through his



Addison Cogswell

personal exertions and the investment of his capital, in association with others who joined earnestly in the movement, the track of the Essex Branch Railroad, which for fifteen years has been such an advantage to the town as a whole, has been extended to the village on the south side of the river, its terminus being near the shoe-factory,—thus affording additional accommodation to the people residing in that locality and beyond it.

One trait in Mr. Cogswell's character may have been inherited from an ancestress (Mrs. Thomas Varney), who, in 1679, in common with others, desired the presence and privileges of a place of public worship in this parish or precinct. But their own church in Ipswich and the Great Court at Boston forbade them to do so preposterous a thing as to rear a meeting-house. They, however, having the fear of God, but not of Ipswich and the Great Court, before their eyes, did deliberately and with pertinacious audacity raise the First Church in Essex. This honored ancestress was arrested, and charged with, and tried for, contempt of great and mighty powers. She was doomed to acknowledge this, her great sin. Having secured the church, and there being no occasion for another, she very humbly promised to "doe soe no more."

This possibly inherited characteristic has manifested itself in his steadfast adhesion to whatever he believes to be right and just, in all matters of either public or private concern, wherein anything like principle seems to him to be involved, whatever may be the opinions or conclusions of others.

He is a gentleman of spotless integrity and personal honor, who has the respect aud confidence of the entire community, and to whom may be truthfully applied the proverbial declaration that his word is as good as his bond.

His training and reading, together with his own reflections, have led to convictions upon theological subjects, which are decidedly of the Calvinistic type. The lasting influence of early training, in the older mode, and perhaps also the force of heredity, may be seen, on reading the following, which is one of Mr. Cogswell's criticisms:

"OUR MOTTOES.

"One of our mottoes, 'Simply to Thy Cross I Cling,' is a simple, concise and comprehensive sentence, representing one of our oldest and best known hymns. Adopting the motto is adopting the hymn. Its words and its imageries are the forms which Christian thought has taken. It is a Christian classic. It is founded on the Rock of Ages, and will endure.

"The motto is the hymn condensed; the amplification of the motto is in the hymn. It is the prayer of a suppliant; leprous sin has made him an outcast from his Father's house and is consuming his life;—to remain as he is, is death. To effect his own cure, he is helpless. To purchase healing, his zeal and tears are valueless. He despairs of help, save from One. He sees above him *the* Cross, and on it One who points him to the Rock on which he may rest, to the Cleft in which he may hide from the Avenger, to the blood which will cleanse him, and to the robe which will clothe him for, and to the Dayman who will present him in, his Father's presence; and to *the* Cross he clings with all the energy that a dread of death and a hope of life can awaken.

"It is an effective educator. Pliny relates that 'the Christians were accustomed to meet on a stated day, and to repeat among themselves a hymn to Christ, as to a God.' All who accept and repeat this, will receive the appellation of Christian, and will be known to address Christ as God. It will carry an adequate knowledge of Him wherever it goes. He is its Alpha and Omega. Its doctrines are the mold in which Christian character is formed, and it will form a character which will be recognized as a likeness of Him.

"In juxtaposition to this, we have another, 'Nearer my God to Thee.' This is also a concise sentence, representing another hymn—one of a more modern date. It is a candidate for, and is receiving much favor. It is a religious, not a Christian hymn. To adopt this motto is to adopt its related hymn. It is the prayer of an aspirant. He is not an outcast. He needs no Cleft to hide him from the Avenger. He has no leprous disqualifications requiring costly blood. It is not death to remain as he is,—he needs no mediator; he is in favor with God, and is raising himself to a closer fellowship, but is overweighted with some goodly but over-loved object, which 'e'en though it be a cross' to do so, he lays aside; and it becomes a stepping-stone, on which he raises himself to that desired nearness. It is full of negations. Had the early Christians repeated this, and only this, Pliny, with all his acumen, would not have discovered that they addressed Christ as God, and it would have been a misnomer to have given them the appellation of Christian. It does not extend a knowledge of Him. It does not notice Him, either expressly or impliedly, or even emblematically. The lithographer has shown his skill in setting forth the spirit of each hymn, by giving the emblem of the Cross on the one, and withholding it from the other. Its doctrines will more deeply mould every feature of a self-righteous character, and self-identification will be more firmly assured. Used in public worship, it passes by Him, who alone can present, and from whom alone the Father will receive, our service—the only dayman allowed between God and us. 'Ye would see Jesus, look not for Him here—we know not where it has laid Him.'

"Both mottoes incite the aspiration of nearness to God, but here their likeness ends; they seek it in different ways. The first points to, and is inseparably associated with, the Living Way; the other points to, and is inseparably associated with, another way. One is drawn heavenward by Him who is lifted up. The other, self-reliantly, raises himself thitherward. The one enters by the Door; the other climbs up another way. In one, the name of Jesus is above every name, and definitives and pronominals relating to Him find a ready welcome. It is *The* or *Thy Cross*. In the other, there is no beauty in Him that he should be desired, and no room for such relatives. It is *a* cross. Paul exulted joyfully in *the* Cross, as the most glorious of ways. The other reluctantly accepts the most unwelcome of ways, 'e'en a cross.'

"Here is an anomaly:—the devout accept the first, as the way, and the only way, that God hath appointed, and yet are receiving and teaching another way—one that God hath not cast up. On hearing the aspiration, 'Nearer my God to Thee,' they are moved by its perfect accord with their own, and with minds filled with the vivid imageries of the first, pointing to Him who is the Way, we are led in spirit by one, and in word by the other;—the first is the cause, the other is the occasion, of the benefit received.

"We sing it heartily and with great satisfaction, and feel that we have made one of our most acceptable approaches to God,—shall we approach a little nearer, and ask Him, who alone can, to present, for us, this our song, in which we have studiously ignored Him? Does He, who hangs on the Cross, notice if the suppliant, who is clinging to its foot, look wistfully on any other cross?

"We sing with the spirit, and do well,—let us sing with the understanding, which is still better. The suppliant, saved, will ascribe the whiteness of his robe to blood found in the Cross. The aspirant, saved, will owe the brightness of his array to his having found and passed through the fountain opened in the Cross.

"Can this good motto be dissociated from a false way? Is it misleading? Are all provided with knowledge to supply its defects? Can we follow this, and yet be loyal to the first? Can mottoes so diverse be congruous in the same temple? Or songs so diverse be appropriate to offer on the same altar? If one offers sacred, does not the other offer strange, fire? With the pointers in our school-rooms guiding different ways, will it be a surprise, if some of us are found lisping in the speech of Ashdod?"[1]

The writer of the foregoing criticism is likewise the author of a "Lay Sermon," upon the topic of "Christian Perfection," the doctrine of which is in general

[1] Nehemiah xiii. 24.

accord with the sentiments of the preceding article, and which has been printed and issued in pamphlet form.

DESCRIPTION OF CONOMO POINT.—This attractive summer-resort was thus graphically and facetiously described by Mr. Cogswell, in a paper read at a public entertainment given on the occasion of the enlargement of the facilities of a manufacturing enterprise of the town:

"Parties have built and are occupying a cluster of cottages on a pleasant plateau on the south bank of the Essex River, in the town of Essex. On the opposite side of the river Cross' Island rises to the height of some one hundred feet—on this shore is another cluster of cottages. The river, in its passage between these villages, is compressed within narrow limits by the rocky and jagged banks, and given a wild and rapid current, which is broken into eddies and whirlpools of cavernous and unknown depths, and is the fit abode of mermaids and mermen, of elves and sprites, and all singular genii who delight in weird abodes. Here they must have held high carnival long before its mysteries were known to the lately arrived Saxon.

"On dark evenings, when the cottages on each side are lighted, and other lights, whether carried by jack or sprites or boatmen, are flitting across the river, the whole scene becomes too mysterious to be visited by young people who have precocious imaginations, unless they are attended by some who are mature in judgment and imagination."

MISCELLANEOUS.—The winter of 1686 was so intensely cold that several cattle in this place were frozen to death.

Houses in this place were not painted, either outside or within, until a hundred years after the first settlement in 1634.

A remarkable instance of musical precocity occurred in this town in 1859, when a child of scarcely three years of age (Martha S. P. Story, now the wife of Dr. Fancher, of Middletown, N. Y.) commenced playing, without tuition, upon a melodeon, producing, not only the air of a tune, but its accompaniment, in correct time. She played before public audiences in several towns of the county, and in Boston. The occurrence was phenomenal, and has never been explained.

Mrs. Mary H. Andrews, an accomplished and successful teacher, was the first lady in the town, if not the first in the county, chosen Superintendent of Schools or a member of the school committee.

Essex Brass Band.—This organization of twenty performers has won encomiums from the general public and the favorable judgment of those claiming to be connoisseurs and critics in music.

Triplets.—Israel Andrews and his sister, Mrs. Almira Holmes, residents of Essex, and their sister, Mrs. Susan Mears, a resident of Manchester, are the only triplets ever born in Essex, so far as is now known. The fifty-fifth anniversary of their birthday was commemorated by a social gathering at the house of Mr. Andrews, in this town, in the autumn of 1887.

RETROSPECTIVE.—How the tableau has changed since, in blossoming May, in the memorable year 1849, I came here to reside, and sat in my little study in the southeast chamber of the residence of the late Capt. Moses Andrews, on Western Avenue; while through the golden summer the birds came and sang in the branches that embowered the window; and during that romantic Presidential campaign, when the rival banners of Harrison and Van Buren waved in the breeze, the warbling of the robins and bobolinks would occasionally intermingle with the voice of my neighbor across the way, as he hailed the occupant of some passing vehicle, and energetically discussed with him the uppermost topics. I hear again, in fancy, the words "tariff," "bank," "Mr. Clay," "Mr. Calhoun." And how the sign on the gate, "I forbid all persons passing over my land," seemed to frown on me, until the genial proprietor signified that I might pass over it whenever I pleased so to do. He passed over it, for the last time, a long, long while ago.

The mystic shuttle of Time can weave no veil that will hide from my retrospective vision that radiant dawn of early manhood. The faces of those I knew, —the dear old friends who vanished year by year, as one after another they stepped into the silent, phantom procession that never halts in its march,—I seem to see them again beaming upon me, as if in placid benediction from some blessed region. And so now I look with yearning gaze through the vista of the intervening years at those early scenes, like one who from a winding and sometimes rugged road has glimpses of a charming landscape in a peaceful valley.

CHAPTER XCVIII.

HAMILTON.

BY DANIEL E. SAFFORD.

HAMILTON is a pleasant farming town situated about twenty-two miles north of Boston, in the eastern part of Essex County. It is near enough to the ocean to hear the roar of the surf, while it is nowhere touched by its waters. The landscape combines the elements of diversified and attractive scenery—the hill and valley, the meadow and stream, the forest and lake. The old Eastern stage road winds through the centre of the town. This road, long called the Bay road, because leading to Boston, was laid out in 1641, through the farm of Matthew and John Whipple, who were large land-owners in the Hamlet. The principal village lies along this street. The town has for neighbors Ipswich on the north, Essex on the east, Manchester and Wenham on the south and southwest, and Topsfield on the west. The Ipswich River forms in part the northwestern boundary line on Topsfield, and the northeastern on Ipswich. The Miles River rises in Wenham Lake, enters Hamilton on the southern boundary, and running northeasterly, crosses the line into Ipswich, and empties its shallow and sluggish waters into Ipswich River. The highest elevation is Brown's Hill, situated in the southeastern part of the town. The other

prominent hills are the Sagamore, at the northeast, and Vineyard, in the west. A recent visitor to the town describes Brown's Hill as "A beautiful, rounded eminence, from which may be seen the windings of Miles River, and the well-shaded village of Hamilton on the north; the Chebacco Pond and the dense forests of Essex and Manchester, and the ocean on the east; the spires of Marblehead on the south; and a broad sweep of land, with the State Insane Asylum, on the west. This hill and the neighboring ponds were favorite resorts of the red men." A charming feature of the scenery is formed by a cluster of ponds in the southeastern corner of the town. Chebacco Pond, a large sheet of water, lying partly in Essex, and Beck's Pond, Round Pond and Gravelly Pond, which are wholly within the limits of Hamilton. The area of the town is nine thousand four hundred and forty acres, of which three hundred and fifty-five are under water. Its greatest length from east to west is five and one-half miles, and its mean length three and three-quarters; its greatest breadth from north to south is three and three-eighths miles, and the mean breadth three miles. The soil is generally loamy and gravelly. In the southwestern corner lies an extensive tract of swamp land, called Wenham Swamp.

Hamilton was originally included in the ancient town of Ipswich and was known as the Hamlet; it does not appear when the earliest settlement was made, but land within its limits was granted to Matthew Whipple in 1638, and, as before mentioned, the old stage road was laid out through his and his brother's land in 1641, and his house was sold, July 10, 1647, to John Annable, tailor. It was incorporated as a separate municipality in 1793. This division was accomplished after several attempts and long delays.

The divisionists of that day, however, had a most persistent and able leader in Rev. Dr. Cutler, the second pastor of the Hamlet Church, who in this achievement displayed the skill which had distinguished him in a larger enterprise in 1787, in his negotiations with the Continental Congress, which is referred to later in this history. The name of Hamilton was selected by Dr. Cutler, who was a stanch Federalist, in honor of the statesman whose policy he so much admired. Fifty years later, on the incorporation of a new town, the representative of Hamilton then in the Legislature was approached by agents of the new town, which coveted the honored name, to negotiate for purchasing it; the proposals were promptly declined. But long before this complete separation from Ipswich, a movement was made in 1712, by the residents of the Hamlet, so called, to be set off as a separate parish. The citizens and estates of the Hamlet were then a part of the territorial First Parish of Ipswich, and taxable for the support of the ministry there, of which the Revs. John Rogers (2d) and Jabez Fitch were the incumbents. The following petition was prepared and presented to the town:

"To the Inhabitants of Ipswich now Assembled. May 1, 1712. The humble petition of us whose names are hereunto subscribed humbly showeth, That wbereas by God's providence our habitations are so farr Distant from ye publyk Worship of God in said Towne yt above fourty families, tho with Great Difficulty repair to Wenham to Worship God There where wee have been att Great Charge to Build, but our Numbers being greatly Encreased The Roome will not Containe us without some Inlargement & ye burden of Conveying our ffamilies to said house so Intolerable yt we cannot rest quiet, but if possible we might be silent were not ye circumstances of our condition so hard to bear. yrfore after twice seven years past wee Doe humbly renew or petition to you who are our fathers, yt you would consider ye circumstances of our condition, and find out some way for us to have ye word of God preached among us, or freely sett us off to be a precinct by ourselves, & free us from paying to ye ministry with you, yt so we may with Greater comfort, & more generally attend ye publick worshipp of God in ye midst of or Hamlett yt God may be glorified & or Souls edifyed, so hoping you will grant us o'r request Wee remaine yore humble petitioners, viz:

"Matthew Whipple, sen.	Richd Walker
Jno: Whipple, jun'r	Sam'll Browne
Matt: Whipple, jr	Matt: Whipple, 4th
Isaac Ringe	Jno Loverill
William Moulton	Nicholas Williams
James Whipple	Daniel Killim, sen.
Jona Whipple	Thomas Browne
Jno Deane	John Gillbert
Daniel Deane	William Quarles.
Nath'l Deane	Richard Dodge
Edmund Pottar	Moses Welch
Nath'l Dike	Moses Stevens
James Browne	Richard Roberds
Jacob Browne	John Perkins
Parker Dodge	James Poland
Jno Walker	Willm Maxul
Jno Whipple	Jon Piper
Jno: Annable	Natb'l Pottar
Mattw Annable	Jno: Hubbard
Jno Annable, Ju'r	Abra. Tilton
Jno Rockwell	Bernard Thorne
Matt Whipple, 3d	John Thorne
Antho Dike	Timo. Knowlton
Christo'r Bedlock	Isaac Giddings
Samuel Poland	Benj. & Samll Knowlton
Daniel Gilbert	Jno & Thos Knowlton
Thomas Durgy	John Hooker
Samuel Tilton	Matthew Annable
James ffrow?	Jno Davis jr.
Charles Tuttle	Wm Davison
Nath'll Browne	Joseph Browne."

This petition was granted by the inhabitants of Ipswich at a legal meeting held May 22, 1712, upon the recommendation of a committee which had been chosen to treat with their neighbors of the Hamlet. This committee say that they consider the request reasonable, if their brethren of the Hamlet consider that they are able to go through so expensive an undertaking, when the public burdens lay so heavy upon them, and they recommend that the citizens of the Hamlet be freed from all further charges for the support of the present ministers of Ipswich, when they shall have erected a meeting-house and called an orthodox minister to preach the Gospel to them; the committee, however, somewhat plaintively present the consideration that the old parish has two ministers to support, and that two have been maintained from the foundation of the town, and they express the hope "that these will continue to be to the end of

the world, and if it should ever be otherwise it will be a shameful degeneracy from the piety of our ancestors." Upon this recommendation it was voted to grant the request for a separate precinct or parish. On the 21st day of October following, a meeting of the inhabitants of Ipswich belonging to the Hamlet was held at the house of Matthew Whipple, Quarto; Cornet Whipple was chosen moderator, and it was voted that a "meeting-house be built and finished at or before the next November come twelve months," and a committee consisting of Cornet Whipple, Carpenter Knowlton, Mr. Nathaniel Brown, Mr. Isaac Ringe, Mr. John Whipple, Sergt. Gilbert, Mr. Thomas Brown, Mr. Samuel Poland and Mr. Matthew Whipple, tailor, were chosen for the carrying out said work and to take an account of every man's labor. At a session of the Great and General Court or Assembly of her Majesty's Provinces of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, held at Boston, October 14, 1713, upon the reading of the petition of Capt. Matthew Whipple and others of the Hamlet, it was ordered that according to a vote of the town of Ipswich they be made and allowed to be a distinct and separate precinct to be established as follows, namely: "all the Inhabitants of the Hamlet, so called, with all the inhabitants and lands lying within the compass of these farms, vs. Annable farm and Jacob's farm, and Abbott farm, Capt. Whipple's farm, the farm of Joseph Whipple, dec'd; Lovering's farm, from thence, bounding on Col. Saltonstall's farm exclusively, and all the farms lying upon Wenham bounds, and all the land and Inhabitants lying in Chebacco, that are not enclosed in Chebacco precinct."

Subsequently, on December 3, 1715, upon the petition of Matthew Whipple, John Whipple and others, to the General Court, the Saltonstall farm and other neighboring inhabitants, who had so petitioned, were set off to the new precinct.

In 1719, a dispute having arisen between the Hamlet and Chebacco Parish in regard to Knight's farm, and Knowlton and Buckman farms, the matter in dispute was referred to Hon. Addington Davenport, Samuel Sewell and John Clark, Esqs., who reported that it was their opinion that Thomas Knowlton and Jeremiah Buckman should continue to the Hamlet, as they have already been set off with their friends of Knight's farm by the General Court in the year 1718, and be freed from any further charge at Chebacco, each of the parties to bear their own charges. This report was confirmed in council, July 22, 1720.

The meeting-house was built according to the vote of October 21, 1712, on the site of the present house. Its dimensions were fifty feet in length, thirty-eight in width and twenty stud; the windows were small, with diamond shaped panes; the rafters were not covered with plaster, so that the swallows, in course of time, literally built their nests among them, and kept up a lively twitter during divine service. This house stood until 1762, when it was taken down to give place to its successor; this was built mainly by contributions of the proprietors, varying from the largest, that of Matthew Whipple, Sr., of £26 4*s.* 7*d.*, to that made by John Stockwell, of 1*s.* 3*d.* Joseph Whipple, joiner, gave £8 in making the pulpit.

Rev. Mr. Gerrish, minister of Wenham, contributed five pounds. The rights to build pews were assigned by a committee of the parish, and each person to whom such assignment was made was to build his own pew. These rights were granted under the restriction that no owner of a pew should sell without leave of a majority of the proprietors. There were separate seats for men and women below and separate galleries. Seaters were chosen annually at the parish meeting, who were to assign seats for the year, and none were permitted to intrude into other seats. In 1730, probably in consequence of some laxity in this respect, it was voted "That if any person belonging to the precinct shall at any time presume or make it a practice to sit in time of worship in the meeting-house, in any other seat than he or they shall be duly directed by proper seaters, chosen for such purpose, they shall be proceeded with as disorderly in God's house, and shall suffer the penalty as such offender or offenders." In 1713 Rev. Samuel Wigglesworth was unanimously invited to be the minister of the parish, and in May, 1714, he was authorized to build a house on the land then in possession of John Walker, and it was voted to defend Mr. Wigglesworth's title, if the person who was the heir to the land should molest him, and to make good to him any damage he should sustain. This lot of land was adjoining the meeting-house, and this and the house built by Mr. Wigglesworth is undoubtedly that afterwards owned by Rev. Dr. Cutler and Rev. Mr. Felt, and now, by Mrs. Francis Dane. In 1720 seven acres lying on the main road southerly of Mr. Wigglesworth's house-lot were bought for a parsonage lot; this was retained until 1839, when it was divided into house-lots and sold, excepting that upon which the present parsonage stands. Mr. Wigglesworth's salary was fixed at sixty pounds for the first year, sixty-five pounds for the second and seventy pounds for the third; the salary was to be paid two-thirds money and one-third grain. He was also to receive twenty cords of wood and one hundred pounds towards building his house. In 1741 the custom was adopted of designating at the annual meetings eight parishioners, who should furnish the twenty cords of wood, each providing two and a half cords. The parish also took charge of schools, and in 1730 voted to build a school-house and set it up in the centre of the parish as near as may be, and that a school for writing and reading be kept in the centre of the parish, as long as the proportion of the one hundred pounds or one hundred and twelve pounds raised by the town, for the use of schools which belong to the parish, will maintain it. On the 20th of October of that year it

was voted that Mr. Joseph Secomb keep a school for four months, and Captain Matthew Whipple, Mr. Thomas Brown and Deacon Matthew Whipple were chosen the first school committee and authorized to collect the school money and pay the first teacher. This seems to be the beginning of public schools in the Hamlet. In 1748 the parish voted to raise, by taxation, fifty pounds, old tenor, and to choose a committee "to agree with a teacher to keep school for as long a time as to spend fifty pounds, old tenor." In the same year provision was made for a school in the north part of the Hamlet. Nine years later an appropriation was made for a school in the west part, by a vote November 9, 1757, "That the west part of the Hamlet begin to keep a school November 21, 1757, and keep it six weeks, and that they have their proportional part of the money for said school." Captain John Whipple (3d), Adam Brown and Joseph Bolles were chosen a committee to regulate schools, and it was voted that the scholars find wood and pay the schoolmaster's board. At this period in the history of the Hamlet schools, it was usually provided that each scholar should furnish one foot of wood within a reasonable time from the beginning of the school or be debarred from its privileges.

The subject of building a new meeting-house began to be agitated in 1761, and the following year the new house was built. It was sixty feet in length, forty-four feet in width, and twenty-six feet stud, and Dr. Cutler says, in his sermon referred to hereafter, "It has been admired for its just proportions and pleasing appearance." The house, with the exception of the pews, was finished by the parish. A committee was chosen to value the pew room, and determine the size of the pews; these were to be built by the purchasers of sites, and to be of one fashion. These rights to build were sold at "publick vendue" October 28, 1763, Deacon John Patch being "vendue master." Until 1801 there were two long rows of seats on the right and left sides of the aisle in front of the pulpit; after that this space was taken up by the square pews. This house stood with the side fronting the street, the front door opening directly into the house; there were porches on the northerly and southerly ends, the tower and steeple being on the southerly end. The galleries were on the front side and on each end. In 1764 provision was made for seating the choir, by a vote that "any young men, that are good singers, sett in the men's sixth seat below, during the Parish pleasure." The pulpit was high, and overhung by the sounding-board; in front was the deacon's seat, occupied by Deacons Nathaniel Whipple and John Patch. Deacon Patch sat at the door, and Deacon Whipple at the farther end, wearing a full-bottomed wig. Deacon Patch used to interline the hymn, and Deacon Whipple set the hymn or psalm. No provision was made for heating the house until 1824, when box stoves were set up. The pews were square, with seats on the side, hung on hinges, so that they could be turned up during prayer, and at the close would come down with a lively clatter. Chairs were placed in the centre of the pews for the elderly occupants, and considerable sensation was created by one good lady, who consulted her comfort so much as to take a rocking-chair into her pew.

The mode of lighting for evening meetings, which were occasionally held, according to the usual notification at "early candle light," was by candles, which members of the congregation would bring and set up in tin sconces hung in the pews.

The year 1768 was memorable in the annals of the Hamlet for the death of its pastor, Rev. Samuel Wigglesworth. He began his ministry with the organization of the church, in 1714, and continued in his office fifty-four years; he was able to discharge his duties as preacher and pastor nearly to the close of his life. He was the son of Rev. Michael Wigglesworth, author of the somewhat noted poem, "The Day of Doom," and was born in Malden February 4, 1688. He was graduated at Harvard College in 1707. He first studied medicine, and came to the Hamlet in March, 1710, to practice that profession, and remained until December 29th of that year, when he returned to his native place, took a school and began the study of divinity. In 1714 he returned to the Hamlet, prepared for his new profession and, after preaching some months, was ordained over the newly organized Third Church of Ipswich, in the Hamlet, October 27, 1714. That he was diligent and faithful in his duties may be inferred from his long pastorate. He was somewhat afflicted by bodily infirmity, so that at times he needed assistance in his work, and as early as 1724 the parish voted to pay whoever should preach for him one pound for every day's preaching; but still it was said of him that he preached long enough to wear out one meeting-house and have another built for him.

His successor, Rev. Dr. Cutler, in his century discourse, preached October 27, 1814, on the one hundredth anniversary of the church, says of him: "That he was possessed of very respectable talents—in his sentiments Calvinistical—in the strain of his preaching, evangelical, instructive and practical. Solemn and unaffected in his manner, he commanded attention and supported the character of an able and sound divine, amiable and exemplary—respected and beloved, he filled up a long, peaceable and useful ministry."

In his private intercourse he was accessible and kind in manner, and instructive in conversation. In personal appearance he was small in stature, of light complexion and alert in his movements. His voice was clear, though not strong, but he spoke with such earnestness as to command attention. His intellectual ability was above the average standard. He was reputed to be especially well versed in ecclesiastical matters, and, in consequence, his assistance and

counsel were often sought by other churches in the settlement of their difficulties; and he was also prompt in the painful duty of discipline in his own. During his ministry very large additions were made to his church, particularly after the great earthquake in 1727, which occurred on Sunday evening, October 27th. The next Wednesday was observed as a day of humiliation and prayer, and an appropriate sermon was preached by Mr. Wigglesworth, which, at the request of his people, was published.

During the year following about one hundred were added to the church. In 1744 an earthquake took place on Sabbath afternoon during service; the audience were greatly alarmed; Mr. Wigglesworth endeavored to calm them, and remarked, "There can be no better place for us to die in than the house of God." Several of his discourses were published,—in 1733 an election sermon preached before the Legislature on the necessity of a general reform in morals and piety; in 1751 a discourse before the convention of Congregational ministers of Massachusetts; in 1755 two sermons to his parishioners during the French and Indian War; in 1760 the Dudleian lecture.

He showed himself ready to keep pace with the march of improvement by being one of the first to purchase a chaise; this was in 1753.

He was married, June 30, 1715, to Mary, daughter of John Brintnal, of Winnissimmet (now Chelsea); she died June 6, 1723. Their children were Mary, Michael, Martha and Phebe. March 12, 1730, he married Martha, daughter of Rev. Mr. Brown, of Reading; she survived him, and died at Newburyport, 1784, aged 89. Their children were Sarah, Phebe, Samuel, Katharine, Elizabeth, Edward, John, Abigail and William. Of his thirteen children, four sons and four daughters survived him. He died September 3, 1768; on the 6th the parish voted to bear the charge of his burial, to build a brick grave, to give eight pounds to Madame Wigglesworth, and to provide seven gold rings, six for the bearers and one for Rev. Mr. Hopkins, who was then preaching for them, and eighteen pairs of men's white gloves, presumably for the attending ministers. Deacons Patch and Whipple and John Hubbard were chosen a committee to have charge of the funeral. He was buried in the cemetery opposite the meeting-house. The inscription on his monument is:

"In memory of
the venerable and beloved minister of Christ,
THE REV. SAMUEL WIGGLESWORTH,
Pastor of the [illegible] church in Ipswich, who departed this life Sept. 3d, 1768, in the [illegible] year of his age, and the 54th year of his ministry. 'And Samuel said to the people, Fear not, for the Lord will not forsake his people for his great name's sake. Only fear the Lord and serve him in truth with all your heart.'"

After the death of Mr. Wigglesworth, Revs. Messrs. Hopkins, Brigham and Searl, successively declined the invitation of the parish to settle with them in the ministry. In May 1771, Mr. Manasseh Cutler accepted a call to the ministry in this Parish. He was then a young man, twenty-seven years of age, wearing a brown wig over his shorn head, in conformity to the clerical fashion of the day. He was a graduate of Yale College, of the class of 1765, and was a native of Killingly, in Connecticut. His father was a farmer, and he had himself worked on the farm, had been engaged in business, and had studied and practiced law; he had, however, for some years looked toward the ministry as possibly his life-work, and having married the daughter of Rev. Mr. Balch of Dedham, he commenced his theological studies with him in 1769. He was ordained September 11, 1771. Mr. Balch preached the ordination sermon. Mr. Cutler then began that affectionate and able ministry to the material, intellectual and spiritual wants of his people which continued for fifty-two years, and ended only at his death. The parish voted him £133, 6*s.* 8*d.* as settlement, and for salary, £85, and the use of the parsonage. He purchased the house owned by his predecessor, which he enlarged and greatly improved, leaving it at his decease, in external appearance, substantially as it is at present. In 1772, the parish voted "to sing Dr. Watts' psalms for the future."

It is an interesting item in the history of the parish, as illustrating the great depreciation of the currency in the latter years of the Revolutionary War, that at a parish meeting held November 14, 1780, a committee of five were chosen, "To calculate the amount of £85, which is the nominal sum of Mr. Cutler's salary, agreeable to y^e^ first stipulated price of articles in this State in present current money." At an adjournment of this meeting held November 28, the calculation having probably been made in the mean time, the sum of eight thousand pounds in current money was voted for his salary for that year; this vote was however reconsidered, and it was voted to raise one hundred pounds in silver for that purpose; that probably being estimated as equivalent to the amount first voted. In March 1781, it was voted that five pecks of corn per month be paid to Benjamin Ayers, for ringing the bell, and that the herbage of the burial place be let out for two bushels, three quarts and one pint of corn, it being, probably, too intricate a problem to determine these values in currency. The scarcity of West India molasses, occasioned by the war, stimulated the ingenuity of some persons in the Hamlet to provide as a substitute the juice of cornstalks, expressed from them after being ground in a mill, and then boiled down, and in 1778, a load of this was carried from the Hamlet to a Salem distillery, where it yielded the most satisfactory result in spirits.

The years 1773 and 1775, were noticeable in the annals of the parish for unusual sickness and mortality. The average mortality in the Hamlet for the twenty-one years preceding the incorporation of the town was twelve. In the year 1773, the deaths numbered twenty-nine, and in 1775, twenty-six. The

prevalent diseases were a malignant fever, afterwards known as typhus fever, and a disease which was called canker fever. In 1777, small-pox prevailed to an alarming extent; of the twenty-three deaths in that year, five were from that disease. A pest house was located in the eastern part of the parish, and a committee reported, June 30, 1777, that there were sixty-one cases. The diseases continued into the next year, and persons came from other towns to be inoculated.

At the close of the Revolutionary War, the people were so much straitened in their means that Dr. Cutler's salary was raised with difficulty, and his thoughts were turned to the West, as affording better prospects for his future, in providing support for his family. In 1786 several of the officers of the late army organized a company in Boston, called the Ohio Company, for the purchase of territory northwest of the Ohio river, for locating a permanent settlement.

This land was to be purchased with the government paper, with which the army had been paid off, and which had so depreciated in value that it was scarcely available for anything else than purchasing of the government its land. Dr. Cutler, through the influence of Major Winthrop Sargent, became a member of the company and was selected as its agent to undertake the delicate and difficult duty of negotiating with the Continental Congress for the purchase of the land; for this duty he was well equipped by his various learning and experience in agriculture, science, law, medicine and divinity, and more especially, by his tact in dealing with men, his affable manner, and great conversational ability. He had also gained a wide-spread reputation for his scientific attainments and contributions. He had already been chosen a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, and to the first volumes of the memoirs of this society, had contributed astronomical and meteorological papers; he was also a member of the Philosophical Society of Philadelphia. Possessing all these natural and acquired qualifications, and indorsed by many letters of introduction from distinguished men, he started on his mission. He left his home in his sulky, in the latter part of June, for New York, where the Continental Congress was then sitting, and reached New York, July 5, 1787, after a twelve days journey, coming in, as he writes, "by the road that enters the Bowery," putting up his horse "at the sign of the 'Plow and Harrow' in the Bowery barns." He succeeded in obtaining a contract for one million acres, at one dollar per acre, with five hundred thousand more thrown in as an allowance for bad lands and incidental charges. He also at this time rendered a greater service for the northwestern territory, then and in coming time, and for the country at large by his influence, which was powerful if not decisive in securing the passage of the clauses in the ordinance of 1787, prohibiting slavery in that territory, and providing for education. The honor of proposing the anti-slavery clause has been awarded to Nathan Dane, the eminent jurist, who was a member of this congress, but it is believed upon good evidence that his action was prompted, if not decided, by the counsel of Dr. Cutler. The Hamlet may claim further honor in connection with this ordinance, since Mr. Dane was a native of the Parish, though at this time a resident of Beverly. Dr. Andrew P. Peabody, of Harvard University, in a highly appreciative paper on Manasseh Cutler, April, 1887, says of him: "As I cannot but read our history Manasseh Cutler was the providential man who set impassable metes and bounds to the slave power. But for him American history would have taken its course in widely different channels. The free states would have made hardly a show of counterpoise to the slave states."

The next move was to provide for the territory emigrants of good New England stock. The dwellers in the Hamlet, who were near Dr. Cutler's house on a certain day in December, 1787, could have seen starting from his door a large wagon, covered with black canvass, having on its sides, in white letters, "Ohio, for Marietta on the Muskingum," and would have heard a volley fired by the armed emigrants, as a salute, as it moved off on its long journey. These emigrants numbered forty-five, from various towns, and among them, Jervis, a son of Dr. Cutler. They reached their destination in April, 1788, and commenced the first white settlement in Ohio, for Marietta. Dr. Jos. B. Felt, the historian, of Hamilton, says of the historic wagon, which so linked Hamilton with the then far west, "The use to which the wagon already spoken of was appropriated—the circumstances under which it left New England, and reached an uncultivated wilderness, where political power is soon likely to wield the destinies of our republic—have made this exploring vehicle an object of much interest among some of our literati, who have mentioned it, so that it is beginning to waken, in the mind, associations somewhat similar to those produced by the suggestions of the Mayflower, which landed the pilgrims on the shore of Plymouth."

The next summer, Dr. Cutler himself visited the new colony, starting from Hamilton in the sulky, in which he made part of the journey, but which was exchanged for the saddle at the Alleghanies; the last of the journey was made by water. He reached Marietta, August 19th, and preached the next Sabbath. He returned to the Hamlet October 15th, having formed the conclusion that it would be best for his family and himself to remain in New England. This must have been an interesting episode in the history of the Hamlet, turning as it naturally would the sympathies and interest of the people to "the Ohio," which was then the "Far West."

Early in the year 1788, the project of entire separation from Ipswich as a town was first agitated. Several meetings in reference to this matter were held before Dr. Cutler left for the west; at the first, held January

24, it was voted that "the minds of ye parish is to be set off as a town," and to choose a committee to treat with an attorney. In June it was voted to petition the General Court to be incorporated into a separate town. The matter seemed to have then been dropped, but was revived in 1791, when similar action was taken. The project was pressed the following year, and in March, 1793, Rev. Dr. Cutler, Col. Robert Dodge, Mr. Joshua Giddings and Mr. Jonathan Lamson were appointed a committee to provide for the payment of such sums of money and the fulfilment of such conditions as the General Court may impose in granting the petition, which was then before that body, for incorporating the parish and certain other persons and estates into a separate town and parish. On June 21st, 1793, the long desired event was consummated, and the Hamlet ceased to exist, and the town of Hamilton was incorporated. Dr. Cutler in his century sermon says of this: "This separation from the ancient and highly respectable town of Ipswich was a transaction in which the inhabitants of both felt themselves deeply interested. In accomplishing this desirable object, every proceeding of the people was conducted with entire unanimity. Although the pecuniary condition appeared to be large, it was promptly and cheerfully paid. And let it also be noticed, with peculiar satisfaction, that the unpleasant feeling excited in the minds of any of our brethren in Ipswich appears to have very happily subsided." The number of inhabitants at the time of incorporation is not accurately known, but probably was about the same as by the census of 1810, when it was seven hundred and eighty. This sketch gives the names of many of the principal citizens of the hamlet who gave direction to its parochial and ecclesiastical affairs; of most of them, we know nothing but their names, and can only infer their characters from the trusts confided to them. This is especially true of those who are named in the earliest records; of some, however, we have a little fuller information. Dr. Felt in his history, to show the character of the Hamlet, quotes a remonstrance of the town of Ipswich in 1679, which characterizes it as follows: "One of the principal of those hamlets lies on the road to Boston, extending almost to Wenham, wherein are several of the better rank; members of the church, persons of public place and service, as well or better landed than any, and as wise to be sensible of their difficulties which they deeply share in as others."

Among the early residents in this part of Ipswich, were Matthew Whipple, who died in 1647, to whom land was granted in the Hamlet in 1638. He held the chief offices in town. John Whipple, to whom a large grant was made in 1639, was the incumbent of various offices; was deputy to the General Court for eight years, also a deacon and ruling elder in the First Church. Richard Hubbard, who died in 1681, was a graduate of Harvard College, and held the prominent offices. He is said to have married the daughter of Governor Bradstreet. John Whipple, who died in 1683, leaving an estate appraised at £3,000, was representative to the General Court for four years, also captain of a troop, and county treasurer, as well as holding town offices. Still another John Whipple, who died in 1695, was lieutenant of a troop and deputy to the General Court for four years; his estate was valued at £1639, 16*s*. Deacon John Gilbert, the first deacon of the church, died in 1722. Among the petitioners in 1712 for the separation of the Hamlet, were four Matthew Whipples. The senior of the name was a person of substance and prominence; his wife was a granddaughter of General Dennison, and one of his grandsons, William Whipple, was signer of the Declaration of Independence, and was brigadier-general at the capture of Burgoyne. He was, by much, the largest contributor to the building of the first meeting-house, in 1713. He was a maltster and had a malt and oat mill, which is said to have been situated in rear of the present residence of Edwin A. Whipple. He gave freedom to his mulatto servant. He was a town officer, a justice of the Court of Sessions, representative in 1718, 1719, and 1729. He was an energetic and eminently useful citizen. His estate was valued at £3500. His house and lands were devised to his sons, Matthew and John. He died January 28, 1739. Major Symonds Epes, as he is called in the parish records, was a cotemporary with this Matthew Whipple, and like him was prominent in affairs. He served for several years as moderator of the parish meetings, and on the Board of Assessors, and as a member of committees. He was also colonel of a regiment, justice of the General Sessions court, and a member of the Governor's Council from 1724 to 1734, inclusive. He showed his interest in the Hamlet church by giving to it a large silver can. When he was a bachelor, of the mature age of fifty-two, he married young Mary Whipple, a girl of sixteen. He died August 30, 1741, in his seventy-ninth year. His wife survived him, and shortly after became the third wife of the Rev. Edward Holyoke, president of Harvard College; she died in Cambridge in 1790, in her ninety-second year. It is related of her, as indicative of her spirit, that in the Revolutionary War, when there was a demand for saltpetre, she was waited on to learn if she would consent that the oak wood on her farm in the Hamlet should be used for making it. She earnestly replied, "It is for liberty; take as much of the wood as you want." This was the farm now owned by George Brown. Major Epes left two minor children, Samuel and Elizabeth. He was buried in the tomb now marked by the stone monument erected by heirs of Deacon Nathaniel Whipple. The physician of the Hamlet was Dr. Elisha Whitney, who was a native of Watertown. He came to the Hamlet in 1772 and remained till 1793, when he removed to Beverly, where several

of his descendants now live. He served as a surgeon in the Revolutionary War, and during his absence Dr. Cutler, who had studied medicine, discharged the duties of a physician. Dr. Whitney took active part in parish business, as moderator of the meetings, as treasurer, and a member of the committee to visit the schools. He married Eunice Farley, of Ipswich. His house stood on the site of that now owned by D. E. Safford.

After the act of incorporation of the town of Hamilton was obtained, the first town-meeting was held for the organization of the new town August 1 1793. Deacon Nathaniel Whipple was chosen moderator; Lemuel Brown, clerk; Nathaniel Whipple, treasurer; Jonathan Lamson, Capt. Daniel Brown and Joseph Poland, Jr., selectmen. Nine hundred and ten pounds were raised to pay the town of Ipswich; and the building of a pound was provided for. At a meeting held in October, rules and regulations were adopted for the management of town affairs and the salaries of officers were fixed, which were for town clerk, six shillings; treasurer, twelve shillings; selectmen, assessors and overseers £2 14*s* At the first annual town-meeting, held March, 1794, it was voted to raise the sum of fifteen pounds for Rev. Dr. Cutler, for his services in behalf of the town at Boston, this being intended as remuneration for his services in obtaining the act of incorporation. To this vote Dr. Cutler replied:

"Gentlemen I very sensibly feel my obligation to this town for the very generous compensation they have this day voted me for the little aid I afforded in obtaining their incorporation. I beg leave to inform the town that I cannot receive from them any pecuniary reward for any services they may suppose I have rendered them; the only compensation I can desire is, that they may live in peace and unity; this will be to me an ample reward; and permit me to add, that I very sensibly feel for the inhabitants of the town under their present heavy burdens, but my earnest prayer and desire is that they may be able, through the blessing of Providence, to extricate themselves, and that their Incorporation may prove a blessing to them and their children after them. You will therefore please order that the sum voted may not be assessed.

"I am, with the most sincere affection and esteem,

"Your most humble servant,

"M. Cutler.

"To the inhabitants of Hamilton in town-meeting assembled."

A suitable committee was then chosen to thank Dr. Cutler for his services in obtaining the incorporation of the town. At this meeting Joshua Giddings was moderator, and the town officers chosen in August preceding were re-elected, except Col. Robert Dodge was chosen selectman in place of Joseph Poland, Jr. The amount which, by the terms of separation, was to be paid to Ipswich, Dr. Cutler and Col. Dodge took over in silver dollars, and made a formal tender of it to the town treasurer, which he reluctantly accepted.

After the incorporation, until 1829, the new town constituted a territorial parish, and town and parish affairs were acted on together at the town-meeting. As this history now brings us to the point, where the town and parish unite, it will be more convenient to follow along first the history of the parish and church to the present time, as distinct from those subjects which more appropriately relate to town affairs.

In 1818, the Sabbath-school was organized. Previous to that, Dr. Cutler was accustomed to catechise the children in the district schools, and as early as 1814 the girls in the congregation used to remain in the meeting-house at the close of the afternoon service, sitting in a long pew near the pulpit, and were questioned by Dr. Cutler as to the text and subject of the sermon. In May, 1818, a Miss Paget, of Charleston, S. C., who had been stopping in Beverly, came to Hamilton, and called on Mrs. Mary L. Faulkner, the wife of Dr. Faulkner, to consult with her as to the feasibility of establishing a Sabbath-school.

This was less than two years after the first Sabbath-school was established in the State, if not in the country. In October, 1816, such a school was started in Rev. Dr. Morse's Society in Charlestown. After consultation with Dr. Cutler, who excused himself from any active part in the enterprise on account of the state of his health, an arrangement was made for Miss Paget to meet several of the young ladies at Mrs. Faulkner's, where the subject was discussed. Miss Paget remained at Hamilton for a few weeks, and Mrs. Faulkner taking her with her horse and chaise, they made a thorough canvass of the town, calling at every house and urging the parishioners to send their children to the Sabbath-school. The children and young people generally, came and joined the school. It was a year or more before any man ventured into the school to render any assistance, and the duty of opening the meetings, and acting as superintendent, devolved on Mrs. Faulkner, who was, however, fully equal to the emergency. At this time no question books were used, and the exercises consisted mainly of recitation of verses from the Bible. One of the girls, Thankful Baker, was especially proficient in this exercise, and in one instance recited seventy, to the dismay of her worthy teacher.

The school, however, does not appear to have become very firmly established in Dr. Cutler's day. Dr. Cutler at this time was beginning to feel somewhat unfitted for the complete discharge of his duties by his growing infirmities. He had for many years been afflicted with the asthma. He, however, continued to preach until within a few months of his decease. It was for some time necessary to assist him into and out of the pulpit, and for him to sit in his chair while preaching. He died July 28, 1823, in the eighty-first year of his age, and the fifty-second of his ministry. Although his distinction was gained mainly by his achievements outside of his chosen profession, he was a most faithful and successful minister of the Gospel. He was a plain, earnest and practical preacher. From the nature of his mind he was indisposed to speculative or metaphysical reasoning. The propositions of his sermons were sustained

by liberal citations from the Scriptures, after the custom of the time, when preachers looked for their authority to the law and the testimony, rather than to the evolution of their "Christian consciousness." He exalted the Bible as the sure foundation of hope and belief. To quote his own words: "The Bible carries its own evidence with it. Infidelity has been met not merely with clear reasoning and strength of argument, which sophistry can always evade, but with the formidable weapon of the Bible itself—the Bible without note or comment." He was, as a pastor, genial, accessible, and sympathetic, in his intercourse with the people. He was especially interested in the schools, and frequently visited them and was always ready with a word of advice and encouragement. He received into his family and gave instruction to many boys and young men from other towns, in studies required to fit them for college, and also in navigation and mathematics, as a preparation for a business or maritime life.

In addition to his membership in the scientific societies already mentioned, he was a member of the Massachusetts Society for the Promotion of Agriculture, of the Massachusetts Historical Society, an honorary member of the Massachusetts Medical Society, president of the Bible Society of Salem and vicinity, of the American Antiquarian Society, and of the New England Linnæan Society. He received the degree of LL.D. from his *alma mater*, Yale College, in 1791.

From this summary we have evidence of the high estimate placed upon his character and services. Dr. Peabody, in the article before referred to, says of him: "For diversity of good gifts, for their efficient use, and for the variety and modes of valuable service to his country and to mankind, I doubt whether Manasseh Cutler has his equal in American history. Had he distinguished himself in any one way as he did in many ways, his would have been confessedly among the greatest names of his age. But because he belonged exclusively to no one department, he is hardly remembered in any, though in several that might be specified his inferiors have won wide and permanent renown." But notwithstanding his eminence and success in public life outside of his parish, his chief interest and joy was in the material and spiritual prosperity of his people. In some periods of his ministry large additions were made to the church. During his ministry one hundred and forty-two were admitted to membership. The deacons during this period were John Latch, Matthew Whipple, Nathaniel Whipple, and Benjamin Appleton. By a computation made by Dr. Cutler in his century discourse, which is not, however, based on any complete record, he estimated that for the first century of the existence of the church there had been, including the members at its formation, 736 communicants, 2266 baptisms, and 1196 deaths.

His theological views can perhaps be most fairly stated by a quotation from the sermon preached by Rev. Dr. Benjamin Wadsworth, of Danvers, at the funeral of Dr. Cutler, July 30, 1823. He refers to a familiar interview with Dr. Cutler a short time before his death, and says,—"To prevent a misrepresentation of his religious sentiments after his death, he particularly requested that it might be publicly announced that he bore his *dying testimony* against the modern liberal unitarian principles, which, after attending to the ablest discussions of the subject, in his judgment, he said, reduces the glorious economy of salvation by grace almost to a level with natural religion, and has a direct tendency to careless living; and that he bore the same *solemn testimony* in favor of the Calvinistical doctrines of the gospel as maintained by our pious forefathers, the early settlers of this country, specifying the depravity of human nature, the necessity of regeneration, the real divinity of Christ, the influences of the Spirit, and the perseverance of saints." This sermon was published by request of the church and congregation.

Dr. Cutler's wife was Mary, daughter of Rev. Thomas Balch, of Dedham, whom he married September 7, 1776. She died November 3, 1815, aged seventy-three. His children were Ephraim, Jervis, Mary, Charles, Lavinia, Elizabeth, and Temple. His sons, Ephraim and Jervis, became prominent citizens of Ohio. Ephraim was judge of the Court of Common Pleas, and was active in the convention that framed the Constitution of that State.

The successor of Dr. Cutler was Rev. Joseph B. Felt, who was installed over this church June 16, 1824. Rev. Samuel Gile, of Milton, preached the sermon; Rev. Wm. Cogswell, of Dedham, offered the installing prayer; Rev. Dr. Dana, of Ipswich, gave the charge to the pastor, and Rev. Eben Burgess, of Dedham, the address to the people. Mr. Felt records with satisfaction that everything was harmonious. Mr. Felt was born in Salem, December 22, 1789; was educated at Atkinson Academy, N. H., and Dartmouth College, where he was graduated in 1813. He was first settled over the Congregational Church in Sharon in 1821, from which he was dismissed in April, 1824. Like his eminent predecessor, Mr. Felt gained distinction largely outside of his chosen profession. He was enthusiastic and indefatigable in historical research, and made highly valuable contributions to local and ecclesiastical history. While he was in Hamilton, he published the "Annals of Salem," in two volumes, and the history of Ipswich, Hamilton, and Essex. After leaving Hamilton, in 1834, and removing to Boston, under an appointment from Governor Everett, he arranged and classified large numbers of State papers in the archives at the State-House, which were lying in great confusion, which made two hundred and forty-one bound volumes, chronologically arranged. Among other of his publications were "History of Massachusetts Currency," "A Memoir of Roger Conant," "The Customs of New England,"

"The Ecclesiastical History of New England," and many besides of great value as contributions to historical and antiquarian literature. He was librarian of the Massachusetts Historical Society and of the Congregational Library Association, and was president of the New England Historic Genealogical Society. In 1857 Dartmouth College conferred on him the degree of LL.D. Owing to infirm health, he was compelled to resign his pastorate here in December, 1833. While he remained in Hamilton, he was deeply interested in his duties as pastor and minister, and discharged them with conscientious fidelity. He highly regarded his profession, saying of it "that my experience can verily testify, that however subject to many and peculiar trials, yet, when heartily cherished and properly honored, it is the perennial spring of purer, more abundant, and sublimer joys than those of all other human vocations." He took, for that day, advanced ground in opposition to the social drinking customs which had prevailed here, as elsewhere, in New England, and preached and practiced total abstinence, which he regarded as essential to Christian living. He was a decided supporter of the theological doctrines of the fathers of New England, and was uncompromising in his opposition to everything which he regarded as pernicious in doctrine and practice. He undoubtedly somewhat lacked the tolerant spirit and tact in dealing with those who differed from him in opinion, which were conspicuous in his predecessor. He was very kind and courteous, as well as dignified in manner. He was a public-spirited citizen, and was sincerely desirous to promote the best interests of the community.

The town of Hamilton ought especially to honor his memory for his great service in bringing to light, and placing in accessible form the obscure facts of its history, which, but for his patient research, would have been unknown to the present generation. He was married, September 18, 1816, to Abigail Adam Shaw, who died in Boston, July 5, 1859. In June, 1861, he removed to Salem, and in 1862 was married to Mrs. Catharine B. Meacham, who survived him. He died September 8, 1869, at the age of eighty years, having been for four years incapacitated for useful labor by a paralytic attack, which he experienced in 1865. During his ministry forty-nine were admitted to the church. The Sabbath-school was revived after his settlement. Nathaniel A. Lovering was chosen superintendant and was succeeded by Dea. Ephraim Annable. In 1829, the inhabitants of the town of Hamilton, with all the lands in such town, except such inhabitants and such lands as do belong to some other parish, or religious society were incorporated as the First Congregational Parish in Hamilton, and after this, the affairs of the town and of the parish were distinct, and each corporation held its own meetings separate from the other.

The next pastor was Rev. George W. Kelly. Mr. Kelly was a native of Greenbrier County, Va., where he was born August 5, 1808; he was graduated at the Ohio University in 1830, and from Andover Seminary in 1833. He was ordained over the church, July 3, 1834. On account of enfeebled health, he resigned in March, 1850, and removed to Haverhill, where he has since resided; he was married to Miss Mary Marsh, of Haverhill, who has recently deceased.

In 1843, the old meeting-house which had stood for eighty-one years without material change since it was built in 1762, was remodeled and almost rebuilt, the frame being all of the old structure that was retained. It was turned so as to bring the southerly end to the front, to which twelve feet were added for the vestibule, and the floor of the audience-room was raised to give room for the vestry beneath. Since that time very little change has been made in the structure, except in lowering the floor of the vestry and replacing unsightly benches by settees, and in the audience-room exchanging the pulpit for the modern desk and chairs. This year, 1843, is also especially memorable in the history of the church and town for an extensive and powerful religious awakening. Early in the spring, an unusual interest was manifested in religious meetings, and while the meeting-house was being rebuilt, the services held in the school-houses were fully attended. The meeting-house was rededicated October 12, 1843. Rev. Mr. Kelly preached the sermon before a large audience, from the text, "And let them make me a sanctuary, that I may dwell among them." On the following Sunday sixty-two persons were admitted to the church, the harvest of the recent revival. One hundred and twenty-six were admitted to the church during the seventeen years of his stay here. During the fifty-two years of Dr. Cutler's ministry the additions numbered one hundred and forty-three, and during the nine years of Mr. Felt's, forty-nine. Mr. Kelly was peculiarly happy in his pastoral and social relations with church and people. He made himself the friend of all and received their friendship in return, and his removal from the town was the occasion of universal regret. In 1835 the Sabbath-school numbered fifteen teachers, one hundred and thirty-four scholars. Choate Burnham was chosen superintendant in 1848.

Rev. John H. Mordough was installed pastor, June 12, 1850, and was dismissed, April 1, 1861. During his ministry seventy-six was admitted to the church, —fifty-nine upon profession and seventeen by letter from other churches.

Rev. Frank H. Johnson, a native of Boston, graduate of Harvard College and Andover Theological Seminary, was settled October 15, 1861. In December, 1862, Mr. Johnson resigned on account of the condition of his health, and ceased to labor here January, 1863. Rev. S. F. French was ordained September 29, 1864, as successor to Mr. Johnson, who was at the same time formally dismissed. Mr. French was a native of Candia, New Hampshire, a graduate of Dartmouth College and Andover Seminary. In

the evening of October 27, 1864, the church held services commemorative of the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of its organization and passed appropriate resolutions. Addresses were made by Rev. Mr. French, the pastor, by Honorable A. W. Dodge, and D. E. Safford. The covenant was read and formally renewed by the church. During Mr. French's ministry nineteen were admitted to the church,—thirteen by letter, and six by profession. Having received a call to Tewksbury, he resigned September, 1871, and was dismissed by council October 2d. The next pastor was Rev. Calvin G. Hill, of West Medway, who was ordained September 5, 1872. Mr. Hill resigned May, 1876, having received a call to a church in Walpole. While he was pastor twenty-two were admitted to the church,—twenty on profession and two by letter. Since that date no pastor has been installed over the church and society. The acting pastors, who have been hired from year to year, have been Rev. Benson, M. Frink, Rev. Temple Cutler, a grandson of Dr. Cutler, and Rev. Edgar F. Davis, who is the present pastor. Since the resignation of Mr. Hill, thirty-two have been admitted to the church—twenty-three on profession and nine by letter. In 1873, a tasteful and commodious parsonage was built on the northerly end of the old parsonage lot. The grading and work on the cellar was largely done by volunteer labor. The cost of the house above the underpinning was two thousand six hundred and twenty-five dollars. The funds were obtained by the efforts of public-spirited and energetic ladies of the parish.

A few years after, a well was dug and a barn built. The subscriptions for building this house ranged from one dollar to three hundred dollars. Liberal subscriptions were made by some non-residents, who were interested in it from association with the town as their former home. The only bequest of money ever made to the parish or church was given by the will of Captain Isaac Knowlton. The amount of this legacy was three thousand dollars, which is to be held by trustees, and the income to be used annually for parish expenses. Captain Knowlton died November 7, 1884. He was an industrious farmer and a shrewd manager of money affairs. Having inherited some property from his father, he largely increased it by economy, industry, and thrift. He united with the church, July 4, 1858, and ever after was deeply interested in the prosperity of the religious society. His interest deepened with his advancing years and stimulated him to make this provision, that it should not sustain a loss of means by his death.

In 1883, it was found expedient to organize a new religious society, to be called the First Congregational Society, to take the place of the parish incorporated in 1829. There was great uncertainty who, if anybody, constituted its legal membership. The property of the old parish was conveyed to the new society. This action was confirmed by an act of the Legislature passed, March 31, 1884, and the parish was dissolved by the same act. A compact was formally entered into between the church and society defining their respective rights in matters in which they were mutually concerned.

A Universalist Society was organized in 1827, by Malachi Knowlton and fifteen others, which existed only for a short time.

In 1875, a building was erected in the eastern part of the town on a lot opposite the school-house, which is called the Union Chapel. It was built to meet the wants of the residents, in that neighborhood, of a convenient place for religious meetings particularly, as well as for social gatherings. It is not to be held or controlled by any particular sect.

In 1860 Revs. E. O. Haven, C. L. Eastman, I. J. P. Collyer, L. R. Thayer, and N. O. Soule, clergymen of the New England Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, with ten laymen, representing the Lynn and Boston Districts, were associated together under the title of the Asbury Camp-meeting Association, for the purpose of establishing and holding camp and other grove meetings in the town of Hamilton, under the auspices and in accordance with the usages of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and for the benefit of the churches of Lynn District, and such other churches as might hold and occupy church accommodations on the Association ground. The first camp-meeting was held in 1859. The location of the ground is in the southwestern part of the town. It was at first leased, but has since been purchased by the Association which now owns seventy-five acres of well-located land, including an extensive and beautiful hemlock and pine grove, with an abundant supply of pure water. The preacher's stand faces a gradually rising slope, well adapted to seating a large audience; surrounding this is a circle of sixty church tents. The grounds are now laid out in avenues, upon which a large number of tasteful and convenient cottages have been erected. In 1867 there were but three avenues, Fiske, Central and Pleasant, and only one shingled cottage on the grounds. Mudge Avenue was then unknown, and when Rev. A. D. Merrill built his cottage near it, at the corner of Ipswich Path, the entire background was a dense wood, almost impenetrable on account of the underbrush, and it was thought unsafe for him to be so far from the circle. In 1869 avenues were laid out and lots staked out; in 1871, three hundred and sixty-two private lots had been let, and one hundred and twenty-three cottages built. A branch of the Eastern Railroad was built to the grounds in 1870, and in 1874 twenty cottages were erected, and many enlarged and improved; at the present date four hundred and fifty-two lots are rented. In 1886 the Naumkeag Street Railway extended its track to Asbury Grove. It has now become a summer resort, and the cottages are mostly occupied during the season. The meetings are held annually in the month

of August, continuing about a week, and are largely attended. The first president of the Association was Hon. Thomas P. Richardson, of Lynn, who died in 1881. In June, 1870, a meeting of the National Camp-meeting Association was held at the grove, in charge of the Rev. Mr. Inskip. A neat and commodious chapel was erected in 1884, for the convenience of those living on the grounds, in which religious services are held during the summer. A post-office has been established at the grove, called "Asbury Grove."

The success realized by the Association in disposing of lots for cottages, has encouraged land-owners in that vicinity to undertake similar enterprises. A few years since, a Mrs. Jones bought about eight acres lying on the Topsfield Road, southerly of the camp-ground, which she inclosed and divided into avenues and lots. Nearly all the lots in this inclosure, which is called Hamilton Park, have been sold, and substantial cottages built upon them. J. P. Lovering, Esq., has sold from his land, upon the opposite side of the road, a number of lots, upon which buildings will probably be erected the coming season.

Schools.—From the incorporation to the present date, the town has maintained four ungraded schools, one in each of the four districts, designated as the North, East, South and West.

Until 1827 the school committee consisted of eight members, who were chosen annually, and intrusted with the care of the schools. After that, five were chosen as a town's committee, and four, as a prudential committee. This plan held until 1857, when the present system of choosing three, one of whom goes out of office each year, was adopted in accordance with an act of the Legislature. Until 1844, the pastor of the church was chosen chairman of the town committee. The choice of prudential committees was made by the town or delegated to the several districts as seemed expedient. This committee was usually intrusted with the authority of selecting teachers. The amount raised for the support of schools at the first town-meeting, in 1794, was £36; from 1796 to 1799, the annual appropriation was $150; 1800 to 1822, $200; 1823 to 1832, $300; 1833 to 1846, $400; in 1847, $500, from which amount the annual appropriation has been gradually increased to the present sum usually raised, of $1000. For many years, the school year was divided into winter and summer terms of twelve weeks each, for the former, males, and for the latter, females, were usually employed as teachers. In the year 1849-50 the average wages paid to the female teachers were $9.75 per month, and to the male teachers, thirty dollars per month. This system of employing male teachers for the winter and females for the summer, giving about twelve weeks in each term, continued until 1858, when the duty of contracting with teachers having been intrusted to the town committee, they decided to employ female teachers through the year, fixing their salary at five dollars per week, and thus securing thirty weeks of schooling in each district. Four graduates of the normal school were employed. The committee for that year report: "The idea of employing female teachers in our winter schools has obtained but a recent footing, and very many, perhaps a majority, do not favor it, and honestly think that it is an innovation not adapted to our situation. Others, and their number is very respectable, think that females will do as well as males, and as their services cost less, favor their employment. These two opinions must clash in this town, until experience shall settle it, either for or against the employment of females." Public opinion, on this point, continued halting and uncertain for some time, until 1880, since then female teachers have been exclusively employed. For the year ending March, 1887, the annual appropriation for schools was twelve hundred dollars, which increased by the amount received from the Massachusetts School Fund of $207.59, and the sum received from dog licenses of $242.89, gave for the support of schools for that year $1650.48, and a term of thirty-eight weeks for each school. The wages paid the teachers were thirty dollars per month during the summer, and thirty-six per month in the winter. But while the appropriation for schools has been thus increased the number of scholars has diminished, and the interest among the citizens of the town does not seem to be as general as it was fifty or sixty years ago. This may be due in part to narrowing the number of those who have a direct responsibility for the management of the schools. The effect of the policy of centralization in the direction of educational affairs, and of removing them from popular control, is illustrated on a small scale in this town. Formerly, instead of three only, nine citizens were directly charged with the care of the schools for the year, each district having at least two representatives on the board. It was also then the custom of the committee, at the beginning and close of the winter term, to officially visit each school, accompanied by others who were interested. Upon the entrance of this august body the entire school rose and remained standing until the committee were seated. The several classes were called up and examined; the writing-books, and copy-books containing arithmetical problems, were passed from hand to hand and carefully scrutinized. At the close, such members of the committee as were disposed made remarks, generally congratulatory and complimentary, though occasionally seasoned with adverse criticism. The visitors then retired, the school rising as on their entrance. The committee instead of separating at once to their homes, adjourned to the residence of one of their associates in the district, where they were entertained with liberal hospitality.

These social interviews afforded pleasant opportunities for the interchange of opinions upon the merits

of the schools, and of individual pupils. Thus each scholar felt that the eyes of the town were upon him, and that anything marked in his scholarship or conduct was a subject of general notoriety.

Some of the teachers of those days are deserving of note in this connection. Among them are Temple Cutler, a son of Dr. Cutler; Nathaniel A. Lovering, who from his long service earned the title of "Master," and whose grave and dignified demeanor is recalled with pleasure by some of his pupils still living. Azor Brown, and especially his brother, Arza Brown, who for many successive winters was master of the South School. He is well remembered for his thorough drilling in the studies then pursued. He was especially interested in penmanship, and laid great stress on the formation of a fair, legible hand, and upon a mastery of spelling and arithmetic. He was a strict disciplinarian, and was fully in accord with Solomon as to the use of the rod, which he wielded with vigor. Among other teachers of more recent date, who were successful, were William A. Brown, Drs. Daniel S. and Justin Allen, brothers, and natives of the town, and Hon. Charles A. Sayward, of Ipswich. Among the female teachers of long experience and enviable success, who have now retired from the profession, Mrs. Sophia C. Preston and Mrs. Sophia F. Whipple deserve honorable mention.

POLITICAL.—The town was incorporated about five years after the ratification of the Federal Constitution by the State of Massachusetts, and, as might be supposed from the influence which Dr. Cutler would be likely to exert, was by a large majority, if not unanimously, of the Federalist party. It has been said that Dr. Faulkner, who came here in 1800, was the first Democrat in the town. In 1796, April 25th, while the ratification of the treaty with Great Britain, which was advocated by the Federalist party, was pending in Congress, and being discussed in the House of Representatives, the town voted to present a memorial to the House of Representatives, "Praying that they would make provisions to carry the treaty with Great Britain into complete and honorable effect." In 1812, the town gave expression to its opposition to the National Administration, respecting the conduct of the war with Great Britain. It was resolved, at a legal meeting held July 1, 1812, "That the inhabitants of this town, deeply impressed with the awful prospect which duration of war with Great Britain presents to view, are ready to express with freedom and firmness their entire disapprobation of this rash and unjustifiable act of the National Government.' Also resolved unanimously, "That in the opinion of this town a war with Great Britain under existing circumstances is unjust, unnecessary and impolitic." At the Presidential election that fall, the Federalists polled one hundred and eight votes against fourteen of their opponents. In 1828 the vote for President was thirty for Adams and one for Jackson. In 1832, the Clay electors received fifty-six votes against twelve cast for the Jackson ticket. In 1836, the Democratic Presidential ticket received sixty-six votes and the Whig eighty-one. In 1840, the Whig vote was one hundred and seven; Democratic, fifty-six. In 1844, when Clay was again the Whig candidate, he received eighty-one votes, and his opponent, Polk, sixty-one. In 1848 three parties were in the field, the Whig, supporting General Taylor; the Democratic, General Cass; and the Free Soil, Martin Van Buren. Hamilton gave Taylor eighty-two, Van Buren, sixty-two, and Cass, twenty-six votes. Four years later, with substantially the same division of parties, the Whig vote was sixty-eight; Democratic, forty-six; Free Soil, thirty-five. In 1856, the Whig party, then nearly extinct, presented for its last candidate, Fillmore; the Democratic, Buchanan; and the young Republican party, just coming to the front, had nominated John C. Fremont. The vote of the town then stood for Fremont, one hundred and five; Buchanan, forty-one; Fillmore, twelve. Since that election the Republican candidates for the Presidency have received a majority of the votes, except in one instance when a plurality only was received.

The first representative chosen to the General Court from this town was Manasseh Cutler, for the year 1800. The list of those who have since been chosen representatives from Hamilton with the year of their service, is as follows: Robert Dodge, for 1801, '02, '03, '06, '08, '11, '12 and '13; John Safford, for 1809, '10 and '15; David Dodge, 1816 and 1817; Temple Cutler, 1826; Azor Brown, 1827, '28, '29 and '32; Zachariah Standley, 1833; Israel D. Brown, 1834 and 1836; William Brown, 1835; George Appleton, 1837; Allen W. Dodge, 1840 and 1841; Nehemiah Woodbury, 1842; Levi Patch, 1848; Choate Burnham, 1850; Benjamin Woodbury, 1852; William M. Smith, 1855. Mr. Smith was the last representative chosen by the voters of this town alone. The next, chosen to represent a district formed of Ipswich and Hamilton, were Daniel E. Safford, for 1861, and George Dane, for 1865. After a re-districting of the State in 1865, George B. Dodge was chosen to represent a district composed of Beverly, Manchester and Hamilton, for 1867, and Francis R. Allen, for 1873. For a district including Manchester, Hamilton, Essex and the Eighth Ward of Gloucester, there were chosen as representatives from this town, William A. Brown, for 1880, and Otis F. Brown, for 1886.

Jonathan Lamson was a delegate to the Constitutional Convention held in 1820, and Oliver S. Cressy to that held in 1853. Allen W. Dodge was elected to the State Senate for the years 1842 and 1844, and Daniel E. Safford, from the second Essex Senatorial District, for 1871 and 1872.

At the fall election in 1867, a sudden revolution in political sentiment was indicated by the vote for Governor, which stood—J. Q. Adams, Democrat, 79; A. H. Bullock, Republican, 62; whereas, the previous year, the Republican candidate, Bullock, received 73;

and the Democratic, Sweetzer, 17. This sudden change was wrought by the "P. L. L." movement, so-called.

In the town elections, party politics have not been influential in the choice of officers, who have generally been selected for personal qualifications, or upon some local issue. A notable instance to the contrary, however, occurred in 1855, when the Know-Nothing cyclone swept over the State. At the annual meeting in March of that year all the offices were filled from that party, but the following spring the town returned to its non-partisan methods. Officers found to be fitted for their duties have been re-elected, in many instances, for a succession of years. The office of Town Clerk furnishes an illustration, the incumbents of which have been Lemuel Brown, from 1793 to 1813; Azor Brown, son of Lemuel, 1814–1827; N. A. Lovering, 1828–1844; Joseph Lovering, 1845–1854; J. P. Lovering, 1855–1867, and in 1875; Isaac F. Knowlton, 1868–1874; Otis F. Brown, 1876–1887. Mr. Brown is a grandson of the first clerk.

Military.—The citizens of Hamilton, as well as of the Hamlet, have ever been ready to respond cordially and promptly to the calls that, from time to time, have been made upon their patriotism to render military service. In 1755, several of the young men of the Hamlet were enlisted for service in the French War, and upon the eve of the expedition against Crown Point, Rev. Mr. Wigglesworth delivered a discourse in presence of these soldiers. His text was in part, "And the Lord shall cause thine enemies, that rise up against thee, to be smitten before thy face; they shall come out against thee one way and flee before thee seven ways." In this discourse he predicts disastrous consequences to the colonies if the French should be successful in the impending war, warning his hearers that the victors would not be content with simply civil jurisdiction over the conquered provinces, but would divide private property as a prey, and that far worse even they would enforce their religion on their "unhappy vassals," to quote his words, "and the French being bigots to the religion of the Church of Rome, that mother of harlots, there is not the least ground to hope (in case they should prevail over us), but that they would strenuously obtrude their monstrous idolatries and detestable errors, and even enforce them upon us with fire and faggot and all the other horrible forms of persecution." Thus urged to action in defense of their homes and their religion, the soldiers of the Hamlet went forth to meet the enemy. Among these were Capt. Stephen Whipple, Benjamin Pinder, Ebenezer Porter, Joseph Whipple, Nathaniel Adams, William Poland, Stephen Brown, Stephen Lowater, Benjamin Glasier, John Baker, John Marshall, Thomas Adams, John Boynton, Antipas Dodge, John Jones, Joseph Symonds, Amos Howard and Elijah Maxey; of the last five, Amos Howard and Maxey were severely wounded, and Dodge, Jones and Symonds were killed at Lake George. In 1759, in the expedition against Canada, Capt. Stephen Whipple, of the Hamlet, was severely wounded, and his two lieutenants, Burnham and Low, of Chebacco, were mortally wounded. Robert Dodge, afterwards colonel, and Abraham Hobbs, of the Hamlet, were present at the taking of Quebec, and Hobbs heard General Wolfe say to his men when the French were near them, "Now, my boys, do your best."

In the War for Independence, the citizens of the Hamlet showed that they had not lost the courage and patriotism which were conspicuous when they came forward so readily to sustain the mother country in the French War.

When the news of the first conflict of arms at the battle of Lexington reached the Hamlet, Dr. Cutler, who was always ready for leadership, addressed the company of Minute-Men, which were already mustered here to march to the scene of conflict, and himself rode on horseback to Cambridge, in company with Mr. Willard, of Beverly, who was afterwards president of Harvard College, and reached there in time to see the enemy on their retreat to Boston. He afterwards served as chaplain in the regiment commanded by Col. Ebenezer Francis, for six months, and afterwards in Col. Titcomb's regiment at Long Island and elsewhere. Dr. Elisha Whitney, the physician of the parish, served as surgeon in the army. An interesting incident is related in the memorial of Allen W. Dodge, by Gail Hamilton, of his grandfather, Col. Robert Dodge, in connection with the breaking out of the war; it is in the words of A. W. Dodge: "My grandfather was a brave and patriotic man. He was out on duty during the whole of the War of the Revolution, leaving the farm to be managed by my grandmother and her boys. My grandfather was sowing barley on the hill when the news of the fighting reached him. He left his barley on the hill, mounted his horse, rode to the village; and though he knew not a note of martial music, he knew enough to make a noise and raise the neighbors; he seized the drum and tore up and down the silent country road, till his company was mustered, and was at Charlestown in two hours. My grandmother heard the noise of the cannon as long as she could stand it, and the next morning, alone, with horse and chaise drove across the country to Charlestown to see what had become of her husband." From these facts we can imagine somewhat of the anxious excitement which must have settled on the quiet village in those trying days, when the pastor, the physician and the young men were off at the war.

In 1775 the company of Minute-Men chose John Whipple, Jr., captain, John Thompson, second lieutenant, and Jonathan Lamson, ensign.

In 1776 Joseph Lufkin, who was in the western army, was killed by a tree, which fell on him and broke his neck while the soldiers were cutting wood preparatory to their night encampment.

Capt. John Whipple, who died May 28, 1832, at the age of eighty-nine, was very active in the struggle for independence, and at the surrender of Burgoyne, was an officer in the cavalry. In 1832 there were in town seven pensioners, who had served as soldiers in the Revolutionary War. The military spirit was kept alive in town in the early part of the present century by the organization of a military company. I find the following record of a pleasant incident in the history of the company:

"Hamilton, May 31, 1817.—On Wednesday last, the military company of Hamilton under the command of *Capt. Azor Brown*, in a neat uniform, provided at their own expense, together with the *Washington Hussars*, commanded by *Capt. Temple Cutler*, in their elegant uniform and equipments, paraded for military duty, and went through their various exercises and marches in a very handsome style. In the course of the afternoon, an elegant standard, furnished by the ladies of the town, was presented to Capt. Brown's company, by Miss Sally Roberts (afterwards Mrs. Ephraim Safford), with the following address: 'Sir, anxious to evince to the officers and soldiers of the Hamilton Infantry, the high estimation in which we hold the important service of the soldier, the Ladies of this town beg leave to communicate to them through you their high esteem of that spirit of military ardor which has prompted them thus handsomely to uniform and equip themselves. May this laudable spirit be conducive to our country's honor, while it affords to us that protection which our sex demands. And although our beloved country now rests under the blessings of the benignant smiles of peace, yet we approve of your adopting that maxim of the immortal *Washington* 'In peace prepare for war.' Accept our warmest desires for your military success, and should you be even called into the field of actual service, in defense of our country's rights, be assured our hearts shall accompany you, and our smiles greet your return. And, as a further proof of these sentiments, we present you this standard as a faint testimonial of our esteem, confident that you will defend it with your best blood, and never permit it to be soiled by the hand of an enemy without a struggle. May it never be unfurled but in the defense of the sacred cause of justice, virtue, liberty and our country.' To which the following reply was made by Ensign William Brown. 'Miss, in behalf of the company to which I belong, I accept this standard as a pledge of your esteem. Be assured we consider it highly honorable in a soldier to merit the esteem of the fair sex. It is with the greatest pleasure we contemplate supporting our country's honor, and offer him to you our protection; and though we feel ready to risk our lives in defense of our country, and esteem it our duty to follow the advice of him who was first in war, first in peace and first in the hearts of his countrymen, yet we rejoice with you in the [illegible] peace. We accept, with gratitude, your kind wishes for our military success; and whenever we may be called into the field of actual service, we trust that we shall show to you, and our beloved country, that our attachment is sincere. May we never disappoint your confidence, by deserting our posts in time of danger, but rally round this standard and pour out our blood, before it shall be abandoned. May we ever protect the fair hands that presented it, maintain our country's rights and transmit them unimpaired to posterity.'"

This company kept up its organization for about twenty years later. The last officers were Isaac Knowlton, captain; Dennison Wallis, lieutenant; and Joseph Knowlton, ensign.

On Saturday, April 18, 1861, the news of the bombardment of Fort Sumter reached the town. The spirit of patriotism, inherited from the fathers of the days of 1775 and '76, was aroused, and on April 24th, the citizens gathered on the green in front of the meeting-house, where the stars and stripes were raised on a liberty pole which had just been erected. A salute was fired and patriotic speeches were made by A. W. Dodge, D. E. Safford, B. C. Putnam of Wenham, and others.

In May, 1861, the town voted to raise the sum of one thousand dollars as a fund for the assistance of volunteers in the service of the United States, and also that each person volunteering shall receive the sum of twenty dollars as a bounty when actually enlisted, and ten dollars per month in addition to his pay from the government as long as he is engaged in such service, and also to provide for his family during said time. In August, 1862, a bounty of two hundred dollars was voted to volunteers. In July, 1864, the town voted to pay one hundred and twenty-five dollars to any one who shall enlist on the quota of the town on any call of the President after July 1, 1864, and before March 1, 1865. There were enlisted during the war seventy-five men on the quota of the town; of these, fifty-five were residents of the town and twenty non-residents.

The enrollment of the citizens of the town is as follows:

Francis W. Brown, 2d Regt.; enlisted May 15, 1861, for 3 yrs.
George W. Barker, 14th Regt.; enlisted May 15, 1861, for 3 yrs
Francis Barry, Lt. Battery; enlisted May 15, 1861, for 3 yrs.
James A. Chase, 2d Regt.; enlisted May 11, 1861, for 3 yrs.
Jos. C. Conant, 2d Regt.; enlisted May 15, 1861, for 3 yrs.
Isaac W. Brown, 31st Regt.; enlisted Dec. 8, 1861, for 3 yrs.
Isaac K. Dodge, 24th Regt.; enlisted Dec. 8, 1861, for 3 yrs.
John T. Dodge, 23d Regt.; enlisted Oct. 10, 1861, for 3 yrs.
John Brewer, 14th Regt.; enlisted July, 1861, for 3 yrs.
Thomas J. Dodge, 14th Regt.; enlisted Jan., 1862, for 3 yrs.
George W. Dodge, enlisted Oct. 30, 1861, for 3 yrs.
Richard Foss, 17th Regt.; enlisted Aug. 11, 1861, for 3 yrs.
Nathl. M. Foss, 17th Regt.; enlisted Aug. 11, 1861, for 3 yrs.
Samuel Groten, 14th Regt.; enlisted July 5, 1861, for 3 yrs.
Peter H. Jowder, 24th Regt.; enlisted Nov., 1861, for 3 yrs.
David Morris, 24th Regt.; enlisted Oct., 1861, for 3 yrs.
Josiah Oliver, 14th Regt.; enlisted July, 1861, for 3 yrs.
Charles E. Riva, 12th Regt.; enlisted April, 1861, for 3 yrs.
Nathl. W. Saunders, 14th Regt.; enlisted July, 1861, for 3 yrs.
Oliver H. Saunders, 23d Regt.; enlisted Oct., 1861, for 3 yrs.

John E. Whittredge, 23d Regt.; enlisted Oct., 1861, for 3 yrs.
David B. Wallis, 23d Regt.; enlisted Oct. 15, 1861, for 3 yrs.
Charles Porter, 11th Regt.; enlisted Dec 19, 1861, for 3 yrs.
Ira P. Knowlton, 38th Regt.; enlisted Aug., 1862, for 3 yrs.
William Ham Dodge, 38th Regt.; enlisted Aug., 1862, for 3 yrs.
James E Gowen, 40th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 3 yrs.
Reuben Morris, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.
Allen Webster Dodge, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.
James W. Patch, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.
George W. Bowen, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept, 1862, for 9 mos.
Elam W. Burnham, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.
Hiram D. Hood, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.
John Weeks, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.
Henry P. Brewer, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.
Alphonso Dodge, 50th Regt ; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.
Arthur B. Trussell, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.
Augustus H. Andrews, 50th Regt ; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.
John C. Mordough, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.
John L. Woodbury, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept. 12, 1862, for 9 mos.
Austin S. Kinsman, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept , 1862 for 9 mos.
Samuel A. F. Whipple, 44th Regt.; enlisted Aug., 1862, for 9 mos.
Alonzo L. Whipple, 44th Regt.; enlisted Aug., 1862, for 9 mos.
Zeno A. Appleton, 47th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.
Alvah Tibbetts, 23d Regt.; enlisted Dec., 1863, for 3 yrs.
Edward Hill, Heavy Art.; enlisted July, 1864, for 3 yrs.
George Rowe, enlisted Nov., 1864, for 1 yr.
Charles F. Hawkins, enlisted Nov., 1864, for 1 yr.
John H. Knowlton, enlisted Nov., 1864 for 1 yr.
Joseph W. Dodge, enlisted Nov , 1861, for 1 yr.
Daniel Trow, enlisted Nov., 1864, for 1 yr.
Livermore D. Riggs, enlisted Nov., 1864, for 1 yr.
George Smith, enlisted Nov., 1864, for 1 yr.
Tristram Appleton (2d), enlisted Nov., 1861, for 1 yr.
Nathaniel Appleton, enlisted Nov., 1864, for 1 yr.
Thomas Manning, enlisted May, 1861, for 3 yrs.

Of these, nine died while in the service—they were James A. Chase, who died at Gettysburg hospital July 16, 1863, of wounds received in that battle; Isaac K. Dodge, son of Elbridge and Elizabeth K. Dodge, at Newbern, N. C., of fever; Thomas J. Dodge, son of Luke and Margaret Dodge, at Andersonville, aged thirty-six; George W. Dodge, May, 1862; John E. Whittredge, son of John and Martha Whittredge, at Newbern, N. C., July 8, 1862, of fever, aged twenty-one; William H. Dodge, at Berrysville, September, 1864, aged thirty; Elam Wright Burnham, son of Elam and Joanna Burnham, at Baton Rouge, La., May 23, 1863, aged twenty-two; Austin S. Kinsman, son of Jacob and Abigail S. Kinsman, at Memphis, Tenn., August 4, 1863, of fever, aged twenty-two, when on his way home with the regiment; Alvah Tibbetts, son of John and Sarah Tibbetts, at Andersonville, August 3, 1864, aged twenty.

Those who can recall to mind these young men of promise, as they were when they left their homes, can realize what a contribution Hamilton, like other towns, made to sustain the country in its peril.

Biographical.—In a town like Hamilton, in which the business is almost exclusively farming, many of the young men are unable to find useful occupation, and, from necessity as well as choice, seek other fields for their talents and enterprise. Many of these have gained an honorable name by their success, and have reflected distinction on their native town. Of such are :

Francis Dodge, son of Colonel Robert Dodge, born here in 1782. He was a successful merchant in Georgetown, D. C., where he died about thirty-five years ago, leaving a large estate. He was much interested in his native town, which he often revisited. The Gibney farm, formerly known as the Dodge farm, was owned by him at his death.

Daniel Safford, son of Samuel and Priscilla Safford, was born here October 30, 1792. He learned the trade of blacksmith of his brother in Salem, removed to Boston in 1812, when he commenced business. He was a skillful mechanic, as well as a shrewd and energetic man of business. He was widely known for his earnest Christian character and great benevolence. He became first known to the churches, where his praise has dwelt ever since, in 1826, by a contribution of one thousand dollars to the American Educational Society. He filled various public stations with great credit to himself. He was one of the founders of Mount Holyoke Female Seminary, a member of the Prudential Committee of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions and an active member of other charitable and benevolent societies. He died February 3, 1856.

Rev. Isaac Brown, son of Lemuel and Lucy Brown, was graduated at Amherst College in 1833. He studied for the ministry at the Theological Seminary at Andover, and was pastor of the church in West Gloucester. He was a man of marked piety, and possessed a singularly pure and earnest Christian character. But the fervent spirit wasted the feeble frame. He died, at Hamilton, of consumption September 14, 1841, aged 31.

Rev. Isaac Woodbury, son of Captain John Woodbury, was well-known as a clergyman of the Baptist denomination.

Solomon S. Whipple, son of Deacon Matthew Whipple, graduated at Dartmouth College in 1811, and practised law in Salem.

David Roberts, son of Samuel Roberts, born in 1804, was a lawyer in Salem, and was twice elected Mayor of that city.

Rufus P. Cutler, son of Temple Cutler and grandson of Dr. Cutler, born in 1814, was graduated at Yale College in 1838, and was the valedictorian of his class. He was a prominent clergyman of the Unitarian denomination, and was settled at Portland, Maine, Charleston, South Carolina, and at San Francisco and Oakland, in California. He died in Brooklyn, New York, in 1878. He was never married.

Francis Dane, son of John and Fanny Dane, who was born here, August 6, 1819, was an eminently successful shoe manufacturer and merchant. He began his business career in South Danvers, now Peabody, about 1840. After the first few years during which his progress was slow, his energy, industry and sagacity pushed him rapidly forward to success. In 1857, he began business in Boston, and in 1860 removed his residence to that city. He lost heavily soon after the war broke out, as his dealings had been largely with the South, but in after years his wealth increased rapidly,

and at his death he left a large estate. He was generous in disposition and unusually given to hospitality, and greatly enjoyed seeing his friends about him and in contributing to their pleasure. Some years before his death, he bought the family homestead at the north part of the town, and spent his money with a lavish hand in remodeling and refitting the dwelling-house, in erecting barns, and, especially, in building a substantial stone wall facing the road, that will last for generations. In the summer of 1875, he was suddenly stricken down with disease and died July 30th. He married Miss Zeruiah Brown of Hamilton, October 10, 1842. The New England Shoe and Leather Association, the trustees of Dummer Academy, the Essex Agricultural Society, and various financial institutions, with which he was connected, took appropriate notice of his decease by resolutions expressive of their sense of loss. His funeral was largely attended. The natives of the town, now living, who have achieved honorable success, we will leave to be cared for by the future historian.

There are also those who have been identified with the town by residence and who have filled the part of useful citizens. The first physician of the town was Dr. Nathan Lakeman, who settled here in the year of the incorporation, 1793. He was a native of Exeter, New Hampshire. In 1794 he married Elizabeth, youngest daughter of Peter Frye, of Salem, who died May 17, 1796, aged 29. Dr. Lakeman removed to Gloucester in 1800, afterwards to Manchester, thence to Beverly where he died. He lived in the house now owned by Benjamin Courtney.

Dr. Enoch Faulkner, who succeeded him, came here in 1800. He was a native of Andover. He was a popular physician, and built up a large practice in this and neighboring towns. He was interested in local and political affairs, and was largely influential in organizing the Democratic party in town. He married Mrs. Mary Lord, a lady of unusual gifts and graces by which she attained leadership in society. She survived him for many years, and died at the advanced age of ninety. Dr. Faulkner lived in the house at the corner of the Main and Essex roads, which is known as Faulkner's Corner. He died March 16, 1830, aged sixty-three.

Dr. Oliver S. Cressy commenced practice here about 1824. He was a native of New Hampshire. He was well liked as a physician, and was an active, stirring citizen. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1853, and died in September of that year, shortly after the adjournment of the convention. He left a widow and three sons. His age at his death was forty-eight. Dr. Daniel S. Allen, who succeeded him, is a native of the town; he continued here in the practice of his profession until the Civil War, when he was commissioned as surgeon in one of the regiments. After the close of the war he resumed the practice of his profession in Saugus, where he now resides. For several years following, in the absence of a local practitioner, Dr. J. L. Robinson, of Wenham, was generally employed by the citizens, until his removal to Manchester, N. H. Since that time Dr. S. E. Thayer has been the resident physician.

Hon. Allen W. Dodge, a most valuable and highly esteemed citizen, died May 17, 1878. Mr. Dodge was born in Newburyport, in April, 1804, and was a grandson of Col. Robert Dodge, frequently mentioned in these annals. He was educated at Phillips Exeter Academy and at Harvard College, from which he graduated in 1826. Among his classmates were Rev. Drs. Nehemiah Adams, Andrew P. Peabody, Richard Hildreth (the historian), Robert Rantoul, Jr., Samuel H. Walley, and other distinguished men. He studied and practiced law in New York City for several years, with good prospects of success. In 1834, he experienced such a change in his religious opinions and feelings, that he abandoned the profession of law, and commenced the study for the ministery, at Andover Seminary, in the class of 1838. He was never ordained. He preached on several occasions, but owing to failure of health soon relinquished his second profession. He then settled in Hamilton on the farm of his ancestors, and commenced an highly useful and honorable career. His service in the Legislature has been already mentioned. He was intimately connected with the Essex Agricultural Society as secretary, and afterwards as president. He was, also, a member of the State Board of Agriculture, a trustee of the State Agricultural College, and was the first president of the Essex Congregational Club. In 1852, he was chosen treasurer for the county of Essex, which office he held until his death.

He was warmly interested in public affairs, and was enthusiastically loyal to every institution which claimed his allegiance, whether it was Nation, State or his own town, with the parish and church of which he was a member. In the Civil War, no citizen was more intensely anxious for the success of the national cause or more ready to assist it. He was wise in counsel, and energetic in action. No trait in his character was more attractive than his quick and sincere sympathy with the young who were entering on the business of life, and his advice was prompted by a genuine interest in their welfare.

Mr. Dodge's voice was often heard in public, and his addresses were conspicuous for their vigorous presentation of sound, sensible opinions, seasoned by humor, and by pointed illustrations drawn from common life. His genial temperament, combined with a fund of information on subjects of common converse, made him a delightful companion. Like all men of his keenly sensitive and impressionable nature, he was subject to the alternations of buoyancy and depression. An highly appreciative memorial of him was prepared by his friend and neighbor, Gail Hamilton. His wife and two children survive him.



"DANE FARM."

RESIDENCE OF A. P. GARDNER,

HAMILTON, MASS.

Miss Mary A. Dodge (Gail Hamilton), who has secured widely extended fame by the brilliancy and vigor of her writings, is a native and resident of the town. She is the daughter of James B. and Hannah Stanwood Dodge. Her father was of Hamilton descent, and her mother was a member of a prominent Ipswich family.

Among her publications are "Country Living and Country Thinking," "Gala Days," "A New Atmosphere," "Battle of the Books," "Summer Rest," "Stumbling Blocks," "Wool Gathering" and "Woman's Wrongs," as well as numerous contributions to newspapers and magazines on the topics of the time.

Population—Business.—The population of the town has varied but little since the incorporation. From causes already referred to, the tendency has been to emigration rather than to immigration. Dr. Felt states that the population of the Hamlet in 1773 was 870. Since the incorporation it has varied as follows: In 1810, 780; 1820, 802; 1830, 748; 1855, 896; 1865, 799; 1877, 790; 1880, 935; 1885, 850. The valuation was in 1831, $211,888; in 1865, $481,423; 1872, $560,620; 1887, $753,000.

As has been stated, the business of the town has, from the first, been essentially farming. Manufacturing has not been attempted to any large extent. About 1834, a stone factory was built on the Hamilton side of Ipswich River, and, also, a large stone dwelling-house for the accommodation of operatives; it was known for many years as "Manning's Mills," from the name of the builder. Since that time the manufacture of woolen goods has been carried on with varied success. In 1864, there were manufactured fifty-five thousand pairs of army and ribbed socks, and woolen goods to the value of one hundred and thirty-five thousand dollars. These mills were totally destroyed by fire January 12, 1884, and have not been rebuilt. For several years previous to their destruction they were operated by the Willowdale Manufacturing Company in the making of woolen blankets; a large number of operatives were employed, and quite a village of cottages was built in the vicinity of the factory. The population of the town was from this cause increased so that in 1880 it was about one hundred above the average for the last century. The valuation of the real estate and machinery of the corporation in 1883, the year previous to the fire, was about twenty thousand dollars.

Further down the Ipswich River there is a saw and grist-mill, near Warner's bridge, so called; this was formerly known as Dodge's mills, and afterwards as Smith's mills; it is now owned by C. J. Norwood.

The opening of the Essex Branch Railroad gave the opportunity for the development of a new industry in the eastern part of the town that is, the cutting, storing and shipping of ice. The Drivers' Union Ice Company have built ice-houses at the northerly point of Chebacco Lake, near the railroad. This affords employment for quite a number of hands, mainly in the winter season. The value of the real and personal estate of the company, for the year 1885, was nineteen thousand seven hundred and fifty dollars.

This new railroad, which was opened in 1872, from the Wenham and Hamilton station to Essex, gave increased and much needed accommodation to the residents in the center and eastern part of Hamilton. There are two stations for the town on the road; one for the centre, at the crossing of the highway by Miles River, near Otis F. Brown's, and one for the east part near the house of William Woodbury.

The owners of the meadow lands lying on Miles River, most of whom are residents of Hamilton, were incorporated by the name of the Miles River Meadow Company, by an act of the Legislature, April 24, 1880. The purpose of this act was to secure better co-operation among the owners in removing obstructions from the river, and thus improving the drainage of their lands.

Before the extensive use of machinery in shoe manufacturing made it necessary that all the work should be done at the factory, a number of the citizens found employment in shoemaking. The town was dotted over with small shoe-shops, each accommodating two or three workmen; some of these followed the business for the entire year, others only during the winter interval between the seasons of active farm labor. Some carried on the business more extensively, and might be ranked as shoe manufacturers, although there was no large factory. In 1837, the value of boots and shoes manufactured was estimated at fourteen thousand seven hundred and two dollars. This industry has gradually dwindled away, until, under the changed conditions of business, it has entirely disappeared.

A business still more remote in point of time—that of vessel-building—was three-fourths of a century ago carried on considerably in the eastern part of the town. Fishing-boats, from ten to twenty tons, were built and hauled to the Chebacco waters by teams of cattle. Captain John Woodbury, an active and energetic man, who is still remembered for his brusque manner and kindness of heart, built some of these boats at his homestead, now owned by his son, John T. Woodbury.

In 1859, Mr. John Whipple, a native of Worcester County, but a descendant of a branch of the Whipple family of this town, bought the estate near Chebacco Pond, formerly the property of Edmund Knowlton. This place, attractive in its natural features, he greatly improved; he built a large house, since known as the Chebacco House, and fitted up the grounds with special reference to the entertainment of pleasure-parties. He made his establishment very popular, and until the time of his death carried on a successful business, which has since been continued by his sons.

The opening of the Eastern Railroad through the

town to Ipswich, in 1839, caused a great change in the mode of public travel, and was also the indirect cause of the disappearance of the public-houses, the necessity for which ceased to exist with the withdrawal of the stage-line from Newburyport to Boston. Dr. Felt, in his history, says,—"In 1774, a stage with four horses, from Newburyport to Boston, rode through Ipswich twice a week in going and the same in returning. This was an accommodation exceeding any of preceding years. But it was far less than now exists. Such facilities for traveling are twenty times greater than they were then." At the time of Dr. Felt's history, a large number of stages passed over the main highway daily; the arrival of these vehicles, with their loads of passengers, was a prominent feature in the life of the quiet village. Of the public-houses referred to, there were then two in town,—one, near the Ipswich line, was kept by Jacob Brown; the other, near the meeting-house, designated by a sign-post, on which hung a portrait of Governor Hancock, was kept by Israel D. Brown. An incident in the early history of the town shows the popularity of this tavern, then kept by Captain Daniel Brown. At the first election of Dr. Cutler to Congress, in 1800, the records show that Dr. Cutler received sixty-five votes, Joseph Roberts, one, and "*old George Kezer*," one. Whether this Kezer was a mythical personage, or a reality of unsavory reputation, is not known, but the ballot was evidently regarded as an insult to the worthy doctor. For this an apology was offered, which was unanimously accepted, and then the meeting, with equal unanimity, voted to adjourn, *immediately*, to Captain Brown's, where, probably, the means were taken to completely restore harmonious feeling.

A post-office was established in 1803, and for many years was kept at this place.

The entire length of highways is about thirty miles; from this it is seen that the duty of constructing and maintaining the roads imposes a heavy burden on the town. For many years, somewhat in the past, projects for building new roads, and for altering and improving those already built, were frequent; but of late, little has been attempted beyond keeping the existing highways in repair. The clearing of roads from snow is an uncertain, and, often, a large item of expense; for instance, for the year ending March, 1876 the expense on this account was $56.92; 1877, $986.14; 1876, $961.65; 1874, $1857.42. The last road constructed was that laid out in 1886, as a town-way, leading from the main road opposite the Wenham and Hamilton Railroad Station to the Topsfield Road. This was built mainly for the accommodation of the horse railway, in order to avoid two railroad crossings.

Burial Grounds.—In 1707, the Hamlet was granted by the town of Ipswich one acre of common land for a burial place. This was the next year, exchanged with John Dane for one-half acre, which is a part of the present burial-ground. This lot was described in the deed as bounded by the southeasterly side of the road leading to Wenham, fronting on said road eight rods, southerly on land of John Hubbard ten rods, and on the easterly end, eight rods, and on the northerly side, ten rods, by Dane's land. John Dane, the grantor, died in 1707, and was buried in this lot; the stone erected to his memory bears the oldest date of any in the cemetery. The inscription is "Memento mori, Fugit Hora. Here lyes ye body of John Dane, Sen., who departed this life December 23d, 1707, in the 65th year of his age." This John was the son of a John Dane who emigrated to this country about 1635. He was born in Ipswich about 1644, and lived at the Hamlet. In 1692 he was a juror in witch cases. He married Abigail Warner, and was an ancestor of the Dane family residing in this town. In 1763, John Hubbard gave one-quarter of an acre as an addition to the ground, for which he received the thanks of the parish, by a vote, passed February 3, 1763. In 1797 it was voted to enlarge the ground, and build a face wall in front, and to purchase of Mr. Roberts one-fourth of an acre at fifty cents per rod. In 1846, the ground was further enlarged by the purchase of one hundred and forty-four rods of Jacob Kinsman and wife, which included an adjoining lot in the rear, and also the lane which is now the carriage entrance to the cemetery. In 1866, the cemetery was extended at the easterly end by an acre, and, in 1886, by an acre and a fourth, purchased of Daniel Roberts.

Wigglesworth Cemetery.—About the year 1850 several of the citizens purchased one of the lots into which the old parsonage ground was divided to be used as a private burial-place. This was consecrated by appropriate services as the Wigglesworth Cemetery; Rev. J. H. Mordough making an address. For several years no burials have been made in this ground, and the remains of those already interred are being removed to the town cemetery. It will probably soon be abandoned.

Miscellaneous.—Since 1881 when George C. Rankins, an enterprising young man, bought of the Asbury Grove Association a tract of land on the Topsfield road, adjoining the Eastern Railroad, a marked impulse has been felt in business in that part of the town. Mr. Rankins started the coal business, and in 1883, Daniel C. Smith leased part of the premises to be used as a lumber-yard. A severe loss was sustained by the death of Mr. Rankins in 1884. Since that time Mr. Smith has carried on both lumber and coal business.

Within a few years eleven dwelling-houses have been erected in this immediate vicinity, and near the railroad station; and five are now in process of erection. Two shops have also been built, and a large building, one hundred feet in length, for business purposes.

The town now seems to be progressing as favorably as at any time in its history. The report of the select-



William C. Brown

men, made March, 1887, shows the expenses of the town for the current year to have been $6055.16, of which $1653.37 was for roads and bridges; $649.37, for removing snow; $583.96, enlarging and improving the cemeteries; $652.78, for poor; $1339.00, for schools.

The present Board of Selectmen are James F. Gwinn, John L. Woodbury and Isaac F. Knowlton; Town Clerk, Otis F. Brown; School Committee, Otis F. Brown, Jonathan Lamson and Andrew Haraden.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

WILLIAM A. BROWN.

William A. Brown is the son of William and Lydia L. Brown, and has always been a resident of Hamilton, where he was born September 24, 1820.

Mr. Brown has for many years been prominent and active in town affairs, and has held most of the local offices. He has served on the Board of Selectmen at different times, fifteen years in all; during the war he was chairman of the board and was active and efficient in promoting enlistments. He has been a member of the School Committee, and for seventeen years was a teacher in the schools of this town for the winter terms.

In 1880 the district, of which Hamilton was a part, was represented by him in the Legislature.

Mr. Brown is a farmer, and has also been considerably employed as a surveyor of land. The farm in the northern part of the town, now owned and occupied by him, has been the property of his family through five generations.

The first of his ancestors who owned the estate was Samuel Brown, who was the grandson of Edward Brown, an immigrant from England, but the date of whose settlement here is not exactly known. Edward Brown died probably in 1659, as his will was proved in 1660.

CHAPTER XCIX.

WENHAM.

BY SIDNEY PERLEY.

First Settlement—General History—Physicians—Cemeteries—Railroads—Religious History—Military History—Schools, Libraries, etc—Business and Manufacturing Interests—Distinguished Residents and Natives—Civil List.

"To raising Townes and Churches new in wilderness they wander,
First Plymouth and then Salem next were placed far asunder;
Woburn, Wenham, Redding, built with little Silver Mettle,
Andover, Haverhill, Berris-banks,[1] their habitation settle."

THUS wrote the author of "Good News from New England," in reference to our early towns, showing the alacrity of our ancestors in establishing new homes and new governments, with little means, except the strong arm, undaunted will, and faith in the prosperity of their enterprise. Wenham was early fixed upon for a settlement; its large lake, its streams, hills and meadows being very attractive to the English emigrants. John Dunstan, Esq., an English gentleman, who visited the town in 1686, writes thus concerning it: "Wenham is a delicious paradise; it abounds with all rural pleasures, and I would choose it of all other towns in America to dwell in. The lofty trees on each side of it are a sufficient shelter from the winds, and the warm sun so kindly ripens both the fruits and flowers, as if the spring, the summer and the autumn had agreed together to thrust winter out of doors." Josselyn, in 1663, says of it: "Wenham is an inland town, very well watered, lying between Salem and Ipswich; consisteth most of men of judgment in *re rustica*, and well stored with cattle."

It is to-day a model town. It is supplied with nearly all modern conveniences, numbering among them the steam and street-cars, telegraph and telephone, churches, a town hall, public library and stores of various kinds; and its excellent roads passing across the shady plain and over gracefully curving hills, to the peaceful crystal lakes, present scenery that is rarely surpassed in beauty. The principal features of its topography are Lord's Hill, which is the highest elevation in the town, furnishing a grand view of sea and land; and Moulton's Hill, which gives a less extended but more charming picture of Cedar Pond and the dark-green foliage above the swamp beyond. Wenham Lake, with its reputation for purity, gained in all the continents, is the distinguishing natural feature of the town. It contains about three hundred and twenty acres, two-thirds of which lie in Wenham, and the remaining third in Beverly. Wenham Lake ice is so pure that a newspaper can be read through a cake of it two feet thick; and its preserving qualities have been famous from its borders to all tropical lands. Wenham Great Swamp, covering about two thousand acres, about fifteen hundred of which are in Wenham and the remainder in Topsfield and Hamilton, is a notorious variation in the natural formation of the surface of the town. Its proprietors held it in common, and, Jan. 13, 1755, were incorporated by an act of the General Court for the securing of the growth of wood and timber thereon. By several legislative acts the corporate body existed until 1779. It was again incorporated March 21, 1836, the act of incorporation containing regulations in reference to fences and field drivers.

The territory of Wenham is mentioned for the first time in 1637. John Williams, a ship-carpenter by trade, was arrested in Ipswich for theft some time before, and imprisoned for his crime. He broke out of the jail with one John Hoddy, and they traveled together in the way to Ipswich. When they had

[1] Portsmouth—Strawberry-banks.

reached the valley by the border of the lake, near where the bound-stone between Beverly and Wenham stands, by the highway leading from Wenham Centre to North Beverly, Williams murdered his companion, and took away what he had, even his clothing, which was bloody. He put on the clothing, and went in it to Ipswich. He was there apprehended, but would make no confession until a week after Hoddy's body was found. He was tried, convicted and executed, by hanging, in Boston September 28, 1637. This is said to have been the first murder which occurred among the European settlers of the colony.

The next mention that we find made of this region is that of the preaching of Hugh Peters' sermon, about 1638, on a small conical hill, which formerly stood between the highway and the lake, where the ice-houses of Addison Gage & Company stand. To the few original settlers, the notorious Hugh Peters preached the Gospel here from the text, "Enon, near Salim, for there was much water there."—John iii. 23. This settlement was then called *Enon*, and Peters was the pastor of the church in Salem, a part of which town Wenham then was. He had particular friends among the early settlers of Wenham, one of whom Dea. Charles Gott, became his agent here after he had returned to England to become involved in the commonwealth and to suffer a terrible death as a regicide.

There is a tradition in the Killam family that the first three settlers of Wenham were one of the early Fiske settlers, Austin Killam and Richard Goldsmith. The first settlement must have been made about 1655. It was at first known as Salem village as well as Enon, and was incorporated as a distinct town May 10, 1643, in the following words: "It is ordered that Enon shalbee called Wennam. Wennam is granted to bee a towne, & hath liberty to send a deputy." The name is supposed to have been taken from one of the two parishes near Ipswich, in England, of the same name, from whence probably some of the early settlers came. The following is a list of the settlers of the town down to 1700: John Abby, 1641; Mr. Auditor, 1646; John Badger, 1645; John Barr, 1679; Joseph Batchelder, from Canterbury, England, 1644; John Beaman, 1669; John Berry, 1696; John Bette, 1666; Goodman Bibber, 1692; Richard Braybrook, 1674; Edmund Bridges, 1661; John Browne, 1695; George Byam, 1648; John Carpenter, 1676; John Clarke, 1665; Richard Coy, 1659; Robert Cue, 1696; John Dennis, 1669; Richard Dodge, 1644; Elijah Dudleclee, 1696; John Edwards, 1663; Rice Elwards, 1653; James Ellis, 1664; Daniel Epps, 1699; John Fairfield, 1641; John Fiske, 1642; Phineas Fiske, 1642; William Fiske, from Boston, 1643; Samuel Foster, 1699; Joseph Fowler, from Ipswich, 1670; James Friest, 1662; William Geare, 1641; Joseph Gerrish, from Newbury, 1674; Richard Goldsmith, 1644; Charles Gott, from Salem, 1644; Robert Gowen, 1650; Joseph Hacker, 1696; Henry Haggett, 1657; Robert Hawes, 1654; Joseph Herrick, 1691; Robert Hibbert, 1674; Thomas Hobbs, 1672; Mr. Hubbard, 1642; William Hulitt, 1659; Isaac Hull, from "Bass River," 1681; John Hunkin, 1674; Richard Hutton, 1653; Alice Jones, 1651; William Jones, 1687; Edward Kemp, from Dedham, 1652; Austin Killam, from Dedham, 1649; Richard Kimball, from Ipswich, 1656; John Knowlton, 1679; William Knowlton, 1678; Mordecai Larcom, 1682; John Leach, 1681; Robert Mackclifflin, 1661; Alexander Maxey, 1659; James Moulton, 1644; Antipas Newman, from Rehoboth, 1657; Abner Ordway, 1659; Edmund Patch, 1654; John Perkins, 1679; Richard Pettingell, 1649; John Poland, 1656; Samuel Porter, from Salem, 1657; Esdras Reade, 1643; Nicholas Rich, 1687; Theophilus Rix, 1688; John Rogers, 1653; William Sawyer, 1643; John Severett, 1695; John Shepley, 1655; Samuel Smith, 1642; John Soolard, a Frenchman, 1652; Mr. Sparrowhawk, 1645; Edward Spaulding, 1654; Robert Symonds, 1685; Peter Tompson, 1695; Francis Urselton, 1655; Edward Waldron, 1653; Joshua Wallis, 1698; Jeremiah Watts, 1665; Philip Welsh, 1675; Thomas White, 1654; Edward Whittington, 1687; William Williams, 1673; Ezekiel Woodward, 1672; and Christopher Young, 1644.[1]

A church was organized the year following the incorporation of the town, a militia company was soon afterward formed, and the town government was begun. Highways were early laid out. What was, much later, the turnpike from Salem to Ipswich, was laid out in 1644 or 1645. November 13, 1644, the General Court ordered "that the comission'rs for laying out the roade way between Ipswich & Salem shall have power to alter the way layde out beneath Wenham towards the east, & to lay it through y^e^ towne if they shall indge it meete."

The people of Wenham obtained a deed of their territory from the Indians, bearing date December 10, 1700. The aborigines who claimed a title to the soil were Samuel English, Joseph English and John Umpee, heirs of Masconomet, the late sagamore of Agawam. The Indians were paid for their interest in the land four pounds and sixteen shillings. The early settlers were forbidden to sell arms and ammunition to the savages; and Robert Gowing was, in 1650, fined ten pounds for selling a gun to an Indian.

The burial-place of the first settlers was the same that is now used as the cemetery of the town. The earliest mention of this cemetery made in the records is in the year 1681; and tradition says that many years ago there was a gravestone in existence in the yard bearing date 1642. The oldest stone now standing there bears the following inscription:—

[1] These are the years of the first mention of the settlers' names on the records.

HERE LYES Y^E BODY OF
SARAH FAIRFIELD
WIFE TO WALTER
FAIRFIELD DEC^D DEC^R
Y^E 18^th 1710
IN Y^E 71^ST YEAR
OF HER AGE.

The cemetery was originally probably a part of Rev. Mr. Fiske's farm. It has been enlarged several times. The first grave-digger, as far as the records show, was John Severett, who was chosen by the town in 1694–95. In 1863, Rev. David O. Allen, the missionary, gave in his will five hundred dollars as a fund, the income of which to be applied to keeping the cemetery in proper condition. In the westerly part of the town is a private cemetery belonging to the Fairfield family,

"A place where all things mournful meet,
And yet the sweetest of the sweet,
The stillest of the still."

Dodge's Row Cemetery in Beverly, a part of which is thought to be in Wenham, has been used by Wenham people for one hundred and fifty years.

Extravaganee was not tolerated in the early days, even in Wenham, where Thomas Fiske's wife was presented to court for wearing a tiffany, in the tenth month of 1652. Her sentence was ten shillings fine and two shillings and sixpence fees of court. Even rich men's wives could not wear silks more freely than others. It was self-evident that a tiffany could not be put on for its warmth, and there might have been moral reasons forbidding its being worn.

The little settlement had its inn from its earliest days. The town-meetings were usually held in the church, and adjournments to the tavern sometimes occurred.

Wenham never gave sufficient inducement to a lawyer to settle there in practice; but physicians have been residents of the town nearly all the years that have passed since the settlement was begun. The first minister, Rev. John Fiske, was the first medical man here. He went to Chelmsford with a portion of his church in 1654. Dr. John Fiske, a distant relative of the minister, was born here in 1654, and remained here in the practice of both physic and surgery. He removed in 1694 to Milford, Conn., where he practiced until 1715, when he died. He was somewhat eminent in his day. Dr. John Newman was here in 1695 and 1696, and Dr. Gott in 1704. No physician is again mentioned until Dr. William Fairfield began practice about 1760. He was born in Wenham September 4, 1732, and first practiced physic and surgery with good success in the French War. He resided on the William Porter place, at length removing to Salem, where he was noted for his proficiency and skill, and the excellence of his private character. He died of the small-pox October 10, 1773, at the age of forty-one years. Dr. Isaac Spofford, who was born in Georgetown, then a part of Rowley, April 10, 1752, having studied medicine with Dr. Brickett, of Haverhill, settled in the practice of his profession in Wenham, but soon removed to Beverly, and finally became a surgeon in the army of the Revolution. Dr. Barnard Tucker, a native of Newbury, graduated at Harvard College in 1789, and, after practicing medicine for several years in Beverly, removed to Wenham, where he lived upon the place lately occupied by Charles Brown. He was familiar with the French and Spanish languages, which he taught; and had a kind heart, gentle disposition and simple manners. He paid but little attention to medicine, and at length removed to his native town. Dr. Samuel Dodge, by invitation of the town, settled here as a physician and surgeon in 1826. He was born in Wenham February 23, 1800. He remained here with general satisfaction to the people until October 30, 1833, when he died at the age of thirty-three years. While Dr. Dodge was practicing medicine here Dr. Sylvanus Brown came and stayed two years—1830 and 1831, and doubtless finding that the town could not support two physicians, removed to and died in Derry, N. H. After Dr. Dodge's decease, the next physician who settled here was Dr. Nathan Jones, who was a native of Lyndeborough, N. H., having been born April 25, 1794. He removed to Beverly in April, 1858, and died there March 11, 1860, at the age of sixty-five years, being interred in Wenham. A few years contemporary with Dr. Jones was Dr. Myron O. Allen, son of Rev. David O. Allen, missionary to India. Dr. Allen was born in Bombay in 1831, and graduated at Yale College in 1852, subsequently graduating at the Pennsylvania Medical College at Philadelphia. He commenced practice here in July, 1855, and removed to Lowell in 1860, dying there of a cancer August 1, 1861, at the age of thirty years. The next physician to settle here was Dr. John L. Robinson, who was born in Pembroke, N. H., January 3, 1835, came here from Manchester, N. H., in 1859, and remained here until 1879, when he sold out his practice to Dr. Samuel Ezra Thayer, and moved back to Manchester. Dr. Thayer was born in Trumansburgh, N. Y., in 1844, and graduated at Buffalo University in 1869. He practiced first in Southampton, Mass., seven and one-half years, then in Williamsburg about one year, and came to Wenham January 29, 1879. He removed to Hamilton some three or four months later, but continued his practice in Wenham until February, 1884. Dr. Frank A. Cowles, the present resident physician, was born in Elmira, N. Y., July 20, 1859, and graduated from the medical department of New York University in 1881. He practiced medicine at first in New York City. After staying there two years he came to Wenham, in January, 1884, and has since practiced here.

In connection with the physicians of the town are the apothecaries. Calvin B. Dodge, the first apothe-

cary in Wenham, began business in 1862 or 1863, in a shop which he erected on land of Henry Perkins for that purpose. In 1864 he sold out to Benjamin F. Johnson, who, after a few years, removed the shop to its present location, opposite the engine house, and continued the business until 1873, when he removed from town. Procter K. Brown continued the business in the same building until 1885. In the spring of 1873, George E. Morgan of Beverly commenced the apothecary business in the Union Block, and ran it until 1875 or 1876, when he sold out to Andrew Geyer of Ipswich who had already opened a similar store here. Mr. Geyer sold out his store soon afterwards to Charles W. Batchelder, a dealer in dry goods, boots and shoes, etc., on Main street, who, after fitting up a portion of his store for the apothecary business, removed it thereto. He sold out January 5, 1877, to Mr. Benton, his clerk, who removed it back to its former place in Union Block. October 19, 1878, Mr. Benton sold out to John C. Gray, who sold to James H. Perkins and Dr. Samuel E. Thayer November 10, 1879. James H. Perkins, Jr., attended the store as clerk, as he had done for the previous proprietors. Dr. Thayer withdrew after about one year, leaving James H. Perkins, Sr., sole proprietor until August 1, 1882, when the business was transferred to his son, James H. Perkins, Jr., who still continues it at the store built and formerly occupied by Charles W. Batchelder, of which we have already spoken. Mr. Perkins removed from the old stand in Union Block to this store in the fall of 1885.

Wenham presents an appearance of neatness and comfort; and the village and country around it are alike noticeable for their quiet rural scenes and healthfulness. About a score of persons have died here at an age upwards of ninety years; and the large majority of them were of the gentler and, generally understood, weaker sex. The throat distemper, which prevailed so disastrously all through this section of the country from 1736 to 1738, visited Wenham and took away many of the younger portion of the inhabitants. John Gott and Richard Dodge lost all their children, the first five and the last four. About twenty persons died here in the course of three months in 1737, from the epidemic. A public fast was held, at which time Rev. Mr. Champney preached in the morning from Jer. ix. 24; and Rev. Mr. Chipman in the afternoon from Jer. ii. 30. Small-pox has prevailed here several times, resulting in 1760 in the death of Daniel Porter, at the age of thirty-eight years. In 1776 it broke out again, and continued at intervals for several years, terrorizing the people. At last a pest-house was provided, and vaccination introduced. In 1805 the dysentery carried away a considerable number of the citizens. From September 15th to October 29th, of that year, eleven persons died of that complaint. A few accidents and deaths by casualty are found recorded. In the journal of Rev. John Fiske, the first pastor of the church here, is an account of his son being carried under the mill-wheel, when it was in motion, and coming out with not a bone broken. This was his son John, who was, June 6, 1647, when the accident occurred, in his ninth year. The journal says, that he "escaped a gte danger at Wenhā in passing with y^e^ streame under y^e^ mill wheele, when y^e^ mill was agoing, An. 1647, 6th of 3d, at wh time he recoj'd (as twere) a new life, not a bone broke, &c." Richard Goldsmith was killed by lightning at the house of Rev. Mr. Newman, who had lately died, on Sunday, May 18, 1673, in the presence of the Rev. Mr. Higginson of Salem, who had preached in Wenham that day, and, having but a few moments before returned from the service, was sitting engaged in conversation with Mr. Goldsmith, under whose chair was a dog, which was also killed. George W. Kimball, a lad of eight years, was killed by lightning here July 25, 1821. Samuel Ober, who was in his seventy-second year, was killed by lightning on the evening of May 22, 1876, while sitting with his wife in the house in West Wenham. Thomas Goodwin, who was probably a boy from Gloucester, was killed March 5, 1700–1, by "being catcht by the whell of a saw-mill & so killed, att John Leeches." April 19, 1754, William Dodge, aged about two years, was drowned in a brook. On the town records is found the following: "William Batcheller the son of Peter Dodge's wife fell into y^e^ Mill Pond and died Jan^y^. 13th, 1771, Ætatis 12." Benjamin Porter, aged fifteen years, was drowned in Wenham Pond Oct. 14, 1773. Joseph P. Cook, aged nineteen years, while skating on Pleasant Pond with other boys, broke through the thin ice, and was drowned December 10, 1856. April 15, 1876, Austin Morrill of Wenham, aged thirteen years, and his cousin, Clarence Henry Peirce of Beverly Farms, aged eighteen years, were accidentally drowned in Coy's Pond. May 8, 1731, Pompey, a negro-boy of Lieutenant William Dodge, was killed by a cart. He was fourteen years old. In 1789 a girl named Wyatt, four years old, was burned to death. Benjamin Steele Parsons, aged fourteen years, was killed by a horse-cart May 2, 1870. He lived thirty minutes after the accident. July 21, 1839, Lebbeus Dodge, aged seventeen months, was killed by a stage. John Baker, at the age of ten years, was killed by a sled February 17, 1841. Annie F. Alley was bitten in one of her hands by a white Spitz dog, which was kept in the neighborhood, March 4th, and died of hydrophobia May 3, 1876. She was ten years old.

The population of Wenham in 1885 was eight hundred and seventy-one. The town then had two hundred and ninety-three ratable polls, and two hundred and seventy legal voters, only ten of whom were naturalized. There were two hundred and nineteen families, and one hundred and ninety dwelling-houses, one of which being constructed of brick, the others of wood. The town debt is now (1887) $6,465.02.

Emigration has reduced the size of many of the country towns, and, as with Wenham, a century ago their population was greater than now. The first extensive emigration from Wenham occurred in 1655, when the pastor of the church, with a large and influential portion of his parishioners went to the new settlement of Chelmsford. This removal took from the little town its minister and physician, and its main strength. Yet those left behind pushed forward in their work, settled another minister, added to their number of planters and throve. After the commencement of the eighteenth century it seemed to be customary for one of the sons of the family to remain at home and inherit the farm, and the others to seek their fortunes in the newer towns. Many of the young men from Wenham reared homes in Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, the central and western portions of Massachusetts and Connecticut, and later in settlements farther away. Jonathan Porter and his family removed to Ellington, Conn., in 1740, and John Porter and his family to Littleton, Mass., about 1745. The settlement of Marietta, Ohio, in 1787, projected and carried out by Dr. Manasseh Cutler of Hamilton, who, with his little colony, in "a long, ark-like wagon, covered with black canvas," on the outside of which was inscribed, in large letters, the name of the place of their destination, journeyed overland, was partially constituted by Wenham people. This was the first town settled in the State of Ohio.

The old turnpike from Ipswich to Boston ran through Wenham, causing taverns to be kept here constantly. In 1833 the steam-cars began to run through the centre of the town over the Eastern Railroad, which was completed as far east as Ipswich that year. The Wenham station is situated a few rods over the town line in Hamilton, and the North Beverly station is in Beverly near the Wenham line. The Newburyport and Wakefield branch of the Boston & Maine Railroad passes across the western end of the town, but there is no station on that road nearer than the Putnamville flag-station in Danvers. The latter road was built in 1853. The street-cars were first run from Gloucester crossing in Beverly to the soldiers' monument in Wenham, May 26, 1886. Later in the same season the lines were extended, in one direction to the Wenham station in Hamilton, and also to the camp-meeting grounds at Asbury Grove, also in Hamilton.

The post-office was established here in 1809. The first postmaster was Thomas Barnes, who was appointed April 21, 1809. His successors, with dates of their original appointments, follow: Uzziel Dodge, July 6, 1812; John Thorn Dodge, March 20, 1818; Ezra Lummus, August 19, 1830; Adoniram J. Dodge, March 24, 1837; John A. Putnam, June 25, 1846; Benjamin C. Putnam, August 3, 1857; Nathaniel S. Gould, April 25, 1862; Elisha P. Chapman, June 26, 1866; William W. Fowler, January 16, 1867; Henry Hobbs, September 19, 1870; John W. Curtis, September 25, 1878; Andrew D. Trowt, November 5, 1880; Miss Kate M. Kavanagh, December 23, 1885; and Fred. P. Stanton, November 26, 1886. The post-office was, at first, in the old tavern, formerly the residence of Rev. Joseph Gerrish, which stood where the horse-railroad stable is situated. It was kept here until August, 1830, the first three postmasters being the tavern-keepers. On Mr. Lummus' appointment, it was removed to his tavern in the brick house, and there remained until Mr. Dodge's appointment in March, 1837, when it was removed to his wheelwright shop which stood near the western end of the house now owned and occupied by Mr. James H. Perkins. It remained here until John A. Putnam became the postmaster in June, 1846, when it was removed to his store, which was built at about that time, and burnt with the barn and shed connected therewith, a small dwelling-house, and the large barn and sheds standing near by, belonging to the late Dr. John Porter, early on Monday morning, May 23, 1870. When Mr. Hobbs was appointed, September 19, 1870, he kept it for six months at his harness shop, and then removed it to the new Union block, where it has been kept to the present time, except while Miss Kavanagh was postmistress, from December, 1885, to November, 1886, when it was in the house on Arbor street, built by B. C. Putnam, for one month, and afterwards at P. K. Brown's shop.

The Town Hall was erected in 1854, by a vote of the town which was passed by seventy-nine yeas to sixty-one nays. The committee to erect the building consisted of John Porter, C. A. Killam, A. Dodge, F. Hadley, J. Cook, Benjamin C. Putnam and Moses Mildram. The hall was erected where it now stands, the pond hole that formerly occupied the site being filled up. The edifice is fifty-four feet long and thirty-eight feet wide, with a projection on the front sixteen feet by twenty-five. It is two stories in height, besides a large and convenient basement. It contains a hall, school-rooms and selectmen's room, besides anterooms. The cupola on it affords an extensive and beautiful view of the surrounding country. The hall will seat about four hundred persons.

The fire department of Wenham was established quite early. In 1821, the town ordered the selectmen to "procure six ladders and three fire-hooks for the use of the town, to be equally divided among the three separate districts." In 1835 a fire company of twenty-five members was organized; and the town voted to build an engine-house and to procure the necessary apparatus. An engine, costing two hundred dollars, was purchased by subscription. It was quite small, and had to be filled by hand. After several years of efficient service, the company disbanded, and the engine was sold. In 1849 another fire company was formed, and a new engine, "Enon, No. 1," built in Newburyport by Edward Leslie, in the same year, costing nine hundred dollars, was purchased by the

town. An engine-house was erected, and all the apparatus necessary for the successful operation of the company was procured. The company consisted of forty-eight members, to whom an elegant banner was presented by the ladies of the town September 25, 1850; and on the same day a silver trumpet presentation to the company further evinced the good-will of the citizens in general. The occasion of these presentations was a holiday at the lakeside. The company was kept together several years. The engine is still owned by the town, and a company of forty members was organized March 24, 1887, with Otis P. Brewer, foreman, and Fred P. Stanton, clerk and treasurer. When there has been no company, the fire-wards have had charge of the engine, and trusted to volunteer help to work it. This year (1887), the town voted to appropriate fifty dollars for fire-hooks and ladders. In 1886, the fire department cost the town sixty-two dollars and eleven cents.

The permanent and more important organizations of the town, besides the two religious societies, are the Wenham Veteran's Association, organized May 30, 1876; Wenham Mutual Benefit Association, organized August 19, 1876, and incorporated November 3, 1883; and the Female Benevolent Society, founded in September, 1833.

Wenham has one periodical publication, *The American Apiculturist*, established in January, 1883. It is a monthly, thirty-two, double-column paged magazine, devoted to bee culture. Its publisher is Mr. Henry Alley.

The two hundredth anniversary of the incorporation of Wenham was publicly observed May 10, 1843, when an address on the civil history of the town was delivered by Rev. Daniel Mansfield, pastor of the Congregational Church.

A "History of Wenham," written by Dr. Myron O. Allen, who was the resident physician at that time, was published in a neat bound volume of two hundred and twenty pages in 1860.

Religious History.—For the first three or four years after Wenham was first settled, the inhabitants probably attended church at Salem. We have already mentioned the sermon preached by Hugh Peters at Wenham Lake. Mr. Peters was the successor of Roger Williams as pastor of the First Church in Salem; returning to England about 1642, he became a famous preacher, and was appointed chaplain by Cromwell; becoming conspicuous in the commonwealth, he was alleged to have been guilty of assisting in the death of Charles I., and was publicly beheaded therefor on Tower Hill after the restoration. The public initiative towards a church here was probably in 1639. Rev. John Higginson, the minister at Salem, in his church record, says: "There are divers passages set down about three villages to go out of y^e brethren of Salem church, considered of in several church meetings, for several years together, the first of which was 1639, August 24th. Mr. Downing and some with him were for one village (Danvers); other brethren for a village at y^e pond (Wenham); and others for one at Jeffrey's Creek (Manchester)."

As early as 1641 a small meeting-house was built, and Rev. John Fiske, who had assisted Hugh Peters at Salem, came at about the same time and settled in Wenham. The most reliable tradition informs us that this building stood on a slight rise of ground near the present residence of Mr. Henry Tarr. A bell was added to it about 1650, and since that time Wenham has not been without its church-bell. The church was organized and Mr. Fiske installed its pastor October 8, 1644. The church flourished until 1655, when Mr. Fiske, with a majority of his parishioners, removed to the new town of Chelmsford, and became its first pastor. Mr. Fiske's removal was a great loss in itself. He was an excellent man, and was a physician as well as a clergyman, practicing the healing art to both body and soul. He died at Chelmsford January 14, 1676–77, aged seventy-six years. He was a son of a prominent and persecuted dissenter, and was born in the parish of St. James, county of Suffolk, in England, in 1601. He was educated at Immanuel College, Cambridge, and preached for several years in his native land; but, at length, "on account of the severe restrictions upon nonconformists, he became a physician." He came to America in disguise, bringing with him servants, husbandry and carpentry tools, and provisions sufficient to support his family for three years. He taught the Charlestown grammar-school, and afterwards the first grammar-school in Salem. Mr. Fiske was an earnest and successful preacher; he composed and published a catechism, entitled "Watering of the Olive Plants in Christ's Garden." His epitaph is as follows:

> "*Viri, et quem dederas cursum, mihi Christe, peregi;*
> *Pertæsus vitæ, suaviter opto mori.*"[1]

Mr. Fiske's departure left the church and settlement small in numbers and means. The early settlers of Hamilton (then a part of Ipswich) soon afterwards came to this church, and it began to regain its former strength. The "neighbors," as they were called, are first mentioned as contributing to the support of the church here in 1659.

Rev. Antipas Newman, from Rehoboth, came very soon after Mr. Fiske's removal, being here in 1657. A new meeting-house was built in 1663, being probably "twenty-four feet square, and twelve feet stud." It stood in the square near the soldiers' monument, on land purchased of Austin Kilham. The old meeting-house and lot were sold. At this time the church was newly organized and a new covenant

[1] "I have lived, and the course which thou, Christ, gavest me I have finished;
Weary of life, I long for death's sweet repose."

adopted. Mr. Newman was ordained and the meeting-house probably dedicated December 10, 1663. Here he continued his acceptable service until his death, October 15, 1672. He possessed an excellent religious character.

The next minister was Rev. Joseph Gerrish, who was ordained over the church January 13, 1674, after having preaching here about seven months. A gallery was added to the house the same year on account of the increase of the church. In 1688 a new meeting-house was erected on the site of the old one, which was sold and removed. The new one had a turret, and was probably built by Abraham Tilton of Ipswich.

In 1714 the Hamilton people formed a church of their own, and were dismissed from this church. Rev. Mr. Gerrish continued in his service here forty-six years. He died of apoplexy, at the age of seventy years, January 6, 1720. He was born in Newbury March 23, 1650, and graduated at Harvard College in 1669. He studied theology with Rev. Thomas Parker in his native town. He was a man of excellent piety, hospitable, gentlemanly and good. A parsonage was built for him soon after he was settled here, in which he resided. His salary was fifty pounds in money and twenty cords of wood, and the use of the minister's house and land.

The fourth minister was Rev. Robert Ward of Charlestown, who was ordained January 25, 1721–22. He faithfully and honorably served Christ here ten years, dying July 19, 1732, at the age of thirty-seven years. He was born in Charlestown September 23, 1694, and, graduating at Harvard College in 1719, taught the grammar-school at Charlestown for about a year before coming to Wenham. His service here was quite successful.

The fifth pastor of the church was Rev. John Warren, who was ordained January 12, 1733. He was born in Roxbury September 18, 1704, graduated at Harvard College in 1725, and began to preach as early as 1727. During his service here occurred the great revivals of 1740, in which he was prominent. He died here July 15, 1749, at the age of forty-four years, deeply lamented. The year before his death the fourth meeting-house was begun to be built, but was not completed until 1754. It was fifty-two feet long, forty-two feet wide, with twenty-foot posts, and stood on the site of the preceding church. The town voted that the committee appointed to build the meeting-house should "provide on the town charge six gallons of rum, eight pounds of sugar, two barrels of cider, two barrels of beer, one hundred weight of bread, one hundred weight of legs of pork, and forty pounds of cheese,—to be taken care of by said committee on raising day in the prudentest way they can for the end aforesaid."

The next minister, Rev. Joseph Swain of Reading, was ordained October 24, 1750. He was a native of Reading, and graduated at Harvard College in 1744. Mr. Swain served as chaplain in the French and Indian war. He died June 29, 1792, at the age of seventy years, having been the pastor of the church forty-two years. He was a good writer, dull speaker, and reserved in his manners.

The seventh minister was Rev. Adoniram Judson of Malden, who was installed here December 26, 1792. He was born in Woodbury, Conn., June 25, 1751; graduated at Yale College in 1775; and was ordained at Malden, Mass., about 1787, where he remained until 1791, when he resigned. He asked for a dismission at Wenham on account of the smallness of his salary, and was thereupon dismissed October 22, 1799. He was installed at Plymouth, Mass., May 12, 1802; and, having become a Baptist in his religious faith, resigned his pastorate August 12, 1817. He removed to Scituate, and died there November 25, 1826, aged seventy-five years. The distinguished missionary to Burmah of his name was his son.

After Mr. Judson's departure the church was so divided that another minister was not settled until July 10, 1805, when Rev. Rufus Anderson of North Yarmouth, Me., was installed. He was born at Londonderry, N. H., March 5, 1765; graduated at Dartmouth College in 1791; and ordained at North Yarmouth, Me., October 22, 1794. He resigned in 1804, and came to Wenham. He continued here in his acceptable service until February 11, 1814, when he died, of pulmonic consumption, at the age of forty-eight. His funeral sermon, preached by Rev. Samuel Worcester, was published: the text was 2 Tim. i. 12. Mr. Anderson published sermons, and a treatise on baptism. He was blessed with pious parents, who trained, with the aid of the divine Spirit, his quick and strong passions. The following is his epitaph:—

"Piety, benevolence, integrity and fidelity were prominent virtues in his amiable character.

> "Sleep precious dust while here confined in earth,
> Till the glad spring of nature's second birth.
> Then quit the transient winter of the tomb,
> To rise and flourish in immortal bloom."

The ninth minister was Rev. John Smith of Salem, N. H., who was installed November 26, 1817. He was born in Belchertown, Mass., March 5, 1766, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1794. He was afterwards honored with the degree of Doctor of Divinity. He was ordained at Salem, N. H., January 2, 1797, and resigned November 21, 1816. From the church in Wenham, having asked therefor, he was dismissed September 8, 1819, and became a professor of theology at the Bangor Theological Seminary. He died in Bangor, April 7, 1831, at the age of sixty-five. Mr. Smith studied theology with Rev. Dr. Emmons, of Franklin, and was himself possessed of a strong logical mind. He had an impediment in his speech, and was also faulty in manner and style. He discharged his duties faithfully; and was sympathizing, kind and pious, possessed of a firmness of purpose and great perseverance.

Dr. Smith's successor in the pastoral service here was Rev. Ebenezer Peck Sperry, who was installed March 29, 1820. He was born in New Haven, Conn., June 3, 1785, graduated at Middlebury College in 1808, and also at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1810. He was ordained at Dunstable (now Nashua), N. H., November 3, 1813, and resigned in April, 1819. It was during Mr. Sperry's service here that the Sabbath-school originated. "In 1815 Miss Elizabeth Shaw taught a day school and a Sabbath class, in the ancient house west of the town hall." The manual of the church goes on to say, that "she married a Rev. Mr. Nichols, and went as missionary to India; and that the first record of an organized Sabbath-school appears during Mr. Sperry's ministry, although it is stated that a school had been commenced as early as 1818 under Mr. Smith." It was organized in May, 1822, and at first held during the summer months only, but was soon continued the whole of the year. During Mr. Sperry's service was formed also the Baptist Church of Wenham, in 1831, and the Congregational Parish was organized in 1833. Mr. Sperry was dismissed, April 30, 1837, and became chaplain to the South Boston House of Correction, where he remained a little more than a year. He was subsequently settled as pastor at Peru, and afterwards at Lyme, Ohio. He died at Lyme, January 1, 1853, at the age of sixty-seven years. He was a successful minister, fifty-nine persons being believed to have been converted in one revival in 1826.

The eleventh pastor was Rev. Daniel Mansfield of Lynnfield, who was ordained July 26, 1837. He was born in Lynnfield August 8, 1807; graduated at Amherst College in 1833, and at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1836. It was during his ministry here that the present parsonage was built, in 1840, at a cost of two thousand dollars. The present church was also erected during his ministry. It was built by Mr. T. P. Dodge, and was sixty feet wide and forty-five feet long, being situated on land purchased by Deacon Moses Foster, and was dedicated December 29, 1843. Its cost was four thousand dollars. An addition was made to it in 1854. The bell then put in was made by Henry Hooper of Boston, and its weight was about one thousand pounds. Mr. Mansfield died, from the effects of general ill-health, April 8, 1847, aged thirty-nine years. He published two historical discourses delivered at the second centennial anniversary of the organization of the church, and another preached at the dedication of the new church. He was possessed of good talents and sound judgment, and was much appreciated for his modesty, gentleness and fidelity in his Master's service. His parishioners erected a monument to his memory above his grave.

Mr. Mansfield's successor was Rev. Jeremiah Taylor, D.D., who was ordained October 27, 1847. His ordination sermon, delivered by Rev. O. A. Taylor of Manchester, was published. He was dismissed August 19, 1856, to accept a call from the First Congregational Church in Middletown, Conn., where he afterward settled in the ministry. We believe he is now preaching at Providence. Mr. Taylor's enterprise secured the church organ, in 1852, and also the row of elms which line Main Street. He was an able and faithful minister here, and the church and Sunday-school flourished under his guidance.

Rev. John Smith Sewall, D.D., was the thirteenth minister of the church. He was ordained April 20, 1859. After preaching here eight years, he was dismissed April 28, 1867, to accept the professorship of rhetoric and oratory in Bowdoin College. In 1875 he entered upon the professorship of homiletics in the Bangor Theological Seminary. Mr. Sewall was born in Newcastle, Me., March 20, 1830. While preaching in Wenham, for three months in 1864 he was chaplain in the Eighth Massachusetts Regiment. He had a happy temperament, and entered into all the interests of the people.

After Mr. Sewall's dismission, Rev. William R. Joyslin preached here about a year. The next settled pastor was Rev. Will Converse Wood, who was installed October 13, 1870. He served here six years, being dismissed on the sixth anniversary of his installation. He was a graduate of Harvard College and the Andover Theological Seminary, and had preached two years at Lanesville, in Gloucester. He was a writer of marked ability, and the author of "Five Problems of State and Religion."

After Mr. Wood's departure from the town, Rev. Samuel W. Clarke preached for about a year, and he was followed by Rev. Alexander C. Childs, who also remained about a year. The next minister was Rev. John M. Hart, who was ordained December 11, 1878. He was dismissed, after less than a year's service, August 4, 1879, with reluctance, to accept a call from a church in California, which he felt bound to accept on good grounds, especially the ill health of his wife, who could not endure the rigor of a New England climate. Mr. Hart was a graduate of Yale College and of the Union Theological Seminary, New York City.

From 1880 to June, 1884, the pulpit was supplied by Rev. James H. Childs, who came from South Byfield. He was followed, June 26, 1884, by Rev. John C. Mitchell, who preached as the supply of the church until November 1, 1886, when his services were discontinued, because he had imbibed liberalism and departed from the faith of the church. He has since preached occasionally in the town hall to persons who have similar theological inclinations, and is now in Danvers.

The present pastor, Rev. George Masters Woodwell, from Dover, N. H., was ordained here September 14, 1887. He was born in Norwalk, Ohio, May 13, 1857, graduated at Dartmouth College in 1884, and at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1887.

The Sunday-school of the church is quite large, and

has a good-sized library of interesting books. Several gifts have been made to the church at different times. Thomas Fiske, of Wenham, in his will, which was proved in 1723, gave the church ten pounds, and the same year Captain Thomas Fiske donated a communion cup, which is still in existence. It is inscribed,—

"The Gift of Cap't Thomas Fiske
to the Church in wenham : 1723."

Benjamin Fiske, of Wenham, in his will, which was proved in 1742, gave the church five pounds. In 1820 the church received a donation of five hundred dollars for the support of the gospel here from Edmund Kimball of Newburyport. In 1827, the same gentleman gave to the church "six elegant silver cups, bearing his name and the date of the year."

The clock in the tower of the church was erected in May, 1867, by the enterprise of some of the citizens, who gave it to the town about two years afterwards.

Baptist Church.—The Baptist church in Wenham can trace the history of its origin to a movement begun and carried on by Miss Rebecca Goldsmith, a young lady from Haverhill, who was teaching school in the Wenham Neck district, at the close of the eighteenth century. She was a Baptist, and by her earnestness persuaded others to embrace her religious belief. The converts, for several years, attended services at the Baptist church in Danversport. A Baptist church was organized at Beverly in March, 1801, and the Wenham Baptists worshipped there for a quarter of a century. A revival in Wenham in 1826 caused the number of Baptists here to increase, and a meeting-house, fifty-one feet long, and thirty-eight feet wide, surmounted by a tower and steeple, was erected about two miles east from the centre of the town, on the site of the present Baptist church, by Joseph Edwards, at a cost of about two thousand dollars. A bell was added to the tower sometime afterwards. The Baptist society was organized March 23, 1831. The church was founded October 12, 1831, with twenty-five members, eleven males and fourteen females, all dismissed from the First Baptist church in Beverly. The church edifice, free from debt, was dedicated on the same day by appropriate exercises. The sermon at the organization of the church was delivered by Rev. Cyrus P. Grosvenor of Salem, from the text, Amos vii. 12. The dedicatory sermon was preached by Rev. Jonathan Aldrich of Beverly, from Eccl. v. 1. Shortly after the church was organized, several persons were dismissed from the Congregational church to this, and within a year the membership had increased to forty-eight.

The first minister was Rev. Charles Miller, a native of Scotland, who supplied from April 4, 1833, until he was dismissed, April 9, 1835, to become pastor of one of the churches in Boston.

Mr. Miller's successor was Rev. Henry Archibald, who was informally installed August 4, 1836. His pastoral relation with the church and society was dissolved August 3, 1837.

The next minister was Rev. Joel Kenney, a graduate of Bowdoin College, who was ordained June 20, 1838. He was dismissed April 13, 1840, and removed to Sturbridge, where he labored successfully until his health failed. In 1844 he took charge of the church in Conway. In 1846 he became pastor at West Springfield, where he stayed but a year. In 1849 he retired from the ministry, and afterwards made his home in Springfield, where he died July 28, 1880, at the age of seventy-three years.

The church was without a minister for more than a year. The Rev. George W. Patch, a graduate of the Newton Theological Seminary, and a young man of talent and energy, was ordained October 20, 1841. He was dismissed February 27, 1843, to accept a call extended to him by the Baptist church in Sharon. From Sharon he went to Marblehead, in 1848, where he labored in the ministry for twenty-six years. He died in Cambridgeport December 24, 1875, aged fifty-eight years. He was a member of the State Legislature in 1864 and 1865.

The next pastor, Rev. Josiah Keely, a native of England, and for many years resident in America, was ordained December 21, 1843. His pastorate continued for nine years; and he was dismissed, at his own request, November 4, 1852. He afterwards settled at Saco, Me., where he preached some years. Under his care, the church here was prosperous. He was talented, and earnest in his work. Courteous in his manners and enlightened in his views, he was respected and esteemed by the entire town. To be a peace-maker was his most delightful service. He died while serving as a chaplain in the War of the Rebellion.

Mr. Keely was succeeded the next March by Rev. Isaac Woodbury, a native of Hamilton. He was dismissed, at his own request, August 27, 1855, and removed to the West.

The next pastor of the church was Rev. Thomas Wormersly, who was ordained here February 20, 1856. He was a native of England, and a graduate of the Newton Theological Seminary, having been for many years a resident of America.

On the night of November 6, 1859, the church edifice was destroyed by fire. The friends of the church assisted in erecting a new one the following year, its dedication taking place on Christmas day. The sermon was preached by the pastor from Revelation v. 6. In the meantime preaching had been carried on in private houses.

Mr. Wormersly was dismissed April 6, 1862. He was a faithful and beloved pastor, and under his ministrations the church was increased in numbers and spirituality.

Mr. Wormersly's successor was Rev. Abner D. Gorham, who commenced his service here January 1, 1863, and still remains here, after twenty-five years

of faithful labor. He is a native of Tisbury, Martha's Vineyard, and was educated at Madison University.

The Sunday-school connected with the church was established at the same time. The library of the school consists of five hundred volumes.

The parsonage was built in 1834 at a cost of about fifteen hundred dollars. It is a neat and comfortable house, two stories in height, and situated in a quiet and pleasant spot. In 1873 a commodious chapel was built at a cost of about twelve hundred dollars, and was dedicated in August of that year, free from debt. Legacies have been left to the church by Mrs. Prudence Dodge and by Mrs. Susan Lord of Beverly, a native of Wenham.

The fiftieth anniversary of the constitution of the church was observed in October, 1881, by public exercises.

Military History.—Wenham had its military company at a very early date. Thomas Fiske was the leading military man for many years in the early settlement of the town. He was chosen "clerk of ye band to ye company 28: 9: 1654." October 10, 1683, the General Court "ordered that Thomas Fiske be captaine of the foot company at Wenham, Charles Gott be his leiftenñt, & W^m. Fiske his ensigne." In 1789 Thomas Kimball was captain. The town-house now stands on the old training-field of two hundred years ago, whose western bonndary was the street. The town had its own military company until the old militia throughout the State was disbanded, about 1840.

The first military conflicts in New England with which the settlers had to do were with the Indians. The most serious conflict that Wenham people took part in was the War of King Philip, in 1675 and 1676. The Indians saw the gradual encroachment of the English settlers upon their domains. They saw their favorite streams and ponds, their loved hunting-grounds and dwelling sites taken possession of, one after another, by the pale faces; and they sought by this war to exterminate the families already living here, and to prevent new settlements. To be sure, some of the tribes remained friendly to the English, but most of them joined King Philip in his last struggle to recover the possessions of their fathers. The savages might have accomplished their purpose had not that Power, that can give the heathen for an inheritance, come to their aid and gave the settlers success. The savages fought against hope and with the energy of despair. Hundreds of the whites were killed and town after town destroyed. Decisive measures were at length determined upon by the colonies, and a force of five hundred and fifty men were collected in Massachusetts Colony. Some had volunteered in Wenham, among whom were Thomas Abby and Caleb Kimball to join the little army, and five—Mark Batchelder, Richard Hutton, Thomas Kimball, Samuel Moulton and Philip Welch—were impressed from the Wenham Company by Thomas Fiske, who was then sergeant, November 30, 1675. These troops, with others from the Plymouth and Connecticut colonies, made a forced march through the deep snows to a swamp in the country of the Narragansetts, in Rhode Island, where the Indians had erected a fort, which the English called Fort Narragansett, and gathered their bravest warriors. They reached the fort December 19, 1675, and, notwithstanding they had camped out the preceding night, "with no other covering than a cold and moist fleece of snow," and had marched nineteen miles that day, wading through the drifts, the troops rushed to the attack at once. The Indians retreated to the middle of the swamp, where they had fortified an island, five or six acres in area, with palisades and a hedge nearly a rod thick. The English attacked and drove them to the centre of their fort, where the whole mass, there being three times as many Indians as English, was quickly engaged in a desperate and deadly struggle, which resulted at a great cost in favor of the latter. About one-fifth of the English soldiers were killed, and most of them wounded. Of those who went from Wenham, Mark Batchelder and Caleb Kimball were killed, and Thomas Abby wounded. John Fiske also served in the war, and was wounded. Others from Wenham took part in this conflict, but their names have not yet been determined.

Wenham was apprehensive that it might be assaulted by the Indians, and in 1691 voted, and chose a committee, to build a fortification, probably a sort of garrison house. Probably the vote was never acted upon, as nothing is afterwards mentioned regarding it.

In the Andros revolution of 1688, the people of Wenham were interested; and, on its happy termination, a public town-meeting of thanksgiving was held May 6, 1689.

Some of the people of Wenham took part in the French War. By the records we find that Thomas Perkins and Thomas Pousland were killed in an attempt to take the Island Battery, in 1745; and that Israel Porter died at Cape Breton, August 10, 1745.

The people here took a more prominent part in the French and Indian War, which began in 1756. Some of the inhabitants served in the regiment commanded by Colonel Ichabod Plaisted of Salem; their chaplain being Rev. Mr. Swain, pastor of the Wenham church, who accompanied the regiment in the expedition to Crown Point. By the records we learn that Eli Meservy died "in ye army" at Ticonderoga July 8, 1758, and Isaac Dodge at Cape Breton in 1759.

In 1756, the French, who occupied Acadia, as Nova Scotia was then called, having broken their agreement to remain neutral in the conflicts between the French and English, were removed to the English provinces and scattered through the many towns therein. Wenham had four to provide for. They were of one family, all females, consisting of a mother and her three daughters, one of whom was too young to earn

her own support, and the mother old and incapable of working. Her name was La Jeau Deparis. They were received in Wenham February 9, 1756. The mother evidently died in 1757, and after that time the family only consisted of three persons. The family are supposed to have occupied the place lately known as Herrick's Corner. The house was then owned by Jonathan Porter. Dr. Allen says, in his history, that they "were finally disposed of December 20, 1762, to Dr. Putnam of Danvers."

The Revolutionary era approached soon after the termination of the French and Indian War. At a public town-meeting held June 30, 1773, it was voted, that the town was of the "opinion that the rights of the colonies, and of this in particular, are infringed upon in many instances, therefore it is a great grievance to all His Majesty's loyal subjects, and has a direct tendency to the destruction of our happy constitution." The people were thereafter gradually and thoroughly prepared for the opening incidents of the first year of the fearful struggle on the battle-field. A good stock of ammunition was kept on hand. An anecdote, showing the spirit of the Wenham people, is related as follows: William Fairfield at that time lived in the house lately occupied by William Porter. Some British troops were marching across the country, and, as they ascended the little eminence by the burial-ground, their uniforms were suddenly seen by several people, who proposed to flee, but Mrs. Fairfield manfully stood her ground crying, "not a step; give me a spit, and I'll pepper one of the villains." Armed with this rude weapon, she stood ready to receive the invaders, who, however, passed on their way without meeting her.

At the beginning of the year 1775 Wenham had one militia company. At the request of the Province a company of minute men were then formed, and prepared themselves to march at a moment's warning. On the morning of the battle of Lexington, the two companies set out for the scene of conflict, which was reached too late for them to participate in the fight. The militia company, consisting of thirty-seven men, was commanded by Capt. Thomas Kimball; the company of minute-men contained twenty-one men, and was comanded by Capt. Billy Porter; and both the companies were reckoned as a part of the regiment of Col. John Baker.

The following men from Wenham served until August 1, 1775, in the company of Captain Ebenezer Francis in Colonel Mansfield's regiment: Billy Porter, first lieutenant, Hatfield White, second lieutenant, Nathaniel Ober, sergeant, Ezra Kimball, corporal, and eleven privates; and also the following served to August 1, 1775, in the company of Captain Benjamin Kimball, in the same regiment: John Dodge, lieutenant, Samuel Ober, sergeant, Asa Porter and Benjamin Brown, corporals, Billy Dodge, fifer, and two privates. Many, if not all, of these men undoubtedly took part in the battle of Bunker Hill.

July 20, 1776, Josiah Moulton died of a wound received on board a privateer; and January 21, 1777, Israel Batcheller died of small-pox in the army.

Some men went out in the company of Captain John Dodge, in Colonel Pickering's regiment, for service in New Jersey, being called therefore the Jersey company. These were three and a half months in service, marching from home December 16, 1777. The company numbered fifty-six men, John Tenny being first lieutenant, and Moses Scott, second lieutenant.

In Captain John Dodge's company in Colonel Jacob Gerrish's regiment April 1, 1778, there were seventy-two men.

Six six-months' men from Wenham enlisted in 1780 to reinforce the Continental army.

William Kimball served as a private in 1781, for five months, in Captain John Robinson's company in Colonel William Turner's regiment.

The History of Wenham says that one hundred and thirty-seven men from Wenham served in the Revolutionary army, some for a long and some for a short period. The town also spent much money towards carrying on the war. Up to December 23, 1776, it had paid out for this purpose five hundred and seventy-four pounds, five shillings, and sixpence since the battle of Lexington, and about a year and a half previously. The town regularly appointed a committee of safety and correspondence, who had to a certain extent the charge of the struggle. December 9, 1776, it was resolved by the town to supply the families of the soldiers, who were engaged in the continental army, with corn, pork, beef, wood, wool, flax and sauce; and Jacob Dodge, Thomas Kimball and Peter Dodge were chosen a committee for that purpose.

The people of Wenham, though suffering as much as the others in the province, supported the government which they fought to establish, when others sought its overthrow on account of the great burden of taxation which was imposed upon the people. Some of the old soldiers of the Revolution again buckled on their swords, and marched, under the command of Colonel Wade of Ipswich, to suppress the insurrection created by Daniel Shay in 1787.

In the war of 1812, although opposing the policy which inaugurated it, Wenham did what it could to sustain the honor of the country in the field, both with men and money. Some enlisted on privateers, and others in the United States army, and fought valiantly in those hardly-contested battles. An alarm came to Wenham that the enemy had landed at Salem; and the company of militia were immediately prepared to march, when, after bidding adieu to loved ones, news arrived refuting the report. The treaty of Ghent was welcomed by the people here.

One more season of warfare remains to complete the story of Wenham's military service. Not inferior to any that had preceded it in suffering or in loss, in

this conflict for the supremacy of the Union, huge armies opposed to huge armies swayed back and forth for five long fearful years. The rebellion stands out prominently as *the* war of modern times. Commencing with the shot fired on Sumter, it ended with the emancipation of millions of slaves and the establishment of the control of the general Government over the States. At the first call of President Lincoln, the young men of Wenham quickly responded. One hundred and thirty men in all from this town were in the service. The pastor of the Congregational Church, Rev. John S. Sewall, served as chaplain, and the physician of the town, Dr. John L. Robinson, as assistant-surgeon, in the Eighth Regiment. Dr. Arthur Kemble was assistant-surgeon in the navy on the "Gemsbok." Others from Wenham served in the navy on the "Young Rover," "Malvern," "Ino," "Cyane," "Kearsarge" (when she sunk the "Alabama), "Wachusett," tugboat "Delta," and "Congress," on which was Elbridge Porter, when the "Cumberland" was sunk by the Confederate ram "Merrimac" in Hampton Roads.

On the field of battle Wenham boys were killed in the battles of Cedar Mountain, Antietam, Gaines' Mill, Olustee, Fla., and Cedar Creek; and one was shot in the battle of Cedar Mountain, and laid on the field two days and two nights for dead. Others were wounded in the battles of Spottsylvania, Chattanooga, Cedar Mountain, Gettysburg and in the guerilla fight in the Bonfocia expedition. Others fought in the battles before Petersburg, Ressacca, Ga., Chancellorsville, Winchester, Cedar Mountain, Gettysburg, in Banks' Retreat, Antietam, Beverly-ford, Yorktown, Williamsburg, Chickahominy, Seven Days' Fight at Fair Oaks, Malvern Hill, Fredericksburg, Second Bull Run, Siege of Newbern, Kinston, Goldsboro', Whitehall, South West Creek, Blount's Mills, Roanoke Island, Cold Harbor, Olustee, Fla., and Drury's Bluff, and some were with the Army of the Potomac. Four of the Wenham soldiers were imprisoned in Andersonville Prison; four in Millen Prison, one of whom died there; one in Libby; and one in the prison on Belle Island.

The list of those who died in the service is as follows:—John H. Bailey, Aaron D. Barnes, Israel D. Barnes, Orville L. Brown, Addison A. Center, William Clark, Hugh F. Corbett (in the navy), Peter Dodge (killed in battle of Gaines' Mill June 27, 1862), John Dudley, James A. Evans (drowned in crossing Shenandoah River, three miles below Edinburg, Va., April 9, 1862), Thomas H. Gray (killed in battle of Cedar Mountain August 9, 1862), Charles H. Henderson (killed in battle at Olustee, Fla., February 20, 1864), Henry H. Homan, Frederick W. Howland, Benjamin A. Ingersoll (died in Millen Prison October 19, 1864), Dennis H. Kane (killed in battle of Cedar Creek, Va., October 19, 1864), Charles Kirman, Harlan P. Merrill, James Obrien (killed at battle of Antietam, Md., September 17, 1862), Daniel H. Peabody, Moses P. Quimby, John M. Rowe, David Shea, Dennis Sullivan, Bradford H. Trowt, Thomas Turney and Stephen G. Tuttle.

Edwin Mudge, Esq., of Danvers represented the towns of Danvers and Wenham in the State Legislature in 1868 and 1869, and gave his salary to the town of Wenham, for the purpose of erecting a monument to the memory of the soldiers and sailors of Wenham who served in the Rebellion. Mr. Mudge's fund had amounted to five hundred and fifty dollars in 1878, when the town, by appropriations and subscriptions, raised a thousand dollars to be added to it. A suitable monument, made of marble, surmounted with the figure of a soldier, was erected in 1878. The total height is twenty-five feet. It is made of granite, quarried in Mason, N. H., and the statue was made by Alexander McDonald. Its total cost was $1476.91. It is surrounded by an iron fence. The monument was dedicated with appropriate exercises on Memorial Day, 1879. The speaker on the occasion was Rev. Isaac F. Porter, a native of the town. On the right and left sides of the monument are the names of the soldiers who died in the service. The inscription on the front side is as follows:—

IN HONOR
OF THE
SOLDIERS AND SAILORS,
OF WENHAM
WHO DEFENDED
THE UNION
IN THE WAR OF THE
REBELLION.
ERECTED 1878.

Some of the soldiers in the rebellion were encamped on a plain near the depot during the conflict.

Schools, Libraries, etc.—The fathers of New England sought a common educational system, making the means of obtaining the benefit of an education equally accessible to both rich and poor. In the earliest small settlements this was accomplished as best it could at home, the parents feeling it to be their duty to instruct their children in the elements of learning. Books in those days were rare and costly, while the flood of reading material which is scattered broadcast to-day was then a thing, which would have been witchery to have dreamed of. Before schools were established the people of Wenham had acquired considerable education. Upon a complaint being made to the General Court, the town, September 9, 1700, appointed Captain Thomas Fiske to keep school to teach children and youth to read and write, and as his pay therefor he was to have what the parents, etc., of the scholars would pay and the amount of his taxes. The next year the town voted that if he could not get sufficient payment for his services in that way, it would pay the balance. The school was probably at first kept at the house of Captain Fiske, who was again chosen schoolmaster in De-

cember, 1701, and also in 1702. In the last named year, ladies began teaching school here. It was then "voted that the selectmen have full power to agree with such school-dames as are necessary to learn children to read." This is a very early date for ladies to be employed in teaching. In 1705, William Rogers was appointed schoolmaster. In 1709 it was "voted that the selectmen are empowered to agree with three school-dames to teach children for to read, and a schoolmaster to learn young people to write and cypher, and to engage forty shillings for their service." In 1710 Mr. Rogers was reappointed schoolmaster. In 1718–19 Mr. Rogers and Daniel Dodge were chosen to keep school, and each of them to have sixpence for each head per week. They all attended school at one place doubtless until 1733, when Nathaniel Brown was agreed with by the selectmen, "to keep a writing and reading school for the year ensuing; and whereas it is impracticable for all the children to come together in one place, it is covenanted and agreed that he be allowed to teach little children to read by suitable women, in the several parts of the town, that he shall agree with, by the approbation of the selectmen; also to teach to write by another man, in another part of the town." In 1735–36, Daniel Fiske sold to the town of Wenham about five square rods of land in the west end of the town, provided that it will thereon erect a school-house and maintain a school yearly therein. The school-house was built in 1739. In the latter year the town raised thirty pounds for the support of schools. This was the first appropriation of the town, properly speaking, for that purpose. November 30, 1742, Jonathan Perkins was agreed with to keep a school. The selectmen then had charge of the schools; hiring the teacher, the beginning and termination of the sessions, and the place where it should be kept. The first school committee in Wenham was appointed in 1772. In 1746 Mrs. Elizabeth Kimball was "approved of and approbated to keep school in our town, to teach children and youth to read and write, she having behaved in sober conversation." The history says that "three different schools continued to be supported in different sections of the town, and separate teachers employed for them, until the year 1770, when it was voted, that 'a grammar-school be constantly kept in this town, the year ensuing, and that provision be made for the support of the same.' It was moreover voted 'that a committee be chosen to provide a schoolmaster, and to apportion said school, according to the tax in this town.' This school, which seems to have been removed from district to district as occasion required, was continued for several years. In 1779, it was taught by Rev. Mr. Swain, in addition to his pulpit and pastoral labors." The old system of three schools, and division of the money among them equally, was resumed in 1782.

Since 1817, the general superintendence of the schools has been entrusted to a committee annually chosen by the town for that purpose. The town has now five schools, grammar, primary and three mixed schools, known as the East, West and Neck Schools. Wenham's portion of the surplus revenue of the United States, distributed in 1837, was deposited with trustees for three years, and then divided among the several districts to aid in erecting and repairing school-houses. The town appropriated the present year (1887) sixteen hundred dollars for schools. Last year (1886) eighteen hundred and ninety dollars were paid out for schools.

An attempt was made in 1810 to establish an academy here. Later, private schools have been attempted several times. Mr. C. L. Edwards opened a private school in the Town Hall, as soon as it was in occupancy, in 1854. He remained about a year, and was succeeded by Mr. Francis M. Dodge, a native of Wenham, and a graduate of Waterville College. He continued the school two years, quite successfully. The room was afterwards and is now occupied by the grammar school.

Wenham has produced a good number of college graduates; and many others have attended Dummer and other academies.

For many years a public library was among the valuable acquisitions of the town; but on account of lack of funds, the books having grown old, new ones were not bought, and the interest in it failed. Some years ago a new library was formed. It is in a flourishing condition, the town this year (1887) having made an appropriation of more than a hundred dollars for it. Last year the town paid for its support one hundred and three dollars and sixty-six cents. It now contains nine hundred and thirteen volumes, which have a good circulation.

Business and Manufacturing Interests.—The business history of Wenham in many respects is quite interesting. The history of its old-style taverns, if it could be correctly written, would be delightful to read. From its earliest days the town had its public-house. March 7, 1643–44, William Fiske received authority to keep a tavern from the General Court, as follows: "Willi: Fiske is appointed & alowed to keepe an ordinary at Wennam." November 13, 1644, by the same authority, "Willi: Fiske, of Wennam, hath liberty to sell wine." Mr. Fiske died in 1654, and in the inventory of his estate is mentioned a sign and sign-post. He continued in business until 1647. His successor was Phineas Fiske, who was granted authority by the General Court October 27, 1647, as follows: "Phineas Fiske is granted to keepe an ordinary in Wenham." May 10, 1648, by the same authority, "Phineas Fiske, of Wenham, is alowed license to draw wine there for this yeare ensuing," and three days later he "hath libtie giuen to sell wine for this year ensuinge." Samuel Foster was chosen by the town in 1654, and Walter Fairfield January 3, 1680, to keep the ordinary. March 18,

1684–85, the General Court licensed John Fiske, "a sore wounded soldier in the late Indian War, to keep a public-house of entertainment." Woodward and Fairfield were licensed to sell liquor September 28, 1686. August 7, 1694, the County Court licensed Ezekiel Woodward as an inn holder "at the sign of y^e^ flower de luce." Thomas Fiske, Jr., was licensed to sell liquor in June, 1693, and the license was renewed in 1695 and 1696. A Mr. Symonds was the landlord in 1705 and 1706. Joseph Dodge was chosen to keep the public-house in 1709. He continued for several years. Ebenezer Kemball was the landlord in 1720. Jonathan Porter was an inn-holder here from about 1730 to 1755 and later. He lived a short distance west of the soldiers' monument. William Rogers was licensed as an inn-holder here in 1732. At the close of the Revolution there was a tavern kept at the sign of the "sun." Patty Lewis was the inn-holder here in 1799. From 1796 to 1798 Col. Paul Porter kept a tavern and store where the horse car stable is now located. It was afterwards kept at the same place by John Thorn Dodge, Esq., for several years, and he was followed by Thomas Barnes. Ezra Lummus, who was also postmaster and blacksmith, kept a tavern here for eight or ten years from 1827, in the brick house which he built for that purpose. He was a free-mason, and his sign consisted of his name, "E. Lummus, 1827," and the painting of a square and compass. William H. Bryant, in 1851, commenced keeping tavern in the Old Parvern building, which was taken down in 1853. He then opened the "Green House," so called, on the east end of the Common, and carried on the business here until all the buildings on the premises were burned, soon after midnight, on the 18th of April, 1869. The Union Block now occupies the same site. The present public-house, run by Mr. Stephen Currier, was opened in 1886, and its sign bears the words, "Enon Hotel."

Wenham has no water-power worthy of more than a mere mention. Miles' River, running through the easterly part of the town, is the principal stream. It is sluggish, and therefore offers no great water privileges, although in former times, two places, at which there are falls of a few feet, were improved to turn the machinery of a saw and grist-mill. As early as 1653 a mill, probably built by Goodman Hawes, was located here probably on the farm where Mr. David Pingree now lives. In 1682 John Dodge had a saw-mill. In 1691 there was a saw-mill near Lord's Hill, and John Porter and James Friend had liberty to flow the brook. In 1700 and 1701 there was a saw-mill where John Leach then resided. There was a grist-mill as early as 1686. In 1712 Josiah Dodge's corn-mill was situated a short distance above the ford. Mr. Henry Dodge has a steam saw-mill at the present time, at East Wenham. In 1699 Ensign John Porter was granted timber for a small malt-mill, to be set on the brook by his house.

The first blacksmith mentioned as having a shop in Wenham was Abraham Martin, to whom the town voted on the 11th of the first month, 1670, to give two acres of land if he shall follow his trade here seven years. Robert Symonds was a blacksmith in 1697. Josiah Bridges moved from Boxford, and was a blacksmith here from 1713 to February, 1715, when he died. Daniel Herrick was the blacksmith in 1773. Pelatiah Brown had a shop, and worked at his trade of a blacksmith here in the Revolutionary period, where the house of Mr. Benjamin F. Young is now situated. Ezra Lummus, the postmaster and inn-holder, was a blacksmith from about 1827 to about 1837. John J. Senter was a blacksmith at two periods; and George A. Lummus from about 1849 to 1875. Uzziel Dodge established a shop here about 1790, and ran the business a term of years. He was followed in the same shop by Jabez Richards, who was succeeded by Daniel Bradbury, about 1840. Mr. Bradbury, in 1882, sold out to Mr. Charles F. Dudley, who has since continued the blacksmithing business at the old stand. The other blacksmith is Mr. Henry H. Dempsey; both shops being located in Central Square.

Tanning hides was carried on here quite extensively at different times. In 1707 the town granted to Daniel MacClaflin sixty square rods of common land, on condition that he set up a tanner's yard. In 1708 he had liberty to dam up the brook; and in 1721 the land was given to him free from the condition. Samuel Gott carried on the tanning business from about 1725 for about forty years, on land now belonging to Mr. Michael Sullivan, situated across the street from the residence of Mr. Joseph G. Kent. Slight depressions in the ground still mark the precise spot of some of the old vats. This was one of the largest tanneries then operated in Essex County. A Mr. Flint had a tannery here for a few years about sixty years ago. He sold out to William Cleaves, and went to New Boston, N. H. The property was afterwards sold to Augustus Dodge, who filled up the old vats.

A kindred business is that carried on by Messrs. Austin C. Patch and Amos Gould, under the firm-name of Patch & Gould, who are morocco manufacturers. They established their business January 1, 1884, and built their new factory in 1886. They do quite an extensive business, using steam-power.

Charles B. Lander of Salem bought of the town of Wenham, the tract of land extending from the lake to the highway, including the hill on which Hugh Peters had preached, and removed the hill. On the level area thus made, he erected large ice-houses and run a branch railroad to them from the Eastern Railroad track. Mr. Lander established the business in 1843, and continued to do a large business in furnishing the world with the famous Wenham Lake ice until about 1850, when he sold out to Addison Gage & Co., who continued the business until 1882.

Since that date nothing has been done at this place. In its best days the company cut annually about twenty-five thousand tons of ice, valued at forty thousand dollars. The ice is now mainly cut on the Beverly shore of the lake.

Boots and shoes were manufactured here for many years. Amos Gould was engaged in the manufacture of boots from about 1834 to 1875, at his residence at the Centre.

Edward Perkins began manufacturing boots in a small shop at Samuel Porter's residence, in December, 1844, and added shoes to his products the following June. He moved into the shop of Edward Perkins (his great uncle) in the summer of 1847, and was afterwards a partner with Abram Patch about eight months. Mr. Patch had commenced manufacturing boots and shoes in "Egypt" in 1845, two years later removed to the place where Mr. George Howe now lives, manufactured there a few months, and in September, 1847, went into partnership with Edward Perkins, as above stated. In May, 1848, they dissolved partnership, and Mr. Patch went back to the Howe place, and continued to manufacture there until February, 1854. He removed to Danvers the May following. Then John P. Rust became a partner with Mr. Perkins, and they built a new shop near the Wenham line in Hamilton, removing thither in June, 1849. They dissolved their partnership in February, 1850, and, in April, Mr. Perkins moved the shop to where it now stands in Wenham, it being now the dwelling-house of Jeremiah Kavanagh, and opened a store in connection with his shoe business with Dr. Nathan Jones. About a year afterwards Mr. Jones went out of the firm, and his place was taken by his son, Nathan A. Jones. Mr. Jones afterwards sold his interest to Daniel J. Foster. In 1853 the firm built a larger factory a little west of the house of Mrs. S. A. Gould. Mr. Foster left the partnership and James H. Perkins took his place. The firm dissolved in 1856. Mr. Perkins then manufactured shoes alone in a shop near the brick house until May 25, 1858, when he removed to Lynn. George W. Peabody manufactured heavy brogans at West Wenham from 1846 to 1862. Arthur L. Merrill manufactured shoes in a shop on Larch Street in 1865 and 1866. He was succeeded in the spring of 1870 by Samuel K. Evans, who afterwards removed to Union Block, where he continued his business for about a year afterwards. Abraham A. Fiske and Mr. Evans formed a partnership in February, 1873, and manufactured shoes together until January, 1876. Then Mr. Evans continued the business at the same place for about a year. Mr. Albert R. Fiske of Peabody bought the John Meldram estate, built a factory and manufactured shoes here from May, 1870, till the spring of 1876, when he removed from the town, and his brother, Abraham A. Fiske, continued the business until the factory was burned on the night of January 10, 1878. Deacon James H. Moulton manufactured shoes here in Mr. Dempsey's blacksmith shop from May 1, 1873, to May 1, 1878, and in Union Block from May 1, 1878, to July 1, 1882. In 1855 there were manufactured in Wenham four thousand and two hundred pairs of boots and twenty-five thousand pairs of shoes, of the estimated value of twenty thousand dollars, and in the manufacture of which were employed forty-six males and twenty females.

Wenham has several stores. Messrs. A. D. and W. F. Trowt keep a country store; Mr. James H. Perkins, Jr., deals in dry-goods; and Mr. George H. Wyatt is a grocer. Colonel Paul Porter kept a country grocery at his tavern in 1797 and 1798. It was situated where the horse-car stable now stands. About 1808 he built the house recently owned and occupied by the late Amos Gould, and kept a grocery store in the western end of it until 1813. In that year David Perkins of Topsfield and Nathaniel Perkins of Wenham bought the estate and business, which they carried on until they sold out to Samuel Clarke in 1823. In 1824 the stand was purchased by John S. Felton of Danvers, who sold, the following year, to Major David Starrett, a former clerk, who was then keeping a store at Herrick's Corner.[1] Mr. Starrett continued the business here, and after a while bought a building in North Beverly, moved it to Wenham, and fitted it up for his place of trade. He carried on the business until his death in March, 1845. Nathaniel Perkins, who came from Topsfield, opened a store in a small building located near the house of the late Henry Perkins in the fall of 1844. Mr. Benjamin Clayton Putnam, who was from Danvers, went into partnership with him in April, 1845. John A. Putnam, also from Danvers, bought out Mr. Perkins' interest in the business the following fall. Mr. Perkins was then in ill health, and died not long afterwards. The two Putnams built a new store, on a lot of land purchased of the late Dr. John Porter, located some five or six rods westerly of the soldiers' monument, in the fall and winter following, and moved into it in the spring of 1846. They continued in business together till the fall of 1856, when they failed. Mr. B. C. Putnam then conducted the business alone till 1860, when Mr. H. L. Eaton and Nathaniel S. Gould became his partners. Mr. Eaton retired in 1861, and the partnership between the other two terminated in the fall of the same year, Mr. Putnam removing from town in the spring of 1862. They made it their business to have on hand every article called for,—dry goods, groceries, hardware, crockery and glassware, boots and shoes, clothing, flour, meal and grain, agricultural implements, etc. Mr. Gould then conducted the business until sickness compelled his retirement in 1866. Messrs. William W. Fowler and Elisha P. Chapman then had the store. Mr. Chapman withdrew about 1869,

[1] A Mrs. Sweet and Samuel Ober had kept store at Herrick's Corner before Mr. Starrett.

and Mr. Fowler continued the business until the store was burned on the morning of May 23, 1870. A Mr. Rice kept a dry-goods store in the same building, and after the fire opened his trade in the new Union Block, where he stayed but a short period.

The Union Block, built by a company called the Wenham Co-operative Union, in 1870, was used as a store by the Union until the store and business was sold at public auction, in October, 1880. The purchasers were A. D. and W. F. Trowt, who then commenced the business which they still carry on.

Charles W. Batchelder erected a building on Main Street, and in it sold dry goods, boots and shoes, etc. He gave up business in 1884, and Mrs. Julia P. Messer afterwards occupied the store for about two years. Since the fall of 1885, it has been occupied by James H. Perkins, Jr., with his apothecary business, and a dry-goods and boot and shoe trade. G. D. and Austin S. Richards kept a country store in the store that Edward Perkins built from the spring of 1858 to the spring of 1860.

Mr. George W. Parsons is a wholesale dealer in salt, smoked, pickled and dry fish; and boneless codfish is his specialty. He commenced his business September 1, 1874, and has usually employed two or three hands to prepare the boneless fish.

The people of Wenham are in general agriculturists; the soil being fertile and finely adapted to cultivation. The farms and farm buildings, as well as the village, are neatly kept.

Distinguished Residents and Natives.—We have already spoken of several distinguished and professional residents and natives of Wenham in connection with the history of the churches and the practice of medicine. There are some other residents who ought to be mentioned. Samuel Blanchard, Esq., was a prominent resident of the town during the early part of the present century. Hon. Timothy Pickering resided here for many years during the intervals of retirement from active life. He was very fond of agriculture, and was the first president of the Essex Agricultural Society. After a long life of eighty-three years, having been a general in the Revolution, judge of the Court of Common Pleas, and of the Maritime Court, Postmaster-General of the United States, Secretary of War, Secretary of State of the United States, member of Congress and United States Senator, he died in Salem January 29, 1829.

Wenham has produced a goodly number of distinguished people. Besides those we have enumerated in other parts of this sketch, the following are deserving of special mention among the distinguished and professional natives of the town:—

Rev. Moses Fiske (1642–1708) graduated at Harvard College in 1662, and was a clergyman at Quincy, Mass.

Hon. William Fairfield (1662–1742) was speaker, in 1741, of the House of Representatives in the State Legislature.

Rev. Phineas Fiske (1682–1749), who graduated at Yale College in 1704, was a tutor in that college, and pastor of a church at Haddam, Conn. He was also an eminent physician.

Dr. Tyler Porter (1735–1811) was a physician, and patriot in the Revolution.

Dr. Josiah Fairfield (1746–1794) was a physician in Pepperell borough, Me.

Hon. Daniel Kilham (1751–1841) graduated at Harvard College in 1777; and was a member of both branches of the State Legislature, and of the Governor's Council; and an apothecary in Newburyport.

Rev. John Kimball (1761–1824) graduated at Harvard College in 1792, and was a clergyman in Acworth, N. H.

Dr. Benjamin Jones Porter (1763–1847) was a surgeon in the army of the Revolution; physician in Scarboro', Westbrook, and Portland, Me.; fellow and treasurer of Bowdoin College; and a councillor and State Senator.

Henry Porter (1809–1851) was the inventor of Porter's Burning Fluid, and a nurse lamp.

Rev. Francis Elliott Cleaves (1816–1883) was a Baptist clergyman at East Sanbornton, N. H., North Reading and Littleton, Mass., and New Boston, N. H., respectively.

Rev. John Henry Dodge (1828–1863) graduated at Amherst College in 1856, and from Andover Theological Seminary in 1859; and was a missionary to West Africa.

Edward Kimball (1835), who graduated at Amherst College, was president of the Boston Board of Trade, and a merchant in Boston.

Rev. Isaac Francis Porter (1839) graduated at Madison University in 18—, and is a Unitarian clergyman at Chicopee, Mass.

Arthur Kemble, M. D. (1839), graduated at Boston Medical School, was assistant surgeon in the War of the Rebellion, on the bark "Gemsbok," and is now practicing in Salem, Mass.

Dr. John Franklin Robinson (1863) graduated at the Harvard Medical School, and is a surgeon at Manchester, N. H.

MEMBERS OF THE STATE LEGISLATURE.

1644. Joseph Batchelder.
1645. Mr. Sparrowhawk.
1646. Mr. Auditor.
1647. Wm. Fisk.
1648. Esdras Reade.
1649–50. Wm. Fiske.
1651. Esdras Reade.
1652. Wm. Fiske.
1653. Phineas Fiske.
1654. Chas. Gott.
1666. Chas. Gott.
1669. John Fisk.
1671–72. Thos. Fisk.
1678–80. Thos. Fisk.
1681. John Fisk.
1686. Thos. Fisk.
1692. Walter Fairfield.
1694. Thos. Fiske.
1697. Thos. Fiske.
1698–99. John Newman.
1700. Walter Fairfield.
1701. Wm. Fisk.
1702. John Newman.
1704. Mr. Thos. Patch, Sr.
1704–6. Dea. Wm. Fisk.
1707–8. Thos. Patch.
1709–11. Wm. Fisk.
1712. John Porter.
1713–14. Wm. Fisk.
1715. Capt. Thos. Fisk.
1716. Dea. Wm. Fiske.
1717–19. Wm. Rogers.
1720–21. Ens. John Gott.
1722. Wm. Rogers.
1723. Wm. Fairfield.
1724. Lieut. John Porter.
1725. Wm. Rogers.
1726. John Porter.

1727. Lieut. Samuel Kimball.
1728–30. Wm. Fairfield.
1731. Wm. Rogers.
1732–41. Wm. Fairfield.
1743–44. John Dodge.
1745–47. Jonathan Porter.
1751. John Dodge.
1767. Benj. Fairfield.
1774–75. Benj. Fairfield.
1791–92. Major Billy Porter.
1796–1800. Samuel Blanchard.
1803. Samuel Blanchard, Esq.
1808–10. Samuel Blanchard, Esq.
1811–13. John Dodge.
1815–18. Paul Porter.
1820. John T. Dodge, Esq.[1]
1828–30. Paul Porter.
1831–33. Moses Foster.
1834–35. John Porter.
1836–37. Moses Foster.
1839. Benj. Edwards.
1840–41. Andrew Dodge.
1842. Franklin Hadley.
1843. Joseph Cook.
1847. Edmund Kimball, Jr.
1849. Amos Gould.
1851. John Porter.
1852. Moses Mildram.
1854. Benj. C. Putnam.
1854. John A. Putnam.[2]
1855. Orin Mildram.
1858. Francis M. Dodge.
1862. Benj. C. Putnam.
1870. Abbott Johnson.
1875. Dr. John L. Robinson.
1880. Henry Hobbs.
1885. Nathaniel P. Perkins.

TOWN TREASURERS.—In the early history of the town there were no town treasurers bearing that title; the constables performing the duties of a treasurer, collector of taxes, etc. The following is a list of the constables, as far as the records show, down to 1695, when treasurers began to be chosen, followed by the list of treasurers:

1644. Phineas Fiske.
1654. John Fiske.
1655. Robt. Hawes.
1657. Jas. Moulton.
1667. Jas. Moulton, Jr.
1669. Henry Kimball.
1670. Wm. Fiske.
1671. Wm. Fiske.
John Abby.
1672. Wm. Fiske.
1673. Thos. Hobbs, Sr.
Richard Dodge.
1674. Thos. Hobbs.
Thos. Patch.
1676. John Fiske.
—— Fairfield.
1677. Samuel Kemball.
1678. Richard Hutton, Sr.
1679. Samuel Moulton.
1680. Thos. Fiske, Jr.
1681. Henry Haget.
1682. Robert Hibbert.
1683. John Porter.
1684. John Edwards.
1685. John Bare.
1686. Benj. Edwards.
1687. John Perkins.
1688. Samuel Fiske.
1689. Thos. Kimball.
1690. Samuel Fiske.
1691. John Dodge.
1692. Wm. Fairfield.
1693. Nathl. Waldron.
Chas. Gott, Jr.
1694. Jos. Fowler.

TOWN TREASURERS.

1695. Lieut. Chas. Gott.
1696–97. Capt. Thos. Fiske.
1700. Sergt. Thos. Patch.
1701. John Newman.
1702. Thos. Fiske, Jr.
1703–4. John Perkins.
1705. John Gott.
1706–8. Thos. Fisk.
1709. Capt. Nathl. Waldron.
1710. Wm. Rogers.
1711–14. Jos. Herrick.
1715–18. Lieut. John Porter.
1719–20. Theophilus Rix.
1721–22. Thos. Tarbox.
1723. John Kemball.
1724. Benj. Fisk.
1725. Thos. Tarbox.
1726–29. Stephen Patch.
1730. Samuel Gott.
1731. Ens. Thos. Tarbox.
1732. Capt. Saml. Kemball.
1733. Jonathan Kemball.
1734. Jonathan Porter.
1735–37. John Gott.
1738. Josiah Dodge.
1739–40. Jonathan Kimball.
1741–43. John Kemball.
1744. Benj. Herrick.
1745–46. Samuel Gott.
1747. Capt. Jona. Kimball.
1748–52. Benj. Kimball.
1753–54. John Friend.
1755–56. Capt. Jona. Kimball.
1757–58. Samuel Porter, Jr.
1759–60. Capt. Nathl. Brown.
1761. Benj. Kimball.
1762. Capt. Nathl. Brown.
1763. Thomas Brown.
1764. Nathl. Brown, Esq.
1765–66. Josiah Fairfield, Esq.
1767–68. Ens. John Friend.
1769. Nathl. Brown, Esq.
1770–72. Ens. John Friend.
1773. Ens. Thos. Brown.
1774–76. Ens. John Friend.
1779. Dea. John Friend.
1780. Daniel Kilham, Jr.
1781–84. Capt. Thos. Kimball.
1785. John Dodge, 2d.
1786–87. Lieut. John Dodge.
1788–93. Isaac Porter.
1794. Ens. Wm. Dodge.
1795. Capt. Pelatiah Brown.
1796. Tyler Porter, Esq.
1797–98. Isaac Dodge.
1799. Jonathan Porter.
1800–01. Edward Perkins.
1802. Lieut. John Dodge.
1803–4. Nathl. Porter.
1805–6. Nathl. Kimball.
1807. Dea. Wm. Dodge.
1808. Capt. Ed. Batchelder.
1809–10. Thos. Kimball.
1811. Capt. Wm. Kimball.
1812. Jacob Dodge.
1814. Wm. Dodge.
1815. Benj. Edwards.
1816–17. John Dodge.
1818–25. Nathl. Kimball.
1828. Nathl. Kimball.
1829–30. Wm. Dodge.
1832–34. David Starrett.
1836. David Starrett.
1837–43. Edmund Batchelder.
1844. Joseph Cook.
1845–47. Edmund Batchelder.
1848–49. Stephen Dodge.
1850–51. Samuel Porter.
1852–56. Edmund Batchelder.
1857–62. Stephen Dodge.
1863–65. Ames Gould.
1866–68. Samuel Porter.
1869. Amos Gould.
1870–75. Warren Jones.
1876. Henry Patch.
1877–82. Samuel Porter.
1883–85. Henry Patch.
1886–87. Wm. F. Trowt.

TOWN CLERKS.

1644–51. Wm. Fiske.
1651–94. Thos. Fiske.
1695–1701. John Newman.
1702–5. Thos. Fiske.
1706–11. Wm. Fairfield.
1712–24. Wm. Rogers.
1724–30. Wm. Fairfield.
1731–32. Capt. Wm. Rogers.
1733–34. Wm. Fairfield.
1735. Capt. Wm. Rogers.
1736–37. Nathl. Brown.
1738. John Gott.
1739–43. Nathl. Brown.
1744–48. David Batchelder.
1749–53. Jonathan Kimball.
1754–58. Samuel Goodridge.
1759–63. Jonathan Kimball.
1764. Thos. Brown.
1765–70. Edward Waldron.
1771–72. Dr. Wm. Fairfield.
1772. Thos Brown.
1773–75. Dr. Tyler Porter.
1776. Joshua Orne.
1777. Dr. Tyler Porter.
1778–79. Capt. Richard Dodge.
1780–83. Dr. Tyler Porter.
1784–87. Stephen Dodge.
1788–89. Richard Dodge.
1790–91. Stephen Dodge.
1792–98. John Dodge, Jr.
1799–1806. Joseph Fairfield.
1807–8. John Dodge, Jr.
1809–18. Paul Porter.
1819–22. John T. Dodge, Jr.
1823–29. Moses Foster.
1830–31. David Starrett.
1832–39. Moses Foster.
1840–48. John Porter.
1849–51. Stephen Dodge.
1852–56. John A. Putnam.
1857–61. Benj. C. Putnam.
1862–69. Joseph Cook.
1870–87. Wellington Pool.

SELECTMEN.

1654.[1]
Phineas Fiske.
Charles Gott.
John Fiske.

1655.
Mr. Gott.
Phineas Fiske.
Richard Hutton.

1656.
Mr. Gott.
Phineas Fiske.
Richard Hutton.

1657.
Mr. Gott.
Phineas Fiske.
Richard Kimball.

1658.
[None recorded.]

1659.
Austin Killim.
Richard Hutton.
Wm. Geare.

1660.
Mr. Gott.
Austin Killim.
Phineas Fiske.

1661.
Mr. Gott.
John Fiske.
Richard Kimball.

1662.
Austin Killim.
Goodman Moulton.
Thomas Fiske.

1663.
Austin Killam.
Richard Kimball.
Thomas Fiske.

1664.
Mr. Gott.
Richard Kimball.
Thomas Fiske.

1665.
Richard Kimball.
Richard Hutton.
Thomas Fiske.

1666.
Mr. Gott.
Richard Kimball.
Thomas Fiske.

1667.
Mr. Gott.
Richard Kimball, Sr.
Thomas Fiske.

[1] Delegate to State Constitutional Convention.
[2] Delegate to Constitutional Convention on representation.

[1] The names of no selectmen, prior to this date, are found recorded.

1668.
Walter Fairfield
John Fiske.
Mark Batchelller
Thomas Fiske.

1669.
John Fiske.
Richard Kimball.
Thomas Fiske.

1670.
Richard Kimball.
John Fiske.
Thomas Fiske.

1671.
Mark Batchelder.
Walter Fairfield.
Charles Gott.

1672.
Richard Kimball.
Mark Batchelder.
Thomas Fiske.

1673.
John Fiske.
Mark Batchelder.
Thomas Fiske.

1674.
Richard Kimball.
Walter Fairfield.
Thomas Fiske.

1675.
[None recorded.]

1676.
Charles Gott.
Walter Fairfield.
Richard Hutton.
William Fiske.
Thomas Fiske.

1677.
John Fiske.
Charles Gott.
William Fiske.
John Batchelder.
Thomas Fiske.

1678.
Walter Fairfield.
Charles Gott.
William Fiske.
John Batchelder.
Thomas Fiske.

1679.
Walter Fairfield.
John Batchelder.
Charles Gott.
William Fiske.
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1680.
Walter Fairfield.
William Fiske
James Friend
Richard Hutton.
Richard Dodge.

1681.
John Fiske.
Charles Gott.
John Batchelder
Thomas Patch.
Thomas Fiske, Jr

1682.
Wm Fiske.
Charles Gott
Richard Hutton
Samuel Kimball
Thomas Fiske, Sr

1683.
Lieut. Gott.
Ens. Fiske.
Sergt. Fairfield.
John Batchelder.
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1684.
Lieut. Gott.
Ens. Fiske.
Sergt. Fairfield.
Corpl. John Batchelder.
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1685.
Lieut. Gott.
Ens. Fiske.
Sergt. Fairfield.
Corpl. Batchelder.
Thomas Fiske.

1686.
Lieut. Fiske.
Ens. Fairfield.
Lieut. Gott.
Sergt. Hutton.
Samuel Kimball.

1687.
John Batchelder.
Richard Dodge.
Walter Fairfield.
Thomas Patch.
James Moulton, Sr.

1688.
Ens. Fairfield.
John Batchelder.
James Moulton, Sr.
Lieut. Fiske.
James Friend.
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1689.
Dea. Fiske.
Lieut. Gott.
Richard Hutton.
Thomas Fiske.
James Friend.

1690.
Lieut. Fiske.
Ens. Batchelder.
Sergt. Hutton.
Samuel Kimball.
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1691.
Lieut. Wm. Fiske.
Charles Gott.
Ens. Batchelder.
Thomas Fiske, Sr.
John Perkins.

1692.
Richard Hutton.
John Porter.
James Friend.
Mr. Newman.
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1693.
Lieut. Wm. Fiske.
James Friend.
John Porter.
Mr. Newman.
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1694.
Lieut. Wm. Fiske.
Mr. Newman.
Ens. Batchelder.
Samuel Kimball.
Wm Fairfield.

1695.
Capt. Thomas Fiske.
Lieut. Wm. Fiske.
Ens. Walter Fairfield.
Wm. Fairfield.
John Newman.

1696.
Capt. Thomas Fiske.
Ens. Walter Fairfield.
John Batchelder, Sr.
James Friend.
John Newman.

1697.
Serg. Thomas Patch.
John Porter.
Wm. Fairfield.
John Perkins.
John Newman.

1698.
Capt. Thomas Fiske.
Dea. Wm. Fiske.
Ens. Walter Fairfield.
Samuel Kimball.
John Newman.

1699.
Serg. James Friend.
Ens. John Porter.
Wm. Fairfield.
Thomas Kimball.
John Newman.

1700.
Capt. Thomas Fiske.
Thomas Patch, Sr.
Samuel Kimball.
Benjamin Edwards.
Lieut. Wm. Fiske.

1701.
Capt. Thomas Fiske.
Ens. John Porter.
Benjamin Edwards.
Wm. Fairfield.
John Newman.

1702.
Ens. Walter Fairfield.
Ens. John Porter.
James Friend.
Thomas Patch.
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1703.
Dea. Fiske.
Lieut. Thomas Fiske.
Ens. Porter.
James Friend.
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1704.
Dea. Wm. Fiske.
Dea. James Friend.
Walter Fairfield.
Lieut. Thomas Fiske.
Serg. Samuel Kimball.

1705.
Dea. James Friend.
Lieut. John Porter.
Benjamin Edwards.
Samuel Kimball.
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1706.
John Gott.
Thomas Kimball.
Thomas Patch.
Dea. Friend.
Nathl. Fairfield.

1707.
Dea. James Friend.
Thomas Patch.
Lieut. John Porter.
Ens. Samuel Kimball.
Wm. Fairfield.

1708.
Capt. Fisk.
Benjamin Edwards.
Dea. Fiske.
Lieut. John Porter.
John Gott.

1709.
Ens. Walter Fairfield.
Benjamin Edwards.
Ephraim Kimball.
John Gott.
Josiah Dodge.

1710.
Capt. Thomas Fiske.
Serg. Benj. Edwards.
Ephraim Kimball.
John Gott.
Wm. Fairfield.

1711.
Lieut. John Porter.
Ens. Samuel Kimball.
John Gott.
Josiah Dodge.
Wm. Rogers.

1712.
Lieut. John Porter.
Josiah Dodge.
Caleb Kimball.
Wm. Rogers.
Ens. Samuel Kimball.

1713.
Lieut. John Porter.
Ens. Samuel Kimball.
Josiah Dodge.
Caleb Kimball.
Wm. Rogers.

1714.
Lieut. John Porter.
Samuel Kimball.
Josiah Dodge.
Caleb Kimball.
Wm. Rogers.

1715.
Benjamin Edwards.
Wm. Fairfield.
Joseph Herrick.
Caleb Kimball.
Wm. Rogers.

1716.
Ens. John Gott.
Benjamin Edwards.
Thomas Kimball.
Thomas White.
Wm. Rogers.

1717.
Benjamin Edwards.
Ens. John Gott.
Thomas Kimball.
Thomas White.
Wm. Rogers.

1718.
Ens. John Gott.
Thomas Kimball.
Benjamin Edwards.
Thomas White.
Wm. Rogers.

1719.
Ens. John Gott.
Benjamin Edwards.
Dea. Ephraim Kimball.
Mr. Daniel Dodge.
Wm. Rogers.

1720.
Capt. Thomas Fiske.
Benjamin Edwards.
Ens. John Gott.
Wm. Rogers.
Samuel Kimball.

1721.
Caleb Kimball.
Nathl. Brown.
John Moulton.
Samuel Kimball.
Wm. Rogers.

1722.
Lieut. J. Porter.
Benjamin Fiske.
Rice Knowlton.
Wm. Dodge.
Wm. Rogers.

1723.
Lieut. Porter.
Samuel Kilbam.
Nathl. Brown.
Ens. John Batchelder.
Wm. Rogers.

1724.
Lieut. John Porter.
Samuel Kilham.
Ens. John Batchelder.
Nathl. Brown.
Wm. Dodge.

1725.
Lieut. John Porter.
Capt. Wm. Rogers.
Lieut. Samuel Kimball.
Rice Knowlton.
Samuel Kilham.

1726.
Lieut. John Porter.
Wm. Dodge.
Nathl. Brown.
Thomas White.
Wm. Fairfield.

1727.
Lieut. John Porter.
Wm. Fairfield.
Thomas White.
Nathl. Brown.
Wm. Dodge.

1728.
Lieut. John Porter.
Capt. Wm. Rogers.
Wm. Fairfield.

1729.
Lieut. John Porter.
Wm. Dodge.
Capt. Wm. Rogers.
Nathl. Brown.
Wm. Fairfield.

1730.
Lieut. John Porter.
Capt. Wm. Rogers.
Nathl. Brown.
Wm. Dodge.
Wm. Fairfield.

1731.
Ebenezer Fiske.
John Kemball.
Phineas Dodge.
John Dodge.
Samuel Gott.

1732.
Lieut. Wm. Dodge.
Capt. Wm. Rogers.
Jonathan Kimball.
Robert Cree.
John Gott.

1733.
Dea. Wm. Fairfield.
Stephen Patch.
Ebenezer Kimball.
Joseph Edwards.
David Batchelder.

1734.
John Porter, Jr.
Jonathan Kimball.
Ens. Thomas Tarbox.
Josiah Dodge.
Wm. Fairfield.

1735.
Capt. Samuel Kimball.
Capt. Rogers.
Samuel Gott.
Timothy Patch.
Wm. Fairfield.

1736.
Dea. Wm. Fairfield.
Benjamin Herrick.
John Kimball.
Josiah Dodge.
Nathl. Brown.

1737.
Dea. Wm. Fairfield.
Capt. Samuel Kimball.
Jonathan Kimball.
Josiah Dodge.
Nathl. Brown.

1738.
Jonathan Kimball.
John Gott.
Jonathan Porter.
Edward Waldron.
Nathl. Brown.

1739.
Nathl. Brown.
Richard Dodge.
John Gott.

1740.
John Gott.
Richard Dodge.
Nathl. Brown.

1741.
Stephen Patch.
Lieut. Kimball.
Benjamin Herrick.
Josiah Dodge.
Nathl. Brown.

1742.
Nathl. Brown.
Benjamin Edwards.
Jonathan Porter.
John Baker.
Zacheus Goldsmith.

1743.
Benjamin Edwards.
John Baker.
Nathl. Brown.
Benj. Herrick.
Dea. Kimball.

1744.
John Gott.
Dea. Kimball.
Richard Dodge.
Josiah Herrick.
Nathl. Brown.

1745.
Dea. Kimball.
John Gott.
Benjamin Edwards.
Josiah Herrick.
David Batcheller.

1746.
Capt. Jonathan Kimball.
John Gott.
Richard Dodge.
James Kimball.
David Batchelder.

1747.
Ens. Samuel Gott.
John Kimball.
Capt. Thomas Tarbox.
Benjamin Edwards.
Capt. John Dodge.

1748.
Mr. Samuel Porter.
Dea. Jonathan Kimball.
Lieut. Benjamin Herrick.
David Batchelder.
Phineas Dodge.

1749.
Josiah Herrick.
Benjamin Fairfield.
Ebenezer Waldron.
Jonathan Kimball.
Samuel Rogers.

1750.
Nathaniel Kimball.
Josiah White.
Timothy Patch, Jr.
Samuel Tarbox, Jr.
Jonathan Kimball, Jr.

1751.
Timothy Patch, Jr.
Samuel Tarbox, Jr.
Edmund Kimball.
Jacob Dodge.
Jonathan Kimball, Jr.

1752.
John White.
Samuel Rogers.
Abraham Kimball.
Jonathan Kimball, Jr.
Samuel Tarbox, Jr.

1753.
Josiah Herrick.
Abraham Kimball.
Ebenezer Waldron.
John White.
Jonathan Kimball, Jr.

1754.
Ebenezer Waldron.
Benjamin Kimball.
Samuel Goodridge.
Daniel Porter.
Samuel Tarbox, Jr.

1755.
Benjamin Kimball.
Samuel Tarbox, Jr.
Samuel Goodridge.
Ebenezer Waldron.
Daniel Porter.

1756.
Benjamin Kimball.
Samuel Tarbox.
Samuel Goodridge.
Ebenezer Waldron.
Daniel Porter.

1757.
Benjamin Kimball.
Samuel Tarbox.
Timothy Patch.
Samuel Goodridge.
Ebenezer Waldron.

1758.
Jonathan Kimball.
Samuel Tarbox.
Samuel Goodridge.
John Friend.
Capt. Nathaniel Brown.

1759.
Samuel Tarbox.
Samuel Goodridge.
John Friend.
Thomas Brown.
Jonathan Kimball.

1760.
Richard Dodge.
Josiah Herrick.
Benjamin Fairfield.
John Killam.
Jonathan Kimball.

1761.
John Friend.
Timothy Patch.
Isaac Dodge.
Benjamin Dodge.
Capt. Brown.

1762.
Benjamin Fairfield.
Edward Waldron.
Jonathan Kimball.

1763.
Benjamin Fairfield.
Benjamin Kimball.
Samuel Tarbox.
Edward Waldron.
Jonathan Kimball.

1764.
Edward Waldron.
John Friend.
Thomas Brown.

1765.
Benjamin Fairfield.
Samuel Tarbox.
Edward Waldron.

1766.
Benjamin Fairfield.
Samuel Tarbox.
Edward Waldron.

1767.
Benjamin Fairfield.
Samuel Tarbox.
Edward Waldron.

1768.
Benjamin Fairfield.
Samuel Tarbox.
Edward Waldron.

1769.
Thomas Brown.
Wm. Fairfield.
Edward Waldron.

1770.
Caleb Kimball.
Daniel Kilham, Jr.
Edward Waldron.

1771.
Caleb Kimball.
Richard Dodge.
Dr. Wm. Fairfield.

1772.
Thomas Brown.
Caleb Kimball.
Richard Dodge, Jr.

1773.
Caleb Kimball.
Stephen Dodge.
Dr. Tyler Porter.

1774.
Dr. Tyler Porter.
Stephen Dodge.
Caleb Kimball.

1775.
Dr. Tyler Porter.
Caleb Kimball.
Stephen Dodge.

1776.
Joshua Orne.
Josiah Ober.
Edward Waldron.

1777.
Josiah Ober.
Joshua Orne.
Dr. Tyler Porter.

1778.
Capt. Richard Dodge.
Josiah Herrick.
Amos Batchelder.

1779.
Capt. Richard Dodge.
Josiah Herrick.
Amos Batchelder.

1780.
Dr. Tyler Porter.
Stephen Dodge.
Dea. Caleb Kimball.

1781.
Stephen Dodge.
Dea. Caleb Kimball.
Dr. Tyler Porter.

1782.
Dea. Caleb Kimball.
Stephen Dodge.
Tyler Porter.

1783.
Dea. Caleb Kimball.
Stephen Dodge.
Dr. Tyler Porter.

1784.
Dea. Caleb Kimball.
Isaac Porter.
Stephen Dodge.

1785.
Dea. Caleb Kimball.
Isaac Porter.
Stephen Dodge.

1786.
Dea. Caleb Kimball.
Isaac Porter.
Stephen Dodge.

1787.
Dea. Caleb Kimball
Isaac Porter
Stephen Dodge.

1788.
Lieut. Cornelius Baker.
Lieut. John Dodge.
Richard Dodge

1789.
Lieut. Cornelius Baker.
Lieut. John Dodge.
Richard Dodge.

1790.
Capt. Richard Dodge.
Lieut. John Dodge.
Stephen Dodge.

1791.
Capt. Richard Dodge.
Lieut. John Dodge.
Stephen Dodge.

1792.
Capt. John Dodge.
Richard Hood.
John Dodge, Jr.

1793.
Capt. John Dodge.
Richard Hood.
John Dodge, Jr.

1794.
Capt. John Dodge.
Richard Hood.
John Dodge, Jr.

1795.
Joseph Fairfield.
Benjamin Edwards.
Daniel Herrick.

1796.
John Dodge, Jr.
Ens. Wm. Dodge.
Nathl. Porter.

1797.
John Dodge, Jr.
Nathl. Porter.
Ens. Wm Dodge.

1798.
John Dodge, Jr.
Nathl. Porter.
Ens. Wm. Dodge.

1799.
Edmund Batchelder.
Jacob Dodge.
Thomas Kimball, Jr.

1800.
Jacob Dodge.
Edmund Batchelder.
Thomas Kimball, Jr.

1801.
Edmund Batchelder.
John T. Dodge.
Joseph Fairfield.

1802.
Edmund Batchelder.
John T. Dodge.
Joseph Fairfield.

1803.
Edmund Batchelder.
John T. Dodge.
Joseph Fairfield.

1804.
Capt Edmund Batchelder.
Lieut. Isaac Dodge.
Joseph Fairfield.

1805.
Edmund Batchelder.
Isaac Dodge.
Joseph Fairfield.

1806.
Isaac Dodge.
Edward Perkins.
Joseph Fairfield.

1807.
Capt. Isaac Dodge.
Edward Perkins.
John Baker.

1808.
John Dodge, Jr.
Dea. Wm. Dodge.
John Baker.

1809.
John Baker.
Paul Porter.
Nehemiah Standley.

1810.
John Baker.
Paul Porter.
Nehemiah Standley.

1811.
Paul Porter.
Downing Gentlee.
Caleb Kimball.

1812.
Paul Porter.
Caleb Kimball.
Downing Gentlee.

1813.
Paul Porter.
Downing Gentlee.
Caleb Kimball.

1814.
Paul Porter.
Caleb Kimball.
Downing Gentlee.

1815.
John Baker.
Nathl. Kimball.
Nehemiah Standley.

1816.
John Baker.
Nehemiah Standley.
Nathl. Kimball.

1817.
Nathl. Kimball.
John Baker.
Nehemiah Standley.

1818.
Paul Porter.
Caleb Kimball.
Benjamin Edwards.

1819.
John T. Dodge, Jr.
Capt. Isaac Dodge.
Simeon Friend.

1820.
Isaac Dodge.
Thomas Kimball.
John T. Dodge, Jr.

1821.
Isaac Dodge.
Thomas Kimball.
John T. Dodge, Jr.

1822.
Isaac Dodge.
John T. Dodge, Jr.
Samuel Hood.

1823.
Capt. John Moulton.
Stephen Dodge.
Moses Foster.

1824.
John T. Moulton.
Moses Foster.
Stephen Dodge.

1825.
Paul Porter.
Moses Foster.
Stephen Dodge.

1826.
Moses Foster.
Stephen Dodge.
Andrew Dodge.

1827.
Moses Foster.
Stephen Dodge.
Andrew Dodge.

1828.
Moses Foster.
Stephen Dodge.
Andrew Dodge.

1829.
Moses Foster.
Andrew Dodge.
Charles Brown.

1830.
Charles Brown.
David Starrett.
Richard Dodge.

1831.
Charles Brown.
David Starrett.
Richard Dodge.

1832.
Richard Dodge.
Charles Brown.
Ezra Lummus.

1833.
Stephen Dodge.
Ezra Lummus.
Warren Peabody.

1834.
Stephen Dodge.
Ezra Lummus.
Warren Peabody.

1835.
Stephen Dodge.
Ezra Lummus.
Warren Peabody.

1836.
Stephen Dodge.
Ezra Lummus.
Warren Peabody.

1837.
Samuel Conant.
Benjamin Edwards.
Wm. Moulton.

1838.
Wm. Moulton.
Samuel Conant.
Benjamin Edwards.

1839.
Wm. Moulton.
Nicholas Dodge.
Rufus A. Dodge.

1840.
Wm. Moulton.
Rufus A. Dodge.
Wm. Dodge.

1841.
Stephen Dodge.
Amos Gould.
Abraham Patch.

1842.
Stephen Dodge.
Amos Gould.
Abraham Patch.

1843.
Stephen Dodge.
John Porter.
Abraham Patch.

1844.
Stephen Dodge.
John Porter.
Abraham Patch.

1845.
Stephen Dodge.
John Porter.
Abraham Patch.

1846.
Stephen Dodge.
Abram Patch.
Joseph Cook.

1847.
Joseph Cook.
Henry S. Kent.
Richard Dodge.

1848.
Joseph Cook.
Henry S. Kent.
Richard Dodge.

1849.
Augustus Dodge.
Rufus A. Dodge.
John Felt.

1850.
Rufus A. Dodge.
John Felt.
Augustus Dodge.

1851.
Rufus A. Dodge.
Augustus Dodge.
Harvey Pierce.

1852.
Joseph Cook.
Charles Brown.
H. N. Folsom.

1853.
Joseph Cook.
Charles Brown.
Abraham Dodge.

1854.
Joseph Cook.
Abraham Dodge.
Charles Brown.

1855.
Joseph Cook.
Charles Brown.
R. F. Dodge.

1856.
Joseph Cook.
Charles Brown.
R. F. Dodge.

1857.
Joseph Cook.
Charles Brown.
R. F. Dodge.

1858.
Samuel Porter.
Wm. Moulton.
R. F. Moulton.

1859.
Wm. Moulton.
Samuel Porter.
John Gentlee.

1860.
Samuel Porter.
Wm. Moulton.
John Gentlee.

1861.
Samuel Porter.
Wm. Moulton.
John Gentlee.

1862.
Samuel Porter.
John Gentlee.
Solomon E. Kimball.

1863.
Solomon E. Kimball.
Francis M. Dodge.
Rufus A. Dodge.

1864.
Rufus A. Dodge.
Solomon E. Kimball.
John Gentlee.

1865.
Rufus A. Dodge.
Francis M. Dodge.
Wm. B. Morgan.

1866.
Samuel Porter.
Solomon E. Kimball.
John Gentlee.

1867.
Samuel Porter.
John Gentlee.
Solomon F. Kimball.

1868.
Samuel Porter.
John Gentlee.
Solomon E. Kimball.

1869.
Samuel Porter.
John Gentlee.
Wm. B. Morgan.

1870.
John Gentlee.
Joseph Cook.
N. P. Perkins.

1871.
Joseph Cook.
John Gentlee.
N. P. Perkins.

1872.
Joseph Cook.
John Gentlee.
N. P. Perkins.

1873.
Joseph Cook.
John Gentlee.
N. P. Perkins.

1874.
Joseph Cook.
John Gentlee.
N. P. Perkins.

1875.
Joseph Cook.
John Gentlee.
N. P. Perkins.

1876.
Joseph Cook.
N. P. Perkins.
Wm. F. Trowt.

1877.
N. P. Perkins.
W. F. Trowt.
A. A. Fiske.

1878.
Wm. F. Trowt.
Solomon E. Kimball.
John I. Durgin.

1879.
Wm. F. Trowt.
Solomon E. Kimball.
John I. Durgin.

1880.
Solomon E. Kimball.
John Gentlee.
John I. Durgin.

1881.
Solomon E. Kimball.
John Gentlee.
John I. Durgin.

1882.
Solomon E. Kimball.
John Gentlee.
John I. Durgin.

1883.
Solomon E. Kimball.
John Gentlee.
John I. Durgin.

1884.
John Gentlee.
John I. Durgin.
James T. Brown.

1885.
John Gentlee.
John I. Durgin.
James T. Brown.

1886.
John Gentlee.
John I. Durgin.
James T. Brown.

1887.
John Gentlee.
John I. Durgin.
James T. Brown.

CHAPTER C.

MANCHESTER.

BY WILLIAM H. TAPPAN.

Boundary—Topography—Traditions—Early History, from 1602 to 1630—Aborigines.

BOUNDARY.—This town is very favorably located on the sea-shore in the eastern portion of Essex County. Its greatest length is along the sea, which is about four and one-half miles, and its breadth from the coast inland is about two miles and one-quarter, containing some five thousand one hundred and thirty-four acres of land. It is bounded on the north by Hamilton and Essex, on the east by Gloucester, on the south by Massachusetts Bay, and on the west by Beverly and Wenham. The Congregational Church, which stands in the middle of the village, is in north latitude 42° 34′ 30–41″, and in west latitude 70° 44′ 24-43″. It is nine miles from Salem and twenty-four miles from Boston, with which it is connected by eight trains a day over the Gloucester Branch of the Boston and Maine Railroad.

The surface of the town is irregular and uneven, with picturesque valleys and rocky hills covered with the native forest, which cling lovingly to the very border of the ocean, as if to invite the winds to bathe their green limbs with the briny waters. The underlying rock is sienite, which crown the hill tops with great, grey, moss-covered ledges, and form the projecting head-lands of the coast. About the summits of many of the hills large boulders are found. In the "Essex Woods" is one called "Agassiz's Rock," it having been visited by that distinguished naturalist, who regarded it as a most interesting relic of the glacial period. It rests on the ledge, with an end upheld by a triangular rock; beneath the boulder the surface of the hill has been smoothed and polished by vast moving masses, and the triangular graver, pushed by an irresistible force, has recorded the line of its progress. Further down, in a swamp, is one of

gigantic size; it is as large as a house, and doubtless no inconsiderable part is buried in the soft ground in which it found a resting-place. On this a pine-tree is growing, and is probably the same spoken of in 1686 as "a pine-tree standing alone on a high rock, almost to the admiration of those who doeth behold it." This boulder is an interesting one, and should be better known.

Among the rocky eminences, wooded ravines, meadows and glades, alternating with clean, sandy beaches, make this region singularly attractive. The "Singing Beach" is one of great interest; it is somewhat more than half a mile in length, very broad and smooth, and whenever the dry sand is disturbed, it emits a musical tone. There are several theories offered in explanation of this phenomenon—some wise and some otherwise.

The harbor is capacious, with numerous creeks, beaches and picturesque headlands of weather-stained sienite, to whose uneven surface trees and shrubs of the deepest green find footing, and flourish. The inner harbor is divided by small bays and inlets; it is too shallow to admit the passage of any but small vessels to the wharf.

The soil is diluvial and well adapted to the growth of trees, fruits, grass and vegetables.

The township is well watered by several brooks, the largest of which is known as "Saw-Mill Brook." This is a collection of several pretty streams that flow from the woods, and of many springs of sparkling water that rise to the surface on the farm of T. Jefferson Coolidge, Esq., and are conducted through the centre of the town to the sea. The waters of this brook were the first in this vicinity to wear the harness of cultivation, for by its power the first boards were cut for the cabins of the pioneers; in that way it earned its name. A trifle later a new mill was added, when the docile water ground corn for the bread of the Puritans.

An old tradition says, "He who drinks from this brook can never permanently absent himself from the town." But we fancy the memory of the woods and the fascination of the boundless, mysterious ocean are much more potent.

In a swamp in the eastern part of the town is found the magnolia or sweet bay tree (*magnolia glauca*). It belongs to a genus named for Magnol, a distinguished French botanist. The family includes many interesting trees and shrubs common in the South, but very seldom found so far from their home. It bears a beautiful and very fragrant flower for a considerable part of the season; it seldom attains a greater height than ten or twelve feet.

Among the rocky portions of the woods the *Linnæa borealis* is found. In these two we have the representative of a northern and southern clime blossoming side by side.

In 1879, Bayard Taylor, while on a visit to his friend James T. Fields, wrote an interesting description of the town for the *New York Tribune* from which we make the following extract.

"The village is a modest little place, about seven miles west of Gloucester and twelve from the end of the Cape. A shallow inlet here opens to the bay between headlands of gray rock, which are repeated, further inland, in the shape of high knobs and bluffs, rising against a background of long ridges of forest. All this picturesque, irregular coast is dotted with charming summer castles and cottages. On Glass Head, at the mouth of the inlet, the Rev. Dr. Bartol has a mansion and a lofty detached tower, in the top of which he has established a study. Here he is able to take broad views of the world, in a double sense. The crest of the peninsula beyond—a rocky mount, called Thunderbolt Hill—is crowned with the quaint old fashioned residence of James T. Fields; on the slope between it and the sea Junius Brutus Booth makes his perch; and Gilbert, (whom we all know), is near at hand, on the opposite side.

"From the cottage of a friend, to whom we are indebted for a delightful sojourn for three days here, all the beauties of the region are visible. The front verandah overlooks the line of coast, the picturesque rocky inlets, and the opposite shore of the bay, the view terminating on an arc of sea horizon. We have but to turn our heads and we see the inlet, the village, the bluff, and swelling waves of forest, melting into distant grays and purples under a sky which (just now at least) is more English than American. There is a perpetual breeze, with strength enough on its wings to refresh and not exhaust. The foliage is opulent and varied in color, the fields and meadows are exquisitely green, and there is a mixture of savage nature and laborious culture throughout the landscape which continually surprises us with the effects of contrasts. Most of the coves between the rocky abutment of the coast admit of surf-bathing; but I notice that the tonic of the air is generally preferred to that of the wave.

"A great charm of the place is the wild wooded scenery of the inland. There are many little valleys, branching and widening as if at random, where the forest of firs and pine, the great mossy boulders, the shade and coolness and silence seem to transfer you at once to the heart of some mountain wilderness. The noise of the sea does not invade them; even the salt odor of the air is smothered by the warm, resinous breath of the pines. Here you find slender brooks, pools spangled with pond-lily blossoms, and marshes all in a tangle with wild flowers. After two or three miles of such scenery, there is no greater surprise than to find, suddenly, a blue, far deeper than that of the sky, between the tree-trunks, and to hear the roar of the breakers a hundred feet below you.

"During a drive with my friend, we passed the home of Ernest Longfellow, who finds excellent work for his pencil at his very doorstep. Here is an instance, as in the case of Schiller and Browning, where the genius of the poet changes, by inheritance, into that of the artist. . . .

"A short distance further we came upon a castle by the sea, built of gray stone, and of a very original design, an Italian *loggia* being combined with Norman-Gothic features in the building. It is the residence of Mr. Greely Curtis, of Boston. Around it the roughness of the native pine forest has been softened in the most admirable manner, turf borders melting naturally into huckleberry thickets, and geraniums growing amicably in the midst of ferns. I can conceive of no more fascinating employment than this beautification, without actual transformation, of nature,—but it requires money to do it properly.

"Returning our way a mile or so, we took a different road, and approached the coast through open, grassy fields, beyond which, on the edge of a lofty bluff, stood the gray old mansion of the venerable poet, Richard H Dana. The place is singularly wild, lonely and picturesque. No other dwelling is visible; a little bight of the coast thrusts out its iron headlands at a short distance on either side, the surf thunders incessantly below, and in front the open ocean stretches to the sky. Mr. Dana's only neighbors are the vessels that come and go at greater or less distances.

"Here, on a portico almost overhanging the sea, we found the poet."

The Rev. Mr. Tenney in his "Coronation" says of it, the "Woods as well as sea conspire to make Manchester the most delightful resort on the whole New England coast."

EARLY SETTLERS.—The first Europeans of whom we have record as having visited this part of the

New England coast are Bartholomew Gosnold, in 1602, and Martin Pring in 1603; but it does not appear that either landed. In 1614 Captain John Smith, who had already won a reputation for his successful efforts in behalf of the colony of Virginia, entered the employment of some London merchants, and with two ships and forty-five men and boys arrived on the coast. He says:—"Our plot was to take whales, and make a trial of the gold and copper mines." He does not appear to have been very successful in either of these enterprises, but he explored and made a map of the shore from Penobscot Bay to Cape Cod, and gave it the name of New England. His description of the country and the wonders of the newly-discovered fisheries are set forth in such glowing colors as to remind us of the early accounts from the gold fields of California. In his book, published in 1616, he says, "There man, woman and child, with a small hook and line, by angling may take several sorts of excellent fish at their pleasure. And is it not pretty sport to pull up two pence, six pence, and twelve pence as fast as you can haul and veer a line?"—"and what sport doth yield a more pleasing content, and less hurt or charge than angling with a hook, and crossing the sweet air from isle to isle over the silent streams of a calm sea?"

It is not surprising that these words should have awakened a very lively interest among the people of the Old World. "The great sea business of fishing" received a marked impetus; the distance was an obstacle, but the promised reward was in proportion, and companies were formed for the development of the new discoveries.

Some gentlemen from and about Dorchester, England, were the first to embark in the enterprise; they proceeded to raise the necessary capital for the establishment of a permanent colony, for the more successful prosecution of the business, and in the autumn of 1623 a ship of fifty tons was dispatched.

In the following year no less than fifty ships were engaged in the business, but we will follow the fortunes of the Dorchester Company.

Their ship having arrived at the usual fishing grounds, could not complete its load because of the scarcity of fish. So "the master thought good to pass into Massachusetts Bay, to try whether that would yield him any;" here he was more successful and completed his cargo. He then proceeded to Cape Ann (now Gloucester) where he left fourteen men for the commencement of the colony, and the ship with the fish, sailed for a market in Spain.

Thus the location of the colony at Cape Ann seems to have been the result of circumstances; there appears no evidence of any intention on the part of the company to have made a settlement there.

In the following year two more vessels and more men were sent, but, as before, it was not a pecuniary success; the fishing "sped very ill."

In 1625 three more vessels arrived with ample supplies, and Roger Conant, already in the country, was appointed superintendent or Governor, and Rev. John Lyford was invited to join the plantation as their minister.

But the close of the year showed a continued loss,—the capital was exhausted; and in 1626 it was decided to abandon the undertaking, and remove to Naumkeag (now Salem), "where the prospects for a plantation were better—the land more fertile, and more abundant, so as to offer refuge for such as may join them."

William Allen, "Goodman" (Richard) Norman and his son John were in the employ of the Dorchester Company as fishermen. At that time most of the fish were caught from boats along the shore. In the pursuit of their calling they explored the harbors, bays and creeks of the vicinity. In this way they became acquainted with the site of what is now Manchester, and when the fishing station at Cape Ann was abandoned it is not improbable, that they again sought this beautiful, sunny spot, where there was shelter for their boats, a great variety of fish and game, and at the mouth of the brook, which tumbled over the rocks into the bay, they built their houses, as early as 1626 or '27.

William Jeffreys was also connected with that company; he having come from Plymouth to Cape Ann with Roger Conant, John Lyford and others. And when all were searching new homes he chose to unite his fortunes with Allen and the Normans; he built a cabin near theirs, and from that time the little settlement was known as "Jeffrey's Creek." The land belonged to Salem.

In 1628 Endicott arrived with about one hundred settlers.

The charter of the "Massachusetts Bay Company" was granted by Charles I. March 4, 1629, and on the 20th of April of that year three ships were sent with supplies and a considerable number of planters; among whom were the following ministers, viz.: Sheldon, Bright, Higginson and Ralph Smith. One of these vessels, the ship "Talbot," sailed into Manchester harbor on the 27th of June, 1629, and was probably the first European vessel ever anchored there.

From the journal of Rev. Francis Higginson we extract the following:

"June 27, 1629.—Saturday evening we had a westerly wind, which brought us, between five and six o'clock, to a fyne and sweet harbor, seven miles from the head of Cape Ann. (In this harbor twentie ships may lie and easily ride therein), where there was an island near, wither 4 of our men went with a boat, and brought back ripe strawberries, gooseberries and sweet single roses. Monday, 29th, as we passed along to Naim Keake, it was wonderful to behold so many islands replenished with thicke wood and high trees, and many fayere green pastures."

The affairs of the company had been managed by resident agents, having no authority except by and with the consent of the officers in England, but the uncertainty of communication, and the great delays were found so objectionable, that in October 1629 it was determined to transfer the government and

patent to New England; accordingly a Governor and Deputy must be found who were willing to settle with their families in the Colony.

Under these conditions John Winthrop was chosen Governor, and he took passage in the Arabella, which sailed from Yarmouth with six other ships, and three hundred settlers for the plantation at Salem.

On the 11th day of June 1630, she also anchored in our harbor; from the Governor's Journal the following interesting account of their arrival and reception is copied:

"Tuesday, 10th June, the wind continued all day a gale from the south, and yet we bore all sail and at four o'clock, P.M., made land, called 'The Three Turks Heads.' To-night we could see the trees very plainly, and had a fine fresh smell from the shore. The next day we stood too, and as the wind would bear, on Saturday we stood in towards the harbor and by the aid of some shallops we passed through the narrow strait between Baker's Island and another little island (House Island), and came to anchor within the harbor. Our friends came down from Salem, and many of our Gentlemen returned with them at night, where they supped on good venison and beer; but most of them, disliking their lodgings, returned to the ship. In the meantime most of the people went on shore on the other side of the harbor (which is on the Manchester side), where they were feasted with Strawberries, and were like as merry as the Gentlefolks at their venison and beer. Sunday Masconomo, the sagamore of the tribe, with another Indian, came on board and bade us welcome, tarrying with us all day. On Monday, the wind coming fair, the ships proceeded to Salem, where the planters landed. Here they found about 10 houses and some Indian corn planted, which was good and well liking."

Governor Winthrop brought the original charter of the Massachusetts Bay Company which is now deposited with the State archives at Boston.

These early settlers were not mere adventurers in search of new homes in the wilderness, having none in the land of their birth; they were not dissolute, idle men without property, for they all, had to a greater or less extent, contributed to the stock of the company, and upon their arrival they were entitled to land in proportion to the amount of their investment; for it had been "ordered that two hundred acres of land be allowed to each adventurer, for every fifty pound adventure in the common stock, and so on at that rate for more or less." They were not unknown, or unlettered men, for among them were some of acknowledged ability and education: they represented all classes; there were ministers, merchants, lawyers, mechanics, seamen, farmers, and soldiers.

They were men of strong religious convictions who contended for greater purity in worship, and practice, and that they might escape from the persecutions of their own country, they preferred to abandon their homes, their native land, and brave the terrors of the ocean, the unknown wilderness, and the savages, that they might worship God in their own way. The earnestness of their religious principles may be judged from the following letter from the company to the planters at Salem in 1629, declaring, "that propagation of the gospel — the thing we doe profess above all to be our aym in settling this plantation." They were therefore extremely guarded, as to who they admitted into their fellowship; none were permitted to vote, or hold office, that had not joined some Congregational church and taken the Freeman's oath of that period, which was as follows:

"I, A. B., being by God's providence an inhabitant and freeman in this commonwealth, do freely acknowledge myself subject to the Government thereof, and do swear by the great and terrible name of the everlasting God, that I will be true and faithful to the same, and will accordingly yeald assistance thereto, with my person and estate as in equity I am bound, submitting myself to the wholesome laws and orders made and established. Further I will not plot or practice evil against it, and moreover I do solemnly bind myself in the sight of God, that when I shall be called to give my voice touching any matter wherein freemen deal, I will give my vote and suffrage as I shall judge in mine own conscience may best conduce to the public weal, without respect to persons, or favor of any man, so help me God, in the Lord Jesus Christ."

Residents, were those who were not allowed, or who had declined the privilege of becoming freemen, and were required to take the oath of fidelity when they had attained the age of sixteen. Every male citizen of sixteen and upwards,—inhabitant, lodger, child, servant or slave—were required to pay yearly one shilling eightpence a head, as a poll tax, and one shilling for every twenty shillings' value in real or personal estate.

But nearly all the settlers were "freemen," and had an interest in the common lands. In the earliest records we find they exercised the power of granting land to individuals. As the population increased, this method of holding land was found objectionable, and in 1713 the owners of the common lands under the provincial laws became organized into a sort of corporation with the title of commoners.

Grants of land, made by the General Court to individuals and towns, were known as "common land;" this is the kind of "enlargement" petitioned for, and which was granted at a later date.

The "Commoners" managed their affairs, elected their officers and members, very much as a corporation. Their books in Manchester show many very generous donations for worthy objects, and for the relief of the infant settlement from burdensome taxation.

The last division of the common land was made in 1763.

In 1631 six men were drowned by the upsetting of a canoe near Kettle Island; this is the beginning of a long list of casualties that continued to afflict the settlement.

In 1634 the General Court defined the power of the Legislature, and provided that the whole body of freemen should be present at only one of their General Courts, to be held each year, and that their deputies should act for them in the three others.

In 1635–36 the General Court passed the following order, which is the foundation of the various and important powers that have ever since been exercised by the towns.

"Whereas particular towns have many things which concerne only themselves, and the ordering of their own affairs, and disposing of business in their own town, it is therefore ordered, that the freemen of every town, or the major part of them shall only (alone) have power to dispose of their own lands and woods, with all the priviledges and appurtenances of the said town to grant lots, and make

such orders, as may concern the well ordering of these our towns, not repugnant to the laws and orders here established by the General Court, as also to lay mulcts and penalties for the breach of these orders, and to levy and distrain the same not exceeding the sum of xxs. Also to choose their own particular officers as *Constables*, Surveyors of Highways and the like, and because much business is likely to ensue to the Constables of several towns by reason they are to make distresses and gather fines. Therefore that every town shall have two Constables, where there is need. That so their office may not be a burden unto them, and they may attend more carefully upon the discharge of their office, for which they shall be liable to give their accounts to this court when they shall be called thereunto."

Although Jeffrey's Creek was on the Cape Ann side, it was nevertheless a part of Salem, and early grants of land were made by Salem to Chubb, Glass, Gale, Graves, Codner, Black, Foote and others, who gave names to localities which are still retained.

In February, 1636, the land of Jeffrey's Creek was ordered to be divided as follows:

	Acres.
Samuel Archer	50
William Allen	60
John More	40
John Black	40
Sargent Wolf	40
John Sibley	50
George William	40
Sargent Dixey	40
Widow More	40

This was known as the "400 acres grant;" it included the central part of the present village, and was thickly covered with walnut, oak, and other trees of a large size.

The "fishing industry" was always encouraged by the colonists. The General Court, in 1639, ordered that all vessels so employed with their stock and fish should not be taxed, and their men exempt from military duty."

Among the early Salem records the following grants appear:

"27 11 mo., 1628. Seargent Dixey desires some hay ground about Jeffereys Creeke."

"4 12 mo., 1628. Granted to Robert Allyn 25 acres of land; lyinge betweene the land of Wm. Bennett and Samuel Archer (their land) at Jeffrys Creeke."

"28 of ye 6th month, 1637. John Pickworth requireth for a peel (parcel) of land at Jefferies Creeke" "8 9th mo. Jno. Pikwood, Jno. Gally, Jno. Norman & Wm. Bemilt have alowed these powers eyther of them 25 acres a man att Jeffereyes Creeke."

"There is granted to Richard Graves half an acre of land vpon the neck for the setting of his house, he promising to follow fishinge 5 10 mo., 1637.

"26 9 mo., 1638. Granted to Samuel Archer one neck of land lying out against the sea neere vnto Jeffry Creeke Island conteyning twentie acres of meadow to be layed him out in Kettle Island Cove."

"16 7 mo., 1639. James Standesh is granted 40 acres of land neere Jeffry Creeke."

"21 11 mo. Granted Benjamin Parminster 10 acres of land at Jeff. Creeke when the former grants are made good."

"There was granted, 4 1 mo, 1643, by the 'seven men' of Salem to Richard Gardner, at Jeffereyes Creeke 20 twentie acres of land: to be layd out by the Town."

"Granted to Robert fuller 20 acres of land at Jefferyes Creeke to be layed out by the Towne, if hee dwells there, if otherwise to desert the land."

In 1639 it was ordered that "all fishermen which are abroad during the fishing season, ship-carpenters which follow their calling, and millers shall be exempt from training."

And it was desired that "the 13th day of the 4th month be kept as a day of humiliation in all the churches for the want of rain and for the help of brethren in distress."

It was also ordered that "care bee taken to prevent damage to Indians and procure them satisfaction for any damage done."

In the following year the General Court also ordered "that in all places the English shall keepe their cattle from destroying the Indians corne in any ground where they have the right to plant, and if any corne bee destroyed for want of fencing or herding the towne shall be liable to make satisfaction." The doctrine that an Indian has no right, that a white man is bound to respect, appears to have been unknown at this early period.

At this time there were but sixty-three people living here; yet those sturdy few, with the characteristic of their race, ask for more territory, and a greater degree of self-government, as will be seen by the following petition:

"Wee whose names are hereunto subscribed, belonging to the Church and towne of Salem (being straightened in our accommodations, for that wee are not able comfortably to subsist), having advised and taken counsel about our present state and condition, it being judged fit, and free liberty being granted us to remove, and noe place being so convenient for our easy removal as Jeffrey's Creek, lying so near us, and most of us having some small quantity of ground allotted to us there already, doe therefore jointly and humbly request the Honorable Court to give us power to erect a village there, and to allow us such enlargement thereabout as is not granted to any other plantation. Thus leaving our request to your Wisdoms consideration, with our prayers for a blessing on your persons and proceedings, we rest

"Your humble petitioners,

"1640 old style,
14th 3d mo.
24th May, 1640,
new style.

William Walton,
John Black,
Wm. Allen,
Samuel Archer,
Geo. Norton,
Wm. Dixey,
John Sibley,
James Standish,
John Friend,
John Pickworth,
John Galley,
Benj. Parmiter,
Robert Allen,
Edward Grover,
Pasco Foote,
William Bennett,
John Norman.

"The petition is granted and referred to Mr. John Winthrop, Jr., and Mr. Simon Bradstreet to settle the bounds of the village."

The inhabitants of "Jeffrey's Creek," in 1645, petition the General Court for a change of name.

As many of the settlers were from Manchester, England, they desired the name of their old home should be made that of the new.

The record of the General Court reads as follows:

"May 3d, 1645.

"The Court allows Jefferies Creek to be called Manchester."

"29 4 mo. 1646. Ordered that William Woodburie & Richard Brackenburie, Ensign Dixey, Mr. Conant, & Lieutenant Lathrop & Lawrence

Leon shall forthwith lay out a way between the ferry at Salem & the head of Jeffryes Creeke, and that it shall be such a way as men may travel on horse back & drive cattle & if such a way may not be found then to take a speedy course to sett up a foote bridge at Mackerell Cove."

This was the first road to the new town, and was essentially the present Beverly and Manchester road as far as Bennett Street, up which it went to Pine, up Pine a little above the old "Baker house," then along the foot of "Powder-house Hill" to Friends Court, which it descended to School Street, down that street, crossing the brook at the ford, and so on to the common.

The highway to Cape Ann was up North Street to Washington, and down Sea Street.

In 1886 it became necessary to rebuild the culvert at the foot of Bennett's Hill; and about twelve feet below the present surface street the corduroy road across the muddy banks of the brook, was found in excellent condition, the wood perfectly sound; as nothing was found beneath, it was believed to have belonged to the original road of 1646.

In 1646 "John Norman was allowed to keep a house of common entertainment."

The feeling in favor of educating the people was made evident by the action of the General Court of the following year, who ordered that "every town of fifty inhabitants should have a school for reading and writing, and of one hundred inhabitants to have a grammar-school, so as to fit scholars for college."

With great care our ancestors guarded the intercourse between young unmarried persons, as will be seen by the following law passed in 1647: "If any young man attempts to address a young woman without the consent of her parents, or in their absents, the County Court, he shall be fined £5; for the second offence £10; and imprisonment for the third."

The records of the court show even this law was sometimes disregarded.

Coin was very scarce, and to prevent its being taken from the colony the General Court appointed "Samuel Archer, of Salem, to examine all persons going out of Massachusetts, to see that they carry no more than twenty shillings in coin to pay expenses." This gentleman was a resident of Manchester.

In 1647 the town of Manchester appears in the list of presentments by the grand jury "for not training according to order, wants of a pound, and a pair of scales." In 1648 "for want of constable's staff."

In 1649 Kettle Cove was granted to John Kettle. Nathaniel Marsterson is "granted free feed for his cattle and timber to build him a house;" this was probably the fifth minister settled in the town.

The scarcity of money and the low value of property is illustrated by the following record of 1651:

"Robert Isabell of Manchester, carpenter, for £15 sold his dwelling house and 49 acres of land, with his partition of meadow which is 1 acre allotted to him in 1648 to Richard Norman," and a little later "Thomas Williams bought a strip of land two rods wide to the waters edge, he paying forty shillings in money, thirty shillings in merchantable boards, and 10 shillings in goods." "He also purchased the land at 'Pitts' Cove' (where the Forster wharf is) for £2 15 shillings."

In 1651 the following persons were presented by the grand jury "for absence from public ordinances three or four Sabbaths, William Allen, Pasco Foot and John Sibley, and for wearing silver lace, silver and gold buttons, Robert Edwards, John Norman and ———Norman."

The destruction of the timber by residents and by people from other towns became so much of an evil that regulations were made as follows:

"11th 5th mo. 1650, It is ordered at a town meeting that none shall cut any timber from the common land but a proper inhabitant, and if any stranger shall cut timber from the towns Common, it is left with the Towns-men to look after, and stop the timber from being carried away, and the damage shall be as they judge good.

"Samuel Friend	William Bennett
John Pickwath	James Standish
Pasco Foote	John Sibley
Robert Leach	Henry Lee;

and 6th 10th mo., 1668. It is ordered and agreed at a town meeting, that all orders as formerly made and entered as herein expressed in writing shall stand concerning masts, Yards, Clayboard trees, Pikestaffs, Hogsheads and Barrels.

"For masts for Barques and trees for each mast—£0. 5s. 0d. All yards, bowsprits and other yards as Goodman Jones shall judge who is appointed by the town.

"For a shallops mast	£0. 1s. 0d.
For a Claybord tree	0. 1. 0
For a Pikestaff tree	0. 1. 0
For Hogsheads, Barrels, each tree	0. 1. 0
For Canoes, trees sold out of the town for them	0. 2. 6

"Yet it is further ordered that no posts, or rails shall be cut from our commons transported out of the plantation to any other place on the forfeit of—40 and whoever makes use of any tree standing or lying on the ground, either oak, pine, or Cedar, for Clayboards, Boards, or Shingles, shall pay—1 and for all frames according to the dimensions here specified, —a frame from 20 to 30 feet long 15 d. and so in proportion—for sawing boards 1/4 per hundred.

"Given under the hands of the Selectmen 6th 10th m., 1658.

"Pasco Foote.
"John Sibley.
"Robert Leach.

The earliest record of a piece of land having been devoted to burial purposes is in 1653, when the town grants to Samuel Friend the Island wharf property, now belonging to the A. W. Smith estate, in exchange for some land "taken from him and used for a burial ground, which was formerly planted by him." This is the old burial-ground at the junction of Washington and Summers streets; it extended across the present highway; the road to Gloucester at that time was down Sea street, through the "Towne" and "Dana estates."

Tradition tells of earlier interments which were made behind the meeting-house on the eastern side of Church street.

Our ancestors were always alive to their religious duties; as soon as their tents were pitched, they set up an altar by collecting in some convenient place where they could worship God on the Sabbath. Tradition says the first meeting of this kind was held under the shadow of a tree at "Gale's Point," near

an old wharf that may yet be seen. This was about 1640, and it is probable that Mr. Jenner or Ralf Smith was the preacher. Preaching was without doubt, carried on in the houses of the settlers until 1656, when it was decided to build a house of worship; the Town Record says;

"1656, ye 24 of ye 12 mo. It was at a general town meeting agreed upon that a meeting-house should be built, 18 feet long, with two Gable ends, to be set near the Landing-place, and the planters are to come and cut the timber this day fortnight. William Bennett, John Pickworth and Samuel Friend are to overses the getting of the timber, and if any man neglects to work he is to give a sufficient reason for his absence, or pay 5 shillings for his neglect."

"In 1660 John Blackleach, senr., of Boston, sold to John West, planter, his land in Manchester, which was granted to him by the town of Salem."

The love of office does not seem to have affected the early pioneers, for we find Manchester is complained of by the General Court "for not sending a deputy from among them," and two years later Major William Hawthorne "is authorized to act for Manchester in the General Court, as legal difficulties exhists requiring their vote, and no deputy having been sent from among them." And in Ipswich, in 1660, "the freemen of Manchester are fined £10 and cost for not appearing at the last term of the court, being summonsed."

In 1662 there were twenty land owners in town. Among whom were Samuel Friend, William Allen, James Standish, Robert Leach, John Norman, Nicholas Vincent, Widow Lee, William Bennett, Pitt, Maveric, Chubbs, Palmeter, Blackledge, Pickworth, Isaac Whichar and Ambrose Gale.

During the year 1664, the regulation requiring the administering of the freeman's oath was so modified as to grant those privileges to all such as had received from some respectable clergyman, testimony as to their correctness in doctrine and conduct.

In 1665 Thomas West was elected as the first representative to the General Court.

In 1667 the Dutch came and plundered some vessels; the loss sustained by John Norman was made up to him by the town. This early settler died in 1672.

John Pickworth was granted forty acres of land at Pickworth's Point.

In 1672 a treaty or covenant was made between the Indians and the planters of "Casco Bay," among them the name of Jenkin Williams, of Manchester, appears.

A committee appointed by Beverly and Manchester to settle the bounds between them, report as follows: "That the mouth of the creek called Chubb's creek, by the sea, and so taking the channel of said creek, to the head of said creek, and then to a rock on the western side of the head of said creek, and from there to a white oak tree near the east end of the pond, by turnip swamp, so-called, shall be taken as the standing bounds between Beverly and Manchester."

In 1675 a committee was appointed by the General Court "to see Essex County fortified from the attacts of the Indians."

An uneasiness among the tribes had long been noticed, and evidently a crisis was approaching. With growing apprehension the red men had watched the increase of the pale faces; everywhere their hunting grounds were dotted with the cabins of the settlers, and the game had been driven away; their favorite fishing places were so frequented by men skilled in the art, as to be no longer productive with their rude appliances. Where there had been plenty, there was now a scarcity, and their families were often hungry.

The inevitable conflict between civilization and savage life was rapidly approaching. On the one hand organization, united action was the first step, but with the aborigines this was extremely difficult: for generations the neighboring tribes and bands had been hereditary foes; and to unite such, even for defense against a common enemy was almost impossible. This is the weakness of savage life.

In "King Phillip" a leader was found of rare capacity, who succeeded to a very considerable extent in overcoming these tribal differences. Under his leadership, quite a formidable force was collected and hurled against the settlements. It was a vigorous warfare, where savage skill and valor, was met by the courage and the patriotism of the white race, and with the natural result: the triumph of the more enlightened.

In consequence of the loss of the records, it is not known how many of her citizens Manchester sent to the early wars; but Samuel Pickworth, John Allen, Joshua Carter and Samuel Bennett were slain at Bloody Brook while serving under Captain Lothrope, of Beverly; whose command was described by a contemporary writer as "a choice company of young men, the very flower of the County of Essex, none of whom were ashamed to speak with the enemy at the gate."

In 1677 "Ambrose Gale of this town, petitioned the General Court for liberty to fish on the coast of Plymouth, he having been prohibited by the inhabitants of that town." The court appointed a committee to address a letter on the subject to the Plymouth Company.

In 1678 William Allen, Sr., died, and his wife Elizabeth was made executrix. In her inventory is the following list and appraisal:

"House and land adjoining	£140
15 acres of land adjoining Wenham pond	20
2 oxen, a cow, 2 heifers, 2 sheep and a (cow) house	18
Household stuff	8 "

In another inventory of the same period we find the "household stuff" is itemized as follows: "1 feather bed, 1 flock bed, pillows, 1 table cloth, 2 towels, pewter and tin vessels, 2 brass kettles, 1 copper kettle, 2 skillets and two chests.

The wants of those hardy people were evidently

very few and easily supplied; none possessed any luxuries, and there does not appear to have been any who suffered from the want of food or shelter.

Rev. John Winborn began to preach to the people for a salary of £13 10s. and his fire-wood.

In 1684 the town was assessed for the building of a "House of Correction" at Ipswich. "And a portion of land between the highway and Black Cove was laid out, and granted for the use of the fishermen."

During the following year a committee from Manchester and Gloucester lay out a county road between the two towns. This began at the common, went up Union to Washington Street, thence through the burial-ground, down what is now Summer Street, to near the "Row school-house," and thence by what is now known as the old road, it crossed the present railroad and connected with the road as now traveled, near the top of the "great hill."

Before this the road to Cape Ann was by Sea Street, through the Towne and Dana estates, and crossed the present county road at a point near the entrance of the most western of the "Dana Avennes."

The "first store" opened in the town was in the house now occupied by Joseph Proctor, Esq., on Sea Street. It was kept by Mrs. Samples, who afterwards became Mrs. Crafts, and had a store at the corner of Union and Church Streets.

1685. In laying out the common land belonging to Mr. West, the records speak of a pine tree, as a bounds, standing alone on a high rock, almost to the admiration of those who doth behold it. This was probably the same tree now standing on a high rock in a swamp near Essex Road, and northerly from "Agassiz Rock."

In 1686 the town's proportion of the tax for supporting his "Majesty's Government" was £1 7s. 2d. levied on thirty-one persons. At that time it was the custom for the constables to go to Boston and pay it to the treasurer of the Colony.

The "first tavern" of which we have record is yet standing on North Street. It was occupied as a public-house many years before 1690. This old house was originally two stories in front, with a long sloping roof to the rear, a common style of building at that period. The rear of the house was raised some sixty years since, and the whole structure was remodeled. It is now in excellent condition, and is owned by Alexander Kerr.

Seventy men were drafted for the Essex County Regiment to fight the French and Indians. Those from this town served under Maj. B. Gedney.

"Rev. John Everleth was ordained as a preacher" in the town.

In 1691 the church was found too small, and a new one was ordered; with reference to this house the town's record states:

"That whereas our old meeting-house being the most Considerable part of it rotten; and the said house is too small to accommodate our people when convened for the worship of God. It is therefore voted, and fully agreed, to build a new meeting-house of the following dimentions, viz.: length to be 30 feet, the breadth thereof to be 25 feet, the height between the sills and plates 16 feet and the form of the roof of the said house to be of the same form as the Wenham meeting-house, with a balcony on the top of said house, suited for a bell of 100 lbs. or more, and three galleries to be built, viz.: one on one side of the whole length of said house, and the other two at each end of said house, the whole breadth of said house. And it was voted and agreed that the Committee, John Sibley, Robert Leach, Thomas West, John Lee, Samuel Leach, William Allen, Samuel Allen, are at this meeting fully enpowered by the Town to a gree with a workman to build the said house, for and in behalf of the town, at the said town's cost and charge, to be paid in money at two periods, viz.: one to be paid when the above house is raised, which is voted to be by the 10th day of June next, evening; and the cash payment when the said house is finished, which is voted to be by the last day of October following. The said house to be seated near the Old meeting-house (on the Common), where the Committee shall determine, and the house to be in every way completly finished with seats, and all other decent and suitable appurtanences thereto convenient for the whole house, both within and without, as the said Committee so order. And the above said Committee, or a major part of them, are to place the people in the seats of said house."

In 1693 Thomas Tewkesbury represented the town at the General Court, and he received £5 and four shillings for a session of thirty-five days.

And the "Commoners organize, and enact laws for their government, and they provide for the keeping of their records distinct from those of the town."

At a town-meeting held 1st February, 1644,

"It was voted and a greed there should be a 'Grist-mill' sett up upon the river near the meeting-house, at some convenient place for the use of the town by John Knowlton, Sen., by the 1st of Sept. next. And if any damage shall accrue to any persons' land from the flowing of the water by occation of the mill, the town shall be at one-half cost, and the miller the other half said damage."

This mill was a one story log structure, about eighteen feet square, and boarded up and down. This old moss-covered mill stood until 1826, when it was taken down by John P. Allen, who built on its site a mill for sawing mahogany veneers.

After the decease of Mr. Knowlton, Mr. Obed Carter continued to run the mill for many years, and his son used to say the lobsters were so abundant, that whenever his father required any, he used to step across the stream at low tide, to a point of rocks, where Mr. Knight's coal wharf now is, and from beneath the rock-weed he could always select such and as many as he wanted.

This delicious crustacea, now so rapidly becoming

extinct, was then so plentiful as to be but little valued as an article of food.

In 1695 the town "granted Phillip Nichols a parcel of land at Newport, being a fisherman."

"And John Sibley, Robert Leach and Thomas West, were chosen as the first school committee, and they were instructed to agree with a school-master to teach our children to read and write."

"A watch-house was ordered to be built, and ammunition was bought."

A church bell was presented to the town by George Norton, and it proved a great comfort to the people, for before this, the hour for public service was announced to the clockless inhabitants, by the blowing of a horn or conch shell; that could not always be heard.

An imaginative writer of the period says "lions have been seen at Cape Ann," but the planters only complained of the "devouring wolves," who make sad havoc with the sheep and calves. And to encourage their destruction the town offers a bounty of twenty shillings for an old one, and five for a young one.

In 1696 Samuel Leach and John Lee were the owners of slaves.

In accordance with the custom of the times, the town appointed a committee to seat all persons in the meeting-house according as they had paid for the support of the minister, except "any antient, grave and sober person of good conversation."

1699 a quantity of the common land was sold, and the proceeds devoted to the building of a parsonage.

At a town meeting on the 23d of April, 1699, a committee was appointed to build a new parsonage house, forty-two feet long, eighteen feet wide, and fourteen feet stud, to be located near the meeting-house, at the discretion of the committee. A rate for £50 was made to defray the expenses; and much "common land" was sold this year at the "Great Neck" (old neck), and House Island, and the proceeds were devoted to the construction of the parsonage and settling the minister. This parsonage was erected on School street, near where the dwelling of Capt. Carter now stands.

It was occupied by Rev. Nicholas Webster, and in 1716 it was given to Rev. Amos Cheever, at the time of his settlement as a pastor in the town. The land belonging to it extended from near the saw mill brook, to the lot of land on which the Baptist church now stands: and was all on the western side of the road. The lot of land was given to the town by the proprietors of the four hundred acres.

ABORIGINES.—When our ancestors landed upon our shore they found it populated with a tribe of Indians, known as Agawams, who spoke the language of the Pequods, and over whom Masconomo ruled as their chief or Sagamore. But little is known of him or his people, except they had always been friendly to the pale-faces.

Mr. Felt, in his history of Ipswich, says Capt. Edward Hardy, and Nicholas Hobson sailed for North Virginia (New England), in 1611, and touched at Agawam (Ipswich), where the Indians treated them more kindly than others had done, and Capt. John Smith, who made several voyages, found, in 1614, the islands about Cape Ann thickly populated with them, for then food was plentiful, so abundant that

> "The sounds and seas, each creek and bay
> With fry innumerable swarm, and shoals
> Of fish that with their fins and shining scales
> Glide under the green waves, in sculls that oft
> Bank the mid sea; or under rocks their food
> In jointed armor watch."

These, with the sea-fowl and larger game, that in such numbers frequented the valleys and water-courses in the vicinity of what is now known as Manchester, made it an attractive home for the aborigines, and several villages were found there of considerable size, but evidently they had been more populous.

They claimed this reduction was the result of an epidemic, that a few years ago had swept away a great many of their people.

The tribe of Tarrantines, whose home was on the coast of Maine, with a fleet of canoes, made frequent predatory excursions along the coast of Massachusetts. Masconomo had very successfully defended his people from some of their attacks, and had slain some of their warriors, and since their reduction by decease, they were in great dread of retaliation from their old enemies. Therefore it is quite probable they sought the friendship and protection of the English with a far greater warmth than they would have done at a time of greater prosperity.

This fear of the Tarrantines rendered it very easy for the Governor to arrange terms with the chiefs, for the fee to their lands. Thus the way seems to have been prepared for that little band of adventurers; instead of them finding a proud, bold race in possession of the land, they found a discouraged, disheartened people, ready to do anything, and to pledge anything for peace and protection.

Rev. Mr. Higginson thus describes them:

"For their stature, they are a tall, strong-limbed people, their colour is tawney, they go naked save only they are in part covered, their hair is generally black, and cut before like our Gentlewomen, with one lock longer than the rest, like our Gentlemen, which fashion I think came from hero to England. For their weapons they use bows and arrows, some of them headed with bone and some with brass. Their men for the most part live idly, doing nothing but fish and hunt. Their wives set their corn and do all their other work. They have little household stuff, as a kettle, and some other vessels like trays, spoons and baskets.

"They do generally profess to like well our coming and planting here, partly because there is an abundance of ground which they cannot possess, and because our living here will be a means of relief to them when they want, and a defence from their enemies. They will come into our houses by half a score at a time when we are at victuals, but will not ask or take anything but what we give them."

The company seems to have desired to deal justly with the Indians, for in their letter of instruction to Gov. Endicott they say:

"If any of the Savages pretend right of inheritance to all or any part

of the lands granted in our patent, we pray you endeavor to purchase our tyttle, that we may avoid the least scruple of intrusion."

And this spirit seems to have governed the General Court, for in 1639 it was ordered "that care be taken to prevent damage to Indians, and procure them satisfaction for any damage done them," and in the following year it was enacted "that in all places the English shall keep their cattle from destroying the Indian corn, and if any corn be destroyed for want of fencing, or herding, the town shall be liable to make satisfaction."

"Hope deferred maketh the heart sick." Masconomo must have realized the full force of this sentiment, for having bargained his land for promises which were never kept, and feeling the infirmities of age increasing with every additional year, he gathered his few remaining subjects, the remnants of his worldly possessions, and placed himself and them under the protection of Massachusetts.

There, as the ward of the state, Masconomo, the last Sagamore of the Agawams, the friend of the white people, saw his once powerful tribe melt away, until only a vestige remained.

Poor, disheartened, and friendless, he at last found peace in death. He was buried on "Sagamore Hill," in Hamilton, about 1658.

June 18, 1658, the town of Ipswich "granted the Sagamore's widow to enjoy that parcel of land which her husband had fenced in, during the time of her widowhood. This was a parcel of land of six acres, set off to the Sagamore in 1655, but not property to any but himself."

The small sum for which this Indian Chief had bargained away his title to the soil, was not all paid until many years afterwards, as the deeds of several towns show, viz:—The deed of the township of Manchester from the Indians is dated December 19, A. D. 1700, and made from Sam'l English and Joseph English and John Umpee, all living in ye County of Middlesex, in ye Province of Massachusetts Bay in New England, Indians"—for the sum of three pounds, nineteen shillings current silver money of New England, paid by Robert Leach, John Knowlton and Samuel Lee, selectmen of ye aforesaid Manchester. This deed states "that whereas ye said town of Manchester, having quietly and peaceably, without molestation, enjoyed the soil of their Township with ye growth thereupon and appurtances belonging thereto, and containing for ye space of thirty years and upwards, and that in ye first place by ye consent and approbation of our grandfather, Sagamore John, of Agawam, alias Masquenomoit, and ever since, by consent and approbation of his children, and by us his grandchildren, being the now surviving and proper heirs to our said grandfather."

The same year Beverly and Gloucester paid for their Indian deeds.

In speaking of the Indians Mr. Lee well says:

"[illegible] melancholy reflection that comes over one who traces the melting away of the aboriginal possessors of the country, whether they embraced the Christian religion, and lived in peace with the whites, or whether they resisted the settlers and attempted to defend their homes and the graves of their ancestors from the invaders of their territory, the result was the same. Fate had marked them for destruction, whether they yielded or resisted the European settlers. The invention of gunpowder and fire-arms had placed in the hands of the invaders a power which the natives, with their rude implements of warfare, could not resist, or numbers overcome, so there was no other alternative left them but to take up their weary march for the setting sun, fit emblem of their destiny.

Lo! the poor Indian."

The following familiar letter from an intelligent settler in search of a new home, is interesting as showing how life in a region so new, and so different from that of England appeared to him. The writer was afterward a valued citizen of Manchester:

"PLYMOUTH, 1621.

"LOVING COUSIN: On our arrival at Plymouth, wee found all our friends and planters in good health, though they had been weake and sicke and with small means. The Indians around about us are peaceable and friendly; the country very pleasant and temperate, yielding, naturally of itself, greate stores of fruits, and vines of divers sorts, in abundance. There is, likewise, walnuts, chestouts, small nuts and plumbs, with much variety of flowers, roots and hereby no less pleasant than wholesome and profitable. no place has more gooseberries, and strawberries, nor better. timber of all sorts you have in England doth cover the land, that affords beasts of divers sorts, and great flocks of turkies, quail, and pigeons, and many great lakes abounding with fish, fowl, beaver and otter. The sea affords great plenty of excellent fish. Myues we find to our thinking, but neither the qualitie or quantitie wee doe know. Better graine cannot be than the Indian corne, and we can plant it on as good ground as we can desire. Wee are all free-holders, the rent day does not trouble us, our companie are very religious, honest people, and the word of God is sincerely taught us every Sabbath, soe that I know nothing a contented mind can here want. I desire your friendly care to send my wife and children to me, where I wish all the friends I have in England—soe I rest,

"Your loving kinsman,

"WILLIAM HILTON."

The following is a list of the early residents with date, as near as can now be ascertained, of their connection with the settlement:

1626.
William Allen.
Richard Norman.
John Norman.
William Jeffrey.

1629.
John Black.

1636.
Robert Leach.
Samuel Archer.
Seargent Wolf.
John More.
George Norton.
John Sibley.

1637.
John Pickworth.
John Palley.
William Bennet.
Pasco Foote.
Thomas Chubbs.

1640.
John Friend.
William Walton.
James Standish.
Benjamin Parmiter.
Robert Allen.
Edmond Grover.
Rev. Ralph Smith.

1650.
Henry Lee.
William Everton.
—— Graves.
Joseph Pickworth.
Nicholas Vincent.
John Kettle.
Robert Knight.

1651.
Robert Isabell.
Nathaniel Marsterson.
Richard Norman.

1654.
Thomas Millett.

1660.
Moses Maverick.
Samuel Allen.
John Blackleeche.

1662.
—— Pitts.
John Elithope.

1664.
John Crowell.

1665.
John West.

1666.
Richard Glass.
Rev. John Winborn.

1667.
Thomas Bishop.
Jenkios Williams.

1668.
Onesiphous Allsn.

1670.
William Hooper.
Nicholas Woodberry.

1674.
Ambrose Gals.
Commit Marston.
Elodius Raynolds.
John Mason.
James Pittman.

1680.
John Lee
Samuel Lee.
Isaac Whitcher.
John Cadner.
Robert Leach.
John Marston.
Thomas Tewkesbury.
Thomas Ross.
Samuel Allen
Manassa Marston.
Walter Palmiter.
James Rivers.

1684.
William Hosham.

John Foster.	Epharam Jones.	Eliab Littlefield.
Mark Tucker.	John Allen.	Richard Leatherer.
John Knowlton.	Aaron Bennett.	John Bishop.
Emanuel Day.	Felix Monroe.	Samuel Crowell.
Elisha Reynolds.	1687.	Rev. John Everleth.
Joseph Woodberry.	John Norton.	Rev. John Emerson.
James Pitman.	William Allen.	John Burt.
Robert Knight Jr.	Thomas Ayhairse.	Jonas Smith.

CHAPTER CI.

MANCHESTER—(*Continued*).

Annals from 1700 *to* 1800.

In 1700 the town paid Samuel English, a grandson of Masconomo, £4 5*s.* 8*d.* for relinquishing all his right, title and interest in the land of the township.

Lieutenant William Hilton, of this town, served under Colonel Winthrop Hilton in the war with the Eastern Indians.

In the year following the rate of the town was £23 19*s.* 11*d.*

The town granted John Knowlton the right "to erect a seat for himself in the meeting-house, next to the West stairs."

The proprietors of the "Common lands" authorize their committee to sell "Howes Island" to him that will give the most for it.

In 1701 the town ordered the burial-place to be fenced in and "whoever neglect to work on the same shall be fined 3 shillings."

The people were ordered to cut pine and hemlock brush from the fodder land two days. At that time the only hay for their cattle was cut from the natural meadows and swampy places, where there was a rank growth of a coarse variety of grass, and to keep back the encroachment of the woods the clearing above referred to was occasionally necessary. Dams were often built so as to kill the bushes and young trees by flooding them.

In 1705 a "saw mill" was erected at "Bushie plain;" this was where the "old Baker mill" now stands.

On July 4, 1711, a proclamation was received in town to take all deserters of His Majesty's troops in service in the expedition to the Canadas, on penalty of fifty pounds and twelve months' imprisonment of any person entertaining one of them.

At that time it was the custom to record any drift or stray property that had been found, in a book kept for the purpose; in 1715 is the following:

"Picked up by William Hilton, a boat (near Baker's Island) 20 ft. long and 9 ft. wide."

At the formation of the church November 7, 1716, Rev. Amos Cheever was ordained as its first pastor. He celebrated the first sacrament ever held in town. He was a graduate of Harvard College. The church at that time consisted of nine males and ten females.

In the following year John Pierce was murdered on board a vessel in the harbor, and it was long believed by the credulous that the moans of the murdered man could be heard on the approach of a storm. But it has since been ascertained that these mournful sounds proceeded from a sea-bird known as the loon.

The people of that time were extremely superstitious. On a hill near the beginning of the Essex woods two men used to make shingles; in a drunken quarrel one was killed, and that part of the town was long avoided after dark; for on stormy nights the deceased shingle maker could be heard filing his saw, and uttering the most distressing groans. For many years this story was fully believed. At length, some young men, who could not understand what possible use disembodied spirits could have for files and saws, resolved to investigate. On a windy day they ascended the hill, and found a long branch of a pine tree was resting heavily on a limb below, and when swayed by the wind their heavy, pitchy surfaces rubbed and chafed with the sounds described.

The number of inhabitants taxed in 1717 was sixty-four.

The people of Beverly Farms by petition "desire to have the bounds of Manchester include Beverly Farms."

The "Commons" voted to give one hundred acres of their land to the town, in consideration of their great cost in settling a minister in town." This grant included the Kettle Cove Pond, Kettle Island and half an acre near the Cove school-house, for a "clay-pit."

The town afterward sold Kettle Island to John Knowlton for three pounds.

Crow Island to Joseph Leach for six pounds.

The clay-pit was set off for the use of all the inhabitants. Then clay was used for mortar in the building of chimneys and for the brick walls often laid between the studding of the framed-houses, and in the construction of log-houses it was very much used in filling the spans between the logs.

Every pupil in the schools was taxed "5 pence per week for the support of the teachers;" and in cold weather every one was expected to contribute daily a stick of wood.

In 1718 the commoners "granted the Hon. Samuel Browne, of Salem, 10 acres of upland, and 5 acres of swamp, as he had been at great cost in settling a minister in town."

In December, 1719, Samuel Lee, Aaron Bennett, John Foster, Richard Leach, Benjamin Allen and John Dodge were chosen a committee to build a new meeting-house near the old one. It was forty-nine feet long and thirty-five feet wide.

Ezekiel Knowlton was drowned at Sable Island.

In 1720 the old meeting-house was sold for twelve pounds, and a committee was appointed "to take subscriptions of every man for his work, or stuff which

he will offer to build the new one, and to agree with an 'artificial' workman to over see the workers and work himself as cheap as can be done, and when the meeting-house is fit for the congregation to meet in, the committee are to make a satisfactory account of the same; and the committee are to seat the people according to their purchase in the said house, and all money which shall be received from other towns, shall be devoted to the building of the pulpit, and all pin money to building the minister's pew."

The front door, with its home-made lock, and heavy iron hinges, is yet preserved as the southern door of Major Foster's ware-house; and the sounding-board forms a part of the ceiling in a kitchen at West Manchester. These interesting relics should be preserved in some place of greater safety.

About this time John Hill opened a public house where the "Rail Road house" now is, on Union Street. This is the second tavern of which we have record. It was built by John Bishop in 1690.

In 1721 "Jabiz Dodge was chosen school-master, and was not to have more than twenty pounds per annum."

And among other subjects voted upon, there was a majority against geese running any longer on the common.

The "fields at the Plain and at the Neck were held in common as pasture lands."

In 1722 the selectmen granted to John Lee, Jr., "a retailers license."

"Joseph Knight sells his farm at the the Cove to Ingersoll." This is the place now owned by the University of Pennsylvania.

The General Court assessed the town "£108 as their proportion of the debt contracted by the expedition to Canada, and trustees were elected with instructions to let it out at 6 per cent., in sums not less than £5, or more than £10, to any one person."

A road was laid out, one and one-half rods wide, from the county-road by the causeway up the "Great Hill," "for fishermen to cut their fire-wood."

In 1723 the town "ordered the trustees of the £108 shall have it for 5 years, and be allowed 20 shillings for bringing it from Boston."

A new school-house was built near the meeting-house, under the direction of John Foster and Richard Leach, "who are also required to survey the school lands and report on its quality and quantity."

This building was sold in 1811 and removed to Saw-Mill Brook, where it was converted into a dwelling-house by Mathew Giles.

John Foster was chosen school-master for four years, at ten pounds per annum. "And the town agrees to assess £100 for four years for the support of a free school, for bothe sexes to learn reading, writing English and cyphering."

Nathaniel Marsters exchanges Poplar Plain with the town taking in lieu thereof land bordering on Lobster Cove.

1724 "The clerk is ordered to Alphabet the Town's Books."

And "the road 1½ rods wide, was built from the County Road to the White Beach."

In the following year "Benjamin Allen, John Bishop, Richard Leach, Jonathan Allen, Jeremiah Hibbetts, John Crowell, Jabez Dodge, Samuel Lee and Shadrack Norton petition for fifty feet of land in front of the landing place, off the point of rocks to build a wharf."

On the 29th of October, 1727, the people were alarmed by an earthquake.

The cause of such terrestrial disturbances was not understood by the people of that period. They were regarded as an evidence of the Deity's anger. A great religious revival followed and continued for several months, and forty people were united with the church.

In 1730 the town voted to pay Rev. Mr. Cheever, one hundred and twenty pounds, and he to release the Millet Swamp. "And every person is to pay his proportion by contribution every Lord's day, by writing his name on a piece of paper and handing it into the box."

Among the old papers of the town the following is not the least remarkable:

"Whear as thar was no way lay[d] out at Keettel cove landing-place formerly, we, the subscribers, one ye fifth day of Nov., 1731, have laid out half an Acre of land for ye landing-place at Kettel cove on North side of ye Cove, as foulerthe: teen pole frunting to ye water to one ye up land, to one ye pepel Stone beach, falling back to ye Nor ward to ye Distance of teen pol to 3 pol in weedth, thence back 6 pls. to 2 pls. in weath to ye Este side of a Grate Rock; and also bunding out on Nor Eyst side of ye way to Daniel Knigh Howes 2 pol wide and so along ye way that Gos to Knigh saw mill, then one pol on half when ye way now is about teen pls. beyond the red saw mill, &c.

AARON BENNETT, }
JOHN FOSTER, } Selectmen of
THOMAS LEE, } Manchester."

Knight's saw-mill was above the old burial-ground on the road to the railroad station at the Cove.

At a town meeting held in 1731, it was ordered "that the valuable gift of Baxter's practical works from Mr. Holden, of London, by the Rev. Dr. Colman, to the town and church at Manchester, are thankfully accepted, and £8 appropriated for the binding of said works."

These volumes were kept for many years, but in consequence of frequent and incautious lending they were lost.

In the following year Ram Island was sold to John Knowlton.

And in 1732 the town "agrees to build a wharf of fifty feet in front of the Landing place by the meeting-house, from the south ledge of rocks to the channel, and assess £50 on the Town to build the same. And each man shall work one day on the said wharf, on penalty of paying 5 shillings to defray the cost of the wharf." This was the town's wharf by the Common.

In 1734 fifty pounds was ordered "to be assessed

for the schools, one-half of which is to support 4 School Dams, viz.: one at Nuport, one at the Meeting-house, one at Brierey Plain and one at Kettle Cove. The other half shall be expended in providing a good school-master to keep near the Meeting-house during the fall and winter season" The "School Dams" of that time taught reading, spelling and writing, using the "horn book" and psalter for reading, and "the goose quill pens" for writing. It is said the twigs of the grey birch were sometimes used instead of quills.

A proposition was made in several of the towns to divide the county of Essex, but the vote of Manchester was against it. "And a committee was chosen to draw up the reasons for their vote."

In 1736 Samuel Allen sold to John Foster, shoreman, ten acres of land at Graves' farm for fifty pounds.

"In 1739 the meeting of the Commoners was held in John Hill's tavern."

In June, 1740, while the people were on their way to church, an earthquake of such severity was felt that many were obliged to be seated.

John Driver was slain by the Indians at Cape Sable.

In 1741 a bridge was built across the river at the grist-mill. This was on the site of the present bridge in the centre of the town. And the "river bank near the school-house was leased for a lime kiln." This was about where the town hall now stands.

John Hill was chosen "A Inspector of Killing and Hunting of Dears," which were plentiful in the woods.

In 1744 "Samuel Lee was commissioned a Justice of the peace," a very important office at that time.

In March, 1745, the expedition against Louisbourg sailed from Boston, under the command of William Pepperrell. This was a strongly-fortified town that had been built by the French on the Island of Cape Breton. The town had a large business and was said to have employed six hundred vessels in its trade and fisheries. The feeling against this place was very strong, and was voiced by a noted divine in an adjoining town. In a sermon advocating the necessity of destroying the place, he said: "They harbor our enemies that come to lay waste our infant eastern settlements; they molest and break in upon our fisheries, and break them to pieces; they lie near the roadway of our European merchandise, and they sally out and take our corn-vessels; and therefore our oppressions from thence, so long as it remains in the hands of the enemy, are like to be intolerable. We must remove, then, our enemies, or they will destroy us. There is a plain necessity of it; and woe to us if it be not reduced!"

There was great rejoicing when the news of its surrender reached the town. No list of those engaged in this enterprise from this town has been preserved. But Samuel May was there as a lieutenant. David Allen kept a journal of the expedition. Jacob Morgan and John Hassam were killed; and William Tuck was in the engagement on board a British frigate. Daniel Foster was lost by the sinking of a boat, and Jacob Foster never returned. A great deal of excitement prevailed lest the French fleet should make an attack, and many enlisted in the Essex County regiments and marched to Boston. In town the coast-guard was increased and ammunition bought. The town provided stocks for disorderly bipeds, and a pound for restraining unruly quadrupeds. The first stood on the common near the church.

In 1747, other toilers of the sea fell victims to the barbarities of the savage tribes on the coast of Maine. Captain Amos Hilton with his son and crew landed for wood and water, when they were surprised by the Indians and all massacred but one lad. Further particulars of this affair will be found in the article on the fisheries.

Mr. William Hilton, his son, son-in-law and one other man were suprised by the Indians at Niscopet, near Sheepscot. All were killed except the last named, who was made a prisoner. William Hilton was on his way to Muscongus to possess the land belonging to his father.

In 1748, the throat distemper prevailed and many children died, and Benjamin Allen and William Hassam were lost at sea.

The following year was also a sad one, for Isaac Preston, Benjamin Hassam and William Lee were lost on a return voyage from Lisbon. Ezekiel Marsters was also lost at sea, and Andrew Leach died while in London.

"2 shillings paid for a new bottom to the Great Chair in the school-house."

In 1750 "Captain John Lee was paid 5*s.* 4*d.* for a journey after a school-master."

The town also voted to repair the meeting-house, and to buy the first row of pews in the front gallery, the front seats in the side gallery, and the men's seats below.

And it was further voted that those that *are proprietors,* and those that are not, shall *vote together.* This is the first instance of unrestricted suffrage in the town.

A church steeple was ordered to be built at a cost of £190, and in the following year an additional £100 was appropriated for the same purpose.

And again a gloom is cast over the village by the loss of six of their inhabitants while on their return voyage from Lisbon.

In 1753 "Mr. Samuel Wigglesworth was paid for keeping a school five sixths of one quarter year £5, 11*s,* 1½*d.*"

The wolves were very destructive to the young stock of the settlers, and at town meeting it was ordered "that any sum of money be drawn to destroy them," and on the following year it was voted the money needful in conjunction with other towns, "to

Destroy those Devouring Wolves which are in, or may be found in, the woods between Ipswich, Gloucester, Manchester, Beverly and Wenham."

John Lee, Samuel Lee and Rev. Amos Cheever were owners of Slaves.

The town purchased a copper weather-cock for their meeting-house at a cost of £7, 10*s.* 8*d.* It has been in constant use ever since, and it as faithfully marks the wind's changes as it did for our Colonial ancestors.

In 1753 Benjamin Martin, who owned Smith's farm, died; his son, Nathaniel, married a daughter of Amos Pickworth.

In 1755 a "contribution was taken for the support of free schools, Samuel Lee giving the interest of £13 6*s.* 8*d.* for ten years, and many others subscribed liberally. The early settlers were always interested in the support of the church and the schools; and, considering their very limited means, and the great scarcity of money, their contributions were very liberal.

In the following year six citizens of the town were lost at sea. The men were a sea-faring race, and were much employed by the merchants of Boston, Salem, and Newburyport.

In 1756 Ambrose Allen, Moses Frank, Jacob Lee, Daniel Davidson, William Ireland, and John Ayers, belonging to the town, were lost at sea on a return voyage from Lisbon.

Rev. Amos Cheever, who had been pastor of the church for twenty-seven years, died January 15, 1756. He was lain in the old burial ground, but no stone marks his resting-place.

In the town records for 1757 is the following: "The selectmen are empowered to let the French men to John Foster for one year for one hundred and ten pounds, Old Tenor." There were neutral French (Acadians) who were compelled to leave Nova Scotia after it had been conquered by the English, and were town charges.

1758 was a disastrous season for the fishing fleet; many were lost. Of this town John Day, John Driver, Richard Leach, John Lee and Samuel Morgan perished.

And there were more victims for the savages, for Captain Samuel Leach, Joseph Allen, Jacob Crowell and Robert Bear were surprised and slain at Casco Bay. Two boys escaped.

Captain Leach was a justice of the peace, and noted for his great strength and activity. In numerous Indian battles he had made himself conspicuous, and was said to have destroyed many of his assailants before he fell, covered with wounds.

The third tavern, used to stand at the corner of Washington and North streets. It was kept by Deacon John Allen, about 1758. It had a long sloping roof, was two stories in front and one in the rear. The sign was a golden ball. It had two large, square rooms in front, a very large chimney in the centre, and a long, narrow kitchen in the rear. It was taken down in 1883.

In 1759, Benjamin Orsement was granted a deed of the Old Way to Chebacco, aronnd "Moses Hill," by laying out a new road, to the westward of "Millett's Swamp" lots to Chebacco. This was the original road to Ipswich, or Chebacco, as Essex was then called. It left what is now called the "Old Road" to Essex about opposite the "Cressey Orchard," and ran to the northward of "Moses Hill."

£9 11*s.* 8*d.* was paid John Foster for supplying the families of the Frenchmen" (Acadians).

In 1760 a subscription for the support of a free grammar school was circulated, and "John Lee agrees to give £30 old tenor: if Daniel Edwards arrives safe from Virginia: if not, then £15, and 10 others subscribed the last named sum."

The town was fined for not sending a representative to the General Court.

A wall was "ordered to be built about the burial-place, and the bars are to be replaced with a gate." This was probably an ordinary stone wall.

The following is a list of the school teachers in 1760:—

	£.	*s.*	*d.*
"Thomas Lee's wife, the School Dame at Kettle Cove, received...	1	4	
Widow Rebecca Tewksbury, at Newport	2	5	
Nathaniel Lee's wife, at the Plain	1	3	4
Widow Sarah Leach, at North Yarmouth		18	3
John Pickering, for 1 quarter hire, keeping Grammar School	6	13	5

"The town paid Thomas Lee for making a whipping-post, and a pair of stocks 13 shillings, 4*d.*; and 4*s.* 8*d.* for stock-irons." These indispensable institutions of our forefathers, were placed on the common near the church and the school-house.

A fine of five shillings was collected from a person "for swearing."

In 1761 a census of the town was taken, and gives the number of inhabitants as follows: —

Total of population	739
Families	135
Houses	103
Colored persons	23
Acadians	7
Indians	1

The last family of Indians lived at "Nichols," (near the Tenney place). They were very old, and were kindly treated by the people of the town who often contributed to their comfort by gifts of food and clothing.

During the revival at Chebacco in 1763, several of the Manchester people united with Rev. John Cleaveland's church in that place, much to the displeasure of Rev. Mr. Tappan, who had but little sympathy with the "Whitefieldian movement." Among the number was Edward Lee, "The Apostolic Fisherman," of whom Mr. Cleaveland gives an interesting account in his "Plain Narrative," published at Boston in 1767.

In the following year Benjamin Andrew, Charles

Leach and David Foster were lost with the "Mayflower," on their return from the West Indies.

In 1765 John Foster owned the "Smith Farm."

The parsonage land at the eastward of the meeting-house was divided and sold, and money was appropriated by the town for the building of an alms-house. It was the custom to let out the poor to board with those who would pay the most for their services; this was done annually.

Again the storms and seas make havoc, and shroud the village in mourning; for this year adds no less than ten to the list of *lost*.

In 1767 "the town orders £36, 13*s*. 4*d*. as a gift to Rev. Mr. Tappan, and continued the same in the year following, and in 1769 the amount was increased to £45."

A wind-mill was ordered to be built, that the exportation of corn might be prevented. It stood near School Street, on the land recently purchased by the town for a cemetery, and was taken down in about 1812.

A town-meeting was called "to see if anything could be done to the burial-ground, in consideration that those persons who are called to follow their deceased friends to the grave, may be delivered from the briers which so encumber them."

This year saw a marked change in the church—for seats for the choir were made in the gallery—before this they sat with the congregation, and did not sing by note as they now began to do. The time was started by a wooden pitch-pipe about a foot in length, on which the letters of the scale were cut; the tones were obtained by blowing in the end, and the pitch by sliding up and down the rod that filled the cavity of the instrument; only about a dozen psalm tunes were then in use.

In 1773 "the town agreed with Joseph Killam to ring the bell and sweep the meeting-house for one year for £1 6*s*. 8*d*., and further, to ring the said bell at 9 o'clock at night for 40 shillings."

The early settlers had paid their passages to this country, they had settled upon land they had already purchased before leaving England by buying shares in the stock of the company, and that there might be no doubt as to their right to the land, they had paid the Indians for a full and complete relinquishment of all their right, title and interest in it. As loyal subjects of the Crown they had always furnished their full proportion of men and money for preserving peace along the borders. They had contributed their quota of the taxes for the support of the colonial government. They felt they had made their new homes by privation, hard labor, and honest practices, and they were sensitive of any unjust interference of Old England in their affairs. After the signing of the treaty of peace, in 1763, by which all the French possessions in Canada were surrendered to the English—instead of a more liberal policy being adopted as they had been led to believe—the industrial pursuits of the young colony were more severely restricted than before: already over taxed for the protection of the colony, the impoverished settlers were still further harassed by burdensome taxation, and intolerable regulations on commerce and manufactures.

This feeling was greatly intensified by the attempted enforcement of the tea tax in 1773, which resulted in the destruction of three ship-loads in Boston harbor. This act of defiance roused the indignation of the British Parliament, and in retaliation they closed the port of that town, thereby paralyzing all business, and causing a vast amount of suffering there, and in the vicinity. The prospect of our fathers was gloomy in the extreme.

There were a considerable number in the town who remained loyal to the country of their birth, and reasoned against resistance. They said, "Our interests are almost entirely on the ocean, if war comes our fisheries will be destroyed, the markets of Europe, of the West Indies, and the trade with the southern colonies will be closed against us, our vessels will rot at our wharves: and how can we live?"

But a large majority of the people of Manchester felt they had been goaded beyond endurance; and they were willing to take any risk, and to make any sacrifice in the hope of greater independence. And in common with the inhabitants of other sections of the state they lost no time in seconding the measures of the leaders against the unwarranted aggressions of England.

May 18, 1774, a letter was received from the committee of correspondence at Boston, on the subject of a separation of colonies. A town-meeting was called and a committee was chosen to report thereon. At an adjourned meeting the following resolutions were adopted:

1st. "If any danger arrise from this meeting, the town will be liable for the same.

2d. "To send delegates to the county congress and they be paid eight shillings per day.

3d. "John Lee, Andrew Marsters, and Andrew Woodbury are elected delegates to the County Congress to meet at Ipswich to consider the critical state of our national affairs."

The resolutions passed at Ipswich were of unmistakable import, as will be seen by the following extracts;

"At the same time we frankly and with sincerity, declare that we hold ourselves subject to his majesty King George the 3d, and as such will bear him true allegiance, and are ready with our lives and fortunes to support and defend his person, crown, and dignity of his constitutional authority over us. But, by the horrors of slavery—by the dignity and happiness attending virtuous freedom, we are constrained to declare that we hold our liberties too dear to be sported with, and are therefore seriously determined to defend them."

On the 16th of September, "Andrew Woodbury was elected to the General Court, and in the event of its disolution he was to attend as the Provincial Congress at Cambridge."

Since 1749 the hungry waves have engulfed no less than ninety-seven of the inhabitants of this little town.

In December of the same year the town voted that "the money in the hands of the constable should not be paid to the treasurer of the Province, but to Henry Gardner of Stowe;" thus the "sinews of war" were diverted from the customary channel to the popular cause.

And that importation might be reduced it was voted "that we give no Scarfs or Gloves at funerals, and wear no mourning for deceased friends, except a small piece of crape."

Minute men were appointed, ammunition purchased, and the militia organized by the election of Andrew Marsters, captain, Samuel Forster, lieutenant, and Eleazer Crafts, second lieutenant; and the company were more frequently drilled on the common.

The town also ordered "a subscription for the poor of Boston."

Early in 1775 the small-pox, a disease peculiarly dreaded at that period, appeared in the town, and a pest-house, with its attendant, the smoke-house, was built, and many people died.

The order from the Provincial Congress for supplying clothing for the army was cheerfully complied with; and fifty bushels of corn were purchased for the poor of the town.

Watch-houses were built along the coast that the movements of the British armies might be observed.

In April the news of the Battle of Lexington reached the town, and the militia under Captain Marsters started immediately for the scene of action. They went as far as Medford, where they received orders to return. (Twenty-one of this company enlisted in the Continental army). The colors carried by this Medford company was for many years preserved by Major Forster; and at his death it became the property of his grandson, James Knight, a veteran of the War of the Rebellion.

Dr. Joseph Whipple was the first physician that settled in Manchester. He was made captain of the Coast Guards, and the following is a copy of his orders.

"At a meeting of the Committee of Correspondence on Monday, the 25th of September, 1775.

"Captain Joseph Whipple.—As you and the half company of soldiers stationed in the town of Manchester are under the care of the Committee of Correspondence, we order you to proceed as followeth:—

"*Firstly* We order you and your enlisted soldiers to meet on the Town Landing, complete in arms, as directed by the Congress, at two o'clock every day except Sunday, and to discipline your soldiers two hours and a half, and them that don't appear by half after two o'clock shall pay a fine for each default of eight pence to be taken out of their wages.

"*Secondly* We order you and your soldiers to carry your arms to meeting every meeting day, according to the resolves of the Congress.

"*Thirdly* We order you to keep three watches in town, two in each watch by night and one by day. One watch on Glasshead, and one watch on Jones Hill at the Bullard place, and one on Crow Island.

"*Fourthly* We order you to go the rounds two nights in each week, to see that there is a good watch kept, and in case any of them should be found deficient that they may be tried by the articles of war, as they are in the army at Cambridge.

"*Fifthly* We order you to see that no night-watch leaves the watch till he is relieved by the day-watch, and no day-watch till relieved by the night-watch, and see that the watch-houses are not left destitute the day or night,

"*Sixthly*. We order that the Town Landing be the Param port at all times, that in case of any alarm that the soldiers make the best of their way to the Param port to receive orders; except as is for Article Eighthly.

"*Seventhly*. We order that if any shall leave the body and not appear on parade without leave of the officers, they shall pay a fine of six shillings, to be taken out of their wages for each default.

"*Eighthly*. We order that if any alarm should be at Kettle Cove that the men that are there shall keep there, and the rest to appear at the alarm post, and in case the alarm should be at Newport the men that are there shall keep there, and the rest to appear as above."

The committee of correspondence were, John Lee, Jonathan Herrick, Samuel Forster, Jacob Hooper, Aaron Lee, John Edwards, Isaac Lee, Isaac Proctor, Eleazer Crafts.

During this year an oration was delivered in town on "the Beauties of Civil Liberty, and the Horrors of Slavery." This is said to have been not only in the interest of the white race, but of the negro as well; in fact it was the first abolition address ever made in town.

In 1776 a town meeting was called "to do something further, for security from our unnatural enimies," and the construction of an entrenchment at Nortons Point was voted; one hundred bushels of corn was purchased for the poor, and sixty-eight pounds voted for soldiers' bounties.

Among the old papers of a tory family the following receipt was found, evidently written after a political discussion.

Received payment in full of all Demands, from this time, henceforth and Forever, as long as the World stands.

"Manchester, 24 3d mo., 1776."

At a town meeting it was ordered that "Mr. Rogers should have 11 shilling 4*d.* for writing a petition to Gen. Washington." The nature of this document is not known.

In 1777 the warrant for the town-meeting began with: "In the name of the government and people of this colony" instead of "In the name of his Majesty George the Third, &c.," as before.

The town ordered £14 in addition to that given by Congress, as a bounty to enlisting soldiers, and agree to support the families of the soldiers.

There was much excitement in regard to the Tories in town, and a committee was appointed to examine all persons inimical to the state.

The town ordered to all soldiers that served in the Army of 1776 without bounty, a credit of £20 each.

A census reports a male population of two hundred and twenty-four over fifteen years old.

Eleazer Crafts was chosen first major of the Cape Ann and Manchester Brigade.

In July, of this year, the privateer "Gloucester," a new brig from the port for which she was named, went to sea with a total of one hundred and thirty men. Shortly after her departure she captured and sent in two prize brigs; after that nothing was heard of her. The loss of this vessel cast a deep gloom over Manchester, and made widows and orphans in many

homes. The surgeon was Dr. Joseph Whipple, who had won an enviable reputation as a physician in the town. He was an ardent patriot, a safe counselor, and greatly beloved by his fellow-citizens, eighteen of whom shipped with him, and with him sank to their eternal rest. Among them were Daniel Morgan, Daniel Ober, Nicholas Babcock, James Pittman, John Allen, John Coster, ——— Tucker, Amos Allen, David Brown, Andrew Brown, Jacob Lendall, Simeon Webber, Azariah Allen and James Morgan.

"Andrew Leach and ten others belonging to the town were lost in the privateer 'Barrington,' of Newburyport."

In April, 1778, a town-meeting was called to consider the Articles of Confederation between the States. The constitution was read by paragraphs, and its provisions discussed, but the decision was against it.

Liberty to be inoculated for the small-pox was desired. A meeting was called, and after a protracted debate, permission was refused.

Samuel Foster and Benjamin Obear built mills at Newport for making molasses from the stalks of corn, but the experiment was not successful and was soon abandoned.

All business with the Southern Colonies and the West Indies having been suspended by the war, there was much suffering for the want of corn, pork, molasses and sugar.

All the men capable of bearing arms were in the army, on board of privateer vessels or on duty in the wretched defenses called forts that lined the coast; so the care of providing for the families devolved on the women and boys, who cultivated the land, from it and from the sea, they gathered their food.

And that the raising of pork might be encouraged, it was voted "that swine be allowed to go at large, yoked and ringed to prevent their doing damage."

In the early part of 1779, £742 in paper was the equal of £100 in silver. In December, of the same year, it required £2,593 to buy £100 in silver.

The town taxes for that year were as follows:

Ordered by Congress	£8904
State tax	4927
County tax	2024
Town tax	2979
School tax	200
	£19,034

The impoverished people could not pay their taxes. And so great was the difficulty in finding officers who would undertake their collection, that Amos Hilton, Joseph Day and Isaac Lee having been severally elected, each preferred to pay the fine of £5 rather than serve in that capacity.

£41, 5*s.* were paid for soldiers' shoes, and other sums were raised for the prosecution of the war.

In 1780 James Lee died in prison at Halifax, N. S.

The population of the town for this year was nine hundred and sixty-five; and the taxes, including soldiers' bounties, were £21,092.

The town expenses "were £800 for Rev. Mr. Tappan; £1280 for highways; £800 for the poor; £4000 for schools and town charges." Paper money had so depreciated that £75 was the common exchange for £1 in silver.

A great deal of distress is occasioned by this terrible depreciation in the value of the currency and consequent high price of all kinds of supplies; and a committee was appointed by the town "to regulate the price of articles of consumption."

As illustrating the condition of paper money of that period, a good woman in this town, whose husband was an officer of a privateer, was one day in the early part of the war made happy by the receipt of a barrel of sugar and £1,000 in Continental money, as his part of the prize money. The captain, as he paid it to her, advised that it be invested in some kind of real estate; but to the good wife the sum appeared a large one, and fearing to take the responsibility, she, like the unfortunate steward of old, hid it in a napkin, and neither she or her heirs ever realized a farthing from it.

Seven men were ordered from the town by the General Court, and £12 in silver was offered to soldiers who would enlist.

In October orders were received from Congress to provide beef for the army. For that purpose the town voted to raise £7000, but this was reconsidered and it was voted: "we will not comply, let the consequences be what they may."

Another widespread alarm was occasioned by that remarkable phenomenon, "The dark day." That was a superstitious period, and coming as it did at a time when harassed by want and war, it is no wonder that such an unusual condition of the heavens should have been regarded as the grand climax of their suffering, the final end of earth. This darkness extended over a great portion of New England, but was believed to have been darkest in this part of the State. A graphic description of that day from the pen of a young lady is worthy of preservation. She says,—

"The sun rose clear, but it soon began to be lowry with some showers. Towards 9 o'clock it seemed to be breaking away, but every thing had a yellow appearance. Soon after 9 a dark, heavy cloud was seen rising from the northwest, which gradually spread itself till it covered the whole heavens, except a narrow space near the horizon. About 10 this was also covered, and the darkness increased so that we had to light a candle. All the folks out of doors, left their work and came in. Fear and anxiety were manifested on every countenance. It was quite dark when we set our dinner table. Early in the afternoon the darkness began to abate, and before sun down it was light, but clouded with a yellow, brassy appearance. After sun down it grew dark very fast, and the evening was more remarkable than the day. It seemed like darkness that might be felt. Some of our family who tried to go to a neighbor's, had to come back. We sat up late knowing that the moon would rise at nine, and expected it would make some difference as to the darkness, but it did not until after 11 o'clock when some glimmer of light began to appear."

This darkness was not observed by those at sea. It occurred on May 19, 1780.

In 1781 orders were again received for eight thousand two hundred and sixty-six pounds of beef or the

money to buy it; also a draft for eight men. Neither were complied with, and the town was fined £1027 6s.

Aaron Lee, William Tuck and John Edwards drew a petition to the General Court that they would appoint a committee "to see the poverty of the town." A letter on the subject was addressed by Aaron Lee to Esquire Phillips, of Andover.

The result was a proposition for the town to pay £50 for the beef, and give their note for £50, which was agreed to.

In November of this year £1000 was raised to hire soldiers for the remainder of the war. The town having been fined for not complying with the orders of Congress, Mr. Tewksbury was sent to confer with Col. Hutchinson, of Boston, and an abatement was procured.

The fourth public-house, or tavern, was situated on Union Street, and was known as the "Crafts House." It was kept by Eleazer Crafts, from about 1780 to about 1790, the time of his decease; it was afterward kept by his widow, who was a woman of remarkable energy and an active patriot during the Revolution.

This house was removed in 1873 to a spot on School Street, next above the Catholic Church, where it made two houses of good size.

In 1782 the General Court ordered a quantity of guns and ammunition, which were received, and an additional draft for men for three and five months was ordered. The town appointed William Tuck, John Lee and Jacob Tewksbury to draw notes for the soldiers; they drew interest and were signed by the town treasurer. Warrants for the town-meetings were dated according to the year of American Independence.

During the Revolution the yearly average of deaths in the town was twenty-one; but in 1777 there were fifty deaths; the total population was nine hundred and sixty-five.

The news of the suspension of hostilities between the United States and Great Britain was received with acclamations of joy. Every heart rejoiced that war had ceased, that peace had returned, and the great blessing of independence had been secured. It was a happy release from the grievous burdens which for seven long years had borne so heavily upon the impoverished people of the town. The old cannon that had so long stood in front of the church was dragged from its place, and in charge of Benjamin Leach, who had served all through the war upon the sea, and Joseph Kinsman, who for the same period had served his country on the land, it was taken to every part of the town and discharged all day, the happy people joining in the celebration, and furnishing refreshments and powder. Everywhere the sound of rejoicing was heard, but from none were the prayers of thanksgiving more heart felt, and earnest, than rose from the trembling lips of the mothers and daughters; they had silently borne terrible burdens of privations and hardships; and very many had sacrificed their husbands, fathers and loved ones upon the altar of liberty. During that long war, all suffered; but none more than the women.

During the latter part of the war, the people of the town were greatly distressed for the means of living—paying taxes and meeting the drafts ordered by the Continental Congress. For seven years the productive labor had been called from their pursuits to the defense of the country. And in order to pay the soldiers and to meet the expenses of the war, Congress was obliged to issue notes which circulated as the currency of the people. These were counterfeited in England, and extensively distributed throughout the colonies, the county was flooded, and the value fell so rapidly, and so low that the people lost confidence in its ever being redeemed. And when the soldiers returned it was to find the people everywhere embarrassed by debt, commerce destroyed, the fishing fleet lost, or so decayed as to be almost useless, and with no means for the building of new ones. The outlook was extremely disheartening, but being a self-reliant and hopeful people, they went to work, and by industry and economy they gradually recovered, and as they became more prosperous, public improvements were recommenced.

This stagnation created in some parts of the State a feeling of disaffection which took the form of an insurrection known as "Shay's Rebellion" of 1786. The movement found no sympathizers in Manchester who furnished her quota for its suppression. Among them William Tuck acted as ensign, and Samuel Ayres served as a private. Ayres was in the Continental army during the War of the Revolution, and had previously served nineteen years in the English army, from which he had been honorably discharged.

During the seven long years of mourning and suffering, the schools had been somewhat neglected; but now money was raised for the free school, and in 1785 a new school-house was ordered. It was to be thirty feet long and twenty-six feet wide.

And a bell was purchased for the church. It weighed three hundred pounds, and cost £58 3*s*. 7*d*. This bell remained to call the people together until the remodeling of the later church in 1845, when a liberal citizen of the town exchanged it for a much larger one.

In 1788 the first regular communication with Salem and Boston was effected by the establishment of a line of two-horse open carriages from Gloucester. They ran twice a week, and nearly the whole day was consumed in making the journey. The arrival of this vehicle always created a sensation.

About this time Captain William Tuck's schooner "Race Horse" was towed to "Tuck's Point" in a damaged condition, and condemned. A portion of her was used in the construction of other vessels, but some of the timbers of the old wreck are still visible.

A grammar school was ordered.

Rev. Benjamin Tappan died. He was buried in the old burial ground, and his grave-stone bears this inscription :

"In memory of Benjamin Tappan, late pastor of the church in Manchester, who expired May 6, 1790, in the 70th year of his age, and the 45th year of his ministry. He was a sincere and exemplary Christian, a tender husband and parent, a judicious and sound divine, a prudent and faithful minister."

In 1789 a building for the poor of the town was built near the land where the Baptist Church now stands. It was known as the long house, it being but seventeen feet wide and sixty feet in length.

During the year 1791 a house was erected at Grave's beach for small-pox patients, and in the year following Daniel Low had "liberty to run a wharf to the point of rocks opposite the town wharf."

Rev. Ariel Parrish was ordained as the minister on the 12th of April, 1792; he was born in Lebanon, Conn., in 1764.

His ministry was a very brief one, for he died May 30, 1794, a victim to the "great sickness," as it was called, and which made that year a memorable one in the annals of the town. But little is known of the disease, except it was a fever of a very malignant type. The people were greatly alarmed, and the fear of contagion was so great that it was almost impossible to obtain nurses. Of a population of nine hundred and sixty-five, no less than ninety died.

Captain William Tuck, of this town, was appointed by President Washington to the office of Collector of Customs for the district of Gloucester.

In Feb., 1798, the schooner "Esther," Captain William Hooper, Jr., of Manchester, which, on a voyage to Bilboa, was captured by the French privateer "Vengeance," taken to Bayonne and condemned.

The town appointed a committee to view the road leading over the "great hill," and see if it is advisable to turn the same.

The financial policy of General Washington's administration proved a success, and public confidence in the government was secured to such an extent as to give an impulse to business, such as the people had never experienced before.

The Indian troubles in the West had been suppressed. The liberal policy of the general government in opening those fertile regions for settlement caused a large emigration thereto.

The revolution in France, and the general European war that followed, opened their markets to the commerce and productions of America. The people advanced in prosperity with a rapidity before unknown. In the space of ten years the exports were increased from nineteen million to ninety-four million dollars.

This wonderful growth in the commercial interests of the country was soon felt by the inhabitants of Manchester whose home was on the sea. The building and the fitting out of vessels for the merchant service, and for the fisheries, created an increased demand for skillful navigators, and this want was fully met by Stilson Hilton, who was noted for his mathematical and nautical knowledge; he opened a school where young men were taught all the mysteries of navigation for a moderate tuition fee, and so successful was this teacher that there were soon more than forty sea-captains from this town in command of merchant vessels from the principal ports of the Commonwealth. And the fishing industry was no less prosperous. New fishing stations sprang up at the Cove, and in the little creeks and inlets of the town new vessels were built; warehouses, wharves and flakes for the drying of the catches were largely extended. Those too old to go to sea found employment in preparing the fish for market. All were busy.

The ocean has for the old mariner a charm that is very difficult to eradicate. As the old race-horses often strive to join in the struggle after they have been assigned to the monotonous labors of the road, so with them. As a case in point, we might mention the instance of skipper Samuel Allen, who for many years had commanded a fishing vessel, but getting old he retired to his farm on the Plain. One day a vessel was all ready to sail for the Grand Banks, but the captain (or skipper, as they were called), was nowhere to be found; the owner was in a great state of excitement; the vessel was at the wharf; the tide was almost high; men, provisions, everything on board, but no one to take command. Just then skipper Allen came in sight with cart, oxen and corn for the grist-mill. Hurrying to him the excited owner exclaimed, "You are just the man I was looking for; my vessel is all fitted for 'the Banks,' men, provisions, all on board, tide is in, the wind is fair, but the skipper can't be found, and you must take his place!"

The old man stopped his team. It was a fine vessel, and, as he looked at her tugging impatiently at the ropes that bound her to the shore, the old love for the sea was kindled anew; it was too much for the old skipper, and he answered, "Yes, I'll go; but you must see to getting the oxen and the grist home, and tell my folks where I am." He went on board; in a few minutes he was out of sight, and in sixty-five days he returned with a famous cargo of fish, and again retired to his farm.

Having reached the close of the century, it is a good time to refer to some of the events of the war in which our people were actors.

It seems almost incredible that a people numbering only three millions, educated to the belief in the "Divine right of King," and scattered from Canada to the Gulf of Mexico, should have had the courage to wage war with one of the most powerful nations of the earth. It would appear almost impossible to have devised any system of intolerance and persecution that could drive a people to such desperation.

The Declaration of Independence was sent by Con-

gress to all the towns, with the request to have it read from all the pulpits, and to have it entered on the town records. This was done in Manchester, and the original copy is still preserved.

The town then numbered about eight hundred; the men had generally been employed in the fisheries and in commercial pursuits, so that, when the war began, their occupation being at an end, many engaged in the privateer service. Among them was Captain William Tuck, who in 1776 made several successful voyages in a schooner to Bilboa laden with dry fish, and returned loaded with powder for the colonies.

In 1777 he became part owner and commander of a privateer brig, the "Remington," of eighteen guns, and captured many prizes during 1778. In the latter part of the war he was unfortunate. In 1782 he took command of a ship mounting twenty-four guns and with one hundred men (many of them from this town); he was captured eight hours out of port by the English frigate "Higate Blonde," of thirty-six guns; the prize was sent to Halifax, and was wrecked off the coast of Nova Scotia. After the war he commanded the ship that hoisted the second American flag in the Baltic Sea. He became a large land owner in the town, and, on his retiring from sea-life, became a farmer, and was employed in many town offices. In the early part of the war he was a delegate to the County Convention at Ipswich, and represented the town in the General Court in 1777. He married four times, having children by each of his wives, numbering in all twenty-three. He died in March, 1826, aged eighty-seven years, and was buried under the forms and ceremonies of the order of Free Masons, of which order he was a member.

The following is a copy of the shipping-paper of the privateer "Hawke," commanded by Jeremiah Hibbert in 1777:

"Now fitted for sea and ready to proceed on a cruise, the privateer schooner 'Hawke,' a well-built vessel of 75 tons burden, mounting 10 carriage guns and eight swivels, small arms, &c. She is a prime sailer, and has on board every convenience for such a cruise, and is to be commanded by Captain Jeremiah Hibbert. The whole crew will draw one-half of all the prizes. Out of which the captain will draw 8 shares; the 1st Lieut will draw 6 shares; the 2d Lieut. will draw 4 shares; the Master will draw 4 shares; the Prize Master will draw 3 shares; the 1st master's mate will draw 2½ shares, the 2d master will draw 2 shares; the Surgeon will draw 2 shares; the remainder will draw a single share. Jeremiah Hibbert, Captain, Marston Watson, 1st Lieut.; Caleb Ray, Surgeon; Samuel Burnett, Master; Ezekiel Leach, Mate; Benjamin Leach, Prize Master. Except the Surgeon all the officers were from Manchester.

Those of the crew belonging to the town were Thomas Steele, Theophilus Lane, Joseph Perry, Nicholas Babcock, Stitson Hilton, Abial Lee and John Knight, carpenter.

It is related of "Captain Daniel Leach," who was then a mate under Captain Tuck: Their vessel was captured, and a prize crew placed on board to take her to Halifax. While on their way they put into a small harbor on the Nova Scotia coast. Captain Tuck was a fine-looking gentleman and of most excellent address, and he so ingratiated himself into the good graces of the prize captain, that he was invited to accompany that officer to visit some of his British friends on shore.

During their absence Leach, who was on deck, was watching the doings of the prize crew, who were all in the rigging, making some repairs and shaking out the sails, that they might dry. In this Leach thought he saw his opportunity; and with him to see was to act. Some of the prisoners were on the deck, and soon comprehended the plan. Leach loitered towards the arm-chest, and, seizing an axe, burst the cover open; this being the signal agreed upon, the Americans were quickly armed, and the crew in the rigging were at their mercy. Leach and his crew were in charge, and the English crew were his prisoners.

After a pleasant visit on shore, the prize captain and his polite friend were rowed alongside. Leach received them courteously, and surprised the English captain by ordering him below as his prisoner; and Captain Tuck was informed that the ship was his again, and his old crew were awaiting his orders. Under his direction the vessel was taken safely to Boston.

From the *Salem Register* of July 30, 1838, we copy the following:

"At an early period in the great struggle for Independence, Mr. William Kitfield, when only 21 years of age, with John Girdler, of this town, and a young man by the name of Lawrence, of Gloucester, shipped at Boston with Captain Smith, of Salem, on a voyage to Bilboa. On their return voyage they were taken by a British ship of war, and carried to England and thrown into prison, from which they managed to escape and find their way to a sea port, where, as English men, they shipped on a vessel bound to Jamaica and Halifax. While at the former place Kitfield proposed to the other two a plan for taking the vessel while on her way to Halifax. They agreed to it, and the next day, while on shore, each bought a sword. When they were well to the northward, about midnight, when all three were in the same watch, Girdler, armed, was placed at the cabin-door; Kitfield went to the second mate, who was at the helm, and told him the anchor was off the bow. Thus they got charge of the deck, and the officers were prisoners below. The crew, being promised a share of the prize, readily joined them and assisted in working the vessel. The next day they ran alongside an American privateer, and were taken into Salem, where the vessel was given up to the three daring youngsters. The Captain cried bitterly, and said he would not care so much about it if it were not the first time he had been Captain."

Captain William Pert was so unfortunate as to have his ship captured by an English cruiser when he was quite near Boston. A prize crew was put on board and she was headed for Halifax.

Among the cargo of the captured vessel was a large amount of provisions and excellent liquors. For the first day the wind was very light, and but very little progress was made. The English officers had already discovered the merits of the food, and they very frequently refreshed themselves with the liquors. As the sun was setting there were indications of more wind. The prize officers, not feeling sufficiently familiar with the difficult navigation of this part of Massachusetts Bay, asked Captain Pert to work the ship, to which he very cheerfully agreed. But occasionally he found time to go below, and adding zest to the

festivities by bringing to their notice some untried varieties of brandies and wines, which were greatly relished.

The night set in very dark with a strong breeze. Captain Pert being pilot, managed to gradually change the course of the ship, and by daylight the following morning, the bewildered officers found themselves, with bad headaches, under the guns of the fort in Boston Harbor.

Captain Pert was never an intemperate man, but to the day of his death he believed there are times when intoxicating liquors may be profitably employed.

Captain John Lee commanded a privateer that sailed from Newburyport; he captured several prizes.

Captain Hibbert was in command of the "Civil Usage," which was lost in the great storm off Portland.

In 1777 the privateer "Barrington," Captain Hant, of Newburyport, was lost, and with her Andrew Leach and ten others belonging to Manchester went down.

The names of some of those who served in the army were John Lendall, Josiah Lee, Wm. Kellham, Henry Frederics, Jos. Kilham, Eleaser Crafts, Major Wm. Kitfield, Joseph Haskell, Samuel Bear, John Allen, William Dow, Benjamin Kimball, Thomas Hooper, John Knight, Joseph Knight, Lieutenant Joseph Leach, Ezekiel Leach, Isaac Preston, Dr. Joseph Whipple, Samuel Ayres, Amos Jones, Isaac Allen, John Kimball, John West, Abiel Burgess, Thomas Gentlee, Solomon Lee, John Danforth, Jeremiah Dow, Moses May, James Lee, Joseph Babcock, Asarius Allen, Hooper Allen, Benjamin Crafts, John Poland, Stephen Danforth, Nicholas Babcock, Israel May, Michael Tappan, Ebenezer Tappan, John Babcock.

In Governor Everett's oration on the History of Liberty delivered at Charlestown, July 4, 1838, we find the following:

"In the following year, 1755, in the month of July, Washington was present as an aid to the ill-starred Braddock, in the fatal battle which bears his name; and there is living in the State of Massachusetts, an individual who was also in the battle. He remembers the appearance of the *Colonel*, as he calls him. He saw him as he rode, for three long hours, through the storm of fire and steel, which beat on that disastrous plain; leaping from horse to horse, as two were successively shot from under him, the constant mark of the Indian warriors, as they afterward told him, but preserved like the pious children of Israel, 'on whose bodies the fire had no power.' Not like them, indeed, in all respects, for it is recorded, that 'neither were their coats changed nor the smell of fire had passed on them.' The garments of Washington were pierced with bullets in four places, but he was preserved through the fiery trial, to be the saviour of his country. The aged person to whom I have alluded, living, as I believe, in Massachusetts, in the county of Essex, is probably the sole surviving eye-witness of the scene."

The experience of "Mr. Nathaniel Allen" is so remarkable that we cannot fail to give it a place in these pages. From an account published in the *Salem Gazette* of February 1839, we extract the following:

At an early period of the Revolutionary War, he served in the Artillery under the command of Col. Harry Knox. He crossed the Delaware with Washington, was engaged in the battle of Trenton, Princeton and other conflicts. After he had served his time he retired from the arduous duties and privations of a soldier's life, to what he supposed would be a more comfortable one on the ocean. How far these hopes were realized will be seen.

Early in October, 1780, he shipped on the schooner "America" of Gloucester, bound to the West Indies, Capt. Isaac Elwell commander, John Wood second mate, Jacob Lurvey, Aaron Witham, Nathaniel Allen and Samuel Edwards Cook. Nothing of importance occurred on the outward passage. They arrived at Point Petre, Guadaloupe, where they disposed of their fish, and took in a cargo of sugar, cotton, cocoa, coffee, rum and molasses and on the 10th of December, sailed for home.

Everything went well until they reached George's Banks, which was December 31, and they were happy at the prospect of soon meeting their friends. But a very violent gale came on in which they shipped a sea that carried away their sails, bowsprit and rudder, rendering the schooner wholly unmanageable. For two months they had a succession of gales from the west and north-west, and were tossed at the mercy of the wind and waves.

At the time of the disaster they had but one week's provisions, which they divided. They then lived on cocoa as long as it lasted. They succeeded in catching some shark, dolphin, and a small fish called the rudder fish. With these they sustained life, but at times they were reduced to the utmost extremity; one day they caught a rat that was instantly devoured and pronounced the sweetest of morsels. They suffered intensely for water, having at the onset but one barrel; during showers they drank all they could catch, but at one time they had no rain for three weeks; during this time the cook expired from thirst. Then despair was written on every face, for they knew not who would be the next victim. But the next day it rained plentifully.

They had been on this wreck since the 31st of December, and it was now the 17th of September, a period of two hundred and sixty-one days, and in all that time but three vessels were seen; one at a great distance, the second not far off, but they took no notice of them. The third they saw the day before the rescue at three leagues distance. They made signals of distress but soon after, to their great surprise and disappointment, the vessel changed her course and sailed away. But the next day a brig was seen bearing down upon them; when conveniently near, a boat with the mate and two hands came on board. After looking about the mate said "we saw you yesterday and wanted to come to your relief, but the captain was opposed to it; he said you were Americans, and if he took you on board you would rise and take the brig. To day we saw you again and as he had taken a 'stiff horn' and had gone to his cabin, we concluded not to let him know it until we got near you." The mate and the two men, then

returned to the brig and made their report to the Captain, who immediately ordered the survivors to be brought on board. He told them that if they behaved properly he would treat them well; he would not make them prisoners, for he thought they had been prisoners long enough, and had a hard time of it.

The only tools they had for preparing their fuel was a hand-saw, and a crow-bar; with these they began on the broken bowsprit, then the windlass, and bitts; next they took off two streaks of planks from the waist, and sawed off the top timbers near the deck.

The brig took from the wreck six thousand pounds of cotton, three hogsheads of sugar, and two bags of coffee.

When they were rescued they were twenty leagues to the westward of the Western Islands; they had one hundred and fifty pounds of dried dolphin, half a barrel of water and one turtle which was taken on board the brig for food. For *two hundred and sixty-one days* these men were drifted in what is now the highway between America and Europe without succor. But it must be remembered there was but little commerce traversing the ocean then, and the war between Great Britain and the United States was then raging.

When near the entrance to New York harbor, the Captain gave them his only boat with a sail, oars and some provision, and bade them God speed. (He would not take them to New York, as it was then in the possession of the English). In this boat they traveled by day, and at night they slept beneath it on the shore, and in one week they reached Black Cove beach at Manchester, where they abandoned it and walked to their homes; so changed and emaciated that their friends hardly recognized them.

Mr. Allen lived for many years in Manchester, and died at the age of eighty-four, highly respected by all who knew him.

The first store in Manchester was kept by the Widow Samples, on Sea Street. She afterwards married Major Eleazer Crafts, and removed to his house on Union Street, which was opened as a hotel about 1780; here, as Mrs. Crafts, she continued her store keeping.

About 1775 there were no needles, pins or thread in town; they were needed in every family; and to be deprived of them was a very serious inconvenience.

Mrs Crafts was a woman of great energy, and she resolved to secure a supply of them if possible. The British army then occupied Boston, and to pass in and out was not an easy matter.

She engaged two men with a boat, and was rowed to the vicinity of the town where she discharged them and walked on, and with some difficulty she passed the guard and gained the residence of a lady friend, with whom she remained a day or two and inspected her purchases.

With her bundle in her hand she again passed the English sentinel, took the ferry boat to Charlestown, and walked to Malden, where she knew of a man who kept a horse and chaise, which she hired and was driven to the ferry between Salem and Beverly. From the latter place she continued her walk until she reached home, where her bundle added greatly to the comfort of the community.

Obed Carter was the collector of taxes; he was a man of sterling honesty, but quite skeptical in his religious views. He lived where the "Annable House" now is. His friend, Samuel Bennett, lived in the old house still standing on the north side of the hill that bears his name. He was noted for his strong faith; "he trusted in the Lord at all times," and frequently endeavored to impress his views upon the mind of his friend. Of these men the following tradition has been preserved.

On the day fixed by law all collectors of the provincial tax must visit Boston and pay their collections into the treasury. Mr. Carter had started on his journey, and when opposite his friend's house his horse fell and broke his leg. For him the loss of a horse was a severe trial; but when Mr. Bennett assured him that it was all for the best, his indignation knew no bounds. Subsequently, when the news reached the town that the collectors that passed through Lynn were all robbed and those that resisted were murdered, it *did seem all for the best*, for Mr. Carter's life and money were saved. Brother Bennett was justified, to him it was a confirmation of a long cherished faith; to the other it was the breaking forth of a new light. From that day the two friends were in accord on the reality of a superintending Providence.

Fisheries.—But little is known of the style of vessel with which the commerce of the early settlers was carried on.

In 1624 the Plymouth Company built two shallops. Of one, which was used in trading voyages to the Kennebeck River, we have the following description: "She had a little deck over her midships to keepe ye corne drie; but y^e^ men were fain to stand out in all weathers, without shelter." The next year they cut one of the largest of this class in two "and lengthened her some 5 or 6 foote; and strengthened her with timbers, and builte her up, and laid a deck on her; and made her a convenient and wholesome vessell; very fitt & comfortable for their use, which did them service 7 years after."

The year after the arrival of Governor Winthrop he built "The Blessing of the Bay," a bark of thirty tons. Vessels of this class were frequently mentioned, but no complete description and no drawings of them have been preserved. The vessels employed in the fisheries were small, and many are believed to have been without decks. Among those owned in Manchester, in 1696, we find Samuel Allen had one of twelve tons; Aaron Bennett, one of nine tons; William Hassam, one of thirteen tons; and Samuel Lee's "Swallow," was thirty-five tons.

These vessels were all engaged in the fisheries, except, perhaps, the latter, which may have been for coasting or trading voyages.

A very considerable trade was carried on in these crafts with Virginia and the more southern colonies. These trips were made after the close of the fishing season. It was seldom that wages were paid the men, but they were allowed some space for private adventure instead. Their cargo generally consisted of fish, a few articles of hardware, cloth, stockings and wooden-ware.

They generally proceeded to a small bay or creek near some plantations where they bartered their goods for corn, beans, bacon, live hogs and other products of the country. Many went further south and to the West Indies where they exchanged their cargoes for salt, sugar, molasses, coffee and rum. These voyages began long before the war, and were pursued with no inconsiderable profit.

About 1750 we find mention of voyages to Lisbon and Bilboa; to these ports little but fish was taken and the proceeds were invested in salt, fruit, wine and specie.

The fish were taken from boats and small crafts that lay about the shoals and along the coast, where they took at different seasons cod, hake and pollock. As late as 1805 the average of the vessels engaged in the fisheries was but twenty tons, and they were extremely uncomfortable. The fire was made on a brick hearth on the floor, directly beneath the companion way, up which the smoke was expected to pass, and the only way to and from the cabin was through the smoke and fire.

The occupation of the early settlers was largely that of fishing; and when we consider the anxiety, privation and manifold dangers with which they were beset, we are constrained to believe that no portion of our country was populated at so great a cost. They do not appear to have suffered greatly from hunger, for the sea was always bountiful, and furnished a large variety of food. And the Indians whose soil they occupied gave them but little trouble; but the tribes more remote often caused serious alarm and filled many graves. But little could be gathered from their small farms, for they were fishermen: and were obliged to earn their livelihood from the reefs and shoals of the ocean. Along the rock bound coast these hardy men in their primitive and poorly equipped vessels groped in storm and fog among the unexplored and hidden dangers, buoying many a fatal rock with their wrecks: and if by stress of weather, or from exhausted supplies of wood or water, they sought the shore, they frequently fell a prey to savage ambush. At sea, pirates were not unfrequent; at home there were dreaded epidemics, contagious diseases, military drafts and press gangs to tear fathers from dependent families, and consign them to slavery in the ships of "Christian England." Then the embargo, and war, which forced their vessels from the ocean where dismantled, they lay in bushy creeks. But one employment remained for these rugged toilers of the sea, and that was in the vessels of the Navy, or on board the numerous privateers, where they rendered noble service to the young nation.

As illustrative of the dangers above mentioned we will recount one instance.

In August, 1747, Captain Amos Hilton was fishing off the coast of Maine. Being out of wood and water, he entered a little harbor where he anchored his vessel, and with his son, and crew, was soon busy filling his casks from the brook, and cutting wood, when they were surprised by the Indians and massacred. It was a dreadful blow to the bereaved families, for whom every one in the village felt the deepest sympathy, and especially for the aged parents of Aaron Lee, a boy of twelve, who was on board the ill-fated vessel.

Some three years after this sad event, while the Lee family were taking their seats at dinner, the door opened, and a young man of swarthy complexion, with long black hair and clothed in skins, entered. In the few words they understood of the Indian tongue, they asked if he would have food. He made no reply, but gazed from one to another. At length walking to where Mrs. Lee was seated he called her mother. Their grief of many years was soon changed to joy, for he, "their son, who was dead, is alive again—he was lost and is found."

The story of his adventures is as follows: Soon after the attack was commenced he was seized by strong arms and hurried to the village, where his clothes were taken from him; and clad in skins he was made to work with the women in fetching wood and water. He soon learned their language, but was never allowed to leave the village; thus months and years passed with no opportunity of escape.

One day when all the warriors were away on some murderous expedition, he was at work under the direction of the women cutting faggots. When he had made a great pile, they told him he had cut enough, and when the braves returned he was to be placed upon it and burned to death.

The prospect was not pleasing to the poor boy, and he so excited the sympathy of the women that they advised his escape and promised to aid him. They pointed in the direction of the nearest white settlement, and went with him until they came to an abandoned house, where they concealed him in an oven, and then they went back to their homes.

When the warriors returned they were told their prisoner had escaped, and a vigorous search was made for him. Every part of the old house was examined, except the oven. At twilight the disappointed savages gave up the search, and when it was quite dark, Lee crept from his hiding-place and pursued his way through the forest. By concealing himself by day, and traveling by night, he reached the

settlement. Then concealment being no longer necessary he resumed his weary journey by daylight, until the long-wished for home was reached.

Aaron Lee lived to a good old age, and for many years he served the town as their clerk.

CHAPTER CII.

MANCHESTER—(*Continued*).

Annals from 1800 to 1887.

IN 1800 the population was one thousand and eighty-two of whom three were colored. The Rev. Abraham Randall was ordained September 2, 1801. On the following year the road to the cove was improved by a more direct way over the "great hill."

In 1803 the first post-office was established, and Delucena L. Bingham was appointed Post-master, which office he retained until 1837, when he died at the age of seventy-three.

Before the establishment of this office, letters for Manchester were carried to Gloucester, brought back by the stage-driver and stuck in a rack in the town. The total receipts of the office for the first quarter were seven dollars, of which the post-master had thirty per cent. Mr. Bingham was a native of Connecticut, came to Manchester in 1764, when he was but nineteen years old; he taught school for several years, was a deacon of the church for thirty-two years, a land surveyor, and one of the selectmen eighteen years, town clerk thirty-one years, and a member of the house of representatives in 1824.

1804. The first social library was established with forty-five subscribers and one hundred and fifty volumes. In 1806, the second social library was instituted; they both continued for a few years and then were broken up, and the books divided among the members.

In 1804 the subject of building a new meeting-house was considered in town meeting. During the year following a "daily stage" drawn by four horses enabled the people to visit Salem and Boston more conveniently: its arrival and departure was always an event of absorbing interest, and the drivers were the most popular of men. They were the autocrats of the road; the ladies always had smiles for them, they set the fashions for the men, and were the admiration of the boys. The dwelling and barn of Captain Samuel Allen was burned. These were the first buildings destroyed by fire since the settlement of the town. They stood on School Street on the spot now occupied by Thomas Willmington's house. The buildings were entirely consumed with the most of their contents, and long piles of wood in the rear of the barn, were also destroyed: it was supposed to have originated from a lighted pipe in the barn.

The embargo of 1808 occasioned a great deal of dissatisfaction all along the coast: by it trade was paralyzed, and commerce destroyed: vigorous remonstrances were sent out from all the sea-ports.

A meeting of the citizens of this town was held September 1st, 1808, and a petition, or memorial drawn up to be presented to the Congress of the United States, setting forth their loyalty to the government,—their distressed condition from the effects of the embargo by rendering valueless their catch of fish of the preceding year, and their hopeless prospect of future means of support of themselves and families. As this memorial failed to produce the desired effect, another meeting was held February 8, 1809, at which Abiel Burgess presided as moderator, and D. L. Bingham clerk, to petition the legislature of Massachusetts, for some action to induce the national government to relax the restriction on commerce. As this petition, or memorial will best show the state of feeling of the people at that time, a copy is here inserted verbatim.

"*To the honorable, the Senate and House of Representatives of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, in general court assembled.*

"The inhabitants of the town of Manchester in legal town meeting assembled, humbly represent that such is their local situation, the soil of the town being in general rocky, broken and barren, they are obliged to repair to the Ocean for the means of subsistance for themselves and families. This invaluable privilege which the God of Nature has afforded them, they have hoped to enjoy unmolested. But the restrictions laid on them in the the several Embargo Laws enacted by the Government of the United States, has excited sensations truly painful and distressing to your memorialists as well as many others. We have indulged a hope that the government of the United States would not continue to interdict that commerce on which we have depended for our support. Your memorialists do consider that the abandonment of the Ocean, to them is as oppressive, distressing and unjust as a prohibition on the produce of the land would be to the farmer. While our brethren in the country enjoy the privilege of cultivating their land and reaping the fruit of their labors, we are under the restraints which forbid our industry and deprives us of our only means of support. Your memorialists have petitioned Congress for relief, but in vain, now turn their eyes to this honorable body, the more immediate guardians of their constitutional rights, praying them to take such measures as in their wisdom they shall conceive best calculated to afford us relief and save us from beggary and starvation.

"Your memorialists pledge themselves as ready at the risk of their property and lives, to support you in any constitutional measures you shall adopt for the redress of our grievances, and likewise to prevent an unjust war with Great Britain.

"Your memorialists, as in duty bound, will ever pray. Done in town meeting this 8th of Feb., 1809."

Taking advantage of this discontent, wily agents from the mother country sought to effect a separation of the New England States from the Union; while the people loudly condemned the policy of the administration in imposing the embargo, the feeling of patriotism was too deeply rooted to admit a thought of secession.

This year the town lost two of her valued citizens, Dr. David Norwood and Captain Samuel Prince.

In 1809 the proprietors decided to build a new meeting-house, towards which the town gave the bell and two-thirds of the value of the materials of the old meeting-house, taking as their share of the house, the gallery seats, singing seats, minister's pew, the

porch, all the outside of the house, and two hundred and forty-seven pounds was ordered to be paid as the balance due the proprietors for the same.

The new meeting-house was completed July 9, 1809, at a cost of eighty-five hundred dollars. It was considered an unusually good example of the church architecture of that period, and was constructed of the best materials. The height from the ground is one hundred and ten feet; surmounting all is a gilded weathercock, that was taken from the old church, where it was placed in 1754. From its high perch this sentinel of our puritan ancestry has faithfully made visible the course of the wind's journeyings for one hundred and thirty-three years.

Rev. James Thurston was installed as pastor April 19th.

The Powder House that crowns the hill in the rear of the village was built in 1810. It is of brick, and the mortar is as fresh and sharp as when new; while that of the door that was bricked up a few years since is fast washing away, and the question is often asked, has the making of mortar become a lost art?

During the following year the town granted to Thomas Leach, two hundred and thirteen feet of land in front of his dwelling, in exchange for some of the land on which the meeting-house stands.

On July 19, 1812, William Tuck was elected delegate to the County Convention at Ipswich. This convention was called to consider the "awful and alarming situation of the country." The convention adopted resolutions strongly expressive of their opposition to the war.

The political clouds which had so long been gathering over the young nation, culminated in a declaration of war against Great Britain in June, 1812. This action was considered by many of the people of the sea-board as unwise and impolitic; they well knew the maritime interest of the country, upon which so many depended for their support, would be driven from the sea; but the injustice and the oppression of England had irritated them, until a feeling of resentment had been aroused, and they realized that longer submission would be unworthy of a people claiming to be free. While it remained a question of policy, there were many opinions; but now that war had been made the arbitrator, it became a matter of defense, and there was a much greater unity of sentiment.

At a public meeting Henry Story, John Allen, Andrew Marsters, William Tuck and Samuel Foster were chosen a committee of safety; they were required to set watchmen along the coast, erect flag staffs and provide flags for alarms. They petitioned the Governor for arms and ammunition and for two six pound guns. Breast-works were thrown up at Norton's, near those built in 1777.

In 1813 provisions were extremely high and scarce, and employment very difficult to procure; a peck of meal was the equivalent of a day's labor. Thirty cents a cord was the price for cutting and piling wood and no money was paid; orders on the stores were given instead; there was much distress among the poor.

Mr. Ebenezer Tappan, who kept a store on Central Street, believed it possible to evade the enemy's ships, and get some supplies from Boston. His topsail schooner "Nancy" was noted for her sailing qualities, and Captain Jerry Danforth, Nathan Carter and his son, Benjamin Tappan, were placed in charge. They kept along the shore, entered Boston harbor by Shirley Gut at night; having secured their cargo, which consisted of flour, sugar, molasses, rum and lumber, they started homeward. All went well until they had passed Baker's Island, and they were congratulating themselves upon the success of their trip, for they were almost home. Suddenly the fog, lifting, disclosed the much dreaded cruiser quite near. A shot from her was a hint to stop, but, as there was a breeze, they kept on their course for Manchester. They could see two barges being made ready for a chase. When they reflected upon the damage they might inflict on the unprotected village, they resolved to run inside of Misery Island, and endeavor to reach the protection of the forts below Salem. But the wind became lighter and the barges were gaining so fast it was decided to run her on shore, which they did at Mingo's beach in Beverly. The men landed under cover of the vessel, but as they reached the high land near the road they were fired upon by their pursuers.

The English used every effort to get their prize afloat, but, failing in that, they took some of the goods, stripped the sails and set her on fire. The militia from Beverly and Manchester soon arrived, extinguished the fire, and hastened the departure of the barges by some musket shots.

The vessel was afterwards taken to Manchester and repaired.

This was the only serious alarm the people of the town sustained from the enemy's ships. But their presence occasioned a great deal of anxiety, especially among the women; who upon the first signal of danger from the coast guards, were accustomed to seize their infants, hurry a few valuables into bags, kept for the purpose, and flee to the woods until all was safe again. As in the earlier wars, the mothers and daughters were great sufferers.

Soon after the event narrated above an alarm came from the Cove, "the enemy are landing!" A part of the militia company at once responded to the call. The old six-pounder that always stood on the green in front of the church was carefully loaded, and, to the inspiring notes of the drum and fife, the company set forth, with the cannon and a long train of the bigger boys; some with shot-guns and others as spectators of the coming conflict. The six-pounder was placed in position on Crow Island. The men sought the cover of the rocks, the boys crouched behind the

boulders and the band found rest in the cool shade of the woods, where "with sweet melody they passed the weary hours."

As the boats from the frigate approached the shore they captured two citizens of the town who were fishing. Judging one was familiar with the coast, the officer in charge ordered him (Captain Danforth) to pilot them in; to which the captain responded with so much cheerfulness as to create a doubt if the people on shore (whose drum and fife they could occasionally hear), had not prepared for them an uncomfortable reception, and the innocent-looking fishermen were cunning decoys. They stopped rowing; with their glasses they could see the cannon, numerous bodies but half concealed behind the rocks, and the frequent notes of martial music seemed to tell of gathering forces.

They hesitated—they listened and consulted—and then with curses they dismissed the fishermen and returned to their ship.

The victorious land forces were called from the rocks, the band from the woods, and, with the old cannon and the rear guard of noisy boys, they started for home in high spirits.

In descending the "great hill," they were amazed at finding their long-treasured and *only cannon ball*, which they had so carefully placed in the gun, and from which they had expected such wholesale destruction to the "wooden walls of old England," had rolled out in ascending the hill, and was quietly reposing by the wayside. This incident somewhat dampened the enthusiasm of the officer in charge; but the rank and file, and the people, always regarded this expedition as a great military success—"a glorious victory."

A "Poor-house" that had been built near the site of the present Baptist Church, was destroyed by fire; it was called the "long house." It had become a nuisance, and the people made no effort to prevent its destruction.

1815 brought peace and terminated another period of suffering. Although the people had differed as to the justice and necessity of the war, they all united in rejoicing that it had been brought to a close. On that February day bon-fires, the firing of cannon, public gathering and gladness was everywhere. In this town the event was celebrated by a notable dinner at the tavern, when the emotions of the people found vent in speeches, patriotic songs, and shouts of great merriment until the small hours of the coming day.

At the beginning of the war the United States had but a small number of naval vessels; but privateers were soon fitted out from almost every port, and many prizes were taken from the enemy. This war was to a great extent fought upon the ocean and the great lakes. It was a naval conflict, where the seamen of the young republic exhibited such uncommon bravery, and nautical skill as to win for their flag a respect and a much higher position among the nations of the earth than it had ever occupied before.

Until about this time, agriculture and commerce had almost exclusively engaged the attention of the people, but the embargo and the war, had diverted a great deal of capital from commerce to manufacturing. Thus new fields of enterprise and industry were opened and a more varied occupation for the people was created. For a while there had been much distress among the poor, but the prosperity of the nation had advanced. Its strength had been perfected in suffering.

As in all the earlier wars Manchester performed her part loyally. Many of her citizens were in privateers, and in the naval service of the United States. With Perry in his victories on Lake Erie, and with M'Donough on Champlain there were Ephraim Clemons, John Babcock, Joseph Camp and William Camp. These two last named were probably killed, as they never returned.

Some of the sailors served in the navy on the ocean. Lambert Flowers was in the Chesapeake with Lawrence when she surrendered to the Shannon, after a hard and bloody engagement. Flowers was a giant in size, of wonderful strength, and of great courage; he boarded the Shannon before the surrender, and though badly wounded, with the head of a boarding pike deeply buried in his great frame, and its broken shaft hanging from it, he was in the thickest of the fight. After his cutlass had been broken he continued his bloody work with a carpenter's axe. For many years after the declaration of peace he remained a boatswain in the U. S. Navy.

The year following the declaration of peace was exceptionally cold, with frost in every month. It has often been referred to as the year without a summer. At this time this town furnished no less than fifty captains for the foreign trade of Boston, Salem, and Newburyport.

In 1817, William Hooper and others of the Cove were authorized to build a wharf or sea-wall from Crow Island into the sea. This structure yet remains; it was probably a break-water, under the protection of which the small vessels then engaged in the fisheries might discharge their catch. During this year the road to Essex was made. In the following year it was voted by the town to join the middle district in building a school-house, "the town to build one-half of the house, and become proprietors of the lower part, exclusive of furnishing the inside of the district room." This is the old building on School street, now used for the Public Library and engine house.

At a town meeting in 1818 it was voted to sell the corner seats in the meeting-house and invest the proceeds in a "stove, and set the same in the meeting-house." Later in the day it was voted to reconsider the above vote, and expend the money arising from the sale of the seats in the town and school-house.

In 1820 the town voted to furnish a room in the lower part of the school-house for the selectmen's office.

On the twelfth of September of this year Rev. Samuel M. Emerson was installed as pastor of the Congregational Church. He was a graduate of Williams College.

In 1821 the town voted to authorize the selectmen to purchase a stove for the meeting-house.

The early meeting-houses of our hardy ancestors were not built with reference to heating them. They had neither chimneys nor stoves; how the men, women and children could endure to sit on the hard board seats, where the temperature was the same as that which raged and howled over the snow and ice without, and listen to the long services of the period, can only be explained by a much greater degree of zeal and endurance than is possessed by their descendants. Judge Sewall tells in his diary of a certain day in Boston, in 1686. "This day was so cold that the sacramental bread is frozen pretty hard, and rattles sadly as broken into the plates." The people not only endured it, but stoutly re-isted any measure that would lessen the frigid temperature of their places of worship. But very few stoves were used in the churches of New England before 1750, and in most places the movement towards greater comfort was successfully opposed until after 1800.

In Manchester the first action in that direction was in 1818, when the town voted to sell some corner seats in the meeting-house and buy a stove, but later in the day the opposition was aroused, and the vote was reconsidered. In 1821 the attempt was made again, and the stove was purchased. We are told the arguments against it were the questionable effect on the health of the congregation, and the belief that the young would be made puny and effeminate.

This original stove was used for many years. It was a heavy cast-iron box, and absurdly small for the large space it, was expected to warm. It stood in front of the pulpit, and was connected with the chimney at the opposite end of the church by a long pipe over the central isle.

The first cold Sunday after it had been placed in position, the people all went to meeting fully prepared to watch the result of the experiment. Many felt it uncomfortably warm; and two young women were so overcome by the "baked air" they fainted, and were taken to the vestibule where the atmosphere was of a better quality. But the next day it was learned, the wood for the stove had not been received, and no fire had been made; this proved a fatal blow to the opposition, and but little was said upon the subject afterwards.

Many ladies used foot-stoves; these were tin boxes in wooden frames, in which, a dish of hard wood-coals was placed just before leaving home; but long before the close of the service they were always quite cold.

In 1822 the School and Town-House was finished, and a bell was purchased and placed in the cupola. This bell deserves a moment's notice. As a vessel in Gloucester Harbor was raising her anchor, this was found on one of the flukes. It evidently had been a ship's bell, and was believed to have been of Spanish origin. As no record or tradition existed of any vessel having been lost in that part of the harbor, it was thought to have been of great antiquity, and perhaps it had lain beneath the sea,—long before the advent of English adventurers.

When the building was no longer needed for educational purposes, the bell was exchanged for a larger one that calls the scholars to the High and Grammar Schools. The old bell, with its long service and mysterious history, should have been preserved.

Before a family took possession of a new house, it was thought necessary to invite the minister and the people, and with prayers and appropriate addresses, dedicate the house. The services concluded, a lunch, with a bountiful supply of stimulants ended the ceremony. This ancient custom was not discontinued until about this time.

The raising of the frame of a house, or barn, or the launching of a vessel, was an occasion for a general frolic; some eating, and a great deal of drinking.

In 1823 Capt. William Babcock was murdered at sea by pirates who attempted to take his vessel.

In 1825 John P. Allen was granted the privilege of setting a mill for sawing mahogany on the site of the old "Grist Mill," and on the following year the town voted thirty-seven dollars for the "Singing Society."

A hearse was purchased; before this the dead were borne to the grave on a bier carried by four men, hence the name of "bearers."

And once more the town voted against the division of Essex County.

On the 4th of July, 1826, the fiftieth anniversary of American Independence was celebrated; an artillery company from Gloucester took part in the parade and fired the customary salutes from the common. A conspicuous feature of the procession was a company of "twenty-four veterans of the Revolution," who marched in their service-worn uniforms with a banner, on which was inscribed "76." An oration was delivered in the church by Tyler Parsons, and a dinner was served in the town hall, where patriotic speeches and toasts closed the observances of the day.

In 1828 Lieutenant Henry Ward, U. S. N., while journeying with his wife, feeling unwell alighted from his carriage and sat by the road-side in the shade of an oak, where he died. A hewn stone on the southern side of the road beyond the "Crescent House," marks the spot.

This year the town purchased the first fire engine and twelve pairs of leather buckets, and the first engine company was organized.

In 1829 Mr. John Price, who had taught for one

season at West Manchester, took charge of the Central School; this had not been satisfactorily conducted, but under Mr. Price's management it soon attained a much better position than it had ever before occupied. From this time a very marked improvement in the educational system of the town may be dated; his influence was felt in every school; the rod was less used, reason and a system of rewards took its place, and far better discipline and greater progress was the result.

He continued in the public schools until 1834, when he became a teacher in the Franklin School, of Salem. He returned in 1836, and opened an academy, which proved very successful; not only were the seats sought for by the youth of the town, but from other towns and States, and from the West Indies. For twenty-one consecutive years he continued this academy, when he spent a year of rest in Cuba, and returning reopened his school and continued in his chosen profession until he had completed forty-two years of teaching in Manchester.

At one time, when he was the teacher of the Central School, his scholars numbered one hundred and five. At that time penmanship was an important branch of study, and all the copies were written by the teacher, who also made and repaired all the quill pens used. A man who can look back to an educational record of forty-two years has not lived in vain.

Mr. Price was born in Tamworth, N. H., in 1808, and is yet vigorous.

In 1830 there was reported to be 150 acres of tillage, 500 acres English upland, 1550 acres of pastures, 75 of meadow, 50 salt marsh, 1256 woodland, 50 acres unimproved, 281 unimprovable land. Population 1236.

In 1833 the stone wall was built along the Summer Street side of the burial-ground, and one hundred and fifty dollars appropriated for the same.

In December, 1834, Jonathan Lull, Benjamin Jones and Asa Woodbury sailed from Salem. A violent storm raged along the coast that day, and the vessel foundered at sea.

The steeple of the Congregational Church was damaged by lightning.

In 1835 the town petitioned Congress for the removal of a pile of rocks in the harbor known as "Bo Bell rocks." They were soon after removed.

1835. The fishing and coasting trade employs about twelve hundred tons. Formerly the town was much more actively engaged in the fisheries, but for the last ten years the business has gradually diminished; but few vessels are now being built for that trade. Most of the youths were formerly trained to the sea, either in the fishing trade or in foreign commerce.

In 1815 there were fifty commanders of vessels in foreign commerce belonging to this town. At this period there are not twenty. The furniture business is fast taking the place of nautical pursuits. This trade employs over two hundred men, and has given a stimulus to the activity of the town unequaled in any former period. Two packets are kept constantly employed freighting the furniture to Boston, whence it is shipped to the more distant markets. The sales for the present year are sixty thousand dollars. The estimated valuation $356,674.82.

There are three grist-mills, three lumber-mills, one mahogany veneering-mill, one bakery, twelve carpenters, one cooper's shop, one wheelwright, three painters, one tailor, one brick-yard, six shoemakers' shops, two blacksmiths, one manufacturer of ship steering wheels, ten furniture shops and one tannery, and the following farm products and stock: 2500 bushels of corn, 450 bushels of barley, 290 tons of English hay, 160 cows, 60 oxen, 40 tons of salt hay, 28 horses, 59 swine, 35 tons of fresh meadow hay.

This year, Dr. Ezekiel Wallis Leach completed his history of the town. Many years ago, the doctor finding our early records in a lamentably defective condition, and feeling that no time should be lost, set himself at work connecting the missing links. For years he made it a labor of love, and succeeded in collecting from various sources a large amount of valuable historical matter bearing on our early history; he presented a manuscript copy to the town. And for greater security against probable loss, he prepared a revised copy, which he deposited with the Massachusetts Historical Society, in Boston.

In this Dr. Leach has rendered the town an invaluable service, and it is to be hoped that some measures will be adopted for its completion and publication.

Through the courtesy of the above named society we were granted every facility for a study of this manuscript, and much of the material in those pages was gathered from it.

A high school, where the ancient languages were taught, was opened by William Long. This excellent school was kept in the building afterwards remodeled into a parsonage for the Congregational Church.

It is often pleasant to know the age of trees.

The first shade trees planted on Central Street, was in 1835, when Col. Eben Tappan set the elms in front of his residence.

Those on the Deacon Enoch Allen estate, were planted in the following year.

The large elm in front of the "Gentles" home on School Street, was planted about seventy-five years ago. And farther up on the same street opposite the "Butler" house is one that was planted by Ezkiel Leach in 1810.

In 1836 the brick house of George W. Marble on Bridge Street, was destroyed by fire. The weather was very cold, and the water so scarce, that engines were useless.

The great fire began on the morning of the 28th of Augnst, 1836. In the *Salem Gazette* of August 30th, we find the following account of it:

"It is with the deepest regret we announce that the thriving village of Manchester in our neighborhood, has experienced a severe calamity, in the destruction by fire of its principal business establishments, by which upwards of 100 industrious men have been thrown out of employment, and several worthy individuals have lost their all.

"About 2 o'clock on Sunday morning the Steam Veneering Mill of John P. Allen, situated near the centre of the village, was discovered to be on fire, and the flames spread with great rapidity, communicating immediately to the two cabinet-shops, and the handsome dwelling-house and barn of that gentleman, and which were totally destroyed with their contents.

"Also the large cabinet manufactory of Mr. Larkin Woodbury which was destroyed. Part of the contents were saved in a damaged condition.

"Also the dwelling-house, barn and outbuildings of Dr. Asa Story which were destroyed.

"Also the dwelling-house and barn of Mr. Solomon Lee, an aged veteran of the Revolution; a total loss and no insurance.

"Also the house and shop of Mrs. Andrew Masters, and the stable and shed attached to the tavern of Nathaniel Colby, all of which were burnt.

"The loss sustained by Mr. Allen is very great, estimated from $20,000 to $30,000, but we are glad to learn he has considerable insurance. Besides his buildings, mahogany, tools, &c., all his valuable house furniture, a large number of mahogany logs, veneers, lumber and articles of new furniture were destroyed.

"A gentleman of this city, we learn, had $1,000 worth of mahogany at this mill. Mr. Woodbury's loss is estimated at $4,000; supposed to be insured. Both of these gentlemen were absent on a tour in the interior.

"Dr. Story's loss is about $2,500; no insurance.

"Mr. Colby likewise had no insurance. When the fire was at its height it raged on both sides of the small stream, near which these establishments were situated, so that it was impossible to pass the bridge which crosses it. Owing to the dense fog the fire was not seen in this neighborhood, and it was not known until about 3 o'clock when the alarm was given, and one engine and many of our citizens proceeded to the scene of the conflagration."

Engines from Salem, Beverly, Gloucester, Essex, and Hamilton, were present and rendered most valuable assistance.

Soon after the town petitioned the County Commissioners for aid in building a stone bridge in place of that destroyed by the fire; and the present bridge was constructed, but of less width than now.

For a long time the only mementos of the original occupants of the soil, were the great heaps of shells by the water side, and several "mounds" which marked their resting places. One of them was to the southeast of the Congregational Church, on land then owned by Capt. Thomas Leach.

A much larger one was at the upper part of the Reservoir Pond, and was leveled by John Knight in 1836. This was where the Kelham & Fitz steam mill stands. It was more than one hundred and fifty feet in diameter, and some eight feet high; it was surrounded by a trench that was filled by the high tide. Great numbers of skeletons were found here in a sitting position, but the bones were as soft as the clay in which they were imbedded. No implements were found here.

In leveling the land for the "Union Cemetery" deposits of ashes and charred wood were found at a considerable depth, showing a long occupancy of the land.

In 1864, in a gravelly knoll to the south of this, four human skeletons were found lying side by side; and one was of unusual size; the skull rested on a plate of native copper some sixteen inches in diameter. The hair was still very black, and thirty inches long; here was also found an iron tomahawk, a knife blade, a pipe, some bone arrow heads, net sinkers, wooden ladles, and spoons, fishing lines of some fibrous material, and a kind of coarse cloth made of flags or rushes.

Thus, the lost traces are gone forever, and nothing remains to mark the former homes of that friendless race, whose footsteps, as they retreated westward from advancing civilization, were reddened by want and bloodshed.

The schooner "Vesper" of about sixty tons, owned by Jacob Cheever and his two sons, was lost in September, 1843. The "Vesper" had been spoken by a passing vessel. They had been very fortunate, were nearly loaded, and were to start homeward in a day or two.

Shortly after a severe gale came on, and it was supposed she sank at her anchors, or was run down by some other vessel.

The crew consisted of John Cheever, Capt. Rufus Cheever, his younger brother, Hilliard Moore, David Hall, Nathaniel Morgan, and Merritt Lennon. All but the second named were married.

These men were all valued citizens, and in the prime of life. They left five widows, each with one or more children. The waves closed over them, and no one could tell the story of their end.

On the 28th of February, 1844, the "Christian Church" was built on School Street, and Elam Burnham, of Essex, was the first pastor. It afterwards became the Baptist Church, and was very much enlarged and improved. It is forty-eight by sixty-four feet on the ground, is two stories high, and has a tower in which is a fine bell weighing twelve hundred pounds.

In 1837 the street was widened at the burnt district, and a "Suction Engine No. 2" was bought with the necessary hose and carriage for the same.

This engine was manufactured in the town by Colonel Eben Tappan, has been in use for fifty years and is yet a reliable and good machine.

1838. John and Henry Knight's bark mill and curry shop, containing two thousand dollars worth of leather was burned to the ground, February 1, 1838. The fire broke out at half past one o'clock at night. A barn filled with hay and bark, standing within six feet of the building burnt, was fortunately saved.

In 1839 the town received its proportion of the "Surplus Revenue," and voted to invest the same in the purchase of the "Poor Farm" at the Cove, at a cost of twenty-three hundred dollars: but few towns made so wise a disposition of their money,

In the following year the "Blooming Youth" and

the "Senator" were wrecked on Sable Island. After much suffering they reached the main land, and their homes.

September 18, Rev. Oliver A. Taylor was installed pastor of the First Congregational Church. He was a graduate of Union College.

The population is one thousand three hundred and fifty-five.

In 1844 a bounty of one dollar was offered by the town for destroying rattlesnakes. The woods in the eastern part of the town were much infested by these pests, and to the skill of one of her citizens the town is indebted for their total annihilation.

John D. Hildreth was long known as a remarkably successful hunter of these reptiles: he killed many and derived a considerable revenue from bounties, and from their oil which was highly prized as a remedy for rheumatism, and he also supplied living specimens for naturalists and showmen: upon the receipt of an order he would call his dog, shoulder a light pole, with a line and slip noose drawn through a hole at the end, and disappear in the woods: he took as many of these poles as he required in rattlesnakes. When his little dog announced the presence of one, he annoyed him with the pole until the angered reptile coiled and raised his head for a strike, then the noose encircled the neck, the cord was tightened, and his snakeship was soon dangling at the end of the stick. In that way he gathered them.

He had a theory, that they all collected in one place for the winter: and believing he knew where that place was, he resolved to bring about their extermination. After a snow had fallen, and they had become dormant in their headquarters, he built a fire on the ledge near the crevice which had been much worn by their passage in and out, for untold centuries.

When the rocks had become warmed, the unsuspecting reptiles crept forth to see how far spring had advanced, when the ever ready staff tossed them into the snow, where in a moment they became stiff and helpless; in this way, a large number was collected. Then he enlarged the fire and extended it across the entrance, so that none escaped. Not a snake of this kind has been seen in the town since Hildreth made war upon them. This public benefactor died in 1885.

In 1845 Richard H. Dana, the poet, being struck with the great beauty of the region about "Graves Beach," purchased some thirty acres and built a summer-house on the high bank overlooking the beach and the clear blue waters of the ocean. Here, away from the village and at some distance from the highway, the author of the "Buccaneer," lulled by the sound of the sea as it rolled upon the beach, found peaceful seclusion and rest. In speaking of this place, Charles Sumner pronounced it one of rare beauty, and much superior to the famous summer resort of Napoleon III.

Mr. Dana was the first of the summer residents to purchase land in Manchester; he was the pioneer of that detachment of worthy gentlemen who with long purses invaded our shore, bought the old pastures and wrought marvelous changes in the landscape; they crowned the bald headlands with villas, civilized the briery thickets into grassy slopes, transformed the narrow cattle paths with carriage-drives, and beautified everything.

The change that three-score years has effected in the appearance of this town has been very marked. Then the fishing interest was at its height; it was the prominent industry; the streets were crooked and very narrow; many of the houses were innocent of paint, and frequently an old mast, a decrepid boat, or a net spread on the fence told the owner's occupation.

When cabinet-making became the occupation of the people, a decided change for the better took place. The streets were improved, the houses were painted and repaired, fences built, and shade trees were planted. An appearance of thrift became visible.

But as the town assumed prominence as a watering-place, the spirit of improvement which had made the shore so attractive, spread to the village, where streets were still more improved, new ones opened, residences beautified, and more trees and shrubs planted. The effect of a good example was to be seen everywhere, and Manchester became an attractive village.

In the early days the change in the occupation of the people was only from the sea to the land, but now the growing tendency towards the concentration of the trades in the great centres is fast taking from the towns all occupations, and their young people are forced to abandon their homes, the homes of their ancestors and seek employment among strangers; they feel they are being crowded from the fold. The change is an inevitable one, but it has its side of sadness.

This year the First Congregational Society purchased of the town, and of the proprietors, their interest in the old church. Capt. B. L. Allen presented a bell of twenty-two hundred pounds in exchange for the old one of three hundred.

This season there were thirteen vessels engaged in the cod and mackerel fisheries, and the value of their catch for the year ending April 1st, was $21,435.

The railroad connection with Boston being completed, the cars began to make regular trips on the 2d of November, 1847. At that time the station was at the foot of the hill on Sea street; about five years afterwards it was moved to its present location.

The completion of this road added very materially to the prosperity of the town.

James Knowlton and others petition for the annexation of a part of Gloucester (Magnolia) to Manchester; the project was not favored by the people of the latter town.

1848. A high-school was established.

1849. This year was made notable by the immense emigration to the newly-discovered gold fields of California. The effect of this excitement upon the industrial and commercial interest of the county cannot be estimated; everywhere it was the absorbing theme of conversation, and all the marvelous stories from the diggings found ready believers, who abandoned their well-earned positions in banks, warehouses, counting-rooms, stores, shops, on farms, railroads and vessels, and hurried to the land of promise.

In this, as in all other excitements, Manchester had her full share. Every variety of business was neglected, and many of her citizens joined the multitude hurrying westward.

Some went by the treeless regions, and mountains of the Great West, where they trudged the dusty way for about two thousand miles.

Some by the hastily extemporized routes of the Isthmus, where they suffered from the effects of that baneful miasmatic climate.

A party of twelve purchased the schooner "Billow," of about one hundred tons, and fitted her for sea, at a cost of six thousand seven hundred and eighty-three dollars. Her cargo consisted of provisions and the material for a house. Thus equipped they joined the great fleet of gold hunters, who in crafts of every size and description, and under the flag of every nationality, sailed in search of the golden fleece.

The pecuniary successes were few, and disappointing, but the experience was valuable; and as a lesson in the geography of the continent, it was perhaps of still greater value.

On the 16th of May, 1849, Ebenezer Tappan died, at the age of eighty-seven years and ten months. He was the last survivor of the soldiers of the Revolution from this town.

In 1850 the population was 1604.

Rev. Oliver A. Taylor died on the 18th of December, 1851. He was well known as a scholar and a writer on religious subjects.

The stone bridge on School Street was built.

During the following year the railroad station was moved from Sea Street to its present location, and the street opened from it to Union Street.

In 1852 Rev. Rufus Taylor was ordained as pastor of the First Congregational church.

At a very early period the people of Manchester took a very decided stand in opposition to slavery. As early as 1775 the subject was agitated from the platform, and subsequently the free soil party became a large and controlling organization, and any measure that tended to promote the interest of slavery at the expense of human liberty, was always stoutly opposed. An example of this occurred in 1853, when at the town-meeting the following resolution was adopted:

"WHEREAS, The action of the United States Senate, in the introduction and passage of the Nebraska bill, which contains a provision for the repeal of the Missouri Compromise (by the terms of which slavery or involuntary servitude was forever excluded from all the vast territory acquired by purchase of France) thereby prostituting the patrimony of Freedom to the detestable purposes of slavery:

"Therefore *Resolved*, That we view with alarm and indignation, this attempt of the slave power to enlarge the area of slavery, by the violation of compacts and trampling on the rights of man.

"2d, *Resolved*, That we hold the Representatives of the North, who may vote for the violation of the Missouri Compromise, as false to the glorious cause of Freedom and recreant to the dictates of Humanity.

"3d, *Resolved*, That the Town Clerk be instructed to forward a copy of these Resolutions to our Representative in Congress, Charles W. Upham."

On the 9th of April, 1856, the old church built in 1809 having been remodeled and modernized was rededicated.

The town made an appropriation for planting trees about the school-houses.

On the 11th of September the Free Soil party of the county held a "mass convention in Manchester," in the interest of John C. Fremont, as candidate for the President of the United States. The gathering was held at Gale's Point, and not less than ten thousand sons and daughters of old Essex were present. Mammoth tents were erected on the grassy slope, and in their shelter eloquent addresses were delivered by Gov. Kent, of Maine, Henry Wilson, George W. Curtis, Richard H. Dana, Jr., Moses Kimball and others.

In 1858 Rev. Francis V. Tenney was ordained as the pastor of the Second Congregational church, August 15th. And during the same year Rev. George E. Freeman was installed as pastor of the First Congregational church.

In 1860 the population was 1698.

In 1862 Rev. Edward P. Tenney commenced his labors as pastor of the First Congregational church on the 3d of November.

In the town records we find the following:

"MANCHESTER, 1865.

"Monday, April 3d, of this year, was a day of great rejoicing. In the morning we heard our army had achieved a great victory over the enemy, but none of us dared to believe Richmond would fall so soon, if at all. So in the afternoon when the dispatch announcing the occupation of Richmond by our forces was received, the people manifested their joy by triumphant shouts, excited congratulations and the ringing of bells. So long had we hoped for this event and so long had our hopes been deferred, our faith had grown weak, but now great joy fell upon us and we celebrated.

"April 10th, 1865."

One week later and we are the recipients of still *greater* and more *glorious news:* "Lee and his whole army have surrendered!!"

Such was the jubilant shout which went forth in the early morning, and the people heard wonderingly. As if moved by a spontaneous impulse the excitement and the enthusiasm of the town was immediate and intense.

Prompt action followed by the choice of a committee of arrangements under whose direction the event was celebrated.

April 11, 1865, was a day of rejoicing, for an account of which we copy the following from the *Salem Register:*

[illegible] be remembered. At an early hour we [illegible] ringing of bells and the glad shout, 'Lee and his [illegible] surrendered.'

"Col. J. S. Tannatt and Lewis N. Tappan had made haste to ride [illegible] with the joyful tidings. The people of the town were [illegible] flags were unfolded and flung to the breeze, drums and fifes brought out, a procession formed and marched to the depot, where short speeches for the occasion were made by Rev. E. P. Tenney and Mr. Thayer, author of the "Bobbin Boy." These speakers leaving in the early train, the procession returned to the common where a stage was erected at the foot of the flag-staff, from which Rev. F. V. Tenney read the despatch announcing the surrender of Lee.

"Several citizens addressed the people, setting forth in befitting terms the glories of the day. Col. Tannatt and Mr. Tappan also favored us with remarks pertinent to the glorious realities of the occasion.

"Loud and repeated cheers were given for the speakers, President Lincoln, his generals and the heroic soldiers of the army. "America," "Rally round the Flag, Boys," and "John Brown" were sung with thrilling effect. Allusions were made by most of the speakers to that "minister sin" which had well-nigh been our ruin. One of them was pleased to read an extract from "Helper's Impending Crisis," the same being a warning found in Jeremiah 34 ch. 17 verse. To make his point stronger the speaker read the following extract from a letter written in May, 1847, by a former clergyman of this town (Rev. O. A. Taylor) while journeying in the border States:

"'Slavery must and will be destroyed. It is inconsistent with the spirit of our institutions. Freedom frowns upon it from every quarter of our land. The world is against it. God's curse rests upon it. If let alone it will sooner or later poison itself to death, as do some serpents, under the very malignancy of their own venom.'

"The speaker had carried this prophecy in his pocket for eighteen years, and for the most part of the time, with but faint hopes of ever witnessing its fulfillment, but to-day he was glad, and thought the prophecy of an orthodox clergyman equal to that of Jeremiah. After other congratulatory exercises the professi n re-formed and marched through different sections of the town.

"In the afternoon the fire department turned out and with the citizens escorted four wounded soldiers, three of whom had lost a leg and one an arm, through the principal streets amid the waving of flags and the ringing of bells. Notwithstanding the rain the enthusiasm was unabated, and at an early hour in the evening the Baptist Church was filled with joyous people of both sexes.

"Julia Lee was elected as the presiding officer and Rev. F. V. Tenney invoked divine blessing. The exercises were all of a very interesting character, consisting of singing by the choirs of the several religious societies, joined in part by the assembly, and of congratulatory addresses from the several clergymen of the town, and from other citizens, intermingled with cheers for the different speakers and of the great successes we celebrated—not forgetting the brave boys now absent and the equally deserving who have returned, nor the 20 of our *heroic dead*, 5 of whom died on the *field of battle*, 3 in *rebel prisons*, and the rest in hospitals or at home. Tears were in many eyes in memory of those *departed heroes*.

"A collection for the Christian Commission was taken up. Altogether it was a day of Jubilee, and one we may all rejoice to have been permitted to see. E. R. N."

But on Saturday, April 15th, the great heart of the people so recently gladdened, is plunged into the deepest grief. From the town records we copy the following:

"'The President is shot,' and soon, ere we could comprehend or believe the fearful truth, another said, 'Our beloved President, Abraham Lincoln, is dead.'

"No [illegible] to the feeling of *surprise, grief, indignation* and [illegible] upon every one. All business was suspended. Prayer [illegible] was held in the Congregational Church, opened by the reading of Scriptures by Rev. F. V. Tenney, followed by an address by Rev. E. P. Tenney. Chastened and subdued by the solemn [illegible] the people slowly dispersed to their homes."

In the War of the Rebellion, as in earlier conflicts, Manchester bore her part faithfully. The people readily responded to the calls of the President for men, and cheerfully raised their proportion of the money to sustain the government.

The town sent to the field one hundred and fifty-nine men; of that number no less than one hundred and fifty-three were *her own citizens.*

More than twenty natives of the town, but residing in other parts of the State, were actively engaged in the war; one a lieutenant-colonel, and one a captain. Of this number eight died in the service, and three perished in rebel prisons.

The whole amount of money paid by the town for bounties, and recruiting expenses was seven thousand eight hundred and eighty-five dollars. The amount of aid furnished to soldiers' families during the war was seventeen thousand four hundred and ninety-eight dollars.

Much of this has been reimbursed by the State, but the increase of the town's debt, by reason of the war, is ten thousand dollars.

The Manchester Lyceum library established with two hundred volumes, which was increased to four hundred volumes in 1835. This library, from a peculiar feature of its organization, viz.: Membership for one year, by paying a fee of fifty cents without becoming a permanent proprietor, caused its continuance up to 1871, when it was merged in the "Manchester Public Library."

From the trustees' report for the year ending March 1, 1887, we find the library contains over four thousand seven hundred volumes; and the circulation has reached eleven thousand one hundred and forty-three volumes, an increase of two thousand eight hundred and fifty-one over that of the previous year.

Doubtless this is largely due to the greater demand for books from the summer visitors.

In 1871 the Rust and Marshall mill was destroyed by fire. This mill stood on the site of the old "veneering mill."

In 1873 the town purchased the site and the pond for a "reservoir" for fire purposes; there is always an abundant supply of water, and convenient to the thickly settled parts of the town.

Beach Street was opened.

The Catholic Church was built in 1873. It is a very neat, well-built structure on School Street. It is fifty by thirty-eight feet, and is very complete in all its appointments.

In 1875 T. Jefferson Coolidge, a wealthy and public-spirited summer resident, presented to the Public Library a complete set (twenty-one volumes) of the "Encyclopedia Britannica," a very generous and welcome addition to our excellent collection of books.

The winter of this year was very cold; the harbor was frozen so that parties on February 18th, walked to "Half Tide Rock," and from "West Beach" to "Misery Island."

In 1875 Julius F. Peabody, then postmaster, began the publication of a monthly journal called the *Beetle and Wedge.* This was the first paper ever started in the town. It was ably conducted, and in every respect highly creditable to the publisher, and

to the town. After about three years it was discontinued. It should have been a permanent publication.

On the 19th of June, 1876, it being the one hundredth anniversary of our National Independence, the people were called together by the peal of the church bells, and on the common within a few feet of where in early times stood the stocks and the whipping-post. A beautiful elm taken from the grounds of Lewis N. Tappan was replaced in the soil as the "Children's Centennial tree." It was planted with appropriate speeches, recitations, singing by the school children and by the grand old anthem of 'America," in which all joined; it was thus consecrated to liberty. In the words of the "BEETLE AND WEDGE":

"May the tree live and may the future generations gather in its shade, a free and happy people; and as they shall weigh the purposes and deeds, the trials, successes and short-comings of their fathers, with the light they will possess, may they not halt, but keep on the progressive march and look higher and higher to a still nobler sphere."

John Baker also planted one at the junction of School Street and the Essex Road; Captain John Carter, one at the town's landing; Dr. Priest set a rock maple on the common; and John Knight set a long row of Norway pines on the northern side of the "reservoir pond," and many others were set in various parts of the town.

The "Masconomo House" was built in 1878. This delightfully situated and very popular hotel, has from the first been a favorite resort of the pleasure-seekers.

In front lies "the Singing Beach," where surf bathing may at all times be indulged in with safety; beyond the boundless sea invites the yachtsmen; while in the rear, the bay and land-locked harbor allure the less skilled with smoother seas; and the many drives over unsurpassed roads among the primitive woods with ever-changing undergrowth are among the attractions to be found in this quiet and healthful retreat.

At the suggestion of Mrs. Alice N. Lincoln, the seashore residents of Manchester and Beverly contributed thirty-five hundred dollars for the purchase of a strip of the woodland seven rods wide on each side of the highway leading to Essex. The first purchase was made in the spring of 1879, and was followed during successive years by that of other lands, and several gifts of woodlands were received from residents of the town of Manchester, who owned lots bordering upon the road; until now the reservation extends with but few interruptions through the beautifully shaded part of the County Road known as the "Essex Woods." As a result of these purchases, many of the finest oaks and hemlocks in the vicinity have been preserved, and a beautiful shady drive has been secured through this lovely region.

At the desire of the trustees of the fund (Colonel Henry Lee and T. Jefferson Coolidge) the lands purchased in the township of Manchester were offered and very generously accepted by the town, to be held "for the public use and benefit of its inhabitants, for the purposes of a public forest or woods, as an ornament of the town and for promoting the comfort and health of the inhabitants forever."

The Rev. Mr. Tenney, in his "Coronation," says of these woods, "a favorite drive for the lovers of Cape Ann scenery lies in this famous forest. The thick undergrowth, rough boulders, high ledges, swamp lands and brooks give a constant charm, which is heightened by the varying colors of different seasons, the changing light of morning and evening, the shade at noon, or quiet hours under the high moon near midnight."

Reaching out from this roadway are the paths of the wood-cutters; and if the pleasure-seekers, who roll along this hard way with their fine carriages would tie up and strike off into the timber and walk a score of miles, as they easily may do without seeing a human face or crossing a high road; they will know that the woods as well as the sea conspire to make Manchester the most delightful resort on the whole New England coast.

John Lee died July 9th, 1879. This gentleman had been identified with the affairs of the town for an unusually long time. At different periods he had served on the board of selectmen for twenty-five years; and for a considerable portion of that time he was the town clerk.

He represented the town in the Legislatures of 1846, '47, '48 and '68.

When the publication of the "Beetle and Wedge" began, he gave additional interest to its columns by a series of valuable articles on the "History of Manchester," but unhappily they were not concluded when the publication of the paper ceased.

He was buried from the town hall, where appropriate remarks were made by Rev. Mr. Gleason, Major Russell Sturgis, Jr., Albert E. Low, Rev. Dr. Bartol, James T. Field and Rev. Mr. Emery.

He was sixty-five years old.

On the 25th of February, 1880, Lewis N. Tappan died in Leadville, Colorado. He was always interested in any measure which advanced the interests of the town; and while a citizen of the west he proved a worthy representative of the "liberty-loving" people among whom he had been reared, as will be seen by the following sketch from the columns of the *Boston Journal*:

"In 1857 he went to Kansas, and was elected Secretary of the Senate under the Topeka Constitution. He was one of the 'Fort Scott Treaty' Commissioners, and also one of the fifteen armed men who went from Lawrence to Lecompton and captured the candle box containing the altered election returns upon the adoption or rejection of the Lecompton Constitution. The premature discovery of these election returns, which were found buried under a wood-pile, caused the immediate destruction of the Pro-slavery party, and made Kansas a free State. In 1859 Mr. Tappan joined the Colorado pioneers, was a member of the first City Government at Denver, was active in raising and sustaining the Colorado Volunteers until reorganized by the General Government, was a member of Gov. Gilpin's Council, and one of Gov. Cummings' staff officers."

He represented the town in the Legislature of 1877.

He died in his forty-ninth year, and was buried with his ancestors in the old grave-yard.

In 1884 an important addition was made to the pleasure drives by the widening of the old road to White Beach; and making a new one along White and Black Beaches to the county road.

On the 12th of February, 1886, a very heavy rain fell, when the earth was thickly coated with ice, and that quiet stream called "Saw Mill Brook," for the first time since the settlement of the town, overflowed its limits, and became riotous, overleaping the bridge on School Street, and doing no little damage in that neighborhood; and on Central Street, from the "Seaside" engine-house to the foot of the hill, it was navigable for boats, and the base of "Powder-house Hill" formed the northern limit of the harbor.

A great improvement in the highways at West Manchester was made by the widening of Harbor and Bridge Streets at either junction.

CHAPTER CIII.

MANCHESTER—*(Continued).*

Church History—The Parsonages—The Tythering-Man—"Staying over"—Grave-yards.

CHURCH HISTORY.—That the planters at Jeffrey's Creek had the Gospel preached to them at a very early date there can be no doubt. Tradition says the first meeting for public worship was held beneath the branches of a tree at "Gales Point," near the site of an ancient wharf that is yet visible; but the name of the preacher, about whom that little band of hardy men collected, has not been preserved.

Unfortunately there are no records of the churches' infancy save the few entries found in the town books. In Dr. E. W. Leach's history he has preserved an original note by Rev. Amos Cheever, dated November 20, 1726, in which are the names of thirteen who had preceded him in the ministry at Manchester. The following is the list: Jenners, Smith, Stow, Dunham, Millet, Hawthorn, Jones, Winborn, Hubbard, Emerson, Goodhue, Eveleth and Webster; it is accompanied by no explanation, and it may be but a memoranda of names without reference to their order. At that early period it certainly would have been easy for him to have collected reliable information on the subject if he had wished, for it is quite possible some of the older people of the settlement may have had personal knowledge of every name desired. That the list is defective is evident from the entire omission of the name of Marsterson. All things considered, we think we are safe in following Mr. Cheever's list until we reach the records, and to them we shall give preference.

The only exception we have of Rev. Thomas Jenners, is that he was admitted freeman in 1636, and preached at Weymouth, and other places, and finally resided in Charlestown, where he died.

The second is Rev. Ralph Smith. He came to the country with Higginson, in 1629. A letter of the company to Mr. Endicott brought by the ship in which he took passage thus speaks of him.

"Mr. Ralph Smith, a minister has desired a passage in one of our shipps, which was granted him before we understood of his difference in judgements, in some things from our ministers, but his provisions for his voyage being shipped before notice was taken thereof, through many occasions wherewith those entrusted with this business have been employed, and for as much as it is to be feared there may grow some distractions among you, if there should be any sydding, though we may have a very good opinion of his honistie, yet we shall not . . . hope offend in charitie to fear the worst that may grow from their different judgements. We have therefore thought fit to give you this order, that unless he be comfortable to our government you suffer him not to remain within the limit of our grant."

His stay in Salem was brief, and he went to Nantucket, where he was found in 1630, "in a poor house that would not keep him dry, and desiring a better residence."

The people of Plymouth invited him to become their pastor, and with them he continued until 1635, when he left them as the Plymouth record states "on account of his own disinclination to stay, because of its irksom duties." "He is called a man of low gifts and parts." In 1647, his name appears among the members of the Salem Church. He remained here till about 1650, when he removed to Boston where he died.

It is said "he wanted candor, prudence and experience, and resembled his predecessors in Plymouth, in nothing except he was of the strictest sect of the Puritans. He was zealous and imprudent; his zeal was that ebullition of temper, which has done so much mischief in society, as well as caused great confusion in the church." Mr. Smith soon laid down his office at Plymouth, and this reflection was made. "Many times the total vacancy of an office is easier to be borne, than the under performance of it."

Mr. Smith was supported by a weekly contribution. Winthrop in his journal says: "On the 5th, 9th mo. 1645, the village at Jefferey's neck was incorporated and called Manchester. Not being in a church state, they have procured Mr. Smith, sometime minister at Plymouth, to preach to them."

The third and fourth preachers mentioned by Cheever are Stow and Dunham; of these we find no mention. It is probable they supplied for a brief period, and resided elsewhere.

In the town record, we find in about 1650, Nathaniel Marsterson, who was a minister, "was granted free seed for his cattle and timber to build him a

house." In 1654 he sold his house, and removed to Beverly. In 1660 he was appointed to office in Maine.

His descendants lived for many generations in Manchester, having changed their names to Marsters.

Although his name does not appear in Mr. Cheever's list, we feel justified in considering him as one of the early preachers in the town.

Thomas Millet's name is found in the Cheever list, and frequently in the records of the town. This name is affixed as a witness to the deed of the Marsterson house and land in 1654. The town granted him the use of the parsonage land. A swamp and wood lot has ever since borne his name. In 1655 he was married by Mr. Endicott, to a daughter of Sylvester Everleth; in 1660 he removed to Gloucester.

Mr. Millet probably dwelt in that town during his occasional preaching in Manchester. He died in 1707.

Mr. Cheever places Messrs. Hawthorn and Jones next to Millet. These gentlemen probably supplied occasionally, but resided in some neighboring town.

The next minister of whom we find record is John Winborn, who came in 1667. Of his early history but little is known. He was in Malden in 1667, where he married Mary Hart. His salary here was £27 with his fire wood and the use of the parsonage land. His residence here was far from a peaceful one. Continued difficulties existed which were often brought before the town. At length the patience of the people was exhausted, and in 1686 the following vote was passed: "that he forth with provide for himself and family some other place." This difficulty was adjusted, and he remained till 1689. In 1690 a town-meeting was called "to treat with Mr. Winborn about matters in controversy between the town and Mr. W. with respect to land or money, or monies, which he do or might challenge or lay claim to as his due, the same Winborn having desired this meeting to be called." A committee was appointed to examine his claim, either by gift or contract during his abode as minister in the town. Mr. Winborn claimed the Millet lot, which the town refused; the difficulty was settled by the town paying him £5 10*s.* 6*d.* He died in 1707.

In 1689 Rev. John Everleth was invited to preach as a candidate for settlement at ten shillings per Sabbath. In September he engaged to preach for them at £23 per year. His answer to the invitation is as follows: "In testimony of the conditions above written, promising the utmost fidelity in carrying out the work of the ministry of the Gospel, as above said, God enabling me, I do subscribe

"JOHN EVERLETH."

At the same town-meeting it was voted to give Sergt. Sibley three shillings per day for entertaining the minister, "diet and lodging."

In 1690 the town agreed with Mr. Everleth for the same salary, "quality and quantity," and in addition a contribution was to be taken up every Sabbath; and a vote was passed that what money the inhabitants see cause to give from time to time, towards Mr. Everleth's support shall be wrapped in a paper with the name of the contributor upon it; and whoever shall contribute without this superscription, it shall be counted as strangers' money.

February 3d, the town granted that a parcel of land called Millet's swamp, being six acres, "for the use, benefit and suport" of the ministry forever.

At Mr. Everleth's request his salary was increased to £35, to be paid quarterly.

In October, 1693, a town-meeting was called

"To consider some effectual way for the encouragement and settling a minister in our town. Mr. John Everleth, whoom we have already had experience of his preaching among us, and knowing it is our duty to do our utmost endeavor for the obtaining and maintaining the ministry of the gospel among us, consequences that may follow, if we neglect our duty here in, and so be destitute of such means as God has ordained for the eternal salvation of immortal souls, of which we have remarkable instances in the Scriptures, which are written for man's instruction, viz.: in the 2d book of Chronicals, chapt. 15 verse 3-5, and in Proverbs 29 chapt. 18 verse.

"Contrary wise—where duty is attended to in this great and momentous work, as we read in 2d Chronicles 21st chapter 10th verse; also in Corinthians.

"Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things live of the things of the word, and 'they that wait at the alter are partakers at the alter. God has ordained that they which preach the gospel, should live by the gospel.

"Under these and like considerations it was voted and fully agreed by the town on the above written.

"First, to pay Mr. Everleth the sum of £35 per annum for his yearly salary, to be paid quarterly in eaqual proportions, the first year to begin on the first day of next month, so long as he doth continue among us in the work of the ministry of the gospel according to the rules of the holy scriptures.

"Secondly, The said Everleth shall have the possession and the improvement of the parsonage house for his own proper use and benefit, with all the land and meadow belonging thereto, as already deputied by said town for the use of the ministry, together with Millet's swamp.

"To hold the afore said premises during his abode as minister among us, and the town agree to fit the house, for his convenience, and build him a barn 18 ft in length, by 16 in width."

Mr. Everleth would not consent to settle, but he continued as minister until August 17, 1695, when he accepted an invitation to preach at Enfield, Mass.

He was a son of Sylvester Everleth, of Gloucester. Graduated at Harvard College 1689. He was highly respected while in this town. In 1695 he preached at Enfield. In 1700 he was settled at Stow, and left in 1716. In 1719 he was installed at Kennebeckport, Me., and resigned in 1729, on account of the infirmities of age. He is represented by the historian of Kennebunk as having been their "minister and school-master, a good blacksmith and farmer, and the best fisherman in the town." This dismission must have been regretted by his parishioners.

After the departure of Mr. Everleth several were invited to settle, among whom was the Rev. Edward Thompson, of Newbury, who it may be inferred accepted, for it is recorded the town ordered £6 to defray the charges of removing his family to Manches-

ter; but he did not preach, and a committee was appointed to procure a minister.

They obtained Rev. John Emerson, who settled with them for a few years at a salary of forty-five pounds per annum, with the use of the parsonage, land, etc. He was the son of the Rev. John Emerson, of Gloucester, graduated at Harvard College in 1689.

In 1697 his salary was increased to forty-eight pounds, and a contribution to be taken four times a year, viz., the last Sabbath of every quarter, which was to be accounted for by the selectmen. In 1698 he resigned, and in 1703 accepted a call from New Castle, N. H. In 1712 he left that place, and was installed over the Second Church in Portsmouth.

For the benefit of his health he visited Europe, and was favorably received by Queen Anne, of England. On his return he preached at Portsmouth and wrote the lives of the apostles, which were never published. He was spoken of as a faithful and eminent preacher of the Gospel.

In 1698 the Rev. Nicholas Webster was settled at a salary of fifty-eight pounds per annum. He was the first to occupy the new parsonage, afterwards given to Rev. Amos Cheever. In 1700 he was invited to remain permanently, but he was unwilling to do so, but continued as their pastor, with an increased salary of seventy-two pounds, until 1715. He was the son of Dr. Webster, of Gloucester, was born in 1673, graduated at Harvard College 1695, and died in Gloucester in 1717.

But little is known of him, but there is a tradition that he was a very useful minister.

A town-meeting was called on the 5th of December, 1715, to take measures to settle a minister, and a committee was chosen, consisting of the selectmen, Robert Leach, Sr., Samuel Lee, Sr., Aaron Bennett, William Hilton, John Bishop, Benjamin Allen, Thomas Pittman, Samuel Leach, John Foster, John Lee, Jr., and Nathaniel Marsters, who were to consult with the pastors of the neighboring churches on the subject. A day of fasting and prayer was appointed to seek the favor of God on ourselves and on our children, and to pray unto *him* that he would send forth a faithful laborer unto this little part of his vineyard.

Rev. Mr. Gerrish, of Wenham; Rev. Thomas Blower, of Beverly; Rev. Mr. Wise and Rev. Mr. White, were invited to aid in the services. The committee agreed with Rev. Amos Cheever to become their pastor, and on the 12th of March, 1716, they report as follows:

"We, [illegible] subscribed, being a committee chosen [illegible] by the town of Manchester to agree with and covenant [illegible] with the Rev Amos Cheever, and to offer and [illegible] what may be needful for the encouragement of the [illegible] in the work of the ministry, and faithfulness to carry on the [illegible] which work of labor he has already in [illegible] unanimously called, although the minutes of the [illegible] was not recorded on the [illegible]

"Now being sensible that it is our bounden duty, and being commanded by the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ, that we who are taught should contribute to him who teaches us in all good things, we do give, grant, make over, and fully and freely and absolutely forever confirm unto the said Amos Cheever, his heirs, executors and assigns, the town's parsonage house, wherein Mr. Webster lived, and a peice of land on part of which the house stands, reputed to be an acre and a half, with the barn, fences, trees, and all the appurtances and privileges, to have and to hold without let or molestation from any of the inhabitants of said town forever, to be his and his heirs' in fee simple, on his declaration of his acceptance of our offer for a settlement among us, and we will give him a legal conveyance thereof. We engage to pay him annually, in sickness and in health, during the whole term of his being our minister, or holding pastoral relations with the church, the sum of £70, New England currency, per annum, which salary to commence on the first of June. Also to give him the whole of the money of a free and generous contribution, to be upheld by us weekly on every Sabbath. We grant him the sole improvement of all the land or marsh that is or shall be deemed minister's land. Also to give him annually sufficient and good firewood for his family, and for neglect of this we will pay him £10 in current money in lieu thereof. Likewise we do covenant that when it shall please God to increase our numbers to 80 families, we will add to his salary the sum of £10, and we shall give him £100 when there shall be 100 families belonging to the town and congregation.

"In witness, &c., July 23d, 1716.

"JOHN FOSTER and others of the committee."

To which the following reply was received from Rev. Mr. Cheever:

"I declare my acceptance of the Manchester officers, in order to a settlement among you, covenanting wh. you to do so, and accept ordination as soon as may be, whilst you are laboring to accomplish wh.— and I promise to live wh. you in ye labors of ye Gospel, whilst you continue in its faith and order, yielding to me all the honors yt ye Gospel demands from ye ambassadors of the glourious Lord. Brethren, pray for me Amen. "AMES CHEEVER."

Mr. Cheever was ordained October 4, 1716, and the church organized on the 7th of November following. They had communed with the church at Salem until 1677, when they were gathered in Beverly, with whom they met until October 20th of this year, when they were dismissed, "in order to their coming into a church state among themselves." The names of those dismissed were John Sibley and his wife, John Lee, Robert Leach, Samuel Stone, Samuel Lee, John Knowlton and children (John, Joseph and Abigail), Benjamin Allen, Joseph Allen and wife, Jabes Baker and wife, Josiah Littlefield and Jonathan Allen.

The records of Mr. Cheever's ministry were lost for nearly one hundred years, when they were discovered among some old family papers by Rev. Mr. Harris, of Danvers, who married a daughter of Mr. Cheever, and who kindly forwarded them to the church. From those we make the following extracts:

"Nine males have signed the church covenant and ten females, with us, being in full communion with other churches.

"The holy ordinance of the Lord's Supper was first administered in Manchester January 6th, 1716–17; members admitted from Jan. 6, 1716, to Nov. 26, 1727, 45; recommended to communion before Nov. 26, 1727, 11; new members admitted in 12 months after the great earthquake Oct. 1727, 40; whole number admitted in full communion from Jan 6, 1716, to April 3, 1743, 101; the number of marriages from Dec. 6, 1716, to December 16th, 1743, 106; Baptism of Adults and Infants from Jan. 6, 1716, to Feb. 12, 1743, 667."

	BIRTHS	DEATHS		BIRTHS	DEATHS
1717	13	5	1723	17	25
1718	17	12	1724	23	11
1719	16	4	1725	17	9
1720	20	10			
1721	19	7	9	158	97
1722	16	11			

This is an interesting statement as showing a most healthful preponderance of births over deaths.

The first deacon was Benjamin Allen, who was succeeded by Benjamin Lee in 1737.

On February 27, 1743, Mr. Cheever requested a dismission from his pastoral connections with the church at Manchester, which he had faithfully maintained for twenty-seven years. An ecclesiastical council was summoned and his desire complied with.

Mr. Cheever was the son of Rev. Samuel Cheever, of Marblehead, and grandson of the celebrated schoolmaster, Ezekiel Cheever; he was born in 1686, graduated at Harvard College, 1707, and died in this town at the age of seventy. In 1717, he married Anne, the daughter of Rev. Joseph Gerrish, of Wenham. She died in 1726. In 1732 he married Mary Saunders, of Boston. She died in 1734. In the year following he married Sarah Choate, of Ipswich, who died in 1750; he married again, in 1753, to Sarah Davis, of Gloucester, who survived him. He died January 15, 1756.

Of Mr. Cheever Dr. Leach, in his admirable history, says: "We are justified in recording his labors as a minister as faithful to the church, among the people, as highly useful. He came at a period when everything was to be done; when the condition of the society conspired to render these labors exceedingly arduous. A church was to be organized, disciplined, and a system of operations to be instituted among a people who, for seventy-six years, had had no other than the transient preaching of the Gospel, and among whom then existed a settled prejudice for old habits, and the insubordination of a small and scattered settlement. Not only was he faithful in his ministrations as a pastor, but he manifested a deep interest in the welfare of the people, by instituting schools, which had been neglected, by the introduciion of implements in the art of agriculture. Throughout the entire period of his residence here the currency of the country was in an unsound condition. Towards the close of his ministration one hundred and twenty pounds was assessed to supply the deficiency of his salary. He was possessed of considerably property, and his library was larger, and was thought to have been as valuable as that of any clergyman in the vicinity. Among them were many of the Latin and Greek classics."

The manner of taking contributions in those days is thus described by Josslyn:

"The people held the minister should be supported by free will offerings rather than by land revenues or tithes. At the time of taking the contribution one of the deacons stood up and spoke something of this kind. 'Now brethren there is left time for the contribution, whereof us God has prospered you so freely offer.' The congregation then came one after another, and brought their offerings to the deacon in his seat, and put it in a box if it be money or paper; or if it be any other chattel, it was put down before the deacon, and he passed another way to his seat. Contributions were taken in this way until about 1760."

In 1744, Dea. Benjamin Lee and Jonathan Herrick were chosen a committee to advise with Mr. Wigglesworth, Mr. Chapman, Mr. Champney, and Mr. Warner, as to the settlement of a minister. Several candidates were heard, and in July the town unanimously agreed to give Rev. Benjamin Tappan an invitation to settle among them, and a committee of eleven were chosen to arrange the terms of settlement. The original document together with Mr. Tappan's letter of acceptance is yet in the possession of a descendant, and of which the following is a copy:

"We whose names are hereunto subscribed Being a Committee Chosen & empowered by the Town of Manchester in New England, to Agree & Covenant in said Town's Behalf with Mr. Benjamin Tappan who has lately, in a Legal Meeting of Said Town, been called & made choice off to carry the work of the Gospel Ministry among us & who has promised & engaged to do so; Do agree with and Confirm to him as followeth, viz.:

"1. We promise to give Mr. Tappan four Hundred and fifty Pounds old Tenor, towards his Settlement, and to pay the same when Demanded.

"2. We promise him, yearly, one hundred and forty Eight Ounces of Silver, or Bills of Public Credit equal to 148 ounces. And this we promise to give him both in sickness and in health During the whole time & term off his being our Minister, or standing in Pastoral Relations to the Church of Christ in this place.

"3. We agree that Mr. Tappan's salary commence the first Day of April next.

"4. We promise that one half of his Salary Shall be paid him yearly the first of October, and the other half of it at the end of the year, viz.: the last of March.

"5. We promise that Mr. Tappan shall have the use and improvement of all the Ministry Land in the Town of Manchester which is enclosed by a fence at this Day; and this we promise him so long as he shall continue in the Ministry among us

"6. We promise & engag him a sufficiency of fire wood for his own family on the Ministry Wood Lots of the aforsaid Town and also the herbage on the same.

"7. We declare it our Intent and Design to Cut & Hale Mr. Tappan's fire wood, not absolutely engaging to cut & Hale it, lest the same shonld come to be a Town charge.

"8. We promise the Contribution Box shall be held every Lord's Day & that all the money Contributed Shall be awarded to Mr. Tappan's use.

"Now in Witness and Confirmation of all & Singular the Articles and Clauses herein Contained, we have Set our hands & Seals, this Sixth Day of December Anno Domini, 1745.

	Signed,
" John Edwards,	John Lee,
Benjamin Lee,	Robert Herrick,
Jonathan Lee, Jr.,	John Lee, Jun.,
Benj. Allen, Jr.,	Samuel Allen, Jun.,
Andrew Hooper.	Jonathan Herrick,
	Richard Coye."

To these conditions Mr. Tappan returned the following reply:

"*To the Committee of the Town of Manchester:*

"Dear Sirs; Since you have thought fit to give me a call to settle in the ministry among you, I hereby declare my compliance with your invitation on the following conditions:

"1st. yt, you give me £260 O. T. per annum—fit it on a Silver Standard.

"2d. yt, you give me for a settlement the house, barn, orchard, all the land within the fence, as it now stands, which belongs to Ezekiel Goodell, to be my own property.

"3d. or yt, you give me £450 O. T. when called for, for a settlement.

"4th. yt. you grant me the use of the ministers land in Manchester, during the time I continue as your minister.

"Benj. Tappan."

November 12th, the town agreed to comply with Mr. Tappan's conditions, and he was ordained on the 11th of December, 1745.

1749, one hundred and forty-eight ounces of silver, and eleven cords of wood purchased for Rev. Mr. Tappan's salary.

June, 1763, Dr. Watts' version of the Psalms of David introduced into the church, and his hymns to be sung at the Lord's table.

In 1761, the church ordered that the volumes of Baxter's works should be put into Mr. Tappan's hands to be lent by him, always subject to be returned to him at the expiration of four months.

In 1762, Rev. Mr. Tappan's salary was £83, 16*s.* 8*d.*

1767, the town ordered £36, 13*s.* 4*d.* as a gift to Rev. Mr. Tappan, which was continued 1768, and increased in 1769 to £46.

In 1774, on the occasion of the separation of the Second Church in Ipswich to form the Fourth, an unhappy misunderstanding existed between them and the church at Manchester.

October 25th, being the period to which the council adjourned, the Rev. Mr. Tappan with a delegation from Manchester appeared, and laid before them their proposal for pacification between them and the Fourth Church, with which the council complied.

1775, Deacon John Tewksbury died.

On the 6th of May, 1790, the church and town were called to mourn the death of their valued and beloved pastor, in the forty-sixth year of his ministry among them.

The selectmen with Dr. David Norwood were appointed a committee to make the arrangments for the funeral of their venerable minister, and to present mourning to the family of the deceased. The sermon was preached by the Rev. Mr. Forbes, of Gloucester.

Throughout the long period of Mr. Tappan's ministry he held a high place in the affections of his people, though at a time of severe, and continued political distractions, embarrassments by which the smallest and most remote precincts were sufferers. So much was this the case in this town, that the impoverished people were unable to pay the minister's covenanted salary. Yet Mr. Tappan maintained uninterruptedly, and with faithfulness, the ministrations of his pastoral duties.

During the period of his labors one hundred and eighty-two were added to the church.

He was a patriot of the most unyielding type. In times of unusual danger from the enemy's cruisers he urged the people to take their arms and ammunition with them on the Sabbath, and set the example by taking his own musket to the pulpit stairs. He believed in being always prepared to resist invasion, and frequently quoted that passage of Scripture, "He that hath no sword let him sell his garment and buy one." He sent two of his sons into the army, one of whom, Ebenezer, was the last survivor of the soldiers of the Revolution from this town. Dr. Leach writes as follows:

"Mr. Tappan's character as a man was very respectable, as appears from the testimony of his parishioners; among whom, as among the people of this town, he was highly esteemed, and his death deeply lamented."

Rev. Benjamin Tappan was the son of Samuel Tappan, of Newbury; was born in 1720, graduated at Harvard in 1742. He married Elizabeth Marsh, of Haverhill. She died in 1807, aged eighty-four.

He had eleven children, among whom was Benjamin, an eminent citizen of Northampton; David, who was made Hollis professor of divinity at Harvard College in 1792, and who died in 1803. Of him Dr. Holmes remarks, "his death threw a gloom over his bereaved family, over the university, the church, the commonwealth and the country."

Samuel and Amos became successful educators, and Ebenezer and Michael were in the army of 1776.

"The descendants of this early pastor are numerous and highly respected."

After the decease of Mr. Tappan the vacancy was filled by Rev. Mr. Blake and Mr. Worcester until September, 1791, when the committee chosen in behalf of the church and parish gave an invitation to Rev. Ariel Parish to settle with them. He accepted, and a committee of eleven were chosen to determine the conditions of settlement, which were:

"1st. That Mr. Parish should quit claim the parsonage land, with the exception of 1st, A parcel of land bounded westerly on land of Captain David Pierce, northerly on land of John Cheever, southerly on the town's poor-house.

"2d. A pasture in the Plain field.

"3d. A piece of thatch bank at Kettle Cove.

"4th, Wood lots in the north division, one in the south division, one at Shingle-place hill and one adjoining the Common.

"5th, The parsonage pew, excepting a seat for the widow of the late Rev. Benjamin Tappan.

"6th, The interest in the Parsonage money, viz.: £61 11*s.* 8*d.*

"Mr. Parish should have £150 settlement and £70 as his annual salary."

These terms were accepted, and Mr. Parish entered upon his duties in March, 1792, and labored diligently until May, 1794, when the church and the people were called to mourn his early death. He died in the thirtieth year of his age, and in the third year of his ministry.

In the spring of this year an epidemic fever prevailed in town, and was very fatal. The distress was so great, and so general, that nurses could not be obtained to take the necessary care of the sick. In this distressing condition of the people Mr. Parish was untiring in his attentions to the sick, and to such a degree, that his exhausted constitution readily yielded to the fatal power of the disease. Almost every household was in mourning for its dead relatives and friends, but the loss of their beloved pastor was most seriously felt by this deeply afflicted people.

A special meeting of the town was called and Henry Story, Ezekiel Leach and Delucena L. Bingham were chosen a committee to make arrangements for his funeral.

Mr. Parish was the son of Elijah Parish, of Andover; was born in 1764; he graduated at Dartmouth College, 1788; he married Hannah Chute, of Byfield, and had one daughter, who died in Manchester in 1793.

A writer of an obituary notice thus remarks:

"While he was decidedly one of the strictest of the Calvinistic school, no man ever manifested a more candid or placid temper towards those who had adopted a different creed. The uniform decision, with which he embraced his own opinions, led him as decidedly to yield the same privilidge to others. His sermons were uniformly plain and practical, without harshness of controversy or the show of ornament. His elocution in the pulpit was manly, distinct and pathetic, and doubtless had his days been prolonged, he would have risen to eminence. Whilst he lived, he was distinguished for his easy and social suavity of manners by which he won the affections and reigned in the hearts of his people; for he shared their joys and sympathized in their sorrows. A letter from a member of his church thus closes; 'he was cut off in the morning of life and the tears of many watered his grave.'

"'Even children followed with endearing wile,
And plucked his gown to share the good man's smile.'"

Until May 23, 1801, the people were destitute of a pastor, when Abraham Randall, of Stow, accepted the call to settle, and he was ordained in August following. He had a settlement of five hundred dollars and an annual salary of three hundred and thirty-four dollars with the improvement of the parsonage land.

In May, 1808, he requested his dismission, which was granted him, and he removed to Stow. During his ministration of seven years there were thirty-one added to the church.

Rev. Mr. Randall was born in Stow, October, 1771; graduated at Harvard, in 1798; studied divinity with Prof. Tappan, of Cambridge, and Dr. Dana, of Ipswich. Married Hannah Leverett, of Hampton, N. H., 1777, by whom he had ten children. He built the home now owned by the heirs of Ivory Brown.

On the 10th of January, 1809, Rev. James Thurston was settled as pastor of this church, with a salary of five hundred and fifty dollars and the use of the parsonage property. A great revival of religion followed, and during the year 1810 there were one hundred and ten added to the church. The following extract from Mr. T.'s diary is of interest:

"We met to worship in the new house for the first time on Thanksgiving day, 1809, and the pastor preached from Ezekiel 36 chap. 26, 27, 28 verses, and a great revival followed. On the 14th of February the meeting-house was dedicated to the worship of God. Sermon from Psalm 27, 4 verse."

Mr. Thurston's pastorate was not a peaceful one, and after many difficulties and dissensions, an ecclesiastical council was called, and he was dismissed July 9, 1819, and he removed to Exeter, N. H., in which place he was born in March, 1779. Ordained in New Market, N. H., 1800; resigned in 1808; installed in Manchester in 1809; left in 1819; and died at Exeter, January, 1836, leaving six children.

On the 27th of July, 1821, the church and society united in an invitation to the Rev. Samuel M. Emerson to become their pastor. They offered him a salary of four hundred and fifty dollars, fourteen cords of wood at his house and the improvement of all the parsonage land.

He accepted the terms and was installed September 12, 1821.

The discord that had prevailed in the church existed to some extent; but under the wise and energetic policy of Mr. Emerson, the tares were separated from the wheat and harmony was restored. In 1825 the articles of faith and covenant were printed for the first time, with all the names of the members of the church. And in 1833 the church took a stand against the use of ardent spirits as a beverage and declared for total abstinence, as will be seen by the following:

"Whereas the use of *Ardent Spirits* has been the fruitful cause of numerous evils, which admit of no remedy but that of *total abstinence*, and as it is the incumbent duty of the churches to maintain a high standard of Christian morality, it will from this time be required of all persons presenting themselves as candidates for admission to this church, to abstain from the use of *Ardent Spirits* in all its forms, except as a medicine.

"Samuel M. Emerson,
"Pastor."

Mr. Emerson labored faithfully and very acceptably until the spring of 1839, when his health began to fail, and in the September following he asked his dismissal, which was granted. As the result of his faithful labors, two hundred and four persons were added to the church.

Rev. Samuel M. Emerson was the son of Rev. John Emerson of Conway, Massachusetts, born November, 1785, graduated at Williams College 1810, was installed in Heath, September 16, 1840, and died there July 20, 1841, leaving a widow and five children.

Rev. Oliver A. Taylor, was the next asked to take charge of the church, at a salary of seven hundred dollars. Mr. Taylor accepted the call and was installed September 18, 1839. He continued his labors until December 18, 1851, when death called him. He was born in Yarmouth, Massachusetts, August 1801, graduated at Union College 1825, studied theology at Andover. He was buried in Manchester. He was somewhat noted as a scholar and a writer on sacred subjects. He left a widow but no children.

Rev. Rufus Taylor was installed May 6th, 1852. He was a brother to the last pastor. In September 1856, he made a voyage to Russia for his health. On his return he was very cordially received and presented with a purse of one hundred and twenty-five dollars, by his society. There was a little dissatisfaction respecting some exchanges, and the following vote was passed in April, 1857. "That it would be gratifying to the members of the First Parish, assembled at their annual meeting if Rev. Mr. Taylor would enlarge the circle of his exchanges." To this resolution Mr. Taylor sent a sharp and rather ill-natured reply, and concluded his note by resigning his charge.

His resignation was accepted by the Parish. He still however, continued to preach in the meeting-house, until late in the autumn, when with a minority of the church and society, he began to hold services in another building, they claiming to be the First Congregational Church.

A council held December 16, 1857, decided that

neither party without the other had a claim to be the Congregational Church, and dismissed Mr. Taylor "from all his church, and parish relations." The number of church members following Mr. Taylor was seventy-nine, and those opposing him were one hundred. Mr. Taylor accepted the decision of the council and left the town.

He was born in Hawley, Massachusetts, 1811, and during his stay with the church at Manchester fifty-eight were admitted.

The minority then secured the services of Rev. Francis V. Tenney, late of Byfield, who was installed as their pastor August 15, 1858, and a small chapel was fitted for the accommodation of this seceding church and society. Happily a reunion of the two churches was effected in March, 1869; and the chapel was generously presented by Mrs. A. H. Trask to the original society by whom it is now used as a vestry.

In 1856, the First Congregational Society purchased of the proprietors and the town their interest in the church and remodeled its interior. The whole house was put in thorough repair, and on the 9th of April, it was rededicated. An organ donated by Capt. Richard Trask, and Mrs. Sarah Allen, was first used on this occasion, and an original hymn by William B. Tappan was sung by the choir. A new bell weighing twenty-two hundred pounds was presented by B. L. Allen, Esq.

The successor of Rev. Rufus Taylor was Rev. George E. Freeman, who was ordained October 5, 1858. His pastorate was a brief one, as he was dismissed at his own request November 18, 1862. He was born in Nova Scotia November, 1823.

Rev. Edward P. Tenney became the pastor on the 3d of November, 1862, and continued to preach until September 30, 1867. Mr. Tenney is the author of the "Silent House," "Coronation" and several other admirable books.

Rev. George L. Gleason was installed on the 7th of April, 1869, and dismissed by Council Sept. 21, 1881.

Rev. D. Olin Clark was installed April 20, 1882, and dismissed by Council at his own request February 6, 1885.

Rev. Daniel Marvin, Jr., became the pastor on the 1st of March, 1886, and is still in charge.

BAPTIST CHURCH.—It is not difficult to picture in imagination a small shallop bearing down from Salem Harbor to Jeffrey's Creek on a summer day, somewhere from 1631 to 1635, having on board Mr. Roger Williams, 'teacher," and afterwards "minister," of the First Church in Salem, on his way to break the bread of life to the few fisher folk who lived along the shore, and whose log cabins began to rise here and there in the woods. There is no historical mention, however, of such a visit; and if the modern apostle of "soul liberty" had ever stepped foot on the shores of Manchester, he appears to have left no disciples behind him.

The history of Baptist *opinions* in the town it is impossible at this late day to rescue from oblivion; but the history of the Baptist *Church* may be briefly told.

There had no doubt been persons in town who held more or less clearly and fully the views of doctrine and Christian ordinances which serve to differentiate Baptists from their fellow-believers of the orthodox faith. But events waited long for the hour and the man; and the first movement was not in the direction of the formation of a regular Baptist Church.

It was in the summer and fall of 1842 that Elder Elam Burnham, of Essex, began to hold meetings from time to time in the room now occupied by the Public Library on School Street, and afterwards in a hall in the tavern. The preaching gave special prominence to the Second Advent of Christ, and, as in other places at that time, it aroused a good deal of interest, and was met by corresponding opposition.

Elder Burnham was a man of strong native character and indomitable will, and his preaching was with power. A number were baptized by him, and on the 10th of April, 1843, thirteen men and women met and formed themselves into a church. A few days later fifty-seven others joined the new organization, making seventy in all. The body called itself a "Christian" Church. It adopted no creed but the New Testament, and claimed to be independent of any religious denomination. It was organized, however, on the model of the so-called "Christian Connection," although it was not admitted into the Rockingham Christian Conference until the following year. Mr. Burnham was chosen pastor.

Measures were taken to build a meeting-house and on February 28, 1844, the building was opened for worship, Rev. P. R. Russell, of Boston, preaching the dedication sermon. It is said that some deprived themselves of the necessaries of life to aid in the erection of this building.

Mr. Burnham remained as pastor but one year, and was succeeded by Rev. O. J. Waite, from 1844 to 1848. Rev. P. R. Russell became pastor in 1848 and remained three years. Mr. Russell was a man of ability and character; during his ministry he preached a series of lectures on the Life of Christ, which were afterwards published. He also lectured and wrote on Universalism and Materialism. It was during Mr. Russell's pastorate that the church, under his lead became a regular Baptist Church, and on February 28, 1850, was regularly recognized by an ecclesiastical council called for that purpose, according to the usages of the Baptist denomination. The pastors who have served since 1851, have been Rev. G. W. Davis, 1852; Rev. G. F. Danforth, 1853–56; Rev. C. W. Redding, 1856–61; Rev. L. B. Hatch, 1863–68; Rev. H. F. H. Miller, 1870–71; Rev. C. D. Swett, 1873–75; Rev. C. T. Holt, 1879–81. The church was then without a pastor for nearly three years, Rev. D. F. Lamson, of Hartford, Conn., becoming stated supply

Jaunary 1, 1884. There have been but few Sundays when the meeting-house was closed for want of a preacher, although there have been several periods of from two to four years when the church was without a pastor. During these times recourse was often had for a pulpit supply to Newton Theological Institute.

The church has never been a strong one in numbers or wealth. It has suffered much at times by removals and deaths; the manner of its formation was peculiar, and its subsequent history not favorable to home generous growth. It has not been without its internal trials, which once threatened a formal division, but wiser and better counsels have latterly prevailed, and the church has grown in harmony within, and increased by additions from without. Its present membership is eighty-seven

The church has licensed and sent out three ministers of the Gospel.

The expenses of worship are met by pew rents and weekly offerings, and the church and society have been out of debt since January, 1884, when the last indebtedness incurred by a second remodeling of the house of worship was cancelled. Since that time other improvements have been made in the way of carpeting, painting and furnishing, including a baptistery, all of which have been provided for partly by the generous help of some summer attendants.

The church is connected with the Salem Baptist Association.

The Sunday-school connected with the church has twenty officers and teachers, and one hundred and fifty-eight scholars. It has three hundred and fifty-eight volumes in the library.

The Parsonages.—The first parsonage, or minister's house of which we have record, was built in 1685; it occupied the site on which the residence of Daniel W. Friend now stands, on School Street. The lot of land was given by the proprietors of the four hundred acres, and the following is a copy of the conveyance:

"Whereas there is no place so convenieot for a house for the ministry to be built upon, as a small parcel of land lying on the oorth side of the Brook below the saw-mill, it being about ½ of an acre lying between said brook and the highway, and belong to the proprietors of the 400 acres. We whose names are hereunto subscribed being the rightful and true proprietors of the said ¾ of an acre, do by these presents, on the day and year underwritten, for ourselves, our heirs, assigns, executors and administrators, freely and frankly, grant, give, alienate, assign and set off and confirm, unto the towo of Manchester to them, and their heirs, the above said parcel of land, to have and to hold forever, to be made use of for the setting of a parsonage house, to be improved for the use of the oiinister, and io coofirmation thereof we have this 2d day of March 1685 hereunto set our hands and seals.

Samuel Allen
Thomas Tewksbury witnesses Samuel Leach
William Hassam to the Robert Leach
John Lee Conveyance John Sibley
Oneciphoris Allen
William Allen

"This house was sold in 1699 to John Terran, shoemaker, with ¾ acres of land adjoining, for the sum of £20. current money, which is to be improved for the use of the ministry."

Many years after this sale it was moved, enlarged and finally taken down in 1853.

At a town meeting April 23, 1699, a committee was appointed to build a new parsonage house, forty-two feet long, eighteen feet wide and fourteen feet stud, to be located near the meeting-house, at the discretion of the committee. A rate for fifty pounds was made to defray the expenses; and much common land was sold this year, particularly at the Great Neck (Old Neck) and House Island, and the proceeds of the sales were devoted to the building of the new parsonage house, and settling a minister in town. This parsonage house was located near the spot on which the dwelling-house of Captain John Carter now stands, and was occupied by Rev. Nicholas Webster until 1715. In 1716 it was given to Rev. Amos Cheever, at the time of his settlement in the ministry in Manchester, together with an acre and a half of land adjoining, extending on the road from near the Sawmill Brook to the lot of land on which the Baptist Meeting-house stands. This lot of land was given to the town by the proprietors of the four hundred acres April 6, 1716, by the following instrument of conveyance, recorded in the town records, viz.:

"1716, April 6th. We the proprietors of the 400 acres do for ourselves, our heirs, give up all our rights in that parcel of Land lying on the West side of the highway that goes to the Saw-mill and joining to Samuel Lee, Northwesterly; and to the old Parsonage land and Meadow Southwesterly, to the towns use as a Parsonage forever, as witness our hands, and this to be entered in our town Book as a firm conveyance as appears under our hands.

"Samuel Leach. John Allen.
Daniel Williams. Aaron Bennett.
Nath'l Marsters. Oniciphonis Allen.
Joseph Allen. Benjamin Allen.
John Bishop. Robert Leach.
Eliah Littlefield. Jonathan Allen.
Richard Leach.

"Entered,

"John Lee, *Town Clerk*, Attest."

The same year "a committee was appointed to lay out for a pasture for the Rev. Amos Cheever 15 acres near the Mill,—10 acres in Poplar plain, or 8 acres near Millett's Bridge as Mr. Cheever shall desire."

The third parsonage-house was purchased by the town in 1745 for the Rev. Benjamin Tappan. It was formerly the homestead of Ezekiel Goodall, who died in 1734. The estate comprised a dwelling-house, barn and about five acres of land, pleasantly situated on the northerly side of the "Saw-Mill Brook," and opposite the first parsonage-house. This house was of the long, sloping-roof style, two stories in front, one story in the rear, and was probably built about the time of the first parsonage-house; it is now standing, and in good condition, the back part of the roof having been raised to two stories. It was a fine, old house in early times, the walls being plastered with mortar made of burnt clam shells and sand. It has three large rooms on the ground floor, and the same for the second story, with an enormous chimney near the centre of the house, containing the large oven of early times. The house had been painted *red* from the time of the earliest recollection of the "oldest in-

habitant." It is now owned by the descendants of Mr. Tappan, having been held in the family since 1745.

The fourth parsonage-house was built for the Rev. Abraham Randall in 1803, the town furnishing the timber and lumber from the Parish Woodland. The building lot, three-fourths of an acre, was purchased of Ezekiel Leach for two hundred and sixty dollars. It was situated on Union Street, and is now owned by Ivory Brown. It is a large-sized house, of the pitched-roof style, and is in good condition.

The fifth parsonage-house was built in 1811–12 for the Rev. James Thurston, the town making a conveyance of the building lot, about half an acre, to Mr. Thurston for the consideration of one dollar (which was paid for him by a friendly parishioner), situated on the northerly side of the "Saw-Mill Brook," and being a portion of the "Old Mill" yard. It was a large, square, two-story house, hipped-roof style, having a hall running through the centre, with large rooms on each side, and having four large rooms on the second story. It was occupied by Rev. Mr. Thurston, the Rev. Samuel M. Emerson and the Rev. Oliver A. Taylor as a parsonage or minister's house, and was afterwards purchased and occupied by Thomas P. Gentlee, lately deceased, who enlarged it.

The sixth and last parsonage is situated on a court leading from Union Street, and near the railroad station. It is a large, pitch-roofed, two-story building, and was formerly used as an academy by William Long and John Price.

The house, with suitable out-buildings and about an acre of land, with a wharf on the bay, was given to the Congregational Church by Mrs. Sarah Allen (now deceased) in 1853 for a parsonage forever. It has been occupied by all the pastors of that church since the pastorate of Oliver A. Taylor.

Tything-Man.—As the "Tithing-man" is an official that has long been out of date, it may not be inappropriate to give a sketch of one who still lives in the memory of the older inhabitants. They were elected annually by the town—a sort of constable whose jurisdiction was confined to the meeting-house—where his duties were numerous and arduous. He was expected to ring the bell, beat the dogs out of the sanctuary, watch the unruly boys "that they might be contained in order," keep the sleepers awake, sand the floors on great occasions, and, after the introduction of the stove, he had care of the fire; and at the evening services it was his duty to make regular rounds and snuff the tallow candles.

About three-score-and-ten years ago the tithing-man (or "tidy-man," as it was pronounced) was a grizzly veteran of the War of the Revolution, who strode about with a heavy, martial tread, and with an air of unmistified authority. He had long held the position, and had grown old in the office. In ringing the bell he never ceased until the minister had crossed the threshold, and if the reverend gentleman was at all late he never escaped a reprimand. His seat was a raised one in the gallery, where the inconsiderate boys were congregated. From his high perch his grim visage, his restless, piercing eyes and his long stick, tended to render their youthful meditations appropriately solemn, but if some irrepressible youngster chanced to forget the warning, a heavy blow from the official stick was an effectual reminder of the tortures to come, unless stayed by speedy reformation.

This manner of preserving order and making complaints, though not unusual then, would scarcely be approved now. For example, during the delivery of the sermon a heavy rap from the stick of the tything-man caused the preacher to stop and all eyes to turn to the dignitary in the gallery; pointing to a little urchin of some eight years he exclaimed in a voice that resounded through the edifice, "I see you! serving the devil in the Lord's house." The little victim suffered keenly when all the eyes of the congregation were turned to him, but he still lives an honored citizen of the town.

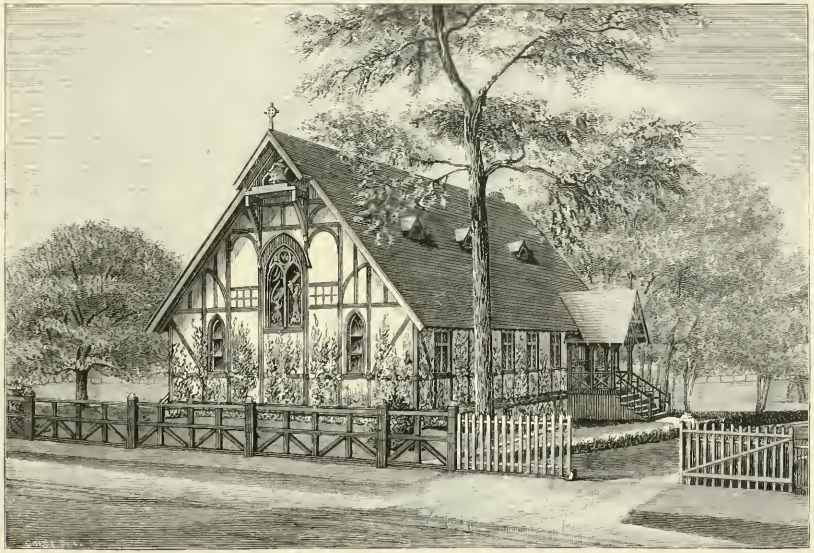
In severe weather the old hero of Valley Forge would occasionally descend from his seat, and with heavy tread stalk down the stairs, up the bare floor of the aisle, open the stove with much clatter, fill it with crackling wood and close the heavy door with a bang, that sadly interfered with the thread of the discourse; then straightening himself to his full height, the old warrior would calmly survey the congregation, in search of some offending boy; shake his stick or long finger at him until the culprit gave signs of repentance, when he would slowly march back to his seat.

Some of the ladies not liking his method of trimming the candles, presented him with a large pair of snuffers; but he continued to pluck the burning wicks with his thumbs and fingers, and then leisurely place the sooty mass in the bowl of the snuffers. He did not approve of the "new fangled invention," it was too slow. Upon his death the office was abolished.

"Staying Over."—It was the custom of those living at a distance to "stay over" in the church until the afternoon service. This was especially the case in stormy weather.

An old lady who has long since passed to her final rest, used to relate the following experience: One day there were but two of us stayed over. After lunch had been disposed of Lucy went to the pulpit as minister, and I repaired to the singing seats as the choir. We managed to get through with a hymn or two, then Lucy began the sermon, but it proved more difficult than she had expected, so she abruptly concluded it and began to search about the pulpit. From beneath the cushion an old folded paper was found. As it did not look interesting it was left on the desk.

The preacher was a stranger, and when he resumed the service in the afternoon he astonished us by reading this very document. In accordance with the cus-



EMMANUEL CHURCH,

MANCHESTER-BY-THE-SEA, MASS

tom, it was a note from the widow of the deceased, announcing the death of her husband, and asking the prayers of the congregation, that her bereavement might be sanctified to her.

The effect of this note upon the audience was electrical; their amazement was beyond measure, for this man had been lain in the burial ground for more than thirty years, and his wife had followed him but a few weeks later, leaving no heirs or kindred; at so late a date to ask intercession in her behalf was certainly a very unusual proceeding.

For well nigh a generation this note remained an unexplained mystery.

Grave-yards.—The earliest record we have of a piece of land having been set apart for burial purposes, is in 1650, when the old "burial-ground" at the junction of Washington and Sumner Streets, was devoted to that purpose. As we have before stated, it extended to the foot of the hill until a more direct way was made to the Cove and beyond, in 1684.

Prior to 1650 tradition tells us that interments were made in the rear of the meeting-house, a little to the northeast of the present church. All traces of graves have long been obliterated, and no record remains to tell whose bodies were placed there.

The oldest monuments remaining in the Washington Street Cemetery are Jacob Woodbury and wife, 1714; George Norton, 1717; Elizabeth, wife of Thomas Lee, gent., 1720; Lieut. William Hilton, 1723; and on a plain piece of granite are the initials E. H., probably those of Edward Hooper. Doubtless there were many older graves with simple inscriptions on the granite blocks, but the tooth of time has obliterated them.

Captain John Marston is buried here, and the following ambiguous inscription marks his resting-place:

"Capt. John Marston lies here, who died May 22d, 1754, being 57 years and 3 mo. old. Art thou curious, reader, to know what sort of a man he was? Wait till the final day of Retribution, and then thou mayest be satisfied."

A very aged citizen, whose debut on the stage of life was only thirty years after the Captain's exit, used to say, "When quite young I was curious to know what sort of a man he was, and by diligent inquiry I learned he lived on what is now known as Smith's farm. Until late in life he was a bachelor, and was very eccentric. In the presence of women he was extremely diffident." A young farmer living in his neighborhood had long desired to purchase a certain field belonging to him, but without success, until one day he renewed the proposition, when the usual reply came, "No, I won't sell it;—but—if you will go to Beverly and get the widow A—— to marry me, I will give you a deed of the land on the day of my marriage." Thus delegated, the widow was interviewed, and in a few days he drove with her to the farm. She was so pleased with the bashful Captain and his broad acres, that an early day was fixed for the wedding, and when they were made happy by matrimonial bonds, the proxy rejoiced in the possession of the long-coveted field. He was an excellent citizen, but very peculiar. His epitaph was written by himself, and inscribed on his grave-stone by his direction.

The resting-place of a rugged, old-time mariner bears this inscription:

"Sacred to the memory of
CAPTAIN JOHN ALLEN,
who died
August 27, 1834, aged 59 years.

Though Boreas' blasts and Neptune's waves
Have tossed me to and fro,
In spite of both, by God's decree,
I harbor here below.
Now when at anchor I do lie,
With many of our fleet;
In hope again for to set sail
My Saviour, Christ, to meet."

At the Cove a "burial-place" was made near the junction of the county-road and the road to the railroad station. This is probably older than that in the village, but the records make no mention of it. Within the memory of some still living, numerous stones which marked the graves were visible, and one of white marble, bearing the name of Abigail Gilbert. The old wall having been neglected, it became a favorite resting-place for the cattle of the neighborhood, and the slab was broken.

Within this rough enclosure were laid the bodies of that hardy race who aided in laying the foundation of that liberty we now enjoy. Probably John Kettle lies here, with the Hoopers, Allens, Gilberts, Northeys, Kitfields and the Stones, whose descendants are scattered all over the country. This old Colonial burial-place should be better cared for.

CHAPTER CIV.

MANCHESTER—(*Continued*).

Early Houses—Saw-Mills—Grist-Mills—Cabinet-Making—Mahogany Veneers—Ship-Masters—Captain Richard Trask—Captain Thomas Leach—John Carter—Longevity in Manchester—Valuation.

Early Houses.—We very naturally desire to know where the early settlers of the town made their homes. As the greater part of them were fishermen and gathered their subsistence from the sea they built near the coast.

William Allen was a carpenter, and tradition says his dwelling was where the Congregational parsonage now stands, and the old well covered by the side-walk was dug by him. He built the first saw-mill, and died in 1678.

William Jeffrey appears to have been the most unsettled of settlers. He does not seem to have remained long with Allen after his name had been given to the creek. We hear of him at Ipswich where he gave his name to a tract of land known as "Jeffrey's Neck."

In 1630 his name appears as one of the attorneys for Richard Vine's land on the Saco River, and he also appears at Weymouth as the owner of a lot of land there.

The proprietors of what was called the four hundred acre grant constructed their houses in what is now the populous part of the village.

John Kettle's house was at the Cove, near the eastern line of the town. He was here as early as 1638, and that part of the town bears his name, "Kettle Cove," as also the island off Crescent Beach. He died in 1677.

Richard Graves was an inhabitant of Salem in 1637, and was interested in the four hundred acre grant. His home was known as "Graves' Farm," and along its front was a fine beach that was named for him. This property was purchased by Richard H. Dana, the poet, in 1845, as a summer resort, and it still remains in his family.

Samuel Friend was here in 1645 and his abode was near the old burial ground, which was a part of his estate.

John Pickworth was granted forty acres of land at "Pickworth Point," in 1667, where he undoubtedly built his house. His father, Joseph Pickworth, was an old settler in the town and died in 1677. This point is now the residence of Mrs. Augustus Hemingway and Louis Cabot.

Ambrose Gale built his house at "Gale's Point," in 1670. His cabin was probably near a fine spring which continues to flow, though doubtless with a decreased volume since the heavy forest trees which at that time fringed the harbor have been cut. He removed from town in 1670, leaving no descendants.

John Codner came in 1786 and made his home in what is called Sandy Hollow. Several old apple trees, probably planted by him, marked the site of the house.

George Norton was here in 1645, and built his house on a ridge about midway from the old Forster Mill, and the house at the point, the property of Rev. Dr. Bartol. He died in 1659, leaving a son George, who built a house on county road, which divides the Norton estate. He died in 1716.

Richard Glass came in 1660, and located at "Glass Head," about where Rev. Dr. Bartol has his summer residence and observatory.

John Black was here in 1640. He lived on what is now the Boardman estate, and probably "Black Cove Beach" was named for him. He died in 1675.

Thomas Chubbs came in 1636, and settled at the western boundary of the town. His house was probably near where the summer house of Dennie Boardman now stands.

William Bennett came in 1637 and made his abode at the foot of the hill named for him. He built a grist-mill on the site of the old Forster Mill.

Saw-Mills.—To the early settler a saw-mill was very necessary, and many were built in different sections of the town. One was on what was called Cheever's Creek, in the pasture north of the High school-house; one still north of that at a place now known as the "old mill dam;" one on School Street, by the "Saw-mill Brook," which was referred to in the records as the "Old Saw-mill," as early as 1694, when it was sold. There were three other saw-mills at the Cove; one known as Knight's Saw-mill, stood on the road to the railroad station at the Cove, and one on the stream near the Gloucester line. The only one now standing is known as Baker's, and is just beyond the junction of the road to Essex and School Street. All three streams are now dry for the greater part of the year, but then they were quite large, and they well illustrate the effect of the thinning out of our forests. Take for instance the vicinity of the Magnolia Station, where formerly the heaviest forests in town were situated, and the stream was quite large, flowing the year round. About the time the railroad was completed it was all cut, and soon after a fire swept over it and consumed the deep accumulation of vegetable mould. In this dark wood the snow often lay until June, and the regular flow of water furnished an abundant power for the mill. But after the forest had been removed there was nothing to protect the snow, and with the first warm days of April it ran to the sea, leaving the bed of the stream dry through the summer. To strip the trees from the land is to increase the freshets and the droughts.

Grist-Mills.—Grist-mills are of the utmost importance in a new settlement, not only for grinding grain for the food of the settlers, but as gathering places, where, while waiting for their meal, the people discussed the political and religious problems of the day. They were the nurseries where patriots were commended and disloyalty to the new flag condemned. There was one on Chubb's Creek, just where the railroad now crosses the stream. One where the old Forster mill now stands. One in the central part of the village and one on the estate of T. Jefferson Coolidge, known as the Gilbert mill.

Cabinet-Making.—Doubtless the early settlers were quite content with such stools, tables and bedsteads as their unskilled hands could fashion. As the village increased and larger houses took the place of cabins, more and a better class of articles were required. These were satisfactorily supplied by the house and ship-carpenters. But soon something better was demanded, and Moses Dodge, who had worked somewhat at the trade of cabinet-making in the old country, was induced to open a shop and manufacture articles of this kind. The cost of furniture from "over sea" was altogether beyond the means of any but the wealthy of the large towns.

Mr. Dodge lived on School Street, in the house now occupied by John Price. The original house was much smaller than the present one, but it is altogether probable one room was used as a work-shop, and here was the germ from which grew an industry that became the leading occupation of the inhabitants,

and made this beautiful town celebrated through the country for the excellence of its furniture. Mr. Dodge died about the beginning of the Revolutionary War.

With the establishment of peace and the disbanding of the Continental army, Ebenezer Tappan returned to his home and opened a store on Central Street, and in the rear of it he fitted up a furniture-shop. Here he manufactured from birch and maple such chairs, tables, desks and bureaus as the community required.

In 1805 Caleb Knowlton commenced business and John Perry Allen became his apprentice, but soon after the beginning of the war of 1812, he became so alarmed at the threatening aspect, that he closed his shop and retired to a more peaceful abode among the hills of New Hampshire.

Mr. Allen worked in other towns until 1814 or 15, when he returned to Manchester, hired a shop at the junction of North and Union Streets, and began to manufacture on his own account.

In 1815 Eben Tappan, Jr., who had worked with his father, built a shop on the opposite side of the street and began the business of cabinet-making.

These were the pioneers. Some years after many others opened shops, among whom may be mentioned Larkin Woodbury, afterwards Woodbury & Long; Kelham & Fitz, the latter an apprentice of E. Tappan, Jr.; Bingham & Co., Smith & Low, Long & Danforth, Isaac Allen, Cyrus Dodge, a grandson of Moses Dodge; H. P. & S. Allen, Samuel Parsons, Samuel Boardman, Proctor & Godsoe, Jewett & Severance and others.

For a while Mr. Allen employed one journeyman and one apprentice—the very limited home market was soon supplied, and it became necessary to find a new one; to this end he shipped on a fishing vessel two mahogany bureaus and sailed with them to Boston; there were but three or four furniture dealers there at that time, and none of them would buy the lot at the price he asked, so he sold cheap with the understanding that if a good profit was realized on their sale, orders for more were to be at the larger price. Ready purchasers were found, more were ordered, and from that time his business steadily increased.

In 1822 he went to New York and arranged to send a vessel load to that market to be sold at auction. This experiment proved an entire success, and much larger orders, and better prices were obtained; the difficulty now was to find skillful workmen enough to keep pace with the increasing orders.

At that time the workmen were obliged to saw their own veneers by hand; it was a slow and very laborious kind of labor. All attempts to saw the mahogany logs into three thin divisions by machinery had failed. Parties in New York and elsewhere had made the trial, but none had been successful.

Mr. Allen had seen one of these, and being convinced he could improve on it and make it successful, he purchased the "Old Grist Mill," and on its site built a mill for his machine. But upon trial it did not prove a success; the first two or three were all right, but the later ones became uneven and worthless. To discover the cause of this, they worked a long time in vain, until accident, which so often proves the friend and ally of inventors, came to their assistance.

The saw consisted of a heavy cast-iron circular frame, about four feet in diameter, flat on one side, beveled to a thin edge on the other; thin saw-plates, in segments of about a foot in length, and closely fitted to each other at the ends, were screwed to the flat part of this frame.

In some way the rapidly-revolving saw came in contact with a mass of iron, and the teeth were terribly damaged. After they had been recut the diameter was so reduced as to appear to Mr. Allen objectionable, and the only way of remedying it was by moving out the plates, which left an open space between them, which seemed a very serious fault. However, they reluctantly tried it, and, to their surprise and astonishment, it was a complete success, and their troubles were at an end.

It may be profitable to consider the nature of the difficulty that had so long defied the skill of those engaged in this enterprise. The running of the saw at the high rate of speed in such hard wood soon heated it, and as there was no room for expansion, it necessarily became wavy, and the hotter it became, the more uneven was the cutting. With the separation of the plates, room for expansion was provided, and all went successfully. In those days the effect of heat upon metals was not understood by the average mechanic. Had the accident above referred to occurred some weeks earlier, Mr. Allen's machine would have been the first successful one in the United States.

With power-cut veneers, furniture was more rapidly produced, and the market was extended by Mr. Allen until the store-houses of Charleston, Mobile and New Orleans were stocked with it, and the reputation of Manchester furniture was fully established. A large trade was grown up in the slave States, but it was well-nigh ruined by unthoughtful packing. The different articles were enclosed in rough cases, and, to prevent chafing, rolls of paper were used. One day a packer, who had exhausted the supply, went home and got a lot of his weekly papers and used them.

The goods arrived at New Orleans and were opened on the sidewalk upon a windy day, and these papers were scattered broadcast over the neighborhood. When they were found to be copies of "Garrison's Liberator" the excitement was intense, and for awhile the fate of that store was doubtful. The agent was a religious man, but his letter to his principal at Manchester was so emphatic that no more Liberators were used in packing furniture going South.

The sawing of veneers became an important branch of Mr. Allen's business; his mill supplied the greater part of the furniture and piano establishments of the State. It contained two upright saws, four veneering saws, jig saws, turning laths, &c. In 1835 he increased his power by the addition of a steam engine. These saws were capable of dividing a plank four inches in thickness into one hundred veneers. They were kept from public view, under lock and key, and all sorts of subterfuges were used by people from many parts of the country, who desired to see their operations that they might apply the principle to similar purposes.

About one hundred men were employed by this, the most successful cabinet manufacturer of his day.

On the night of the 27th of August, 1836, a little spark fell upon mahogany dust, where it lay smouldering and spreading until it had gained possession of the room above and forced a tongue of flames through the roof, which aroused the sleeping villagers to their danger.

Mr. Allen was absent at the time, and he returned to find his mill, shops, great piles of pine lumber from Maine, heaps of mahogany logs from Cuba and Honduras, and his own dwelling a mass of ashes.

One of the first acts of Eben Tappan, Jr., was to build a turning lathe, and this was the first with a continuous action ever used in town. Before that all the turning had been done with that primitive contrivance known as the spring pole lathe. Mr. Tappan did not long continue in the furniture trade, but he built fire-engines, two of which have been in use for more than fifty years in this town. At a later period he manufactured steering wheels for vessels, which were sold by his agent in Boston. He was regarded as a superior mechanic. He retired from business in 1845, and died in 1875, at the age of eighty-two years.

Mr. Allen's losses by the fire was estimated as over sixty thousand dollars, of which there was an insurance of only nine thousand and three hundred. He resumed business with a new mill and new shops, but he was not successful; the zenith of the trade had been passed, the West was dividing it and Manchester was losing it. He died in 1875, in his eightieth year. He was a man of unusual force of character. He took great interest in the affairs of the town, and was always prominent in the advocacy of public improvements.

Besides the competition from the west, where cheaper lumber and abundant water power gave them an advantage, those engaged in the southern trade during the rebellion suffered very severely from losses.

The following is a list of the manufacturers at the present time: William E. Wheaton, Cyrus Dodge, A. S. & G. W. Jewett, Claudius Hoyt, Rust & Marshal, William Johnson & Son and Leach & Annable. The old time excellence of the work is still fully sustained, but the quantity is much reduced.

Ship Masters.—Manchester has long been noted for the great number of navigators she has sent to the ports of New York, Boston and Salem, where they have earned enviable reputations for the energy and skill with which they did their part in extending the commerce of the country to every part of the globe. Many might be mentioned, but we must content ourselves with a very few.

Captain Richard Trask.—He was born in Salem, July 13, 1788. His father was at that time chief mate of a vessel in the West India trade. He died at Havana at the early age of twenty-one years. The news of his death coming to his young wife shortly after the birth of her son brought on a dangerous illness, which resulted in permanent mental derangement. The child being thus wholly deprived of parental care and protection, was placed in charge of a Mr. Lee in Manchester. Good Mrs. Lee supplied a mother's place to him, and was rewarded by his affectionate helpfulness through the whole of her long life. Mr. Lee was engaged in the fishing business, and the lad, at the age of twelve years, commenced his sea-faring life by a voyage to the Grand Bank. He was remarkable for his great physical strength as well as for intelligence and sobriety; and when he reached the age of eighteen years he was unexpectedly offered a second mate's birth by a ship-owner who was a total stranger to him, but who had heard favorable reports of the young man, and sought him out while he was at work on his vessel. This was his first real start in life. His school advantages, like those of many other village lads of his day, had been of the slightest, but he set to work to supplement them by solitary and diligent study. He procured books on navigation to which he devoted his spare time when at sea, and commenced keeping a pro-forma log-book; practicing writing on the lid of his sea-chest and thus formed a hand that was noticeable for clearness and elegance.

Thus, alone in the world, without external aid or encouragement, he fitted himself for and obtained a chief mate's position, and finally secured command of the ship "Adriatic" in the employ of Messrs. Loring & Cunningham of Boston. Here may be said to end the period of struggle against adverse circumstances. From this time on his career was a more than ordinarily successful one. A life of industry, thrift, temperance and integrity produced its legitimate fruits. He had accumulated the means to purchase an interest in a vessel. About 1828 Mr. Enoch Train (then the junior partner in the firm of Samuel Train & Co. of Boston) induced him to join with his firm in the purchase of a vessel to be employed in the Russia trade.

The connection thus formed lasted to the end of Captain Trask's life. Their first joint investment was in the brig "Edward," which not long afterwards was lost in the Bahamas. They then purchased the new brig "Oregon," and shortly after the ship "Forum." This latter vessel Captain Trask com-

manded for several years, taking his proportionate interest in the cargoes, and combining the functions of ship-master and merchant. The outward cargoes consisted either of Havanna sugar or American cotton; the proceeds of which were invested in St. Petersburg in return cargoes of Russia hemp, cordage, sail-cloth and feathers. The business was skillfully conducted, and was almost uniformly successful.

In 1839 Messrs. Enoch Train & Co. turned their attention to the cotton-freighting business, and Captain Trask joined them in building at Medford the ship "St. Petersburg," of about eight hundred and sixty tons. It is significant of the changes which the last fifty years have brought about in naval architecture that the "St. Petersburg" was the largest merchant ship that had ever been built in Massachusetts up to that time, and after she was launched it was found necessary to enlarge the draw of the bridge on the Mystic River to let her through. She attracted great attention in Boston and foreign ports, not only on account of her size and carrying capacity, but in her elaborate finish and her luxurious cabins, finished with the most costly woods, and furnished with cut-glass and solid silver-ware—more suited to a pleasure-yacht than to a trading ship.

Captain Trask took charge of this vessel at intervals for two or three voyages to Liverpool and St. Petersburg, but about this time he began to withdraw from active service. His old friend, Mr. Train, always relied greatly upon his judgment and advice; and when "Train's Line," of Boston and Liverpool packets, was established in 1844, Captain Trask took an interest in it which he retained to the time of his death, which occurred at his home in Manchester August 5, 1846, after a brief illness, and in the fifty-ninth year of his age.

He was a man greatly beloved. The flags of the shipping in Boston Harbor were at half-mast on the day of his funeral, and his death was felt as a personal bereavement by all who knew him.

In Trask we have an excellent example of the best type of the old-time "sea captain." They were a class of men that were not only navigators, but they were merchants as well. They rendered invaluable service in the development of commerce; they honored their country at home and abroad. But they are now rapidly passing away with the changes that have come through the introduction of steam.

Captain Thomas Leach was another of the old-time sea captains of cherished memory. He too was a representative of an enterprising, hardy race of men, now almost extinct.

He was born in Manchester in 1807. His father, whose name he bore, was a noted mariner, "who had sailed the seas over" in the employ of William Gray, of Salem.

Young Leach had developed a strong attachment for the sea at a very early age; and when only nine years old his entreaties prevailed, and he went with his father as a cabin boy. As the boy had often expressed the wish for making his father's profession his own, his stern instructor determined he should be thoroughly trained in every branch of a seaman's life, and then, if he should be called to command, he would be qualified. Therefore he received no parental favors, and discipline was never relaxed because he was the captain's son.

For four years he served as cabin boy; then he became a sailor; and thus step by step, under various commanders, he worked his way upwards until 1832, when he was made captain of the brig "Oregon," which was owned by Samuel Train & Co., of Boston, and in their employ he made many voyages to Russia; and subsequently he sailed for Enoch Train & Co., William Ropes and others, until he had made twenty voyages to Russia, three to China, and to many other ports.

For fifty-one years his home was on the ocean. The icy blasts of the north, and the sultry calms of the equator were alike familiar, and every sea had been ploughed by him.

After this long term of service, and feeling that his life of anxiety and exposure was having its almost invariable effect, he left the restless ocean for his home on the land.

But to one of his active, restless temperament, quiet soon became irksome, and he was made one of the Port Wardens for the City of Boston in 1874, which position he filled with rare ability until his failing strength made it no longer possible; he resigned in November, 1886.

He was a vigorous, self-made, self-reliant man; a strong reasoner, always ready "to lend a hand" to any one in distress. Everybody knew him, and for all he had kindly words. This cheerful temperament remained to the last. During the few hours he was confined to his room, his feeble, pain-racked body sent forth no words of complaint or despair; but he conversed as of old with his afflicted family until almost imperceptibly his spirit passed to that bourne from whence no traveller returns.

He died in the house in which he was born on December 5, 1886, aged seventy-nine.

Of the *one hundred* old-time captains this town has sent forth to battle with the winds and waves in the merchant service of the country, only one remains.

Capt. John Carter began his profession in the fishing fleet at the age of fourteen. He soon shipped on a merchant ship and was mate at twenty-two, and at twenty-seven he was promoted to a captaincy; he was almost constantly afloat, either on the waters of the Atlantic or the Pacific, until he was sixty-five years old, when he retired to his home and well earned rest. Like the two above mentioned, Capt. Carter's success was the result of patient industry and an undivided attention to his duties. May his kindly presence be long spared to us.

The training of the young men in former years was

not such as would be enjoyed by the youth of the present.

For example When the late Captain Leach was making his first voyage, they had reached the North Sea, and one morning when it was bitterly cold, the boy, came on deck with a pair of mittens on, which his good mother had made for him.

"Tom," said his father, "what are those things on your hands? let me see them;" and holding them in a contemptuous manner, he exclaimed, "Tom, 'aint those nice things for a sailor!" and tossing them into the sea he added, "don't you ever let me see you with anything on your hands."

All through his sea-faring experience of fifty years his hands knew no coverings.

Another instance of the severe training of our ancestors may be mentioned. During the Revolutionary War, young Lee, was making his first voyage with his father, whose vessel was being chased, and the shot, becoming unpleasantly abundant in the vicinity of the quarter-deck, the boy became nervous, which the father observed, and seizing him by the collar with a ropes' end belabored him soundly, exclaiming, "I will teach you to dodge the balls of your country's enemy."

LONGEVITY IN MANCHESTER.—It is often said the people of the present do not live to so great an age as the earlier generations did; but statistics prove the duration of life is increasing as our civilization becomes older.

There are no records of the deaths in this town prior to 1749; but from that time to 1800, a period of fifty-one years, we find but thirty-two who had reached the age of eighty and upwards.

From 1800 to 1850 we find seventy-one; although no record appears to have been kept from 1809 to 1821.

And from 1850 to 1887, a period of only thirty-seven years, we find no less than one hundred and thirteen.

And Mrs. Lucy A. Roberts, who died in 1881, reached the remarkable age of one hundred and three years and ten months.

VALUATION.—The financial conditon of Manchester appears unusually good, the total valuation being over $5,000,000; and the rate of taxation $4.40 on $1000

Manchester has not produced any men who have won distinction in the literary or scientific or political world, but her people have always been patriotic, law-abiding and honest in their dealings.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

MAJOR ISRAEL FORSTER.

Major Israel Forster was born in Manchester May [illegible] 1779. Having acquired the rudiments of his education in the schools of the town, he was sent to Phillips Academy, Andover, where he mastered the higher branches of an English education, and returned to his native village with no little reputation as a young man of culture. The advantages of which the people were not slow in appreciating; for in 1804 he was elected one of the selectmen, and was retained on that board for eighteen consecutive years; in all he served in that capacity nineteen years.

In 1808 he was chairman of the committee chosen by the town to draw a petition for the removal of the embargo.

Soon after his return from Andover, he looked about for some occupation, for he sprang from an enterprising race with whom idleness was unknown.

The grist-mills of that period were of the first importance in every community; those in town were getting old, and seeing that new ones would soon become a necessity, he purchased the Bennett mill property, demolished the old log structure, enlarged the pond, and, under the direction of two skillful mill-wrights, a new mill with all the improvements then known was soon completed. It proved a success, and a great convenience to the people. Adjoining this property he built a wharf, warehouses, and a large area of flakes along the sunny slope for the drying of fish. He also built the schooner "Hannah," secured interest in other vessels and engaged in the fishing business.

With his brother he built on the Merrimac a vessel for the Grand Bank trade, which was launched about the time the battle of Waterloo was fought, and that became the name of the schooner. Her arrival in Manchester was a gala day, for so large a vessel had never before belonged to the fishing fleet of the town. She was about one hundred tons.

It was an innate principle with Major Forster to do everything he undertook thoroughly, and to that end he spared no pains. This habit of his soon gained for him the reputation of curing fish better than his competitors, and vessels from Cape Cod and from Maine landed their fares at his wharf that he might prepare them for market. Thus his enterprise soon made the pretty bay about the mill a very busy place.

In 1809 he was made one of the committee for building the present Congregational Church. He took a great interest in the enterprise, and soon became the active member of that board; and to his habits of thoroughness and excellent taste we are largely indebted for the admirable structure that adorns the village.

He represented the town in the Legislatures of 1810 and 1836.

He always took an active interest in military matters, and was a major of the militia in 1812.

His residence in the centre of the village is an excellent example of architectural taste of the last century. It is now the summer-home of his grandson, George C. Leach, Esq., of Boston, who carefully pre-



Israel Forster



Yours respectfully
E. W. Leach

es every feature of the original structure, and tains the same colors with which it was first painted in 1804.

Major Forster closed his active and useful life on the 5th of April, 1862, at the age of eighty-four. He was first married to Hannah Lee, of Andover, who died in 1805. He afterward married Hannah, the daughter of Major Henry Story, of Manchester. He left five daughters, the eldest of whom, Mrs. Hannah L. Allen, of Boston, is the only survivor.

THE GENEALOGY OF THE FORSTER FAMILY.—*John Forster* came from Danvers to Manchester about 1684. He was a very prominent man in town affairs; was one of the selectmen for many years; was also town clerk and land surveyor; as such aided in the laying out of the common land. Among his children was

Israel Forster, who was a ship master, and removed to Marblehead, where he became a very successful merchant. He married Jane Stone, of Manchester, and died in 1818, at the age of eighty-six, leaving property to the amount of $100,000. His son

Samuel Forster was also a ship master. He made his home in Manchester, where he married Bethia Bennett. He died about the close of the Revolution, leaving three sons and five daughters, and property to the amount of $27,000. *Israel Forster*, the subject of this sketch, was his youngest son.

DR. EZEKIEL W. LEACH.

Dr. Ezekiel W. Leach was born in Manchester July 1, 1809. The foundation of his education was laid in the public schools. Under the tutelage of Rev. Samuel M. Emerson, the village pastor, he studied the classics with such success that at the age of fifteen his instructor declared him fitted for college. Soon after a horse and chaise was hired, his trunk strapped between the springs, the boy bade adieu to home and all its attraction, and commenced his journey to Amherst. The good pastor, wishing to make the advent of his pupil into the busy world as pleasant and profitable as possible, managed to stop at the cheerful homes of his relatives and clerical friends where he and his youthful charge were most kindly received and hospitably cared for; and not a few of the acquaintances then made ripened into life-long friendships.

Arriving at Amherst he passed a most satisfactory examination, and was admitted to the college September, 1824; being a good scholar and of industrious habits he soon gained an excellent standing, and at the end of the first year was a prize speaker.

He continued to advance in scholarship until the morning of July 4, 1828, when, chancing to take up a newspaper, he read, with great surprise and distress, a notice of his father's death at sea some twelve days before; the poor boy was overwhelmed with grief. His great love for his mother, now his only parent, caused him to abandon all and hurry to her side; and this decision was strengthened by his health, which, never good, had shown a marked decline during the last year; and prudence would seem to dictate a period of rest before entering upon the study of his chosen profession.

The fall and winter were spent in Manchester, where he taught a private school and assisted his mother in the care of her estate.

On the 4th of July, 1830, he delivered an oration before the people of the town, and aided in the establishment of the Manchester Lyceum, which may be considered the foundation of the present Public Library. He delivered the introductory and several subsequent lectures.

In the autumn he went to Boston and began the study of medicine in the office of Dr. George S. Shattuck, where he labored most diligently; but the cold and damp atmosphere of the dissecting room proved too much for his feeble constitution.

A long sickness and utter helplessness followed, and it was a year later before he recovered strength enough to embark from Boston on the ship "Forum," Captain Richard Trask, of Manchester, bound for Marseilles.

He reached home the following year, much strengthened, and at once resumed his studies, and received his medical degree in February, 1835.

In the following June he married Miss Charlotte Forster, daughter of Major Israel Forster, of Manchester.

In the autumn he began the practice of medicine in Boston. Dr. Leach, who, from boyhood, was religiously inclined, was baptized by the Rev. Baron Stowe, and united with his church in February, 1836. He was very active in church and educational matters, and held important offices in several organizations of this character.

He served as one of the Representatives of Boston in the Legislatures of 1839 and '40; was elected for '41, but from illness he was obliged to resign.

His feeble constitution could not endure the labor he imposed upon himself; and in October, 1841, he again sought recuperation from the ocean, and sailed from Boston in the brig "Havre," Captain James Allen, of Manchester, bound for Savannah. But the climate of the South did not benefit him; in his own pathetic words, "daily we gather hope, and daily meet disappointment—pain is still my constant companion."

When the brig had taken in her cargo of cotton she cleared for Havre, and the doctor accompanied her; but he continued to become weaker, and when ten days from their destination, the spirit passed gently to the better world, where sickness and pain are unknown. Consumption had done its work, and the sea received his body.

Soon after his father's death he wrote the following:

"N[illegible] neatly graven stone,
Th[illegible] from the deep blue sea;
Th[illegible] unmarked, unknown,
Thy name and our hearts, thy tablet memory."

On a beautiful monument erected to his memory by his son, in the family burial-ground at Manchester, this verse is inscribed.

He died March 2, 1842, in the thirty-third year of his age, leaving a wife and two children.

To the people of his native town the news of his death was received with the deepest regret; his kindly ways and warm sympathies had won for him many friends, and his labors in behalf of the public were not forgotten. He found the records of the town detached, unfiled papers, and many had been lost. To collect in a volume the contents of these scattered papers, and to supply the gaps before it was too late was the task to which he applied himself, without hope of reward, and which he accomplished. To him the town is indebted for this great service.

During his residence in Boston he had endeared himself to a host of friends who deeply felt his loss. Of him the *Boston Atlas* said, "He was an accomplished gentleman, a skillful physician, a warm-hearted and faithful friend." His industry and familiarity with the historical records of the State rendered him a very useful member of the Legislature.

THE GENEALOGY OF THE LEACH FAMILY.

Lawrence Leach came to Salem from Devons, England, in 1628, with his wife and two children. His son, *Robert Leach*, came to Manchester and settled in the Plains in 1640. His home yet remains in the family. He was a proprietor of the "Common lands," and died in 1687, leaving two children; his eldest son,

Samuel Leach, was born in 1655; he was one of the selectmen in 1680 and '84, and on the commission for dividing the "common lands." In 1691 he was one of the committee for building the new meeting-house. He died in 1696, leaving five children.

Richard Leach was born in 1690; was for a number of years one of the selectmen. He built the schoolhouse in 1723, and died in 1759, leaving seven children.

Benjamin Leach was born in 1723; he was a shipmaster, and died at sea in 1757, leaving four children.

Ezekiel Leach was born in 1755; was in the army of the Revolution, took part in the battle of Princeton and in several other engagements. Impaired health caused him to enter the Navy, where he soon rose to the rank of lieutenant and gained a reputation for gallantry. Upon the establishment of peace he engaged in mercantile pursuits. He died in 1821, leaving eight children.

Thomas Leach was born in 1780; he was a shipmaster, was owner in the brig "Jones" and in the "Statesman," both of Boston. While making a voyage from Havana to Hamburg in the latter vessel, in 1828 he died. He had been one of the selectmen in 1826 and '27. He left nine children.

Ezekiel W. Leach, M.D., the subject of this sketch, was the second son of Thomas. Of the doctor's children only two survived him, and they are now living; they are *George C. Leach*, president of the People's National Bank, Boston, and *Mrs. Helen F. Hooper*, of New York.

CHAPTER CV.

GLOUCESTER.

BY R. EDDY, D.D.

Settlement—Growth—City Government.

In preparing the following sketch of the history of this ancient town, the writer has drawn very largely from the "History of Gloucester," by the late Hon. John J. Babson, published twenty-seven years ago. Of course, in noticing events which have transpired since the time Mr. Babson's valuable book was issued, other sources of information have been sought; but the industry of that accurate writer in gleaning the field of fact covered by the period embraced in his pages, leaves little to be discovered by others, and shuts up all who may succeed him as narrators of the history of the Cape or any portion of it, to the use of what he then presented to the public. The publication of "Champlain's Voyages," put into English since the date of the completion of Mr. Babson's history, and the different light which some recent discoveries throw upon a few of the events as narrated by Mr. Babson, constitute about the only deviations made from his narrative, whose general correctness is, and will always remain, a fitting monument to his accuracy and integrity in dealing with the facts and traditions of a locality and people whom he loved and served so well. The citizens of Gloucester may well be grateful that one of their own number reduced from oblivion and put in such orderly array, the story of the settlement and progress of the town, and the laboriously obtained genealogical information which is so valuable a feature of the pages of his history.

The original town of Gloucester included in its territorial limits what is now the town of Rockport, the whole area forming what is known as Cape Ann. Its northern boundary was Ipswich Bay, its eastern the Atlantic Ocean, its southern Massachusetts Bay, and its western the towns of Manchester and Essex.

Its extreme length was about nine miles; its width varied from four to six miles. What is commonly called Annisquam River, but which is in reality an arm of the sea extending from Ipswich Bay, first in a southwesterly course and then southeasterly, about four miles towards Gloucester harbor, from which it is separated by a narrow neck of land, but through

which, for conveniences of navigation, a canal was cut, about 1644, divided the territory into two nearly equal parts.

The surface of the Cape is, for the most part, very uneven, and now presents to the beholder a succession of bald, rocky hills, bold ledges of granite, with many acres covered with boulders of various sizes and some curious shapes. When first discovered by the whites it was, as we shall see from Champlain's account, covered also, wherever there was sufficient soil between the rocks, with a fine growth of various kinds of wood which not only served the settlers with material for their dwellings, ships and fuel, but also furnished a profitable commodity for exportation. Mr. Babson, in his history of the town, notes that "a stray leaf from an old account-book reveals the fact that in about three weeks, in 1711, over five hundred cords of wharf wood were shipped to one firm in Boston." Wherever the soil is cleared it is found to be strong and fertile, well-suited for the rapid growth and sure harvest of the average agricultural products of New England. The chief botanical novelty of the Cape is the *Magnolia glauca*, not found as a native growth elsewhere in Massachusetts. It grows to the height of ten feet in this locality, and yields a beautiful fragrant flower through nearly the whole of the warm season.

The highest elevation of land is called Thompson's Mountain, situated near the western border of the town, and elevated two hundred and fifty-five feet above the level of the sea. Its summit affords an extensive prospect of land and ocean. Pigeon Hill, on the northeasterly part of the Cape, is the first land which the mariner sees as he approaches the coast from the east.

The principal harbor of Gloucester is on the south side of the town, and is formed by Eastern Point, which extends with unequal width about three miles in a southwesterly direction, and affords on its side towards the land safe anchorage and shelter for hundreds of vessels approaching the town from Massachusetts Bay. The harbor on the Ipswich Bay, or northerly side of the town, is at Annisquam. The tradition, as mentioned by Mr. Babson, that the Indians in giving that name to the locality, compounded it from English *Anne*, the name of the Cape, and *Squam*, the Indian for harbor, is worthless, since it would show that the Indian had no name for it till about the time that he left the territory, and because, also, *harbor* is not the signification of the word *Squam*. The earliest mention of the name is on Wood's Map, 1634, where it is spelled *Wonasquom;* in Winthrop's Journal, under date 1635, it is spelled *Anasquam;* and in Josselyn's "Account of Two Voyages to New England," the first commenced in 1638, it is spelled *Wonasquam*. These varieties in spelling may be considered as simply so many different ways of attempting to express by English letters the sound of the Indian word. What does the word mean? The diversity of answer is almost equal to the diversity of spelling. James Davis, Esq., a native of Annisquam Village, in his poem entitled "Pleasant Water," says in an appended note: "That it may well be translated pleasant water would appear from the following: In Colton's 'Indian Vocabulary,' many of the names begin with such prefixes as 'Winne,' 'Wonne,' 'Wenne,' and all words so beginning have an agreeable, pleasant signification. Thus, on page 163, the name 'Winne tahansha' is said to mean a *pleasant laughter*, and on page 173 'Wonnohquot' is said to mean *pleasant weather*. . . . It is difficult to find authority for translating the Indian word Squam by the word water. I believe the word does not occur in Cotton's 'Indian Vocabulary,' before referred to. The fact that it was so frequently applied to bodies of water and lands bordering on the water, as in New Jersey and New Hampshire, would seem to show pretty conclusively that such must have been its meaning. . . . A gentleman, said to be good authority in such matters, says that Squam means *broken water;* so Wonne Squam would mean 'beautiful broken water,' referring, perhaps, to the breakers on the bar; and Squam Beach, in New Jersey, means 'broken or breaking water beach.'" The Hon. J. Hammond Trumbull, LL.D., the only person living, it is said, who can read Eliot's Indian Bible, favors the writer with the following from his MS. notes on Indian names in Massachusetts: "The name is certainly derived from *wanashque-ompsk*, 'the top (or 'the extreme point') of the rock.' Eliot, in Ezek. 26: 14, has this name, with the locative suffix, *wanashquompskqut*, for "[at or to] the top of a rock;" but the prefix *literally* denotes the 'extreme point' or 'end' as well as the 'top' of. *With* the locative suffix, it survives as 'Squampscot.'" Dr. Trumbull adds that he has little doubt that *Wanashquompskqut* "originally belonged to the head-land of the Cape, and was transferred to the harbor and river." This would be very natural, especially if, as is probable, those who made the transfer had little or no knowledge of the significance of the name, and made more frequent use of the harbor and river than they did of the headland.

Incidentally, Mr. Babson mentions, without seeking to give the English equivalent, and probably as a mere matter of tradition, that the Indian name of Cape Ann was Wingaersheek. But Prof. Trumbull says that "Wingaersheek is not Indian," and that, if it is a corruption of an Indian name it is so much corrupted that conjectures as to its original sounds would be wasted; and Prof. E. N. Horsford, of Cambridge, Mass., who has given a good deal of attention to local names, says, "Wingaersheek is an undoubted corruption of the German name (Low Dutch) *Wyngaerts Heck*, which occurs on many maps of the period between 1630 and 1670; especially in Ogilby's America." *Wyngaerts Heck* is from Wyngaerten, and is the equivalent of what the North-men desig-

nated as Vineland. Since, as we shall soon see, grapes were the prominent fruit found by the first whites, so far as we know, who set foot on the Cape, their presence in greater or less abundance may very naturally have caused some of the discoverers to give to the Cape, or a portion of it, the name we are considering, as expressive of that fact.

Just when this part of the coast was first seen by white men is largely a matter of conjecture. Possibly Captain Bartholomew Gosnold, who made an unsuccessful attempt to plant a colony in New England (then called North Virginia) in 1602, sighted Cape Ann as he sailed from the coast of Maine to Vineyard Sound, where he tried in vain to induce several of his ship's company to attempt a permanent settlement. It is also matter of conjecture that Capt. Pring, another English explorer, came in view of Cape Ann, if indeed he did not land there, in 1603, as according to the ship's log, he, after leaving what Gosnold called "Savage Rock," (some point on the Maine coast where he had an interview with the natives), "bare into that great gulf which Capt. Gosnold overshot the year before, coasting, and finding people, on the north side thereof." But the first visit to the Cape on the part of Europeans, of which we have positive assurance, was made by Frenchmen.

The famous voyager, Samuel De Champlain, sighted Cape Ann, at its eastern extremity, on the 15th of July, 1604, and anchored near its shores before the morning of the following day. A little while after light a few Indians timidly approached them in a canoe, and then, retiring, set up a dance on the shore, indicating their friendly greeting of the strangers. Champlain was sent out to interview them; and providing himself with crayon and drawing paper he sought from them some geographical information; and by a generous distribution of knives and biscuits, was soon able to win their confidence, when he proceeded to exhibit his drawing of the bay to the north of the Cape. Seizing his offered crayon, the Indians proceeded to surprise him by the accuracy of their knowledge of the coast on either side of the Cape, by introducing into his sketch the location of the Merrimac River, hidden from his view by the intervention of Plum Island which stretches before its mouth; and by making an outline of Massachusetts Bay, to the south of the Cape. They then volunteered to him some valuable historical information. Placing six pebbles at equal distances, they made him understand that Massachusetts Bay was occupied by six tribes, governed by as many chiefs. The accuracy of this information is fully confirmed by the statement of the historian Cooke in, Superintendent of Indian Affairs in Massachusetts in 1656, who wrote in 1674: "Their chief sachem held dominion over many other petty governors, as those of Weechagaskas, Neponsit, Punkapaog, Nonantum, Nashaway, and some of the Nipmuck people, as far as Pokomtucke, as the old men of Massachusetts affirmed." The Cape Indians were also accurate in their drawing of the outline of Massachusetts Bay, as Champlain states that in sailing through its waters he "found all that the savages had described to me at Island Cape," "c Cap aux Isles." This, so far as any record informs us, was the first name given to the Cape by white men, and it is so designated by Champlain in other portions of his writings. The name was suggested by "these islands near the main land, full of wood of different kinds, as at Choüacoet [Saco], and all along the coast; and still another flat one, where there are breakers, and which extends a little farther out to sea than the others, on which there is no wood at all." The three wooded islands are now known as Straitsmouth, Thatcher, and Milk Islands, and the fourth was probably the ledge called "The Salvages."

Sailing half a league farther Champlain observed several savages on a rocky point, [probably Emons' Point]. "We anchored," he says "near a little island [Thatcher's Island] and sent our canoe with knives and cakes for the savages. From the large number of those we saw, we concluded that these places were better inhabited than the others we had seen." Their stay here was short, when they sailed into Massachusetts Bay, and after a brief landing near Noddle's Island, crossed over to Cape Cod, which from its white appearance they named "the White Cape,—" "le Cap Blanc." The following September they were again at Cape Ann, but encountering bad weather and fogs, were in despair of finding shelter, until Champlain bethought him of a harbor which he had noted on the map made while on the previous voyage, but which they did not then enter. At the mouth of this harbor, Gloucester Harbor, they anchored at night and in the morning sailed in. Sieur de Poutrincourt, commander of the Barque, landed with eight or ten of the company. What they saw and what their experiences were with the natives, Champlain thus describes:

"We saw some very fine grapes just ripe, Brazilian peas, [the New England bush-bean], pumpkins, squashes and very good roots [artichokes], which the savages cultivated, having a taste similar to that of chards. They made us presents of some of these, in exchange for little trifles which we gave them. They had already finished their harvest. We saw two hundred savages in this very pleasant place, and there are here a large number of very fine walnut trees, cypresses, sassafras, oaks, ashes and beeches. The chief of this place is named Quiouhamenee, who came to see us with a neighbor of his named Cohoüepech, whom we entertained sumptuously. Onemechin, chief of Choüacoet, came also to see us, to whom we gave a coat, which he, however, did not keep a long time, but made a present of it to another, since he was uneasy in it, and could not adapt himself to it. We also saw a savage here, who had so wounded himself in the foot, and lost so much blood, that he fell down in a swoon. Many others surround-

ed him, and sang some time before touching him. Afterwards they made some motions with their feet and hands, shook his head and breathed upon him, when he came to himself. Our surgeon dressed his wounds, when he went off in good spirits.

"The next day, as we were calking our shallop, Sieur de Poutrincourt in the woods noticed a number of savages who were going with the intention of doing us some mischief, to a little stream, where a neck connects with the mainland, at which our party were doing their washing. As I was walking along this neck, these savages noticed me; and in order to put a good face on it, since they saw that I had discovered them thus seasonably, they began to shout and dance, and then came towards me with their bows, arrows, quivers and other arms. And, inasmuch as there was a meadow between them and myself, I made a sign to them to dance again. This they did in a circle, putting all their arms in the middle. But they had hardly commenced when they observed Sieur de Poutrincourt in the wood with eight musketeers, which frightened them. Yet they did not stop until they had finished their dance, when they withdrew in all directions, fearing lest some unpleasant turn might be served them. We said nothing to them, however, and showed them only demonstrations of gladness. Then we returned to launch our shallop, and take our departure. They entreated us to wait a day, saying that more than two thousand of them would come to see us. But, unable to lose any time, we were unwilling to stay here longer. I am of opinion that their object was to surprise us. Some of the land was already cleared up, and they were constantly making clearings. Their mode of doing it is as follows: After cutting down the trees at the distance of three feet from the ground, they burn the branches upon the trunk, and then plant their corn between these stumps, in course of time tearing up also the roots. There are likewise fine meadows here, capable of supporting a large number of cattle. This harbor is very fine, containing water enough for vessels, and affording shelter from the weather behind the islands. It is in latitude forty-three degrees, and we gave it the name of Le Beauport," [the Beautiful Harbor]. "The last day of September we set out from Beauport."

We have no further account of visits from French explorers. Elsewhere Champlain says of the "savages from the Island Cape," that "they wear neither robes nor furs, except very rarely; moreover, their robes are made of grasses and hemp, scarcely covering the body, and coming down to the thighs. They have only the several parts covered with a small piece of leather; so likewise the women, with whom it comes down a little lower behind than with the men, all the rest of the body being naked. Whenever the women came to see us, they wore robes which were open in front. The men cut off the hair on the top of the head like those at the River Choüacoet. I saw, among other things, a girl with her hair very neatly dressed, with a skin colored red, and bordered on the upper part with little shell-beads. A part of her hair hung down behind the rest, being braided in various ways. These people paint the face red, black and yellow. They have scarcely any beard, and tear it out as fast as it grows. Their bodies are well proportioned. I cannot tell what government they have, but I think that in this respect they resemble their neighbors, who have none at all. They know not how to worship or pray; yet, like the other savages, they have some superstitions, which I shall describe in their place. As for weapons, they have pikes, clubs, bows and arrows. It would seem from their appearance that they have a good disposition, better than those of the North, but they are all in fact of no great worth. Even a slight intercourse with them gives you at once a knowledge of them. They are great thieves, and if once they cannot lay hold of anything with their hands they try to do so with their feet, as we have oftentimes learned by experience. I am of opinion that, if they had anything to exchange with us, they would not give themselves to thieving. They bartered away to us their bows, arrows and quivers, for pins and buttons; and if they had had anything else better they would have done the same with it. It is necessary to be on one's guard against this people, and live in a state of distrust of them, yet without letting them perceive it. They gave us a large quantity of tobacco, which they dry and then reduce to powder. When they eat Indian corn, they boil it in earthen pots, which they make in a way different from ours. They bray it also in wooden mortars and reduce it to flour, of which they make cakes, like the Indians of Peru." (Voyages of Samuel De Champlain, volume 2, pp. 70, 85, 111).

Ten years elapsed before the Cape again attracted the attention of the whites. In the spring of 1614 Captain John Smith, who had been distinguished in planting and sustaining the colony of Virginia, arrived on our coast with two ships and forty-five men and boys, with the intention of planting a colony in the North. While an experiment with this end in view was being made at the Island of Monhegan, on the coast of Maine, Captain Smith explored the coast from Penobscot Bay to Cape Cod, making a map of the territory visited and affixing names to its most prominent parts. To Cape Ann he gave the name Tragabigzanda, in honor of a Turkish lady of that name who had showed him great kindness while he was a prisoner in her country. And to the "three islands fronting the fair headland, Tragabigzanda" (Thatchers, Straitsmouth and Milk Islands) he gave the name of the "Three Turks' Heads," in memory of his slaying three Turkish champions in personal combat. To the whole portion of "North Virginia" explored by him he gave the name of "New England." On his return home, Prince Charles substitu-

ted for the name Tragabigzanda, that of his mother, Anne of Denmark, and from that time Cape Ann has been the name designating this important locality.

In 1623 some merchants and other gentlemen about Dorchester, England, organized a company, and despatched a small ship of fifty tons to the New England coast, to begin, in the prosecution of the fishing business, the establishment of a colony.

We have no means of knowing whether any particular spot, whereon to plant their colony, was in mind by the company when its ship left Dorchester. But arriving on the customary fishing-ground late in the season, and seeing no prospect of filling their ship, "the Master thought good to pass into Massachusetts Bay to try whether that would yield him any." He was successful, and having left fourteen men "in the country of Cape Ann," the vessel sailed for Spain. Concerning these pioneers we know not even their names. We only know that their ship returned the next year, and that the number of settlers was then increased to thirty-two, and that of the number two were appointed overseers of the business of the plantation; John Tylly of the fishing and Thomas Gardener of the planting. At the commencement of the third year, Roger Conant, who had settled at Nantasket, was selected by the Dorchester Company "for the management and government of all their affairs at Cape Ann." The Rev. John Lyford, a minister of the Established Church, expelled from the Plymouth Colony, was also invited by the company to settle at Cape Anne, as the minister of the new plantation. But at the close of the same year the company, having made a pecuniary failure of their experiment, sold their ships and abandoned the establishing of the colony. Nearly all the settlers returned to England. Conant and a few others resolved to stay and take charge of the property, but as it was manifest that Naumkeag, now Salem, was better adapted to agricultural pursuits, they removed to that place in 1626. Marks of the abandoned settlement at what is now known as Stage Fort, the Stage being the name of the spot used for landing fish, were observed three years later by a passenger in the ship "Talbot," which was anchored in the harbor a few days in June of that year, who says that he saw no English people, though there were signs of "buildings and plantation-work."

The permanent settlement of Gloucester, possibly began in 1631. The tradition is that Abraham Robinson, a son of the old pastor of the Pilgrims at Leyden, Rev. John Robinson, came with his mother and her family, to Plymouth, in 1630, and that the following year Robinson and a few others sailed over from Plymouth, and landing at Annisquam, were so well satisfied with the conveniences which it seemed to afford for the fishing business that they set up a fishing-stage, and made preparation for the accommodation of their families. There may be some doubt as to the paternity of Abraham Robinson, as no such name occurs in any list of children of the Rev. John Robinson, but that a person of that name settled on the Cape about 1631 there is good reason to believe. The Rev. Eli Forbes, in a sermon given in the First Parish Meeting-house, in 1792, quoted from what he called an "Ancient Manuscript," which is unfortunately lost, that there were settlers on the Cape as early as 1633, who "met and carried on the worship of God among themselves, read the word of God, prayed to Him and sung psalms." We may therefore safely take the last-mentioned date as fixing the time for permanent settlers.

In 1639 the General Court passed an "act for the encouragement of Mr. Maurice Thompson, merchant, and others, who intend to promote the fishing-trade," in which it was "ordered that a fishing-plantation should be begun at Cape Ann, and that the said Mr. Thompson should have places assigned for the building of houses, and stages, and other necessaries for that use; and shall have sufficient lands allowed for their occasions, both for their fishing and for keeping of cattle, and corn, etc.; and that such other fishermen as will join in the way of fishing, and inhabit there, shall have such lands and other liberties there as shall be needful and fit for their occasions." "Mr. Endicott, Mr. Humphrey, Mr. Winthrop, Jun., Mr. William Pierce and Joseph Grafton," or any three of them, were empowered by the court "to set out the said plantation and all lands and other accommodations to such as should be planted there; and none to be settled there but by their allowance." The General Court, also, for the encouragement of such settlers as would engage in this branch of industry, and in especial expectation that Mr. Thompson would establish the business, passed an act granting to fishing establishments certain privileges and exemptions. But Mr. Thompson did not take advantage of the legislation in his favor, except to erect a frame on a lot at the harbor. He is represented as having been a merchant in London, who was at one time engaged in the Canadian beaver-trade. As late as 1650, in a grant of land by the town authorities, the contingency of Mr. Thompson's coming is provided for. The town records, under date of 4th month, 1650, say: "Will Southmead hath given him that psell of land in the harbour upon which Mr. Tomson's frame stood; provided yt if Mr. Tomson or his agent shall demand it, that then upon compensation for the charges about it, this said grant is to be surrendered up."

At a General Court, October, 1641, the Deputy Governor, (Mr. Endicott), and Messrs. Downing and Hathorne, deputies from Salem, were appointed commissioners to view and settle the boundaries of Ipswich, Cape Ann, and Jeffries' Creek (now Manchester); and to dispose of all land and other things at Cape Ann. The commissioners subsequently ap-

pointed the following named eight men to manage the affairs of the plantation for 1642: William Stevens, Mr. Sadler, Obadiah Bruen, George Norton, William Addes, Thomas Milward, Mr. Fryer, and Walter Tybott. They probably had charge of all affairs, although most of the orders issued by them, relate to highways, trees, and timber. How many people were then residing on the Cape it is impossible to say. But about this time a large and influential accession was made to the population by the coming of Rev. Richard Blynman with several families from Plymouth. In May, 1642, the settlement was incorporated by the simple form then employed, and called Gloucester, from Gloucester in England, the native place of several of the settlers. How many came with Rev. Mr. Blynman cannot be ascertained, as no discrimination is made in the town records, between the earliest and later inhabitants. Mr. Babson gives the following list of persons who are believed to comprise all known to have been residents, or proprietors of the soil, from 1633 to the close of 1650.

William Addes.
Christopher Avery.
James Avery.
William Ash.
Thomas Ashley.
Isabel Babson.
James Babson.
Alexander Baker.
Richard Beeford.
George Blake.
Richard Blynman.
Obadiah Bruen.
John Bourne.
Thomas Bray.
Hugh Brown.
William Brown.
Hugh Calkin.
Thomas Chass.
Mr. Clark.
Matthew Coe.
John Collins.
Thomas Cornish.
John Coit, Sen.
John Coit, Jun.
William Cotton.
Clement Coldam.
Anthony Day.
William Dudbridge.
Osman Dutch.
William Evans.
Robert Elwell.
Sylvester Evelyth.
Henry Felch.
Mr. Fryer.
James Fogg.
John Gallope.
Charles Glover.
Stephen Glover.
William Haskell,
John Holgrave.
William Hough.
Zebulon Hill.
Samuel Haieward.
George Ingersoll.
Thomas Jones.
Thomas Judkin.
William Kenie.
John Kettle,
Nicholas Liston.
Andrew Lister.
John Luther.
Solomon Martin.
William Meades.
Thomas Milward.
George Norton.
Ralph Parker.
John Pearse,
Capt. Perkins.
Thomas Prince.
Hugh Pritchard.
Phenis Rider.
Abraham Robinson.
Edward Ronse.
Mr. Sadler.
Robert Sadler.
William Sargent.
Thomas Skellin.
James Smith.
Thomas Smith.
Morris Somes.
William Southmeade.
William Steveus.
Stephen Streeter.
John Studley.
Walter Tybbot.
Thomas Very.
William Vinson.
Thomas Wakley.
John Wakley.
Henry Walker.
William Wellman.
Philip Yondall.

Two-thirds of these eighty-two subsequently emigrated to other places, but the remainder continued to be citizens of Gloucester. Mr. Babson estimated that not more than ten of the names given above "are perpetuated by families now (1860) living in town, though descendants of several others in the female line are numerous." During the next forty years the population was increased by the coming of eighty-seven persons from various localities, about fifty of whom became settlers. "Although the date of the first settlement of Gloucester cannot be ascertained, it appears probable that Felch, Streeter, Thomas Smith, Baker and Cotton were here before the incorporation of the town, and were located at Done Fudging (the spot where, by means of the canal before referred to the waters of Massachusetts Bay were united to the waters of Ipswich Bay) that Ashley, Milward, Liston, Luther, and perhaps two or three others, were also here before that date, and had lots at the harbor. These persons may have been here in the employment of Mr. Thomson; or they, or some of them, may have been companions of Robinson in the removal from the other side of the Bay, if such removal actually took place. Of the whole number who were here before 1651, it appears that about thirty had their habitations at the harbor, and that nineteen of these lived on the north border of the Harbor Cove; five had lots at Vinson's Cove; three resided on Duncan's Point, between the two Coves; and two lived on the south-east side of Governor's Hill. About forty of the first settlers had houses on the "neck of house-lots," by which term they usually designated that portion of the territory stretching north from Governor's Hill, and lying between Annisquam River and Mill River. Of the rest of these settlers, there is nothing to indicate the place of residence. The first settlers, or those before 1651, were not all here at one time. The records show frequent changes in the ownership of lots; and other circumstances give evidence that many of the persons who lived in town before that date, were only brief sojourners. Of all the first comers, not more than thirty became permanent citizens of the town. Before 1651, it is not certain that there was a single family residing in any part of the town than the two sections above named, excepting one or two on the easterly side of Mill River; but soon after that year, settlers are found near Little Good Harbor, at Walker's Creek, at Little River, at Fresh-water Cove, and at Annisquam. A few years later, inhabitants gathered around the Coves on the north side of the Cape; and finally, about the end of the century, the head of the Cape itself received a few permanent occupants; Kettle Cove had become the abode of one family or more; and no considerable district of the town now remained unoccupied to attract the attention of new comers.

"The spots selected by most of the early settlers for their homes were chosen with reference to the fitness of the soil for agricultural purposes; and such is the rugged and broken character of the territory, that even the small number of people that then composed its population covered almost every acre of land that could be easily cultivated. Nearly all of the first settlers had land in several different places. Besides their home lots, those who resided at the Harbor had grants at 'Fisherman's Field;' and those living on the neck of house-lots had them on 'Planter's Neck, between Lobster Cove and the sea.' Possessing thus different lots in widely separated places, without, in many instances, any mention of a house, the exact spot on which every settler located himself cannot be ascertained. Many of them had grants

which were not recorded; and of those which are recorded, a few are stated to have been made by the Commissioners of the General Court; some are entered simply as given, some as purchases, and some as possessions. Planter's Neck, where lots were laid out and numbered, was at Annisquam,—the spot which tradition has always reported to have been the first to receive permanent occupants. Abraham Robinson and his companions may have set up their fishery there, as early mention is made of a 'stage' at that place; but no evidence exists now to show that any of the earliest families resided there. Robinson owned land and a house, the location of which no one can tell; but in it, says the record, 'he lived and died,'—the first of the early settlers that passed away to the great congregation of the dead." (*Babson's History*, pp. 183-185.)

The population of Gloucester at different periods, has been:

1704.	By estimate	700
1755.	" "	2745
1765.	" Colonial Census	3763
1775.	" estimate	4945
1790.	" U. S. Census	5317
1800.	" "	5313
1810.	" "	5943
1820.	" "	6384
1830.	" "	7510
1840.	" "	6350

The falling off in 1840 is accounted for in the loss of 2650 residents of the territory set off to form the town of Rockport. This portion of the Cape, although the latest settled part of the territory, was far in advance of other portions in its growth during the first forty years of the present century. The interest and convenience of the people seemed to demand a separation several years before it was accomplished. The subject was brought into town meeting in 1818, and a committee was chosen to consider it, but, failing to agree, nothing further was attempted till 1827, when, from inability to agree among themselves, the matter ended as before. The act for the incorporation of the town of Rockport passed both branches of the Legislature, and received the approval of the Governor on the same day, the 27th of February, 1840. The territory set off to the new town included all of the Fifth Parish and that portion of the Third adjoining it, situated on the northeast end of the Cape. It contained about two-sevenths of the property of the old town, and about one-fourth of the inhabitants.

The population of Gloucester since the division has been:

18[illegible]	By U. S. Census	7786
18[illegible]	" "	10,904
18[illegible]	" "	15,389
[illegible]	" "	14,969

At the May town-meeting in 1871 the citizens by a vote of 261 to 82, voted to petition the Legislature for a city charter. The petition was granted, and a charter submitted to the people at a town-meeting in the summer of the same year, was rejected; yeas, 249; nays, 477. A second attempt for a city charter grew from a special town-meeting held on the 20th of February, 1873, at which, by a vote of 394 against 48, it was decided to petition the Legislature therefor. A charter was granted, and on the 15th of May, it was accepted by 689 yeas, against 353 nays. The city government went into operation January 1, 1874, with Hon. Robert R. Fears, mayor; who served two years. His successors have been, Allan Rogers, 1876-77; J. Franklin Dyer, M.D., 1878; William Williams, 1879; Joseph Garland, M.D., 1880-81; William Williams, 1882; William H. Wonson (3d), 1883-84; John S. Parsons, 1885-86; David I. Robinson, 1887.

There has been but one city clerk, John J. Somes, elected in 1874. The city treasurers have been John Corliss, elected in 1874; Francis Bennett, elected 1875; Edward Dolliver, elected 1879.

CHAPTER CVI.

GLOUCESTER—(*Continued*).

Ecclesiastical Affairs.

The First Parish.—As has been previously noted, the Dorchester Company, in attempting to establish themselves permanently at Gloucester, provided a minister for the settlement, the Rev. John Lyford, in 1625. On the breaking up of the settlement the following Spring, he went to Virginia, where he died. Rev. Mr. Forbes, in his sermon preached in September, 1792, already cited, says of the successful attempt at permanent occupancy in 1633, that "the first settlers of Cape Ann were early solicitous to set up and maintain the public worship of God among them. Though they were few in numbers and strangers in the land, yet, like Abraham, as soon as they pitched their tent, they set up an altar;—*i. e.*, they agreed on a place where they might meet for the public worship of God on the Sabbath." "So long ago as in 1633 the first settlers of this town consecrated a house for public worship." The town records are silent about the erection or location of this first meeting-house, although they show that there was a place of worship. Thomas Lechford, who was in Boston in 1639, but soon returned to England, where he published a book, says in it: "At Cape Ann, where fishing is set forward, and some stages builded, there one Master Rashley is chaplain." Of him but little is known, except that he was at one time member of the church in Boston, and subsequently was officiating as minister at Bishop-Stoke, England. Probably his stay at Gloucester was brief.

The organization of a church was the work of Rev. Richard Blynman, in 1642. It was the nine-

teenth, in the order of formation, in Massachusetts Colony. Aside from the fact of its organization, it has no recorded history for about sixty years. Mr. Blynman was in Gloucester, and probably pastor of the church, until early in 1650, when, with many who were associated with him in locating in Gloucester in 1642, he settled in New London, Connecticut. Mr. Babson quotes from "an order passed for assigning a piece of land for a burial-ground, Feburary 8, 1644," "that, at the end of these lots (viz., Mr. Blynman's, Thomas Jones's, Thomas Kent's and Tho. Skillings's, betwixt and the old meeting-house place) shall be half an acre laid out for a common burial-place." "This language," Mr. Babson adds, "will perhaps justify an inference that, even at this early period, the second meeting-house had been built, and that the one mentioned in the order was erected by earlier inhabitants than Mr. Blynman and his company. In a grant of land to Sylvester Eveleth, recorded next after a grant bearing date December, 1648, allusion is made to his house on Meeting Hill; and in April, 1653, it is recorded that Christopher Avery and John Collins measured the Meeting-house plain, and found it '39 rods from the creek and William Evans's fence; and from the northwest corner of Goodman Wakley's fence to Mr. Perkins's fence, 20 and a half rods; and from Mr. Perkins's garden fence over straight east to Goodman Wakley's fence, 17 1-2 rods.' From these allusions, and other notices of the Meeting-House plain of subsequent date, it appears probable that a house of worship was erected soon after the incorporation of the town, on or near the spot occupied by three successive buildings for this purpose, about half a mile north of the place indicated as the site of the first one." (History, pp. 191, 192.)

Mr. Blynman's departure from town, accompanied by so many of the former inhabitants, greatly weakened the ability of the church to procure another pastor; but the selectmen gave the subject immediate attention, and by an order passed December 30, 1649, provided "that 10 acres of upland shall be reserved, and laide out, for a teaching Elder, near to the place of the old meeting-house, upon the plaine lying neere to the Swampe betweene the harbor & the plantation; and soe to be reserved unto the use of teaching Elders unto all posteritie. Alsoe half an acre of Upland reserved for the Towne to build an house upon for the use of teachinge Elders under the meeting-house where now it stands. Likewise 10 acres of fresh marsh in the marsh yt lyeth above the head of Little River." A year later William Perkins removed from Weymouth to Gloucester, and became the "teaching elder." He remained five years, when he moved to Topsfield, where he died in 1682. How long the church remained without spiritual leadership is unknown, but the probabilities are that they soon arranged to avail themselves of such religious assistance as the most gifted of their own laymen could afford. The court records show a litigation between two of these in March, 1658. Thomas Millet then appeared as plaintif in an action against William Stevens "for withholding a wrighting of the subscription of the inhabitants of Gloster for payment of their several sums to Mr. Millett for his labours among them, & his own proportion included, which is 50 shillings." Mr. Babson says: "The jury gave their verdict in favor of the plaintiff; but no permanent estrangement between the two brethren was produced, as may be inferred from their appointment by the court, in June, 1659, to exercise their gifts jointly for the edification of the inhabitants, who were ordered to meet in one place together to attend the public worship of God on the Lord's Day, and so to continue till Mr. Emerson should be here or come to settle." (History, p. 195.)

Rev. John Emerson, here alluded to, was negotiating with the town with reference to his settlement, as early as 1659, but does not appear to have taken the pastorate till 1661. In July of that year his salary was fixed at sixty pounds per annum as long as he should serve the church; and the salary was to be paid "in Indian corn, pease, barley, fish, mackerel, beef, or pork." Eleven years later the town voted that one-eighth of the salary should be paid in money. In 1673 the town voted him eighty pounds with which to provide himself a house to dwell in. Possibly disputes arose in regard to the commodities which he received as the largest part of his salary, for in 1684 the town appointed John Fitch, Thomas Judkin and Joseph Allen "to judge of any pay brought to Mr. Emerson for his salary, whether it be merchantable, and fit to pass from man to man." Mr. Emerson graduated at Harvard College in 1656, was ordained at Gloucester in October, 1663, and continued pastor until his death, December 2, 1700, aged seventy-five years. All that is known to have been furnished by his pen, is a letter preserved in Cotton Mather's Magnalia, vol. ii., concerning "Many wonderful and surprising things, which happened in the town of Gloucester, in the year 1692." This was the period of the witchcraft excitement, a delusion which obscured the reason of some of the most eminent men in the colony. There were no executions of the inhabitants of Gloucester, though several were accused and imprisoned. Abigal Somes was charged with being a witch, and was confined in Boston jail from May, 1692, to January, 1693. Ann, wife of Captain William Dolliver, was also accused, but did not become a victim. Four other women were sent to prison on the evidence of accusers from other places. Mr. Emerson makes no mention of these in the letter referred to, but gives a detailed account of several marvelous manœuvres of certain spectral visitors and disturbers of the peace. He tells that in the midsummer of 1692, Ebenezer Bapson [Babson], with the rest of his family heard noises as if persons were running past his house at night; and that coming

home late one night, he saw two men come out of his door and run into the corn. Getting his gun, he started in pursuit, when he came upon the men behind a log, whence they ran into the swamp, saying to each other, "The man of the house is come now, else we might have taken the house." Whereupon Babson got his people up and they went with all speed to a garrison near by. Not many nights after, Babson, John Brown and the rest of the men in the garrison saw, within gun-shot of the garrison, half a dozen men, whom they pursued and attempted to shoot, but the guns missed fire. Three of the number reappearing, Babson discharged his gun at them, when they all fell; but on going to the place, they all suddenly rose up and ran in different directions. Babson saw one of them getting over the fence, and shooting at him, saw him fall off the fence to the ground, but when he came to the spot he could not find him. So they all made diligent search, and while searching "they heard a great discoursing in the swamp, but could not understand what they said; for they spoke in an *unknown tongue*." As Babson went to the harbor the next day, to carry the news, he heard a bullet "whiss close to his ear," and turning about, discovered four men coming towards him; whereupon he went into the bushes, fired at them and then ran away. Not long after this Richard Dolliver and Benjamin Ellary [Ellery], "creeping down a hill on discovery," saw several men come out of an orchard and strike with a stick upon John Row's deserted house, the noise of which was heard by others at a considerable distance. Ellery counted eleven persons, and Dolliver shot into their midst, where they stood thickest, and "immediately they dispersed, and were quickly gone out of sight." The people becoming greatly alarmed, sent abroad for help, and were answered by Major Appleton, who sent sixty men from Ipswich. John Day being in company with Ipswich and Gloucester forces at a garrison two and a half miles from town, word was brought that guns were being discharged in a swamp not far from the garrison, whereupon he and others ran to discover what they could, when they saw "a man with a blue shirt and bushy black hair run out of the swamp and into the woods." Day pursued, trying to get a shot at him, but the woods were so thick that he could not, and the man soon disappeared. When search was made for his track none could be found, "though it were a low miry place that he ran over." A week later Babson, being in the woods looking for his cattle, saw three men standing on a point of rocks overlooking the sea. Creeping among the bushes till he was within forty yards of them, he aimed his gun at them and snapped it, but it missed fire, "and so it did above a dozen times, till they all came up towards him, walking at a slow pace, one of them having a gun on his back." They took no notice of him, "than just to give him a *look*, though he snapt his gun at them all the while they walked toward him, and by him: neither did they quicken their pace at all, but went into a parcel of bushes, and he saw them no more." All this and more Mr. Emerson relates in detail, and adds that "the *devil* and his agents were the cause of all the molestation which at this time befel the town."

During Mr. Emerson's ministry a new meeting-house was erected, though it is probable that it was not occupied till after his decease. In town-meeting, the 23d of December, 1697, there "was discourse concerning a new meeting-house of forty foot square, and sixteen foot stud between joynts." The erection of the building was committed to Benjamin Haskell, John Parsons and Samuel Sargent. There was evidently delay, as in January, 1699, the committee were empowered to order the dimensions of the building, and the selectmen to assess the first tax towards its cost. Not long after this "the inhabitants did pass an act, that the meeting-house which is now to be erected should be plaistered with lime and hair." Not till May, 1700, was the frame ready to be raised. To accomplish this, the town voted "to provide vitls and drink for as many men as the selectmen should think convenient for the raising." In September the town voted that room should be left in the meeting-house for pews; that the "draught of seats to be built should be after the form of three front seats, as was showed in the meeting-house at the meeting; and that the women should be seated in the east gallery." And the final action of the town concerning it was the appointment of the two deacons and three other prominent citizens, to seat the people in the new house of worship. The cost of this structure was £253. It was placed on Meeting-house Green, not far from the old building, and was the third house of worship, as far as known, that had been built on this spot.

After two unsuccessful attempts to settle a successor to Mr. Emerson, Rev. John White was chosen, and entered on his duties in September, 1702. His pastorate extended through more than fifty years, being terminated by his death, in 1760. By the terms of his settlement his salary was assured at sixty-five pounds for the first year, seventy pounds for the second and third years, and eighty pounds per year during the remainder of his ministry. The church at that time had seventy members, twenty-one of whom were males. About this time it adopted the platform of discipline put forth by the Synod of Cambridge, in 1649, and entered into the following covenant:

"We do give ourselves up to that God whose name alone is Jehovah,—Father, Son, and Spirit,—as the only true and living God; and unto our Lord Jesus Christ, as our only redeemer and Saviour; as the only Prophet, Priest, and King over our souls, and only Mediator of the Covenant of grace; engaging our hearts unto this God in Christ, by the help of his spirit of grace, to cleave unto him as our God and chief good; and unto Jesus Christ, as our Mediator

by faith, in a way of gospel obedience, as becometh his covenant people forever.

"We do also give up our offspring unto God in Jesus Christ; avouching the Lord to be our God and the God of our children, and ourselves, with our children, to be his people; humbly adoring the grace of God in Christ Jesus, that we and our children may be looked upon as the Lord's. We do also give up ourselves one to another in the Lord, according to the will of God, to walk together as a church of Christ in all the ways of his worship and service, according to the rules of the word of God; promising in brotherly love faithfully to watch over one another's souls, and to submit ourselves to the discipline and government of Christ in his church; and duly to attend the seals and censures, and whatever ordinances Christ hath commanded to be observed by his people, according to the order of the gospel, so far as the Lord hath or shall reveal himself unto us."

In 1716 a new parish was set off for the accommodation of the western part of the town, and in 1728 another was granted to meet the convenience of the people on the north side of the Cape. After this last date the affairs of the First Parish ceased to be managed in town-meetings. In 1738, the population having largely increased at the Harbor, seven members of the First Parish residing there—viz., Epes Sargent, Andrew Robinson, Thomas Sanders, Nathaniel Ellery, William Ellery, Philemon Warren, Jr., and William Parsons—erected a new meeting-house, and Mr. White immediately commenced preaching in it. To reconcile those who resided in the north part of the parish to the removal of public religious services a mile distant from the old location, they were, in 1742, set off and became the Fourth Parish. Mr. White's health failing in 1750, Rev. Samuel Chandler was chosen as his colleague. In 1753 the inhabitants of Sandy Bay were set off, and became the Fifth Parish. Mr. Chandler continued pastor of the First Parish after the death of Mr. White until his own decease, in March, 1775. Mr. Babson says that his declining days "were rendered painful and wearisome by long sickness and suffering; but no bodily infirmity or distress could move him to sorrow or repine, while his soul was filled with the deepest anxiety and alarm on account of the danger of fearful magnitude that threatened the eternal welfare of his beloved flock. A new teacher had come to his people, and, with plausible arguments and captivating eloquence, was 'wresting and torturing the word of God,' and, in opposition to the venerable authority of ancient interpretation and universal belief, was proclaiming the final salvation of the human race as a doctrine of the Holy Scriptures. The sick pastor could not send forth from the pulpit a voice of warning against the dangerous heresy; but he called to his brethren in the ministry to come and sound the alarm, and then, as a last effort of his concern for the people of his charge, sent to his pulpit to be read, a few weeks before his death, a short address, in which he admonished them, as one drawing near the eternal world, to take heed lest they should be drawn away with error, and to beware of the false prophet, who, if it were possible, would deceive the very elect."

The warning here given was against the efforts of Rev. John Murray, Universalist, concerning whose labors in Gloucester we shall speak farther on. The First Parish, in view of the dissensions growing up in their own ranks, and of the threatening aspect of political affairs, deferred the election of Mr. Chandler's successor till the spring of 1776, when they made choice of Rev. Eli Forbes, who was installed on the 5th of June. He remained in charge till December, 1804, when his pastorate was terminated by his death. In the summer of 1805 Rev. Perez Lincoln was settled as pastor, on a salary of one thousand dollars, and was ordained on the 7th of August. His health failed him in 1810, and in June of the following year he died of consumption. For four years thereafter the pulpit was supplied by various ministers, but in the summer of 1815 Rev. Levi Hartshorn was called to the pastorate, accepted and was ordained in October. His ministry, like that of his predecessor, was soon terminated by his death. Being on a visit to his father, in September, 1819, he was taken with typhus fever, of which he died on the 27th of that month.

For nearly six years the parish was without a settled minister, though several attempts were made to unite the church and parish in the choice of one; but the Unitarian controversy, which had separated many New England parishes from their church relations, was making itself felt in Gloucester and beginning its disintegrating work. The pulpit was not, however, without preachers. Many supplied, and Revs. Albert Barnes, Andrew Bigelow and Orville Dewey each remained several months. Rev. Hosea Hildreth was chosen pastor in the summer of 1825, and was ordained on the 3d of August. Mr. Hildreth had been for many years a teacher in Phillips Academy, Exeter, N. H., and he brought to his ministerial work many rare gifts and an earnest, consecrated spirit; but changes in theological thought prevented that union in the parish which had once made it strong and vigorous. Some of the members were drawn off to the Baptist and Methodist congregations, and seven members of the church, complaining that the preaching of their pastor was not sufficiently explicit on doctrinal points which they deemed of great importance, withdrew from the communion. Being greatly interested in the cause of temperance, Mr. Hildreth was selected as a public lecturer and agent by the Massachusetts Temperance Society, and his connection with the parish was dissolved at his own request, December 31, 1833. During Mr. Hildreth's ministry the meeting-house erected in 1738 was removed, and another, still standing and in use by the parish, was built on the same site. The last service in the old house was held on the 6th of April, 1828, and the new

building was dedicated on Christmas day, the same year.

At the time of Mr. Hildreth's resignation of the pastorate a majority of the parish had become Unitarian in their theological opinions, but the male members of the church—seven in number, one being a non-resident—held to the ancient faith. In 1834 the parish extended an invitation to Rev. Luther Hamilton to become their minister, and on his acceptance fixed the day for his installation, before seeking the concurrence of the church.

The six resident male members held a meeting September 6th, before the time fixed for Mr. Hamilton's installation, and voted to "consider the vote of the Parish asking their concurrence only as a mark of their contempt for the church," and also "voted 2d that no further notice be taken of the said Parish request, only that the scribe be directed to lay a certified copy of the doings of this meeting before the council that may convene for the installation of Rev. Mr. Hamilton." A month later five male members of the church held a meeting, and voted to reconsider the last vote noted above, and also "voted that for the reasons stated in a vote of the church of 6th of September last, all connection between this church and the First Parish in Gloucester be now dissolved." At this time the female membership of the church was about seventy-five; but it does not appear that any of these were present at the church meetings which have been mentioned. The act was clearly illegal, and would have been so if it had been concurred in by the entire membership; since the highest legal tribunal in the commonwealth had more than once decided that a church organized in a specifically defined parish has no existence separate from the parish. So the First Parish treated this action of the male members of the church, from the first, and the church has never ceased to exist in that parish. The old record-books, which were retained by those who were concerned in this illegal act, were mysteriously returned by unknown hands to the minister of the First Parish in December, 1862. The last record made by those who had retained them for nearly thirty years was under date of "May 3, 1837." They claimed that at that time the church ceased to exist, and Mr. Babson, in his history (p. 496), adopts their conclusion; but, beyond question, they were in error, and the church, with slight modification of its covenant, is still connected with the First Parish.

Rev. Mr. Hamilton's installation took place in November, 1834. His connection with the parish ceased in about a year, on account of offense given to a majority of the parishioners, who were Whigs in politics, by his accepting a nomination as Representative to the Legislature from the Democrats, who secured his election. In 1836 the parish made choice of Rev. Josiah K. Waite to be their minister. He was installed in July 1837, and resigned in 1849. His successor was Rev. William Mountford, who began to preach in the parish in 1850, although his installation was deferred till August, 1852. He resigned his office May, 1853, but continued to supply the pulpit till the following fall. Subsequent pastors have been Rev. Robert P. Rogers, August, 1854, to February 10, 1869; Rev. Minot G. Gage, January 9, 1870, to February 1, 1878; Rev. John S. Thomson, November 21, 1879, to October 1, 1884; Rev. John B. Green, the present incumbent, began his pastorate July 27, 1885. Sunday-school first started in 1816, but suspended in 1819. Reorganized in 1823.

THE SECOND PARISH.—The inhabitants of the westerly part of the town had, by reason of their distance from the meeting-house, been put to great inconvenience in attending public worship. Most of them were compelled to travel from three to five miles for this purpose. They therefore petitioned the town, in 1710, for land on which to erect a meeting-house. Their petition was not granted, but the selectmen were instructed that, in engaging a schoolmaster for that section, they should endeavor to select a man "who, in the judgment of their reverend pastor, was suitably qualified to preach to them on the Lord's Day, for about three or four months in the winter season, in some convenient place to be designated by the inhabitants." He should be paid out of the town treasury, and the engagement should be made for three years. Mr. Samuel Tompson was selected as possessing the necessary qualifications, and he was engaged to keep a school and preach during three months in the year, beginning January, 1712, for twelve pounds each season. A further agreement was made at the end of the third year by which, for a year's teaching and four months' ministry he should receive £40. In March, 1716, the people petitioned the town that they might be set off as a separate precinct. The town gave consent by voting "that the inhabitants that live on the northwest and westerly side of this line, viz.: beginning at the mouth of Annisquam River, the river to be the line unto the mouth of Little River, then Little River to be the line unto the head of said river; from thence on a straight line to the sea, on the easterly side of Kettle Cove; to be set off as a precinct, in order to the settling and maintaining a gospel minister among them." The parish was incorporated by the General Court the 12th of the following June. At once a meeting-house was erected, and in October Mr. Tompson was unanimously chosen as their minister, and was ordained on the 28th of November. His ministry terminated at his death, on the 8th of December, 1724.

The parish took immediate steps for the settlement of Mr. Tompson's successor, and agreed on a unanimous call to Rev. Richard Jaques, to whom they offered "One hundred pounds settlement, and one hundred pounds yearly salary, so long as he should perform and carry on the whole work of the ministry." He accepted and was ordained the 3d of November, 1725. In the spring of 1764, Mr. Jaques

having been rendered unable to perform his ministerial duties, by an attack of paralysis, his salary ceased, according to the terms of his settlement. He considered himself ill-used, and council was sought from abroad to adjust the differences between himself and his people. At length, at a meeting in March, 1769, the parish voted their pastor an allowance of twenty shillings per month, and called Rev. Daniel Fuller to settle with them as Mr. Jaques' colleague, on a salary of £70 per annum, and the use of the parsonage wood-lot so long as he continued to be the minister of the parish. Mr. Jaques died on the 12th of April, 1777, having been confined to his house, and most of the time to his bed, for thirteen years. Mr. Fuller was ordained on the 10th of January, 1770. His ministry with them lasted a half a century, when, feeling the infirmities of age, he voluntarily withdrew, and made his home with his son, at Dorchester. He died on the 23d of May, 1829. He was a man greatly beloved, and was a pastor true, pure and generous. During the Revolutionary War, as also in the second war with Great Britain, when, by reason of distress and poverty, the people were unable to meet their pecuniary obligations to him, he generously remitted what was due him, and encouraged his flock to bear the hardships incident to the struggle for liberty and their just rights.

In the warrant for the parish meeting in the spring of 1830 the following article was inserted: "To know of what denomination the parish will be most united." The vote on this item was just three to one in favor of the Universalist denomination. Rev. Calvin Gardner was the first minister under this vote, and his support was provided for by voluntary subscriptions. The following year the parish voted to assess a tax, and to grant to each person assessed, "the privilege of having his own money appropriated to support a minister of his own Denomination." Similar arrangements were made for a few years, but in 1838 the orthodox portion of the parish withdrew, and after this till 1843, when the parish organization was dissolved, meetings were held a portion of each year by the Universalists. In 1846 the ancient meeting-house having become greatly out of repair, was taken down, the last service being held in it on the 7th of September of that year. Its frame was found to be in good condition, and the timbers were sold and worked into a building on the road from Gloucester to Essex, known as "Liberty Hall," which was occupied for religious meetings until the erection of the Universalist Chapel near by, in 1876.

THE THIRD PARISH.—"For fifty years after the incorporation of the town," says Mr. Babson, the territory on the northerly part of the Cape "does not seem to have attracted more than two or three families." The first permanent settlement at Annisquam was probably made in 1656. Not until 1726 did the people there deem themselves sufficiently numerous to seek a parish organization and a minister of their own. In November of that year about forty of them petitioned the town for liberty to set up a meeting-house in a convenient place upon some of the unappropriated land. Their petition was debated, but not granted till January, 1728, when the town voted, "That the inhabitants of Annisquam, and those that live on the northerly side of the Cape, so far southerly as the southerly side of Pigeon Hill pasture, and from thence westerly on a line to the bridge that is over the brook on the southwesterly side of John Tucker, jun.'s house, and thence by said brook as it leadeth into the cove called Goose Cove, and thence by said Cove to Annisquam River, should be set off as a precinct to themselves, to maintain a gospel minister among them." The General Court confirmed the doings of the town, and the parish was incorporated the 11th of June, 1728. They located their meeting-house at the head of Lobster Cove. In a little more than a month from the date of their incorporation the parish voted to settle the Rev. Benjamin Bradstreet as their minister, and he was ordained on the 18th of September. A church was soon organized, the covenant being signed by the following male members:

Benjamin Bradstreet.	Samuel Lane.	James Lane.
Edward Haraden, Sr.	Joseph Thurston.	Jethro Wheeler.
Anthony Bennett.	John Lane.	Daniel Collins.
Benjamin Davis.	Samuel Gott.	

Ten years after the settlement of Mr. Bradstreet, whose salary was to be £125 the first year, £130 the second, and £135 yearly thereafter, the parish found it difficult to meet their obligations, and petitioned the First Parish to set off to them additional territory, so as to include the settlement at Sandy Bay, agreeing to make and maintain a convenient way through the woods to Mr. John Pool's, at that place, if the people at Sandy Bay would thus unite with them. The petition was probably not granted. Mr. Bradstreet's ministry continued nearly thirty-four years, terminating with his death the 31st of May, 1762.

His successor was not settled until 1766, but the pulpit was occasionally supplied by Rev. Mr. Cleaveland, of the Fifth Parish, and by others. Late in 1765 Rev. John Wyeth was called. He accepted and was ordained the 5th of February, 1766. The call was not unanimous, and the opposition soon developed intense and active hostility, which was frequently manifest in violent and disgraceful acts, even to the firing of musket-balls into his house. He was dismissed the 17th of May, 1768, and on his arrival at Cambridge commenced an action against the parish for his pay, which they settled on the best terms they could make. He left the ministry and went into the practice of law.

The next minister was Rev. Obadiah Parsons, the terms of whose settlement were a yearly salary of £86, 13*s.* 4*d.*; but in case of his inability to preach, one-half that sum was to be retained by the parish. He also had the free use of the parsonage. Mr. Parsons was ordained the 11th of November, 1772.

Charges affecting his character were brought before a council in 1779; and although the council voted that the charges were not sustained, they also recommended that, considering the great alienation of affection on the part of the people, and the small prospect which remained of the pastor's further usefulness among them, that the pastoral relation be dissolved. This unhappy termination of affairs, and the impoverished and distracted condition of the people during the then imminent war for independence, and for a long time after its close, discouraged for many years an attempt to settle another minister, although the pulpit was often supplied.

In 1802 the parish resolved to secure the services of a pastor at the earliest moment. In 1804, Rev. Ezra Leonard, who had for some months supplied the pulpit, accepted an invitation to become their minister. He was ordained on the 5th of December of that year, and continued in the pastorate until his death, in April, 1832. In the summer of 1811, Mr. Leonard announced to his people that, having become a Universalist in belief, he could no longer preach the doctrines of the Calvinistic creed. The only action taken by the parish on this avowal was a vote that he should continue in his place till the next March meeting. The majority of his people were in accord with him in his new sentiments, only a few of the members of the church adhering to the old belief. These latter quietly withdrew, and the affairs of the parish moved on in great harmony. Mr. Leonard was a man of great usefulness in the parish, and was greatly respected wherever he was known. He represented the town, one year, at the General Court, and while in Boston attended a course of medical lectures, which, with his previous study of medicine, qualified him for the practice of the healing art. Gratuitously dispensing his services as a physician, he bound his people still more closely to him in the ties of strongest affection. During his ministry the meeting-house, erected in 1728, was removed, and a new one immediately built was dedicated the 5th of January, 1831.

The following have been the ministers of this parish since Mr. Leonard's death: Abraham Norwood, settled in 1832; Elbridge Trull, 1833; John Harriman, 1834; George C. Leach, 1837; M. B. Newell, 1842; J. A. Bartlett, 1845; B. H. Clark, 1847; E. W. Catlin, 1848; N. Gunnison, 1854; E. Partridge, 1857; Lewis L. Record, 1859; J. H. Tuller, 1863; J. H. Willis, 1865; F. A. Benton, 1868; William Hooper, 1871; Henry C. Leonard, 1875 to 1879. Since 1880 the parish has been supplied by neighboring pastors, by ministers sent by the State Convention and by students from Tufts's Divinity School. Sunday-school established about 1830.

THE FOURTH PARISH. The erection of the meeting-house at the Harbor, and its occupation by a portion of the First Parish, in 1738, caused great dissatisfaction of that portion of the parish whose residences were north of the old place of worship on the Green. They accordingly called a parish meeting and endeavored to be set off as a separate precinct; but their proposition was defeated by one hundred and seven votes against seventy-seven in its favor. The minority then applied to the General Court for relief. Eighty-five members of the parish united in a petition, in which they said:

"Whereas, eight inhabitants of said parish have lately built a new meeting-house, in the Harbor, about a mile southward of the old one, without any leave or vote of said parish, although the parish, by vote, laid out a convenient place to set one on when wanted (that place is between the old meeting-house and the new one); and since the proprietors of the new meeting-house have made an offer of it to the parish, on these terms (reserving all the pews and considerable part of the room in the gallery to procure the cost of building it), and the parish, by vote, accepted said house for the public worship of God; by reason of which, the northerly part of the parish, who are your humble petitioners, labor under great discouragements and inconveniences in attending public worship, by reason that many of them live two or three miles from the new meeting-house (many of them are sea-faring men and have no conveniences for going to meeting but on foot; which is very uncomfortable for elderly people, women and children), near about ninety families must go by the old meeting-house to go to the new one. Most of your petitioners could go home at noon from the old meeting-house; but if obliged to go to the new one, cannot: which renders your petitioners' case to be very difficult. Also the bigger part of the body of the new meeting-house is built into pews, to the number of eighty or ninety; and the major part of your petitioners are unable to purchase them. These, with many other reasons, moved us to desire the church to consent that we might have preaching in the old meeting-house, at our own cost, the winter following; but could have no favor shown us there. Then we applied to the parish to set off all who live nearer the old meeting-house than the new, in order to call and settle an orthodox minister; but were still denied. The second and third parish have taken this opportunity to enlarge their own district, the southerly part of the first parish joining with them, in order to hinder us from a settlement. Therefore, we humbly pray the court would take our difficult circumstances under their wise consideration, and set off to the old meeting-house all those parishioners that are nearer that than to the new meeting-house, with their estates, into a distinct precinct."

In concluding, they requested, that if the court should not grant their petition, they would send a committee to view the parish, and consider the case at the cost of the petitioners. The parish chose a committee to draw up a remonstrance to the petition, and appointed one of their number to appear for the

parish before the Governor and court in defense of their remonstrance. No definite action was taken till the session in August, 1741, when the court ordered, "That if the non-petitioners in the parish do not, within twelve month from the end of that session, remove the new meeting-house to the place agreed upon by the precinct, or the precinct erect there another house convenient for public worship; that, in such case, the petitioners be erected into a separate precinct, agreeably to their petition, unless the inhabitants of the first precinct shall, within the term aforesaid, agree to have the public worship of God carried on in both houses at the same time, and so settle another learned and orthodox minister there to assist the Rev. Mr. White in the ministry; the two ministers to preach in the old and new meeting-houses by turns, or otherwise as they shall agree."

In September, 1742, the petitioners memorialized the General Court, showing that the legislative order of the previous year had not been complied with: that no agreement between the two parties had been made, and praying to be set off into a separate precinct. At a parish meeting held soon after, a separation was agreed to by a vote of fifty yeas to thirty-five nays. On the 15th of December the General Court ordered: "That the first precinct in Gloucester be divided into two precincts, as follows: the dividing line to begin at the northeasterly end of Squam precinct line, by Sandy Bay, and to run as the said line does to Squam River to Goose Cove, and land which has Capt. Allen's warehouse on the northeasterly side, and land late Mr. Nathaniel Sawyer's on the southerly side; and so to run on the northerly side of said Sawyer's land to the highway, and in the said highway to Mr. Nymphas Stacy's corner, and then northerly on said way to Mr. James Wallis's house and land, including the same to the northward, and in the highway that leads to Sandy Bay to the Parting Path so called, and in that way to another Parting Path, near Witham's house, and thence on the beach to the seashore, and by same, round the Cape, Pigeon Cove, and Sandy Bay, into Squam line aforesaid: all the land estates, houses, and inhabitants included in the northerly and westerly side of said lines, way, and sea, or so many of the inhabitants that have not petitioned, that are thus included, as shall manifest their willingness herefor by a subscription and present it to this court at the next session, to be incorporated into one distinct precinct; and that the southerly part, whereof the Rev. Mr. John White is the present pastor, be accounted the first precinct in said town of Gloucester." The occupants of the old meeting-house became the Fourth Parish.

A church was organized in October, 1743, the covenant being signed by seventeen men, and in March and April following it was increased by receiving seventy-six women by dismission from the First Church. Rev. John Rogers, of Kittery, Maine, was the choice of the church for its pastor, in which the parish concurred by a vote of thirty-nine to eleven, agreeing to give £250, old tenor, per annum salary, and £400 in the same currency for settlement, the latter to be paid in four annual installments. He was ordained on the 1st of February, 1744. His ministry continued till his death, in October, 1782. Long before his death the parish was weakened and impoverished by the war for independence. Business in the fisheries, in which nearly all the men in the parish were engaged, was utterly ruined, and many engaged in privatering or enlisted in the army. But few of the number survived the war, and their families were reduced to utter poverty. The parish never recovered from the blow, and Mr. Rogers had no successor. The old meeting-house gave place to a new one in 1752, which remained standing still 1840, when it was taken down, only occasional services having been held in it for many years.

The Fifth Parish.—As early as 1695 a grant of land was made to John Babson, at Straitsmouth, "to set up fishing upon." "The indentation of the coast between Andrews' Point and Straitmouth Point began to be called Sandy Bay" about that time. The growth of this part of the town was slow for many years. Prior to 1740 they had occasional preaching in their own village, and had been refused the privilege of a remission of a portion of their tax imposed by the First Parish, on condition of their supporting religious worship among themselves four months in the year. But in the year mentioned the General Court compelled the First Parish to grant the privilege. In 1754, when the whole number of tax-payers at Sandy Bay was thirty-seven, the General Court incorporated them as the Fifth Parish. "The westerly line of the new precinct extended from Cape Hedge to the highway near Beaver Dam, and thence in a northerly direction to the Squam-Parish line." A meeting-house was soon erected near the head of Long Cove; and the church was organized on the 13th of February, 1755, consisting of the following-named members, who had been dismissed from the First Church for this purpose:

Edmond Grover.	Jabez Baker.
Nehemiah Grover.	Henry Witham.
Jonathan Pool.	Samuel Davis.
John Row.	James Parsons, Jr.
Samuel Clark, Jr.	Eliezer Lurvey.

They made choice of Rev. Ebenezer Cleaveland as their minister, at a salary of sixty pounds per annum. He was ordained in December, 1755. Mr. Babson records concerning this people, that, "In forming themselves into a parish, the people of Sandy Bay assumed a pecuniary burthen of no inconsiderable amount; and it is a fact in their history, which their descendants may remember with pleasure as an evidence of their religious character, that the salary paid to their minister in 1755 was more than four times the amount of their town tax the same year

and more than twice that of their town and province tax the year preceding."

During a portion of the Revolutionary War Mr. Cleaveland served as chaplain in the American army. On his return to his parish, before the close of the war, he found his people in a distressed condition. Some of his supporters had fallen in battle; "some had died in prison-ships; many had perished at sea; and nearly all the rest fit for service were absent, fighting for their country's rights. They were deeply in debt to him for past labors; and the best they could do for his future support was to give him ninety quintals of hake-fish per annum." He became for a while engaged as superintendent of Dartmouth College lands at Llandaff, N. H.; but returned to Sandy Bay about 1785 and preached to his former flock, when not otherwise engaged, for such contributions as they were able to make. Before long he again left the Cape and preached in Amesbury, but returned to his old home at Sandy Bay in 1797, and continued his residence there till his death, on the 4th of July, 1805.

In 1804 the parish erected a new meeting-house; and in the fall of 1805 ordained as their pastor Rev. Jacob Jewett, of Hollis, N. H. His ministry extended to 1836, when he was compelled by ill health to resign. The parish enjoyed a high degree of religious prosperity during his ministry, the church membership increasing from ten to two hundred and fifty. His successor was the Rev. Wakefield Gale, of Eastport, Maine, who was installed in May, 1836. He was pastor when, in 1840, the parish, with a portion of the Third Parish, became incorporated as the town of Rockport, and for many years after that change was effected.

Universalists.—The first break from the standing order, as it was called,—the Orthodox Congregationalists, who were the original founders of the parishes,—was begun in 1774, by the preaching of Rev. John Murray, Universalist. A book advocating Universalism, written by Rev. James Relly, of London, England, had been brought to Gloucester, in 1769 or 1770, by an English sailor, probably employed on a vessel belonging to Winthrop Sargent, then and long after a ship-owner, merchant and leading man of Gloucester. It was read by Mr. Sargent and his family, and then by several others, by some of whom its doctrines, at first exciting wonder, were received at last as the true exposition of the teachings of the gospel. These believers only needed the impulse of the more public proclamation of their faith to bring them forward as a distinct body of Christians. The occasion for this presented itself in September, 1774 when, on the second visit of Mr. Murray to Boston, he was attacked in the papers by Rev. Mr. Croswell, of that city, and accused of being "a preacher of Relly's doctrine." The readers of Relly's book in Gloucester, seeing this, at once sent Mr. Sargent to Boston to solicit Mr. Murray's presence in Gloucester. He came on the 3d of November, and remained nine days. At once he was waited upon by the deacons and elders of the First Parish, who conducted him to the house of their minister, Rev. Mr. Chandler, who was then ill, by whose permission he occupied the pulpit that evening, and on several subsequent occasions. Meetings were also held daily in the parlor of Mr. Sargent's residence on Main and Duncan Streets. On the 15th of December, Mr. Murray was again in Gloucester, and finding his labors greatly blessed, concluded to make the town his permanent home, although intending to itinerate more or less through a large portion of the country. The meeting-house of the First Parish was again open to him, but only for a brief period, as sometime during the following month the doors were closed against him. Meanwhile adherents to his views increased, and a congregation was collected, which met frequently during the week in various residences, and held public service on Sunday at Mr. Sargent's. The following May, Mr. Murray, yielding to the solicitations of Colonels Greene, Varnum and Hitchcock, to take the chaplaincy of the Rhode Island Brigade, then in camp at Jamaica Plain, entered the army. After a few months' service he was stricken with severe sickness, and was returned to Gloucester. On his recovery, he was so shocked by the distress and poverty of the inhabitants on account of the destruction of their fishing business, that he returned to camp, and procured liberal donations from his acquaintances there: "General Washington led the subscription with £10, each of the Major-Generals £5, each of the brigadiers £3, besides generous donations from many other respectable characters, in and out of the army." This he distributed to parties recommended by the selectmen of the town, thereby relieving, as he stated in a broadside subsequently published in reply to a pamphlet issued against him by the First Parish, upwards of a thousand individuals, who, in consequence of this very providential and seasonable support, were enabled to get through the worst winter they ever experienced during the war. The town, in April, 1776, "Voted unanimously their sincere thanks to the donors and to Mr. Murray."

On the coming of Mr. Forbes to minister to the First Parish, in the summer of 1776, the members of the church who had become Universalists quietly absented themselves from its public religious services. The bigotry of the people found vent in attempting to perpetrate mob violence on Mr. Murray by driving him from town. Being dissuaded from this when they had already assembled in front of the house of Mr. Sargent, they loudly warned him to go, and threatened violence if he should refuse. The following February he was summoned before the Committee of Safety, all the members of which, then present, were his openly-avowed enemies, and was served by them with a notice that he must "depart in five days from the first of March." Having paid no heed to

the notice, the matter was brought before a town-meeting on the 10th of March, and on a motion "to approve the conduct of the late Committee," "54 voted in the affirmative, and 8 in the negative." But he took no notice of this, nor does there seem to have been any further attempt to compel him to go away.

In September, 1778, the First Church publicly suspended from membership, "until their return from their error in sentiment and practice:"

Epes Sargent.	Anne Babson.	Rebecca Parsons.
Winthrop Sargent.	Lydia Prentice.	Hannah Tucker.
Ebenezer Parsons.	Jemima Parsons.	Judith Stevens.
David Pearce.	Catherine Sargent.	Nancy Sanders.
Rebecca Smith.	Judith Sargent.	Jemima Cook.

These, with others,—sixty-one in all, of whom thirty-one were men and thirty women,—bound themselves together on the 1st of January, 1779, by "Articles of Association," as an "Independent Church of Christ," covenanting and agreeing to walk together in Christian love, and "resolved by God's grace, whether blessed with the public preaching of the word or not, to meet together to supplicate the divine favour, to praise our redeeming God, to hear his most holy word, and freely to communicate whatever God shall please to manifest to us for our mutual edification." They also agreed to set apart and receive as their minister, which they considered as being the same as ordaining him, their "friend and Christian brother, John Murray, from a full conviction that the same God that sent the first preachers of Jesus Christ, sent him; and that the same gospel they preached, we have from time to time received from him." Thus was created the First Universalist Church in America.

In 1780 they erected a house of worship at the corner of Main and Water Streets, which they dedicated on Christmas day. At the close of the war Mr. Murray felt compelled to frequently absent himself from Gloucester in order to answer calls all over the country for his pulpit services. The Gloucester Church continued their meetings, as they had covenanted to do, and occasionally had help from abroad. Among others who preached to them from time to time, were Revs. Moses and Elhanan Winchester, the latter a convert from the Baptists, a man of learning and of untiring zeal; John Tyler, a Rellyan in theology, but continued as rector of the Episcopal Church at Norwich, Conn.; Matthew Wright, a former missionary among the Moravians; Adams Streeter, of Oxford, Mass.; Noah Parker, of Portsmouth, N. H.; and Shippie Townsend, a block-maker, of Boston, a writer of several pamphlets in defense of Universalism, and a very acceptable lay preacher.

The First Parish assessed the Universalists for the support of that organization. The Universalists claimed exemption from liability on the ground that the Bill of Rights prefixed to the State Constitution, then recently adopted, provides that "All religious societies shall, at all times, have the exclusive right of electing their public teachers, and of contracting with them for their support and maintenance. And all moneys paid by the subject for the support of public worship shall, if he require it, be uniformly applied to the support of the public teacher or teachers of his own religious sect or denomination, provided there be any on whose instruction he attends." To this answer was made that this provision could not apply, because the congregation of Mr. Murray was not a religious society, or if it were, it had not been incorporated; nor was Mr. Murray a teacher of religion, or if so, he was not an ordained minister.

In 1782 the parish enforced their demand by seizing and selling at auction the goods of three members of the Independent Church. From Epes Sargent they took articles of silver plate, from another (perhaps Winthrop Sargent) they took English goods, and from another (probably David Pierce) the anchor of a vessel on the point of sailing. William Pierce, a brother of David, prominent in the mob against Mr. Murray, before referred to, had become a Universalist, and, on his resistance of the tax, was lodged by the parish committee in Salem jail. Failing to recover their goods by replevin, the Independent Church instituted a suit against the parish. But it was withdrawn, as it was found that in order to sustain an action, it must be brought in the name of the religious teacher from whom the money had been diverted. As Mr. Murray had passed through the country without allowing or accepting contributions for his support, he was averse to becoming such a party in the suit; but on representation being made to him that the issue affected not himself alone, but every religious denomination in the Commonwealth that was not of the standing order, and that persistence in his opposition was a sacrifice of the personal interests of his friends, and would be a cowardly giving up of a right which the Constitution guaranteed to all, he consented, and the suit was brought in due form. The case came to trial in 1783, and was continued, on appeal and review, to 1786, when it was decided in Mr. Murray's favor. Under this verdict all religious societies of whatever sect—not of the standing order—found protection, till 1792, when it was set aside by a sustained ruling of the courts to the effect that only incorporated religious societies were entitled to the privilege set forth in the Bill of Rights. While the suit of Mr. Murray was in court, other Universalist organizations, which had sprung up in various parts of the commonwealth, held an association at Oxford for mutual consultation on their rights and their dangers; and, desiring some uniform organization for the different societies and churches, the Gloucester Universalists drafted what they called "A Charter of Compact," in which they provided for the necessary officers of a religious society, and for carrying on its affairs by voluntary subscriptions. This was approved by the Association, and in September, 1785, it superseded the "Articles of Association,"

which contained no provisions for these particulars. It was signed by all the male members of the society, then numbering eighty-five.

The validity of Mr. Murray's ordination being in question, and suits begun against him, and afterwards decided to his damage,—from which, however, the General Court gave him relief,—the society, that they might not be subjected to the annoyance of further litigation, arranged for and perfected Mr. Murray's re-ordination on Christmas day, 1788. Mr. Murray having married, the society now voted to pay him a salary of one hundred pounds per annum. As he had now arranged to be in Boston once in three weeks, a deduction was probably made for the time spent there, and the first tax assessed was for £35 13*s.* 10*d.*, for six months, beginning the 1st of January, 1789. This amount was assessed on one hundred and three persons. In 1792, on the reversal of the court decision before mentioned, the society availed itself of an act of incorporation, granted the 28th of June. In October, 1793, Mr. Murray dissolved his connection with the society and removed to Boston.

His successor was not settled till 1804, when Rev. Thomas Jones was invited, and entered upon a long and eventful pastorate. During the interval between Mr. Murray's removal and Mr. Jones' call, meetings were continued with considerable regularity, Revs. Thomas Barns, Hosea Ballou, Michael Coffin, George Richards, Zephaniah Lathe, John Foster, Ebenezer Paine, Edward Turner, Joshua Flagg and others supplying the pulpit. Mr. Jones was installed on the 26th of September, 1804, and his salary was fixed at six hundred dollars per annum. In February, 1805, some members of the society agreed to open a subscription for the erection of a new meeting-house. Mr. William Pearce having purchased a large lot of land, fronting sixty-three feet on Middle Street and running back to High Street, with a frontage there of one hundred and seventy feet, the subscribers to the fund for the new meeting-house voted to take it from him on the same terms, to erect the meeting-house near the eminence back or north of the brook, and lay a handsome graveled walk from Middle Street to the front of the meeting-house; and to reserve a large lot near the northern end of the lot for a burial-ground. So much of the southern end as extends from Pine Street to Middle Street, together with the meeting house, when completed, except the pews, to be given to the society. Three-fourths of the burial-ground was laid out in lots corresponding to the number of the pews in the meeting-house, and one lot assigned to the owner of each pew; the remaining fourth was given to the society. There were fifty-two subscribers, and the shares were one hundred at one hundred dollars each. The house was erected in 1805-6, and was dedicated October 9, 1806. It still stands, beautiful for situation and in excellent preservation. The bell, cast at the Paul Revere Foundry, and the clock for the interior of the house, both placed where they now are before the day of dedication, still do faithful service.

On the first Sabbath service held in the new meeting-house an infant daughter of William Pearce, Jr., was dedicated to the love and service of God—a ceremonial instituted some years before by Rev. John Murray, and peculiar to the Universalist Church. The same day steps were taken for organizing the body of communicants into a church distinct from the business organization created by the act of incorporation. The measure was perfected on the 23d of the following November, when nine men and twenty-four women were received and recognized as a church. The first deacons were Isaac and Payne Elwell.

In 1837, the health of the venerable pastor being feeble, Rev. Daniel D. Smith was settled as colleague, and remained till April, 1841. Arrangements were made the following month with Mr. Jones, by which his connection as pastor was dissolved, the society making provision for his maintenance during the remainder of his life, and for his wife if she should survive him. He died in August, 1846.

Rev. Frederick F. Thayer was pastor from March, 1843, to December, 1844; Rev. Henry B. Soule from June, 1845, to April, 1846; Rev. Amory D. Mayo from June, 1846, to October, 1854; Rev. W. R. G. Mellen from April, 1855, to October, 1861; Rev. George W. Skinner from June, 1862, to February, 1865; Rev. Elmer H. Capen from March, 1865, to October, 1869; Rev. Richard Eddy from May, 1870, to September, 1877; Rev. Costello Weston from April, 1879, to May, 1883, and Rev. William H. Rider, the present pastor, since October, 1883. Sunday-school organized in June, 1820.

A Second Universalist Society, as we have already seen, grew out of the changed opinions of Rev. Ezra Leonard and his people in the Third Parish in 1811; and a Third was the result of changes in the Second Parish in 1830. The Universalist ministers there under the old parish organization were Revs. William A. Stickney, Ezra Leonard, Robert L. Killam, Joseph P. Atkinson, Henry Belding, Charles Galaca, George G. Strickland, James M. Usher, Thomas Jones, William Hooper, Henry C. Leonard, John M. Spear. In 1867 a reorganization was effected, and the name Third Universalist Society was taken. A church edifice was erected in 1876, the pulpit being supplied by different preachers till the settlement of Rev. E. F. Pember in Essex, in 1874, when he became and continued during his stay in Essex the regular pastor. He was succeeded in 1877 by supplies from different preachers till July, 1883, when Rev. George J. Sanger, the present minister, also pastor at Essex, took charge. A church of seventeen members was organized in April, 1876; Alexander D. Bray and Jasper Richardson, deacons. Sunday-school organized about 1867.

A Fourth Universalist Society was organized at Sandy Bay, in February, 1821, taking the name of

the "Universal Benevolent Society." Of the twenty-three original members, several had been for many years connected with the society at the Harbor. On the settlement of Mr. Jones at the Harbor, in 1804, one-fifth of the members of his society were residents of Sandy Bay. The same year they contributed two-fifths of the amount then raised for building a new meeting-house in the Fifth Parish, in consideration of which they received the promise of the parish that they should have the use of the meeting-house twenty-one Sundays in each year. An arrangement was made not long after for Mr. Jones to preach for them every fifth Sunday; and as it was difficult for them to obtain supplies for the remaining number of Sundays to which they were entitled, they temporarily relinquished their right to those days to the Congregationalists. The arrangement with Mr. Jones continued two years, when the Congregationalists voted to themselves the exclusive use of the meeting-house. Meetings were then held by the Universalists in a school-house, and a suit in equity for the use of the meeting-house was commenced. After a protracted litigation, extending through several years, the court, virtually acknowledging the justice of the Universalists' claim, dismissed the action for want of jurisdiction, and referred them to the Legislature for redress. Preferring to build a new house rather than to have further contention about the old, the corner-stone was laid on the 24th of June, 1829, and the frame of the building, gotten out at Cambridge, and floated to Sandy Bay, was, by the volunteer services of citizens, taken from the water and raised on its foundation the ensuing 4th of July. The ministers of the society until 1840, when the territory ceased to belong to Gloucester, were Revs. Fayette Mace, Lucius R. Paige, B. B. Murray, A. C. L. Arnold, Charles Spear and Gibson Smith.

A Fifth Universalist Society was organized at the Harbor in 1843. It was composed chiefly of former members of the parent society, who withdrew from that organization about the time that Rev. Daniel D. Smith ceased to be its pastor. They took to themselves the name of the "Independent Universalist Society," and held their first meetings in Murray Institute Hall, a building standing on land belonging to the old society. Mr. Smith became their pastor in 1843, and remained with them till the summer of 1848. In September, 1845, they dedicated a meeting-house, which they had erected on Elm Street, at a cost of about three thousand dollars. A church of forty members was organized, the deacons being Richard Friend, Jr., and Joseph Friend. Rev. David H. Plumb was their minister from 1849 to 1852; and Rev. George J. Sanger from 1853 to 1856. The dissolution of the society followed soon after Mr. Sanger ceased his labors, and in 1858 the property was sold to the Methodists.

A Sixth Universalist Society was organized at Lanesville in March, 1876. The members were previously connected with the Third Parish organization, at Annisquam; but had held meetings in Village Hall, and also formed a Sunday-school several years prior to their organization as a society, probably as early as 1860. On organizing they took the name of "The Society of the Lanesville Universalist Parish." A meeting-house was built in 1878, and dedicated the 22d of January, 1879. Rev. B. G. Russell was pastor for one year, beginning in June, 1879. Until April, 1884, the pulpit was supplied by students from Tufts Divinity School. Rev. George Proctor then became pastor, and remained till September, 1885. At present the pulpit is supplied by Tufts divinity students. Sunday-school established in 1860.

A Seventh Universalist Society was organized at East Gloucester, the first ward of the city, under the name of the East Gloucester Universalist Parish, the 22d of March, 1884, and a church was organized on the 29th of March, 1886. A house of worship was erected in 1885–86. Rev. Byron G. Russell, pastor from February to June, 1886; Rev. N. R. Wright since November, 1886. Sunday-school organized on the 20th of April, 1884.

Baptists.—The First Baptist Church was organized at Sandy Bay, on the 30th of March, 1808, and was constituted by the following-named men and women:

Benjamin Hale.	William Smith.
John Smith.	Nehemiah Grover.
Ebenezer Pool.	Nathan F. Morgan.
Seth Woodbury.	Solomon Pool.
Mrs. Judith Hale.	Mrs. Betsey Witham.
Mrs. Martha Smith.	Mrs. Elizabeth Dexter.
Mrs. Sally Pool.	Mrs. Lydia Lurvey.
Mrs. Eleanor Merrill.	Mrs. Abigail Medler.
Miss Mary Woodbury.	Mrs. Lucy Davis.

The meetings for religious worship were at first held in the house of Captain Benjamin Hale, who, in 1809, was licensed to preach. Rev. Elisha S. Williams, of Beverly, also often officiated as preacher from 1809 to 1812. By the year last named the church had increased to thirty-two members. The years of the war and those immediately following witnessed no additions, and but few meetings for public worship, though the members of the church convened on Sunday afternoon at the residence of Ebenezer Pool. In December, 1820, they settled their first minister, Rev. James A. Boswell, and commenced public services in a hall. In 1822 they built a house of worship. Mr. Boswell's pastorate ceased in 1823, but owing to the poverty of the church, his successor, Rev. Reuben Curtis, was not settled till 1827. His successors, up to and including the time when the territory ceased to belong to Gloucester, were,—1831, Bartlet Pease; 1834, Otis Wing; 1837, Gibbon Williams; 1838, Benjamin Knight; 1840, Otis Wing.

A Second Baptist Church was formed December 29, 1830, at the Harbor. It is now called the First Baptist Church. The original members were:

Timothy Favor.	Elizabeth Roberts.	Sally Elwell.
Benjamin Ellery.	Sally Rowe.	Esther Fears.
Joseph Fears.	Dorcas Smith.	Nancy Thomas.
John Woodbury.	Sallie Baily.	Eunice Brown.
Nancy Woodbury.	Hannah Dresser.	Hannah Adams.
Esther Leighton.	Judith Ellery.	Betsy Fears.
Margaret Favor.	Lucy Steele.	

Several of the above named had been in the habit of holding social religious meetings occasionally in each other's homes during several years before their constituting a church, and, aided by pastors of the Salem Baptist Association, had frequently had Sunday services in Union Hall. Early in 1830 they took steps towards the erection of a house of worship on Pleasant Street. It was dedicated on the 21st of September, the same year. This gave place to another, erected on the corner of Pleasant and Middle Streets, and dedicated in March, 1851. In 1869, when an extensive remodeling of this edifice, involving an outlay of $18,000, was in progress, it was utterly destroyed by fire. A temporary building was at once put up on Mason Street, where worship was held till May, 1871, when a new and commodious church edifice, erected on the site of the one destroyed by fire, was dedicated and occupied. The pastors of the church have been: Rev. Samuel Adlam, March 24, 1831, to 1831; Rev. William Lamson, June, 1837, to October, 1849; Rev. J. A. B. Stone, November, 1839, to October, 1841; Rev. William Lamson, November, 1841, to August, 1848; Rev. Joseph R. Manton, February, 1849, to September, 1850; Rev. Miles Sanford, March, 1851, to July, 1853; Rev. Samuel Everett Pierce, September, 1853, to June, 1860; Rev. L. M. Woodruff, January, 1862, to March, 1864; Rev. George B. Gow, December, 1864, to March, 1867; Rev. Forest F. Emerson, April, 1868, to September, 1873; Rev. J. M. English, July, 1875, to March, 1882; Rev. C. D. Morris, D.D., pastor since March, 1882. Sunday school organized in 1827.

A branch church was established at East Gloucester in January, 1861, and became duly organized as the "East Gloucester Baptist Church" on the 13th of July, 1863. It was originally composed of fifty-four persons, dismissed from the parent church for the purpose of creating this organization. The society was organized in March, 1865, and incorporated in April, 1878.

A chapel was erected in 1858, before the creation of any organization. It was greatly enlarged ten years later and dedicated February 3, 1869. The first pastor of the church was Rev. Andrew Dunn, settled in September, 1867; his successors, with the dates of their settlement, have been: Revs. Joseph H. Gannett August, 1867; A. M. Higgins, June, 1874; George B. McCullough, February, 1878; L. A. Hall, September, 1881; George Dana Sanders, June, 1885. Sunday school organized in 1868.

Meetings of the Baptists (unorganized) were held at Annisquam early in the present century, conducted by Rev. Epes Davis, who was ordained as a Free-Will Baptist preacher not far from 1810, and for a long time held public religious services in his own house. About the year 1825 he joined the Calvinistic Baptist Church, and continued a preacher in the same till 1840. In 1830 he built a meeting-house at Annisquam Point, which was dedicated in June, 1831. It passed out of his hands in 1838, and has since been used for secular purposes. It is now known as "Mechanics' Hall."

METHODISTS.—The first Methodist Episcopal Society was organized in 1826. In 1805 John Edney, an English Wesleyan, moved into Gloucester and became a resident in the Fourth Parish, and held meetings in his own house. Probably at his solicitation, the first Methodist sermon in the town was preached there in 1806, by Rev. George Pickering, presiding elder of the Boston District. Mr. Pickering made several visits and may have remained here some little time, as, on account of the large crowds attracted to Mr. Edney's house, some of the citizens professed alarm for the peace and good order of the neighborhood, and made formal application to the selectmen to interfere. They attempted to do so, by calling on Mr. Pickering, and requesting him to leave town. He calmly assured them that he knew what he was about, and should remain and preach as long as there was a prospect of his doing good. He was not further molested. Mr. Babson says of this movement: "A few converts were the fruits of these early labors; but the field appears to have been almost entirely abandoned from this time till 1821, when, and during the four following years, Mr. Pickering, as a missionary of the New England Conference, frequently visited the town, and preached either in a private house or in the old meeting-house, 'up in town.' On these visits 'class-meetings' for religious inquiry and conversation were held; and then were laid the foundations of a permanent ministry." The society organized in 1826 was composed of about twenty persons; and the following-named persons were the first to be formed into a class:

Thomas Hillier.	Judith Tucker.	Rachel Riggs.
Dorcas Marston.	Clarissa Adams.	Lucy Lowe.
Isabel Hodgkins.	Betsy Pulcifer.	

Rev. Aaron Waitt was the first minister appointed to the field, which included the whole Cape. His Sunday services were usually held in the old meeting-house in the Fourth Parish, till the fall of 1828, when he began to preach in a new meeting-house erected by the Methodists, on Prospect Street, at the Harbor. This house continued to be occupied by the society till 1858, when they purchased the meeting-house on Elm Street, erected by the "Independent Universalist Society." This was used by them till 1883, when, on the 31st of October, they dedicated and occupied a new house of worship on Prospect Street. Mr. Waitt's successors were Revs. William R. Stone, Aaron Summers, Aaron Josselyn, John Bailey, Leonard B. Griffin, E. M. Beebe, Stephen Hiler, H. P.

Hall, Joel Steele, Mr. Burrows, H. M. Bridge, W. C. Clark, John Collum, J. Wilson, Linus Fish, H. R. Parmenter, N. A. Soule, Converse L. McCurdy, I. J. P. Collyer, W. C. High, J. C. Smith, A. F. Herrick, N. T. Whitaker, Albert Gould, Edward A. Titus, George F. Eaton, S. B. Sweetzer, J. W. Higgins. Mr. Higgins is the present pastor. Messrs. Burrows, Clark and Collum were local preachers, who had lay occupations. Sunday-school organized in 1826.

A Second Methodist Society and Church were organized in 1838, at Riverdale. Meetings in that neighborhood had not been interrupted by the erection of the house of worship at the Harbor, in 1828, but Mr. Waitt's labors, as were those of his successors until 1838, were divided between the Harbor and Town Parish, with occasional preaching at Sandy Bay. In the fall of 1837, Mr. Samuel Curtis, of Riverdale, having donated a lot of land for church purposes, steps were taken for erecting a house of worship thereon. The edifice was completed the next year, and dedicated on the 17th of November, 1838. The bell still in use on this meeting-house was purchased of the Congregationalist Church in Rockport, and is the same as gave the alarm to the citizens in September, 1814, on the occasion—as narrated in the chapter on Military Affairs—when the British frigate "Nymph" opened fire on the town.

The ministers at Riverdale since the Methodists there ceased to be under the pastoral care of the minister at the Harbor, have been, with the dates of their appointment: Revs. Leonard B. Griffin, 1838; Benjamin F. Lambord, 1840; Ziba B. C. Dunham, 1841; Zachariah A. Mudge, 1842; Thomas C. Pearce, 1843; C. R. Foster, 1844; Daniel Richards, 1845; John Poulson, 1847; John G. Cary, 1848; Jarvis Wilson, 1850; Augustus F. Bailey, 1851; William F. La Count, 1853; Z. B. C. Dunham, 1855; Horace F. Morse, 1856; Samuel A. Cushing, 1858; N. S. Spaulding, 1859; John Middleton, 1861; S. Chapin, 1863; W. F. La Count, 1865; A. J. Hall, 1868; W. J. Hambleton, 1871; A. M. Osgood, 1872; John Capen, 1873; W. P. Blackmer, 1874; W. Wilkie, 1876; N. H. Martin, 1878; I. A. Mesler, 1881; C. M. Hall, 1884; T. C. Martin, 1887. Sunday-school organized 1838.

A Third Methodist Church was organized by forming a class at Sandy Bay, in 1831, by Rev. Aaron Lummus, then settled at the Harbor. The members of the class were:

Levi Cleaves.	Hattie Tarr.	Rhoda Cleaves.
Nicy Cleaves.	Charles Wormwood.	Betsey Tarr.
Ann Cleaves.	Zachens Roberts.	John Cleaves.
Solomon Tarr.	Louis Pool.	

This class was connected with the Harbor Church until 1838, when it was set off as a circuit with Town Parish, under the charge of Rev. Leonard B. Griffin. A meeting-house was erected and dedicated that year. In 1839 the society was made a separate charge, and Rev. Israel Washburn was appointed pastor. Rev. Thomas G. Brown was pastor when the territory became a part of the town of Rockport.

A Fourth Methodist Church began in the organization of the following-named persons as a class, in May, 1871, at Bay View:

Kilby P. Sargent.	George W. Hodgdon.	Sarah Griffin.
George Lane.	Eliza J. Hodgdon.	Charles W. Howland.
Thomas Lane.	Lincoln Littlefield.	William Rolly.
Nancy Griffin.	Eliza J. Littlefield.	Richard Pillage.
Sarah Roberts.	Clara Ramsdell.	N. Hart.
Daniel Roberts.	Moses Ramsdell.	M. M. Hatch.
William P. Hayden.	Warren Griffin.	

A church edifice was erected on a lot donated by Mr. Kilby P. Sargent, and was dedicated on the 14th of March, 1871. Rev. Alonzo Sanderson was the first pastor. His successors were Revs. Allen J. Hall, William B. Toulmin, George E. Sanderson, John Peterson, William Silverthorn, William F. Lawford, and the present incumbent, Rev. George W. Coon. Sunday-school organized 1871.

A Fifth Methodist Church was organized on the 23d of September, 1885, at East Gloucester, with twenty-two members. A church building was begun in June of that year, and finished in January, 1887. It has no resident pastor, but is regularly supplied with preaching. Sunday-school organized 1885.

Work among the Swedes was begun by the Methodists in Gloucester, by forming a class in November, 1874. In 1884 Rev. Albert Hallen was appointed by the Conference to labor among the Swedes on the Cape.

CONGREGATIONALISTS.—An Orthodox Congregationalist Society was organized at Lanesville on the 6th of March, 1828. They at once erected a chapel, which was dedicated in October the same year. It was greatly enlarged in 1853, and gave place some thirteen years later to the present commodious house of worship, dedicated the 31st of January, 1866. In August, 1830, the following-named persons were duly formed into "The North Orthodox Congregational Church:"

Jonathan Haraden.	Hannah Young.	Susan Dennison.
William Choate.	Mary Andrews.	Deborah P. Young.
Matthew S. Giles.	Nancy Young.	Nancy B. Young.
Esther Lane.		

Their first pastor, installed in March, 1831, was Rev. Moses Sawyer. His successors have been: 1840, Rev. David Tilton; 1850, Rev. Edwin Seabury; 1854, Rev. N. Richardson; 1857, Rev. Francis N. Peloubet; 1860, Rev. Ebenezer Burgess; 1863, Rev. Thomas Morong; 1868, Rev. Will C Wood; 1871, Rev. William H. Teel; 1875, Rev. Samuel C. Andrews; 1882, Rev. Josiah G. Willis; Rev. Frank H. Reed, the present pastor, August 16, 1885. Sunday-school organized 1830.

In November, 1829, Andrew Parker, Nathaniel Babson, Judith Parsons, Elizabeth J. Stevens, Sarah Harraden, Anna Harraden, Pamelia Stacy, the seven members of the First Parish Church who had withdrawn from that organization during the pastorate of

Rev. Mr. Hildreth, were organized into "The Evangelical Congregational Church" by an ecclesiastical council called for that purpose. Some of them, and probably others not members of the church, formed a society on the 13th of March, 1830, and took the name "The Evangelical Society." In 1831 they erected a house of worship on the corner of Middle and Church Streets, which was dedicated on the 8th of September of that year. It was sold and removed in 1854, and a more commodious structure was built on the same spot, and dedicated the 22d of March, 1855. The first pastor was Rev. Charles S. Porter, ordained the 1st of August, 1832. His successors, with dates of their settlement over the church, have been: 1835, Rev. Christopher M. Nickels; 1848, Rev. James Aiken; 1853, Rev. J. L. Hatch; 1858, Rev. Lysander Dickerman; 1860, Rev. I. C. Thacher; 1871, Rev. Seth W. Segur; 1874, Rev. F. B. Makepeace; 1879, Rev. Frank G. Clark, who resigned in April, 1887. His successor has not yet been chosen. Sunday-school organized 1829.

The "Trinitarian Congregational Society" at West Gloucester was duly organized, as was also the church connected therewith, in 1833. A house of worship was erected on the main road from Gloucester to Essex in 1834. The pastors have been: Rev. C. B. Smith, to May, 1861; Rev. Samuel Cole, August, 1862, to 1867; Rev. Charles D. Pigeon, June, 1868, to October, 1872; Rev. Luther Farnham, November, 1872, to November, 1873; Rev. Nathaniel Richardson, May, 1874, to November, 1879; Rev. Alexander C. Childs, May, 1880, to May, 1885; Rev. Charles F. Goldsmith, June, 1885, to June, 1887. The pulpit is now supplied by Rev. James C. Alvord, of Andover Theological School. Sunday-school probably organized in 1833.

In January, 1887, a Congregational Society, and a church entitled the "Union Congregational Church," of twenty members, was organized in the new Union Chapel, at Magnolia. Regular services are held in the old Union Chapel, erected some years ago, and Rev. Mr. Goldsmith, of West Gloucester, has been the regular supply for the pulpit. A Union Sunday-school has been held in the chapel several years.

Roman Catholic.[1]—*St. Ann's Church.*—In the accompanying illustration we have an excellent picture of the church property of the Catholic parish of St. Ann, Gloucester, Mass. It is perfect except in the relative position of the buildings, which form almost a square, and are therefore even more desirably located. The church and convent are located on Park Street. The parochial house and school stand picturesquely at the head of Dale Avenue, only a few rods distant from the City Hall. A more desirable location could not be found in the whole city for the house. Nor could the citizens find a more beautiful building for the vicinity of their handsome City Hall.

[1] By Rev. J. J. Healy.

This is plainly a group of church property in which the richest parish in the land might take a virtuous pride. And it merits our admiration all the more, that it is the pious offering to God and religion of our Cape Ann fishermen. It is truly a great work for a parish neither rich nor over-numerous. And it appears all the greater as you read, at the foot of the picture, the date of erection of the several buildings. Only twelve years ago this congregation had to worship in the poorest church in town, with little prospects of anything better in the near future. But a glance at this picture soon reveals the possibilities of the united efforts of a zealous priest and people.

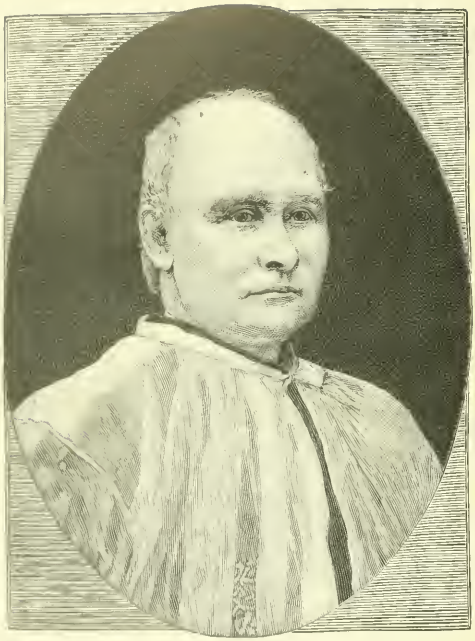
The corner-stone of this magnificent granite church was laid only in 1876. This parochial house, equally handsome and substantial, was built in 1880; and the school and convent were completed in 1886. It is a most extraordinary record of only ten years.

The Cape Ann fishermen have here a grand centennial monument, as may be seen from the figures 1876, found inscribed on the corner-stone of this magnificent granite church. And well may they be proud of this, their fisherman church, so appropriately dedicated to St. Ann, the mother of Mary, the mother of God. It is here at this holy shrine that so many of these brave men piously prepare themselves for the perilous trip. And from its golden cross, brightly glittering in the sun, some three hundred feet above the level of the sea, they reverently receive a parting benediction, and, on their return, this self-same emblem of salvation first meets their anxious gaze for home, and once more invites them within its sacred precincts for prayer and thanksgiving for their safe deliverance from so many dangers.

The following brief description can hardly fail to be of interest and advantage to the many summer visitors, who are becoming more and more numerous every year, as this healthful resort is becoming better known:

This church is built from the choicest material out of the depths of the Rockport Granite Company's quarries. The style is pure Gothic, and it is sufficiently ornamental to be recognized as the grand and chief ornament of the city by all its citizens, regardless of creed or denomination.

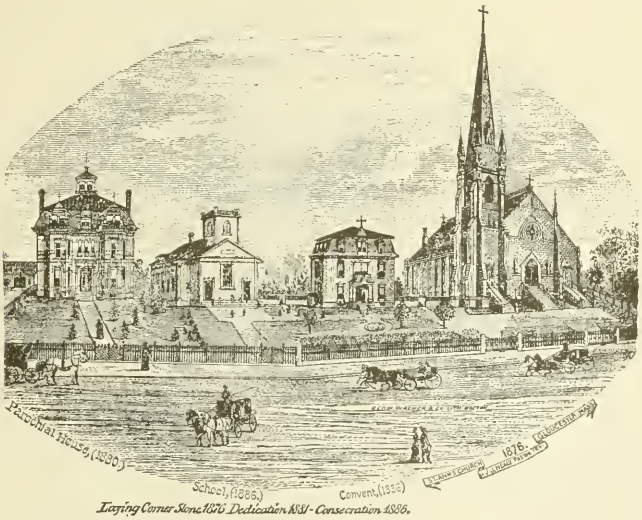
It has six spacious entrances—three through a commodious vestibule and three to the basement. This basement might of itself pass for quite a church, having solid hard-wood pews with over a thousand sittings, with its high and neatly frescoed ceiling and elegantly carved altar, on either side of which stands a commodious vestry-room. The three front entrances to the church are large, pointed openings, with heads of tracery, that in the centre having moulded copings. Over this central entrance is a very handsome rose window, sixteen feet in diameter, with label mouldings of granite. The side windows, eight on each side, giving one in each bay, are five and one-half by fifteen feet, pointed and with heads of



J. J. Keane

tracery. The roof is lighted in the dormers, one in each bay; it is slated with the best Eastern slate, with bands of unfading Vermont green. The interior arrangements consist of nave, aisles and chancel, the latter with a vestry on either side, connected by a passage in the rear of the main altar. The aisles are three in number, leading from the several entrances, the main aisle being six feet and the others four feet in width. The roof is open-timbered, with the timbers cased and moulded, and pointed in form. The organ gallery over the vestibule, extending slightly into the auditorium, is the only gallery in the church. The chancel, at the rear of the auditorium, is octagonal in form, with an arch forty feet wide and sixty feet high, pointed and with heavy stucco mouldings. It contains four windows, four feet by fourteen each, with figures in richly-stained glass. These figures represent the four evangelists, with their respective emblems—the ox, lion, eagle and angel.

The altars, three in number, made from the architect's design, and in style and proportion in perfect keeping with the other work, are all in marble, set in mosaic style of exquisite variety, and represent nearly all the nations of Europe. The main altar, some thirty feet high, is one of the handsomest in this country. The nave arches, sixteen in number (eight on each side), are pointed in form, with heavy moulding, and springing from richly-carved caps and graceful columns twenty-four inches in diameter. The wainscoting, altar rail, gallery front, etc., are finished in brown ash, and all the work in the roof is of pine, richly decorated. The windows are of cathedral glass, and very rich and elegant in design and color, and the walls are richly decorated. In the frescoing, as in everything else in the building, the pure geometrical Gothic style has been scrupulously adhered to in every detail, and, amid countless varieties of beautiful shades and shadows, the most perfect unity of design and color has been most admirably preserved. On the sides of the front entrance beneath the organ gallery are two beautiful groups of paintings in life-size by Schumacher, one representing the divine commission of the twelve apostles to preach the Gospel; the other, the same group, at the ascension of the blessed Saviour. Over the side altars are two real works of art of great merit, brought from Florence by the pastor in 1878—one a beautiful gem of the Raphael school of art, representing the "Virgin with the Divine Infant Visited by St. Elizabeth and St. John the Baptist;" the other is of the Flemish school of art, representing the "Adoration of the Magi at the Stable of Bethlehem."



A description of the countless sacred emblems which everywhere greet the eye, and representing scenes in the life of the Saviour, would require too much space. The student of biblical and ecclesiastical lore may here find a rich field for interesting study, not for hours, but for whole days, in their pictorial illustration. Crowning this sacred edifice is a steeple towering in graceful proportions one hundred and eighty-five feet in height. And in the handsome belfry of fine-cut granite hangs the largest and mel-

lowest church-bell in the entire State of Massachusetts.

This church alone cost one hundred thousand dollars, and the entire group has involved an expenditure of one hundred and forty thousand dollars. Hence these words of Bishop O'Reilly in his preface to his sermon,—"This is a surprise to all the priests not only of this diocese, but of all New England. Praise is in the mouths of all. Let it not be said that the people have not been extremely generous, many of them poor and making their living by toiling on the sea. Their hearts are in the right place; they have the faith, and is it not cheerful when they are nearing land to see the first object that of their church, the cross on the highest tower glittering in the sunshine?"

Forty years ago saw no Catholic congregation in this place. Among the priests present at this consecration was the Rev. D. O'Callaghan, the respected pastor of St. Augustine's, South Boston, who, as altar-boy from Salem, served the first Mass in Gloucester. The Rev. Thomas Shahan, then the pious pastor of Salem, purchased for them a Baptist Church, which was dedicated by Rev. John O'Brien, of Lowell, September 30, 1855, the sermon being preached by Rev. N. S. O'Brien. A few months thereafter Rev. Dr. Acquarone became the first pastor, and remained in charge until, at the age of eighty, he retired in 1871 to his native Italy.

The Rev. J. J. Healy, to whose indefatigable zeal and energy this parish owes its present prosperous condition, was born near Bantry, County Cork, Ireland, January 30, 1835. He was ordained a priest in St. Mary's Seminary, Baltimore, Md., June 30, 1868. After three years in St. James parish, Salem, Mass., he took charge of his Gloucester parish, September 5, 1871. The Catholic Church property in Gloucester was then limited to the old wooden building, formerly a Baptist Church, scarcely sufficient accommodation for the Sunday-school which the new pastor soon rallied around him. There being no parochial house, the first six weeks were spent in a hotel. During these few weeks the Sunday-school was organized, certain religious societies established, and a respectable parochial house was purchased and soon suitably furnished. All this rush rather excited the quiet people, who never expected to see all this accomplished during their natural lives. They even assembled in church to protest against such innovations and the rashness of the priest in thus purchasing a house without their counsel and consent. On this occasion a more or less stormy discussion took place between priest and people, wherein the former evidently came off victorious, for he not only persisted in his house transaction, but soon set about purchasing house-lots around the old church, with the evident determination of some time in the future building a more suitable church. The people were innocent enough in their remonstrance, as the sequel plainly shows. For upon ocular demonstration of the extraordinary zeal and business capacity of their pastor they soon rallied to his generous support. Lot after lot was purchased in quick succession, and the old buildings were economically displaced and disposed of. It was, of course, an expensive way of getting land, but all the surroundings being built on, and this spot being controlled and otherwise desirable, he was left no choice in this matter. Some thought a somewhat larger and better church ought to be begun before a great while, but not a few declared the old church good enough for this poor congregation. But before they had time to arrive at any unanimous conclusion the excavations were progressing, and in dimensions somewhat alarming. A new church was evidently inevitable, and the people, with the best grace possible, anxiously awaited future developments.

The new foundations seemed rather heavy for a wooden structure, and a brick one would, of course, be too expensive; and it was not until the walls arose far above the surface with handsome, substantial granite that the good people believed that they were about to have a veritable granite church. Both Catholics and Protestants stared and wondered, reluctant to express their innermost thoughts. But the administration was such a great success from the beginning, and so far beyond their highest expectations, that they determined more and more to give it a fair and full trial.

Collections and fairs followed in quick succession, and so marvelously successful were the results that the people became more and more confirmed in faith and works. The year 1876 saw the laying of the corner-stone and the completion of this handsome granite edifice,—this grand centennial monument of both priest and people; and with the use of their first staging was finished not only its handsome frescoing, but its three magnificently rich marble altars. Soon after followed the erection of its grand organ, regarded the best in Essex County; the granite belfry and tower, and finally the placing and blessing of the largest and mellowest of church-bells in New England. In 1880 a magnificent parochial house of faced brick, with brown-stone trimmings and finest granite underpinning, equally grand in all its other parts, found them in possession of the finest priests' house in the archdiocese.

The last parochial work was the very pretty convent and the school, with six large school-rooms, the best that can be found in the city. All continued to praise and admire this great work. But although very satisfactory returns were annually read of all moneys received, the absence of any public report of the indebtedness left the timid somewhat fearful. And it was not till they had seen their grand church solemnly consecrated, and with all the richness and grandeur which it actually contains, out of debt, that all with one accord united in devout praise and thanksgiving for the great things the Lord had done for them in so brief a period.

This church was consecrated July 25, 1886, by Most

Rev. John J. Williams, Archbishop of Boston, assisted by fifty of the clergy from this and neighboring dioceses, with Rev. J. P. Bodfish, rector of the Cathedral, as grand master of ceremonies, and Rev. Charles W. Regan, of St. Ann's Church, this city, assistant master. The consecration services began at 7 A.M. and lasted until 9.30 A.M.

A special train arrived from Boston at 9.45 A.M., bringing about fifty priests and a select choir of forty of Boston's vocalists, who sang the High Mass of consecration. The sermon was by the Right Rev. P. T. O'Reilly, Bishop of Springfield. The officers of the Mass were as follows: Rev. Hugh Roe O'Donnell, of East Boston, celebrant; Rev. W. P. McQuaid, of Boston, deacon; Rev. M. F. Flatly, of Malden, subdeacon, in presence of the most reverend archbishop, with Very Rev. William Byrne, V.G., Very Rev. John Hogan, S.S., D.D., superior of the ecclesiastical seminary of Brighton, assistant priests; also Right Rev. Bishop O'Reilly, of Springfield, with his vicar-general, Very Rev. P. Healy, of Chicopee, and Rev. Thomas Griffin, of Worcester, chancellor of the diocese; also Father Neagle, chancellor of the archdiocese; and P. P. Chapon, S.S., D.D., professor of dogma, Brighton; Professor Rev. Louis Walsh; Professor Rev. J. Begley, of Brighton Seminary; Revs. John J. Gray, of Salem; J. Harrington, of Lynn; John Tierney, of Rockland; Christopher McGrath, of Somerville; J. J. Harkins, P. Phelan, of Holyoke; James Quan, of Webster; P. Quaille, of Turner's Falls; M. Moran, of Boston; and Rev. John McMahon, of Charlestown, who accompanied his brother, the Bishop of Hartford.

The following musical programme was most happily rendered by forty select vocalists from the best Boston choirs, under the able direction of Mr. John J. McCloskey; and the new organ, the finest in Essex County, was at its best under the inspiring touch of Mr. J. Frank Donahoe, the worthy organist of the Boston Cathedral.

Beethoven's grand Mass in C, sung by Miss Ellen A. McLaughlin, leading soprano of Boston Cathedral; Mrs. Celia Mooney, leading alto at Boston Cathedral; Miss Tessie M. Flynn, leading alto at St. James' Church, Boston; Mr. John J. McCluskey, leading basso at the Boston Cathedral; with a chorus of forty voices, and Mr. J. Frank Donahoe, organist of the Cathedral. Mr. Donahoe performed a grand march composed by himself and the "Offertoire" of Baptiste. Miss McLaughlin sung at the offertory, and Mr. Farley sung "Veni Creator," composed by Cirillo, and the grand choral "Te Deum." At one o'clock the bishops and priests dined at the parochial residence, and the choir, with other invited guests, some fifty of the laity, dined at the Pavilion Hotel. At two o'clock they were treated to a drive through the city and its surroundings. At 3.30 P.M. there was an eloquent lecture on "Education," by Rev. Thomas J. Conaty, of Worcester, with a sacred concert, as follows:

1. Organ Solo—"Priests' March from Athalie".....Mendelssohn
   Mr. J. Frank Donahoe.
2. Soprano Solo—"Salve Regina".....Dana
   Miss Ellen A. McLaughlin.
3. Pilgrims' chorus of forty voices.
4. Contralto Solo—"Fac ut portem," from "Stabat Mater".....Rossini
   Mrs. D. A Ring, leading contralto of St. Augustine's Church, South Boston.
5. Tenor Solo—"Cujus Animam," from "Stabat Mater".....Rossini
   Mr. John Farley.
6. "Hallelujah Chorus"—Grand Chorus.....Handel
7. Lecture by Rev. T. J. Conaty, of Worcester.
8. Bass Solo—"God Everywhere".....Lachner
   Mr. John J. McCluskey, basso of Boston Cathedral.
9. "The Heavens are telling the Glory of God."
   Miss McLaughlin, Mr. Farley, Mr. McCluskey and chorus.

And at 7.30 P.M. the grand church was again crowded for pontifical vespers by Right Rev. Lawrence McMahon, Bishop of Hartford; Rev. Louis Walsh, professor at the St. John Ecclesiastical Seminary, being master of ceremonies.

The vespers and benediction were sung by St. Ann's choir, under the able direction of Miss Carrie Simpson, their own organist. And thus appropriately terminated the programme of this great day for Gloucester.

Church of the Sacred Heart.—Mass was first celebrated in Lanesville in 1850. Services were held several years in Village Hall. A church was erected between Lanesville and Bay View in 1876. Rev. Thomas Barry, officiating also at Rockport, had charge of the church several years. The present priest in charge is Rev. Daniel S. Healy, also in charge of the congregation at Rockport. Sunday-school organized in 1855.

EPISCOPALIAN.—The parish of St. John's Episcopal Church was formed in the summer of 1863, and reorganized the 16th of October, 1871. Services conducted by the late Rev. Dr. Edson, of Lowell, were held in Gloucester in the summer of 1862, and other visiting and neighboring clergy soon followed. These services were held in Magnolia Hall, a building occupying the site of the present church edifice, the latter being erected in 1864, and consecrated by the Right Rev. Benjamin H. Paddock, D.D., Bishop of the Diocese of Massachusetts, on the 14th of September, 1874. The first rector of the church was Rev. Joshua R. Pierce, who was chosen on the 29th of March, 1864, and resigned on the 1st of December, 1865. His successors have been Rev. J. Frank Winkley, fifteen months from the 21st of November, 1866; Rev. James Reid, from April, 1872, to November, 1876; Rev. W. R. Hooper, from 1877 to April, 1882; Rev. Charles A. Hayden, the present rector, took charge on the 1st of December, 1882. Sunday-school organized in 1862.

SWEDENBORGIAN.—The First Society of the New Church was organized in May, 1871. Services were at first held at the residence of their pastor, Rev. Robert P. Rogers; and subsequently in the hall of the Scientific and Literary Association. They are now temporarily suspended.

UNDENOMINATIONAL.—A religious organization, chiefly designed to meet the religious needs of summer visitors at Magnolia, was established in 1885, and a house of worship, called "The Magnolia Church," was erected the same year. The cost, including land, was seven thousand five hundred dollars.

CHAPTER CVII.

GLOUCESTER—(*Continued*).

Schools—Lyceum—Sawyer Free Library—Scientific Society—Newspapers.

DURING the first sixty years of the settlement of the Cape, whatever schools there were, or whatever instruction was given in the rudiments of learning, aside from home training, resulted from private enterprises, which were probably not very numerous. Ezekiel Collins, born in 1644, taught writing, and perhaps some other branches of learning, in private families. Other citizens probably rendered similar service. The first action taken by the town was in 1696, when the selectmen were ordered to "provide a schoolmaster in convenient time." At another town-meeting, in 1698, in action on an article in the warrant "about a schoolmaster, whether they would choose one or no, the vote carried it to choose one," and Thomas Riggs, Sr., was chosen to that office, "to have one shilling and sixpence a day during the town's pleasure, and the said Riggs's liking to carry it on." This arrangement must have been of brief duration, for in 1701, at a Quarterly-Session Court in Salem, the town was presented for neglect in establishing and maintaining schools. A school was opened in the beginning of 1703, and continued, probably with wide gaps between the terms, till 1706. In 1707 the town's delinquency in this matter was again a subject of complaint at court. Proceedings were stayed, however, by the town's arranging for a school to be opened. In 1809 Mr. Joshua Moody was engaged to teach one quarter for eight pounds; and, in addition to the common branches, he was "to teach lattine, if scholars appear." Since 1812 schools have been among the permanent institutions of Gloucester.

The first school-house was built in 1708, and was located "on the easterly side of the meeting-house." Its dimensions, as ordered by the town, were, "length, 24 feet; width, 16 feet; height of stud, 6 feet." The cost of the completed building was £24 15*s*. Prior to this time the sessions of the school had been held in the meeting house. For about thirty years the public grammar school was kept in this school-house, not without complaint, however, that, on account of its distance from their homes, a considerable portion of the children were deprived of its advantages. To remedy this, in part land was granted the people of Sandy Bay, in 1725, on which to erect a school-house, "to keep a good school in for the Godly instruction of children, and teaching of them to read and write good English;" and in 1826 a similar grant was made to the inhabitants of the Head of the Harbor. It was rapidly becoming manifest, however, that the neighborhood in which the grammar school building was located was fast losing its importance. Population was increasing much more rapidly in other portions of the town. The first serious remonstrance against the existing state of things came from the inhabitants of Annis-quam, who commenced an action against the town for not giving them their proportion of the school privileges. The result of their remonstrance was an arrangement which for many years satisfied all parts of the town. Mr. Babson thus states the scheme: "In a town-meeting, October, 1735, a plan was adopted by which the territory was divided into districts, conforming to the parish lines, afterwards established, with the exception that three school districts were formed from the section now known as the First Parish. The number of districts was seven; and the school was apportioned to each according as its proportion of the town rate was to the whole tax. Each district was to provide a convenient school-house; and, in case of neglect to do so, was to lose its turn for three years—the time employed in the circuit. To conform to the old Colony law, the school was, of course, wherever kept, to be free for all the inhabitants of the town. This arrangement continued many years, and gave the people no further trouble than to vote triennially that the school 'circulate' as heretofore.

"Two of the triennial apportionments are preserved, and are interesting as showing the relative wealth of the districts at their respective dates:—

"'Dec. 3, 1751. The Town School was proporscioned For three years.

	Months.
The Harbour Ward's proporsion	9
Eastern Point and ye head of ye harbour	4½
The western side of ye cut	3
The Cape	1½
The Westerly Ward	7
The Town, or 4th Parish	5½
Squam Ward	5½
Total	36

"'Dec. 29, 1857. The Selectmen proportioned the School to the several parishes according to the town rate in 1754, for two masters each three years, equal to one master 6 years.

	Months.	Days.
The Harbor Parish	34	
The Cape	3	19
The Town Parish	10	16
Squam Parish	11	4
The West Parish	13	27
Total	72	6'"

The apportionment for 1757 was the last made in the attempt to include the whole town in the "circulating" system. In 1758 the grammar school was permanently located at the Harbor, and a circulating school was maintained in the other parishes. Under



"ROCK LAWN."—BAY VIEW.

RESIDENCE OF JONAS H. FRENCH,

GLOUCESTER, MASS.

this arrangement, which continued until the breaking out of the War for Independence, each parish, except the Fifth, had several months' public instruction every year. The latter could only have a three months' school in two years. A school-house, built by private subscription about this time, and located on the corner of Middle and Washington Streets, is supposed to have been used by the grammar school. During the war the schools were broken up, but on the return of peace the selectmen were instructed to hire a suitable teacher and re-open the grammar school. The schools in the several parishes were also soon re-established on the system in use at the time of their interruption. Discrimination in favor of the boys seems to have been made in school instruction, for in 1790 Rev. Eli Forbes presented to the town, in behalf of the school committee, a report concerning the condition of the schools, in which several reforms were urged, and among them the erection of a building for the grammar school, and provision for the education of girls, whom he characterized as "a tender and interesting branch of the community that have been neglected in the public schools of this town."

In 1793 the town voted to raise £300 for the erection of a school-house. It was located on Granite Street; was a square building two stories high and was furnished with a belfry and bell. It answered for a time the double purpose of town offices and school, and was often used for elections and other town-meetings. On the 5th of March, 1795, the citizens assembled at the meeting-house, where they formed in procession, marched to the school-house, where a prayer of dedication was offered by Rev. Mr. Forbes, after which they returned to the meeting-house and listened to a sermon from him, based on the words: "Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children, whom thou mayest make princes in all the earth," Ps. xlv. 16. After standing on Granite Street about sixty years this school-house was moved to Beacon Street, and remodeled for the accommodation of a primary school, to which use it is still put.

In 1804 the town availed itself of the privilege granted by a general statute and divided its territory into school districts. The number at first established was eleven, among which, after deducting the salary of the grammar school teacher, it divided its school money according to the number of polls in each district. The whole amount raised for school purposes in 1805 was two thousand dollars. In 1826, such was the increasing complaint of other portions of the town in regard to inconvenience occasioned by the permanent location of the grammar school at the Harbor, it was again made a circulating school. But before long that school was practically abolished by the town's voting that the money appropriated for its support should be divided among the several districts. In 1839 it was again re-opened, but again discontinued in 1845, to be temporarily revived in 1849, but to be superseded, at the close of that year, by a better plan.

The teachers of the town grammar school, from its establishment to its being superseded, were:

Thomas Riggs	1699	Thomas Pierce	1759
John Newman	1703	Samuel Pierce	1761
John Ring	1705	Thomas Marrett	1762
Joshua Gardner	1707	James Prentice	1763
Joshua Moody	1709	Philemon Stacy	1767 to 1774
Samuel Tompson	1711	Thomas Sanders	1784
Joseph Parsons	1715	Obadiah Parsons	1794
Edward Tompson	1721	John Ewins	1802
William Osgood	1722	Ezra Leonard	1804
Edmund March	1723	Eli Forbes	1804
Isaac Abbott	1724	Nathan Parks	1805
Daniel Witham	1726	Joseph B. Felt	1812
Joseph Manning	1727	John Manning, Jr.	1812
Charles Glover	1727	John Whipple	1812
Daniel Witham	1728	Nathan D. Appleton	1814
Nathaniel Walter	1730	Isaac W. Mulliken	1816
Walter Hastings	1732	Paul Ferson	1817
Mather Withington	1733	Ezra Leonard	1818
Parker Morse	1734	Daniel W. Rogers	1820
Aaron Smith	1735	Thomas Jones	1820
Benjamin White	1739	Daniel W. Rogers	1821
Samuel White	1742	Thomas Cochran	1821
Nehemiah Porter	1746	James Boswell	1822
Thomas Jaques	1747	Ezra Leonard	1822
Jonathan Pierpont	1748	Daniel W. Rogers	1823
Samuel White	1749	Charles Smith (3d)	1823
Thomas Rand	1752	Lonson Nash	1824
Thomas Jaques	1753	William Whipple	1826
Samuel Whittemore	1753	Richard Gardner	1839
Jacob Bailey	1758	Thomas Baker	1849

The conveniences of the district system adopted in 1804 were accompanied by disadvantages growing from the temptation to multiply small districts in sparsely-settled portions of the town. The number of these districts had increased from eleven, in 1804, to twenty-three, in 1840.

The incorporation of Sandy Bay, in 1840, into a separate town diminished the number of districts to sixteen; but new divisions were soon made, and several were in contemplation in 1849, when the School Committee earnestly called the attention of the citizens assembled in town-meeting to the inequality of school advantages and other evils incident to the system then in use. They then brought forward a plan for the reorganization of the school affairs of the town, which, although it involved increased taxation, so commended itself to the people that, after a full discussion, it was adopted "with scarcely a dissenting voice," says Mr. Babson, "at one of the most numerously attended town-meetings ever held." A High School was established, grammar and primary schools were located in different parts of the town, and a judiciously graded system, conferring equal opportunities for rudimentary instruction to the children of all portions of the town, took the place of the unequal and often inefficient system previously in use. At the time of the abolition of the district system there were sixteen hundred and seventy-two children of school age in the town, and the amount appropriated for the annual expenses of the school was $5562.25.

At the present time, 1887, there are twenty-two school buildings in the city; one hundred and two

teachers; four thousand three hundred and twenty-six scholars; and the amount appropriated in 1886, for school purposes, exclusive of repairs of buildings, etc., was fifty-two thousand dollars. The superintendents of schools, with the year of their commencing service, have been:

Thomas Baker.....1850	George Garland.....1877
John J. Babson.....1855	Horace M. Willard.....1872
Henry Cummings.....1857	John W. Allard.....1874
George B. Brooks.....1861	Louis H. Marvel.....1878
John J. Babson.....1862	Marquis L. Hawley.....1881

A private school was established at the Harbor, as early as 1790, in a building erected for the purpose, and called the "Proprietor's School-House." Just how long it continued we have not been able to ascertain, but the building is still standing, on School Street, and is occupied as a dwelling.

Under the ministry of Rev. Daniel D. Smith, a building called the "Murray Institute" was erected on the grounds of the Independent Christian Church, Universalist. It was dedicated in October, 1839, when the "Liberal Institute," a private enterprise of an academic grade, was moved to Gloucester, and opened its school in this building, taking the name of the building, in November, 1840. The trustees were William Babson, J. S. Johnston, Frederick Norwood, John J. Babson, Rev. Daniel D. Smith. Mr. H. M. Nicholas was principal the first two terms. The three subsequent terms were kept by Mr. Thomas Baker, after which the enterprise was abandoned.

The Gloucester Lyceum was formed on the 2d of February, 1830, for the purpose of interesting and instructing the citizens by means of lectures on useful and entertaining subjects, the object being "the improvement of its members in useful knowledge, and the advancement of popular education." Subsequently debates were encouraged, and almost at the first a few books were donated as the nucleus of a library. In February, 1854, after a few ineffectual efforts had been made to interest the citizens in establishing a library, a new movement in that direction was inaugurated and about two thousand dollars were obtained; and in the following August a library, with about one thousand four hundred volumes, was opened for use. In ten years the number of volumes had increased to three thousand, when a destructive fire in the town swept away all but about three hundred volumes. In 1872 the organization incorporated under the name of the Gloucester Lyceum and Sawyer Free Library, "for the establishment and maintenance of a library *forever free* to the inhabitants of the town,—for the delivery of lectures,—for the collection and preservation of objects of natural history and works of art,—and for the promotion of intellectual culture in general." The inducement to this act of incorporation was a gift, in April, 1871, from Samuel E. Sawyer, Esq., of ten thousand dollars, with interest accruing from the beginning of the year. In view of this gift, and of constant benefactions received from Mr. Sawyer, his reluctant consent was obtained to giving his name to the library. In 1884 Mr. Sawyer purchased, at a cost of twenty thousand dollars, a fine property and spacious house on the corner of Middle Street and Dale Avenue, for a permanent home for the library. In July of that year the building was dedicated with appropriate services and ceremonies. With the deed of the property Mr. Sawyer also presented to the trustees an endowment note for twenty thousand dollars. The trustees are Hon. Allan Rogers, Hiram Rich, Joseph O. Procter, Joseph L. Stevens, Edward H. Haskell, Benjamin H. Corliss and Hon. Charles P. Thompson. The library now contains between seven thousand and eight thousand volumes.

"The Cape Ann Scientific and Literary Association" was organized in 1875. Its purpose is to cultivate a knowledge of science in general, and particularly to develop the natural history of Cape Ann. It has already collected an interesting and valuable museum.

The first newspaper issued in Gloucester was the *Gloucester Telegraph*, on the 1st of January, 1827. It was issued weekly until 1834, then semi-weekly until 1873, when it again changed to weekly, and so continued until it ceased to be published, in October, 1876.

The *Gloucester Democrat* was a semi-weekly, first issued the 18th of August, 1834, and merged in the *Salem Advertiser* in February, 1838. Its leading political articles were from the pen of Hon. Robert Rantoul, Jr.

The *Cape Ann Light* was begun as a weekly edition of the *Gloucester Telegraph* January, 1843, and discontinued in August, 1873.

The *Gloucester News*, also a semi-weekly, was first published the 11th of October, 1848; and in December, 1851, was merged in the *Gloucester Telegraph*.

The *Cape Ann Advertiser* was first a monthly, as the *Gloucester Advertiser* from January, 1856, to July, 1857, then semi-monthly to the 5th of December the same year, when it took its present name, and was issued fortnightly until November, 1858, since which time it has been published weekly.

The *Gloucester Bulletin* was a weekly paper from November, 1877, to the 30th of April, 1887.

The *Gloucester News*, daily, issued its first number the 28th of June, 1884, and its last on the 4th of February, 1886.

The *Cape Ann Breeze*, daily, was first published on the 29th of August, 1884.



THE SAWYER FREE LIBRARY,
GLOUCESTER, MASS.

CHAPTER CVIII.

GLOUCESTER—(*Continued*).

The Fisheries.[1]

For two hundred and fifty years the fisheries have been the principal business of Gloucester. Long before the settlement of Plymouth the vessels of France and England had fished on the Grand Banks, and along the coasts of Massachusetts. The French were undoubtedly the pioneers in the cod-fisheries of the Western Atlantic, and in the early part of the sixteenth century the Basques, Normans, Spaniards and Portuguese had fifty ships on the Grand Banks. In 1577 the French had one hundred and fifty vessels employed in the American fisheries. The settlement of Gloucester, as already noted, was attempted at what is called Stage Fort—the name "Stage" denoting that the locality was used for landing fish from the vessels of the Dorchester Company, of England. The cod-fishery constituted at that time, and for many subsequent years, the only branch of the business pursued; and while many other kinds of fish have been discovered, and their pursuit and capture has necessitated the use of a variety of methods, making each peculiar fishery a distinct business, still the cod-fishery remains the one great source of the supply of fish food.

The fisheries of Gloucester principally pursued upon the Ocean Banks, and employing vessels from twenty to one hundred and fifty tons burthen, are the fresh and salt cod, fresh and salt halibut, bake, haddock, and cusk. The mackerel are now largely a deep-water fish, as are the menhaden. The herring fishery employs vessels, although it is principally a coast fishery. Most of these fish are taken on the banks lying between the great ocean-river (the Gulf Stream, which flows north from the Gulf of Mexico) and the shores of North America. The shore fisheries employ smaller vessels and boats, and also include the trap and net fisheries, and extend from the shores some twenty miles. The most important and prolific fishing-ground for Gloucester vessels is St. George's Bank, lying one hundred and twenty miles southeast from the Cape, forming one of the inner banks of the Gulf Stream, in that long succession of fishing banks extending from Hatteras to Newfoundland. The fish taken upon this bank are of a superior quality, and bring a much larger price in the market than fish from other localities. The nearest land is Cape Cod, 95 miles. Brown's Bank, 45 miles from Cape Sable; La Have Bank, 60 miles from Nova Scotia; Western Banks, 80 miles from Nova Scotia; St. Peter's Bank, 75 miles from Newfoundland; Green Bank, 70 miles from Newfoundland; Grand Bank, 90 miles from Newfoundland; Flemish Cape, 300 miles from Newfoundland—are all resorted to by vessels from Gloucester for codfish and halibut. Banks Braddele and Orphan, thirty miles from land, in the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and also the coasts of Greenland and Iceland, are sometimes visited by a few vessels. None of these fisheries are under the jurisdiction of any nation; their area, according to the computation of the United States Fish Commission, is 73,123 geographical square miles. During the year 1886 there were employed in the cod and halibut fisheries on these banks and off the New England coast 283 vessels from Gloucester, averaging 60 tons each; total tonnage, 15,659.55. Aggregate crew, 4117 men. They took and landed at Gloucester 54,048,484 pounds of codfish, 11,886,135 pounds of halibut, 3,983,978 pounds of other ground fish, 29,000 barrels of fish oil.

The methods of taking these fish have varied with the progress of the business. In former years the hand-line with hooks was the only method used. On St. George's Bank, owing to the strong tide, the hand-line with lead sinkers weighing from seven to fourteen pounds is used, but on the other banks the French trawl system is the usual practice. A trawl is a strong line from five hundred to one thousand feet in length, and about three-eighths of an inch in diameter, on which, at intervals of five to seven feet, hooks with short gangings are attached, and it is extended on the bottom of the sea, and secured at either end by a small anchor, whose position is indicated by a buoy line and a floating buoy at the surface. The hooks are all baited, each trawl containing from one hundred to five hundred hooks. The trawls are set by the use of dories, each vessel carrying from six to eight dories, and each dory one trawl. The trawls are under-run a dozen times a day, the fish taken off, hooks rebaited and the trawl reset. Another system used in the in-shore fishery for codfish, is the Norwegian net, which is of strong twine with large meshes; these nets when set form a perpendicular net wall, the lower part of the net being secured with weights to the bottom, the upper section being sustained by hollow glass balls. The nets are consecutively set in a long line, and more fish are taken by them in the spawning season, when the fish appear more reckless than at other times.

The extent of the ocean mackerel-fishing grounds is over seventy thousand square miles. The mackerel fishing-grounds of the Gulf of St. Lawrence, from which the American vessels are excluded, comprises about seven hundred and seventy-five square miles, or about one per cent. of the entire mackerel fishery area.

The mackerel, being a migratory fish, is more uncertain than the cod. The catch of mackerel varies exceedingly in different years.

In 1809 the Massachusetts mackerel fleet took 8225 barrels. The catch varied in subsequent years, being 46,348 barrels in 1818, 100,111 barrels in 1819,

[1] By Capt. Fitz J. Babson.

and in 1830 and 1831, 308,463 and 383,548 barrels respectively. This was the largest catch under the hand-line process. In 1839 the catch dwindled to 74,268 barrels, and from that time until 1844 varying from 50,000 to 86,000 barrels yearly. In 1851 the catch rose to 329,000 barrels, falling, in 1859, to 99,000 barrels; reaching 306,000 barrels in 1863. All these immense variations occurred under the hand-line system, before traps, seines or common nets were used to any great extent to take mackerel, showing that the fish by their own volition seek or shun our waters. In 1865 the purse seine was introduced, and has now become the method of taking mackerel by the American fleet. The catch has varied from 256,000 barrels, in 1865, to 105,000 in 1877, rising to 304,000 barrels in 1884, falling to 92,000 barrels in 1886, proving beyond question that the new methods of seines and traps have not taken as many mackerel or caused greater fluctuations in the catch than the old hand-line methods. All the various kinds of fish that frequent the coast from Cape Sable to Hatteras have shown the same peculiarities as the mackerel. The sea bass, scup, squeteague and menhaden are plenty for years, then disappear for a time; this also long before seines or traps were in operation. To-day Narragansett Bay is alive with fish never seen there before, a species of the herring family resembling sardines. A large number of codfish are around the shores of Massachusetts; and Ipswich Bay for this season is more valuable to the fishermen than the Grand Banks. We, as yet, hardly appreciate the immensity of the great life of the ocean; that its means of propagation and increase are unlimited; that the natural destruction of fish life by their own species and by predatory fowl are so great that man's effort in this direction is but a drop in a bucket in comparison. The defined and accepted fact is that the amount of fish taken for human consumption has no appreciable effect on the life of the ocean, and that all laws that attempt to legislate fish into or out of localities in the ocean are puerile and futile; that fish of different species appear and disappear for seasons on different coasts and localities by causes beyond our dictation and explanation. So that, in dealing with the ocean fisheries, the laws of man collapse and disappear at the moment of contact with the first wave that breaks along the shore.

The first attempt to take mackerel was by extending poles from the sides of the vessel, to which a number of lines with hooks were attached, and by sailing through the schools the mackerel would bite at the bait and thus be caught. This was called drailing. After mackerel became an important element in the general fisheries, bait was chopped fine and thrown overboard, and the fish were thus attracted to the surface and caught with hand lines. After the invention of the bait-mill, by which a large quantity of bait could be ground fine in a short time, menhaden, being an oily fish, were almost wholly used for mackerel bait, as its oily nature caused it to float near the surface.

The Gloucester fishermen resorting to the Gulf of St. Lawrence for mackerel, by means of this feeding process with this oily bait, that could not be procured by the provincial fishermen (as the menhaden do not go as far north as the provincial waters), attracted the mackerel to their fleet, so that a great many were taken. But since the abandonment of the hand-line and bait-feeding process, the Gulf of St. Lawrence inshore mackerel fishery has been worthless to American fishermen.

The total number of vessels engaged in the mackerel fishery from Gloucester during the year 1886 was 126; tonnage, 9622.45; aggregate crews, 1953 men. The amount of mackerel taken was 52,340 pounds, not including the amount sold fresh. There were 50,500,500 pounds of salt used on fish products, also 55,575,000 pounds of ice. The entire amount of food fish landed at Gloucester was 91,951,879 pounds.

The history of the fisheries of Gloucester would be incomplete without an exposition of the various treaties with Great Britain and their effect on our relations with Canada up to the present time. This is contained in the following address before the American Fishery Union, by Captain Fitz J. Babson:

"The treaty of 1783, by which the independence of the United States was established, is interesting, as affording proof of the great interest taken in the fisheries by the American Commissioners, John Adams, Benjamin Franklin, John Jay and Henry Laurens. It was doubtless the intention of that treaty to secure to the American nation their territorial rights, both upon land and sea, and the definition of our landed boundaries were not more explicit than were the rights secured by that treaty for our fisheries both upon the ocean and in the waters adjacent to the Provinces. The concession by Great Britain was genuine, and while with her ordinary assumption she gave us the right to fish on the Grand Bank and other banks of Newfoundland, and in the Gulf of St. Lawrence, over which she had no jurisdiction whatever, she also acknowledged an equal participation in the shore fisheries of her American possessions, and gave this right to the United States in perpetuity, reserving only the use of the shores to her own fishermen. This right or grant was not a partial liberty, but was a defined national settlement, based upon the same power and principles as that conveying our landed territory. This treaty distinctly shows the animus of British diplomacy; first to assume unlimited power, and then by its abandonment claim concession. The Headland line theory is based upon the same premises, and is valuable only as a pretence with which to purchase some substantial benefit, claiming as she does jurisdiction of the Bay of Fundy and the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and the navigation of the Straits of Canso. And this theory is still held by Great Britain, although in abeyance at the present time.

"The war of 1812, which was settled by the treaty of Ghent in 1814, was seized upon by Great Britain as a pretext for the annulling of the fishery provisions of 1783, and although this view was resisted by the United States, still a commission was appointed to settle the differences which had arisen between the two nations, represented on the part of the United States by Albert Gallatin and Richard Rush. This commission reported the treaty of 1818, which has been the cause of nearly all the trouble between Canada and our fishermen. By the terms of this treaty a complete surrender was made of all the shore fisheries except on the southern and western parts of Newfoundland, around the Magdalen Islands and northward along the Labrador coast through the Straits of Belisle indefinitely. This of itself would seem to have been the extreme limit of concession on the part of our commissioners, but lost to all considerations of common sense or shrewdness, they allowed the insertion of a clause which forbade American fishing vessels entering Canadian ports for any purpose except for shelter or to procure wood or water, and repairing damages.

"It would be unfair not to state that at that time the mackerel fishery was hardly in existence, and the commissioners had no knowledge of the immense fleets of American fishermen, which under the hand-line system and the use of immense quantities of bait, would develop the mackerel fisheries of the Gulf of St. Lawrence as much or more to the profit of the Provincials as to themselves. But the result of their folly still remains, unadapted as it is either to the present development of our fisheries or to the principles of amity and fair dealing. This clause of the treaty forms the basis of all the harsh and coercive legislation that Canada will use against us. If it were not for that clause in the treaty, Canada would not dare to so outrage the comity of nations, but under its provisions she presumes to seize our vessels for buying bait, or for alleged fishing within her jurisdiction, and vessels have been condemned upon evidence that no other nation except the United States would ever have submitted to. The United States should waive all so-called privileges under this treaty, which are wholly and totally worthless, and demand for American vessels in Canadian ports all the rights that Canadian vessels have in American ports.

"By the treaty of Washington we obtained no commercial rights; all the concession given by that treaty was simply to fish in-shore, so that if Canada, taking the wood, water and shelter clause as a basis, sees fit, she can by legislation, exclude our vessels from every commercial right of buying bait, supplies, or ice. This fact should be understood, although such legislation may belong to a semi-barbarous age, and its exercise would be to the detriment of and almost the destruction of her own people; for many of her fishing communities derive a large part of their sustenance from selling bait to the Americans.

"While under the treaty of Washington our vessels with their immense seines could have taken all the bait and left the people to starve, they have not done it, but have continued to buy their bait of the local fishermen as though no treaty existed. So that actual reciprocity of free fishing, if carried into effect, would take their entire living from many of the Dominion shore fishermen. Therefore it is utterly impracticable. The treaty of 1818 enforced against us will starve them; and practical reciprocity will starve them.

"The reciprocity treaty of 1854, was the result largely of the coercive policy of Canada under this treaty. And as at that time the only method of taking mackerel was by hook and line, and the profuse use of bait, it was thought advisable to secure the inshore fisheries of the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and at the same time be relieved of the hostile annoyance of Canadian cutters and British men-of-war. No one will deny that at that time there were some benefits derived from the exercise of this privilege. It had the effect to stimulate the mackerel fisheries of Canada, and by the use of immense quantities of menhaden by American vessels for bait, the mackerel were kept together instead of scattering for food and were thus made available both to the American vessels and Canadian shore boats. It was to this feeding process of the Americans that the Gulf mackerel fisheries owe the prominence that has been given them, and the results of our methods were the chief dependence of Canada in enlarging upon the value of these fisheries before the Halifax Commission. There is neither hook and line or menhaden used in the mackerel fishery now to any extent. Mackerel shun the hook, and what few menhaden are taken are used principally for oil or codfish bait, and we could not if we would renew the old methods.

"The termination of the reciprocity treaty in 1866, again brought into operation the treaty of 1818, and the manner of dealing with the question became a matter of much political interest in Canada. It was evident that whatever party policy would secure reciprocity with the United States, would be endorsed by the people. The system of licenses which, by increasing stringency defeated itself, being fifty cents per ton in 1866, one dollar per ton in 1867, two dollars per ton in 1868 and 1869 for the privilege of fishing inside the three-mile limit, was more than the privilege was worth, and American vessels refused to pay it. Upon its termination it was announced by the public men of Canada that not only all that could be claimed under their construction of the treaty of 1818 would be enforced, but that a Provincial cutter system should be inaugurated, commanded by men who were in sympathy with the coercive principles of the government, and who could be depended upon to cause the American fishermen all the trouble and annoyance possible, for the ostensible purpose of forcing the United States again to renew the reciprocity treaty. This has been done to the letter.

"The leniency of the officers of the regular British naval service toward the fishermen was not satisfactory; in fact the wood, water and shelter clause was not to be considered in the spirit in which it was made, (simply restrictive,) it was to be made aggressive; and construing the language of the Imperial Act 59 of Geo. III. in which a vessel preparing to fish in British waters is deemed criminal, they seized vessels that were buying bait to use on the Grand Banks, restricted them from buying ice or supplies, claiming that such acts were preparing to fish. I cite these things simply to show how Canada exaggerates what was intended to be a simple restrictive regulation into a criminal law, and also to show the supine indifference of the United States in submitting to such wholesale piracy.

"True, President Grant issued a proclamation after Congress had passed unanimously the memorial resolutions sent from this city asking for a declaration of non-intercourse if these acts were continued, and doubtless some retaliatory measures would have been adopted had not the proposals for the Washington treaty involving the fishery question at this time appeared. The result of that treaty gave to the fishermen of the United States simply the right to take fish of every kind in the waters of Canada, viz., inside of three miles. We acquired no commercial rights whatever. The wood, water and shelter clause of the treaty of 1818 still remains, and is in force to day, and was modified simply by the permission contained in the Treaty of Washington, to take fish inside of three miles. If there was virtue in Canada's enforcing that clause from 1866 to 1873 it should also have been done when the Treaty of Washington was in force. If it was as has been claimed an injury to her people to buy supplies, bait and ice of them before, it was so under the Treaty of Washington, as that treaty had no provision for these purposes.

"The treaty of Washington was fondly expected to be the panacea for all the difficulties that afflicted the two nations. The primal feature was the settlement of the Alabama claims, and to succeed in that was the ambition of our commissioners. The fisheries again played the part of make weight; and Great Britain accepted and paid the Geneva award, holding the almost assured fishery award of the Halifax commission as an offset. Fifteen millions were paid under the award of Geneva; and fourteen millions five hundred thousand dollars were claimed for allowing our fishermen the privilege to take fish from the ocean within three miles of their shores. Suffice it to say that we take neither halibut nor codfish, speaking in a generic sense, and which comprise three-fourths of the Atlantic fisheries, in British waters. We buy our herring, capelin and squid entirely from the local fishermen, paying them in cash or its equivalent, and the only fishery of theirs that is available is the mackerel fishery, and what few of these we take as shown by sworn statements of the captains of the vessels, has cost us nearly two dollars for every dollar received.

"We are now in possession of facts and figures, statistics, decisions and reports, such as never before were within reach of the Government. There can be no excuse for further failure. The Census Report of Prof. Goode devoted to the fisheries is exhaustive in detail. The proceedings of the Halifax Commission with its three volumes of testimony; the arguments, reports and decision of the Fortune Bay case, and the innumerable reports of outrage on our fishermen, sustained by sworn testimony on file in the State Department, with a detailed affidavit of the trip and catch of every American vessel that has fished for mackerel in the Gulf of St. Lawrence for the past four years. This with the available personal testimony of persons both scientific and practical, gives us an advantage never possessed before. It is true that amid the great industries of the Country our interest in dollars and cents may appear small. The indomitable pluck and energy of the men who own and man these vessels can alone account for the existence of the fisheries. It is not the pecuniary results that are so very encouraging, for it has been shown over and over again that the net earnings of the average fishermen are not over $300 per year at best; and among the fishing owners of the Country it will be hard to find many who have made a hundred thousand dollars in the production of fish alone. It has been said that the consumers have an interest to be consulted. True, but no portion of this Country would desire men to expose themselves as our fishermen do at much less than $300 per year, so if objection is to come, let it be based upon the handling and transportation, not on the poor pittance of the fishermen, and it has been demonstrated that it is upon the cost of production only that the reduction by means of foreign competition comes.

"The owners and fishermen suffer loss and not the distributors. And if by reason of this loss we are unable to pursue the business, then it must go to the Provinces, and without competition here it becomes a monopoly to their hands; and who ever heard of a monopoly making anything cheaper. The Canadians under the stimulus of our open markets have now increased their fleet to nearly, if not quite, 500 vessels. Would it have been an injury to have those vessels built here to have drawn men here from the Provinces and the north of Europe to man them? for these men able and willing to work become citizens producers and consumers as well? Would not their skilled competition,

added to the advantages of our citizenship, have been as valuable to [illegible] in keeping the cost of fish at a fair price as though they stayed at home and sent the product of their labor here? The next war, if we have one, will be fought on the ocean. Who has the most interest in maintaining the fisheries that produce the finest seamen known, the few men who own the vessels, or the 56,000,000 of people who must look to them for their defense? Canada has over 75,000 men in her fisheries, every one of them an English sailor and liable, if needed, to do duty in her navy. Where will the United States look for her men to man the magnificent navy we are to have in the near future?

"The great West has developed her immense resources, opened up her grand territory, largely by subsidies assisting railroads, coming from the votes and pockets of the whole people. The south under the broadening influence of an education for her people, sustained by the national wealth, shall yet see a prosperity unequaled by any section, when upon every stream that now runs untaxed to the sea shall be heard the whir of the loom and spindle; her cotton, cultivated by the negro planters, shall be turned into cloth by the hands of the skilled operatives that she will call there to operate her mills, and with the prosperity of her farmers her wealth will be equal to her opportunities. In this prosperity we are all benefited. And it is from these sections that it is proposed to organize the opposition that shall crush out the New England fisheries. Can there be any American citizen knowing the facts, and rejoicing in the glory and prosperity of his Country, who is ready, at the instance of foreign influence, to strike down the fisheries because he might possibly buy a mackerel or codfish 1-2 a cent cheaper, thereby reducing the wages of the operative fishermen to starvation prices and destroying the only element of defense we have upon the ocean. I said knowing the facts, and it is our duty to see that they do know them. We have never yet failed of a unanimous response to our appeal when it has been properly understood at Washington. There are many matters affecting our marine jurisprudence that need correction and amendment. Our fisheries have an element of strength in being a food product. In the consumption of manufactured articles a person can largely diminish their personal use, but food he must have. In chemical analysis, fish have not received the rank to which they are entitled among staples, and relatively the prices are not graded as they should be.

"To-day fish and mackerel are the cheapest food in the market according to their value as a sustenance, and there are forthcoming, tables from the highest scientific authority, that will do justice to our product. Many of our people need education in the use of fish, for while the fish of the great lakes and the southern coasts and rivers are largely used, there are none can take the place of our cured cod and mackerel when properly prepared. The change that has been so rapidly taking place in the care and disposal of fish whereby we now place on the market a large part of our product in a fresh condition, and which necessitates the use of large quantities of ice, brings into prominence a question that has heretofore not received the attention which it now demands. The competition of the Dominion is not going to be bounded by the sale of boneless, dried and pickled or green fish, but they will compete with our vessels with their fresh fish, halibut and herring. The tariff places fish fresh for consumption on the free list. Now this qualification must be defined, and it may require legislation to do it. The present aspect of departmental decisions would imply that fish fresh for consumption were fish fresh caught, and not preserved by artificial means. The meaning of the term is not fresh in contradistinction to salt, nor does it mean fresh preserved fish, such as are kept sweet by freezing, but simply the fresh caught fish that would reach the market in that condition and enter into the immediate consumption of the people without the aid of any artificial means whatever.

On the prompt settlement of this question the so-called fresh trips of our vessels depend for protection. The decisions of the department on [illegible] fish, to which the provisions of the present treaty [illegible] apply, [illegible] imperative that British fresh caught fish are free [illegible] as they are in that condition. But after their purchase [illegible] if they are not disposed of and actually consumed [illegible] fish [illegible] stock, the preservation of them by these [illegible] as not answering the demands of the tariff [illegible] consumption free. These decisions apply [illegible]

"[illegible] of the United States, and also at the Department [illegible] of opinion as to what constitutes the product of the American fisheries. The importance of an intelligent [illegible] of the question [illegible] when we realize that it [illegible] only which the tariff designates free fish, viz., all fish that [illegible] product of the American fisheries. Our Winter herring fishery as pursued by our fishing vessels, is a fishery that they are obliged to pursue according to the methods peculiar to that fishery. That is, to avail themselves of the services of the shoremen with their boats and nets; otherwise they could not pursue the business. It has been demonstrated, over and over again, that this class of bait fisheries cannot be controlled by legislation, Treaties, Resolutions, Boards of Trade or Chambers of Commerce. They must be used, if used at all, in accordance with natural rights and natural laws. This class of fisheries is the principal support of a large portion of the shore population where these fish are taken. They cannot, they ought not, they will not allow participation in these fisheries. Any talk of reciprocity that will give these fisheries to us is nonsense. Now these people are willing that our vessels should come and employ them to take these fish for us. They are desirous to welcome our people on these terms. It is the only method by which this fishery can be pursued. There has been a continued, persistent effort on the part of some of the Department officials to classify the entire herring fishery as a commercial transaction, liable to all the restrictions and expenses attending a foreign voyage. In fact one decision imperatively demanded that every vessel leaving an American port to go for herring, should sail under a register, forgetting that the treaty gave to American vessels the same rights in British waters, so far as the taking of fish is concerned, as they had in our own, and that the methods employed could not be called in question by either government, in Mr. Evarts' position on the Fortune Bay question, that treaty rights were superior to local laws on either side.

"Now, treaty or no treaty, we have to abide by natural laws in the herring fishery, and the question has got to be settled, how far herring, procured by the only method possible, shall be recognized as the product of the American fisheries if taken in this manner and brought to our markets by American vessels. The Hon. Secretary of the Treasury, Mr. McCullough, during his former administration, sent to Messrs. Hall & Myrich, American Merchants at Charlottetown, Prince Edward Island, a letter explanatory of this clause of the tariff, in which fish cured on an American vessel under the American flag constituted a product of the American fisheries under the law. There is necessity to have our own legislation and the action of our own government right, in order that the American fisheries can have their fullest development.

"If there were not such serious consequences involved, it would be amusing to see our Canadian neighbors, who twelve years ago were frantic over the immense value of their inshore fisheries, now so terribly anxious lest some form of compromise should fail to give them our markets, and confessing that all the money they ever made was during reciprocity. The present statement has the merit of truth, and the fact that so long as the American fisheries exist and have our own markets they are a bar to this great prosperity of our rivals, is one of the strongest arguments in our favor. But the facts and figures prove the utter worthlessness of the statement made twelve years ago, and we do not hear any Canadian claim of fourteen and one-half millions any more. No, they would sacrifice the rental of five and one-half millions for another twelve years of free markets for their fish; in fact, the truth exists, and did exist twelve years ago that Reciprocity was the greatest of boons to them, and now they acknowledge it. Why do they care for free markets if the consumer pays the duty? One of their vessels brings in 500 barrels of mackerel into Gloucester next July, mackerel are selling at $10, the captain sells his mackerel, gets $5000 for them and taking $1000 goes to the Custom House and pays his duties. Did the merchant who bought his mackerel pay him any more because the duties were $2 per barrel? Not at all. Did the merchant ask the retailer any more for those mackerel because the captain had to pay $2 per barrel duties? Not at all. Did the retailer ask the consumer any more for the same reason? Not at all. Now suppose there was no American mackerel fleet, which by their natural competition and success were indicating the original price of the mackerel and the British vessels had the making of the price, who would pay the duty? Assuredly by having control of the market, by the effect of no competition, he could dictate his own price and add the duties to the price of the mackerel, and in that way the consumer would pay it. But the American fleet maintained, increased mackerel would be sold as they always have been when largely produced, at low prices.

"The Massachusetts and Maine fleets have taken altogether about 499,391 bbls. of mackerel the season of 1884; of these but 21,293 were taken in the Gulf of St. Lawrence. Canada takes from 100,000 to 150,000 barrels yearly, the large preponderance of the American catch regulates the price for the bulk of the fish which forms the actual staple food, although the American market will pay most any price for from 10,000 to 20,000 barrels of extra mess mackerel which like fine grades of

halibut must be classed under the head of luxuries. It is to the mass of the fish which goes to the laboring consumers of the country, and is sold by the small retailers, that the rules of supply and demand apply, and as four-fifths of all the mackerel are taken by the American fleet off our own shores the larger the American fleet the more mackerel are taken, and they are afforded at a low price to the consumer.

"The exaggerated valuation of all the fisheries will be better understood when it is shown as it already has been, that fish in the water are really valueless. That is, if costs all they are worth to pursue, take and deliver them at the wharves. This is a plain fact, and the books of any fishing concern will show, that allowing a fair valuation for the charter of the vessel, wages of the crew, subsistence and other outfits, the average expenses are equal to the average trips taken. Take our own mackerel fleet in the Gulf of St. Lawrence the year 1884, sixty of the finest and best equipped vessels commanded by the most experienced and persevering captains that sail out of Gloucester. They gave this fishery a thorough and fair trial, and this is the result. Whole number of mackerel taken, 15,299 bbls.; number of barrels taken outside three miles, 12,161; number bbls. taken inside, 3,138; value of outside catch, $68,662; value of inside catch, $18,190; value of the whole, $86,852. This is the consolidation of the trips as they were reported and sworn to by the captains of the vessels after they arrived home. It comprehends the value of the fish minus the expense of barrels, salt, packing and inspection. There were 267 American vessels fishing for mackerel off our own shores and there were 92 of our American vessels went into the Gulf of St. Lawrence for mackerel. The average catch of the shore fleet was 1870 barrels to each vessel. The average catch of the bay fleet was 231 barrels to each vessel.

"Now what did it cost to produce those fish? Take first the charter of the vessels for the time they were absent and the expense of outfits, victualing, etc.,—$127,517, then add the wages of the men at the rate they would be paid for their time as sailors,—$80,852, and we have $208,369, actually expended to produce $86,859 worth of mackerel in the whole Gulf of St. Lawrence, and but $18,190 of it in the limits of that magnificent fishery, for which $14,500,000 were claimed and $5,500,000 paid. And in addition to this we find that the United States remits in duties $624,000 yearly to Canada on fish products, making a total in the twelve years of the treaty of $7,488,000, which with the five and one half millions, make a total of $12,988,0.0, or nearly the amount first claimed, viz., fourteen and one-half millions. And all this is for the privilege of taking a few mackerel, every one of which costs us in labor and expense more than it is actually worth. From July 1873 to January 1885, the whole of the fishing season of the twelve years of the treaty, our vessels took in the Gulf of St. Lawrence, 286,435 barrels of mackerel of which 95,480 bbls. were taken inside of the three-mile limit. The value of the whole was $2,100,802, the value of the inside catch $700,320. There were employed 1160 vessels at a cost on the average for charter, outfits and store and wages $2,801,122. There were 190,955 bbls. caught outside of the three-mile limit, worth $1,400,472, making a difference in amount of expense against the whole product of the Gulf of St. Lawrence mackerel fishery of nearly $800,000, and against the inshore fishery of nearly $2,000,000 more expenses than value of mackerel taken. Now how do we account for this? The former methods of taking mackerel by hook and line, left the mackerel free option whether he would be taken or not. He had free course to make his way along our shores or to come in from the Gulf Stream, and in this passage, like migratory birds, he went in flocks, or schools. Nothing but his own appetite betrayed him, and this is not peculiar to mackerel. Then they filled our creeks and harbors, and the Gulf of St. Lawrence seemed to be their northern resort. With the mackerel came the menhaden. Now where are the menhaden? the waters that knew them will know them no more, and the mackerel, not even coosulted as to whether he will be caught, is intercepted at every mile of his progress, the schools broken, the line of march destroyed, and he, like the menhaden, cannot court the shore as formerly. So while seining, according to the highest scientific authority we have, may not perceptibly affect the great life of the ocean, still it does affect localities and courses of migratory fish, and it undoubtedly affected the shore fisheries of the Gulf of St. Lawrence and our own immediate shores, so that the three-mile limit is not what it was formerly, and its value is one of the myths of the past.

"The traps are a purely local property and should be operated only by local fishermen in the waters of any country. These with the net and boat fisheries should never be an object of barter or trade or reciprocity by any country, for by the very nature of their operation they will not admit of foreign participants. If we want these shore bait fish we must pay, the fishermen are glad to sell them. The vessel fishery is an ocean fishery, and the mackerel and the fish have to be sailed for and taken where the fisherman himself is sole arbiter of his rights.

"Now what is the summary of all this?

"1st.—The abrogation of all treaty clauses relative to the fisheries, including the treaty of 1818.

"2d.—The maintainance of the tariff as it now exists 'defining the clause' fish fresh for immediate consumption, to be fish not preserved by any artificial means whatever.

"3d.—Such legislation on the part of congress as shall define the products of the American fisheries entitled to free entry to be: all fish of every kind taken by vessels of the United States licensed for the fisheries in any waters, or by the crews of vessels or by any persons, means or methods employed by the masters of said vessels and which are delivered fresh on board such vessels and cured or preserved thereon and brought to the United States by such vessels, shall be deemed the product of the American fisheries and entitled to free entry. It being understood that the above liberty shall not apply to the employment of vessels under foreign registry or to their crews, boats, seines, nets or other appurtenances belonging to such foreign vessels.

"The object of this legislation is to give to our herring vessels and bankers the right to employ the shore fishermen in the taking of her ring or other bait fish which cannot be obtained in any other manner, and putting this and perhaps other kinds of fisheries into the hands of our fishermen for curing, transportation and distribution, giving to the shore boat fishermen what is their natural right, the taking of these fish, and our own fishermen the right to cure them and bring them to market.

"This has been the practice for the past 25 years, and legislation defining the rights of American fishermen in this business will save them from a vast amount of revenue quibbling and expense, which has invariably been the case in New York and other ports. Our government is bound in honor after building up Canadian fisheries for the past twelve years to give some heed to the claims of her fishermen. Give to the fishermen of the United States a permanent policy of protection for the same number of years that Canada has had our own markets, and we will quadruple our fleet and quadruple our number of seamen as she has done.

"Anything less than this and our country is a marine beggar without vessels or sailors, resources or naval strength. Therefore in no political sense, in no sectional sense, I submit that the American fisheries are the wards as well as the defense of the nation and every treaty or act of legislation calculated to diminish their growth and strength is the act of suicide and national lunacy."

Present scientific methods utilize every portion of the fish and fish waste. Glue factories and the manufacture of fertilizers are important industries. The multiplication of fish-traps along the shore for taking bait and food fish is an imperative need of the ocean fisheries. The system of co-operation of capital and labor that has been in practice in Gloucester for centuries, by which the owner furnishes the vessel, boats, seines, outfits and provisions, and the crew furnish their labor and share equally in the products of the voyage, is a good lesson to the labor reformers of the day. Altogether the fisheries of Gloucester demand active enterprise and courage and a physical exposure and risk unknown to any other business. They produce the finest vessels of their class, and the best-trained seamen in the world, who would be invaluable to the country in case of foreign war. Every maritime nation, not excepting Canada, encourages and sustains their fisheries except the United States.

The census of 1880 shows the amount and value of the United States fisheries to be as follows:

Number of men employed	131,426
Number of vessels	6,605
Number of boats	44,804
Value of vessels	$9,357,282
Value of boats	2,465,393
Value of nets, apparatus and outfits	8,145,261

Value of other capital and shore property	17,987,413
Value of fishery products	44,546,153

During the year 1886 the total number of vessels engaged in the fisheries of all kinds, from Gloucester, was four hundred and nine; aggregate tonnage, twenty-six thousand two hundred and eighty-two; number of men in vessels, six thousand and seventy. The subsidiary industries dependent upon the production of fish support more than one million people.

The official fishery report of Canada shows:

Number of men employed	59,493
Number of vessels	1,119
Number of boats	28,492
Value of vessels	$2,021,633
Value of boats	852,254
Value of nets	1,219,264
Value of fishing plant	6,697 460
Value of yield of fisheries	17,702,973

During thirteen seasons, from July 1, 1873, to December 31, 1885, when the entire shore fisheries of Canada were open and free to American fishermen, there were taken by the American fleet in the open ocean three million five hundred and seventy-nine thousand nine hundred and fifty-one barrels of mackerel, valued at eight dollars and a fraction per barrel; total, twenty-eight million one hundred and sixty-one thousand three hundred and ninety-seven dollars. There were taken inside of Canadian waters ninety-eight thousand four hundred and ninety-four barrels of mackerel by the American fleet, valued at eight hundred and eight thousand six hundred and thirty-five dollars, being less than three per cent. of the entire catch.

CHAPTER CIX.

GLOUCESTER—(*Continued*).

Ship Building—The "Schooner"—Foreign and Domestic Trade—Custom-House—Post-office—The Granite Quarries—Banks.

As the first business of the town was fishing, so, for many years, all business was compelled to use the ocean for a highway. Ship-building began as early as 1643, when one Griffin, employed William Stevens and other ship-carpenters to construct a craft for him. Johnson, in his "Wonder-working Providence," written about this time, takes notice of the "good timber for shipping" to be found on Cape Ann, and speaks of several vessels that had been built, but not until 1661 have we any other than the above-mentioned particular instance of such work. No further instances can be specified until near the close of the century. Nor does it appear that any vessel larger than a sloop was owned in the town till the beginning of the eighteenth century. Mr. Babson observes that "there is no subject connected with the first century of the history of New England about which so little is known as of the small vessels employed in navigating its waters. . . . The conclusion to which all inquiry on the subject will lead is, that little is known about the vessels used on the coast of New England before 1713, when Capt. Andrew Robinson, of Gloucester, gave a new name to our marine vocabulary, and a new rig to the commerce of the world. A current tradition of the town relates the origin of the 'schooner;' and abundant testimony of both a positive and negative kind confirms the story so strongly that it is unnecessary to take further notice here of the verbal account. Dr. Moses Prince, brother of the annalist, visiting in this town, Sept. 25, 1721, says: 'Went to see Capt. Robinson's lady, &c. This gentleman was the first contriver of schooners, and built the first of the sort about eight years since; and the use that is now made of them, being so much known, has convinced the world of their conveniency beyond other vessels, and shows how mankind is obliged to this gentleman for this knowledge.' Nearly seventy years afterwards another visitor gives some further particulars of this interesting fact. Cotton Tufts, Esq., connected with us by marriage, being in Gloucester Sept. 8, 1790, writes: 'I was informed (and committed the same to writing) that the kind of vessels called "schooners" derived their name from this circumstance, viz., Mr. Andrew Robinson, of that place, having constructed a vessel which he masted and rigged in the same manner as schooners are at this day, on her going off the stocks and passing into the water, a bystander cried out, "*Oh, how she scoons!*" Robinson instantly replied, "A scooner let her be!" From which time, vessels thus masted and rigged have gone by the name of "schooners;" before which, vessels of this description were not known in Europe nor America. This account was confirmed to me by a great number of persons in Gloucester.' The strongest negative evidence confirms these statements. No marine dictionary, no commercial record, no merchant's inventory, of a date prior to 1713, containing the word 'schooner' has yet been discovered; and it may, therefore, be received as an historical fact that the first vessel of this class had her origin in Gloucester, as stated by the respectable authorities above cited."

The first maritime business of the town, aside from the fisheries, was probably the transportation of cord-wood to Boston and other places on the coast. In 1706 no less than thirty sloops were employed in carrying wood from one section of the town alone; and the whole number engaged in this business was probably not less than fifty. But, of course, this could not continue many years. Foreign commerce was of no great extent prior to the Revolutionary War, but after the establishing of peace it rose to considerable importance. Nearly fifty ships, brigs, schooners and sloops were employed in it in 1790, and for a number of years thereafter, Gloucester vessels visited most of the principal ports of Europe and the West Indies; and a few made voyages beyond the Cape of Good Hope. There was considerable trade with the West

Indies, Bilbao and Lisbon. The West India cargoes were fish and other provisions, and the home voyages brought sugar, molasses, rum and coffee. Little except fish was sent to Europe, the exchange for which was salt, fruit, wine and specie. About 1790, Gloucester vessels began to trade with Surinam, the capital of Dutch Guiana, and continued it profitably for many years, but it is now abandoned. The chief article of export was hake, though large quantities of beef, pork, lard, hams and flour were taken out. The return cargoes were made up of molasses, sugar, coffee and cocoa. A whaler was sent out just after the close of the war, but how fortunate or otherwise it proved, is unknown. In 1832 two companies were formed for renewing that business, and two ships were fitted out, but the result was not satisfactory, and the enterprise was abandoned. As early as 1732 domestic trade with the Southern Colonies was begun, and continued through that century. Mr. Babson says of this trade: "The voyages were made in the winter season, when there was no employment for vessels or men in fishing, and the business was conducted in a manner now little practiced in any part of the world. In most cases, perhaps in all, no wages were paid to master or crew; but, in lieu thereof, the privilege of bringing home a certain quantity of Southern produce was granted to each one, who was also allowed, probably, to take out fish on private adventure; as, in the few invoices preserved, this article does not appear among the shipments by the owners. In these invoices the principal articles are salt, rum, sugar and molasses. Then follows a long list of other things, including iron-ware, wooden-ware, hats, caps, patterns of cloth for breeches, handkerchiefs and stockings; making, in all, a cargo of about £200 value. On these voyages the rivers, creeks and inlets of Virginia, Maryland and North Carolina, were visited; there the cargo was bartered in small quantities for corn, beans, bacon, live hogs and other products of the country."

As early as 1683 Gloucester was made one of the lawful ports of the colony, and annexed to Salem District. In 1776 the General Court of the State passed an act, which provided that in the "several sea-ports of Boston, Salem, Marblehead, Gloucester, etc., within this State, there be an office kept, to be called and known by the name of the naval office, for the purpose of entering and clearing of all ships and other vessels trading to or from this State, to take bonds in adequate penalty for observing the regulations made or which shall be made by the General Congress or the General assembly of this State concerning trade, take manifests upon oath of all cargoes exported or imported, and keep fair accounts and entries thereof, give bills of health when desired, and sign certificates that the requisites for qualifying vessels to trade have been complied with, and the fees to be demanded and received in said office shall be those following and no greater, that is to say:

	s.	d.
"For entering any ship and vessel from any part of the State	2	0
For clearing any ship and vessel to any part of the State	2	0
For entering any ship and vessel from any other of the United States	6	0
For clearing any ship and vessel to any other of the United States	6	0
For entering any ship and vessel from a foreign voyage	6	0
For clearing any ship and vessel for a foreign voyage	6	0
For a register	6	0
For indorsing a register	1	0
For recording indorsement	1	6
For any bond	2	0
For a certificate to cancel bond	1	0
For a bill of health	2	0
For a permit to unload	1	0
For a cocket	0	3
For a let pass	0	8"

Samuel Whittemore received the appointment of naval officer for Gloucester in November of that year, and was reappointed annually, except during a portion of the year 1782, when Solomon Gorham was in the office, until 1789, when a United States custom-house was established.

At the time of establishing a custom-house by the general government upwards of seven thousand tons of shipping were registered and enrolled in Gloucester—a part of it engaged in the fisheries, and the rest in the trade before described. From 1795 to 1810 there were eight ships and twenty-five brigs owned and fitted at this port. At the present time the business of Gloucester with foreign ports is confined almost wholly to those from which it imports the salt used in the fisheries,—about one hundred thousand hogsheads per annum; and the places in the British provinces from which it receives firewood, fish, potatoes and a few other articles.

The following-named have been collectors of customs:

	Appointed.		Appointed.
Epes Sargent	1789	Eli F. Stacy	1844
William Tuck	1796	John L. Rogers	1849
John Gibaut	1802	Frederick G. Low	1850
John Kittredge	1805	William H. Manning	1853
William Pearce, Jr.	1822	Gorham Babson	1858
William Beach	1829	John S. Webber	1861
George D. Hale	1839	William A. Pew	1865
George W. Pearce	1841	Fitz J. Babson	1869
Eben H. Stacy	1843	David S. Presson	1885

A post-office was not established in Gloucester till after the adoption of the Federal Constitution. Before that time the nearest post-office was at Beverly (then a part of Salem), to which place a messenger went twice a week to obtain letters. The messenger received and delivered his letters at the tavern kept by Philemon Haskell. The first postmaster at Gloucester was Henry Phelps, and the office was kept at his store, from which place it was changed at the convenience of his successor, and had no permanent location till the erection of a building by the government for the double purpose of a custom-house and post-office. At the time of establishing the office,

and until 1816, the following were the rates of postage: Single letter, under 40 miles, 8 cents; under 90 miles, 10 cents; under 150 miles, 12½ cents; under 300 miles, 17 cents; under 500 miles, 20 cents; over 500 miles, 25 cents.

Gloucester postmasters, with dates of their appointments, have been:

Henry Phelps (probably) 1792	Gorham Parsons 1833
Isaac Elwell. 1809	John W. Wonson 1858
Wm Stevens 1824	Wm. H. Haskell.....1861
Leonard J Presson. 1834	Charles E. Grover 1867
Gorham Parsons 18 9	David W. Low 1873
T S Lancaster 1849	Chas. E. Cressy.....1886
O A. Merrill 1853	

The first regular land communication between Gloucester and Boston was that established by Jonathan Lowe, a tavern-keeper on Front Street, who, on the 25th of April, 1788, began running, twice a week, a two-horse open carriage between the two places. At that time there were, besides this from Gloucester, but four stages running into Boston,—one from Portsmouth, N. H., one from New York, one from Providence, R. I., and one from Salem. The first change from this arrangement made the trips tri-weekly; and in 1805 a daily line was established. Four-horse coaches soon followed, and some years after another daily stage was added, by means of which the round trip could be made the same day.

As the result of a meeting of the citizens in September, 1844, a survey of the route for a railroad which should connect Gloucester with the Eastern Railroad at Beverly was made, and the road was soon after built by the Eastern Railroad Company as a branch. Regular trips were begun on the 2d of November, 1847. It proved a great accommodation to the people, has contributed largely to the prosperity of Gloucester, and is a profitable portion of the company's line of road.

Steamboats have run, with more or less regularity during the summer months, between Gloucester and Boston since 1840. In 1870 the Boston and Gloucester Steamboat Company was organized, and commenced the running of trips through the year.

The rocks of the Cape are granite or syenite, varying in the colors peculiar to those formations on the New England coast. They are easily wrought into blocks of any required size, and have been quarried to serve the necessities and convenience of the inhabitants from a very early date, and more or less for public use and exportation since the first quarter of the present century. Early in the last century Joshua Norwood was employed by the people of Sandy Bay and the other coves outside of the Cape to get out flat blocks of this stone to be used for mooring their fishing-boats. These blocks, about six feet square and from ten to fifteen inches thick, had a hole about fifteen inches in diameter cut in their centre, into which an oak butt, some twenty or more feet in length, having a part of its roots attached, was inserted. Dropped at proper distances from the shore they afforded a safe mooring, except during heavy easterly gales. About the same time Mr. Norwood cut out millstones, which he sold in small quantities. He may, therefore, be regarded as the pioneer stone-cutter of the Cape.

In 1824 an extensive business in quarrying was begun by a gentleman from Quincy, who leased a ledge at Sandy Bay. Others followed him, and the business is still carried on in that territory, now belonging to Rockport.

Quarries were afterwards opened at Annisquam and in those portions of the westerly part of the town bordering on Squam River. Foundation stones for buildings, wharves, bridges and other structures, and paving blocks for streets have been, from time to time, obtained in large quantities from these localities. Many of the paving blocks have been shipped to Cuba and to the principal cities of the Union.

The Cape Ann Granite Company, whose quarry is located at Bay View, was organized in 1869, with a capital of $100,000. Jonas H. French, president; H. H. Bennett, treasurer; Charles W. Foster, superintendent. The quarry comprises about one hundred and fifty acres, and contains the various kinds of granite adapted to building purposes. The company employ in the various departments of its work seldom less than three hundred men, and at times as many as seven hundred. The chief business is the cutting of granite for building purposes. It furnished the cut granite for the Boston Post-office building and the Post-office and Sub-treasury building in Baltimore; also the interior polished granite work for the new city building in Philadelphia. It has the largest granite polishing works in the United States, and has furnished many prominent monuments, the principal one being the base of the General Scott equestrian statue in Washington, one stone of which is the largest ever quarried in this country, weighing, when quarried in the rough, one hundred and forty-nine tons. The company is among the largest producers of paving blocks, making from one million to four million blocks per annum.

It has, at present, contracts for material amounting to five hundred thousand dollars, the chief contract being in connection with the court-house now being built in Boston. Its business has been steadily increasing, and it disburses monthly a large amount of money to its workmen, many of whom have been with the company since its organization—furnishing, in these days of discontent and change, a pleasant and conclusive demonstration of the kindly relations existing between employers and employed. Since its establishment the company has built up the village of Bay View from a population of one or two hundred to fifteen hundred inhabitants. Ever public-spirited and generous, it has contributed largely to the establishment of the Bay View churches, both Methodist and Catholic, and is constant in aiding whatever is for the highest advantage of the community.

"The Lanesville Granite Company" was organized in May, 1873, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars. Eben Blatchford, president; John Butman, treasurer and agent. The quarries cover about twenty acres, all consisting of excellent granite. Two pits are worked, one very large and about seventy feet deep. Steam pumps keep them free from water, and the quarries are inexhaustible. About one hundred and fifty men are now employed, and about fifty thousand tons of stone are annually produced. This is manufactured into all kinds of stone products, but largely into paving blocks, about one million five hundred thousand blocks having been cut in a single year, in addition to a large amount of other work. The beautiful and unique wall surrounding the Manchester (Mass.) Library is being furnished from this quarry. The company has always enjoyed a good reputation for the excellent character of its products.

There are four banks in Gloucester, established in the following order of time: The Gloucester Bank, 1796; Cape Ann, 1855; First National, 1864; City National, 1875. In addition to these, is the Cape Ann Savings Bank, incorporated in 1846.

CHAPTER CX.

GLOUCESTER—(*Continued*).

MILITARY.

Indian War—French War—War for Independence—Privateering—War of 1812—Civil War, 1861-65.

As early as 1642 the General Court ordered that a loan of muskets be made to "Glocester;" and probably about this time a military company was formed, as in 1644, on request of the town, the court ordered that "George Norton, as their eldest sergeant," should exercise the company in the military drill. It is not of record, however, that any call for active military service was made till the Indian War, in 1675. A levy was made on all the towns in the fall of this year, when the following-named were drafted to serve for Gloucester:

Andrew Sargent.	Joseph Allen.	Thomas Kent.
Joseph Clark.	Jacob Davis.	Hugh Howe.
Joseph Somes.	Vincent Davis.	

—"all weh," said the officer, who made the return of their name, "due want warm cloathing, and must have new coates." Others served before the war closed, as the town records show that lands were granted for "services in the Indian War" to.

John Bray.	John Stanwood.	John Haskell.
John Day.	Philip Stanwood.	Isaac Prince.
John Fitch.	Nathaniel Bray.	Thomas Babson.
Edward Haraden.	Moses Dudy.	Benjamin Jones.
Samuel Stanwood.		

These twenty-one persons represented nearly one-third of all the male citizens of the town capable of bearing arms during the war. In 1676, while the Indians were committing great depredations at Andover and other places near by, Gloucester was put in a state of defense, a committee of the General Court reporting that "Cape Ann has made two garrisons, besides several particular fortifications."

No other call for military service appears to have been made till the expedition against Louisburg, a strongly fortified town of the French, at Cape Breton, in 1745. It had been annoying to the fisheries and to commerce generally, and some time in 1744 the Governor of Cape Breton, knowing that the Kings of France and England had mutually declared war, surprised and took the English garrison, at Canso. The prisoners were taken to Louisburg, and on their being paroled some of them came to Boston, where they conveyed to the Governor such information concerning the condition of the fortress as made him determined on an expedition for its reduction. By a majority of one the General Court resolved on the expedition. Four thousand troops were soon collected at Boston, and, under the command of William Pepperell, were embarked on the 24th of March, 1745. The transports in Chapeau-Rouge Bay were in charge of Captain Thomas Sanders, of Gloucester, and Captain Charles Byles had a company of forty-five Gloucester men. After the departure of the expedition, Rev. John White, the patriotic minister of the First Parish, preached a sermon from the words: "O let not the oppressed return ashamed: let the poor and needy praise thy name." Psalm lxxiv. 21. In it he thus described the situation: "Some have not unfitly called Cape Breton a hornet's nest. 'Tis not safe, in a time of war, to go near them. They will sting all that come near them. We have already, ever since the war commenced, been great sufferers by them. They harbor our enemies that come to lay waste our infant eastern settlements; they molest and break in upon our fisheries, and break them to pieces; they lie near the roadway of our European merchandise, and they can sally out and take our corn vessels: and therefore our oppressions from thence, so long as it remains in the hands of the enemy, are like to be intolerable. We must remove these, our enemies, or they will destroy us. There is a plain necessity of it; and woe to us if it be not reduced." The reduction was successfully accomplished, the city and fortress surrendering the 16th of June.

In 1755 the English colonies of North America formed a union for attack and defense in a then pending war between England and France, which, four years later, broke the French power on this continent. Gloucester had large interests at stake in the contest, as its Grand Bank fishery, now assuming considerable importance, had been greatly interfered with by the French. The success of the English was necessary, therefore, to securing their interests on the banks. One whole company was furnished from Gloucester, and several soldiers for other

companies, in the first year of the war. The company commanded by Captain Jonathan Fellows formed part of the expedition against Crown Point. Seventeen additional men enlisted in 1757; and in 1758 a Gloucester company of eighty men, commanded by Captain Andrew Giddings, took part in the second capture of Louisburg, and many remained in the army till the close of the successful campaign of 1759.

A few years of peace and prosperity followed, soon darkened, however, by the war-cloud which formed on the passage of the Stamp Act by the British Parliament in 1765. Although the act was repealed in less than a twelve-month, it was followed by an oppressive system of taxation, which caused many of the towns to follow the example of Boston and Gloucester in voting to discourage the use of all imported articles. The passage of the Port Bill, a few years later, by the operation of which, many of the citizens of Boston, thrown out of employment, were reduced to poverty and destitution, so touched the sympathies of the people of Gloucester, as to prompt them to contribute relief by the donation of a hundred and twenty sheep and £117 6s. 1d. in money, and to pledge themselves, by still stronger resolves than before, to stand by the country in its non-intercourse with England. Early in 1775, in accordance with the recommendation of the Provincial Congress, active military preparations were commenced; small arms were purchased, musket balls procured and cartridges made, all by direction of the town; and a company of minute-men was organized and placed under command of Nathaniel Warner. In the midst of these preparations news came of the struggle at Lexington and Concord, and knowing that the British had a large fleet in Boston harbor, and that the town was in no condition to resist an attack, safety was sought for the women and children by taking them to West Parish and to Ipswich. An express was then sent to Cambridge to obtain arms; and a Committee of Safety of thirty-one eminent citizens was chosen. The minute-men were disbanded and the enlistment of men for active service was vigorously pushed. The fisheries and all maritime pursuits were, of course, impossible, with the enemy so powerful on the water, and so recruiting was comparatively easy. It is not possible to ascertain the full number of enlistments from Gloucester, but it is certain that "there were four companies composed wholly of Gloucester men, with the exception of about six persons," and that another company, commanded by Captain Parker, of Ipswich, had about thirty of our men in it, besides these there was another company, commanded by Captain James Collins, which marched to Cambridge on the 15th of June. No roll of this company has come to light, but our town records furnish a list of twenty-three of its members to whom guns were delivered." The statement of the selectmen for 1779 was to the effect that, during the first campaign of the war, Gloucester "had upwards of two hundred and twenty men in the field, besides numbers who joined the marine department, as more suitable to their former occupation."

Two Gloucester companies were at the battle of Bunker Hill. Captain Nathaniel Walker's company was filled in four days, and marched to Cambridge late in May. On the morning of the 17th of June, when it was discovered that the British were preparing to attack the redoubt on Bunker Hill which had been thrown up during the night, Captain Warner had orders to proceed to the hill and assist in its defense. Making a rapid march, and exposed to fire as they crossed the Neck, they got separated from each other, although all reached the field in time to engage in the action. Captain Warner, with a portion of his company, took position at first at the redoubt, and Lieutenant Burnham, with another part of the command, was beyond that point, on the left flank of the enemy. Later in the day Captain Warner and his men were at the rail-fence. The company had two men, Daniel Callahan and Benjamin Smith, killed in the action, and Benjamin Webber and Alexander Parran were wounded. The following named composed the company:

Nathaniel Warner, captain.	Thomas Ayres.
John Burnham, lieutenant.	David Row.
Daniel Collins, ensign.	Benjamin Webber.
Jona. Woodman, sergeant.	Samuel Marshall.
William Kinsman, sergeant.	Josiah Ingersol.
Alex. Parrun, sergeant.	Joshua Day.
Jarus Lincoln, sergeant.	Joshua Polen.
Richard Simson, corporal.	Zerubbabel Allen.
Nathan Glover, corporal.	Isaac Bray.
Jonathan Butler, corporal.	Larrey Trejay.
Nymphas Stacy, corporal.	Solomon Parsons.
John Warner, fifer.	John Andress.
Jonathan Somes.	William Segurs.
Andrew Kelcy.	William Grimes.
Nathaniel Bennett.	Aaron Stevens.
Moses Ring.	Peter Seavery.
Daniel Callahan.	Jeremiah Burnham.
Benjamin Clark.	John Chaplen.
Andrew Bray.	William Grover.
Josiah Brown.	Thomas Millett.
Levi Lane.	Joseph Somes.
Moses Bennett.	Ezekiel Woodward.
James Prvastly.	Eliphalet Wharf.
Josiah Burk.	Ebenezer Tarbox.
Benjamin Smith.	Jonathan Pike.
Vinson Elwell.	Ebenezer Goslen (Joslyn).
William Averill.	William Johnson.
Robert Callaghan.	Nathan Brown.
Joseph Howard.	Lemuel Collins.

The other Gloucester company, in the engagement at Bunker Hill, was commanded by Captain John Rowe. It left Gloucester on the 12th of June, *en route* to Cambridge by way of Wenham. Having halted for a short time on the 16th at Mystic River, they resumed their march. About dark they discovered a large body of men approaching them, and soon ascertained that they were a detachment from the army at Cambridge on the way to Charlestown. They

joined them, and on arriving at Breed's, or Bunker Hill, they went silently at work with picks and spades to throw up an intrenchment. When the work was finished, and while the enemy were landing, Captain Rowe and a part of his company was detailed to carry off the tools. While returning they were ordered to duty on the extreme left, near the Mystic. Thus this company was also divided, and was not again united till the action had closed. Both divisions were under fire and did good service. Francis Pool, Josiah Brooks and William Parsons were killed, and Daniel Doyl and William Foster were wounded. The company roster was,—

John Row, captain.	Jeffrey Parsons.
Mark Pool, lieutenant.	John Row, Jr.
Eben. Cleveland, ensign.	Joshua Row.
Dan. Barber Tarr, sergeant.	Peter Richardson.
William Haskins, sergeant.	William Row.
W. Davison, [Aquart] sergeant.	Daniel Somers.
William Foster, sergeant.	John Smith.
Jonathan Row, corporal.	Ephraim Sheldren.
Thomas Finson, corporal.	John Tarr.
John Gott, corporal.	John Tarr, Jr.
William Low, corporal.	Jabez Tarr,
Benj. Davis, drummer.	James Tarr.
Isaac Haskell, fifer.	William Woodbury.
Jacob Allen.	Ebenezer Witham.
Obadiah Atkins.	Spencer Thomas.
David Averill.	Jonathan Parsons.
Eleazer Butman.	Peter Emmons.
Daniel Butler.	Thomas Edes.
David Crage.	Thomas Dresser.
Henry Clark.	Caleb Elwell.
Daniel Doyl.	James Phips.
Dominicus Davis.	Ebenezer Gott.
Samuel Clark.	Joshua Gore.
Joseph Dresser.	Bennet Haskins.
Richard Dresser.	William Jumper.
Joseph Lane.	John Clark.
James Lurrey.	John Youlin.
Francis Lane.	John Parrot.
Samuel Low.	Joseph Low.
Henry Morgan.	Aaron Riggs.
Henry Parsons.	Francis Pool.
Hugh Parkhurst.	Josiah Brooks.
Joseph Parsons.	William Parsons.

Mr. Babson says of the privates in the above list, that "all but six were fishermen and sailors. Thirty-five were natives of Gloucester. Seventeen were under twenty-one years of age, five only over thirty, and none over forty. The youngest was William Low, a lad of fourteen. John Row, Jr., a son of the captain, was sixteen."

Although the British took possession of Bunker Hill, it had cost them heavily; and the battle had also assured the patriots that they had no reason to be discouraged, but to unite still more closely in their struggle for their rights. They had in a few weeks so closely invested Boston as to shut in the large British army there, and to entirely cut them off from receiving supplies of fresh provisions for themselves, and of provender for their horses. They were therefore compelled to obtain these necessary articles by using the vessels of their navy to convey foraging parties to the islands and along the shores of the bay. Out on such an expedition the British sloop-of-war "Falcon," commanded by Captain Linzee, which had taken part in the battle of Bunker Hill, stood into Squam harbor and anchored near the bar, on the morning of the 5th of August, determined on capturing the cattle and sheep at Coffin's farm, some of which were in sight near the beach. Fifty men were sent off from the sloop in a barge to capture and slaughter the animals. They were not to succeed, however, for the owner, Major Peter Coffin, who was carefully watching Linzee's movements had, after sending to Squam and to several localities in his own section of the town for assistance, stationed his workmen behind some sand-knolls, and there awaited the coming of the marauders. As soon as the barge struck the beach a volley was poured into her by the major's men, and it was soon manifest by the confusion on board that it was not without effect. There were, however, no fatal effects. Linzee, using a glass, had observed all this, and now also saw several men at each end of the beach rushing to the scene of action in response to the major's call. No time was to be lost if he would save his men from capture, and he immediately signaled their return to the ship.

As the barge neared the sloop, Linzee, having spied a deeply-loaded vessel lying in Squam harbor, and supposing that it was loaded with India goods, gave orders to the returning officer to go into the harbor and cut her out. She proved to be loaded with sand, then extensively used for domestic purposes, and carried in schooners to the neighboring ports for sale. This fresh disappointment did not probably mollify Linzee's feelings towards the Yankees. The two following days the "Falcon" cruised about the Cape, during which time the captain impressed several men from the boats and vessels which he met. On the morning of the 8th of August the inhabitants of Gloucester were alarmed by seeing the "Falcon" at the mouth of the outer harbor, attended by a schooner she had recently captured, and in hot pursuit of another, which is seeking a place of shelter in the inner harbor. The captain of the latter runs her into shoal water, and finally grounds her on the flats near Five Pound Island. Boats filled with armed men are sent off from the "Falcon" to get possession of the schooner and bring her alongside of the sloop. The citizens, with such arms and ammunition as they can obtain, and two old swivels, assemble on the wharf, and on the little hill on the opposite side of the cove, to defeat Linzee's designs. His men board the schooner at the cabin window, but as they do so fire is opened upon them by the people on the shore, killing three of the enemy, and so badly wounding the lieutenant in command that he is taken back to the sloop. Infuriated by this resistance, Linzee sends in the schooner he has captured, and a cutter, both well-manned and armed, with orders to the officer in charge to fire on the "damned rebels" wherever he can find them. At the same time he opens fire on the town, and throws in about three

hundred four-pound balls, and attempts to set the town in flames by sending some of his men to kindle a fire among the fish-flakes on the beach; but the incendiaries are met and captured by a body of citizens. The cannonading of the town did very little damage, no lives being lost; and the schooner, cutter and barges were, with their thirty-five men, captured by the citizens stationed on the shores of the inner harbor, who also rescued several Americans who had been impressed into Linzee's service. The next day the "Falcon" left the outer harbor without attempting further mischief.

The people of Gloucester feared that, as the British fleet at Boston was so large, a more successful assault might soon be made on them, and so lost no time in seeking to strengthen and increase their defenses. The Provincial Government at once conferred with General Washington, and by his order three hundred pounds of powder, three hundred nine-pound shot, and one hundred pounds of grape shot were delivered to Captain Joseph Foster, who had planned and executed the defense against Linzee, for the use of the town. A detachment of riflemen under Major Robert Macgaw was also sent. The old fort was rebuilt and additional breastworks were thrown up at different places on the shores of the harbor. It was generally understood that Falmouth and Gloucester were doomed by the British to destruction, and when the former place was burned on the 16th of October, an attack on Gloucester was considered imminent. General Washington sent a letter on the 30th to the House of Representatives in relation to affording some additional necessaries of defense to Cape Ann, and on the 4th of November he was authorized to send an officer to Concord, Worcester, Lancaster and Leicester, to view the cannon in those towns, and to send such as was fit for use to Gloucester. The town was also authorized to procure, on the credit of the colony, two barrels of powder. The General Court resolved, on the 2d of December, "Considering the importance of the harbor of Gloucester and the exposedness of the same to the enemy, to raise two companies of fifty men each, to continue in service there till April 1st, unless sooner discharged." Four companies of home soldiers were also organized, over whom Joseph Foster was appointed colonel by the General Court. Gloucester was thus put in a good state of defense; but early the following spring the British fleet left the coast, and there was no further danger of attack from that quarter.

Privateering began to engage the attention of the citizens of Gloucester in the latter part of the summer of 1775. At first, only the fishing boats were used. They took a few prizes, the most valuable of which was a brig from Canada, bound to Boston, with a deck-load of live stock for the troops, and coal and iron in her hold. Her cargo was landed at Wheeler's Point, Squam Harbor, and the oxen were sold at auction. There were, at about the same time, several armed schooners employed in the public service, several of which were cruising in the bay for the purpose of intercepting any vessels that might be coming over its waters with supplies for the enemy. On the 28th of November one of these—the "Lee," commanded by Captain Manly—brought into Gloucester harbor the ship "Nancy," from London, having on board large quantities of small-arms and amunition, besides cannon and a large brass mortar of a new construction. These were landed at Gloucester, and carted to the camp at Cambridge, where they were greatly needed. The mortar was the best that had ever been landed on this continent, and, in consideration of its high value, it was christened the "Congress."

When the first term of enlistment in the patriot army had expired, many of the Gloucester soldiers returned home, and most of them shipped on the privateers. The vessels engaged in this service, so far as they were known to Mr. Babson, whose search for information was indefatigable, were the "Warren," a fishing schooner formerly called the "Britannia;" the schooner "Langdon;" the sloop "Union;" the brig "Gen. Mercer;" the brig "Gloucester;" the schooner "Speedwell;" the ship "Gen. Starks;" the "Trial," a small boat; schooner "Wasp;" brig "Wilkes;" brig "Success;" brig "Friendship;" ship "Gloucester Packet;" schooner "Union;" shallop "Speedwell;" ship "Tiger;" brig "Ruby" brig "Robin Hood;" ship "Tempest;" the "Civil Usage." The "Warren" was under command of Captain William Coas on her first cruise, and was fitted out in the summer of 1776. She had eight guns, and an imperfect set of small arms, the locks of some of the latter being tied on with rope-yarns. In one month she captured and sent into Gloucester three prizes. The first was the ship "Picary," of 400 tons. Her cargo was a valuable one, consisting of 325 hogsheads sugar, 161 bales cotton, 168 pipes, 29 hogsheads and 10 quarter-casks Madeira wine, and several hundredweight of indigo. Her second prize was a brig of about 120 tons; she was in ballast, but had some elephants' teeth and gold-dust. The next prize was a 500-ton ship called the "Sarah and Elizabeth," from Jamaica bound to London. Her cargo brought a large sum to her captors. It consisted of 394 hogsheads sugar, 180 puncheons rum, 20 casks indigo, 70 live tortoise, 6 casks tortoise shells, 50 bags cotton, some cash and plate, and a quantity of mahogany. On her third cruise the "Warren" was commanded by Captain John Colson. She took but one prize, a topsail schooner, with a cargo of sugar, coffee and cotton. On her third and last cruise, under Captain Silas Howell, she was captured on the third day out.

The "Langdon" has left no record of her fortune and fate. The "Union" was commanded by Capt. Isaac Somes. She captured a ship bound to Lisbon with a cargo of fish, and a brig loaded with salt. The "Gen. Mercer" was the brig captured by the "Union." She cruised under command of Capt.

James Babson, and, in company with a Philadelphia privateer, captured, while off the coast of France, two or three brigs. The "Gloucester," a new vessel, was armed and equipped in a thorough manner, mounting eighteen guns, and having a crew, including officers, of one hundred and thirty men. She put to sea early in July, 1777, and soon fell in with and captured the brig "Two Friends," having a cargo of wine and salt. She also took, on the Banks of Newfoundland, the fishing brig "Spark," with a part of a fare of fish and some salt, which she sent in under care of Isaac Day. No further tidings of the "Gloucester" were ever received; she was lost, with all on board. The "Speedwell" was also fitted out in 1777, under Capt. Philemon Haskell. She captured the "George," "Dolphin" and "Phenix," fishing brigs, each with a part of a fare of fish and some salt. The last commodity came at a time when it was greatly needed, and brought a large sum. The "Dolphin" and "Phenix" were subsequently fitted out with cargoes for the West Indies, and were both taken by the British. The "George" made a successful voyage to Bilboa. The "Speedwell" was again fitted out in 1778, but nothing is known of her doings. The "Trial" was mounted with twelve guns, had a small crew and cruised along the shore. She was commanded by Capt. Thomas Sanders. Nothing is known of her exploits, except that on one cruise she took, off Canso, three coasters, two of which were got safely to Gloucester, and the other was retaken.

The "Gen. Starks" was a new ship, of four hundred tons, and mounted eighteen guns. She first went out in 1778, but met with indifferent success in her first and second cruises, taking only a schooner loaded with salt in the first, and a ship in ballast—the "Providence"—in the second. In April, 1779, she sailed on her third cruise, which was an eventful one. She had a crew of one hundred and thirty-five officers and men, and was commanded by Capt. William Coas. Her other officers were:

Thomas Haskell, first lieut.
Job Knights, second lieut.
Duncan Peper, third lieut.
James Pearson, sailing-master.
—— Hodgkins, sailing-master's mate.
Edward Bowden, boatswain.
James Snoddy, boatswain's mate.
Philip Priestly, boatswain's mate.
William Thomas, gunner.
Samuel Davis, gunner's mate.
M. Parker, captain of marines.
Jabez Farley, steward.
William Fears, steward's mate.
Jerry Row, armorer.
Peter Dowsett, quarter-master.
Josiah Parsons.
John Gwyer.
Samuel Hodgkins.
N. Perkins, carpenter.
Nathaniel Perkins, carpenter's mate.
Joseph Smith, cook.
John Hardy, cook's mate.
Jack Short, drummer.
David Knights, fifer.
Josiah Smith, surgeon.
Benjamin Somes, captain's clerk.

Her first prize was a brig from Limerick, with a cargo of beef, pork and butter. Reaching the Western Islands, she made a ship and brig to windward, which proved to be British vessels, mounting respectively twenty-eight and eighteen guns. A fight was commenced, but it proving too unequal, the "Starks" hauled off, and soon outrun the enemy. Cruising to the eastward, she fell in with and captured the British ship "Porcupine," of fourteen guns, which, without offering resistance, struck to the "Starks." After taking the guns and light sails, Captain Coas restored the ship to the British commander. Six of the guns taken were mounted on the "Starks'" half-deck, and manned with marines. An English brig, from Bristol, with an assorted cargo, was next taken, and sent in. A sloop bound to Oporto was taken a few days later, and, after taking off her sails, rigging, cables and anchors, was sunk. After cruising off Cape Finisterre, and down the Bay of Biscay, the "Starks" put into Bilboa to refit for a cruise homeward. While there yellow fever broke out among the crew, several of whom died. As soon as the "Starks" was again ready for sea, Capt. Coas was offered one thousand dollars by the authorities of Bilboa if he would go out in the bay and take a warlike vessel, supposed to be an enemy's cruiser. After sailing a few days he saw a brig and a lugger, the latter keeping out of his way. On speaking the brig, which he ascertained to be a Dane, he was informed that the lugger was a Guernsey privateer. Capt. Coas at once set out to decoy the lugger, by hoisting an English ensign. The ruse was successful, and on her running down under the lee of the "Starks," and demanding her name, Capt. Coas gave the name of an English ship from Whitehaven. He then mustered the crew to their quarters, pulled down the English ensign, run up the American flag and ordered the lugger to strike to the "Gen. Starks." Instead of striking, she luffed, intending to escape on the wind; but the "Starks" luffed at the same time, and gave the enemy a broadside, on which she surrendered. The schooner mounted eight guns, and was manned by sixty men, eight of whom were wounded by the "Starks'" broadside. Although a good deal crippled, the prize was got into Bilboa, where she was sold for one thousand six hundred dollars, and Capt. Coas received in addition the promised one thousand dollars for taking her. The "Starks" sailed for home soon after, and after being out a few days decoyed an English cutter; but her real character being discovered while the cutter's lieutenant and boat's crew were on board, the cutter, by outsailing the "Starks," escaped. Not many days after a vessel was sighted under a cloud of canvas, with which, after a sharp chase of four hours, the "Starks" came up. It proved to be an English packet from Jamaica, bound home.

Finding escape impossible, the packet prepared for action, and after a two hours' engagement, surrendered to the "Starks," but not until six of her men had been killed and nine wounded, and all three of the topmasts were shot away. The losses on the "Starks" were one boy killed and five men wounded. The prize was sent to Gloucester. The "Starks" next fell in with and captured a brig, with a cargo of fish, bound to Lisbon, from Newfoundland. She showed

fourteen guns, but ten of them proved to be wooden make-believes. She also was sent to Gloucester. Soon after this, two other fish-brigs were taken and sent in. More might have been captured, but were prudently suffered to escape, as the "Starks'" crew had been greatly reduced to man the prizes, twenty of the remainder were on the sick-list, and there were nearly a hundred prisoners on board. Captain Coas therefore steered for home. At least four more cruises were made by the "Starks," three of them under Captain James Pearson. The first two were almost resultless. On the third she sailed directly to the mouth of the St. Lawrence, for the purpose of intercepting the Quebec fleet. After laying in the fog several days Captain Pearson discovered, when it lifted, three of the fleet quite near him,—the "Detroit," "Polly" and "Beaver." These he captured and sent to Gloucester. On the fourth cruise Captain Coas was again induced to take command. He was out but a week when his ship was captured by the ship "Chatham," and sent to Halifax. It is said that the British converted the "Starks" into the "Antelope Packet," and that she was wrecked at the Pellew Islands.

The "Wasp" was first commanded by Captain Isaac Somes, and on her first cruise took a brig from Ireland, loaded with provisions. Her next cruise was under Captain John Somes, when she shared with the privateer "Harlequin," of Salem, in capturing a Jamaica ship, with a cargo of rum. The "Wilkes" was built by David Pearce, for the West India trade, and after making one voyage was fitted out as a privateer, under command of Captain Job Knights. She was taken by the enemy and carried to Newfoundland; but was afterwards retaken by some citizens of Marblehead, and returned to Gloucester, where she was sold to her former owner, who sent her out under command of Captain John Beach. On this cruise she was captured off the West Indies. The "Success" was also built by David Pearce, who sent her to the West Indies as a letter of marque. She was taken on the passage home. The "Friendship" was commanded by Captain Isaac Elwell. On a voyage to the West Indies she captured a small brig of one hundred and thirty tons, with a cargo of rum. The "Gloucester Packet" was the Jamaica packet ship taken by the "Starks." She was purchased by David Pearce, who sent her under command of Captain John Beach to Cadiz, as a letter of marque. She captured the brig "Mary" with a cargo of flour. The "Union" had a crew of thirty men, and was commanded by Captain Daniel Parsons. She captured a brig from Ireland, with a cargo of beef, pork and clothing. The shallop "Speedwell" was owned by a company, who decked her over, leaving a large hatchway to serve as quarters for the men while in action. She had four swivels stepped in the combings of the hatch, and small arms. Captain Thomas Saunders commanded her, and she carried a crew of twenty-five. She made a cruise off Canso for the purpose of intercepting some of the vessels trading between that place and Halifax. She was chased ashore in the Gut by British cruisers, and lost. The "Tiger" had for her commander Captain John Tucker. She carried sixteen guns. She took but one prize, which was retaken and carried into Halifax. The "Tiger" soon after shared the fate of her temporary prize. The "Ruby," Captain Solomon Babson, commander, captured a brig from Ireland, with a cargo of beef, pork and butter. The "Robin Hood" was a small brig, mounting nine guns, commanded by Captain Sargent Smith, who performed a remarkable feat in capturing a British packet carrying sixteen guns, and having a crew of sixty men. When the packet was fallen in with, Captain Smith had no expectation of taking her, but as the "Robin Hood" was a fast sailer, he thought he might venture near enough to give her a few shot in passing. Bringing all his guns to bear on one side, he gave the packet, as he came abreast of her, a heavy broadside. Such was the manifest effect that he was led to repeat it, when, to his surprise, the packet, without further resistance, surrendered. The "Tempest" was built by a company, and fitted out for the West Indies, as a letter of marque, under command of Captain Isaac Somes. She foundered a few weeks after leaving port, in a severe tempest, and all on board were lost. The "Civil Usage" carried a crew of sixty men, and was under command of Captain John Smith, who, by a rash attack on an English transport ship having eight hundred persons on board, was mortally wounded, though he managed to haul off his vessel, which put in at Martinico.

Mr. Babson, in reviewing his account of Gloucester privateering, which we have here abridged, says that he believes it "to contain some notice of nearly every enterprise of that kind undertaken in town. True, it is, for the most part, but a mere sketch of voyages; but even some account of these may be deemed worthy of preservation, when it is considered what interests, hopes, disappointments, sorrows and sufferings were connected with them. A true history of our Revolutionary privateering would be a record of individual experience; of widows' broken hearts; of orphans' bitter tears; of the agonies of men struggling with the ocean, in the face of death; of physical suffering in prison-ships; of wanderings in foreign lands, without friends, without money, and without health; and, worst of all, of the demoralizing influences of a practice which every enlightened conscience declares to be at war with the justice of God and the happiness of men."

As has been already noticed, enlistments in Gloucester for the army were difficult in 1776, owing to the preference on the part of the citizens for marine service. But in 1777, under the pressure and spur of a proposed attempt to expel the enemy from Newport, R. I., where he had gathered a large force, a company was raised and sent to that campaign, under Capt.

Mark Pool. It was in the engagement brought on by an assault of the British on the fortifications which the patriots had thrown up near that town. The latter were obliged to retreat from the island. The particulars in regard to enlistments during the next three years are unknown. But it is certain that few localities had suffered more during the first five years of the war, from loss of life occasioned by the struggle. At the close of the year 1779 the number of ratable polls had decreased from 1053 in 1775 to 696. At least 350 of the inhabitants had perished at sea, been killed in battle, died while prisoners in the hands of the enemy, or in some other way incident to war had lost their lives. The foreign trade of the town had been nearly annihilated, the shipping having been captured or destroyed. Privateering benefited only a few; and seven hundred and fifty people—more than one-sixth of the population—were dependent on charity for their subsistence. In 1780 the number of troops to be raised in the State for six months' service in the Continental army was 4000, of which the quota for Gloucester was 32. To raise a bounty for the encouragement of enlistment, the town voted, in June, to borrow $60,000. Paper money had at this time depreciated to one-seventieth of its nominal value. On the 6th of July it was voted to borrow an additional $60,000. Three men were procured by the payment of $6000 each, and it was agreed to offer that sum for the remainder, with a proviso that, if the average bounty paid throughout the State exceeded that amount, the difference should be made up to each soldier. On the 17th of July authority was given for another loan of $60,000, and an offer of £300 per month was made for each man who could be procured for three months' service. The work of filling the quota evidently dragged, for, on the 7th of August the town voted to raise an additional sum of $51,060 to pay soldiers. In January, 1781, the town's quota for the army was 48 men. The State had authorized the towns to pay fifty dollars bounty to each man, and the town of Gloucester thereupon voted a tax of £1000 in silver money for a bounty fund. It was not until August that the quota was filled. Although all the demands of the State, made during the progress of the war, had not been fully met, yet so many had gone into the army that the town was in a comparatively defenseless condition. In anticipation of depredations in the harbor which the inhabitants would not be strong enough to prevent, the selectmen were instructed, at the March meeting in 1782, to petition the General Court that a guard be stationed in the town. Before the Legislature could have taken action an event occured which showed that the anticipations were not groundless. On the night of the 31st of March the ship "Harriet," lying in the harbor, loaded for Curacoa, but having only two men on board, was cut out by a party sent in from an English fourteen-gun brig. Her absence was first discovered by her owner, Capt. David Pearce, who, on rising from his bed the next morning, missed her from her anchorage, and soon discovered that she was outside the harbor, running off, in a strong fair wind, in an easterly direction, and having in her company a small vessel that had been seen in the harbor, near Ten-Pound Island, the day before. Hurrying to the meeting-house, Capt. Pearce rang the bell with great violence, giving a general alarm. A plan for retaking the ship was speedily devised. The ship "Betsey," belonging also to Capt. Pearce, was lying at the head of his wharf, dismantled, for the purpose of being graved. The tide was at its lowest ebb, but it was determined to put the "Betsey" in condition for starting as soon as the tide would serve. Volunteers in great numbers made the necessary preparations; a fine crew was enlisted for the expedition; ballast, stores, amunition, twenty guns, an ample supply of small arms, and all other necessaries were speedily put on board; and as soon as the water served, the ship was assisted by towboats in getting out of the harbor. Capt. Joseph Foster was in command, and Capt. Pearce was, with his brother William, on board. Having observed the direction in which the "Harriet" was heading, and believing it was the enemy's intention to run to the British station on the eastern coast, the "Betsey" was put on an east-northeast course, and put in order for action. At daylight the next morning the captured ship, in company with the brig and smaller vessel, was in sight. She was soon overtaken, and given up without an effort on the part of the enemy to retain her. The "Harriet" was put under charge of Capt. William Pearce, and both vessels reached Gloucester the next afternoon.

In the fall of 1786, three years after the independence of the United States had been acknowledged by England, an insurrection, known as Shay's Rebellion, broke out in the western part of the Commonwealth, threatening to overthrow the State government. On the call for troops, a town-meeting held on the 15th of January, 1787, voted to raise a company, and appropriated money therefor. So prompt was the response of the people that a company was recruited the same day, placed under the command of a tried and distinguished soldier, Capt. John Rowe, William Kinsman being lieutenant, and William Tuck ensign. The company marched to the scene of disturbance, as a part of Col. Wade's regiment; but the rebels' speedy dispersion brought their service to an end in about six weeks.

During the difficulties between America and France, growing out of the war between France and England, the sailors and fishermen of Gloucester, who had suffered much by the encroachments of the French upon American commerce, enlisted in 1798, to the number of fifty-two, on board the sloop-of-war "Herald." Fortunately, they were not called to battle.

The troubles with Great Britain, culminating in the War of 1812, were injurious to Gloucester more by

the restriction of trade than by loss of life in land or naval engagements. The "Embargo" had interfered with maritime pursuits, and the "Enforcing Act" literally shut the town up from use of the sea. Political parties were about equally divided in the town, and much bitter feeling was engendered. Neutrality or disloyalty were impossible to any of the citizens, however, as soon as it became manifest that their old enemy was dangerously near. During the second year of the war, while the only defenses of the town were its militia and artillery company, and a small national guard stationed at the fort at the entrance to the inner harbor, alarm for the safety of the town was so well-grounded, that the armament of the fort and the force necessary for its defense were increased. The old State fort at the "Stage" was strengthened and two companies of militia—one commanded by Capt. Benjamin Haskell, of Gloucester, and one by Capt. Widger, of Ipswich—were put into barracks there. Another company was stationed at the national fort.

Depredations on the fishermen and coasters were commenced by the enemy in August, 1813, when the British ship "Nymph" made several captures. Sometime the same month the "Commodore Broke" stood into Sandy Bay, intending to take out some coasters then laying there at anchor. As the cruiser neared the shore she opened fire of solid shot and grape on the village. The villagers at once assembled on the Neck, and from the old wharf, on which they had a small cannon, opened fire on the enemy with such effect that they sent one ball completely through her, though above the water-line. She made all haste in retreating. In 1814 the enemy had several large ships on the coast, one of which destroyed, in Squam Harbor, a sloop loaded with lime, and carried off two small schooners loaded with fish. About the same time a cruiser chased a Portsmouth sloop, having a cargo of flour, into Gloucester Harbor, where she was run ashore near Eastern Point. An attempt to take possession of her there was defeated by the militia and artillery. The people at Sandy Bay having erected a small fort at their own expense on the point of "Bearskin Neck," and procured for it three carriage-guns, it was placed in charge of a detachment from one of the companies at the Harbor. On the 8th of September the British frigate "Nymph," having taken a fishing boat belonging to the place, compelled her skipper, Captain David Elwell, to pilot two barges through a dense fog, at midnight, to the Neck. One of the barges landed her men at what is known as the "Eastern Gutter," while the other made a landing at the old dock, on the western side of the Neck. The fort was surprised, the guns spiked and thrown out, and the fourteen men in charge were taken prisoners. This was effected by the portion of the party landed at the "Gutter." The others were seen to land at the dock by a sentinel, who gave the alarm, which roused the people, who opened musketry fire on the barge, receiving in return cannon and grape shot, but suffering no injury therefrom. The bell in the meeting-house steeple was now ringing a general alarm, to silence which the enemy opened fire on the belfry, but only, with the exception of hitting a post in the steeple, inflicting damage on themselves by starting a butt in the bow of their barge, which caused her to sink near the rocks back of the pier. The officer in charge and a few of his men ran across the Neck, seized a boat and made their escape; the rest—a dozen or more in number—were made prisoners. Meanwhile the section of the assailants that took the fort had made good their escape with their prisoners—all but four, who escaped by swimming—to the frigate. An exchange of prisoners was effected, and the English captain promised the people "unmolested use of their fishing-grounds during the rest of the fall; and he kept his word."

Privateering was not engaged in to any great extent by the Gloucester people during this war. The schooners "Swordfish," "Thrasher" and "Orlando" were the only vessels of considerable size devoted to this use. Of the "Swordfish" we have no information, except that she was captured on her second cruise. The "Thrasher" was of about one hundred and fifty tons burthen, carried fourteen guns and was manned by ninety men. She captured an English East Indiaman, of twenty guns, and manned by over one hundred men. Through the carelessness of her prize-master she was re-taken, and the "Thrasher" fell into the hands of the enemy not long after. The "Orlando" took no valuable prize. After her second cruise she was lengthened thirty feet and rigged into a ship, but it did not change her fortune. In addition to these, a few fishing boats were fitted out, the largest and most successful of which was the "Madison," of twenty-eight tons, manned by twenty-eight men. She took two valuable prizes in a short cruise—one a ship of four hundred tons, with a full cargo of timber and naval stores, and the other a brig of three hundred tons, with a valuable cargo.

Mr. Babson records the following bold achievement in the merchant service: "The brig 'Pickering,' of this town, of two hundred and fifty tons, Elias Davis, captain, was taken while on her passage from Gibraltar home, by the British frigate 'Belvidere.' After taking from the brig all her crew, except the captain and his son, who was first mate, the British captain placed her in charge of a prize-crew and ordered her to Halifax. The captain of the brig, loath to lose a fine new vessel, of which he himself was part owner, devised a plan of re-capture, and, with the aid of his son, again got command of her, and brought her safely to Gloucester."

On Monday, April 15, 1861, the mails brought full particulars to Gloucester of the bombardment and evacuation of Fort Sumter. That evening Company G, of the Eighth Regiment of Infantry, was recruited,

and left town on the morning of the 16th. This was soon followed by Company K, of the Twelfth Regiment of Volunteers; the town having, at a large and enthusiastic meeting on the 22d of April, voted the most liberal provision for aid to volunteers' families. Company C, of the Twenty-third Regiment, soon followed. Then, in November, 1861, Company D, of the Thirty-second Regiment; and next, Company K, of the Thirtieth Regiment. Finally, under the call of the President for nine months' men, Company G, of the Eighth Regiment, responded with alacrity, and left town September 12, 1862; and still again went into service in July, 1864. In December, 1864, a company for coast defense was enlisted, and was stationed at the fort in Marblehead till the close of the war.

Enlistments for the navy also commenced at an early period in the war, and a large number of men went into that branch of the service. An effort is now being made by the city clerk of Gloucester to collect their names, and make up their record of service; but the work is slow, and a long time must elapse before it can be perfected.

In the month of June, 1863, the Confederate war vessel "Tacony" appeared on the track of the fishing fleet, and destroyed six Gloucester fishing schooners. She soon disappeared, however, being burned by her commander to prevent her capture.

In the following list we give the names of all, so far as known, to date, who were credited to Gloucester as entering the army and navy. It is approximately complete and correct as regards enlistments in the army; but very imperfect as a list of those who entered the navy. No doubt some in each branch of the service were credited to Gloucester who never resided there, but their number is probably more than equaled by the names of Gloucester recruits, which we have not been able to obtain, who were credited to other places.

FIFTH REGIMENT (THREE MONTHS).

Company H.

Samuel Jones, must. in May 1, 1861.

EIGHTH REGIMENT (THREE MONTHS').

Mustered into service April 30, 1861, unless otherwise stated.

Andrew Elwell, Lieut. Col.

Company G.

Addison Center, Capt.
David W. Low, 1st Lieut.
Edward A. Story, 2d Lieut.
Henry Clark, 3d Lieut.[1]
Stephen Rich, 1st Sergt.
Alfred F. Tremain, 1st Sergt.
Westover Greenleaf, Sergt.
William A. Marshall, Sergt.
Samuel Fears, Sergt.
Abraham Williams, Jr., Corp.
George Fears, Corp.
George Clark (3d), Corp.
Adolph F. Lindberg, Corp.
George E. Allen.
William Bushby.
Geo. C. Carlton.[1]
William F. Carlton.[1]
John S. Carter.[1]
Samuel S. Clark.
Edward Cookson.[1]
Joseph A. Daniels.
Jonathan Douglass.
Solomon Friend.
Michael A. Galvin.
Geo. D. Gardner.
John E. Gilman.
William A. Gove.
Charles Gray.
Charles A. Hall.[1]
Nathaniel Haskell.[1]
John Hinch.[1]
Augustus M. Howe, Jr.[1]
Maverick M. Jamison.[1]
John W. Johnson.[1]
Elias D. Knights.
Edward Knights.
James W. Lovejoy.[1]
John W. Martin.
Thomas Matchett.
Arthur C. Millett.
William A. McKinney.
Benj. F. Morey.
Peter Murphy.[1]
Alonzo A. Nye.
John P. Ober.[1]
John J. Parker.[1]
Paulino Paroni.[1]
Octavius Phipps.[1]
George F. Robie.
Edward Rowe.[1]
George Shackleford.
Adrian Steele.
Robert Stevens.
Charles L. Stevens.[1]
Frederick Stokes.[1]
Calvin W. Swift.
Samuel Tarr.
Herman Utpadel.
William Vincent.
Henry Walker.[1]
Henry Williams.[1]
John Williams.
John W. Witham.[1]
Joseph W. Woodbury.
Jabez F. Wonson.

[1] Mustered in June 19, 1861.

SIXTH REGIMENT (ONE HUNDRED DAYS).

Mustered into service July 15, 1864.

Company I.

Charles A. Staten, Corp.
William D. Lufkin.

Company K.

Nathaniel B. Parsons.[2]

EIGHTH REGIMENT (ONE HUNDRED DAYS').

Mustered into service July 18, 1864, unless otherwise stated.

Francis Locke, Jr., Com. Sgt.[3]

Company C.

Howard Elwell.[4]
William Follansbee.[4]

Company G.

[5] David W. Low, Capt.
[6] Edward L. Rowe, 1st Lieut.
[7] George L. Fears, 2d Lieut.[8]
[9] Isaac N. Story, Sergt.
Samuel W. Brown, (2) 1st Sgt.
George A. Watson, Sergt.
John P. Tarr, Sergt
Martin Dunn, Sergt.
George W. Dodge, Sergt.
Edward Dolliver, Corp.
Robert Douglass, Corp.
John H. Merchant, Corp.
William H. Jordan, Corp.
Charles M. Blake, Corp.
Edward P. Hinckley, Corp.
Charles H. Wonson, Corp.
Wm. N. Wonson, wagoner.
Justus S. Stearns, musician.
Howard L. Adams.
James S. C. Allen.
Nathaniel E. Allen.
Hiram Averill.
John H. Bagley.
Edward Barber.
Heber Boynton.
Charles E. Bray.
John Brazier.
John M. Caldwell.
Lyman Cowls.
Everett Davis.
Francis Davis.
Eben Day.
William Fears.
Nicholas Ferl.
William B. Follansbee.
William L. Fowler.
Hervey Friend.
Sidney Gardner.
Frank W. Gort.
John T. Harvey, Jr.
Thomas Harvey, Jr.
Daniel G. Hodgkins.
Edward T. Hodgkins.
Luther D. Hodgkins.
Isaac L. Hubbard.
John B. Knowlton.
[10] Francis Locke, Jr.
Leander McFarland.
Joseph Parsons.
Joseph M. Parsons.
Rufus Parsons.
Eben Perkins.
Levi G. Perkins.
[11] Benj. F. Riggs.
George T. Rowe.
George T. Sawyer.
Henry Stanwood.
Simeon M. Stockman.
William W. Story.
Ignatius Sylvester.
Sidney Sylvester.
Henry C. Tucker.
Edward V. Wells.
E. Gilbert Winchester.
William H. Witham.
J. Warren Wonson.

SEVENTH REGIMENT (SIX MONTHS).

Mustered into service July 1, 1862,

Company B.

Edward Butler. Edwin S. Robinson. Charles A. Staten.

THIRD REGIMENT (NINE MONTHS).

Company K.

George F. Winter, 1st Sergt., mustered in Sept. 23, 1862.

[1] Mustered in June 19, 1861.
[2] Must. in July 14, 1864.
[3] Must. in July 26, 1864.
[4] Must. in July 20, 1864.
[5] Major, July 26, 1864.
[6] Captain, July 27, 1864.
[7] First Lieut., July 27, 1864.
[8] Must. in July 22, 1864.
[9] 2d Lieut., July 27, 1864.
[10] Commissary Sergt., July 31, 1861.
[11] Died at Annamessex, Md., Sept. 23, 1864.

FOURTH REGIMENT (NINE MONTHS).

Rev. Samuel E. Pierce, Chaplain, mustered in Dec. 16, 1862.

EIGHTH REGIMENT (NINE MONTHS).

Mustered into service September 15, 1864, unless otherwise stated.

Company E.

John W. McKay.[1]

Company G.

David W. Low, Capt.
Edward L. Rowe, 1st Lieut.
Samuel Fears, 2d Lieut.
George L. Fears, 1st Sergt.
Isaac N. Story, Sergt.
Alonzo A. Nye, Sergt.
Samuel Tarr, Sergt.
Charles S. Forbes, Sergt.
Frank G. Godfrey, Corp.
Samuel W. Brown, Jr., Corp.
Jeremiah Foster, Jr., Corp.
George A. Watson, Corp.
Robert Collins, Corp.
John J. Everdeen, Corp.
William S. Sadler, Corp.
John P. Tarr, Corp.
Martin Dunn, Corp.
Octavius Phipps, musician.
Howard Adams.
James S. C. Allen.
Gorham B. Ames.
Frank Babson.
Osman Babson.
John H. Bagley.
Edward Barber.
Walter Berry.[2]
Charles M. Blake.
Andrew B. Bickford.
Albion B. Bray.
Eben H. Brazier.
John Cates.
Addison Center.
Albert Center.
Benj. Crosby.
Francis Davis.
John J. Davis.
George W. Dodge.
Edward Dolliver.
Robert Douglass.
Peter Flannagan.
Albert Friend.
Alfred Friend.
Sidney Friend.
Henry D. Gaffney.
George Gardner (3d).
Sidney Gardner.
William J. Harris.
Howard Haskell.
Edmund P. Hinckley.
Fitz Hodgkins.
George R. Howard.
James Hutchinson.
William H. Jeffs.
Charles B. Jones.
William H. Jordan.
Elbridge Kenney.
James H. Lambert.
Edwin L. Lane.
Francis Locke, Jr.
Gorham P. Low, Jr.
William Lunt.
George J. Marshall.
John H. Marchant.
John McCloud.
James A. Nickerson.
Peter Nichols.
Wallace Noyes.
David Pearce.
Fitz W. Perkins.
Charles H. Pittman.
Thomas Ralfe.
Allen B. Robinson.
Robert Robinson.
Charles Rogers.
Henry S. Sadler.
George Sanborn.
George D. Sargent.
Milton Sargent.
Edward E. Saville.
George W. Sawyer.
Samuel Sayward, Jr.
Joseph C. Sheperd.
John Shuttleworth.
David E. Smith.
George H. Smith.
George W. Somes (2d).
Franklin Steele.
Joshua Stuart.
Charles S. Sylvester.
James W. Thompson.
Azor A. Tuck.
Alexander G. Tupper.
Charles H. Wonson.
William L. Wonson.
William N. Wonson.
James A. Zeigler.

FORTY-FIFTH REGIMENT (NINE MONTHS).

Mustered into service October 7, 1862.

John L. Collyer, Company I. Jacob Wilson, Company I.

FORTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT (NINE MONTHS).

Mustered into service Dec. 12, 1864, unless otherwise stated.

Company D.

John Hinkley, must. in Dec. 18, 1862

Company F.

William Johnson. William Story. John Sylvia.[4]

FIFTIETH REGIMENT (NINE MONTHS).

Company A.

Richard Bryant, mustered in Sept. 15, 1862

[1] Mustered in Nov. 19, 1862.
[2] Mustered in Oct. 29, 1862.
[3] Died at Newbern, N. C., Feb. 26, 1863.
[4] Mustered in Nov. 6, 1862.

SECOND UNATTACHED COMPANY INFANTRY (ONE YEAR).

Mustered into service November 16, 1864, unless otherwise stated.

Leonard G. Dennis, Capt.[4]
Hugh J. Munsey, 1st Lieut.
Eleazer Giles, 2d Lieut.[5]
Thomas D. Brown, Sergt.
Fred. A. Wallis, Sergt.
Henry A. Hale, Sergt.
Ephraim Whiting, Sergt.
George H. Kimball, Corp.
Benj. F. Williams, Corp.
Jesse A. Blake, Corp.
George W. Lovett, Corp.
Francis S. Herrick, Corp.
John G. Munsey, Corp.
John S. Schackley, Corp.
Benj. B. Hill, Jr., Corp.
Asa Andrews.
James M. Andrews.
Israel D. Barnes.
Adolphus Bates.
George Bowden.
Robert Campbell.
Charles Carrico.
Charles Churchill.
Franklin Clayton.
Joseph Clayton.
[6] Wm. Clark.
Benj. H. Conant.
Riley F. Cudworth.
Albert E. Day.
Benj. H. Day.
Charles H. Day.
George F. Denuis.
Calvin B. Dodge.
Theodore Dutra.
James B. Edwards.
Nathaniel F. Edwards.
George A. Fairfield.
[7] Benj. F. Foster.
Joseph D. Glover.
George D. Goodhue.
Philip A. Hammond.
John Hunners.
Thomas W. Hanunble.
George A. Herrick.
Edward E. Herrick.
William H. Herron.
Henry Hobbs.
John W. Hobbs.
Edmond Hoogerseil.
Nathaniel T. Horne.
Robert Johnson (2d).
Jacob Kinsman.
Azariah M. Larcom.
Samuel O. Lee.
Amos Lefavour.
George E. Lufkin.
Gideon B. Moore.
Edward Murphy.
Peter F. Ober.
William Odell.
Thaddeus Osgood.
Edward W. Peabody.
Walter A. Pepper.
William H. Phippen.
Henry B. Ponsland.
Samuel Preston.
John H. Rinks.
John B. Roundy.
George Rowe.
David E. Smith.
George H. Smith.
Warren A. Smith.
Elijah Spinney.
George F. Staudley.
Nathan Stanley.
James C. Tedford.
John R. Thissell.
George C. Tuck.
Joseph A. Wallis.
Nathan H. Webb.
Thomas F. Whiting.
John H. Wiggin.
Alvin Williams.
Charles A. Witham.
Jeremiah F. Woodbury.
Thomas B. Woodbury.
Robert H. Wood.

TWENTY-FIFTH UNATTACHED COMPANY INFANTRY (ONE YEAR).

Mustered into service December 9, 1864, unless otherwise stated.

Fitz J. Babson, Capt.[8]
Martin Dunn, 2d Lieut.[9]
John S. Upton, Hosp. Steward.
George W. Parker, Sergt.
Henry F. Wonson, Sergt.
Levi Robinson, Sergt.
Edmund Cook, Sergt.
Samuel Courtney, Corp.
Daniel Pulcifer, Corp.
Maurice B. M. Younger, Corp.
Leverett S. Beals, Corp.
Levi G. Perkins, Corp.
Howard Elwell, Mus.
George H. Adams.
Amos Andrews.
Peter Barker.
Eugene A. Blake.
Heber Boynton.
Henry P. Bray, Jr.
Thomas C. Bray.
Peter Brien.[9]
Edward Butler.
Edwin E. Condor.
James B. Firth.
William L. Fowler.
Enoch H. French.
Thomas Hahasy.
Francis Lufkin.
Daniel Lynch.
James R. Marchant, Jr.
Charles H. Nute.
Richard S. Perkins.
George M. Pew.
George F. Rowe.
Samuel Smith.
Josiah W. Stephens.
William W. Story.
Gustavus B. Younger.
William H. Younger.

[4] Mustered in December 16, 1864.
[5] Mustered in December 6, 1864.
[6] Died at Gloucester Feb. 6, 1865.
[7] Died at Beverly Dec 1, 1864.
[8] Mustered in December 14, 1864.
[9] Mustered in December 13, 1864.

SIXTY-FIRST REGIMENT INFANTRY (ONE YEAR).

Company D.

John Birmingham, must. in August 25, 1864.

John Cronan, must. in August 25, 1864.

FIRST BATTERY, LIGHT ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

Matthew Sauman, must. in Jan. 2, 1864; transferred to Seventh Battery.

SECOND BATTERY, LIGHT ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

Mustered into service December 7, 1863, unless otherwise stated.

John P. Hodgkins, Sergt.
Frederick T. Hodgkins, Corp.
Moris Hodgkins, Jr., Corp.
Charles S. Sylvester, Corp.
Henry B. Allen.
Samuel C. Day.[1]

FOURTH BATTERY, LIGHT ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

[2] John J. Barry, must. in September 2, 1864.

James Hammond, must. in November 12, 1861.

FIFTH BATTERY, LIGHT ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

William O'Brien, must. in September 2, 1864.

Owen Wentworth, must. in September 2, 1864.

SIXTH BATTERY, LIGHT ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

[3] William H. Chandler, must. in January 17, 1863.
J. Carter must. in Nov. 20, 1861.

James Devine, must. in August 22, 1864.

TWELFTH BATTERY, LIGHT ARTILLERY (3 YEARS).

Charles Davis, must. in December 23, 1862.
James Robinson, must. in December 10, 1862.

Henry F. Snow, must. in December 10, 1862.
John Tarbox, must. in August 16, 1864.

SIXTEENTH BATTERY, LIGHT ARTILLERY (3 YEARS).

Simeon A. Burnham, Sergt., mustered in March 11, 1864.

FIRST REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

Company F.

John E. Saunders, must. in July 29, 1862.
[4] Alfred P. Smith, must. in July 29, 1862.

Company L.

Igoatus W. Gaffney, Corp., must. in February 20, 1862.
[5] George Abbott, must. in March 18, 1862.
Albert W. Bray, must. in March 13, 1862.
John G. Burnham, must. in March 6, 1862.
[6] Samuel G. Burnham, must. in March 6, 1862.
Warren F. Capen, must. in March 6, 1862.
[7] Lester B. Clark, must in February 20, 1862.
[8] John B. Dodge, must. in March 6, 1862.
Joseph L. Furbush, must. in March 11, 1864.
James Hicks, must. in February 20, 1862.
Henry Houstius, must. in February 20, 1862.
William Johnson, must. in March 24, 1862.
Irvin, Lane, must. in February 20, 1862.
[9] Patrick J. Parker, must. in March 13, 1862.
Edward Reid, must. in March 14, 1862.
Joseph R. Stevens, must. in March 10, 1862.
George Tarr, must. in February 20, 1862.

Company M.

Oliver Davis, Corp., must. in March 17, 1862.
[10] Andrew Parker, must. in May 19, 1863.

Unassigned Recruit.

Morton Herrick, must. in July 30, 1862.

[1] Mustered in December 8, 1863.
[2] Transferred to Thirteenth Battery.
[3] Died at Camp Carney, La., November 9, 1863.
[4] Re-enlisted January 1, 1864; died at Finley Hospital July 22, 1864.
[5] Transferred to navy April 25, 1864.
[6] Died of wounds at Richmond, Va., September 13, 1864.
[7] Re-enlisted.
[8] Re-enlisted March 10, 1864.
[9] Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.
[10] Died at Fort Strong, Va., April 8, 1864.

SECOND REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

Octavius A. Merrill, 2d Lieut., must. in Sept. 11, 1864.
William G. Haskell, Sergt. Major, must. in Jan. 2, 1864; 2d Lieutenant Sept. 3, 1864.
George D. Sargent Q.-M. Sergt., must. in July 28, 1863. 2d Lieut., Aug. 5, 1865.

Company A.

Benjamin Crosby, must. in July 28, 1863. Died at Newbern, N. C., Dec. 5, 1864.
John J. Davis, must. in July 28, 1863. 2d Lieut. 56 Inf., Jan. 9, 1864.

Company B.

William Day, must. in July 29, 1863.

Company C.

Fitzwilliam Perkins, must. in Aug. 4, 1863.
Benjamin B. Thompson, must. in Aug. 4, 1863.

Company F.

Robert Collins, Sergt., must. in Oct. 8, 1863. 2d Lieut., Jan. 10, 1865.
James M. Jeffs, Corp., must. in Oct. 8, 1863. In the navy May, 1864.

Company H.

Thomas Spellman, must. in Aug. 10, 1864. Died at Newbern, N. C., Sept. 27, 1864.

Company I.

Luther Ham, must. in Jan. 2, 1864. Died at Andersonville, Ga., Nov. 2, 1864.
Elbridge Harriden, must. in January 2, 1864. Died at Portsmouth, Va., March 20, 1864.
William Lull, must. in Jan. 2, 1864. Died at Andersonville, Ga., August 22, 1864.
Frank H. Stevens, must. in Dec. 11, 1863. Died at Andersonville, Ga. Aug. 27, 1864.

Company K.

Sidney Parsons, must. in Dec. 22, 1863.

THIRD REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

[11] William H. Dolliver, 2d Lieut., must. in Feb. 24, 1864.
[12] Charles H. Pew, 2d Lieut., must in March 12, 1864.
Simeon A. Burnham, 2d Lieut., must. in Nov. 9, 1863.

Company A.

[13] Alexander A. Stubbs, Corp., must. in Jan. 10, 1863.
[14] Fitz E. Griffin, Artificer, must. in Jan. 10, 1863.
[15] John L. Duley, must. in Jan. 10, 1863.
[16] Albion Knowlton, must. in Jan. 10, 1863.
[17] John Marchant, must. in Jan. 10, 1863.
[18] Nathaniel Sprague must. in May 5, 1863.
William G. Sprague, must. in Jan. 10, 1863.
[19] John W. Woodbury, must. in Jan. 10, 1863.

Company C.

Henry C. Smith, must. in Oct. 19, 1863.

Company D.

Joshua Loring, must. in Aug. 14, 1863.

Company E.

Abraham O. Lane, must. in Aug. 27, 1863.
[20] William A. Ryder, must. in Aug. 27, 1863.

Company G.

Jabez Marchant, Jr., Corp., must. in Oct. 28, 1863.
[21] Neal Wing, Corp must. in Nov. 9, 1863.
Harrison T. Clark, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.
Samuel C. Douglass, Jr., must. in Oct. 20, 1863.
Samuel K. Friend, Jr., must. in Oct. 20, 1863.
Abraham Haskell, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.
John H. Jones, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.
Henry Lufkin, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.
Thomas McGown, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.
George Morgan, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.
Thomas L. Parsons, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.

[11] 1st Lieut., Jan. 17, 1865.
[12] 1st Lieut., April 21, 1865.
[13] Trans. to Navy Sept. 15, 1864.
[14] Trans. to Navy Sept. 19, 1864.
[15] Trans. to Navy Sept. 19, 1864.
[16] Transferred to Navy Aug. 15, 1864.
[17] Trans. to Navy Aug. 16, 1864.
[18] Trans. to Navy Aug. 15, 1864.
[19] Trans. to Navy Aug. 15, 1864.
[20] Died Sept 28, 1864
[21] Priv. Musician, June 20, 1865.

Whitney Parsons, must. in Oct. 29, 1863.

Charles Rowe, must in Oct. 29, 1863.

Melville Stevens, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.

Sylvanus B. Stevens, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.

William H. H. Thomas, must. in Oct 20, 1863.

Company H.

Hezekiah Whitney, must. in Nov. 20, 1863.

FOURTH REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY (ONE YEAR).

Levi S. Groce, Company M, must. in Aug. 25, 1864.

FIRST BATTALION HEAVY ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

Elias W. Hayes, 1st Lieut., must. in Nov. 3, 1862.
Benjamin Tarr, Company C, must. in April 22, 1863.

FIRST REGIMENT OF CAVALRY (THREE YEARS).

Company A.

George H. Caldwell, must. in Nov. 28, 1863.

Company L.

[1] L. Cowles, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.
[1] M. Cowles, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.

SECOND REGIMENT OF CAVALRY (THREE YEARS).

Company D.

Allen McDonald, Sergt., must. in Dec. 22, 1862.
Freeman Hall, Corp., must. in Jan. 13, 1863.
Albert Lane, Corp., must. in Jan. 13, 1863.
[2] William Adams, must. in Dec. 22, 1862.

Company H.

Joseph Spofford, Sergt., must. in Dec. 1, 1863.
Alexander G. Tupper, must. in Dec. 19, 1863.

Company I.

William Chilbery, must. in Feb. 27, 1864.

Company K.

George F. Elwell, must. in Dec. 24, 1863.
William Douglas, must. in Jan. 26, 1863.
Edward Rowe, must. in Dec. 23, 1863.

Company M.

William A. Sayward, must. in Dec. 24, 1863.

Unassigned Recruits.

Rent Celestine, must. in Feb. 27, 1864.
Thomas Gallagher, must. in Feb. 5, 1864.

THIRD REGIMENT OF CAVALRY (THREE YEARS).

Daniel S. Allen, Asst. Surg., must. in Sept. 17, 1862.

Company F.

[4] Charles E. Grover, must. in Oct. 27, 1862.
Abel Purrington, must. in Oct. 27, 1862.

Company L.

[5] Nathan E. Hamblin, Corp., must. in Nov. 2, 1861.
J. S. Barrett, must. in Dec. 2, 1861.

Company M.

Andrew J. Clewes, Sergt., must. in Nov 28, 1861.

[6] James E. Clancy, Sergt., must. in Nov. 18, 1861.
Harrison Fisher, must. in Nov. 25, 1861.
Eben Guptill, must. in Nov. 26, 1861.
[7] Daniel McAuley, must. in Nov. 20, 1861.
Joel McCaleb, must. in Nov. 25, 1861.
Mansfield A. Mouline, must. in Nov. 14, 1861.

Read's Company.

Charles Tibbetts, must. in Oct. 22, 1861.

FOURTH REGIMENT OF CAVALRY (THREE YEARS).

Company C.

William W. Shelton, Corp., must. in Jan. 6, 1864.

Company K.

William H. Mosely, Corp., must. in March 1, 1864.

Samuel Mouser, must. in March 1, 1864.

Company L.

Lyman Cowles, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.
Merrick Cowles, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.

[1] Transferred to 6th Cav.
[2] Died at Washington, D. C., Aug. 15, 1863.
[4] Feb. 9, 1865, Sergt. 17th Regt.
[5] Sergt. Major Mar. 1, 1862; 2d Lieut. April 13, 1863; 1st Lieut. Sept. 2, 1864; Capt. Oct. 6, 1865.
[6] Died Aug. 7, 1862.
[7] Reenlisted and Com. Sergt. Feb. 10, 1864. Killed at Bayou Jack, La., May 1863.

SECOND REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

Band.

John Clark, must. in May 25, 1861.
George Elwell, Jr., must. in May 2-, 1861.
Jacob S. Lord, must. in May 25, 1861.
Joseph S. Mess, must. in May 25, 1861.
David P. Pearce, must. in May 25, 1861.
Reuben Perry, must. in May 25, 1861.
D. Somes Watson, must. in May 25, 1861.
Neal Wing, must. in May 25, 1861.

Company C.

[8] John M. Rowe, Corp., must. in Dec. 31, 1863.

Company F.

Thomas H. Clark, must. in May 25, 1861.
[9] Thomas Long, must. in May 25, 1861.
William H. Staten, must. in Dec. 31, 1863.

Unassigned.

James O'Neil, must. in Nov. 3, 1864.

NINTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

Company E.

[10] Thomas Conners, must. in Aug. 20, 1863.

Company G.

Oscar O'La, must. in Aug. 9, 1862.

Maurice Riley, must. in Aug. 9, 1862.

Unassigned.

John Holland, must. in Aug. 9, 1862.

ELEVENTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

George McDonald, Sergt., Co. B, must. in June 3, 1861. Missing in action May 5, 1864.
Jacob Roth, Co. C, must. in Aug. 12, 1863.
James P. Nichols, Co. E, must. in July 10, 1863.
John Connor, Co. F, must. in Aug. 12, 1863. Transferred April 2, 1864, to Navy.
Thomas Fallon, Corp., Co. I, must. in Aug. 13, 1863.

TWELFTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

Mustered into service June 26, 1861, unless otherwise stated.

David Allen, Jr., Capt.; wounded at Antietam and Fredericksburg; Lieut. Col. Oct 8, 1862; Division Inspector First Corps July 13, 1864; killed May 5, 1864.
Benj. F. Cook, 2d Lieut.; must. in April 19, 1861. 1st Lieut. June 26, 1861; Capt. Co. E May 2, 1862; Major July 23, 1863; Lieut.-Col. May 6, 1864.
Edwin Hazel, 1st Sergt.; 2d Lieut. May 3, 1862; 1st Lieut. Sept. 18, 1862; Capt. Sept. 1, 1863; wounded at Antietam, Fredericksburg and Gettysburg.
Edward T. Pearce, 1st Lieut.
Gilman Saunders, 2d Lieut. 1st Lieut. May 2, 1862.
William B. Center, Co. C, mustered in July 5, 1861. Died at Helena, Ark., Aug. 7, 1862.
Edward G. Wonson, Co. F, mustered in July 10, 1863.

Company K.

Charles W. Fader, 1st Sergt.
Edward K. Coas, Sergt.
Hezekiah Colby, Sergt. Killed at Bull Run, Va., Aug. 30, 1862.
Wm. B. Haskell, Sergt. Died at Washington, D. C., Sept. 16, 1863.
John Kenny, Sargent L. Saville, George Wilson, Sergeants.
Jas. T. Crouse, Corp. Died at New York, Dec. 15, 1862.
George F. Friend, Corp.
James N. Morey, Corp. Killed at Antietam, Md., Sept. 17, 1862.
Thos. R. Hicks, Wagoner.

Adolphus Aymar.
George T. Bailey.
Joseph Carter.
Frank J. Carr.
John Day.[11]
John B. Dennis.
Timothy Hodgkins.
George R. Hooper.
[12] Amos M. Ingersoll.
John L. Keating.
Edward H. Lane.
William D. Lander.
George W. Lewis.
John L. Logan.

[8] Died at Chattanooga, Tenn., June 5, 1864.
[9] Transferred to gunboat service Feb. 18, 1862.
[10] Died Oct. 27, 1864.
[11] Mustered in July 10, 1863.
[12] Killed at Antietam Sept. 18, 1862.

Frederick A. B. Lowe.
[1] Fitz O. Lufkin.
Samuel W. Mess, Jr.
Sherburn F. Morey, Jr.
[2] Edward Murphy.
Benjamin Parker.
George W. Parker.
Thomas Raymond.
[3] Levi Robinson.
[4] Henry Staten.
William S. Todd.
John Trask.
Barnabas Young.
[5] Oliver Younger

FIFTEENTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

Company E.

J. J. Hardman, must. in Aug. 4, '63.

Company H.

J. W. Peabody, must. in Aug. 4, '63.

Company I.

Robert B. Swain, must. in Aug. 4, 1863.

SIXTEENTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

Company B.

James Nicholas, must. in July 10, 1863.

Company K.

Archibald McInness, must. in Aug. 14, 1863.

SEVENTEENTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

Daniel S. Allen, Surg., must. in Feb. 20, 1865.
[6] Joseph A. Moore, 2d Lieut., must. in May 17, 1863.

Company A.

Charles Long, must. in July 21, 1861.

Company B.

George C. Irish, must. in Dec. 2, 1863.

Company C.

Warren A. Burpee, must. in Dec. 29, 1863.

Company D.

David B. Lowe, must. in Feb. 10, 1862.
John A. Smeadburg, must. in Aug. 14, 1861.

Company G.

Launcelot K. Rowe, 1st Sergt., must. in July 22, 1861.
Wm. M. Parrott, Sergt., must. in July 22, 1861.
Joshua Younger, Sergt., must. in Aug. 29, 1861.
Henry A. Cook, must. in July 22, 1861.
Joseph N. Kimball, Corp., must. in July 22, 1861.
Calvin Marshall, Corp., must. in July 30, 1862.
Ezra L. Woodbury, Corp., must. in July 22, 1861.
Samuel B. Bray, must. in July 30, 1862.
Samuel Courtney, must. in July 31, 1862.
John Crockett, must. in Aug. 9, 1862.
John Doggett, must. in Aug. 29, 1861.
Enoch Emory, must. in July 30, 1862.
[7] Charles H. Gove, must. in July 22, 1861.
John H. Ingersoll, must. in July 22, 1861.
David P. Lowe, must. in July 22, 1861.
William Marston, must. in July 31, 1862.
Jesse McLoud, must. in Jan. 5, 1864.
Oliver Parsons, must. in August, 8, 1862.
[8] George Prior, must. in July 22, 1861.
Daniel Pulsifer, must. in July 28, 1861.

Unassigned.

Charles Littlefield, must. in Aug. 12, 1862.

EIGHTEENTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

Company H.

Daniel S. Griffin, must. in July 10, 1863; died at Richmond, Va., Dec. 28, 1863.

NINETEENTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

J. Franklin Dyer, Surg., must. in Aug. 22, 1861.

Company C.

Elias D. Knight, Jr., must. in Aug. 28, 1861.

Company F.

John L. Allen, Wagoner, must. in Aug. 28, 1861.
Joseph J. Seavy, Wagoner, must. in Dec. 22, 1863.

Joshua Bridges, must. in Aug. 28, 1861.
George N. Burgess, must. in Aug. 28, 1861.
Francis Heild, must. in Aug. 28, 1861.
John N. Robinson, must. in Aug. 28, 1861.
Joseph I. Seavy, must. in Aug. 28, 1861.

Company H.

Stephen J. Younger, Corp., must. in Dec. 10, 1861.

William P. Dennis, must. in Dec. 10, 1861.
William P. Ellery, must. in Dec. 10, 1861.
William C. Goodnow, must. in Dec. 10, 1861.
Benjamin Haskell, must in Dec. 10, 1861.
James Powell, must. in Dec. 10, 1861.

Unassigned.

George Ruggles, must. in Aug. 6, 1861.

TWENTIETH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

Company A.

William Rider, must. in Dec. 21, 1863.
[9] Abram Robinson, must. in Aug. 7, 1862.

Company B.

Wenden Rock, must. in July 12, 1864.

Company C.

[10] Thomas Harris, must. in Aug. 5, 1863.

Company E.

Robert B. Swain, must. in Aug. 4, 1864.

Company F.

Heinrich Heine, must. in Aug. 8, 1863.

[11] James Murphy, must. in Aug. 7, 1863.
John Walker, must. in Aug. 1863.

Company G.

[12] Charles E. Jones, Corp., must. in Aug. 7, 1863.
Daniel McInnis, must. in Aug. 4, 1863.
[13] John W. Peabody, must. in Aug. 4, 1863.

Company H.

Thomas O'Brien, must. in Aug. 8, 1863.

Unassigned.

William W. Thomas, must in Aug. 7, 1863.

TWENTY-SECOND REGIMENT INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

Company H.

Thomas Dundass, must. in Sept. 1, 1863; transferred to Navy April 26, 1864.

TWENTY-THIRD REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

[14] Andrew Elwell, Maj., must. in Oct. 24, 1861.
Lewis L. Record, Chap., must. in May 13, 1864.
Addison Center, Capt., must. in Oct. 8, 1861.
[15] Fitz J. Babson, 2d Lieut., must. in Oct. 8, 1861.
[16] Edward A. Storey, 1st Lieut., must. in Oct. 5, 1861.
[17] Benj. F. Morey, Corp., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
[18] John J. Parker, Sergt., must. in March 24, 1864.
[19] Westover Greenleaf, 1st Sergt., must. in Dec. 3, 1863.
[20] George A. Procter, 1st Sergt., must. in Oct. 27, 1861.
[21] Henry G. Coas, must. in Oct. 28, 1861.
[22] Joseph I. Tupper, must. in Oct. 28, 1861.

Company A.

James G. Denney, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
William A. Gove, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
[23] Charles H. Gray, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
Thomas Chansey, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.

Company C.

Samuel H. Everett, Sergt., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
[24] Benj. H. Griffin, Sergt., must. in Oct. 24, 1861.
Arthur C. Millett, Sergt., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
George Pulcifer, Sergt., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
Jabez F. Wonson, Sergt., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
Charles Blatchford, Corp., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.

[1] Died at Gloucester Feb. 8, 1864.
[2] Died at Washington, D. C., Jan. 3, 1863.
[3] Mustered in July 23, 1862.
[4] Killed at Antietam, Md., Sept. 17, 1862.
[5] Died at Muddy Branch, Md., Oct. 6, 1861.
[6] 1st Lieut., Aug. 15, 1864; Captain, Sept. 1, 1864.
[7] Died at Newbern, N. C., Sept. 29, 1864.
[8] Died at Newbern, N. C., Sept. 28, 1862.
[9] Died at Falmouth, Va., Jan. 18, 1863.
[10] Trans. to Navy April 25, '64.
[11] Transferred to Navy April 23, 1864.
[12] Killed May, 1864.
[13] Died at Andersonville June 21, 1864.
[14] Lieut.-Col., March 15, 1862; Col., Nov. 26, 1862.
[15] 1st Lieut., Aug. 20, 1862; Capt., May 5, 1863.
[16] Capt., Dec. 9, '62.
[17] 1st. Sergt. Dec. 3, 1863; 1st Lt., Aug. 29, 1864; Capt., Oct. 14, 1864.
[18] 1st Lieut., Oct. 14, 1864.
[19] 2d Lieut., Aug. 20, 1862; died at Newbern, N. C., Aug. 11, 1863.
[20] 2d Lieut., Dec. 9, 1862.
[21] Sergt., Dec. 3, 1863; 2d Lieut., June 2, 1865.
[22] Sergt., Dec. 3, 1863; 2d Lieut., June 2, 1865.
[23] Killed at Newbern, N. C., March 14, 1862.
[24] Died at Charleston, S. C., Sept. 20, 1864.

Frank Butler, Corp., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
[1] George H. Crockett, Corp., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
William B. Marston, Corp., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
Charles H. Pew, Corp., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
J. Frank Porter, Corp., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
Sargent S. Reid, Corp., must. in Dec 3, 1863.
John R. Thorn, Corp., must. in Dec. 7, 1863.
John S Witham, Corp., must. in Sept 28, 1861.
Edward Allen, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
[2] George F. Allen, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
Nicholas P. Babson, must. in Nov. 16, 1862.
[3] Levi Brackett, Jr., must. in July 22, 1862.
Hiram S. Buffington, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
William Bushy, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
[4] Thomas S. Butler, must. in Oct. 28, 1861.
Edward B. Center, must. in July 22, 1862.
William H. Cross, must. in July 22, 1862.
[5] John H. Davis, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
[6] Abraham Day, Jr., must. in July 22, 1862.
[7] Charles Day, must. in Oct. 28, 1861.
George E. Day, must. in July 22, 1862.
Henry A. Delano, must. in Dec. 30, 1863.
Henry De Vries, must. in Aug. 1, 1862.
John K. Dustin, Jr., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
Daniel M. Favor, must. in Oct. 20, 1861.
Harrison Gaffney, must. in Oct. 24, 1861.
[8] Michael A. Galvin, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
George D. Gardner, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
Robert Ghee, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
[9] James S. Gray, must in Nov. 28, 1863.
Thaddeus Griffin, must. in June 16, 1862.
Tristam Griffin, Jr., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
[10] Asaph S. Haskell, must. in Oct. 1, 1861.
Edward H. Haskell, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
Nathaniel Haskell, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
Walter Holden, must. in Oct. 26, 1861.
Joshua Ingersoll, must. in Aug. 1, 1862.
Charles Knight, must. in July 21, 1862.
[11] George W. Knight, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
George A. Lane, must. in July 22, 1862.
[12] Alphonzo M. Laroque, must. in July 21, 1862.
Sidney Marston, must. in Nov. 6, 1861.
Thomas Matchett, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
William J. McAndrews, must. in Oct. 20, 1861.
[13] John McCartney, must. in Oct. 28, 1861.
[14] William Morey, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
John F Norwood, must. in July 22, 1862.
Timothy W. Nye, must. in July 18, 1862.
Timothy H. Osier, must. in Nov. 17, 1862.
John Palmer, must. in Nov. 2, 1861.
John J. Parker, must. in Oct. 29, 1861.
John J. Proctor, must. in Aug. 2, 1862.
James Reed, must. in Nov. 12, 1862.
Sargent S. Reid, must. in Nov. 9, 1861.
Moses Riggs, must. in July 22, 1862.
Leonard S. Rogers, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
Edward Rowe, must. in Sept. 28, 186
Isaac E. Saunders, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
[15] Samuel Saxton, must. in Sept., 28, 1861.
William F. Stickney, must. in Feb 12, 1864.
[16] Joseph W. Story, must. in Aug. 5, 1862.
Calvin W. Swift, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
Joseph F. Symonds, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
John R. Thorn, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.
[17] John C. Tolman, must. in Oct. 20, 1861.
Herman Utpadel, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
[18] Matthew Vasconcellos, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.
William H. Wilson, must. in Oct. 29, 1861.
Albert Winter, must. in Oct. 10, 1861.
E. Gilbert Winchester, must. in Oct. 9, 1861.
Edward G. Wonson, must. in Oct. 14, 1861.
Henry F. Wonson, must. in Oct. 8, 1861.
[19] Joseph P. Wonson, must. in Aug. 2, 1862.

Company E.

Simeon A. Burnham, must. in Aug. 2, 1862.

Company H.

[20] Frank Pierce, Corp., must. in Dec. 4, 1861.
John A. Dame, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.
John J. Davis, must. in Nov. 29, 1861.
Warren Harrington, must. in Oct. 29, 1861.

Company I.

[21] John Cunningham, Musician, must. in July 28, 1862.
Elijah D. Blanchard, must. in Aug. 1, 1862.
Levi Clark, must. in July 30, 1862.
Edward D. Cohota, must. in Feb. 12, 1864.
John Cunningham, must. in July 28, 1862.
William Darcy, must. in July 28, 1862.
William Elliott, must. in July 28, 1862.
Frederick Fisher, must. in Aug. 7, 1862.
[22] Addison Griffin, must. in Aug. 4, 1862.
James Hickliff, must. in Dec. 8, 1862.
Edwin W. Hodgkins, must. in Aug. 4, 1862.
[23] George B. McKenzie, must. in Nov. 21, 1862.
Israel Norwood, must. in July 31, 1862.
[24] James R. Saville, must. in July 31, 1862.
Joseph Shackleford, must. in July 28, 1862.

Company K.

Edmund Cook, Corp., must. in Aug. 6, 1862.
Henry L. Haskell, must. in Dec. 6, 1861.
Charles Tarr, must. in Aug. 5, 1862.

Unassigned.

Frank H. Merrill, must. in Dec. 13, 1862.

TWENTY-FOURTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

Rev. W. R. G. Mellen, Chap., must. in Oct. 2, 1861.
[25] William Y. Hutchins, 1st Lieut., must. in Sept. 2, 1861.
James Thompson, 1st Lieut., must. in Nov. 27, 1862.
[26] William Thorne, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.

Company C.

John C. Read, Sergt., must. in Oct. 12, 1861.
James O. Gould, Corp., must. in Oct. 7, 1861.
Daniel Boynton, Sergt., must. in Jan. 4, 1861.
Josiah C. Bray, Sergt., must. in Jan. 10, 1861.
John C. Read, Sergt., must. in Oct. 12, 1861.
John D. Carr, must. in Oct. 4, 1861.
Reuben Corliss, must. in Aug. 5, 1862.
Archibald Greenough, must. in July 17, 1862.
Michael F. Hart, must. in Jan. 4, 1864.
Edward J. McEmmons, must. in Oct. 23, 1861.
Cyrus McKown, must. in Jan. 4, 1864.
[27] Albert Sargeut, must. in July 18, 1862.
Rinaldo R. Sargent, must. in Oct. 23, 1861.
[28] Daniel A. Thayer, must. in Oct. 28, 1862.
[29] Thomas Z. Tibbetts must. in Jan. 4, 1864.
John Truitt, must. in Oct. 14, 1861.
Timothy Young, must. in Aug. 5, 1862.

[1] Died at Newbern, N. C., April 26, 1862.
[2] Died at Newbern, N. C., Oct. 1, 1863.
[3] Died at Andersonville, Ga., June 11, 1864.
[4] Died of accidental wounds, Jan. 6, 1862.
[5] Died at Newbern, N. C., Nov. 6, 1864.
[6] Died at Richmond, Va., May 31, 1864.
[7] Died of wounds at Alexandria, Va., June 26, 1864.
[8] Died July 3, 1863.
[9] Died at Charleston, S. C., Sept. 22, 1861.
[10] Died at Beaufort, N. C., Sept. 28, 1864.
[11] Died at Newbern, N. C., April 16, 1862.
[12] Died at Newbern, N. C., Dec. 24, 1864.
[13] Died at Newbern, N. C., April 16, 1862.
[14] Killed at Newbern, N. C., March 14, 1862.
[15] Died at Newbern, N. C., Sept. 9, 1863.
[16] Killed at Whitehall, N. C., Dec. 17, 1862.
[17] Died at Baltimore, Md., Sept. 18, 1864.
[18] Died of wounds at Newbern, N. C., April 12, 1862.
[19] Died at Newbern, N. C., Sept. 13, 1864.
[20] Killed at Whitehall, N. C., Dec. 16, 1862.
[21] Killed at Drury's Bluff, Va., May 16, 1864.
[22] Killed at Whitehall, N. C., Dec. 16, 1862.
[23] Died at Andersonville, Ga., Aug. 21, 1864.
[24] Killed at Petersburg, Va., July 30, 1864.
[25] Asst. Q.-M. U. S. Vols., Nov. 26, 1862.
[26] 2d Lieut., March 7, 1864; died of wounds Aug. 20, 1864.
[27] Died at Hampton, Va., Aug. 16, 1864.
[28] Died at Hilton Head, S. C., Jan. 4, 1864.
[29] Died at Hampton, Va., May 16, 1864.

Company D.

William H. H. Davis, must. in Nov. 1, 1861.
John H. Holmes, must. in Jan. 2, 1864.
[1] John Lane, must. in Nov. 4, 1861.
[2] Daniel H. Lurvey, must. in Oct. 26, 1861.
Frank Poole, must. in Oct. 26, 1861.
Osias N. Rowe, must. in Nov. 23, 1861.
John H. Scott, must. in Nov. 21, 1861.
Samuel Weeks, must. in Nov. 22, 1861.
Andrew J. Winn, must. in Dec. 5, 1861.

Company F.

[3] George R. Gilbert, must. in July 28, 1862.
J. Frederick Gilbert, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.

Company G.

John T. Rowe, must. in Nov. 14, 1861.

Company H.

[4] Andrew M. Lucas, must. in July 18, 1862.
Charles W. Lucas, must. in Oct. 23, 1861.
[5] Henry Munsey, must. in July 18, 1862.

TWENTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

Company C.

William J. Cravans, must. in Aug. 11, 1863.

Company D.

[6] John Gallagher, must. in Aug. 11, 1863.
Edward Harvey, must. in Aug. 10, 1863.
Charles Hoar, must. in Aug. 10, 1863.

Company E.

[7] Charles Pederson, must in Aug. 10, 1863.
James Vernon, must. in Aug. 10, 1863.

Company F.

Charles Morton, must. in Aug. 11, 1863.

Company H.

Joseph Stevens, must. in Aug. 10, 1863.

Unassigned.

Frederick Wilson, must. in Aug. 11, 1863.

TWENTY-NINTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

Company B.

Emory Hodgkins, must. in May 14, 1861.

THIRTIETH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

Jeremiah R. Cook, Capt., must. in Feb. 20, 1862.
[8] Alfred F. Treumine, 2d Lieut., must. in Feb. 20, 1862.

Company A.

James Wilson, must. in Dec. 20, 1861.

Company K.

Theodore Broderick, Sergt., must. in Jan. 2, 1864.
Samuel T. Friend, Sergt., must. in Dec. 28, 1861.
George Frost, Sergt., must. in Jan. 7, 1862.
William H. Cook, Corp., must. in Dec. 31, 1861.
[9] John Jeffery, Corp., must. in Jan. 10, 1862.
Robert Jeffery, Corp., must. in Jan. 10, 1862.
Augustus M. Stacy, Corp., must. in Dec. 19, 1861.
Benjamin F. Walker, Corp., must. in Dec. 25, 1861.
Henry Burke, Mus., must. in Jan. 2, 1862.
Walter H. Clapp, Mus., must. in Jan. 12, 1862.
Joseph Hodgkins, Mus., must. in Jan. 16, 1862.
George W. Allen, must. in Jan. 3, 1862.
[10] James W. Abbott, must. in Jan. 14, 1862.
[11] James Andrews, must. in Dec. 21, 1861.
Edwin Bailey, must. in Jan. 4, 1862.
Lewis Bailey, must. in Jan. 11, 1862.
[12] George Berry, must. in Jan. 14, 1862.
[13] Henry Blatchford, must. in Jan. 10, 1862.
[14] James Blatchford, must. in Jan. 14, 1862.
[15] George A. Brewton, must. in Dec. 16, 1861.
Thomas J. Burgess, must. in Jan. 8, 1862.
[16] John Cain, must. in Feb. 1, 1862.
[17] Francis Card, must. in Dec. 18, 1861.
John Carter, must. in Jan. 8, 1862.
Horace S. Casley, must. in Dec. 23, 1861.
Lola Coley, must. in Jan. 2, 1862.
John R. Copeland, must. in Jan. 14, 1862.
John Crosley, must. in Dec. 18, 1861.
[18] Charles Crusa, must. in Jan. 2, 1864.
[19] Benjamin L. Curtis, must. in Jan. 13, 1862.
William Day, must. in Jan. 13, 1862.
Solomon F. Downs, must. in Jan. 4, 1862.
Juvenal De Ornélloes, must. in Dec. 16, 1861.
John Fredlie, must. in Jan. 2, 1864.
Solomon A. Friend, must. in Dec. 16, 1861.
Martin Gill, must. in Jan. 2, 1864.
[20] Alphonso M. Herrick, must. in Jan. 6, 1862.
[21] Joseph E. Hodgkins, must. in Dec. 31, 1861.
[22] George W. Hutchings, must. in Jan. 4, 1862.
Robert Jeffery, must. in Jan. 2, 1864.
James Kenney, must. in Jan. 3, 1862.
[23] Duncan King, must. in Jan. 13, 1862.
[24] David Lufkin, must. in Jan. 14, 1862.
[25] William Lufkin, must. in Dec. 26, 1861.
[26] Francis A. Marshall, must. in Dec. 19, 1861.
William McCarty, must. in Jan. 13, 1862.
William McCormick, must. in Jan. 13, 1862.
[27] Sylvester McIntire, must. in Jan. 7, 1862.
[28] Ozias S. McKenney, must. in Jan. 15, 1862.
Daniel McLeane, must. in Jan. 14, 1862.
Edwin Merchant, must. in Jan. 10, 1862.
James Morrissey, must. in Feb. 1, 1862.
Martin Nelson, must. in Jan. 9, 1862.
John L. W. Oakes, must. in Dec. 24, 1861.
[29] George A. Oxton, must. in Jan. 1, 1862.
[30] Albert E. Parsons, must. in Jan. 9, 1862.
William H. Parsons, must. in Jan. 7, 1862.
[31] Winthrop L. Parsons, must. in Jan. 11, 1862.
Henry C. Reed, must. in Jan. 20, 1862.
[32] Thomas Rogers, must. in Jan. 4, 1862.
William H. Rogers, must. in Jan. 17, 1862.
Solomon Rowe, must. in Jan. 10, 1862.
Franklin Staunton, must. in Jan. 14, 1862.
[33] John J. Tarr, must. in Dec. 16, 1861.
[34] John Tucker, Jr., must. in Dec. 31, 1861.
William H. Wallace, must. in Dec. 19, 1861.
Joseph Weitzel, must. in Jan. 2, 1864.
[35] Martin Whalen, must. in Jan. 17, 1862.
[36] Charles H. Wheeler, must. in Jan. 8, 1862.
[37] John Williams, must. in Jan. 16, 1862.
John B. Wise, must. in Jan. 8, 1862.

[1] Died at Newbern, N. C., Jan. 17, 1863.
[2] Died at Newbern, N. C., May 2, 1862.
[3] Sergeant, Jan. 4, 1864.
[4] Died at Hilton Head, S. C., May 28, 1863.
[5] Died at Alexandria, Va., April 11, 1864.
[6] Died at Andersonville, Ga., Sept. 16, 1864.
[7] Killed at Locust Grove, Va., March 25, 1865.
[8] Capt., Nov. 29, 1862.
[9] Died opp. Vicksburg, Miss., July 17, 1862.
[10] Died at Baton Rouge, La., Aug. 19, 1862.
[11] Died at New Orleans, La., Dec. 16, 1862.
[12] Died at New Orleans, La., Sept. 27, 1862.
[13] Died at Carrolton, La., Sept. 10, 1862.
[14] Killed at Winchester, Va., Sept. 23, 1864.
[15] Died at Carrolton, La., Nov. 3, 1862.
[16] Died at New Orleans, La., Sept. 27, 1862.
[17] Died in Mississippi, July 24, 1862.
[18] Died on transport, May 11, 1864.
[19] Died at New Orleans, Sept. 14, 1862.
[20] Died at Baton Rouge, La., July 28, 1862.
[21] Died opp. Vicksburg, Miss., July 19, 1862.
[22] Died opp. Vicksburg, Miss., July 24, 1862.
[23] Died at Carrolton, La., Nov. 4, 1862.
[24] Died at New Orleans, La., Aug. 12, 1862.
[25] Died opp. Vicksburg, Miss., July 20, 1862.
[26] Died at New Orleans, La., Feb. 28, 1863.
[27] Died of wounds, at Winchester, Va., Oct. 29, 1864.
[28] Died at Baton Rouge, La., Aug. 2, 1862.
[29] Died opp. Vicksburg, Miss., June 27, 1862.
[30] Killed at Cedar Creek, Va., Oct. 19, 1864.
[31] Died at New Orleans, La., Oct. 12, 1862.
[32] Died at New Orleans, La., Oct. 29, 1862.
[33] Died at Baton Rouge, La., June 28, 1862.
[34] Died at Carrolton, La., Oct. 30, 1862.
[35] Died at Carrolton, La., Oct 22, 1862.
[36] Died at New Orleans, La., July 5, 1862.
[37] Died at New Orleans, La., Aug. 17, 1862.

THIRTY-SECOND REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

[1] James A. Cunningham, 1st Lieut., must. in Nov. 18, 1861.
[2] Stephen Rich, 2d Lieut., must. in Nov. 18, 1861.
[3] John H. Whidden, 2d Lieut., must. in July 25, 1862.
[4] John Hinsch, 1st Sergt., must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
[5] Thomas Coss, Sergt., must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
[6] Edward Knights, Sergt., must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
[7] William H. Dolliver, 1st Sergt., must. in Jan. 5, 1864.

Company C.

[8] Edward D. Varney, Corp., must. in Nov. 2, 1861.
Samuel D. Hunscome, must. in Nov. 6, 1861.
Zebulon G. Murray, must. in Nov. 2, 1861.
[9] Hiram Varney, must. in Nov. 2, 1861.

Company D.

[10] John J. Murphy, 1st Sergt. must. in Nov. 13, 1861.
[11] George W. Burpee, Sergt. must. in Nov. 13, 1861.
[12] John S. Ramsdell, Sergt. must. in Jan. 5, 1864.
Joseph H. Sewall, Sergt., must. in March 10, 1864.
[13] Ignatius Butler, Jr., Corp. must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
James Clark, Corp., must. in Nov. 5, 1864.
Samuel L. Clark, Corp., must. in Nov. 20, 1861.
Charles S. Davis, Corp., must. in Jan. 5, 1864.
Jonathan Douglass, Corp., must. in Nov. 18, 1861.
Edward McQuinn, Corp., must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
Charles H. Parsons, Corp., must. in Jan. 5, 1864.
[14] Henry Pew Jr., Corp., must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
Thomas Pool, Corp., must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
William L. Millet, Mus., must. in Nov. 29, 1861.
[15] Edward H. Allen, must. in Nov. 22, 1861.
George G. Allen, must. in Nov. 22, 1861.
Stafford Ashley, must. in Nov. 20, 1861.
Samuel Bean, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
Thomas Blatchford, must. in Nov 18, 1861.
Edward E. Bowman, must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
David Butler, must. in Nov. 16, 1861.
Stephen J. Call, must. in Nov. 21, 1861.
Luther Cameron, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
George H. Capen, must. in Dec. 10, 1861.
[16] Edmund Carter, must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
John W. Clark, must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
James Clark, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
Levi Clark, must. in Nov. 20, 1861.
Frederick Crosman, must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
James H. Cosgrove, must. in Nov. 25, 1861.
Jacob A. Day, must. in Jan. 5, 1864.
Charles S. Davis, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
James H. Dexter, must. in Nov. 20, 1861.
Charles A. Fosberry, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
Edward L. Gaffney, must. in Dec. 1, 1861.
Alexander Grant, must. in Dec. 13, 1861.
James A. Griffin, must. in Nov. 26, 1861.
Addison Harraden, must. in Nov. 13, 1861.
John Haskell, Jr., must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
William C. Hawkes, must. in Dec. 13, 1861.
[17] Charles Lang, must. in Nov. 26, 1861.
Charles F. Lane, must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
George W. Lane, must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
Abner Larabee, must. in Jan. 5, 1864.
Robert A. McKennon, must. in Nov. 21, 1861.
Octavius A. Merrill, must. in Nov. 26, 1861.
John Murphy, must. in Nov. 24, 1861.
[18] George Nichols, must. in Nov. 29, 1861.
Samuel Parsons, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
Albert Peirce, must. in Jan. 5, 1864.
John Pettee, must. in Nov. 29, 1861.
[19] Richard Powers, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
Stephen S. Rich, must. in Dec. 11, 1861.
Robert Rowe, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.
[20] Samuel Saunders, must. in Nov. 19, 1861.
Isaac Stanwood, must. in Nov. 25, 1861.
Adrien Steele, must. in Nov. 21, 1861.
Charles P. Terry, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
John Thebury, must. in Nov. 20, 1861.
William Thurston, Jr., must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
John S. Troy, must. in Nov. 25, 1861.
Samuel Tupper, must. in Nov. 20, 1861.
[21] William Vinecombe, must. in Nov. 19, 1861.
Lyman Waggott, must. in Nov. 27, 1861.
Charles Widger, Corp., must. in Nov. 27, 1861.

Company E.

James A. Jackson, must. in July 10, 1863.
[22] Gunhatz Legat, must. in Feb. 27, 1864.
Rondfierre Leion, must. in Feb. 27, 1864.
[23] Louis Saget, must. in Feb. 27, 1864.

Company F.

[24] George H. Norwood, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

Company G.

Frederick Hutchins, Sergt., must. in Jan. 5, 1864.

Company H.

[25] Horace M. Eaton, Corp., must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
[26] Thomas H. Elwell, Corp., must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
[27] William Messinger, Corp., must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
Henry A. Palmer, Corp., must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
[28] William F. Stannard, Corp., must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
George Blatchford, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
James H. Blatchford, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
William E. Dunn, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
William J. Fowler, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
James Gilbert, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
Charles G. Hathorn, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
Samuel P. Hodgkins, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
John J. Kendall, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
James N. McIntosh, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
William Messinger, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
Samuel L. Nash, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
Nelson M. Psyne, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
William Powers, must in Aug. 11, 1862.
Lafayette Rowe, must. in Aug. 19, 1862.

THIRTY-THIRD REGIMENT INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

Company C.

Fitz H. Winter, must. in Aug. 6, 1862.

THIRTY-FIFTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

Alfred Ireland, 2d Lieut., must. in Sept. 8, 1864.

Company D.

Frederick T. Lane, Sergt., must. in Aug. 16, 1862.

Company F.

Charles Davidson, Sergt., must. in Aug. 19, 1862.
James H. Bingham, Corp., must. in Aug. 19, 1862.
Henry S. Sylvester, Corp., must. in Aug. 19, 1862.
[28] George Clark, 3d, must. in Aug. 19, 1862.
[29] John F. Foster, must. in Aug. 19, 1862.
Dennison Hooper, must. in Aug. 19, 1862.
George Lisk, Jr., must. in Aug. 19, 1862.
George S. Low, must. in Aug. 19, 1862.
Josiah F. Scavy, must. in Aug. 19, 1862.
Addison W. Tarr, must. in Aug. 19, 1862.

---

[1] Capt. March 6, 1862; Maj. June 29, 1864; Lt. Col. June 30, 1864; Brv. Brig. Gen. June 29, 1865.
[2] 1st Lieut. May 26, 1862; Capt. Aug. 31, 1862.
[3] 1st Lieut. Aug. 13, 1862.
[4] 2d Lieut. Dec. 14, 1862; 1st Lieut. Aug. 13, 1863.
[5] 1st Sergt. Jan. 5, '64; 2d Lieut. July 29, '64; 1st Lieut. April 1, '65.
[6] 1st Sergt. Jan. 5, '64; 2d Lieut. June 7, '65. [7] 2d Lieut. July 4, '63.
[8] Sergt. Jan. 5, 1864. [9] Died at Washington, D. C., July 16, 1862.
Killed at Bethesda Church, Va., June 3, 1864.
[10] Died Nov. 1, 1862. [11] Killed at Laurel Hill, Va., May 12, 1864.
[12] Died Sept. 1, 1862. [13] Died at Potomack Creek, Va., Nov. 28, 1862.
[14] Killed in battle of Wilderness, Va., May 5, 1864.
[15] Died Sept. 12, 1862 [16] Died Jan. 17, 1863.
[17] Died at Point Lookout, Md., June 25, 1863. [18] Died Aug. 28, 1862.
[19] Killed at Weldon R. R., Va., Aug. 21, 1864. [20] Died March 6, 1862.
[21] Killed at Bethesda Church, Va., June 3, 1864.
[22] Died of wounds, May 12, 1864.
[23] Corp. Jan. 5, 1864. [24] Corp. Feb. 27, 1864.
[25] Corp. Jan. 5, 1864. [26] Corp. Jan. 5, 1864.
[27] Died of wounds, at Spottsylvania, Va., May 18, 1864.
[28] Lost right arm at Fredericksburg, Va., Dec. 13, 1862.

THIRTY-NINTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

Company F.

John Day, must. in July 22, 1863. Died of wounds, Oct. 28, 1864.

FIFTY-FOURTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

Unossigned.

Charles Mason, must. in Nov. 21, 1864.

FIFTY-SIXTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

John J. Davis, 2d Lieut., must. in Nov. 21, 1863.

[1] George A. Wass, 1st Sergt., must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

Company B.

Francis Heald, Corp., must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

George B. Jones, Corp., must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

[2] John Y. Taylor, Corp., must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

[3] Walter Butler, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

James Clark, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

[4] Albert C. Cook, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

William Goodwin, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

William H. Jeffs, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

James Jourdan, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

Frederick P. Knowles, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

David Lane, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

Thomas W. Long, must. in Dec 26, 1863.

Joseph Lurvey, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

[5] John Manduits, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

Roderick McDonald, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

Angus McGilvery, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

[6] Frederick Morton, must in Dec. 26, 1863.

George T. Rowe, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

Thomas Schanesy, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

[7] Frederick L. Younger, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

Company E.

Peter Flannigan, must. in Jan. 12, 1864.

Company H.

Edwin A. Dickson, must. in Jan. 27, 1864.

57TH REGT. INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

Company D.

[8] Cornelius Brook, must. in Feb. 9, 1864.

[8] Matthew P. Coster, must. in Feb. 9, 1864.

[8] Charles Marshall, Jr., must. in Feb. 9, 1864.

Company G.

[8] Louis Senic, must. in March 4, 1864.

[9] 59TH REGT. INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

Company D.

Herbert D. Ingersoll, Sergt., must. in Feb. 9, 1864.

Albert Ingersoll, must. in Feb. 9, 1864.

[10] Peter Lucas, must. in March 12, 1864.

[11] William T. Horton, must. in April 2, 1864.

1ST COMPANY SHARPSHOOTERS (THREE YEARS).

Edward Cookson, must. in Sept. 2, 1861.

[12] George Whittemore, must. in Sept. 2, 1861.

VETERAN RESERVE CORPS.

James P. Smith, must. in August 13, 1864.

3D MAINE INFANTRY.

Charles Craig.

5TH MAINE INFANTRY.

Sydney Hutchins; lost a leg at Spottsylvania Court House.

18TH MISSOURI INFANTRY.

John J. Tnbin; died at Port Chewalla, Tenn.

[1] 2d Lieut. July 1, 1865.
[2] Died July 8, 1864.
[3] Died Aug. 21, 1864.
[4] Killed in the Wilderness, Va., May 6, 1864.
[5] Died Nov. 19, 1864.
[6] Killed in the Wilderness, Va., May 6, 1864.
[7] Killed at North Anna River, May 12, 1864.
[8] Transferred from 69th Regiment.
[9] See 57th Regiment.
[10] Died at City Point, Va., Dec. 2, 1864.
[11] Transferred to 57th Regt.
[12] Killed at Antietam, Md., Sept. 17, 1862.

NAVY.

George W. Adams, Jr.
George Abbott.
John L. Abbott.
James P. Adams.
Robert Airef.
George Alston.
Andrew Anderson.
Andrew Anderson, Jr.
Charles Anderson.
William Anderson.
John Ayers.
William Allen.
John L. Allen.
John Babcock.
Edwin Babson.
Philip A. Babson.
Timothy Bacon.
Richard Baker.
Sylvanus Bailey.
James Barrett.
John Bary.
James N. Bartlett.
Harvey Bartlett.,
William H. Bates.
William Bell.
James Bell.
Andrew Benson.
John Bickford.
George Biglow.
John Black.
Benjamin F. Blatchford.
James Blatchford.
Joseph Blatchford.
James Bowden.
James Bowman.
Thomas F. Bowden.
Charles Brandt.
Alexander Bremer.
Andrew Brown.
Henry H. Brown.
Alexander Buchan.
Martin V. Burke.
Robert Burns.
Michael Burns.
John Cain.
James Camphell.
Robert Carle.
Charles Carley.
Hiram Carter.
John Carter.
Nathaniel Carter.
James Casson.
Francis Casey.
Peter Caten.
Edward B. Center.
Stnrgis Center.
William B. Center.
Jonathan Chapman.
James E. Chancey.
George Clark.
James Cobin.
William Coffee.
Thomas Colbert.
Samuel V. Colby.
Francis Colday.
Peter Collins.
Robert Collins.
James Cowley.
John Connor.
James Conners.
Richard Cornick.
John Cowin.
Charles F. Crowell.
Rufus Cnnuingham.
John Daniels.
Llewellyn Daniels.
Andrew Darley.
Albert A. Davis.
Charles H. Davis.
John Davis, Jr.
Joseph Davis.
Francis B. Davis.
George H. S. Davis.
Thomas Davis.
William Davis.
Nathaniel T. Davis.
George H. Davidson.
Pliny Davison.
Abraham Day, Jr.
David S Day.
Leonard G. Dey.
Leonard A. Day.
John W. Delaney.
Frank H. Deonis.
Pliny Deonison.
William Denny.
John J. Davis.
Patrick Devine.
Thomas Dolan.
George C Dolliver.
S. F. Dolliver.
Jeremiah Donnavan.
Oliver Donnavan.
William Donnahne.
John Donnelly.
Michael Donnelly.
James Dolien.
James C. Douglass.
James Downing.
James Doyle.
John Doyle.
Patrick Doyle.
Timothy Driscoll.
William Dugan.
Patrick Dugan.
John L. Duley.
Angus Duncassen.
James Duncan.
Thomas Dundass.
Henry J. Dunn.
Albert Dwyer.
George R. Durant.
E. Eaton.
George Elder.
William Eldridge.
Augustus P. Ellis.
Ephraim W. Elwell.
William Elwell.
Zeno P. Elwell.
George H. Emerson.
L. G. Emerson.
George R. Emery.
John English.
John Everson.
Alex. Falconer.
Robert Falmer.
John Feeney.
David Fendall.
Thomas Fernald.
Clement Ferrill.
William Ferrill.
Henry Fiefield.
Charles F. Field.
James Field.
Daniel Fielding.
James B. Firth.
Anthony W. Fisk.
Richard H. Fisher.
Martin Fiske.
Edward Fitzgerald.

Patrick Fitzpatrick.
John Flynn.
Edward Flag.
Calvin Florence.
Timothy Flynn
Barnard Foley
Michael Foley.
Benjamin Folsom.
John Ford.
Henry Forrest.
Dennis Forristal.
Henry Foster.
Stephen Fowler.
John Frances.
Barton Freeman.
John Freighton.
Lemuel Friend.
Matthew Gaffney.
Patrick Gaffney.
Daniel Galvin.
Thomas Gambon.
Thomas B. Gamon.
John Gardes.
James Garland.
Freeborn Garrison.
Thomas B. Garrison.
Wilson Gartland.
William Gaul.
William J. Gerry.
William Gifford.
James Gilbert.
Edward Gilman.
Daniel Gleason.
James Gleason.
John Glynn.
Albert Goodwin.
James Goodwin.
Daniel Golen.
Patrick Gorman.
John Graham.
Stephen Grant.
Joseph Green.
W. G. Green.
Ebenezer Greenleaf.
Frederick F. Greer.
Fitz E. Griffin.
John Griffin.
Lawrence Griffin.
George E. Goods.
James Hambling.
John P. C. Hanson.
James Harrington.
John Harrington.
John F. Harris.
Thomas Harris.
Edward B. Hasey.
Forbes P. Haskell.
Thomas Healey
Hugh H. Healy.
Patrick Hearey
Michael Hendrahan
Patrick Hennessy
Philip P. Herlihaw
Joseph Herrick
Richard Herring
Lewis Hicky
A. B. Hiyt.
John P. Hiyt.
James Hilliard
J. S. Hinkley
Philip A. Hoffman
James Hogan
Charles Howard.
James M. Jeffs
William Jenkins
Andrew Jones

Daniel Jones.
Samuel Jones.
Thomas Jones.
Charles Johnson.
Francis H. Johnson.
John Johnson.
Matthias Johnson.
Oloff Johnson.
Thomas Johnston.
Fred. Jordan.
Barnard Kennedy.
Thomas Kennedy.
Barrett Kennell.
J. W. H. Kerner.
Charles Kimball.
Joseph Kimball.
Charles King.
James Kingsley.
Alldon Knowlton.
Michael Landaser.
James Landry.
Albert Lane.
Orland B. Lane.
Rodney Lane.
Alfred Lawson.
Charles Leighton.
Peter Lewis.
Thomas Lewis.
Samuel Lindberg.
Charles Littlefield.
George Lockwood.
Thomas Long.
William W. Low.
William Lowery.
Peter Lowry.
James Lynch.
John Lynch.
Daniel E. Lyons.
Mark Manuel.
William Mackay.
Thomas Mahoney.
Sanford Makepeace.
Alonzo Marchant.
James R. Marchant.
John Marchant.
Thomas Marley.
John C. Mars.
Joseph Marshall.
Levi Marshall.
Robert Marhall.
Uriah P. Marshall.
Francis Martin.
John Martin.
Richard F. Martin.
Thomas Martin.
Thomas Mason.
Alphonso Matthews.
Samuel K. Matthews.
John Menny.
Edward E. Miller.
Thomas Miller.
James Mitchell.
Richard Morrison.
Peter Morrison.
James Morrison.
John Munen.
George P. Munsey.
Andrew Murphy.
James Murphy.
John Murray
G. M. L. McCarthy.
John McCarthy.
Allen McDonald.
Daniel McDonald.
Edwin McDonald.
George M. Donald.

Stephen McDonald.
Thomas McDonald.
Bryan McDonough.
Michael McDonnough.
Allen McFail.
William McGail.
James McGowen.
Donald McInnis.
Charles McIntosh.
Donald McIsaac.
John McKay.
James McKenzie.
Robert C. McKenzie.
William McKendry.
George McLane.
William McMullen.
James McNeil.
Donald McPherson.
James McPherson.
Edward Nelson.
John A. Nelson.
Alfred Nickerson.
Morris Nolan.
Francis A. Norton.
Peter Norton.
Franklin K. G. Nuy.
Wallis C. Odiorne.
Frederick Ordway.
Charles Orne.
Edward S. Osborn.
John Paige.
Charles Pape.
Charles H. Parker.
John Pearce.
Joseph Peres.
Joseph N. Perry.
Lacis G. Petterson.
William H. Pinkham.
Charles Pitman.
Charles H. Pitman.
William H. Place.
Homer H. Pomeroy.
James Pomeroy.
Edward Poor.
Richard Powers.
William Powers.
Benjamin F. Randall.
James Randall.
Thomas Randall.
Daniel Ready.
William Reblin.
John Reed.
John Reeves.
George Reily.
William E. Remington.
George Riley.
William S. Rittel.
William S. Robbins.
Dennis Roberts.
Abram Robinson.
James Robinson.
Joseph Robinson.
John Roller.
Owen Roundy.
Manuel Russell.
Thomas H. Russell.
Charles H. Ryan.
Martin Ryan.
Henry S. Saddler.
James S. Saddler.
Amos Sampson.
George C. Sanborn.
Philip Sargent.
Simeon Sargent.
Henry Saunders.
James G. Sawin.

John Saxton.
Edward N. Scamel.
John Scanlan.
Edeman Schoffield.
James Scott.
William Scott.
John H. Sewall.
Andrew Shannoo.
James Shannon.
Michael Shaff.
James Shepherd.
John Shepherd.
John Sheridan.
W. H. Sherman.
Andrew Shove.
John F. Sinnott.
John D. Silver.
Mannel M. Silver.
Thomas Sims.
George A. Smith.
George T. Smith.
James Smith.
Levi Smith.
Thomas Smith.
Ralph E. Snow.
Charles F. Somes.
George Sorenson.
Calvin Soule.
George H. Southwick.
Granville S. Spofford.
Arnold Sprague.
Nathaniel Spragne.
Isaac Stanwood.
Jas. F. Stevens.
Minot Stevens.
Nathaniel S. Steveos.
Chas. Stewart.
Alexander Stinson.
Chas. W. Stockman.
Hawley Stone.
Samuel Stone.
Wm. Strickland.
Edward M. Strong.
Alexander A. Stubbs.
Henry Stumbles.
Daniel E. Sullivan.
Dennis Sullivan.
Edward Sullivan.
Michael Swan.
John Swift.
Walter Sylvester.
Albert Tarr.
Robert Tarr.
Benjamin W. Taylor.
Henry Taylor.
John N. Taylor.
Wm. H. Teeling.
Edwin Thayer.
Jas. Thomas, Jr.
John Thomas.
Samuel S. Thomas.
Wm. W. Thomas.
Wm. Thomas.
Howard Thompson.
Jas. Thompson.
John D. Thompson.
John Toole.
Peter Toutel.
Daniel W. Townsend.
Frank W. Townsend.
Elkanah Tresher.
Wm. Trask.
Jas. H. Trevoy.
Newman A. Tuckerman.
Jas. W. Turner.
Wm. Turner.



James H. Peck

Wm. N. Turner.	Henry Williams.
George Twiss.	Chas. Wilson.
Andrew Tyrell.	George Wilson.
Alexander Urquhart.	Robert F. Wilson.
Wm. Urquhart.	Thomas Wilson.
Peter Vaughn.	Wm. Wilson.
Frederick T. Volchins.	Jacob Winchester.
Francis Ward.	John N. Wood.
Matthew Warren.	John W. Woodbury.
Jas. P. Welsh.	Wm. Yates.
Samuel Wharf.	Eldridge Young.
Wm. H. Wilkes.	Jas. A. Zeigler.

The footings of the foregoing lists of names show that there was credited to Gloucester during the war :

Men enlisted for Three Months	67
For One Hundred Days	72
For Six Months	3
For Nine Months	106
For One Year	129
For Three Years	649
Total in the Army	1026
In the Navy	478
Total in both Army and Navy	1504

BIOGRAPHICAL.

COLONEL JONAS H. FRENCH.

Although not a native of Essex, Colonel Jonas H. French is one of the leading citizens of the county, and by his energy and public spirit has contributed in no small degree to her welfare and material prosperity. He is of Yankee stock, however, which came from the neighboring county of Middlesex, his father, William French, having been a native of Dunstable, while his mother, whose maiden-name was Sarah Baldwin, was from Billerica.

Colonel French was born in Boston, and was educated in the public schools of the city, graduating from the English High School in 1845. His zeal and fidelity as a student are attested by the fact of his having been a recipient, while a student at the old Mayhew school, of one of the Franklin medals, which, under the will of Benjamin Franklin, are annually given as honorary rewards to the most deserving pupils in the Boston public schools. Having an inclination for mercantile pursuits, he began life on his own account as an apprentice in a grocery-store, subsequently becoming associated with his brother in the distillery business, in which he was continuously engaged until the breaking out of the Rebellion.

Very early in life he evinced a remarkable aptness and taste for military affairs, and he was scarcely of age when he enrolled himself as a member of the City Guards, the "crack" Boston company of those days. He proved a capital recruit, and his soldierly qualities were soon recognized by his election as captain of his company, a position which he held for three years. He subsequently served a year on the staff of Governor Gardner, having been selected from among numerous competitors for his fine soldierly bearing and his excellent military acquirements. At the breaking out of the war, in 1861, he was the commander of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Boston, making him to-day one of the oldest living commanders of that time-honored corps.

The call to arms for the defense of the Union found in Colonel French a ready respondent, and in November, 1861, at Camp Chase, in Lowell, he raised the regiment known as "The Eastern Bay State," but which was afterwards designated as the Thirtieth Massachusetts Regiment. In the January following, he sailed in command of that regiment from Boston for Ship Island, attached to General Benjamin F. Butler's expedition against New Orleans. Arriving at his destination, he was appointed senior aide-de-camp and inspector-general on the staff of General Butler. He was with the latter in the memorable action against Forts Jackson and St. Philip, and upon the capture of New Orleans he was appointed provost-marshal of Louisiana. His training as a soldier and his skill as a disciplinarian served him at this important and responsible post. He entirely reorganized the police of New Orleans and, so far as civil matters were concerned, he was the chief executive officer of General Butler all through the period of the latter's command of the Union forces in that city, which witnessed some of the most notable events of our Civil War. After General Butler was relieved of his command, Colonel French served for some time under General N. P. Banks, after which he resigned and returned home to engage in business.

The rock-bound coast of Cape Ann has furnished a fruitful theme for the historian, the poet and the painter, each of whom has found no lack of material for his handiwork in this rugged locality. Romance, scenery and poetry are not its only products, however. The late Edwin P. Whipple, the distinguished essayist, writing of the place, remarked that the principal productions of certain portions of Cape Ann seem to be rocks and roses, and it was the inexhaustible quarries of the former commodity that engaged the attention of Colonel French, who, in 1869, organized the Cape Ann Granite Company, one of the largest and most prosperous granite companies in the country. He has been its president from the date of its organization. The quarries are located in Gloucester, and they have furnished the granite for several of the public buildings and other structures of the country, among them the Boston post-office and subtreasury building, the Baltimore post-office building, the bases of the Scott Monument in Washington, and the spandrel walls of the great Brooklyn Bridge. They have also provided a large amount of the polished granite for the city buildings of Philadelphia. The company is also one of the largest contractors in the country for granite paving-blocks, and it has given constant employment for the past fifteen

years to from three hundred to seven hundred men. The village of Bay View, Gloucester, has been largely built up under the auspices of this company. It is here that Colonel French has his summer home, his winter residence being in Boston. This delightful summer house, which has been appropriately christened "Rocklawn," is one of the most attractive on the North Shore, famed for its beautiful country residences. It stands conspicuous among

> "The outthrust headlands and inreaching bays
> Of our northeastern coast,"

so sweetly sung of by our Essex poet, Whittier. The house and stable are of granite and are models of architectural grace and skill. The house is at a sufficient elevation from the shore to command a fine view of the bay and the many places of interest which skirt its shores, and the prospect from the broad piazzas which surround the house is not surpassed in that picturesque vicinity. The broad, sloping lawns and drives which stretch down to the sea on one side and to the granite hills on the other are kept in the best order that constant care can give them, and the grounds are always open to visitors, who find enjoyment in searching out the interesting scenery of the Cape. Extensive gardens and greenhouses are maintained on the place, and everything about "Rocklawn" is in tasteful keeping with the elegant hospitality that is dispensed by its owner.

In politics Colonel French has always been a stanch Democrat, and his fidelity to the principles of that organization has made him one of the trusted leaders of the party in the State. Although deeply engrossed in the cares which the conduct of large business interests involves, he has always been ready to serve his party effectively in its councils and on the hustings. He served as a delegate to the Democratic National Convention at Cincinnati, in 1880, and was chosen, by an almost unanimous vote, as a delegate-at-large to the National Convention of 1888. He has been for several years a member of the Democratic State Central Committee of Massachusetts, and for three years was its chairman. He was twice elected from the Gloucester District to the State Senate, serving in the sessions of 1879 and 1880, and occupying the position of chairman of several important committees. In 1886 he ran for Congress in the Seventh District, but was defeated.

Colonel French has been prominent for many years in railroad matters also. For three years he was president of the Louisville, Evansville and St. Louis Railroad, and for a period of ten years he has been a director in the New York and New England Railroad. He was also for a time a director in the Eastern Railroad. He is a director in the West End Land Company, an important enterprise that has lately been entered upon by some public-spirited capitalists to improve the horse-car service of Boston and vicinity, and to develop the territory lying to the westward of that city and in Brookline. Since 1876 he has been a director of the Maverick National Bank of Boston, and has taken an active interest in the management of its affairs.

In his early career Colonel French was greatly interested in Free-Masonry and was initiated in the Columbia Lodge of Boston. He was one of the original charter members of Revere Lodge, and was also one of the founders of the St. Bernard Encampment.

Surrounded by all those material comforts which a career marked by industry and shrewd business capacity entitle their possessor to enjoy, having a keen appreciation of the refinements of life, in both a social and intellectual sense, and possessed withal of buoyant and progressive instincts which have impressed themselves on all his surroundings, Colonel French is fairly entitled to be enrolled in the long list of those good citizens of old Essex whose record is the nobler and better for their having contributed to it.

GEORGE O. HOVEY.

George Otis Hovey was born at Brookfield, Massachusetts, on February 22, 1809. At the death of his father he became, in early childhood, a member of the household of his uncle, Mr. Jabez C. Howe, of Stirling, Massachusetts. When Mr. Howe removed to Boston, Mr. Hovey, still a boy, went with him and remained with him until his own marriage. Mr. Hovey was married, in 1835, to Mary A., daughter of Joseph Cotton, of Boston. Previous to his marriage Mr. Hovey had made several visits to Europe in the interests of the firm of I. C. Howe & Company, of which he became a member on reaching his twenty-first year, and after his marriage he also spent two or three years in Paris.

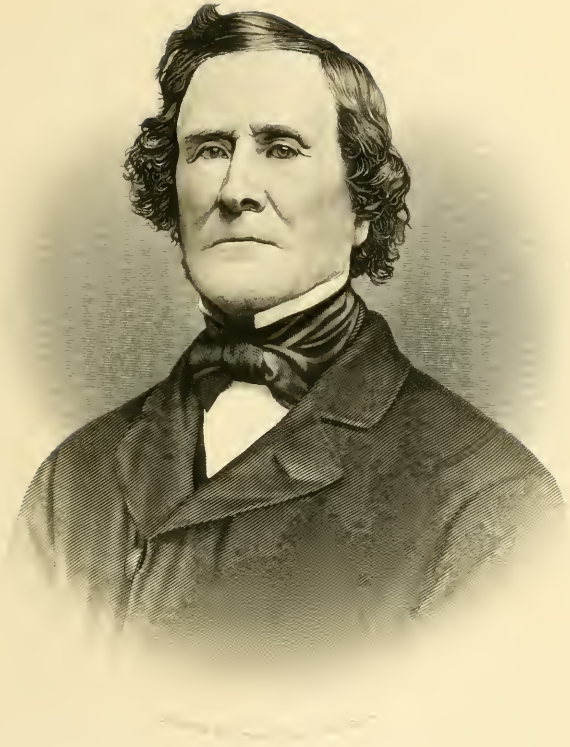
Mr. Hovey was one of the pioneers of the North Shore summer residents, having first spent a summer at Fresh Water Cove, Gloucester, in 1843, and spending all his subsequent summers there. In 1846 he built his summer house there, in which he died July 18, 1877.

EPES W. MERCHANT.

Epes W. Merchant was born in Gloucester, May 22, 1804. He was the eldest of ten children born to Epes Merchant and Sally R. (Thomas) Merchant. Epes W., like most of the Cape Ann boys of that period, was practically engaged in the fisheries until his majority, when he became a partner in his father's business under the firm-name of Epes Merchant & Son. For many years he was one of the principal fish-buyers, and his business reputation and mercantile integrity were of the highest order. His knowledge and judgment was often appealed to by the younger masters, and his kind encouragement and sound advice were often the foundation of successful business



Hugh C. Leavitt



E. W. Merchant



Addison Gilbert



Joseph Rowe

for many. Mr. Merchant was elected a director of the old Gloucester Bank, now the Gloucester National, in 1848, and became its president in 1871, which office he held until he died. He was also a trustee of the Cape Ann Savings Bank, director of the Gloucester Fishermen's and Widows' and Orphans' Association, and president of the Oak Grove Cemetery Association. Mr. Merchant was a thorough American, believing politically in the principles of protection to American industry, and development as embodied in the Whig and Republican parties. He was liberal in his religious views, being a constant attendant at the Independent Christian Church (Universalist). His life was consistent, patriotic, full of kind deeds and loyalty to his best convictions. Mr. Merchant was married, December 21, 1825, to Miss Sally Ellery Ryerson, who survives him.

ADDISON GILBERT.[1]

Addison Gilbert, merchant and banker of Gloucester, Mass., was born in Gloucester in 1808. He is a descendant of the Gilbert family of Devonshire, England, of which Sir Humphrey Gilbert, the distinguished navigator, was an honored member. The first record of the family in America dates from 1648. The great-grandfather of Mr. Gilbert came to Gloucester in 1704. The father of Mr. Gilbert, Mr. Samuel Gilbert, was a successful merchant, accumulating a handsome property. Mr. Gilbert was educated in the public schools of Gloucester and the Dummer Academy at Byfield. He early evinced a taste for mercantile life, and his success is due to his thorough business habits and steadfast integrity. In early life he took a great interest in public affairs, and being a ready and forcible speaker he represented his native town repeatedly in the Legislature, also serving as selectman, school committee, auditor and moderator of the town-meetings. In every branch of the public service he brought into action the personal business traits that characterized his daily life. Mr. Gilbert's political affiliations were in early life with the Jacksonian Democracy, but as the disunion sentiment assumed control of the party, with Mr. Rantoul and others he early saw the designs of the slave power and gave to the Republican party, then forming, the same earnest support that he had formerly given to the Democracy, and when the government appealed to the loyal citizens of the country for means to prosecute the war in defense of the Union, Mr. Gilbert, though past the age for service in the field, did all that he could, and poured into the treasury of the nation all the resources at his command. Mr. Gilbert was never married, and will leave no direct issue to inherit his honorable name and honestly acquired wealth. His life has been one of earnest, conscientious effort and untiring industry; liberal in his religous views, strong in his personal friendships, he bears his eighty years with honor and enjoys the respect and veneration of his fellow-citizens.

[1]By Capt. Fitz J. Babson.

CAPTAIN JOSEPH ROWE.

Captain Joseph Rowe was born in Gloucester, Mass., December 11, 1825. His ancestors were among the first settlers of Cape Ann, and in the wars and strifes of the early days did conspicuous service for the colony and for the country. Of Captain Rowe it can be truthfully said that he represented in his life and character the noble and manly attributes that have ever been ascribed to the typical American sailor.

Following the example of his ancestors, his youth and early manhood was devoted to wresting from old ocean the reward which crowned his later days and made his name the synonym of daring enterprise, fearless and undoubted courage, quick and intuitive decision and unsullied integrity and honor. A fisherman, whose education was from the common school of his boyhood, and that larger and grander school—the ocean. With a mental grasp that seemed inspiration, with a contempt for sham and shoddy that made their votaries shrink and shiver in his presence, he lived his manly life true to his best ideals, and died, mourned and respected by all who knew him. His memory will ever be an inspiration to the toiler of the sea, and his good name, more than wealth, will be the proud legacy of his children and his children's children.

Captain Rowe was married to Miss Martha Norwood, of Gloucester, who died October 4, 1881. His own death occured June 15, 1887.

CAPT. FITZ J. BABSON.

Captain Fitz J. Babson was born in Gloucester, Massachusetts, February 14, 1828. He is a direct descendant from James Babson, who, with his mother, Isabel Babson, settled in Gloucester in 1637. Capt. Babson received his education in the public schools of his native town, passing an academic course at the Murray Institute. In early life he learned the carpenter's trade and was employed as a builder and contractor until 1861, when he enlisted in the Union army, serving in the Twelfth and Twenty-third Regiments Massachusetts Infantry, and was mustered out October 13, 1864. He immediately raised another company for one year's service and was finally mustered out July, 1865, having served for four years as a soldier and participating in the battles of Roanoke Island, Newbern and other skirmishes in North Carolina; also the initiatory fighting at Port Walthall, Arrowfield Church, and battles of Drury Bluff, Cold Harbor, and the siege of Petersburg. On his return from the war he was appointed boarding officer and inspector of customs at Gloucester, and immediately after the inauguration of General Grant was appointed by him Collector of Customs for the district of

Gloucester. This position he held for seventeen years, being reappointed by Presidents Grant, Hayes and Arthur. Captain Babson represented his native town two years—1858, 1860—in the Legislature of Massachusetts, and has at two conventions been the unanimous choice of the fishing interests as a candidate for Congress. He has been the uncompromising defender of these interests against Canadian aggression, and under the direction of the Honorable Secretary of State, Mr. Evarts, obtained and compiled most of the documentary evidence and also the oral testimony on the American side before the Halifax Commission. In the frigate "Kearsarge" he made a thorough investigation of the shores of Canada and Newfoundland, submitting an exhaustive report of the local fisheries and the points of contact within and without treaty stipulations. In the case of the outrages on American fishermen at Fortune Bay, Newfoundland, he collected all of the facts and presented the case to the government, which resulted in a payment of seventy-five thousand dollars damages by Great Britain, and an acknowledgment of the truth of the American position. He has been a voluminous writer on the practical operations of the Atlantic fisheries, and a large portion of the current fishery newspaper literature for twenty years is from his pen.

In the winter of 1885 and 1886, at Washington, associated with Honorable Charles L. Woodbury, he successfully opposed the appointment of a commission to negotiate a reciprocity treaty, and at present writing is the president of the National Fishery Association, which includes the interests of the Atlantic, Pacific, and Lake and Gulf fisheries. Captain Babson was made a Mason at the age of twenty-one in Tyrian Lodge of Gloucester, and has ever been active in Masonic work. He was four years Worthy Master of Tyrian Lodge, and also four years Worthy Master of Acacia Lodge, which was formed and instituted through his efforts. He is also a member of William Ferson Royal Arch Chapter. In 1868, with twelve other comrades, he petitioned for a post of the G. A. R., and was its first Commander. In a large sense his life has been that of a public-spirited citizen, whether acting for years as moderator of the town meetings or superintending the erection of both City Halls or striving with his comrades to erect a monument that marks the loyal devotion of the soldiers and sailors of Gloucester,—in all and through all a pride in the citizenship of his native town, State and country, and an earnest defender of American rights everywhere by speech, pen or sword.

Attending the Independent Christian Church from infancy, his religious convictions were never limited by sectarian lines. In politics a Republican from the first formation of the party.

CHAPTER CXI.

ROCKPORT.

BY JOHN W. MARSHALL.

General Description—Incorporation—Harbor Accommodations—First Settlers—Early Settlers and other Facts.

GENERAL DESCRIPTION.—Sandy Bay, the Fifth Parish of the town of Gloucester, and Pigeon Cove, a part of the Third Parish, were set off from Gloucester and incorporated at the town of Rockport February 27, 1840.

The act of incorporation was passed to be enacted, and was signed by the speaker of the House of Representatives, Robert C. Winthrop, and by the president of the Senate, Daniel P. King, and approved by the Governor, Marcus Morton, all on the same day.

Rockport is situated on the most easterly part of Cape Ann, and is bounded northwesterly by Ipswich Bay, on the east by the Atlantic Ocean, on the south by Massachusetts Bay, on the west by the city of Gloucester.

It has a water front of about six miles; the greater part of the coast line is rugged and rock-bound, though there are several good sand beaches, viz.: Long Beach, at its southern extremity, full a mile in extent, hard, white sand, over which are pleasant drives; it also affords good bathing facilities. Next easterly of Long Beach is Pebble-Stone, separated from Long by a rocky bluff, "Cape Hedge; this, above half-tide, is composed of an immense reef of pebble-stone; at and below half-tide smooth, hard sand. In front of the town is School-house Beach, of smooth, hard sand. Next westerly, separated by a bold and rocky bluff, Hale's Point, is Back Beach, of pebble-stone and sand. Then northerly is Short Beach. All of these afford excellent facilities for bathing. Long, School-house and Back Beaches are public property. Citizens and visitors have free use. The shore of Phillips' Avenue, Pigeon Cove, is comparatively a smooth ledge declining towards the sea, and affords tolerable facilities for bathing.

The surface of the town is broken and uneven; composed of hill and dale, there are bold and precipitous ledges of rock and acres of boulders of all sizes, from many tons' weight to those no larger than a water-pail; the underlaying strata is granite. The highest hill is Pool's, westward of and near the railroad station. It rises about two hundred and thirty feet above the level of the sea; its summit is a large extent of table-land. Pigeon Hill, the next highest land, is two hundred and ten feet above the sea-level; it rises gradually, its surface is smooth and is composed of well-cultivated fields. This is the first land that greets the eye of the sailor as he nears the coast.

From these hills we get a very extended view of land and ocean, the hills and mountains of Maine and New Hampshire; the eye also reaches a long distance over the broad Atlantic. There are the mountains (so-called) located on the westerly side of Granite Street, a bold and precipitous ridge of rough and irregular stone, rising some fifty or more feet almost perpendicular; the apex a level plateau; then the highland of overlook and the split-rock and many other points of thrilling interest to the permanent settler and to the sojourner. There are, perhaps, few towns that have such a variety of scenery and so much to interest the tourist as this town, with its large ocean front and its great variety of hill and dale, fruitful fields and acres of wood.

The Cape, or Fresh Pond, a beautiful sheet of about seventy acres of pure water, on two sides inclosed by hills covered with boulders and trees. This pond is within three-fourths of a mile of the village. Its only outlet crosses the highway near the Beaver Dam farm-house, and flows through swamp, marsh and meadow, and finally mingles its waters with Mill and Annisquam Rivers to the sea. This pond is supplied with fish to some extent,—alewives, pickerel and perch,—but not in such abundance as to invite the Isaac Waltons of to-day; though, in years gone by, two hundred barrels of alewives have been taken in a day.

The roads are in good condition and afford very pleasant drives, the main road lies the greater part of its distance six miles within a few rods of the ocean, of which the most of the way you have an unobstructed view.

Then at Pigeon Cove the avenues laid out and built by the late Eben B. Phillips through a large tract of land he purchased some years since, and upon which are built a large number of attractive summer residences. And these avenues constructed at a later day over and about Sunset-hill, by Babson and Gaffield, for those who love an ocean view none can be more fascinating. Pigeon Cove has long been popular as a summer resort. The south part of the town is increasing in favor. The hotel privileges are the "Pigeon Cove House," "Ocean View," "Linwood," and "Glen Acre," at either of which travelers may be assured they will be well cared for. At the south Village is the Sandy Bay house and the Abbot, open during the year, the Sea Croft open during the summer. Also private boarding houses in good number.

There are three Islands lying off the town, one of which Straitsmouth is separated from the main by a narrow channel called the Gap, through which vessels of light draught may pass at high or near high-tide. It contains about fifty acres. Though its surface is rocky it affords good pasture and a garden for the keeper. This Island was granted by the General Court to Capt. James Davis, in consideration "that he had been to much expense and charge in the late war with the French and Indians, and had spent much time in the service." After changing ownership several times it was purchased by the United States Government and a light-house and dwelling-house was erected there in the year 1835. Benj. W. Andrews was the first keeper. He died on the Island while in the service. And in the year 1841, Capt. John Davis was appointed to fill his place. The present light-house was built in 1851, and was lighted towards the close of that year.

Thachers Island, the largest of the three, contains about eighty acres and is of good soil, affording rich pasturage. It is about two miles from the main; it was purchased by the Colonial Government in 1771, of Joseph Allen, at a cost of £500, and that year two light houses and a dwelling-house were erected and were lighted for the first time December 21, 1771. Kirkwood was keeper. At the commencement of the Revolutionary War he was forcibly removed from the Island by Capt. Rogers' company of minute men as a person whose views were not in accordance with the patriotic sentiments generally held by the people of the town. After awhile the lights were relighted and their friendly beams guided the eye of the anxious mariner and aided in directing his way over the pathless sea, until the year 1861, when they were demolished and the present light-houses higher and more noble in appearance were erected and furnished with lighting apparatus of the first order, and were lighted on the first day of October of that year. These lights located at the entrance of Massachusetts Bay are of very great importance. This station is also supplied with a fog whistle.

This Island is memorable on account of the shipwreck of Authony Thacher and his cousin, Rev. John Avery, who with their families were on their way from Ipswich to Marblehead, where Mr. Avery had a call to preach the gospel. They were wrecked on the 14th day of August, 1635, on a ledge, "Crackwoods," off the south side of the western head; besides these two families of seventeen persons there were two other persons and four seamen, twenty-three in all, of which but two, Mr. Thacher and his wife were saved, and but one body was recovered, that of a daughter of Mr. Avery. She was buried on the Island. They remained on the Island two days, then were taken off and were landed at Marblehead. He settled in Yarmouth and died there in 1668, aged about eighty years; leaving one son, by whose descendants his name is perpetuated in various places. On his departure from the scene of his shipwreck he gave his own name to the island upon which he was cast calling it "Thacher's Woe;" and the rock on which the vessel was wrecked he called "Avery his Fall."

Milk Island, the smallest of the group, lies a short distance southwesterly from Thachers; it rises but a little above the level of the sea. Tradition says that in the early settlement of the town it was used for the pasturing of cows, hence the name "Milk." For several years between 1840 and 1860, Asa Todd pastured sheep upon it. Probably his were the last sheep kept

in town. During late years it has been occupied for a fishing station, and is now owned by John B. Parsons and Charles Hodgkins. It is about three-fourths of a mile from the main.

Before there was any permanent settlement at Sandy Bay, men from Chebacco and Ipswich, came here at different times during several years and engaged in fishing. They erected their log cabins at or near Gap Head. One Babson had a grant of land at or near that locality. He probably was the Babson that was attacked by a bear, and had no weapon of defense except a knife. He was successful and killed the bear and spread his skin upon a rock on "Bear-skin neck," hence the name. Babson did not tarry long in this village.

Incorporation.—Several times during the years before Sandy Bay was set off from Gloucester, the question of separation was agitated, but for want of unanimity on the part of the voters of Sandy Bay, or for other reasons of minor importance, no special efforts were put forth to bring about a separation. But in the opening of the year 1839, the question was again agitated, and with greater unanimity. A public meeting was called and a committee of two from each school district, was chosen to canvas each district, and get each voter's yea, or nay, on the question. This was done and the committee reported at the adjourned meeting, three hundred and nineteen yeas, fifty-four nays. (Sixty-two of these three hundred and seventy-three persons are now, June 1887, living). At this meeting a committee of five were chosen on the part of Sandy Bay, to confer with a committee to be chosen by the parent town, viz. George D. Hale, James Haskell, John W. Marshall, Nehemiah Knowlton, Reuben Dade.

At the adjournment of the annual March meeting (of Gloucester), held on the 8th day of April, 1839, the eleventh article of the warrant, which was to know if the town will set off Sandy Bay and Pigeon Cove, or Sandy Bay only as a town by such line or lines, and upon such terms as may be mutually agreed upon by the inhabitants, and take measures to effect the same, agreeable to the petition of William P. Burns and others, came up for consideration, and the prayer of the petitioners was granted by vote, and a committee was chosen to carry the same into effect, who were as follows: Richard G. Stanwood, William Babson, Alphonso Mason, John W. Lowe, Aaron Fitz, George D. Hale, James Haskell, John W. Marshall, Reuben Dade and Nehemiah Knowlton. Thus the work of separation was initiated and was so carried into effect that the new town, (Rockport), which includes Sandy Bay and Pigeon Cove, was incorporated on the 27th day of February, 1840. The act of incorporation passed the House of Representatives and the Senate, and was approved by the Governor, Marcus Morton, on the same day.

The warrant for the first town meeting was issued by James Goss, Esq., to James Haskell, by which the legal voters of the new town were required to meet in the vestry of the Congregational Society, on the 9th day of March, in the year 1840, to choose the necessary town officers for the current year. The meeting was called to order by James Haskell, Esq. Capt. John Davis was chosen moderator, and Colonel William Pool, town clerk. He was re-elected year by year until failing health compelled him to decline. His son, Calvin W., was then elected and continues to hold the office by re-election until the present time. David Babson Jr., Thomas O. Marshall, and James Haskell were chosen Selectmen, Assessors and Overseers of the poor. Capt. John Gott was chosen town Treasurer. The amount of the first tax assessed was $3,566.96 of which $2,762.03 was committed to collector John B. Parsons, and $803.92 to collector Michael Walen. At the end of the year there was uncollected, John B. Parsons, $81.37, Michael Walen, $98.84. At the incorporation of Rockport its population by the United States census was 2650, and there were about 300 dwelling-houses.

Population by the United States census in 1880, was 3912; in 1885, 3888; number of dwelling-houses in 1885, 755. The valuation in 1840, was $460,814; 698 polls; each poll was assessed $1.00; each $1000, was assessed $7.17. The valuation in 1886 was $2,022,102; 1120 polls; each poll was assessed $2.00; each $1000 was assessed $15.30.

Harbor Accommodations. — Rockport has no natural harbor. Sandy Bay, the principal indentation, is about two and a half miles deep; and across its entrance from Straitmouth Island point to Andrews point is about the same distance. It has good holding ground, and affords good protection from all winds except easterly, but these are the heaviest storm winds; therefore we say it is not a safe harbor. There was from the earliest settlement of the village a necessity for some protection from these storm winds. The small boats—four to eight tons—by which the early business of fishing was prosecuted, were moored in the inner coves, Long and Pigeon, but were not safe from easterly winds.

In 1743 Benj. Tarr, Eben^{r}. and John Pool had a grant of land and flats and built a timber wharf at the whirlpool, so called. Timber was cheap, as the entire cape was nearly all a dense forest. Eben^{r}. Pool had a grant of a lot of land and flats on which he built a timber wharf southwest of the other wharf. These wharves enclosed quite a basin, making a comparatively safe retreat for the small vessels of that day. These wharves became dilapidated, and about 1811 were taken up or removed, and the present white wharf was commenced, and is built of solid stone. It is erected some seventy feet easterly of the old timber wharf location. At that time it did not extend to more than one half of its present length. In 1815 the southwestern wharf, now occupied by Hooper & Co. for lumber, was built. These two wharves enclosed quite a safe dock, or basin.

The middle wharf was built in 1826. It was occupied several years by Joseph E. Norwood, John and William W. Parsons for packing mackerel. Norwood removed to Quincy, Ill., in 1834; the Parsons continued the business several years after. Many barrels of mackerel have been landed and packed on this wharf. At the time Norwood & Co. were occupying this middle wharf Wm. H. Bradley and James Short were doing quite a business in the same line on the white wharf. Before this Neh. Knowlton was engaged in the same business, (he was the first inspector of fish at Sandy Bay) of inspecting and packing mackerel. At the time of which we now speak there was quite a fleet of vessels owned in Sandy Bay; they were from ten to fifty tons measurement. These wharves were built by an incorporation —"Sandy Bay Pier Company." A heavy gale of northeast wind in 1831 damaged the white wharf to that extent that it cost $1500 for repairs.

The inhabitants of Pigeon Cove felt the need of better accommodation for business and protection for their fishing boats. Capt. Daniel Wheeler had, about the year 1825, built a wharf on the southwest side of the cove.

In the year 1832 an incorporated company, "Pigeon Cove Harbor Company," commenced to build a breakwater by which to protect the vessels in the cove. By a heavy gale in 1839 a portion of it was torn down by the action of the sea. It cost about $4000 for repairs. After this the structure was continued to the ledge, and has continued quite permanent. The basin thus enclosed affords good shelter for a limited number of vessels; it also contains a good quantity of wharf room by which the business of the place is tolerably well accommodated. More room could be utilized.

Early in the present century the Norwoods built a wharf on the southern shore of Long Cove to accommodate their fishing boats, of which they owned several. They also owned several fish houses and quite a track of flake room. The first thirty-five years of the present century the fishing industry was prosecuted with considerable energy in that locality and by that family.

About the same time or a little later Azor Knowlton, at the northern extremity of Back Beach, built a wharf to accommodate his fishing boat. In later years the stone business was inaugurated, and that wharf was enlarged and another wharf was built near by, forming a basin by which vessels engaged in transporting stone were well accommodated. A breakwater was also erected for the protection of the wharves and vessels. William Torrey shipped a large amount of stone from these wharves; so at a later day did Preston, Fernal & Co., and Wm. H. Knowlton.

As the business of the village increased and vessels of greater tonnage both for fishing and freighting were called for, the need of a larger and safer harbor was more urgent.

In 1829 the general government caused a survey of Sandy Bay to be made, having in view the construction of a breakwater at this place. A few years after this an appropriation of fifty thousand dollars was made by Congress and a breakwater was commenced on the easterly side of Long Cove. This work went on until seventy thousand dollars were expended. Some few years after Congress appropriated twenty thousand dollars to supply the deficiency. This work was not completed and was left in an unfinished state. The action of the sea leveled it somewhat, yet it makes quite a safe harbor in connection with the wharves that have since been erected by the Sandy Bay Pier Company at the head of the Cove, for our local business, but is of small importance to general commerce. Since the building of this breakwater the question has been agitated from time to time of a breakwater and harbor of refuge that shall be of sufficient capacity to accommodate the shipping interest of the North Atlantic coast. As one of the results of this agitation a public meeting was held in Haskins' Hall on the 29th day of March, 1882, and organized by the choice of chairman and secretary, and a committee were chosen to draft a petition to Congress asking for a survey of Sandy Bay, having in view the constructing of a breakwater and a harbor of refuge. A petition was drafted and copies thereof were circulated in the cities and towns along the Atlantic coast from Eastport to Baltimore. They were signed by a large number of ship owners, ship masters and others interested in commerce. As a result a survey was ordered and was made in 1883, under the direction of Major C. W. Raymond, of the corps of U. S. engineers. In his report made to the Secretary of War November 28, 1883, he recommended the building of a breakwater that will enclose one thousand three hundred and seventy-seven acres of water twenty-four feet deep at mean low tide. He estimated the cost four million dollars. Congress has appropriated two hundred thousand dollars to commence this work. The first load of stone was dumped from the sloop "Screamer," Capt. Albert Pittee, on the 12th day of November, 1885. The work is still in progress. General Thom, formerly United States Engineer, had previously called the attention of the government to this good work.

As one of the results of the stone business so extensively prosecuted here, two other small harbors have been constructed in Sandy Bay, and the largest is now the property of the Rockport Granite Company. It was commenced some sixty years since by Z. Green and continued by J. Wetherbee Eames, Stimson & Company and others until there are deposited in their breakwater more than one million tons of stone. They have also extensive wharf accommodation and dock room for quite a number of vessels.

The Pigeon Hill Granite Company, organized in 1870, immediately commenced the building of a breakwater and wharf, and at the present time they

have assumed such proportions as to accommodate their vessels with wharf and dock room, and also they have a good space occupied by paving cutters, well sheltered by sheds.

First Settlers.—Richard Tarr was the first permanent settler of Sandy Bay. He came here about the year 1690, and built his log-cabin on the south side of Davison's Run (the brook that feeds what was Manning's Mill Pond, then empties into the sea), near the dwelling-house owned and occupied by Deacon Reuben Brooks many years; later by Wm. Knights, now deceased. It is said that he was born in the west of England about 1660. He spent several years in Saco previous to coming to Sandy Bay and two of his children were born there.

In April, 1697, he had a grant of about three or four acres of land where his house stood; and in 1701 another grant of ten acres adjoining on condition that he would support old Father Churchill during his life. Probably Tarr was induced to locate here in order to assist the loading of coasters with wood that was being shipped to Boston. He died about 1732, leaving an estate of three hundred and ninety-nine pounds and the following children: William, John, Elizabeth, born in 1691; Honour, 1693; Richard, 1695; Joseph, 1698; Benjamin, 1700; Caleb, 1703; Samuel, 1706; and Sarah, 1716.

He was buried upon a part of the land donated by him to the village for a burying-ground, which, with two or three lots since purchased by subscription, is the old cemetery of to-day. There was no monument to mark his resting-place until 1854, when the town erected a marble slab at a cost of fifty dollars. There are a large number of his descendants now living in this town, some fifty-six of the name appearing upon the tax-list for 1886.

John Pool, the next after Richard Tarr, was born in Taunton, England, about 1670, according to family tradition. He was a carpenter by trade, and resided in Beverly several years; he worked at his trade there with Richard Woodbury. After his death he married his widow.

He bought of John Emerson, Jr., in April, 1700, a certain farm at the Cape (Sandy Bay) for £160. (This land was on the westerly side Davison's Run.) Pool found but one family here (Richard Tarr), who had preceded him a few years. He, it is said, was a man of great industry and enterprise. He furnished the builders of Long Wharf, in Boston harbor, in 1710, with a large quantity of timber, which was transported thither on a sloop built by himself. He became possessed of a large landed property, sufficient to accommodate each of his sons with a farm. He sent his eldest son to school at Beverly, not only that he might be educated, but that he might be able to teach the younger children. He died May 19, 1727, aged about fifty seven years, and left an estate of £2832. His first wife died November 13, 1716, aged about fifty-five years. His second wife was Deborah Dodge, of Ipswich, who died February 1, 1718, aged about thirty-three years. His next wife was Elizabeth Holmes, of Salem, who survived her marriage less than two years. His fourth and last wife was Abigail Ballard, of Lynn, making the fourth wife he had within five years. His children were Jonathan, born in 1694; Miriam, 1695; Robert, 1697; Ebenezer, 1699; Joshua, 1700; (these were all by his first wife in Beverly); Caleb, 1701; John, 1703. By his last wife he had Return, 1722, and Abigail in 1725. The uncommon baptismal name Return is said to have been in commemoration of the joy with which he heard the relenting voice of Abigail Ballard bid him return, after she had once rejected him. (Turn's Orchard, the name of a field in town, was probably once owned by Return Pool.)

There are forty-four that bear the name of Pool upon the tax-list of 1886.

Pool and three of his wives were buried in his own land, now owned by Ephraim Nickerson. October 22, 1878, their remains were removed to the old cemetery. It was a matter of some interest to the small party assembled to witness this exhumation and reinterment. All that could be found was carefully gathered up and enclosed in a neat box, and deposited in what we trust is its last resting-place. The inscription on the old slate head-stone is:

"Here Lyes ye Body
of Mr. John Pool,
Aged about 57 Years.
Dec'd May ye 19th, 1727."

Early Settlers and Other Facts of Interest.—Up to 1688 no general division or grant of any part of this territory of Gloucester had been made, but on the 27th of February of that year the town voted, that every householder and young man, upwards of twenty-one years of age, that was born in town, and that was then living in town and bearing charges to town and county should have six acres of land. Among the conditions annexed were that the inhabitants should be permitted to cut wood upon these lots for their own use; and the people have a free passage through them for certain purposes to the water side.

In accordance with this vote eighty-two lots, all numbered, beginning at Flat-Stone Cove, and terminating at Back Beach, Sandy Bay, were laid out to persons living on the easterly side of the cut.

Samuel Gott, weaver, came to Pigeon Cove from Wenham as early as October 23, 1702. He bought of William Cogswell, of Chebacco, for sixty pounds lawful money, eight six-acre lots, lying upon or near Halibut Point, and fixed his abode in that then remote section of the town. It appears that he was the first to settle at Pigeon Cove. His wife was Margaret, daughter of William Andrews of Ipswich. She died October 30, 1722, aged forty-six. He next married in 1723, Bethany Cogswell, of Ipswich, who died April 23, 1755, aged sixty-seven. Mr. Gott died November 3, 1758, about seventy-one years of age.

He had a large family of children. Some of his descendants have filled stations of the highest respectability and usefulness. Among them may be numbered Capt. John Gott, who was representative to the General Court two terms; and Lemuel, his son, a physician in his native town several years, and occupied other important positions and is now a practicing physician in Berlin, Mass.

Probably his house was the one now owned and occupied by Charles McLellan.

It seems that Samuel Gott had for a neighbor in 1707 William Andrews, a brother to his first wife; he located upon and owned Andrews' Point, hence the name.

About this time Joshua Norwood, another relative, bought a large tract of land in that vicinity, and in 1712 Jonathan Wheeler bought of Joshua Norwood about one hundred acres near Pigeon Cove for £150.

Joshua Norwood lived in a house that some of the later years was owned and occupied by Joseph Babson. Tradition says this house was built by two men of Salem for the purpose of concealing their mother, who was accused of witchcraft. This house is now in a good state of preservation.

About 1740 Joshua Norwood bought of the Chebacco fishermen their land at Straitsmouth and settled there with his son Joshua.

Several years elapsed before any new settlers were attracted to Sandy Bay. In 1704 Peter Emons was at or near the southern extremity, and within five or six years Peter Bennett was also at that locality. It seems that neither of them became permanent residents; the old cellars that were visible a few years since show where their houses once stood.

In the year 1708 the Commoners laid out in about six acre lots all the land from Long Cove to Cape Hedge one hundred and twenty-two in all. Lot No. 1 was at Allen's Head, at Long Cove; No. 122 extended to Cape Hedge. Bennett bought a number of these lots, and made his home here probably for the purpose of cutting and shipping his wood to market; likely Emons was engaged in the same business. In 1715 John Davis and his wife came from Ipswich. In 1719 Jabez Baker and wife came from Beverly; then came John Wonson; he married a daughter of Richard Tarr in 1720. Next came Edmund Grover from Beverly, and settled near Loblolly Cove. Then Samuel Clark, who in 1726 had a grant of one-half acre of land; then we hear of Joshua Kendall and Henry Witham and Thomas Draper, who married Sarah, daughter of Richard Tarr in January 6, 1733; next we hear of John Row, whose son and grandson were at the battle of Bunker Hill; Elias Cook, who came from Marblehead, and in 1734 had a grant of sixteen rods of land.

In 1738, in a petition of Jabez Baker, Benjamin Tarr, John Davis and others of the easterly part of the first parish of Gloucester ("Sandy Bay") to the General Court, for an allowance out of the Parish treasury to support a minister during the winter months. They say: "By reason of the great mortality, we have had thirty-one of our pleasant children taken from us by death. We have reason to bless God for sparing so many. There is still living one hundred and forty persons." Mention is made of twenty-seven families as being all the village; two families, Caleb Pool and Jonathan, lost three children each; the disease was the malignant throat distemper; at this time it prevailed extensively in New England. Probably there were but three or four families in Pigeon Cove at this time.

Thomas Goss came to Sandy Bay in 1751, and married Mary Tarr. This Goss had a wonderful dog in later years. Goss, with another man and his dog, in the year 1774, went out of Sandy Bay for a day's gunning and fishing; a fresh breeze sprung up from the northwest, the boat's sails were torn and she was otherwise disabled, and was being drifted at the mercy of the wind and sea. A vessel came to their rescue and took the two men and dog on board, and landed them at some port on the Chesapeake Bay. Soon after their arrival the dog was missing. The men took passage on a vessel for Boston, where in due time they arrived, and from thence walked home. The dog, emaciated and worn, arrived two days before.

Some time after this, Goss, with his dog, was out fishing; while hauling a fish he broke off and came to the surface; the dog jumped overboard to get the fish, a shark attacked the dog—this was the last of that faithful animal.

John Blatchford was born in the southern part of England about the year 1702. In 1716, when the river Thames was frozen over beeves were roasted and eaten upon the ice. He was present with hundreds of men and boys. "After the gentlemen had finished their feast," as he himself used to say, "the boys were all bountifully supplied." At that time he was fourteen years old. Soon after this he came to Portsmouth, N. H., where he resided several years, and then went to Salem, Mass. He came to Sandy Bay about 1754. January 7, 1755, he married Rachel, daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth Clark. For many years preceding his death he was very infirm. They went to live with their daughter Rachel. Mrs. Blatchford died in 1800. Mr. Blatchford lived until 1809, when he died at the age of one hundred and seven years.

He had six sons and two daughters. Two sons died young. His eldest son, John, had a very hard experience in battle and in prison-ships in the Revolutionary War. His youngest son, Henry, died in Rockport in 1853, aged eighty-four years. A grandson, William, served on board the United States frigate "Congress" when eleven years old, and received a land warrant for that service when he was past seventy. He died January 20, 1864, aged seventy-six years. Another grandson, John, was Representative to the General

Court in 1834–35. There are quite a number of the descendants of the elder Blatchford still living here, among which is Eben, the leading apothecary for many years, and his son Eben, who succeeded him in the business.

Besides those already named as the first and among the first settlers of Sandy, there were others whose names are familiar at this day: James Parsons, 1744; Joseph Thurston, the first of the name in the village, resided several years at Pigeon Hill. His son Joseph settled here in 1754. Thomas Oakes was living here in 1748. The Harrises first located at Pigeon Hill previous to 1754.

	£	s.	d.		
"The province tax that year was.....	14	2	6	=	$47.09
Town tax.....	12	3	6	=	40.58
Total tax.....					$87.67"

In the year 1754 the whole number of tax-payers in Sandy Bay was thirty-seven, of whom, probably, more than one-half obtained their living by fishing and the others by cultivating the soil. Their fishing-boats were of but few tons, as at this time there were but two of sufficient value to be taxed. The village of Sandy Bay contained about one twenty-fourth of the whole taxable valuation of the town. The distance of these people from the town-school have forced them to rely chiefly upon their own exertions for the education of their children, and their remoteness from the meeting-house deprived a large portion of them of the advantage and enjoyment of public religious worship. A school-house was erected by them soon after 1725, when the commissioners granted them one acre of land near the centre of the village, on which to erect a house "to keep a good school in for the godly instruction of children, and teaching of them to read and write good English."

They also had preaching sometimes in the winter, and in 1740 obtained from the First Parish remission of one-third of their parish rates, on condition of supporting religious worship in their own village four months of the year. The First Parish was obliged by an act of the General Court to do this. Rev. Moses Parsons was their minister one winter; the names of the other ministers are not known.

The act of incorporation of the Fifth Parish, "Sandy Bay," received the approval of the Governor January 1, 1754.

The westerly line of the new parish extended from Cape Hedge to the highway near Beaver Dam, and thence in a northerly direction to the Squam Parish line.

The meeting-house was erected by the parish about the time of its incorporation. It stood near the head of Long Cove, and about forty feet in front of the present Baptist Meeting-house. It was about thirty-six feet square, two stories high; it had neither belfry nor steeple. On the south side was a porch, in which was the entrance to the audience-room, and a stairway leading to the gallery. The floor was furnished with eighteen pews; each side the middle aisle, near the pulpit, were three long seats; the other space was occupied with seats; there was a gallery upon three sides of the room. It was taken down in May, 1805, just before the decease of the venerable pastor, who had so many years officiated as the pastor of the church and people.

The new church was organized February 13, 1755. The ministers of the First, Third and Fourth Churches, with delegates, were present to assist in the organization of this sister church. The following are the names of the members who were dismissed from the First Church to form the new: Edmund Grover, Jabez Baker, Nehemiah Grover, Henry Witham, Jonathan Pool, Samuel Davis, John Row, James Parsons, Jr., Samuel Clark, Jr., and Eleazer Lurvey. They selected for their minister Rev. Ebenezer Cleaveland, who was ordained in December, 1755, with a salary of sixty pounds per annum. In January following Edmund Grover and Jabez Baker were chosen ruling elders, and Henry Witham and Samuel Davis were chosen deacons. In forming themselves into a parish, the people of Sandy Bay assumed a pecuniary burthen of no small amount; and it is a fact in their history, which their descendants may remember with pleasure as an evidence of their religious character, that the salary paid their minister in 1755 was more than twice that of their town and province tax the year preceding. Mr. Cleaveland was a son of Josiah Cleaveland, of Canterbury, Conn., and was born in that town January 5, 1725.

About the year 1740 John Row, born in 1714, opened a tavern, and continued in that business quite a number of years; the tradition says held a commission as lieutenant and served in the Canada War of 1757. He was patriotic, as were his sons. John, the eldest, born in 1737, was a captain at the battle of Bunker Hill; his son John was his clerk. Another son, William, was also in the battle. Eben, the third son of Lieutenant John Row, lost one hand on board the "Yankee Hero," while attempting to capture the English frigate "Milford." For this casualty he received a pension for life. He died in Georgetown, Me., aged ninety-four or ninety-five years. Isaac, born 1762, another son of Lieutenant John Row by his second wife, Abigail, received a half-pay pension for services rendered privateering during the latter part of the Revolutionary War. He died January 2, 1852, aged ninety years.

His son Isaac engaged in privateering during the war of 1812–14. He died in Portland, Me., in 1857. Eben, another son of Lieutenant Row, served for a time in the Revolutionary War.

During the year 1754 the Widow Mary Gamage—born in Sandy Bay in 1717; her maiden-name was Norwood—returned from the State of Maine with her children, after an absence of several years. She engaged service as sexton of the church, and did service in the medical profession among her own sex

until 1797, when she removed to Bristol, Me, where she died in 1822, aged one hundred and five years. She was the widow of Nathaniel Gamage and the daughter of Joshua Norwood, born in 1783.

CHAPTER CXII.

ROCKPORT—(*Continued*).

ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY.

Rev. E. Cleaveland—Rev. David Jewett—Rev. Wakefield Gale—Rev. Wm. H. Dunning—Rev. James W. Cooper—Rev. Charles C. McIntyre—Rev. R. B. Howard—Rev. A. F. Norcross—Second Congregational Church—Pigeon Cove Chapel—Methodist Church—Universalist Church and Society—Second Universalist Society—Baptist Church and Society—Catholic Church—Protestant Episcopal Church.

In the year 1753 the citizens of Sandy Bay commenced to build a meeting-house near where the Mount Pleasant House now stands. The timber was hauled to the spot and was framed and ready to raise when, on account of dissatisfaction on the part of a considerable number of persons, the frame was removed in the night time (tradition says by women) to the southern part of what is now Baptist Square, and there it was erected. It was thirty-six feet square, two stories high; it had no tower or belfry. It fronted the south; on the front was a porch, though which was the entrance to the audience room and the galleries, which were upon three sides; the front gallery was occupied by the singers. Over the pulpit was a sounding-board; the pulpit was also furnished with an hour glass, by which the minister timed the service. The lower floor was furnished with eighteen pews, and each side of the middle aisle were three long seats for the aged men and women; there was a seat for the colored people (slaves), of whom there were several before the Revolutionary War; there was also a seat under or near the front of the pulpit for the deacons; here they deaconed off the hymn, one line at a time, for the singers. Captain Young and Thomas Dresser led the singing; they had no music-book or tuning-fork; they were guided wholly by the ear. The horse block stood near the eastern corner of the meeting-house, by which they were accommodated in mounting their horses,—man and wife rode the same horse; there was, at that time, hardly a carriage in the village. Previous to the building of the meeting-house, in fact, until January, 1754, when Sandy Bay was incorporated as the Fifth Parish of Gloucester, they were obliged to pay their tax to support preaching in the First Parish of Gloucester, of which it was a part; but for several years previous to 1754 the First Parish relinquished one-third part of the yearly tax of Sandy Bay, on condition that they support preaching by themselves four months of each year, which, for several years, they did. Rev. Moses Parsons officiated one winter; there is the name of no other clergyman handed down except that Mr. Ebenezer Cleaveland came to Sandy Bay in 1752, and preached in the log school-house, which set in the yard front of the present Congregational meeting-house, a part of the time.

Ebenezer Cleaveland was the first permanent minister; he was from Canterbury, Conn. (tradition says he preached a short time in Essex before he came here). A Congregationalist Church of ten members, dismissed from the First Church for this purpose, was organized February 13, 1755,—Edmund Grover, Jabez Baker, Nehemiah Grover, Henry Witham, Jonathan Pool, Samuel Davis, John Rowe, James Parsons, Jr., Samuel Clark, Jr., Eleazer Lurvey. Rev. Ebenezer Cleaveland was ordained in December, 1755; his salary was sixty pounds per year, which was four times the amount of their town tax that year (exclusive of the frame for his dwelling-house). By vote of the parish the ministers that attend the ordination are to be entertained at the house of Samuel Davis; he to receive ten shillings (old tenor) for each man entertained; and Mr. Francis Pool was to procure a cushion for the pulpit previous to the ordination. We are left almost exclusively to conjecture as to the ministers that officiated on this all-important occasion. It is more than probable that Rev. John White, of the First Parish (then about eighty years of age), Samuel Chandler (then about forty), John Rogers, of the old town (then Fourth Parish), and Rev. Benjamin Bradstreet, of the Third Parish, were present. The exercises undoubtedly were of a very interesting character, the influences of which have extended to the present generation, and we trust will continue unto all coming time.

It seems that Rev. Mr. Cleaveland was absent part of the years 1758, '59 and '60; this was the time of the French War, and he was, for a time, chaplain in the army, stationed near Lake Champlain.

And then, by consent of the church, he, in June, 1775, joined the Revolutionary army as chaplain, and the following winter was stationed at Dorchester Heights. He served also at Rhode Island and at other places.

On his return home he found his parish in a distressed condition; some had fallen in battle, others had died in prison-ships, many had perished at sea; nearly all the able-bodied men were absent in the army or on board of naval vessels or privateers. They were indebted to him for past labors, and the best they could do was to give him a salary of ninety quintals of bake-fish per annum.

He was therefore compelled to seek another field of labor, and accepted an offer to become superintendent of Dartmouth College lands at Llandoff, N. H.; also preaching in that and some of the neighboring towns until about 1785, when he returned to Sandy Bay, and preached to his former flock when

not otherwise engaged, for such contributions as they could raise for him.

After a few years he removed to Amesbury, Mass., and there preached until about 1797, when he came back to his old home and finished his days in the house which he built early in his ministry. (Said house has had a third story and an L added and other improvements. It is the Abbot House of to-day).

He preached at least once in the new meeting-house that was built in 1804 (and dedicated in October. Rev. Abiel Abbot preached the sermon), and baptized nineteen children. He died July 4, 1805, aged eighty years.

In all his private relations he was kind and loving, and his public duties were performed in such a manner as to give him the respect and affection of his people.

His virtues were subjected to severe trials, but he came from the ordeal with increased brightness. Unusual domestic troubles fell to his lot, but he kept his faith, and preserved a patient, serene and affectionate spirit to the end. He died with Christian resignation; trusting as he said, "in the same God who had protected him when the bullets were flying about his head on the field of battle," and resting "on the doctrines of free grace his hope of immortal glory."

He lies buried in the old Parish Burying-Ground; upon his grave-stone, besides the usual inscription are these lines,—

> "Farewell, thou man of God! We saw thy grief;
> Nor youth, nor hoary days produced relief:
> By painful crosses try'd, by sorrows prov'd,
> By good men honor'd, and by Jesus lov'd,
> Thy many years one hallow'd current ran;
> A faithful pastor, and a godly man."

Mr. Cleaveland's wife was Abigail Stevens, of Canterbury, Conn. She died December 25, 1804, aged seventy-seven years. When expiring, she repeated the following lines:

> "Mercy, good Lord! mercy I crave;
> This is the total sum:
> For mercy, Lord is all my suit,
> Lord, let thy mercy come."

They had twelve children, only three of which died in Sandy Bay. One great-granddaughter is now living here, Mrs. Wingood.

Rev. David Jewett. — After being without a stated pastor more than twenty years, Rev. David Jewett, a young man of thirty years old, and a graduate of Dartmouth College, was called to the pastorate, and was ordained on the 30th day of October, 1805. At the time of his settlement the church had become almost extinct; there were but two male and eleven female members; they were well-advanced in years. For more than twenty-three years they had not met around the table of the Lord. The salary of the new minister was fixed at six hundred dollars each year.

The sermon at the ordination was preached by Rev. Samuel Worcester, of Salem, Mass. Text was Jeremiah, third chapter, fifteenth verse, "And I will give you pastors according to mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding."

Notwithstanding the decline of the church and the long vacant pastorate, the year previous to the ordination of Mr. Jewett, there was built a large and commodious house of worship at a cost of nine thousand dollars. And this when the whole population of Sandy Bay, probably, did not exceed one thousand, and the whole taxable property as appears by the assessors' books did not exceed one hundred thousand. Some seven years previous a school-house was built by fifty-eight individuals at a cost of one thousand five hundred and sixty-six dollars; hence the name "proprietors' school-house;" therefore, notwithstanding the small number of church members and the low state of religion, consequent upon a so long vacant pastorate, there was within the people an inherent desire for the ministration of the word of God, and for the education of the children and youth.

Under the earnest and faithful labors of the new pastor the church soon regained its former position among the family of churches, and being blessed by revivals increased greatly in number and in spiritual strength. In the fall and winter of 1827 and '28 was the most powerful revival in the history of the church. One hundred and forty-one new members were the fruit of this one ingathering of souls. The whole number of members admitted during his ministry was three hundred and five. He found a church of thirteen members, and when he resigned, in 1836, he left one of two hundred and fifteen, strong and vigorous. From the earliest days of his settlement he adopted the custom of inviting the children to his house on Saturday afternoon for catechetical instruction. There are some few now living (1887), that were partakers of that privilege. The Sabbath-school was organized May 23, 1818. Deacon Jabez R. Gott was chosen superintendent, and served in that capacity thirty-two years, though not continuously. The others that have occupied that position are Joseph Bartlett, Deacon Thomas Giles, Dr. Lemuel Gott, James Haskell, Deacon Newell Giles, Reuben Brooks, John W. Marshall and Deacon Andrew F. Clark, the present incumbent.

Mr. Jewett married Rebecca Reed, of Marblehead. Four children were born to them: William R., who became an earnest and faithful preacher of the gospel; D. Brainard, who was a successful Boston merchant; Mary A., who married the Rev. Mr. Whitney, of Waltham; Elizabeth, now a resident of Boston.

His wife died at Waltham April 16, 1859, aged seventy-five.

Mr. Jewett, after leaving Rockport, made his home in Marblehead, and later at Waltham, preaching occasionally as opportunity offered. He died at Waltham, Mass, July 14, 1841, aged sixty-eight years. His remains now rest in the old Parish Burying-

Ground, in the town where his life-work was performed, and also those of his wife. The parish have erected a granite monument in token of their remembrance of his devotion to the welfare of the people to whom he so long ministered.

The monument alluded to is an elegant specimen of Rockport granite, fifteen feet in height, and is a fine specimen of workmanship. On one side is the name "Rev. David Jewett" in raised granite letters; on the other the following inscription inserted on a marble tablet:

"Born in Hollis, N. H., July 16, 1773.
Graduated at Dartmouth College, 1801.
Ordained Pastor of the Cong. Church,
Octr. 30, 1805.
Died at Waltham, July 14, 1841.

Distinguished for strict integrity, godly simplicity, unity of purpose, untiring energy and self-sacrifice, in his devotion to the Church of Christ.

Living he enjoyed the respect and confidence of his people; dying, he left his memory embalmed in the warmest affection of their hearts.

This monument is gratefully erected by the church and society of which he was pastor more than thirty years."

Rev. Wakefield Gale, a graduate of Dartmouth, succeeded Rev. Mr. Jewett, and was installed on the 4th day of May, 1836. He was born in Pembroke, N. H., and had been pastor of a church at Eastport, Maine, ten years previous to his pastorate here. The installation sermon was by Rev. William M. Rogers, of Boston; his text, Mark 14th chap. 15th verse: "And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature." The church was greatly blessed under his earnest and faithful labors of twenty-seven years, and it enjoyed several very interesting revivals of religion. In the year 1839 fifty-eight new members were added to the church. The fruit of another revival, in 1843, was an addition to the church membership of eighty-two persons.

During his entire pastorate three hundred and fifty-two were added to the church, nearly all on profession of their faith.

Mr. Gale was dismissed by council on the 10th day of February, 1864, after a very successful pastorate.

In 1839 the church edifice was thoroughly repaired, and improved by a new pulpit and pews, new windows and steeple, etc., at a cost of eight thousand dollars. The text of the last sermon in the house before the repairs was John 14th chap. 31st verse: "Arise, let us go hence;" and at the re-dedication, after the work was completed, was from 116th Psalm, 7th verse: "Return unto thy rest, O my soul, for the Lord hath dealt bountifully with thee."

No accident had taken place during all the months occupied in repairs and improvements.

His wife, Mary Louisa, died in Rockport, April 12, 1861, aged fifty-four years, an exemplary Christian and greatly beloved. Most of the time after he left town he made Easthampton, Mass., his home, and supplied the church at West Granville for a time. He was married twice after he left Rockport. He died at Easthampton, October 2, 1881, aged eighty-five years, leaving a widow, two sons and one daughter, children of his first wife.

Himself, wife Mary Louisa, and five children are buried on his family lot in our Beech Grove Cemetery.

Rev. William H. Dunning succeeded Rev. Mr. Gale, and was ordained on the 10th day of February, 1864. The sermon was preached by Rev. Nehemiah Adams, D.D., of Boston; the ordaining prayer by Rev. F. V. Tenney, of Manchester.

Mr. Dunning's pastorate was earnest and successful, though short and broken, on account of ill health. Its influence will be lasting.

After three years and a half, during which fifty new members were added to the church, he, on account of continued ill health, was compelled to resign his charge, and was dismissed by council on the 5th day of February, 1867.

He died on the 9th day of February, 1869, at Faribault, Minn., where he had gone in search of health.

Rev. James W. Cooper, the fifth pastor of this church, was ordained on the 10th day of September, 1868. The sermon was by Rev. J. M. Manning, of the old South Church, Boston; ordaining prayer by Rev. William M. Barbour, of Peabody. Rev. J. L. Jenkins, of Amherst, gave the charge to the pastor.

Mr. Cooper was a young man full of promise; his pastorate though short, was successful. The Sabbath-school increased in interest, and at its close numbered more than four hundred members. And the church May 1, 1870, had a membership of three hundred and nine.

He resigned his pastorate November 25, 1870. His letter was read by Rev. Will C. Wood, of Lanesville, and he was dismissed by council June 10, 1871. He is now and for several years past has been pastor of a large and influential church in New Britain, Conn.

He preached his farewell the last Sabbath of December, 1870.

Rev. Charles C. McIntire was the next called to the pastorate, and was installed by council December 28, 1871. Invocation by Rev. Charles Van Norden, of Beverly; reading of the Scriptures by Rev. Will C. Wood, of Wenham; sermon by Rev. George N. Anthony, of Peabody; installing prayer by Rev. George L. Gleason, of Manchester; charge to the pastor by Rev. C. R. Palmer, of Tabernacle Church, Salem; right hand of fellowship by Rev. S. W. Segar, of Gloucester: address to the people by Rev. S. C. Thacher, of Wareham; concluding prayer by Rev. W. H. Teel, of Lanesville.

Mr. McIntire's pastorate was rendered somewhat unpleasant by circumstances beyond his control. When he was called, the church edifice was undergoing very extensive repairs and improvements. The parish were holding their Sabbath services in the town hall. These repairs and improvements con-

sisted in sawing the meeting-house in two and adding to its length twenty feet, entirely stripping the inside of the pulpit, pews, all of the inside finish and the galleries, purchasing the pews, placing new windows,—in fact, thoroughly changing the interior and painting the exterior and removing the vestry and enlarging it; all this at a cost of about twenty-eight thousand dollars, including the purchasing of the pews. Then came a depression of the business of the town and financial failures; finally the debt, though reduced to about twenty thousand dollars, became a burden too heavy for the society to bear. The savings bank, holding a large mortgage upon the parish property, foreclosed and took possession. Thus the meeting-house was closed and the society were obliged to find some other house in which to meet for worship. They were accommodated by the Young Men's Christian Association opening to them the doors of their chapel and inviting them to enter, which invitation they gratefully accepted, and occupied the room, though too strait for them, several months. Mr. McIntire resigned the pastorate January, 1880, and was dismissed by council September 3, 1880.

Rev. R. B. Howard, the seventh pastor of this church, was installed by council September 3, 1880. The order of service was as follows:

Invocation, by Rev. S. B. Andrews, of Lanesville.
Reading of Scriptures, by Rev. John Capen (Methodist), of Rockport.
Sermon, by Rev. J. B. Clark.
Installing prayer, by Rev. George L. Gleason.
Charge to the pastor, by Rev. C. C. McIntire.
Right hand of fellowship, by Rev. F. G. Clark, of Gloucester.
Address to the people, by Rev. F. H. Boynton, of Essex.
Concluding prayer, by Rev. E. S. Potter, East Gloucester.
Benediction, by the pastor.

The same council dismissed Rev. C. C. McIntire. When Rev. R. B. Howard came to the church as a supply, they were holding service in the rooms of the Young Men's Christian Association. He soon became interested, and put forth efforts to repurchase the church property; these efforts found a response by members of the parish and friends out of town. The savings bank proposed to relinquish its claim upon the property on the payment of ten thousand dollars. Members of the society contributed with some degree of enthusiasm to this end, and friends out of town aided by their liberal contributions to a considerable extent; the money was raised and paid the bank; the parish again came in possession of the property, and have continued free from debt until the present time, 1887. Therefore, financially considered, Mr. Howard's pastorate was surely a success, and who will say that it was not also spiritually?

Rev. A. F. Norcross was called to the pastorate of this church in the autumn of 1884. He took charge the first Sabbath in January, 1885, and was installed on the 13th day of February following, which was the one hundred and thirtieth anniversary of the organization of the church, he being its eighth pastor. The order of installation was as follows: Invocation, by Rev. Arthur W. Tirrell, of Rockport; reading of Scripture, by Rev. Nathl. Richardson, resident; sermon, by Rev. W. J. Tucker, of Andover; installing prayer, by Rev. F. G. Clark, of Gloucester; right hand of fellowship, by Rev. Nehemiah Boynton, of Haverhill; charge to the pastor, by Rev. R. B. Howard, of Medford; address to the people, by Rev. Temple Cutler, of Essex; benediction, by the pastor. Mr. Norcross is a graduate of Dartmouth, and commences his labors under favorable auspices. The parish is free from debt, and church and parish united in his settlement, and at the present time, 1887, are enjoying a tolerable degree of prosperity. The regular services are quite well attended, the Sabbath-school is in a healthy condition, its sessions are quite well attended and it has a good library. Deacon Andrew F. Clark is superintendent; he is the ninth in succession to that office during the sixty-nine years of its history. The school has lately received from the heirs of our late respected townsman, John G. Dennis, a donation of five hundred dollars, thus following out the intention of their father, though he left no will.

Second Congregational Church.—On the 15th day of March, 1855, a second Congregational Church of sixteen members was organized by an ecclesiastical council called for that purpose. Rev. A. B. Rich, of Danvers, was moderator, and Rev. Nathaniel Richardson, of Lanesville, was scribe. These sixteen persons were dismissed from the First Congregationalist Church in this town for the purpose of organizing a second church of the same order.

This was deemed necessary, as the attendance at the First Church was large, and had outgrown the seating capacity of their house of worship. At this time it was hardly possible to purchase or hire a pew (the pews were owned by individuals). This state of things may seem strange in this day; nevertheless, it is true.

The Rev. David Bremner, a young man and graduate of Andover, was called to the First Church the year previous, as associate pastor with Rev. Wakefield Gale, having then in view the organization of a second church, of which he would probably be the pastor.

Soon after its organization the church, by a unanimous vote, invited Mr. Bremner to become their pastor. The society also that had been legally formed in connection with the church concurred without a dissenting voice, and voted to pay him a salary of one thousand dollars per year.

Mr. Bremner accepted the call, and was ordained and installed on the 2d day of May, 1825. Rev. Daniel Fitz, of Ipswich, was moderator of the council, and Rev. A. H. Quint, of Jamaica Plain, was scribe. Eighteen churches were represented in the council. The order of exercises were Introductory prayer, by Rev. A. H. Quint; reading of the Scriptures, by Rev. H. J. Patrick, of Bedford; sermon, by Rev. E. A. Park, D.D., of Andover; ordaining prayer, by

Rev. Wakefield Gale, of Rockport; charge to the pastor, by Rev. Lyman Whiting, of Reading; right hand of fellowship, by Rev. J. M. Manning, of Medford; address to the church and society, by Rev. J. E. Dwinell, of Salem; concluding prayer, by Rev. J. O. Murray, of Danvers; benediction, by the pastor.

Rev. Mr. Bremner resigned his pastorate October 13, 1863. The church, after holding several meetings and, by a committee chosen for that purpose, conferred with Mr. Bremner, reluctantly accepted his resignation. He was dismissed by an ecclesiastical council October 20, 1864—Rev. Wakefield Gale, moderator, and Rev. W. M. Barbour, scribe.

The council voted that the pastoral relation be dissolved. Then they say: "In coming to this result the council express their regret at losing one from among us with whom they have had so much pleasant intercourse, and who has been so faithful and useful, and so much beloved in this community, as well as by his own church and society, and they cheerfully commend him to the churches of our Lord Jesus Christ as an able, devoted and successful minister of the Gospel—sound in the faith, of a blameless life,—a diligent student and an affectionate pastor. We tender to him our undiminished affection and confidence, and wish him much happiness and success in the new field of labor to which Providence has called him."

The church of sixteen members during the ministry of Mr. Bremner grew to eighty.

After Rev. Mr. Bremner's resignation the pulpit was temporarily supplied until March 31, 1864, when, by a unanimous vote, the church and society invited Rev. L. H. Angier to become their pastor, and he accepted their invitation. His salary was fixed at $1000 per year. He occupied that position until October, 1867, when he resigned his pastorate. He had not been installed by council.

On account of the War of the Rebellion and the decline of business and other circumstances, the church and society felt compelled to call an ecclesiastical council to advise with them, as it had become difficult to support preaching regularly. A council convened on the 21st day of October, 1868, and after due consideration advised the Second Church to dissolve their church organization and unite with the First Church. The Second Church voted not to dissolve, but would grant letters to any member who desired them. Under this vote numbers took letters to the First Church, some to the Methodist, and at a later day some to the church at Pigeon Cove. The First Church extended a cordial invitation to the members of the Second Church to unite with them.

The chapel of the Second Church, corner of Broadway and School Streets, was built by stockholders in the latter part of the year 1855, at a cost of about $4000, including land. Previous to this the Second Society worshipped in the vestry of the First Church. After the dissolution of the society it was sold to the Y. M. C. A., and by them at a later day to the I. O. O. F. They have raised it and placed another story under it, making it convenient for their use, and more attractive to the public eye.

On the 26th day of August, 1864, an ecclesiastical council was called to meet in Broadway Chapel for the purpose of ordaining Walter Harris Giles, a member of Second Congregational Church, as a missionary of the American Board of Foreign Missions. Rev. A. B. Rich, of Beverly, was moderator; Rev. Thomas Morong, of Lanesville, scribe. The sermon was by Rev. Edward E. Bliss, of Constantinople, Turkey; ordaining prayer by Rev. L. H. Angier, of the Second Church, Rockport; right hand of fellowship by Rev. William H. Dunning, of the First Church, Rockport; charge by Rev. J. C. Thacher, of the Evangelical Church, Gloucester; closing prayer, by Rev. John A. Vinton, of Boston; benediction, by Rev. W. H. Giles.

He died at Constantinople, Turkey, May 21, 1867, in the thirtieth year of his age. He was a son of Deacon Thomas and Mary Giles, of this town.

Pigeon Cove Chapel.—What is now the Pigeon Cove Chapel Church and Society (Congregationalist) originated from a Sunday-school that was organized in Woodbury's Hall (it was over the Union Store), May 31, 1857; there were about forty persons present, children and adults. Lyman B. Stockman (by whose efforts mainly the school was gathered) was chosen superintendent.

In the month of November the same year the school removed to what was a district school-house, before the public schools were reorganized. It was located near the residence of Beniah Colburn (now the residence of Alpheus Goodwin). The school continued at this place until 1869. When the chapel was built and dedicated it removed thither.

The most of the time while the school occupied the school-house a preaching service was held each Sabbath at five o'clock P.M., at which pastors of neighboring churches,—Congregationalist, Baptist and Methodist, of Rockport, and Congregationalist, of Lanesville—rendered valuable service. When such supplies failed a well-chosen sermon was read by the superintendent with good effect, or else the hour was occupied by a prayer and conference meeting.

While the school-house was occupied by the Sunday-school the town, who had purchased it of the school district, sold it to David L. Choate, for about three hundred dollars; and he soon sold it to Deacon J. R. Gott, Newell Giles and Elbridge Witham, for about the same amount. They allowed the school to occupy it seven years free of rent, then sold it to the school for one hundred and fifty dollars. After the chapel was built the school, by its trustees, sold the school-house and land to Beniah Colburn, for three hundred and forty-five dollars.

The chapel was built in 1868, at a cost, including land and furniture, of $3696.92. It was dedicated in

January, 1869. Sermon by Rev. James W. Cooper, pastor of the First Congregationalist Church in Rockport. At this time there was a debt resting upon it of some one thousand two hundred dollars; by the efforts of the Ladies' Circle, by fairs and donations by friends of the institution, in 1871 the entire debt was canceled. In 1873 the addition of a tower was made, a bell was purchased and put in place and an iron fence was erected, at a cost of $2475.08. By these improvements a debt of one thousand three hundred dollars was incurred; it was gradually reduced, until 1880, when it was about six hundred dollars. Special efforts were put forth, and friends came forward with their liberal contributions, and the entire debt was canceled. And none has since been incurred.

Sunday, August 24, 1873. For the first time the inhabitants of Pigeon Cove were called to worship by the ringing of the church bell.

March 20, 1874. A church of nineteen members was organized, under the name of the "First Church of Christ at Pigeon Cove."

September 22, 1874. This church was recognized by a council of churches, duly called, as a church of Christ in good and regular standing and fellowship with other Congregationalist Churches. Rev. E. S. Atwood, D.D., of the Crombie Street Church, Salem, was moderator of the council, and Rev. C. C. McIntire was scribe. Rev. Chandler Robbins, D.D., of Boston, preached the sermon. Rev. Daniel P. Noyes was acting pastor.

This year there was organized and incorporated an ecclesiastical society in connection with the church to manage its financial affairs.

The land was purchased and the chapel built in the name of the Sabbath school, the business being managed by three trustees chosen by the school. The trustees in 1883, by vote of the Sabbath-school, deeded the chapel, land and furniture to the church and society.

A few weeks after the organization of this school Mr. Stockman received an invitation to teach a school in Illinois. He left the Sunday-school in the charge of John W. Marshall, who continued to be its superintendent twenty-four years. Since his resignation Andrew F. Clark, Wm. W. Marshall and Samuel L. Lamson, who is the present incumbent, have at times occupied that position.

Mr. Stockman returned home in the summer of 1858, in poor health. He died at the home of his sister, Mrs. Albert Wheeler, November 27th of the same year, respected and beloved. This church and society have never been privileged with a settled pastor.

The ordinances of religion have quite regularly been administered. Rev. Daniel P. Noyes was its stated supply about three years. Rev. Elijah Kellog about the same length of time. Rev. R. B. Howard about two years. Rev. S. B. Andrews about three years. The other years the pulpit has been occupied by different clergymen Sabbath by Sabbath. The present supply (1887) is Rev. Wm. W. Parker. The services are generally well attended; the Sabbath-school is in a healthy condition and it has a good library.

There are at the present time three preaching services held in this chapel each Sabbath, in three different languages,—English the regular service; then the Finlanders hold their service, some thirty worshippers; then the Swedes, quite a congregation. Each of them have a minister of their own order.

Methodist Episcopal Church and Society.—The Methodist Episcopal Church of this town had its origin in a class formed by Rev. Aaron Lummus, the preacher of the Gloucester Harbor Church in 1831. He found here Sister Mrs. Nicy Cleaves (now Parsons) and her husband, Captain Levi Cleaves, who was not then a professor of religion, but he soon became a subject of saving grace, and joined the society and has held every office in the gift of the church with honor to himself, and with an eye single to the glory of God. He died in the triumph of Christian faith June 16, 1865, aged fifty-eight years and nine months.

The first class was composed of the following members: Levi Cleaves, Nicy Cleaves, John Cleaves, Aaron Cleaves, Solomon Tarr, Hatty Tarr, Charles Wormwood, Zacheus Roberts, Lois Pool, Rhoda Cleaves and Betsey Tarr. All of them have passed over the river except Mrs. Nicy Cleaves (now Parsons) and Rhoda Cleaves (now Rowe). This class was connected with the Gloucester Harbor Church until the year 1838, when it was set off as a circuit with Town Parish, under the charge of Rev. L. B. Griffin. This year a church edifice was erected and dedicated by the pastor, and the next year was set apart as a separate charge with Rev. Israel Washburn pastor.

The successive leaders of the class were Charles Wormwood, Levi Cleaves, John Cleaves, Moses Cleaves, J. B. Stillman.

A revival of religion attended the labors of Mr. Washburn, and he reported for the year 1839 thirty-five members and sixteen probationers. He was succeeded in the charge by Revs. Thomas G. Brown, John P. Bradley and Daniel Richards.

The next pastor, Rev. Charles O. Towne, induced the society in 1843 to join the Wesleyan church, owing to dissatisfaction growing out of the anti-slavery discussion, but in the summer of 1858 the society returned to their first love.

The services of Rev. Elijah Mason were now secured, who labored successfully until 1863, who found him a good preacher, a faithful pastor and a sympathizing friend. He remained in town after leaving his charge, until called from the scenes of his earthly labors to the "rest that remaineth to the people of God."

The next in charge was Rev. Joseph Gerry, who remained one year, and was succeeded by Rev. A. B. Wheeler. He was followed by Rev. J. A. Ames, who was abundant in labors during the three years of his ministry, during which the church edifice was built on Broadway at a cost of $16,000. It was dedicated April 14, 1869. Rev. J. A. M. Chapman preached the sermon. Fairer prospects now opened to the church and a goodly share of spiritual prosperity was realized. Rev. W. D. Bridge followed Mr. Ames, and he was succeeded by Rev. C. C. Merrill, whose labors encouraged and strengthened the church. He was followed by Rev. Samuel Roy. After seven months of faithful labor he was stricken down with typhoid fever, and passed to his reward. The remainder of the conference year was supplied by Rev. M. B. Cummings. He was returned to the charge at the next conference. On Sabbath morning, May 2, 1875, the church edifice was destroyed by fire, the cause of which is still unknown. This was a serious loss to the church. There was supposed to be $10,000 insurance upon the building, but from untoward circumstances only one half of the above sum was realized, and when the indebtedness of the society was met there remained only about $3000.

At a meeting of the society to consider the question of re-building their house of worship $1000 was subscribed for that purpose.

The present house, built upon the site of the last, cost about $9000, and the debt remaining upon it now (1880) is $3500. Mr. Cummings was followed by Rev. W. A. Braman, who was succeeded by Rev. W. Silverthorne. The labors of these brethren were a great blessing to the church. Rev. John Capen was the next pastor. Rev. Alfred Noon succeeded him and served one year. After him was the present pastor, Rev. A. W. Tirrell, now (1887) closing his third year. He has labored earnestly and faithfully with good success. During his pastorate the church and congregation have increased; the church edifice upon the outside has been painted, and the society freed from debt, which last event was celebrated in a becoming manner on the 13th day of April, 1886, on which occasion several of the past pastors of the church were present; several clergymen of other denominations also joined in this interesting service, a prominent feature of which was the burning of the mortgage deed and note.

They have now (May, 1887), a neat and pleasant house of worship, and a flourishing Sabbath-school, of which Daniel Coath is superintendent. The school is furnished with a good library. There is also a fair attendance upon the services of the church, preaching, &c., &c., and are free from debt. Mr. Tirrell's pastorate of three years, expired April, 1887. Rev. John H. Mansfield succeeds him, and is now pastor.

First Universalist Society.—The Universalist Society in Sandy Bay was organized February 27, 1821, by the name of the Universalist Benevolent Society of Gloucester. Aaron Pool, Solomon Pool, John Manning, Francis Pool, Moses Colbey and Daniel O. Marshall, who were members of the Independent Christian Society of Gloucester Harbor; William Norwood, Charles Norwood, Jr., David Babson, David Wheeler, William Norwood, Jr., and Eben Norwood, who were members of the Third Parish (Annisquam Society), with others, constituted its membership. Previous to this, services of the Universalist order were held in this village. Rev. Thomas Jones, of Gloucester Harbor, preached several Sabbaths in the meeting-house built by the parish in 1804, which, by an understanding with the Congregationalists, they were to occupy two-fifths of the time; but after some months of this way of occupying the house, the Universalists were denied the privilege, and were not allowed its use. This act resulted in a suit at law, which, after being before the court several years, was decided in favor of the Congregationalists (or the parish, as it was called), they to have the exclusive use and occupancy of the meeting-house.

After they were refused admission to the house as a society, they worshipped in a school-house that stood on the present site of the Sandy Bay house stable and hall. The clergymen that officiated the most frequently were Revs. J. H. Bugbee, J. Gilman, J. P. Atkinson, Hosea Ballou and Lafayette Mace. The meeting-house was built in 1829, at a cost of about three thousand dollars.

The corner-stone was laid with Masonic ceremonies June 24th. It was dedicated October 8th of the same year; dedicatory sermon by Rev. Thomas Jones, of Gloucester. Rev. Lafayette Mace preached a few months in the new house; he was succeeded by Rev. Lucius R. Page. The succession of ministers has been as follows: 1832, Rev. B. B. Mussey; 1835, Rev. A. C. L. Arnold; 1837, Rev. Charles Spear; 1839, Gibson Smith; 1841, Rev. John Allen; 1844, Rev. H. C. Leonard; 1846, Rev. E. W. Locke; 1849, Rev. S. C. Hewett; 1850, Rev. H. Van Campen; 1853, Rev. A. C. L. Arnold; 1856, Rev. Wm. Hooper; 1858, Rev. J. H. Farnsworth; 1861, Rev. Stillman Barden; 1867, Rev. George H. Vibbert; 1872, Rev. Allen P. Folsom. Rev. B. G. Russell was acting pastor July 1, 1875; was ordained on the evening of August 5. The Association of Boston Universalists met here on that day; it was an appropriate time for an ordination. The services were as follows: Invocation, by Rev. C. C. Clark, of Pigeon Cove; reading of the Scriptures, by Rev. T. W. Illman, of Philadelphia; sermon, by Rev. J. M. Atwood, of North Cambridge, from Luke xi. 23; ordaining prayer, by Rev. E. H. Chapin, D.D., of New York; charge to the pastor, by Rev. D. Sawyer; fellowship of the churches, by Rev. Richard Eddy, D.D., of Gloucester; benediction, by the pastor. He continued in the pastorate several years, and was succeeded in 1880 by Rev. Edwin Davis, who was pastor some four years. Rev. Lorenzo Haynes was

pastor from November, 1884, to March 1, 1887, since which time they have had no settled pastor.

This society was incorporated April 6, 1839, by the name of the Second Universalist Society of Gloucester. February 8, 1845, its name was changed to the First Universalist Society of Rockport (by act of the General Court). In the year 1868 the meeting-house was renovated and improved by putting in a new pulpit, new pews and windows, thoroughly changing the interior. The house was enlarged by the addition of pastor's study and organ-loft; a new tower and spire was erected, changing to a considerable extent the exterior of the house. The cost of all the improvements and repairs was more than nine thousand dollars. This caused a large debt, which hung heavily upon the society. But it has been gradually decreasing, until now it is of quite small proportions, and is easily handled. They have an interesting Sabbath-school, of which James W. Bradley is superintendent, and has occupied that position some twenty years. They have a good library.

Second Universalist Society.—In the year 1861, August, a Sunday-school of the Universalist denomination was organized in the engine-house hall of the Pigeon Cove Engine Company. There were twenty persons present; Austin W. Story was chosen superintendent, and has been re-elected to that position each year until the present time (1887). The number now connected with the school is seventy-five; they have a library of six hundred volumes. After occupying the engine-hall for a time, they removed to a building that was Edmunds' bowling-alley, then to Edmunds' Hall, where they maintained preaching to a considerable extent. March 31, 1869, a religious society was organized in connection with the Sunday-school, by the name of the Pigeon Cove Universalist Association. February 28, 1878, an act of incorporation was obtained, and the name of the society was changed to the "Second Universalist Society of Rockport."

In the year 1873 they built a neat and commodious meeting-house, at a cost of $10,542.43. It was dedicated to the worship of God on the 12th day of June, 1873. Rev. Richard Eddy, D.D., of Gloucester, preached the sermon.

This society has had no pastor installed. The following are the names of those clergymen that have officiated from time to time: Rev. A. A. Folsom was the first to supply the pulpit; next was Rev. C. C. Clark, from 1874 to 1875; Rev. Robert C. Lansing, from 1876 to 1878; Rev. George H. Vibbert, from June, 1878, to July, 1879; Rev. B. G. Russell, from July, 1879, to May 30, 1880; Rev. Edwin Davis, from July, 1880, to April 22, 1881; Rev Miss L. Haynes, from September 28, 1884, to March 22, 1885; Rev. Nathan R. Wright, July, August and September, 1885, since which date the pulpit has been supplied the most of the Sabbaths by transient clergymen.

Rev. E. H. Chapin, D.D., of New York, who made Pigeon Cove his summer home many years, supplied the pulpit of this church gratuitously one Sabbath of each year, so long as his health allowed.

The funeral services of several of the most prominent citizens of the village have been held in this house. These services tend to increase the usefulness of a house of worship.

Baptist Church.—The Baptist Church in Sandy Bay, Gloucester, was constituted in 1807, with some few members, some of whom belonged to Gloucester proper. The society began to form about 1805 or 1806. Rev. Elisha Scott Williams, of Beverly (Baptist), preached in the new Congregationalist meeting-house once before Mr. Jewett came to Sandy Bay.

The Baptist Society was incorporated in the year 1811, by the name of the First Baptist Society of Goucester; no settled pastor until 1819 or 1820. The first person baptized by immersion in Sandy Bay was James Woodbury, March 10, 1805, by Rev. Elisha Scott Williams, of Beverly.

Captain Benjamin Hale, born in Sandy Bay in 1776, was the prime mover of the Baptist order in this village. He was converted on shipboard, about the year 1800, while on a voyage from Bristol, England, to Madeira. They encountered a heavy gale of wind; the brig was considerably damaged and was obliged to put back for repairs; a part of her cargo was contraband; the captain conscientiously refused to complete the voyage with such a cargo; the owners put the mate in charge; the brig was partially repaired, sailed and was never heard from. Captain Hale took passage for Alexandria, Va.; on the voyage the captain of the vessel became disabled and Captain Hale brought her safely into port. He was awake to his religious principles, and in 1811 was licensed to preach the Gospel. He was married in New York, in 1804, to Judith White, of Sligo, Ireland, with whom he became acquainted at her home. He was baptized in New York. After a few years on shore he again took to the sea, and in 1817, while on the passage home, he, in a gale of wind, went aloft, the crew refusing to go; he received an internal injury, which terminated in consumption; he died in 1818, aged forty-two years. Previous to the building of the meeting-house, even before the act of incorporation, they held meetings in private houses, often in the house of Eben'r Pool.

James A. Boswell was settled the first pastor of this church, in 1820. He preached in an unfinished hall; it was the second story of the house next east of the now Eureka Hall. He taught school during the week in the same room. The Sabbath-school was organized in 1821. Their meeting-house was built in 1822; it was occupied for preaching service without pews until 1828, when it was furnished with pews, and a number of them were sold on the 4th day of July, the same year. The cost of the house, with the land and pews, was two thousand two hundred and eighty-four dollars.

March 10, 1840, name changed to the First Baptist Church and Society of Rockport.

The following named have served as pastors:

Rev. James A. Boswell	1820	to	1823
Rev. Reuben Curtis	1827	"	1830
Rev. Bartlett Pease	1831	"	1833
Rev. Otis Wing	1833	"	1836
Rev. Gibben Williams	1837	"	1838
Rev. Benj. Knight	1839	"	1840
Rev. Otis Wing	1840	"	1842
Rev. Levi B. Hatbaway	May, 1843,	died Aug. 1,	1843
Rev. B. N. Harris	1844	to	1846
Rev. Samuel C. Gilbert	1846	"	1848 [1]
Rev. Thomas Driver	March, 1849	"	1849
Rev. George Lyle	1850	to	1852
Rev. Thomas Driver	1852	"	1854
Rev. A. E. Battelle	1855	"	1856
Rev. J. M. Driver	1856	"	1859
Deacon Samuel Cheever	1860	"	1863
Rev. Benj. I. Lane	1863	"	1867
Rev. Lewis Holmes	1867	"	1869

Rev. Otis L. Leonard was ordained September 22, 1869. Order of exercises were as follows:

Invocation.....By Rev. W. D. Bridge, of the M. E. Church.
Reading the Scriptures.....By Rev. J. C. Foster, of Beverly.
Opening Prayer.....By Rev. Mr. Gannett, of East Gloucester.
Sermon.....By Rev. Justin D. Fulton, of Boston.
Ordaining Prayer.....By Rev. S. H. Pratt, of Salem.
Right Hand of Fellowship.....By Rev. F. F. Emerson, of Gloucester.
Charge to the Pastor.....By Rev. T. E. Vassar, of Lynn.
Charge to the Church.....By Rev. Harvey Fitz, of Middleton.
Closing Prayer.....By Rev. Wm. M. Lyle, a returned Missionary.
Benediction.....By the Pastor.

The exercises were of a high order. He served until September, 1874; he then resigned and was dismissed.

Rev. A. J. Lyon	1875	to	1876
Rev. E. D. Bowers	1878	"	1881
Rev. George A. Cleaveland	1882	"	1883
Rev. N. B. Wilson	March, 1885,	Feb'y,	1886

During the years 1866–67, they enlarged their meeting-house lot by purchasing an additional piece of land. They raised the house several feet above the foundation, and moved it from fronting on High Street, to its present location, fronting on Mount Pleasant Street, and added to its length twenty feet. They completely renovated the interior and furnished it with a new pulpit and furniture, new pews; walls and ceiling at a later day were neatly frescoed, making a very neat and pleasant audience-room. A small vestry was constructed over the vestibule. A new tower and steeple was erected, and at a later day was furnished with a bell. The exterior of the house was put in good condition by carpenters and painters. The whole cost of these improvements was more than six thousand dollars, which was all paid at the time except thirteen hundred dollars, which snm did not long remain unpaid. The society has been free from debt until the present time.

The ordinances of religion are supported now and for several years last past by free-will offerings.

[1] Died Sept. 1, 1849.

The church edifice was re-dedicated April 10, 1867; sermon by Rev. Benjamin J. Lane, who was pastor about three years, closing July, 1867.

They have now no settled pastor, but religious services are regularly held, preaching by supply pastors.

The Sabbath-school is in good condition; membership, one hundred; library, three hundred volumes.

Nathaniel Richardson, Jr., superintendent, now on his fifteenth year of service.

Catholic Church. — Up to the year 1830 our population was nearly all native born; even at a later date there were but few foreigners who made their home with us. In 1850 there were quite a number of foreigners, most of them Catholics; therefore the necessity of a service of that order. The first Mass celebrated in this town was in what is now Eureka Hall, in the year 1850; Rev. Father John McCabe, of Salem, officiated.

In 1856 the Catholic population had increased to such an extent that there was a necessity for their erecting a house of worship. Quite a number traveled to Gloucester Sabbath after Sabbath to attend the service of their order. Their chapel was built on Broadway, and opened for service in 1856. Rev. Thomas Shehan, of Salem, was earnest and active in erecting this house of worship, the cost of which, with the land, was about three thousand dollars.

Rev. Luigi Acquarone was the first ministering priest here; his parish encircled the cape. He was a gentleman highly respected. With the rapid increase of the foreign population, which was largely Catholics, the labor required was more than Father Acquarone could perform. Rev. Thomas Barry was appointed to the charge of the society here; he continued in service until his death, which occurred after a short illness in January, 1883. Rev. Daniel S. Healey immediately succeeded Mr. Barry, and is now the ministering priest in this town and at Lanesville.

Soon after he came in charge of the work here he set about enlarging and improving their house of worship, making it more convenient and attractive, both the exterior and interior presenting a more favorable appearance. The whole cost of the improvement was thirty-six hundred dollars, which has been paid.

The Sabbath-school numbers one hundred members, and is an interesting and useful institution. All their Sabbath services and also services on other set days are well attended.

Protestant Episcopal Church.—The first effort to establish Episcopal Church service in this town was, as far as is known, in the year 1872. Services were held several months this year in the rooms of the Y. M. C. A., but were discontinued on the approach of winter. The services were conducted by Rev. D. Reid, rector of St. John's Church, Gloucester.

In the month of July, 1878, services were again

commenced and continued until late in October, each Sunday, in Eureka Hall. The officiating clergyman was the Rev. William R. Hooper, rector of St. John's Church, Gloucester. On the afternoon of July 15th the Rt. Rev. Benjamin H. Paddock preached the sermon.

There were only occasional services of this order held in this town from October, 1878, to November, 1885, except a lay service has been held during the summer months since 1878 at the cottage of Mr. Eben C. Millett, on Phillips Avenue, Pigeon Cove. In November, 1885, a service was held in Haskins Hall, conducted by Rev. John S. Beers. The next Sunday service was held in Rechabite Hall, presided over by Emil Charles Pfeiffer; these services have now become a fixed institution.

A regular organization was effected on the 7th day of May, 1886, by the name of St. Mary's Mission; it comprised nineteen members, viz.:

Otis E. Smith.	Reginald R. Colley.	Frank H. Perkins.
Frank Wilson.	T. T. H. Harwood	Luther C. Tibbets.
Charles Tresmon	Fanny U. C. Sanborn.	James Moore, Jr.
Mrs. Rosa Ann Morse.	Delia F. Smith.	O. S. C. O'Brien, M.D.
Mrs. Abbie Tibbets.	Mary L. Tibbets.	Charles F. Mills.
Eliza T. Lane.	Fannie C. Tupper.	Cora A. Pickering.
John Moore.		

Otis E. Smith was elected warden. A Sunday-school is connected with the mission. Reginald R. Colley is superintendent.

CHAPTER CXIII.

ROCKPORT—(*Continued*).

Revolutionary War—Drought—Great Snow Storm—Sickness—Fishing—Fire Department—War of 1812—Temperance and Moral Reform—Fires—Manufactures—Postoffice—Stone Quarrying—Rockport Bank—Rockport Savings and Granite Savings Bank—Centennial of Incorporation of Sandy Bay—Fourth of July Celebration, 1854—Schools—Rockport Railroad.

Revolutionary War.—The villages of Sandy Bay and Pigeon Cove gradually increased in population and resources. There were a few Grand Bankers; the in-shore fishing boats that were from eight to fifteen tons had increased to considerable numbers; there were a few rudely cultivated fields yielding a meagre harvest. Fishing was the leading interest. The people had, amid these scanty resources, gradually struggled up to a position of comparative importance

They had their meeting-house and minister, their school-house and teacher, their selectmen some of the years, and minor officials,—all this betokening progress and improvement.

The rude blast of war is heard along the coast; it comes like a mildew upon the budding prospects of these villagers. Soon the channels of business begin to close; the larger vessels, the Grand Bank schooners, are docked. The active and hardy men, the bone and sinew of the village, are turned from their peaceful pursuits to those of war. The minister, after serving the people twenty years as their pastor, except occasional intervals of absence when he was serving as chaplain in the French War, again yields to the circumstances of war, and enlists in the service of his country, as chaplain and surgeon's mate, first at Dorchester, then in Rhode Island and at other places, and so continued, except with occasional visits to his people, for about three years. At the expiration of his term of service he returned to his little flock, who had long mourned the absence of their spiritual guide and teacher. They were able, on account of the disastrous effects of the war, to pay him a salary of only ninety quintals of hake-fish yearly. He continued with them two years, and on account of the small amount of salary, and probably anticipating no increase on account of the continued poverty of the people, he was dismissed at his own request in 1779, and removed to Coos County, New Hampshire, where tradition says that he had a settlement of one thousand acres of land. His goods and furniture were packed in an ox-cart which he purchased of Captain Dodge of the Pigeon Hill farm. The journey to his new home consumed some seven or eight days.

In the month of April, 1775, some twenty boats were on the in-shore fishing-grounds, when they received news that the British were marching on Concord. They immediately weighed anchor and sailed for home, and before night almost every man was at Gloucester Harbor, armed and equipped with such guns and arms as came to hand, and were ready to march upon the enemy. Soon news was received that the battle had been fought, and the enemy were retreating towards Boston. The most active men readily enlisted in the service of their country; the old men and boys incapable of entering the service remained at home and engaged in fishing or cultivating the soil. They were obliged to dispose of their fish for barter or for greatly depreciated paper money, which was, sometimes during the war, sold for 2*s.* 6*d.* on the pound. In one instance, a soldier sent his wife his month's pay, and this she exchanged for one bushel of meal. About 1779 no grain could be purchased in this vicinity, and a young man was sent to Beverly to purchase a few bushels of barley.

Salt for several years of the war was very dear—therefore, sometimes fish were imperfectly cured. Mr. William Norwood conceived the idea of salting fish in hogsheads, and thus make a saving of salt. His plan was quite a success, and was soon adopted by all. This practice has continued to a very great extent to the present day. Previous to this, the practice was to salt fish in bulk, or, as sometimes termed, dry-salted.

This village was well represented at the battle of Bunker Hill; a company of sixty-six men, including officers, it is said, were enlisted by Daniel B. Tarr, its

orderly-sergeant. They met for drill at his house, which is now (1887) the home of George W. Legaller, whose wife is a granddaughter of Sergeant Tarr. He, patriot as he was, gave up the command to John Rowe.

This company left town Monday, June 12th, going through Wenham on their way to the camp. On the 16th they reached Mystic River, and on the afternoon of that day took up their line of march from that place. About dark they halted. In a short time, by the yet lingering twilight, they saw a large number of soldiers approaching, who were soon found to be a detachment from the army at Cambridge. As soon as they came up, Captain Rowe's company joined them, and the whole body moved towards Breed's Hill. On their arrival they silently set to work with picks and spades to throw up intrenchments. When the redoubt was finished, and while the enemy were landing, Captain Rowe, with a part of the company, was dispatched to carry off the tools. On their return, these men were ordered to the extreme left wing of the provincial troops, near Mystic River. It thus happened that the company was divided, and was not again united during the day. Ensign Cleaveland and Sergeant Haskins remained in the redoubt with one part, while Captain Rowe and Lieutenant Pool, with the other, were on the left of the line—some assisting in building the rail-fence as a protection from the bullets of the enemy, and others at the end of the line on the bank of the river, building up a small breastwork with stones and dirt. They were thus engaged till the English advanced, about three o'clock P. M. Major McCleary gave them particular directions how to act; they were to load and fire with one knee upon the ground, and, after the first volley, not to wait for orders, but to load and fire as fast as possible, taking care not to throw away any shot by firing at too long a distance. The enemy, as is well known, were repulsed twice, but, at the third attack the ammunition at the redoubt gave out.

A retreat was ordered, and the troops at the rail-fence joined in it. They retreated that night to Ploughed Hill. Three of Captain Rowe's company were killed in the battle and two were wounded. Francis Pool and Josiah Brooks were killed at the rail-fence, while in the act of firing. William Parsons was killed at the redoubt. Daniel Doyle was hurt by a ball, which passed through the palisade, struck him in the breast, broke a button off his clothing, but did not enter his body. William Foster was wounded in the retreat, in the wrist. Sergeant Haskins had two cartridges left when he retreated from the post, but he fired them upon the enemy when he got to the rail-fence.

Seventeen of this company were under twenty-one years of age, five only over thirty, none over forty. The youngest was William Lowe, a lad of fourteen; John Rowe, Jr., a son of the captain, was sixteen.

Roll of Captain Rowe's Company.

John Rowe, captain.
Mark Pool, lieutenant.
Ebenr. Cleaveland, ensign.
Daniel Barber Tarr, sergeantt.
William Haskins, sergeant.
Ebenr. Joslyn, sergeant.
William Foster, sergeant.
Jonathan Rowe, corporal.
Thomas Finson, corporal.
John Gott, corporal.
William Low, corporal.
Benj. Davis, drummer.
Isaac Haskell, fifer.
Jacob Allen.
Obadiah Atkins.
David Averill.
Eleazer Butman.
Daniel Butler.
Daniel Crage.
Henry Clark.
David Doyle.
Dominicus Davis.
Samuel Clark.
Joseph Dresser.
Richard Dresser.
Thomas Dresser.
Caleb Elwell.
James Phips.
Ebenezer Gott.
Joshua Gore.
Bennet Haskins.
William Jumper.
John Clark.
Joseph Lane.
James Lurvey.
Francis Lane.
Samuel Low.
Henry Morgan.
Henry Parsons.
Hugh Parkhurst.
Joseph Parsons.
Jeffrey Parsons.
John Rowe, Jr.
Joshua Rowe.
Peter Richardson.
William Rowe.
Daniel Soules.
John Smith.
Ephraim Sheldren.
John Tarr.
John Tarr, Jr.
Jabez Tarr.
James Tarr.
William Woodbury.
Ebenezer Witham.
Spencer Thomas.
Jonathan Parsons.
Peter Emmons.
Thomas Edes.
John Youlin.
John Parrot.
Joseph Low.
Aaron Riggs.
Francis Pool.
Josiah Brooks.
Wm. Parsons.

Soon after the battle of Bunker Hill an English brig was seen at anchor in the fog between Straitsmouth Island and Thachers. About fifteen men manned a boat in Long Cove, and were soon alongside of the brig. They had taken the precaution to keep most of the men below deck. They suddenly surprised the crew and boarded the brig and took her into Whirlpool dock. She had a deck-load of cattle, ammunition and provisions under deck. The cattle were driven to Gloucester harbor and sold at auction; the brig was taken to Squam River and was finally cut up. One of the crew, Thomas Knutsford, tarried at Pigeon Cove and settled just to the westward of Pigeon Hill. He married a daughter of Wm. Andrews, who lived upon and owned the land that received his name, "Andrews Point." A number of his descendants are now living here. This was said to be the first prize taken in this war.

In the month of May, 1776, twelve men of Sandy Bay saw a vessel in the offing which they supposed was an English cartel or supply ship with supplies for the British army. About the same hour the privateer "Yankee Hero" hove in sight off Andrews Point These men took a boat owned by John Gott and Daniel B. Tarr to go with others off to the "Yankee Hero." They were very expeditious and were soon on board the privateer, and persuaded the captain to run down to the ship in the offing. When near her they fired a gun. To their great surprise the vessel proved to be the English frigate "Milford." She opened upon the privateer and soon compelled her to haul down her colors. Four of their men were killed, others

were wounded; one, Ebenr. Rowe, lost an arm. While the colors were being hauled down Mark Pool, who was lieutenant of Capt. Rowe's company at the battle of Bunker Hill, fired the last gun from the privateer. Part of its charge was a short crow-bar. This bar stuck fast in the ship's forward bulwarks. The ship's crew named it the "Yankee belaying-pin." The privateer with a prize crew was taken to Halifax, where Reuben Brooks and William Parkhurst and it may be that others of her crew died. Most of the Sandy Bay men were sent to Boston or New York and exchanged. Major John Rowe was sent to New York. He died at Boylston Springs, N. Y., in 1801. Some few of the men were absent seven years.

In the year 1779 the small-pox was quite prevalent all over town, and Sandy Bay had its full share. Pest-houses were established at first, but at length people were permitted to remain at their homes if sick. Inoculation was practiced very generally (vaccination had not been discovered).

The parish voted that no person be allowed to inoculate in their houses without a permit from the committee. Any person violating this order was to receive thirty-three lashes. We have no record of a whipping-post in this village, but there was one in the First Parish, where offenders were punished. Tradition says that of one hundred and ten persons inoculated in this village but two died.

Ship "Tempest" fitted out for the West Indies as a letter of marque, sailed from Gloucester some time during the war, was lost at sea with her entire crew, eight of whom belonged in Sandy Bay.

During the war this village lost by privateering, killed in battle and died in prison more than fifty men, the bone and muscle of the village. Some of the older men and children that remained at home were swept off by the small-pox; therefore, the population was greatly reduced. This people had passed through great and severe trials, but their patriotism never wavered, always ready to dare and do for their independence.

We gladly turn from these scenes of darkness and gloom to those more congenial and inspiring, which were beginning to dawn upon the people. The noise of war and clangor of arms subside, and peace, so long driven from the abodes of men, returns, and in his train follows industry, enterprise and thrift.

The soldier lays down his arms and assumes the plow. The sailor, so long the sport of fickle and adverse fortunes, hies home from bloody seas and engages in honorable commerce. The channels of trade gradually open and business again flows on its wonted course. The fishing interests of the village assume greater importance; the population increases. Independence, a free country, are inspiring words and quicken the energies of the people. At this time, 1783, there were about sixty-five dwelling-houses and five hundred people, four Grand Bank fishing schooners, some twenty boats from eight to fifteen tons, two more Grand Bankers are about being added to the fleet by Daniel Thurston and his son.

About this time Benj. Hale and Daniel Young built the schooner "Lucy" and fitted her for Bank fishing. The parish, feeling the need of a minister of the gospel, engaged the services of Rev. Mr. Stewart. He labored here most of the time for two years, both as minister and school-teacher; his salary was one hundred pounds, old tenor, per year. In 1782 the Bill of Rights gave liberty to all people in the State. At this time there were slaves in this village. James Norwood, Isaac Pool and Joseph Baker and probably some others were slave-holders, but now all men were free; but those freedmen continued to live in the village, at least a portion of them. Up to this time there had not been much advance in agriculture; there were perhaps a dozen farmers with plenty of land, but they chose rather to draw their supplies from the ocean than from their broad acres. Even for what few cattle they kept they depended for food very much upon salt hay transported by boats from Ipswich. In 1786 the old wharf was repaired; this was a timber wharf, and was about twenty feet wide and some seventy feet in front of the present old or White wharf. It was not one-half the length nor near as high as the present wharf.

In 1789 the tax of Sandy Bay was $580. Jabez Tarr was collector; one hundred and thirty-three persons were taxed. In 1788 the parish voted the Independent Society the use of the meeting house one-fourth of the time on condition of their bearing their proportion of the expense of repairs. This is the first mention of the Universalists in this village.

By 1794 the inhabitants had increased to seven hundred, and there were about seventy-five dwelling-houses. Business had been quite flourishing for several years until 1797, when it became depressed.

Drought, Snow-Storm and Sickness.—In the year 1779 there was a great drought, which greatly added to the sufferings of this people, who were already, on account of the war, in very straitened circumstances. This drought cut off to a considerable extent their agricultural supplies. Then the winter of 1779 "was so very severe, snow fell for twenty-seven days in succession." Stephen Pool owned a sheep that was covered in a snow-bank during these days, and was rescued alive, though greatly emaciated. The weather, a portion of the time, was intensely cold.

In 1793 the village was visited with an epidemic, the malignant sore throat. Tradition says sixty-two children died within a few weeks.

Physicians were called from Gloucester proper, as there was no physician in this village until, some time this year, Dr. James Goss came from Billerica and settled. He not only practiced medicine, but taught school; thus making himself doubly useful. The parish was also without a minister. Deacon John Rowe, a man highly esteemed for his Christian character and his well-balanced mind, often officiated at

funerals, and also frequently presided at religious meetings, through the long period of religious and ministerial destitution. Many a dying one had he commended to God in prayer, and pleaded for their forgiveness through that Saviour that taketh away the sin of the world. The citizens of the town to-day should bless and praise God that such a man lived here in that dark day of the village, when the light of the Gospel was so nearly extinct.

In 1794, William Goss and Ebenr. Pool were fined for refusing to collect the parish tax.

In 1796, Ebenr. Pool was selectman from Sandy Bay. The valuation of the village that year, was $50,000; Pigeon Cove, $20,000.

Fishing.—From 1783, the close of the war, up to 1797 fishing business at Sandy Bay was profitable. The number of boats increased and were of greater tonnage—say ten to fifteen tons each. These years of prosperity enabled many persons to build houses and purchase small tracts of land. The boats of that day and for years after were standing-room boats, so-called, and also were pink stern. There was forward, and abaft the main hatchway, a room nearly across the width of the boat, the floor of which was about three feet below the deck, and the width was about three feet. It was in these rooms the men stood to fish. At times the third man stood in the main hatchway. There was a low waist, say six or eight inches wide, above the deck, and this encircled the entire boat. Some sixty or seventy of these boats were at one time moored in Long Cove. Their moorings were a seven to a nine-inch cable, which were made fast to two stumps; half-way between the stumps there was a heavy iron chain with a collar that fitted over the boats' stem. The stumps were oak trees divested of their limbs or branches, but a portion of the roots retained; this was put through a hole cut in a flat stone weighing from three to seven tons. Some of these stumps would accommodate one end of the mooring of several boats. Notwithstanding they were supplied with these heavy moorings, it was necessary, when a northeast gale was imminent, to leave their moorings and sail round to Gloucester Harbor. There would often be a large fleet of these boats in Harbor Cove, as that was the safest part of the harbor for such craft. However watchful these fishermen were, their boats would sometimes be caught at their moorings in a northeast gale, and would break from them and drift ashore. As the head of the cove was at that time a smooth sand beach, it was seldom that they were very badly wrecked. Often considerable damage was done by a boat breaking a part of her mooring and swinging afoul of another boat. Boats were also moored in Pigeon Cove in the same way. During the winter season many of these boats were hauled up on the beach at the head of Long Cove (that ground is now occupied by stores); they were from two to three tiers deep. Some winters a number of them would be hauled across the street on what is now Baptist Square. For the hauling up and launching these boats there were skids, so-called; they were of oak, about eight by ten inches, and from twenty to twenty-five feet long. The boats were placed upon these skids broadside to, and were hauled by cattle,—say from six to eight yoke to each boat.

Fire Department.—The first effort to protect the village from the ravages of fire was by the organization of a company of twenty members January 3, 1807. By the rules they adopted, each member was required to provide himself with two stout leather buckets and two bags of substantial material, and each of them of three bushels capacity, and to be provided with strings at the mouth, that they may be tightly drawn together; they were to have the surname of the owner in full and the initials of the Christian name upon each; they were to be kept hanging in a conspicuous place, the bags in the buckets (they were usually kept hanging in the front hall of the member's residence). Every member failing to conform to either of the above rules was subjected to a fine of twenty-five cents for the use of the company. Whoever should be absent at the time of fire, or neglect to give attendance unto him who is in most need, except he gives a sufficient reason, was subjected to a fine of one dollar and fifty cents. During its history forty-seven names were added to the list of members. It ceased to exist some thirty years since.

The first fire-engine in the village was purchased by subscription in the year 1827. It was manufactured by Eben Tappan, of Manchester. It cost three hundred and fifteen dollars, and its name was *Enterprise*. It required a company of thirty men.

In the year 1831 the town of Gloucester purchased an engine of the same make, pattern and cost, and located it at Sandy Bay. It required the same number of men as the *Enterprise*. These two engines were "tubs."

The next engine, the *Votery*, was a suction, and was purchased by Rockport in the year 1848, for one thousand dollars. It required a company of forty-five men. It did good service in its day, and was sold in 1885 for sixty-six dollars,—the town, having purchased a steamer, had no further use for the *Votery*.

The fourth engine, the *Pigeon Cove* (suction), was purchased in 1860, of William Jeffers, at a cost of eleven hundred and seventy-one dollars. This engine requires a company of forty-five men.

The next, the *Silver Grey*, was purchased of the city of Lynn in 1866, at a cost of $898.72. It required a company of fifty men.

In the year 1876 the town purchased of Edward B. Leverick a hose-carriage, *C. H. Parsons*, at a cost of seven hundred and ten dollars, and

a hook-and-ladder-truck, *G. P. Whitman*, for seven hundred and twenty-five dollars.

Next and last was the purchase, in 1885, of the steamer *Sandy Bay*, a third-size Silsby, which cost, including the wagon, three thousand nine hundred and sixty dollars. By this last purchase the annual expense of the Fire Department is decreased, and it is claimed that it is more efficient.

The department now consists of one steamer, *Sandy Bay*, and fifteen men. Annual cost, three hundred and ninety-four dollars.

One hand-engine, *Pigeon Cove* (suction), forty-five members and steward. Cost per annum, five hundred and sixty-five dollars.

Hand-engine, *Silver Grey* (suction), in charge of two men. Annual cost of twenty dollars.

Hook-and-ladder-truck, *G. P. Whitman*, thirty members and steward. Annual cost of two hundred and sixty dollars.

Four engineers at seventy dollars per annum.

The department is well supplied with hose, and there is a tolerable supply of water by reservoirs and other sources. Our Fire Department is considered quite efficient for a town of this capacity.

War of 1812-15.—The political troubles between the mother country and the United States culminated in war, which was declared by Congress against Great Britain in June, 1812. Though there was a decided difference of opinion among the people of this vicinity in relation to the need or the feasibility of this war, when it was entered upon, all were loyal to their country. Of course it was a source of great anxiety to the dwellers by the sea, whose principal means of support was drawn from the ocean, and whose fleet of fishing-boats were exposed to the ravages of the enemy.

The first visit the enemy made us was on the 3d day of August, 1813, when the privateer "Commodore Broke," of about sixty tons, stood into Sandy Bay for the purpose of cutting out some coasters from the State of Maine that lay at anchor. She fired several shots into the village, which was soon returned by our men on Bearskin Neck, from muskets and one cannon that had been brought from Boston a few days before. On her departure out of the bay, which soon took place, a cannon-ball struck her just below the transom and came out under her deck near the stem; she was also fired upon as she passed Pigeon Cove. During this same month the Bristol ship "Nymph," cruising off this coast, committed depredations upon fishermen and coasters, and occasioned considerable alarm. She made several captures, but released them upon the payment of two hundred dollars for each vessel. Early in the opening of this war the citizens of Sandy Bay built a circular fort or rather a half-circle, on Bearskin Neck at a cost of about six hundred dollars. This money was raised by subscription. The fort was built of split stone. When the government was constructing the breakwater at the entrance of Long Cove, in 1836 to 1840, this fort was demolished, and the stone was used in that structure. The donors or their heirs received for it some compensation in part commensurate to the amount by each contributed.

This fort was supplied with a watch-house, and three cannon with carriages, in charge of a corporal and thirteen soldiers. On the 8th of September, 1814, the British frigate "Nymph" took a Sandy Bay fishing-boat on the fishing-grounds and compelled the skipper, Captain David Elwell, to act as pilot for two barges full of men which the captain of the frigate determined to send in to capture the fort. These barges left the frigate about midnight in a dense fog and quietly rowed towards the neck, passed the outer end and then proceeded into Long Cove, and landed her crew in the Eastern or Little Gutter (so-called). They then marched to the fort, took the sentinel by surprise, made prisoners of all the soldiers, fourteen in number, spiked the guns and put them over the embankment.

The other barge went into or near the old dock on the western side of the neck; her men were soon encountered by some of the citizens who had been aroused by an alarm given by a sentinel stationed near that part of the neck. It was now daybreak and the fog had cleared. The men on shore fired musket-balls at the barge, but in return received grape-shot and cannon-ball; no one was injured. The church bell rang out an alarm; the men in the barge prepared to silence the tell-tale; one cannon-ball lodged in a part of the belfry and there remained until the church tower was rebuilt in 1839. In order to complete their work the gun was loaded with a heavy charge too heavy for the barge; in firing it started a butt and she sank. The officer in command and his crew ran across the neck, and seizing a boat made their escape, except about a dozen who were made prisoners. In the mean time the men who took the fort had, with all or a part of their prisoners, got on board of their barge and were on their way back to the frigate.

This cannon, after being used on many occasions for salutes, etc., and having passed its usefulness, was taken in charge by the town; a carriage was provided, on which it is now mounted, and it occupies a place in the yard of the town hall. The barge was raised and repaired, and was donated to the owner of the boat that was stolen by the crew of the sunken barge; she was occupied for fishing many years.

An exchange of prisoners was proposed; but Colonel Appleton, not feeling authorized to do this, detached a platoon of soldiers, under Lieutenant Charles Tarr, to take charge until they could be sent to Salem.

On the following night a company of men in disguise rescued the prisoners from Lieutenant Tarr, and effected an exchange, by which the men that had been carried away in the barge and others pre-

viously taken, twenty in all, were released. It would seem that the design of this landing could be none other than a wanton destruction of property.

The English commander, at the conclusion of this affair, promised our fishermen that they should not be molested in the use of their fishing-ground the remainder of the season, and he kept his promise.

A few days after this the people of this village were again alarmed by a reported attempt of the English frigate "Leander" to effect a landing at Folly Cove. The militia under Captain Charles Tarr and the Sea Fencibles under Captain David Elwell (he a few days before had been elected captain, but had not received his commission) were brought into requisition. About the same hour word was received that a ship-of-war was about to effect a landing at or near Long Beach, upon which Captains Elwell and Tarr held a consultation. Tarr proposed to take his company to the south end and Elwell was to take his men to Folly Cove. This arrangement brought the Sea Fencibles the first company at Folly Cove. The alarm from the south end proved false, and Captain Tarr's company soon joined the Sea Fencibles. The whole military force of the town, under Colonel Appleton, was soon concentrated at this place. The frigate soon withdrew; probably the object of her visit to this place was to appropriate to their use some of the cattle that were grazing near the shore.

This frigate was probably the same and this the same time that Captain Nathaniel Parsons came out of Squam River on board his fishing-boat. Just after he passed over the bar he noticed an English frigate off Folly Point; her attention was attracted towards his boat to such an extent and he saw no way of escape but by running her ashore; the water was quite smooth.

The men of the village, with muskets in hand, assembled near the shore and blazed away at the frigate's boat that was nearing the shore. They were answered with cannon-ball and grape-shot. The barge soon returned to the ship, and next made an appearance flying a flag of truce. They of course were allowed to land, and handed a letter to some one, who took it to the house of Walter Woodbury. It read as follows: "I, sir, William Colwell, wishing to search that vessel, supposed to be a freighter, if denied, will burn every house within three miles of the shore." Soon Colonel Appleton and the whole military force of the Cape were on hand ready for duty. The frigate soon withdrew.

It was learned by some person who after this was a prisoner on board this frigate that several of their men were wounded. No one on shore was injured.

During this war numbers of our citizens engaged in privateering with considerable success, others in the naval and military service. Some were taken prisoners and spent a season at Dartmoor; others at Halifax. One of the number, who was a prisoner on board a ship on the Thames, is yet living in town.

However the difference of opinion as to the necessity and justice of this war, all hailed with acclamations of joy the news of peace, which was received here on the 21st day of February, 1815. The next evening there was a grand illumination and great rejoicing.

The fishing interest, the most prominent business of the village, which had been greatly depressed, soon revived; fish were caught in good quantity and sold at remunerative prices. Then came a time of general prosperity. This year (1815) Moses P. Clark, with two other men, on board a twenty-ton boat, caught and landed in eight months about nine hundred quintals of cod, pollock and scale-fish, which sold for more than twenty-five hundred dollars. These fish yielded thirty-three barrels of oil, which sold for nine hundred dollars. This same year or the next William Thurston, William Blatchford and one other man and a boy, in the boat "Independence," about thirty tons, caught and landed sixteen hundred quintals of fish. In early spring codfish sold for five dollars per quintal.

Temperance and Moral Reform.—Early in the present century the public mind in this village was agitated to a considerable extent in relation to the excessive use and illegal sale of intoxicating liquors. This agitation resulted in the organization of a Moral Reform Society; its object was to prevent the illegal sale of and the excessive use of ardent spirits and to prevent other immoralities. It was instituted in 1814, and during the fifteen years of its history did a good work. It dissolved in 1829.

The constitution of said society was as follows:

"The utility of Moral Societies has been very extensively felt in the world. They have a very happy and powerful influence to arrest the progress of vice, which seriously alarms every enlightened, virtuous and benevolent mind. For wherever it prevails, its footsteps are marked with disorder, confusion and wretchedness. It often robs society of its brightest ornaments, expels happiness and prosperity from the social circle and reduces families to an abject and suffering state.

"Having seen for a considerable time, with deep regret and fearful anxiety, the great prevalence of sin amongst us, we feel it to be an indispensable duty which we owe to God, ourselves, our families and posterity, to use our influence and endeavors to suppress its progress and rescue society from its pernicious and fatal effects.

"Sensible, however, that all human means and efforts will prove ineffectual without a divine blessing, we would humbly rely on God for his aid and assistance to crown our exertions with success.

"Under these impressions, we, the citizens of Gloucester (Sandy Bay), do agree to form ourselves into a society for the suppression of vice and the improvement of morals; and do adopt the following as a Constitution:

"Notwithstanding the general object of this society is to counteract all vice, in whatever form or manner it makes its appearance, yet, as some species of it are far more destructive to the peace, order, interest and morals of society than others, we consider it our duty to bear a particular and decided testimony against these, and that there might be no misunderstanding between the members of this society in respect to those vices, it is thought advisable that they should be particularly described, and,

"1st. As intemperance has become very alarming, common and destructive; as many individuals have been entirely ruined, families abused, distressed and made wretched by it; as it unmans the man, impairs the rational powers, obliterates the moral sense, destroys conjugal affection, parental tenderness and all virtuous feelings of social life, whatever tends to aid and increase this vice must be received as a dis-

tressing and serious evil, deeply to be deplored by every friend to virtue and humanity; and as no cause, perhaps, has ever contributed more to the continuance and increase of this vice than retailing shops, where ardent spirits have been sold, mixed and drank in open violation of the law; and as such shops have become very numerous at the present day, and nurseries of idleness and every species of wickedness, they call for a speedy and effectual remedy. We, therefore, do solemnly engage to abstain from an excessive use of ardent spirits ourselves, to prevent it in our families, social circles and other places; that we will not frequent and drink in retailing shops, nor suffer our children under our care to do it; and that we will unite in aiding and upholding persons appointed to suppress all such unauthorized places amongst us, in taking every legal step necessary, that this dreadful evil may be removed, and the rising generation saved from its ruinous effects.

"2d. As profane language degrades a rational being, offends a holy God, invalidates the sacred and solemn nature of an oath, and tends to the perversion of justice between man and man, we do sacredly promise to discountenance all profaneness and indecent conversation, both by our precept and example.

"3d. We engage not to gamble or play at any games whatever for money or ardent spirits, neither join with those who do, that we will restrain our children from it, and discountenance it in others; and that we will be particularly careful to guard our children against being in the streets evenings where they are liable to be corrupted.

"4th. That we will disapprove all slander and evil speaking against any one, and especially against the members of this society, that a good understanding might always subsist amongst the members, union be preserved and friendship perpetuated.

"5th. Whereas, long experience has proved that all exertions to suppress vice and improve the morals have been ineffectual without a due observation of the holy Sabbath; and as it was the opinion of the Legislature in this Commonwealth in the late able report on the importance of keeping the Sabbath, in these words: 'We believe, that an enlightened, uniform and pious observance of the Lord's day, in attending public and private instruction and worship ourselves, and in refraining from all actions and practises which may disturb the worship and instructions of others, is a duty solemnly binding on the conscience of every individual. We believe without the appointment and continuance of the Lord's day, that public and private instruction would soon languish, if not entirely cease; and that all the virtues of social life would share the same fate;' we, therefore, the members of this society, do solemnly engage strictly to observe the Lord's day in refraining from all unnecessary labor and recreations on that day ourselves, and use our endeavors to have the day strictly observed in our families and in society."

Then follow the rules by which they would be governed.

This constitution was signed by

Francis Norwood.	William Whipple.
James Goss.	Aaron Pool.
Solomon Pool.	Mathew S. Giles.
Abraham Pool.	Jabez R. Gott.
Solomon Choate.	William Pool.
Ebenr Oakes	Reuben Brooks, Jr.
Caleb Norwood.	Gorham Norwood.
David Jewett.	David Kimball.
Reuben Brooks.	Josiah Page.
Stephen Pool.	Joseph Smith, Jr.
William Choate.	Thomas Oakes.
Henry Witham, Jr.	George Dennison.
Thomas Giles.	Isaac Dennison, Jr.
John Burns, Jr.	

Law and Order Committee.—At the annual March meeting of the town of Gloucester, year 1814, a committee of six persons were chosen in the interest of law and order; this committee were to ascertain who were violating the license law of the Commonwealth then in existence. Five members of this committee were citizens of Sandy Bay; therefore we give place to their report made to the selectmen, June 25th of the same year.

"To the Gentlemen the Selectmen of Gloucester:

"We, the subscribers, being appointed by the town at their last annual March meeting, to notice and inform of all those persons who sell ardent spirits contrary to the statute laws of this commonwealth, having attended to the business of our appointment, find that the following licensed persons have not conformed to the laws for the year past. But have been and continue in the constant habit of selling liquors mixed and drank in their shops in open violation of the laws of this Commonwealth. (The report names sixteen persons thus engaged.)

"As no person can obtain a license but through the approbation of the selectmen, we think it most expedient in the first instance to give them this timely notice, with full confidence that they will not be wanting in their duty, and will withhold their future approbation.

"But, if any of the above-named persons who pay no regard to the wholesome laws of this commonwealth should obtain an approbation, we are determined to make a presentment of all such persons to the General Sessions of the County.

(Signed) "James Goss.
"Francis Norwood.
"Solomon Choate.
"Solomon Poole.
"Timothy R. Davis.
"John Mason.
} *Committee.*

"Gloucester, June 25th, 1814."

These men were not Prohibitionists, but were law and order men, and were determined that the laws of the State should be obeyed.

Almost every grocer in those days applied for and obtained a license to retail liquors, but their license did not allow it to be drank on the premises.

Licensed taverners and victualers were only allowed to sell it to be drank upon the premises. The selectmen's approbation was about as follows: "We hereby certify that Mr. —— is a man of good moral character, and the public good requires that he be licensed as a retailer of liquors."

It seems that the sixteen persons complained of as violaters of law were all citizens of Gloucester barbor. Sandy Bay was, it appears, law-abiding, but we are sure it did not continue so many years, for we well remember when it was sold openly at some twenty-two places, and at most of them in violation of law. About 1830 a temperance society was instituted; but its pledge did not prohibit the use of cider and wine. It was soon found that the need was for a more stringent pledge, as some members would drink hard cider to excess.

Then a new pledge that included total abstinence from all intoxicating liquors was entered into. The Washingtonian movement did great good in Rockport. Many who were on the down grade turned right about and signed the pledge of total abstinence from all that is intoxicating; and a large number of dealers in liquors gave up the business during the ten years from 1840 to 1850. Temperance boomed. There have been at different seasons several temperance organizations. Besides the open societies there have been the Sons of Temperance, the Good Templars, both at the North and South Village, the order of Rechabites, &c., &c. The town in 1856 appropriated five hundred dollars for the enforcement of the liquor law, and have made appropriations for that purpose each year as needed, and a special police to execute the law have been appointed. There is no

place in Rockport where liquor is openly sold, nor has there been for several years. On the license question the vote has always been NO by a large majority. There are now two temperance organizations, the Good Templars, Northern Light, at Pigeon Cove, and the Rechabite Good Templars at the South Village, both in a healthy condition and are doing a good work.

There is also a tent of Rechabites that have been organized more than forty years and have accomplished much for the cause of temperance.

WOMEN'S RAID. — An interesting event in the history of Rockport and of temperance reform occurred on the 8th day of July, 1856, when a well-organized band of some two hundred women, armed with hatchets, and led by a man bearing the American flag, marched through the principal streets of the town for the purpose of making a demonstration against the grog-shops of the place. They did not stop to consider their legal rights to abate these nuisances, for as mothers, wives and daughters they were exposed to and were suffering under the severe evils they inflict. They needed no stronger inducements than the law of self-protection. Animated by this purpose, they visited thirteen places where ardent spirits were unlawfully kept for sale; and, seizing casks, demijohns and other vessels containing the bane of their happiness, poured their contents into the street, breaking many of the vessels that they might more speedily discharge their contents.

They completed their work about three o'clock in the afternoon, then marched to Dock Square and exchanged congratulations and rejoiced over the good work performed, after which each went their several ways to their homes.

This proceeding was made the subject of legal investigation, the history of which and its results were as follows:

"An action of test was entered by James Brown against Stephen Perkins and wife for breaking and entering the plaintiff's shop in Rockport and carrying away and destroying a barrel of vinegar and other goods of the plaintiff.

"The answer denied that the defendants entered the shop, or destroyed or carried away any goods; and alleged that the building was for the sale of intoxicating liquors, and so was a public nuisance, and that a large number of persons assembled to abate the same, and destroyed and injured no article of merchandise, but only spirituous liquor, unlawfully kept for sale, and did no other act, and with no more force than was necessary to abate such nuisance."

At the trial before Chief Justice Shaw the plaintiff and others testified that he was a grocer and kept a shop in Rockport; that on the 8th day of July, 1856, the defendants and others broke open his shop and destroyed various articles therein; and that there was no spirituous liquors there at the time.

The defendants introduced evidence to show that about three hundred women, some of whom were armed with hatchets, met, according to previous appointment, in a neighboring square and marched in a procession to the plaintiff's shop, and broke it open, and brought out and destroyed spirituous liquors which they found there; that on previous occasions persons had been seen coming out of the shop intoxicated; and that when the shop was broken open Perkins was on the opposite side of the street, and his wife was not there at all; and there was conflicting evidence as to the part taken by her in the subsequent destruction of the property.

One of the defendants' witnesses testified: "There were many men there, and almost all the women in Rockport—all who could walk, or move on crutches; all the men appeared to be approving, except the rumsellers; I heard no objection. The selectmen, ministers, deacons, policemen were present; none of them forbade what was done, but all was peace and harmony. They appeared to be happy, and the shouts came up from the gentlemen.

"The justices of the peace were there; everything that could walk. We determined to carry it through and destroy all the liquor."

So much of the judge's instructions as concerned the points decided by the full court was reported by him as follows:

"The most material question is whether this proceeding was justifiable upon the grounds stated and relied upon. That justification is that by statute, all intoxicating liquors kept for sale, and the vessels and implements actually used in selling and keeping the same contrary to the provisions of that act (Statute 1855, C. 405), are declared to be common nuisances, and are to be regarded and treated as such; and that by another statute (1855, C. 405), all buildings, places or tenements used as houses of ill-fame, resorted to for prostitution, lewdness or for illegal gaming, or used for the illegal keeping or sale of intoxicating liquors, are declared to be common nuisances, and are to be regarded and treated as such.

"Upon this three questions arise: First, Whether all persons, members of the community, have a lawful right to destroy intoxicating liquors thus kept, by way of abatement of a common nuisance! Second, whether for this they have a right to use force to break open the place where it is so kept if the nuisance cannot be reached and abated otherwise! Third, Is it justifiable for a large number of persons to combine and agree together to take and destroy such intoxicating liquor, by force, and to use force in breaking open such a shop in order to come at and get possession of the liquor to be destroyed?"

Upon the questions "I (Chief Justice Shaw) was of the opinion and instructed the jury as follows:

"1st. That intoxicating liquors kept for sale, with the vessels containing them, and articles used in the sale, being declared by law to be a common nuisance, it is lawful for any person to destroy them, by way of abatement of a common nuisance, and that it is the exercise of a lawful and common right.

"2d. That if kept in such a shop, not a dwelling-house, locked or otherwise closed, it is justifiable to use force, but no more force than is necessary to reach the liquor and vessels if it cannot be come at otherwise.

"3d. That if the combination or conspiracy of a large number of persons extends no further than to take and destroy intoxicating liquors and the vessels, and to use no unnecessary force, the fact that such a combination is entered into by a large number of persons to act together, in doing that and no more, would not take away the Justification they would have, if done by a few of them.

"But the jury were cautioned that this was a dangerous power, to be construed under very strict conditions; comment was made upon the

danger of permitting people to take the law into their own hands, alluding to lynch law, vigilance committees, &c., leading to resistance, to riots, bloodshed and violence, and destruction to the peace of a civilized community, that as a general rule private persons must rely upon the law for their protection and the redress of grievances. And if the law is in any respect inoperative and ineffectual, it is the province of the Legislature to amend it."

The restrictions under which this power can be lawfully exercised, the jury were instructed to be as follows:

"1st. The power claimed by the defendants is a power conferred by law, and not by license or authority conferred by private persons, and must therefore be construed strictly. And if they exceed their authority they are trespassers, *ab initio*. This justification wholly fails, and the plaintiff is entitled to recover for all the loss sustained; so if they break open a shop where no intoxicating liquor is kept, or, if kept, is not kept for sale, they do it at their peril; and if none such is found, the justification fails; so if after entering they do unlawful acts, they are trespassers *ab initio*.

"2d. If any more force was used than was necessary, or any damage done to the building or to any articles in the building, beyond that of taking and destroying the intoxicating liquor kept for sale, and the vessels that contained it, then the parties so acting were trespassers *ab initio*, and the justification is not established.

"Under these views the evidence was briefly reviewed and submitted to the Jury. Upon the several questions of facts above stated, especially whether any unnecessary force was used in breaking open the shop, without first requesting the owner to unlock it; or whether any unlawful acts were done by the party after entering the shop, either to the building or articles in it, and whether a barrel of vinegar or any article other than intoxicating liquor and the vessel, were taken away and damaged.

"The Jury returned a verdict for the defendants; and the plaintiff moved for a new trial, on the ground that the Jury were misdirected in matters of law; and this motion was reserved for the whole Court."

Able arguments were presented by the counsel for the plaintiff, Otis P. Lord and J. W. Perry.

Also by S. H. Phillips and R. S. Rantoul for the defendants. Then the court go on to say,—

"This is an action for breaking and entering the plaintiff's shop, and destroying various articles of property. The defendants, denying the facts, and putting the plaintiff to proof, insist that if it is proved that they were chargeable with the breaking and entering, it was justifiable by law, on the ground that the shop was a place used for the sale of spirituous liquors, and so was declared to be a nuisance; and that they had a right to abate the nuisance, and for that purpose to break and enter the shop, as the proof shows it was done; that the shop contained spirituous liquors kept for sale, that so keeping them was a nuisance by statute; that they had a right to enter by force and destroy them; and that they entered for that purpose and destroyed such articles, and did no more damage than was necessary for that purpose.

"1st. The Court are of opinion that spirituous liquors are not of themselves a common nuisance, but the act of keeping them for sale, by statute creates a nuisance; and the only mode in which they can be lawfully destroyed is the one directed by statute, for the seizure by warrant, bringing them before a magistrate and giving the owner of the property an opportunity to defend his right to it. Therefore it is not lawful for any person to destroy them by way of abatement of a common nuisance, and, therefore, not lawful to use force for that purpose.

"2d. It is not lawful by the common law for any and all persons to abate a common nuisance, though the doctrines may have been sometimes stated in terms so general as to give countenance to this supposition, this right and power is never entrusted to individuals in general without process of law, by way of vindicating the public right, but only for the relief of a party whose right is obstructed by such nuisance.

"3d. If such were intended to be made the law by force of statute, it would be contrary to the provisions of the Constitution, which directs that no man's property can be taken from him without compensation; excepting the forfeiture of his property by the law of the land, and no person can be twice punished for the same offence. And it is clear, under the Constitution, spirituous liquors are property, and are entitled to protection as such.

"This power of abatement of a public or common nuisance does not place the penal laws of the Commonwealth in private hands.

"4th. The true theory of abatement of a nuisance is that an individual citizen may abate a private nuisance injurious to him, when he could also bring an action; and also when a common nuisance obstructs his individual right, he may remove it to enable him to enjoy that right, and he cannot be called in question for so doing, as in the obstruction across a highway, and an unauthorized bridge over a navigable watercourse, if he has occasion to use it, he may remove it by way of abatement. But this would not justify strangers, being inhabitants of other parts of the Commonwealth, having no such occasion to use it, to do the same. Some of the earlier cases, perhaps, in laying down the general proposition that private subjects may abate a common nuisance, did not expressly mark this distinction; but we think, upon the authority of modern cases, where the distinctions are more accurately made, and upon principle, this is the true rule of law.

"5th. As it is the use of a building, or the keeping of spirituous liquors in it, which in general constitutes the nuisance, the abatement consists in putting a stop to such use.

"6th. The keeping of a building for the sale of intoxicating liquors, if a nuisance at all, is exclusively a common nuisance; and the fact that the husbands, wives, children or servants of any person do frequent such a place and get intoxicating liquor there, does not make it a special nuisance or injury to their private rights, so as to authorize and justify such persons in breaking into the shop or building where it is thus sold and destroying the liquor there found, and the vessels in which it may be kept; but it can only be prosecuted as a public or a common nuisance in the mode prescribed by law. Upon these grounds, without reference to others which may be reported in detail hereafter, the court are of the opinion that the verdict for the defendants must be set aside, and a new trial had.

"Justices of the Supreme Court at the time of this report,—

"Hon. Lemuel Shaw, Chief.
"Hon. Charles A. Dewey.
"Theron Metcalf.
"Hon. George T. Bigelow.
"Benjamin F. Thomas.
"Pliny Merrick.

"Hon. Stephen H. Phillips, Attorney-General."

In the month of December a new trial of this interesting case was had before the Superior Court. Hon. Julius Rockwell presided; it occupied the court three days. The defendants undertook to prove that they had committed no trespass. The jury, after being out eighteen hours, returned a verdict for the defendants, on the 10th day of December, 1859—Perry and Endicott for the plaintiff; Perkins, Derby and Rantoul for the defendants. John Stimson, Esq., who was extensively engaged in the stone business at Rockport many years, contributed some thousands of dollars to the support of the defense.

Fires.—On the night of December 5, 1843, fire was discovered breaking out of a small barn owned by James Pool, and in rear of his dwelling-house. Its progress was rapid and soon extended to his dwelling-house and the dwelling of Solomon Pool and to his two or three barns and to the house of Samuel H. Brooks and his barn. Every building, with nearly all their contents, upon these three estates were burned, except a three-story tenement house owned by Brooks, which stood within twelve feet of the two-story house that was burned. Our fire apparatus were two "tub" engines. The alarm extended to Gloucester, and was quickly responded to by an engine with an efficient company, which rendered valuable service by keeping the fire within the limits named.

Previous to this there had been but one house destroyed by fire in this village; that was the dwelling of Deacon Solomon Pool and brothers, on South Street, in the year 1830.

During a thunder-storm in the year 1855, a barn owned by Asa Todd was struck by lightning and burned, with several tons of hay.

Andrew B. Bickford lost a barn by fire in the year 1857; it was located on Main Street.

In the month of August, 1859, a barn owned by Capt. Charles Tarr, on South Street, was struck by lightning and consumed, with some ten tons of hay; several persons were in the building at the time, but received no material injury.

October 12, 1865, about three o'clock in the morning, a barn owned by Alden Estes, on South Street, was struck by lightning and destroyed, together with fifteen tons of hay and a lot of grain and farming tools. Insurance, five hundred dollars; loss, one thousand dollars.

D. Smith Gott's barn, some three or four rods away, caught by the flying embers and was totally destroyed, with several tons of hay, and a large lot of vegetables and farming tools. Loss, one thousand dollars; no insurance.

On Sabbath morning, May 2, 1875, the Methodist Church was totally destroyed by fire; it was a heavy loss to the society, as they had but three thousand dollars insurance; one policy of fifteen hundred dollars expired a few days before and had not been renewed.

December 8th of the same year a large barn owned by Jabez Row, on School Street, was burned, together with one horse, cow and several tons of hay; partly insured.

In the year 1883 the dwelling-house of M. H. Young (summer residence), South Street, was totally destroyed by fire.

On Sunday morning, December 9, 1883, the Annisquam Mill took fire about seven o'clock, as they were about making some small repairs. The main building was totally destroyed, throwing out of employment about two hundred and forty persons, which was a great loss to the community. Steam fire-engines were called from Gloucester and Salem, and were soon on the ground; by their aid the fire was confined to the one building.

The foregoing are nearly all the fires that have taken place in this town.

MANUFACTURES.—Isinglass from hake sounds was first manufactured in 1822 by Wm. Hall, of Boston, in this town; his place of business was in a store-house far down on the westerly side of Bearskin Neck.

He paid from three to five cents per pound for the sounds in a raw state; before he commenced to buy them they were wasted with other fish offal.

He cleaned and dried them and put them through wooden rollers operated by hand-power, for which he paid from forty to fifty cents per day to each man.

He obtained a patent and continued the business a few years, when it went into the hands of Jabez Row, Wm. Norwood and others, which finally resulted in the organization of the Rockport Isinglass Company; this company had sole control of the business under their patent several years. They substituted iron rollers for wood and horse-power instead of hand finally they operated by steam. Notwithstanding their opportunities, this company closed business some years since financially embarrassed. There is now in this town two manufacturers of isinglass from hake sounds,—the Cape Ann that employs forty-five men about five months each year, and Haskins Brothers, who employ about forty men about the same length of time. They manufacture a good quality of goods and are quite successful.

Cotton-Mill.—In the year 1847 an act of incorporation was obtained and a mill was erected for the manufacture of cotton duck; it went into operation the next year and was quite successful for a few years, and paid good dividends. Besides cotton duck, many tons of yarn was manufactured and sold to manufacturers of fishing-lines in Essex. Mills for the manufacture of cotton duck were built in other towns, which caused an over-production, and business declined; the machinery was changed to some extent and other kinds of goods were manufactured. About eighteen years after it was first built the building was enlarged to double its capacity, its length being increased by that figure; four tenement houses and a large boarding house was built. Some years later the whole property of the company was sold for about $140,000, which was about the amount of debt resting upon it; thus the old stockholders were entirely wiped out; the property had cost nearly $500,000. The name of the corporation was changed to Annisquam Mill; the machinery was renewed and improved to considerable extent under the agency of W. G. Whitman, and again went into operation; after a few years' service Mr. Whitman resigned in order to take charge of the Amory Mill, then in process of building in Manchester, N. H. Wm. E. Winsor succeeded him; within a short time it became a regular dividend-paying institution. It was destroyed by fire on the morning of the 9th day of December, 1883. It was a substantial stone building with two towers and made quite an imposing appearance. It gave employment to two hundred and forty persons; its destruction is a very great loss to the town.

Oil Cloth.—What is now (1887) the Cape Ann Oil Cloth Co. originated with Albert W. Lane and Nathaniel S. York, in a small barn on Broadway. They soon removed to a large building on Gott Street; their business increased, they needed more room, and they removed to a building one hundred feet by forty, two stories, which the company now owns on Pleasant Street, and give constant employment to about thirty persons. They now manufacture under a patent dated January 16, 1883, rubber oil goods, coats,

hats, horse-covers, buggy-aprons, etc., etc., in connection with Standard Oil Clothing.

Post-Office.—In the year 1825 a post-office was established at Sandy Bay, and a semi-weekly mail. The next year the village was favored with a tri-weekly, and in 1828 with a daily mail and stage-coach.

Winthrop Pool was the first postmaster. He continued in office until his death, in 1838; then Henry Clark was appointed; next was George Lane, then Francis Tarr, Jr., Addison Gott, William W. Marshall, William Wingood, then the present incumbent, Walter G. Peckham, appointed in 1886.

The mode of conveying the mail was first by a one-horse two-wheel chaise; it could take two passengers beside the driver to Gloucester Harbor, then take the stage-coach for Boston; the journey consumed the most of the day. At the time of the establishment of the post-office here there probably were not more than half a dozen papers, weekly or semi-weekly, taken in the village. Captain John Gott, Dr. John Manning, Nehemiah Knowlton, James Goss were of the number that received the news from abroad. Now, instead of the two-wheeled chaise and stage-coach, consuming a good part of the day to reach Boston, we have nine trains of well-appointed cars out and in each day, and the time so arranged that we may take breakfast at home, spend a large part of the day in Boston, and be home in season for tea; and instead of a mail twice a week, three mails each day, and the cost of travel by rail at less than one-half what it was by chaise and coach. And as to news, now we have the morning and evening papers daily by the score, weeklies and semi-weeklies almost without number, magazines in good supply.

John W. Low, Esq., I think, was the first mail-carrier. I remember taking passage with him at least once in the one-horse chaise; then Marshall Shepherd a short time; next was Cyrus Fellows, who served long enough in that capacity to secure one of our fair ladies for a wife; Edward H. Shaw, Addison Proctor, Levi Shaw served in that capacity until the railroad superseded the stage-coach.

At a later day a post-office with a daily mail was established at Pigeon Cove,—Austin W. Story, postmaster.

Stone-Quarrying.—During the year 1823 Nehemiah Knowlton cut about five hundred tons of stone from cobbles on or near the site now occupied by Bullon & Mason. He advertised his stone for sale in a Boston newspaper. Major Bates, of Quincy, Mass., saw the advertisement and came to Sandy Bay, and the next year he engaged in the business of quarrying. William Torrey, also of Quincy, came with him, and was in his employ about one year.

However true it may be that the business was not successful, it is a fact that Major Bates abandoned it in about two years and went to Boston. Here he met Colonel Thayer, United States engineer, who, noticing Major Bates' natural bent for working on stone, engaged him as an assistant in the construction of Fort Warren and other government works then being constructed in Boston Harbor.

Colonel Thayer being in want of stone for the government works, and seeing the pluck and energy of Torrey, induced him to engage in business on his own account. He accordingly commenced operations on part of the property now owned by the Rockport Granite Company; it became known as the Torrey Pit.

The next year he went to Folly Cove, as that was the most favorable place to get cap and flag-stones, of which Colonel Thayer was then in need. That same year he moved his family, consisting of his wife and two sons, Solomon F. and William J., to Sandy Bay.

The next year he abandoned Folly Cove and returned to Sandy Bay, and opened a quarry to the westward of the present stone bridge. This quarry yielded a large amount of valuable stone. Up to the year 1842 he furnished nearly all the granite for the government work on the islands in Boston Harbor and for the Charlestown and Portsmouth navy-yards. After this time a portion of the stone of which these important works were constructed was furnished by Messrs. Colburn & Eames, Benjamin Hale and others.

About the year 1841 he started the largest stone that had been quarried on the Cape up to that time. Two of his foremen, Joseph Stanley and Joshua Sanborn, were for many years identified with the quarrying interests of the Cape. When in the zenith of his business, Mr. Torrey owned an interest in six sloops, keeping them constantly employed, and also furnished freight for many other vessels from Quincy and the State of Maine. He was a good citizen and an energetic and successful business man.

Of his two sons, Solomon F. died some years since; William J., who was formerly engaged in the stone business to a considerable extent, is still with us; he owns and occupies the mansion built and occupied by his father several years.

Beniah Colburn came two years after Mr. Torrey and worked for him. He became one of the foremost quarrymen of his time. Soon after Colburn came Ezra Eames and Amos C. Sanborn. The last named, I think, tarried here but about one year, then returned to Boston, and engaged in the business of buying and selling stone, and was quite successful; many thousand tons of Rockport granite have been shipped to him. Eames made Rockport his home.

About this time, or a year or two later, came Zachariah Green and Jeremiah Wetherbee. They formed a corporation known as the Boston and Gloucester Granite Company. John Stimson, a son-in-law of Green, came also, and held stock in the company. They opened a quarry on what is now the property of the Rockport Granite Company, and commenced the wharf and breakwater, which has assumed such

large proportions, and is also now owned by that company. This company continued in business a number of years, and were quite successful. They built the stone house and barn, and did much towards opening up the resources of the town.

Colburn & Eames formed a partnership in 1827. They opened a quarry near where is now the residence of Thomas Full, at Pigeon Cove. At this place there was a hill of stone, rising some twenty feet above the level of the road. The stone was of good quality, and soon found a ready market at Boston, Portsmouth, Salem and other places, where much of it was dressed for building and cemetery purposes.

The stone for the chain bridge over the Merrimack just above Newburyport was sent from their quarry in 1828; they also furnished some stone to the government for fortifications, navy-yards, etc. It is said that after taking account of stock and settling up at the end of the first year they were fifteen dollars in debt. In subsequent years they were more successful. They worked the quarry down to the tide-water level and then abandoned it, as they could no longer draw off the water, which filled in from springs and rains, with a syphon. Steam-engines for pumping were not then thought of.

John Stimson, after a few years, left the Boston and Gloucester Granite Company and set up for himself and quarried at the Flat Ledge, afterward owned by William H. Knowlton. The first paving-blocks cut on Cape Ann were by John Stimson and from the Flat Ledge they were cut square and flat, and were used at Fort Warren, shipped there in the sloop "Fox."

The next move a new company was organized, viz., Ezra Eames, John Stimson and Beniah Colburn, under the firm-name of Eames, Stimson & Co., and commenced operations near where Stimson was already located. Mr. Colburn continued in the company but a short time, and then engaged in the business at other places. He at one time operated the quarry at Hodgkin's Cove (now known as Bay View). This quarry was originally opened by Richard W. Ricker and Kilby P. Sargent, and is now the quarry of the Cape Ann Granite Company. Mr. Colburn made the first blocks now known as New York blocks, and sent them to Boston, where they were laid in Exchange Street, near the Merchants' Bank building. These blocks were the first to be laid on the edge instead of on the flat.

In 1852–53 he sent underpinning to San Francisco; they were used in government buildings there. In 1857 he sent paving-blocks to New Orleans. He was a man of strict integrity and was quite successful in business.

Eames, Stimson & Co. operated on a part of the territory that is now owned by the Rockport Granite Company. Those more or less interested in this company at different times were Anson and Aaron Stimson, George R. Bradford, Joshua Sanborn, J. Henry Stimson, Abraham Day and Jotham Taylor. This company did a large business and were quite successful, and continued in successful operation until 1864, when they sold all their company property to J. Henry Stimson and others, which resulted in the organization of the Rockport Granite Company. Stimson at one time owned nearly one-half of the capital stock. This company also purchased at different times the properties of William Hale Knowlton, William Torrey, and Preston and Fernald. They are still occupying this valuable property and are working it successfully. They are now laying rails for a track from their quarries to their wharves, which will make a great saving of expense in transporting the products of their quarries to the place of shipment. The cut leading out from their quarries to their wharves was commenced in 1868. The stone bridge was completed in 1872.

John Stimson was for many years the able and successful agent and manager of this company. Upon his resignation, a few years since, Charles S. Rogers was appointed, and still holds that responsible position.

Thomas Peach quarried stone at Halibut Point and shipped it from Hooppole Cove, where he built a wharf. Benjamin Hale and Joseph Babson opened a quarry on the Babson farm and shipped their stone from a cove near by, where they also built a wharf.

The breakwater at Pigeon Cove was first built in 1832, and was rebuilt in 1842 by Elijah Edmunds and John W. Wheeler. The stone of which the pier is built was furnished by Colburn & Eames.

Benjamin Hale once quarried at Pigeon Cove, near where Canney now operates. Among the earlier quarrymen were Samuel Parker and his brother William, Alpheus C. Pierce and George W. Johnson, all of whom worked quarries at the Cove.

Levi Sewall opened a quarry upon his land. A short time after it was opened a partnership was formed by John Preston, James Fernald and Levi Sewall, by the firm-name of Preston, Fernald & Co. This quarry produced an excellent quality of stone. They shipped their stone from Knowlton's wharf. They continued in business several years and were quite successful.

William Hale Knowlton opened up Flat Ledge and quarried there several years. He shipped his stone from Knowlton's wharf, which he now owns.

The Pigeon Hill Granite Company was formed in 1870 by George R. Bradford, Anson Stimson, Amos Rowe and Levi Sewall, and is next in size to its neighbor, the "Rockport." This company was the first in Rockport to build a railroad to carry stone from quarry to wharf. Some of the croakers prophesied that the cars would gain such headway in running down the steep incline, as to carry them out to salvages before they could be stopped. If this prophecy were true, the advantage gained in taking stone to the new breakwater can easily be imagined.

To Amos Rowe belongs the credit of cutting up the largest boulder on the Cape. It was situated near the top of Pigeon Hill, and weighed over two thousand tons. Out of it Mr. Rowe cut thousands of feet of edge-stones and a great amount of other marketable stock. It was of good quality and split as readily as any of the granite lying in the quarries.

In the beginning of the stone business nearly all the workmen on the quarries came from Maine, New Hampshire and Vermont,—young men, generally full of fun. The most of them at the first boarded at the Rowe farm-house, Pigeon Hill, and Captain Wheeler's tavern, at Pigeon Cove. They usually commenced coming the 1st of March, and by the 1st of April the gangs were full. No ten-hour system. An early breakfast, then commence work; an hour for dinner, then work until a late supper. Nearly all worked by the month, receiving their pay at the end of the season, excepting as they might call for a small amount of spending change.

In later years, when the employment of Irishmen was attempted, it met with vigorous opposition. The house which was being prepared for them to live in was twice blown up with powder; and many other efforts were made to keep out the unwelcome immigrants.

This prejudice has long since died out and all nationalities are allowed to work unmolested.

The first stone known to have been shipped from Cape Ann was quarried about the year 1800, near what is known as Lobster Cove. It was moved on skids to the shore, where it was loaded on a small fishing-boat and taken to Newburyport to be used as a mill-stone.

The first derrick in Sandy Bay was erected for William Torrey in 1836, and was placed near the break in the mountains a short distance to the westward of the late James Fernald's residence. It was first used for the loading of stone for the breakwater then being constructed by the United States government at the entrance of Long Cove, Rockport.

The first pair of shears were built for John Stimson, and were considered at the time a marvel of strength and convenience.

The first California pump used for pumping water out of the quarries was made by Lewis Lane on his return from California about 1854.

The first steam-engine used in the quarries for hoisting and pumping was in 1853–54 by Wetherbee & Page. Before this, the hoisting was by hand-power or cattle, and the water was pumped by hand or removed by syphon.

Granite was first split by means of flat wedges between shims placed in flat holes made by a flat chisel. The steel now used is made into plug wedges and driven between half rounds into round holes made by round drills sharpened into a V-shaped point.

Deep holes for blasting were made entirely with long drills struck by sledge hammers, and not until 1883 was a steam-drill used on the Rockport quarries. This was introduced by the Rockport Granite Company.

The first stone used in the streets of Boston was for crosswalks and gutters; next came the large Belgian blocks, which were used for pavements. Then came the New York blocks already mentioned, and later the smaller Boston blocks were introduced.

Nearly every city in the United States has bought more or less granite from this section, and the variety of blocks made has been almost as great as the number of places buying them.

A block for New Orleans would make fifteen for New York, twenty for Philadelphia, thirty for Boston. Blocks have also been sent to Cuba and Valparaiso. In 1868, Mr. Charles Guidot made the first contract for paving New York streets with granite blocks, and paved the lower part of Broadway with what has since been known as the New York block. The granite of Cape Ann is comparatively inexhaustible, and has always been prized for its firm texture, high crushing test and freedom from pyrites and other impurities, making it most desirable for paving-blocks, building and monumental purposes.

The parties now engaged in quarrying are the Rockport Granite Co., Pigeon Hill Granite Co., Charles Guidot, Edwin Canney, Ballou & Mason, Herbert A. Story, E. L. Waite, Charles Dormon & Son and Bryant, Lurvey & Co.

Between four and five hundred men find employment in the business in this town; twelve to fifteen vessels are constantly employed in carrying the production to home ports, while hundreds of large vessels bringing freight to Eastern ports take return cargoes of blocks to New York, Philadelphia, Albany and other seaboard cities, either for use at places of discharge or for rail transportation inland.

Rockport Bank.—The Rockport Bank was incorporated in 1851; capital stock, $100,000. At its organization Ezra Eames was chosen president, and he occupied that position until his death, August 18, 1874, aged seventy-two years.

Deacon Jabez R. Gott was elected cashier and served in that capacity until failing health compelled him to resign. He died March 15, 1876, aged eighty-two years. These two men were among our most prominent and respected citizens.

Captain Charles Tarr succeeded Mr. Eames and he still occupies that position.

Howard H. Paul succeeded Mr. Gott, and served a few years, then resigned, and Eli Gott was elected to that position; after a few years' service he resigned, and George W. Tufts was chosen and is the present incumbent.

When the other State banks adopted the National system, the Rockport fell into line and became known as the Rockport National Bank. Its capital stock was at one time increased to $150,000, but after a few years it was reduced to its first figure, $100,000.

There was quite an opposition before the Legislature to the chartering of this bank. It was claimed by the friends of the old Gloucester Bank that it could furnish all the bank accommodation that was needed for the entire Cape.

After the charter was granted it was with some difficulty that the stock was taken, but by great effort of the directors, of which I think there were as many as nine or ten, they succeeded, the full amount of stock was taken, and the bank went into operation. The stock soon went above par, and has ever since commanded a premium. This institution has been conducive to the business of the town.

Rockport Savings Bank.—The Rockport Savings Bank was incorporated June 23, 1853. Corporators named in the act were Ezra Eames, Jabez R. Gott, James Haskell and their associates. At its organization James Haskell was chosen president, and Newell Giles treasurer. The bank soon commenced receiving deposits and proved to be a successful institution until, in 1875, its deposits amounted to $414,460.71. About this time a cloud came over the town in the shape of financial troubles and failures in business. Confidence became impaired, deposits were withdrawn, so that in 1876 they were reduced to $376,780.51. This year Dr. Jas. Manning was chosen treasurer, Newell Giles having resigned. A change was also made in the board of trustees, and Joshua Tarr was elected president, succeeding Henry Dennis. He had succeeded James Haskell who resigned some years before on account of his leaving town; he went to Saccarappa, Maine, where he now is (1887).

Notwithstanding the change of officers, confidence was not restored, deposits continued to be withdrawn until, February 25, 1878, they were reduced to $182,352. At this time Hon. Charles P. Thompson and Dr. Joseph Manning were appointed receivers. Within a few years the whole business of the bank was closed. The depositors received eighty-five and a fraction per cent. on their deposits. A short time, say about twenty days, after the receivers were appointed the Massachusetts Legislature passed the Stay Law, so called, which undoubtedly saved other saving institutions from sharing the fate of the Rockport.

Had this been passed before the receivers were appointed, without doubt the Rockport Savings Bank would now be in successful operation, and the depositors would receive one hundred cents on every dollar of their deposits as called for, and also interest.

For when we take into account the $8000 the receivers had for their services, and the shrinkage in a few of the largest mortgages, saying nothing of the loss on the smaller ones, and the losses in other ways incidental to closing out of the business, we have an amount more than equal to the fifteen per cent. of the loss to the depositors.

The closing out of this savings bank was one of, if not the greatest of all the financial disasters that ever befell the town.

Granite Savings Bank.—After the closing out of the Rockport Savings Bank, some of the citizens felt that an institution for savings was needed in town.

Accordingly, a petition to that effect was forwarded to the Legislature, and in the year 1884 the Granite Savings Bank was incorporated. William Winsor, J. Loring Woodfall, John W. Marshall, George Elwell, George M. McClain, Nathaniel Richardson, Jr., Francis Tarr, Frank Scripture, Wm. H. Colbey and George A. Lowe were named in the act of incorporation. The first meeting for the choice of officers was held December 16, 1884, at which meeting John G. Dennis, Esq., was elected president; J. Loring Woodfall was chosen secretary; two vice-presidents were chosen and eleven trustees.

There was some ill-feeling engendered about town by the closing up of the Rockport Savings Bank, which on the start operated to some extent against the new bank, but this feeling is being overcome. The new institution has a good board of officers, in whom the public cannot but have confidence; the institution is gradually growing in favor; as business shall revive, deposits will increase more rapidly. Without doubt it will prove a useful institution. Its first dividend, two per cent., was payable on the 1st day of April, 1887.

The president, John G. Dennis, Esq., died in June of the year succeeding his election. The vacancy was not filled until the next annual meeting, when Wm. Winsor was elected president, and Nathaniel Richardson, Jr., was re-elected treasurer. Mr. Dennis at the time of his decease was also a member of the State Legislature. The first deposit made in this bank was April 11, 1885.

Centennial Celebration. — At the annual March meeting, in 1853, a committee was chosen to make suitable arrangements to celebrate the one hundredth anniversary of the incorporation of Sandy Bay as the Fifth Parish of Gloucester. The committee met and organized, and then, by a unanimous vote, invited Lemuel Gott, M.D., to prepare and deliver an address on that important occasion. After due consideration he cordially accepted the invitation of the committee.

The date of the act of incorporation of the parish of Sandy Bay was January 1, 1754.

The 1st day of January, 1854, fell on Sunday; therefore, Monday, the 2d day of January, was devoted to exercises of the centennial.

On account of a heavy snow-storm, travel was impeded, which prevented our friends from abroad from being present, except in limited numbers. Nevertheless, the Congregationalist Church, where the services were held, was filled with an earnest and attentive audience.

The exercises were as follows: Voluntary on the organ, by Samuel J. Giles; reading of Scripture and prayer, by Rev. Thomas Driver, Baptist; hymn was

read by Rev. A. C. L. Arnold, Universalist, as follows:[1]

Address by Lemuel Gott, M.D., which occupied more than an hour. Closed by benediction by Rev. Thos. Driver; voluntary by Samuel J. Giles.

At 7.30 P.M. the church was again filled. Services were: Voluntary by Samuel J. Giles; prayer by Rev. J. A. Gibson, Methodist; anthem by choir, organ accompaniment. Dr. Gott resumed his address which was listened to with marked attention to its close.

Benediction by Rev. A. C. L. Arnold; voluntary by Samuel J. Giles. These very interesting services were brought to a close. We regret to say that this very interesting and valuable address has not yet been published. We are pleased to say that its publication has been provided for and will be effected within a few weeks, which event is anxiously looked for.

[1] A part of the hymn was selected and a part composed by Ebenezer Pool, our antiquarian.

"God of the circling shores!
To whom a thousand years
Are as a day;
Led by thy guiding hand
Our fathers found this land—
They firmly took their stand
Thy laws to obey.

"Over the rocky road,
They bravely walked or rode
In prayer to join;
'Twas through a forest dim
Some miles they went to hymn
God's praises there to rhyme,
Read line by line.

"Many a year had passed,
The time it came at last,
God's word brought near;
A century has gone,
Since a house near their home,
Was built for all, not one,
God's word to hear.

"Our fathers, sons and all,
Heeded their country's call
For liberty;
By land and sea they went,
Regardless of event,
To meet the tyrants sent;
They would be free.

"Thou, as a shield of power
In battle's awful hour,
Didst round them stand;
Their hopes were in thy power
Strong in this trying hour;
By thee their banners towered,
God of our land.

"Some score of years have fled—
Our fathers with the dead—
Man's certain lot;
But we, their offspring, meet
This day with joy to greet,
To [illegible] to sweet
To-be-forgot.

"Lord, let thy smile of love
Beam on us from above
While now we raise
our grateful song to [illegible]
God of our land and sea,
God of the bond and free
God of all praise."

FOURTH OF JULY CELEBRATION.—In the year 1854 the citizens proposed to have a general celebration of the 4th of July. The town had never done this before. Early in the season a meeting was called and a general committee of arrangements was chosen. They appointed the sub-committee, and assigned to each their part of the work. They soon made their plans and put forth efforts to carry them into execution. As one of the results, about eight hundred dollars was collected to pay for music, hire of tents, fireworks, etc. The ladies readily entered into the plans, and signified their readiness to provide food for the occasion. Thus on the start there was assurance that the celebration would be a success. When Mr. Norwood was asked for the use of his pasture on which to pitch our tents, he replied "Yes, you can have the free use of the pasture for your 4th of July celebration, but your independence you have got to fight for." Which saying was verified seven years later. (He was a pronounced anti-slavery man.) Early on the morning of the 4th the town was awake, visitors came pouring in in great numbers, the town appeared at its best. Arches were erected over several of the streets and were finely decorated. Flags were strung across others. Bunting was displayed from some houses, mottoes were displayed from others, etc.

On the morning of the 4th every arrangement had been made. The two large tents had been pitched on Allen's Head Pasture. At 9 o'clock A.M. a procession was formed on Broadway in the following order:

Aids. Chief Marshal. Aids.

Chelsea Brass Band.
Gloucester Artillery.
Committee of Arrangements.
Bay Tent of Rechabites.
Carriage containing elderly gentlemen.
I. O. O. F., in regalia, with their banner.
Goddess of Liberty, in a carriage, appropriately arrayed.
Justice and Peace appropriately dressed, in a well-trimmed carriage.
Engine Company No. 3, in uniform.
School No. 1, Grammar Department, in Bloomer costume.
Seasons appropriately represented.
Carriage beautifully dressed.
School No. 4, in appropriate costume.
Stars—Nine young ladies dressed in white; team driven by a colored boy.
School No. 3, in uniform.
Morning, Noon and Night, in a carriage, appropriately represented.
Faith, Hope and Charity, well represented by three young ladies in a carriage appropriately trimmed.
School No. 2, in uniform.
School No. 5, in uniform.
The States represented by thirty-two ladies appropriately costumed, in a carriage tastily decorated.
School No. 1, in uniform.
Representation of Indian and Turk on horseback.
Old Folks at Home—Ten young ladies dressed in old style, in carriage with spinning-wheels, carding, etc.
Carriage, Floral Bower, six young ladies dressed in white, decorated with flowers.
Modesty, in a carriage, well represented.
Glee Club—Five young ladies and two gentlemen, in a carriage appropriately decorated.

The procession moved from Broadway and marched through School, High, Main, Beach, King, Pleasant and South Streets to the tent. It was intended to march to Pigeon Cove, but the heat was too oppressive, ranging from 80 to 90° in the shade during the day. The streets were very dusty; there had been several days of hot and dry weather. Several members of the artillery company had sunstroke, and required medical aid. A little past one o'clock P. M. the procession reached the pavilion at Allen's Head, where a bountiful collation had been provided by the ladies; the tables were verily loaded with good things. After the divine blessing was invoked by Rev. A. C. L. Arnold, the chaplain of the day, the company were welcomed by the president to the viands before them. The collation ended, the president of the day, Hon. James Haskell, called to order, when the chaplain again addressed the throne of grace in words appropriate to the occasion; then Lemuel Gott, M.D., read the Declaration of Independence, after which the president introduced the orator of the day, C. M. Ellis, Esq., of Boston, in a few complimentary remarks. The subject of the oration was a review of the early history of New England, showing how the idea of constitutional liberty was prominent in the minds of our forefathers, and were bequeathed to their descendants; they welcomed fugitives from tyranny from every part of despotic Europe, whether that tyranny was political or ecclesiastical. Fugitives from slavery were their every-day visitors, and thereby the flame of liberty was fanned into surpassing brightness. He considered that this spirit of liberty was endangered in our time by causes obvious to all; but he believed in its ultimate triumph, and foresaw the day when, as a nation, we shall be free indeed. "That day has come; we are now a free and united nation. Give God the glory!" Mr. Ellis spoke one hour and a half, and had the close attention of the audience. Then an hour was spent in social intercourse and short speeches, in which many joined. David Kimball, Esq., of Boston, a former townsman, was introduced as toast-master. Some of the many toasts offered were as follows:

The President of the United States and his administration. "May they fear God and keep his commandments."

Washington. "May we emulate his patriotism and remember his virtues."

The orator of the day. "May the spirit which he has this day inspired be long felt."

The Hon. Charles W. Upham. "Our Representative to Congress, the firm friend of freedom."

The Press. "May its mighty influence ever be wielded on the side of freedom."

The Gloucester Artillery. Responded to by William H. Dann.

The Chelsea Brass-Band. "May they live to blow long for the gratification of their patrons."

The Ladies of Rockport. "May they make better wives than their mothers."

Mr. Ellis responded to this, declaring that were it not for the influence of the mothers he should consider it a libel. But, inheriting their virtues and emulating their excellencies, it might be possible.

Many of the toasts were responded to very appropriately.

After the procession had partaken of the collation the entire company were invited; there was an abundance of food for all, and quite a quantity was left over and was distributed the next day to the needy. David Kimball, Esq., donated a large quantity of Chinese explosives to boys, which increased their joy. A salute was fired in the morning and at sun-set by cannon provided for the occasion.

During the evening there was a grand display of fireworks, and the band discoursed most excellent music. By unanimous consent the celebration of the 4th of July, 1854, was voted a success.

Schools.—Soon after John Pool located at Sandy Bay he sent his oldest son to Beverly to attend school, so that he might be qualified to teach the younger members of the family. It is more than probable that the children of Richard Tarr became his pupils, as those two families were the whole population of the village for a few years. The first that we know of a school-house in Sandy Bay is that in the year 1725 (there were from eight to twelve families in the village). The commoners set off to them about one acre of land in the centre of the village, upon which they were required to erect a school-house, "to keep a good school in for the godly instruction of children, and teaching them to read and write good English." The school-house was built the same year; it was of logs, and was located near where the Abbot house now stands. The parish, about the year 1853 or '54, granted to Rev. Ebenr. Cleaveland a portion of this parish land for a building-lot, upon which he erected his dwelling-house, which he occupied many years, in which his wife died in 1804, and himself in 1805. It is now the Abbot house, but greatly changed. This caused the taking down of the school-house, and the removing of it to the northerly corner of the now Congregationalist meeting-house yard, and that location it occupied until it was taken down in 1797. The late Ebenr. Pool, our antiquarian, attended school several terms in the old log school-house. Dr. James Goss, who settled in his profession in Sandy Bay about 1792, taught school in this, the first school-house in Sandy Bay, several terms. The town has been privileged for several years, and is at the present time, in having a descendant of his a successful teacher in one of its public schools.

About the year 1760 John Pool (a son of the first John) built a school-house at his own expense on Groat Knoll. The name indicates the price paid (one groat). This building was occupied for school

purposes quite a number of years. Then it became the residence of James Parsons and family until the death of himself and wife. She was a descendant of the first Pool. It is now occupied by one of their descendants—Aunt Beulah.

In October, 1735, Gloucester First Parish was divided into three school districts, but then these three districts had but one school, which moved around from district to district. Each was to provide a room for the school, and in default thereof, would lose its term for three years, that being the time occupied in its circuit. Under this each district enjoyed several months' school privilege each year, except Sandy Bay, which, on account of the small amount of its tax rate, could have only three months' school in two years. This state of the public schools probably continued until the Revolutionary War.

In the year 1797 fifty-eight men united and built the proprietors' school-house at Sandy Bay at a cost of twenty-seven dollars per share,—one thousand five hundred and sixty-six dollars. When completed the proprietors by vote instructed their committee to employ as teacher a college-educated man. A Mr. Cummings was engaged, and taught several terms. His custom was to open the school with prayer; he proved to be an efficient teacher. The school kept in that house during all the years of its history was generally of a high order. Wm. Whipple, Esq., taught more than twenty years with good success. Rockport High School was inaugurated in this house, and from there, after a few years, it moved to its present location. Some years since this house was abandoned for school purposes, and was removed to make place for the vestry of the Congregationalist Society. It is now on School Street, a few rods southerly of its former location, and has been supplied with a more modern roof, and is otherwise improved and changed, and is now the residence of Leverett Smith.

In 1804 the town of Gloucester availed itself of a law of the Commonwealth, and divided its territory into eleven school districts, three of which was in Sandy Bay.

In 1808 the commoners made their last grant of land in Sandy Bay, which was a lot for a school-house in the Middle District; it was located near the site of the Sandy Bay House stable. The house was built soon after. It was about twenty-eight feet square, one story, with a hip roof; it was occupied for school purposes until 1850 or '51, when the district built the large school-house on Broadway. After this it was moved a short distance westerly on Beach Street, and occupied awhile for a dance-hall; afterward for a grocery-store; finally, about 1860, perished by fire.

The present Main Street school house was built by the school district in 1824, since which time it has been changed somewhat, but not to any great extent. It is now doing good service as a primary school room. A district school house of about the same size was built about the same time on Hale's Point. It was located a short distance westerly of the residence of Addison Knowlton, and was sold to him after the district system was abolished. He razed it to the ground, and used the material to some extent in putting an additional story to his dwelling-house.

About the year 1818 or '20 Deacon Jabez R. Gott, who had pursued the business of teaching several years, occupying rooms in private houses for that purpose, built a school-house on Mount Pleasant Street at his own expense, and taught a private school therein several years with good success; finally sold it to the district, and afterward it was sold, and occupied as a dwelling, and is doing good service in that line to-day. A few years after Deacon Gott sold his school-house the district built about one-half of the present Mount Pleasant School-house.

The first school-house at Pigeon Cove was built about 1797 or '98, on the corner of Granite Street and Goose Lane. It was about twenty-five feet square, one story and a hip roof. It has been raised and otherwise enlarged and improved, and is now the residence of Mrs. John Murry. At a later day, say about 1830, Pigeon Cove was divided into two districts, and a school-house was built near the now residence of Alpheus Goodwin. It was sold and removed about the year 1870, and was changed into a dwelling-house, and is the property of the heirs of the late Alpheus Pierce. In the early days of Sandy Bay, in fact, up to about the year 1824, a portion of the public-schools were kept in private houses; and since that day private schools have been so kept. From 1797, when the log school-house was taken down, to 1808, there was no public school building in Sandy Bay. The next first one built was in the Middle District in 1808, and this was the first district school-house in Sandy Bay. The school privileges in this locality were very meagre in the early days of its settlement, as we have seen. At one time there were but three months of public school in two years, but probably this vicinity was as well provided for as other sparsely-settled places, where the people were possessed of such limited means. We have evidence of the interest of the fathers in the education of their children when, at the time the proprietors' school-house was built, at a cost of more than one thousand five hundred dollars, the whole tax valuation of Sandy Bay was hardly sixty thousand dollars. And then they would be satisfied with none other than a college-educated man for a teacher. Between the years 1820 and 1830 the town grammar school made an occasional three months' visit to Sandy Bay. This was brought about by the determined and united efforts of the citizens of Sandy Bay, aided by their friends in Gloucester proper, who at times wished for the Sandy Bay voters to aid them in some favorite project. By the same means the annual town-meet-

ing was adjourned to this village several times—a sort of log-rolling process.

When Rockport was incorporated there were six school districts within its limits,—four at the South and two at the North Village. The whole amount raised by taxation for tuition and fuel the first year of Rockport's history was eight hundred dollars.

There were at this time seven district school-houses, two of which were in District No. 1.

The report of the School Committee for 1840: says "Our school-houses in general are commodious, and reflect much honor upon the town. The schools have been, on the whole, as well managed, and have exhibited as much improvement as usual. The average attendance has been as great as in past years."

In the year 1850 District No. 1 built the present school-house on Broadway, now occupied by a primary and intermediate school; its cost was more than five thousand dollars.

In the year 1855 the town voted to abolish the district system and adopt the graded, and to purchase of the several school districts their school property. This was done at a cost of eight thousand six hundred and seventy-five dollars.

In their report for that year the committee say: "Although, for want of suitable accommodations, it was found impossible to adopt the system of graded schools in its entireness, the committee believe that the experiment has demonstrated that it possesses many advantages over the old district system; and they do not hesitate to say that the schools of 1855–56, taken all in all, have been fifty per cent. better than they were the preceding year, 1854–55." Therefore, it appears there were good results by this change of system.

This change soon opens up or presents a call for an advance. The committee, by their report of 1856–57, say, "We would suggest before closing this report, that the improvement made by the scholars since adopting the system of graduated schools has occasioned the call for one of a higher grade than we have hitherto had. This want should be met, not only for the benefit of the class of scholars that would be entitled to its privileges, but also of those that remain in the grammar schools."

In accordance with the suggestions made by the committee in previous years, and also in accordance with their own judgment, the School Committee, in the year 1857, established a High School in the proprietors' school-house, which they leased in behalf of the town, and furnished it at the town's expense. Miss M. A. Cogswell, of Essex, who had been successful as a teacher in other schools of the town, was engaged to teach this new school, at a salary of three hundred dollars for the school year of thirty-six weeks. Sixty scholars appeared for examination; forty-nine passed satisfactorily, and were admitted to the school—fifteen males, thirty-four females.

The whole amount expended for schools this year, 1857, including tuition, rents, repairs, fuel and care of school property, was $3421.89. Previous to this, viz., in the year 1849, there was a High School organized in the vestry of the Congregationalist Society, two terms, Benjamin Giles teacher. The school was continued the next year, but for the lack of system and by an injudicious vote of the town, it was discontinued the third year.

The first school-house built by the town, in its corporate capacity, was the one in Phillips Avenue, Pigeon Cove, in 1857—a two-story house, and cost $2963.59. Beach Street School-house was built one story in 1860, at a cost of $1439.71. The High School house was built one story in 1865, and cost $4046.54; it was enlarged in 1869 by raising it and putting a story underneath, at a cost of $2608.90.

Pigeon Hill School-house, two stories, was built in 1871, at a cost, including the lot, of $4343.95.

The town has now seven school-houses, four of them two stories, and all of them in fair condition; there is one school occupying a hired room (this, probably, is a temporary arrangement), and a school occupying a room in the town hall—at the present time fourteen schools in all, with twenty teachers. There was a winter school for young men established in 1862, and was continued in successful operation until the close of December, 1886, when, by action of the committee, it was discontinued—it may be for good reasons—probably it will be re-opened next winter. This school, upon the whole, has been a useful institution by furnishing to young men who must work during the other school terms an opportunity to prepare themselves for future usefulness. Many of them appreciated the privilege and improved their opportunity.

The whole amount expended for school purposes during the year ending March, 1887, including tuition, free text-books, repairs, care of school property, fuel, salary of committee and incidentals, was $8,142.01.

During the years 1876, '77, '78, Rev. Henry C. Leonard was appointed superintendent of the public schools, he receiving the entire pay, and served in that capacity very acceptably during those years; the other members of the committee served gratuitously. He died March 12, 1880, respected and beloved.

The foregoing is an imperfect history of the schools of Sandy Bay, from its first settlement, and of Rockport, until the present time. It appears that the citizens have always had a commendable interest in the education of the children and youth, and have, according to their ability, generally made liberal appropriations for that purpose. Good results have been achieved, which have been realized to some good extent, but undoubtedly will appear more and better in the coming years.

For quite a number of years in the past, it is also

true of the present time, nearly all of the teachers of our public schools were born and educated in these schools. The education here gained has been supplemented, in many cases, by a season at Westfield or Salem (State Normal).

In the year 1840, the year Rockport was incorporated, its valuation was $460,814; appropriation for schools, $800. 1850: valuation, $632,586; appropriation for schools, $2500. 1860: valuation, $1,313,688; appropriation for schools, $2500. 1870: valuation, $1,634,152; appropriation for schools, $6000. 1880: valuation, $1,973,719; appropriation for schools, $5900. 1886: valuation, $2,022,102; appropriation for schools, $8350.

The above appropriations since 1860 include tuition, care of school property, fuel, repairs, salary of school committee, free text-books—every item of expense, excepting the building of houses.

Number of children between five and fifteen years in 1886, 715; population of the town in 1885 was 3888.

Rockport Railroad.—When the Gloucester Branch of the Eastern Railroad was being constructed, and at divers times after it was opened for travel in 1847, the question was agitated by our most prominent citizens and business men of extending the road to Rockport. The Eastern, though earnestly solicited, could not be induced to so extend it.

Ezra Eames and other citizens of Rockport obtained from the Legislature a charter under the name of the "Rockport Railroad Company," to construct a railroad from the terminus of the Gloucester Branch to Rockport.

In the year 1885 the Eastern Railroad Company proposed to the Rockport Railroad Company if they would build the road and make all of the necessary connections by switches or otherwise with the track of the Gloucester Branch, keep the road-bed in good order, assume the risk of accidents that might occur upon said Rockport road (excepting those arising from the negligence of the Eastern Railroad); also furnish a suitable engine-house, turn-table and water at the terminus of the road, provide a ticket-seller, switchmen, brakemen and all other operatives necessary, excepting the men on the train,—agree that they will run all their passenger and freight trains over the Rockport Railroad, connecting with all regular trains over the Gloucester Branch, and will convey all the freight and passengers over the Rockport road for the term of five years from the time said Rockport road shall be in good running order without charge or remuneration.

In case the parties cannot agree upon what terms the road shall be run at the end of five years, both parties agree to leave the question to referees mutually chosen, whose decision shall be final. Notwithstanding this liberal offer made by the Eastern Railroad corporation, the shares in the Rockport road were subscribed for to a very small amount; therefore, a delay in building the road.

In the year 1860 the town petitioned the Legislature, asking for liberty to subscribe for and take fifty thousand dollars stock in the Rockport Railroad (which had previously been chartered), the prayer of the petitioners was granted.

On the 2d day of April, 1860, at a special town-meeting, it was voted (three hundred and twenty-six yea, thirty-one nay) to accept the act of the Legislature, provided favorable arrangements can be made with the Eastern Railroad corporation.

It was also voted at the same meeting to authorize the town treasurer to hire fifty thousand dollars in sums as wanted to that amount, and issue town bonds therefor.

The Eastern Railroad renewed their agreement as made in 1855, and the construction of the road was put under contract for sixty-three thousand dollars, and work was commenced August 23, 1860,—Gilman & Co., contractors. The road was completed and opened for travel on the 4th day of November, 1861. At this time there was a debt resting upon it of about twenty-eight thousand dollars. It became necessary for the town, in 1862, to petition the Legislature for authority to subscribe for and take an additional sum of twenty-five thousand dollars of stock in the road. The town was so authorized, and at a special town-meeting on the 7th day of April, 1862, it was voted to subscribe for and take the said amount of stock; the town treasurer was authorized to hire said amount and issue town bonds therefor.

The whole cost of the road, with the buildings, was $91,007.28; town held stock to the amount of $75,000; individual stockholders, $13,400; debt remaining, $2697.28,—total, $91,007.28. It is seen that the amount of stock taken did not meet the expense of construction, but this amount was paid from the earnings of the road, but it did not prevent it from paying good dividends. At the close of the five years' contract another was made, by which the Eastern road corporation agreed to run all their trains over the Rockport for five hundred dollars per month, our road being liable as in the previous contract. This arrangement was continued until February, 1868, when the Rockport road, with all its franchises, was sold to the Eastern at the cost of construction, viz., $91,007.28. It seems the town received over and above the amounts expended for stock, interest, repairs and damages sustained $3636.44.

The road was formally opened for travel on Monday, the 4th day of November, 1861. The weather was fine, the cars (it was a free ride) were crowded all day. At noon a collation was served in Johnson's Hall. A reporter says "the tables literally groaned under the weight of good things, and after a blessing was asked by Rev. W. Gale, the company fell to and satisfied the cravings of hunger. The dinner was served by mine host 'Randall,' of the Rockport Hotel, and was one of the best we ever sat down at; there was an abundance of everything and of the best quality."

After the inner man had been fully satisfied the meeting was called to order by Newell Giles, Esq., president of the Rockport Railroad, by a few well-timed remarks concerning the history of the road. He was followed by Mr. Williams, of Salem, a director of the Eastern road, who congratulated the citizens on the completion of this enterprise. Mr. Chase, a former superintendent of the Eastern road, spoke of the progress of railroads from their commencement to the present time. Mr. Howe, a former president of the road, spoke of the enterprise of the town. Hon. Moses Kimball, of Boston, but formerly of Rockport, spoke of the energy of the people of thetown and of the improvements since the days of his residence here. Mr. Kimball closed with the words "Glory, Glory, Hallelujah, Rockport is marching on."

Benj. K. Hough, of Gloucester, followed Mr. Kimball; he contrasted the stage-coach with the railroad, the present with the past. In most eloquent language he alluded to the troublesome times which our country was passing through, and concluded by saying that he believed that the Union would be established on a firmer foundation than before the conflict of arms. Addresses were also made by Hon. F. W. Choate, of Beverly, Rev. C. C. Beaman, of Salem, John M. Oxton, of Boston, B. H. Corliss, of Gloucester. At 4 P.M. the meeting closed; it was a day long to be remembered, a high day for Rockport.

The only accident upon the Rockport road while it was owned by the corporation was on the 4th day of July, 1867; on the afternoon of that day there was a heavy shower accompanied with a high wind. A new engine, "Great Falls," which had not been on the road but a few weeks, was wrecked near the curve at the foot of Groat Hill by running on some cattle owned by John Bray, some of which were killed.

CHAPTER CXIV.

ROCKPORT—(*Continued*).

THE CIVIL WAR (1861–65).

THE last winter and spring months of the year 1861 were months of fearful anxiety and dread. Abraham Lincoln had been constitutionally elected President of these United States of America, but there were indications that several of the States comprising this Union would not submit to his administering the affairs of this nation. Soon our fears proved a reality. When the news was transmitted with lightning speed on that 13th day of April all through these United States, that Fort Sumter had been fired upon with Union guns in rebel hands, what awe and anxiety pervaded every loyal heart, as we feared the next object of attack would be the capital of the nation! How were the people of this usually quiet town aroused as, at the close of the afternoon service on that otherwise pleasant April Sabbath, our ears were greeted with the sound of martial music and the tramp of footsteps led by one in whose bosom were awakened the slumbering fires of patriotism. Not only was the leader fired with patriotism, but the entire community were intensely in earnest. The feeling of patriotism and loyalty awakened by this demonstration manifested itself in outspoken utterances of determined resistance to flagrant outrage and armed invasion for the capture of the capital of the nation. This feeling was more intensified by confirmatory dispatches received within the next following days, announcing the organization and marshaling of the impetuous hosts of the South, whose regiments of foot and cavalry and batteries of artillery were fast centering in Virginia, provoking the sanguinary conflict that soon followed, which was to bathe her sacred soil and dye her historic streams with the crimson hue of richest blood.

It was apparent that united action should be taken by the town to provide for and care for the families of those who were ready and earnest to enlist in the service of the country and enroll their names with the names that were ready to do and to suffer that rebellion should be squelched. April 22d, an informal meeting of the citizens was held in Johnson's Hall. A committee of eleven were chosen, viz., George D. Hale, Samuel H. Brooks, Daniel Staniford, John Preston, Joshua Tarr, Reuben Brooks, Newell Giles, Stephen P. Randall, Winthrop Thurston, Levi Cleaves and Ezra Eames, to report at a future meeting some course of action for the town to pursue. At a town-meeting held on the 30th, the committee reported that the town appropriate $3000 to be expended as follows, viz.: that each volunteer of Rockport, when he shall have passed an examination, shall be paid twenty dollars, the balance to be put into the hands of a committee of eight persons to be used at their discretion for the support of the families of the volunteers. Their report was adopted by an unanimous vote. The committee chosen to carry this report into effect were Dr. Benjamin Haskell, Winthrop Thurston, George D. Hale, Ezra Eames, John Manning, James W. Bradley, Austin W. Story, together with the selectmen. A recruiting office was opened in Johnson's Hall, and by the close of the month of May enough persons had subscribed their names as volunteers, and a company was organized. The committee were untiring in their efforts to have this company assigned to some one of the several regiments that were being organized, but were delayed in having their earnest appeals to the State authorities favorably answered, on account of the many applications for place in these regiments from all over the State. As no encouragement could be obtained for immediate place at any of the headquarters of troops, this company, about the 4th of June, went into camp at Cape Pond Pasture, where the time passed heavily in consequence of not being provided with arms that

they might acquaint themselves in the drill. Under the existing state of things, thirteen of the men, tired of this kind of life, and anxious to be in active service, left camp and went to Portland and enlisted in the Fifth Maine Regiment (others left to enroll themselves in other companies). One of the thirteen was prevailed upon to return and rejoin the company, which was afterward known as Company G, and was attached to the Seventeenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers. Among the number that enlisted in the Fifth Maine was Otis Wing Wallace; he was prompt, faithful, courageous and undaunted in battle. The hardships of the Peninsula Campaign produced weakness and prostration, which necessitated, though reluctantly on his part, his removal to Finly Hospital, Washington, D. C., where he lingered until the 25th of October, 1862, dying at the age of twenty-six years, nine months and four days. He was buried in the Soldiers' Cemetery of that city. This Maine Regiment arrived at Washington in season to participate in the first Bull Run battle, and was engaged in all the principal battles of the Army of the Potomac, including the desperate and bloody conflict at Gettysburg.

Company G, Seventeenth Regiment, by which name it was afterward known, continued at Camp Kimball, so named after the Hon. Moses Kimball, of Boston, formerly of Rockport, till about the 10th of July, when it left town for Camp Schouler, Lynnfield. Previous to their departure Mr. Kimball presented them with an elegant silk flag, bestowing the gift in person. The same flag is now in the custody of O. W. Wallace, Post No. 106, G. A. R.

The presentation services were in front of the First Congregationalist Church, and was accepted in behalf of the company by Captain Daniel B. Tarr, who was chosen captain at the time of the formation of the company. Soon after going into camp at Lynnfield a dissatisfaction sprung up from some unexplained cause, and Captain Tarr realizing the situation, resigned his position and George W. Kenney, of Danvers, was chosen to succeed him. The company was now soon recruited to the maximum standard. Thirty-six of its members were from Rockport. The regiment left Lynnfield for Baltimore on the 20th day of August, where it arrived and was stationed, doing good service several months. From this company the first one of our citizens fell a sacrifice on the altar of patriotism. Lieutenant George W. Tufts, from exposure while in the line of duty, was stricken with typhoid fever and died at Baltimore October 27th, about two months after reaching that city. His remains were sent home under escort of members of the company, and were buried from the Congregationalist Church the 2d day of November.

The funeral services were conducted by Revs. Messrs. Gale, Brenner, Barden and Mason; the latter read a poem composed by himself for the occasion. The Masonic order, of which the deceased was a member, attended with full ranks to pay their last sad rites to the mortal remains of this their brother, the first to fall a victim in the line of duty in the service of his country.

The church edifice was filled with those who sympathized with the widow and fatherless children, and also to pay their tribute of respect to the patriotism of the deceased. The remains were escorted to their last resting-place by martial music so fitting to this occasion, and was followed by a large concourse of citizens. This regiment in the spring of 1862 left Baltimore and joined Major-General Foster's command at Newbern, N. C., where it remained and continued in that vicinity during the war, and rendered good service. The Adjutant-General of Massachusetts, in his report for 1865, closes with these words, "Thus terminates the splendid record of the Seventeenth Regiment."

17TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Company G.

Mustered into service July 22, 1861, and mustered out August 3, 1864, unless otherwise stated. The figures following name in parentheses give the age.

George W. Tufts (33), 1st lieut., must. in Aug. 21, 1861; died at Baltimore, Md., Oct. 27, 1863.
Alfred M. Channell (29), 2d lieut., must. in Aug. 21, 1861; res Jan. 17, 1862.
John J. McKenney (18), disch. April 23, 1863, for disability.
John N. Barton (36), disch. June 12, 1863, for disability.
James Brown, Jr. (36), disch. March 18, 1863, for disability.
Robert Chisholm (23), disch. Jan. 3, 1863, for disability.
William Gooding (24), disch. May 28, 1863, for disability.
Andrew Goldthwait (24), never left the State.
Joshua F. Hatch (22), disch. Jan. 3, 1863, for disability.
Oliver A. Norton (29), disch. April 23, 1863, for disability.
George S. Parker (19), disch. June 23, 1863, for disability.
George Prior (31), died at Newbern, N. C., Sept. 28, 1862.
Story D. Pool (31), sergt.
George Elwell (31), disch. Jan. 1, 1864, to re-enlist.
William A. Stevens (41), sergt.
Edward D. Bray (22).
Edward B. Clement (23), sergt.
William H. Davis (26), corp., disch. Dec. 26, 1863, to re-enlist.
Felix Doyle (36).
James Finn (29), disch. Jan. 5, 1864, to re-enlist.
George Felt (26), never left the State.
Cyrus Pool (30).
William Robbins (23), disch. July, 1862, for disability.
John Reeves (22), disch. Dec. 30, 1863, to re-enlist.
Henry C. Robinson (35), commissioned ensign in the navy.
Hugh Strain (20), disch. Jan. 1, 1864, to re-enlist.
E. W. Skinner (22), never left the State.
James H. Stevens (21).
Jesse McLoud (19), disch. Jan. 4, 1864, to re-enlist.
Branard B. Scanlan (21).
Thomas H. Taylor (22), disch. Dec. 3, 1863, to re-enlist.
William Gould (35), died at Andersonville Prison May 5, 1864.
Ezekiel H. Stacy (28).
Jerome Wheeler (21), died at Newbern, N. C., Nov. 19, 1862.
Charles H. Gove (19), disch. Dec. 28, 1863, to re-enlist.
James B. Daley (21), sergt., disch. April 2, 1862, for disability.

11TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

John C. Knowlton (22), Co. I, must. in July 10, 1861; disch. Sept. 1, 1862, for disability.

12TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Hugh McGuire (28), Co. K, must. in June 26, 1861; disch. Dec. 8, 1863, by order of War Dept.

1ST REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Company L.

Charles M. Wilkinson (31), sergt., must. in Feb. 28, 1862; disch. Nov. 26, 1863, for disability.

Company M.

Francis Allen (18), must. in March 8, 1862; disch. March 30, 1864, to re-enlist.
Thomas Full (29), must. in March 5, 1862; must. out March 5, 1865, at exp. of service.
Augustus McClain (28), must. in March 17, 1862; disch. March 23, 1864, to re-enlist.
George S. Phillips (34), must. in March 7, 1862; disch. March 9, 1864, to re-enlist.

The following-named Rockport men served in Company D, Fifth Maine Regiment, that left Portland June 26, 1861:

William T. McQuestion, disch. for disability Feb. 20, 1862; died on the field July 25, 1862, while acting as sutler.
Otis W. Wallace, died at Washington Oct. 28, 1862.
Charles M. Colburn, died Nov. 24, 1862.
Arthur Hamblin, disch. the winter following muster.
Lorenzo D. Fox, disch. Oct. 26, 1862; died a few days after reaching home.
Stillman L. Mason, disch. for disability the winter after muster.
George L. Berry, killed in battle at Salem Church, Va., May 5, 1863.
Stephen A. Perkins, served three years.
Henry W. Farrow, served three years.
Albion Sloman, served three years.
Thomas F. Parsons, served three years; lost right arm in battle of the Wilderness, May, 1864.
Horace Berry, was taken sick before the regiment left; he afterwards joined the 2d Maine and served three years.

1ST MAINE BATTERY.

Daniel Turner, died at New Orleans Aug. 6, 1861.

19TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Levi Shaw (30), 1st lieut., must. in Aug. 22, 1861; disch. Sept. 17, 1862, for disability.
Isaiah Leighten (29), musician, must. in Sept. 3, 1861; must. out Aug. 8th, by order of War Dept.
John P. Naysen (26), musician, must. in Sept. 3, 1861; must. out Aug. 8th, by order of War Dept.
George W. Dade (29), musician, must. in Sept. 3, 1861; must. out Aug. 8th, by order of War Dept.
Jeremiah Harrigan (28), Co. F, must. in Aug. 28, 1861; must. out Aug. 28th, at exp. of service.
James Varney (18), Co. H, must. in Nov. 1, 1861; never left the State.
Michael O'Brien (24), Co. I, must. in Aug. 28, 1861; was taken prisoner Sept., 1864, and confined at Andersonville; escaped in April, 1865; disch. by order of War Dept. May 23, 1865.
Charles C. Sewall (18), Co. I, must. in Aug. 28, 1861; disch. June 22, 1862, wounded.
James Eldridge (31), must. in Aug. 3, 1863; trans to 20th Regt. June 14, 1864; must. out July 24, 1865, at exp. of service.

23D REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Landel T. Smith (33), Co. C, must. in Oct. 14, 1861; died at Newbern, N. C., Sept. 28, 1864.

24TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

George W. Young (24), Co. B, must. in Oct. 14, 1861; died at Newbern April 21, 1862.

26TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

John J. O'Connell (21), Co. G, must. in Aug. 5, 1863; died at Andersonville Nov. 27, 1864.

30TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Company K.

Disch. Jan. 1, 1864, to re-enlist, except where otherwise stated.

James F. Siders (29), sergt., must. in Dec. 16, 1861; died Nov. 19, 1862, at New Orleans, La.
James W. Abbot (24), must. in Jan. 14, 1862; died Aug. 18, 1862, at Baton Rouge, La.
Eugene Prior (21), sergt., must. in Feb. 4, 1862; disch. Feb. 12, 1864, to re-enlist.
Charles P. Brocklebank (18), must. in Jan. 3, 1862; died Oct. 14, 1862, at Carrolton, La.
Jabez W. Kendall (19), must. in Jan. 11, 1862; died Jan. 16, 1863, at New Orleans, La.
Henry F. McKenney (18), corp., must. in Jan. 9, 1862; died Mar., 1863, at Baton Rouge, La.
Benjamin F. Smith (35), must. in Jan. 6, 1862; died Dec. 20, 1862, at New Orleans, La.
George H. Ross (21), corp., must. in Dec. 17, 1861; drowned April 29, 1862, in Mississippi River, La.
Frank Wheeler (18), must. in Jan. 1, 1862; disch. Feb. 12, 1864, to re-enl.
Levi F. Bailey (27), must. in Jan 4, 1862; disch. Feb. 12, 1864, to re-enl.
Dudley G. Adams (40), sergt., must. in Dec. 25, 1861; disch. March 10, 1863, for disability.
Patrick Allen (44), must. in Dec. 18, 1861; disch. Oct. 16, 1862, for disability.
Michael Gallagher (44), must. in Feb. 6, 1862; disch. June 5, 1863, for disability.
William E. Saunders (25), must. in Jan. 1, 1862; disch. Dec. 8, 1862, for disability.
G. S. Coburn (24), must. in Jan. 8, 1862; disch. Oct. 16, '62, for disability.
William Broomfield (22), must. in Jan. 3, 1862; must. out Jan. 20, 1865, exp of service.
Philip Devoe (20), must. in Jan. 3, 1862.
William P. Clark (3d) (23), must. in Jan. 7, 1862.
Joseph Hodgkins (18), must. in Jan. 16, 1862.
Archibald McPhee (21), must. in Jan. 20, 1862.
John B. Norwood (29), must. in Jan. 13, 1862; disch. Feb. 12, 1863, to re-enlist.
Lyman R. Tarr (23), must. in Dec. 16, 1861; must. out Jan. 20, 1865, at exp. of service.
Addison Wheeler (29), must. in Jan. 16, 1862; disch. Feb. 12, 1864, to re-enlist.
James Kenny (18), must. in Jan. 3, 1862.
Juvenal De Ornellas (25), must. in Dec. 16, 1861; disch. Oct. 16, 1862, for disability.

32D REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Company D.

Disch. Jan. 4, 1864, to re-enlist, except where otherwise stated.

Andrew Lane, Jr. (21), corp., must. in Nov. 27, 1861; must. out Dec. 1, 1864, exp. of service.
Sylvanus Babson (21), corp., must. in Nov. 22, 1861; was wounded May 30, 1864.
William A. Beals (21), must. in Nov. 29, 1861; disch. Dec. 1, 1862, for disability.
Llewellyn McClain (23), must. in Nov. 28, 1861; disch. June 7, 1862, for disability
Benjamin M. Godey (28), must. in Nov. 25, 1861; disch. Feb. 14, 1862, for disability.
Daniel M. Stillman (35), must. in Nov. 29, 1861; disch. June 8, 1864, for disability.
Charles H. Burke (21), must. in Nov. 22, 1861.
Charles D. Collins (29), must. in Nov. 27, 1861; must. out Dec. 28, 1864, exp. of service.
Andrew L. Tarr (28), must. in Nov. 22, 1861; must. out Dec. 28, 1864, exp. of service.
Joseph H. Wingood, corp., must. in Nov. 27, 1861; disch. Jan. 5, 1864, to re-enlist.
Winthrop Pickering (24), must. in Nov. 22, 1861.
Eben Pickering (22), musician, must. in Nov. 27, 1861.
Walter Johnson (32), must. in Nov. 26, 1861; disch. Feb. 26, '62, to re-enl.
Jos. H. Sewall (21), must. in Nov. 24, 1861; disch. Mar. 9, '64, to re-enl.
Jacob A. Day (21), must. in Nov. 25, 1861.
George W. Gove (28), must. in Nov. 21, 1861; disch. Jan. 5, 1862, for disability.

35TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Company F.

Mustered in August 19, 1862, and mustered out June 9, 1865, except where otherwise stated.

Alonzo Low (34), died Sept. 18, 1863, Camp Dennison, Ohio.
George Bragden (30), must. in Aug. 10, 1862; disch. Nov. 12, 1862, for disability
George H. Burnham (18), disch. April 15, 1863, for disability.
Newell Webster (20), disch. Aug. 6 1864, for disability.
George Holbrook (18), disch. Nov. 4, 1863, for disability.
Sylvel Holbrook (23).
James McCharen (36), disch. Mar. 8, 1864, for disability.
Charles W. Beal (24), disch. Nov. 1, 1863, for disability.
George S. Low (20), disch. May 2, 1865; both feet amputated.
Isaac B. Bray (22), disch. Nov. 12, 1862, for disability; wounded at battle of Antietam.
David Brooks, Jr. (22), disch. Nov. 12, 1862, for disability; wounded at battle of Antietam.
Calvin W. Pool, sergt. (28), disch. Feb. 12, 1863, for disability.
Enoch A. Anderson (21), disch. Jan. 31, 1863, for disability.
Daniel A. Wheeler, corp. (23), disch. April 9, 1863, for disability.
Josiah F. Seavy (25), disch. Nov. 16, 1862, for disability.
Aaron Hodgkins, Jr. (24), went into the navy July 14, 1864; was killed at Fort Fisher.
George Lisk (21), trans. May 21, 1864, to V. R. C.; was wounded at battle of Fredericksburg.
Addison W. Tarr (26), trans. March 21, 1864, to V. R. C.; wounded at Fredericksburg.
George Clark, 3d (28), died of wounds May 18, 1864, at Spotsylvania, Va.
James H. Bingham, corp. (19).
Samuel Norwood (22).
Newell Davis, corp. (20).
Charles Davison, sergt. (20).
Solomon D. Grimes, 1st sergt. (27), com. 2d lieut. Nov. 29, 1864.
John Willis (24).
Dennison Hooper (20).
Henry S. Sylvester, corp. (21).
John F. Foster (30), disch. Mar. 12, 1864; lost right arm.

When the call for twenty-nine men was received, in July, 1862, a sort of apathy hung over the people. Some even said, "We cannot raise the men." A week or ten days after the requisition came, two or three of our citizens consulted in relation to it. As the results of this consultation, early one evening martial music was heard on our streets. The people gathered in goodly numbers. A halt was finally made at Dock Square. A meeting was organized by the choice of William Haskins, Esq., for chairman. Rev. David Bremner, of the Second Congregationalist Church, made an eloquent and patriotic speech. The audience was stirred. About ten o'clock the meeting adjourned to the next evening. At the time appointed the people came in great numbers. Music and speaking was now in order; the audience was awake to the situation, and the muster-roll was being filled, and within a few days the number called for was obtained. A meeting was held in the chapel on Broadway for religious purposes the evening before the recruits were to leave for Camp Stanton. As they were filing into the chapel a young man approached one of the recruits and said, "I will give you fifty dollars for your chance." Of course his offer was not accepted. Mark the change that took place within a few days by the efforts of a few men and the right kind of music. Surely Rockport was not dead; neither were the people fast asleep.

50TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (9 MONTHS).

Company B.

Mustered in Sept. 15, 1862, and mustered out Aug. 24, 1863, unless otherwise stated.

Benj. F. Blatchford, 1st sergt. (27).
James Story, sergt. (44).
Marcus A. Hanna, sergt. (22).
David L. Tuttle, corp. (34).
Geo. W. Dade, corp. (29).
Edward C. Lane, corp. (21), must. in Oct. 9, '62.
James F. Tucker, corp. (30).[1]
John Beals (18).
Jos. Beals (44).[2]
Wm. A. Beals (21), must. in Oct 29, 1862.
David P. Boynton, Jr. (30).[3]
Jas. Breen, Jr. (19).
Peter Breen, Jr. (23).
Ephraim Brown (25).
Solomon Choate (.2).
Hosea B. Clark (22).[4]
David M. Day (42).
Jos. G. Devon (19).
Alvin F. Elwell (38)
Thaddeus Giles (33).
Wm. Goslay (39).[5]
Jos. A. Griffin (18).
Wm. H. Grimes (25).
Richard W. Hill (21).
Adin Holbrook (25).[6]
Thos. Haskins (36).[7]
John S. Knights (19).
Benj. F. Leighton (43).
Wm. H. Lowe (22).
John M. Jannett (38).
Samuel M. Jannett, Jr. (28).
Charles B. Morse (19).
Geo. E. Morse (23).
Living P. Patch (29).[8]
John H. Peach (44).
Chas. Pettingill (23).
Nath. W. Pettingill (20).[9]
Geo. H. Pierce (22).
Caleb N. Pool (33).
John A. Pool (18).[10]
Rufus Pool (18).
Benj. F. Sleeper (29).
Solomon Tarr (23).
Wm. Tucker, Jr. (18).[11]
Wm. Tucker (42).
John M. Tuttle (32).
Andrew P. Wetherbee (18).
Geo. E. Wheeler (22).
John Witham (36).

40TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Alvah Abbot (40), Co. B, must. in Aug. 22, 1862; trans. July 2, 1863, to V. R. C.

41ST REGT. INFANTRY (AFTERWARDS 3D REGT. CAVALRY).

Robert Hill (22), Co. H, must. in Oct. 27, 1862.

It appears that soon after the nine months' men had gone, our quota was found to be different. The following three years' recruits were enlisted and attached to

3D REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Company A.

Mustered in January 10, 1863, unless otherwise stated.

Geo. Bragdon, sergt. (31), pro. to 1st lieut. Oct. 1, 1863; must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
Zeno A. Appleton, 2d lieut. (38), must. in Dec. 31, 1862; pro. to 1st lieut. Sept. 8, 1864; resigned Jan. 7, 1864.
Wm. H. Lane, corp. (24), must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
John Conly (41), disch. Jan. 5, 1864, for disability.
Henry B. Duggott, sergt. (27), trans. Sept. 15, 1864, to the navy.
Addison Haskill (18), trans. May 7, 1864, to the navy.
Michael Knowlton (33), disch. Jan. 4, 1864, for disability.
Peter Manning (18), trans. May 7, 1864, to the navy.
Geo. Pool (27), trans. May 7, 1861, to the navy.
Henry M. Pool (25), trans. May 7, 1864, to the navy.
Geo. W. Thurston (26), trans. May 7, 1864, to the navy.
Samuel Thurston (18), must. in March 10, 1863; trans. July 25, 1864, to the navy.
Jos. W. West (36), must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.

[1] Died May 19, 1863, at Baton Rouge, La.
[2] Disch. April 27, 1863, for disability.
[3] Died Nov. 3, 1863, at home.
[4] Died April 16, 1863, at New Orleans, La.
[5] Died at home Aug. 20, 1863.
[6] Accidentally shot and died of his wounds Mar. 19, 1863, in Louisiana.
[7] Died March 25, 1863, in Louisiana.
[8] Died June 3, 1863, at Baton Rouge, La.
[9] Died May 11, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.
[10] Died May 2, 1863, at Baton Rouge, La.
[11] Died Feb. 25, 1863, Quarantine Station, La.

At this point volunteering came to a standstill, waiting for the draft, which was expected and was soon ordered. It called for sixty-three men from this town. Ninety-four names were drawn; of this number, thirty-four passed the examination and paid the commutation fee or furnished substitutes at an aggregate cost of $10,610; seven, without waiting for an examination, enlisted, October 20, 1863, in

3D REGT. (HEAVY ART.) (3 YEARS).

Company G.

Mustered in October 20, 1863.

Wm. F. Jefferson (18), must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
Russel J. Boynton, Jr. (34), died July 21, 1864, at Fort Davis, D. C.
Moses H. Grimes (21), must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
Theodore P. Keene (28), died Aug. 1, 1864, Fort Davis, D. C.
Chas. Paul, Jr. (32), must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
Jos. D. Paul (25), must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
Benj. F. West (27), must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
Geo. Wheeler (22), must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
Thos. A. Knowlton, enlisted in the navy.

Drafting having proven a failure, a call was issued in October, 1863, by the President, for three hundred thousand volunteers, of which our quota was seventy-nine.

Immediately after the official notice a subscription was made to aid recruiting. Five hundred and fifty-two dollars were subscribed, of which five hundred and thirty-five dollars was collected and devoted to that purpose.

An order having been issued by the War Department authorizing the re-enlistment of soldiers in the field who had seen two years' service, one of the Board of Selectmen (Henry Dennis, Esq.) was sent to Newbern, N. C., to confer with our men in the Seventeenth Regiment, and offers were also made to other regiments in the field in which were men from Rockport. Lieutenant Benjamin F. Blatchford had opened a recruiting office, and aided the efforts of the recruiting committee in obtaining volunteers. They felt that some testimonial should be tendered him for his services. They accordingly presented him with a sword, sash and belt. This act was by him highly appreciated.

In the month of February, 1864, an additional call was made for two hundred thousand men, which brought our quota up to one hundred and fourteen. The result of answering these calls was as follows:

2D REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Company H.

John J. Fay (18), must. in Dec. 22, 1863, must. out Sept. 3, 1865, exp. of service.
John Knights (20), must. in Dec. 22, 1863, must. out Sept. 3, 1865, exp. of service.

Company K.

Mustered in December 22, 1863, and mustered out September 3, 1865, unless otherwise stated.

Benj. F. Blatchford, 1st lieut. (28).[1]
Marcus A. Hanna, 1st sergt. (21).[2]
James Breen, Jr., sergt. (20).
John J. McKenney, sergt. (21).
Seward Harwood, corp. (31).
Jas Brown, Jr. (38).
Solomon Knights, Jr. (18).
Daniel Mengold (38).
Freeman Mitchell (18).
Albert Norwood (20).
Alfred Norwood (21).
Eben P. Pool (19).
Rufus Pool (18).
William E. Saunders (28).
Charles C. Sewall (19).
John Sweeney (21).
Leonard Walen, Jr. (19).[3]

[1] Mustered in Oct. 7, 1863, as 2d lieut.; pro. to 1st lieut. June 21, 1865.
[2] Pro. to 2d lieut. April 21, 1865.

56TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Company B.

John N. Barton, corp. (39), must. in Dec. 26, 1863; disch. May 29, 1865, for disability.
John Collins (35), must. in Feb. 7, 1865; disch. June 20, 1865, by order of War Dept.

VETERANS RE-ENLISTED.

32D REGT. MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Company D.

Mustered in Jan. 5, 1865, unless otherwise stated.

Winthrop Pickering, must. out June 29, 1865, exp. of service.
Eben Pickering, mus., must. out June 29, 1865, exp. of service.
Jos. H. Wingood, corp., wounded in battle of Wilderness May 12, 1864; must. out April 27, 1865.
Sylvanus B. Babson, sergt., killed May 18, 1864, at battle of Laurel Hill, Va.
Walter Johnson, must. in Feb. 27, 1864; killed May 30, 1864, at battle of Shady Grove, Va.
Jos. H. Sewall, sergt., must. in Mar. 10, 1864; must. out June 20, 1865, exp. of service.
Horace M. Eaton, Co. H, must. out June 29, 1865, exp. of service.

30TH REGT. INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

Company K.

Mustered in Jan. 2, 1864, unless otherwise stated.

Jos. Hodgkins, mus., must. out Jan. 20, 1865, exp. of service.
Wm. P. Clark (3d), disch. June 3, 1864.
Philip Devoe, must. out Jan. 20, 1865, exp. of service.
Jas. Kenney, must. out Jan. 20, 1865, exp. of service.
Eugene Prior, 1st sergt., must. in Feb. 13, 1864, pro. to 2d lieut. Jan. 25, 1865; must. out July 5, 1866, exp. of service.
Archibald McPhee, must. out Feb. 7, 1865, exp. of service.
Frank Wheeler, died of wounds Sept. 29, 1864, at Winchester, Va.
Addison Wheeler, sergt., must. in Feb. 13, 1864; must. out July 5, 1866, exp. of service.
George Frost, sergt., must. out Jan. 20, 1865, exp. of service.

17TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Company G.

George Elwell, sergt. (31), must. in Jan. 2, 1864; must. out July 11, 1865, exp. of service.
Wm. H. Davis, sergt. (26), must. in Dec. 27, 1863; must. out July 11, 1865, exp. of service.
John Reeves (22), must. in Dec. 31, 1863; must. out June 10, 1865, exp. of service.
Hugh Strain (22), must. in Jan. 2, 1864; must. out July 22, 1865, exp. of service.
Chas. H. Gove (21), must. in Dec. 29, 1863; died Sept. 29, 1864, at Newbern, N. C.

22D REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Josiah Walker (21), Co. M, must. in Dec. 23, 1863; disch. July 12, 1865, by order of War Dept.

1ST REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Samuel F. Leffler (25), Co. I, must. in Dec. 7, 1863; killed June 16, 1864, at Petersburg, Va.
Augustus McClain (30), Co. M, must. in March 24, 1864; trans. April 1, 1864, to navy.
George S. Phillips, corp. (34), Co. M, must. in March 10, 1864; trans. Apr. 24, 1864, to navy.

[3] Died May 16, 1865, at Fortress Monroe.

59TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Company G.

Nathl. Richardson, Jr. (23), must. in Mar. 4, 1864; disch. Jan. 14, 1865, for disability.

Joseph H. Hilliard (19), must. in March 4, 1864; trans. June 10, 1865, to 57th Infantry.

Chas. Dellmond (21), must. in Feb. 9, 1864.

—making fifty-eight, including the three that enlisted in Company G, Third Regiment Heavy Artillery—one-half of the number called for.

To make up the deficiency, a credit was given us of those who had paid commutation or furnished substitutes, viz., thirty-four; also the seven who enlisted without examination. A claim of thirteen men in the navy, after much persistence, was allowed. We had now satisfied the call within three for which the draft in May, 1864, was made.

A contribution was made by men liable to draft, and the commutation money—nine hundred dollars—was paid, which completed the call for one hundred and fourteen men.

Hardly had we got over this, hoping to enjoy a slight respite from the anxiety consequent upon such demands, when, in July, 1864, another call for three hundred thousand men was made,—the darkest period in the history of recruiting during the war. Our quota under this call was seventy-one. How to obtain them was a serious question, financially and mentally. The edict had gone forth that they must be furnished before the 5th of the following September.

Recruits could be obtained, but at prices that were appalling to slim purses and towns of limited means.

But an effort must be made. We entered the field with competitors from other towns (and they were many), every one anxious and earnest to relieve the fears of his constituents.

To enable the recruiting committee to prosecute their work, a fund of five thousand nine hundred and ten dollars was raised, by the payment of twenty dollars each by those liable to draft (some contributed who were not liable). This sum was in addition to what the town, as a municipality, would pay.

The sum raised was insufficient. A tax was assessed on those who were willing to pay, and the sum of three thousand eight hundred and forty dollars was realized. With these sums the following men were enlisted:

5TH REGT. (CAVALRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

George Davis (31), Co. L, must. in Aug. 7, 1863; must. out June 28, 1865, exp. of service.

John Wilson (20), Co. B, must. in Aug. 27, 1864.

1ST REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS. VOLS. (1 YEAR).

Michael Cloherd (19), Co. B, must. in Aug. 13, 1864; must. out May 29, 1865, exp. of service.

VETERAN RESERVE CORPS (3 YEARS).

Andrew Howes (—), must. in Aug. 18, 1864; must. out Nov. 16, 1865, by order of War Dept.

Robert Coughlin (20), must. in Aug. —, 1864; must. out Nov. 11, 1865, by order of War Dept.

2D REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Barth Crowley (21), Co. D, must. in Aug. 23, 1864; must. out June 26, 1865, exp. of service.

2D REGT. (CAVALRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

William King (19), Co. I, must. in Aug. 31, 1864; must. out May 8, 1865, exp. of service.

UNATTACHED HEAVY ARTILLERY (1 YEAR).

29th Company.

Wm. M. Twombly (19), corp., must. in Aug. 30, 1864; must. out June 16, 1865, exp. of service.

Levi Appleby (31), must. in Aug. 31, 1864; must. out June 16, 1865, exp. of service.

4TH REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS. VOLS. (1 YEAR).

Company G.

Mustered out June 17, 1865, unless otherwise stated.

Matthew McGraith (21), must. in Aug. 19, 1864.

William McGraith (24), must. in Aug. 19, 1864.

Jeremiah Murphy (25), must. in Aug. 23, 1864.

John Cosgrove (21), must. in Aug. 19, 1864.

Leon Desbon (27), must. in Aug. 23, 1864.

John W. Kirby (19), must. in Aug. 22, 1864.

Company I.

Nelson A. Mowton (20), sergt., must. in Aug. 20, 1864; disch. Jan. 5, 1865, app. to U. S. C. T.

William H. Roberts (22), must. in Aug. 20, 1864.

John Ward (21), must. in Aug. 20, 1864.

Company M.

Joseph A. Griffin (18), must. in Aug. 18, 1864.

Richard W. Hill (23), must. in Aug. 23, 1864.

Charles Knowlton, Jr. (37), must. in Aug. 23, 1864.

Melville H. Knowlton (21), must in Aug. 23, 1864.

Three years by substitute.

John G. Dennis. Allen G. Lane.

Edwin Leighton.

2D BATT. LIGHT ART., MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Mustered out June 11, 1865.

John Dalton (21), must. in Aug. 27, 1864.

Michael Moran (21), must. in Aug. 30, 1864.

John J. McMahan (24), must. in Aug. 29, 1864.

3D REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Company M.

Must. in Aug. 26, 1864; mustered out June 17, 1865.

Charles Curtin (24). Frank Eaton (21).

61ST REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (1 YEAR).

Company B.

Mustered out June 4, 1865, unless otherwise stated.

Barth McDonald (41), must. in Aug. 27, 1864.

John McClellen (18), must. in Aug. 29, 1864.

George L. Moller (17), must. in Aug. 20, 1864.

Timothy O'Brien (26), must. in Aug. 29, 1864.

Stephen Rowe (30), must. in Aug. 30, 1864.

Thomas Tuesent (22), must. in Aug. 30, 1864.

John O'Connell (30), must. in Sept. 2, 1864.

Dennis Buckley (19), must. in Sept. 1, 1864; disch. March 15, 1865, for disability.

Peter Donahoe (22), must. in Sept. 2, 1864.

Our means at this time having become exhausted, forty-one men having been enlisted, the committee were about thirteen thousand dollars in debt; with the expectation that the State would furnish twenty-five per cent. of the call, and that, with the allowance to be made us for naval recruits, the demand would

be satisfied, the committee awaited further developments.

The final summing up of the affair in September resulted in our having a surplus of twenty-one men; the State up to this time had furnished but two, and one representative recruit. The reason of this surplus was the division of the naval recruits and the claim we made for men enlisted in the navy.

During the summer of this year (1864) one hundred days' men were called for. We furnished eight, viz., Ivory Lane, Beaman Smith, George Rowe, John F. Brooks, Benjamin G. Brooks, Albert W. Hale, D. W. Tuttle and John Beals; they all enlisted in Company G, Eighth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers, and were mustered into service July 18, 1864, and were discharged at expiration of service, November 10th the same year.

In December of this year (1864), an opportunity offering to get some of the men in our quota who were enlisting in the Twenty-fifth Unattached Company of Infantry for one year, for the town bounty (one hundred and twenty-five dollars), we embraced the opportunity and succeeded in obtaining twenty-three, viz.:

Andrew Anderson.
Charles Besansier.
Charles Day.
George H. Friend.
Thomas Owen.
James H. Wilkins.
Howard Elwell.
Edward S. Ross.
Wm. S. Snow.
Joseph W. Perkins.
Benj. F. Perkins.
Eben Day.
Eben N. Burnham.
John E. Coggins.
Joseph Elwell.
Henry Lufkin.
Charles Tibbets.
Alonzo P. Carlton.
John G. McLoud.
David Osier.
John McKennin.
Hiram Averill, Jr.
Thomas R. Wallace.

—or seven and two-thirds three years' men. They were mustered into service December, 1864, and January, 1865, and were all discharged at expiration of service, June 29, 1865.

As the government had decided to give towns credit on the basis of a three years' man for three one year's men, we were still deficient, as decided by the provost-marshal, of twelve men, or thirty-six one year's men. To meet this deficiency, a fund of two thousand dollars was raised by the men liable to draft, and with this money we continued to put men into the service till the latter part of March, 1865, and exceeded our quota.

But having money to work with, we concluded that it was best to keep on the credit side and be prepared for any future emergency, for disaster might again overtake our army, and another call be made for troops. Many towns were doing the same thing. The following is the final result:

VETERAN RESERVE CORPS, MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Charles M. Wilkinson (43), must. in Dec. 5, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864, by order of War Dept.

4TH REGT. (CAVALRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Fred. L. Orcut (20), Co. C, must. in March 1, 1865; died March 13, 1865, on str. "Blackstone."

1ST BATT'N HEAVY ART., MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Company B.

Christopher C. Williams (21), must. in Dec. 2, 1864; must. out June 29, 1865, exp. of service.

Louis H. Williams (18), must. in Dec. 2, 1864; must. out June 29, 1865, exp. of service.

Samuel Jobuson (33), must. in Nov. 29, 1864; must. out Oct. 20, 1865, exp. of service.

6TH BATT. LIGHT ART., MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Mustered in Dec. 3, 1864; mustered out Aug. 7, 1865.

Brewer F. Randall (22). James Dorgan (19).

56TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Company B.

John Collins (35), must. in Feb. 7, 1865; must. out June 20, 1865, by order of War Dept.

Daniel Meagher (35), must. in March 15, 1865; must. out July 24, 1865, by order of War Dept.

31ST REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Company B.

John O'Donnell (30), must. in Feb. 9, 1865; must. out Feb. 9, 1865, rejected recruit.

Charles Hartman (41), must. in Feb. 24, 1865; must. out Sept. 9, 1865, exp. of service.

19TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Christian Zeh (38), Co. E, must. in Feb. 18, 1865; must. out June 3, '65 exp. of service.

2D REGT. (CAVALRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Mustered out July 20, 1865.

Timothy Conner (21), Co. F, must. in Feb. 18, 1865.

Bernard McQuade (27), Co. M, must. in Feb. 9, 1865.

Chas. A. Cummings (23), Co. G, must. in Feb. 16, 1865.

Patrick McCann (29), Co. D, must. in Feb. 13, 1865.

Thos. Hickey (18), Co. C, must. in Feb. 1, 1865.

61ST REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (1 YEAR).

Timothy Allman (28), Co. H, must. in March 1, 1865; must. out June 15, 1865, exp. of service.

Theodore C. Weld (18), Co. H, must. in Mar. 8, 1865; died May 22, '65, at Alexandria, Va.

14TH BATTERY (LIGHT ART.) MASS. VOLS.

Wm. Campbell (24), must. in Mar. 1, 1865; must. out June 15, 1865, exp. of service.

Jas. Dunney (21), must. in Mar. 6, 1865; must. out June 15, 1865, exp. of service.

13TH BATTERY (LIGHT ART.) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Robt. Topping (21), must. in Mar. 17, 1865; must. out July 28, 1865, exp. of service.

62D REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (1 YEAR).

Henry B. Sprague, 1st sergt. (33), Co. B, must. in Mar. 16, 1865; must. out May 5, 1865, exp. of service.

Jas. Lowery (30), Co. A, must. in Mar. 14, 1865; must. out May 5, 1865, exp. of service.

24TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Michael J. Burke (18), Co. E, must. in Feb. 23, 1865; must. out Jan. 20, 1866, exp. of service.

55TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Andrew Williams (23), must. in Mar. 11, 1865; must. out May 15, 1865, exp. of service.

U. S. VETERAN (HANCOCK CORPS).

Patrick Kenney (30), must. in March 14, 1865; must. out Mar. 14, 1866.

30TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Willis G. Merrill (18), Co. G, must. in March 10, 1865; must. out Mar. 10, 1866, exp. of service.

Samuel P. Dow (19), Co. G, must. in Mar. 10, 1856; must. out Mar. 10, 1866, exp. of service.

Names of those who enlisted in the navy are as follows, viz.:

Michael Allen.....Gunboat "Guard"
Patrick Allen.....Brooklyn"
Moses H. Cleaves.....Master's Mate
George Cleaves.....Master's Mate
John Griffin.....Delaware"
Alfred Goday.
Levi Hill.....Died at New Orleans April 11, 1864
Lawrence Griffin.....Died April 16, 1863
Aaron Hodgkins, Jr.....Killed at Fort Fisher, "Colorado"
George Hodgkins.....Penobscot"
Chas. Haskell (3d).....Jas. S. Chambers"
Benj. F. Jacobs.....Master's Mate, "Housatonic"
Henry M. Lowe.....Paymaster's Clerk
George McLane.....Tahoma"
John O. Brine.....Died at Key West Nov. 26, 1862
Arthur T. Parsons.....Ensign, "Cherokee"
Thos. Parsons.....Gunboat "Guard"
John Porter.....Died at Philadelphia Dec., 1861
Chas. E. Poole.....Scioto"
Wm. Pool (4th).....On the "Cumberland" when she sank
Chas. Pettingill
Francis W. Stewart.
John Scanlan.....Pursuit"
Alvin Smith...Frigate "Roanoke," and Gunboat "Southfield"
Wm. N. Tarr.....Died at Memphis May 5, 1863
Robt. Tarr, Pro. to Lieut. Commanding "Isaac Smith" and Gunboat "Queen."
Michael Tinney.....Portsmouth"
Michael Welch.....Pensacola"
Thos. H. Welch.....Cumberland"
Jas. Pool.....Brooklyn"
Jas. H. Stillman.....Barque "Roebuck"
Wm. Wingood, Jr., Ensign "Ossipee," was at the capture of Mobile.
Thos. A. Knowlton.
Solomon Knights.
Henry C. Robinson, Ensign.
Thos. Wentworth.
Addison Pool.....Asst. Paymaster's Mate, Monitor "Mahopac"
Wm. Caldwell, Jr., Ensign Steamer "May Sanford" and "Mahopac"
James Parsons.
Asa F. Sanborn.
Calvin W. Pool.....Paymaster's Steward, Monitor "Mahopac"

The total number of men furnished by the town for the army was three hundred and fifty-eight, for the navy forty-one. Paid commutation, thirty-four.

The adjutant-general, in his report for 1865, gives Rockport sixty-three more men than its quota.

The [illegible] to the town for furnishing men under the several calls was	$29,094.80
Deduct the amount reimbursed by the State	15,000.00
Leaving a balance of	14,094.80
Contributed by individuals	13,185.00
Paid by drafted men in 1865	10,610.00
Paid by individual for substitutes	1,535.00
	$39,424.80

On the 11th day of August, 1863, a portion of Company B, Fiftieth Regiment (thirty-six men), arrived from Port Hudson, their term of service (nine months) having expired; they were cordially received by the citizens.

The next day, the 12th inst. after a short march, they formed line in front of the Congregationalist Church, at nine o'clock A.M., where a more formal reception was tendered them. Prayer was offered by Rev. Wakefield Gale, Capt. Josiah Haskell chairman, on this occasion, welcomed them by an appropriate address. Benjamin H. Smith, Jr., a former resident, spoke words of welcome and cheer. He was followed with a speech by the Hon. Franklin Pierce, ex-President of the United States, who was rusticating a few weeks at Pigeon Cove. Rev. Stillman Barden, pastor of the Universalist Church, gave them a hearty greeting.

At eleven o'clock A.M. the soldiers and Pigeon Cove Engine Company, with invited guests, marched to Votery Engine Hall and partook of an excellent collation provided by the ladies.

Seven men that went out with this company from Rockport died abroad during their term of service.

How every loyal heart rejoiced when on that April day (1865) the news of the surrender of Lee to the Union forces, on wings of lightning, was heralded throughout the length and breadth of our land, the Union saved and we destined to become a more united people, as the procuring cause of disunion and war is now dead and buried past resurrection.

But how soon was our joy turned to mourning as the sad news fell upon our ears: "President Lincoln is assassinated." Shot by Wilkes Booth on the evening of April 14, 1865, at ten o'clock, he died at twenty-two minutes past seven the next morning. A telegram announcing his death was received here at nine o'clock A.M.

On Wednesday, the 19th inst., by proclamation of John A. Andrew, Governor, all the towns and cities within the Commonwealth were requested to hold a funeral service at twelve o'clock noon—a memorial of respect for this great and good man so suddenly taken from his high post of usefulness.

At the hour appointed the audience gathered in such numbers as to fill the Congregationalist Church to its utmost capacity, which was fittingly draped in mourning on this solemn occasion. An appropriate prayer was offered by Rev. Wakefield Gale; selections of Scripture were read by Rev. A. B. Wheeler, of the Methodist Church; an interesting and appropriate address was delivered by Rev. L. H. Angier, of the Second Congregational Church (pastors of other churches were out of town); hymns suitable to the occasion were sung by the choir. All of the services were solemn and impressive. Surely the 19th day of April was a day of sadness to all loyal hearts; but even in loyal States all did not mourn. This is the exception, not the rule; perhaps it is better to pity than blame.

During the day flags were displayed at half-mast, and the several church bells were tolled; business was very generally suspended.

CHAPTER CXV.

ROCKPORT—(*Continued*).

Donation—Town Hall—Defective Highway—A Great Gale—Rescue of Three Young Men from Drowning—Town Library—Rescued Mariners—Murder of Gilman—Landing of the Bennett and Mackey Commercial Cable—Donation of a Clock—Deceased Physicians—The Sea-Serpent—A Bomb-Shell in Church—Deceased Clergymen—The Rockport Review—Coal and Ice—Telegraph Communication—Mutual Marine Insurance—Lyceum—California Gold Fever—Young Men's Christian Association—Almshouse—Roads—Town Officers.

DONATION.—A donation was made to the town of Rockport by David Kimball, Esq., of Boston, formerly of this town.

"BOSTON, March 1, 1867.

"TO THE SELECTMEN OF ROCKPORT:

"Being desirous of presenting to my native town a testimony of remembrance, I respectfully tender to the inhabitants of the town of Rockport, in their corporate capacity—in trust—sixty shares of the capital stock of the Sandy Bay Pier Company, as a permanent fund; the income thereof to be expended annually, forever, for the following purposes, and in the manner following, to wit:

"The income from fifty shares shall be distributed by the selectmen for the time being, at their discretion, to such of the American-born inhabitants as are sick or infirm, who are unable to procure the comforts needful to their situation.

"No part of this fund, or its income, shall ever be used for the relief of those who are supported or assisted by the town.

"The income from the remaining ten shares shall be paid annually to those having the charge of and oversight of the public schools, to be by them expended for the purchase of books, to be given as prizes to the most deserving scholars. It is my wish that the prizes may be distributed in all classes—to the lowest as well as the highest—and not confined to the most talented and advanced scholars, but also given to such as distinguish themselves by their good behavior and who manifest a desire to improve, though less gifted by nature.

"Very Respectfully

"Yours, etc.,

"DAVID KIMBALL."

The town took action as follows:

"At a meeting of the inhabitants of Rockport, qualified to vote in town affairs, held March 4, 1867.

"Article 30 of the warrant being under consideration, which article was as follows: to wit.,—

"'To hear and act upon a communication from David Kimball, of Boston,' the following action was had:

"The communication from David Kimball, Esq., of Boston, presenting to the inhabitants of the town of Rockport—in trust—sixty shares of the capital stock of the Sandy Bay Pier Company as a permanent fund, was read to the meeting by the chairman of the board of selectmen; and on motion it was voted unanimously the acceptance of the same by the town; and that the thanks and gratitude of this large meeting be presented to the donor. A true copy of record.

"Attest CALVIN W. POOL,

"Town Clerk.

"JOHN W. MARSHALL,

"Rockport, Mass."

TOWN HALL.—The need of a town hall for the transaction of town business and the accommodation of its officers, and for lectures, had been agitated from time to time, but the enterprise did not receive the favor of the voters until the year 1869. At the annual March meeting the town voted to purchase a lot and erect a town hall thereon, and appropriated thirty thousand dollars to carry this vote into effect.

A committee was chosen at this meeting with full power.

This committee consisted of the selectmen, who were Francis Tarr, Jr., Austin W. Story and William Caldwell; the town treasurer, Dr. Joseph Manning; and three other citizens, viz.: James W. Bradley, Henry Dennis, Jr., and Samuel York.

A lot was purchased on Broadway, and the building was erected the same year. D. Somes Watson, of Gloucester, was the contractor and builder. The whole cost of the structure, including the furniture, as appears by the auditor's report, was $36,221.56.

The hall was dedicated in December of that year by a concert by Gilmore's Band and solos by Arbuckle, which gave good satisfaction.

A course of lectures were given that winter with good success.

DEFECTIVE HIGHWAYS.—In addition to the expense of building the town hall this year (1869), the town was called upon to pay a large bill, $9376.84, to Mr. J. E. Hartwell and Miss Ada Babson for damages alleged to have been sustained by them by a defect of the highway over which they were traveling. This case was entered some two years before, but came to final judgment this year. As these parties were riding it appears that from some cause the horse became unmanageable. Mr. Hartwell got out of the carriage and attempted to restrain the horse, but, notwithstanding all his efforts, the horse and carriage went down a steep embankment, there happened to be a vacancy in the wall protecting the travel on the road just wide enough to allow the carriage to go through. Miss Babson claimed to be severely injured, also Mr. Hartwell to some extent; hence the award. The town has been called upon in two other cases for personal damages on account of defect in the highway, one of which was the case of Ambrose Hodgkins—final judgment, 1875, sixteen hundred and ninety-three dollars, which includes cost of defense. The other was the case of Jacob B. Goldsmith, six hundred and twenty-four dollars, which includes the cost of the defense—final judgment in this case was in 1886.

A GREAT GALE.—On the afternoon of the 8th of September, 1869, this section of the country was visited with a terrific gale of wind from the southeast. Fruit and ornamental trees in this town suffered great damage. Some were uprooted, others were stripped of their foliage and in some cases, of their limbs. Fruit lay scattered in every direction. Great damage was done to shipping on the coast and many lives were lost. Schooner "Helen Eliza," of this town, went ashore on Peak's Island in Portland harbor and was totally lost, and the entire crew of twelve men, except one. Edward J. Millett, master, left a widow and two children, Emerson Colby left a widow and five children, Frederick T. Lane left a widow, David B. Harris and George Wood each left a widow, Albert Tarr, Joel Fairbanks, Benj. Lurvey, Charles H. Clark, James Bray, George W. Clark, unmarried. Charles Jordan was the only survivor. Years before, Jordan was shipwrecked on Cape Cod;

of a crew of thirty-seven, he only was saved. In 1873 he was struck by a passing train when serving as bridge-tender over Charles River, for the Boston and Maine Railroad, and survived his injuries but two weeks,—though twice saved from disaster, he finally died from injuries received while in the line of duty. Seven of the bodies were recovered and were brought home for interment. Four at one time were buried from the Congregationalist Church. Services were conducted by the pastor, Rev. James W. Cooper. They were very impressive and appropriate to the occasion, and were listened to by a large and sympathizing audience. The "Helen Eliza" was 33.63 tons, was owned by Capt. Millett and others, was insured in the Gloucester Mutual Insurance Office for $1050.

The schooner "Yankee Girl," Capt. Atwood, of this town, was lost in the same gale and probably near the same place, with all on board—eleven persons—Capt. Clifton Atwood and son Horace, twelve years of age; Capt. Atwood left a widow and two children, Freeman and Henry Abbot, the former left a widow and one child); Alfred Giles, Thomas Williams, David H. Elwell, unmarried; James Cann, of Rockland, Me.; James Kellogg, of Maine, widow and one child; Isaac Forester, of East Boston, and one other man name unknown. The "Yankee Girl" was 26.12 tons, valued at $2800; one-half insured at the Rockport Office; was owned by the master and others. Other disasters were, schooner "Franklin D. Schenck" had her masts, jib-boom, everything carried away. One of the crew, Fred. Brown, had his arm badly injured. The vessel was towed into Portland, Me. Schooner "Neptune" lost foresail, anchor and cable. Schooner "Charles Frederic" lost mainsail and jib. Schooner "Rockaway" lost foresail and anchors. Schooner "Rebecca N. Atwood" lost fifteen barrels of mackerel, cable and both anchors. Schooner "Sparkling Billow" lost cable and anchors. Schooner "E. N. Williams" lost foresail and bulwarks. Schooner "Lizzie D. Saunders" was knocked down by a sea and lost thirty barrels of mackerel, and had sails split. Schooner "Sea Breeze" lost seine-boat. The foregoing belonged to this town. We seldom, if ever, experienced a gale of such violence. Eighteen of the twenty-two men lost with the two vessels were citizens of this town. It was a sad day.

November 26th the same year a heavy northeast gale damaged the Rockport Granite Company's breakwater to a considerable extent.

THE RESCUE OF THREE YOUNG MEN FROM DROWNING. Mr. James Rowe, on the 22d of October, 1869, then more than sixty years of age, was out in the bay in his dory setting his nets. Directly his attention was called to a sinking dory on which were three young men in imminent danger. He, as it were in a moment, cleared his dory of the nets and rowed with all his strength towards the sinking men and succeeded by almost superhuman strength in rescuing the three from a watery grave. They were George L. and Jabez E., sons of Newall and Elizabeth Giles, and George, son of Edwin and Patience Paul.

For this act of heroism and strength these young men and their parents hold him in high esteem.

The Massachusetts Humane Society recognized this humane and skillful service by presenting Mr. Rowe with a handsomely framed diploma.

TOWN LIBRARY.—The first winter the new Town Hall was occupied a committee procured a course of lectures of an high order and by men of talent. They were well patronized. Notwithstanding the high cost, the committee had in hand after all expenses were paid about two hundred dollars. This sum they generously proposed to donate toward the establishing of a town library, provided the town would appropriate a like amount to the same object. The proposition was accepted, and at the annual March meeting in 1871 the two hundred dollars was appropriated, and the next year the town appropriated an additional two hundred dollars and the dog tax. The dog tax has been appropriated for the same object each year since, and in 1881, '82, '83 and '85 an additional sum of one hundred dollars each year; in 1877 one hundred and fifty dollars was appropriated. A donation of twenty-nine volumes has been received from S. Adams Choate. The children of our late and esteemed fellow-citizen, John G. Dennis, in accordance with a purpose of their father which he failed to accomplish, have donated to the town for the use of the library five hundred dollars. The library now contains about twenty-five hundred volumes, and it is well patronized. The Library Committee are, Henri N. Woods, N. F. S. York and Francis Tarr; Librarian, Miss Elsie Dann.

AGRICULTURE.—In the early years of the settlement of Sandy Bay the enterprise of the people was divided between agriculture and fishing, but the latter predominated.

We are told that as late as nearly the close of the last century or the opening of the present there was not hay enough raised in Sandy Bay for the wintering of their stock, and that they were dependent upon Chebacco and Ipswich to a considerable extent for salt hay, which was transported here in boats. During the present century there has been a great advance of this industry. Many acres of swamp and rocky pasture have been converted into fruitful fields. From 1836 to 1840, while the breakwater and wharves were being built at Long Cove, many acres of land were cleared of stone that was used in these works. The stone business, as it assumed proportions, called for hay for the feeding of cattle employed by the quarries. This incited our farmers to greater efforts in their line of business, as they had a ready market for their product. Now, in these later years, the great increase of population and in the fishing fleet of Gloucester call for an increased amount of vegetable food. Thus having a ready market near home,

our farmers are stimulated to greater efforts to supply this demand. With their improved methods and liberal use of fertilizers, it would seem that our farming interest has nearly doubled within the last ten or fifteen years.

Horticulture has greatly advanced during the last sixty years. The town is well supplied with fruit-trees, which almost every year yield a large supply.

While our fishing interest has decreased, our agricultural interest has greatly increased, and the stone business, whose infancy was in 1824, now assumes large proportions, employing about five hundred men.

Rescued Mariners.—Schooner "Cora Lee," of Pigeon Cove, George A. Saunders, master, while engaged in setting trawls on Jeffrey's Bank, about thirty miles east-northeast from Cape Ann, about eight o'clock on the morning of January 5, 1882, saw in the distance a boat showing a signal of distress. They immediately left their trawls and made for the boat with all possible speed. When they arrived alongside, a sad sight presented itself. The boat contained five men nearly exhausted for want of water and food and from exposure to the severe cold. Some of the number were badly frosted; two others lay dead in the boat; one other, the second mate, had died, and him they buried in the ocean. The live men were at once taken on board the "Cora Lee," where every attention possible was paid them. The schooner, with the boat in tow, immediately made for Pigeon Cove, that being the nearest port. The wind was light and towards night was nearly calm. Two of the crew manned the dory, and with their two sets of oars pulled for the harbor. The wind being light, these men could row the dory faster than the schooner could sail. They were anxious to obtain medical aid at the earliest possible moment. The "Cora Lee" arrived at Pigeon Cove at early evening. Drs. Sanborn and Tupper had been summoned by the earlier arrival of the dory; therefore they were on hand ready to attend to the relief of the sufferers. They were taken at once to the boarding-house of Mrs. Ann Pierce, where every attention was paid them. They received the best medical attendance and the most careful nursing. The dead were taken to the Pigeon Cove Engine-House and were watched over by members of the company. Suitable grave-clothes and neat coffins were provided. Members of the engine company and Mrs. Bishop provided flowers in good supply. Sabbath afternoon they were removed to the chapel. A large and sympathizing audience witnessed the very interesting and appropriate funeral service,—Singing by a Union choir; other services by Rev. R. B. Howard, Congregationalist; Rev. Edwin Davis, Universalist; and Rev. John Capen, Methodist. The boarding-house where the disabled ones were being cared for was near by the chapel. Thus they, as it were, could almost participate in the funeral service.

These men proved to be the captain and crew of the schooner "Almon Bird," of Rockland, Me., from Windsor, N. S., loaded with plaster, bound to Alexandria, Va. She was boarded by a heavy sea on Sunday night, January 1st, a few miles west-southwest of Boon Island, which broke down her hatches and also caused her to leak. Monday morning, the captain and seven men took the boat. They were able to supply themselves with but a small quantity of water and provisions. Some of the men were but scantily clothed. The weather was very cold; there was a heavy breeze from the northwest accompanied with snow. Thus for four days these men were exposed to this severe weather. It seems almost a miracle that any of them were spared. The captain suffered the amputation of several toes. Ferdinand Hamilton, who was the most severely frosted, died on 13th inst. His body was taken to Rockland, Me., for burial. Generous contributions were made for the sufferers. The Boston Globe Company sent a check of fifty dollars The crew of the "Cora Lee" did not stop to estimate the cost of their trawls or the loss of their fishing trip, but as soon as they espied the signal of distress, hastened with all possible speed to relieve the wants of the sufferers. They were cooking chicken broth for their dinner. What more opportune for the suffering men! The crew of the "Cora Lee" performed a noble act and they should ever be held in grateful remembrance.

The citizens of Pigeon Cove were lavish in their attentions to these suffering men. Had their pockets been filled with gold, it could not have bought more skillful medical aid or provided them with more careful nursing. Their names were C. A. Packard (captain), William Harriman, Allen Small, A. R. Henderson, Ferdinand Hamilton, died on shore; Hiram Small, Patrick Hagan and Charles Staples, died on board the boat.

Murder of Gilman.—The second murder committed in the parish or town was done under the following circumstances. On the 11th day of April, 1877, two men, among others, came in on the nine o'clock forenoon train. The two specially noticed were Albert Joy and Charles H. Gilman; it seems they were from Lowell. Their business was to sell some article to attach to sewing-machines. They had tarried at several places between Lowell and Rockport; they spent several days in Beverly. During the forenoon in Rockport they parted company; Gilman went down town and called at several houses for the purpose of selling his goods; Joy also went down town, but soon returned to the railroad station, went to the reservoir on the hill back of the station, from which it receives its supply of water. He inquired of the station agent if the town was supplied from that reservoir. At twelve o'clock, noon, they were seen to enter the station at the eastern end and pass through and leave at the western end.

At about half-past twelve o'clock Mr. Joy was seen

coming from the direction of the reservoir alone; he crossed the track and took the way of Pool's pasture lane to Main Street, then to Broadway to the restaurant of Aaron Hodgkins, where he called for an oyster stew and a cup of tea, also for a brush and blacking for his boots. He remained there until past one o'clock, then went to the railroad station and took a seat in the smoking-car. That train would leave about half-past one o'clock. A young man (Doyle) was on his way home from a gunning expedition in the pastures, and went to the reservoir for a drink, and beheld a dead man in the water.

He immediately gave an alarm. There were three fishermen about the station that forenoon; they also came on the nine o'clock train, and went to Pigeon Cove seeking a chance to go on a fishing cruise. They were not successful, and were intending to leave by the noon train, and were at the station when the body was discovered and the alarm given. As they entered the car where Joy was, they said a dead man had been found in the reservoir. Joy exclaims, "My God, it is my chum!" He then left the car, and was soon arrested and taken to the police station. When there he said he left Gilman at the reservoir and went for dinner, and was to bring Gilman some bread and cheese. This he neglected to do. A coroner's jury was summoned and heard the evidence in the case as conducted by Trial Justice N. F. S. York and Assistant District Attorney Kimball. Their verdict charged Joy with the murder of Gilman. He was committed to Salem jail awaiting trial before the Supreme Court. The three fishermen, being strangers, were also committed to Salem jail and held as witnesses. At the term of the Supreme Court held at Salem July 9, 1877, Judges Lord and Morton presiding, Joy was put upon trial, consuming some four days of the court. The government was represented by Attorney-General C. R. Train and District Attorney E. J. Sherman. The defense was represented by Wm. D. Northend and Henri N. Woods, Esqs. Joy was convicted; though the evidence was circumstantial, it was very conclusive; every circumstance pointed to Joy as the guilty man.

He was sentenced to be hanged on Friday, October 19, 1877. October 16th he was reprieved until December 13, 1877. December 5th his sentence was, by the Governor and Council, commuted to imprisonment for life.

This was brought about by the earnest efforts of his mother, aided by some influential citizens. He is now (1887) in State Prison. He was then a young man, perhaps twenty to twenty-three years of age. Gilman was probably a few years older.

LANDING OF THE CABLE.—In anticipation of the arrival of the steamship "Faraday" with the shore-end of the Bennett & Mackey cable, which was soon to be landed near Little Cape Hedge, the citizens of Rockport held an informal meeting at the town-hall on the 11th day of May, 1884, to take some action in relation to giving a hearty welcome and suitable reception to this important enterprise. Nathaniel F. S. York, Esq., chairman of the selectmen, was chosen moderator; Andrew F. Clark, secretary.

A committee, consisting of John W. Marshall, George F. Tarr, Francis Tarr, Calvin W. Pool, Dr. J. E. Sanborn, George Elwell, G. T. Margeson, Jason L. Curtis, John G. Dennis, Alden Choate and James S. Rogers, were chosen to co-operate with the selectmen to devise a plan for a formal celebration of this important enterprise.

The committee met and organized, and formed a plan of reception, as the following results will show:

The steamer was sighted off Thacher's Island at 4.20 o'clock on the morning of the 22d day of May. This was twenty-four hours sooner than she was expected. The news was immediately telegraphed from the island to the Rockport Station. The town was soon awake to the situation. The steamer pursued her course, and at about five o'clock A.M. came to anchor about three-quarters of a mile from the shore upon which the cable was to be landed. The report of a gun upon her deck was answered by the ringing of the church bells and firing of cannon in the town. The sub-committee—viz., N. F. S. York, Nathaniel Richardson, Jr., and Calvin W. Pool—were soon on board, and tendered the compliments of the town to Captain L. Fanu and the other officers and electricians, extending to each of them a cordial invitation to the dinner to be served in the evening in commemoration of this interesting event. The committee were informed that they had been obliged to cut and buoy the cable two hundred and fifty miles easterly from this shore. Therefore, as soon as the shore end was laid, they would be obliged to weigh anchor and make their course for the end that was buoyed, paying out the cable as they steamed towards the buoy. On this account they were obliged to decline the invitation, which they assured the committee it would give them great pleasure to accept would the circumstances allow of it. The officers appreciated the attention of the citizens, and regretted their inability to accept the hospitality. The committee were shown every attention by the officers, as were also other citizens who visited the ship during the brief time she lay at anchor. As they could not be at the dinner, the toast-master being one of the visitors, offered the following: "The officers and electricians of the steamship 'Faraday.' We are proud to tender you with open hands and hearts our welcome. Without your skill and able efforts our gathering would have no cause to exist. We extend our heartfelt wishes that your individual and professional future may never be dimmed by a cloud of adversity."

Captain L. Fanu made a pleasant response.

The "Faraday" is 365 feet in length, 52 feet in width, 31 feet depth, and carries 200 officers and crew. This Bennett & Mackey cable is the largest

ocean cable ever laid; it weighs about twenty tons to the mile. The landing was effected by means of three large rafts, made of inflated double-ended rubber bags covered with canvas, and another raft made of boats lashed together and covered. Six hundred fathoms of cable were coiled upon these rafts, and then pulled towards the shore, the men paying out as they went. The scene was very exciting on the rafts, and along the shore crowds were gathered to witness the work.

The landing was effected about ten o'clock, and the cable was laid through a deep trench to the cable-house, a few rods above high-water mark.

The event was duly honored by a long procession, which, escorted by the Gloucester and Rockport bands, marched to the landing-place, and by the firing of a salute of thirty-eight guns, and the playing of "Hail Co'umbia" and "Rule Britannia" by the bands, and cheers of the people, responded to from the "Faraday" by her heavy steam-whistle and cheers of the crew. Thus the cable was laid, and when it shall be completed another bond of union will be effected between the Old World and the New. After the cable was landed the rafts returned, and about eleven o'clock A.M. the huge vessel weighed anchor and steamed away, trailing the cable at her stern as she went, to make the connection two hundred and fifty miles away, which will complete the circuit from Dover Bay to Cape Ann. It was a grand sight, as we stood upon the "Faraday's" deck and beheld the great crowds of people and carriages upon the shore; it was a grand panorama. The captain expressed in glowing terms his great satisfaction, and all hands considered themselves highly honored by the hearty welcome.

The Abbot House, under the management of Col. John F. Sweet, the popular landlord, was gaily decorated. Many visitors were present from out of town, and with marching and music and firing of cannon, the day, which was pleasant and also lively, passed away.

At evening a dinner was served in Haskin's Hall, complimentary to the officers of the Cable Company, representatives of the press and visitors. Plates were laid for eighty guests; the tables presented a fine appearance. N. F. S. York, chairman of the selectmen, presided. The divine blessing was invoked by Deacon C. W. Pool.

The waiters were fair young ladies dressed in white. After sufficient attention had been paid to the edibles, then came the intellectual feast. The chairman, in a few well-chosen words, gave our guests a hearty welcome to the festivities of the hour; then introduced as toast-master John W. Marshall, who, after a few preliminary words, proposed the following sentiment:

"The Old World and the New bound together by another cord of sympathy, bringing heart to heart in closer relation to daily life. May the electric pulse wax stronger every day, and the coming future develop good to universal humanity." Responded to by Isaac Bell, Jr., of New York, vice-president of the Commercial Cable Company.

"Her Majesty, the Queen of Great Britain. Her virtues and her beautiful motherhood belong to the world. As a woman as well as a ruler, her wisdom and beneficence are the admiration of mankind." Responded to by George G. Ward, of New York, secretary of the Commercial Cable Company.

"Chester A. Arthur, President of the United States, called to an unexpected position. He has discharged his duties with marked ability, which commands the respect of other nations with our own." Responded to by Postmaster David W. Low, of Gloucester.

"Commercial Cable Company. Hon. James G. Bennett, herald of new tidings between the Old World and the New. John W. Mackey, who, from the Pacific slope, connects the East with the West. Their united efforts have caused this the day of our rejoicing." Responded to by H. De Castro, of New York, a director of the Commercial Cable Company.

"He expressed his joy that Rockport would soon be in direct communication by cable, not only with the United States, but with the old continent. He hoped that a new era of wealth and happiness would dawn upon the land, and that not only would Rockport people have to congratulate themselves upon the realization of the new cable, but on the erection of a splendid breakwater, which would make Rockport one of the finest harbors in the world."

"Commonwealth of Massachusetts, foremost in public enterprise; she has ever stretched out her shores far into the Atlantic to greet her foreign neighbors and bind them to her with cables of quickest interest." Responded to by Dr. J. E. Sanborn, in rhyme.

"The officers, electricians and reporters of the 'Faraday.' We are proud to tender you open hands and hearts of welcome. Without your skill and able effort our gathering would have no cause to exist. We extend our most heartfelt wishes that your individual and professional future may never be dimmed by a cloud of adversity." Responded to by A. J. Kenneday, of the *New York Herald.*

"Cape Ann, with its Sandy Bay, has had taken from the Rocky Ribs of its Gloucester a Rockport, to become famous for its Atlantic cable and its Harbor of Refuge." Responded to by Francis Proctor, of the *Cape Ann Advertiser,* and W. Frank Parsons, of Gloucester, who gave many interesting facts of the history of telegraphy.

"Commerce and Law, the handmaid, of modern progress. The former is represented by the achievement of to-day. The latter will be defended by our young friend, Mr. Putman, of New York." Mr. Putman responded in a few words, speaking of this

the great event of the times, and of his pleasure in being present.

Frederick Ward, Esq., of New York City, was called out and gave some very interesting facts in relation to cables of the past and the present and the promise for the future.

"Last, but not least, the Press. We acknowledge its power and court its favor." Response by Thomas Maguire Esq., of the *Boston Herald*.

He said he regretted the absence of the Harbor of Refuge at this particular time, as he would like to crawl into it. There was a particular reason why the people of Massachusetts should celebrate the landing of the cable, for all the great electricians who made a cable possible were Massachusetts men,—Franklin, the first electrician, was born in Boston; Morse, in Charlestown; and Cyrus W. Field, in Stockbridge.

After a few closing remarks by Chairman York, the meeting closed. Many adjourned to the Abbot House, where festivities were continued until a late hour; others took the special train for Gloucester and Boston. The day was very pleasant. The citizens and guests will long remember the arrival of the "Faraday" and the successful placing of the cable on the shore of Pebble-stone Beach and Little Cape Hedge.

"ROCKPORT, May 26, 1884.

"The first message over the Commercial Cable was received here at two o'clock P.M.

"From steamer 'Faraday' to the Selectmen of Rockport, Mass.:

"The 'Faraday' wishes to thank the Selectmen of Rockport, as well as its citizens, for the hearty reception she received at their hands, and can only regret that her arduous work called her away so soon, and she trusts that this section connecting Cape Ann with Dover Bay will probably be completed this afternoon."

REPLY.

"The Selectmen of Rockport, with the citizens, cordially congratulate the Faraday on the happy completion of the first part of this great undertaking and confidently hope the same success will in time crown the entire work. Our regrets at the brevity of the stay here, disappear only in our joy at the success of the undertaking."

When it is taken into consideration that the "Faraday" arrived twenty-four hours before she was expected, therefore before the plans of the committee could be perfected,—thus everything considered, the reception was a success. It was a pleasant time for the citizens of Rockport, and the visitors were lavish in their congratulations of the success of the enterprise and the attention paid them.

It was arranged by those that had charge of laying the cable, to continue from Dover Bay to Rockport direct; thus when the shore end was laid, the circuit would be complete, and it would have consumed twenty-four hours more of time before she could have reached here. But when within two hundred and fifty miles of the cape, it was found necessary to cut the cable and buoy it and make directly for our shore and land the shore-end, then steam back and make the connection.

DONATION OF A CLOCK. A clock was donated to the town by John G. Dennis in April, 1885.

At a special town meeting held by adjournment on the 18th day of April, 1885, the following resolution was presented by N. F. S. York, Esq., chairman of the Board of Selectmen:

"*Resolved*, That we, citizens of Rockport, in Town-Meeting assembled, do hereby tender to our esteemed friend and fellow-citizen, John G. Dennis, Esq., our sincere thanks and grateful acknowledgments for the donation of the beautiful clock which he has made to his native town, and has caused to be placed upon the gallery of this hall."

The foregoing resolution was accepted and adopted by a unanimous and a rising vote. It was voted that this resolution be printed in the history of the town, which is now being written.

Mr. Dennis was our Representative to the General Court this year (1885). He was also president of the Granite Savings Bank.

He died June 29th, a little more than a month after the passage of this resolution, much respected and lamented. He was always interested in the welfare of his native town, and labored for its prosperity.

DECEASED PHYSICIANS.—The following are the physicians who have died in Rockport: Dr. John Manning died November 25, 1841, aged eighty years. His father was Dr. John Manning, of Ipswich, whose father was Dr. Joseph Manning, of the same town, both of whom lived to an advanced age. At the age of seventeen he joined the American army in Rhode Island as surgeon's mate. Afterwards he practiced four years in Chester, N. H., and removed thence to Gloucester Harbor, about 1786, where he lived about two years, when he moved to Sandy Bay,—his home for the rest of his life. His attention to pursuits out of his profession was given first to commerce, afterwards to agriculture. The ample estate he acquired came principally from his medical practice, in which he was distinguished for skill and success. He served six terms as Representative to the General Court. He was a man of considerable eccentricity of character, which did not forsake him even in his last hours. His wife was Miss Hannah Goodhue, of Ipswich; her death occurred January 22, 1840, the first death in her household for forty-one years.

Four sons of Dr. Manning survived him,—Joseph B., John and Charles B., who graduated at Harvard College respectively in 1808, 1810 and 1819, and James. Joseph B. studied law, but never engaged in active practice. He died a bachelor in Ipswich, May 22, 1854, aged sixty-seven years. John commenced practice as a physician in Waldoborough, Maine, in 1813, where he remained until 1842, when he removed to Rockport and practiced until his death, February 7, 1852, aged sixty-two years, leaving four sons, one of whom (William H.) was collector of customs in Gloucester four years. Another (Joseph) is a practicing physician in Rockport (he has a son, Charles B., about entering the medical profession; he surely has a long line of medical ancestry).

Charles B. was a physician in his native place and died there December 16, 1843, aged forty-four.

James, whose occupation was farming the most of his days, is yet living here, hale and hearty, at more than eighty years of age.

Another aged physician of the town, *Dr. James Goss*, died November 29, 1842, aged seventy-nine.

He was a native of Billerica, and settled in his profession in Sandy Bay about 1792. Besides his medical practice, he was often employed in writing deeds and other instruments. In the early days of his settlement here he taught school in the old log school-house. By his various services he secured the respect of society, and the reputation of a useful man. He was Representative to the General Court. In 1832, Dr. Goss was twice married, first, to Polly Jaquith, of Wilmington, and next to Hannah Smith, of Ipswich. There were two sons by his first wife,—Sylvester and George; they became printers, married and settled away from home, and are long since dead. Eliza, the only child by his second wife, married William Caldwell, and are both dead. Their daughter Eliza has been one of our most efficient school-teachers for several years.

Edward E. Barden, M.D., died December 3, 1875, aged twenty-nine years and seven months. He was a son of Rev. Stillman and Sarah Barden, who ministered to the Universalist Society of this town several years, and was a young man of much promise.

His wife, Alfarata, daughter of Addison and Abigail Gott, died April 1, 1876. Their infant child died March 27, 1875; thus within a few days more than one year the entire family passed away.

On the 21st day of January, 1878, *Benjamin Haskell, M.D.*, aged sixty-eight, died after an illness of a few days. He was born in Rockport, graduated at Amherst College in 1832, and was also a graduate of Bowdoin College, Maine, where he received his medical education. He spent nearly all his professional life in his native town. He was skillful and popular as a physician, and much respected as a citizen. In his later years, in addition to his professional life, he was interested in agriculture and farm stock, from which he derived a great deal of pleasure. He left a widow, Jane Caleb, but no children.

Out of respect to his memory a public meeting of the citizens was held in the Town Hall the evening after his decease. A large audience was present. John W. Marshall was called to the chair. Calvin W. Pool was chosen secretary. Prayer was offered by Rev. C. C. McIntire. Dr. J. C. Sanborn paid a tribute to his professional character and his usefulness by an interesting and appropriate address, which was listened to with marked attention. His address was supplemented by appropriate remarks by several other of the long-time acquaintances of the deceased. A committee was chosen to draft resolutions, and another committee to make arrangements for the funeral, after which the meeting dissolved.

Sea-Serpent.—The sea-serpent has visited this coast several times in years past, and his appearance has been witnessed by so many persons of undoubted veracity and quick discernment, that the existence of such a sea animal is placed beyond a doubt.

He last appeared here in August, 1886; he was seen and his movements were witnessed by about forty persons, one of whom was Granville B. Putnam, of the Franklin School, Boston. By his permission we publish his statement:

"On the afternoon of the 12th day of August, 1886, I heard the voice of Calvin W. Pool, town clerk of Rockport, at the door of my cottage at Pigeon Cove, saying, 'There is some strange thing in the water; I think it is the sea-serpent.' I quickly took my station upon the rail of my piazza, so that my marine glass was about fifty feet above the water and but thirty-six feet from the shore. The creature was advancing in a northerly direction, and but little more than one-eighth of a mile from me. I saw it approaching, passing and departing, and watched it most attentively for about ten minutes. Judging by the apparent length of yachts whose dimensions I know, as they appear at that distance, I estimated the length to have been not less than eighty feet

"The head short, and about the size of a nail-cask, while the middle of the body was larger than that of a large man; the color was a dark brown, and it appeared to be somewhat mottled with a lighter shade. As the head was at no time raised above the water, I could not determine the color of the throat. The surface of the head and back was very smooth, and no one of the forty or more persons who saw it detected anything that looked like a fin or flipper. Its movement was not that of a land-serpent, but a vertical one, resembling that of the leech or the bloodsuckers of my boyhood. I could distinctly see perhaps fifteen feet of the forward portion of his body, while back of that, the convolutions being greater the depressions were below the surface, so as to present a series of ridges, some ten or fifteen in number at a time. The extreme of the tail was not visible. During the whole passage of a mile and a quarter, either the muzzle or cranium cut the water, so as to lead several to exclaim, 'His head is white!' This fact would remove the possibility of its being anything floating with the tide The cutting of the water was by something at least a foot wide, and caused wakes on either side.

"From my elevated position I could plainly see the movements of the body between them, while the rear portion caused another wake behind. Its course was a direct one, and its speed uniform, and not more than five miles an hour. When it reached a point about half a mile north of us, the undulatory movement seemed to cease, and the body was for a moment extended along the surface. There was then an apparent gathering of the caudal extremity into ridges nearer together than those previously seen, after which he disappeared. I judged that this latter movement was to aid in diving, but of course this is only conjecture. On the 19th, a week later, the same creature, or one like it, appeared north of us, going in an easterly direction, and, although perhaps half a mile away, it was distinctly seen by Rev. David Brewer, assistant pastor of Park Street, Boston, by his wife and servant, and by several others. My attention was not called in season to permit me to see anything of additional interest."

A Bomb-shell in Church.—On Sunday evening, November 1, 1861, there were in the Universalist Church an audience of about seventy persons listening to an address on the slavery question, by Parker Pillsbury. While he was speaking some person threw a sort of bomb-shell through a window on the north side of the house; it fell near Mr. Pillsbury's feet and exploded. The audience were greatly frightened and left the house, which was filled with smoke.

After the smoke cleared some few persons returned to the church, and Mr. Pillsbury resumed his lecture. There was no other disturbance.

This mis-sile was made by wrapping a few pieces of coal and a quantity of powder in a cloth and securing it by a cord tightly drawn around it; the whole saturated with spirits of turpentine. The whole thing was about six inches in diameter.

Some four or five rows of pews nearest the pulpit were not occupied that evening. The why has not been known.

A considerable portion of the society were opposed to opening the house for such lectures.

DECEASED CLERGYMEN.—The clergymen that have officiated in and died in Sandy Bay or Rockport are as follows: Rev. Ebenezer Cleaveland, Congregationalist, died July 4, 1805, aged eighty; Licentiate Capt. Benjamin Hale, Baptist, died June 10, 1818, aged forty-two; Rev. Levi B. Hathaway, Baptist, died August 1, 1823, aged thirty-three; Rev. Samuel Gilbert, Baptist, died January 25, 1850; Rev. Elijah Mason, Methodist, died 1863; Rev. Stilman Barden, Universalist, August 7, 1865; Licentiate Capt. Levi Cleaves, Methodist, died June 16, 1865, aged fifty-eight years and nine months; Rev. Samuel Roy, Methodist, died October 24, 1874; Rev. Henry C. Leonard, Universalist, died March 7, 1880, aged sixty-two years.

At the time of his death he was chairman of the School Committee, which position he had occupied several years; he was popular with the scholars, teachers and the people; he in 1844 and '45 was pastor of the Universalist Church in this town; at the time of his death he was pastor of the church at Annisquam. He had been pastor of a church at Orono, Maine, Albany, N. Y., and at Philadelphia. He also served as chaplain of a Maine Regiment in the Civil War.

THE ROCKPORT REVIEW.—The *Rockport Review*, a newspaper, published every Saturday, was established here by H. C. Cheever in 1880. After a few years Mr. Cheever sold the whole printing and publishing establishment to Joseph Lemon, who is both editor and publisher; his business is on the increase and the *Review* is increasing in favor. We trust that it is an institution that has come to stay and prosper. Office on Bearskin Neck.

In 1872 the *Rockport Gleaner*, a monthly newspaper, was published by Levi Cleaves, of this town. It was printed at the office of the *Cape Ann Advertiser*, and was distributed gratuitously, therefore depending upon advertisements for support. It has now ceased to be published after fifteen years of service.

COAL.—The first anthracite coal brought to Sandy Bay was by the schooner "Franklin," Captain A. T. Doyle, in 1832, a few lime-casks full from Boston.

The next was about eighty tons, by the schooner "Stephen C. Phillips," Captain John J. Giles, from Philadelphia, in 1847. Nearly two years expired before it was all sold; the price was eight dollars per ton. The demand gradually increased in those earlier years of its introduction until it became of general use. Now, in 1887, some six thousand tons are called for to supply the annual demand.

ICE.—The ice business of this town was commenced by James Manning, Esq. He built a house for its storage in 1852, and on the 23d and 24th days of February following he stored about four hundred tons. He continued the business a few years, then sold the property to C. Jerome Norwood, who has built two more houses and conducts the business successfully by his agent, Reuben Norwood.

John B. Hodgkins, a few years later than Manning, excavated a meadow and made an artificial pond and conducted the ice business a few years, then sold the entire premises to Anson Stimson. His son Fred. E. enlarged the pond, erected another house, and is successful in the business.

There is now sold from twenty-five thousand to thirty thousand tons annually.

TELEGRAPH COMMUNICATION.—Telegraph wires were extended to this town in 1858. Henry Clark was appointed operator, and continued in that position twenty years; when he resigned G. Tucker Margeson was appointed, and is the present incumbent.

The first message over the wire from here was to Winthrop Thurston, at Montreal, January 22d.

Addison Gott, Esq., was much interested in this enterprise.

MUTUAL MARINE INSURANCE COMPANY.—A Mutual Marine Insurance Company was organized here in 1827, with thirty-six members, and for more than forty years it continued in successful operation; it was finally dissolved, as by the terms of its organization and its manner of transacting business (it not being incorporated) was rather in the line of a copartnership, it was not considered prudent to continue business on that line.

LYCEUM.—In 1830 a lyceum was established in this village; connected with it was a library. The fee for membership was one dollar. It was a useful institution, and continued in successful operation quite a number of years. Many interesting lectures were given, meetings for debate were held and were quite well attended. The library was well patronized, but like many other good and useful institutions, it had its day and filled its place, acted well its part, and then joined the institutions of the past.

CALIFORNIA GOLD-FEVER.—When the California gold-fever broke out it affected the young men of this town, and in January, 1849, ten of them sailed for that place, *via* Cape Horn. Several others soon followed. From January, 1849, to February, 1850, about fifty of our young men went from home to the Golden Gate. Several of them made California their permanent home. Since 1850 a number more have gone to the land of gold.

In October, 1850, George D. Hale, Esq., received from his son George, who was one of the first to leave home for California, a specimen of gold weighing ten ounces. Dr. John Manning also received a fine specimen from his son Charles, who was early in the field.

Rockport, during these years since 1850, has been well represented on the Pacific Coast.

YOUNG MEN'S CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION.—Sometime during the year 1869 the Young Men's Christian As-

sociation, that had been organized and doing good work some twelve years, purchased the chapel that was built in 1855 for the Second Congregationalist Church and Society.

It was dedicated to their use on Monday evening, November 16th. Calvin W. Pool gave an interesting history of the organization,—other exercises by Revs. Otis Leonard and W. D. Bridge. Also remarks were made by Levi Cleaves, Z. A. Appleton, N. Burnham and others. This association seemed to have completed its work and dissolved its organization a few years since.

Almshouse.—Previous to 1852 the town boarded out its paupers, but in that year they purchased about four acres of land and built an almshouse and barn at a cost of five thousand one hundred dollars. Sylvester Pierce was appointed superintendent. After a few years' service he resigned. Nehemiah Knowlton succeeded him; then William Knights, Samuel N. Burt, Caleb R. Bray, Abraham Lurvey, the present incumbent.

Whole number of inmates, February, 1887, was thirteen.

Roads.—The road from Annisquam to Pigeon Cove was laid out and recorded by the selectmen October 21, 1707. It was continued through Pigeon Cove and over the Back Beach and Hale's Point to Pool's Bridge in or about 1716.

The road from the First Parish meeting-house, through the parting paths over Beaver Dam Brook, up the Great Hill and on by Richard Tarr's house to the brook, or Pool's Bridge, Sandy Bay, was laid out and recorded by the selectmen June 2, 1707.

The road from the head of Long Cove, over Cove Hill (Mt. Pleasant), by Peter Bennett's house to Salt Island, and to connect with the road from Witham's Corner and through the farms, was laid out and recorded by the selectmen in 1708. This was laid four rods wide.

We find no record of a road being laid out from Pool's Bridge, or brook, through Sandy Bay village to the head of Long Cove.

In the year 1847 a stock or land company purchased quite an extensive tract of land in the centre of the village, and laid out and built Broadway. Over this purchase they laid out lots on each side thereof and put them upon the market, with the injunction that no building should be placed within ten feet of the line of the street. John W. Hadlock built the first house upon this street. It is now (1887) occupied by Wakefield Hodgkins as a residence and dry-goods store.

In the year 1852 the proprietors offered the street Broadway and all of the minor or by-way street privileges to the town free of cost. The town accepted the proposition.

Gott Street was laid out by the selectmen in 1838.

Pleasant Street and a part of School Street was laid out and opened for travel by Captain John Gott, through his land, about the year 1836.

Prospect Street was laid out and opened for travel by Andrew Lane, over his land, about the same year.

A piece of road near Gallop's Folly was built in 1852, by order of the county commissioners, at a cost of five hundred and seventy dollars. Other improvements by the same order were made at a cost of four hundred and ten dollars.

Marshall Street was laid out and built in the year 1856, at a cost of four hundred and eighty-nine dollars, including land damage.

In 1857 Pleasant Street, from Marshall Street to the cemetery gate, was opened at a cost, including land damage, of six hundred and eighty-nine dollars.

In 1860 Broadway Avenue was built from High Street to Broadway, at a cost, including land damage, of $711.50.

Railroad Avenue, from Main to King Street, was laid out by the county commissioners in 1861, and was built in 1861–62. Including land damage, it cost $3834.18.

School Street, from Main to High, was laid out by the county commissioners about the year 1836.

Forest Street, from King to Granite Street, was laid out by the county commissioners and built by the town in 1874, at a cost, including land damage, of $1599.

The continuation of Summer Street to connect with Prospect Street was done in 1872; it cost $563.

Improvement of Granite Street from Ephraim Nickerson's to Samuel Parker's house, as ordered by the county commissioners, cost $6725.

In the year 1870 the town expended in widening road at Folly Cove $265.

And on widening Mt. Pleasant Street $404.

In 1871, expended in widening and improving road at Pigeon Cove, $604.

In 1872, improvements on School Street, from Main to Broadway, the town expended $631.

In 1874 Jewett Street was built at a cost, including land damage, of $893.25.

Parker Street was laid out by the county commissioners, and was built in the year 1881, at a cost of $3348.88.

Improvements on South Street, as ordered by the county commissioners, have cost about $2000.

Town Cemeteries.—The town, in these later years, has purchased two tracts of land for cemetery purposes, one in each village, and has laid out lots therein for sale, as they may be called for by individuals.

Beech Grove, in the South Village, contains about fifteen acres, and was purchased in 1856; it has cost, with the improvements therein made, $11,219.18. A large part of the lots have been sold, from which sale the town has realized $5459.78. This cemetery is well situated, and receives considerable attention from lot-owners and from the town.

Locust Grove Cemetery, at the north part of the town (Folly Cove), contains about ten acres; it was purchased in small parts and in different years, viz., 1854, '64, '70. The whole cost, with the improvements, is $5340.43. The town has received from the sale of lots, $2252.59. A large number of good lots remain unsold. This ground is well located, and is well fitted for cemetery purposes, and is tolerably well cared for.

SECRET SOCIETIES.—There is an institution of Odd Fellows in town. *Granite Lodge, No.* 127, was organized in May, 1848, with thirty members. Its object is to promote good morals and to watch over and provide for their needy brethren. It has always been in a healthy condition; has disbursed a large amount of money in relieving the wants of the brotherhood. It now has a membership of two hundred and twenty-eight. They own a neat and pleasant hall, situated on the corner of School Street and Broadway, well appointed for the use of the order.

Ashler Lodge of Free Masons was instituted here in the year 1852, with nine members from other lodges. Eben Blatchford, Esq., was the first Grand Master. Their motto is "Faith in God, a hope of Immortality; Charity for needy members." It has disbursed a considerable amount of money to its needy members and is in good standing. It has a membership of about one hundred.

Bay Tent, No. 224, *Independent Order of Rechabites*, was instituted here March 11, 1847. October, 1849, it numbered one hundred members. Its object is to promote the cause of temperance and morality; to watch over and provide for its members when sick or needy. It yet continues its organization, though with reduced numbers, on account of many of their members leaving this organization and connecting themselves with the "Rechabite Temple of Honor." It is a good institution and has exerted a good influence.

Otis W. Wallace Post, No. 106, *G. A. R.*, is in a healthy condition and doing a good work, although it is a time of peace.

The organization of the *Sons of Veterans* is composed of young men whose hearts are full of loyalty to the Old Flag.

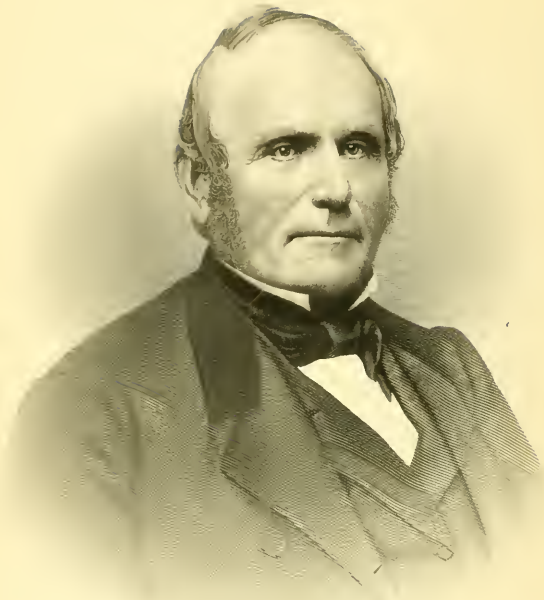
TOWN OFFICERS AND REPRESENTATIVES TO THE GENERAL COURT.

Selectmen of Gloucester from Sandy Bay before the Incorporation of Rockport.

[illegible] Davis.	1775. Same.
[illegible]	1776. Same.
[illegible]	1777. Stephen Pool.
[illegible]	1778. John Rowe.
[illegible]	1780. Mark Pool.
[illegible]	1781. Same.
[illegible]	1782. Ebenezer Cleaveland.
[illegible]	1784. Mark Pool.
[illegible]	1785. Caleb Pool.
[illegible]	1786. Same.
[illegible]	1787. Same.
[illegible]	1788. Mark Pool.
[illegible]	1789. Caleb Pool.
1790. Same.	1814. Same.
1791. Same.	1815. Same.
1792. Same.	1825. Winthrop Pool.
1793. Same.	1826. Aaron Giddings.
1794. Same.	1827. Same.
1795. Same.	1828. Same.
1796. Ebenezer Pool, Jr.	1830. George D. Hale.
1797. Benjamin Tarr.	1831. Same.
1798. James Gosse.	1832. Same.
1805. John Manning.	1833. Same.
1806. Ebenezer Oakes.	1834. Same.
1807. Caleb Norwood.	1835. Same.
1809. Caleb Norwood, Jr.	1836. John W. Marshall.
1810. Francis Norwood.	1837. Same.
1812. Same.	1838. Same.
1813. Ebenezer Oakes.	1839. James Haskell.

Selectmen of Rockport since its incorporation:

1840. David Babson, Jr.	1863. Austin W. Story.
Jas. Haskell.	William H. Bradley, Jr.
Thos. O. Marshall.	Henry Dennis, Jr.
1841. David Babson, Jr.	1864. Henry Dennis, Jr.
Jas. Haskell.	William Marchant.
Wm. H. Bradley.	David Brooks.
1842. David Babson, Jr.	1865. Henry Dennis, Jr.
Wm. H. Bradley.	William Marchant.
Wm. P. Burns.	William Caldwell.
1843. Same.	1866. Same.
1844. Same.	1867. Same.
1845. David Babson, Jr.	1868. Henry Dennis, Jr.
Wm. P. Burns.	Austin W. Story.
Geo. D. Hale.	Ezekiel Bradstreet.
1846. Same.	1869. Austin W. Story.
1847. David Babson, Jr.	Francis Tarr, Jr.
Benj. Tarr.	William Caldwell.
John Pool.	1870. Austin W. Story.
1848. Same.	Francis Tarr, Jr.
1849. David Babson, Jr.	James Fernald, Jr.
Wm. Boynton.	1871. James W. Bradley.
Wm. P. Burns.	Henri N. Woods.
1850. David Babson, Jr.	Abraham Lurvey.
Wm. Boynton.	1872. James W. Bradley.
Geo. Gott, Jr.	Abraham Lurvey.
1851. David Babson, Jr.	John W. Marshall.
Wm. Boynton.	1873. John W. Marshall.
James Manning.	Abraham Lurvey.
1852. Jas. Manning.	Henry Dennis, Jr.
Wm. H. Bradley.	1874. Same.
Thos. Hale.	1875. Same.
1853. Thos. Hale.	1876. Same.
John W. Marshall.	1877. Same.
Dudley Choate.	1878. John W. Marshall.
1854. John W. Marshall.	Abraham Lurvey.
Dudley Choate.	Andrew F. Clark.
Amos Story.	1879. John W. Marshall.
1855. James Manning.	Andrew F. Clark.
Wm. H. Bradley.	Stillman L. Mason.
Benjamin Atwood.	1880. John W. Marshall.
1856. John W. Marshall.	Andrew F. Clark.
Washington Tarr.	Abraham Lurvey.
Daniel Wheeler.	1881. Jason L. Curtis.
1857. John W. Marshall.	George A. Lowe.
Washington Tarr.	Nathaniel F. S. York.
Austin W. Story.	1882. Same.
1858. Austin W. Story.	1883. Nathaniel F. S. York.
James Manning.	Nathaniel Richardson, Jr.
Alfred Parsons.	Austin W. Story.
1859. John Manning.	1884. Same.
Moses Haskins.	1886. Nathaniel F. S. York.
Wm. Marchant.	Henry H. Thurston.
1860. John W. Marshall.	Joseph B. Dunahue.
William Marchant.	1886. Nathaniel F. S. York.
Addison Gott.	Joseph B. Dunahue.
1861. Same.	William Lowe.
1862. Joshua Tarr.	1887. Charles H. Cleaves.
Austin W. Story.	Joseph B. Dunahue.
William H. Bradley, Jr.	Otis E. Smith



Ezra Eames

School Committees.

1840. Dr Lemuel Gott.
Joseph R. Manoiog.
William Mann.
1841. William Whipple.
William Mann.
Lemuel Gott.
1842. Wm. Boynton.
Jabez R. Gott.
John Harris.
1843. William Boynton.
William Caldwell.
John Harris.
1844. Lemuel Gott.
William Caldwell.
William Mann.
1845. Same.
1846. Same.
1847. William Caldwell.
John Manning.
William Mann.
1848. Lemuel Gott.
William Caldwell.
Epes Young.
1849. Benjamin Giles
William Boynton.
Epes Young.
1850. Alfred C. Pool.
Lemuel Gott.
Epes Young.
1851. Joseph Bartlett.
Lemuel Gott.
William Mann.
1852. William Pool.
Joseph Bartlett.
Moses Mayo.
1853. Same.
1854. Benjamin Giles.
Rev. A. C. L. Arnold.
Austin W. Story.
1855. Same.
1856. William Caldwell.
John Manning.
William Mann.
1857. James Haskell.
Benjamin Tarr.
Joshua Tarr.
William Mann.
Thomas Hale.
1858. Benjamin Giles.
William Mann.
Samuel H. Brooks.
1859 Rev Elijah Mason.
William Mann.
David Brooks, Jr.
1860. Rev Elijah Mason
Benjamin Tarr.
William Mann.
1861. Rev. Elijah Mason.
Benjamin Tarr.
John W. Legaller.
1862. Benjamin Tarr.
John W. Legaller.
Rev. Elijah Mason.[1]
1863. Rev. Stillman Barden.
Henry Dennis, Jr.
1864. Rev. Stillman Barden.[2]
Henry Dennis, Jr.
Daniel Wheeler.
1865. Henry Dennis.
Daniel Wheeler.
1866. Nathaniel F. S. York.
Andrew F. Clark.
Daniel Wheeler.
1867. Same.
1868. Andrew F. Clark.
Daniel A. Wheeler.
Daniel Wheeler.
1869. Nathaniel F. S. York.
William Marchant
Ezekiel Bradstreet.
1870. Nathaniel F. S York.
Calvin W. Pool.
Frank H. Knowlton.
1871. Same.
1872. Nathaniel F. S. York.
Calvin W. Pool.
Rev. C. A. Merrill.
1873. Nathaniel F. S. York.
Calvin W. Pool.
Rev. Henry C. Leonard.
1874. Nathaniel F. S. York.
Rev. H. C. Leonard.
Dr. Edward E. Barden.
1875. Dr. Edward E. Barden.[3]
Rev. H. C. Leonard.
Andrew F. Clark.
1876. Rev. H. C. Leonard.
Henry Dennis, Jr.
John W. Marshall.
1877. Same.
1878. Rev. Henry C. Leonard.[4]
John W. Marshall.
Nathaniel F. S. York.
1879. Same.
1880. Same.
1881. Nathaniel F. S. York.
Stillman L. Mason.
John W. Marshall.
1882. Nathaniel F. S. York.
John W. Marshall.
John C. Pierce.
1883. Nathaniel F. S. York.
John C. Pierce.
Dr. John E. Sanborn.
1884. Dr. John E. Sanborn.
John C Pierce.
James S. Rogers.
1885. Dr. John E. Sanborn.
James S. Rogers.
Nathaniel F. S. York.
1886. Nathaniel F. S. York.
John C. Pierce.
Dr. Charles B. Hall.
1887. Dr Charles B. Hall.
Nathaniel F. S York.
William Marchant.

Town Treasurers.

1840–42. Capt. John Gott.
1843–51. Addison Gott.
1852–54. James Manning.
1855–56. George Gott, Jr.[5]
1857–64. Henry Clark.
1865–87. Joseph Manning.

[1] He died before the close of the year.
[2] Died before the close of the year.
[3] He died before the close of the school year.
[4] Died in 1880.
[5] Died while in office.

Town Clerks.

1840–68. Col. William Pool.
1869–87. Calvin W. Pool.

Representatives.—Representatives from Sandy Bay to the General Court were chosen as follows:

1806. Caleb Norwood, Jr.
1807. Same.
1809–15. John Manning, M.D.
1830. John Gott.
Aaron Giddings.
1831. John Gott.
Solomon Pool.
1832. James Goss, M.D.
Nehemiah Knowlton.
Gorham Babson.
1833. George Lane.
Josiah Griffin.
Gorham Babson.
1834 Josiah Griffin.
Gorham Babson.
1834. John Blatchford.
1835. John Blatchford.
James Harris.
Timothy R. Davis.
1836. Timothy R. Davis.
John Davis.
James Harris.
1837. John Davis.
Eleazer Boynton.
David Dunahue.
1838. Eleazer Boynton.
William B. Haskins.
1839. Samuel L. Andrews.
1840. William B. Haskins.

Representatives to the General Court from Rockport.

1841. James P. Tarr.
1842. None.
1843. Thomas O. Marshall.
1844. William Grover.
1845. " "
1846 to '50 inclusive. None.
1851. Addison Gott.
1852. Newell Burnham.
1853 and '54. None.
1855. Benjamin Parsons, Jr.
1856. Samuel York.
1857. Thomas Hale.
1858. Wm. W. Marshall.
1859. Henry T. Lowe.
1860. John D. Sanborn.
1861. Austin W. Story.
1862. Moses Pool.
1863. Rev. David Bremner.
1864. Austin W. Story.
1865. Amos Rowe, Jr.
1866. William Caldwell.
1867. Benjamin Hale.
1868. Moses Pool.
1869. Ambrous Hodgkins.
1870. William Marchant.
1871. Rev. George H. Vibbert.
1872. James W. Bradley.
1873. " "
1874. John J. Giles.
1875. Henry Dennis, Jr.
1876. " " "
1877. William Marchant.
1878. Jason L. Curtis.
1879. Amos Rowe.
1880. Wm. H. Sargent (7th Ward, Gloucester)
1881. Nathaniel Richardson, Jr.
1882. Jason L. Curtis.
1883. Edward H. Shaw.
1884. George Elwell.
1885. John G. Dennis.
1886. Rufus McLellen (7th Ward, Gloucester).
887. Theodore L. Pool.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

EZRA EAMES.

Ezra Eames was born in Holliston, Mass., August 26, 1801. He was the son of Isaac Eames, an officer in the War of 1812; one of six children,—two boys and four girls. The only survivor of the family, Mrs. Betsey Marsh, now resides in Napoli, N. Y. At a very tender age Ezra accompanied his father from Holliston to a town in one of the western counties of New York State, but being unable to content himself away from his native State, he returned in a short time to Cambridge, Mass., where he secured employment in a pork-packing establishment, and here, with but six dollars in this world's goods and an invincible determination to work out his own destiny, single-handed and alone, he began the great battle of life. He remained here until 1827, when ambition led him to seek a broader field of usefulness; thus at the age of

twenty-six years he came to that part of Gloucester called Sandy Bay, and after an investigation of the place and its opportunities for business, his keen foresight and superior judgment led him to take hold in earnest of the stone business. Therefore, with Mr. Beniah Colburn as partner, they began operations at what is now known as the Colburn Pit, at Pigeon Cove. After a few years' association with Mr. Colburn, by mutual consent this partnership was dissolved, and a new partnership, under the firm-name of Eames, Stimson & Co., was organized. This partnership developed those extensive quarries now the plant of the Rockport Granite Company, and here was devoted the full vigor of his middle life, as during the War of the Rebellion they furnished thousands of tons of granite for the State and country, viz., the fortifications of Boston, Portsmouth and Portland harbors, the Charles Street Jail and State's Prison at Boston, and others that we might mention. He was a public-spirited citizen, a prominent leader in the founding of many of the enterprises of Cape Ann and other parts of this State, among which was the Annisquam Mills erected in 1847; was one of the founders of the Rockport Bank, was its first president at its organization, in 1851, and remained so until his death; he was interested in the Pigeon Cove Harbor Company, the Lanescove Pier Company, the Rockport Branch of the Eastern Railroad, constructed in 1860–61, and active in its interests until sold to the Eastern Railroad in 1868; president of the Cape Ann Isinglass Company, and the very leader in the establishment of the First National Bank of Gloucester, organized in 1865; a director of the Mystic River Improvement Company, in the Bunker Hill District, Boston.

He married Miss Miriam R. Colburn in 1836. The result of this union was two sons and six daughters, who all (with the exception of the wife, who died in 1879, and one daughter in childhood) survive him. He was a stanch Republican, but had no desire for office of any kind; a firm temperance advocate and a devout defender of Rockport's famous "Hatchet Gang," so-called—being a company of ladies who, without invitation, entered the places where liquor was kept, ejected the packages, and with their hatchets caused small rivers of rum to run in our public streets, in 1856. His religious expressions and devotions were in sympathy with the Universalists—generous in his support of the same. He was sincere in his belief that usefulness was the great object of man's creation, that a promise was sacred, and at all hazard should be kept and fulfilled. A man of individuality, of decision; possessed of those qualities of mind and heart that lived above the performance of any unmanly act.

He passed on to his rest, August 17, 1874, at the age of seventy-two years. A coincidence of this date is the fact that while one life was passing off life's busy stage, another was stepping on, for in an adjoining room to the one where a noble life had just closed, another, Ezra Eames Cleaves' (a grandson's) life began. Ezra Eames, faithful to life's end! More cannot be said of any that have lived.

CHAPTER CXVI.

NAHANT.

BY EDWARD J. JOHNSON.

Early Traditions—Early Settlements—Genealogies of the Johnson, Hood and Breed Families—Nahant in 1800—War of 1812—Descriptive Letter—The Hotel—Steamboat Landing—Steamboats—Francis Johnson—Cornelius Coolidge—Mr. Frederick Tudor.

Early Traditions.—Nahant, one of the smallest in population and number of acres of any town in the county of Essex, was one of the earliest of the many settlements which the Puritans founded along our coasts. By going back to the early voyages of Thorwald, Gosnold, Pring and John Smith, to the landing of our fathers at Plymouth, and so down through the colonial records of court and town, we can extract from them the history of Nahant.

From the stories of the Norse voyages we learn that Thorwold, in 1004, spent the winter in Narragansett Bay, and in the spring set sail to find his way back to the coast of Greenland. Working his way aronnd Cape Cod, which he called Kialarnes, he sailed northward to the main land, and came to anchor near a bold promontory which projected into the sea, covered with forest to the water's edge. He was so delighted with the place that he exclaimed: "Here it is beautiful, and here I should like to fix my dwelling!"

While at anchor near this promontory, and while preparing to go ashore, the Norsemen discovered three small canoes, each containing three natives, whom they pursued, killing all but one, who escaped to his tribe. He, with just indignation, soon returned with others of his tribe to destroy, if possible, the Northmen, who had so cruelly betrayed their confidence. But the arrows and the frail birch canoe of the natives were as nothing compared with the battle-screens raised by the Northmen on their ship's side; so that the natives soon retired, but not until they had mortally wounded Thorwold, who had only time to say, "This is my death-blow; I desire you to depart as soon as possible, but first take my body to the shore and bury it upon the promontory before you, where I had intended to make my abode. I shall now dwell there forever. Place a cross at my head and also at my feet, and call the place Krossanes."

Abbot, in his "History of Maine," says: "This event took place, as it is supposed, near Boston Harbor. It was the first conflict between the native

Americans and the Europeans, and in this encounter the Europeans were probably outrageously in the wrong." Thorwald's men, after the death of their leader, returned to Narragansett Bay, where they spent the winter, and in the spring set sail for Greenland with a cargo of wood and furs.

Lewis, in his "History of Lynn," says: "The question has arisen whether Krossanes was Nahant or Gurnet Point." There is nothing remarkable about the latter place, and though so long a time has passed, no person has thought it desirable to dwell there, but it is used as a pasture for sheep. It is far otherwise with Nahant, which answers the description well; and thousands, on visiting it, have born witness to the appropriateness of Thorwald's exclamation: "Here it is beautiful, and here I should like to fix my dwelling-place!"

The above account of Thorwald would be a very important historical record in the history of Nahant, if we could find sufficient authority to identify it with "Krossanes," the promontory near which Thorwald anchored his ship; with the beach where he saw the Indians; the bay where the one surviving Indian escaped and returned with his fleet of canoes; the point or cove where the first battle between the Indian and the European was fought in New England; the landing-place where they made the grave for Thorwald, and where they erected the two crosses. But the shadowy history of nearly a thousand years ago is but a story that must be read and weighed by the reader, who can judge for himself whether Nahant was "Krossanes"—the Cape of the Cross.

That it should have been Nahant is certainly very possible. Abbot admits it to be near Boston Harbor, and Lewis also is in favor of Nahant.

Coming to a later day, we find that John Smith, in his voyages along the New England coast, noticed Nahant, which he called the Mattahunt Isles, and made a landing there. He also speaks of the iron-mines, referring to the cliffs on the northeast coast of the peninsula, which much resemble iron-ore. But although John Smith called Nahant the Mattahunt Isles, yet, according to the earliest records about the time of Governor Endicott, it is mentioned as Nahant, so called probably from an Indian chief named Nahanton.

Early Settlements.—By early records we find that Robert Gorges, in 1622, obtained a grant of lands in Massachusetts Bay, in which grant Nahant was included. Before Blackstone or Johnson made their home at Boston, settlers were tilling the soil of Nahant and cutting down the woods for their dwellings and fences, as a settlement was probably made there previous to 1630 or thereabouts.

This is proved by the deposition of one William Dixey, which we quote below:

"Sworne saith, that about twenty-eight years agoe, Mr. Isaak Johnson, being my master, Writt to the Hon'rd Govern'r: as now is Mr. Endicott for a place to sitt downe in upon which Mr. Endicott gave me and the rest leave to go where wee would, upon which I went to Saugust, now Linne, and there we mett with Sagamore James and some other Indians, whoe did give me and the rest leave to dwell there or thereabouts, whereupon I and the rest of my master's company did cutt grass for our cattell and kept them upon Nahant for some space of time, for the Indian, James Sagamore and the rest, did give me and the rest, in behalf of my master, Johnson, wt land wee would, whereupon we sett down in Saugust and had quiet possession of it by the above said Indians and kept our cattell in Nahant the summer following."

(Deposition given May 1, 1657.)

After this date (1630) Isaac Johnson left Lynn for Boston, being one of its first settlers. This first settlement at Nahant was made with the full consent of the Indians, all living in peace together.

Thus the first settlers obtained a title to their lands first from Gov. Endicott to go where they would, and afterwards from the Indian, Sagamore James.

Lynn, including Nahant, was a large township adjoining the town of Salem, the first landing-place of the Puritans. In this large territory the Puritans placed their homes at long distances from each other, in convenient or chosen spots, each family occupying large tracts of land. A few families gathered at Tower Hill, Breed's End, Sagamore Hill and Swampscott, as well as at Nahant.

Although there was so much land, far more than could be utilized, yet soon after the settlements had been made disputes and much quarreling arose over titles and boundaries. In order to peacefully settle this question, the majority agreed to allot to each settler as much as it was thought each needed, the remainder being held in common, subject to vote in town-meeting. To this arrangement there was a dissatisfied minority, who purchased of the Indian sagamores their favorite tracts of land, as they deemed the Indians the true owners. Among these purchasers was one Thomas Dexter, who, by verbal purchase, bought Sagamore Hill and Nahant, claiming them as his own, tilling the soil and making inclosures for his cattle, and denying the right of any one to interfere with his fences. Dexter's fellow-townspeople of Lynn decidedly objected to his claim of Nahant, causing much ill-feeling, which finally resulted in a suit at court, which made a great deal of trouble for the newly incorporated town. Nahant was especially desirable on account of its excellent pasture lands for cattle, as a fence placed across the northwest end of Long Beach protected the whole peninsula, keeping the cattle safely enclosed, besides serving as a barrier to keep out the bears and wolves. These great advantages were not overlooked by the settlers at Nahant, who deemed it a locality worth contending for.

It is not therefore at all surprising to find at this time several claimants for Nahant. One was Thomas Dexter, who, as we have said above, claimed it by right of purchase from the Indians. There is in a deposition evidence sufficient to show that he purchased Nahant, fenced it in, and that a suit of clothes was a part of the consideration paid. Another claim-

aut was the town of Lynn, whose early settlers claimed it by their right of first settlement, and who had given it to the rest of the townspeople, to be used in common.

Still another claim made was by the settlers who had already taken land at Nahant, and who were much annoyed by the appearance of two rent-gatherers, one sent by Thomas Dexter, the other by the settlers at Lynn. Many of the settlers, becoming disgusted, moved away to more peaceful abiding-places, but the more stubborn remained to contest their own right of free settlement, refusing to pay any tax levied upon them.

The contest for Nahant appears to have been both severe and stubborn, so much so, that after the town of Lynn had voted to allot the land at Nahant equally to the several proprietors, it was voted at a subsequent town-meeting, "that the soil should be sown down to English grass, and that no house should be left standing!" Such an act it is hardly possible to find elsewhere; but in spite of it, the administrators of Thomas Dexter appealed to the decision of the court. In 1676 the case was decided against them in favor of the town of Lynn.

We next hear of Nahant in 1687, when the notorious Edward Randolph, the English commissioner of Charles II.'s time, petitioned "His Excellency, Sir Edward Andros, Knight, Governor, etc., etc," for a grant of Nahant. In 1706 Lynn voted to divide its lands among the townspeople and received from the courts the legal right to hold and divide all the common land. A committee composed of three persons, citizens of other towns, made a division and reported it to the town-meeting, when it was duly accepted. Previous to this act of the town a deed of Nahant had been procured by Lynn from the Indians, dated September 4, 1686, thus making the title of Nahant satisfactory after seventy years of contest at law.

The committee just mentioned divided Nahant into two hundred and eight lots, the largest containing four acres and six rods, the smallest thirty-eight rods. The division was made by making eleven strips or ranges forty rods wide, running across the peninsula from northeast to southwest.

Bass Point was laid out in six ranges, running east and west, and Little Nahant in two ranges. Between these ranges of land a narrow strip of land one rod wide was left for a right of way to the several lots that were laid out across these ranges; the lot lines running at right angles with the narrow roadway. These lots were conveyed by written deed, under seal and recorded, giving title to other and new proprietors. These strangers, who now began to come and cut the grass in the fields which the settlers had tilled and occupied, and which had been the playground of their children, declared the land their own, with the authority which comes from the vote of a town meeting, sanctioned by the supreme ruling of the courts of England. The title of all the lands on Nahant rest to-day on this town vote of 1706.

On the 26th of July, 1708, Dr. John Burchsted attached the house of Hugh Alley, Jr., at Nahant, bringing a suit of trespass against him for cutting and hauling away about ten hundred pounds of English hay from his land. The land from which Alley took the hay was from the lots in the fourth range, laid out to Joseph Collins Jr. and Samuel Newhall, and had been purchased from them by Dr. Burchsted. Hugh Alley claimed this land, "having held and enjoyed it for above fifty years last past down to this last year by mowing, fencing and improving, without disturbance or molestation till now."

He further claimed that the town of Lynn gave him eight acres of land at Nahant for his services in the Pequot War. Dr. Burchsted's evidence was that Alley was a tenant only, and paid rent to the town of Lynn, for the land which Alley claimed had been decided to be the property of Lynn previous to 1706. Of course Alley could furnish no legal title against Burchsted, and so he was forced to abandon his claim, and was fined, with the costs of the suit. It is not, however, to be wondered at that Hugh Alley, after a peaceful and unmolested residence of his father and himself for upwards of fifty years, should jealously defend this house, and gather in his barn the hay mowed by others than himself. The decree of court and the fine caused Alley to abandon Nahant and make Lynn his home.

The several depositions in this case prove most conclusively that Alley Sr. lived at Nahant as early as 1647, making him the second known inhabitant; for in an indenture made between one Armitage and the citizens of Lynn in the year 1656, 19th day, 1st Month, we find the following phrase: "For as much wood as groweth upon six acres of land on Nahant, near unto ye place where Thomas Graves' house stood," showing that one Thomas Graves had lived at Nahant and had had a house there, which had been destroyed prior to the year 1656. This makes Graves the first known inhabitant and Alley the second.

Probably two settlers, named Lindsay and Fferne, also lived on Nahant about this time, as Susanna Fferne's testimony in the land controversy shows. She "Testifieth that ye Land in Controversie between Doctor Burshted and Hugh Allie, Ever since my remembrance (for at best thirty years), has been in ye possession of and improvement of Hugh Allie, deceased, and James Mills under him, and they never have been dispossessed by any man, and that ye sd Land has been fenced in ever since my remembrance, I being Borne at Nahant, near ye same place. I further testifie yt Hugh Allie, Deceased, had another piece of Land fenced in where his House stood, which was a considerable distance from ye land in Controversie, which now lies common, and has dun soe for many years." The suit of Burchsted *vs.*

Alley settled the land controversies on Nahant, the owners now beginning to convey their lands and give a good title.

Hugh Alley, Sr., one of the earliest and most prominent settlers at Nahant, the only one who kept his home there in opposition to the decree of Lynn that it should be sown to English grass, deserves more than a passing notice. The first that is known of him is in 1635, when, at the age of twenty-seven years, he embarked, a "no subsidy" man, from Stepney Parish in England, in the ship "Abigail," bound for New England. In company with him were Henry and Ann Collins, with three children—Henry, John and Margery. Hugh Alley probably married Mary Graves, daughter of Thomas Graves, by whom he had eight children,—Mary, born January 6, 1642; John, born November 30, 1646; Martha, born July 31, 1649; Sarah, born April 15, 1651; Hugh, born May 15, 1653; Solomon, born August 2, 1656; Hannah, born June 1, 1661; Jacob, born September 5, 1663. He must have settled at Nahant as early as 1647 or '48, as six of his children were born here. John Lewis, aged seventy-eight years, testifieth "that I plowed ye land in controversie for Hugh Alley for forty years from year to year, to my best remembrance." Also by deposition of Benjamin Collins, aged about sixty years, who "testifieth to his knowledge that said Alley had another field within fence, where his house stood, some distance from ye land in controversie." Eleanor Hudson, aged seventy-seven years, gave the same testimony, and Joanna Alley, of full age, testified that she saw her mother-in-law, Mary Graves, above named, put James Mills in possession of "ye aforesaid house and land that was formerly in ye possession of Hugh Alley about thirty-three years since." According to this testimony of Joanna Alley, the house and barn of Hugh Alley were standing in 1673 or '74. These depositions also show that the remainder of Nahant, outside of the Alley farm, was laid out and used in common for pasture by the townspeople of Lynn.

Hugh Alley served in the Pequot War, as by deposition of Benjamin Collins and others, "the land now in controversie, called the Hope Well, was given to Hugh Alley for his services in the Pequot War." It would seem that they were a sturdy, fighting family, for his son Solomon was killed afterwards in King Philip's War.

The exact spot upon which Alley's house stood cannot be definitely determined. The only indication we have is that it was not far from Hope Well, which was in the fourth range, so that the house must have stood on land partly owned now by Mr. Albert Whitney and Mr. Fred. Sears, probably in the north corner of the Sears lot. The place named Hope Well was probably so called from the name of the ship "Hope Well," which arrived at Salem, September, 1635, bringing among its passengers Joanna and Mary Graves, aged thirty and twenty-six respectively, who were probably children of Thomas Graves, as they came to Nahant, where Graves was settled. Hugh Alley died January 25, 1674.

Martha, one of the daughters of Hugh Alley, married James Mills, who tended the sheep and cattle and occupied the house of his father-in law. Hugh Alley, Jr., married Rebecca Hood, December 9, 1681, and left five children,—Rebecca, Benjamin, Jacob, Samuel and Hannah. Thus through all the turmoil and strife for the soil of Nahant, Hugh Alley and his descendants defended themselves, keeping their buildings and fences standing.

The homestead was a most desirable dwelling-place; it had the best of soil for farming, with numerous springs of water, an abundant supply of wood, besides being a safe place for the pasturage of cattle. There were plenty of fish and sea-birds, with an abundance of plover and land-birds, making a home surrounded with plenty at its very doors. This was too much for one or two to enjoy and soon attracted others, and it was about this time that Isaac Johnson and Saltonstall sent their servants to take charge of cattle sent to graze on these fields so early cleared by the first settlers. These settlers stayed in Nahant until Boston and Charlestown opened border fields, with an abundance of salt marsh land from which hay could be procured for feeding cattle through the winter.

Joseph Jacobs married one of the daughters of Alley and became a large land-owner on Nahant, but he conveyed his lands to other parties and moved to Lynn.

Among other early settlers are John and Michael Lambert, the latter of whom married Eleanor Hudson, and lived near Alley for about twenty-four years.

Christopher Lindsay, another early settler, also lived on the land called Hope Well for four or five years—"till his death." Susanna Fferne, born at Nahant in 1664, married Michael Lombard, and lived at Nahant upwards of twenty-four years; but to trace these would hardly be worth the time and research necessary.

Ann, the daughter of Benjamin B. Alley, son of Hugh Alley, Jr., married Jonathan Johnson. They lived near the spot where Hugh Alley's house stood.

From two of his sons, Joseph and Caleb, the numerous family of Johnsons sprang, living, some of them, on those inclosed acres settled by Hugh Alley in 1647, or two hundred and thirty-nine years ago. Samuel Breed, Sr., who married Annie Hood, February 5, 1696, a sister of the wife of Hugh Alley, Jr., bought sixty acres of land from Dr. Burchsted and others in 1717, which he conveyed to two of his sons, Samuel and Jabez, in the year 1735. In 1738 they divided it between them, and the next year Jabez sold his land to Richard Hood and moved to Lynn. It is uncertain whether Samuel Breed, Sr., lived at Nahant previous to 1717, when he purchased his land

there; but his two sons were both living there in separate houses before 1739. His marriage to the sister of the wife of Hugh Alley, Jr., may have induced him to make Nahant his home, as some of his children were born there, viz.: Samuel, Ann, Jabez, Martha, Vesiah, Ruth, Ebenezer and Benjamin. Subsequent marriages show that the descendants of Hugh Alley returned to the old homestead and made Nahant their home; so this homestead, over which there had been so much quarreling, again came into the possession of the descendants, being occupied consecutively by the Alleys, James Mills, Samuel Breed, Sr. and Jr., and their descendants. Jabez Breed built a house which he conveyed to Richard Hood, making two houses only on Nahant at that time.

The first known ancestor of the Johnson family at Nahant is JOHN JOHNSON (a cousin of Isaac Johnson), who came from England with his wife Margery, and his children, Isaac and Humphrey. He probably had other children besides these, as he speaks of five in his will in 1629. He settled at Roxbury, and was admitted freeman in 1630.

He was a learned and leading man in the colonies, and represented the town of Roxbury in the General Court for many years. He was also surveyor-general of the arms of the colonies.

Mr. Edward Johnson, of Woburn, says: "To write the history of John Johnson would fill a volume, and his worth as one of the founders of the government of the colonies of Massachusetts is too well-known to be recorded here." He died September 29, 1659. Margery, his wife, died June 9, 1655.

Humphrey, a son of John Johnson, married Ellen Cheney March 20, 1642. Their children were Mehitable, born September, 1644; Deborah, born June 20, 1650 (these two were born at Roxbury); John, born March, 1653; Joseph, born June 24, 1655; Benjamin, born August 27, 1657; Margaret, born August, 1659 (the last four were born at Scituate).

Humphrey, attorney for Plymouth, witnessed the will of Governor Winthrop, and was a leading man both in Plymouth and Scituate.

John, a son of Humphrey, married Mary —— ——. Their children were Elizabeth, born May 19, 1675; Joseph, born October, 1677; Rebecca, born November 17, 1679; Rachel, born December 23, 1681; Jonathan, born February 20, 1682—all born at Rehoboth.

JONATHAN JOHNSON came to Lynn in 1706, and married Sarah Mansfield May 30, 1710. The inhabitants of the town of Lynn granted him, in town-meeting a piece of land "to set his house upon." On his first coming to Lynn he was warned out of town by the constable, but refused to go. Ten years later he was chosen constable and gave similar warnings to those who came into the settlement. The children of Jonathan Johnson and Sarah Mansfield were Mary, born 1712; Phebe born 1714; Sarah, born 1718; Edward, born 1721; Jonathan, born 1723; Elizabeth, born 1726.

Sarah, wife of Jonathan Johnson, died in 1726, and he married for his second wife Susanna Mower, in the year 1726. Jonathan Johnson died at Lynn June 14, 1741, in his fifty-eighth year.

Of his sons, Edward lived at Lynn and Salem, where he proved himself a successful merchant. His descendants now live in Boston and Lynn.

Jonathan, when a young man, enlisted in a cavalry regiment, under the command of Major Graves, and fought in the French and Indian Wars, from which event in his life he gained the sobriquet of "Trooper." After returning home he learned chair-making and also block-making, and soon after moved to Marblehead, where he worked at his trade.

He married, June 11, 1745, Katherine Brummage, who died February 13, 1753. They had one child, Jonathan, born December 29, 1745, who died in his youth.

For his second wife he married Susanna Farrington, July 25, 1753. Their children were Mary, born May 8, 1755; Rebecca, born February 26, 1757; William, born January 3, 1759.

He married for his third wife Ann Alley, the widow of Thomas Williams, and a granddaughter of Hugh Alley. He then bought out Jeremiah Gray's interest in Nahant and moved there, where his three sons were born—Benjamin, October 11, 1771; Joseph, February 12, 1776; and Caleb, December 7, 1778.

He spent his time at Nahant in farming and fishing and following his trade. On one occasion, while out fishing in his boat, the "Jolly Venture," a severe northwest gale arose, carrying away the sails of his little craft and making her unmanageable; however, with the pieces of sail he had, he managed to make a landing on the lower part of Cape Cod, where he lost his boat, but saved himself. From there he traveled on foot, following along the shore, receiving the charity of the settlers, who gave him lodging and food, until he reached home, after two weeks of hardship, with feet and hands frost-bitten. It is said that afterwards he would stand in his doorway whenever the wind blew furiously and curse the north wind. He died in 1799, while living with his son, Caleb Johnson.

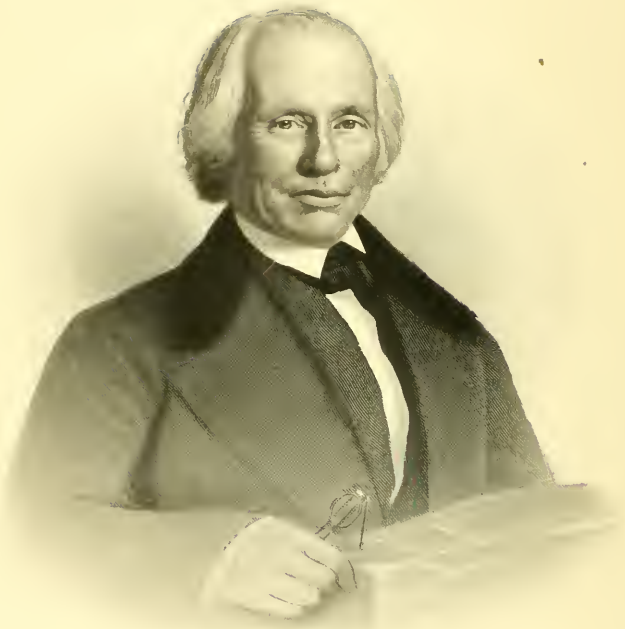
The three sons of Jonathan Johnson—Benjamin, Joseph and Caleb—served an apprenticeship of seven years at the shoemaker's trade with their half-brother, Thomas Williams.

Benjamin married Betsy Batchelder, September 24, 1795, and made Market Street, Lynn, his home. Their children were Anna, born November 2, 1785; Lewis, born January, 1800, died January 15, 1801; Benjamin, born July 1, 1804; Jonathan, born September 19, 1806, died young.

Among the country people who came to Nahant for pleasure and health were Mr. and Mrs. Hartwell, of Claremont, with their daughter Olive. An attach-



Edwd. Johnson



Joseph Johnson

ment was formed between Olive Hartwell and Caleb Johnson, but at the time of the departure of Mr. Hartwell and his family he had not been accepted as a suitor for the daughter. In this condition of affairs the father and daughter left Nahant for their journey homeward, but Caleb, unwilling to be left behind, followed the retreating vehicle on horseback. He overtook them in Malden, and followed close after until Worcester was reached; here Mr. Hartwell, thinking such persistency should be rewarded, offered his seat in the vehicle to Caleb, while he rode the horse; thus the engagement was made, and soon after Olive Hartwell became the wife of Caleb Johnson, in the year 1798.

Caleb Johnson always lived in the old Johnson homestead, where he commenced his married life, and where all his children where born. Nearly all his life was spent in the fishing business. He was a part owner of the "Dolphin," "Jefferson" and "Lafayette," which vessels he commanded the most of the time they were employed in the fishing business at Nahant. He was noted for his great endurance and his remarkable memory. He would remember the accounts of the sale of his fares of fish to the various customers during the week, so that when he received the money for himself and crew, it was always found correct, as verified by the book account which had been kept by the customers.

In the forwarding of the building and maintaining of school and church, he contributed money, and bore the same burdens with his brother Joseph, although his name does not appear as prominent in the official government of these institutions as that of his brother Joseph.

A severe accident, occasioned by a fall, unfitted him from the further pursuit of fishing, which he had steadily followed for about fifty years. Yet he always held an interest in the fishing fleet; to use his own words, "he always wanted to own a timber-head in some of the boats," and he held an interest in the last boat of the fleet until the time of his death. When an old man, over eighty-four years old, it was not uncommon to see him, before the break of day, at anchor in his dory patiently waiting for the "daylight spurt."

He died at the advanced age of eighty-nine years.

The old Johnson homestead was built about a hundred and fifty years from the present date, and has been occupied by members of the Johnson family for more than a century. There, four generations of the family have lived. Some of the rooms in the old homestead, the "cradle of the Johnson family," now remain the same as then occupied by the generations who have passed away.

The small windows and paneled walls, the narrow door, the old-fashioned furniture, the folding-bed, the old clock, the two small rocking-chairs which Caleb and Olive Johnson occupied, facing each other in their chosen places by the fire-place, where the embers for so many years never went out, were familiar sights to many.

In the homestead Caleb and Olive Johnson commenced their married life in 1798, and all their children were born there. It is a notable fact that the first death that occurred in Caleb Johnson's family was the death of his wife at the advanced age of eighty-four years.

Mrs. Johnson, or Aunt Olive, as she was familiarly called, was in many respects a remarkable woman, and possessed to a marked degree those qualities which make up the excellent wife and mother. Her judgment was always wise and foreseeing, and her children, when grown up to men and women, would always come back to her for counsel and guidance in whatever business enterprises they were about to engage.

The children of Caleb and Olive Johnson were Mary, born December 6, 1800; Welcome William, born August 26, 1803; George L., born April 8, 1806; Clara, born March 15, 1808; Edward Augustus, born June 15, 1810; Caleb Hervey, born May 21, 1812; Daniel W., born February 5, 1815; Olive Cornelia, born February 12, 1817; William Frederick, born July 30, 1819; Charles Warren, born January 2, 1823.

Joseph Johnson married Mary Cox, daughter of Captain Francis Cox, of Salem, May 7, 1797; and commenced his married life on Broad Street, Lynn, but returned to Nahant a few years later and built his house there.

The children of Joseph and Mary Johnson were Joseph, born January 5, 1798; Jonathan, born February 6, 1800; Francis, born July 3, 1802; Eliza, born July 29, 1806; Pamelia, born October 11, 1808; Washington Harlow, born July 16, 1811; Dolly Madison, born July 28, 1813; Walter, born October 20, 1816.

Mrs. Mary Johnson died November 19, 1818; and June 1, 1819, Joseph Johnson married Miss Betsy Graves, daughter of Captain Nathaniel Graves, of North Reading.

Their children were Daniel Alfred, born April 26, 1820; Edward Kirke, born November 7, 1822; Frederick Henry, born April 30, 1825; Franklin Everett, born November 4, 1827; Mary Graves, born April 15, 1830, died 1831; Edmund Buxton, born July 13, 1832.

Joseph Johnson's long and useful life was nearly all spent at Nahant. In the winter months he was engaged in fishing, in summer in farming. For many years the simple sign marked J. Johnson was nailed to the west corner of his house, which was one of the first hotels in the town. It dated back to 1812, and was familiarly known as Johnson's hotel.

He was among the first to forward the building of a church and school-house at Nahant, and contributed his full share in money, as well as generously furnishing board to the workmen while constructing the build-

ing,—a sacrifice known only to the pioneers who zealously founded and cared for these institutions.

In records of the past the name of Joseph is conspicuous as a member of the School Committee and as a member of the First Methodist Church in Lynn, until the building of the village church at Nahant, where he served as trustee and deacon until his death, in 1854.

Richard Hood (mentioned above), the son of Richard Hood, Sr., was born in Lynn. He married Theodate Collins, May 20, 1718; and had nine children, viz.,—Theodate, born October 27, 1719; Jedediah, born September 25, 1721; Content, born December 20, 1722; Rebecca, born April 3, 1725; Hannah, born December 3, 1727; Patience, born September 9, 1730; Abner, born September 26, 1733; Abigail, born September 14, 1736.

Jeremiah Gray married Theodate, a daughter of Richard Hood; he built a house in 1741, and inclosed it with a stone-wall, on land purchased by Richard Hood of Samuel Breed, Jr., which comprised two lots originally laid out to Widow Ivory and Captain Elezor Lindsay. Gray afterwards conveyed the land to Jonathan Johnson in 1758. At that date there were but three families living at Nahant,—Breed, Hood and Johnson.

Abner Hood, son of Richard Hood, inherited by will all his father's real estate on Nahant, which comprised fifty-three acres, including a house and barn. He came to Nahant with his father in 1739. Mr. Hood was married when fifty years old to Keziah Breed, a sister of the then somewhat distinguished Ebenezer Breed, of Lynn.

They had five children,—Abner, born April 1, 1784; Richard, born March 13, 1788; Theodate, born May 23, 1787; Benjamin and Ebenezer, born April 7, 1790. At his death he left his estate, comprising the homestead with over one hundred acres of land, to his four sons, who made a division in 1820. Mr. Hood was a small man and always wore the Quaker style of dress, as he belonged to that sect. He served as a selectman of the town of Lynn, and was also a member of the committee that decided the line between Lynn and Reading. As the Society of Friends, however, objected to his holding office, on the ground that it was worldly and not consistent with their religious teachings, he resigned from all public trusts and refused to hold public office further. He was a prudent and industrious farmer, spending all his life on Nahant, and dying there at the age of eighty-four. Of the sons of Abner Hood, Abner Hood, Jr., married, in 1807, Mary Newhall Richards; Ebenezer Hood married Abbie Phillips, of Lynn; Benjamin Hood married Hannah, daughter of John Phillips, of Lynn. He inherited the homestead, with one-fourth part of his father's estate. Uncle "Ben," as he was familiarly called, was the humorist and practical joker of the village and made life enjoyable to all who knew him, while at all public gatherings he imparted a ripple of wit and humor, throwing sunshine into every shadow.

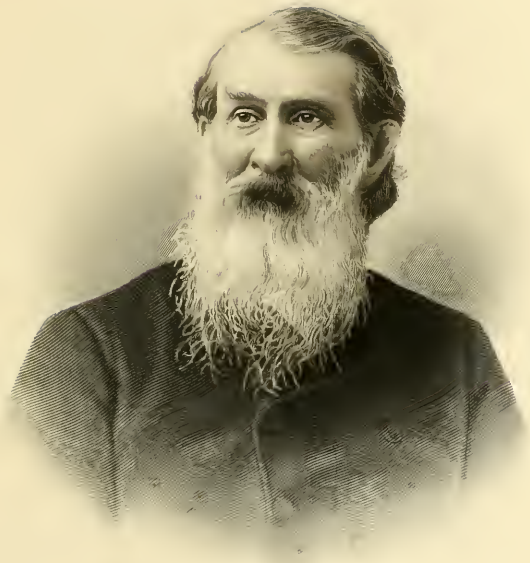
Richard Hood married Clarissa Herrick, daughter of Dr. Martyn Herrick, of North Reading. Dr. Herrick was a man of considerable note in the last century. He was born in Reading in 1747, graduated at Harvard College in 1772, and there began the study of medicine with Dr. (afterwards Governor) Brooks, of Medford. He met Paul Revere in his memorable ride from Boston, and going in the opposite direction, spread the warning. He fought in the battle of Lexington, and after the battle assisted Dr. Brooks in caring for the wounded. He enlisted in the army, from which he was transferred to the navy as surgeon, and was twice captured by the British. After the war he settled as a practicing physician in North Reading, where he died in the year 1820.

Mr. Richard Hood, unlike his brothers, who were farmers, engaged in the fishing business, and was one of the owners and crew of the "Dolphin" and "Lafayette." In 1819 he built the Hood Hotel for transient and summer boarders. In 1826 he conveyed his estate to Mr. Charles Bradbury, who afterwards conveyed it to Mr. Jesse Rice, who succeeded Mr. Hood in the hotel business. Richard Hood moved to Portland, Maine, where he engaged in the packet service between Boston and Portland. In 1847 he returned to Lynn, where he resided with his son Martyn until his death.

When an old man he returned to Nahant for the summer, and in a small boat pursued the business of his early choice, catching his fish from the old and familiar fishing-grounds, some of which grounds bear his name to this day. He was famous for relating stories of the past history of the town and State, which, if they had been gathered then, would be worth the telling now.

Martin Herrick Hood, the son of Richard and Clarissa Hood, was born at Nahant, September 15, 1813. Here he lived until the age of twelve, when he accompanied his parents to Portland, Maine, where he learned the shoemaking trade, in which he was employed until 1848, when he returned to Lynn and there engaged in the manufacture of boots and shoes.

December 9, 1852, he was married to Miss Sarah G. Hay, of Charlestown, daughter of Mr. Francis Hay. In 1860 he was one of the first to enter in the new industry of sole-cutting, that large and growing industry in which to-day millions of capital is invested. He retired from active business life at the age of seventy-three, rich in the rewards of a long and industrious life. His lineage is marked by illustrious men and women in the earliest history of the colonies, dating back to the days of Endicott, Johnson and Saltonstall. His ancestors on his father's side were Quakers, and adverse to war, while on his mother's side they were among the first to fight for liberty and country. These two qualities still live in



Martin H. Hood

the representative of the Hood families, whose portrait finds a place in this volume.

The Breed family were among the first families to make their permanent home at Nahant, Samuel Breed having lived there previous to 1706. Samuel Breed, Sr., was married to Annie Hood February 5, 1690. Their children were Samuel, born November 11, 1692; Amos, born July 20, 1694; Jabez, born January 26, 1695; Abigail, born September 7, 1698; Nathan, born January 3, 1702; Keziah, born October 16, 1704; Annie, born July 28, 1706; Ebenezer, born May 1, 1710; Ruth, born March 10, 1711; Benjamin, born July 4, 1715.

Samuel Breed, Jr., was married to Deliverance Basset, January 25, 1719. Their children were Anna, born March 20, 1726; Sarah, born September 29, 1729; Hulda, born May 13, 1731; Nehemiah, born January 19, 1736.

Nehemiah Breed married Abigail ———, probably a daughter of Nehemiah Bassett. Their only child was William Breed, born September 21, 1759. William Breed was married to Hannah Bassett, daughter of Joseph and Eunice Bassett. Their children were Nehemiah and Daniel. Nehemiah Breed married Miriam Alley, daughter of Benjamin and Hulda Alley. Their children were Abigail, born March 27, 1813; Lydia Alley born November 2, 1814.

Daniel Breed, son of William Breed, married Abigail Newhall, daughter of Rufus Newhall. Their children were William N., born June 28, 1825; John H., born September 26, 1835. Daniel Breed, died September 2, 1858.

Nahant in 1800.—At the time of Jonathan Johnson's death, just as a new century was beginning, Nahant looked very differently from what it now is.

A stone wall, from shore to shore, fenced in the first range; another stone wall, also running across from shore to shore, between ranges two and three, inclosed the second range,—the one owned by Breed and the other by Hood. From about the centre of the wall between the first and second ranges another stone wall ran in a northwesterly direction to the range line between ranges five and six, thence northeasterly by the range line to the road; continuing along the road in a southeasterly direction to a large boulder, a few rods above Whitney's Hotel; from there, in a westerly direction, to where it intersected the long line of wall from the second to the sixth range. Still another wall inclosed the Bank field or homestead of Richard Hood. At Bass Point a field was inclosed and a hotel built by Joseph Johnson, of Lynn—one of the first hotels built on the coast for summer visitors.

One road ran through the town, winding here and there so as to avoid the numerous boulders which were scattered about the pastures. From this main road others, at convenient places, ran over the slope of the hill to the beaches and to Bass Point.

Leading from these two or three roads, foot-paths and cow-paths wound through the barberry bushes, across hill and marsh land, to the several small springs from which the cattle got their supply of water. A few cedar trees still survived on Little Nahant, where a cart-way extended across the western end from Short Beach to Long Beach. A few trees of the primeval forest that once grew in the low lands below Whitney's Hotel, with here and there a stray willow or cedar, were all that remained to break the monotonous stretch of bare pasture land. A narrow foot-path wandered along the shore, leading hither and thither down to the waters' edge.

Of the three families at that time living in Nahant, two,—Hood and Breed,—were farmers, who owned nearly all the land in the first, second, third and fourth ranges, while the third, Johnson, who was a fisherman, owned only about ten acres of land. He had his fishing-boat anchored near Nipper Stage Point, and had also a small boat-house on the bank, with flakes for drying fish. In summer countless flocks of plover, curlew, peep and other birds frequented the shores; while in winter at every point innumerable sea-fowl, coots, black duck, blue-winged teal, brant, wild geese, etc., fed in the coves and bays. Fish, of course, were abundant, and thus Nahant, primitive in society and unsurpassed in sporting attraction, seemed, from the very first, destined to be a place of summer resort. Even at this early time it attracted some of the best families of Boston and Salem, first as boarders with the three families dwelling there, and later as owners of cottages.

On the southwest side of Nahant are two small coves, the only places where a safe landing can be made in severe storms. Nipper Stage, a point or rocky ledge running out in a westerly direction some twenty rods, breaks the undertow of the sea from the first cove. A smaller ledge separates the two coves; beside which stretches a sandy beach about fifty yards in length. This little sandy beach, bordered by a grassy slope, was in the early period the common landing-place for the fishermen and farmers of Nahant. Hence, no doubt, the wood cut by Armitage in 1658 was transported by water to Marblehead and Boston. Here, at the head of the little cove, were the flakes for drying fish, which were gathered into parcels or quintals to be brought to market by water, although the greater part was sold to country people, who visited Nahant for that purpose; as we learn from the statement of Mrs. Abner Hood, who said that many country people came to purchase dry and fresh fish, lodging at the Breed Tavern.

As early as 1738 Samuel Breed, Jr., was designated in a deed as "Samuel Breed, Inn Keeper," and the land conveyed to him was described as near Nipper Stage.[1]

[1] Concerning the origin of this queer name we have no certain knowledge. The word Nipper is the local name for perch, and in early times

This ledge of rocks is now the site of the wharf and steamboat landing. In 1800 a spring near the cove furnished an abundance of good water. A foot-path led up from this cove, across the field and through the swamp, crossing by the way two ditches, a plank serving as a bridge, while on either side were bushes from three to ten feet high; thence the path wound up the steep hill, through a grove of locust trees to the Johnson house and the road. Another road circled northward around the hill from the old boat-house to Dorothy's Cove. This connected with the cart-way that led up the hill to the main road, and was used for many years for the cartage of fish, wood, stores, etc., from the landing to the village.

Many a story has been told by the older people of adventures and incidents at this spot. Here was the first steamboat landing of 1817. Off this point were anchored the "Dolphin," "Lookout," "Sally Ann," "Lafayette" and others, besides the fishing-boats. Near by was a large boulder, where a fire-place of stone was made, upon which a kettle of tar and pitch was boiled for many years; the tar and pitch being used as a coating instead of paint on the outside planks that covered the bottom of the boats. Here, too, parties came in summer to catch "nippers" and make fish chowders.

On the death of Hood, Breed and Johnson, their land came into the possession of their children. The Richard Hood land, which contained over one hundred acres, became the property of his son, Abner. The Breed land also descended to an only son, Nehemiah; and what he had purchased together with that which he inherited amounted to upwards of one hundred and twenty acres. The land left by Johnson was inherited by his three sons,—Caleb, Joseph and Benjamin. In 1800 there were still but three families living on Nahant,—Abner Hood, Nehemiah Breed and Caleb Johnson.

The public-house mentioned before at Bass Point, now familiarly known as the Castle, was built and used as a summer hotel by a Joseph Johnson, of Lynn, in the year 1802, as the following notice shows:

"Nahant.

"Joseph Johnson informs the public in general and the valetudinarians and sportsmen in particular, that he has reopened a House of Entertainment on the most delightful, pleasant, airy and healthy spot in Nahant, where he will be found ready furnished with every 'good thing to cheer the heart, to brace the frame, or to pamper the appetite.' His house is commodious and neat—in the vicinity of the best bathing and bowling on the peninsula; and he keeps a neat sail-boat always at the accommodation of his friends. To the other inducements he adds his respectful invitation; and while he will attend his guests with diligence, he assures them that every favour shall be received with gratitude.

"Friend! if past time, foe to care,
Come, enjoy our sports and fare!
Come, and stay a week or so—
But if uneasy, haste to go."

"Nahant, July 26, 1802."

War of 1812.—Before 1812, however, three other dwelling-houses were built by Joseph Johnson, Ebenezer and Abner Hood, for their own use and for summer boarders, and this, with fishing and shoemaking, as in nearly all the sea-board towns, was the business of the few who dwelt there. In the year 1812 the schooner "Dolphin" was sold to John Phillips, of Swampscott, from fear of the English cruisers, which left the little settlement without a vessel. However, soon after, peace was declared, and Caleb Johnson purchased of Mr. Crowninshield the sloop "Jefferson," of Salem, which had been used as a privateer.

In *Harper's Magazine* of September, 1886, is the following description: "The schooner 'Fame' sailed in the afternoon and sent the first prize into Salem. The second prize was sent in by the 'Jefferson,' a boat of only fourteen tons, carrying one gun and twenty men." This little boat was used as an excursion boat in summer and for fishing in winter until 1816, when, having become unseaworthy, she was sold in Lynn and broken up for fire-wood; a new boat was then built called the "Dolphin," which took the place of the "Jefferson."

In the War of 1812 it is stated by the old people now living, that the English ships frequently sailed by Nahant opposite Bass Point, so near that the men could be seen on the deck of the frigates. Fishermen were very often captured by these frigates. One skipper, when captured and brought alongside of the vessel, refused to allow the captain to take his fish without paying for them, which so amused the officers that they paid him for the fish, remarking, "Let the exacting Yankee fisherman go; but if we catch you again we will keep your fish and you too."

Mrs. Polly Hood remembered seeing "Uncle Billy Breed" ride from his tavern to Lynn on horseback with a bag of money behind him, frightened at the appearance of the English ships. It is also said that English officers in citizens' dress, at times boarded at the Hood House. At the time of the celebrated naval engagement between the "Chesapeake" and "Shannon" all the headlands were covered with people from Lynn and adjoining towns to witness the encounter. Old residents declare that there have never been so many people on Nahant at one time since.

In 1817 the Breed family moved to Lynn from Nahant, leasing their house and farm to Jesse Rice.

Descriptive Letter.—In the *Patriot* of Saturday, August 14, 1819, the following letter describes the Nahant of that day better than any one now can:

"Nahant possesses advantages as a watering-place superior to any in New England. It is a peninsula stretching two miles into the sea. You approach it by land, over a most excellent turnpike road, surpassed by none in the United States; and across a beach of surpassing smoothness, on whose hard level the wheel leaves no mark, and which may be justly considered as one of the curiosities of the country.

"From its bleak bluffs the ocean spreads itself before you in all its grandeur, now bearing on its broad and beautiful bosom the white sails of commerce, and now roaring in rage and breaking its wild wave on the shore. You have here the sublimity of a sea voyage, with the security of a residence on land. The rocky shore of the peninsula presents another appearance of sublimity and grandeur; the rude magnificence and gigantic outline of one part is relieved by the beauty and regularity of others; and in the cells and caverns which diversify the scenery, an admirer of nature may find abundant amusement in exploring the innumerable traces of her workmanship.

"Some of these have obtained appropriate names from the attention of visitors, and the Swallow's Cave, Spouting Horn, Five Sisters, Pea Island, The Point and the Grotto remind those who are familiar with this curious place of some of its romantic situations. Nor do you appear to be on an island. Shut out from the world, on the south you perceive the spires of the capital and the dwellings of its busy population; on the west and north arise the green fields and farms of rich husbandry and grateful cultivation.

"On the high grounds of Nahant the air is most pure, refreshing and salubrious. The heat of a summer sun is moderated by luxuriant seabreezes which never fail, from some quarter, to alleviate its intensity.

"Its waters afford abundant sport for fishermen; small fish are caught in surprising quantities from the rocks; and at a short distance in the bay cod, haddock, mackerel and halibut reward the labor which pursues them.

"Nahant was formerly a fine place for gunning, but the crowds which have of late years resorted to its shores have almost entirely scattered the birds, which were accustomed to frequent it. A short sail, however, will put the sportsman on an island where his best expectations may be gratified.

"It is surprising, that with all these natural advantages, art should almost wholly have omitted to add anything to the rest.

"The company who have visited Nahant have hitherto resided among the few Quakers of the place, and partook of such homely accommodations as they could conveniently provide, but their ability has not equaled their good disposition.

"It is only necessary that a hotel and bathing-houses should be erected to make Nahant one of the most frequented places in New England. The advantage of attracting here the company which annually seek amusement or health abroad is prodigious, if calculated only in a pecuniary point of view. A circulation of at least sixty or seventy thousand dollars in specie would be annually derived from the people who frequent any well established watering-place, and with the superior natural accommodations of Nahant, the assistance of a small capital would place it on the most desirable establishment.

"Something has already been done by an enterprising and public-spirited individual, and a scheme for great improvements set on foot which, if successful, will render it a most delightful retreat from the cares of business or the unhealthy atmosphere of the capital."

Editor's Note.—"A recent establishment of Mr. Rice, though not dignified with the appellation of a hotel, may nevertheless be considered as approaching very nearly to a house of that description."

Editor's Note.—"We have received this beautiful description of Nahant from a very intelligent correspondent."

THE HOTEL.—July 9, 1821, Thomas H. Perkins and William Paine, both of Boston, for the consideration of $1800, bought of Nehemiah Breed all the southeast part or first range of Nahant, which was then called the "Ram Pasture." This piece of land contained about eighteen acres, and on this land, in addition to several acres more afterwards purchased, the Nahant Hotel was then built. We clip the following notice from the *Columbian Sentinel* of September 15, 1821:

"NAHANT HOTEL.

"Those gentlemen who have already subscribed towards erecting a hotel at Nahant, with such as may be disposed to promote the object, are requested to meet the undersigned at 12 o'clock, on Monday next, at the American Insurance office, to consider what measures shall be taken to complete the subscription, or whether it shall be abandoned altogether. The necessity of erecting the wall the present season, if it is expected the house shall be occupied the next summer, makes it necessary that something decisive should be determined upon.

"T. H. PERKINS.
"WM. PAINE."

The ensuing year, June 26, 1823, the hotel was completed and opened. The following notice of the opening appeared in the Boston papers:

"NAHANT HOTEL.

"This magnificent establishment is now open for the reception of visitors, to the most delightful spot on the American coast for health or pleasure. It is impossible to select a residence which combines so many natural and artificial advantages.

"Located in the bosom of the ocean, the air is salubrious and inviting; while the spacious bay continually presenting the fleets of commerce, with the hills, verdant plains, islands, villages and country seats, extending from the heights of Scituate to the peninsula of Cape Ann, form a panorama unrivaled in any country.

"The numerous projecting cliffs afford excellent sites for the angler, from whence even old Isaac Walton would have thrown his line with pleasure, and looked abroad upon the wilderness of waters 'in moral contemplation wrapped.'

"The hotel is capacious and fitted up with every convenience, where the Superintendent, Captain James Magee, so distinguished for his gentlemanly deportment and kind disposition, is most assiduous to make every one happy and comfortable. There are floating, hot, cold and shower salt-water baths, billiard-rooms, bowling alleys, a beautiful marine hippodrome which twice in twenty-four hours is laved and rolled smooth by the waves of the ocean; and numerous interesting walks for health, exercise and amusement. In truth, Nahant is the chosen domain of the youthful Hygeia, the pleasant summer residence of the invalid and of all those who seek enjoyment or require relaxation from the cares and business of life; whether they flee from the sultry clime of the South, or the 'stir of the great Babels' of commerce, there they can be at ease and KEEP COOL."—*Thursday, June 26, 1823.*

In the following year we find a further description in an advertisement of the hotel:

"The hotel itself is a large stone edifice, containing seventy chambers, in a number of which are recesses for beds.

"There is a dining room fifty feet in length, and of sufficient size to accommodate one hundred and twenty-four persons at table; besides these there are several private parlors and a capacious stable, a handsome bathing-house for warm and cold baths, a machine of peculiar construction for bathing in the open sea, excellent boats for sailing and fishing, etc.

"MILTON DURANT.
"HENRY JOHNSON."

The above proprietors kept the hotel until 1827.

In that year we quote the following extracts from the papers of that date, showing how popular Nahant then was as a watering-place:

"On Saturday last, six hundred persons left Nahant for Boston; we are glad to find that visitors at this pleasant retreat are again becoming frequent. On Monday nearly three hundred people dined at the Nahant Hotel and were excellently well accommodated.

"One company, composed principally of members of musical choirs of several societies of the city, to the number of nearly two hundred, dined at tables extending the entire length of the three piazzas. . . .

"Among the visitors at the Hotel this season are numbers of our Southern friends, and if we may be pardoned for introducing the name of a lady, we should mention that Mrs. Randolph, the daughter of the venerable Thomas Jefferson, was one of them."

Another correspondent in a Salem paper the same year says:

"Nahant contains about a dozen dwellings, and has about three hundred and five acres of fertile land under high cultivation. . . . Nahant has long been a place of resort in the warm season for the fashionable and gay from the metropolis who are in pursuit of amusement and recreation, and for invalids from the vicinity and interior of the country, who are in pursuit of health, in the most oppressive heat and sultry weather of summer. . . Immense quantities of sea-weed are cast by the ocean on the beach and shore of the peninsula. Not less than three thousand tons a year are conveyed to the main land by the farmers. . . . The number of visitors at Nahant this year has never been equaled. Strangers are enticed here from the more Southern cities. The point of

attraction is Nahant, which, like the orbit of a circle, encloses all the taste, elegance and fashion of the country. The balls are splendid and gay, the conversation lively and amusing."

The last proprietor of the Nahant Hotel, as first built, was Phineas Drew, who, in 1852, conveyed the hotel and grounds to parties in Lynn, who made extensive improvements in the grounds and built a new hotel in the winter of 1853–54. The hotel thus enlarged and rebuilt was a large wooden building, new wings three and four stories high having been added on each side of the stone work of the former hotel. The building was over four hundred feet long and had about three hundred rooms. Eleven hundred people could be accommodated at one time, and the spacious dining hall could seat over six hundred. It was one of the largest and most convenient hotels on the Atlantic coast. Every summer the house was filled, and it was not an uncommon thing for the proprietors to furnish mattresses in the hallways for guests when there were no rooms left for them. Everything was furnished for the comfort and pleasure of those who spent the summer there. Telegraph wires connected with Boston, and there were bowling alleys, billiard-rooms, stables, and boating and fishing accommodations. A steamboat was built expressly for the accommodation of its patrons to and from Boston. The hotel and everything connected with it was a great success, until the war broke out, when, like many other enterprises, it failed to receive its accustomed patronage.

The following advertisement of the hotel is taken from the *Boston Journal* of June 10, 1854:

"The Nahant House has for many years been one of the most popular resorts, during the summer season to be found on the whole seaboard. The hotel has just been rebuilt and entirely remodeled, furnished and equipped by the Napoleon of hotel proprietors, Paran Stevens, Esq., under whose energetic and enterprising management we doubt not that Nahant will speedily become the most popular resort to be found in this section.

'The house is to be opened on Monday, when the new steamer, 'Nelly Baker,' commences her trips."

On September 12, 1861, this large hotel, which cost over one hundred thousand dollars, was burnt to the ground. The fire caught about ten o'clock in the evening, and the one small fire-engine in the town proved of little use. The people of the town gathered on the cliffs and watched the flames as they spread over the great building, which in a short time was burnt to the ground. The blaze was seen for miles around. All that was left of this immense hotel property was a few outlying buildings—the stable and bowling alley and the billiard-house—which still stands on the cliff, in appearance the same as when built over fifty years ago. A few years later the grounds and remaining buildings were purchased by Mr. John E. Lodge, and his two children have there built their summer residences.

STEAMBOAT LANDING.—At the opening of the Nahant Hotel, a new road, leading to Swallow's Cave was made by the Hotel Company and Mr. Coolidge. From this road a path was left leading by the ledge in a westerly direction, where a short flight of steps lead over the ledge to a covered building. This was an open six-sided building, with seats on the sides and ends; a passage-way ran through to a long flight of steps which led over the ledge to a narrow walk. Two ship spars had been laid from the foot of these steps to a square wooden frame made of logs pinned together. This frame-work was then filled with stones, making a barrier against the sea, and upon this the ends of the spars were fastened, and piles were driven, slanting in a westerly direction, to deep water. On these piles a long plank walk was made, at the end of which the steamboats made a landing at all times of the tides. Subsequently Mr. Coolidge built the sea wall, filling the space between the wall and ledge with stone and gravel, which gave plenty of room for the wharf and for the passage-way from the wharf.

At the northeasterly end of this new addition the "Nahant House," now the residence of Mr. George Peabody, of Salem, was built. A rivalry commenced between the proprietors of the Nahant House and the Nahant Hotel, which caused the Nahant Hotel Company to build a new wharf on their own property, near Great Ledge, in the little cove near the site of the residence of Mr. George Abbot James. This new wharf was used during the summer of 1828 as the landing-place for the steamer "Housatonic." The company afterwards purchased that part of the first wharf which was built by Mr. Coolidge, and made there a good landing for a steamboat, to the northwest of Swallow's Cave. Lines of steamboats were now running their regular trips between Boston and Nahant, the "Eagle" making one hundred and fifty trips that season.

This landing was used until 1875, when Central Wharf was built by Mrs. Fenno Tudor, at the old and first landing-place near Nipper Stage.

STEAMBOATS.—The first steamboat that arrived in Boston Harbor was the "Massachusetts," and the *Columbian Sentinel* of July 19, 1817, contains the following notice of her:

"The new and beautiful steamboat 'Massachusetts' has, by perseverance, so far overcome the prejudices of the public, that on Thursday afternoon, in her excursion around the harbor, she was filled almost to overflowing with ladies and gentlemen. . . .

"The 'Massachusetts' is one hundred feet long on the deck, and measures one hundred and twenty tons."

This steamboat probably made excursions to Nahant in 1817, but there is no evidence of her making regular trips until three years later, when we find her advertising regular trips to Nahant and Boston from Foster's wharf. In 1818 the steamboat route was fully established between Boston and Nahant, the steamboat "Eagle," July 18, 1818, being advertised to run as follows: "Steamboat 'Eagle' leaves this morning for Nahant at 9, and returns to Boston at



Francis Johnson

12 M. She will return to Nahant precisely at 3, and leave there at half-past six."

At the same date we also find the following notice of the "Eagle": "This new, safe and convenient boat arrived at this port a few days since from Nantucket, for the purpose of gratifying the inhabitants of this town and vicinity with the repetition of those pleasant excursions down the harbor, with which they were so much delighted the last summer, in the steamboat 'Massachusetts.'"

August 26th, the same year, we also find the steamboat "Eagle," Captain Clark, in addition to her trips to Nahant, advertised as "leaving to morrow for Hingham."

From this it seems quite certain that the first steamboat route out of Boston was to Nahant. The following is a list of the steamboats from 1817 to the present date: 1817, "Massachusetts," Captain Walker; 1818-19, "Eagle." Captains Clark and Wood; 1820, "Eagle" and "Massachusetts," Captain Wood; 1821, "Massachusetts" and "Eagle," Captain Wood; 1822–25, "Eagle," Captain Wood; 1825–27, "Patent;" 1828–29, "Housatonic," Captain Francis Johnson; 1830, "Housatonic," Captain Samuel Silsbee, and "Rushlight," Captain Burnham; 1831, "Fanny," Captain Henry; 1832, "Connecticut" in excursions only, Captain Porter; 1833–34, "Hancock," Captain Porter; 1835, "Fanny," Captain Marsh; 1836, "Mount Pleasant," Captain J. Gillespie; 1837, "Kingston;" 1838, "John Jay;" 1839, "Thorn," Captain W. H. Byram; 1840, "Hope," Captain Van Pelt; 1841–47, "General Lincoln," Captain B. F. Betts; 1848, "Nahanteau," Captain Betts; 1849, "King Philip," Captain Betts; 1850, "Suffolk," Captain Betts; 1851, "Norwalk," Captain Betts; 1852, "Clifton," Captain Carr; 1853, "Queen of May," 1854–56, "Nelly Baker," Captain A. L. Rowell; 1857, "Nelly Baker," Captain F. Covell; 1858, "Nelly Baker," Captain A. W. Calden; 1862, "Nequasset," Captain T. J. Gerry; 1863, "General Berry," Captain T. J. Gerry; 1864, "Clinton," Captain C. Kilby; 1865, "Orient," Captain C. Kilby; 1866-72, "Ulysses," Captain A. W. Calden; 1873, "Meta," Captains Calden and Rowell; 1874–77, "Meta," Captain Calden; 1878–83, "Nahant," Captain Calden; 1884, no boat; 1885, "General Bartlett," Captain J. B. Ingersol; 1886, "Julia," Captain J. P. Garet; 1887, "Anita," Captain F. W. Lund.

Francis Johnson, the third son of Joseph Johnson, inherited the sterling qualities of his father. He succeeded his father in the care of the schools, and was instrumental in establishing the first Sunday-school library at Nahant.

At an early age he engaged in the fishing business. He made his first voyages in the "Jefferson," in midwinter, and now relates the hardships he then experienced in one of these midwinter voyages as one of the hardest ever experienced by him, although he had commanded, at different times, more of the fleet of vessels at Nahant than any of his predecessors. He was married, October 30, 1827, to Miss Sally Rice, a daughter of Mr. Jesse Rice.

In 1828 and 1829 he commanded the steamboat "Housatonic," and the excursion steamer "Byron" in 1830.

In 1836 he returned to Nahant, where he engaged in the fishing business until 1842, in which year he established the since large and prosperous lobster business, known throughout the country as Johnson & Young, which he successfully conducted for upward of forty years.

Cornelius Coolidge.—In 1824 Cornelius Coolidge, an enterprising Boston merchant and contractor, purchased of Breed and the Hoods nearly all the land to the eastward of Rice's Hotel. This was laid out in new streets and sixty-two building-lots. On these lots Mr. Coolidge subsequently built the following cottages: the Bryant cottage, Dr. Robbins', David Sears' (now the Appleton cottage), Hubbard's (now the Charles R. Green cottage), B. C. Clark's (now the house occupied by the family of the late Amos A. Lawrence), N. P. Russell's, and also the Nahant House (now the Peabody cottage). The Villa, the last house built by Mr. Coolidge, is now the residence of Mrs. John E. Lodge. But owing to financial embarrassments Mr. Coolidge was obliged to sell his lands and houses and give up all his plans. This was unfortunate for Nahant, as he had contemplated other great improvements. Among other things he built the stone-work of the old wharf, and gave, as his contribution to the Nahant Church, the laud on which it now stands.

In the year 1825 Nahant had seventy-five permanent residents; and by the following statement it will be seen that during the half-century from 1775 to 1825 only two deaths occurred, with the exception of deaths from old age, or diseases incident to old age: Jonathan Johnson, old age, aged seventy-four years; Nehemiah Breed, palsy, seventy-three years; Abby Breed, inflammation of the brain, seventeen years; Abner Hood, old age, eighty-five years; Mary Johnson, consumption, thirty-one years.

The Sea-Serpent.—Nahant seems to have been unusually fortunate during the year of 1823, in the attractions she had to offer, as a now established watering-place, to the families of Boston and vicinity; for in addition to all that was offered by the new hotel, nature herself seemed to have been so kindly disposed as to furnish, besides, a new and rare spectacle,—that of the fabled sea-serpent. In the *Patriot* of July 16, 1823, appears the following account of the monster as seen by one of our oldest inhabitants, Captain Francis Johnson:

"I, Francis Johnson, Jr., testify that in going into the harbor from Nahant, July 12, 1823, at about nine o'clock A.M., I saw 'standing' into Lynn harbor, something in the water resembling a row of porpoises. I then supposed it to be such, and forbore to notice it.

"About two hours afterwards I heard a noise in the water, and saw,

about four rods distant, something resembling the head of a fish or serpent elevated about two feet above the surface, followed by seven or eight bunches, the first over six feet from the head, all these bunches being about six feet apart and raised about six inches above the water.

"It stood eastward at the rate of five miles an hour, with an undulating motion like that of a caterpillar. Its color was dark, like that of a shark or porpoise.

"I pursued it about a mile being in a small fishing-boat, and had a fair view of it for about thirty minutes, the water being smooth and the sky clear, and then I lost sight of it, supposing it to dive beneath the surface. I believe it to be what I took for a row of porpoises two hours before.

"I am about twenty years of age; was born and have always lived at Nahant; have been constantly employed in fishing; have seen every species of fish accustomed to visit our coast, but never saw anything resembling this.

"I have heretofore constantly doubted the existence of a sea-serpent, but now firmly believe what I saw to be the animal hitherto described as such.

"Signed, "FRANCIS JOHNSON, JR.

"Nahant, July 12, 1823.

"We hereby certify that the above statement was given in our presence, and from our knowledge of the character of Mr. Johnson, we have no doubt of his veracity.

"H. A. S. DEARBORN.
"NATH. AMORY.
"SIDNEY BARTLETT.
"THOMAS WHITMORE.
"RICHARD D. HARRIS.
"RUSSELL JARVIS.

"I certify that Francis Johnson, Jr., made the same report to me previous to his landing at Nahant, July 12, 1823.

"J. S. DORR."

Many other accounts of those who have described the sea-serpent, as seen by them, could be given. It is still often reported that the sea-serpent has been seen off Nahant, and other places along the coast. But there are many who are very incredulous about the existence of such a sea monster.

Some of our old fishermen have looked in vain for his appearance. One who was present on Long Beach when his snakeship was reported to have been seen, declared it was three horse mackerel sharks following in the wake of each other with their heads and back fins appearing above the water. As these lines of mackerel sharks are frequently seen on a calm day, they may have been mistaken for the sea-serpent. Whichever it may be, the mysterious and fabled sea-serpent or only a row of horse mackerel, let those who see, judge.

MR. FREDERIC TUDOR.—Mrs. Delia Tudor, in or before 1820, was a frequent visitor and resident at Nahant. She built the stone house in the eighth range which, in 1824, was purchased by her son Frederic Tudor, who made this for many years his summer residence, purchasing adjoining lands, building a stable and additions to the house, and in many other ways improving the estate. In the early days, he and his brother frequently traveled on foot from Boston to Nahant. Mr. Tudor's first effort towards public improvement was in the planting of two rows of Balm of Gilead trees, on each side of the main road, from the hill near Short Beach to Summer Street. Prior to this, William Wood and Thomas H. Perkins had planted a row of elms from Summer Street to the Breed House. Mr. Tudor did not allow this much-needed improvement to suffer any neglect, and from the earliest planting of trees, through his many years of residence here, he caused this work to be continued every spring and autumn. Nearly all the beautiful elms, maples and other varieties of shade-trees that now grow along our streets were planted by him. He once remarked that every tree he planted was as much of a benefit to the citizens of any State, Georgia for instance, as to the citizens of Nahant, since, in time, both would enjoy them jointly,—thus anticipating for Nahant a more prosperous future than any one has as yet realized.

He inclosed his own lands with heavy stone fences, ploughed and cultivated these inclosed fields, planted corn and other grains, and built new streets. The following letter, published in 1849, describes Mr. Tudor's garden:

"Among the many beautiful features of Nahant, one of the most beautiful is the residence of Mr. Tudor. We called to see his place on the occasion of a recent ride to our famed and favorite Nahant, and were politely received by our friend, Mr. Wm. F. Johnson, to whom we express our thanks for his attention.

"The cottage and garden of Mr. Tudor are well worth a visit, and certainly deserve a mention to the public.

"The cottage is built of stone which was collected at Nahant, of a coarse or dark granite which is quite abundant there; the roof is covered with hemlock bark, giving the building an ancient appearance, which seems to be a taste the proprietor studies.

"Mr. Tudor's garden contains over two acres, and is inclosed by a very substantial fence, about seventeen feet high, which not only protects it from intruders, but prevents in a great measure the effect of the violent wind. He has a large collection of very fine fruit-trees, many of them beautifully trained on fences, giving them a very tasteful and ornamental appearance. One cherry-tree, with its branches trained horizontally, covers a space of over five hundred square feet; some of its branches are about twenty feet in length, extending each side of the trunk perfectly straight. The pear-trees look exceedingly well, considering that it is an unfavorable season for the pear crop in this vicinity, owing to the late frost in the spring.

"His plums are worthy of notice, all looking finely, and, notwithstanding the depredations of the curculio, many of these trees are loaded with the finest plums.

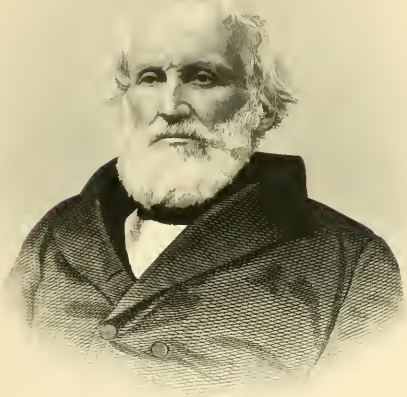
"There are many interesting experiments in shading trees from the sun in the hottest part of the day, which have proven quite successful. All his experiments are tried in the most thorough manner. Among the many experiments is one quite novel of capturing insects; he has suspended in his trees between two and three hundred small bottles, partly filled with sweetened water, into which all flys, bugs and moths are inticed and are drowned.

"Great quantities have been destroyed in this way. During two weeks of the dry weather in June there were captured about five hundred thousand bugs, and in thirty-six hours on the nineteenth and twentieth of June, one hundred and eight thousand were taken,—thus, besides destroying the effect of the insects, preventing an immense encrease by propagation.

"Although his principal interest is in trees, yet he has a portion of his grounds dedicated to Flora, and a beautiful marble figure of the goddess is in the centre of this department.

"When we take into consideration the fact that one-half of the community think that nothing can be grown successfully at Nahant, and twelve years ago not one in a hundred could be found that believed it, no one will deny that Mr. Tudor is entitled to a great deal of credit for his persevering efforts, for by them he has established the fact that the barren soil of Nahant will yield to the industry of man as well as other places. And quite an interest has been aroused in many of the inhabitants of Nahant, which it may not be improper to attribute to the example of Mr. Tudor.

"Besides the gardens, Mr. Tudor has quite a farm, raising large quantities of beets and carrots. He has harvested the past season about fifty





tons of hay; although he has never yet devoted his attention personally to that branch, yet there is no reason why he cannot have one of the finest farms in the country. In addition to gratifying his own private taste, Mr. Tudor has not neglected the public, as any one who resides on Nahant cannot fail to observe.

"The many fine trees on each side of the road are living witnesses of the fact, and the many hundreds of trees scattered about on the hills. It must have required an unusual degree of care and expense to have brought them to their present thriving condition.

"In short, the entire appearance of the peninsula has been changed, and the beautiful contrast between the green trees and the wild ocean make the spot doubly interesting to the lover of nature or the seeker of pleasure, for all of which the future generations cannot fail to be unmindful, and to remember him with gratitude."

Mr. Tudor also contributed to and helped to build the Nahant church, besides giving liberally to the village church, and he was one of the first to offer a bounty for the encouragement of volunteers in the war of the Rebellion. The establishment of the Maolis Gardens, and the building of the hotel adjoining, with the swings and "shades," and the substantial sea wall and the road along the north shore, are all his works. Whatever he undertook to build, he built in the most substantial manner. That constructed with wood has now almost gone; the fences that surrounded the fine gardens are also disappearing, and all that seems to remain are the lofty elm trees and granite sea walls besides his stone cottage.

In the *Boston Journal* of October 5, 1858, is the following interesting account of cider-making on the premises of Mr. Tudor:

"Cider and Perry-Making at Nahant.

"The first event of the above nature in our peninsular history occurred last week upon the premises of Frederic Tudor, Esq. By invitation, kindly extended to all the inhabitants, a large party met on the afternoon of Saturday, the 2d of October inst. Cider, perry (made from the juice of the pear) and merry-making conviviality and good feeling generally were the order of the day. Here were gathered in abundance the rich fruits of the earth. The first cider-mill ever seen at Nahant was put in operation, and the first cider was received from the hand of Mr. Tudor by the oldest inhabitant (Uncle Caleb), and drank with an appropriate toast.

"The delicious beverage ran freely from the press, and was as freely dealt out to the multitude, who, by smiling faces and pleasant remarks evinced their appreciation of its merits. Then followed the manufacture of perry, which was universally pronounced 'most excellent.' In addition to two barrels of cider distributed at the gathering, and near a barrel of perry, six or seven other barrels of cider are yet to be made, and large quantities of fall and winter apples and pears are yet to be gathered.

"Some interesting and appropriate remarks were made upon the occasion by Mr. Hammond, who addressed the party in response to a call. Allusion was made to present condition of Nahant in regard to fruit, &c., as compared to a few years since, when, under the auspices of Mr. Tudor, fruit and ornamental trees were introduced and their culture encouraged and promoted. Then Nahant was comparatively barren, unsheltered from the driving storms of winter and the fierce rays of the summer sun; now, the finest varieties of fruits are comparatively abundant, and shaded walks and groves greatly enhance its native attractions.

"Some one present produced the *Atlantic Monthly* for August, from which Mr. Hammond read a portion of an article in which the writer makes disparaging mention of Mr. Tudor's ugly fences and scrubby pear-trees. Suffice it to say that the statement, when brought in contrast with the facts in the case, exhibited altogether a sorry contrast. No expression of indignation followed, but twice three deafening cheers for Mr. Tudor gave evidence of the prevailing feeling.

"Retiring from the scene of cider-making, the party, each provided (even to the ladies) with a bottle of pure juice of the apple or pear, were conducted by Mr. Tudor to his large garden orchard on the south side of the peninsula. Here in every direction upon the lap of mother earth and hanging from the trees were the finest of fruits in the greatest abundance. Free to all, "As God gave to me, so give I to you," was the generous sentiment of the host. Here, in eloquent volumes, did those pear trees pronounce the scrubby epithet a misnomer.

"Wishing to Mr. Tudor length of days in which to enjoy the fruits of his labors, the merry and happy party repaired to their homes, long and gratefully to remember the pleasant and interesting occasion.

"We will state in this connection, Mr. Editor, that there has been gathered on Nahant the present season, by Charles Amory, Esq., twenty barrels of apples; by Caleb Johnson, eight or ten barrels; W. W. Johnson, four barrels; J. W. Page, Esq., from many trees, quantity unknown; Francis Johnson, five or six barrels; Walter Johnson, eight or ten barrels; W. R. Johnson, five or six barrels, and a goodly quantity of fine pears; Albert Whitney many barrels, say eight or ten by estimate; A. Colby expected to gather several barrels; Jonathan Johnson, five or six barrels; Joseph Johnson, about three barrels.

"There has also been gathered a quantity of butternuts and English walnuts. This is pretty fair, considering that the trees are of but a few years' growth."

After the death of Mr. Tudor, his wife, Mrs. Fenno Tudor, with the same spirit, continued the improvements Mr. Tudor had begun. She purchased the old landing-place, Nipper Stage, and land adjoining, on which she built the new wharf, the present steamboat landing.

[1] In the earliest years of this century a young man just entering mercantile life, looking around him with a beginner's enthusiasm for unthought-of and cheap commodities to carry to new and dear markets, hit upon the ice which in limitless fields clothed his native lakes in winter. Even at that time, well-to-do people housed a little ice for summer's use, and to him occurred the possibility of transporting this great absorbent of heat and producer of cold to tropical latitudes, where its value would be greatest.

The substance was easily obtained, and to cut it into blocks convenient for handling cost very little. An uncertain but probably large part would be lost by melting; would there be a residue after storage, transportation and handling which could be sold at such a price that all expenses would be covered and a profit left over? The young man who considered this project was Frederic Tudor, the third son of Colonel William Tudor, a Revolutionary officer and friend of General Washington, and a lawyer of eminence. Born in Boston, September 4, 1783, he was scarcely twenty-one years old when he began to ponder the scheme of a trade in ice, and he had so well satisfied himself of its feasibility that in 1805 a cargo of ice cut from a pond on his father's country place in Saugus was actually loaded on board a schooner, and in charge of himself as owner and supercargo, was shipped to the island of Martinique.

The project, of which this was but an attempt, a bare opening of what he calculated would grow to be a great trade with the Indies, was laughed at by all his neighbors as a crazy undertaking.

He confessed that one reason for sailing along with his novel merchandise was to escape the jeers of his

[1] Written by his son, Frederic Tudor.

acquaintances and the well-meant restraint of his friends, but as such things have no weight with the man who is possessed by an idea and seriously in earnest in its development, his chief reason was undoubtedly to watch the effectiveness of his precautions to preserve the ice, and to introduce the new product to its first market in the tropics in person.

So unaccustomed were the residents of the island to the properties of ice, and so unprepared to receive and use it, notwithstanding the efforts of his advance agents, that no real advantage was obtained from it; but the whole cargo arrived with trifling shrinkage, and the success of this most important part of the experiment was satisfactorily demonstrated.

Another motive which induced young Tudor to take passage on the schooner was to give confidence to the sailors, who hesitated to embark on a vessel filled with what was likely to shortly turn into water, possibly with suddenness, and, if not sink her, certainly make her water-logged and unmanageable. In later years experience proved ice to be one of the best cargoes. Becoming welded into a solid mass, it gave stiffness and strength to the hull inclosing it; it could not shift; a vessel loaded with it could not sink; perishable products shipped with it were preserved, and but a small part was lost by melting, if suitable precautions were taken, even during a voyage lasting for months.

The venture at Martinique, although nearly swamping his small capital, for he found it difficult to dispose of his merchandise, was, after all, of a nature to encourage him in new attempts, not only here, but in all the larger islands of the West Indies. From this time for many years his enthusiastic nature carried him forward, in spite of disasters, losses, accumulating debts and innumerable discouragements. He managed, in spite of his lack of money, even with a heavy load of debt which favoring fortune never lightened without soon involving him deeper by unexpected and improbable disasters, to steadily extend his business. While under heavy expenses from efforts to introduce the trade into new and untried markets, interlopers appeared and sought to wrest from him those which were well established and profitable; his agents would cheat him out of his receipts; sometimes, through the connivance of corrupt government officials, they defrauded him out of profitable privileges. His creditors not only hounded him, but actively endeavored to break up the very business which was their only reliance for payment.

For nearly twenty years his days and nights were spent in a continuous contest against adversity.

When he began the enterprise in 1805, being only a youth, he wrote on the cover of his journal, "He who gives back at the first repulse, without striking a second blow, despairs of success, has not been, is not, and never will be a hero in love, war or business." Many times in his long history of discouragements he refers to this motto and takes courage again. He argues with himself that it would be better to give it all up and enter some business where such labor as he has given would be well paid; but he always finally decides to continue. He is, all through, completely overcome by the consciousness and conviction of a great impending result, and after each repulse, returns to the struggle with new energy.

In spite of innumerable reverses, which permitted only the slowest progress, he at last got the trade into a condition in which an ultimate reward of great profit was certain. His success encouraged a return to his earliest business of trading in merchandise.

A speculation in coffee, conceived and managed by his friend, Mr. Parrish, of Philadelphia, in which he took an interest, resulted in great loss, and, as he was still without great resources, caused his failure. Calling his creditors together, he assured them of his ability and willingness to pay them all in full with interest, if they would give him time. Assuming thus an enormous debt, and terribly handicapped by it, he went to work to accomplish its payment, which he finally did after years of patient perseverance, his business growing meanwhile, and enabling him to accumulate, besides, a large property.

His early youth had been largely spent upon his father's county place, "Rockwood" (now the Poor Farm of the town of Saugus), where the homestead is still standing. Here he and his brothers and sisters indulged their taste for gardening, farming and country life, and entered actively into the study of nature and the making of agricultural experiments. They kept a record of their doings mainly in the handwriting of the boy Frederic, who even then seemed overflowing with ideas and enthusiasm. Although he was the only one of four brothers who was not graduated from Harvard College (which he never ceased to regret afterwards), he had great fondness for letters and the company of cultivated people.

While attending to his work, extending the ice trade to all parts of the tropics, where Europeans or Americans had gathered in large enough numbers to make his shipments of ice profitable, he found time to cultivate his mind by study and reading and by converse and association with leading intellects, and in later years to indulge his fancy in the rearing of plants and trees at his country place.

It was probably as a horticulturist that he was best known in Essex and adjoining counties.

Fond of the sea, he had, along with Col. Perkins, Stephen Codman and others, been first to pitch upon that gem of the ocean, Nahant, recognizing its great charms as a summer resort. Originally a common belonging to the town of Lynn, and used from the earliest time as a pasture, the promontory had been stripped of what must have been a crowning beauty, its forest trees.

Tudor, who had now made Nahant his home, set

about to restore this feature somewhat; and in addition to the extensive gardens which he laid out on his own grounds, located and built the public roads, and planted and cared for trees on their margins. The promontory being so bold and high, offered no shelter from the merciless arctic winds of winter; the site was dry, bleak and most unpromising for experiments in horticulture. But it was his characteristic both to test the unknown and to accomplish the impossible.

As the essence of a sport is the surmounting of obstacles, so without this stimulus, perhaps, his efforts as a gardener would have failed to interest him. His success should be measured not only by results, which were considerable, but by the difficulties successfully overcome and the permanent character of his improvements. During his life his garden was kept in the most advanced state of cultivation, the products frequently taking the highest prizes; the results were due to his own knowledge and care, assisted by such native Yankee talent as he could find about him. He never employed a trained and educated gardener. It was his pleasure that the community should enjoy free what had cost him so much; admission to the gardens was always readily granted, and when the fruit was ripe, all the children of the town were invited to come with baskets and to fill them during the day. Afterwards they were entertained by a sumptuous collation.

He made many attempts to discover valuable seedlings, but met with no substantial success, although he spent years in costly experimenting; nor did he need this glory. He won credit enough in his hard-earned success in covering his loved Nahant with trees, now, nearly thirty years after his death, in their prime, and by his generous expenditures in public improvements for her benefit. His method in planting and transplanting was principally to provide artificial shelters. He used to set out hardy and quick-growing trees as wind barriers to protect those of slower growth and greater shade-giving qualities, which, when they had grown to sufficient size, would support each other in resisting the wind, after the protecting trees were removed. No one who should visit Nahant at the present time can understand the utter incredulity with which his attempts at tree-planting were regarded by his contemporaries, so magnificent is the outcome of his perseverance.

The first growth of Balm of Gileads has now nearly all disappeared, and the protected trees now stand secure, and handsome elms and maples, some of them two feet in diameter.

A word about the man himself. To accomplish such results he required confidence in their ultimate value, enthusiasm, self-reliance and perseverance; also belief in himself and the rightness of his course, that is to say, honesty and truthfulness. He possessed these qualities in an eminent degree, and, in addition, such an originality of thought and language and conduct as to be remarkable, and make him a most entertaining companion. While he was a stubborn fighter for his own rights, he was generous in conceding the rights of others. He had a deep sense of religion, without cant; was charitable, yet with discriminating justice. He possessed a romantic, even poetic nature, and his hard life, ever subdued his finer feelings or diminished his sympathy with his fellow-men. He was a champion to the weak and to women chivalrous in an unusual degree.

His mother and sisters were women of marked character and accomplishments; perhaps from them he derived a high ideal of women, such as springs from sincere admiration and a contact with none but the noblest and best.

He lived to see all his concerns in a flourishing condition, and died peacefully in the midst of his family on the 6th of December, 1864, in the eighty-first year of his age.

CHAPTER CXVII.

NAHANT—(*Continued*).

Incorporation of Town—Roads—The New Town—Summer Residents—Fishing Interest—Other Industries—Shipwrecks and Storms—Schools—Churches.

Incorporation of Town.—In 1846 the residents and non-residents petitioned the Legislature to be incorporated as a town, but their petition was so strenuously opposed by the Lynn people that the prayer of the petitioners was refused by the Legislature. The petitioners then asked of the Lynn people in their town-meeting to grant sufficient sums of money to protect the beach, and to make improvements in the roads at Nahant, but they failed in these requests.

A movement was then made by the Nahant people to commence the several improvements from their own contributions. Mr. Frederic Tudor was one of the largest contributors, and built nearly all the street now known as Willow Road.

The road from Nahant to Lynn was then simply a long beach, and at high tide nothing more than a ridge of soft sand, through which it was very difficult and wearisome to travel, but at low or half-tide the hard, firm sand made a much easier road. All journeys, therefore, across the beach were made at low tide, unless necessity demanded otherwise. The time-table for the first stage line to Nahant was changed weekly to correspond with the tides. It was probably this dependence on the tides which encouraged the steamboats to run so early to Nahant from Boston. A plank breakwater had been built across the low places on the beach, and at the beginning and end of Long Beach a tall, white pole was placed as a guide. In 1845 a meeting of the citizens of Nahant was held at the Nahant Hotel to forward the building of a graveled road across the beach. Some

of those present thought it would not be practicable, as by putting gravel over the loose sand the wheels of vehicles would cut through, and in this way the gravel would become mixed with the sand, making the road no better than before. With this view they proposed a plank road, which did not meet with approval. After a full discussion, a committee was appointed, consisting of Josiah Quincy, Frederic Tudor, John H. Gray, Phineas Drew and Caleb Johnson, who were instructed to ascertain the expense of a road, to receive subscriptions for the same, and to consult with the selectmen of Lynn in order to procure the co-operation of the town. That this was not the only scheme at that time appears from the following quotation from the Lynn *Whig* of September 13, 1845: "A correspondent of the *Transcript* states that the committee will probably report in favor of building upon this beach (Long Beach, Nahant) a branch for the Eastern Railroad."

In 1847 a town-meeting held at Lynn voted an appropriation of one thousand dollars to defray a part of the expense of constructing a road over Long Beach, provided that said road be built and finished to the satisfaction of the selectmen. The road was then built by spreading gravel over the sand, and was about one rod wide. It was completed in the summer of 1848. Again, in April, 1849, the town of Lynn voted one hundred and fifty dollars for the new road over Long Beach, provided that an equal sum be subscribed by the Nahant people. In this way a narrow, graveled road was completed from Lynn to Nahant.

In March, 1851, a severe storm entirely submerged the beach, damaging the breakwater, washing gullies through the new road, and covering a large part of it with sand. The newspapers of that day reported the road as washed away, but it proved otherwise, as the sand had only covered the gravel, and, when removed, the road-bed was found to be but slightly damaged, as the gravel was washed away only in a few places. From year to year large sums were expended upon the widening and perfecting of this beach road. A breakwater was built, and at great cost has been maintained down to the present time; so that to-day we have one of the best roads in the State—well watered in the summer, and lighted at night throughout the year.

In 1848 an act was passed by the Massachusetts Legislature for the protection of Long Beach, "forbidding all persons to carry away or remove by land or by water any stones, gravel or sand from the Long Beach, in the town of Lynn," and in 1852 an additional act was passed by the Legislature, forbidding the removal of sea weed from Long or Short Beach.

In 1853 the inhabitants of Nahant again petitioned the Legislature to be incorporated as a town, to be called Nahant. This petition proved successful, and the act making Nahant a separate town, was approved by the Governor March 29, 1853. The new town had within its boundaries all of Long Beach. The city of Lynn consented to this division, as it would be thereby freed from further expense in maintaining the breakwater and keeping the new road in repair. The settlement with Lynn regarding the public property was left to referees, who agreed that the town of Nahant should pay to the city of Lynn $2033.45. The Boston *Bee*, referring to the new little town of Nahant, says,—"It is said to contain about thirty voters. Hull must cave in. In the future it will be 'as goes Nahant, so goes the State.' We wish Massachusetts were as sure to be right as Nahant is.

"We know of no other town of which so large a per cent. are Whigs. It is to be expected from such that they are a model people in other respects.

"Long live the small town of Nahant!"

THE NEW TOWN.—The new town had a population of three hundred people, sixty-nine dwellings and thirty voters.

There was a long road or street from Lynn to the Nahant Hotel; a cart-way to North Spring; a street, one rod wide, to the school-house and Cary's gate, called School-house Lane. Below Whitney's Hotel the streets had been laid out by Coolidge. Very few were laid out in straight lines, and all the roads and curved paths were as irregular as the lines along the shore that mark the tides.

Nahant had at the time of its incorporation two churches, one school-house with forty-eight scholars, four public-houses, ten boarding-houses, two firms of carpenters and builders, one paint-shop, a grocery store and post-office. A small building at Bass Point was kept in summer by Mr. Nathan Moore as a restaurant, which was a popular resort for picnic-parties. Above the residence of Mr. Tudor all the land was a wide, open pasture, with foot-paths running in every direction, to and from the main road to the several beaches. But few walls or fences obstructed the right of way over these broad acres; stranger or native might roam at will. The pebbly beaches were as free to all as the ocean itself. Fishing was free on the rocky points and by the still waters in the coves. There were no signs then of "Private Grounds," "No Trespassing Here," and the cattle roamed at will over the fields.

Longfellow says, in his journal of 1850: "One of the prettiest sights of Nahant is the cows going over the beach at sunset, from the cow-rights of Nahant to the cow-yards of Lynn. Their red hides and the reflection in the wet sand light up the gray picture of the sky and surge." In the bay were the fishing vessels, and among them was the only yacht of that day, the "Raven," owned by one of the summer residents. This trim little craft, decked in the flags of different nationalities and the private signals of the owner, made a striking contrast with the homely fishing vessels. The first sound that disturbed the unbroken silence of early morning was the ring of the heavy fisherman's boots, as they passed through the streets

on their way to their boats; then the sounds of hoisting sails, the sharp click of the windlass, as the heavy mooring chains were lifted from the bows of the fishing fleet,—then one by one with spreading sails they silently left their moorings, to appear again in the distant horizon with their white sails dancing like fairies in the morning sun. In the evening the vessels returned again with bountiful fares.

The town had hardly launched out in its self-government when the contested question of land rights and ownership in surplus lands and of the beaches arose. As early as 1800 a society was formed and known as the "Proprietors of the Nahant Pastures." This society held annual meetings and designated the number of acres of land that should comprise a cow-right; but nevertheless, the lands soon began to be sold in small parcels, on which houses were built. When Nahant was incorporated as a town, it claimed the ownership of the land, and the proprietors of the Nahant pastures were ignored. In 1856 a committee was appointed in town-meeting to make investigations relative to the rights of the town in the undivided and unimproved lands within its corporate limits. This committee surveyed the town and found in nearly every range sufficient land to give each lot, as laid out in 1706, its full acreage and poles.

In their report, they returned two surplus parcels of land at the end of the ninth and tenth ranges, with a list of lots as laid out to several original proprietors, these lots appearing to have no recorded title from the original grantors of Lynn.

The town could have no claim to these lots, as the original owners received their title from the vote of town-meeting in 1706, and the town of Lynn was the original grantor. This barred Nahant from any ownership, excepting by purchase from the grantors or their heirs. Subsequent conveyancers have found titles from the registry of deeds for all the several lots claimed by the town, and there is hardly a lot that is not traceable and has not a recorded title, which should dispel the erroneous idea that Nahant lands are lacking in good titles. Surplus land and the title to the beaches, however, offered questions which have been discussed more than any other. It was claimed by one party that the citizens of Nahant owned the beaches in common, for gathering drift-wood, kelp and sea-weed. This right had been reserved for the citizens of Lynn by the division made in 1706, as by that division all the land was divided into lots and parcels for each inhabitant, but the beaches were reserved for the use of the townspeople in common. In accordance with this right, the citizens of Nahant, when it became a separate town, claimed all the beaches within the corporate limits of the town. On the other hand, those owning land bordering on the sea claimed the right to the shore to low-water mark, by statute law. This latter opinion prevailed, as at this date, and there is now but little, if any, question on this point.

After a continuous struggle with the city of Lynn for the title of Long Beach, the courts decided that the right to the beach had passed from the city of Lynn, by the act of incorporation that made Nahant a town, and thus the right of Long Beach went to the new town, as the beach was held to be a part of its territory.

Summer Residents.—The cottages of the summer residents were at first small and primitive, usually of one and a half stories, a few having two stories. There were generally piazzas on each side, and rose-bushes usually were planted by the side of the pronged posts that supported the piazza roof, and this was about all the pretension there was to floral display, save the lilac and a few other hardy plants. The foot-paths leading from cottage to cottage gave the appearance of an informal and social summer life among the cottagers. Longfellow says in his journal: "Life at Nahant partakes of the monotony of the sea. The walk along the shore, the surf, the rocks, the sails that embellish the water, books and friendly chat,—these make up the agreeable rounds."

Among the many distinguished people who made their summer homes at Nahant was Wm. H. Prescott, the historian. It was his custom every morning to spend several hours walking back and forth under a row of willow trees, now a part of the estate of Mr. Sears. The boys of the village would often meet him there, as they carried their supplies of bread, groceries or milk, in their baskets or pails, to the summer residents. He would usually see them coming, and wait at the end of the path until they reached him; then he would take basket or pail and carry it up the hill to the other end of the path. We all loved the kindly man who so many times helped us with our little burdens up the hill.

Longfellow we saw every morning sitting by the window writing, and we used to wonder what he could be writing so much about. Years later we read the "Song of Hiawatha," which was partly written in the Johnson house.

Daniel Webster visited Nahant in 1851, and an account of his visit here is given in a Lynn paper at that date:

"The Hon. Daniel Webster is now at Nahant, at the residence of Mr. James W. Paige. The people of Nahant called upon him at about nine o'clock on Wednesday evening and were very cordially received by him.

"He shook them warmly by the hand, and greeted them with the familiarity of old friends. After a half-hour's social conversation and earnest greeting they gave three hearty cheers for 'Webster and the Union,' which were responded to by Mr. Webster in a few remarks, urging the importance of inculcating and cherishing union principles. After expressing his gratification and thanks for the honor of the visit, he bade them an affectionate good-night.

"The company left highly gratified with the visit, and feeling that they had been favored by an interview with the greatest man the world now knows.

"We understand that Mr. Webster has taken rooms at Colonel Drew's, where we doubt not he will be reinvigorated by the sea breezes at that delightful place of resort. He appears in much better health than we have seen him for some time."

Professor Agassiz made his home at Nahant for many summers, and nowhere could he have been more respected and beloved than he was by the townspeople. He endeared himself to all by his perfect simplicity and by his kind and cordial manner. One day a strange fish was caught by the fishermen: no one could find a name for it, and finally they decided to go themselves and consult Professor Agassiz. When they reached his house they found him at dinner; but on this occasion, as on many another of the same nature, he at once left the table and appeared on the piazza to welcome his callers. I am sure no one that was present will ever forget that pleasant countenance as he took the fish, and holding it up in both hands, he looked at it a moment, and then turning to the fishermen said, "Why, is not this a bonito?" This occasion was made so pleasant by the further description of the fish that all were filled with admiration for him, and ever after to be lucky enough to catch a rare fish to carry to Professor Agassiz was a treat all strove for.

Among other interesting occasions at Nahant was the visit of Father Matthew, the celebrated temperance reformer. A platform was built for him under the trees in front of the old Johnson homestead, from which he addressed the citizens present, and many at the close of his address signed the pledge.

Mr. N. P. Willis was also one of the early summer residents at Nahant. The first summer he spent here he occupied rooms at the Nahant Hotel, but afterwards had a cottage. He was an enthusiastic admirer of Nahant, as the following quotation will show.

In describing the beach before the road was built he writes:

"Road to Nahant there is none. The οι πολλοι go there by steam; but when the tide is down you may drive there with a thousand chariots over the bottom of the sea. As I suppose there is not such another place in the known world, my tale will wait while I describe it more fully. Nahant (it is still called by its Indian name Nahants) is so far out into the ocean that what is called the 'ground-swell' — the majestic heave of its great bosom going on forever like respiration, though its force may be like a mist to beneath the sun, and a wind may not have crisped its surface for days and weeks, is as broad and powerful within a rood of the shore as it is a thousand miles at sea.

"The promontory itself is never wholly left by the ebb; but from its western extremity there runs a narrow ridge, scarce broad enough for a horse path, inspeakable for the rocks and sea-weed of which it is matted, and extending, at rest high water mark, from Nahant to the mainland. Seaward from this ridge it sounds an expanse of sand, left bare six hours out of twelve by the retreating sea, as smooth and hard as marble — level as broad and apparently as level as the plain of the Hermus. For three miles at streightest away without shell or stone, a surface of white, fine-grained sand, beaten so hard by the eternal hammer of the surf that the hoof of a horse scarce marks it, and the heaviest wheel leaves it as pointless as a floor of granite. This will be easily understood when you remember the terrible rise and fall of the ocean swell, from the very bosom of which, in all its breadth and strength, roll in the waves of the flowing tide, breaking down on the beach, every one with the thunder of a host precipitated from the battlements of a castle."

John Lothrop Motley loved and admired Nahant, and spent many summers there, passing his last summer in this country at the "Villa" with his friend, Mrs. J. E. Lodge. From the life of the Rev. Samuel May we quote the following:

"During the summer of 1820, at the invitation of several gentlemen of Boston, I accompanied them to Nahant, which had then become a favorite resort in the hot season, and spent three months. I instructed their children during the week, and conducted the service of public worship each Sunday morning. I remember that I enjoyed my little school, and that among my pupils were some boys who have since become distinguished men, especially the Rev. Robert C. Waterson, and the historian, John Lothrop Motley."

From this statement we infer that Mr. Motley learned his first lesson in the old stone school-house. In later years he spent a number of summers in the Hood house, where a part of one of his histories was written.

John Ellerton Lodge[1] was born in Boston November 26, 1807, and was the third son and sixth child of Giles Lodge and his wife, Abigail Langdon. Giles Lodge was a young Englishman, who came to the West Indies on business about 1790, and fled from St. Domingo in 1792, at the time of the great massacre, narrowly escaping with his life. On reaching Boston he established himself there as the correspondent of his brother's firm in Liverpool, and soon afterward married, and became an American citizen. Mrs. Lodge was descended from the well-known Langdon family, and through her mother from Lieutenant-General John Walley, who at one time commanded the colonial forces in Queen Anne's wars.

Mr. Lodge received his early education at the Boston public schools. He was an active, energetic boy, but fond of books; and his one great desire was to go to Harvard College. His father, however, although a successful and prosperous merchant, had a large and growing family and many expenses. After the New England fashion, therefore, he sent his eldest son, Dr. G. H. Lodge, the translator of "Winckelmann," as a matter of course, to Cambridge, but felt that he could not afford to do more for the younger boys. Accordingly John, when he finished school, went at once into his father's counting-room. A boy's place in the Boston counting-rooms of that day was no sinecure, and Mr. Lodge chafed under the restraint and also under the parental discipline, which was extremely strict. He finally made up his mind to shift for himself, and at the age of sixteen, with two hundred dollars which he had saved, he left his father, and, being of an adventurous turn, went to New Orleans, a far cry from Boston, in 1823. There he engaged in the

[1] The engraving which accompanies this sketch is by Wilcox, from the portrait by Eames, painted in 1842, and now in the possession of Mrs. John E. Lodge.





cotton business, and being both bold and sagacious, he prospered and made money. He remained in New Orleans for more than fifteen years, coming North only for the summers, which he spent at Nahant, or in making an occasional journey to England. About 1840, having accumulated a moderate fortune, he retired from business and returned to Boston to live, and in 1842 married Anna, the only surviving daughter of Henry Cabot, of Boston. After his marriage Mr. Lodge again engaged in business as a China merchant, in which he became very successful, owning many ships and carrying on an extensive trade with the East.

Mr. Lodge had always been fond of Nahant, and as his wife's family had lived there for many years, he had made it his summer home. Despite his many and large business cares, he always interested himself cordially and actively in everything which came into his life, and very soon, therefore, extended his interest to the little town where he passed his summers. For many years he was the treasurer of the Union Church at Nahant, and gave to its prosperity much time and thought. He also did everything in his power which could tend to advance the welfare of the town. He never entered public life in any way, but leaving the Whig party after Webster's 7th of March speech, became an ardent Free Soiler and Republican. This, with him, was not a difficult step, for during his long residence in the South he had imbibed an intense hatred of slavery, and he now threw himself into the opposition to its extension with all the ardor of a strong nature. He took a profound interest in the Fremont campaign, making then the only political speeches, of which he was ever guilty, to the assembled longshoremen on Commercial wharf in Boston, where his office was and where his ships were unloaded. He was a devoted friend and admirer of Charles Sumner, who passed many weeks of every summer as his guest at Nahant; and he aided the Republican cause with his purse and influence in unstinted measure.

In 1856 Mr. Lodge bought some land adjoining Mr. Cabot's house, where he lived, and amused himself by cultivating and improving it. About a year later he formally became a citizen of the town, and interested himself more than ever in its welfare and advancement. At the same time the great panic ruined, among many others, the Chicopee Mills, and Mr. Lodge was chosen treasurer of the corporation, thus undertaking, in addition to his already extensive business, the heavy burden of restoring the fortunes of the bankrupt company.

While he was thus engaged the War of the Rebellion broke upon the country. Unable, on account of physical disability, to enter the army, as he wished, he threw himself into every measure in support of the war with characteristic intensity. His name stands at the head of the subscription to raise and equip the little quota of Nahant, and in Boston he gave lavishly to every similar demand. To one friend who came to him for a subscription for some new regiment, he handed his signed check with the amount left blank, to be filled up at the pleasure of the committee.

In 1861 the hotel at Nahant on East Point was destroyed by fire, and the property was thrown upon the market. Mr. Lodge, who had long desired a larger place than the one which he occupied, immediately bought the hotel estate for the mortgages then upon it, and at once set about putting the property in order, with a view to building there. This was the amusement and pleasure of the summer of 1862, the last of his life. The cares of his business, the work of restoring the Chicopee Mills, which had been successfully accomplished, and the intense anxiety which he felt as to the war, all combined to break down a strong constitution. He never spared himself, but gave to everything his utmost strength, without reckoning the cost. The vital forces had been sapped, and he died suddenly at his home in Nahant, September 11, 1862. He left a widow and two children,—Elizabeth Cabot James, the wife of George Abbot James, and Henry Cabot Lodge, who still own and live upon the East Point estate at Nahant.

The editor of the New York *Express Messenger*, in the last number of that journal, informs his readers that he has found at last the right spot to spend the warm weather in. We quote his advice and description, as both are seasonable at this time. He begins his epistle from Nahant in the following strain:

"O! thou fagged and jaded citizen, well nigh worn bone-bare by the moil and heat of 'the town,' hast ever been to Nahant?

"And you, ye pleasure-seekers, ye hunters after cool spots and invigorating breezes, if ye have never been to Nahant, ye cannot possibly have an adequate idea of its unapproachable superiority over every other watering-place in this hemisphere.

"Probably there is not a habitable acre upon any sea-coast, upon this or any other continent, so wildly and grandly picturesque, yet abounding in comfort."

"It is a narrow tongue of rock and earth, thrust out from the land, into the sea, *to cool*.

"On three sides it is bounded by the blue waters of the Atlantic, and fanned by ocean winds which are whistling around my ears as I scribble this.

"Nature has done much for Nahant—in fact, almost all—and art has supplied the deficiency.

"To those familiar with Boston and its beautiful vicinities, nothing new can be told, perhaps, about the locality amid whose cooling breezes it is now my felicity to sojourn, while my southern and western friends and the self-sacrificing fashionable at Saratoga are sweltering in the horrid, torrid temperature of from ninety to a hundred degrees Fahrenheit.

"But there are thousands at this moment prospecting through the country for a cool spot to 'lay off in,' who must be in heathen ignorance of the fact that Nahant is the place where all the sea-breezes 'put in' when *other shores are too hot for them*, and that here is the most spacious and magnificent temple that old Neptune has ever raised to his honor.

"Aug. 4, 1851."

Fishing Interest.—From the earliest times the fishing interest largely entered into the support of the townspeople, and from it quite a revenue was derived. Fishing vessels were owned by Nahant residents from

the first; but we know but little of the real history of these very early boats and crews. In 1824 the well-known schooner "Lafayette," which was built at Essex, was at Nahant. This fishing vessel, with her crew of native fishermen, had many an adventure; but with the skillful management of her captain and crew, she always reached her moorings in safety, and we have no casualty to record in her many voyages. She was built after the old style fishing boats of her day, having a sharp or "pinky" stern, full bows and schooner rig, being of thirty tons burden. Her two skippers were Caleb and Joseph Johnson. Joseph was always in command during the winter months, but Caleb was her more permanent skipper. Both were remarkable men, as is shown by their abilities as pilots and seamen on their fishing trips, for the only nautical instrument they had, with which to navigate their craft, was a compass, which, through neglect, was often out of order. It is related that one of them, when twenty miles from land, in a thick snow-storm, kept saying to himself, "How can I find where the land is without a compass?" but in spite of his dark forebodings, he made Boston Light exactly ahead, showing his great and instinctive judgment. They never forgot the bearings of the various fishing-grounds, although years might have elapsed since they had last visited them. As pilots in Boston Harbor, none could excel them, either in day or night navigation, and they seemed to be familiar with every channel, rock and shoal. For fifty years Caleb was constantly employed in fishing, until a severe accident happened to him by falling through an upper scaffold floor in his barn, from which fall he never fully recovered.

Caleb Johnson was noted for his caution, but his brother, Joseph, was of a different type, and neither wind, weather or roughness of the sea daunted him, and he was always remarkable for his endurance. Joseph never left his fishing-lines until he had caught the fish he was after, and he would always bring home his full share of them. When an old man he spent a day on the fishing-grounds, in his favorite craft, the "Lafayette," and, on returning home, a northwest gale sprang up, and he was allowed to take the helm. The old pluck had not abated one jot. He carried sail, and refused to have a reef taken, until the crew, becoming alarmed, persuaded him to leave the helm. This proved to be his last "trick at the wheel."

Their fishing trips were of short duration, and were known as shore or market voyages. They left home in the early morning, caught a fare of fish, and got them fresh the same day to Boston market. Their boats were kept almost constantly sailing, except when actually on the fishing-grounds, and at their moorings, or at the wharf in Boston Harbor. They started from home or market in the night, so as "to catch the fish before they got off their fins," as the old fishermen expressed it. The accuracy and ability required to make the exact spot of land intended to be made, often without either compass or timepiece, in running for harbor from the different fishing-grounds in stormy and foggy weather, is worthy of mention. The "dipsy" lead and the compass were, as a general rule, all the nautical instruments owned and used by them.

Fish were then quite abundant and not unfrequently the catch would be one thousand pounds to a man. Two fishing-lines only were used by each fisherman, so that it required both tact and skill to secure a full share of fish. Through their good judgment and constant watchfulness, they managed to escape many dangers, and, indeed, very few serious accidents have ever occurred at Nahant.

A story is related of a narrow escape of the schooner "Lafayette." On one of her trips to Boston, which she had safely reached in a severe northeast snow-storm, she took shelter by the side of a large schooner: her sails were furled and the crew had "turned in;" but through the habit of a life-long watchfulness, one of the crew, on looking out of the forecastle to see if all was well, perceived a brig, which had broken loose from Lewis' Wharf, coming before the wind, and heading exactly to the spot where the "Lafayette" lay. With surprising quickness the crew of the "Lafayette" moved their boat out of the way; the brig at the same moment just grazed her and struck and sunk the large schooner, beside which she had been lying. The stories of narrow escapes and perilous runs would fill a volume, but as one expressed it, "we always knew where we were, and trusted to the staunchness of our boats to bring us safely home."

It is related of a successful skipper, who had been persuaded to retire from fishing and open a fish market in a neighboring city, that, while carrying an order which led him past the bay, then being lashed by a "Nor' Easter," he paused and, looking wistfully over the sea, was heard to say to himself: "If I was only out there in the bay at anchor, with mast and sails blown away, I should feel all right, but to carry a pint of oysters three miles is a small business."

On the introduction of trawl-fishing, bay-fishing, which had been carried on for many years previous to 1860, was abandoned at Nahant. But the fishing-grounds are now barren of fish, where once they were so plenty. It is not to be wondered at that this should be the case, when one considers that in trawl-fishing one man uses a line a mile long, to which are attached fifteen hundred or two thousand hooks. In this way a crew of ten men would fish ten miles of line, having twenty thousand baited hooks; whereas in bay-fishing one man used only two lines, having one or two hooks only attached. Covering the fishing-ground with these hundreds of trawls soon broke up the schools of fish that regularly came in the bay to lay their spawn, and it is a sad fact that the square miles of water now looked upon from our headlands, and once so productive of fish and so remunerative to

the townspeople, have been entirely abandoned and are no longer productive.

The schooner "Foam," built at Salisbury in 1844, was one of the first sharp boats built for fishing. She had a sharp bow, with a square stern, was of about thirty tons and was schooner rigged. She proved to be one of the fastest fishing boats in her day. She was used in the summer as an excursion boat, and the rest of the year in bay-fishing. Perhaps no crew has ever brought home better fares and stocked more money than the crew of this boat. Like the "Lafayette," the "Foam" was a lucky boat, no very serious casualties happening to her or her crew, although she was in the bay in the roughest of weather, and had her full share in perilous events. In a famous sail in Boston Harbor, with the schooner "Jane," of Swampscott, a schooner that never was beaten by any fishing vessel, the "Foam" proved herself to be nearly her equal in speed, although she was but half the tonnage of the "Jane." This gave our little Nahant schooner a notoriety that was remembered through her long and successful career. In the gale of September 8, 1869, by the parting of her cable, she went ashore on Phillips Beach, Swampscott, and was a total wreck.

In 1858 the business of winter lobstering was begun, and in this occupation the last vessels of the fleet of fishing boats were employed. This proved a profitable business, and employed about forty men and four vessels. The "great stock" of money received some seasons would be as much as thirty thousand dollars. The lobster proved not to be a migratory fish, but a native, so that a number of given localities in the bay were in a few years almost entirely stripped of them. At the present time all this staunch fleet of vessels employed in this business has been disposed of. At one time one thousand and twelve hundred lobsters have been taken from one hundred traps, making an average of twelve lobsters to a trap. Half that average was the common fare. Each year's lobstering showed clearly to all that this industry would be short-lived. A law was enacted to protect all the smaller lobsters under ten and a half inches long; but the decrease in the catch under this law so increased the demand that it encouraged the fishermen to make the law of but little, if any, protection to the lobster.

Another branch of the fishery was in supplying the local market. Cod, haddock and halibut were plentiful, so that one fisherman with his two fishing-lines could easily supply the fish for nearly every family during the summer months. The supply was caught every morning, and delivered to the several families in season to be served at dinner. A fish two days old was not thought fit for the table, even if kept in an ice-house, which then, in every family, took the place of the present refrigerator. From two to three hundred pounds was the average catch per man, with often a halibut to increase his fare of morning's fishing, while the smaller fish were so abundant that they were not of much account. Compare this with the present day. No one now thinks of making fishing a business here, for supplying the hotels and summer residents. The most expert fisherman could now hardly catch enough cod, haddock and halibut to supply his own table. The fresh fish now kept in the markets is from Boston and other markets; nearly all the halibut comes from the Banks, usually not less than a week old; the cod and haddock are sometimes a day or two old, while the lobsters used are partly imported from Canadian waters. The modern improvements in packing fish in ice-chests aboard of the large fishing vessels, which now take the supply of fish from the Georges and the Grand Banks for the Boston markets, obviates in a measure the loss of the supply formerly caught. It would seem, if the Legislature should abolish trawl-fishing in our bay, and protect the menhaden and other small fish, known to be the natural food-fish for the cod and haddock, from the purse seine and if the catching of lobsters be forbidden at stated times, we might yet, in the future, be encouraged in the hope of once more having the fresh fish daily supplied for our tables and the old industry renewed.

February 11, 1858, while fishing was still an industry with us, the schooner "Charles Amory," of sixteen tons, was christened. It was the first vessel ever built at Nahant, and was the work of Mr. E. J. Johnson. At the christening Mr. Walter Johnson served as president of the day. The exercises were opened by singing "A Life on the Ocean Wave," in which all joined; an address was then given by Alfred D. Johnson, parts of which may be quoted.

"It is indeed fitting that he whose name is associated with those of the best friends of Nahant, whose humanity has caused him to exert a powerful influence in behalf of the suffering sons of the sea, who has by his influence caused our whole coast to be supplied with life-boats and apparatus to relieve the shipwrecked from a dreadful death, and who for years has been among the first to encourage and help on all movements calculated to promote the prosperity of our people, should receive this tribute of gratitude. . . . Go, then, little craft, from this spot, whence you have sprung into existence, to the waters, towards which you are steadily pointing, and upon whose bosom you are to find your future home; and as you spread your wings to catch the favoring breezes of heaven, may prosperity attend you, and may this gilded hand which adorns your brow ever successfully point out to your gallant crew a haven of safety from the stormy dangers through which you will successfully bear them. May you combat the stormy waves for years, remaining, as now, the favorite of all, the pride of your owners and crew,—and may no one ever have cause to regret that you bear the honored name of Charles Amory."

This interesting event was further celebrated at the

residence of Jonathan Johnson, where one hundred guests were present at tea, and after tea, music and dancing continued until morning.

This little craft proved to be an excellent sailor and sea-boat. She remained in the fishing fleet at Nahant until sold to parties in Scituate, where she kept up her former reputation.

The following are the names of some of the vessels that have been engaged in the fishing business at Nahant: The "Dolphin," "Jefferson," "Sally Ann," "Caroline," "Lafayette," "Josephine," "Foam," "Fairy Queen," "Spray," "Susan," "Greyhound," "Faustina," "Fashion," "Charles Amory," "Lizzie Phillips," "Frederick Tudor," "Signet," "Joseph and Henry," "Panther," "Echo," "Zephyr," "Fox," "John Randolph," "Raven," "Evergreen," "Unity," "James and Isaac," "General Marion."

Industries.—Besides the fishing interest at Nahant, binding and making shoes was also a profitable employment for many of the people. Manufacturing shoes was at one time commenced, but it did not prove successful and was soon abandoned. A shoe-making shop in the early days here was usually a small building ten feet square, with four windows and a door and window in the front. This building was usually painted red or white, and was lathed and plastered inside, with a chimney in the end, held up by two joints. In the centre of the room was a box stove. Sometimes a room was finished off for a shoe-making shop in the loft of a barn, and one was over the grocery store, with a stairway leading to it, outside.

Each shop was known by a local name; one was called the "Band-box," two others went by the name of the "House of Commons" and the "Invincible," the latter being generally well crowded with men and filled with tobacco smoke, especially in stormy weather, when the fishermen could not go on the bay. In these times, especially in the evening, the toiler on the bench, having but two tallow candles for light, could only pursue his work with difficulty, the tobacco smoke becoming so dense that the dim light could hardly be distinguishable across the room. The "Invincibles" were never known to be smoked out but once, although it was many times attempted. The binding of shoes was done by the mothers and daughters in their several homes, but the sewing-machine soon did away with this employment. Sewing societies were held in turn at each house for binding shoes, the proceeds being invested in cloth to make clothing for the poor in Lynn, for Nahant had no poor. The ladies spent the afternoon in working, but in the evening the men were invited to tea, and the long tables would be loaded with the best the market could produce. The people of the town were like one family, all equals, happy and prosperous. The introduction of the machinery now used in manufacturing shoes has caused this once profitable business to be entirely abandoned, nothing of the kind being now carried on in the town.

Thus to catch a fish and make a shoe were in those times the two arts of life here, but they are now among our "lost arts." Considerable attention was paid to farming in those days; many acres of land were tilled, and each family had sufficient ground for a garden, with fields of grain and vegetables besides. The harvest of the Rice, Hood and Johnson families in the autumn was of no little account. The husking-parties in "Uncle Caleb's" barn and "Aunt Olive's" generous suppers ought never to be forgotten. Peace and plenty were in every household.

Shipwrecks and Storms.—Nahant, from its earliest settlement to the present day, has had its full share of storms and shipwrecks. We give below a list of vessels that have been cast away on our shores. This list has been collected from newspaper files, Lewis' "History of Lynn and Nahant," and from private journals.

February 18, 1631, a vessel, owned by Captain Thomas Wiggin, of Portsmouth, was wrecked on Long Beach. December 17, 1740, in a great storm a vessel was wrecked on Nahant rocks. February 24, 1755, a schooner from Salem was cast away on Short Beach. February 6, 1757, two merchant vessels from London, valued at £100,000, were wrecked on Lynn Beach. February 8, 1766, an English brig, from Hull, was cast away on Pond Beach, on the south side of Nahant. 1769, a sloop was driven ashore at Nahant in a severe storm. March 21, 1772, a fishing schooner was wrecked on Long Beach, and Jonathan Collins and William Boynton, the only two men on board, were drowned. January 26, 1778, a sloop commanded by Captain Pendleton was wrecked on Lynn Beach. December 9, 1795, the Scottish brig "Peggy," Captain John Williamson, from Cape Breton, was wrecked near the southern end of Lynn Beach. There were twelve men on board, only one of whom, Hugh Cameron, of Greenock, Scotland, escaped. May 10, 1827, a schooner from Kennebunk was driven, by a storm, upon Lynn Beach and was dismasted. March 5, 1829, a brig named "Elizabeth and Ann" was cast away on the Shag Rocks, Nahant, where all her crew perished. She was dashed entirely to pieces. December 17, 1836, the brig "Shamrock," Captain Jostin, of Boston, was wrecked on Long Beach. December 15, 1840, the schooner "Catharine," from Philadelphia, bound for Boston, was wrecked on the rocks near Bass Point, Nahant. Captain Nichols and one man were saved. March 17, 1843, the schooner "Thomas," Captain William Sprowl, of Belfast, was wrecked on Long Beach. November 21, 1851, the brig "Exile," of Yarmouth, N. S., Captain Sharp, was wrecked on Long Beach. Large quantities of her deck-load of wood were washed ashore. All her crew were saved. September 30, 1856, the schooner "Shark," Captain Carlisle, bound from Bristol, Maine, for Boston, was wrecked on Long Beach. The vessel went to pieces; but no

lives were lost. The disaster was caused by the Egg Rock light being taken for that on Long Island.

The winter of 1857 was most severe in its cold weather and storms. On Friday and Saturday, the 16th and 17th of January, the thermometer sunk to fourteen degrees below zero. The wind had been from the northwest, which had made the sea smooth, so that Lynn Harbor was frozen over, and ice had formed in all the coves about Nahant; the bay between Nahant and Swampscott was full of fields of ice, a thin sheet of ice extending to and beyond Egg Rock. Sunday morning the wind changed to the northeast, and snow began to fall. The wind increased steadily until sunset, when it became a hurricane. The howling of the wind around our dwellings, with the heavy falling and roar of the waves as they broke and beat upon the shore, brought a feeling of dread to all, yet "we all knew we could trust our rock-bound shore." Gusts of wind pressed so heavily against the windows and sides of the houses, that it would seem as if they must crush them in. Then there would be a lull in the storm, and the houses would sway back again as if to straighten up and brace themselves against the next terrible gust which was sure to follow. In these lulls the roar of the sea could be heard, and at intervals sounds like the discharge of signal guns, caused by the waters as they were thrown back into the gale from Spouting Horn. This lasted throughout the night. In the morning the gale had not abated, but, if anything, had increased; banks of snow had accumulated so fast in the night, that the doors were blocked, as if to make all prisoners while the storm lasted. In such a storm the shore must be searched, in order to discover the casualties of the past night,—shipwrecks or other disasters that may have happened,—but none but the strong and hardy could venture forth in this terrific gale. The north shore was found to be strewed with plank and timbers from some vessel that must have been lost in the night.

At the full of the tide, at noon, the wind and snow decreased a little, making Egg Rock visible from the shelter afforded on the lee-side of Dr. Mifflin's cottage, where a small party had gathered. Some would have called it a grand sight to have looked upon the ocean at such a time; but as I remember it, it was a terribly realistic scene of the power of the wind and ocean, rather than one of grandeur. The great waves, as they rolled in towards the shore, jarred the ground under our feet. At times Egg Rock seemed to be covered with water and spray, which would rise above the lantern. From the rock to the shore great waves rolled themselves over and over, gathering up the water in long lines to fall like a cataract as they met the receding undertow from the shore; then they would gather again, and, with tremendous force, dash against the rocky shore. These high waves would fall upon and completely cover Castle Rock, while from the summit of Cedar Island the water fell from every side, so that the rock looked as if it were rising out of the Falls of Niagara. East Point was covered with the breaking and dashing waves, which sent the spray apparently a hundred feet in the air, and along the shore by Pulpit Rock sheets of water were thrown far above the land, and the spray could be seen above the hotel. A great wave rushed through Canoe Beach Cove, over the road and across the land, emptying itself in the cove by Mr. James' house. Along the shore, by Spouting Horn, was a continued sheet of spray, making the Cary House an uncomfortable place of shelter. The sea rolled in past Swallow's Cove, then over the wharf, washing wood, boats and lumber into the sea. The lowlands were full of water—from the willows, in Mr. Whitney's field, to Dorothy's Cove. The waves washed over Pond Beach, filling the meadow with water, while Bailey's Hill was overwhelmed by wave after wave, some of which, at times, would nearly reach the summit. The Long and Short Beaches were washed over, making Nahant appear like a group of islands wrestling in the furious waters for an existence. At evening the roaring of the sea could be heard above the storm, denoting that it was nearly over. The wind and snow gradually decreased through the night, and on Tuesday morning the sky was clear, while the waves along the shore formed themselves into long deep ridges to more steadily break on the rocks, but the washing of the stones by the tide made a continuous sound like distant thunder. The beaches were strewed with small fish and lobsters, which could be gathered by cart-loads.

As soon as the roads were broken out sufficiently to make them passable, many availed themselves of the opportunity to visit Nahant, to witness the grandeur of the ocean after the storm; and they brought with them the news of the wreck of the "Tedesco."

February 2, 1859, during the violent storm, the "Vernon," a British bark of two hundred and sixty-five tons, bound from Messina for Boston, was wrecked on Long Beach. Her cargo was chiefly of oranges. All her crew were saved.

On the morning of the 10th of December, 1864, the schooner "Lion," from Rockland, Maine, laden with granite, was seen at anchor between Egg Rock and Long Beach. She rode at her anchor till near night, when at low water the sea broke over her, causing her chains to part; the jib was then hoisted, and, under this sail, she was run ashore on Long Beach, near Little Nahant, where she went to pieces before help could reach her. All her crew were lost. The bodies of the unfortunate men were found washed ashore the next morning, and carried to the vestry of the village church, where a funeral service was held the next day, after which the bodies were carried to their late homes, in Rockland. This made the second vessel lost on Nahant in which all the crew were drowned.

About fifteen years before the wreck of the "Lion" two vessels were wrecked at Nahant at different times, the exact date not being on record. One of these schooners, the "Major Ringold," loaded with lumber, was wrecked on Canoe Beach, and was badly injured. A part of her load was broken to pieces in the surf on the beach, but that in her hold was saved. She was got off and towed to Salem, where she was repaired.

The other schooner, loaded with iron, was wrecked on the same beach, but was got off with little damage. The crews of both vessels were saved.

The last vessel that was wrecked on our shore was the schooner "Augustus Smith," Capt. J. N. Smith, of Lockport, N. S., bound for Boston. She carried a cargo of thirty-six hundred bushels of potatoes and rutabagas. She was cast ashore on Short Beach, December 21, 1883. On the 29th, by throwing overboard a part of her cargo, she was got off and towed to Boston.

Schools.—It would be difficult to fix the exact date of the first school at Nahant, but as far we can ascertain, a school was first held in the Hood house and in the old Johnson homestead. A building for a school was used previous to 1812. It had been formerly a shoemaker's shop, but was refitted and refurnished as a school-house. It was located nearly opposite the site of the present post-office. A description of this school is best given by one of its pupils, now living at Nahant in his ninetieth year:

"The first school that I ever attended was in the Hood house, and was kept by Nancy Carter during twelve weeks in the winter. Some three winters after, we went to school in the old red school-house. There were then about thirty scholars. Benches ran across both sides of the school-room, so that we faced each other; long benches for our seats ran behind these; and the teacher had a table at the end of the room, where she sat. The school was kept only in spring and winter. Clarissa Herrick was the first teacher, who afterwards married Richard Hood. Betsey Graves, who afterwards married Joseph Johnson, taught the school from 1812 to 1816.

The following is a list of the permanent scholars attending the school in 1812, some of whom are now living: Joseph Johnson, Jonathan Johnson, Eliza Johnson, Francis Johnson, Pamelia Johnson, Mary Johnson, Welcome William Johnson, George Lovel Johnson, Clarissa Ann Johnson George Hood, Martha Ann Hood, Harriet Argans, David Bickford Mudge, Albert Newel, Thomas Rich, Priscilla Hitchings

Transient scholars: Thomas and Amos Bulfinch, George and Henry Stone, Malinda Howard, Augustus Breed, Thomas and Otis Stone, Mary Stone and Nabby Breed

The next school house was built about 1819, of stone gathered from the granite boulders that were scattered through the pastures. It was about twenty-five feet square, with a hip-roof. There was a window in each side, with two in the front,—one on each side of the door. A library and a few pictures were given by Mr. William Wood, Thomas H. Perkins and other summer residents; also a bell, which was placed in the cupola; the bell-rope hung down through the centre of the roof, bringing it in the centre of the school-room. The room was heated in winter by a large box-stove, burning wood, the scholars each taking turns in building the fire and splitting the wood, carrying enough in the school-house for the supply for the day. This school-room was used for school, church, political and like purposes, by the people of the town. By the school records we find Joseph Johnson served on the prudential committee for many years. He used to collect from Lynn the small sum allowed for the Nahant school, while the balance was contributed by the parents whose children were sent to the school. It is worthy of record that Joseph Johnson and his sons served as school committee for over sixty consecutive years. In 1851 this school building was torn down and the present primary and intermediate school-house was built. It was dedicated Tuesday, September 16, 1851. Three original poems were read and several addresses were made, that of Rev. E. G. Brooks being a very interesting and eloquent discourse, which was listened to with much attention and pleasure. Interesting and appropriate remarks were also made by James R. Newhall, Esq., Hon. George Hood, Joseph and Caleb Johnson and others. "The singing was by a select choir, under the direction of Mr. C. A. Adams, and was of a high order, the singers deserving much credit for the manner in which they contributed to the interest of the occasion. The new school-house is a fine building, beautifully located, and perfectly convenient and comfortable. The system of ventilation is particularly noticeable, being on a new plan, which is for the first time in Lynn introduced in this edifice. The pure air is introduced beneath the floor through places in the sides of the room. The school-house was designed by Mr. Francis Foster, and built by Samuel Lord, both of whom have faithfully performed their duty." This school-house became the property of Nahant in 1853, when it was set off from Lynn as an incorporated town.

The second or primary school was established in 1853.

In 1876 a High School was established in the town-hall, a room being set aside and furnished for this purpose. Mr. C. J. Hayward was the first principal.

A fourth school was established in 1880, with Miss Nellie M. Palmer as teacher. In 1884 a new school-house was built for the grammar school. Thus we have at the present time four schools, accommodating one hundred and fifty pupils.

Churches.—Previous to the building of the stone school-house, the few families at Nahant attended church in Lynn. The Hoods and Breeds were Quakers

and members of that society. The Johnson families belonged, one to the Baptist, the other to the Methodist Church; while the Rice family belonged to the Orthodox Church. The children of each family attended Sunday-school in these various churches. After the services came the long walk home, of three and a half miles over the beach. If the tide was out, the journey was made easily; but at high-water it became very tiresome, for it was as much as the horses could do to drag the empty vehicle, so that both parents and children were obliged to go on foot, wading through the sand home.

When the stone school-house was built, religious meetings were held there by the different pastors of Lynn. A Sunday-school was established, Mr. Jesse Rice being the first superintendent, assisted by Mr. Hubbard. This lasted until the present village church, called Independent Methodist, was built, when all, by common consent, made this edifice their church home. At the evening meetings the lighted lanterns, carried to and from each home to the church, were placed in rows by the door; then after the meeting was over they were carried back to the homes of every family, as if the light of the Gospel was literally carried from the church to the home. These united church-people have nearly all passed away, and with them the lights in their lanterns have all gone out.

Before this church was erected, in 1831, a chapel was built by the summer residents, which was used only in the summer months; and it was generously offered by them to the inhabitants to be used as their place of worship throughout the year; but it was thought best to build a new church. The builders of this first chapel were largely the builders of the village church, in fact we may say that the chapel was the parent of the village church, in that, like the former, it agreed that all could unite in the praises and teachings of Christ, whatever their religious preferences might be. Its pulpit has been occupied by clergymen of nearly every denomination.

At the dedication of the village church Mr. Frederic Tudor, one of the founders of the Nahant church, wrote an original opening hymn, which is quoted as follows:

ORIGINAL HYMN.

BY FREDERIC TUDOR.

"While Thee we seek, protecting power,"
The stormy sea in vain shall roar;
Although before its rage we cower,
Sure can we trust our iron shore.

Humbly before Thy mighty throne,
We here another altar raise,
Of varied Christians, making one,
We sing a pæan to Thy praise.

United Christians come to Thee,
With hopeful hearts to consecrate;
We ask that this new temple be
A place Thy name to venerate.

The hoary head in meekness bows,
The smiling child, the mid-aged man,
Each in his heart still thinks he knows
Of Providence, Thy mighty plan.

Teach us a lowly course to take,
To learn Thy bounties, and adore;
Accept the offering we make,
And ever bless our rock-bound shore.

The land upon which the church was built was given by Caleb Johnson and J. W. Page.

A bell weighing eight hundred pounds was presented by Dr. William R. Lawrence. A silver communion service was given by Mr. Charles Amory. The ladies of Nahant presented the carpet and furniture for the church.

In 1852 a small debt remained, which was canceled through the kindness of Miss Catherine Hayes, who gave a concert in Lynn for the benefit of the church, an account of which is given below.

CATHERINE HAYES' LIBERALITY.—A grand concert was given at Nahant on Tuesday evening, by Catherine Hayes, for the benefit of the "new Church" in that place. The following is the acknowledgment of the Committee of the Church:—

"TO MISS CATHERINE HAYES:—*Most respected lady,*—By request o sundry inhabitants of Nahant, worshipping in the new Church in this place, allow us to tender you and your musical associates their grateful acknowledgment of your important and substantial aid rendered to their religious enterprise, by your Grand Concert, for their benefit, in Lyceum Hall, last evening. It has discharged our debt, and will enable us to worship God without pecuniary embarrassment. Besides, we are assured that it gave our citizens, generally, great pleasure to have an opportunity to see and hear among them one whose fame in *song* has filled the land and the world, and to bear their public testimony to your distinguished talents and worth. We shall ever remember your valuable services with thankfulness, your residence among us with grateful emotions, and your departure from us for a far distant part of the country with regret; and should a kind providence allow you to return to our shores, rest assured that we shall welcome you with outstretched hands and warm hearts. In behalf of those whom your charity has blessed, and of your many friends in this place, we have the honor, esteemed lady, to remain your obliged servants.

"NAHANT, October 13, 1852.

"W. H. JOHNSON,
"DEXTER STETSON,
"W. W. JOHNSON,
"A. COLBY,
"F. JOHNSON,
} *Committee.*"

The Nahant church and the village church have both been enlarged and improved, so that but little of the original of each remains.

In 1868, by the joint contributions of the residents and non-residents, a parsonage was built and given to the village church. Mrs. Fenno Tudor and Mr. Welcome W. Johnson were the largest contributors.

In 1876 a Young Men's Christian Association was formed through the efforts of the Rev. J. W. Dearborn, pastor of the village church. The land was given by Mrs. Fenno Tudor, and a small building was erected.

The Rev. Patrick Strain, of Lynn, and others of his church, preached and said Mass for members of the Roman Catholic Church in the old chapel until in 1872, when they built a church for themselves, the money being raised through the efforts of Father Strain, who was assisted by the resident and non-resident Roman Catholics.

CHAPTER CXVIII.

NAHANT—(*Continued*).

Name—Impressions—Long and Short Beaches—Little Nahant—Cemetery—Hotels—Johns Brook—Medin Gardens—North Shore—Iron Mine—Spouting Horn—Bass Beach—Pulpit Rock—Cliffs at East Point, Swallow's Cave and Old Wharf—Clark's Point—Southwest Shore—Land Lots—Conclusion—Valuation—Civil List.

WAR.—The first settlers of Nahant, although Quakers, who did not believe in fighting, nevertheless have a good war record to show. One, by his own testimony, received land on Nahant for his services in the Pequot War, and he also had a son killed in King Philip's War. Another early settler served in some of the French and Indian Wars, and many of his descendants fought in the War of the Rebellion. It is a notable fact that one of our naval officers from Nahant, who served through the War of the Rebellion, had both of his grandparents serve in the same regiment in some of the French and Indian Wars.

At the breaking out of the Civil War the descendants of the early soldiers were ready to bear the burdens of war, that the Union might be preserved. On the 23d of April, 1861, an enthusiastic meeting of the citizens of Nahant was held in the vestry of the church, where patriotic speeches were made by the citizens, and a company, called the "Home Guard," was formed.

Nearly all the men there, fit for military duty, signed the roll and Luther Dame was elected captain. Arms were bought by subscription and military drill was at once commenced.

The uniforms were purchased by the members of the company. Their first public parade was as a part of the Home Guard Battalion, at Lynn, where they received the Volunteer Companies D and F of the Eighth Regiment, on their return to Lynn, August 1, 1861.

A flagstaff was raised at the top of Bass Beach Hill, upon which the stars and stripes were hoisted. On this occasion Captain Dunham, who had served in the War of 1812 and in the Mexican War, had command of the gun. He applied the match, sending the report thundering over sea and land, amid the applause of the assembled citizens. This enthusiastic old soldier expressed great regret that his age and wound prevented him from again enlisting in his country's service.

Nahant, as well as the rest of the towns in the Commonwealth, was fully aroused and prepared to answer any call that the country might make upon its citizens. Meetings were held in the school-house, where subscriptions were received and aid guaranteed for the benefit of the families of those who should enlist in the war. Many of those who enlisted in the Home Guard joined the army in the field, making this organization of short duration.

The first to enter actual service was Mortimer L. Johnson, who volunteered and was assigned to the U. S. frigate "Sabine," as midshipman. He served through the war with Rear-Admirals Du Pont and Porter and Commodore Thatcher, who make honorable mention of him as an able officer. Commodore Thatcher, in his report of January 14, 1865, writes: "I have to commend to your notice, especially, Lieutenant M. L. Johnson, who, in the midst of a heavy fire from the enemy, with a boat's crew of volunteers, carried a boat's hawser from this ship to the 'New Ironsides,' in order to enable us to bring all the guns to bear from the port battery, and was for more than half an hour a target for the forts, which they availed themselves of, but fortunately without success."

C. Warren Johnson enlisted in the navy, and served on board the "Naralanza." He died in the service.

In March, 1862, it was voted to appropriate three hundred dollars for aid to soldiers' families, and to pay a bounty of two hundred dollars to each volunteer, when mustered in and credited to the quota of the town. John E. Lodge and Frederick Tudor added to the town bounty of each volunteer the sum of twenty-five dollars, or one hundrsd and seventy-five dollars in all to be added; James W. Paige added twenty-five dollars to each of the first four recruits, and Nathaniel Walker twenty-three dollars to each of the other three. Seven was the number required to be raised. The town voted to raise fourteen hundred dollars for recruiting purposes.

In August it was voted to pay a bounty of two hundred dollars to each of the volunteers for nine months' service.

Elbridge G. Hood served in the Thirty fifth Regiment as first lieutenant August 1, 1862; as captain December 16, 1862. He was severely wounded in the battle of Antietam, and was discharged April 29, 1863, for disability. He afterward served as captain in Company A, Eighteenth Regiment Reserve Corps.

The following is a list of those from Nahant who served in the war:

Mortimer L. Johnson	U. S. N. Commander
Charles Warren Johnson	U. S. N. Seaman
Charles H. Palmer	Eighth Regiment
Otto Bush	Ninth Regiment, Co. B
George F. Newhall	Eleventh Regiment, Co. K
Wm. L. Rand	Twelfth Regiment, Co. C
W. J. Johnson	Twenty-fourth Regiment, Co. F
Patrick Riley	Twenty-eighth Regiment, Co. A
Elbridge G. Hood, Captain	Thirty-fifth Regiment
William Hanson	Thirty-fifth Regiment, Co. C
Alexander Webber	Thirty-fifth Regiment, Co. D
John E. Wheeler	Thirty fifth Regiment, Co. D
Charles T. Lawless	V. R. C.
George P. Stone.	Daniel L. Seavey.
Marcellus Kidder.	James Campbell.
George C. Neal	Forty-third Regiment
Luther S. Johnson	Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F
Edmund B. Johnson	Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F
Edward J. Johnson	Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F
Sidney C. Johnson	Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F
Edwin W. Johnson	Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F
Shepherd H. Johnson	Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F
Welcome J. Johnson	Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F

Lorenzo P. Whitney.....Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F
Charles N. Babb ..Forty-fifth Regiment, and Eleventh Battery for three years.
Arthur J. Bulfinch.....Eleventh Battery nine months and Eleventh Battery three years.
Wm. H. Perry, Jr.....Twelfth Battery
John Simpson.....Twelfth Battery
James Hogan.....Regular Army, Nineteenth Infantry
Michael Mitchell.....Regular Army, Nineteenth Infantry
John Williams.....Regular Army, Nineteenth Infantry

Enlisted in regiments out of the State:

John Henry Hood.
Nelson Tarbox.
George Tarbox.
Hervey H Murdock.
Alfred Tarbox.
Theodore M. Johnson.

Nahant furnished forty-two men for the war, which was a surplus of five over and above all demands. The whole amount of money appropriated and expended by the town on account of the war, exclusive of State aid, was six thousand five hundred and eight dollars. During the whole of the war the ladies of Nahant held meetings to make underclothing for the soldiers, which, with boxes of provisions and small stores, were sent to the Sanitary Commission. There can be no better description of the summer season here during the war than the following quotation from one of its summer residents from his cottage by the sea: "Nahant is very solitary and deserted this year. I stood looking down at the steam boat landing opposite, not a fishing-boat, not a human being in sight; then the ghostly little steamer comes in and the phantoms go over the hill towards the ruins of the burned hotel, and all is still and lonely again."

Improvements.—From 1866 the valuation of personal assessments began to steadily increase.

A town hall was built and dedicated in 1869; later new streets were laid out, a Fire Department was organized and a new fire-engine built, with reservoirs for storing water, to be used in case of fire; a public library was established in 1872; edgestones and concrete sidewalks were laid on our streets; street lamps were placed along our highways and over Long and Short Beaches. In 1872 the valuation of the town was $6,611,202, being the largest valuation of any year since the town was incorporated.

The number of dwelling-houses in 1861 was one hundred and seven, while at the present time there are but two hundred and fifty, showing but a small increase for the past twenty-five years. Many of the houses have been enlarged and improved, while on many of the old sites of the summer cottages large and beautiful summer residences have been built, so that few, if any, of the old cottages of fifty years ago remain as first built.

The town has appropriated each year sufficient sums of money to encourage the improvements mentioned above, which were to beautify the town and make it more attractive.

Along some of the streets flowers have been planted in the small triangular pieces of land where two or three streets meet.

Many of our old summer residents protested against curbstones and concrete sidewalks, declaring that they would injure the beauty of the town and make it appear stiff and cityfied. They wanted to retain the green grass and irregular lines of the footpaths along our roads. "Let us have our Nahant primitive, the one place where there shall be no encroachments, a place which nature has itself made beautiful," they said. But their protests were of no avail, and the green footpaths were covered with concrete, so that at the present time these long, black, cheerless walks extend through nearly every street and lane throughout the town. Perhaps in the future the footpaths and the green grass may be restored, for then there was beauty and life, even to the grasshopper that flew away under our feet.

By the absence of any large hotel for the accommodation of transient visitors, Nahant has been a quiet home for summer residents, and the old times of hotel gayety have entirely passed away. Very few picnic parties now visit Nahant, although formerly they were very frequent, especially when the Maolis Gardens, a desirable and attractive resort, was in its prosperous days. Thousands visited it each season, but now its popularity is a thing of the past, and Bass Point, in a measure, takes its place.

A settlement of small summer cottages dot the hilltop and valley below. These cottages and small, cheaply constructed houses, prove to be a better shelter than the canvas covering that preceded them New streets and small lots of land have been laid out and are now offered to those who may desire to purchase and build upon them. Already larger and more beautiful cottages are being built for the coming season. The hotels that flourish there have, from small beginnings, increased in popularity, until to-day they are known throughout the country and visited in summer by thousands of people.

In July, 1847, a post-office was established in the Nahant Hotel. The first postmaster appointed was Phineas Drew, the proprietor of the hotel.

In the autumn of the same year the office was removed to the grocery store in the village, and Mr. W. W. Johnson was appointed postmaster—an office he held until his death, when his son, Mr. Edwin W. Johnson, succeeded him. The mail was carried every day during the summer months, but only once a week during the remainder of the year. At the present time the mail is brought twice a day during the summer and once every day during the winter. Mr. T. Dexter Johnson is the present postmaster.

Prior to the establishment of the post-office, Johnson's Nahant and Boston Express route was commenced between Nahant and Boston. It is said to be one of the first express routes established in the country.

In 1880 a case of typhoid fever was brought into the town, and, from its contagious nature, was conveyed to those who had charge of the case, until

quite a number were sick with the dreaded disease. In some instances the plan of drainage introduced was very poor. The object seemed to be to get the sewage out of sight and as deep in the ground as possible; the old-fashioned surface draining was abandoned, with its small cesspool near the surface, where vegetation absorbed and carried off the sewage that might be deposited there. These cesspools were always to be found covered with a rank growth of grass and weeds. But these small cesspools were distasteful to many persons, and accordingly large reservoirs were dug, ten and in some instances fifteen feet deep. These were walled up with stones, and a brick arch was built over the stone-work, leaving an opening of two or three feet in diameter, over which an iron or plank covering was tightly fitted; this was covered over with earth to securely close it up. In many instances the bottom of these reservoir cesspools were on a level with the water in the wells, which of course affected the drinking-water. The thoughtlessness on the part of those who allowed these reservoir cesspools to be dug on their premises, caused, perhaps, a few cases of fever. Thus the alarm went abroad, and sanitary engineers were employed, who at once saw the difficulty. The earth in many cases had become filled with sewage near the water-line of the water in the wells. One course was left for the town—which was to put in sewers—and this work was commenced February 16, 1882, under the charge of Mr. E. W. Bowditch, of Boston. All drainage from the houses was conducted into sewers, which emptied into the ocean, and the old cesspools were filled with gravel and abandoned.

Two years later, water-pipes were laid and water was introduced by the Marblehead Water Company.

The following record of deaths, compiled from the town records from 1854 to the present time (1887), will speak forcibly for itself and show clearly Nahant in the past, as well as to-day, has a record for healthfulness unsurpassed by any town in New England.

The whole number of deaths in the town from September, 1853, to March 30, 1887, is two hundred and fifty-seven.

The following is a list of the diseases: Typhoid fever, 6; typhus, 1; scarlet fever, 5; paralysis, 12; lung fever, 5; cancer, 11; diphtheria, 4; whooping-cough, 5; croup, 6; cholera infantum, 10; phthisis, 5; canker, 8; meningitis, 5; brain diseases, 6; heart disease, 14; pneumonia, 6; intemperance, 2; cholera morbus, 2; drowning, 13; shipwrecked, 4; consumption, 22; other diseases, 89.

There are, besides, fifteen deaths from old age,—the oldest person being ninety-eight and the youngest seventy-three,—while twenty-two other old persons died of different diseases incident to old age—the oldest of these persons being eighty-four, the youngest seventy-five. This makes thirty-seven of the two hundred and fifty-seven who lived over seventy-five years.

Of the children born in the town, only twenty-four have died aged five years and under. We have living in the town to-day four persons over eighty-five years old.

We quote the following from a paper written by Dr. Walter Channing, published in the *New England Medical Journal* of January, 1821:

"Children who have been remarkably susceptible of the diseases of advanced summer, and to whom the whole of the hot weather has been very unfriendly, have experienced at Nahant uninterrupted and robust health. The health of infants and children who have been born in this place is proverbial. The oldest inhabitant does not recollect an instance of death in infancy or childhood in such individuals. The salutary effects of this climate in preventing disease are not confined to children. I know several adults who have also experienced them. In relieving or curing disease this place has been frequently instrumental. The effects on those who have made the experiments of a residence here have, in some instances, been very striking. Cases of perfect relief, in cases of extreme exhaustion from disease, and in others where the symptoms of disease still continued, have occurred within the writer's knowledge the last summer.

"In some of these the amendment took place in a very short time. What are the diseases for which this residence seems most appropriate? This question can be but imperfectly answered.

"The facts are not yet sufficiently numerous in relation to any particular affection or any classes of diseases, to enable me to give a full answer. This, however, is true, that patients have gone there in an helpless state of exhaustion from a variety of causes, and have experienced very marked relief. There are three classes of affections in which a residence at Nahant has been found beneficial. First—in those of weaning children suffering the diseases of dentition and during the hot weather. Second—in the dyspeptic complaints of adults. Third—in the debility and emaciations with which some organic affections are attended. For the various cutaneous diseases and the chronic enlargements of glands attendant on the scrofulous diathesis, in which sea-bathing and a fine bracing atmosphere are beneficial, this is an highly eligible situation."

Long and Short Beaches.—Three stone posts, located at the northeasterly end of Long Beach, mark the boundary line between Lynn and Nahant. A few rods to the east of the boundary line the Hotel Nahant is located. The present proprietor commenced business there at an early date, in a small building, adding each year bathing-houses, sheds, a restaurant, etc., until to-day he has a flourishing business and a large and commodious building. Thousands from Lynn and other places are attracted here daily during the summer months by the excellent surf-bathing and the cool breezes from the ocean. Nearly opposite is a yacht-yard, on the bay side of the beach. In winter many yachts are stored in and about this yard in the sand; in summer they make an attractive and lively appearance as they sail about in the smooth waters of the bay.

Long Beach contains about forty acres of land, covered with sand, which, above the tide-mark, is nearly covered with a rank growth of grass, which has flourished from the first planting; the seed was imported from Holland, from the grass sowed on the dikes. Under the sand, the whole beach is a bed of clay over fifty feet thick,—a sufficient barrier against the beating of the waves, and insuring a lasting highway between Lynn and Nahant.

The two or three trees planted near the centre of the beach have lived through the gales of nearly a

quarter of a century, but bear their impress in their bent and stunted appearance. Although this experiment has not proved much of a success, yet we hope in the future to see groves of trees planted in groups of a hundred trees, protecting each other from the gales and making a desirable resting-place for the many who would enjoy it.

Little Nahant.—At the end of the beach is Little Nahant, which is chiefly owned by the Simmons and Howe families, who have their summer residences here. From these cottages there is a fine view of the ocean and the town beyond. From the summit of Little Nahant the descent to the sea is gradual, and an easy access is had to the rocks; but on the south side the cliffs are irregular, and, in a few instances, are steep and rugged. There are a few natural curiosities here. One is a large boulder near the road, below the watering-trough. It is composed of pebbles and clay, and is as hard as flint. It is thought to have been deposited there in the glacier period from the Great Lakes. On the south side there is a spring.

Leaving Little Nahant, the road continues around the curve of Short Beach; and a road turning to the right over a short bridge leads to Bass Point.

On reaching Great Nahant, at the foot of a hill, there is a little village invariably known as "Irish-town."

Cemetery.—Nearly up the hill, to the right, is Green Lawn Cemetery. This cemetery was dedicated in 1859; it is in a quiet and sheltered place, open to the south wind and sunshine, while a small hill forms a part of the eastern boundary and serves as a barrier from the easterly gales. It is zealously cared for by the town, and is laid out in walks, with many groves of trees and shrubs. Before this cemetery was set out and dedicated, many of the early settlers who died at Nahant were carried to Lynn and interred in the different burying-grounds there, while others have family burying-grounds. There was an old family burying-ground near the old school-house; but the remains of those buried there have been removed to the present cemetery.

At the top of the hill is the new grammar-school building, which is just three miles from the Boston and Maine Station in Lynn.

Cadets.—The hill to the left, formerly called Cannon Hill, was the early camping-ground of the First Corps of the Boston Cadets, who, for upwards of twenty-five years, had their annual encampment at Nahant.

But this land being purchased by a summer resident, they encamped farther to the eastward, in the field above John's Peril, until this field also was purchased, causing the corps to find accommodation elsewhere, thus depriving Nahant of her once boasted Cadet Week. These yearly encampments at Nahant were a marked event of the season, and were familiarly known as "Cadet Week at Nahant." All gathered to the camp to enjoy the parades and drills, and in the evening to listen to the band concerts. Many people also from adjoining towns visited the camp and all in common made it the gayest week of the season.

John's Peril.—Nearly opposite the school-house is a road which leads to the north shore. At the foot of the road is an overhanging cliff, some forty feet above the boulders below. This cliff is called John's Peril from the following incident:

John Breed, a member of the Breed family, then living at Nahant, while one day going along the shore with his oxen and cart, in search of drift-wood, came to this cliff, and to shorten the distance, attempted to make his oxen drag the cart up the steep ascent above the cliff, leading to the road; but halfway up the cart and load proved too much for the oxen; Mr. Breed saw his peril and with great presence of mind detached the cart-tongue from the yoke of oxen, letting the cart and load go over the cliff, where they were dashed to pieces on the rocks below. The name of John's Peril has ever since been attached to the cliff.

Maolis Gardens.—A little farther along the shore is the famous North Spring, so frequently visited in former years by parties from the adjoining towns. In the summer months not a day passed without one or more parties who spent the day there fishing and making chowders, for which purpose rude fire places were built by the side of the large boulders and in the crevices of the ledges. It was a favorite resort of military and fire companies, as well as religious societies and Sunday-schools. From these daily visits to the North Spring, Mr. Tudor conceived the idea of making these grounds more attractive by artificial improvements. He purchased and inclosed the land, planted groves of trees and built sheds, swings, etc. This has been known for the past twenty-five years as the Maolis Gardens. Until within the last four or five years it has been a favorite and popular resort, but to-day everything is much changed excepting the spring itself, from which the cold water is still running, filling the little bowl-shaped pool, which has been worn by the constant flow of water which pours into and over it until it reaches and mingles with the sea.

North Shore.—A short distance farther on there is a flight of stone steps, at the foot of which is a stone basin, over which the water of another spring bubbles up from under the shelving ledge; formerly a half-barrel tub was placed over this spring, and it was used as a watering-place for the cattle.

From these springs a marginal road extends over eighty rods in length, this road, as well as the sea wall of stone, having been built at great cost by Mr. Tudor. There was formerly a sloping bank, washed in at places by the sea, and always known as the North Side.

At the end of this road a foot-path runs along

below the bank, and winds along the shore. This path is generously maintained by the summer residents who occupy the land above.

The Iron Mine.—A little below the Agassiz cottage is a bleak ledge and point of rocks, always known as the "iron mine." It is without doubt the same ledge discovered by Captain John Smith, and mentioned by him in the account he afterwards published. In 1691 iron ore, called rock mine, was taken from the ledge at Nahant for the forge at Braintree. "Some of it was smelted in the foundry at Saugus, and more was taken for the forge at Braintree." "It was voted that Mr. Hubbard of Braintry should give three shillings for every twenty tunn of rock mine yt hee has from Nahant, to the town, for the town's use, and hee to have soe much as the town sees convenient." It is not probable that a great deal of this ledge was ever carried from Nahant to Lynn or Braintree for smelting. Although the quality of the ore smelted in these furnaces may have been good, there was not sufficient iron in the rock to make it profitable. The town records give no further account of the iron mine at Nahant.

Beyond this the path leads along the bank until quite a steep bluff is reached, where a seat has generously been kept for public use by the owners of the land. The cottage that stands a short distance inland from this seat is the first summer cottage built at Nahant, and the only one that remains as first built, although additions have been made on the west side; the front has the same appearance as when first built in 1820. For over fifty years it has been occupied by the Cary family.

Spouting Horn.—Beneath the bluff mentioned above is Spouting Horn; to the north, a few rods from the foot of this cliff, is Spouting Rock; beyond, a part of the ledge juts into the sea. At high tide it appears as a lone rock, and the sea washes it on every side, but at low tide a narrow channel separates it from the main ledge. The channel is always full of water, but narrow enough for stepping across. This is called Brook Rock, and is noted as a desirable place for fishing; cod, tautog and perch can be caught there, and it is related that one of our early fishermen caught a halibut from this rock.

Spouting Rock is formed by a narrow channel in the ledge, opened to the sea. Into this channel the waves rush to be met by the ledge that forms the inner end, which throws back the water in sufficient force to send the spray flying over the ledge beyond. The Spouting Horn is more of a natural curiosity, as it is at the foot of a large overhanging cliff, from the top of which one can look directly down into the long, narrow brook-like channel that has been worn smooth by the action of the water. As the water is forced into this channel it enters a cone, or tunnel-shaped hole in the ledge, and rushing into this aperture is forced out by the compressed air in such force as to send the foaming waters and sea-weed many feet in the air, to fall again upon the rocks, making a sound like the falling of water from a cataract. Then it tumbles back again into the foaming sea to be again forced back into the rock-channel, and again and again flung into flying spray. Thus at the right time of tide we have one of the grandest sights that visitors can witness, especially after a storm. But unfortunately, from some unknown cause, a few years ago a large part of the ledge was broken off and fell at the outer end or mouth of the channel, obstructing the water as it enters and breaking its force so much that it does not send the water so high in the air or with such force as formerly. Before this happened the noise of the water as it entered the channel could be heard distinctly in the village. If this obstruction could be removed, we should without doubt again see the old-time Spouting Horn throwing the spray, as in former times, a hundred feet into the air.

Bass Beach.—From the cliff the walk continues to the eastward until a gateway is reached, which leads into a gravelly walk extending through private grounds, beautifully laid out. Looking seaward from this point can be seen a long, irregular point of rocks, called Saunders Ledge, running out into the ocean over an eighth of a mile. It is a famous place for fishing at low tide. Looking inland can be seen one of the most beautiful lawns the town can boast, and a summer residence, in a commanding position, with an unsurpassed sea view. Between the house and the main street are broad walks bordered with flowers and trees. The lodge by the gate is located on the spot where the old Hood House once stood.

A little farther on is Bass Beach Hill. A plank walk extends a part of the way along the path around the shore to the hill, at the end of which is a wooden seat placed on the top of the hill, from which a fine view can be had.

Below this steep bank is a pebbly beach, shaped something like a horseshoe. Castle Rock and a point of rocks to the north form the mouth of the cove. A long flight of steps, called "Forty Steps," leads to the beach. At the southerly end of the beach at low tide there can be seen a smooth ledge, worn out into bowls and basins by the constant washing of the sea over the ledge.

To the south, over cragged rocks and smooth boulders, Cedar Island is reached. On the top of this large rock there is a little patch of earth, on which grass and wild peas grow. The outer cliff, separated by a deep gorge from Cedar Island, is known as Castle Rock.

To the south of these rocks is another cove and pebbly beach known as Canoe Beach or Canoe Beach Cove. In this cove two vessels have been driven ashore by the northeasterly storms.

The grassy slope to the west was once the favorite camping-ground of the Penobscot Indians in the summer season. Opposite is a triangular piece of land

purchased by an Englishman, who commenced the erection of a summer residence there. The foundations were laid and preparations were being made to erect a building, when he was discovered to be a defaulter from the Bank of England, and was arrested and carried home for trial.

At the end of Nahant road an open gateway leads into a fine avenue, half-way up which a small sign directs to the cliffs. These cliffs rise up bold and steep from the ocean. To the left is East Point, and from here to the south or west a walk is provided. The stone house that stands near East Point was formerly the billiard-room for the Nahant Hotel, and is all that remains of what was connected with the hotel. There is a grand view of the ocean from its piazza, while to the west are seen two summer residences—one on the eastern slope, on the site where the Nahant Hotel formerly stood, and the other on the south or opposite side of the cliffs. The grounds of both are beautifully and tastefully laid out with groves of shade-trees and beds of flowers, walks and avenues winding through the green lawns, while at the base of the outcropping ledge, shrubbery and vines are made to grow.

Pulpit Rock.—Among the natural curiosities of the cliffs is Pulpit Rock, a mass of rock about forty feet in height, standing out alone and apart from the cliffs. Natural Bridge is a small rocky arch, connecting two cliffs over a deep gorge. These cliffs rise out of the ocean to the height of thirty and forty feet. At the westerly end of the cliffs is the large boulder or Shelter Rock, from which is seen the Shag Rocks, two lone rocks, which were formerly a favorite place for sportsman and angler.

Pea Island juts out into the water from the cliff near which is the summer residence formerly occupied by Prescott.

The adjoining lot to the eastward is the stately residence of a descendant of one of the early summer residents. It is placed where once stood the cottage formerly occupied by Winchester, Crowninshield and Longfellow.

At the end of the street, down a steep decline, at the water's edge, is Swallow's Cave, accessible when the tide is out. A cavern or passage runs through the ledge, which rises perpendicularly from the water. The entrance from the west side is about ten feet high and opens into a large, roomy space in the rock. From this roomy space the ledge seems to have spread apart, leaving an opening sufficiently wide for an easy passage through to the rocks at the east end. In a westerly direction from here, along a foot-path on the edge of the bank, now abandoned, as the piazza of a resident covers it, and nearly opposite the old steamboat landing, was Irene's Grotto, described by Lewis as a "tall arch, singularly grotesque and beautiful, leading to a large room in the rock. This is one of the greatest curiosities on Nahant, and was formerly much more so, until sacrilegious hands broke down a part of the roof above to obtain stone for building." At the present time it has no attraction, being the receptacle for ashes and drain-pipes for the cottage above it.

On the wharf where vessels formerly landed their cargoes of wood and coal, a residence has been built, from the piazza of which one can catch small fish. This is a striking contrast to the old days of steamboat travel, when crowds of people landed and embarked there. The once busiest spot in the town, during the summer season, is now quiet and retired, its quiet broken only by the wash of the tide.

To the northward is Josie's Beach, curved in towards the land from the sea. It is a long, sandy beach below high-tide mark, while above it, stones form little points jutting out in the water. The stones are worn smooth by the constant sweeping, up and down the sloping beach, by the tide. At the westerly end of the beach a steep and almost perpendicular bluff rises up forty feet or more, and on the top is built the residence of the late Amos Lawrence, formerly for many years the site of the summer residence of Mr. B. C. Clark.

A little farther on a rock boldly makes up out of the water, which was formerly called Bass Rock, while at a more recent date it has been known as Clark's Point; the name was given in honor of the former owner, who maintained a flagstaff here, from which the stars and stripes were hoisted, during the many years that he owned the rocky point. To the west, twenty or thirty rods in the bay, the yacht "Raven" was moored, the pride of its owner. For upwards of thirty years this little craft came and went from these moorings, until she was sold to be used as a fishing vessel, and a new yacht, the "Young Raven," replaced her. Her new owners, by chance, once, anchored her near her old anchorage grounds. While at anchor there she went ashore, by the parting of her cables, in the gale of March 13, 1865, and was dashed to pieces, her planks and timbers being strewn along the rocks, where her former owner had for years previous landed and embarked in his favorite craft.

From the point northward the land rises in a gentle ascent from the sea to the hill, where there are two estates—the Longfellow and Lawrence cottages. No pretensions are made in artificial improvement by planting of trees or shrubs from the former estate. Blackberry and barberry bushes, with here and there a clump of sumach, wander at will over the grounds, making them as primitive in appearance as when Captain John Smith first saw them.

A foot-path through the grass and wild bushes leads to Stony Beach, where once the boat-houses were built. Upon these floors tons of fish were emptied from the fishing fleet, and were transported in wagons to be sold in the Boston markets.

To the west, by an inward curve of the beach, along a path constructed by Mrs. Tudor, is Nipper Stage Point, now the landing-place for the steamboat

in summer. Looking across the water of the cove is the long row of willow trees which shade Willow road.

Upon the ridge, nearly midway between Dorothy's Cove and Bailey's Hill, a summer residence has been built, which appears as if it had risen out of the sea and tide. The spray from the breakwater that protects it is blown into its windows. At high tide it appears as a cottage anchored in the sea.

Beyond this ridge of sand and stones deposited by the sea is a long stretch of meadow land.

Bear Pond makes its southern boundary, and a narrow brook runs through the centre of the meadow, passing under "Little Bridge," and enters into the bay.

The land gradually rises from this meadow to the eastward, until a height is reached from seventy to eighty-five feet above the sea. It is covered with a fertile soil, in which the granite boulder and other rock formations are found.

The ledge upon which the whole peninsula rests in some places appears above the soil. In one portion of the ledge an artesian well has been sunk two hundred and twenty feet. The first twenty feet passed through seamy rock, where there was a small supply of water, but below this the remaining distance was through hard, seamless, solid rock, discouraging the proprietor from further progress in the work.

The lowlands or swamp extends along two-thirds of the southern part of the town, commencing at the willow trees, and running westward to Lynn Harbor. It seems that this marsh was covered with a rank growth of bushes of alders, birch and maple before the swamp was filled with earth washed down from the hill. Over this swamp a forest of pine trees grew. The trees did not grow to a large size, as but few stumps are found that measure over two feet in diameter. It is very probable this forest covered all the land in the south slope of the hill. Bass Neck may have been covered with a growth of forest trees, as the soil in this locality is of a sufficient richness to support the trees that might grow upon it. But along the north shore of Nahant the scrub oak and cedar trees may have been hardy enough to battle against the fierce gales from the north and east. The old people now living remember a part of the forest that grew in the swamp below Whitney's, where, when boys, they shot the wild pigeons that were there in large flocks in the fall of the year. The last trees in this forest were cut down by the Breeds and Mr Rice.

To approach Nahant from the east by sea, the eye meets a long range of ledge, with points extending out to the sea, rising in some places into high and rocky cliffs, over which the tops of the trees appear, their branches rising above the cottages that circle the shore.

Approached from the south and west, a picture presents itself of cottages sheltered in the many groves of trees, green lawns and the many-colored houses, the red piazza roofs making a striking contrast against the dark green of the trees. No large, ill-shaped, awkward building mars the picture.

The hill and shore of Bass Point are covered with clusters of small cottages. Streets, at regular distances, run from the shore to the Nahant Road, which passes through the entire length of the town.

Conclusion.—To-day Nahant offers many attractions as a summer resort, but recently many new places have become popular, besides Nahant, as summer watering-places. On nearly every headland can be found hotels and cottages for summer residents. But Nahant stretches out into the sea, and the wind from every quarter must pass over the water before reaching it, which coo's the air in summer and brings a warmer temperature in winter. There are ample accommodations by land and water to Boston and Lynn, with twelve miles of road that affords many pleasant drives. Many of the roads are shaded by tall elms, willow and maple trees, while others are open to the sunshine. The accommodations for bathing are unrivaled; on the north shore a cool surf-bath can be had, while on the south the water is of a warmer temperature and more desirable for many.

The past industries of Nahant have nearly all died out, causing nearly all of those that once pursued them to find homes elsewhere; but a few remain. The places of those that have gone have been filled by a new people, who know not of the old and pleasant associations of the past.

It is with just pride that we can give the record of the descendants of those that once made Nahant their home. Their names are prominent as pioneers in the early settlements of the West; they have helped to build it up and were identified with its business and government; they have helped to found towns and cities in the Pacific States and Territories. Their names are prominent to-day as trustees of colleges and institutions of learning, and as skilled mechanics and engineers in business circles.

In the towns and cities of this Commonwealth, wherever they have built their homes, they have proved themselves, by their worth and industry, to be peers in the business circles, having wealth and influence in the place of their adoption. As manufacturers in our neighboring city, we find them autocrats in the business circle. As ministers of the Gospel, as editors of newspapers and teachers in the schools, they have held and still hold honorable places. In politics they have held places of trust as representatives to Congress, as senators and representatives in this Commonwealth and as chief magistrates of cities. As sailors and soldiers they have not been found wanting.

From the States of Maine and New Hampshire, mechanics and builders have made Nahant their home, and have by their skill and industry built

many of the beautiful residences that now adorn our town. They are filling places of honor and trust in the town.

In the public schools of to-day the boys and girls are our and their representatives; shoulder to shoulder there, they are preparing an education to meet the realities of life. Like those who have preceded them, few may remain here and many will find homes and occupations elsewhere. In the institutions of learning, in colleges, in law and divinity schools, their names are already enlisted. In politics and mechanics, in agriculture, and as sailors in the merchant service, we shall find them hewing their way up into the broad fields of education, wealth, honor and influence. But a few of those who were actors in the past still linger in their homes by the sea, but many have passed away with lives "full of honor and years."

The storms, the dashing spray, the sunrise out of the water, the midday rays of the sun, as it shines and sparkles over the sea from shore to shore, the constant murmuring of the sea along the beach, the always changing view of the far-spreading ocean, will ever linger in the memories of those who will make homes elsewhere.

VALUATION OF NAHANT FROM 1861.

	Personal.	Real Estate.	Dwelling-Houses.
1861	$20,179	$514,770	107
1862	22,009	479,750	106
1863	16,823	494,650	107
1864	13,478	507,025	106
1865	12,710	513,225	107
1866	329,057	647,600	107
1867	274,167	780,150	116
1868	985,078	816,045	122
1869	1,982,088	935,500	135
1870	4,160,103	985,000	138
1871	4,880,283	1,002,900	140
1872	5,507,152	1,104,050	142
1873	5,085,795	1,157,400	157
1874	4,994,044	1,256,200	160
1875	4,783,569	1,320,850	163
1876	4,754,980	1,325,825	177
1877	4,098,342	1,554,064	184
1878	3,838,264	1,670,942	187
1879	3,007,451	1,715,315	191
1880	2,843,759	1,850,869	199
1881	2,834,708	1,859,569	203
1882	2,895,273	1,938,019	208
1883	2,773,979	1,969,344	222
1884	2,641,967	1,991,219	235
1885	2,845,809	2,032,815	247
1886	2,779,727	2,034,165	247

Representative to Congress.

Hon. Henry Cabot Lodge.

State Senators.

Hon. George Hood. Hon. William F. Johnson.

Representatives.

Wm. F. Johnson. Edward J. Johnson.
John Q. Hammond. Henry Cabot Lodge.

Town Clerks.

Washington H. Johnson. Alfred D. Johnson.

Selectmen.

Wm. F. Johnson. Thos. P. Whitney.
Dexter Stetson. C. Hervey Johnson.
Washington H. Johnson. Joseph Johnson.
Jesse Rice. Edmund B. Johnson.
Albert Wyer. Wm. Luscomb.
J. Bishop Johnson. J. T. Wilson.
Artemas Murdock. Edwin W. Johnson.
Walter Johnson. J. Colby Wilson.
Edward J Johnson. Wm. R. Whitney.

Treasurers.

Welcome W. Johnson. Edmund B. Johnson.

School Committee.

Welcome W. Johnson. Harrison Barnes.
Walter Johnson. Samuel Hudson.
Edmund B. Johnson. Jesse R. Johnson.
John Q. Hammond. Joseph T. Wilson.
Francis Johnson. Joseph A. Crandall.
Alfred D. Johnson. Wm. R. Whitney.
Thomas E. Colby. Joseph W. Hammond.
Franklin E. Johnson. Samuel Hudson, Jr.
John E. Whitney.

Postmasters.

Phineas Drew. Welcome W. Johnson.
Edwin W. Johnson. T. Dexter Johnson.

CHAPTER CXIX.

SALISBURY.

BY W. H. B. CURRIER.

Of the settlements of New England, Salisbury ranks among the earliest. In 1638, just eighteen years after the Pilgrims landed, ten years after the organization of Salem, and three years later than "Old Newbury," a "plantation" was begun on the north side of the Merrimac. In March, 1638, this strip of territory extended from the Merrimac River north a distance of nearly ten miles, including in its circuit what is now known as the town of Seabrook, a portion of Hampton, Exeter, Kensington, South Hampton and Kingston, in New Hampshire; the Haverhill line on its western border and its eastern shore bounded by the Atlantic Ocean.

The first settlement was near the ocean. Here the original grants of land were made, and in later years what became the "East Parish" was the germ of a flourishing town. It appears by documentary evidence that diversity of opinion existed among the settlers as to the name the town should take, as, September 4, 1639, it was ordered to be called Colchester. At a session of the General Court, held October 7, 1640, the name was changed to Salisbury, and thus the town became incorporated. Several of its first settlers came from Salisbury, in the county of Wiltshire, England, among the number being the first minister, Rev. William Worcester. The location of the town, with its eastern border washed by the

waves of the ocean; the Merrimac dividing it on the west; the winding Powow River running through the centre of its territory, and encircled by a chain of hills, made it an attractive place of settlement even among the many towns of the beautiful valley of the Merrimac.

Coffin, the historian of Newbury, says of the early settlers of the town: "They were men fitted by education to adorn any civil station;" but more particular reference to them will be made as the data of events are noted.

Salisbury was, very early in its history, honored by the title of a shire-town, and so continued from 1643 to 1649. But it was the court-town of a county not now existing in Essex,—the county of Norfolk,—comprising the New Hampshire plantations of Exeter, Hampton, Portsmouth and Dover, then (1643) united to Massachusetts, together with Salisbury and Haverhill. In 1679 New Hampshire was separated from Massachusetts, and the town lost its court. The court-house was erected in the East Parish, and the place of its location and the "stocks," where culprits were punished, is known to this day by the citizens of the ancient locality. Where justice was dispensed and the guilty were *stocked*, one of the descendants of the trial justices tills a fertile farm and occasionally turns up a stray brick that formed the foundation of the wall of this old court-house.

With the loss of its title of shire-town, Salisbury did not lose its importance, for subsequently the dignity of the Legislature was not tarnished by a session within its limits.

For several years the boundary line between the States of Massachusetts and New Hampshire had occasioned much trouble and considerable controversy. In this perplexing condition of affairs, the border towns of Hampton and Salisbury were mixed up. At times it threatened to involve them in a border war, as between the two sections taxes were assessed upon the inhabitants living on the disputed territory, which they declined to pay until their status was definitely fixed. The ancient records of the town contain accounts of petitions and records of meetings held to adjust matters between the tax-collectors and individuals asking to be relieved from paying taxes, on the ground that they were assessed on both sides of the disputed line, and claiming "that the burden was too grievous to be bourn."

In August, 1737, commissioners appointed by the Crown met at Hampton Falls for the purpose of settling the controversy. The Massachusetts Assembly, after the session was called at Hampton, met at Salisbury, and were in session several days deliberating upon the boundary question. The final decision resulted in a surrender of a portion of the territorial limits of the town and its return to New Hampshire. What is known as South Hampton and Seabrook were given up, and peace reigned on the border. And yet, after the lapse of one hundred and fifty years, the boundary question between the two States is again a subject of controversy, and a joint commission has been appointed to adjust differences,—New Hampshire making its claim for another slice of territory; but the issue is in doubt.

But to return to the early settlers and their action in forming the town, the original grantees of Merrimac plantation were Mr. Simeon Bradstreet, Mr. Daniel Dennison, Christopher Batt, Samuel Winsley, Samuel Dudley and John Sanders.

March, 1639, the records report a meeting held by the grantors, whereby they agreed that each settler should have two pieces of meadow and a certain amount of planting land, according to the wealth of the grantees,—"four acres to every one hundred pounds." This was in accordance with the doctrine that to him which hath shall be given; the motive, probably, was to influence men possessed of some wealth to settle on the vacant lands.

General meetings were held during the year 1639 at intervals, when grants of land were recorded. Mr. Robert Pike was granted three lots of land near the land of Edmund French. The land granted to French is still owned by his descendants and occupied by George H. and William H. French. At one of the meetings of freemen, Anthony Colby was fined one shilling for departing the meeting. The first animals to cause trouble in the new plantation were goats, and a penalty of twelve pence was fixed for allowing goats or kids to run at large without a keeper. A penalty was fixed for allowing swine to roam at large. They also obliged grantees of land to put up sufficient fences.

The land grant to Rev. Wm. Worcester shows that he was possessed of considerable property, as he was given a large number of acres of meadow and upland in different localities. Some of the grants made during the year were called "great planting plots," and were west of the Powow River. The first burying lot was laid out on the Beach Road, and it is mentioned that Richard Wells' house lot adjoins it. Mr. Wells was one of the wealthy settlers.

Thomas Macy, whose name has been immortalized by Whittier's poem, and who afterwards became one of the first settlers of Nantucket, was granted a house lot on the north side of the Beach Road next below the house lot now owned by Edward French.

Mr. Thomas Bradbury, from whom originated all the New England branch of the family, settled near by Macy. He was a man of good education and of superior worth, filling many important offices; and as a teacher did much to spread a love of education among the tillers of the soil.

Mr. John Hodges was granted upland and meadow, and a certain creek in the tide meadows is known to this day as "Hodges' Hole." The descendants of John Hodge became well-known manufacturers in the Merrimac Valley.

Willis Barnes, another name well known in colo-

nial history, is remembered by "Barnes" Island, a woody island in the tide meadow.

The grants of land made were confirmed by a committee consisting of Christopher Batt, Samuel Winsley, Samuel Hall, Thomas Bradbury and Isaac Buswell.

Quite a large tract of land was granted to William Hook adjoining the Merrimac River, reserving for the town the easternmost island by the side of the river for the fishermen.

October 10, 1639, a final meeting of the freemen was held, at which time some additional grants were made.

In the spring of 1640 certain surveys were made toward Hampton and also towards Lake "pemtuckett." At the first town-meeting held this spring it was ordered that in the first of every meeting there should be a moderator chosen, who shall have full charge of the meeting, with power to impose fines at his discretion. It was also voted that every freeman should speak by turn, and should signify his desire to speak by rising up or taking off his hat—and his speech being ended he should put on his hat or sit down—and he must not be interrupted until he had finished.

On the 5th of May, 1640, an island in the Merrimac River was granted to George Carr. This is now known as Carr's Island, and has always been kept in the Carr family until its recent purchase by Hon. Harvey N. Shepard.

On the 7th of September, 1640, a meeting of the freemen was held, at which time a large number of new grants were made.

At the meeting on the 5th of the Second Month, 1641, the price of labor was fixed by the town. Laborers during the summer months shall receive twenty pence per day, and carpenters to receive two pence per day more than laborers. The price of lumber was fixed by vote of the town, and the price of milk was fixed at three half-pence a quart for new milk, and one pence a quart for skimmed milk, ale measure; while gilt-edge butter brought six pence per pound.

On the 21st of the Second Month William Osgood was granted sixty acres of land on condition that he should build a grist-mill. The town this spring appointed two highway surveyors—Richard North and John Rolph—with power to compel each man to perform a certain amount of highway labor. Robert Pike, Luke Heard and John Harrison were the first fence-viewers. The making of pipe-staves now became an important business, and large quantities were conveyed to Newburyport for sale. John Bayley was granted the sole right to take fish from the Powow River, but the right was taken from him for not complying with the conditions which the town had imposed upon him. At a meeting held in November of this year, John Harrison was freed from town taxes on condition that he shall keep an "ordinarie" for two years in the town.

On the 14th day of the Eleventh Month, 1641, "ordered that Henrie Munday and Thomas Bradburie shall bargain with a workman or workingmen to hang the bell on the meeting-house." During this month there was "granted to Abraham Morrell and Henrie Sayward three score acres of upland, so near the falls as may be convenient, on the condition that they shall before October next set up a mill which may be sufficient to grind all the corn which the town shall need."

The sole right of taking fish from the Powow River was again granted to John Bayley on the following conditions:

"1st. He shall not join with any person that is not an inhabitant in the town in the working of the same, whereby any fish should be disposed of from the town.

"2d. That he shall not dispose of any fish otherwise than he shall be appointed by the town, nor himself to have more than his share of alewives; provided that if they be refused by town within twenty-four hours after the taking of them, he is free to dispose of them to whom and where he please.

"3d. That he shall, before the next season of fishing, make up the 'wyers' to be full sea height, and provide sufficient materials so as the town may not suffer in the fish escaping, and he is to be paid within twenty days after the delivery of the said fish per rate of three shillings per one thousand in work, corn or cattle or merchantable commodities at equal prices."

On the 26th of the First Month of 1642, a house-lot of four acres was granted to Thomas Macy, and the record is made three times in succession of this grant.

On the 4th of the Fifth Month, 1642, John Hall, Thomas Bradbury and Thomas Macy were elected assessors. Richard North and Thomas Bradbury were elected highway surveyors. At this time a bounty of ten shillings was ordered to be paid for every wolf killed or taken. Also voted that the ordinances shall be removed near the Powow River by the last of September next, come twelve months.

On the 26th of the Tenth Month, 1642, at a general meeting of the freemen, it was "ordered, there shall thirtie families remove to the west side of the 'Pawwaus' River."

5th of Eleventh Month, 1642, at a meeting of the freemen, it was "ordered that these persons underwritten shall be accounted townsmen and none other: Mr. William Worster, Mr. Samuel Dudley, Edmund French, Richard Wells, William Pattridg, Robert Pyk, Mr. William Hook, Ralph Blazdale."

5th of Eleventh Month, 1642. "Ordered that after this present no man shall be admitted a townsman but by the vote and suffrage of every one of the freemen, except such an one as shall be called for an elder." Also the same day it was "ordered and agreed that thirty families of this town shall remove their dwellings to the west side of the Powow River before the first of the Third Month in the year 1645; and those persons to be such persons as the seven men shall approve of; to which persons they shall distribute all the lands and timber on the west side of that river, and that all those persons shall be excluded the right and use of all commons but on that side

from that time aforesaid forever, and also that all such inhabitants as shall continue to the east of that river shall be excluded all right and use of commons with them forever, excepting the liberties for one family, provided that at such times as any of those persons residing on the west of the river aforesaid shall have occasion to plow or cart hay in other parts of the town they shall have liberty to feed their working cattle in the *Ox Comon*, on the neck. And also that those persons dwelling to the east of the river shall have the propriety of all the lands and timber there remaining. Also that all public charges shall be defrayed by the inhabitants of both places, or any dwelling in any part within the limits and bounds of the town."

Also it was ordered "that this order shall stand unrepealed forever, except it be by the consent of every freeman in town."

"Ordered that seven men shall have power to make rates and also to certify all the old records of the town and bring them into this new book, and what shall be done by them shall be and remain firm and forever."

On the 20th of the Twelfth Month, 1642, that certain land granted to twenty-two persons on the east side of the Powow River should be decided by drawing lots, which was done at this time. The power formerly put into the hands of seven men for ordering the affairs of the town was taken from them with their consent, 26th of Twelfth Month.

14th of Second Month, 1643. Richard North chosen pound-keeper and fence-viewer, and also "Cryer of the Town of Salsbery for the year ensuing." Ordered that all grants of lands shall be recorded in the new book.

4th of Third Month, 1643. The following seven men were elected to take charge of town affairs: Mr. Batt, John Severance, Tho. Macy, Mr. John Hall, Robert Pike, John Sanders and Thomas Bradbury. At a general meeting of the seven men, 18th of Fifth Month, 1643, it was ordered that Tho. Bradbury and John Severance shall be "Surveiars" of the highways. Also a rate was ordered of £15 for the digging of the Town Creek and for defraying other town charges. It was further ordered that all the townsmen that have meadow lots within the bounds of the town shall meet upon the 22d, 23d and 24th days of the Sixth Month next ensuing, by seven o'clock in the morning, at the meeting-house, upon the forfeiture of five shillings for every particular man's default—the object of this was to set sufficient bounds between their meadow lots. The road which runs from the Powow River up into the country was ordered to be laid out.

8th of Tenth Month, 1643. Samuel Dudley was chosen deputy for the next Court of Election. The improved land on the west side of the Powow River was to be taxed at half the rates of land on the east side until they have a minister there. Rev. Mr. Worcester was allowed £27 for six months' service last past.

19th of Twelfth Month, 1643, Samuel Dudley and Samuel Winsley were chosen deputies for the next General Court to be held at Boston.

25th of First Month, 1644, Richard Goodale "shall have for his hunting this present year ending six weeks before Michaelmas, one peck of Indian corn of each townsman,—£3 to be paid him in wheat as soon as merchantable, equally to be levied. Also he is to have for every fox he killeth, 2*s.* 6*d.* and for every wolf £2 (pounds)."

18th of Second Month, 1644, Josiah Cobham was grand juryman; several persons were fined £2 10*s.* each for felling trees against a town order.

6th of Eleventh Month, 1644, ordered that Mr. Samuel Hall shall pay five shillings for his abusive speeches against the freemen, saying "you are all lords," "all monarchs" "your will must be a law" and such like.

At a meeting of ye 5 men, 21st of Second Month, 1645, it was "ordered that no person shall improve or make use of any candle wood or pine trees for the makiug pitch or tar or rosen to sell or carry out of the town upon a penalty of twenty shilling for every load."

1st of Third Month, 1645, Samuel Winsley was chosen deputy for the Court of Election, to receive eight shillings per week.

8th of Third Month, 1645, at a meeting of the freemen, "ordered that John Sanders, Richard Wells and Willi Patridge shall have power to lay out the highway to the beach."

20th of Eighth Month, 1645, at a meeting of the freemen, Ralph Blesdale was elected to keep the ordinary, with full power to draw and sell such in case the court will give him license.

29th of Eighth Month, 1645, meeting of the freemen; there shall be a rate made of £8 to defray town charges, as to daub the meeting-house, etc.

8th of Eleventh Month, 1645, any person that shall kill any wolf in the town bounds shall have £1 10*s.*, and for every fox, one shilling.

At a meeting of the seven men, 24th of Twelfth Month, 1646, "Ordered whoever shall burn any kiln of candle-wood within the libertie of the town without license, shall forfit five pounds for ever kiln he so burns, to be levied by the constable."

At a meeting of the freemen, 3d of First Month, 1647, Richard North shall have fifty shillings for ringing the bell two years and a half past, and twenty shillings to ring it one year more.

At a meeting of the five men, the 4th of Twelfth Month, "what person soever shall kill a wolf within the town bounds with his gun shall have ten shillings, and whosoever catcheth or kills them with a trap shall have fifteen shillings, and whosoever kills them in hunting with dogs shall have twenty shillings; also six pence per head for foxes."

10th of Second Month, 1648, at a meeting of the freemen, Mr. Munday, Mr. Batt, Mr. Winsley, Isaac Buswell and Josiah Cobham were "chosen to serve upon the grand jury for ye next court at *Salisbury*." Also Lieutenant Pike, Thomas Macy, Richard Wells, John Severance, John Elsley and Philip Challice are chosen to serve upon the jury of trials.

18th of Tenth Month, 1648, meeting of freemen, "Lieutenant Pike, Mr. Samuel Winsley, Willi Sergeant, Henry Ambross and Philip Challice shall have power to view and make the bounds between Salisbury and Hampton, and to hire a man to inform them and to be paid for their pain." Mr. Winsley, John Severence, John Stevens and Henry Brown are fined twelve pence a piece for disorderly talking in the meeting.

Mr. Carr to have the ferry for fourteen years, upon terms agreed upon by a committee. This ferry was by a boat from the Newburyport side of the river to Carr's Island; a bridge was built from the north side of the island to the Salisbury shore. The water in this part of the river is not more than eight feet deep at low water. This bridge was built of timber, and was not used for teams, but for foot passengers, beasts and persons on horseback. The landing on the Salisbury shore from Carr's Island is well defined, and the old path can be traced up to the highway. Ralph Blasdale was given the use of four acres of meadow during the time he shall keep the ordinary. Isaac Buswell and George Carr "shall have power to call upon Newbury town to lay out the country way so far as belongs unto them from the ferry to Mr. Clark's farm." Samuel Winsley fined twenty shillings for refusing to be a constable. Willi Patridge was fined 2*s.* 6*d.* for putting a contrary name in voting for a constable. Also Willi Patridge was chosen constable, and upon his refusal was fined 20*s.*

At a meeting of the freemen, 11th of First Month, 1649, Lieut. Pike and four others were chosen to serve upon the jury of trials, "the next County Court to be holden at Salisbury."

At a meeting of the freemen, 2d of Ninth Month, 1649, Thomas Pettit was admitted a townsman, and liberty was given him to dwell in the watch-house till May day next ensuing.

24th of Tenth Month, 1649. At a general meeting of the town, "Ordered that all the meadow upon the north side of the little River shall be reserved to the use of the *Common*, and not to be altered without the consent of the whole town."

At a meeting of the five men, 16th of Eleventh Month, 1649, all those men that were fined for not coming to the town-meetings formerly past are hereby acquitted.

18th of Twelfth Month, 1649. Meeting of freemen. Steven Flanders was admitted a townsman upon the condition that he shall constantly keep the town herd of cows.

20th of Eleventh Month, 1650. At a general meeting of the town of Salisbury Vall Rowell was admitted a townsman, to have his privilege "in y^e^ commons with others." There was granted to Richard Ball and Anthony Nuland six acres of upland at Rings Island, provided the town be reserved liberty on said Island to set up a stage and flakes for fishing.

3d Twelfth Month, 1650. At a general meeting of the town of Salisbury, it was "ordered that all whose names are hereunder written shall be accounted townsmen or Comoners, and none but them to this present." Fifty-six names were recorded, among them Rev. Wm. Worcester and Robt. Pike.

10th of Twelfth Month, 1650. A committee was appointed to view and settle the bounds between Salisbury and Hampton.

March 20, 1651. At a meeting of the prudential men, a rate of thirty-five pounds was ordered towards repairing and finishing the meeting-house and paying town debts. Henry Brown and Samuel Fellows were chosen fence-viewers for the old town, Jarrett Haddon and Mr. Hoyt for the new town, for the year ensuing.

16th of Second Month, 1651. At a general meeting of the freemen, a committee, consisting of Samuel Winsley, Samuel Hall, John Severance and Willi Sargent, were appointed to arrange the town bounds between Salisbury and Hampton.

At a meeting of the town of Salisbury, 19th of Eleventh Month, 1651, "Ordered that any of the inhabitants shall have power to fetch away that rick of hay which stands next to Mr. Hall's farm, between this town and Hampton, and the town to secure them from all damage that may any way arise thereby."

26th of Eleventh Month, 1651. Meeting of town of Salisbury. "The old meeting-house shall be repaired with an addition of a new frame of twelve foot, with convenient seats and whatever else is necessary. Before the meeting was finished, sixteen feet addition was voted instead of twelve."

16th of Twelfth Month, 1651. Town meeting. "Ordered that the Town shall bring an action against those of Hampton which have trespassed upon the said town by cutting grass upon the meadow, and that Thomas Bradbury shall prosecute the cause against them before the Commissioners of Salisbury."

23d of Twelfth Month, 1651. "Ordered that Lieut. Pike shall return this answer to the town of Pentuckett: that for the present the town sees no reason to alter the line between us, but shall not be unwilling to attend any reasonable motion further about it."

"At a meeting of the townesmen, 1652, y^e^ Fourth Month, the twenty-eighth day," a committee of eight were appointed "to divide the Comon which is given to be equally divided to y^e^ townesmen inhabitants according to a former grant."

12th of Fifth Month, 1652. "Edward french shall pay five shillings for his abusive carriage in the meeting."

27th of Tenth Month, 1652. Town allowed Thomas Bradbury ten shillings "for keeping the Town Book for entering ye Town Acts." Surveyors are impowered to make the way toward the Beach over the meadows.

"At a general meeting of the Town of Salisbury, ye 10th of ye Eleventh Month, 1652, Mr. Thomas Bradbury was chosen to be schoolmaster for ye said town, to teach all their children (those only excepted that have not the knowledge of ye letters) in writing and reading and otherwise, so far as his abilities will reach unto. Salary was fixed at twenty pounds per annum—he to have the privilege of attending County Courts and also to have the privilege of teaching all out-town children unto himself. One-half his salary to be paid in good corn at the price current. Wm. Worcester, Sam. Winsley, Lieut. Robert Pike and Thos. Macy to be overseers of abovesaid school," who were to determine when the teaching of out-of-town children "are prejudicial to the town's children."

23d of Eleventh Month, 1652. "At a meeting of ye town, Ordered that the seats in the meeting-house shall hereditarily belong to ye houses, according as they are now placed by the men appointed." The following persons entered their "Contra dicent:" Mr. Wm. Worcester, Mr. Sam. Winsley, Mr. Thomas Bradbury, Richard Wells, Isaac Buswell, Jno. Stevens, Jno. Ilsley, Richard North, Sam. Fellows, Rob. Fitts, Thos. Macy and Henry Brown.

31st of Eleventh Month, 1652, voted to pay Abraham Fitts thirty shillings for killing a wolf.

1st of Twelfth Month, 1652, Thomas Bradbury to have ten pounds out of the produce of the saw-mill, in part payment for teaching school.

11th of Twelfth Month, 1652, "Little River shall be appropriated to the sole use of the common for the space of seven years from this present."

21st of Twelfth Month, 1652, "there shall be nothing acted concerning the stinting the comons during the space of five years," and that notice shall be given to every townsman or left at his house when anything is acted concerning the same. "Men appointed, did lay out a highway to the beach." Also "that the fore seats of the leanto of the meeting-house shall be brought forward 18 inches into the alley, and that there shall be three seats with that addition backward to the side of ye leanto." John Severance and Willi Partridge were appointed to have "ye ferry settled" and "to have power with the townsman of Nubery to lay out ye country highway between their town and ours, according to ye General Court order." A committee were appointed to lay out a highway from the common gate leading to the Great Neck, down to the low water-mark at the hog-house, not to exceed five rods in breadth. "Anthony Colby and Richard Currier shall have power to lay out a highway of four rods in breadth from ye Mill Bridge to ye common which leads to ye Lyons Mouth."

8th of Eighth Month, 1653, at a meeting of the five men, John Ilsley shall keep the town's stock of powder, bullets and matches.

"Att a meeting of ye Selectmen of ye Town of Salisbury ye 4th of ye 11th m. 1653, Mr. Sam. Winsley, plaintiff, agt. Phillip Challis, defend., in an action of debt due upon accounts for goods delivered unto him—as an Iron Pot, a bottle of liquor and other things. Plaintiff withdraws his action—allowing the defendant for costs, *5s.* and *4d.* Also Sam. Winsley, plant. agt. Abraham Morrill, defend., for goods—a plough, harrow, &c. The Selectmen find for the plaintiff, five shillings and eleven pence damage and costs of the meeting. Allowed for costs, nine shillings."

At a meeting of the town of Salisbury 9th of Eleventh Month, 1653, "Mr. Sam Winsley and Mr. Sam Hall shall go to Hampton, to signify unto the said town, that it is the intent of the town of Salisbury to reserve the determination of the line betwixt them and us from Hampton River's mouth to the farthermost part of Mr. Batchelder's farm, to the General Court for as much as the return of the commissioners appointed by the General Court to lay out the said line, is very dark and doubtful to us." Also "they shall tender in behalf of the town unto the town of Hampton, our desire and readiness to join with them to procure a sufficient Artest to lay out the line betwixt us and them from the southermost part of Mr. Batchelder's farm, to ye extent of our bounds up into ye contrey," etc.

23d of Eleventh Month, 1653, at a general meeting of the town of Salisbury, it was "ordered that that which is comonly called the beach comon, running from Merrimack River's mouth to Hampton River's mouth, all ye meadow and marsh undisposed of, shall remain a common to ye use of ye town forever."

27th of 12th Month, 1653, a committee was appointed to run the town line betwixt Salisbury and Haverhill.

14th of First Month, 1654, Robert Ring to have the sole fishing in Powow River for five years. Price of fish, four shillings and six pence per thousand.

May 1, 1654, Sam Winsley and Robert Pike were appointed to represent the town before the General Court concerning the boundary lines between Hampton and Salisbury and also between Haverhill and Salisbury.

It appears by the record of the mowing of the grass upon the Beach Common, by which every townsman was to have his proportion according to his estate, that the number of property-owners was one hundred and twenty. The Beach Common extended from Hampton River's mouth to Merrimac River's mouth. Sixty names are recorded in the division, and Anthony Colby, Thomas Macy, Mr. Munday, Abraham Morrill, Samuel Hall and Jonathan Rolfe were evidently the largest real estate owners.

1654, Joseph Pearley and Thomas Macy, for violat-

ing a law which forbade any but ordained ministers from preaching, were arrested and fined. This was virtually the first expression of sentiment against the old parish law of church government. Much excitement was created, and petitions unmerously signed were sent to the General Court asking the remission of the fine and imprisonment levied upon Lieut. Robert Pike, who had defended the right of any man to preach, and was foremost in asking for the release of the penalty imposed. Those even who signed the petition were called to account and bound over in £10 each. Such as acknowledged their offense were released.

Major Robert Pike was one of the first and most active settlers of the town. He may be classed as a pioneer in every movement where anything savoring of injustice or wrong was involved, and feared not to speak against it in high places. Born in Longford in 1616, he came to Newbury with his father, John Pike, who died in Salisbury in 1654. Admitted a freeman in 1637, he was a representative from the town in 1648 and for seven other years. Lieutenant in 1647, captain in 1663, a mayor in 1668, assistant from 1682 to 1686, one of the Council of Safety in 1689, and one of the first Council under the charter of William and Mary in 1692. He died December 12, 1796, aged ninety-two. To him is attributed the action of defending the two Quakers who were sentenced to be whipped by a justice in Dover on the way to Salisbury, and declared that no such act would be inflicted upon them in the town. Whittier honors the old hero in a beautiful poem for his action.

In 1655 the first bridge was built across the Merrimac—a floating bridge between Carr's Island and Newbury—at the old ferry. It was five feet wide, rails on each side, and two hundred and seventy feet long. It was built by George Carr, who owned the island, and for this service he received liberal grants of land in the town.

We pass over much of the records, having given sufficient to illustrate the methods and historical data of facts bearing upon the early history and its inhabitants, and will only glance at the events of importance as they occurred. The thirst for land appeared to be a growing desire among the settlers, and the division of five hundred acres by vote occasioned opposition. Lieutenant Robert Pike denounced the action as unjust, declaring it was equivalent to "saying because we have the power, we will take it and divide it among ourselves." In this he was sustained by Thomas Bradbury, Edmund Elliott, Robert Ring, John Stevens, John Rofe, Robert Ring and John Maxfield. Robert Pike wanted the land as a common heritance to all who should settle among them.

In 1659 it was voted that there shall be a general meeting for the choice of all public officers for the town, and for the election of a deputy to the General Court, and for one man to administer oaths and marrying. It was ordered that Rev. Wm. Worcester shall have his maintenance for the year, either fifty or sixty pounds, and the produce of the old saw-mill on Little River, provided the new town continue with the old.

12th of February, 1661. Willi Buswell chosen a "prudential man," and refusing is fined fifteen shillings. Capt. Robert Pike, Lieut. Phillip Challis, William Osgood, Edward French and John Ilsley chosen prudential men. The following persons were appointed "to divide the land lying between the river that comes from the new meadows and the Mill River to the head thereof: Capt. Pike, Mr. Winsley, Richard Wells, Willi Brown, George Goldmyer, Ed. French and Andrew Greely."

The rules to which they had an eye in dividing the land—

"1st. The charge or disbursement that men have been generally at.
"2d. The service that men have been put upon generally.
"3d. The number of the persons in a family.
"4th. The necessity that men have and theirs.
"5th. The Antiquitie of the inhabitants and the legality of their rights.
"Fifty-eight lots were sett off, containing from 30 *to* 120 *acres each!*"

9th of Tenth Month, 1662, John Severance and John Stevens were sent to Wells for some necessaries, from thence for Mr. "Wheelwrite."

January 20, 1662, Capt. Thomas Bradbury, Jno. Stevens, Wm. Buswell, Henry Brown and John Ilsley, prudential men, to begin February 12th next.

March 10, 1662, Capt. Pike chosen Deputie for the town of Salisbury. Wm. Buswell was chosen "Clarke of ye market;" Richard Currier was chosen "Measurer." Willi Buswell, Andrew Greely, John Stevens, Jr., and Nathl. Brown were ordered to perambulate Hampton line.

22d of Sixth Month, 1663, Andrew Greely added to the prudential men. Mr. Jeremieh Hutchins, of Boston, was chosen Deputie for ye next Sessions of ye General Court.

2d of Twelfth Month, 1663 (February), Mr. Carre, Andrew Greely, Jno. Dickinson, Roger Eastman and Sam. Fellows, prudential men.

23d of Twelfth Month, 1663 Mr. Huchins was chosen deputy for ye town of Salisbury. The prudential men shall make a sufficient highway to the beach this year. County Court was at Salisbury in 1664.

20th of December, 1664. Ordered there shall be a new meeting-house built with all convenient speed.

27th of December, 1664. Capt. Pike, Capt. Bradbury and Cornet Severans chosen building committee.

28th of Tenth Month, 1664. The meeting-house not to exceed forty-six foot in length, and thirty foot in breadth.

1st of February, 1664. Thos. Bradbury, Ensign Buswell, Jno. Clough, Jno. Gill and Richard Hubbard, prudential men, commencing February 12th.

9th of March, 1664. Mr. Jerremi Huchins chosen Deputy,—Mr. Henry Dearing to have ten pound a year for teaching school. School commenced at "Young goodales house."

27th of March, 1665. Wm. Buswell "clarke of the market."

22d of April, 1665. Robt. Pike, Andrew Greely and Wm. Buswell were chosen to perambulate Hampton line, and to make out ye bounds.

15th of Eleventh Month, 1665. Richard Currier chosen constable. Wm. Osgood, John Severans, Jno. Ilsley, Phillip Challis and Sam. French, prudential men, to begin February 12th next. Capt. Pike, Thos. Bradbury and Deacon Richard Wells were chosen commissioners to end small cases.

5th of First Month, 1666. Jeremiah Hutchins chosen Deputie.

22d of First Month, 1666. Articles between the old town and the new shall be entered in the town book for preservation.

May 14, 1666, Thomas Bradbury chosen deputy for General Court for first session.

September 3, 1666, Captain Pike chosen deputy for General Court.

28th of Eleventh Month, 1666, Richard Wells, William Buswell, Sam Fellows, Henry Brown and Thos. Bradbury, Sr., prudential men.

April 15, 1667, Captain Robert Pike, Andrew Greely, William Buswell, Wymond Bradbury and John Stevens were appointed to run the line between Salisbury and Hampton, from the rock called "ye bore," within John Brown's farm, unto the bound tree at the new meadows marked by Capt. Shapleigh.

April 23, 1667, prudential men "ordered John Barbar to depart out of the town, the town being not willing he should abide in this town."

22d of Fourth Month, 1667, Captain Pike was ordered to buy a barrel of powder.

10th of Twelfth Month, 1667, Thomas Bradbury, Ensign Buswell, Henry Brown, John Clough and John Gill prudential men.

2d of Twelfth Month, 1668, Thomas Bradbury, Edward French, John Stevens, John Ilsley and Willi Allen prudential men.

March 5, 1669, "Willi Osgood to build a sufficient bridge over back river."

October 6, 1669, Robert Pike chosen deputy.

6th of Tenth Month, 1669, John Ilsley, John Gill and Henry Brown were chosen grand jury men.

January 31, 1669, Thomas Bradbury, Willi Osgood, Ensign Buswell, John Clough and Sam Fellows prudential men.

17th of First Month, 1670, Robert Pike chosen deputy.

9th of Twelfth Month, 1670, Captain Bradbury, John Ilsley, Henry Brown, John Gill and Ensign Buswell prudential men.

6th of First Month, 1670-71 (page 162), several roads laid out.

13th of Twelfth Month, 1671, Thomas Bradbury, William Buswell, Henry Brown, George Goldwyer and John Eastman prudential men.

March 11, 1672-73, Mr. Thomas Bradbuary, John Severans, Sam Fellows, John Clough and John Ilsley chosen prudential men. Town-meeting ordered at the meeting-house March 17th.

October 13, 1673, Ephraim Winsley appointed school-master by the prudential men. £10 a year, and 3*d.* for every one that learns to read, and 4*d.* for every one that learns to write and read.

1st of Tenth Month, 1673, commoners mentioned.

February 18, 1673, Major Pike, Captain Bradbury, Ensign Buswell, Cornet Severans and Samuel Fellows, Sr., prudential men.

May 14, 1674, granted to Ezekiel Levitt one acre of land to build upon for his trade of shoemaking, which he is to follow for the use of the town.

8th of Twelfth Month, 1674, time of term of prudential men to end December 1st in each year. Thomas Bradbury, Ensign Buswell, Cornet Severans, John Ilsley and Henry Brown elected prudential men.

April 26, 1675, committee appointed to establish line between Amesbury and Salisbury.

September 20, 1675, "What soldier or inhabitant soever belonging to this town shall refuse or neglect to come to work about ye fortificacon appointed by ye millitia forthwith to be erected for ye security of ye town, especially women & children, ye said partie so refusing shall pay 5 shillings."

September 27, 1675, Quartermaster Osgood was given charge of the fortifications about the meeting-house.

January 3, 1675, prudential men chosen, Thomas Bradbury, William Buswell, William Osgood, Thomas Mudgett and Henry Brown.

April 23, 1677, prudential men, Thomas Bradbury, William Osgood, Thomas Mudgett, William Buswell and John Ilsley.

September 17, 1677, Major Pike, Captain Bradbury and Henry Brown were chosen commissioners to end small cases.

January 3, 1677, Captain Bradbury, Samuel Fellows, Sr., Henry Brown, Willi Buswell and John Ilsley were chosen prudential men.

January 7, 1678, Captain Bradbury, Ensign Buswell, Henry Brown, Sr., Sergeant Henry True and John Stevens, Jr., were chosen selectmen.

January 5, 1679, Captain Bradbury, Mr. Mudgett, Quartermaster Osgood, John Ilsley and Samuel Fellows were chosen prudential men.

31st Tenth Month, 1680, Captain Thomas Bradbury, Henry Brown, Henry True, Nathaniel Brown and Robert Ring were chosen selectmen; Thomas Bradbury was chosen schoolmaster.

January 4, 1681, Captain Bradbury, Ensign Buswell, John Ilsley, Henry Brown and John Stevens, Jr. chosen selectmen.

May 16, 1682, "*Voted* that the town with all thankfulness accept of ye bell which is presented unto them by Mr. George Hewes; also *voted* to make Mr. Hewes, a present of Deare Island."

January 8, 1862, Selectmen, Mr. Thomas Bradbury, Isaac Morrill, Mr. Thomas Mulgett, Quartermaster Osgood and Ensign Buswell.

December 26, 1683, Selectmen, Mr. Thomas Bradbury, Henry Brown, Henry True, John Stevens, Jr., and Jacob Morrill.

January 8, 1684, Selectmen, Captain Bradbury, Ensign Buswell, Onesi Page, John French, Sr., and Richard Hubert.

January 8, 1685, Prudential Men, Henry Brown, Sr., Sergeant True, Sergeant Brown, Jacob Morrill, Sergeant John Stevens, Jr.

January 4, 1686, Prudential Men, Captain Thomas Bradbury, Jacob Morrill, Sergeant Nathaniel Brown, Benjamin Stevens and Sergeant John Stevens, Jr.

28th of Tenth Month, 1687, the selectmen were Henry True, Ensign Wm. Buswell, Richard Long, Ephraim Brown and Jarves Ring.

June 11, 1689, the prudential men were Lieut. Henry True, Jacob Morrill, Ephraim Brown, Benj. Easman and Nathl. Brown.

February 13, 1689, the selectmen were Henry True, Capt. Buswell, Onesiphors Page, Richard Hubberd and Mr. Tho. Bradbury.

February 13, 1690, the selectmen were Capt. Tho. Bradbury, Jacob Morrill, Lieut. True, Willi Allin and Oneseforus Page.

February 12, 1691–92, the selectmen were Capt. Bradbury, Capt. Buswell, Richd. Long, Jno. Easman and John Allin.

March 7, 1692–93, the selectmen were Lieut. True, Jacob Morrill, Ensign Brown, Cornet Hubberd and Joseph Eaton.

March 13, 1693–94, the selectmen were Richard Long, Isaac Morrill, William Allin, Jarves Ring and Phillip Grele. Capt Thos. Bradbury chosen town clerk; Richard Long, clerk of the market.

March 18, 1694–95, Reverend Mr. James Allin was chosen town clerk, but he declined to serve. The selectmen were Ephraim Winslow, Mr. John Wadly, Lieut. Henry True, Jacob Morrell and Sargt. Saml. Gill.

March 20, 1694–95, Lieut. Henry True was chosen town clerk. Capt. Thos. Bradbury died this year. He left a legacy of "*five pounds*, to be divided by the selectmen for ye use of ye poor of ye town."

March 17, 1695–96,[1] the selectmen were Lieut. Henry True, Ens. Nathaniel Brown, John Clough, Jacob Morrill and Sargt. Joseph Eaton.

April 9, 1696, "sent to Mr. Cushing to engage him in ye work of ye ministry."

May 21, 1696, "agreed to give Mr. Caleb Cushing sixty pounds and four contribntions for his first year's salary."

March 16, 1696–97, the selectmen were Capt. Henry True, Saml. Eastman, John Wadley, Jarves Ring and Ensign Joseph Eaton. Capt. Henry True was chosen town clerk. Isaac Morrill, Sr., town treasurer.

March 24, 1697–98, Capt. Henry True chosen town clerk. The selectmen were Capt. Henry True, Mr. Wm. Bradbury, Ephraim Winsley, Jarves Ring, Benjamin Eastman.

Rev. Caleb Cushing ordained November 9, 1698.

March 8, 1698–99, the selectmen were Jarves Ring, Wm. Bradbury, Saml. Eastman, Ephraim Winsley and Capt. True. Capt. True was chosen town clerk.

March 13, 1699–1700, town clerk, Willi Bradbury. The selectmen were Willi Bradbury, Capt. True, John Clough, Jacob Morrill and Ens. Joseph Eaton.

March 13, 1700–1, town clerk, Willi Bradbury. The selectmen were Jarvis Ring, Saml. Eastman, Mr. John Wodleigh, Joseph Page and Capt. True.

March 2, 1701–2, town clerk, Nathaniel Browne. The selectmen were Mr. Isaac Morrill, Jarvis Ring, John Clough, Jacob Morrill and John Webster.

March 23, 1702–3, town clerk, Nathaniel Brown. The selectmen were John Clough, Jarvis Ring, John Webster, Daniel ——— and Abraham Morrill.

March 14, 1703–4, Nathaniel Brown was chosen town clerk. The selectmen were Isaac Morrill Capt. True, Tho. Bradbury, Willi Smith and Samuel Collins.

1704–5, town clerk, Lieut. Brown. The selectmen were John Clough, Benjamin Easman, Capt. True, Sam'l Easman and Tho. Evins.

March 19, 1705–6, town clerk, Nathaniel Brown. The selectmen were Capt. Wadleigh, Isaac Morrill, Jr., Mr. Willi Bradbury, Capt. True, Abraham Brown.

1706–7, town clerk, Nathaniel Brown. The selectmen were Capt. True, Jacob Bradbury, Sargt. Saml. Gill, Isaac Morrill, Jr., and Capt Wadleigh.

March 16, 1707–8, town clerk, Lieut. Brown. The selectmen were Col. March, Jacob Bradbury, Isaac Morrill, Jr., Sargt. Tho. Bradbury and Jarvis Ring.

March 15, 1708–9, town clerk, Lieut. Brown. The selectmen were Capt. True, Mr. Wymond Bradbury, Jerimia Stevens, Jacob Bradbury and Ezekiel Morrill.

March 21, 1709–10, town clerk, Lieut. Nathaniel Brown. The selectmen were Capt. True, Tho. Bradbury, Tho. Morrill, Capt. Wadleigh and Onesiphorus Page. The town agreed to exempt from taxation iron works which John March, John Barnett and Jarvis Ring, proposed to build and set up on the Powow River.

March 20, 1710–11, town clerk, Lieut. Nathaniel Brown. The selectmen were Cornet Jeremiah Allen, Ensign Thomas Morrill, Benjamin Easman, Abraham Browne and Isaac Morrill, Jr.

March 18, 1711–12, Town Clerk, Licutenant Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Ensign Thomas Morrill, Joseph French, John Morrill, James Purington, and Cornet Jeremiah Allen. "Voted that the annual

[1] Most of the town-meetings near this date (1695) were held at the house of Joseph Fletcher.

meeting of the town in the future to be the second Tuesday in March."

March 10, 1712–13, Town Clerk, Lieutenant Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Ezekiel Morrill, Samuel Collins, John Morrill, Joseph Page and Samuel Eastman.

March 9, 1713–14, Town Clerk, Lieutenant Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, Cornet Allin, Lieutenant Stevens, William Smith and Jacob Morrill, Jr.

March 8, 1714–15, Town Clerk, Lieutenant Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, Jacob Bradbury, John Morrill, Samuel Currier and Captain Henry True.

March 13, 1715–16, Town Clerk, Lieutenant Brown; Selectmen, Sergeant William True, Jacob Bradbury, Joseph Tucker, Jacob Morrill, Jr., and Cornet Jeremiah Allin.

March 12, 1716–17, Town Clerk, Lieutenant Brown; Selectmen, William True, Jarvis Ring, Joseph Tucker, Lieutenant Allen and Mr. John Webster.

March 11, 1717–18, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, Jacob Bradbury, John Morrill, Joseph French and Sergeant William True.

March 10, 1718–19, Town Clerk, Lieutenant Brown; Selectmen, John Morrill, Joseph French, Sergeant William True, John Merrill and William Smith.

1719–20, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Sergeant William True, John Merrill, Daniel Morrill, John Morrill and Henry True. Town-meeting was held in the West Parish meeting-house.

March 14, 1720–21, Town Clerk, Captain Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, Ensign Henry True, Onesiphorus Page, John Morrill and Joseph French.

March 13, 1721–22, Town Clerk, Captain Brown; Selectmen, Lieutenant William True, Sergeant Edward French, Cornet Ezekiel Morrill, Sergeant Samuel Collins and Quartermaster William Smith.

March 12, 1722–23, Town Clerk, Captain Nathaniel Brown. Voted to have three selectmen only. Elected L. William True, Mr. John Morrill and Captain Joseph Eaton.

March 10, 1723–24, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, John True, Robert Smith, John Morrill, Samuel Collins and Joseph French, Jr.

March 9, 1724–25, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Thomas Fellows, Stephen Merrill, Samuel Collins, Joseph French, Jr., and Aaron Morrill.

March 8, 1725–26, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Mr. Samuel Collins, John Merrill, Robert Smith, Daniel Morrill and Joseph French.

March 14, 1726–27, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, John Merrill, John Morrill, Andrew Downer and Joseph French.

March 12, 1727–28, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Moses Merrill, Elias Pike, Abraham Brown, Jun., Israel Webster, and Samuel Collins.

March 11, 1728–29, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Lieutenant True, Robert Smith, Philip Rowell, John True, and Lieutenant John Morrill.

March 10, 1729–30, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, John Merrill, William True, Philip Rowel, John Morrill and Thomas Fellows.

March 9, 1730–31, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, Richard Long, Philip Rowell, John Morrill and Moses Merrill.

March 14, 1731–32, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, John Morrill, Andrew Downer, Samuel Collins, Philip Rowell and Jabez True.

March 13, 1732–33, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, Philip Rowell, John Merrill, John Morrill and David Ring.

March 12, 1733–34, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, John Page, Philip Rowell, John Stevens, John Morrill and John True.

March 11, 1734–35, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, John Morrill, John Merrill, Caleb Cushing, Jun., and Ephraim Brown.

March 9, 1735–36, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, John Morrill, Philip Rowell, Jabez True, Caleb Cushing, Jr., and Samuel French.

March 8, 1736–37, Mr. Nathaniel Brown was chosen Town Clerk; Selectmen, Caleb Cushing, Jr., Philip Rowell, Robert Smith, David Ring and John Morrill.

March 14, 1737–38, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Deacon Benjamin True, Lieutenant Cushing, Abraham Morrill, Deacon John Merrill and Aaron Morrill.

March 13, 1737–38, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Stephen Merrill, Philip Rowell, Captain Elias Pike, Lieutenant Caleb Cushing and Captain John Merrill. Philip Rowell refused to be sworn and Aaron Morrill was elected.

March 11, 1739–40, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Captain Pike, Nathaniel Fitts, Lieutenant Cushing, Reubin Morrill and Ephraim Wadleigh.

March 10, 1740–41, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Captain John Morrill, Stephen Merrill, Captain Elias Pike, Philip Rowell and William True.

March 9, 1741–42, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen (voted to have but three), Captain John Morrill, Captain Elias Pike and Philip Rowell.

March 8, 1742–43, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Lieutenant Cushing, Philip Rowell and Israel Webster.

March 13, 1743–44, Town Clerk, Caleb Cushing; Selectmen, Captain Elias Pike, Mr. Philip Rowell, Mr. Nathaniel Brown.

March 12, 1744–45, Town Clerk, Caleb Cushing, Jr.; Selectmen, Captain Elias Pike, Winthrop True and Stephen Merrill.

March 11, 1745, Town Clerk, Caleb Cushing, Jr.;

Selectmen, Reubin Morrill, Winthrop True and Captain Elias Pike.

In 1662, October 28th, the Rev. William Worcester died. For twenty-three years he was the one minister of the town, who, by his intelligent counsel, had guided the settlers in the better way. One of the early historians of New England writes of him as "one of the reverend, learned and holy divines, arriving from Europe to America, by whose evangelical ministry the churches of New England have been illuminated." It was also decided, on the petition of the new town (Amesbury), then subject to the ecclesiastical rule of the Salisbury Church, "that they should not content themselves with ordinary help while the Lord is pleased to continue *so bright a star in their candlestick*."

The successor of Mr. Worcester was Rev. John Wheelwright, settled in 1662, who "for his maintainance while the new town should remain with us was to recieve three-score pounds a year, otherwise to be paid fifty pounds a year by the town of Salisbury, beside accommodation of house and land." The ministry of Mr. Wheelwright was not a very pleasant one. He came in contact with Capt. Robert Pike upon some matters of church policy, and between appeals to the parish and the State government still stronger prejudice was excited, and his connection with the church was broken in 1678. He soon after went back to England; returned to this country, and settled in Exeter, N. H. and left upon the records of that town evidence of his genius, not only as a scholar, and teacher but as a wise statesman. He returned to Salisbury, and was buried in the old yard on the Beach road, beside his former associate, and where to-day lie the first four ministers of the town without a stone to mark their last resting-place.

In 1668–69 there was a more earnest demand for the building of roads and the care of forest trees, and for the settlement of school-teachers. Care and provision was made for the raising of stock and the providing of public-watering places. The record shows there was "reserved convenient land for a watering-place for cattle about the Pine Hill Ridge to remain to ye said use forever."

In 1672 the selectmen were given authority to appoint surveyors of highways and to instruct them in their duties.

In 1675 the fear of the Indians whose appearance had been noted by unfriendly acts for some months, caused the town to erect a place of security from sudden attack. Three such places were built—one in the vicinity of Congress Street, one near the Rabbit Farm and a third in the Seabrook Road.

In 1676 Henry Brown was appointed town appraiser, Wm. Brown constable, and Thos. Rawlinson to keep "the town's flock of sheep from May until October, and to have six pence a head," to be paid as follows: "four pounds of butter for every twenty sheep and lambs and one bushel of corn for every score, and y^e^ remainder of y^e^ pay in corn." Much of the trade or business of the town was by barter, and the chief article for this use in the heavier transactions was lumber.

In 1679, Mr. James Alling was invited to the pulpit in the parish made vacant by the leaving of Rev. Mr. Wheelwright. One of the inducements offered for his settlement is recorded thus:—"To settle among us and marry; if it shall please y^e^ Lord, y^t^ he dies while he is with us, the town doth engage and order that his wyfe shall have twenty acres of upland, or in lieu of land, three score pounds." Mr. Allyn accepted the offer, and the town fulfilled its engagements. To-day this land is known as the "Allen lot." He died in 1696.

Rev. Mr. Alling's successor was Rev. Caleb Cushing, and for his services the town voted him sixty pounds in good merchantable pay, ten of it in silver money, with four contributions "besides y^e^ sixty pounds," and the use of the parsonage house, and all the lands and meadows belonging thereto, during his stay. The ministry of Mr. Cushing shows him to have been a careful guide, not only over the spiritual affairs of his parish, but he was equally interested in the temporal welfare of his flock. He became a large land-owner in the town, and the property acquired was held in the family for several generations, and the late Hon. Caleb Cushing shared in the division, and the Cushing estate continues upon the assessor's books to this day. The descendants of Minister Cushing were honored by their townsmen.

So far our history deals with the people of the East Parish—they in all purposes were the town. But the land about the Powow River was being settled upon and manufacturing interests were developing, which led to the creation of another parish, which was forced by church dissensions. As early as 1665 the second meeting-house in the territory of Salisbury was built, but it was not until many years later (1714) that the West Parish of Salisbury was established. To avoid a division of its territory into two different church parishes, the town, for nearly a hundred years, built and repaired its meeting-houses and its parsonages, and supported its ministers from a common assessment upon the inhabitants of the town. A full history of the church organizations of the town, and the early and later movements in connection therewith, would require a volume by itself.

The grant of timber land to William Osgood, on condition that he should build a saw-mill, to be completed before May, 1652, was the first movement of the early settlers to build up an industry in the West Parish. It was stipulated that said Osgood should have liberty to make use of all the pine timber between the west side of the path leading from the house of John Bagley to Exeter, and on other growths. This grant of land comprised some three hundred acres, but he was to give to the town "one half-hundred boards and planks for every thousand sawn at the

mill." At this mill the first planks were sawn for ship-building purposes on the Merrimac River. A ship built by Nathan Gold and one by Mr. Graeves were furnished planks at this mill. In 1689, Willie Osgood surrendered up to the town all his right in this grant of timber-land. The capacity of the mill is learned by a deposition found in the Essex County Court files, wherein Richard Currier testifies that the mill in Salisbury is in no way inferior to the mill at Amesbury, which in the spring saws about five or six thousand feet of board a week, for three months together. In 1693–94 a saw mill was built by John Wadley on the Powow River, making the third mill. Benjamin Easman also petitioned for a right in Powow River between the mill bridge and the old saw-mill, now in possession of Major March, Thomas Currier and Jacob Morrill, and with it "the right to improve four rods of land adjoining for the purpose of building a fulling-mill to full the town's cloth, before any other town, they paying as other towns." Agreed to so long as the said Easman performed the said conditions. In 1710 the town received the following petition, which is an indication that there was a growing desire to further improve the water facilities of the Powow:

"The humble petition of we, the subscribers, to the town of Salisbury, assembled this 21st day of March, 1710: hereby showeth that whereas your petitioners have had thoughts for to set up and build Iron Works upon y^e^ falls in y^e^ Powon River, humbly prays y^e^ town that they would please to grant them some small matter for y^e^ promoting that design, which if we shall go on with y^e^ work it may prove to great benefit to y^e^ town. Therefore we pray y^e^ town to grant that we may be freed from all rates that may arise on said work and to give something that may promote that work; so hoping that you may oblige us in this thing, we remain your humble servants, John March, John Barnett, Jarvis Ring."

The petition received favorable action by the town; the works were built, and for several years did quite a business, but they were situated on the north side of the river. From the first three saw-mills sprang up the iron-works, and following this the nail-factory. The first woolen-mill was operated in Salisbury in 1812, and the first contract for clothing the soldiers in the war was filled by this mill. At this period the town contained several tanneries. As early as 1780 liberty was given Jacob Brown to set up a hatter's shop on the highway near David Currier's barn (near where the lower factory boiler-house is now situated). This industry was continued there for many years, or until the burning of the hat-factory, some fifty years ago. Previous to 1793 there was located on the banks of the Powow five saw-mills, seven grist-mills, and, in succeeding years, two linseed oil-mills, a fulling-mill, carding-mill, iron and nail-factory.

Strange as it may seem to the present generation, ship-building was also prosecuted on the banks of the Powow River. As near as can be ascertained, the first ship-builder on the Powow was a Mr. Adams, as early as 1702. His yard was located near where Biddle's carriage-factory now is. In 1726 Joseph Wadleigh, Jr., Aaron Wadleigh, John Wadleigh, Jr., and Abraham Wadleigh petitioned "for liberty to use y^e^ town's landing-place, near y^e^ widow Ring's house, on the spot where Mr. Adams formerly built vessels, for the purpose of building a small vessel." The Wadleighs built quite a number of ships on the river. In 1727 liberty was given Jarvis Ring to set up a vessel on the river at the landing-place. In 1731 Philip Rowell and Abraham Morrill were given "liberty to set up a sloop at y^e^ mills." Major Currier built vessels on the Amesbury side. The last vessel built on the Powow was in 1835, by Captain Samuel Fallonsbee, one of the old ship-builders of the Merrimac. His ship-yard was just below Boardman's soap-factory. Thus for nearly one hundred years ship-building was one of the industries of the Powow. From the wharves at the Landing great quantities of lumber and staves were shipped, and the lumber trade alone employed quite a force of men. Notwithstanding the extent of wilderness of woods, extending from the sea-shore to the extreme limits of the town in all directions, the care with which the early settlers guarded the growth of the forest trees is accounted for on the ground that it was one of the articles of exchange in trade, aside from its use in building ships and the quantity required to furnish warmth in winter. No person could fell a tree on any street, or about the town, or on the "green," without first receiving permission from the town, and the penalty for violation of this order subjected one to a fine of twenty shillings.

In all things pertaining to the early government of the town, its affairs were guarded with a jealous interest. Persons who had been granted lots of land in the township and had not settled thereon were notified that unless they did so before the 1st of November of the year 1641, their land would be forfeited to the town. The pay of laborers was also fixed as follows: For every lot of land laid out upon the Powow and Merrimac Rivers, lot-layers were to receive one cent per acre. Laborers were ordered to be paid sixteen pence per day for work during the winter months, and the winter months were to be accounted "from the first of November to the last of the first month, and the seven other months shall be summer months;" and for the summer months twenty pence per day for laborers; all carpenters to be paid two pence a day more than laborers, that is, eighteen pence in winter and twenty-two pence in summer. Mowers to have two pence per day more. The sale of certain articles was also regulated thus: Clapboards five feet in length, three shillings per hundred; split, four shillings six pence per hundred; butter, six pence per pound; milk, three half-pence per quart; new milk, one pence.

To carry out these provisions, a clerk of the market was appointed. At the same time, we have mentioned the sale of its fishing rights and the price put upon the sale of fish, making provision that its own townsmen should be first served. In contracting with its early teachers in the schools, it stipulated with Thomas Bradbury that he should first give his time and attention to scholars in the town, and then, if he have time at his disposal to teach others, he may do so.

If land was granted for any specific purpose, the interests of the town was the first consideration, as illustrated in the answer to Abraham Morrill and Henry Saywood, who petitioned for a mill privilege near the falls on the Powow River. These were given three-score acres of upland on condition that they set up a mill of sufficient capacity to grind all the corn the town shall need.

The first record of any trouble with the Indians appears in 1643, when hostilities were threatened by the tribes along the Merrimac, and they were ordered to be disarmed by the court. Accordingly, forty armed men were sent out for that purpose, twelve of whom belonged in Salisbury.

In the early records there is evidence that the settlers and leading men were disposed to deal justly by the Indians, notwithstanding the many traditionary tales of violent deeds of blood.

The old Indian trail extending on the borders of the marsh from Salisbury to Hampton can be traced to-day as distinctly as when the red men traversed it two hundred years ago. The shell mounds below Ring's Island, near the Merrimac, continue to attract attention, while from adjoining farms along the river-shore large collections of arrow-heads and Indian implements have been found.

At a meeting of the inhabitants held 6th of First Month, 1666, Thomas Bradbury, moderator, "there was granted to Ned, an Indian, the right to set up a fish-ware in the town creek, to catch fish for the summer following." In another instance it is recorded that one of the settlers was held to account for dealing unfairly by an Indian. It is possible that the exemption of this town from the raids of Indians upon its settlement, notwithstanding the fears excited by their approach oftentimes, and means of defense erected, was in a great measure due to these acts.

In the colonial records is the following:

"Josias Plaistowe, for stealing four baskets of corne from the Indians, is ordered to return them eight baskets, to be fined five pounds, and hereafter to be called by the name of Josias and not Mr., as formerly he used to be."

Of the sixty-four grantees of land in the town, sixteen were ordered to be called *Mr.*,—a large proportion, for, says Hutchinson, in a list of one hundred freemen, you will not find above four or five distinguished by *Mr.*, although they were generally men of some substance. The second class comprised the farmers, mechanics, etc., and the third class the servants, whose time had been bought of themselves or were hired by the month or year.

In 1773 the town was visited by a violent tornado, equaling any blizzard of recent date in western lands. The Rev. Dr. Webster, the West Parish minister, in his diary, says of it:

"This tempest was preceded by heavy rain and great darkness. It first appeared on the Merrimac river and rolled up the waters upon the banks, and threatened to swallow up the affraighted inhabitants. From the river inland it covered three-quarters of a mile, and extended to the sea. The tempest continued for three minutes, and wrecked and destroyed one hundred buildings in the town. Yet through the great and marvelous mercy of God, who ruleth in the storm, no life was lost or bone broken on the Salisbury side, where the most damage was done."

The action of the town during the Revolutionary period, from 1770 to the close of the war, is a record of patriotism and self-devotion to the interests of the nation. Patriots and heroes who fought at Crown Point, at Ticonderoga, at Quebec, at the fall of Louisbourg, at Bunker Hill, and sailors who manned the yards in the old ship "Alliance," and other of our naval vessels.

March 13, 1774, the town voted that:

"Thanks be given to the respectable body of merchants in Boston and other towns, for their truly generous non-importation agreement, and for their prudent and vigorous endeavors in this critical time to save their country. That we will not ourselves drink any foreign teas and endeavor (sickness excepted) that none shall be drinked in our houses till the duties are taken off, and the Revinu acts are repealed."

In 1772 the freeholders and other inhabitants voted and unanimously resolved:

"1. That the most essential rights of mankind are,—Life, Liberty and Property.

"2. That the only end and design of government is to secure these.

"3. That gross invasions have been made upon these our rights by the British administration, till our grievances and oppressions are become intolerable.

"4. That our Representative be instructed to use all his influence in the house that all proper measures may be taken to obtain a redress of these grievances.

"5. That if this fails of effect, this town is ready to unite with the other towns in this government, and with all the other British government, in this continent, in all lawful measures which, on joint consultation, shall be judged necessary to save our sinking state, and to obtain redress of our grievances.

"6. That a copy of these resolutions be transmitted by the town-clerk, to the gentlemen of the Committee of Communication and Correspondence in Boston, thanking them for their seasonable and prudent care of the public good."

On the reception of the news of the blockade of the harbor of Boston 1774, the town voted:

"That since we cannot have commerce with Great Britain upon no easier terms than giving up up our liberty and property, it is best to have none, and therefore, that if the other colonies, or we, of this Province in general, come into measures, we will, after the 4th inst., forebear all trade with Great Britain, and Ireland, and the West Indies, till the port of Boston is again opened as heretofore."

For the distress occasioned to the poor of Boston by the "embargo," the town not only voted aid, but contributed sixty pounds. Mr. Samuel Smith, Capt. Henry Eaton and Major Nathaniel Currier were a committee to confer with the town of Marblehead on the state of affairs. The Committee of Correspondence were Capt. William Hackett, Dr. Samuel Nye and Lemuel Stevens.

Twenty pounds were voted to provide timber, rocks and labor towards stopping the channel of the Merrimac, to prevent British ships from entering.

The Committee of Safety were John March, Moses Pike, Josiah French, Capt. Steven Merrill, Henry Moody, Henry Morrill, Lieut. Benjamin Evans, Captain Joseph Pike, Captain William Hackett, Dr. Samuel Nye, John Hackett. This committee were given full power to act in the town's behalf, and during the pleasure of the town. The town provided for the payment of its minute-men, purchased powder and ball and clothing for its soldiers, and instructed the selectmen to hire money to pay its soldiers.

Names of soldiers who served in the Revolutionary War:—For two months' service at Cambridge and classed as "minute-men:"

Jacob Currier.	William Osgood.
Abel Morrill.	William Tucker.
Isaac Morrill.	Samuel Dudly.
William Merrill.	Philip Osgood.
Rufus Smith.	Stephen Smith.
Daniel Gale.	Jeremiah Morrill.
Joshua Morrill.	Archelaus Adams, Jr.
William Hackett, Jr.	Elias Pike.

For service at Winter Hill:

Joseph Wadleigh.	Jacob Currier.
Thomas Arnold.	Jeremiah Brown.
Samuel True.	Sylvanus Eaton.
Jona. Webster.	Daniel Morrill.
Abel Jackman.	John True.
Isaac Dalton.	Robert Fowler.
Richard Brown.	William Osgood.
Robert Muxfield.	Samuel Hackett.
David Eaton.	Benjamin Eaton.
Moses Collins.	William Morrill.
Jeremiah Morrill.	Charles Morrill.
Lieut. William Brown.	Joseph Gerrish.
Jonathan Sellers.	John Dalton.
Joseph Muxfield.	John Merrill, Jr.
Simon French.	Jabez True.
Nathaniel Jackson.	John Brown.
Jacob Ring.	Aaron Dow.
Benjamin French, Jr.	Jere. Dole.
Samuel Carr, Jr.	William Pike.

Those paid as Continental soldiers, and enlisted for the war, some of whom fought at Bunker Hill, were:

John Blaisdell.	Moses French.
Thomas Griffin.	James Davis.
Jona. Blaisdell.	Elijah Dow.
Jeremiah Brown.	Lieut. Wm. Brown.
Winthrop Wiggin.	Stephen Smith.
James Sellers.	Jona. Sawyer.
Thomas Brown.	John Mansfield.
John Carr	Joseph Adams.
William Sellers.	Capt. Nath'l Currier.
[illegible]	Jeremiah Dole.
[illegible]	Richard Hoyt.
[illegible]	Daniel Marshal.
[illegible]	Moses Collins.
[illegible]	Samuel Webster
[illegible]	Moses French.
[illegible]	Jona. Fowler.
[illegible]	William Carr.
[illegible]	[illegible] Lewis.
[illegible]	[illegible]
[illegible]	Levi [illegible]

Thirteen soldiers were paid who went to Providence, and ten were paid who went to Rhode Island.

The cost of shoes, clothing and blankets furnished the soldiers of the Continental army by the town was £1900 6*s*.

For fear the British ships might sail up the Merrimac, and to further prevent such a catastrophe, the town voted to build two fire rafts. These were completed at a cost of £17 6*s* 11*d*. William and John Hackett superintended the work thereon.

The money in aid of the defense of American liberty was loaned to the town by its own citizens, and by a number of women possessed of estates; among the latter class a Mrs. Clark contributed £500.

Upon the adoption of the new Constitution in 1779, we find that the town voted to accept every article, except the third article in the Bill of Rights after these words: And all moneys paid by the subject to the support of public worship and the public teachers aforesaid, shall, if he require it, be uniformly applied to the public teachers of his own religious sect and denomination, provided there be any on whose instruction he attends. It is the mind of this town that these words should be added—"provided, also, that he signify his mind publicly and enter his dissent at the settlement of a minister, as being of a different denomination." The reasons urged for this settlement were—"That the people being left at an utter uncertainty who is to support their minister, and the minister whether he can have any support at all, and also for the reason that a man might change his religious sentiments for the sake of avoiding his civil obligations, and it does not come within the power of the government to dissolve such a contract." Fifty-five voted for the amendment, twelve against.

The first petition against the parish tax system, preceded by strenuous opposition from Mr. Robert Pike, who declared it to be against the Constitution of the State, was sent to the Legislature from this town. Upon the presentation of this petition a town-meeting was called on the 27th day of December, and Caleb Cushing, Major Joseph Page, Dr. Samuel Nye, Benjamin Evans and Moses Rowell were chosen a committee to prepare reasons against the prayer of said petition.

The controversy thereon had been gathering strength for some years, as it was shown that the "ministers' rates" in the town in frequent years exceeded the whole town expenditures. In 1788 the town voted not to take any action in ministerial affairs, and voted against hiring the Rev. Mr. Webster and the Rev. Mr. Noyes.

The men prominent in the affairs of the town were wise and capable of understanding its needs and necessities. It allowed none to represent them but those capable of expressing themselves by vote and action in an intelligent manner, and very often gave their representatives instruction upon the public

policy of the day. Thus, in 1786, they gave special instruction to the representative-elect upon questions of finance —" declaring against the emission of paper-money as a dangerous expedient, promising rather an increase of contusion and fraud and injustice throughout the land, than any solid advantage to the public." They enjoined " Frugality and economy in every department of the government, and such laws as would tend to diffuse these virtues, together with temperance and industry, throughout the State, as we look upon the practice of these and the cultivation of the most useful manufactures among ourselves to be the surest and safest method of extricating us from our present disagreeable and embarrassed condition." The report is addressed to Samuel Marsh, representative, a most worthy man of his time.

A history of the town, however brief, would be incomplete without some allusion to the character of its founders. Simon Bradstreet is a name that is well known in the history of the State. He was born in Lincolnshire, England, 1603 ; came to this country in 1630 ; was one of the assistants, and was so continued till 1673. He was secretary of the colony from 1630 to 1644 ; was chosen Deputy Governor in 1673, and so continued until 1679, when he was elected Governor. He received no grants of land in Salisbury, but helped to organize the town by laying out roads, the " green " upon which the first meeting-house and court-house stood, and assisted in the adoption of rules for the government of the plantation of Merrimac. He settled in Ipswich, afterwards in Salem. Daniel Dennison was one of the organizers of this plantation, but received no land grant. In 1671 he was appointed to hold a court at Salisbury and Hampton ; was commissioner of the United Colonies.

Samuel Dudley, a son of Governor Thomas Dudley, born in 1606, came from England with his father in 1630 ; settled in Salisbury and secured house-lot, planting lot and meadow-lot at the first division of land in 1639. He held several important offices, and 1648 appointed to keep the court at Norfolk. The same year he sold all his land in Salisbury and removed to Exeter ; became one of its first ministers, and died there in 1683, aged seventy-nine.

John Clark, born in England, 1598, was in Newbury in 1638 ; was one of the petitioners for the Merrimac plantation, but received no grants of land. Tradition says, " he was one of the first regular educated physicians who resided in New England."

Christopher Batt came from Salisbury, England, and settled in Salisbury, Mass., 1639. He introduced the tannery business into the town, from which early sprang that branch of trade—now extinct. He received large grants of land. In 1650 he removed to Boston and became a noted merchant there.

Henry Dilley came from Salisbury, England ; received house-lot, planting and meadow-lots at the first division. He died, and his widow sold her land. She married for her third husband the Rev. Wm. Worcester.

John Sanders received house, planting-lots and meadow-lots. He was from Wiltshire County, England. He sold his land in Salisbury to Richard Wells and removed to Wells, Maine.

Samuel Winsley, one of the grantees of the town, was the only one of the twelve who settled in Salisbury, and remained there until his death.

Next to the early ministers, who take rank as men of great ability and worth, we may mention Thomas Bradbury, who, for many years, filled various public positions in the town, and left a record of usefulness which has been duly set forth in a biographical sketch written by one of his descendants. He was the first school-teacher employed. His record upon the books of the town proves his intelligence and worth.

Major Robert Pike was the greatest commoner of all,—a veritable Oliver Cromwell in decision and energy of character, and for the many qualities which made him prominent in the history of the town. A descendant has written a genealogy of the Pike family, in which the old hero, who came to Salisbury in 1637, and was admitted as a freemen, occupies a large space.

The twenty-eight counselors appointed by charter in 1684 were very important officers. The people selected their best representative men to be approved by the King to attend to the affairs of the colony. Robert Pike, of Salisbury, was selected and appointed to this office to serve for nine years. This appointment was during the reign of King Philip, the great leading warrior of the Eastern tribe of Indians, an inveterate enemy of the English and the civilization they sought to establish. On the expedition to the " Eastward," in 1690, Major Pike was ordered to raise three hundred men, to fill the required complement called for by Governor Hinckly, under Major Church. Major Pike responded to this large demand, and in nine days' time added two companies and filled the quota of men necessary for the expedition. The letter of instructions to Major Church by Major Pike is interesting. It required him to sail by the first opportunity to Casco, or places adjacent that may be most commodious for landing with safety and secrecy, and to visit the French and Indians at their headquarters at Amerascoggon, Pejepscot or any other place, and to kill, destroy and utterly rout the enemy wherever he may be found, and also to recover our captives. In this expedition several men enlisted from Salisbury, but their names are not recorded on our records. To those familiar with the history of the French and Indian War the history of the expedition proves a chapter of sad interest.

Major Pike was a foe to intolerance in religious matters, and dared give expression to his sentiments in a manner that subjected him to disfranchisement and fine. He protected the Quakers from the insults

and abuse attempted upon them, and when the witchcraft delusion swept over the country he came to the rescue of the wife of Mr. Bradbury and saved that kind and Christian woman from the foul aspersions which were cast upon her in her old age.

It is not improbable that the influence of Robert Pike had much to do in saving the good name of the town from the fatal delusion which makes so dark a record in neighboring places.

The wife of Thomas J. Bradbury was accused of bewitching John Carr, and was condemned on the 9th of September, 1692. She was afterwards acquitted. She was the daughter of John Perkins, of Ipswich; was probably not far from eighty years of age, as she was married about 1637. Her sister, Elizabeth Sargent, was the wife of William Sargent, one of the first twelve settlers of Ipswich, then in Newbury, then Salisbury, then Amesbury, where many of his descendants still reside. In this connection we give the following, sent to the court which sentenced Mrs. Bradbury:

"Wee, the subscribers, do testefy that her life was such as become the gospel. She was a lover of the ministrie in all appearance and a diligent attendant upon God's holy ordinances, being of a courteous and peaceable disposition and carriage; neither did any of us (some of whom have lived in the towne with her above 50 years) ever know that she had any differences or falling out with any of her neighbors, man, woman or child, but was always ready and willing to do for them what lay in her power, night and day, though with hazard of her health or other danger. More might be spoken in her commendation, but this for the present.

(Signed by 118 men and women).

"July 28, 1692."

Coming down to later generations of men are the Websters, who settled along the Point shore and early engaged in commerce. The Hacketts, of which William was the ship designer and the first inventor of the water-line model,—the ancestor of Professor Hackett, the best Greek and Latin scholar of his day. The Clarks, of which Master Clark is the representative name, who engaged in the West India trade and aided in developing the tanning trade to an extent it had not known in the town, by establishing his four sons in business and which was prosecuted by them for many years. The Curriers, who built ships and saw-mills, and laid the first brick for a woolen-mill in the town, all the while extensive land-owners and farmers—descendants of Richard, known in the history of Amesbury. The Morrills, who operated the first machinery—such as "Ensign Morrill and his two sons." The Browns, who figured as merchants and mechanics of note. The Rowells, who operated brick yards and saw-mills and built the first brick building in the town—Franklin Hall—in 1628, and where the first public discussion was held upon the enormity of the sin of slavery. The Misses Grimkie, two Southern ladies, who had liberated the slaves which were theirs by inheritance upon the death of a relative, representing property at that time valued at fifty thousand dollars, spoke upon the question and delivered the first public anti-slavery address held in the town; though later came Garrison and Stephen Foster, and other early disciples of the reform, until the whole town was in a turmoil of excitement over the agitation, and became allied to the towns in Essex County, who espoused the cause of freedom and held the balance of power in the vote previous to 1840, and was one of the first towns to be represented in the Legislature by a pronounced abolitionist.

The town can also claim the honor of being the birthplace of the mother of Daniel Webster,—Abagail Eastman, who was the second wife of Col. Ebenezer Webster, then a resident of New Hampshire, but a native of Kingston. By this marriage they had three children,—the Hon. Ezekiel Webster, the Hon. Daniel Webster, and a daughter who married a Mr. Haddock, and was the mother of the late Professor Haddock, of Dartmouth College. Abigail Eastman, the mother of Daniel Webster, was born in Salisbury, at the "Four Corners," or, as known by its local name, the "Rabbitt Farm." She was a woman of sterling good sense.

The Cushings sprang from Minister Caleb Cushing, and the honored statesman of this nation claims Salisbury as his birthplace.

Thomas Macy and Tristram Coffin were each men of remarkable character. They were the original settlers of the island of Nantucket. Macy was called to account for harboring Quakers and for his non-conformist notions; he evaded the sentence of the law passed upon him by making a voyage to Nantucket in a somewhat sudden manner, an account of which has been graphically described by the poet Whittier.

Nathaniel Currier, of Salisbury, held a commission under King George III.; but on the breaking out of the War of the Revolution he cast his influence on the side of the patriots, and was elected to the "Congress at Watertown" in 1773. He died in 1775.

Capt. John March, Capt. True, William Sevett, Oliver Osgood, Ezekiel Hackett, Worthens, Morrills, Stevenses, Lowells, Hoyts, Colbys, Eatons, etc.

Religious Societies. — *First Congregational*, founded in 1638, two years before the incorporation of the town, and was the eighteenth church in Massachusetts. The first pastor was Rev. William Worcester, settled at the organization, and died October 23d, 1662. Second pastor, John Wheelwright, settled December 9th, 1662, died November 15th, 1679. Third pastor, James Alling, a native of Boston; settled May 4th, 1687, died March 3d, 1696, aged thirty-seven. Fourth pastor, Caleb Cushing, born at Scituate, settled November 9th, 1698, died January 25th, 1752, aged eighty. Fifth pastor, Edmund Noyes, born at Newbury, settled November 20th, 1751, died July 12th, 1809, aged eighty-one.

The Rocky Hill Church, or *West Parish of Salisbury*, was built in 1716. The first settled minister was Rev. Joseph Parsons, installed November 28th, 1718. The covenant was in accordance with the custom of the

early New England churches, there being no distinct creed or articles of faith. It was as follows:

"We do this day, in a grateful sense of the call of Christ unto us, avouch the Lord Jehovah to be our God, Father, Son and Holy Ghost, and giving up ourselves to God and Christ and one another, we do, by the grace of Christ assisting us, cheerfully submit ourselves to his government and to all his ordinances and institutions, taking and acknowledging him to be our prophet, priest and king, further promising by the grace of Christ to shun and avoid all errors, with all unrighteousness and ungodliness. We do also with ourselves give up our seed to be the Lord's, submitting them also to the discipline and government of Christ in his Church, promising moreover that we will endeavor to uphold and promote the worship of God in public or in private; and finally that we will walk together as a church of Christ in all mutual love and watchfulness, to the building up of each other in faith and love, humbly craving help at the hands of God for the performance hereof."

Mr. Parsons died at Salisbury, March 13th, 1739, aged sixty-nine years, and in the twenty-first year of his ministry. He was a graduate of Harvard College in 1697. During his ministry, two hundred and ninety-one persons were added to the church. His wife was the daughter of Dr. Benjamin Thompson, of Roxbury. They had five children, three of whom were born in Salisbury: Samuel, born in Salisbury, was a graduate of Harvard College in 1730; William, born in 1716, graduated at Harvard 1735; John, died October, 1740, while attending Harvard College.

The church was strong in members and influence. Rev. Mr. Parsons was an eminent Christian, an accomplished, able and faithful minister. I copied from the humble monument in the parsonage lot of the old graveyard, near by the old meeting-house site, a few days ago, this uncommon, brief inscription on an insignificant, moss-covered stone:

"REV. JOSEPH PARSONS.

"'Only this, and nothing more.'

"Can storied urn or animated bust
Back to its mansions call the fleeting breath?
Can Honor's voice provoke the silent dust,
Or flattery soothe the dull, cold ear of death?"

No "storied urn" nor "honor's voice" of flattery here to soothe with solemn, ancient epitaph; but here beneath the sod is mingled with the dust of many of the once loving and beloved parishioners of the Second West Parish Church of Old Salisbury their first minister, Joseph Parsons, whose honored name is rudely marked on the moss-covered slate at the head of his grave. We look not down to read his noble record here; but we know by the good works of earth of that record of promise in letters of gold, written higher and brighter in heaven's glorious record of the faithful.

The second minister was Rev. Samuel Webster, of Bradford, who was ordained March 24, 1741.

After a ministry of nearly fifty-five years, he died at Salisbury, July 18, 1795, aged seventy-eight years. His eldest son, Rev. Samuel Webster, Jr., was born at Salisbury, September 16, 1743; graduated at Harvard College, 1791. He was ordained at Temple, N. H., October, 1771.

The third pastor was Andrew Beattie; ordained June 28, 1797, and died March 16, 1801. He was born in Chelmsford; graduated at Harvard in 1795. Mr. Beattie, during his brief ministry of three years and nine months, won the respect of his parishioners. He was buried beside Rev. Joseph Parsons in the Rocky Hill Church-yard.

The fourth pastor was Rev. William Balch, who was born in Danvers, Mass., January 17, 1775. He was three years in Harvard College, after preparation in Phillips Academy, Exeter, N. H. He excelled as a Latin scholar. Previous to his settlement he served as chaplain in the United States Army. He was ordained pastor of this church November 17, 1802, and was dismissed February 20, 1816. During the latter part of the ministry of Mr. Balch many of the church and parish became disaffected, and were unwilling to aid in his support. After much unpleasant contention, an *ex-parte* council was convened by the church, which Mr. Balch consented to make mutual, and by it matters were so adjusted that he was honorably dismissed. The difficulties arose out of the excited political feeling which at this time divided the community. The churches called to settle this difficulty were Seabrook, Hampton Falls, Fourth in Newbury, Exeter, West in Amesbury, and East in Haverhill. A memento of this council of these neighboring churches is still preserved, which doubtless may have been indirectly one cause of the happy, mutual and friendly adjustment that resulted in the desired honorable dismissal of the pastor. It is a settled bill of the expenses of said council which I will here copy:

"THE WEST PARISH IN SALISBURY.

To David M. Leavitt, Dr.

To Brandy and Rum, as per bill	$9.20
4 Turkeys	4.60
8 Chickens	2.00
5 lb. loaf sugar, 37 cts. per pound	1.88
16 " Bacon, 12½ cts. per pound	2.00
38 " beef	2.82
3 " Raisons and Currants	.40
6 " Brown Sugar, ½ lb. Tea	2.00
Butter, cheese, horse-keeping, potatoes, lodgings, etc.	10.00
Time attending on council	10.00
Journey to Exeter and Hampton Falls	1.50
	$46.90 "

During the interval from the dismissal of Mr. Balch, in 1816, to the commencing of the Rev. Benjamin Sawyer, in 1835, the pulpit was supplied by a committee, and the preachers remained for a longer or shorter period. During the time more or less of the members of the parish "signed off," as it was called under the Religious Freedom Act, and worshipped with other churches. Rev. Thomas C. Upham, afterwards a professor in Bowdoin College, preached here with great acceptance. Then followed Rev. Mr. Turner and Rev. Charles Bowles, neither of whom were able to secure the harmonious co-operation of the whole parish. Rev. Mr. Harris came as a supply in 1828. Rev. Thomas Rich came in 1829 and continued until

1834. At the parish meeting, December 17, 1835, Rev. Benjamin Sawyer, then of the old Sandy Hill Church, Amesbury, was invited to supply the pulpit, and again in April 4, 1836.

Mr. Sawyer removed to the parsonage in Salisbury November, 1835, and for five or six years preached for the Amesbury Church and the Rocky Hill Society. After 1841 he gave his entire time to the Salisbury Church, and continued his connection here until his death, March 26, 1871, aged eighty-eight years, six months. He prepared for college with Rev. Abijah Wines, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1808. Rev. S. J. Spaulding, in an address on the



ROCKY HILL CHURCH.

centennial occasion of the church in 1885, gives the following tribute of respect to the worthy pastor of Old Rocky Hill, who, for thirty-six years, was connected therewith. He was justly held, by all who knew him, in high esteem:

"Father Sawyer preached his last sermon October 30, 1870, on which [illegible] his mind was as clear and he spoke in the mild, tremulous [illegible] which characterized his delivery, reading his hymns and Scripture without glasses. His public labors were abundant. During his residence in Amesbury and Salisbury he attended eleven hundred funerals and officiated at one hundred and fourteen marriages. He served on the school committee of Salisbury for twenty-one years, and in 1844 and '45 he represented the town in the Legislature. May 15, 1869, he preached [illegible] at Rocky Hill on the fiftieth anniversary of his entrance on the ministry. And on the 15th of January 15, 1869, he celebrated his golden wedding. [illegible] Sawyer was faithful and sympathetic as a pastor; [illegible] a citizen, neighbor and friend, and consistent [illegible] Christian.

[illegible] Mr. Sawyer the supply of the pulpit has been, for the [illegible] Rev. Upham C. Marcy, an aged Baptist clergyman [illegible] who has long resided and respected by all.

[illegible] was the first pastor of the Second Church in Salisbury. [illegible] The morality, [illegible] fidelity."

Rocky Hill Church [illegible] Aug. 1785, or was so far completed, Dec. 7, 1785, that a meeting of the town was held in it.

The sound material of the old house was used in the building of the new house, which is located nearly half a mile south of the old site. On its firm rocky foundation it has rested for more than a century, and is still well preserved, retaining unaltered its quaint, ancient style. A rare relic of y^e^ olden time, within and without, suggestive in its associations to the generations of Salisbury of the early fathers and mothers, and kindred who worshipped here so long ago.

All of the churches of the West Parish, now consisting of five denominations, may be classed as originating in the Rocky Hill Parish.

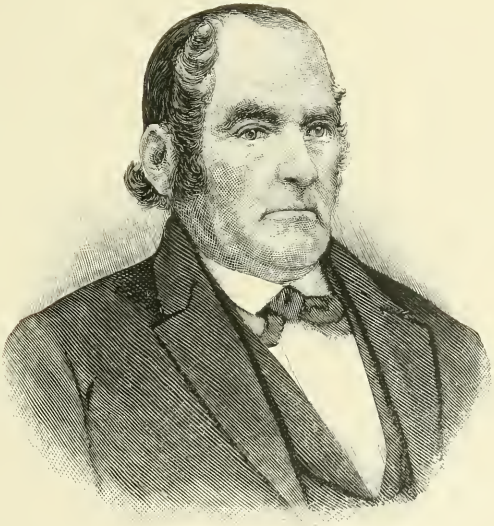
The Christian Baptist Society were the first to separate, consisting at first of but few members, who for a time previous to 1827 held meetings in the "Old Loft," so-called, of Capt. Oliver Osgood's store-house on the wharf at the Point, increasing in numbers in 1827 to such an extent that a meeting-house was needed, and built, in which for years a large and flourishing society met, comprising worshippers of a large portion of the Point, together with members from other sections of Salisbury and Amesbury. It is still occupied by the same denomination, although by not so large a congregation.

About 1835 another society, composed of a portion of the Rocky Hill Society of Salisbury and the Sandy Hill Society of Amesbury, united and built the house on the western extremity of the Point and formed a Congregational Society, with the church name of *The Union Evangelical Society of Amesbury and Salisbury.*

It has increased its membership and influence from year to year by the lessons proclaimed from its pulpit, by the many good and faithful teachers of the way that leads to the better life beyond.

The First Baptist Church of Salisbury was organized as a branch of the Brentwood Baptist Church Sept. 14, 1821. Preachers of the Baptist denomination visited and preached in this vicinity at irregular periods for several years before a society was organized here; but they were often assailed and subjected to the same manner of persecution as followed the Quakers.

The first recognized preacher was Dr. Samuel Shepard. He was born in the East Parish. The prime movers in the establishing of the Baptist Church were Moses Chase, Barnard Currier and David Currier. It is related of Dr. Shepard, that while preaching at a dwelling-house in Salisbury a constable approached with the intention of arresting him. Holding the Bible in his hand and extending it towards them, he remarked, "Here are my credentials." He was not further molested. The "exhorters" of the Baptist faith were a bold and persistent class, and no fear of



Benj. Sawyer.

law or personal violence seems to have turned them aside from "the call to preach the Gospel." Persecution and opposition only tended to increase their numbers, and their church attained a strong and vigorous growth.

The Methodist Society was founded in 1805, and its first pastor was Samuel Norris. The Universalist was incorporated in 1831.

In closing our brief notice of church matters, we may add that the pastors of the first churches of New England were the first teachers of the people. Very few of the early settlers were educated men, and for many years the great majority of the people of the colonies were dependant upon the clergy for both civil and religious instruction. Men who by their natural ability had become famous by successful enterprise, statesmanship and scientific attainments, like Benjamin Franklin, Washington and hosts of others, were, in point of the higher branches of learning, very far below the standard of the minister of the gospel. Our first ministers were thoroughly schooled in the time-honored universities of the mother country—masters of the Greek, Hebrew and Latin tongues, as well as perfected in English lore. Not only in theology, but in all matters of practical import, they were well versed, and from this fact may we not trace the cause of the great respect entertained for them by the people?

SCHOOLS.—The record of the first schoolmaster gives the name of Thomas Bradbury. But there is no record of the building of school-houses in the early history of the town. The schools were held in dwelling-houses, and were moved about from one section of the town to another, that all the children might be accommodated with such instruction as the first four teachers employed might furnish. Although the laws of the province were stringent in regard to the schools, the small towns lacked enthusiasm in this direction, and by indifference and neglect ignored and evaded them, and many towns were "presented" to the Great General Court for negligence in the fulfillment of the requirements of the law.

In 1692 the law required "That every town within the Province having fifty Householders or upwards shall be constantly Provided of a School Master to Teach Children and Youth to Read and Write, and when any such Town or Towns have a Number of One Hundred Families or Householders there shall also be a Grammar School sett up in every such Town, and some Discreet person of good Conversation, well instructed in the Tongues, procured to keep such School. Every such School Master to be suitably Encouraged and Paid by the Inhabitants; and the Selectmen and Inhabitants of such Towns respectfully shall take Effectual Care and make due Provision for the settlement and Maintenance of such School Master or Masters." It appears by an act of the court in 1701, in addition to the above, that in many instances the law had been neglected or evaded, and the court notices the same as follows, viz.: "The observance of which Wholesome and Necessary Law is Shamefully Neglected by the divers Towns, and the Penalty thereof not required, greatly tending to the nourishment of Ignorance and Irreligion, whereof grievous Complaint is made." I will here add that the penalty of 1692 was ten pounds, which in 1701 was made twenty pounds.

It was also enacted that no minister of any town shall be accepted as a school-teacher of such town. It is thus manifest that the clergy had been compelled to serve in the capacity of teachers, and the law came to their rescue, although teachers were to be approved by the ministers.

Salisbury and Amesbury were frequently "presented" as delinquent in obeying the school law. The town at the period of our writing is maintaining the following schools: one at Ring's Island, three at East Salisbury, two at the Point, one at Rocky Hill, one at the Plains, ten at the mills, and the school expenditures are eight thousand dollars per year. The first school-houses erected were built by subscription among the citizens interested in the cause of education. At the Mills such was the case, and the house was erected on an island in what is the yard of the factories of the Hamilton Mills Co. One of the scholars, the late Mrs. Stephen Osgood, when a girl of ten years, fell from a plank leading across the stream in approaching the school-house, and was carried down the current into the flume of one of the saw mills and over the dam. She came out unharmed by the adventure and lived to the age of upwards of eighty years.

Among the prominent teachers the name of Michael Walsh is pre-eminent. He was the author of the first Commercial Arithmetic published in New England. Among his scholars can be classed the names of many prominent sea captains of Newburyport, Salisbury and adjoining towns, who were taught the science of navigation. Among his scholars who were taught at his house at the Point was the late Seth Clark and Hon. Caleb Cushing.

The first school-house at Salisbury Point was erected by subscription in 1793.

SALISBURY POINT.—There are few villages in the Merrimac Valley that embellish the landscape more brilliantly than the village of Salisbury Point. Situated on the bank of the Merrimac, the river sweeps in a graceful curve to Deer Island, and the waters of the Powow flow along its western border, while on the Newbury shore the steep banks are covered with oaks, maples and evergreens. The village very early came to settlement from its location and value as a place for building ships. Its people were attached to their homes, and for patriots on sea and on land have given abundant proofs of their valor.

Upon the issuing of the King's proclamation in 1759, in which he called "upon his faithful and brave subjects of New England to join and co-operate

in arresting by a most vigorous and extensive effort all danger which may threaten North America from any more irruptions of the French," we find quite a number enlisted from the Point. Many of these were shipwrights and were detailed at Lake George to build "batteau"-boats used on the expedition to Quebec. Captain William Swett, of the Point, kept a diary of the expedition, giving the details of every day's march from the Point to Lake George, he being in charge of a company of recruits from this village. It will be of interest to learn who of our ancestors engaged in this expedition, which forever stopped the progress of the French in their designs upon New England.

Attached to Colonel Willard's regiment are the following recorded names:

Colonel Willard's Regiment.

Philip Colby.	Elijah Colby.
John Goodrich.	Geo. Worthen.
Reuben Lowell.	Amos Davis.
Thos. Currier.	Moses Davis.
Benj. Ring.	Robert Gould.
Wm Bagley.	Samuel Bagley.
Ezra Jewell.	Henry Trussell.
Sergt. John Hackett.	Peletiah Hoyt.
Corp. Adonijah Colby.	Benj. Badger.
John Brown.	Wm. Lowell.
Sergt. Theodore Hoyt.	Thos. Hoyt.
Sergt. Gideon Lowell.	Joseph Hadlock.
Joshua Maxfield.	Thos. Gould.
Ezekiel Hackett.	

Colonel Lovell's Regiment.

Gideon Rowell.	Jona. Saunders.
Tufts Thomas.	Danl. Kelley.
Jona. Thomas.	Laban Heath.
Thos. Calley.	Timothy Baker.
Edw. Bevans.	Elenzor Gove.
Jas. Howard.	Stephen Ambler.
Danl. Greenough.	Ralph Cross.
Joseph Giles.	Moses Bailey.
Wm. Prasen.	

Colonel Rodgers' Regiment.

Eleazor Davis.	John Bunton, or Boyeton.
Joseph Jackson.	Elevess Pratt.
Benj Marble.	Dennis Locklen.
Ephraim Robbins.	Archibald Grimes.
John Frost.	John Belknap.
John Wilson.	

"Train."

Wm. Perkins.	Abram Williams.
Caleb Bundy.	Morris McGregg.
Malthia Pettingil.	Joseph Jenkins.
Nathl. Webster.	Jesse Warner.
Solomon Brown.	Benj. Sanborn.
Nathan Parks.	Joseph Davis.
Samps'n Mewett.	

The following items, copied from Mr. Richard Hackett's account-book, may be of interest, showing the price of substitutes for this last call:

"1778, April. Paid Joseph Page (town officer) 20 dollars for half a man, by Captain Trac's order (old currency), £15 6s. 0d.

"April 10, 1779. Paid Jarvis Ring ten dollars for one-quarter of a man, £[illegible] 10s 0d.

"April [illegible] Ezekiel Hackett and Judah enlisted and went off the 11th day of May, 1780.

"[illegible] Hackett enlisted (next year) and went off the 21st day of May, 1[illegible]

The exulting joy resulting from the capture of Quebec, and the close of the war, was of but short duration,—the home government had been at great expense in consequence of the few important features of the Point village, in the patriotic endeavor to throw off the yoke of oppression, and make their country a nation free and independent.

Although there was no company formation for the army, the men of Salisbury did not lack the general spirit and enthusiasm of the time, but ever responded promptly to the call to arms, and other assistance to the cause of liberty; many during the war served in the field, and as many were seafaring men at the time, they found appropriate place in the naval department, rendering valuable and faithful service to the cause.

A large proportion of our people were shipwrights, and it is said that with this class of mechanics commenced the War of American Independence. It is a well-known fact that the ship-builders of New England were ever patriotic and energetic in aid of the cause of liberty. This village had the honor of one of the most skillful naval architects of New England, at the time of the Revolution, and highly distinguished as a builder of ships,—a true patriot, and prominent in every matter of public welfare; as the builder of the first frigate ("Alliance") for the continentals, he will live in the history of the nation.

After the refusal of other noted shipwrights to join him in the undertaking, he fearlessly contracted to build this first frigate for the Continental Congress, and the name of William Hackett, of Salisbury, as the builder of this historic war-ship, will ever be preserved on the records of a great nation. As the correspondence in regard to the building of this ship may be of interest historically, I will here copy a portion of these relics, which have been well preserved by a descendant, together with other valuable papers of y^e^ olden time of historical importance and interest:

Letter from Elias Haskett Derby, of Salem.

"SALEM, Jan. 23, 1776.

"MESSRS. HACKETTS– *Sirs:* At Watertown, I saw a Member of the Continental Congress, who has orders to build two Ships-of-War, one of 700 tons and one of 600 tons, he has sent to Newbury-Port to know the depth of water on the bar. The Newbury members of the Court are very fond of building both. I should think at this time it might be a great service to your place to build one of them,—and as they are not yet agreed for—I told ye person I would see you on the affair—and made no doubt if you would come to Watertown (and if you should lose your labor the expense is not much). From what was said by Mr. Cushing, Currier and myself, I think you would be as likely to get it as Newbury.

"From your friend,

"ELIAS HASKETT DERBY."

The Cushing referred to was Thomas Cushing, of Boston, one of the prominent men of the Revolution, an associate with Samuel and John Adams, Robert Treat Paine in the Continental Congress; afterwards Lieutenant-Governor of Massachusetts, with John Hancock as Governor.

Letter from Thomas Cushing.

"Boston, Jan. 14, 1777.

"Sir:—I am about building a Thirty-six gun Frigate for the Continent. I have not yet received the dimentions, but am directed to engage some suitable persons to fell the Timber. I shall build this ship at Muggridge's Point. I propose that you (if you incline) and Mr. Jonathan Greenleaf, or, if he declines, Mr. Cross, should (if we can agree), build this vessel at the place before mentioned. As it is highly necessary that the timber should be cut immediately, I must desire you, together with Mr. Greenleaf or Mr. Cross, would immediately take measures to engage some suitable persons to sett about felling the Timber suitable for such a Ship; as also the plank; pray consult Mr Greenleaf and sett about it immediately.

"Do not let anybody know that I am about building this vessel. Should be glad to see you or Mr. Greenleaf immediately about this matter.

"I am your Obt. S'v't, Thomas Cushing.

"To Mr. Wm. Hackett."

Second Letter from Thomas Cushing.

"Boston, Jan. 23, 1777.

"Sir:—I desire you would immediately procure good white oak Timber and plank sufficient for building a Thirty-six Gun ship of about eight hundred tons for the use of the Continent, Agreable to what I wrote you the 14th inst.

"Your humble svt, Thomas Cushing.

"To Mr. Wm. Hackett."

It is evident by this last note and other papers that no agreement was made either with Greenleaf or Cross, shipwrights of Newbnryport, as the intended building-place was changed from Newburyport to Hackett's building-place at Salisbury Point, at which place William Hackett and his cousin, John Hackett, built the frigate "Alliance" in the old ship-yard of Daniel Webster, at the western extremity of the village of Salisbury Point,—the first navy-yard of the Continental Congress and the Great Republic.

The Hacketts of Salisbury were scientific shipwrights and excellent mechanics, whose ancestors were quite early engaged in this great industry of New England. They built many war vessels, also superintended the construction of others in other places; (they the vessels), are of historic fame, as are his build of merchant vessels of his time. His vessels were fine models, remarkable as sea-boats, so termed, and proverbial for their sailing qualities. The history of his ships would make an interesting volume of the early shipping, both national and local.

The "Alliance" frigate was said to be the fastest sailing vessel of the navy; her rate of sailing speed was fourteen knots an hour. With old papers of the builder, is the full dimensions of the hull and spars, but unfortunately her lines, or plan, is missing, and may possibly be in the Navy Department at Washington.

How familiar the names of the old Salisbury and Amesbury shipwrights and blacksmiths, as they appear on his old record of accounts! Here is the survey bill of timber and plank, which Cushing requested "sett about cutting immediately."

[*Copy.*]

"Amesbury, 1777.

"To surveying Timber & Plank at several times for ye Continental Ship.

"To surveying 508 tons and 24 ft. Timber	£14	19s.	4d.
To surveying 41,308 feet of Plank	3	2	2
	£18	1s.	6d.

"Rec. of Capt. Hackett eighteen pounds, it being in full payment.

"Winthrop Merrill."

I will give an extract from the iron account,—the iron delivered to each partner of the smiths who did the iron-work of the ship. The blacksmiths were David Blasdell, of Amesbury; Ezra Merrill, of Salisbury (Point); Nathl. Ring, of Salisbury (Point).

[*Copy of heading of bill.*]

"Messrs. Blasdell, Morrill & Ring to Thomas Cushing, Dr., To Iron Delivered at sundry times for 36 Gun Ship, between the dates of April 30, 1777, and July 23d, 1778, at which time the frigate was probably completed."

It appears that each smith kept account of his iron used separate, and was so charged the amount delivered him.

"David Blasdel's acct	21,473 pounds
Ezra Morrill	16,257½ "
Nathl. Ring	13,123½ "
	50,853 pounds.

"Boston, Sept. 16, 1778, Errors excepted.

"For Thomas Cushing, Esq., pr Jno. Odin."

One more relic of the Revolution we feel proud to place on record, showing the patriotism of Salisbury Point in the very earliest period of the struggle for independence, only two days after the memorable battle of Lexington, and their prompt act in aid of the army, on receipt of the news of that first conflict with British troops, in defense of the rights and liberties of the people.

[*Copy.*]

"Salisbury, April 21st, 1775.

"Money Rec[d] of Deacon Daniel Morrill to purchase Bread for the Army	25s.	5d.	
Of Mr. Stephen Merrill	47	6	
Of Capt. Clark	7	6	
Of Dea. John Stevens	18	0	
Of John Hackett	23	5	
Of Ezra Morrill	23	5	
Of Arkelus Adams	9	0	
Of John Webster	45	0	
Of Moses True	50	0	
Of Oliver Osgood	7	0	

(This was sterling or lawful money, which, by old tenor, amounted to £21 0s. 10d. With this, bread was bought, as per document indorsement.)"

There is much incidental and biographical matter historically interesting, but it is the same experience of other towns of New England in the aggregate—hardship, struggle with poverty, sufferings by sickness, and death on the battle-field, and in their homes, which was the common sacrifice of a people determined to be free. We have not the time necessary to give the soul-trying details of this great war, and will here end the brief story attempted by adding that our section of New England, old Essex County towns, in their great endeavor, did nobly for the cause of the nation's independence.

At the close of the war the Point was the business portion of the town, and with peace, prosperity, by industry and enterprise continued with intervals of depression. Our main industry has been ship-building; also considerable has been the commerce in the years past; also the fisheries for years continued profitable, and gave the industries connected therewith prominence; and various industries, the manufacture

of shoes, hats, carriages, etc., have had short seasons, of enterprise and note, but they have not remained a permanent industry here. The only industry holding place since the Revolution is boat-building,—the dory manufacture, commenced by Simeon Lowell, and through his generations, reaching to the present time, consisting of seven firms, manufacturing in the aggregate nearly twenty-five hundred boats annually for the fisheries of New England, British and French provinces. The manufacturing portion of the town, The Mills (so called), has long since taken our place as the enterprising and business portion of the town,

The War of 1812 found our mechanics and seamen ready to fight for "Free trade and sailor's rights," which in the main was a naval warfare, in which our navy made an illustrous record, as also did the private men-of-war—privateers of which there were many, and effectual as a means of shortening if not ending the war.

Since this war, ship-building, for quite a term of years, gave employment to many men of different trades which were necessary in the construction of the ship. The demand for freighting ships of larger tonnage than formerly employed the firm of Kenis-ton & Colby for years in the building of vessels of this class, and the demands of the mackerel fishermen for fishing vessels for quite a number of years was also a source of employment to the mechanics and seamen of the Point. This fishery was for some years a profitable enterprise, and many vessels were built and fitted out by the enterprising men of the village, but for some reason it has been discontinued, as have also many of the former industries that once flourished in this beautiful, crescent-shaped village of the Merrimac—Salisbury Point.

Salisbury Point never entertained the desire to change her name and give up the historic associations which for more than two hundred years clustered in the old homestead of Salisbury. But the Great and General Court, in June 16, 1886, by vote of its members, and by signature of the Governor of Massachusetts, annexed this ancient Salisbury Mills Village and Point, comprising the whole early West Parish of the town, with its industries, and a valuation of upwards of two million dollars, and a population of three thousand people, to the town of Amesbury.

BIRTHS IN SALISBURY.—The following is a record of the births recorded in Salisbury from 1637 up to 1641:

Wyzeman, son of Mr. Tho. Bradbury and Mary, his wife, born 1st of Second Month, 1637.

Hannah, dau. of Jno. Severans and Abigail, born 19th of Seventh Month, 1637.

Joseph, daughter of Mr. Tho Bradbury and Mary, his wife, born 2d of Eighth Month, 1638.

[I think the above were born before their parents removed to Salisbury—1639 (?)—as in 1641 Mr. Bradbury after he became town-clerk.]

Hester, ye daughter of John Sanders and Hester, his wife, born 5th of Seventh Month, 1638.

Abigail, daughter of Willi Allen and Ann, his wife, born 4th of Eleventh Month, 1639.

Jonathan, son of Rich. Singletary and Susana, born 17th of Eleventh Month, 1639.

Mary, daughter of Jno. Dickinson and Mary, born 12th of First Month, 1639.

John, son of Jno. Stevens and Katherine, born 2d of Ninth Month, 1639.

[Land was assigned to Mr. Stevens for a house-lot, which he built upon, and has never been out of the family—still occupied by Samuel Stevens, Esq., as a homestead—short distance south of Cushing's Corner.]

Sarah, daughter of Jarret Hadon and Margerite, born 15th of Eleventh Month, 1639.

Eben, son of John Severanos and Abigail, born 7th of First Month, 1639.

Mary, daughter of Josiah Cobham and Mary, born 25th Sixth Month, 1640.

Thomas, son of Mr. Tho. Bradbury and Mary, his wife, born 28th of Eleventh Month, 1640.

Isaac, son of Anthony Colby and Sussana, born 6th of Fifth Month, 1640.

John, son of Rodger Eastman and Sarah, his wife, born 9th of First Month, 1640.

Elizabeth, daughter of Daniel Lad and Ann, 11th of Tenth Month, 1640.

Thomas, son of Jno. Hoyt and Frances, born 1st of Eleventh Month, 1640.

Gregorie, son of Jno. Hoyt and Frances, born 1st of Eleventh Month, 1640.

[Twins—1st pair.]

Sarah, daughter of Will. Holdred and Isabell, born An. 1640.

Jacob, son of Mr. Wm. Hooke and Elner, born 15th of Seventh Month, 1640.

[The Hook name was once very common; now no male of the name in town.]

Ephraim, son of Mr. Samuel Winsly and Elizabeth, born 15th of Second Month, 1641.

Thomas, son of Tho. Barnard and Hellena, his *wyf*, was born 10th of Third Month, 1641.

John, son of Mr. Jno. Hall and Rebecka, born 18th of First Month, 1641.

Rebecka, daughter of John Bagley and ———, was born 24th of Ninth Month, 1641.

Abigail, daughter of Jno. Severanos and Abigail, born 7th of Eleventh Month, 1641.

Eunice, daughter of Ric. Singletary and Susana, his wife, born 7th of Eleventh Month, 1641.

Mary, daughter of Tho. Hauxworth and Mary, born 22d of Second Month, 1641.

Elizabeth, daughter of Jno. Stevens and Katherine, born 7th of First Month, 1641.

Ann, daughter of Mr. Samuel Dudley and Mary, born 16th of Eighth Month, 1641.

Mary, daughter of Tho. Carter and Mary, born 6th of Eighth Month, 1641.

Mary, daughter of Ralph Blasdale and Elizabeth, born 5th of First Month, 1641.

[Ralph Blasdale was employed to ring the bell on the church and was also keeper of the "Ordinary."]

John, son of Jno. Bayly, born 18th of Third Month, 1643.

Abigail, daughter of Jno. Severanos and Abigail, born 25th of Third Month, 1643.

John, son of Willi. Huntingdon and Joanna, born August, An. 1643.

Thomas, son of Wm. Sargent and Elizabeth, born 11th of Fourth Month, 1643.

Rebecka, daughter of Wm. Holdred and Isabell, born 20th of Fourth Month, 1643.

Martha, daughter of Josia Cobham, and Mary, born 3d of Fifth Month, 1643.

Hannah, daughter of Rich. Currier and Anu, his wife, born 8th of Fifth Month, 1643.

Moses, son of Mr. Wm. Worcester and Sarah, born 10th of Ninth Month, 1643.

Tho., son of Tho. Carter and Mary, born An. 1643.

Hannah, daughter of Wm. Barnes and Rachell, born 25th of Eleventh Month, 1644.

["Barn's Island," so-called to this day, is a woody island, in the Tide meadows, a short distance from Town Creek, owned by Wm. Barnes.]

Hannah, daughter of Geo. Martyn and Hannah, born 1st of Twelfth Month, 1643.

John, son of Luke Heard and Sarah, born 4th of Twelfth Month, 1643.

Sarah, daughter of Robert Pike, born 24th of Twelfth Month, 1641.

Mary, daughter of Robert Pike, born 22d of Twelfth Month, 1643.

Abigail, daughter of Henry Brown and Abigail, born 23d of Twelfth Month, 1643.

Rebecka, daughter of Anthony Colby, 11th of First Month, 1643.

Fourteen births are recorded in 1644. Fifteen births are recorded in 1645.

John, son of John Sanders and Hester, his wife, born 1st of Fifth Month, 1641.

Sarah, daughter of Mr. Wm. Worcester and Sarah, his wife, born 4th of Second Month, 1641.

Mary, daughter of Wm. Holdred and Isabell, his wife, born 22d of Second Month, 1641.

John, son of Mr. Christopher Batt and Ann, born 4th of First Month, 1641.

John, son of John Harrison and Grace, born 26th of Fourth Month, 1642.

Josiah, son of Josiah Cobham and Mary, born 12th of Second Month, 1642.

Nathaniel, son of Henry Brown and Abigail, his wife, 30th of Fourth Month, 1642.

Hannah, daughter of Willi Allin and Ann, born 17th of Fourth Month, 1642.

Daniel, son of Daniel Lad and Ann, born 26th of Seventh Month, 1642.

Timothy, son of Mr. Wm. Worcester and Sarah, born 14th of Third Month, 1642.

John, son of John Dickison and Mary, born 20th of Eighth Month, 1642.

Ruth, daughter of John Sanders and Hester, born 16th of Tenth Month, 1642.

Elizabeth, daughter of John Clough and Jane, 16th of Tenth Month, 1642.

Nathaniel, son of Thomas Barnard and Hellen, born 15th of Eleventh Month, 1642.

Elizabeth, daughter of John Stevens and Kathrine, born 4th of Twelfth Month, 1642.

Elizabeth, daughter of Wm. Partridge and Ann, born 14th of Twelfth Month, 1642.

Paul and Barnabus, sons of Christopher Batt and Ann, his wife, born 18th of Twelfth Month, 1642.

Elizabeth, daughter of John Hoyt and Francis, born 23d of Twelfth Month, 1642.

John, son of John Ilsley and Sarah, born ye First Month, 1642.

John, son of Robert Barnard, was born 2d of First Month, 1643.

Mary, daughter of Mr. Thomas Bradbury and Mary, born 17th of First Month, 1642.

Nathaniel, son of Roger Easman and Sarah, born 18th of Third Month, 1643.

Town Officers.—7th of Ninth Month, 1640, after grants of land were recorded, the following is added: "All ye above said grants were confirmed by Mr. Christopher Batt, Mr. Sam'l Wiusley, Mr. Sam Hall, Tho. Bradbury and Isaac Buswell according to the order of ye Towne provided in that behalf."

25th of First Month, 1641, the same statement is made.

10th of Fifth Month, 1641, Samuel Dudley, John Sanders, Mr. Batt, Mr. Munday and Thomas Macie appointed to set off land as granted.

4th of Fifth Month, 1642, Mr. John Hall, Thomas Bradbury, Thomas Macie and Robert Pike shall make the rate, etc. Sam Dudley, Richard Wells, John Sanders, John Severance and John Harrison to make the rate for Mr. Worcester.

19th of Tenth Month, 1642, Samuel Dudley, Mr. Worster, Mr. Batt, John Sanders, Robert Pike, Josiah Cobbitt and John Severance to have full power until 20th of First Month next ensuing, to order all things concerning the house lots. John Hall, Henry Munday, Thomas Macie and Thomas Bradbury power to make a rate for debts, etc. Also ordered that Mr. William Worster, Samuel Dudley, John Sanders, Samuel Wicsley, Robert Pike, Josiah Cobbitt and John Severance to distribute all lands with power to lay out streets, etc.

26th of Twelfth Month, 1642, Samuel Dudley, John Hall, Mr. Batt, Thomas Macie, John Sanders, Robert Pike and Thomas Bradbury were appointed to order all town affairs.

20th of First Month, 1643, Richard North appointed town cryer.

4th of Third Month, 1643, ordered that seven men—that is to say, Mr. Batt, John Severance, Tho. Macy, Mr. John Hall, Robert Pike, John Sanders and Thomas Bradbury—shall have full power to order all the affairs of the town, excepting viewing out of lands, until the 1st of Sixth Month, next ensuing—they or any five of them.

15th of Eleventh Month, 1643, grants of land confirmed by Christopher Batt, Sam Winsley, Sam Hall, Thomas Bradbury and Isaac Buswell.

19th of Twelfth Month, 1643, Sam Dudley and Sam Winsley chosen deputies for the next General Court at Boston.

18th Second Month, 1644, Josiah Cobham chosen grand juryman for the year ensuing. At the same meeting ordered that Mr. Dudley, Tho. Bradbury, Robert Pike, Mr. Munday and Isaac Buswell shall have full power to order all the affairs of the town, except about lands, until the 1st day of November next.

13th of Third Month, 1644, Richard Dummer, of Newbury, was chosen deputy for the town of Salisbury for the next General Court of election.

6th of Eleventh Month, 1644, Sam Winsley, John Severance and John Elsley shall lay out the highway that goeth by Goodman Moyce's and to the comon towards the Little River, to be laid five rods broad where may be most commodious for the town's use.

20th of Eleventh Month, 1644, at a meeting of the freemen, it was ordered that these five men, viz.: Mr. Sam Winsley, John Sanders, John Ralfe, John Stevens and John Elsley, shall have power to dispose of all the town's business, excepting giving of lands, until the 1st day of ye Third Month.

8th of Second Month, 1645, Jarret Hadden was chosen grand juryman for the year ensuing.

1st of Third Month, 1645, Sam Winsley was chosen deputy for ye court of election.

2d of Eleventh Month, 1645, the "Clarke" allowed a penny for every grant of land recorded.

27th of Eleventh Month, 1645, the "5" men elected were Sam Dudley, Christopher Batt, Henry Munday, Edmund French and John Eaton.

14th of Second Month, 1646, John Eaton chosen grand juryman

27th of Eleventh Month, 1646, "7" men chosen for one year—Samuel Dudley, Lieut. Pike, Tho. Bradbury, Ralfe Blesdale, Tho. Macy, Sargt. Chalice and Mr. Sam Winsley.

2d of Twelfth Month, 1647, the "5" men elected were Mr. Batt, Tho. Bradbury, Edward French, Isaac Buswell and Richard Wells.

10th of Second Month, 1648, Richard Munday was added to the townsmen for rating estates according to court order.

15th of Sixth Month, 1648, John Stevens appointed tax collector by the "7" men.

29th of Eighth Month, 1648, Sam Dudley, Christopher Batt, Tho. Bradbury, Tho. Macy and Henry Ambross chosen to order prudential affairs.

18th of Tenth Month, 1648, Mr. Munday, Henry Ambrose, John Severance, John Stevens and Tho. Macy chosen grand jurymen.

11th of First Month, 1649, Lieut. Pike, Isaac Buswell, Richard Wells, Edward French and Josiah Cobham chosen jurors for county court to be holden at Salisbury.

2d of Ninth Month, 1649, Sam Hall, Geo. Goldwyer, Richard North, Ant. Coleby and Tho. Barnett chosen to serve upon the grand jury.

7th of Eleventh Month, 1649, prudential men elected were Sam Hall, Richard Wells, Edward French, Lieut. Pike and Isaac Buswell.

20th of Eleventh Month, 1650, prudential men were Tho. Bradbury, Josiah Cobham, John Severance, Geo. Goldwyer and Jno. Clough.

16th of Second Month, 1651, Tho. Bradbury was chosen deputy for the year ensuing.

19th of Eleventh Month, 1651, prudential men were Edward French, Isaac Buswell, Richard Wells, Ant. Colby and Phillip Challice. Then John Stevens added in room of Phillip Challice and Willi Partridg in room of Richard Wells. Tho. Bradbury, town clerk.

1st of Twelfth Month, 1652, prudential men, Thos. Bradbury, Thos. Macy, John Ilsley, Andrew Greely and John Gyll.

13th of Twelfth Month, 1654, Samuel Winsley, Samuel Hall, Richard Wells, John Severance and John Clough chosen prudential men.

29th of Eleventh Month, 1654, Thos. Bradbury was chosen moderator; Samuel Hall, John Severance, Jos. Cobham, George Goldwyer and John Clough elected prudential men.

11th of Twelfth Month, 1655, Robert Pike, Edward French, Isaac Buswell, Andrew Greely and Philip Wollidg, prudential men.

1747, March 10th, town clerk, Caleb Cushing, Jr.; selectmen, Timothy Townsend, Reuben Morrill and Winthrop True.

1747, March 8th, town clerk, Caleb Cushing Jr ; selectmen, Elias Pike, Philip Rowell, Samuel Smith, John Buswell and Nathaniel Fitts.

1748-49. March 14th, Caleb Cushing elected town clerk ; selectmen, Captain Pike, Moses Morrill, Jr., and Philip Rowell.

1749, March 8th, town clerk, Caleb Cushing ; selectmen, Captain Pike, Jonathan Stevens, Ebenezer Morrill, Philip Rowell and Winthrop True.

1750, March 12th, town clerk, Caleb Cushing ; selectmen, Caleb Cushing, Moses Morrill, Jr, and Philip Rowell.

1752, March 10th, town clerk, Caleb Cushing ; selectmen, Captain Elias Pike, Philip Rowell, Richard Hackitt, Abraham Morrill and Benjamin Morrill.

1753, March 13th, town clerk, Caleb Cushing ; selectmen, Benjamin Morrill, Henry Eaton and Richard Hackitt.

1754, March 12th Caleb Cushing was chosen town clerk ; selectmen, Benjamin Morrill, Richard Hackitt and Henry Eaton.

1754, May 21st, Caleb Cushing was chosen representative to General Court.

1756, March 11th, Winthrop True, town clerk ; for selectmen, Richard Hackitt, Henry Eaton and John Eastman.

1756, May 19th, for representative, Abraham Morrill.

1756, March 9th, town clerk, Winthrop True ; selectmen, Richard Hackitt, John Estman and Henry Eaton. May 18th, Caleb Cushing elected representative.

1757, March 8th, town clerk, Winthrop True ; selectmen, John Eastman, Winthrop True and Stephen Merrill. May 18th, representative, Caleb Cushing.

1758, March, town clerk, Winthrop True ; selectmen, Henry Eaton, Winthrop True and Richard Hackitt. May 23d, representative, Caleb Cushing.

1759, March, town clerk, Winthrop True ; selectmen, Winthrop True, Henry Eaton and Richard Hackitt. May 22d, representative, Caleb Cushing.

1760, March 11th, town clerk, Winthrop True ; selectmen, Stephen Merrill, Richard Hackitt and Henry Eaton. May 14th, representative, Caleb Cushing.

1761, March 10th, town clerk, Winthrop True ; selectmen, Winthrop True, Lieutenant Moses Pike and John Eastman. May 19th, representative, Caleb Cushing.

1762. Winthrop True, town clerk ; Winthrop True, Moses Pike and Wm. Brown, selectmen ; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1763. Winthrop True, town clerk ; Philip Rowell, Moses Pike and Winthrop True, selectmen ; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1764. Winthrop True, town clerk ; Winthrop True, Philip Rowell and Moses Pike, selectmen ; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1765. Winthrop True, town clerk ; Winthrop True, Moses Pike and Wm. Brown, selectmen ; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1766. Winthrop True, town clerk ; Winthrop True, Moses Pike and Wm. Brown, selectmen ; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1767. Winthrop True, town clerk ; Daniel Morrill, Daniel Fitts and Winthrop True, selectmen ; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1768. Winthrop True, town clerk ; Winthrop True, Daniel Fitts and Deacon Daniel Morrill, selectmen ; Capt. Nathaniel Currier, representative.

1769. Winthrop True, town clerk ; Deacon Daniel Morrill, Lemuel Stevens and Daniel Moody, selectmen ; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1770. Winthrop True, town clerk ; Winthrop True, John Pike, Jr., and Daniel Morrill, selectmen ; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1771. Winthrop True, town clerk ; Henry Morrill, Daniel Moody and Lemuel Stevens, selectmen ; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1772. Winthrop True, town clerk ; Henry Eaton, Aaron Clough, Jr., and Henry Morrill, selectmen ; Samuel Smith, representative.

1773. Winthrop True, town clerk ; Daniel Moody, Aaron Clough, Jr., and Henry Morrill selectmen ; Samuel Smith, representative.

1774. Winthrop True, town clerk ; Daniel Moody, Henry Morrill and Aaron Clough, Jr , selectmen ; Samuel Smith, representative.

1775. Winthrop True, town clerk ; Henry Morrill, Daniel Moody and Aaron Clough, Jr., selectmen ; Nathaniel Currier, representative.

1776. Benjamin Evans, town clerk ; Aaron Clough, Jr., Henry Morrill and Daniel Moody, selectmen ; Nathaniel Currier, representative.

1777. Daniel Morrill, town clerk ; Daniel Moody, Dr. Samuel Nye and Aaron Clough, Jr , selectmen ; Joseph Page, representative.

1778. Daniel Morrill, town clerk ; Joseph Fitts, Benj. Evans and Daniel Moody, selectmen ; Joseph Page, representative.

1779. Daniel Morrill, town clerk ; Daniel Morrill, Benj Evans and Daniel Moody, selectmen ; Joseph Page representative.

1780. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Daniel Moody, Benj. Evans and Daniel Morrill, selectmen ; Joseph Page, representative.

1781. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Daniel Moody, Benj. Evans and Daniel Morrill, selectmen ; Ezekiel Evans, representative.

1782 Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Joseph Page, Daniel Moody and Daniel Morrill, selectmen ; Benj. Evans, representative.

1783. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Daniel Moody, Joseph Page and Ezekiel Morrill, selectmeo ; Benj. Evans, representative.

1784. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Daniel Moody, Ezekiel Morrill and Aaron Clough, selectmen ; Benj. Evans, representative.

1785. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Joseph Fitts, Belcher Dole and Moses Rowell, selectmen ; Joseph Page, representative.

1786 Samuel Nye, town clerk ; Joseph Fitts, Belcher Dols and Moses Rowell, selectmen ; Joseph March, representative.

1787. Samuel Nye, town clerk ; Daniel Moody, Moses True and Moses Rowell, selectmen ; Joseph March, representative.

1788. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Daniel Moody, Moses True and Moses Rowell, selectmen ; Joseph March, representative.

1789. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Daniel Moody, Moses True and Ezekiel Morrill, selectmen ; Ezekiel Morrill, representative.

1790. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Daniel Moody, Moses True and Moses Rowell, selectmen ; Joseph Page, representative.

1791. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Henry Moody, Ezekiel Evans and Moses Rowell, selectmen ; Joseph Page, representative.

1792. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Joseph Fitts, Moses True and Moses Rowell, selectmen ; Joseph Page (died this year), representative.

1793. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Joseph Fitts, Moses True and Moses Rowell, selectmen ; Jacob Brown, representative.

1794. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Aaron Clough, Joseph Fitts and Jacob Brown, selectmen ; Jacob Brown, representative.

1795. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Joseph Fitts, Aaron Clough and Joshua Follansbee, selectmen ; Joshua Follansbee, representative.

1796. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Joseph Fitts, Samuel Nye and Joshua Follansbee, selectmen ; Joshua Follansbee, representative.

1797. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Joseph Fitts, Samuel Nye and Joshua Follansbee, selectmen ; Joshua Follansbee, representative.

1798. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Josiah French, Samuel Nye and Joshua Follansbee, selectmen ; Joshua Follansbee, representative.

1799. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Josiah French, Samuel Nye and Jacob Brown, selectmen ; Joshua Follansbee, representative.

1800. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Josiah French, Samuel Nye and Jacob Brown, selectmen ; Samuel March, representative.

1801. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Josiah French, Samuel Nye and Jacob Brown, selectmen ; Samuel March, representative.

1802. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Joseph Fitts, Capt. Enoch Collins and Lieut. Joshua Follansbee, selectmen ; Jacob Brown, representative.

1803. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Jonathan Morrill, Samuel Nye and Josiah French, selectmen ; Jonathan Webster, representative.

1804. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Josiah French, Samuel Nye and John Morrill, selectmen ; Jonathan Webster, representative.

1805. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Josiah French, Samuel Nye and John Morrill, selectmen ; Jonathan Webster, representative.

1806. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Josiah French, Samuel Nye and John Morrill, selectmen ; Jonathan Morrill, representative.

1807. Benj. Evans, town clerk ; Jabez True, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen ; Jonathan Morrill and Jonathan Webster, representatives.

1808. Benj. Evans and John Flanders, town clerks ; Jabez True, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen ; representative, no record.

1809. John Flanders, town clerk ; Jabez True, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen ; Col. Jonathan Smith, representative.

1810. Elijah Wadleigh, town clerk ; Jabez True, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen ; Amos Morrill, representative.

1811. Elijah Wadleigh, town clerk ; Jabez True, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen ; Amos Morrill, representative.

1812. Edward Dorr, town clerk ; Jabez True, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen ; Samuel March and Jonathan Smith, representatives.

1813. Edward Dorr, town clerk ; Moses Deal, Jr., Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen ; Samuel March and Jonathan Smith, representatives.

1814. Edward Dorr, town clerk ; Moses Deal, Jr , Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen ; Samuel March, representative.

1815. Joseph Nye, town clerk ; Samuel March, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen ; Samuel March, representative.

1816. Joseph Nye, town clerk ; Samuel March, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen ; Ephraim Morrill, representative.

1817. Joseph Nye, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Ephraim Morrill, representative.

1818. Joseph Nye, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Samuel March, representative.

1819. Joseph Nye, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Ephraim Morrill, representative.

1820. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Ephraim Morrill, representative.

1821. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Benj. Evans and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Samuel March, representative.

1822. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Benj. Evans and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Ephraim Morrill, representative.

1823. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Benj. Evans and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Ephraim Morrill, representative.

1824. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Daniel Webster and Amos Morrill, selectmen; none voted for.

1825. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Benj. Evans and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Samuel March, representative.

1826. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Joseph Wadleigh and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Dudley Evans, representative.

1827. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Capt. Samuel Eaton, Dudley Evans and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Dudley Evans, representative.

1828. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, Azor O. Webster and Dudley Evans, selectmen; representative, none voted for.

1829. John Colby, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, Azor O. Webster and Elias French, selectmen; Daniel Blaisdell and Benj. W. Lowell, representatives.

1830. John Colby, town clerk; Elias French, Azor O. Webster and Henry M. Brown, selectmen; representatives, none voted for.

1831. John Colby, town clerk; Reuben Evans, Dudley Evans and Samuel Eaton, selectmen; Reuben Evans, John Colby and Cyrus Dearborn, representatives.

1832. John Colby, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Wm. O. Mills and Henry M. Brown, selectmen; Reuben Evans, Benj. Bachelor and Elias French, representatives.

1833. John Colby, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Wm. O. Mills and Henry M. Brown, selectmen; Jacob Morrill, Benj. Bachelor and Elias French, representatives.

1834. John Colby, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, Azor O. Webster and Moses True, selectmen; Henry M. Brown, representative.

1835. John Colby, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, Azor O. Webster and Moses True, selectmen; Henry M. Brown, John Morrill and True G. Graves, representatives.

1836. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, Enoch Fowler and Moses True, selectmen; Augier M. Morrill, Enoch Fowler and True G. Graves, representatives.

1837. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, Enoch Fowler and Samuel Eaton, selectmen; Nathaniel George, representative.

1838. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Josiah B. Gale, Robert Fowler, Jr., and Wm. M. Pettengill, selectmen; Nathaniel George and John Morrill, representatives.

1839. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, Robert Fowler, Jr., and Wm. M. Pettengill, selectmen; Henry M. Brown, representative.

1840. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, John Evans and Wm. M. Pettengill, selectmen; John Evans, representative.

1841. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Timothy P. Morrill, John Evans and Wm. M. Pettengill, selectmen; representative, none voted for.

1842. Azor O Webster, town clerk; Otis Boardman, Dudley Evans and Elias French, selectmen; Aaron Morrill, representative.

1843. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Reuben Evans, Wm. H. Bagley and Elias French, selectmen; representative, none chosen.

1844. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Timothy P. Morrill, John Morrill (3d) and Elias French, selectmen; Benj. Sawyer, representative.

1845. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Timothy P. Morrill, Wm. H. Bagley and Samuel Stevens, selectmen; Benj. Sawyer, representative.

1846. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Timothy P. Morrill, Wm. H. Bagley and Samuel Stevens, selectmen; representative, no choice.

1847. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Timothy P. Morrill, Wm. H. Bagley and Israel Morrill, selectmen; Joshua M. Pike, Jr., representative.

1848. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Daniel Webster, Jr., and Samuel Stevens, selectmen; Joshua M. Pike, Jr., representative.

1849. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Daniel Webster and Samuel Stevens, selectmen; no choice for representative.

92½

1850. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Daniel Webster and Samuel Stevens, selectmen; John Q. Evans, representative.

1851. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Daniel Webster and Cyrus Dearborn, Jr., selectmen; no choice for representative.

1852. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Daniel Webster and Cyrus Dearborn, Jr., selectmen; Timothy P. Morrill, representative.

1853. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Daniel Webster and Cyrus Dearborn, Jr., selectmen; Joseph S. Colby, representative.

1854. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Charles O. Stearns and Cyrus Dearborn, Jr., selectmen; Robert Rich, representative.

1855. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Ebenezer Tucker, Wm. H. Bagley and Cyrus Dearborn, Jr., selectmen; Wm. H. Bagley, representative.

1856. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Reuben Evans, Wm. H. Bagley and Cyrus Dearborn, Jr., selectmen; Wm. H. B. Currier, representative.

1857. Azor A. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, John Q. Evans and Moses T. Cilley, selectmen; Robert W. Patten and Benj. Evans, representatives, District No. 1.

1858. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Charles O. Stearns and Moses T. Cilley, selectmen; Winthrop O. Evans, Newburyport, and E. M. Morse, Amesbury, representatives.

1859. Azor O. Webster, Jr., town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Charles O. Stearns and John True, selectmen; E. G. Colby and T. S. Robinson, representatives.

1860. Azor O. Webster, Jr., town clerk; T. J. Clark, B. E. Fifield and John True, selectmen.

1861. Azor O. Webster, Jr., town clerk; T. J. Clark, B. E. Fifield and John True, selectmen.

1862. Azor O. Webster, Jr., town clerk; T. J. Clark, B. E. Fifield and Wm. S. Pettengill, selectmen.

1863. Azor O. Webster, Jr., town clerk; T. J. Clark, B. E. Fifield and Moses K. Pike, selectmen.

1864. Azor O. Webster, Jr., town clerk; T. J. Clark, B. E. Fifield and Wm. S. Pettengill, selectmen.

1865. Azor O. Webster, Jr., town clerk; T. J. Clark, B. E. Fifield and Streeter Evans, selectmen.

1866 to 1874. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; W. H. B. Currier, B. E. Fifield and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.

1875. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; J. N. Clark, B. E. Fifield and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.

1876. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; J. N. Clark, B. E. Fifield and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.

1877. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; W. H. B. Currier, Moses G. Wilson and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.

1878. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; W. H. B. Currier, John W. Sanborn and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.

1879. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; W. H. B. Currier, J. W. Sanborn and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.

1880. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; W. H. B. Currier, John Sanborn and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.

1881. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; W. H. B. Currier, W. H. Blaisdel and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.

1882. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; Daniel Webster, George H. Morrill and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.

1883. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; Daniel Webster, George H. Morrill and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.

1884. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; Daniel Webster, George H. Morrill and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.

1885. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; Daniel Webster, George H. Morrill and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.

1886. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; W. H. B. Currier, John F. Currier and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.

SALISBURY SOLDIERS IN THE REBELLION.—The town preserved its ancient historic record by arming and equipping soldiers to preserve us a nation, as the following list will show:

John F. Goodwin, private, 28th Mass. Regt.
James Goodwin, Jr., private, 28th Mass. Regt.; died of wounds.
Robert Burnett, Jr., corporal, 40th N. Y. Regt.; killed in battle.
Dudley E. Gale, private, 3d Cav.; served full term, three years.
George H. Morrill, captain, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.
John B. Mansfield, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; died of disease.
Nathaniel Fifield, corporal, 40th N. Y. Regt.
Jonathan E. Blaisdell, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted.

William N. Boyt, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; served three years.
John S. Follart, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted.
Abner Guild, private, 40th N. Y. Regt; served three years.
Edwin A. Moulton, corporal, 17th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted.
George A. Campbell, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted 4th Cav.; disch., disability; died July 1864.
Cyrus E. Kendrick, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch.; re-enlisted 2d H. A.
John Thorn, corporal, 24th Mass. Regt.; disch. and re-enlisted.
George H. Lundburg, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; served three years.
Joseph Colby, private, 12th Mass. Regt.; was in four rebel prisons; served three years.
Thomas Hession, private, 28th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.
Charles L. Ramsdell, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability; also 2d Mass. H. A.
George O. Morrill, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch., disability.
J. Plummer Cammett, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch., disability.
William Shaw, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch.; re-enlisted 2d H. A.
John B. Allen, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; served three years.
John C. Morrill, Lugler, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch. and re-enlisted.
Stephen C. Pearson, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; died Andersonville.
Asa E. Perkins, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; died of disease.
Albert D. Bailey, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; served three years.
Simon F. Blake, 1st sergt., 17th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.
William O. Coffin, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability, first time; re-enlisted 2d H. A.; died of disease.
George P. True, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch., disability.
M. Webster Osgood, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; served three years.
James O. Carruthers, 5th sergt., 28th Mass. Regt.; pro. to 1st sergt. and lieut.
Timothy Osgood, private, 10th Illinois Regt.
Andrew J. Wadleigh, flag sergt., 40th N. Y. Regt.; served three years.
Henry K. Wadleigh, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; served three years.
Timothy Hession, private, 24th Mass. Regt.
Henry M. Brown, 1st sergt., 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch., disability.
John J. Brown, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; died of disease.
John B. Morrill, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch., disability.
Thomas B. Willey, corporal, 22d Mass. Regt.; disch. and re-enlisted.
Jeremiah A. Greely, captain, 17th Mass. Regt. and 2d H. A.; captain Co. M, 2d H. A.
Theophilus Sanborn, corporal, 17th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted; died in rebel prison.
James M. Allen, 2d sergt., 22d Mass. Regt.; disch. and re-enlisted in 32d Regt.
John Cowen, sergt., 17th Mass. Regt.; disch. and re-enlisted.
Charles E. Flanders, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch. and re-enlisted.
Joseph A. Collins, captain's orderly, 24th Mass. Regt.; served three years.
Enoch Collins, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.
John Blasdell, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; disch.; re-enlisted; died of disease.
Charles T. Moulton, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; died of disease.
George W. Merrill, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; disch. disability.
Davis French, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; died of disease.
George W. Carr, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch.; re-enlisted; wounded; died of disease.
George A. Morrill, corporal, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch., disability.
Simon H. Davenport, corporal, 40th N. Y. Regt.; wounded and disch.; lost left arm by gun-shot.
George H. Barnard, private, 24th Mass. Regt.
Enoch S. Dow, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch. and re-enlisted, and died of wounds November, 1864.
George W. Dow, private, 2d N. H. Regt; disch., disability.
William H. Knight, sergt., 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch., disability.
William H. Paisley, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; died Andersonville.
Alonzo Falls, corporal, 23d Mass. Regt.; disch. and re-enlisted.
William B. Hammond, private, 24th Mass. Regt.
Charles E. Osgood, sergt., 14th Mass. Regt.; disch. by reason of promotion, wounded; prisoner in Libby Prison; paroled and disch.
Warren F. Osgood, corporal, 15th Mass. Regt.; wounded; trans. to Invalid Corps and disch. at exp. of service.
Manfield P. Hatch, musician, 20th Mass. Regt.
Lewis L. Dow, corporal, 3d N. H. Regt.; disch. exp. of service; now at home.
Napoleon T. D. Shehan, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.
Jabez S. Jones, private, 9th N. H. Regt.; re-enlisted 59th Mass. Regt.; wounded and taken prisoner; died in prison.
George W. Morrill, private, 11th Mass. Regt.
William Nicholson, private, 28th Mass. Regt.
C. A. J. Appleton, private, 1st Lt. Batt.
Joseph Carr, private, 9th Mass. Regt.
David E. Blackstock, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; re-enlisted and disch.; three years; wounded in battle.
John Moundorf, private, 40th Mass. Regt.
Patrick Higgin, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.
Jacob C. Bagley, sergt., 40th Mass. Regt.; died of wounds.
Newell Frost, private, 40th Mass. Regt; died of disease in S. C.
Charles R. Colby, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.
James H. Campbell, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.
Charles Lehman, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.
Moses N. Bartlett, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.
James Kelly, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.
George H. Evans, orderly, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Timothy Driscoll, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.
John N. Pike, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.
William Schonhutte, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; now at home.
Frederic G. Storey, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
William H. Dow, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; died of disease in S. C.
George E. Flanders, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Charles H. Perry, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch. June, 1865, exp. of service; wounded May 16, 1864.
Duncan Johnston, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; died in hospital.
Walter W. Flanders, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service; wounded.
Thomas Exley, private, 40th Mass. Regt..
John C. Berry, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Felix D. Perry, 2d sergt., 32d Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Francis B. Colby, private, 14th Mass. Regt.; died in rebel prison.
James Dolan, private, 17th Mass. Regt.
Dennis Lynskey, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch, disability.
Job Booth, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; died of wounds.
Joseph L. Smiley, private, 32d Mass. Regt.; died of wounds.
Timothy Donavan, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
J. Russell Wells, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service; broke left arm.
James Barry, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch,, disability.
John Davison, private, 14th Mass. Regt.
Frederick E. Lowell, sergt., 2d lieut., 1st lieut., 40th Mass. Regt. disch., disability.
Nathaniel O. Swett, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; died of wounds.
Francis E. Cammett, corporal, 33d Mass. Regt.; killed in battle.
Charles A. West, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Charles T. Rich, private, 2d Mass. Cav. and 17th Mass. Regt.; died in rebel prison.
Bridford Gillmore, private, 14th Mass. Regt.; died of disease at New Orleans, La.
Henry L. Dowdell, private, 14th Mass. Regt.
Newell E. Lamprey, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
George Lawrence, private.
George Herbert, private.
William Walton, private.
Richard Lewis, private.
W. H. Mears, private.
Hugh Arthur, private, 53d Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
William S. Pettengill, captain, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service; nine months.
Albert Morrill, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
David B. Bartlett, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Batchelder Stevens, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Thomas Lamb, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service; also 2d Mass. H. A.
William V. Jones, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
David T. Clark, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted 2d Mass. H. A. and killed in battle.
William H. Page, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Joseph R. Stevenson, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.

William H. Corliss, corporal and sergeant, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
S. Foster Woodman, corporal and sergeant, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Joseph W. Collins, private, 48th Mass. Regt; disch., exp. of service.
Emery M. Lumprey, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Elbridge A. Healey, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
John D. Colby, drummer, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
George E. Batchelder, corporal, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Warren P. Collins, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; died of fever.
Calvin E. Tibbetts, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Charles W. Hunt, corporal, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch, exp. of service.
William H. Giddings, corporal, 48th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted 2d Mass. Regt., Co. I.
John D. Pickering, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted; died of sunstroke.
Edward L. Shaw, sergt., 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
William B. Moore, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Jacob E. True, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Jonathan K. Tilton, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Joseph M. Eaton, 4th sergt., 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Perkins Merrill, corporal, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
William M. Greenleaf, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service; re-enlisted in 2d H. A.
Gardner I. Moody, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Otis G. Pike, corporal, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Benjamin G. Hinkson, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Isaiah F. Pike, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service; re-enlisted in 1st Batt. H. A.
Elmund E. Barnard, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; killed in battle.
James A. Emery, 1st. lieut., 48th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted in 2d Mass. Regt. H. A., as lieut., and disch., exp. of service.
Jacob Bartlett, private, 11th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
John G. Colby, private, 2d Mass. H. A.; died at Norfolk, Va., small-pox.
William H. Corliss, private, 2d Mass. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.
Orrin T. Haywood, private 2d Mass. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.
John N. Quimby, private, 2d Mass. H. A.; disch., disability.
John Whipple, private 2d Mass. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.
Robert B. George, private, 2d Mass, H. A.; disch., exp. of service.
John Stoker, private, 2d Mass. H. A.
Henry Trodd, private, 2d Mass. H. A.; killed in battle.
Hiram Pike, private, 10th Battery; disch., exp. of service.
Hugh Gillis, private, 2d H. A.
John Love, private, 2d H. A.
Truman Merrill, private, 2d Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
Henry Randall, private, 7th Battery; disch., exp. of service.
Justin Smith, private, 58th Mass. Regt.
Wallace W. Flanders, private, 59th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
George W. Christian, private, 59th Mass. Regt.; died of wounds.
John Page, private, 2d Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.
John G. Morrill, private, 49th N. Y. Regt.; paroled from Andersonville Prison.
John Williams (colored), private, 5th Cav.
James Henshaw, private, 2d Inf.
Charles O. Berrey, private, 2d Inf.
James B. Rollins, private, 2d Inf.
William Kelly, private, 2d Inf.
John Burgen, private, 2d Inf.
Charles Campbell, private, 2d Inf.
Frederick Gilbert, private, 2d Inf.
William Mullen, private, 2d Inf.
William Reiss, private, 2d Inf.
Adolph Ritter, private, 2d Inf.
Joseph Schmidt, private, 2d Inf.
Frederick F. Huggins, private, 1st Batt.
James Marlow, private 2d Inf.
Stephen Roley, private, 2d Inf.
James Ross, private, 15th Mass. Regt.
James Stevens, private, 2d Inf.
John Allen, private, 2d Inf.
James Smith, private, 2d Cav.
John R. Horsey, private, 33d Mass. Regt.
John Morrill, private, 2d Cav.
John Keeler, private, 33d Inf.
John Stevenson, private, 33d Inf.
Stephen H. Brown, private, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.
Alvah Brown, private, 1st H. A.; disch., exp. of service.
Harrison Brown, musician, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Harvey B. Sanboro, musician, 1st Batt., H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Frederick Schooff, musician, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
John L. Colby, private, 2d H. A.; wounded and disch. exp. of service.
Wm. H. Tibbetts, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Andrew H. Locke, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Stephen H. Andrews, private, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Moses F. Dow, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Wm. H. Currier, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Chas. L. Tucker, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
John C. Tucker, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Frank P. Morrill, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Chas. T. Worthen, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Geo. Tate, private, 4th H. A.; disch exp. of service.
Joseph Carr, private, 4th H. A.; died of wounds.
William E. Carleton, private, 4th H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Smith Titcomb, private, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Leonard N. Morrill, private, 20th Unattached; disch. exp. of service.
John McGinley, private, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Michael J. O'Neal, private, 61st Mass. Regt.
Michael R. Glispeo, private, 61st Mass. Regt.
Edward W. Duncan, private, 61st Mass. Regt.
Patrick Peation, private, 2d Mass. Regt.
Patrick Powers, private, 4th Cav.
Jeremiah Lynch, private, 3d H. A.
Charles H. Fogg, private, 27th Unat. Inf.; disch. exp. of service.
Geo. T. Manson, corporal, 1st Regt. Frontier Cav.; disch. exp. of service.
Charles W. Dow, private, 1st Frontier Cav.; disch. exp. of service.
Benjamin S. Clough, private, 1st Frontier Cav.; disch. exp. of service.
Geo. W. Bragdon, private, 1st Frontier Cav.; disch, exp. of service.
Edwin I. Merrill, private, 1st Frontier Cav.; disch. exp. of service.
Amos P. Austin, private, 1st Frontier Cav.; disch. exp. of service.
John Brooks, private; disch. exp. of service.
James H. Beede, private; disch. exp. of service.
Geo. N. Roberts, private; disch. exp. of service.
Albert B. Feltch, private; disch. exp. of service.
Albert W. Patten, private; disch. exp. of service.
Henry K. Wadleigh, private, Hancock Corps; disch. exp. of service.
Charles O. Roberts, private, 17th Mass. Regt.
Thomas Jones, private, 19th Mass. Regt.
John Shean, private, 31st Mass. Regt.
James Martin, private.
Thomas McDonald, private.
William Wade, private.
Amasa Pike, private, 48th Mass. Regt. and 1st Batt. H. A.; disch. exp of service.
Levi J. Merrill, private, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Francis A. Jackman, private, 48th Mass. Regt. and 1st Batt. H. A.; disch. exp, of service.
Charles Moody, private 1st Batt. H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Jacob B. Collins, private, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Alvin Lewis, private, 48th Mass. Regt. and 1st Batt. H. A.; disch. for disability.
John McCarty, private.
Benjamin F. Evans, private, 4th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Robinson N. Schoff, captain, 48th Mass. Regt disch. exp. of service.
Alphonso D. Elkins, private, 2d H. A. and 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
John C. Jones, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Edwin T. Pike, orderly sergeant, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Aaron Pike, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Jonathan B. Currier, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.

Wm. Moody, Jr., private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Samuel Eaton, private, 4th Mass. Regt; disch. exp. of service.
Samuel Stevens, Jr., sergeant, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Geo. K. Pike, corporal, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
John B. Pike, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Joseph S. Pike, wagoner, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Elias P. Bartlett, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Enoch M. Collins, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Horace Ruddock, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Samuel Coffin, 2d lieutenant, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
John W. Coffin, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; died of disease.
Wm. H. H. Pike, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Charles T. Phillips, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Josiah F. Brown, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted and discharged.
John Dow, Jr., private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Aaron M. Dow, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Joseph N. Dow, drummer, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Geo. A. Curtis, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Samuel L. Morrill, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
Stephen Dow, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
James Mullaway, private; killed in battle.
Wm. Schmidt, private.
John O. Donnell, private.
Wm. Campbell, private.
Hugh Galle, private.
Abraham Wright, private; drafted; sent to Long Island.
Wm. H. H. Bradbury, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Joshua W. Eaton, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Zadoc H. Smith, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
David Page, private, 1st H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Gustavus H. Eaton, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Richard L. Currier, private, 2d H. A.; disc. exp. of service.
Jesse W. Shaw, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.
Thomas Welch, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.

Salisbury in the Navy during the Rebellion.

Merrill George, on "Sumter" and "Colorado."
James Kennisch, ship "Ino." He was in engagement that captured Mason and Slidell. Served one year and was discharged.
Simeon Lowell, on "Kittatinny;" drowned off Texas.
Howard F. Williams, on U. S. "Sabine," "Blockader" and "Niagara;" disch. exp. of service.
Herbert W. George, on "San Jacinto."
Oliver Lamprey, on gunboat "Cambridge;" coal heaver, promoted to fireman.
John S. Pettengill, on bark "Young Rover;" disch. exp. of term, which was 1 year.
Herbert K. Pike, on receiving ship "Ohio;" died of fever.
Henry P. Wells.
Edward Condou, on "Vincennes."
David Lamb, on "Ohio" and "Sabine;" disch. for disability.
James A. Rowell, on "Ohio" and "Sabine."
Daniel Page, on "Ohio" and "Sabine;" disch. exp. of service.
Geo. W. Colby, on "Sabine," "Vermont," "Land Castle," etc. disch. exp. of term.
John W. Wadleigh, on "Ohio" and "Fort Henry;" disch. for disability.
Wm. V. Jones, on "Fort Henry" and "Vandalia;" disch. exp. of service.
Daniel S. Frost, on "Ohio" and "Nita;" disch. exp. of service.
Wm. Oakes, on "Portsmouth;" disch. exp. of service.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

SETH CLARK.

Thomas Clark (first generation), the pilgrim, came to this country in the ship "Ann," 1623. His sons were Andrew, William, James and Nathaniel; they were all prominent men, and, on the maternal side, were linked with the Lothrops, Mortons, Bangs and Dillinghams. In line follows Andrew (second generation), oldest son of Thomas, the pilgrim, then Thomas (third generation), Seth (fourth generation), Seth (fifth generation), who moved from Harwick (that part now Brewster) to Salisbury, Mass. He was an officer on a frigate that was sent to France, as a present, in consideration for their assistance during the Revolutionary War. He afterwards became a captain in the service, was taken captive and thrown into prison, where his health became so impaired that he died of consumption February 23, 1787.

Seth (sixth generation) was born at Salisbury, Mass., December 31, 1772; he married Susannah Noyes, December 5, 1797, daughter of Edmund Noyes, and had seven children,—Sarah, born July 31, 1799, and died February 17, 1875; Seth (seventh generation), born March 25, 1801; Edmund, born September 16, 1803, and died November 7, 1880; Thomas J., born January 24, 1806, and died August 12, 1877; Joseph N., born October 17, 1808, and died December 14, 1883; Susan, born June 20, 1812, and died February 16, 1882; Ann, born April 17, 1818, still living. Seth (seventh generation), married Rebecca W. Webster, daughter of Jonathan and Sarah (Waite) Webster. Jonathan was the son of the Rev. Samuel Webster, D.D., who was a minister in Salisbury for nearly fifty-five years, and a descendant from John Webster, who came from England and settled in Ipswich at an early day. The children of Seth and Rebecca W. were Jonathan W. (who died in infancy), Sarah, Susan R. and Seth (eighth generation).

Edmund married Sophronia Locke, and had four children, viz.: John (who died February, 1876), Adeline, Edmund and Mary. Thomas J. married Sarah (Currier), and had one child, Susan, now Mrs. E. R. Sibley. Joseph N. married Harriet Allen, and had seven children, viz.: Eliza, George, Charles, Harriet (deceased), Josephine (deceased), Clara and Marion.

Susan married John Pickett, of Beverly (no children); Ann married David Bailey, and had one child, Susie, now Mrs. Jessie Trask; Seth (eighth) married M. Belle Philbrick, and they have three children,—Mabel P., Gertrude M. and Seth (ninth generation).

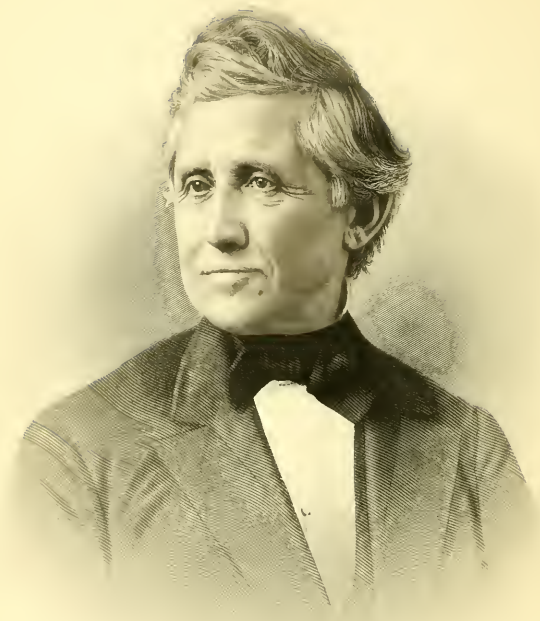
Seth (sixth), the subject of this sketch, and whose portrait adorns these pages, was born December 31, 1772, and in early life was largely engaged in the fishing business, owned a number of fishing-vessels and was also a merchant. He was one of the organizers of the Powow River Bank, and its first president, holding the office for fourteen years; and it is largely due to him, in a measure, that it owes its complete success. He was director in the savings bank, was postmaster of Salisbury, appointed by Jefferson, and held the office some forty years, the longest in the State in continuous service. Mr. Clark was the "squire" of the town, and was sought on all hands for advice in matters of busi-



Seth Clark



Seth Clark



Thomas J. Clark

ness, and was held in the highest esteem by all who knew him—an honest and upright man—and his long life of usefulness will ever be cherished by his descendants and all who remember him. He died September 25, 1850, aged seventy-eight years.

SETH CLARK.

Among the business men of this generation, none have occupied a more prominent position in the town than Seth Clark, Sr., born in Salisbury March 25, 1801. He was the eldest of four sons,—Seth, Thomas, Edmund and Joseph. His birthplace was Salisbury Point. In early life he had the advantages of special instruction, under the tuition of that celebrated teacher, Michael Walch, who, in his time, fitted more men for business pursuits than any other instructor in New England. Among the scholars who attended Walch's private school at the Point, kept in his own private dwelling, were the late Hon. Caleb Cushing and Professor Horatio B. Hackett, the celebrated Greek scholar.

Mr. Clark received a strict business education, which served him well in later years. As he entered life the tanning business was being prosecuted to some extent at Rocky Hill, and he learned this branch of trade. In 1823, in company with his three brothers, the firm commenced business on Elm Street, where the Colchester Mill now is, and erected an extensive tanning establishment. The senior member of the firm was practically its business manager, buying the raw hides and selling the manufactured leather in the markets of Salem and Boston. At stated seasons he drove his own team of two horses, loaded with leather, into Boston, completed his sales and returned on the following day.

The business of the firm prospered and its tannery was enlarged. After thirty years of active labor, Mr. Clark withdrew from the firm and turned his attention to real estate investments. He was able to forecast the future, saw the prospective rise in values, and became the largest owner of real estate in the towns of Salisbury and Amesbury, as well as the most wealthy citizen. In matters affecting questions of trade and investment his opinion was sought and cheerfully given. He was conservative to a fault, and thoroughly believed in the pay-as-you-go principle.

Mr. Clark served as president and director of the Powow River National Bank for many years, and was one of the trustees of the Provident Institution for Savings from the date of its incorporation, in 1828. He also served the town in several offices of trust and responsibility.

In habits of thought and action he represented the Puritan element of character. In all business transactions he expected and exacted the same punctuality and methods in others that governed his own conduct. In social life he was kind and considerate. He married a granddaughter of the Rev. Dr. Webster, one of the first ministers of the Rocky Hill Church. His only son, Seth, has been engaged in the manufacture of carriages about twenty-five years, and is one of thirty firms doing business in Salisbury Mills.

September 23, 1887, the subject of this notice died, at his residence on Market Street, at the age of eighty-six years and six months. As a mark of esteem for his long and useful life and business career, work was suspended in the community on the afternoon of his burial, and his funeral services were largely attended by all the influential and prominent men, mechanics and manufacturers.

His death closes the immediate family history. In the eighty-six years of his life he had seen the little village of a few hundred inhabitants grow in wealth and prosperity from a valuation of two hundred thousand dollars to that of two millions, and his own name published as the largest among its many tax-payers.

THOMAS J. CLARK.

Thomas J. Clark, more than any other man of his day, was identified with the interests of Salisbury and vicinity, and was well known throughout the country. In early life he was a tanner, and retired from that for more public duties; was nineteen years a selectman of the town, for more than fifteen years moderator at the town-meetings, twenty years treasurer of the "Provident Institution for Savings in Salisbury and Amesbury," and at the time of his death was president of the Powow River National Bank, of which he was a director from 1836 to 1870, a director of the Amesbury and Salisbury Mutual Fire Insurance Company, and of the Amesbury and Salisbury Gas Company. He was also a trustee in the Essex Agricultural Society. More than forty years ago he was a member of the Massachusetts Senate, contemporaneously with the late Hon. Henry Wilson, and up to the time of Mr. Wilson's death the friendship formed so many years before was continued. For four years from 1849 he was naval officer at the Custom-House at Newburyport. In every sense he was a man of the public. He was never at rest, and was always at the beck and call of his fellow-citizens. He has administered more estates and been the guardian of more children, and the trustee of more property than any other man in this section. He has also been unremitting in his attentions to the sick, and has superintended more funerals than even the town clergy. Always fresh and vivacious, vigorous in manner and in the conduct of his business, he did not show his years. His disease was congestion of the brain, accompanied by general debility, which so rapidly developed that his body became debilitated in sympathy with his mind, and his death, which occurred August 12, 1877, was in some respects a sudden one. He is greatly missed in the community in which he was so long known, and of which he was one of the wealthiest and worthiest citizens.

His funeral took place Wednesday, August 15, 1877, and was by far the largest ever known in this section. The village was in mourning. The Powow River National and Savings Banks, the American House and several stores were heavily draped in mourning, and every store and manufactory in town was closed.

The funeral rites were performed by Rev. Mr. Hartman, of the Baptist Church, where the deceased worshipped. He said that on the sad occasion which had called together the mourning company there assembled, it would not be possible to say all that ought to be said of the noble brother whose life had so suddenly been brought to a close. A life so noble, so self-sacrificing, so profitable to the community, deserves a better eulogy. The deceased possessed virtues and excellencies of character such as few men were endowed with. In the line of those virtues and noble traits the speaker, as he had gone from State to State, had never seen his equal. His death was an eminent loss to the society and the business of the community. Throughout the entire region round about, all would miss him. They would miss his familiar face, his helping hand, his wise counsel. The poor and the destitute and the friendless, the widow and the orphan would miss him. Never had his heart or his hand been shut to them. None hesitated to approach him in any extremity. To them his loss would be irreparable. To his friends and relatives, and his sorrowing family circle, he had only the consolation of Christ's love to offer—the consolation given by One who had endured every human trial that He might sympathize with poor humanity.

EDMUND MORRILL.

Edmund Morrill was the son of Abraham and Mary (Bagley) Morrill, and the grandson of Abraham, both of whom were born in Salisbury. It is said by the older members of the family that the first of their line that came to this country were Reuben, Samuel and Ebben, from which Edmund Morrill descended. The children of Abraham and Mary were Eliza, born June 14, 1802 (she married Daniel Merrill); John, born February 5, 1805, and married for first wife Sally Marston, and for second Elmira Morrill; Edmund, born May 29, 1807, and married Abigail Leavitt, daughter of Simon Leavitt, of North Hampton, N. H.; Amos, born August 25, 1809, and married Merandy Dickson (he went to Texas, where he practiced law and became a judge and was widely known); Mary Ann, born November 25, 1812; Abigail, born September 19, 1818, and died in infancy.

The children of Edmund and Abigail Morrill are Mary A. and Abraham L. Mary A. married A. W. Barnett, and had three children—Mary A., Alice M. and Edmund M. Abraham married Sarah E. Smith, and has one child—Lida.

Abraham, Sr., the father of Edmund, was a representative farmer and one of the substantial citizens of Salisbury. He died June 24, 1862, aged eighty-six years and three months.

Edmund, his son, whose picture is here shown, lives on the old farm. He, like his father, is a farmer, and extensively engaged in the lumber business, and is one of the solid citizens of Salisbury (now Amesbury).

CAPTAIN ABRAHAM COLBY.

Captain John Colby was the son of Gee and grandson of Obediah, and was born in Salisbury, Mass., November 28, 1785. Gee was born December 16, 1761, and died April 21, 1822; he had four children—Abraham, born in 1785; Mary O., born September 13, 1787; John, born March 27, 1790; and Hannah, born in June, 1810.

Captain Abraham Colby married Sarah, daughter of Colonel Jonathan Smith, and had two children, viz., Mary O. and Samuel S.

Captain Colby in early life learned the trade of tallow chandler, and later in life was engaged in the fishing business, sending out vessels for that purpose, and was also employed for a time in the coasting trade. In 1812 he went privateering in the ship "America;" finally retired from active business and settled down to enjoy the fruits of his labors.

He was president of the Amesbury and Salisbury Savings Bank for several years, and was one of the substantial citizens of the town. He died September 15, 1865.

JOHN ROWELL.

The son of Jacob and Abigail Rowell was born in Amesbury January 28, 1806 (see sketch of Jacob); his father was a farmer, but with John this occupation was not congenial, and he followed various pursuits until about the year 1853, when he engaged in the watchmaking, jewelry and fancy goods business. This he followed with success for a number of years. In 1867 he was appointed by Governor Bullock justice of the peace, and in 1855 was appointed deputy-sheriff of the county, which office he held fourteen years. Mr. Rowell was purely a man of the public, honest in all his dealings, quick to act and a good adviser.

His happy, jovial way made him exceedingly popular, and many amusing incidents are related of his experience with the class he was obliged to deal with in performing the duties of deputy-sheriff.

He was widely known throughout the county, and his happy way and manner were calculated to make friends wherever he went. He was one of the oldest members of the Powow River Lodge, and herewith we append the report of that fraternity after his death,—

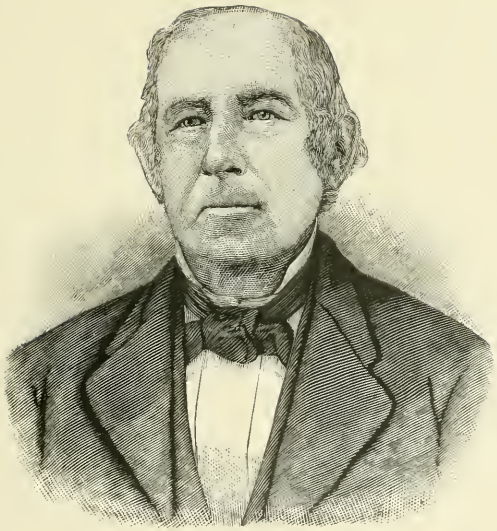
"At a meeting of the Powow River Lodge, held



John Russell



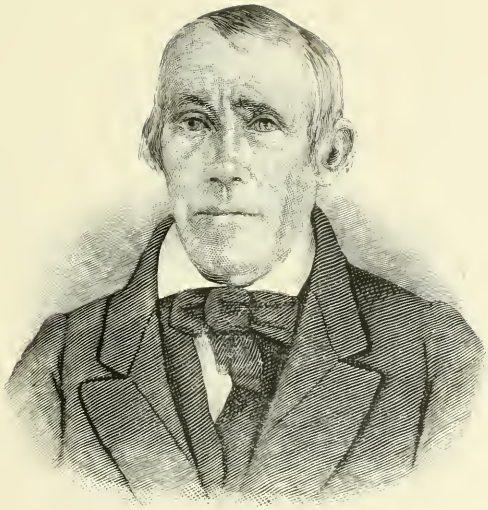
A. Holley.



Edmund Morrill



Chas. B. Patton



John Morrill

Tuesday, July 2, 1872, the death of our late brother was reported with appropriate remarks, and a desire was expressed to extend our sympathies to the family of the deceased at this time of their deep affliction. All that human power and skill of man could do has been done to arrest the progress of disease, but in the providence of God all was in vain. Death came and has removed from us an affectionate husband, a kind father, and a true and faithful brother. We mourn his loss, and shall long cherish the memory of his many excellent qualities. To especially the widow of the deceased do we offer this tribute of condolence, and if during the remaining years of life she should need our aid, council or advice, be assured we will not be found wanting in the discharge of the obligations of the Order, of which Mr. Rowell was for so many years an honored member."

Mr. Rowell married Sarah, daughter of Alexander Stuart (she died November 20, 1879). They had two children—J. Stuart and Sarah A. J. Stuart married May Cary, of Watertown, Mass., and had one child, who died in infancy, and the father and mother are also deceased.

Sarah A. married Stephen C. Patten, son of Charles B., a merchant of Amesbury.

CHARLES B. PATTEN.

Charles B. Patten, the son of Willis Patten, was born in West Amesbury, September 18, 1794. His father was a blacksmith in West Amesbury for many years. Charles learned the trade of blacksmithing of his father, and in 1819 or '20 moved the shop on the ice to Salisbury, which was considered quite a feat in those days. The carriage business was then in its infancy, one man making the wheels (by hand), another the bodies and so on. Charles B. was the only blacksmith in these parts and made all the iron-work and springs for wagons and chaise. After a time there was as many shops making wagon-parts as there were parts to a wagon, and so year after year it kept increasing. It might be said that Mr. Patten was a pioneer in this particular department of the carriage business. His shop was located on Market Street, a stone's throw from where Stephen Patten now lives. Mr. Patten, in later life, was in delicate health, had a stroke of paralysis, which prevented him from active work in the shop, and after a time was obliged to give up his work to his son George, who succeeded him after his death, which occurred March 23, 1846. Mr. Patten was a man highly respected and widely known. He was a member of St. Peter's Lodge, Newburyport, and was lieutenant in the old Amesbury and Salisbury military company. Mr. Patten married Mary, daughter of Jacob and Rachel Clement; they had eight children, viz.: Mary Elizabeth, Caroline, George H., Sarah L., Emeline, Chas. W., Susan H. and Stephen C.

Elizabeth died in 1861; Caroline married Cyrus A. Brewer; Geo. H. died in 1872; Sarah L. died in 1871; Emeline married Jonathan W. Keniston; Chas. W. married Elizabeth O. Sargent; Stephen C. married Sarah Ann Rowell, daughter of John Rowell.

Stephen C. worked with his brother, blacksmithing, until twenty-six years of age, when he started in the furniture business, in which he is now engaged, covering a period of twenty-six years.

JOHN MORRILL.

Abraham Morrill (first generation) settled in Salisbury in 1641. Jacob (second generation) was his second son. Then in line comes Aaron (third generation), fourth son of Jacob; Elijah (fourth generation), first son of Aaron; Ezra (fifth generation), first son of Elijah. Elijah had nine children, viz.: Ezra, born in 1742; Anna, born 1744; Elijah, born 1745; May, born 1749; Betsey, died in infancy; Robert, born 1753; Betsey, born 1755; Eliza, born 1757; Benjamin, born 1759. Ezra married, first wife, Elizabeth Greeley, and had three children,—Anna, Elizabeth and Hannah. Mrs. Elizabeth G. Morrill died July 10, 1777, in her thirty-third year.

Mr. Morrill married, for second wife, Sarah Morrill, November 5, 1780. Their children were *John*, born October 5, 1784; Ezra, born April 3, 1787; and William, born Novemher 6, 1789. Mrs. Sarah Morrill died November 5, 1750, and her husband Ezra died December 23, 1797, aged fifty-six years.

John married, January 2, 1811, Abigail Currier. She was born January 6, 1791, and was the daughter of Benjamin Currier. They had six children,—Sarah, born July 13, 1811; *William* E., born July 13, 1813; Elizabeth, born January 19, 1816; Abigail, born March 19, 1820; Ezra C., born September 4, 1822; Mary J., born February 6, 1826. Sarah married Benjamin Osgood; she died childless in 1874, aged sixty-three years.. *William* E. married Mary F. Merrill, and had three children, viz.: John W., Mary A. and Sarah F. Mrs. William E. Morrill died April 7, 1881, aged sixty-six years. Elizabeth married Paul Bickford, and had three children,—Sarah M., John and Frank. Abigail married Aaron Morrill; have four children,—Anna, Mary, Alice and John. Ezra C. married Hannah Swett, daughter of Timothy Swett, and have had three children,—Edward W., Charles E. and William F. Mary J. married Thomas Eaton, and have had two children. Edward W. married Mary Pender, and have had two children,—William E. and Fred. William F. married Eliza Lane.

John Morrill, whose picture is here shown, learned the carpenter trade in early life at Newburyport, which occupation he followed through life. He was a prominent man of the town. Served two terms in the Legislature (1836–38), besides holding other minor town offices. He was business-like in his bearing, honest

in all his dealings, retiring in manner, yet stern, and his word was as good as his bond. He was an active member of the Rocky Hill Church and contributed liberally to its support. Mr. Morrill was respected by all who knew him. He died February 20, 1856, aged seventy-one years. His two sons are now active business men. William has followed the business of contractor and builder; Ezra learned the trade of ship-joiner, and is at present engaged in the building of dories. Both William and Ezra Morrill are men of high standing in their town and respected by all.

CHAPTER CXX.

SWAMPSCOTT.

BY JAMES R. NEWHALL.

Introductory Remarks—Natural Situation—Name—Commencement of Settlement.

History touches all human life, on every side. It instructs the individual. It gives a new tone to a community. It elevates a nation. It enlivens a generation. It inspires the human race.—*John A. Andrew.*

As the voyager eastward from Boston skirts along the northern shore of Massachusetts Bay, and passes the dark, wave-worn cliffs of Nahant, there opens upon his left the picturesque inlet called in the old maps Nahant Bay, but more frequently, in popular parlance, Swampscott Bay. In calm sunshine it is a beautiful expanse; but in wind and storm, full of terrors and dangers. One of the most conspicuous objects that meet the eye is Egg Rock, precipitous and lonely, with its little light-house, shedding at night its hospitable rays of silent warning.

Along the whole extent of the shore of the little bay lies the town of Swampscott, with its picturesque fishing flotilla rocking languidly in front, as if keeping watch and ward, unless it be an hour when duty has called them off to "tempt the dangers of the deep." On the rising grounds above the beaches the active body of the town is seen. Upon the rocky heights and among the partially wooded hills in the background and the jutting headlands on either hand are scattered many residences of the wealthy and romantic, as well as humbler habitations of the less ambitious toilers.

Such is the natural situation of Swampscott—healthy, attractive and by no means isolated. It is about a dozen miles from Boston, in a northeasterly direction, with a population of two thousand four hundred and seventy-one, according to the census of 1885, which number is greatly augmented in summer by the influx of temporary sojourners who are attracted by the salubrity of its airs and the charms of its scenery.

Swampscott remained a part of Lynn till 1852, when it was set off as a separate town, the first town government being organized on the 5th day of June of that year. The earlier history of the place is so interwoven with that of Lynn that it becomes in a sense awkward to attempt to treat it as separate. Though there was no distinct Swampscott municipality till 1852, it may be claimed that this, as well as any place, is entitled to a recognition of occurrences within its borders, under whatever name or jurisdiction it may have existed.

"Swampscot is the original Indian name of the fishing-village at the eastern part of the town," says Mr. Lewis, the historian of Lynn, who always spelled the name with one t; and there seems to be no reason why another should have been added. The Indian language was unlearned and unwritten, at least by the tribes hereabout, and many of the attempts at etymological tracing are more curious than satisfactory.

The first white man who settled in Swampscott appears to have been FRANCIS INGALLS, a tanner by trade. He came with the little band of five who arrived, according to the commonly received opinion, on a June day, in 1629—three years after the settlement of Salem by Roger Conant and one year before the settlement of Boston, leaving out of the account the lodgment of Mr. Blackstone. The names of the others composing the little company were Edmund Ingalls, a brother of Francis, William Dixey, John Wood and William Wood, the two latter probably father and son. There may have been others with them; but, if so, the names are lost. They settled in the vicinity of each other, as was natural, under the circumstances, though Francis Ingalls seems to have been the only one who pitched his tent over the Swampscott border, as it is now defined. But it is by no means certain where the Swampscott line then, and for many years thereafter, ran. If the name means Red Rock, as suggested in Thompson's Sketches, it might apply to a large extent of shore both westward and eastward from the present lines.

The settlers do not seem to have purchased any lands, but to have come under the broad permission of the arbitrary Endicott to "goe where they would." The Indian population about here at that time was very small, and there was little to be apprehended from their hostility, even though they might in some instances feel aggrieved. It is not, however, intended to insinuate that the settlers did not honestly pay for their lands when true owners subsequently appeared. The lands were of little or no value to the red men, for they were not an agricultural nor a pastoral people. And no doubt some of the beautiful tracts that now command thousands of dollars were once purchased for a hatchet, a hoe, or half a dozen drams of "fire-water."

William Wood was evidently the most active and intelligent of the party, had a more just comprehen-

sion of the condition and prospects of the immigrants, and soon began by his pen to celebrate and magnify the merits and advantages of the new Canaan. He was the author of "New England's Prospect," published in London in 1634—a work which then did much to direct attention to New England, and which is still held in high repute as faithfully picturing affairs as they then existed. He indeed took a rosy view of most things, but in no essentials led the way to disappointment.

It has been claimed, with possibly too much pertinacity, that General John Humfrey, who was one of the original Massachusetts patentees and took great interest in the prosperity of the colonists, became an early resident of Swampscott. But it is not perceived how that could have been, unless the territory that went by the name extended so far westward as to include Nahant Street in Lynn. The error of locating him at Swampscott probably arose from the inadvertent statement of Mr. Lewis, who, in the "History of Lynn," speaking of his arrival, in 1634, says he "went to reside on his farm at Swampscot." But he had no farm at Swampscott. The land there was not granted to him till 1635, and then only conditionally. The words of the court record, May 6, 1635, are: "Further it is ordered that the land betwixte the Clifte and the Forest Ryver, neere Marble Head shall for the present be improved by John Humphrey, Esq." Nobody seems to doubt that this is the land in question. And it will be noticed that this was the year *after* his arrival, and that it was for his improvement "for the present." And furthermore, the court add that if the people of Marblehead should need the land, or if the people of Salem could show a right to it, Mr. Humfrey should part with it. Now is it at all likely that he, a shrewd lawyer, would build a house on land to which he had no better title than that? It was not till 1638, only three years before he left the country, that the grant was made absolute, it probably then appearing to the court that neither Salem nor Marblehead would make any claim.

It is certain that Mr. Humfrey had a house on Nahant Street, Lynn, and owned lands adjacent. In no deed, will or inventory does the writer find evidence that he had a house in Swampscott. It was in 1640 that his barn was burned by the careless use of gunpowder by a servant. And the court record says, "Henry Stevens for fireing the barne of his master, Mr. John Humfrey, he was ordered to be servant to Mr. Humfrey for 21 years from this day [Dec. 1, 1640] towards recompencing the loss." Mr. Lewis, in stating the fact, says the barn was on Nahant street. This seems to indicate that he had become aware of his mistake in locating him at Swampscott. He also says, under date 1636, "Mr. Humfrey built a windmill on the eastern mound of Sagamore Hill." The barn and windmill were, no doubt, near the house, which was probably endangered by the fire. The mill was built within two years after his arrival, and the fire occurred but the year before he left the country. How happened it, if he lived in Swampscott, that his barn and mill were away off on the west of Nahant Street in Lynn?

That Mr. Humfrey's extensive land grant in question came to be called his "farm Swampscott" is no doubt true; but it does not follow that he lived there, any more than that he lived in Lynnfield where he likewise had an extensive grant. It may have been a mere arbitrarily distinguishing name, after the fashion of the old English gentry in designating their outlying farm lands. Lechford speaks of Mr. Humfrey's farm Swampscott, not his farm *at* or *in* Swampscott. Winthrop speaks of it as "*a* farm of Mr. Humfrey;" and would he have spoken thus if it had also been his residence? And even Mr. Lewis, in speaking of Lady Moody, says, "In 1641 she purchased Mr. John Humfrey's farm *called* Swampscott."

It is well to remember that Mr. Humfrey was in the country but a short time. He came in 1634 and left in 1641, and does not appear to have lived in Lynn the whole of even that short period. Mr. Drake, the accurate historian of Boston, says, "He resided a while in Lynn, then at Salem." And Bently speaks of him as residing in Salem. And all seem to agree that he was of the Salem church.

The "Farm House" still standing on the estate so improved and adorned by the late Hon. E. Redington Mudge has been claimed to be the identical house reared and occupied by Mr. Humfrey. But does not the structure itself show that it belongs to a later period of New England architecture? And, moreover, the late Josiah M. Nichols, who spent much time in patiently examining the old records and tracing out titles, maintained, with much positiveness, that that part of the Mudge estate did not come within any grant to Mr. Humfrey. The writer has some satisfaction in the assurance that the "Farm House" was reared by an ancestor of his own, not far from the close of the seventeenth century—a Burrill, of the old Burrill family of Tower Hill, Lynn.

Ebenezer Burrill, the first of the name who settled in Swampscott, became possessor of the land there by the will of his father, known as Lieutenant John Burrill, who lived on Boston Street near Federal, in Lynn. But which of these Burrills or whether some other of the family built the "Farm House" is not known. Ebenezer, by will dated Jan. 14, 1761, gave the estate to his son Samuel.

The "Farm House" remained in the Burrill family many years; and the noble elm in front, that still spreads its patriarchal branches and allures to its refreshing shade thoughtful age and buoyant youth, as in far-off years it allured to noonday rest the sturdy toilers on the farm, and at evening invited the youth to their moonlight sports, is believed to have been planted by one of the family about the year 1740.

Historical mistakes, like that concerning the location of Mr. Humfrey, are not, perhaps, of much im-

portance to such readers as merely seek casual entertainment. But they may, under some circumstances, become of grave moment.

Mr. Humfrey was an eminent man, took great interest in the welfare of the colonists, and contributed liberally of his abundant means. He was a military commander, a legislator, executive and judicial officer; and all his doings were marked by ability and integrity.

A similar mistake to that regarding Mr. Humfrey's location has prevailed in relation to Lady Deborah Moody. She purchased a considerable portion of his Swampscott land, and probably for a short time occupied the house on Nahant Street, Lynn. Lechford says she lived in Lynn, though of the Salem church. She, however, could have been about here but a short time. Winthrop speaks of her as "a wise and anciently religious woman," adding that she was a member of Salem church. That she lived in Salem a part of the short time she was hereabout, there can be no donbt. The eminent authority last quoted speaks of a tempest that unroofed "Lady Moody's house in Salem," the site of which has been fixed by antiquaries as in Washington Street, where the present post-office stands. Mr. Upham describes the house as of one story, nine feet in height, and with a flat roof. She was a woman of large property and high family connection. Governor Vane was a kinsman of hers. On account of her convictions regarding infant baptism she was virtually banished, and in 1643 sought a home in the Dutch jurisdiction on Long Island, where she met with divers misfortunes.

It would not profit to further pursue these inquiries. And it need only be added, in a summarizing way, that there seems little room for doubt that Mr. Humfrey lived on the easterly side of Nahant Street, Lynn, very near where Ocean Street now opens; that he had extensive grants of land within the present bounds of Swampscott and in Lynnfield, the latter including the picturesque little lakelet still known as Humfrey's Pond; and that, adjacent to his residence, he owned a considerable tract, including much, if not the whole, of what is now known as Sagamore Hill, on which stood his windmill.

There is naturally a sentimental love of numbering among our own people distinguished individuals. And such men as Mr. Humfrey, who was eminent for his public services, his virtues and accomplishments, and whose wife was a daughter of the Earl of Lincoln, one of the first noblemen in England, might well justify such love in the good people of Swampscott. But there stalked a skeleton into that home. And one cannot, with complacency, contemplate the disasters that befell the tender offspring, left by father and mother in most unworthy wardship. Many a pang that rendered the latter days of Mr. Humfrey miserable—almost unendurable—arose from the strange desertion of daughters who had not even reached their teens. It is apparent that he was sadly disappointed by the failure of certain schemes for political advancement, and though perhaps not broken down, morose or irritable, had fallen into a settled discontent; and that his wife was intolerably homesick, ever pining over her privations, and yearning for the brilliant scenes of her early home. So away they went, leaving their little ones to the tender mercies of custodians totally unworthy of the sacred trust.

CHAPTER CXXI.

SWAMPSCOTT—(*Continued*).

EARLY SETTLERS AND LATER RESIDENTS.

Witter—Keysar—King—Blaney—Burrill—Blanchard—Weeks—Ingalls—Phillips—Widger—Mudge.

To gather up the memorials of those who have gone before us, to reconstruct their living portraits from historical fragments so widely scattered; is a work of time, of patience and of unremitting toil; but, once completed, the ancestral line, reaching far down the vista of the past, will stand out clearly before us; the images of our fathers will tenderly live in our minds, and we shall reverently cherish their memories, as will likewise the generations to come.—*Slafter.*

William Witter.—One of the earliest settlers in Swampscott was William Witter, a farmer, who came in 1630. He appears to have been a man of strong opinions and much fearlessness in expressing them—not what would be called a man of education, but one with a good conception of manly rights and accountabilities. He was a sturdy exponent of some of the peculiar characteristics of the times, and a zealous participant in transactions that, in a local way, characterized the period in which he lived. One of the earliest occurrences in his life of agitation was an offense for which, on the 28th of February, 1643, he was presented at the Salem court. Says the record:

"William Witter—Now comeing in, answered humbly, and confessed his Ignorance, and his willingness to see Light, and (upon Mr. Norris, our Elder, his speech) seemed to be staggered, Inasmuch as that he came in court meltinglie. Sentence—Have called our ordenonce of God, a badge of the whore—on some Lecture day, the next 5th day, being a public fast, To acknowledge his falt, And to ask Mr. Cobbett forgiveness, in saying he spok against his conscience. And enjoined to be heare next court att Salem."

Mr. Cobbet, whose forgiveness was to be asked, was a colleague of Rev. Mr. Whiting, minister of the Lynn church; and Mr. Norris, under whose speech he seemed "staggered," was then minister of the Salem church, and a successor of Hugh Peters, who was intermediate between him and Roger Williams. The offense of Mr. Witter was his declaring that infant baptism was sinful. He had evidently imbibed the principles of Mr. Williams, with whom, it is fair to presume, considering the proximity of their residences, he had neighborly acquaintance.

Three years after the above episode—that is, in 1646—it is found that he was again presented at the Quarterly Court,—

"ffor saying that they who stayed while a Childe is baptized, doe worship the dyvil; also Henry Collens and Mathew West, deling with him about the former speeche, he speaks to them after this manner, That they who stayed at the baptizing of a Childe, did take the name of the Father Sonn, and holly ghost in vaine and broke the Saboth, and confesseth and justifieth his former speech. Sentence of Court is. an Injunction next Lord's day, being faire, that he make a publique confession to Satisfaction, in the open congregation at Lyn, or else to answer it at the next General Court. And concerning his opinion, the court hath yet patience toward him, till they see if he be obstinate, and only admonish him."

These incidents clearly show the drift of Mr. Witter's opinions, his fearlessness in expressing them and the repugnance with which they were received. And his faith seems to have strengthed with his years; for when those Baptist missionaries from Rhode Island —John Clark, John Crandall and Obadiah Holmes— appeared, in 1651, they quartered in Swampscott, at his house, where, on Sunday, July 20th, Mr. Clark preached, administered the sacrament and rebaptized Mr. Witter,—

"This being reported to the authorities" (says Mr. Lewis), "two constables went down to Swampscot to apprehend them as disturbers of the peace. They carried a warrant with this direction, which had been granted by Hon. Robt. Bridges: 'By virtue hereof, you are required to go to the house of William Witter, and so to search from house to house for certain erroneous persons, being strangers, and them to apprehend, and in safe custody to keep, and to-morrow morning, at 8 o'clock, to bring before me.' Mr. Clark says: 'While I was yet speaking, there comes into the house where we were, two constables, who with their clamorous tongues make an interruption, and more uncivilly disturbed us than the pursuivants of the old English bishops were wont to do.' In the afternoon they were taken to Mr. Whiting's meeting, where they refused to uncover their heads. Mr. Bridges ordered a constable to take off their hats, when one of them attempted to speak, but was prevented.

"At the close of the meeting one of them made some remarks, after which they were taken to the Anchor Tavern, and guarded through the night. In the morning they were sent to Boston and imprisoned. On the thirty-first, the Court of Assistants sentenced Mr. Holmes to pay a fine of thirty pounds, Mr. Clark of twenty, and Mr. Crandall of five. The fines of Clark and Crandall were paid; but Mr. Holmes refused to pay his, or suffer it to be paid, and was retained in prison till September, when he was publicly whipped. When brought to the place of execution, he reques ed liberty to speak to the people, but the presiding officer, one *Flint*, rightly named, refused, and ordered him to be stripped. His friends brought some wine, which they requested him to drink, but he declined it, lest the spectators should attribute his fortitude to drink. The whip was made of three cords, and the executioner spat three times in his own hands, that he might not fail to honor justice. In a manuscript left by Governor Joseph Jenks, it is written that 'Mr. Holmes was whipped 30 stripes, and in such an unmerciful manner that for many days, if not some weeks, he could not take rest, but as he lay upon his knees and elbows, not being able to suffer any part of the body to touch the bed.' As the man began to lay on the stripes, Holmes said, 'though my flesh should fail, yet my God will not fail.' He then prayed, 'Lord, lay not this sin to their charge.' When he was released, two spectators, John Shaw and John Hazel, went up and took hold of his hand to sympathize with him, for which they were fined forty shillings each. Such is the bitterness of religious persecution. Dr. John Clark was one of the most respectable physicians in Rhode Island, and wrote a book entitled 'Ill Newes from New England,' with a full account of this persecution."

Mr. Witter appears to have been afflicted with blindness, though not total, it is gratifying to believe. Mr. Clark, in his narrative, says:

"It came to pass that we three (himself, Crandall and Holmes), by the good hand of God, came into the Mathatusets Bay upon the 16 day of the 5th Moneth 51; and upon the 19th of the same, upon occasion of businesse, we came into a Town in the same Bay called Lin, where we lodged at a Blind-man's house neer two miles out of the Town, by name William Witter, who being baptized into Christ waits, as we also doe, for the kingdom of God and the full consolation of the Israel of God."

For his re-baptism, and for neglecting to attend on the discourses, Mr. Witter was, on the 7th of November, presented at the Salem court.

These proceedings, taken together, not only illustrate the persistent character of Mr. Witter, and the faithfulness of the sufferers to their convictions but also the relentless rigor of the laws and the unpitying bigotry of some, at least, of those in authority.

Let us now give an incident or two of a more worldly nature, in the history of Mr. Witter. He seems to have been a friend of Poquanum, the Indian chief, known among the English as Duke William or Black Will, although the acquaintance must have been short, as the dusky noble was killed in 1633. He was a chief extensively known, and held in considerable repute; a large land-owner, if all that he claimed was really his. It was he who sold Nahant to Thomas Dexter, for a suit of clothes, a transaction which occasioned much trouble and expense to the town in after years.

Mr. Witter, according to a deposition of his, made April 15, 1657, purchased his own house-lot of the Duke, and not that alone, but hundreds of other eligible acres. Says he: "Blacke will or Duke william, so called, came to my house (which was two or three miles from Nahant), when Thomas Dexter had bought Nahant for a suit of clothes; the said Black will Asked me what I would give him for the Land my house stood uppon, it being his land, and his ffather's wigwam stood their abouts, James Sagomore and John, and the Sagomore of Agawame, and diuers more, And George Sagomore, being a youth was present, all of them acknowlidginge Black will to be the Right owner of the Land my house stood on, and Sagomore Hill and Nahant was all his;" and adds that he "bought Nahant and Sagomer Hill and Swamscoate of Black William for two pestle stones." Not an exorbitant price, compared with that at which those lands would sell for in this year of grace. In the legal proceedings of the town to obtain permanent relief from the annoying claims of Mr. Dexter, Mr. Witter testified in support of the purchase.

Black Will's Cliff, the commanding battlement of turf-crowned rock that rises near the southeasterly end of King's Beach, is supposed to have been the site of Poquanum's habitation. It must have been a lovely and salubrious spot in those days, as it still is, though shorn of much of its pristine beauty and romance. He is supposed to have been the same Indian who, in 1602, went on board of Gosnold's ship, and to the surprise of the voyagers welcomed them in plain English, being likewise clothed in an English suit.

Mr. Witter died in 1659, aged seventy-five years.

GEORGE KEYSAR.—Mr. Keysar is stated to have been here as early as 1630, and to have settled as a

miller at Swampscott. If so, he was probably a miller without a mill, for Mr. Humfrey's mill, which appears to have been the only one within a large circuit, was on Sagamore Hill, in Lynn. In Thompson's Sketches this is found: "George Keysam [Keysar], a tanner in Swampscott, and who was admitted a freeman in December 14, 1638 (Savage says March 14, 1639), was probably connected with Mr. Ingalls's establishment." There is no doubt that Mr. Keysar was a tanner, nor is there any doubt that he carried on the business in what is now known as West Lynn, and that his tannery was on Boston Street, very near where the tubular wells were sunk, in 1880. It was in a tan-pit of his that a child of Thomas Newhall, who lived near, was drowned in 1665. This clearly appears by the recorded testimony of two witnesses: "We, Robert Potter and John Newhall: understandin by too testimonies, That Thomas Newhall's child was drownded in a pett, which pett we heard George Keesar say he digged: farther we doe Testifie that George Keesar had a tanfatt in that pett. I, John Newhall, doe furder testifie that George Keysar did take up his fatt and left the pett open."

This George Keysar was a respectable man, and married the daughter of Edward Holyoke, ancestor of the venerated Dr. Holyoke, of Salem, and others of the name hereabouts. He is thus remembered in his father-in-law's will, dated December 25, 1658: "I dispose of the yoke of oxen and my mare to my son-in-law, George Keysar." He also disposes of articles of clothing to one and another, and then says, "all the rest of my wearing apparell to my son, Keysar." He, Keysar, was one of the committee appointed by the town, in 1657, to oppose the claim of "ffarmer Dexter" to Nahant, under his purchase from Black Will, for a suit of clothes. He seems, after getting well along in years, to have removed to Salem, and there, perhaps, was a pioneer in the great tanning business of the present day.

Confusion may have arisen in this case, also, by the uncertainty as to what in these early days was meant, territorially, by "Swampscott." Or there may have been a confusion of names. There was a *Thomas* Keysar here quite early—perhaps a brother of George, whom the Lynn people would probably very readily give over to Swampscott. He figures somewhat largely and not very creditably on the records. "One Keysar, of Lynn," Winthrop calls him. In 1645 he sailed as mate under a Captain Smith, who is represented to have been a Boston church member, in the ship "Rainbow," on a cruise to Guinea, in a slave-hunting expedition. And on the African coast and other parts, things seem to have been carried on with a high hand. In conjunction with some English adventurers, they attacked the natives and killed many. Winthrop says that some of the mariners confessed that "near one hundred were slain." They had on hand but two of the slaves when they reached Boston, but great indignation was manifested on account of their nefarious traffic. These two were the first slaves in New England. Keysar and his captain had serious difficulties which led to violence, or at least threats of violence, while abroad, and lawsuits at home. The court adjudged Keysar to have damaged Smith to a considerable amount, and required him to pay a substantial sum. But in regard to the negroes for whom Smith claimed compensation, the court says, "for the negars, they being none of his, but stolen, we thinke mette to alowe nothing." They also, in adjusting matters, required that "Captain Smith should alow Kæsar 10*l.* for threatening to pistol him." The two were also proceeded against criminally by Richard Saltonstall, as prosecuting officer, who, in his presentation to the court, says: "I conceive myselfe called by virtue of my place to act in the case concerning the Negars taken by Captain Smith and Mr. Keser; wherein it is apparent that Mr. Keser upon a Sabbath day gave chace to certaine Negers; and upon the same day took diverse of them; and at another time killed others and burned one of their townes." A committee was subsequently appointed "to examine witnesses and draw up y^e^ ease about Captain Smith and M^r^. Kesar kiling, stealing and wronging y^e^ negars." But it is not necessary to pursue this matter in detail to its final termination. One purpose in introducing it is to show the utter detestation in which slavery was held by this community even at that early period, when the civilized world regarded it in a very different light. There is little doubt that the conduct of Smith and Keysar was the occasion of the determined action of the court against "the hainous and crying sinn of man stealing," which took place soon after. There is nothing special to indicate that *Thomas* was the Swampscott Keysar, though he was a sailor and that was a maritime settlement. He evidently lived in some part of Lynn, and there will hardly be any great neighborhood strife for the honor of harboring him.

It may be well to remark here that confusion has in many cases been made by attempting to identify some of the early settlers by their occupation. They generally followed different callings at different periods, and sometimes simultaneously. In the old country they pursued one kind of business and were designated by that. But here it was different, for there was not enough in one kind of industry to keep them busy. Thus even at a considerably later period, the father of Franklin, while in England, was a dyer, but after settling in Boston he found that there was little to be done in that trade, and so set up as a tallow chandler. He was therefore known both as a dyer and a candle-maker.

DANIEL KING AND HIS FAMILY.—Just at the foot of the hill, where Lewis Street, Lynn, reaches the Swampscott line, lies King's Beach. It is one of the larger beaches that stretch along our shore, and is of hard, compact, fine and sparkling sand. Here, and

upon Blaney's Beach, which lies a little farther eastward, were for many years witnessed scenes of great activity and picturesqueness, when, towards evening, the numerous little fishing crafts returned with their daily fares ready to be disposed of to customers in waiting for their finny merchandise. Since the introduction of trawl-fishing, however, which was about thirty years ago, some of the peculiar features of the stirring picture have gradually changed.

King's Beach perpetuates the name of a family once conspicuous in the vicinity, and possibly Blaney's Beach derived its name from Blaney King, a member of the family, though most probably from some of the Blaney family, who also appeared thereabout at an early day.

The King family, as a whole, enjoyed a good local reputation, for they were enterprising, well-connected and evidently ambitious in a worldly way. Though located in and about Swampscott, they owned lands in other quarters. There were Daniel, the father, and Daniel and Ralph, the sons. Daniel, the elder, seems to have suffered under some bodily infirmity, as, in 1646, the court says: "In ans^{r} to y^{e} peticon of Daniell King, itt is ordered y^{t} y^{e} peticone^{r} shall appeare before y^{e} millitary office's of y^{e} east regiment, at their next meeting, who shall examine his allegations concerning his not appearance at dayes of trayning, to performe such service as might have binn imposed on him, and to proceed wth him according to lawe; but for time to come, this Courte doth dischardge him, in regard to his bodily infirmity, from attendance vpon ordinary traynings, for any service in armes." His goods had been taken by the captain of the Lynn train-band, for neglect of military duty.

In 1669 the "Dolphin," a vessel belonging in Charlestown, lost a topsail and some other rigging in Ipswich Bay, and these were taken up at Lynn by Mr. King—Daniel King, the elder, it is probable—and he, for some reason that does not appear, refused to give them up, notwithstanding recompense had "been tendered for all his paynes and charge in securing the same. Uppon application for redress, by the master, Major Hathorne was empowered by the Court to heare and determine the case according to lawe, to allow what recompense he shall judge meet, and cause said sayle and rigging to be delivered to the said master." This transaction does not seem to leave the old gentleman in a very favorable light; but there may have been explanatory circumstances.

Then there was the remarkable lawsuit, Taylor against King, brought to recover damages for the goring to death of the plaintiff's mare by the defendant's bull, which was decided in 1646. The vicious character of the bull was brought in question, and the testimony develops some of the peculiar customs of the times. Hon. Robert Bridges, the magistrate who granted the warrant for the arrest, at Swampscott, of the three Baptist missionaries from Rhode Island, Clarke, Crandall and Holmes, in his testimony, says: ". . . myself being on horseback with my wyfe behind me, y^{e} s^{d} Bull stood in the high way as I was riding a Longe. When I came up to the Bull, not knowing whos beast it was, neither thinking of any opposition, I struck at the bull wth my stick, to put him out of the way; ymediately y^{e} bull made att my mare, and placed his horn vpon her shoulder, and had well nigh overthrone both the mare and her riders; and although I endeavord to shunne y^{e} bull, yet he still so prest vpon mee y^{t} I cannot but conceave had not the neareman bin att hand to beat him off that some hurt had bin done, either to o'selves or my mare, or both; but god's good hand better provided." Much other testimony touching the character of the bull was given; but it need not be introduced here.

The judgment in the case was as follows: "Bost. 7: 3: 1646. It was agreed that in the Judgm^{t} of Lawe, it is to be concluded that y^{e} bull did kill y^{e} mare, and y^{t} y^{e} owner of y^{e} Bull, upon such notice as he had, ought to have taken order to prevent any future mischief." . . . "Salem, 18 5mo. 1646. The magistrates assembled at Salem doe judge y^{t} m^{r} King shall pay halfe the vallue of the mare unto m^{r} Tayler, w^{h} is Judged to bee 7£, that is, according to the rate of 14£ for the mare."

Daniel King, the elder, died May 28, 1672, leaving an estate appraised at £1528 9s. The son Daniel married Tabitha Walker, a daughter of Capt. Richard Walker, who lived a little west of Saugus River, and who became a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery at its organization, in 1638. The son Ralph married Elizabeth, also a daughter of Capt. Walker. There was a Shubael Walker, a farmer, living at Swampscott in 1640, who also had the title of captain. He was apparently a sort of migratory personage living at times in Rowley, where he was town clerk, in Haverhill, Bradford and Reading. He married in Lynn.

Ralph King was a man of considerable local note in his day. His name stands first of the grantees in the Indian deed of Lynn, executed in 1686. He was one of the "Seven Prudential Men," or selectmen, in 1678. In 1679 he was lieutenant of a new troop of forty-eight men formed at Lynn in that year, his father-in-law, Richard Walker, being commander. Among his territorial possessions was the romantic little headland now known as Phillips Point. A very commendable episode in his life was his zeal in opposing the impudent pretensions of Secretary Randolph, when, in 1688, he attempted, through a petition to Governor Andros, to become possessor of the whole of Nahant, with the pleasant dream, no doubt, of erecting it into a lordly manor. But Mr. King was not left to work single-handed in this important matter, for such strong coadjutors as John Burrill, Oliver Purchis and Rev. Mr. Shepard entered into the affair with equal enthusiasm. He died in 1691, leaving an estate quite considerable for the time, the inventory footing up £2365 4s.

Daniel King, the younger, does not appear to have been quite so public-spirited as his brother Ralph, though he was active, if not always successful, in business. In a memorandum dated May 6, 1653, he says: "I have rec. of my cosen. William Guy [of London], a parcell of goods amounting to the valew of fforty-fiive pounds, fourteene shillings, nine pence starling money, which goods I have rec. upon the account of Guy as an adventure by him, promising to doe my outmost iudevor for the sale of the aforesaid goods, and to make him returns by Christmas next, if," etc. But such "ifs" seem to have intervened that a settlement was long delayed, and the matter finally got into court. Five years after—that is, in 1658—his father, Daniel King, Sr., makes the following statement: "Boston, this 14th of August, 1658, these presents witness that I, Daniell King, of Lyn, sener, doe acknowledge that Capt. Jn°. Peirce, commander of the ship 'Exchang,' hath bene with mee and demanded of mee a debt of abount forty-five pounds, which my sone Daniell, did receive in goods of Mr. Wm. Guy, of London, haberdasher; and my Answer is that my sone Daniel is gone to burbados and hath carried with him goods in order to the making the returne much more than I can judge will ballance that ace°. And I hope either by this time or very sudenly hee will return a satisfactory ace°." Two years after the foregoing—namely, in 1660—Mrs. Elizabeth King, mother of the delinquent Daniel, Jr., comes to the rescue of her son's credit and reputation in the following propitiatory epistle to her nephew, Guy: "from Linn, in New England, Decemb^r the 28th, 1660. . . . After respeckts presented, these carr to lett you under stand that yours wee have receved. Return you manny thanks for your patiente lines, but being much troubled that wee yett cannot answer your ends according to your expecktations. Many ways wee have tryed, by Burbadoes, by Bills of Exchange, and by getting ot Bever for you, but as yet cannot procure anny of them. But by the next shepping, I hoape wee shall find out some way or other whereby you shall have sattisfacktion; my sonn Ralph and my sonn Blacnny douth intend, if pleas god they live and doe well, to com to England; soe hoaping that you will bee pleased to ad one mitt of patience unto your aboundance which you have had, soe resting and remaining your ever loving Ante till death. *Elizabeth King.*"

But few of the old King family are now to be found in Swampscott. Some of the descendants, however, are still making a mark in other places.

It will not be inappropriate to introduce brief notices of a few of the other families that have from time to time become conspicuous in Swampscott; especially of such as have not come under notice elsewhere.

Blaney is an old Swampscott name. The first of the family here was John Blaney, who came in 1659. It does not appear just where he settled, but he married Hannah, thought to be a daughter of Daniel King, the elder, and a sister of Ralph, so well known for his public spirit and business activity. He had six children, and some of his descendants remain in Swampscott and Lynn and many are scattered abroad. For his second wife he married Elizabeth, widow of Thomas Purchis, then in the eighth month of her widowhood. Mr. Purchis died in 1678, at the alleged age of a hundred and one years. He had been in Lynn but about a dozen years, having removed hither from Maine, where he had long been engaged in the fur trade and where he owned extensive tracts of land, notably that on which Brunswick now stands, of which place he was the first settler. His house there was attacked by the Indians and pillaged at the time of the King Philip War, 1675, and he then removed hither. Blaney's Beach and Blaney Street perpetuate the name. The prosperity of the fishing business in early times was largely attributable to their enterprise, and some of the name are yet among the most thrifty in that industry.

Burrill.—The Burrills appeared in Lynn at a very early day of the colony. George came in 1630 and was one of the richest of the planters. He settled near Tower Hill, in what is now known as West Lynn. He had sons,—George, Francis and John. It was long a famous family, and counted so many worthy sons and daughters that it was called the royal family of Lynn. So much concerning them appears in other connections in these pages, that little is needed here.

The Hon. Ebenezer Burrill, a grandson of George, the first comer, was born in 1679, and was a younger brother of the eminent presiding officer, John Burrill, so long in the House of Deputies, and who was compared by Governor Hutchinson to Sir Arthur Onslow, who had the reputation of being the most accomplished speaker the House of Commons ever had. Ebenezer was himself much in public life, being a member of the Crown Governor's Council and a Representative for a number of years.

It was the Hon. Ebenezer who became the first settler of the name of Burrill in Swampscott. He settled, as elsewhere stated, on the estate given him by his father, and which included a portion of that belonging to the late Hon. Enoch Redington Mudge. The old farm-house, which Mr. Mudge deeded to his daughter, Fanny Olive, in 1863, is the identical house in which Mr. Burrill lived. Whether he or his father built the house does not seem certain, though it was doubtless built about the time he took up his residence there. He was thrifty and able to provide well for his family of ten children. And the writer has some pleasure, perhaps pardonable, in being able to trace his line to so respectable a source. Both his grandmothers were granddaughters of this worthy of our early days. Mr. Burrill died on the 6th of September, 1761, at the age of eighty-two years. Some of his Swampscott lands are still owned by descend-

ants, and though not many now remain, the name is perpetuated in Burrill Street.

Could space be allowed, it would be interesting to speak somewhat at large of others of the older families and also of deserving individuals of later days.

There was Captain NATHANIEL BLANCHARD, who came to Swampscott while yet a boy, determined to work his way up in the world. He served in the War of 1812; was captain of a company under the old military organization; was a selectman of Lynn, and a warm politician in the old Jacksonian days, and sometimes commanded the stalwart processions of the unterrified voters who marched up to the polls at the old Town Hall, on South Common Street, with their band of music. Good-natured and complaisant was he when his cohorts were not interfered with, but unyielding and defiant when opposing partisans stood in the way. He did a thrifty business for many years in the fishing line, and was the builder of the first brick-house in Swampscott. He died in 1871.

EBENEZER WEEKS, who came to Swampscott in 1805, as poor as most of us, rose to be a substantial and much respected citizen. He engaged largely in the fisheries, and pursued the lobster trade long and to much profit. He also kept a public-house near Blancy's Beach, where many temporary sojourners have enjoyed his hospitality. He was a good specimen of the true Yankee, who is ever ready to turn his hand to whatever promises beneficial results, and his good judgment was generally a safe guide in his various enterprises.

INGALLS FAMILY.—This ancient family has been so frequently spoken of in other connections, that little need be said here. From those first settlers, Francis Ingalls and Edmund, his brother, the former of whom located as a tanner just within what is now the western border of Swampscott, and the latter in the same neighborhood, just over the present eastern border of Lynn, have sprung descendants who have in almost every walk of life added honor to the family name. At the present day are to be found prominent representatives in all departments of business, in science and literature. In political stations, from the Senate of the United States down to the humble municipal office, and in military and diplomatic positions others appear, faithfully acquitting themselves. Not many New England families can boast of a better record. A few of the lineage still remain in Swampscott.

PHILLIPS.—This name has long been known at Swampscott. The first settler of the family seems to have been Charles Phillips. His wife's name was Hannah, and he had two children, John and Hannah. He may have been father of the John, mentioned by Mr. Lewis under date 1650. The name of Walter Phillips likewise appears not long after. And it was to Walter and John that Elizabeth and Daniel King, in March, 1693, sold some four hundred acres of land which was a part of the Humphrey grant, and included some of the land eastward from Fishing Point, which has of late years become of great value for summer resorts. Walter became a Quaker, and refused to perform military duty, for which a fourth of an acre of his land was seized in 1703, and sold for payment of his fines. And he was one of the seventeen signers of the letter sent by the Lynn Quakers to Governor Dudley, who had requested a list of the names of those of the faith in the town. It was likewise signed by Walter Phillips, Junior. Walter and John were ancestors of some of the most wealthy and conspicuous members of the family in later times. Indeed, it might have been said, for many years, that not to know the Phillipses was not to know Swampscott. It was an energetic and thrifty family, as a whole, some being engaged in agriculture and some in the fisheries.

THOMAS WIDGER.—Capt. Widger was a typical representative of one class of the old Swampscott seamen. Though a native of Marblehead, he made Swampscott his home for many years, and died here on the 21st of January, 1871, at the age of eighty years. He commenced a sea-faring life when but nine years old, shipping at that time for a fishing voyage to the Grand Banks. He afterwards sailed on merchant voyages, and early in the War of 1812, was taken prisoner by the British, and remained a year in a prison ship. He was subsequently in the privateer service, sailing from Salem; was in the famous cruiser "America," which was said to be the fastest ship on the sea at that time. She was extremely fortunately in her captures, bringing into port property valued at considerably more than $1,000,000. He was also on board that other noted Salem privateer, the brig "Grand Turk," which was manned by a hundred and fifty men, and carried eighteen nine-pounders. She was at first commanded by Capt. Holten J. Breed, a brother of Andrews Breed, who so long kept Lynn Hotel, and uncle of the fifth mayor of Lynn. She captured nearly half a score of rich prizes, one with an invoice of £30,000 sterling, and another with specie to the amount of $17,500. At the close of the war, the "Grand Turk" was sold to the eminent merchant, William Gray. One of the cannons captured by her found its way to Swampscott, where it has done service as a patriotic mouth-piece on many occasions.

Mr. Widger, after the war, was again in the Grand Bank fishery; and continued to follow the seas till age so pressed upon him that he fell back into the humble capacity of a dory fisherman. His habits were temperate, and through life he enjoyed remarkably good health and well-preserved faculities, never requiring the use of spectacles in reading the finest print. An interesting incident in his stirring life, and one indicative of his horror of inhumanity in a sailor, was his joining in the famous feat of tarring and feathering "Old Floyd Ireson," which remarkable performance has been so often celebrated by his-

torian and poet. It should, however, be kept in mind that it was long since positively denied, and with a show of much reason, that Skipper Ireson was guilty of the "hord-horted" act of refusing assistance to the wrecked crew, which was the occasion of his ignominious treatment, but was the victim of false accusation.

In the career of Capt. Widger were aptly exemplified the vicissitudes of a sailor's life.

Enoch Redington Mudge.—Upon the left of the highway near the entrance of Lower Swampscott by the Lynn road, and overlooking King's Beach, portions of Nahant, a long stretch of the bay, with rugged and precipitous shores, one may observe a beautiful stone villa with an extensive lawn in front and picturesque surroundings, indicating taste and wealth in the proprietor. This was the residence of the late Enoch R. Mudge.

The Mudge family did not appear in this immediate vicinity at a very early period, though the name was known in the colony as early as 1638. In the desperate encounter with the Indians at Bloody Brook, September 18, 1675, James Mudge, a soldier in Lathrop's "flower of Essex," was killed.

Mr. Mudge, the subject of this notice, was born in Orrington, Me., on the 22d of March, 1812, and was a son of Rev. Enoch Mudge, a native of Lynn, and the first Methodist minister born in New England, a man of fervid piety, great mental activity, and possessing, withal, something of a poetic turn. At an early age Enoch Redington was united in marriage with Miss Caroline A. Patten, of Portland, Me., and they became the parents of seven children. One son and two daughters survived their parents. The eldest son, Charles Redington, a lieutenant-colonel in the Union forces, was killed in the battle of Gettysburg, July 3, 1863, and the eldest daughter, Fanny Olive, died July 23, 1879. It was especially in memory of these that Mr. Mudge erected the beautiful St. Stephen's Memorial Church, on South Common Street, Lynn, the corner-stone being laid on the 19th of May, 1881.

Mr. Mudge purchased the Swampscott estate in 1843, and soon after set about erecting the villa above alluded to, and improving and embellishing the grounds, which embraced about a hundred and thirty acres; and there he continued to reside during the warm months, till his death, on Saturday, the 1st of October, 1881. He was at his place of business, in Boston, on Friday, and on his way home, towards night, called at the church in Lynn, to inspect the concluding work there. Up to the time of retiring at night he appeared in his usual health; but the next morning, before rising, was seized by a severe pain in the head. Medical attendance was promptly summoned, and every effort made for his relief, but without effect, and before noon he had breathed his last.

The burial service over the remains of Mr. Mudge was held in St. Stephen's Church, then just on the verge of completion, on Tuesday, the 4th of October. It was the first service of any kind ever held within those walls, was simple and in strict accordance with the rubrics. The edifice was entirely filled, large numbers of distinguished persons from abroad and many of the clergy being present. The large attendance of the authorities and citizens of Swampscott, and of the people of Lynn, indicated the high esteem in which he was held by his neighbors. The remains were conveyed to the cloister garth, and there, with prayer and sacred melody, and words of Heavenly promise and amid the tears of loved kindred, committed to their final resting-place.

The death of no one in this community has produced more wide-spread and unfeigned sorrow than that of Mr. Mudge, for he was universally respected for his integrity as a business man, his great liberality in the furtherance of all good works, and for his Christian principles and genial manners. By diligence, enterprise and uncommon business capacity he had accumulated a large fortune, which he evidently regarded as entrusted to him for a higher purpose than to be expended in mere self-gratification. For many of the latter years of his life he was extensively concerned in cotton and woolen manufacturing, though in earlier manhood his attention was directed to other pursuits.

Mr. Mudge undoubtedly regarded the erection of St. Stephen's Church as the crowning work of his life. And that elegant structure will long remain his noblest visible monument. It is gratifying to think that he lived to see the work well-nigh completed, though it may be lamented that in the ways of a mysterious Providence he was not spared for a few additional days that he might witness the solemn ceremony of consecration—a consummation he so devoutly contemplated. His sudden decease sent a thrill through the community such as is rarely experienced. And the numerous meetings that were held in Boston and elsewhere by business men and public associations, and the eulogistic addresses and resolutions of sympathy showed that one held in far more than ordinary esteem had been called from among us. Governor Alexander H. Rice, in an address before the Commercial Club at Boston, on the 15th of October, 1881, paid an affectionate tribute to the memory of Mr. Mudge, from which a few passages may be here introduced: "Mr. Mudge was so generally known and so universally respected and beloved, that since his departure every breath has seemed to bear his eulogy until the atmosphere has become eloquent with his praise." His biography "has all the merit and all the romance of so many American lives, which, from small beginnings, have widened into honorable and notable results. We, who lived in the same city with him and were familiar with his daily walk and conversation and deeds, hardly appreciated him until he was gone. It was difficult to enter the rounds of enterprise or charity and not encounter him; for he was so interested in

them all, that the whole social fabric seemed constituted with him as an elemental part, and all so interdependent with him, that we quite forgot the coming day when he would go, and the fabric stagger for a while under the loss of vitality which he contributed.

"I turned away from his grave the other day, as doubtless some of you did, with a sense of personal bereavement. The world seemed more vacant, life less cheerful; shadows fell in unwonted places, and we walked pensively and with hushed voices, lest we should disturb the supernatural silence that was abroad. A friend of mine, with whom Mr. Mudge had been intimate, came to my office and said: 'I feel as if I had lost something, and I grope about fruitlessly to find it, and return with a larger appreciation of what has gone from us.'

"Do we not, must we not, in the consideration of such a life and of such a death, feel an illumination which dispels the shades of sorrow?—a life so full of honor and so filled out in usefulness to its latest hours. In the church of his affections and in whose form of worship he delighted, among his life-long prayers was one that he might be delivered from sudden death; and his prayer was answered. No summons could be sudden to him; none find him unprepared. Besides, to such as he, especially,

> 'There is no death;
> What seems so is transition; this life of mortal breath
> Is but the suburb of the life elysian,
> Whose portal we call death.'"

In person Mr. Mudge was of full medium size, remarkably well formed, dignified in manners and always very attentive to those who addressed him, whether high or low. He was quick of apprehension, self-possessed, decided in his views and able at all times to give a reason for the faith that was in him. It was impossible for one to have intercourse with him for an hour and not perceive that he was a man of superior mental endowment. And those who had fellowship with him in church work were at once impressed with his fidelity to his clearly-defined principles, his bright, cheerful anticipations, and his freedom from bigotry.

For political honors he did not aspire, though he served a term in the State Senate. Yet he took commendable interest in public affairs, labored and expended liberally for the advancement of enterprises that he believed were for the public good. He manifested especial interest in young business men, gave lectures to them in Boston and improved every opportunity to urge upon them the formation of habits of strict integrity, industry and moral rectitude, as the ground on which alone permanent prosperity could rest. Though he made no pretensions as an orator, he was yet a very effective speaker and one who always secured the close attention of his auditors. His style was earnest and indicative of his own deep convictions. His language was well chosen, his points concisely and clearly presented, and his arguments effective from resting on a basis of sound common sense.

Mrs. Mudge survived her husband but a short time. And her remains, together with those of their children, Charles Redington and Fanny Olive, were laid beside his in the garth of St. Stephen's.

In 1886 the parish placed a fine chime of ten bells in the tower of the church, consecrating them "to the Triune God and the memory of him who gave the Church." The first ringing was on Easter-day.

CHAPTER CXXII.

SWAMPSCOTT—(*Continued*).

MISCELLANEOUS SUBJECTS.

Egg Rock—Sea-Serpent—War of the Rebellion—Statistics—Religious Societies and other Organizations.

EGG ROCK.—Directly in front of Swampscott, and about three miles distant, lies Egg Rock, solitary, time-worn and storm-riven. It rises eighty-six feet above the tide, and in outline, when viewed from the north, bears some resemblance to a couchant lion, a circumstance which, in poetic conceit, has produced the figure of the king of beasts on perpetual guard against invasions from the sea. True, it is not so perfect in delineation as the Lion of St. Mark's, that guards old Venice, or Belgium's Lion, that overlooks the field of Waterloo; but the elastic imagination is sufficient to supply deficiencies.

The Rock can be reached by small boats in calm weather, and a landing may be made at one point, and only one. It is of compact feldspar, three acres in extent, and has about one acre of arable soil. It was all in view of the celebrated scientist, Agassiz, as he meditatively sat upon the veranda of his delightful summer home at Nahant, and, as may well be supposed, attracted many an inquiring gaze,—inquiring as to its origin and age. It is said that he pronounced it an outcropping of the rocky base of Nahant, and asserted that it must have stood there, one of nature's earliest pyramids, ages before Europe emerged from the chaotic mass.

The name originated in the fact that formerly great numbers of sea-birds there deposited their eggs; few, however, are at present seen about there. The Rock was ceded to the United States in 1856, and a light-house soon after erected upon it, at a cost of three thousand seven hundred dollars, the light being shown for the first time on the night of the 15th of September, 1856. It was at first a white light, but in June, 1857, was changed to red. The dome is one hundred and seven feet above the sea.

It is in the waters about Egg Rock that the famous

sea-serpent has pursued his gambols, attracted, perhaps, by the abundance of his favorite food. Sharks, too, are sometimes seen, opening their hungry jaws for a dainty morsel, that may not be found in deeper water. And even the venturesome, or more probably bewildered, whale has occasionally been seen within the dangerous precinct. Anciently, great quantities of the smaller fish were found here, and some kinds that are now seldom seen; fish, as well as birds, having steadily retired before the pressing tide of human population.

"THE SEA-SERPENT.

"The great sea-snake 's the subject of my verse;
For, though my eyes have never yet beheld him,
Nor never shall desire the hideous sight,
Yet many accounts of men of truth unstained,
Whose every word I firmly do believe,
Show it to be a very frightful monster."

—*Peter Dass's Norland*, 1749.

Year after year come renewed accounts of the appearance of this monster of the deep upon our coast—accounts which, in any other case, would be received without doubt or suspicion. But, somehow, the word of the most truthful is here subjected to criticism; and while there may be no charge of deliberate falsehood, there is evidently a belief that some deceptive appearance, aided by awakened curiosity and credulity, have supplied the marvelous details. There certainly is no wonder that still a large majority of seaside residents have no belief in the existence of such a marine wanderer. To this day, with here and there an exception, the Swampscott fishermen, the yachtsmen and those living near the shore ridicule the idea of the existence of such a prodigy. Probably not above three in twelve of the old fishermen believe that anything more like a serpent than a horse-mackerel ever sported in these waters. But this is negative; and the positive testimony of even three credible persons may reasonably be expected to outweigh it in most minds. Three persons might see a thing that forty others did not see, though in a position where they could hardly have avoided the sight; but their not seeing it could not strike it out of existence.

The first appearance in the waters of Lynn and Swampscott, at least since the white settlers came, of what was supposed to be a sea-serpent, was in the summer of 1819, and the writer well remembers the excitement that for some days prevailed. Many people from all the region round about, some in carriages, some on horseback and more on foot, at times assembled on the beaches with glasses and straining eyes, to watch for the mysterious stranger. It happened to be the year in which the notable Nahant Hotel was built, the fame of which went rapidly abroad, attracting great numbers of genteel guests; but whether the serpent was emulous of being reckoned in with such company, or was merely summoned as an outside attraction, it is not the purpose here to inquire. No matter what the envious keepers of other establishments and their friends surmised.

There have been too many descriptions of the alleged sea-serpent, to require any particular details here; nevertheless, it may be well to quote a brief account given by Nathan D. Chase, who saw him on his first visit, in 1819. Mr. Chase was a man whose word was above reproach, and who had always lived so near the sea as to be little likely to be deceived by what might be the mere resemblance of a serpent; yet he was young and of course subject to the sometimes deceiving enthusiasm of youth. Says Mr. Chase: "I had the pleasure of seeing his snakeship off Long Beach and Red Rock. He passed along within one hundred feet from where I stood, giving me a very good sight of him. At that time he carried his head out of water about two feet, and his speed was like that of an ordinary ocean steamer. What I saw of his length was from fifty to sixty feet. It was very difficult to count the hunches, or bony fins, upon his back, as by his undulating motion they did not all appear at once. This accounts, in part, for the varied descriptions given of him by different parties. His appearance at the surface of the water was occasional, and but for a short time. This is the best description I can give of him from my own observation, and I saw the monster as truly, though not quite so clearly, as I ever saw anything."

Four respectable persons made oath to having seen him on the 20th of August, 1820. Their testimony is embodied in the following deposition of Andrew Reynolds, one of the number, the others concurring in his statements:

"I, Andrew Reynolds, of Lynn, of lawful age, depose and say: 'That on Saturday, the fifth day of August instant, about 1 o'clock P.M., I discovered in the water, near Phillips Beach, at Swampscott, an animal different from any that I had ever seen before. He was lying on the surface of the water, which was at that time very smooth, and appeared to be about 50 or 60 feet long. Jonathan B. Lewis and Benjamin King, who work in the same shop with me, also saw him, and we took a boat and rowed towards him. We approached within about 30 yards of him, and had a very distinct view of him. He had a head, about two feet long, and shaped somewhat like an egg, which he carried out of the water when he was moving. There were several protuberances on his back, the highest points of which appeared to be seven or eight inches above the level of the water. He was perfectly black. When we first drew towards him, he was moving westerly from Phillips Point, and as we drew near to him, he turned and moved eastward, and when we got within about thirty yards of him he sank under water and disappeared."

The learned naturalist Agassiz said, in a lecture delivered in Philadelphia, March 20, 1849:

"I have asked myself, in connection with this subject, whether there is not such an animal as the Sea-serpent. There are many who will doubt the existence of such a creature until it can be brought under the dissecting knife; but it has been seen by so many on whom we may rely, that it is wrong to doubt any longer. The truth is, however, that if a naturalist had to sketch the outlines of an Ichthyosaurus or Plesiosaurus from the remains we have of them, he would make a drawing very similar to the sea-serpent as it has been described. There is reason to think that the parts are soft and perishable, but I still consider it probable that it will be the good fortune of some person on the coast of Norway or North America to find a living representative of this type of reptile, which is thought to have died out."

In 1849, John Marston, a respectable and truthful resident of Swampscott, in an affidavit sworn to before



STRODEHURST,

RESIDENCE OF CHARLES W. GALLOUPE, ESQ.,

GALLOUPE'S POINT, SWAMPSCOTT, MASS.

Waldo Thompson, a justice of the peace, says that as he was walking over Nahant Beach, on the 3d of August, his attention was suddenly arrested by seeing in the water, within two or three hundred yards of the shore, a singular-looking fish, in the form of a serpent. He had a fair view of him, and at once concluded that he was the veritable sea-serpent. His head was out of water to the extent of about a foot, and he remained in view from fifteen to twenty minutes, when he swam off toward King's Beach. Mr. Marston judged that the animal was from eighty to a hundred feet in length at least, and says, "I saw the whole body of the serpent; not his wake, but the fish itself. It would rise in the water with an undulatory motion and then all his body would sink, except his head. Then his body would rise again. His head was above water all the time. This was about 8 o'clock A.M. It was quite calm. I have been constantly engaged in fishing since my youth, and I have seen all sorts of fishes, and hundreds of horse-mackerel, but I never before saw anything like this."

But there has been so much fanciful pro and con theorizing by learned naturalists on the question, that the tendency has been rather to increase than allay doubt. It is claimed by some—among them it is said Professor Baird is to be ranked—that fish have no maturity, and hence may live and grow perpetually. It is asserted that there is a pike now alive in Russia which was known to have been living as far back as the discovery of America by Columbus; and that in the Royal Aquarium at St. Petersburg are fish which were there nearly a century and a half ago. Now, if the supposed extinct Ichthyosaurus, or more likely the Plesiosaurus,—that enormous marine reptile, whose remains have been found,—were really fish (and the perpetuity of fish-life is admitted), is it unreasonable to suppose that an individual or two of the race may have escaped the common casualties of fish-life and survived to our time? And if the date of the sea-serpent's birth does really lie away off in pre-historic ages, he has had ample time to attain his enormous length. But if one has escaped to exhibit himself in these latter days, possibly a few others have, and perhaps, propagated in unknown seas, whence there has been a solitary emigration to our waters; or even more than one may have made his way hither, for the descriptions so vary as to warrant the conclusion that several are believed to have been seen. Sea-serpent stories are by no means new. They are found far back in history, and are always tinged by the apprehensions and superstitions of the times and places of their origin. Bishop Pontoppidan, of Norway, writing in 1751, says: "They tell me that these serpents fling themselves in a wide circle round a boat, so that the men are surrounded on all sides; and that they will sometimes raise up their frightful heads and snap a man out of a boat."

The remark that 1819 was the year of the first appearance of the sea-serpent in our waters was not strictly true, as related to some other places. He was described as having visited the waters of Cape Ann, one or two years before.

And the year 1886 becomes memorable for his again vouchsafing his presence there. Several of the numerous summer sojourners testify to having seen him, and give circumstantial accounts of his enormous proportions and dignified movements as he passed in review. But then Cape Ann and the adjacent waters have abounded in wonders ever since good old Roger Conant pitched his tent there. William Wood, of Lynn, who wrote in 1633, says,—"Some affirm that they have seen a lion at Cape Ann. . . . Some, likewise, being lost in the woods, have heard such terrible roarings as have made them much aghast, which must be either devils or lions." It is not probable that they were lions; but as to the other gentry, if the Cape is now free from them, it is more fortunate than some of its neighbors. And then again, Josselyn, under date 1638, tells of "A Sea-Serpent or Snake that lay quoiled up, like a cable, upon a Rock at Cape Ann. A boat passing by, with English aboard and two Indians, they would have shot the serpent, but the Indians disswaded them, saying that if he were not killed outright, they would be in danger of their lives." Very prudent of the Indians, but not so brave of the English. Had they killed or captured the monster, perhaps the great mystery of the sea-serpent that has so disturbed these times would have been solved.

The fact that in all cases when the spectators have been impelled to bravely approach the monster, he has pusillanimously sunk out of sight, would indicate that he was of a peaceful or timid disposition, and might, in the mind of a doubter, recall some of the legendary incidents of money-digging, wherein just as the treasure-chest seems within grasp, it suddenly sinks away and is no more seen. There are still lingering doubts as to whether the accounts concerning the sea-serpent should be regarded as veritable truth, or set down as a chapter in the great volume of "Fish Stories."

"STRODEHURST," the residence of Charles W. Galloupe, Esq., at Galloupe's Point (a partion of Phillips Point), Swampscott, is picturesquely situated upon a rocky bluff, fifty feet above the level of the ocean and but half a score of yards from its water's edge.

The mansion is of quaint, colonial architecture, four stories in height on the ocean side, the two lower stories being of brick, with stone trimmings, and the upper ones of wood, and is liberal in its dimensions, containing about forty rooms. The grounds are tastefully laid out in lawns, terraces and parterres, with a sufficiency of trees and shrubs, and it is, taken in all, a most lovely place.

Phillips Point, of which Galloupe's Point is a portion, includes the territory between the estate of Colonel John Jeffries and Little's Point, being limited by

Phillips Beach on the east and Whale's Beach on the west, and possibly it may originally have included the land upon which the Lincoln House now stands.

The name "Strodehurst" is taken from "Strode," in Dorsetshire County, England, an estate which is now, and has been, in the possession of the Gallop family for more than four centuries. John Gallop, for whom the island in Boston Harbor was named, the emigrant ancestor of the owner of "Strodehurst," was of the eighth generation in descent, and came to this country in the ship "Mary and John" in 1630.

The delightful and extensive views from this point, if equaled, are unsurpassed by any upon the shores of Massachusetts Bay. To the west, surmounted by High Rock (the home of Moll Pitcher), are seen the towns of Swampscott and Lynn, sloping gradually to the sea, their pretty residences, graceful church spires and monumental chimneys affording a most interesting and agreeable picture of busy, civilized life; farther to the west, the high lands of Saugus, Medford, Chelsea, Somerville and Bunker Hill form a pleasing and effective background to the sparkling waters and glittering sands of Revere, Crescent and Nahant beaches; to the southwest, Nahant, capped by the distant Blue Hills of Milton, curves its comely arm gracefully around the waters, forming a beautiful bay, which, if it does not emulate, certainly suggests its gorgeous sister of Naples. Between the surf-buffeted rocks of Nahant Point and the bleak and weather-beaten cliffs of Egg Rock rises, crowned with pretty houses, the summit of the Hill at Hull, upon which many of our Puritan ancestors found a home, long before the arrival of Winthrop and his company. To the south, Point Allerton, which vied with Hull (then Nataseot) and Plymouth in its welcome to our Pilgrim fathers; Nantasket, with its attractive beaches and hospitable people; Cohasset, with its tasteful summer-houses, and Scituate, with its church-crowned hills and its merciless, sea-jutting ledges, stretch along the horizon, until the lofty shaft of Minot's Light terminates the line of the landscape, leaving, interrupted only by the continually moving procession of white-winged vessels, the unbroken line of the ocean, until the rocky shores of Marblehead Neck complete one of the most charming and delightful panoramas upon the coast of the Atlantic.

The place is familiarly known, and has been long and gratefully enjoyed by the numerous summer visitors of the North Shore, who, through the liberality of the owners, have been allowed free access to the premises.

War of the Rebellion. — Swampscott furnished for actual service in the field one hundred and seventy-five men, and for the naval service twenty-five. Says Mr. Thompson, — "One hundred and twenty-nine of the men who enlisted in the army received a bounty. The whole amount of bounty money voted and paid by the town, together with that raised by subscription, was $27,375; other expenses, $5814.41; total expenses, $33,189.41. There were fifty-five men who enlisted in the army and twenty-nine in the navy who received no bounty. All the town's quotas under the different calls of the President were promptly filled, and at the close of the war a surplus of twenty-two men over all calls was remaining. . . . That the ladies of the town were equally patriotic with the men is shown by the fact that in the year 1862 they formed themselves into an association for the purpose of aiding the Swampscott soldiers, and by their devoted labors were able to contribute many supplies for their relief and comfort."

Lieutenant-Colonel Charles Redington Mudge, eldest son of Hon. E. R. Mudge, was killed at the battle of Gettysburg July 3, 1863. He was twenty-three years of age, a young officer of great promise, and at the time he was killed was in command of the regiment, gallantly leading on a charge. He was born in New York City, and graduated at Harvard with the 1860 class. His remains were brought to Lynn, and now repose in the consecrated garth of St. Stephen's Church.

Rev. Jonas B. Clark, who had for about twenty years been minister of the Trinitarian Congregational Society of Swampscott, enlisted as a chaplain in the army, and served faithfully till compelled by ill health to resign. Others became conspicuous for their bravery and soldierly traits, and, as a whole, the men from Swampscott acquitted themselves in so meritorious a manner as to receive much commendation.

In 1883 the Soldiers' Monument, in Monument Square, was erected. It is a granite shaft, with bronze trimmings, and cost two thousand nine hundred and forty-three dollars. Its height is thirty feet, and it has four bronze tablets, on two of which are inscribed the names of the fourteen soldiers who fell in defense of their country.

It was proposed to place at the foot of the monument an old cannon, already referred to, bearing the date 1798, and some insignia of British royalty, which has an interesting history, though not specially connected with our Civil War. It was captured by the privateer "Grand Turk," during the War of 1812, the vessel on board of which was Captain Thomas Widger, who died at Swampscott, January 21, 1871, aged eighty. Some time after its capture it was brought hither and used in firing salutes on all sorts of public occasions. Its most lamentable performance, at least since it quit the work to which it was originally destined, was on the 4th of July, 1857. On that day John Draper and Henry Scales, while firing a patriotic salute, were fatally injured by a premature discharge. Draper had an arm broken, an eye destroyed and was otherwise injured. He was taken to the Massachusetts Hospital, and in about two months died of lockjaw. Scales received a bad wound in the bowels, and had an arm broken. He also was taken to the hospital and there died. The venerable war-

like relic, however, is not now (May, 1887) at its proposed resting-place near the monument, but, owing to some untoward circumstances, rests on the premises of a Lynn junk dealer.

STATISTICAL ITEMS.—*Population.*—As elsewhere remarked, Swampscott was set off from Lynn and incorporated as a separate town in 1852. Since then the population has been as follows: 1855, 1335; 1865, 1535; 1875, 2128; 1885, 2471.

Valuation and Taxation, 1886.—Total valuation, $3,658,460; of which $1,275,405 was personal estate, and $2,383,055 real. Number of tax-payers, 931, of whom 347 paid only poll-tax. Rate of taxation, $9.50 on $1000.

Town Debt, 1886.—$55,500.

Appropriations and Expenditures, 1886.—Whole amount of appropriations, including receipts, $50,-214.01. Expenditures, $50,725.47.

Dwellings, Polls, 1886.—Number of dwelling-houses, 555. Polls, 657.

Schools, 1886.—High School, 1; grammar schools, 2; intermediate, 4; primary, 3. Appropriation for support of schools (including $23.37 from State School Board), $8523.37. Expenditures, $7664.36.

Public Library, 1886.—Number of volumes, 5055. Circulation during the year, 14,935. Appropriation (including certain receipts, amounting to $22.50 and dog-taxes amounting to $262.60), $585.10. Expenditures, $527.19.

Births, Marriages and Deaths, 1886.—Whole number of births, 51,—males, 29; females, 22. Marriages, 24. Deaths, whole number, 40,—males, 16; females, 24.

Cemetery.—The Swampscott Cemetery was consecrated September 16, 1854, the address being delivered by Rev. Jonas B. Clark. Up to January 1, 1886, the whole number of interments was 783. Interments in 1886, 26. Expenditures for 1886, $219.29. Receiving tomb built 1884.

Appropriation for the Poor, 1886.—$1500.

Value of Public Property, 1886, including Town House, school-houses and other real estate, together with the apparatus and other personal estate in use by the various departments, $71,353.70.

RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES AND OTHER ORGANIZATIONS.

RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.—The *First Congregational* Society was formed on July 15, 1846, and was the first church organization in the village. Rev. Jonas B. Clark was the first minister. In 1854 a *Methodist* Society was formed, Rev. E. J. Best being the first minister. A *Christian* Society was formed in 1865, and a chapel erected on Burrill Street, Elder W. L. Hayden being the first minister. A *Baptist* Society was formed in 1872, and Rev. Lucian Drury settled as pastor. All the above societies have good houses of worship, and are zealous to promote the spiritual advancement of the people. And it should not be omitted to mention that *Unitarian* and *Universalist* services have been held at intervals for a number of years, especially during the warm season.

Other leading organizations are: The *Free Public Library;* Post No. 118, *Grand Army of the Republic;* Swampscott *Lodge of Odd Fellows.*

CHAPTER CXXIII.

SWAMPSCOTT—(*Continued*).

INDUSTRIAL PURSUITS.

Agriculture—Manufactures—Fisheries.

AGRICULTURE.—Swampscott can hardly be ranked as an agricultural town, though it has productive land, and the sea throws up a liberal contribution of valuable manure. From recently published statistics, it appears that the number of farms is 15; yearly value of products, $16,000; bushels of potatoes raised, 1805; dozens of eggs, 4200; gallons of milk, 23,750; tons of hay, 447; number of horses, 251; number of cows, 137.

MANUFACTURES.—Swampscott cannot certainly be called a manufacturing place. To the present time, indeed, it has been more of a farming than manufacturing town. But the fisheries have always taken precedence of all other industries. So little has been done in manufactures that the public reports have often passed them by unnoticed. Yet shoemaking has long been engaged in to some extent, especially in former days, as a winter occupation.

FISHERIES.—Fishing continues to be the great business of Swampscott, as it has been almost from the first settlement, though it is now conducted in quite a different way from what it formerly was. The settlers soon discovered that the bay was stored with fish in great variety and great plenty. The following quaint lines of an old rhymester enumerates some of the then most common kinds:

"Nor must we from our list leave out the stores of savory fish,
That fill the ponds and fill the sea and make the dainty dish.
The codd, the haddock, halibut, the eel and pickerell,
The alewife, perch, bass and tautog, the smelt and mackerell.
Lobsters and crabbs too, so abound, 'tis marvelous to see;
And mussels, clamms and great quahaugs make up variety.
Then why should wee not live to eat, as well as eat to live,
And bless the Lord who gave the meat and pray him e'er to give?"

The Swampscott fishermen were engaged only in dory-fishing down to about the close of the last century, it being in 1795, according to Mr. Thompson, that the first schooner was purchased. She was of twenty tons burden, and named the "Dove." Two years afterward she was totally wrecked in a storm. Soon after, another schooner, named the "Lark," a trifle smaller than the "Dove," was procured, and in 1799 she was also lost, having sunk near her moor-

ings. But it was not many years before quite a fleet of "jiggers," as they were called, stanch and graceful craft, made lively the Swampscott waters and the deep sea beyond.

The neat little volume lately published by Mr. Waldo Thompson, entitled "Sketches of Swampscott," to which reference has already been several times made, contains many interesting facts regarding the place, its people and business. And we cannot do better than introduce in this connection some of his items regarding the fishing business and kindred employments.

"December 16, 1826, six schooners went out from Swampscott in the morning and returned at night with fifty thousand pounds of fish, chiefly cod.

"About the year 1828 oil clothing began to take the place of leather, and in a few years the old, heavy and expensive equipment was known no more.

"In the year 1832 there were ten small vessels, manned by eighty men, engaged in winter fishing, and about sixty dorymen in summer.

"In the year 1855 there were thirty-nine vessels engaged in the mackerel and cod-fishing, aggregating one thousand tons. There were captured five thousand barrels of mackerel, valued at $50,000, also fifty-six thousand one hundred and sixty quintals of codfish. $6300 worth of cod liver oil was sold for medicinal purposes.

"A horse mackerel was caught August 20, 1855, which weighed one thousand pounds; it was ten feet long, and six feet round in the thickest part. A sunfish was also caught off Swampscott, which weighed two hundred and fifty pounds.

"In 1856 the schooner 'Flight' caught sixty-two thousand and seven hundred pounds of codfish in thirteen hours. The schooner 'Jane' caught a large trip, and twelve of her fish weighed on an average fifty-six pounds; Captain Nathaniel Blanchard caught one cod which weighed ninety-four pounds.

"Some of the fishermen began to use trawls in 1857. A trawl has from six hundred to ten thousand hooks; the lines are made of cotton.

"February 25, 1863. The Swampscott fishing fleet landed one hundred and fifty thousand pounds of fish on Blaney's Beach.

"In 1864 the 'Minnehaha' caught off Boon Island three hundred and fifty barrels, and the 'Flying Dart' one hundred and thirty barrels of mackerel in about four hours.

"September 26, 1865 Augustus Story caught a halibut which weighed one hundred and ninety-four pounds. He received $54.32 for his prize.

"February 16, 1872. The schooner "Champion," with a crew of twelve men, caught thirty thousand pounds of fish, which sold at four cents a pound. The next day's catch yielded $72.00 per man.

"While J. G. Twisden was fishing in the bay, in 1878, he lost his two-pound lead and line, and, a few days afterwards, fishing near the same place, he captured the fish that deprived him of his tackle a few days before. [This reminds the writer that when a youth, fishing from Nahant rocks, a finny marauder snapped off his bait and hook. Replacing the lost property and continuing the sport, he some hours afterward drew up the depredator with the stolen hook piercing his upper lip.]

"In 1879 the schooner 'Alice M. Hawkes' brought in forty-nine thousand pounds of codfish in one day.

"In 1880 Captain Henry Y. Hatch, while fishing in the bay off Swampscott, caught a halibut weighing three hundred and sixty pounds."

Mr. Thompson mentions that while Colonel Stetson kept the Astor House, in New York, he sent him a lobster, taken off Swampscott, that weighed twenty-two pounds. He likewise records that in September, 1882, Isaac Newcomb, one of the crew of the "Zeppie," caught an electric fish weighing three hundred pounds. When taking it from the hook he received a shock that knocked him over, and Warren Jaquith, who grasped the tail of the fish, also received a severe shock. It was of the species sometimes called cramp-fish, electric ray, or torpedo. Sickness at the stomach is sometimes produced by the touch.

LOBSTERS.—The lobster catch along our coast has been large and profitable for many years. The trapping of lobsters was first practiced at Swampscott in 1808 by Ebenezer Thorndike, who had twelve pots. For the year ending May 1, 1865, there were caught at Swampscott thirty-seven thousand lobsters, averaging in value, as taken from the pots, six cents each. Since that time the annual catch has gradually diminished. For the quarter ending December 3, 1880, the district of Lynn, Nahant and Swampscott returned as the product of their lobster-fishery seven thousand pounds. In consequence of the growing fears that the lobster would be exterminated from our coast, the Legislature has of late attempted to do something for its preservation. Yet one would think there cannot be much danger in that direction, as naturalists inform us that a single female lobster will in one year lay forty-two thousand eggs. But probably other fish help themselves to the greater share.

As to the other fisheries, the district returned for the same quarter, that ending December 3, 1880, of cured codfish, 300,000 pounds; mackerel, 400,000 pounds; salted herring, 100,000 pounds. Of fresh fish, a daily catch of 315,000 pounds was returned; the whole, with a few other items, making up a total value of $44,141.50.

In 1886 the Swampscott fishing fleet numbered from twenty to twenty-five sail.

CHAPTER CXXIV.

SWAMPSCOTT—(*Continued*).

HISTORICAL COMPEND.

1629. Francis Ingalls, the first settler of Swampscott arrived. The whole territory, comprising Lynn, Lynnfield, Nahant, Saugus and Swampscott, was called Saugus—an old Indian name—till 1637, when the name was changed to Lynn. Swampscott was made a separate town in 1852.

1630. A brick-kiln set up in Swampscott, near Humfrey's Brook.

1632. Francis Ingalls commences a tannery. This is stated by some local historians to have been the first tannery in New England. But it is a mistake, as there were tanneries in Plymouth several years before. It was, no doubt, the first in Massachusetts Colony. In 1825 a hide, in good preservation, was found in one of the long-forgotten vats.

1634. Hot summer, with long drought.

1638. First division of lands among the settlers. May 3d, a violent gale, with heavy sea.

1642. Daniel King, from whom the name of King's Beach was derived, settles in Swampscott. The winter of this year was exceedingly cold, and there was much snow.

1650. The first Swampscott settler named Phillips, arrives.

1651. The three Baptist missionaries from Rhode Island, Clarke, Crandall and Holmes, are arrested at the house of William Witter, in Swampscott, for disturbing the peace in disseminating their doctrines. They were convicted and punished.

1659. Road to Marblehead over the beaches laid out, in July. The part between Ocean Street and King's Beach, say the committee, "has been a country highway thirty and odd years, to the knowledge of many of us." The "odd years," at least, must have been an exaggeration, as they would place it beyond the arrival of the first settlers.

1666. Nathaniel Bishop and Hope Allen, curriers, petition the court to forbid tanners and shoemakers exercising the trade of curriers. But the court judged "it not meete to grant y° peticoners' request."

1671, Jan. 18th. Violent storm, with thunder and lightning. Other remarkable storms during the year.

1672. There appears to have been no professed musician in the colony up to this time, and no dancing-school till the one established this year, which, however, was soon suppressed by the law. A heavy easterly storm, Nov. 10th, brought in "so great a tyde as hath not bene this 36 years."

1673. A new road to Marblehead laid out, north of the former one; the same now forming the extension of Essex Street, Lynn.

1679. A new troop was formed this year, consisting of forty-eight men. Ralph King was lieutenant.

1688. Ralph King actively opposes Randolph's petition for a gift of Nahant.

1689. Capt. Ralph King died. The appraised value of his estate was £2365 4*s*.

1696. Great clams in immense numbers were cast up on the beaches by the storms of this year, and the town voted that the inhabitants might gather all they wished for their own use; but none were to be carried out of town.

1703. Walter Phillips, Sr., a Quaker, for refusing to perform military duty, had a fourth of an acre of his land seized and sold for the payment of his fine.

1706. Second division of lands among the settlers.

1723, Feb. 24th. A terrific storm, occasioning, says Mr. Dexter in his diary, "Ye mightyest overflowing of ye sea yt was almost ever known in this Country."

1751, Feb. 8th. Capt. Benjamin Blaney, of Swampscott, was killed in Malden, by falling from his horse.

1755, Dec. 9th. A whale seventy-five feet in length landed on King's Beach. Dr. Henry Burchstead rode into his mouth in a chair drawn by a horse.

1761, Sep. 6th. Ebenezer Burrill dies in Swampscott, aged eighty-two. He was born at Tower Hill, in Lynn, and removed to Swampscott, being the first of the Burrills here. His father, John Burrill, gave him the Swampscott estate, and he lived in the "farm-house" still standing on the E. R. Mudge estate. He was for nine years a crown counselor.

1775, April 19th. The battle of Lexington. Among those killed in this, the opening conflict of the Revolution, was Abednego Ramsdell, of Swampscott, who was a son of Noah Ramsdell, and had elder brothers Shadrach and Meshech. He was a young man of twenty-four years, somewhat of a sportsman, and on the morning of the fatal day was out on a gunning tramp. On his return he heard of the march of the British troops toward Concord, and dropping the game he had secured—two black ducks, says Mr. Lewis—and without stopping to eat of the waiting breakfast, seized a ration of Indian cake, and gun in hand hastened off to the field of expected conflict. He reached Lexington about noon, and had time to fire but one or two shots before a British bullet laid him low. His wife was Hannah Woodbury, whom he married March 10, 1774.

1776. A midnight alarm that the English had landed on King's Beach occasioned great consternation. Many fled to the woods. The military rallied, but had not marched far when it was found to be a false alarm.

1795. First Swampscott fishing schooner, called a "jigger," fitted out. Previously there was only dory-fishing.

1808. Trapping of lobsters first practiced at Swampscott.

1815, September 23d. Terrific southeasterly gale. The ocean spray was driven inland several miles, and fruit was impregnated with salt. Some declared that it rained salt-water.

1819, August. The first-known appearance of the renowned Sea-serpent in Swampscott Bay.

1828. May 2d. A whale sixty to seventy feet in length landed on Whale Beach.

1829, October 31st. The stone beacon on the outer cliff of Dread Ledge was thrown down in a storm. It was erected a short time before, by the United States government, at an expense of one thousand dollars. Another, of granite, twenty-five feet in height, and three feet square at the base, was erected in 1831. In March, 1864, this last was broken off by the violence of the sea, during a severe gale.

1830, July 12th. Joseph Blaney, aged 52 years, while fishing, had his boat overturned by a shark, which sprang into it. Mr. Blaney was not seen afterwards, having, no doubt, been devoured by his voracious assailant.

1833, November 13th. Extraordinary shower of meteors. Friction matches come into general use, superseding the old tinder-box with flint and steel.

1838. Eastern Railroad opened for travel. Regular trains first passed through Swampscott August 28th.

1839. Swampscott suffered greatly by a severe

storm that began December 15th, and continued three days.

1843. February 1st. A splendid comet appeared about noonday.

1844. September 6th. Great Democratic clam-bake at Swampscott,—a political demonstration, attended by twenty-five thousand people. The escort was composed of four military companies, with bands of music. One hundred and seventy barrels of clams and one thousand lobsters were among the articles of food provided. Hon. Robert Rantoul, Jr., was orator of the day.

1846. The Rockaway House and contiguous buildings destroyed by fire, January 1st; loss, twenty thousand dollars. Swampscott post-office established, and Waldo Thompson appointed postmaster. First lifeboat received. First Congregational meeting-house dedicated, July 15th.

1849. Gold discoveries in California. Several men went from Swampscott to seek their fortunes. September, James C. Lamphier found a dead turtle off Swampscott Beach, weighing six hundred pounds. It was eight feet, six inches from end of nose to end of tail, and the shell was six feet long, and three and a half wide.

1851, October 26th. British schooner "Brothers" wrecked at night, off Swampscott, by striking on Outer Ledge. Outcries of crew heard about midnight and all, seven in number, saved.

1852. Swampscott incorporated as a separate town. The event was celebrated with much enthusiasm. A procession was formed, and, with a band of music and banners, made a protracted march through the streets. At the post-office Rev. J. B. Clark delivered an appropriate address, and in the evening there was a display of fire-works. In the procession was an ensign that waved at the masthead of the frigate "Constitution" during her triumphant battle with the "Guerriere," August 19, 1812. When Lynn adopted the city form of government, in 1850, Swampscott, then being Ward 1 of the town, strongly opposed the change. And it was at that time that the desire to separate began to take determined shape.

1854. August 3d. A white-faced seal, four feet in length, shot off Swampscott.

1855. In the early part of this year considerable damage was done by the sea, to embankments especially. Bathing-houses were thrown down and King's Beach at times completely overflowed. Deep seasoning commenced this year.

1856. About the middle of February a large humpback whale was seen several times near the Swampscott shore. A severe northeast storm began April 19th and continued two days. The steeple of the Methodist meeting-house, then in process of erection, was blown down. The first Methodist house of worship in Swampscott, dedicated June 30th, Bishop Simpson preaching the sermon. A severe thunderstorm August 5th; house of John Blancy struck. Within a circuit of ten miles the lightning struck in some twenty places. Egg Rock light first shown September 15th.

1857, January 18th. Bark "Tedesco" wrecked at Long Rock, Swampscott, in a terrible snow-storm, the cold being intense. All on board, twelve in number, perished. The remains of six were buried from the Methodist meeting-house, Swampscott, at one time. The "Tedesco" was from Cadiz, with a cargo of wine and salt. Trawl-fishing began to be practiced this year. June 13th, barn of Captain Fuller, in Humfrey Street, burned, the fire being occasioned by two little boys playing with matches. One of the boys was burned to death.

1858. Joseph Hill, aged twenty, was instantly killed by the accidental discharge of a fowling-piece while gunning at Swampscott, March 3d. On the afternoon of August 6th a barn belonging to Jonathan F. Phillips was struck by lightning and burned, with fifty tons of hay. The famous trotting mare, Lady Lawrence, valued at a thousand dollars, being in the barn, was killed by the lightning. October 13th, first electric telegraph to Swampscott completed. Blue fish appear in the offing in great numbers during the autumn, and countless numbers of menhaden are found dead upon the shore—probably killed by the blue-fish.

1860. In January an unusual amount of ice accumulated in the bay. Great shoemakers' strike commenced in Lynn. Many of the craft in Swampscott joined. November 3d, a severe storm. The "Gazelle," a small vessel belonging to Gloucester, broke from her moorings and went to pieces on King's Beach.

1861. The great Civil War commences. Swampscott furnished for service in the field one hundred and seventy-five, and for the naval service twenty-five. Town Hall built, at cost of four thousand six hundred and fourteen dollars. Enlarged in 1882 at cost of two thousand five hundred and eighty-eight dollars. In 1884 the tower was built, the bell raised and fire alarm connected.

1862. Swampscott Library Association formed.

1863, July 3d. Lieutenant-Colonel Charles Redington Mudge, of Swampscott, killed at the battle of Gettysburg. Extraordinary number of caterpillars appear in the summer.

1865, April. The fall of Richmond and return of peace celebrated at Swampscott with much enthusiasm. A procession marched through the streets, bonfires were lighted and many buildings illuminated. April 15th, News of President Lincoln's assassination received at Swampscott with manifestations of deep sorrow. Popular indignation towards one individual who expressed gratification at the event culminated in the application of a coat of tar and feathers. Extraordinary drought from July 25th to October 15th. Meteorologists claimed that it had not been equaled in eighty-one years.

1867, January 17th. Terrific snow-storm. No

storm for twenty-five years equaled it except that of January 18, 1857, when the "Tedesco" was wrecked. And on the 21st the tide rose higher than at any time since the storm that carried away Minot's Ledge light-house, April 15, 1851. A beautiful mirage in the bay June 23d. Immense quantities of mackerel appeared in the offing in July. Several whales and horse-mackerel followed in pursuit. August 10th, a swing-tail shark, fifteen feet in length, was taken off Swampscott, in a net, and sold to Professor Agassiz. This is a rare fish on our coast. September 3d, Encampment of Second Brigade of Massachusetts Volunteer Militia commenced at Swampscott.

1868. Atlantic Avenue, from Humfrey Square to Marblehead through Beach Bluff, laid out.

1869, September 8th. A very severe gale in the afternoon; next in violence to that of 1815. Considerable havoc was made among the yachts and small shipping at Swampscott. September 29th, a blue heron, a very rare bird in this region, shot in Swampscott woods. Its height, when standing upright, was nearly four feet, and its spread wings measured some five feet from tip to tip.

1870, April 3d. On Sunday, about midnight, the brig "Fred Bliss" was wrecked on the Swampscott shore, near the Ocean House, a few rods from where the "Tedesco" was wrecked in 1857. The crew, though in much danger, were saved. A violent storm and heavy sea were raging. The brig was driven so far up that a plank was laid from the deck to the shore. A regatta took place at Swampscott in the summer, yachts from New York and other places taking part.

1872. Several extremely cold days in the early part of March. Ice formed all the way between Swampscott and Nahant. On the 7th, fishermen were able to walk on the ice to their vessels at the moorings—a feat they were not able to perform before for nineteen years. The summer was remarkable for excessive heat, the frequency and severity of thunder-showers, and for the abundance of mosquitos and house flies. September 25th, Joseph Harding died, aged ninety-seven. He was supposed to be the oldest Free Mason in the State, having joined the Adams Lodge, in Wellfleet, in 1800. So famed had Swampscott now become as a watering-place, that it was estimated that as many as ten thousand visitors were there during the warm season. The strange horse disease known as epizootic prevailed in the autumn.

1873. Branch railroad from Swampscott to Marblehead opened October 20th. November 17th, the three-masted schooner "Robert Raikes" struck on the "outer ledge," Swampscott, near midnight, during a severe storm, and was completely wrecked. All on board, five in number, perished. Two brothers of the captain, who were elsewhere exposed to the same storm, also lost their lives.

1874. Some Indian remains were exhumed at Swampscott during the summer. Horse railroad from Lynn extended to Upper Swampscott.

1876. The "equinoctial storm" set in suddenly and with much violence, on the evening of March 20th; three or four of the fishing jiggers were wrenched from their moorings, driven on shore, or wrecked on the rocks. April 2d, the beautiful summer residence of Charles W. Galloupe totally destroyed by fire; loss, some sixty thousand dollars. A hair-seal, weighing ninety-five pounds, taken off Swampscott.

1877, March 9th. A storm, with a high wind, attaining a velocity of seventy-two miles per hour, prevailed. For several days in September, at night, the waves dashing along the shores exhibited an extraordinary phosphorescent glow. The spectacle was grand and attracted multitudes. A strong east wind had brought in a heavy sea.

1878, Dec. 17th. This is the date on which United States paper currency reached par value for the first time in sixteen years—that is, when one hundred dollars in greenback government notes would purchase one hundred dollars in gold. The former depreciation was, of course, attributable to the Civil War. The extreme of depreciation was in July, 1864, when two hundred and eighty-five dollars in notes were required for the purchase of one hundred dollars in gold.

1879. The post-office at Beach Bluff established. A bald-headed eagle, weighing eighteen pounds, shot on Blaney's Beach. Two Indian tomahawks dug up on farm of E. B. Phillips.

1880. A number of icebergs seen in the distance by Swampscott fishermen. May, a severe thunder-storm. The lightning struck in nine places, in Swampscott, among them the "farm-house" on the E. R. Mudge estate. "Summit Villa," on the Galloupe estate, Swampscott, was destroyed by fire, with most of its contents, June 2d; loss, fifteen thousand dollars. It was rented to Com. Hutchins, of New York. November 22d, a beautiful mirage appeared in the bay.

1881, May 14th. Horse cars began to run as far as Monument Square. Sept. 16th, memorial services on death of President Garfield. Address by Rev. J. B. Clark. October 1st, Hon. Enoch Redington Mudge dies, aged sixty-nine.

1882, August 4th. Nickerson's oil clothing factory burned. Miss Emma Stone, an employee, lost her life. Loss of property, about nine thousand dollars. September 6th, Jonathan Blaney's house, "Hillside," destroyed by fire. September 6th, Ocean House, near Whale Beach, destroyed by fire; loss, about sixty thousand dollars. Tubular wells, twenty in number, sunk to depth of thirty feet by Swampscott Company. A splendid comet adorned the southeastern sky for several weeks in October and November. It rose a few hours before the sun.

1883. First steam fire-engine purchased. Soldiers' Monument erected. The residence known as Cedar Hill Cottage burned; loss, five thousand five hundred dollars.

1884, June 25th. Horse-cars begin to run to Marblehead.

1886, September 25th. Capt. Martin V. B. Stone, yachtsman, of Swampscott, receives an ovation in consideration of his triumph in the race for the America's prize cup between the yacht "Mayflower," under his command, and the English yacht "Galatea," under command of Lieutenant Henn. A gold watch embellished by an engraved representation of the yacht was presented by his fellow-townsmen.

Closing Remarks.—But little space is required for the few closing remarks that seem desirable. It has been seen that the first settlers, with hardly an exception, were from the toiling ranks; manual labor was a necessity with nearly every one; and to this may in a measure be attributed the fact that years passed without the presentation of any specially marked character or incident. Extreme physical want was, indeed, not known, but it required constant exertion and vigilance to keep the wolf from the door. It was not till after generations appeared that some of the nobler family traits became conspicuous. Penury is not a congenial soil for the growth of those higher intellectural powers that need persevering study and deep meditation. Says Bulwer: "How many noble natures, how many glorious hopes, how much of the seraph's intellect, have been crushed into the mire or blasted into guilt by the mere force of physical want!" But the Burrills, Kings, Blaneys and Phillipses appeared, opened new avennes of progress and infused new energies. In these later days, as has been seen, Swampscott is by no means found lagging behind her neighbors in the paths of refinement and influence.

It may not be amiss to again direct attention to the varied and picturesque scenery of Swampscott, which, in conjunction with invigorating airs, unsurpassed facilities for sea-bathing, interesting drives and convenient means for frequent intercourse with the metropolis, has rendered her so famous as a watering-place. Perhaps no place on the New England coast can present greater attractions for the jaded city denizen who would seek a temporary home for the days of summer vacation. But the most enjoyable feature is the ocean. The ocean has peculiar attractions. And who can wonder that its deep mysteries have in all ages induced feelings akin to adoration in the contemplative mind,—

> "Earth speaks of man,—
> Her level'd mountains, and her cultur'd vales,
> Town, tree, and temple, and triumphal arch,
> All speak of him, and moulder while they speak.
> But of whose architecture and design,
> Speak thine eternal fountains, when they rise
> To combat with the cloud, and when they fall?
> Of whose strong culture tell thy sunless plants,
> And groves and gardens, which no mortal eye
> Hath seen and lived
> What chisel's skill hath wrought
> These coral monuments, and tombs of pearl,
> Where sleeps the sea-boy 'mid a pomp that earth
> Ne'er showed her buried kings?
> From whose loom
> Came forth thy drapery, that never waxeth old,
> Nor blancheth 'neath stern winter's direst frost?
> Who hath thy keys, thou Deep?—Who taketh note
> Of all thy wealth?—Who numbereth the host
> That find their rest in thee?"

BIOGRAPHICAL.

ENOCH R. MUDGE.

Enoch Redington Mudge was a descendant of Thomas Mudge, who was born in England about the year 1624, and appeared in Malden, Mass., in 1657. His father, Rev. Enoch Mudge, was born in Lynn, June 28, 1776, and was the first native Methodist preacher in New England. He was received in the New England Conference as a preacher in August, 1793; received deacon's orders at the age of seventeen and orders as elder at the age of twenty-one. He finally made Orrington, Maine, his home, where he married Widow Jerusha Hinckley, a daughter of John and Ruth Holbrook, of Wellfleet, Mass. His children born in Orrington were Solomon Hinckley, born January 18, 1803; Anne Bickford, January 15, 1806; Mary Atwell, February 18, 1810; and Enoch Redington, March 22, 1812. He died in Lynn April 2, 1850.

The subject of this sketch received his education in the various places where his father was stationed, and at the age of fifteen years became a clerk in the banking-house of S. & M. Allen, of Portland, Maine. His connection with this business was of short duration, owing to the failure of his employers, but it was sufficiently long to train him in the business of banker, which, in after-life, when he had achieved success, he re-entered with a competent knowledge of its methods and means.

His next venture was in the commission business on his own account in Portland, which continued until his failure, in 1835, when, at the age of twenty-three, he went to New York and became a clerk in the Astor House, then recently opened under the management of Coleman & Stetson.

In 1840 he went to New Orleans, where, until 1845, he was the proprietor of the St. Charles Hotel, then new. New Orleans was, at that time, in the height of its prosperity, and the St. Charles became at once the leading hotel,—the gathering-place of the merchants and a sort of exchange. During his five years management of this house Mr. Mudge acquired what was then considered a fortune, and in 1845 returned to New York and became interested in manufactures. In 1846 he built the Saratoga Victory Cotton Mills, acting as its treasurer, and buying his own cotton in the New Orleans market. He next formed a connection with David Nevins, in the importation of dry-



E. D. Mudge



Edwin B. Phillips

goods, and shortly after established, in Boston, the banking-house of Fay, Mudge & Atwood, which continued in business until 1857.

The great ability of Mr. Mudge, which had led him so truly and successfully along the difficult paths of business life, soon attracted the notice of manufacturers, and at their solicitation he established a commission-house in Boston, with a branch in New York, having the agencies of the Washington Mills, the Chicopee Cotton Mills, the Burlington Woolen Mills, and the Victory Cotton Mills, of the last of which he had continued from its establishment to be the treasurer. These mills, with a capital of three millions of dollars, ran ninety thousand spindles, and with four thousand operatives, yielded a product valued at nine millions of dollars, which was sold by the house of E. R. Mudge & Co., and manufactured under their direction.

Mr. Mudge, while in business in Boston, held his residence in Swampscott, and in 1868 represented the First Senatorial District of Essex County in the State Senate. His life was active to the last, and while pursuing, with zeal and energy, his large and increasing business he was stricken down while his career seemed far from finished, and died at his home in Swampscott, in 1881, at the age of sixty-nine years.

Though Mr. Mudge seemed immersed in the overwhelming duties of a business life, he lost no opportunity to educate an intellect naturally strong, and cultivate tastes which seemed a part of his refined and gentle nature. For the gratification of these tastes he possessed ample means, and he surrounded himself with books and paintings and works of art, which not only illustrated his fondness for the beautful in life, but taught him daily lessons for its higher elevation and advancement.

Mr. Mudge was a man of an affable and winning deportment and won not only the respect, but affection of those about him. After his death the Board of Trade of Boston, of which he was an active and honored member, held a special meeting to express the feelings of the Board relative to the sad event, and appointed a committee, which reported an address appropriate to the occasion. It said: "In the life of our late associate, Enoch Redington Mudge, we have seen how large a place, and many-sided, a good man can fill. A tender and loving husband and father; a Christian gentleman, tolerant of the sincere opinions of others, yet firm in the courteous assertion of his own; a devoted lover of his country, ready for any sacrifice in her hour of peril, and a partisan only for her sake; an open-handed and warm-hearted philanthropist, earnest in all good works; a good citizen, faithful to every public duty; courteous, genial, hospitable as a companion and neighbor, possessing, in a rare degree, the high qualities which give assurance of a man worthy the respect and admiration of other good men; such was Mr. Mudge, and in these characteristics he will be honorably and fitly remembered by other bodies than ours in which he has borne a part.

"It is of Mr. Mudge in his character as a man of business, as a manufacturer and an eminent merchant, it is most fitting that the Boston Board of Trade and other commercial bodies should speak. In business he was successful beyond the hopes of all but the few and foremost. In his own lectures to the young men of Boston, he taught the lesson of commercial success, the key to his own—the alliance of strict integrity with devoted attention to business, fidelity to every trust, with cool and sagacious study of the markets and of events that affect markets. But Mr. Mudge was successful beyond the accumulation of wealth, beyond anything of which he could teach the art to others. His self-possession and courage in emergencies, his quiet, but great force of will and gracious power of influence, quick perception of opportunity, sagacity that rarely failed to distinguish between the safe and dangerous in the character of persons, or circumstance, were qualities not granted to all men to hold in such large measure, combined with his moral qualities. . . .

"The merchants of Boston feel that in the sudden death of Mr. Mudge they are deeply grieved. In this affliction they gratefully remember that the influence of his useful life will survive as an example of what a merchant's life should be, and they desire that the officers of this meeting convey to the family of Mr. Mudge a suitable expression of sympathy of the members in their great sorrow under this bereavement."

Mr. Mudge married, May 9, 1832, Caroline A. Patten, daughter of John and Olive Patten, of Portland, and had the following children: Olive Patten, born February 12, 1835; Fanny Olive, August 5, 1837; Charles Redington, October 22, 1839; Lucy Anne Jerusha, July 20, 1841; Marie Louise, July 12, 1844; Caroline Estelle, July 9, 1850; and Henry Sanford, July 1, 1852.

Charles Redington Mudge, the oldest son, graduated at Harvard in 1860, and was commissioned first lieutenant in the Second Massachusetts Volunteers, May 25, 1861. He was made captain July 8, 1861, major November 9, 1862, lieutenant-colonel June 6, 1863, and was killed at the battle of Gettysburg, July 3, 1863.

EBEN B. PHILLIPS.

Eben B. Phillips, the third child and second son of James Phillips, and of Mary (Burrill), his wife, was born July 8, 1808, in Swampscott, Mass., then known as Lynn.

His parents were constant attendants at the church of the Society of Friends, or Quakers, and he was brought up in that faith, receiving such an education as was possible in his native town, in a small country school, at that period.

His natural abilities were great even in the days of his boyhood, following fishing for some years. It was during one of these trips that he was driven to sea in a severe gale and snow-storm, in the little schooner called the "Essex," in 1829.

No land could be seen, and it was necessary to lash the helm and for all to go below to await the result. All on board gave themselves up as lost; but after many days of exertion they effected a landing at Chatham, Mass. Being completely iced up, and without provisions, it was through the determined effort of Captain Phillips that all on board were saved.

Mr. Phillips' operations in business at the first stages was to supply fish-oils to the manufacturers of leather in the towns of Woburn and Salem, and also to the making of what was known as the "Phillips Beach Dun fish," which were well-known for their excellent qualities, causing his trade to be very extended.

In the days of his early manhood considerable attention was given to farming pursuits; he excelled any of the others employed about his place in physical labor. One instance of the amount of work done by him in one day alone was in digging one hundred bushels of potatoes; and in mowing or any other manual duties performed, he was bound to take the lead.

From doing his fish-oil business in a small way, it had increased so largely that in the year 1830 he established a store in Boston, on Fulton Street, for the sale of his products.

One special branch in the line of his business was the manufacture of cod-liver oil, for medicinal purposes.

After some years he established a second store in the same city on Congress Street, to prosecute the same line of business.

He was the first man who started the extracting of oil from menhaden fish. Purchasing nets and kettles, he employed parties near Blue Hill, Maine, to manufacture for him, and since that time the business has so greatly extended that steamers are employed, and thousands of dollars are invested in factories for the production of this oil.

Not only in New England did he transact an immense business, but also in the Western States, being often styled in his latter years "Oil King," as the volume of business done by him governed the market. Much of his accumulated wealth was invested in Boston store property, owning not less than sixteen at the time of the great Boston fire in 1872, which swept down during that conflagration every one which he owned; and being obliged to meet the loss with no insurance to speak of, he gave his personal attention to the re-building of all these stores immediately after the fire; and it was in one of his largest new stores that he continued his fish-oil business up to the time of his death.

Another of his favorite investments was in sea-shore property along the coast of Swampscott, Rockport and Pigeon Cove, Mass.

In the latter place he built miles of avenues and numerous summer cottages to beautify the place, and it is at the present time one of the most favorite summer resorts along the north shore. His commercial transactions, demanding great attention, occupied most of his time, but in the intervals of business he found great pleasure in shooting sea-fowl, which were to be found among the islands of Massachusetts Bay.

During the winter months he would often take the risk, with the temperature below zero, to row many miles for the pleasure realized in this sport. And being an excellent shot, it was a common occurrence in these times for him to bring home a wagon-load of ducks. On an invitation from the Massachusetts Gunning Club, while shooting on his farm at Swampscott, he killed nineteen live pigeons out of twenty.

The great charm of the sea had so fastened itself upon him, since his youth, that he owned for many years a small schooner called the "Moll Pitcher," and in about the year 1870 the now well-known yacht "Fearless" was purchased by him. On different occasions he changed her rig somewhat, and making some alterations to her hull, she became one of the fastest vessels of her size afloat, taking out of twenty-six consecutive races nearly every first prize, and in no instance did she ever sail in any race unless Captain Phillips was at the wheel, or the vessel was under his special command.

In person Mr. Phillips was heavily built, broad and square-shouldered, of middle stature, with very regular features, a high, square forehead, and blue eyes.

He was a very peculiar person, sometimes a man of very few words, and one who held within himself that which he did not choose to give forth, but very observing, and a great lover of poetry, taking great pleasure in committing to memory his favorite author, the famous Alex. Pope.

Mr. Phillips was president of the National Grand Bank at Marblehead for many years, and was director in the Providence and Worcester Railroad, and the Shoe and Leather Insurance Company up to the time of his death, which was November 26, 1879, being then in his seventy-first year. He was twice married,—first to Nancy (Knowlton) in February, 1837, from which union there was one son, still living; secondly, to Maria (Stanwood) in April, 1841, by whom he had seven sons and three daughters; the seven youngest children are still living.

The love of labor seemed to be his great ambition. So fully, indeed, was he impressed with the idea that constant employment was one of the greatest duties in life, that he kept in active operation up to his last sickness, just previous to his death.



Henry S. Parlett

"Extremes in nature equal good produce,
Extremes in man concur to general use.
Ask we, what makes one keep, and one bestow?
That power who bids the ocean ebb and flow."

The merits and means by which he acquired his immense fortune were probity of the strictest kind, diligence unsurpassed, perseverance in all pursuits, and a frugality as remote from parsimony as from extravagance. His person, his habits and his home evinced the love of what was simple.

His disregard for ostentation, above all men most able to revel in luxury or to roll in a splendid equipage, he fared at all times alike, and within a few years of his death rode in the style of a plain farmer, rather than that of a millionaire.

Could his lips open once more in the language of this earthly state, he would say: "They may think of me as dead and gone: as one whose shrewdness and business capacities are forever repressed; but they are mistaken. All the power, impulse and energy that surged within me, and made me successful in days gone by, live, and will eternally live to be manifested in other forms, and through new avenues in days to come."

COLONEL HENRY G. PARKER.

Col. Parker, whose portrait appears in connection with this notice, may be properly called a man of destiny. Though beginning his career in pursuits far removed from that in which he is now distinguished, each step in his life seems to have been guided by a power beyond himself, until at last he entered the field of journalism, for whose exacting labors it is now easy to believe that he was born and, without being conscious of it himself, had been educated and prepared. Few men have, like Colonel Parker, been tossed on what seemed to be the waves of accident and circumstance, and at last unmistakably shown that accident and circumstance were only the mandates of an unerring law, by which they were drawing towards a profession which they were destined to follow with ardor and skill and success.

Colonel Parker was born in Plymouth, Mass., March 19, 1836. His father, Ebenezer Grosvenor Parker born in Falmouth, Mass., in 1796, was bred to business in Boston, and in 1832, at the time of the organization of the Old Colony Bank in Plymouth, was chosen its cashier, and acted in that capacity with marked skill and fidelity until his death, on the 9th of September, 1840. The grandfather of Colonel Parker, Dr. Henry Parker, also born in Falmouth, was a surgeon in the United States Navy, and died in Batavia June 12, 1800. He married Mary, daughter of the Rev. Ebenezer Grosvenor, a descendant from John Grosvenor, who came from Chester County, in England, to Roxbury, and was one of the settlers of Pomfret, Conn., who obtained a grant of land from the General Assembly in 1686, and an act of incorporation as a town in October, 1713. This grant of land, commonly called the Mashamoquet purchase, was made to James Fitch, Wm. Ruggles, John Gore, John Pierpont, John Chandler, Benjamin Sabine, Samuel Craft, John Grosvenor, Joseph Griffin, Samuel Ruggles, John Ruggles and Nathan Wilson, all of whom, it is believed, were or had been Roxbury men.

Ebenezer Grosvenor was born in Pomfret in 1739, graduated at Yale in 1759, and, after a settlement of seventeen years in Scituate, removed to Harvard in 1782, where he officiated as a settled minister until his death, in 1788. The Grosvenor family, though not largely represented by name at the present day, carried in its veins the best blood of the Massachusetts colony, and in each generation has been characterized by learning and public spirit.

Dr. Henry Parker, the grandfather of the subject of this sketch, was the son of Joseph Parker, of Falmouth, who married Hannah, daughter of Nathaniel Stone, of Harwich; the grandson of Joseph, who married, in 1734, Rebecca, daughter of Benjamin Freeman, of Harwich; the great-grandson of Joseph, born in 1658, who married, in 1698, Mercy Whiston; and great-great-grandson of William Parker, who was a freeman of Scituate in 1640, and married, in 1639, Mary, daughter of Thomas Rawlins, and, in 1651, Mary, daughter of Humphrey Turner.

The mother of Colonel Parker was Rebecca Morton, daughter of William Davis, of Plymouth, who, until his early death, in 1824, was associated in business with his father, William Davis, widely known as an eminent and opulent merchant. The Davis family, which has for many years been identified with Plymouth, is descended from Thomas Davis, of Albany, who, about the year 1700, married Katherine Wendell, of that town. The grandmother of Colonel Parker, on his mother's side, was Joanna, daughter of Gideon White, of Plymouth, directly descended from Peregrine White, the first-born child of New England.

Thus it will be seen that in his ancestry Colonel Parker can find much of which he may well feel proud. Few can claim with him that they are descended from twelve passengers of the "Mayflower." It may be said of him, however, with truth that he holds ancestry to be of little account in the real value of men, and that what a man by his own efforts and talents makes himself should alone enter into an estimate of his character and worth.

Col. Parker, in his earlier years, attended the common schools in his native town, but after the removal of his mother to Boston he attended a famous private school in Brookfield, Mass., where William Bliss, president of the Boston and Albany Railroad, Charles P. Clark, president of the New York and New Haven Railroad, Stanton and Arthur W. Blake and their brother, the late George Baty Blake, were among his fellow pupils. Later he attended the Adams School and Chauncy Hall School in Boston. On his retire-

ment from school, when his entrance into college would have been an easy step, his mother yielded reluctantly to his strongly expressed wishes for an active life, and he entered, as a boy, the store of Blanchard, Converse & Co., of Boston. After a year's service there he became assistant book-keeper in the counting-room of Callender, Rogers & Co., also of Boston, where he remained three years. During the succeeding three years he was employed as book-keeper by Blodget, Clark & Brown, and subsequently took the position of confidential clerk in the private office of Jordan, Marsh & Co.'s wholesale establishment, which he held until 1869. At this time he received, from Francis Skinner & Co., an offer to act as treasurer of one or more of their mills, too tempting to resist, but which eventually failed in consequence of the unfortunate suspension of that eminent firm. Another offer, from James Fisk, Jr., who had left the firm of Jordan, Marsh & Co., to enter upon his astonishing career in New York, to join him as an assistant, at a large salary, was declined; and for a few months he was without settled occupation. While with Jordan, Marsh & Co., he married, on the 7th of June, 1865, Lucy Josephine, daughter of the late William Brown, well known as a druggist, who had pursued his business many years in Boston with eminent success. A daughter was born on the 21st of June, 1868, around whom the affections of father and mother gathered with an intensity which her death, in 1877, seems never to have weakened. Indeed, the tenderness always manifested by Col. Parker to his only child, and the softening influences which her memory sheds on his life, attest the warmth of heart, which is a marked trait in his character.

Up to this time, aside from the business pursuits in which he was engaged, Col. Parker constantly indulged in an avocation which was preparing him for the career of journalism, which he eventually entered. He had, by inheritance, a ready pen, and used it in the production of fugitive articles in some of the Boston dailies, in letters to the *New York Mirror* as its regular correspondent and in dramatic criticisms and book notices for the *Boston Daily Courier*, when that journal was conducted by George S. Hillard, George Lunt and John Clark, and in the *Boston Saturday Evening Gazette*, when that journal was conducted by Col. William W. Clapp, now editor of the *Boston Journal*. These relations with the press, assumed for the purpose of occupying and amusing his active mind, were all the while instructing him in the methods and the requirements of the profession to which, sooner than he was aware, he was destined to devote all his energies and talents. His criticisms of the actors of that day were marked by strict impartiality and good judgment, and won the commendation of both the theatrical guild and the public. He was always frank in his praise and fearless in his disapproval. No actor of merit, coming unheralded under his observation, failed to receive from him words of encouragement, and none, with a reputation which he believed undeserved, escaped the sting of his pen.

In 1870 the opportunity came to purchase the *Saturday Evening Gazette*, and in April of that year Col. Parker became its proprietor and editor. That journal had long enjoyed a high reputation and large circulation, both which were then somewhat waning, and it required all the courage which he possessed to attempt its revival. The *Gazette* was the oldest newspaper in Boston, and a man less conscious of his own skill and resources would have feared that its decline was a symptom of age antecedent to its dissolution. It was established in 1813, by Wm. Burdick, and soon passed into the hands of William Warland Clapp, the father of Col. William Warland Clapp, by whom it was conducted until 1846, Charles W. Clapp being, during the last eight years, associated with his father in its management. For a short time after the last-named date C. W. Clapp and his brother, W. W. Clapp, conducted the paper, the latter, however, soon assuming its exclusive control. In 1865 the *Gazette* passed into the hands of P. B. Goodsell, Roland Worthington and others and five years later into the hands of Col. Parker. It is not intended to enter here into a detailed history of the journal or of the methods adopted to resuscitate it, and which soon placed it upon a firmer footing than it had ever held before. It is sufficient to say that at the end of the first year its circulation and advertising patronage had been so far enlarged as to yield a profit to the proprietor of twenty-one thousand dollars. This tells the whole story of the fitness of Col. Parker for the position in which he was placed. From that time to the present the energy which marked the revival of the *Gazette* has never relaxed, nor has its popularity, in social and business circles, ceased to strengthen. It is not too much to say that while there are other journals in Boston printing larger editions, there are none whose roots are more deeply imbedded in the affections of the people among whom it was born seventy-five years ago. The personal columns of the *Gazette* represent a feature of journalism new to Boston, which Col. Parker initiated against the current of popular opinion, but which has long since been unanimously approved by the community, and imitated by journals by which it was at first severely ridiculed and condemned.

Colonel Parker has been conspicuous in other fields than that of journalism. In 1869, while with Jordan, Marsh & Co., who were prominent among the projectors of the first National Peace Jubilee, he was selected as general secretary of the executive committee, of which the Hon. Alexander H. Rice was chairman, and performed his arduous duties with such promptness and good judgment that at the second jubilee, in 1872, his services in the same capacity were demanded and somewhat reluctantly yielded. Serving as he did

under the eye of Mr. Rice, that gentleman had the best opportunity of estimating his peculiar gifts, and when inaugurated Governor of Massachusetts in 1876, he appointed him a member of his staff. He served in this capacity during the three years' term of Governor Rice and received the deserved compliment of a reappointment by Governor Talbot, during whose single year as commander-in-chief he also served.

Since his retirement from the staff he has devoted himself assiduously to his labors as journalist and to the advancing success of his paper, in which he feels a just pride.

Since his marriage his winter residence has always been in Boston. In 1872 he bought an estate in Plymouth, his native town, which he occupied during the summer until 1877. In 1878 and 1879 he made Newport his summer residence and spent the summers of 1880 and 1881 in Swampscott, where, in 1882, he bought an estate, which since that time he has occupied during a part of each year, having become a citizen of Swampscott.

It only remains to speak of those traits which most prominently mark the character of Colonel Parker, some of which have already been alluded to. They could be spoken of more freely and with a stamp of sincerity more generally acknowledged, if he were not still among the living. What would be a just eulogy of the dead might be suspected to be flattery when spoken of the living man. Aside from perfect integrity and uprightness and energy and tenderness of heart, of which mention has been made, he possesses no more striking traits than those of liberality and entire frankness. Of the former of these he makes no boast nor any conspicuous display. It is such a natural and easy outflow from the warmth of his heart, that when others feel it and are grateful for it, he is scarcely conscious of it himself. The latter trait no one who knows him or has even casually met him can have failed to notice. No friend can be unaware of his friendship, no enemy can be deceived into thinking him his friend. His frankness is applied to himself as well as to others, and thus becomes what might be called openness or transparency. Indeed, the world is to him a sort of confessional. He not only does not conceal his faults, but proclaims them when they might not otherwise have been discovered. There are so many under-currents in men's lives, and there is so much hypocrisy in concealing them, that it is refreshing to meet now and then a man like Colonel Parker, who exhibits his whole self and says to the world, "Here I am; take me for exactly what I am worth; estimate me by my weight and not by the varnish or plate or gilt with which I may be covered."

Colonel Parker is still in the prime of life, in good health and vigor, with a career before him which, if his life should be preserved, is far from finished.

CHAPTER CXXV.

AMESBURY.

BY JOSEPH MERRILL.

Scarcely had the little colony at Salisbury established their homes around the "green" when the subject of a new town west of the Powow River was determined upon. That stream was looked upon as a natural boundary between the large territory, which they evidently considered suitable for two towns. Actuated by these views no doubt, they proceeded, as early as 1642, to carry the plan into effect by passing the following order: "Ordered yer shall thirtie families remove to the west side of y^e^ Powwas River." At a meeting held ten days later the time in which the order should be carried into effect was fixed "before the first of the third month in the yeare 1645." This order included nearly one-half of the families in Salisbury. But it was found very difficult, if not impossible, to enforce the order, and the removal was very much delayed and partially defeated by the reluctance of the people in quitting their homes to plunge still deeper into the unbroken forests, which covered hill and valley in the western territory. Other orders soon followed, calculated to encourage the new settlement by the grant of certain privileges. January 15, 1644, it was "ordered that those persons that go up to live upon the west side of the Powwas River shall have the sole feeding on that side for the year ensuing, and power to make order about fences." Again, in February of the same year, this privilege was confirmed and a further inducement given by reducing the taxes to one-half of the rate in the old town. The favorable condition offered finally induced a small colony to remove their families to the new territory.

Boundaries.—It is hardly possible to correctly define the boundaries of the new town at this early date, as the State line was unsettled and uncertain, and new plantations were very poorly defined. It is certain, however, it included all of the territory west of the Powow River which Salisbury then owned. Its limits included Newton, N. H., and probably part of Kingston. Grants of land were made near "y^e^ great country pond," and in 1675 the island in the pond was given to Thomas Haynes. This fact is confirmed by a town map drawn in 1715, which gives the "peake," as Newton was then called, as having been laid out with much regularity into large lots called "farmes." Haverhill formed the western boundary from "Brandy Brow" Hill to Merrimac River, which formed its entire southern boundary. This beautiful stream has an average width of about one-fourth of a mile and is navigable to Haverhill for small vessels. The Merrimac River, Powow River and Kimball's Pond constitute the principal bodies of water in and around the town.

SETTLEMENT.—There is a tradition that the settlers came in two divisions, the one containing nine and the other eight families; but we find no confirmation of this theory on the records, and it is probable that the removal was without much regularity. Their homesteads at Salisbury were sold at different times, commencing with 1647, which indicates a gradual occupancy of the new territory.

Not until 1654 had a sufficient number crossed the river to organize and virtually establish a new town. At that time eighteen legal voters were in the territory, who styled themselves "the inhabitants and commoners here in y^e^ new town."

AGREEMENT.—The certainty of a new town was now established and on the 14th of March, 1654, a permanent agreement was entered into between the two settlements containing eight articles intended to define the rights and privileges of the contracting parties.

The first article related to the boundaries and disposition of the common lands, as follows: "The inhabitants of y^e^ new towne shall have for their full part and portion of the said common all those lands which lie upon the west side of the pawawaus River up to Haverhill bounds, and the said river to divide the bounds between the new towne and the old towne of Salisbury." The remainder of the common land east of the river was reserved to the old town.

By the seventh article the new town people were to contribute to the support of the ministry in the old town till they obtained a minister to settle among them. The eighth article provides for the separation as follows: "Last of all it is fully concluded and agreed upon by the inhabitants of each towne that the said townes, upon the assignment of the aforesaid articles of agreement, shall be absolutely dismist of themselves and have no further to meddle with the affaires of each other in any town matters whatsoever." This document was duly signed May 1, 1654, by Thomas Bradbury, Joseph Moyce, Samuel Winsley, George Goldwyer, William Buswell, Edward French, William Allin, Samuel Felloes, Thomas Carter, John Rolfe, John Eaton, Isaac Buswell, William Osgood, John Stevens, Henry Browne, Roger Eastman and Richard North on the part of the old town, and Anthony Colby, George Martin, John Hoyt, Philip Challis, Jaret Hadon, Richard Currier, John Weed, Thomas Macy, Edward Cottle, William Barnes, Thomas Barnard and Valentine Rowell on the part of the new town.

Although by this compact the new town appears to be entirely freed from the old, excepting in the minister's rate, yet such does not appear to be the fact, as the inhabitants were assessed to repair the roads, and the old town generally chose one of the prudential men from Amesbury till the final separation in 1666. Surveyors and viewers of staves were also chosen, at the old town's annual meeting, for the new town.

SURFACE AND SOIL.—The landscape is diversified by numerous hills and valleys, which give a great variety of scenery. The western section is specially noted for its numerous hills, which speck its surface in places to the rivers' banks, where they rise high above the tide. The principal plains are the Sandy Hill, Martin and Buttonwood in the East Parish, and the Pond Plain and plain on Church Street in the West Parish. Near the centre of the town is Kimball's Pond, the Indian name of which was "Attitash." It is a beautiful sheet of water about one mile in diameter, nearly surrounded with hills which long have borne the name of "Pond Hills."

The Merrimac River on the south is about half a mile wide and navigable to Haverhill for small vessels. On the east winds the famous Powow, a small stream which rises in New Hampshire, and on its way to the Merrimac, with which it unites at the Ferry, affords extensive water-power, which has been utilized from the first settlement of the territory. In 1872 the Salisbury Mills Company completed a massive dam, known as the "Gardner Dam," near the mills, which has formed a beautiful sheet of water known as "Lake Gardner."

The soil is generally good, although somewhat hilly in the western part of the town. Some of the prominent hills, are Bear Hill, Brandy Brow, Red Oak and Tucker's in the West Parish, and Pond Hills, Ring's, Goodale's and "Whicher's" in the East Parish. Several plains are found, among which are Pond Plain, "Jamaco" Plain,[1] Tucker's Plain, Sandy Hill Plain[2] and plain at Martin Place.

1655. A meeting was held the 19th of March, at which the number of commoners was fixed, the manner of transacting the public business defined, and the method of calling meetings and notifying the inhabitants prescribed,—in short, an agreement was entered into for the regulation of all matters pertaining to the welfare of the colony. Thomas Macy was chosen clerk to record the orders of the company, and the small book which he used is still in the clerk's office.

Staves at this time were an important article among the colonies, selling readily in the West Indies for goods needed here, and the commoners claimed fifty for every thousand made from trees cut on the common lands. The old saw-mill also paid tribute to the new town for one-fourth which was owned here.

At this meeting a strong vote was passed as follows

"At a meeting y^e^ same day of y^e^ inhabitants it was agreed and voted that the number of inhabitants that shall be commoners shall not exceed the number of twenty-six without the consent of every inhabitant of y^e^ plantation."

James George was made a townsman and commoner on condition that he come and live on his land.

[1] Name of the section in early times.
[2] On Highland Street.

Having thus regulated matters, the eighteen commoners confirmed the whole doings of the meeting as follows:

"We, the Inhabitants, have hereunto set our hands the day and year above written.

"Anthony Colby.	Thomas Barnard.
John Hoyt.	Edward Cottle.
Phillip Challis.	John Weed.
George Martin.	Orlando Bagley.
Jarrot Haddon.	Henry Blaisdell.
Richard Currier.	Thomas Macy.
John Bayley.	William Sargent.
William Huntington.	William Barnes.
Valentine Rowell.	John Colby."

The above were the original proprietors of the town but Orlando Bagley and John Bayley were not permanent residents.

By the Massachusetts records it appears that the following of the eighteen took the oath of freemen before the General Court at the dates named below, viz.: "Jarret Hadden and Anthony Colby, May 14, 1634; Willie Sargent, 3d month 1639, 22d; Thomas Masie, 6th day of the 7th month, 1639; William Barnes, 2d, 9th month, 1641; John Bayley, May 19, 1669." The record of the others has not been found. It is nearly certain that most of those pioneers who settled Salisbury and Amesbury came from towns of the same name in England. Those ancient towns are closely connected there, and said to be very pleasantly situated. Salisbury is specialy noted for its elegant cathedral of ancient build, and Amesbury for its Druid temple or anointed stone, erected by the Druids at a very early period.

1656. It was now found that a second saw-mill was needed, and Richard Currier and Thomas Macy were authorized to build a saw-mill on the west side of the Powow, with the privilege of using all the timber on the common not included in the grant to the old mill, "excepting oak and the right of the people to make canoes." For this privilege they were to pay the town £6 per annum for ten years, in boards at current prices. The prices for sawing were all regulated by the town. As money was very scarce, the sawing was done upon shares, the mill being allowed one-half.

Joseph Peaslee was this year made townsman. He was a self-constituted preacher, and gave the General Court a great deal of trouble while living at Salisbury, by his "unfit preaching." His farm was in the West Parish, but at his death he was in Haverhill owning a farm there.

1657. Nathan Gold was this year made a townsman, and granted eight acres of land on condition that he make his home there.

In December the selectmen of Haverhill joined those of Salisbury in defining the bounds between the two towns, agreeable to the order of the General Court. And October 14th, the line between Hampton and Salisbury was run by John Appleton, Joseph Medcalf, Will Bartholomew and Daniel Perse by order of court.

1658. January 1st, "Thomas Barnard and John Weed were chosen for ordering the prudential affairs of the Company, and the extent of their power is according to the prudential men chosen last year, the men being chosen for y^e^ yeare ensuing."

At this meeting it was decided to lay the great swamp out in lots, and Thomas Barnard, John Hoyt and John Weed were ordered to measure it, and receive two shillings and six pence a day for their work from those who had the lots. A way was to be reserved next Powow River forty rods wide for the use of the plantation.

This order was not carried into effect until 1664. All had plenty of wood, and there was no hurry about dividing this section.

January 25th, Thomas Barnard and John Weed were chosen standing lot-layers, and served in that capacity a great many years. Small lots were given to the freemen at almost every meeting, and at this meeting John Weed received ten acres at the Buttonwood, now owned by Charles Rowell, and occupied by his new residence.

May 26th, a petition was sent to the General Court praying that Phillip Challis might be confirmed,—"Left to y^e^ foot Com^y^ in Salisbury," and it was referred to the next County Court.

October 29th, a general meeting was held, and a large tract beyond the pond, bordering on Back River, was ordered to be laid out and given to the inhabitants. This was the first general division made in the "new towne of Salisbury" since the Agreement of 1654. The original members received forty acres each; newly-admitted ones, ten each.

This year an unsuccessful attempt was made to obtain a legal separation from the old town. Salisbury opposed the measure, not yet being quite willing to lose the help they received towards the support of the minister, and perhaps for other good reasons. The people were ordered to attend meeting in the old town; but the order was disregarded, and they still flocked to hear Joseph Peaslee preach, although by so doing they incurred the displeasure of the General Court.

Finally, at the October term of the General Court, an order was issued, "that the recorder for the Connty of Norfolke fforthwith issue out his warrant reqniring Joseph Peasley & the rest of the inhabitants of the new towne, being masters of families, or at their owne dispose, to make theire personall appearances before the next County Court, to be held at Salisbury, to answer for their disobedjence to authorities in not complying w^th^ sajd order; and the sajd County Court is hereby impowered, authorized & required to proceede ag^t^ all such of them as in their appearance shall not fully make it cleare they haue, since the sajd order, performed theire duty and repajred to the public worship of God on the Lord's day at the ould towne, to fine them for every day's absense there five shillings."

Under this order many were fined, and Peaslee with the others. It has been thought by some that this persistent preacher was a Quaker; but the General Court said he was a member of the church at the old town.

Robert Quinby, a ship carpenter, first appears in town this year.

1659. To encourage settlers, five hundred acres of land beyond the pond was set apart for the children. This section was long known as "the children's land." It was intended for the oldest son in each family; but in case there were no sons, then a daughter took the family share.

Walter Taylor was this year made a commoner, with liberty to use what timber he wanted for building vessels so long as he lived in town. He lived at the river, where "Uncle John Davis" lived at a later period. He was a rough person and a little given to profanity, being once fined ten shillings for "vsing cursing speaches to his servants." Thomas Hoyt and Thomas Jonson were apprenticed to him to learn the ship-carpenter's trade, but ran away and were fined "fiue shillings a peece for going away disorderly."

A committee, consisting of "Thomas Barnard, George Martin and Samuel Foot,' these three are appointed to lay out the land vpon the river, and are to have two pense an acre for laying it out." Twenty-six lots were laid out, No. 1 commencing at the Buttonwood Road, and extending along the river westwardly towards Haverhill. Probably these lots were not completed and drawn till 1661, as Widow Colby and Widow Peasly received lots.[2]

Joseph Peasly will not keep silent, but continues to preach, although fined and threatened by the authorities for doing what his conscience told him was his duty. And the new town people would hear him, notwithstanding his preaching "was very weak and unfit." A compromise was finally made, which it was hoped would satisfy the new town and settle the matter, which was becoming very troublesome.

The old town consented that Mr. Worcester preach at the new town every fourth Sunday. This plan was approved by the General Court, which graciously respited one-half of the fines till the next session. But still Peasly preached, defying the orders of court and the wishes of Mr. Worcester's church. The General Court now assumed a threatening attitude, and forbid his "preaching any more in this jurisdiction till he give full satisfaction to this court for what have been past." This was ominous of his fate if he disregarded the order, and very likely he quit preaching. The conflict soon came to an end by the death of Peasly in 1660 or 1661.

Thomas Macy, one of the original settlers of Amesbury, and the first clerk, probably left town this year. The record is in his handwriting until the 1st of November, but the next annual meeting was recorded by Richard Currier. Macy offended the General Court by harboring Quakers, and was summoned to appear before that body to answer for the crime; but either from his inability to do so, or intentionally, he failed to comply with the order. He, with Thomas Barnard and others, were proprietors of the island of Nantucket, to which place Macy now removed. Tradition says that he took his family in his open boat and sailed away to his favorite island, where he lived to a good old age. Mr. Whittier has written a beautiful poem entitled "The Exiles," which finely illustrates this singular adventure of Macy's, and the sentiments of those early times.

TOWNSHIPS.—**1630.** To enjoy all the rights of freemen, grants must be obtained from the commoners who held the territory, granting it to whom they pleased. On the 10th of December a town-meeting was held which may very properly be designated "a township meeting," as no other business was done. The following were admitted townsmen, viz.: Samuel Foot, Samuel Colby, Nathan Gold, William Osgood and Robert Quinby. The children's land was also divided among the children of the proprietors.

When our ancestors came to this wild territory wolves were very plenty and troublesome, and bounties were early offered for their heads, but 30*s.* was hardly sufficient to destroy them, and this year it was increased to 50*s.*, if not killed by Indians. The General Court had previously ordered the constables to pay the Indians three quarts of wine and a bushel of corn per head for all they killed.

Another effort was made to obtain a separation from the old town, but without avail. The new town people, supposing they had secured the services of Rev. Shubael Dumer (an orthodox minister), petitioned the General Court for an act of incorporation, which was granted, provided Mr. Dumer was obtained. He finally declined the call, probably not considering the encouragement given quite sufficient. The old town very kindly gave consent to the proposed change, but the measure failed.

1661. Various grants of land were made this year, among which were the "frog pond at the north side of Robert King's hill," where the second instance of tunneling occurred about 1749.

Thomas Haynes, son-in-law of Thomas Barnard, first appears on the record this year, by a grant of five acres of land near "Whicher's hill."

Anthony Colby died in the early part of February. He came over from England with Winthrop and others, in 1630. He is number ninety-three on the list of church-members at Boston, and was made a freeman, May 14, 1634, with Jerard Haddon and some eighty others. He probably lived at Cambridge in 1632, from whence he moved to Salisbury, previous to 1640, with his wife, Susannah, and the following

[1] Not [illegible] townsman till 1[illegible]

[2] Widows of Anthony Colby and Joseph Peasly, who died in 1660 or 1661

children, viz.: Sarah, born ———; John, first son, born ———; Samuel, born ———; Orlando, born ———; Isaac, born July 6, 1640; Rebecca, born March 11, 1643; Mary, born Sept. 19, 1647; Thomas, born March 8, 1650. Anthony was one of the eighteen who signed the regulations at the organization of the new town in 1655. His inventory amounted to £359 19*s.* 4*d.*

1662. No record is found of the election of a town clerk since the flight of Thomas Macy in 1659, until this year, when Richard Currier was chosen. Much of the early record is missing, which may account for the deficiency.

George Carr was granted a common right when he or any of his sons came to live in town, and also the right to cut timber on the common for building vessels. This was offered as an inducement to Mr. Carr to become a citizen of the new town, and it was successful in calling George Carr, Jr., a few years later to engage in building vessels at the Ferry. An offer of land was once made to Major Pike if he would remove to the new town.

A large tract of land between the pond, Pine Hill and Powow River was ordered to be laid out to all who had a "common right." "Goodman Marting, Goodman Hoyt and Goodman Rowell were appointed to lay out the land in the Lion's mouth and Great Swamp." These orders, if complied with, would dispose of nearly four thousand acres, one division, called "the great lots," containing three thousand eight hundred and seventy-six acres.

May 17th Valentine Rowell, one of the first eighteen and a signer of the articles of agreement, died. He was early in town and sold his first homestead to John Bayley previous to 1652.

His children were Hannah, born January, 1643; Thomas, born September 7, 1644; John, born 1645; Philip, born March 8, 1647; Mary, born January 31, 1650; Sarah, born November 16, 1651; John, born November 15, 1655; Elizabeth, born August 10, 1657; Margaret, born September 8, 1659.

1663. This year the town bought one acre of land of Edmund Elliott for a burying-ground. It was the eastern part of the ancient cemetery at Bartlett's Corner. Up to this time Golgotha had been the only burying-ground in town.

On the 16th of March a meeting was held, and five hundred acres of land disposed of among the inhabitants, but not without strong opposition.

Ezekiel Wathen, one of the ancestors of the families in Salisbury and Amesbury, first appears as a townsman this year by a grant of land near his house. He lived at Pleasant Valley.

1664. The Great Swamp ordered to be laid out in 1662 was this year given out in lots, and a sweeping vote passed disposing of all the common land. This measure was opposed by some of the most prominent men, and at a subsequent meeting entirely changed by the following vote: "Att y^e^ same meting it was voted that this tract of land above ritting shall not be disposed of this twenty yeare to these men above riting."

John Pressey appears this year, having purchased two river lots west of "Pressey's creek," and near South Amesbury.

1665. The most important event of this year was building a meeting-house on the acre bought of Edmund Elliott. Hitherto all efforts to obtain a separation from the old town had failed, because no provisions had been made to permanently establish and maintain public worship. Having become sensible of this fact, it was resolved to make due preparation for the long-desired event of a legally established township by the erection of a church in which the people could assemble on each returning Sabbath. Thomas Barnard, John Hoyt and Richard Currier were chosen to carry forward the work, which was to be completed by "mid-summer." It was a small house,—thirty by twenty-five feet,—but large enough to seat the few inhabitants of the town.

A committee was chosen "to go to Mr. Showell or Mr. Woodbridge's son to see if they can attaine either of them to be helpful two us in y^e^ worke of y^e^ ministry." The committee failed to obtain either, and in April it was decided "to treat with Capttin Pyke to see if they can obtain him to be helpful to us in the work of the ministry." What grounds the new town had for offering to engage Captain Pike to preach for them we can hardly imagine, for, although quite a scholar, he was no minister, and by the laws of those times would not be allowed to preach.

1666. The first act of the year was to fix the minister's salary at forty pounds per year, which was quite liberal for those times. Having built their church and established the minister's salary, it was determined to apply to the General Court for an act of incorporation and a minister.

May 14th a meeting was held and the following vote was passed, viz.: "At the same meeten it was agreed to send to the General Court for the obtayning of Mr. Benjamin Woodbriedg to be helpfull to us in the work of the ministry, and also to see if we can obtain to be a township of ourselves." The effort was successfnl, a township being obtained and the services of the Rev. Benjamin Woodbridge secured. The petition was presented at the May session of the General Court, when the following order was passed:

"In answer to the pet con of the inhabitants of New Salisbury, this Court doeth grant them the liberty of a towneship, according to the agreement with the ould tonne & that upon their providing a minister approved off according as the law provides, they then to be taken of from contributing to the minister of y^e^ old tonne."

Mr. Woodbridge was a nephew of the Rev. Thomas Parker and the Rev. James Noyes, first ministers of Newbury. He graduated in the first class which completed their studies at Harvard College, standing at the head of the class. He had been a member of Magdalen College at Oxford, in England, but chose

to finish his studies here. He came to America with his brother, Rev. John Woodbridge, in 1634. Dr. Calamy says of him: "He was a universally accomplished person; one of a clear and strong reason and of an exact and profound judgment." His stay in Amesbury was short, not exceeding three years.

June 15th the town organized, by the choice of Thomas Barnard, Phillip Challis, John Meed, Robert Jones and John Hoyt, Sr., prudential men.

1667. At the annual meeting, the division of land set apart for the children in 1659 was ordered "to every child according to his father's estate, given in to the makin of Mr. Woodbridge's first reat in the new town."

A vote was passed "that the town shall make a bregh over the swamp at Gorg. Martin's house." The remains of this ancient causeway may yet be seen near the Martin Road.

Edward Goodwin, Richard Hubbard, William Hacket, John Nash and Thomas Nichols were granted common rights this year.

A meeting was held July 9th, at which some forty of the inhabitants were seated in the meeting-house. Further provision was ordered for the minister, by the grant of two hundred acres of land which "Liften, Challes, John Hoyt, Sen., and George martyn were chosen to lay out."

When the town was incorporated no name was given, but in the early part of this year the name was fixed as follows: "At the seam metten the Towen have named this Towen Amesbery." This name was confirmed by the General Court in 1668, but the name was slightly changed, to "Emesbury."

1668. On the 18th of February a meeting was held, and a hundred lots of land disposed of to the settlers. The first division was on "Whicher's" Hill, the second in the vicinity of the pond, the third between the pond and Birchy Meadow and the fourth was to begin on the west side of the Pond Brook. These sections embraced most of the undivided lands in town.

The County Court at Hampton appointed Edward Goodwin to keep the ferry over the Merrimac River near his house this year. A private way was laid out from the "country highway" to the saw-mill, the owners paying for the land taken.

1669. James Frees, William Sargent, Jr., Josue Goldsmith, Thomas Stevens, Jossef Lankester, John Gimsen and Jos. Wathen were granted common rights.

Early this year Amesbury was without a minister, and "Jan. 18th It was granted unto that minister that do come and live and inhabit with us fifty akers of land lying in that part of the common between fox island and Georg. Martyn's house." This land, with fifty acres given to the ministry by Philip Watson Challis,[1] has always been known as the "parsonage." In addition to this, it was decided to purchase a house for the use of the ministry.

Mr. Woodbridge boarded with "Goodman Sargent," but it was thought advisable to give the coming minister better accommodations. In February it was decided to send to "Mr. Hobberd, of Kettre, to see if we can obtayn him, to be helpful to us in the work of the ministry." Mr. Hobberd was not inclined to accept the call which the town, through their committee, had given him, and several weeks later a new committee was chosen, but met with poor success. Some two months later (May 7th) Robert Jones was chosen to find a minister and invite him to come and make a visit. Mr. Hobberd was finally induced to accept the pressing call which was extended to him, and received the land set apart for the ministry.

The old road north of the hill (Goodale's), which bounds Pleasant Valley on the northward, was ordered this year.

1670. The ancient road over Ferry Hill was located this year, traces of which are yet visible. There were, at a very early period, two houses on the hill—one owned by Abraham Morrill, the other by some person unknown. This highway connected with Goodwin's Ferry, and was, for nearly half a century, the only public road leading northward.

1672. In the early part of last year the town voted to give Mr. Hubbard "his fire-wood in addition to his £40 per year;" and this year an addition to his salary of £5 was made, and grass to make four loads of hay. He was evidently popular, and giviug excellent satisfaction, or he was pressing the people for a large increase of salary. However this may have been, there came a very sudden change, and the town voted "not to ad any more to Mr. Hoberd's maintainance, neither in land nor anything else." No doubt the faithful preacher considered this equivalent to a dismission, and so it proved, for in less than two months an invitation was extended to the Rev. Thomas Wells, a young man of good talent. He had preached at Newbury and the Shoals some, and may have occupied Mr. Hubbard's pulpit on some occasion, when his eloquence had captivated the hearts of the people. He was readily obtained, and his salary fixed at forty pounds per year and the use of the land set apart for the ministry. It was also voted to build him a house "fower and forty foot long or there abouts, and twenty foote wide and thirteen foot and a half stood." The Vane lot (now Bartlett's Corner) was obtained of Abner Jones, and here Mr. Wells lived during his long pastorate of more than sixty years. The lilacs and well near the new High School building still mark the spot where the "village preacher's modest mansion rose." The offer to build was not carried out, and an offer to move the house bought of John Hoyt (for Mr. Hubbard) to the Vane lot was also declined, and Mr. Wells built to suit himself.

[1] First instance of middle name on record; but the e generally omitted by him

1674. The town having some difficulty with Phillip W. Challis in regard to an exchange of land, commenced suit against him, but was beaten, and, as he says, "upon tryal of case nothing did appear." But notwithstanding the suit, Mr. Challis freely deeded fifty acres of land for the use of the ministry for certain considerations, but "more especially of or great desire & affecon towards a Godly ministry "to be settled & upheld in y^e s^d town of Amesbury." This deed was signed March 25, 1673, and acknowledged March 12, 1674, before Robert Pike.

A singular meeting was held near the close of the year, which was far from satisfactory to a large number of the voters. A new town clerk was chosen, and a large committee appointed to correct the errors in the "Town book off records" before the next annual meeting.

What occasioned this sudden move against Richard Currier, the present clerk, who had held the office since Macy's flight in 1659, is not known. Perhaps the new minister may have suggested the measure. It does not appear that the books were corrected, but Thomas Currier (son of Richard) was confirmed at a subsequent meeting, as clerk, and held the office till 1712.

1675. William Sargent, one of the original settlers, died this year, aged seventy-three years. He came to Virginia with William Barnes, John Hoyt and others, settling at Newbury, Hampton, Salisbury and finally at Amesbury. In deeds he is styled "mariner." He was twice married—first to Judith Perkins, by whom he had Lydia, Sarah and Mary; second to Elizabeth Perkins,[1] by whom he had Thomas, born June 11, 1643; William, born January 2, 1646; Elizabeth, born November 22, 1648; Sarah, born February 29, 1652.

The business of the town at this time was farming, fishing, making staves and building vessels. These occupations required other tradesmen, such as blacksmiths, weavers, carpenters, tailors, etc. River and harbor fishing came next to farming in importance, furnishing an important article of food. The raising of cattle and sheep was by no means neglected, if we may be allowed to judge from the old inventories. The small grains were also raised in abundance, and orchards are mentioned within ten years of the settlement of Salisbury. No potatoes are found on ancient inventories till about 1730.

1676. In the early years of the settlement little, if any, trouble was occasioned by the Indians, but, having grown more numerous, they grew troublesome, obliging the inhabitants to keep constant watch day and night. For the convenience of the watchmen the town was divided into wards, each having a watch-house for quarters. Each ward was required to furnish wood for the watch-house, under a fine of five shillings for neglect. The garrison-houses were to be kept in order, and everything betokened an alarming state of affairs. No one ventured into his field without a gun, and even friendly Indians could hardly be trusted. The forts or garrison-houses were built in different sections of the town, that should an alarm occur all might readily seek safety therein. There was a garrison near the Estes estate, one at Pond Hills, one at "Jamaco," one near Birchy Meadow, and probably one at the Highlands.

The constables and watches were obliged to keep nights from May to October, and all persons (males) over sixteen were required to take turns or hire a substitute. No persons were allowed out after ten o'clock at night, and lights were to be put out at that hour, and all noises cease in the streets. These precautions were none too severe, as we shall find next year.

1677. The much-feared Indian raid occurred this year, and several persons were murdered, notwithstanding the great precautions taken to prevent a surprise. Secretary Rawson, in a letter to Governor Anderson, of New York, says,—"As for damage done us by the eastern Indians, mentioned in our letter dated July 28th, was in taking our fishing catches about Cape Sable, and a notorious murder committed upon some men, women and children at Amesbury about the middle of July, but not known to us or y^e Commissioners at Pemaquid until after the peace was concluded between some of the eastern Indians & Capt. Brockles." From the above it would be inferred that the murders here were committed by eastern Indians, but it is a matter of history that there were Indians nearer home quite as treacherous as those farther east. There was one Symon, who had lived among the English and with William Osgood awhile, that was a treacherous fellow. He was without doubt the leader of the murderous assault made July 7th of this year, when "men, women and children were killed.

Robert Quinby is supposed to have been killed, and his wife was knocked down and left for dead, but recovered, and stated that Symon was with the party and attempted her life. The names of those killed are not given by the records.

1678. The town had some controversy with Rev. Mr. Wells about land granted him and an exchange which he wished to make. A large committee was chosen to settle the matter, and enter their decision on the town book, but no report is found.

Samuel Colby, living at Bartlett's Corner, was chosen "to keep a public-house of entertainment," which is the first tavern mentioned on the records. These were popular resorts much favored by the people.

1679. This year a monthly lecture was ordered, "the last Wednesday of every month from March to Mickaelmus."[2] The minister's rate was made twice per year—spring and fall.

[1] The late Jona. B. Sargent authority.

[2] Feast of Michael, September 29th.

1680. Mr. Wells' salary was increased to fifty pounds per year during the remaining time which he may be engaged in the work of the ministry. His eight years' service was no doubt satisfactory.

1682. George Martyn, Robert Jones and John Prowse were appointed to lay out the "Pecke" land, which embraced a large tract near Kingstown, called "the farmes" on the map of 1715. It probably included all of Newton, N. H., and possibly part of South Hampton. These farms were laid out in regular order, having suitable roads located between them, crossing each other at right angles.

The saw-mill which was built in 1656 was yet in running order according to the following deposition:

"The deposition of Richard Currier, aged about sixty-six yeares, testyfieth that I kep a Sawe Mill at Amesbury, neare unto the Sawe Mill that do belong unto Salisbury upon the seam river and I have sawin this Spring about five or six thousand foot of bord a weeke for three months together, and do swere that ye Sawe Mill that do belong unto Salisbury is no waies inferior to the mill at Amesbury and have ben as well improved, and further saith that the Saw mills did sett about four month but had not a full head of water.

"Sept. 25th, 1682. RICHARD CURRIER."

1683. The acre bought in 1663 for a burying-ground was enlarged this year by the purchase of additional land of Thomas Colby.

1685. By order of the town, the main road from Amesbury to Haverhill was run out and defined by the selectmen of the two towns. It was recorded four rods wide from the meeting-house in Amesbury to the bridge at the east meadows in Haverhill.

1686. Up to the present time the minister's salary was paid almost wholly in produce from the farms, but now Mr. Wells is to receive "fifty shillings in money." But he was notified "that there should be no more added tow Mr. Wells is mayntainance." The sober second thought repealed this vote at a later meeting. Mr. Wells was this year chosen registrar, and the births, marriages and deaths, of which no previous record is found, commenced at this time. The record of these items for the first twenty years of the town's corporate existence is missing, and we know of no tradition which accounts for the loss.

George Martin died this year, it is believed, as his name disappears from the "lot-layer's" committee, where he served from the settlement of the town. He was one of the original number who crossed the Powow River to establish a plantation here and a signer of the articles of agreement. He was probably born in England and came over when young. He was a blacksmith by occupation, but became a large land-holder before his death.

His children were Hannah, born February 1, 1644; Richard, born June 29, 1647; George, born October 21, 1648; Abigail, born October 10, 1649; John, born January 26, 1651; Hester, born April 7, 1653; Jane born November 2, 1656; William, born December 11, 1662 (died a few days old); Samuel, born September 29, 1667; William, born ——.

1687. The Indians were again on the war-path, greatly alarming the people, but no damage was done. Captain Pike's troop of horse was thought to be insufficient to protect the scattered inhabitants of the two towns, and assistance was asked of the General Court, but none was given.

Wolves were still troublesome and a bounty of twenty shillings was offered for every one killed.

Walter Taylor died February 11th. He was a ship-carpenter and built vessels near the ferry. After his death Francis Davis took the land granted him, and was probably the first of that name in the East Parish.

Thomas Jewell first appears in town this year, settling in the northern part of the town (now South Hampton). He came from Hingham, where he lived a short time after arriving in this country. Tradition says that he was hostler to Lord Guilford and finally eloped with his daughter to this country.

Richard Currier died February 22d. He was one of the original number of those who colonized the town, and took a very prominent part in public affairs, seldom being out of office. He was the second clerk, and was "Clark of the writs," built the first mill with Macy, was on the committee to build the first meeting-house, was sole agent to get the town incorporated, selectman twelve years, was commissioner to end small cases and, in fact, served in about every office within the gift of the people. He was born in England about 1616, and may have come over with "Mr. ffran Dowe," to whom he was servant when he first came to Salisbury. His children were Hannah, born October 5, 1643; Thomas, born October 1, 1646; and probably Richard.

1688. Sergeant John Hoyt died February 28th. Among those entrusted with office he was very prominent. He was of the original number which signed the agreement in 1654, and was early in town. He served as selectman eight years, was a military officer in Norfolk County, constable, and was frequently appointed on committees.

His children were Frances, born ——; John, born 1638; Thomas, born January 1, 1640; Georgie, born January 1, 1641; Elizabeth, born February 23, 1643; Sarah, born January 16, 1645; Mary, born February 24, 1646; Joseph, born May 13, 1648; Joseph, born November 27, 1649; Marah, born November 27, 1653; Naomi, born January 23, 1655; Dorothie, born April 13, 1656.

Jarred[1] Haddon died some time during the year, but his death is not recorded. The inventory bears date June 1, 1689.

He was one of the first eighteen and a signer of the articles of agreement in 1654 and took the freeman's oath May 14, 1634. He was a large land-holder and probably lived at the Ferry. He held office less than some others, but was commissioner to end small

[1] Name sometimes spelt Gherard.

cases in 1673, and selectman in 1676, '79 and '80. His children, so far as known, were—Sarah, born Jan. 15, 1640; Mary, born ——; and Elizabeth.

1689. Lieutenant John Weed died March 15th, after a long and useful life. He was one of the first proprietors and signed the articles of agreement in 1654. He served as selectman nine years, was commissioner, constable and lot-layer, was frequently entrusted with important business by the town, and was seated at the table in the meeting-house. He was, so far as we have been able to ascertain, the wealthiest of the eighteen, his inventory amounting to £737 7*s.* 8*d.*, His children were Samuel, born February 15, 1652; Mary, born September 5, 1653; John, born November 1, 1655; Anna, born July 26, 1657; Deborah, born June 15, 1659; George, born May 25, 1661; Ephraim, born February 24, 1667; Nathaniel, fifth son, born ——; Joseph, born ——.

It is probable that Wm. Huntington died this year. He was early in town, living on a small place at the Ferry, which was given to his wife by her father, John Bayley, Sr. His name appears with those who organized the town in 1655, but is not on the articles of agreement. He held very little office in town, but received land in most of the divisions and was probably a large farmer. His homestead was at Pleasant Valley, and a portion of it is yet in the hands of his descendants. His children were John, born the last week in August, 1643; James, born ——, died in infancy; Mary, born July 8, 1648.

The town's management of religious matters was very singular, especially in regard to the min'ster. Mr. Wells was settled according to the customs of the times, which was for life, and yet the town annually voted that they were clear of him and he of them. At the annual meeting, after choosing a moderator, it was "voted y^t^ we desire to have a minister amoug us," just as though Mr. Wells must leave unless engaged anew. The next vote was to send to him to know whether he had a mind to stay and "continue in y^e^ work of y^e^ ministry among us." The next was "y^t^ y^e^ towne was clear from Mr. Wells and Mr. Wells from y^e^ towne." Having established the two points of independence, they went to work and voted "to pay the minister £50 per year" and "att y^e^ same metting y^e^ towne made choyce of Mr. Wells" to be their minister. They then voted "that Mr. Wells shall have his firewood brought home to him for this yeare ensuing."

Thus in their own peculiar way they satisfied themselves and gave Mr. Wells a liberal supply.

In 1686 the King sent a commission to take possession of the government of Massachusetts Bay, which measure met with strong opposition, but without effect. On the accession of William and Mary, in February of this year, the people restored the former government. Amesbury sent their "tristy frinds Capt. Foot and Samuel Colby as Representatives" to aid in reinstating the former officers and restoring charter rights. James II. had usurped the government and the people embraced the first opportunity to overthrow his hated officials. Gov. Andros was summarily deposed.

1690. Indian wars were almost continually harassing the colony, making it necessary to keep companies of soldiers to guard against surprise. These troops were raised in the towns, the only exception being in "frontier towns" which were excused from contributing to the common safety on account of their exposed situation.

Amesbury petitioned the General Court to be considered a frontier town and very likely her request was granted. Merrimac then called "Jamaco," suffered severely by these raids, and this year tradition says Capt. Samuel Foot was captured and tortured to death by the Indians.[1] He died July 7th, but the cause of death is not stated on the record. He probably lived on the plain not far from the cemetery[2] and kept the garrison there. At the same time three men were killed and three houses burned.

Edward Cottle, one of the first little colony here, lived at "Jamaco," and a tradition has been handed down that his house was burnt twice, once by accident, and once by Indians. He was discouraged and removed to Duke's County. John Hoyt, Jr., suffered by having his house plundered by Indians.

1692. The most noted and saddest event of the year was the accusation, trial and conviction of Susannah Martin as a witch. She was the widow of George Martin, a prominent man of the first company. She was a good, but outspoken woman, and died a martyr to the superstitions of the times. This singular delusion prevailed to an alarming extent at this time, filling the jails with suspected persons of both sexes. The dark stain of Salem witchcraft can never be blotted from history.

1693. This year "tything men" were first chosen, their duties being very much like those of State constables of modern times. As an inducement to faithfulness, they were to receive the benefit of informers which probably meant part of the fines. They were to carefully inspect all licensed houses and to inform of all disorders and misdemeanors which they may discover.

1694. Mr. Wells was chosen school-master, with a salary of twenty pounds. The Indians were still troubling the settlers by the raids. September 4th, Joseph Pike, of Newbury, deputy-sheriff of Essex, while traveling with one Long between Amesbury and Haverhill, fell into an ambuscade of the enemy on the ridge near Gilman Merrill's, and was murdered. It may have been at this time that one Rowell, a mail-carrier between Newbury and Portsmouth, was killed in Patten's Hollow.

1696. Again we find the Indians committing depredations on the towns, and John Hoyt and one Peters

[1] See Dr. Parrish's "History of New England."

[2] Upper County.

were killed in Andover while on the road to Haverhill. It was at this time that the murderous descent was made on Haverhill, where nine persons were killed or carried into captivity, and among the number the plucky Hannah Dustin.

1697. The little church built thirty-two years ago was hardly large enough to hold the people, and Mr. Wells asked leave to build a pew on the outside, between the south door and the southwest corner.

1698. William Barnes died March 14th, and was no doubt the last of those who organized the town in 1655. He was one of the most prominent of the company, and his services were always in demand. He was selectman twelve years, moderator at sixteen meetings, commissioner to end small cases five years, constable, juror, and on the committee to correct the clerk's book. He is said to have come from England in 1635, in the "Globe," Jeremy Blackman, master, at the age of twenty-two; and if so, he was eighty-five at his death. He was a house-carpenter. His children were Mary, born ——; William, born ——; Hannah, born Jan. 25, 1643; Deborah, born April 1, 1646; Jonathan, born April 1, 1648; Rachel, born April 30, 1649; Sarah, born ——; Rebecca, born ——; Jonathan died before his father, and so did William.

1699. An appropriation of five pounds was made to build "galiers on y^e^ foreside and at each end" of the meeting-house. The population increased but slowly during the first half-century of the settlement, if we may judge by the fact that galleries were but just needed. It should be considered, however, that their old-style settees seated more people in the same space than modern pews.

Educational matters were not forgotten, and this year it was left with the selectmen "to procure a School Master or school Dames that may supply the town," and six pounds was allowed towards paying the master. The custom had long prevailed of raising by subscription some portion of the school money.

1700. A sharp, spicy letter was received from Major Pike in regard to his Indian ground, over which he said the town had laid a road forty rods wide, without notifying him. His Indian ground lay at the Buttonwood, and that section was the favorite resort of the Indians in early times, as shown by the arrow-heads and other implements found there. This letter was ordered to be kept in the town-book, and it is there to-day in a good state of preservation.

1701. The earliest record of the Society of Friends commences this year, although a few were living in town at an earlier date. The Hampton Monthly Meeting decided to build a meeting-house twenty-six feet square and fourteen "foot stud," and here the members from Amesbury, Salisbury and Hampton met for some four years.

Many small vessels were built at this time on the river for fishing and the West India trade. The name of one has been saved and handed down—the "Katch Peter," of thirty tons.

1702. A stringent law was passed this year, requiring towns to maintain schools and employ qualified teachers, other than ministers, under a penalty of twenty pounds. To comply with the law, the selectmen were authorized to hire a master. Thus the free-school system was permanently established, the appropriations gradually increasing till, in 1875, it reached nearly twelve thousand dollars.

Seven young ladies had leave to build a pew in the gallery of the meeting-house, which they very modestly occupied till marriage thinned their ranks. Before the year closed two were married and others soon followed.

The Quakers were taxed for the support of preaching, and this year the constable took two calves from Ezekiel Wathen, valued at thirty shillings, to pay his rate.

1703. This year the commoners held two meetings, choosing a clerk, and ordering a large tract of land near the late Moses Merrill's to be laid out in lots and disposed of. At the second meeting the only business transacted was confirming the grant to Francis Davis of the Walter Taylor land at the river.

A new officer was chosen this year, styled "Howard," but the duties of the office do not appear from the record.

A small vessel of forty tons was built this year and registered by the name of "Friends' Adventure."

There was taken from Ezekiel Wathen two thousand and one hundred shingles to pay the "prestes rate" this year.

The famous "Woolpit" Hill, sometimes called "sugar loaf" in modern times, is mentioned on this year's record. It is supposed to have been named from pits which were dug on its sandy top to entrap wolves, in the early years of the settlement. This hill is a singular formation, mostly of clay and stone, rising abruptly nearly or quite a hundred feet above the river at its base, affording a fine view to the south and east. The river road winds along at its foot, crossing Goodwin's Creek and entering that beautiful valley known as Pleasant Valley. One residence has been erected near its summit, and others will no doubt soon follow.

1704. At this date tanning was an important business, as most of the leather used was of home manufacture. Many old tan-pits were to be seen half a century since, and their remains are to be found in several places at the present time.

The town paid Samuel Colby, Sr., twenty shillings for ringing the bell and sweeping the meeting-house the past year, but the Quakers opposed the vote.

A square-stern vessel of about forty tons was built this year and named the "Success." Many others were no doubt built, although no record of them is found.

1705. The town was troubled with Indian depreda-

tions to such an extent that the children were in danger on their way to school, and it was unsafe for Jamaco people to come down to meeting. To obviate the danger, schools were kept in less exposed places, and Mr. Wells preached at Jamaco every third Sabbath. As their numbers increased, the Indians became more aggressive, and murders were frequent.

The Friends in Amesbury and Salisbury took measures to build a meeting-house, and a committee was appointed to select a location. Thomas Barnard gave a small piece of land, which tradition locates on Friend Street, near No. 8 Mill.

The first marriage recorded on the Friends' book of records took place this year, at the house of Thomas Barnard. The groom was John Peasley, grandson of Joseph, the preacher, and the bride was Mary Martin, granddaughter of George Martin. The marriage was signed by forty-seven witnesses.

1706. The first rate to pay for schooling was made this year, thus placing educational interests on a firm basis.

The Indians who were threatening the settlements last year continued their hostile demonstrations, and several of the inhabitants were killed about the 1st of July. The militia were called out, but the savages had fled beyond the reach of pursuit and nothing was accomplished.

1707. This year the town voted to hire four or five school "Dames" for young scholars, and two masters for two months, to teach young persons to write and cipher. Seven schools were thus provided during a portion of the year. The pay of teachers was very small, but a little money went a good ways. For fifty years after the settlement of Salisbury, butter remained at the price first fixed upon—six pence per pound—and other articles were equally low.

1708. The town ordered a road laid out from the six-rod highway near John Challis', to the plain near Tappan Emery's. John Challis lived on the corner, near the late Moses Merrill's, and the road was the one which crosses Sandy Brook, near Daniel F. Morrill's.

Benjamin Eastman petitioned the town for leave to build a fulling-mill just below the mill bridge, on the Powow River, and also to take the water underground across the road to drive the mill. The request was granted, and thus was put in operation the first fulling-mill of which we have any account.

Sept. 7th. The commoners held a meeting and granted Col. John March several pieces of land on the original right of George Carr.

1710. Col. John March, John Barnard, Joseph Brown and Jarvis Ring petitioned for leave to build iron-works on the Powow River without being taxed, which was readily assented to by the town. The works were built, and in operation many years. This was a new branch of business, and, in connection with the saw-mills, grist-mills and fulling-mill, was making brisk times in this little village. It is probable that the stock of this company was divided into twenty-four shares, as ancient inventories mention "$\frac{2}{24}$ part" of the iron-works and mill privilege. In 1733 these shares were valued at seven pounds each, or one hundred and sixty-eight pounds for the entire concern. The ore was mostly raked from the bottom of the large ponds in Newton and Kingston, although some bog ore was dug. The stones in and near Powow River show strong indications of iron, and in the northern part of Newton the road walls are largely composed of iron-stones. The fact that most of the ore was obtained in Kingston may account for the removal of the works to Trickling Falls, after some years' experience at the Mills.

Capt. Harvey petitioned for leave to build vessels at Jamaco, and was allowed to do so. The town landings were always free to the business men in town.

The school appropriations were raised to thirty pounds, and schools were ordered to be kept half the time at the meeting-house and half the time at the house of Roger Stevens, at Jamaco.

1711. The Grammar School was ordered to be kept at the meeting-house four months, at "y^e^ Pond Hills fort" four months, and at "Left Foot's fort or thereabouts" the last four months.

1712. Powow River, even in ancient times, failed to supply the mills with water during the dry season of the year, and to supply the deficiency, resort was now had to Kimball's Pond. Capt. John Wadleigh built a dam at the pond's mouth "to preserve water in a dry time for grinding" This was the first attempt to utilize the waters of Kimball's Pond.

Thomas Currier, the third town clerk since 1654, died this year, having served since 1674, when he superseded his father, Richard. Father and son held the office about fifty-two years. Thomas was a neat penman and correct business man, or at least the town thought so. He held the office of selectman seventeen years, besides filling almost every other town office. He was a schoolmaster, and chosen by the town to "teach to wright and sipher such as shall come to him."

He had, by some means, acquired a good education for those early times, and if through the town schools, it speaks well for their efficiency and his industrious habits.

On the 13th of October Orlando Bagley, Jr. (grandson of the first Orlando), was chosen clerk, and held the office till 1754. He was also a schoolmaster, and chosen to keep a private school by the town.

1713. At this time Amesbury extended to Kingston, and the selectmen notified those of that town to meet them "at y^e^ pond's mouth, called ye country pond," to perambulate the town line.

1714. The meeting-house built in 1665 had grown old, and was out of repair, and a meeting was called January 7th to consider what should be done. But

there was a difference of opinion, and the votes were rather conflicting. It was first decided to repair the old house, but some believed it better to build new, and the latter proposition finally prevailed. A committee of six was chosen "to consider and conclude concerning y^e^ building of a meeting-house, and they to bring in their result at y^e^ next March meeting, for y^e^ town's approbation, and also ye place where y^e^ house shall be built." As no report of the committee is found, we are unable to state what it was, but at the annual meeting the town voted to build two houses, and then adjourned to April 12th. When again met it was decided to build the first house at Jamaco, on the Pond Plain, on land given the town by Jarvis Ring for a burying ground. But no committee was chosen, and the measure failed for the present, evidently on account of conflicting opinions.

1715. The first important question upon which the town was called to act was that of building one or more churches, and deciding upon proper locations.

A meeting was held January 7th, but adjourned to the 24th, when the work of last year was reconsidered; and the town voted to build but one meeting-house, and located it on "y^e^ parcel of land called y^e^ parsonage, neare Edward Hunt's."

This settled the question, which no doubt caused some ill feeling, and was a concession to the people at the west end by shortening their route to church about one mile. Its location was on the corner of the Martin Road, opposite the house of George W. Bartlett. The house was to be finished by the 1st of November, 1716. Deacon Joseph Brown, Thomas Hoyt and Thomas Sargent were appointed to carry forward the work. Its dimensions were — forty-five feet long, thirty-five feet wide and twenty feet posts. An appropriation of one hundred and fifty pounds was made to carry forward the work. To satisfy the people at Jamaco, it was voted to build a house there, three years after the completion of this. The location of this new church was not a lonesome one, as within the range of half a mile were half a score of houses.

1716. Orlando Bagley, Jr., gave the town an eighth of an acre where the pound now stands, for a school-house lot, and it was decided to build a house "twenty foot square and seven foot stud, within y^e^ space of two years." The Pond Hills has seldom been without a school, even when there was not a school-house in town, and the schools were held at private houses, forts or the meeting-house. This central locality was convenient and favored on that account.

1717. The school-house at Pond Hills begun last year was not completed, and Thomas Challis was chosen to finish the work.

The meeting-house was not wholly finished, some persons not having built their pews according to order. These were given twelve months' longer time, and if the pews were not then built, the privilege was lost.

The pulpit, deacons' seats and many of the pews were completed and seats assigned to many persons, and meetings were discontinued in the old church, which was now given to the faithful pastor, who had occupied it for forty-five years.

Mr. Wells' experience with the town, in a financial point of view, had not been of the most pleasing kind; wars and scarcity of money had often rendered it difficult to raise his salary and caused some friction between the parties. He now proposes a final settlement up to September 29, 1714, the town giving him leave to build a pew in the east meeting-house and also in the one to be built at the west end of the town, and he to abate ten pounds of his rate made October 23, 1716, and sign the following receipt:

"1d acquitt, discharge and absolve y^e^ inhabitants of y^e^ town of Amesbury, considered conjunctively as y^e^ town, of all debts, dues and demands whatsoever relating to my yearly salary for my ministerial maintainance from y^e^ beginning of y^e^ world unto y^e^ twenty-ninth day of September, in y^e^ yeare of our Lord, one thousand seven hundred and fourteen."

The town accepted this proposition and harmony was restored.

1719. In the early days of the town "Lot layers" were important officers; their duties being those of lotting out the new divisions, laying out highways and at stated periods returning all lots in town for record in the town-book. Samuel Weed had served in the capacity from 1694 to the present time, when he was discharged. The town voted him "ancient and decayed," although but sixty-six years of age.

Constables were in early times important officers, and on them devolved the duty of collecting all rates. In consideration of their valuable services, they were not taxed, but this year a change was made, taxing constables and paying them six pence per pound for collecting.

A school-house was ordered to be built at Jamaco, which may be the second one in town.

Three important roads were located this year—the Ferry Road, Birchy Meadow Road and that part of the Lion's Mouth Road between the Poor Farm and Francis Locke's. What may have been the condition of the land at the Ferry is hardly known, although tradition says that a large portion of the land was covered with wood and bushes.

There were a few houses between Bartlett's Corner and the river, and three only are mentioned in the return of the road, viz.: Jacob Bagley's, James Harbard's and Gideon Lowell's frame. There was, however, an ancient "logg house" near the river. No doubt there was a path of some kind before this three-rod way was opened, but this was an important step towards building up the village.

The Birchy Meadow Road was located very nearly as found to-day, and was a very important measure to that vicinity. The extension of the Lion's Mouth was also a good move.

On the 6th of December the causeway from the Poor Farm at the Lion's Mouth across the boggy and sunken swamp to Birchen Plain was laid out as a public highway. It is probable that some rude path had already been made, by which it was possible to cross, but nothing like a road was there. To avoid the immense quantity of gravel which would be required, the way was first graded with logs and then covered with soil.

1721. The Hunt road, connecting the Haverhill and Buttonwood roads, was widened to three rods and defined.

This year the General Court authorized the emission of bills of credit to the amount of £50,000. There was great scarcity of money, and it was becoming very difficult to transact the ordinary business of the colony. These bills were loaned to the towns and held by trustees, who loaned them, on good security, to the people. Each town received in proportion to its last province rate, which rule gave Amesbury £373. Captain Richard Currier, Jonathan Blasdell and Orlando Bagley, Jr., were chosen trustees, to loan the money on time, which should not exceed four years. For their services they were to receive one-fourth of the interest.

At this date hogs were allowed to run at large, and it was now "voted that all hoggs should go at large on y^e^ commons in said towne for y^e^ yeare ensuing, they being youked and ringed as y^e^ law directs."

The people at Jamaco were growing impatient in regard to their meeting-house. Mr. Wells was willing to preach there a portion of the time, but no suitable place was to be found. Late in the season (Dec. 11th) a meeting was called to consider the matter, and it was decided to "proceed in building a meeting-house at y^e^ west end of y^e^ town, commonly called Jamaco."

Thomas Challis and four others opposed the measure, they being Quakers, but without avail. The meeting decided to locate the house on "y^e^ country road, near y^e^ house of Thomas Bettells." Thomas and Jeremiah Fowler owned land there, and offered to give one-quarter of an acre for the purpose. Captain Richard Currier, Jacob Sargent and Orlando Bagley, Jr., were chosen to proceed with the work. The house was to be of the same dimensions as the one at the parsonage. Although the town had fixed the location and begun the work, things were not working harmoniously, and there is evidently trouble ahead.

1722. The location of the new church had given such general dissatisfaction at Jamaco that a meeting was called, May 14th, to further consider the matter. At this meeting a reconsideration of the vote locating the house on the country road was carried, but not without strong opposition. An out-of-town committee was chosen, consisting of Colonel Henry Somerby, of Newbury, Captain Nathaniel Brown, of Salisbury, and Lieutenant Richard Heason, of Haverhill, with full power to determine the location. The result was that the house was built on the plain a few rods from the present Congregational Church, and not far from the cemetery. This change occasioned some expense in removing the materials which had been collected, and the town agreed to foot the bills.

The Indians were now becoming very troublesome, frequent raids being made upon the settlements, which kept the people in constant alarm. They suddenly appeared at Jamaco, causing a general flight to the forts for protection. On this occasion Anna Cottle, a puny infant, was born in one of the forts, whither her mother had fled. But, notwithstanding the strange circumstances surrounding her birth, she lived to a great age, dying in 1810, aged eighty-seven years, eleven months and five days. At her death the Indians had disappeared, and garrison-houses were no longer needed.

It is probable that near this time a descent was made upon the Pond Hills. Tradition says that David Currier captured an Indian on his homestead (now owned by John Currier), near the Great Swamp. He was at work in his field, with his dog and gun near at hand, when the growling of his dog warned him of approaching danger. Snatching his gun, he quickly saw an Indian picking berries near the swamp, apparently not noticing any one near. He fired, wounding the Indian, who called for quarters, being too much frightened to flee or fire. "Lay down your gun and I'll give you quarters," was the reply, which condition was readily complied with. He was now Mr. Currier's prisoner, and was taken to the garrison-house, on the plain, near the late Rev. D. G. Estes' residence, and finally exchanged. His gun is yet in the possession of the family at Pond Hills.

An effort was made to engage a colleague for Mr. Wells. The eloquent young minister had now grown aged in the service, and it was proposed to lighten his labors by employing a young man to assist him. A town-meeting was called to "make choyce of men to procure an orthodox schoolar to assist our reverent Mr. Wells, Minister, in ye work of y^e^ Ministry." The record simply gives the choice of moderator, leaving us in the dark as to what other matters were acted upon, if any.

1723. The town having laid out a landing near Nichols' Creek (now Pressey's) found that the land taken of Thomas Nichols was in the "bank of credit" for security, and could not be held without authority from court. Accordingly, Captain Foot was chosen to petition the "enferour Court" to establish the landing.

1724. The new church at Jamaco was so far completed as to be ready for those having permission to build pews, and they proceeded with their work. For the privilege of pew-room each proprietor was to pay ten shillings, and if not built before the last of May the right was lost. Jamaco was now well prepared for religious worship, with the exception of a minister. And here the question arose,—how shall he be

hired and paid? To settle this question a town-meeting was called, April 24th, when it was decided that each end of the town pay their minister.

This was virtually a division of the town into parishes, which soon followed. The dividing line was Nichols' Creek and up the brook to the country road, thence north to the pond, and across to Back River, thence up the river to Bartlett's Brook to his sawmill, and thence, as the brook goes, to the country pond.

Rice Edwards was now building vessels on the town landing, and asked leave to set a house thereon so long as he continued building, and was allowed the privilege. Ship-building was a permanent branch of business in those days, and did much towards building up the village.

1725. Captain Currier, Jacob Rowell and Samuel Lowell had leave to build a wharf on Powow River, to the northward of Gideon Lowell's wharf. This was, no doubt, needed for the accommodation of unloading their vessels which returned from the West Indies and other ports with cargoes of merchandise. Mr. Currier's "ware house" stood near by, according to the record.

Last year the town was divided into parishes, but not presented to the General Court for confirmation on account of some opposition on several points. The West Parish, however, went forward and hired a minister, but there was some disagreement about Mr. Wells' support in his old age and other matters. To settle all difficulties by the adoption of some just measures, John Challis was directed to warn a meeting on the 7th of April, at the East Meeting-house, "to consider of some means whereby to settle ourselves with respect to y^e^ payment of our ministers; and to endeavor a loving agreement for y^e^ future setling ourselves for y^e^ future respecting y^e^ same, either in our being together or asunder." Under this kind invitation the people assembled and confirmed the line to be perpetual and "mutually agreed upon and concented to and with by ns y^e^ s^d^ inhabitants, that y^e^ lower precinct shall pay to y^e^ upper precinct so much as ye s^d^ upper precinct are assessed to pay to y^e^ maintainance of Mr. Wells for his work in y^e^ Ministry in ye yeare 1724; within three months after y^e^ date hereof, and it is further mutually agreed upon by y^e^ s^d^ inhabitants that y^e^ upper precinct shall have and enjoy y^e^ one half of y^e^ pasnage land and meadows conditionally that they shall and do pay to and for y^e^ use of Mr. Wells' maintainance after he is disabled for carrying on y^e^ work of y^e^ Ministry y^e^ one half of what is to be payd to him and also pay to Mistress Wells y^e^ one half of what she must be payd by y^e^ town's agreement with Mr. Wells." Thus a satisfactory settlement was reached, and the division was submitted to the General Court and confirmed.

1726. Having accomplished a separation from the First Church and Society, the new parish proceeded on the 19th of May to organize a Second Church and make preparations for the ordination of the Rev. Pain Wingate, who had been called to the work of the ministry. Letters were sent to neighboring churches, and the ordination services were held in the new house on the 3d of June. Rev. Mr. Gookin preached the sermon from John 20: 15; Rev. Mr. Tufts offered prayer; Rev. Mr. Cushing gave the charge, and Rev. Mr. Parsons gave the right hand of fellowship. On the 13th of July the organization of the church was completed by the choice of Abraham Merrill and Joseph Colby as deacons.

1727. Old dairies and account-books mention an earthquake which occurred October 29th at ten o'clock P.M. David Blasdell's account-book calls it the first earthquake. Richard Kelley wrote as follows in his diary: "In y^e^ yeare 1727, October 29, about ten of ye clock, it being Sabbath day night, was the Grate earthquake which was extrodenery loud and hard as awaked many out of sleep, the housen did shake & windows ratel and puter and dishes clater on ye shelves & y^e^ tops of many chimneys fell of & many ware so shatered as that people were fain to take them down and new build them again."

On the 26th of January Mary, wife of Thomas Wells, died.

1728. The province treasurer was directed to issue £60,000 in bills of credit, to be loaned to the towns on the same principle as those of 1721. In the first issue of £50,000 the town received £373, and had the same proportionate share been received now, it would have been £447 instead of £473 which was received. This shows that the town had been prosperous for the last seven years beyond the average of the province. This was called the Second Bank.

The ordination of the Rev. Edmund March, who was chosen to assist the aged pastor in the East Parish, took place July 3d. He was a graduate of Harvard College, in the class of 1722, being then twenty-five years old. There is but little doubt that Mr. March had assisted Mr. Wells for several years previous to his ordination.

1729. A lawsuit with Captain Humphrey Hook about the ferry was giving the town a good deal of trouble. He had at some time obtained possession of the privilege and refused to give it up. Public opinion was divided in regard to the merits of the case, and the town-meetings which were held sometimes showed his friends in the ascendancy and sometimes his opponents. It was a vexatious suit and not soon ended.

On the 21st of November, Josiah, son of Stephen and Hannah Bartlett, was born at the Ferry. His parents lived on the lot designed for an Old Ladies' Home. He studied medicine, and removed to Kingston, N. H., where he became prominent in political affairs from his intense love of freedom, and was elected to Congress early in the Revolutionary struggle, and is said to have been the first signer of the

Declaration of Independence. He was very popular in the State of his adoption, and was chosen its first Governor. Just previous to the Revolution his house was burnt by the Tories, who hated him very cordially for his patriotism.

1730. The punishment of certain offenses in the early history of the colony was singular, but far more effectual than that of modern times. Sitting in the "stocks or bilbowes, or putting their tongues in split sticks" were common punishments for small offenses, and, no donbt, were effectual in shaming culprits. The stocks were set up in some public place where friends, as well as foes, would be likely to notice them. At this time the town had on hand a lot of small rogues who deserved punishment, but no stocks suitable for the occasion, and so the annual meeting "voted to have one paire of stocks immediately built and set where y^e^ Selectmen shall think most convenient."

1731. Jonathan Barnard obtained leave to build a bridge "across y^e^ falls on Powow river, about four rods below y^e^ bridge now across s^d^ river, provided y^e^ town of Salisbury may consent thereto, he y^e^ s^d^ Barnard to make and keep y^e^ s^d^ bridge forever at all times in good and sufficient repair, in consideration whereof he y^e^ s^d^ Barnard to have our part of y^e^ ould bridge and also y^e^ liberty of making a dam across s^d^ river for his own use for y^e^ flooding and stopping of water for y^e^ use of a mill or mills not damnifying y^e^ highway nor y^e^ town of Salisbury nor any other dam or dams, mill or mills." The water-power here was gradually being turned to account by the many mills on the stream.

The West Parish bought land of Captain Foot or John Foot, Jr., for a burying-place, and also two hundred and ten rods of land for a training-field. This last lot now lays common near the cemetery on Church Street.

1732. The Rev. Mr. Wingate received a supply of thirty cords of wood for his year's use, it being the usual quantity furnished.

1734. An effort was made by the town to establish a free school; and John Blasdell, Representative to the General Court, was instructed to petition that body for a grant of land for that purpose; but as no school was set up, it is safe to infer that the effort met with poor success.

At the May session of the General Court a very stringent law was passed in regard to fishing in the Merrimac River. People had, hitherto, been allowed to set up "wears, hedges, fish-garths, stakes, kiddles or other incumbrances," but these were all forbidden under a penalty of £50 for the first offense, and £100 for all subsequent offenses. This was, probably, the first attempt to regulate the river fishing. Salisbury early exercised authority over the Powow, but the Merrimac was free.

Rev. Thomas Wells died July 10th, in his eighty-eighth year. He was born at Ipswich, January 11, 1647, and was a son of Dr. Thomas Wells, who died in 1655, while Thomas was a mere boy. Some provision was made for his education, so that he studied for the ministry and was called to settle in Amesbury, next after Mr. Hubbard. His life-work was here, and during his long pastorate of sixty-two years he labored faithfully for the good of his people. He married Miss Mary Parker, of Newbury, by whom he had seven sons and three daughters. His residence was close by the High School building, where his well may yet be seen and his favorite flowers—the lilacs—still bloom. He was buried very nearly where the little church stood in which he preached for more than forty years.

1735. The town voted to join with Newbury in petitioning the Court of Sessions to establish a ferry at Savage's Rock, but the petition was not granted. Application was then made to the Quarter Court in September, and the request was granted.

On the 13th of October a town-meeting was held, when it was "voted to have our county of Essex divided into two counties," and Representative Blasdell was instructed to present the matter to the General Court. No reasons are given for this sudden movement.

1736. A new road was opened this year, along the river bank from Clapboard Landing to Cottle's Landing, "to encourage trade and for the conveancy for traveling." The owners gave the land for this much-needed way.

1737. A new move was made this year, looking to the erection of a house for idle persons, by the towns in this vicinity; but not receiving support from other towns, nothing was accomplished.

Wolves were even at this late day becoming troublesome, and a bounty of forty shillings was offered for each one killed.

A road was laid out through land of Thomas Hoyt to the "ould forte," for which the land damage was £100.

1739. At the annual meeting it was "voted to give unto David Blasdell ours y^e^ towns Meeting-house Bell." Mr. Blasdell was a clock-maker, and may have used this ancient bell for casting clock bells.

Dr. Nathan Huse is first taxed in the West Parish this year.

1740. The prominent event of this year was tunneling the pond ridge. This singular geological formation of sharp ridges, extending in one continuous and nearly unbroken line from the Ferry Hill, far into Newton, N. H., has ever been to the student of nature a great curiosity. Its general course is northwest, and stretching along through the Great Swamp, passing the pond, it still continues its well-defined course, slightly broken by some pre-historic cause near the late Thomas Colby's, sufficiently to afford the only outlet which Kimball's Pond originally had. It then passes into Newton, and is there known as Pine Hill. On the early record this break is termed

the "terrormost end of y^e^ pond ridge." A large tract of meadow land lay near the pond's mouth, almost worthless from stagnant water.

To improve and render valuable this waste tract, the project of tunneling was undertaken by Orlando Bagley, Esq., and Capt. Caleb Pilsbury. Having obtained leave of the town, a favorable locality was selected where the base of the ridge contracts somewhat, and the work of excavating a tunnel or drain was commenced and carried through to completion. This opened a short, direct route through to Powow River, which in its winding course comes near the ridge.

The road and landing at the river (now Merrimac Port), were bounded out and described as being given by Capt. John Sargent and Deacon Thomas Stevens, whose houses the road passed.

1741. The subject of an almshouse, in common with Salisbury and Newbury, was again brought up and approved by the town; but as before, it failed of accomplishment. The town was heartily tired of the old system of putting out the poor and would gladly have established a more humane practice.

Orlando Bagley and his son, Jonathan, petitioned for leave to build a wharf fifty feet wide, on the flats between Gideon Lowell's wharf and Timothy Currier's, from the bank to the channel of Powow River, and was granted the privilege.

1742. The plan of building a common almshouse having failed, it was determined to establish one at home. For this purpose a meeting was held in February, and the plan adopted. The house of John Bartlett was secured, and he was chosen master, to take care of those entrusted to him and keep them to work. This was the first almshouse or workhouse in town.

1743. Rev. Edmund March, of the First Church, was dismissed this year by a council held at his house, and the Rev. Elisha Odlin was settled in his stead. The parish was badly in debt, owing Mr. Marsh nearly £400. In a financial point of view, Mr. Marsh's ministry was not a success.

1744. Deacon Abraham Merrill, of the West Parish, died September 26th. He was born in Newbury, and lived opposite Pleasant Valley until nearly sixty years of age. About 1722 he removed to the West Parish with his three sons—Abraham, Isaac and Jacob—and two daughters. When the church was organized in 1726 he was chosen deacon.

1745. The East Parish built a house for the use of the minister this year, costing £65 17*s.* 6*d.*

For many years there has been a few church people in town, and not far from this date a meeting-house was built at the Pond Hills, on the lot known as the "old church-yard."

The Rev. Matthias Plant, of Newbury, was their first minister, and in a letter written this year says,—"You will not think it amiss if I inform you that I have a pretty church at Amesbury, on the other side of the Merrimac River. I gave a calf towards a dinner for the men who raised it, and £5 this currency for nails towards shingling it. I was going to send for glass to England for it, but, this unhappy quarrel arising, I forebore, but it is worthy of the notice of that venerable body. I have preached there for many years in a house before the church was built, and since in the church, where I had a numerous congregregation." Samuel Weed and William Pressey are mentioned as churchmen as early as 1716, and George Worthen in 1722.

1746. The first by-laws of which any record is found were passed this year, and approved by the Court of Sessions. The penalty for violating them was twenty-five shillings, which was given to the poor.

1747. King George's War involved the colonies in a very expensive conflict with the French and Indians in Canada, which resulted after a protracted siege in the capture of Louisbourg. This year the order-book has the following:

"March 24, 1747, Ordered to Stephen Barnard, being in y^e^ service at cape Brittain..... £1 4*s.* 6*d.*
To Jacob Bagley, Jr., being in captivity..... 2 6 0
To Jacob Bagley being rated for a vessel that was taken 1 13 9"

Amesbury men served in all the old French wars each town being required to furnish their quota.

William Whicher was given leave to set up a brickyard "near the Button tree," at the town-landing at the Buttonwood. How long Mr. Whicher continued in the business is not known, but, judging by the extensive excavation, there must have been a great many bricks made. It was favorably situated for boating to a market, which was the easiest conveyance at this date. Two other yards on the Buttonwood Road were formerly worked, indicating an extensive business in this vicinity.

The "Button tree" was a bound next the Bradstreet farm, and was mentioned in 1703, which shows it to be a very ancient tree.

Rev. Matthias Plant received £15 11*s.* 2*d.* from the parish rate on account of the church men, of whom the following is a list: John Bartlett, Ehod Bartlett, Frank Bartlett, William Currier, John Huntington, Samuel Huntington, Jonathan Huntington, Gideon Lowell, Samuel Lowell, John Hook and Batt Moulton. Their full tax was £20 3*s.* 6*d.* out of £879.

1748. The old road over the Ferry Hill was this year exchanged with Gideon Lowell (so far as went through his land) for two pieces of landing at Powow River.

1749. For many years the paper money has been growing of less value each succeeding year, till it now becomes necessary to designate in all deeds and contracts what money is meant. "Old tenor" was the depreciated paper in general use.

1750. The want of a bridge over the Powow at the Ferry had long been felt, and now some of the prominent men there and at the Point came forward

and offered to build one without expense to the town, provided leave is given. There is some evidence which goes to show that a bridge was built within a few years of this date. If built, it was not an expensive structure, like bridges of the present day, but of wood, with a draw, no doubt, as vessels were then freely passing up and down the Powow River.

Joseph Bartlett was granted land for a lime-kiln under the bank at Powow River. Lime was then made from clam-shells, which were found in large mounds on the shore below Ring's Island.

1751. Theodore Hoyt and Thomas Colby petitioned for a piece of land near Gideon Lowell's wharf for a ship-yard, and to set a work-house on. Ship-building was good, and other yards were occupied. The petition was granted.

1752. Rev. Elisha Odlin died in the early part of the year, and his widow Judith was appointed administratrix of his estate. The town voted Mrs. Odlin a present of twenty pounds. Rev. Mr. Wiburd supplied the pulpit the remainder of the year.

1753. Dr. Robert Rogers died April 28th, and was buried at the Plain Cemetery. He lived at the river, and probably in the house owned and occupied by the late David Sargent.

1754. Thomas Bagley was chosen town clerk in place of Orlando Bagley, Esq., who had grown old in the service. For nearly forty-two years he had faithfully performed the duties of the office. He was a very prominent business man, holding courts and officiating at a great many marriages.

This year closes the ministry of the Rev. Mr. Wiburd, and begins the labors of Rev. Thomas Hibbert. He was from Kittery, Maine, and during the early part of his ministry was quite popular.

1755. On the 18th of November there was a shock of an earthquake, which Richard Kelley, in his diary, describes as follows:

"1755, November y^e^ 18, it being Tuesday about 4 o'clock in the morning, was an exceeding shock of y^e^ earthquake, which shook me nere as much as that in y^e^ yere 1727, October 29, but y^e^ noise was not so loud; it continued a great while, I think the longest that ever I herd in all my life and just as y^e^ day brake there was another but nothing so hard as y^e^ former and I have herd it every day since to y^e^ 22^d^ day of s^d^ month."

The French and Indians were very troublesome, and the colonies were obliged to keep an army in the field for many years. This town furnished about forty soldiers for Kennebec, Minis and Crown Point.

1756. The colonial forces were operating at several points along the Canadian frontier, hoping to reduce some strongholds and finally secure a lasting peace. Capt. Worthen and his company were at Lake George, and several of his men died there. A strong force was sent to the Bay of Fundy, under Col. Monson, which soon reduced the two principal forts there, and Arcadia fell into the hands of the English. The result of this victory was such as the world seldom witnessed. The peaceable inhabitants were assembled in various places, under false pretences, to the number of twelve thousand, and some seven thousand of them were hurried on board of the ships and brought to the colonies, where, by order of the authorities they were scattered among the towns for support. Several of them were quartered on Amesbury, where for years they were cared for by the town, under the name of "French neutrals." Very few of them ever reached home—Joseph Busway and his daughter dying here in 1764.

Orlando Bagley, Esq., died May 3d. He was grandson to Orlando (1st), who married Sarah, daughter of Anthony Colby. He owned the farm at the Pond Hills, where Albert C. Hill lives. He was nearly ten years old when his father arrested and carried to Salem Susanna Martin, to be tried for her life on the charge of witchcraft. He was a very able and active man, holding many offices in town for a period of more than forty years. He succeeded Thomas Currier in the clerk's office, which he held for about forty-two years.

1757. The East Parish bought one acre and a half of the "Vane lot" at Sandy Hill, of Col. Jonathan Bagley, for a meeting-house lot. The house was built at the parsonage before the division into parishes; but the population having largely increased at the Ferry and Mills, it was proposed to remove and enlarge it for the convenience of the majority. But it was not till 1761 that this plan was carried into effect.

David Blasdell, the clockmaker, gunsmith, blacksmith, trader, etc., died at Lake George, whither he had gone as armorer with the forces stationed there. He was very much of a genius, readily turning his hand to almost any branch of business.

Early in the season a call was made for soldiers, and Capt. George Worthen being in high favor with the royal Governor, impressed twelve men, most of whom procured substitutes. Later in the season (August 15th) a draft was made from the second company (Jamaco) of twenty-four men. The first company fared no better, having a very large number impressed and drafted. These recruits marched away August 16th, to join the main army under Lord Loudon, destined to fight the French and Indians at the Lakes. But when near Worcester, news of the fall of Fort William Henry reached them, and owing to the lateness of the season, they were allowed to return home.

1758. William Bayley, having contracted to build a large ship, asked the town for some land "near the stern of his ship one rod," his reason for the request being that "from his yard is sumthing difficult to launch." His request was granted.

Lord Loudon again collected an army to subdue the French, and Amesbury was called upon to supply men for the campaign. Captain Kelley's company, by enlistment, furnished twenty men, and no doubt the East Parish company enlisted as many more.

1759. The French and Indian War still continues,

and preparations are making at Lake George to prosecute it with vigor this season. Batteaux were being built at the Lakes, and some sixteen men went there to work. Several men were in Captain Sikes' and Bayley's companies from Amesbury.

The roads were this year repaired by a rate of £40, and the wages were, for each man, 2*s.* per day; for each man and yoke of oxen, 3*s.* 6*d.*; for each man, yoke of oxen and cart or plow, 4*s.*

1760. Small-pox, the scourge of early times, made its appearance in town, causing very general alarm. Two pest-houses were provided—one in the East Parish and one in the West. It seems to have been prevalent in all sections of the town.

Captain Robert Sargent was now running a fulling-mill at South Amesbury, the town abating the taxes on it. Very likely it stood on the stream where, at a much later date, the tannery was built.

William Whicher, who was granted the privilege of making bricks at the Buttonwood in 1747, now asks the privilege of a small piece of land, there to set a house, stating that not much lumber was brought there. The result does not appear on the record.

1761. The meeting-house at the parsonage was taken down and removed to Sandy Hill, where a lot was bought in 1757. Having stood at the parsonage forty-six years, it was now destined to be rebuilt nearer the centre of the population. It was enlarged and greatly improved in style of architecture. The internal finish was highly ornamental. It stood at Sandy Hill eighty-seven years, when it was sold and entirely demolished.

1762. At this period vessels could hardly be built as fast as wanted, although the shore was dotted with ship-yards for miles. Theodore Hoyt proposed setting up a new yard, and the town readily granted him liberty to do so, he keeping the bank-wall in repair. This yard was on the Powow River, and not far from the store of Daniel Worthen & Son.

At a very early period a log house stood near where "Swett's shop" now stands, and was mentioned when the Ferry road was laid out, in 1719. This may have been the William Huntington place, given him by his father (Bailey) in 1650.

1767. The French prisoners were this year allowed to return to their homes in Arcadia, the town giving them fifteen dollars to help them on their way. They were prisoners here for eleven years, receiving help, to some extent, annually, during that time, and when setting out on their long journey home, the town paid Stephen Bartlett, Jr., £3 to "transport them" to some point not stated on the record.

The Ferry now appears to be the busiest section of the town, and the town land was in good demand. Moses Chase was granted a small lot near Theodore Hoyt's ship-yard to build a hat-shop on. Marchant Cleaves also obtained a lot next to Chase's for a tailor-shop, and Eli Gale was granted a lot for "a large blacksmith-shop," thus occupying this seemingly worthless steep bank on the Powow.

1768. Ichabod March received liberty to build a house on the spot where the meeting-house stood, on the corner of the Martin road, and there are yet some living who remember this gambrel-roof cottage, which went to decay about 1815.

1769. A sad event happened, on the 16th of April, by the upsetting of two boats on the bar. Fishing out over the bar in open boats had from the first been common, supplying an important article of food to the surrounding country. At this time Philip Gould, John Gould, Samuel Blasdell and Moses Currier went out in the evening, as was customary in those times, in company with another boat, but in returning, both boats were swamped on the bar.

1771. The unpopularity of the royal government was growing more apparent every year, as taxes were constantly increasing, the province rates amounting to as much as the town rate, frequently; and, taken together, imposed a heavy burden on the people. An address to the Governor was ordered at the May meeting, and Isaac Merrill, Jonathan Bagley and Thomas Rowell, Esq., were chosen to prepare the document. No doubt this address was designed to set forth some wrongs and ask redress. Every infringement of the people's rights now meets with determined remonstrance. The beginning of stirring times is at hand.

Timothy Barnard was given leave to build a wharf on the Mills flats at the foot of the falls to lay lumber on.

1773. On the 14th of August occurred the most violent tornado ever known in this vicinity. Although not lasting more than three minutes, it damaged or destroyed about two hundred buildings, which came within its course. Two vessels were removed twenty feet from the stocks, one of which was about ninety tons, and Captain Smith was killed. Its extent was about one-quarter of a mile in width and a mile and a half in length, near the river, in this vicinity. The damage at the Ferry was very great.[1]

1774. The people were now organizing throughout the colony, and making all necessary preparations for open resistance in case of any emergency. A town-meeting was held and £2 8*s.* 7*d.* appropriated for the Committee of Correspondence, which will soon be found the chief managers of political affairs. Governor Gage dissolved the refractory General Court and commenced fortifying Boston.

The people issued a call for representatives to assemble under the name of "Provincial Congress," a body to whom the patriots gave the supreme control of state affairs. This Congress immediately voted £20,000 to arm and train minute-men through the colony.

All hopes of reconciliation were gone, and the

[1] Rev. Samuel Webster.

province rates were refused the royal treasurer, the town voting to indemnify the selectmen for not returning the money to Harrison Gray, Esq., as had been previously done. Evidently there was no thought of returning to the government which had thus suddenly been overthrown.

1775. At a town-meeting held Jan. 24th, Isaac Merrill, Esq., was a second time elected to the Provincial Congress. At this meeting it was formally decided to acknowledge the acts of the Continental Congress, which, with the acts of last year, amount to an entire repudiation of all royal authority. The matter of raising minute-men was discussed, but referred to the annual meeting.

A colonial government was already organized and assuming control of public affairs, and to this the town pledged itself, and, in fact, no further support was accorded to British rule from this 13th day of March, 1775. At an adjournment on the 20th, it was decided to raise fifty able-bodied men as minute-men, to serve one year. April 17th, provision was made by the town for the payment of the minute men, and the selectmen were instructed to pay the province rates of 1773 and 1774 to the provincial treasurer, Henry Gardner, Esq. A bounty of two dollars was voted to each minute-man, and all needed preparations were made for determined work.

This meeting was held just two days before the fight at Lexington. The selectmen were authorized to hire one hundred pounds to carry out the measures thus early begun. June 6th, the town decided to join with Newburyport in sinking a pier at the mouth of the river.

Immediately after the fight at Lexington, active measures were taken to defend the rights of the people, by arming and drilling the minute-men. The town ordered a company to be raised, and in a few days the ranks were full, and Captain Currier marched away to the scene of conflict. But a more permanent organization was soon effected, and two companies marched to headquarters in season to take part in the battle of Bunker Hill.

Captain Currier's company was in that battle, and it is very probable that Captain Wm. H. Ballard and company was also present, as it is certain that he was at headquarters the 25th of June.

Of those engaged in the battle of Bunker Hill it is believed that but few were killed; at least no record is found giving but a single soldier in Captain Currier's company.

1776. On the 1st of July a town-meeting was held to consider the propriety of instructing the representatives to press forward the Declaration of Independence. The meeting declared "that they will abide by and Defend the Members of the Continental Congress with their Lives and fortunes, if they think expedient to declare the Colonies Independent of Great Briton." Most faithfully did they keep this solemn pledge during the long struggle which followed. When this important measure was brought forward in Congress, Dr. Josiah Bartlett (the ferry-boy of 1729) was a member from New Hampshire, and his name stands next that of John Hancock on the document.

He was a fearless advocate of the measure, having previously been a known enemy to the tyranny of the mother country. So cordially was he hated by the Tories that they burnt his house at Kingston before the Revolution had fairly commenced.

From this time forth the town was obliged to take the most active measures to meet the calls for soldiers which were constantly made. The minute-men were discontinued, and the permanent organization of the militia effected, preparatory to enlistments for longer periods. The first call (in addition to the companies already in the service) was for thirty-seven men. To meet this call a bounty of twenty dollars was offered, which proving insufficient, it was raised to forty, requiring the sum of $1480.

Scarcely had this excitement died away, when there came another call for every twenty-fifth man on the roll, being nine men. To obtain the men a bounty of twelve pounds was paid. On the 1st of August another call for six men was received and the town agreed to give those who should enlist ten dollars per month. Again, in September a call came for twelve men, and a bounty of six pounds was offered. Soon after this another call was made for one-fourth of the able-bodied men, and a bounty of twenty dollars was offered; but proving insufficient, was raised to thirty dollars. The repeated calls had so reduced the roll that but twelve were obtained at this time. Thus sixty-four men had been called during the year, in addition to those who held over from 1775, which may have been as many more. At the close of the year the prospect was not very brilliant, although the patriots had by no means lost courage.

1777. The frequent calls for men last year severely tried the resources of the town, but this year opens with new difficulties which must be met. The war had called to the army so many of the able-bodied men that the cultivation of the farms was but to a limited extent, and provisions were growing scarce and high. Many of the soldiers' families were supplied in part by the town, although the women freely went into the fields to work. In addition to this orders were frequently received for guns, gun-locks, shovels and many other articles, the cost of which must be assumed by the town for the present.

In April a call for fourteen men was made and a bounty of three pounds was offered, which secured the required number. This order was filled the last of April, and in seven days another call was received for "one-seventh part of all the male inhabitants from sixteen years old and upwards," to serve as soldiers.

Unless this demand was complied with, a draft would follow. The citizens assembled May 12th and under the excitement voted a bounty of one hundred

dollars, but upon adjournment this was changed to fifty dollars. This was subsequently changed to thirty pounds for serving seven months, which secured the twenty-two men.

On the 16th of August a call came for one-sixth of the able-bodied men (thirty), and a bounty of four pounds and ten shillings per month enabled the town to procure the required number.

On the 26th of August a meeting was held to take measures to raise seven men. A bounty of forty-three pounds proved effectual in securing the number called for. The calls this year amounted to nearly one hundred men. It was a gloomy period, perhaps more so than at any other time during the war.

1778. This year lengthy instructions were given to Capt. Caleb Pillsbury, representative to the General Court, in regard to the "Articles of Confederation and perpetual union betwixt the United States of America." The presentation of these instructions was the last important act of his life, as he died before the close of the year. From this time and up to the close of the war no complete list of soldiers is found, a change which is hard to account for.

March 30th it was "voted to make up their wages to seven pounds per month with what they have from the Continent and State."

April 9th, the town "voted to make up the wages of the soldiers that went to guard the prisoners taken by General Gates, to six pounds per month besides the twenty shillings the Court gave for sauce money or wages."

May 4th, a meeting was held to raise recruits for the army, when it was "voted that each man that shall enlist into the Continental army for nine months shall be entitled to the thirty pounds which the Court allows the town, and also thirty pounds more to each man as an additional bounty from the town" A bounty of thirty pounds was also offered to the eight months' men which were to serve on the Hudson River.

June 25th, measures were taken to raise ten men "at the town's cost, and also some soldiers to replace the guards under General Heath."

July 30th. A committee was chosen to procure the men just called for. This was probably a new requisition for men.

September 14th. A town-meeting was held to take measures to procure the men called, but the measures then adopted failed of success and a second meeting was held on the 23d, in regard "to the men that should enlist or be drafted equal to one-third part of the training list." The meeting ordered the selectmen and Committee of Safety to draft if the men could not be enlisted. It had now become very difficult to raise men on any terms.

1779. Continental money having greatly depreciated in value, it became necessary to offer large bounties, one hundred dollars extra being given to three years' men.

June 17th. The town met to devise some means to procure the men called for, to be paid "in money or produce as they can agree."

October 13th. More men having been called for, measures were taken by the meeting to fill the call. The soldiers' record is very deficient this year, but there is little doubt that frequent calls were made by government, and large bounties paid.

1780. The new form of government was submitted to the people May 29th, when the third article in regard to religious freedom was rejected by a vote of thirteen yeas to fourteen nays; the remaining articles were adopted by twenty one yeas to nineteen nays.

June 12th. The town held a meeting to devise some means of raising the men called for. The committee and selectmen were authorized to hire the required number.

July 24th. A meeting was called to raise money for current expenses and the sum of £48,400 was voted. Owing to the depreciation of the currency this large sum amounted to but little.

December 28th. A meeting was held to provide for raising twenty-one men to serve three years. This was a year of discouragement to the colonies. Provisions were scarce and paper money nearly worthless, and to crown the misfortunes which seemed to overshadow all, the colonial forces had suffered very general defeat. The South was almost overrun by the British forces, and Arnold came near delivering West Point to the enemy. Government was powerless to feed the army and their rations were drawn from the towns. Amesbury this year furnished 30,282 lbs. of beef, equal to thirty-three oxen of 917 lbs. each. But all did their best to sustain the cause. The wives and mothers contributed of their means to make the soldiers comfortable by sending clothes and stockings to the suffering army. They loaned the town money for war purposes, viz.—Rebecca Kelly, £75; Widow Hannah Kelly, £128; Tabitha Barnard, £280; and others smaller sums. The winter of this year is said to have been unusually severe, no perceptible thaw being seen for forty days. The dark day also, which occurred May 19th, was to many an omen of evil. These, in connection with the earthquake November 18th, were casting a gloom over the land.

1781. Repeated calls were made for soldiers which the town was but poorly able to supply. Nearly every able-bodied male from sixteen up was or had been in the service, and it became necessary to go "eastward" to obtain men to answer the calls. Hard money was very scarce and soldiers would no longer take worthless paper.

Under these difficulties there was but one thing to do, and that was to order one-half of the taxes to be paid in hard money. For the encourgement of those having money to loan, it was agreed to pay all notes in hard currency.

A meeting was held January 11th, when the select-

men were instructed "to hire the twenty-one men called for on the best terms they can."

Two thousand dollars in hard money was voted, but it is doubtful if so much could be collected. June 28th, a meeting was called to take measures to procure three men for five months, and the selectmen were instructed to hire the men at the town's cost.

The town also voted a rate of £924 in hard money for town expenses. This latter sum was assessed July 18th, and on the 2d of August the town instructed the constables to collect one-half of it in hard money. A large amount of beef had been called for and farmers would not part with their cattle for paper that was nearly worthless and extensively counterfeited.

On the 21st of August measures were taken to procure three men. It was agreed to continue the bounty already paid, viz.—ten hard dollars bounty and twenty bushels of corn per month for each man. No laborer at home could earn so much; but the cause was in a critical condition and must be sustained. Two months later, on the surrender of Cornwallis there was very general rejoicing among the patriots.

1782. The war record of this year is very scant, but several calls were received for men, which were no doubt procured according to order. The State was now pressing the payment of the State tax, and the selectmen were instructed to collect "as much money as they can," and pay the same into the treasury.

The people were now anticipating the close of the war, and considering what kind of a treaty should be made. Early in the year Amesbury instructed her representative to use his influence in the General Court for an application to Congress that in any negotiations with Great Britain for peace, the right to fish be an indispensable article in the treaty. This was an important branch of business to the eastern part of Massachusetts.

1784. No road had yet been opened on the river banks through Pleasant Valley, but this year a petition was laid before the town by several prominent citizens asking leave to locate a highway from the Ferry to the landing near Stephen Patten's. The town consented, provided it could be done at private cost. But people were not willing to give the land, and the measure failed for the present. Although much needed, it was too expensive for private enterprise.

The Rev. Thomas Hibbert, of the East Parish, was dismissed in consequence of his intemperate habits; but a portion of the church still adhered to him, finally organizing a new society, which they denominated a "Presbyterian Society." Mr. Hibbert now professed to be a Presbyterian minister and not liable to be taxed for the support of other preaching. He had been compelled to pay his rates, however, and last year commenced a suit to recover back the amount paid. There ensued a bitter controversy for several years.

Oct. 13th. The Rev. Benjamin Bell was ordained pastor of the First Church by an ecclesiastical council.

1785. At this time young minister Bell was very popular, and the parish decided to build a parsonage for his better accommodation. A lot was bought at Bartlett's Corner, where the parish house was built, which became the home of all succeeding ministers.

1786. The trouble with Mr. Hibbert, mentioned in 1784, was continued to this year. He and his friends petitioned the General Court for an act of incorporation as a Presbyterian Society, which met with determined opposition from the town. Some of the principal men in the parish, and several Salisbury men, adhered to him and built him a large house, where he preached for some time. Among his special friends was Deacon David Tuxbury, of "Little Salisbury," at Tuxbury's Mills. He was very persistent in establishing a Presbyterian Society, and though failing in his pet scheme every time, he finally made another and last effort in 1797. As on previous occasions, he was then unsuccessful.

In 1784 an effort was made to open a river road from the Ferry, along the bank of the river through Pleasant Valley, but without success. This year application was made to the Court of Sessions, which, after a protracted struggle, ordered the road to be opened. The town opposed this road for various reasons. It was a bad route to build, requiring several expensive bridges not needed, as the river lots had a road on the north end and the river on the south, and the town was badly in debt. A committee of the most influential men was chosen to oppose it, but without avail. At present this affords one of the finest drives in the valley of the Merrimac.

The West Parish refused to pay Rev. Paine Wingate his salary in 1784 and he commenced a suit, which was in court till this year, when he recovered judgment and an execution. He was now aged, having preached in the parish forty-eight years.

To aid in quelling the famous "Shay's Rebellion," the town was called upon to furnish sixteen men.

1787. It was the opinion of Amesbury that Boston was not a proper place for the great General Court, and in accordance with this opinion Peleg Challis, then representative, was instructed to use his influence to have it removed "from the town of Boston." The reasons for this change of the seat of government is not stated. We may surmise, however, that Shay's Rebellion had something to do with this new move.

The new meeting-house just completed in the Second Parish was dedicated in course of the year. It was a plain building, after the style of those times, with box pews, similar to those in the Rocky Hill Church, built some two years earlier.

1788. December 18th. The election of the first President of the United States was held to-day. There was apparently but very little enthusiasm, as only twenty-two votes were cast. There was no opposition

to the illustrious candidate, which may account for the small vote.

1789. This year is especially noted for the visit of President Washington. He arrived at Newburyport on Friday, October 30th, where he received a most hearty welcome, all professions, trades and occupation uniting to do him honor. Saturday morning he was escorted on his way to Portsmouth, passing up High Street to the ancient ferry, opposite Amesbury, where a barge appropriately decorated and oarsmen dressed in white awaited to convey him across the river. He landed at the foot of the Court, between the late Jonathan Morrill's and Nathan Nutter's, passing to the north side of Merrimac Street, where ample preparations had been made to receive the illustrious guest. The militia, school children dressed in white, and citizens were here to pay their respects to the great leader, who, by his wisdom and prudence, had elevated the colonies to an exalted position among the nations. And many a war-worn veteran was here to greet for the last time their much beloved general. From Amesbury he passed through the Point and over to Rocky Hill, where the militia were drawn up in line to receive him. He passed through their open ranks with his hat in his hand, bowing to the people. This was truly an exciting and joyful day.

June 3d. The Rev. Francis Welch was ordained pastor of the Second Church.

1791. A petition of Nathaniel Carter and eight others was presented to the Legislature for a charter to build a bridge across the river at Deer Island. This measure was opposed by the town and also by Newbury. The petitioners were successful in obtaining a charter, and the bridge was built and opened to the public in 1792.

A grist-mill was this year built by Ebenezer True, on a small stream where the Merrimac Hat-Factory is now located.

1793. Rev. Francis Welch, of the Second Church, died December 15th, aged twenty-eight years, having spent about four years in the ministry in town.

1794. The small-pox prevailed in town this and last year, making it necessary to establish a pest-house. Accordingly, the house of Elijah Jones, situated on the Kimball road, was taken, to which patients were carried and properly cared for.

The old Artillery Company was organized this year by order of the commander-in-chief. The first officers were William Lurvey, captain; Ephraim Morrill, first lieutenant; James Lowell, second lieutenant.

Rev. Ebenezer Cleveland commenced his labors in the East Parish this year.

1795. The Revised Constitution of Massachusetts was submitted to the town, and resulted in four yeas and forty-seven nays.

The Rev. David Smith was ordained pastor of the Second Church this year.

1796. The eastern fisheries were very important to Massachusetts people, but the treaty with Great Britain was causing some trouble at this time to our fishing vessels. May 2d, the town met to consider the matter, and a memorial to Congress was approved and signed by one hundred and thirty voters present. The demand for fishing vessels kept the carpenters, blacksmiths and caulkers busy at the many yards, and it was important that fishermen be well protected by government.

The matter of building a school-house at the Ferry occasioned some trouble there, the people not being able to agree what was most advisable to be done. The house was finally built by private subscription, and subsequently sold to the district. Mr. Burrows was the first teacher in the new house, receiving eighteen dollars per month for his services. The record says: "Mr. Burrows began his school January 16, 1797, on Monday. The First School that was Teached in this house." The house was built of brick and located on the town's land, near the late Stafford Sylvester's.

1798. Capt. Timothy Barnard died March 17, 1798. His homestead was the place owned and occupied for many years by the late Enoch Winkley, on Main Street. Clark's block and other buildings now occupy the spot. He was a man of business, and served in various town offices, and built vessels at the foot of Mill Street, where in 1771 he had leave to build a wharf to lay his lumber on. He also owned one-fourth of the lower grist-mill in Amesbury, which he purchased of Col. Jonathan Bagley in 1768. He was selectman in 1772 and 1780, and a good penman.

1799. Rev. Ebenezer Cleveland's ministry closed during the year, and the Rev. Stephen Hull was engaged to supply the pulpit of the First Church, but was not ordained till 1802.

1800. About this time the carriage business was started in West Amesbury by Michael Emery, William Little and Stephen Bailey. This has been the principal business of that section to the present time, and a source of much prosperity.

In the *Massachusetts Gazette* the following is found: "An extensive iron factory was established at the Mills in 1800, where one thousand tons of iron have been wrought in a year." This ancient iron-works stood on or near the spot now occupied by No. 8 Mill. A heavy trip-hammer was used in shaping the iron and forging the large anchors which were made.

Rev. David Smith was dismissed from the Second Church, May 22d.

1801. A school-house was built at the Mills this year, costing two hundred and fifty dollars. This was probably the brick house on Friend Street.

The East Parish held a meeting to commence some repairs on the meeting-house, and four hundred dollars was appropriated to be used in conjunction with a like sum from the pew-holders. A porch and spire were added to the east end of the house, which greatly improved it internally and externally.

1802. A new school-house was built at West Amesbury, at an expense of two hundred dollars.

A powder-house was built on Round Hill, near the Pond Hills School-house, similar to the one now standing on Brown's Hill.

The towns were always required to keep a stock of ammunition on hand; but until now no safe place was ever provided for that purpose.

1803. At this date the Ferry paid a larger tax and had more schooling than any other district in town. Ship-building, fishing and the West India trade were fast building up this section.

The Friends built a meeting-house this year, which was located on the lot where the Free Baptist Church now stands.

1804. The Second Church, having been without a settled pastor since the dismission of the Rev. David Smith, now extended a call to the Rev. Samuel Meade, which was accepted.

A school-house was built at Pleasant Valley, costing three hundred and seven dollars.

1805. Last year an effort was made to establish an academy at Bartlett's Corner, for the benefit of Amesbury and Salisbury.

A stock company was organized, with a capital of two thousand dollars, divided into shares of ten dollars each. A lot was obtained where the High School building now stands. It was at first proposed to locate where Mr. Hibbert's meeting-house stood, near Mr. Child's residence, and that property was purchased for the purpose. Better counsels, however, prevailed and the present beautiful location was obtained. The building was completed this year and Mr. Abner Emerson was appointed the first principal.

On the 24th of December a fire destroyed the nail factory, one grist mill, two blacksmith shops and three hundred cords of wood at the mill. It was described as the greatest conflagration then known.

1806. The death of Capt. John Currier occurred December 22d, at the age of eighty years. His first experience as a soldier was in the old French and Indian War in 1756. He was then commissioned as lieutenant in Capt. George Worthen's company, and did service at Lake George. When companies of minute-men were organized, just previous to open hostilities, he was chosen captain of the Pond Hills company and retained command till the latter part of 1775. He was greatly interested in the struggle for independence, and as selectman and in many other ways performed valuable services throughout the war.

1808. The embargo was now having a very damaging effect on ship-building, and the discontent in town found expression in the following vote: "Voted to petition the President of the United States, praying him to suspend the operation of the law laying an embargo on vessels of the United States."

Col. Isaac Whittier died February 10th, at South Amesbury, having been a prominent man in town affairs. He served as selectman eleven years, being chosen chairman of the board at his first term and at five subsequent elections.

1809. Dr. Nathan Huse died April 23d, aged ninety-two years. He came from West Newbury about 1739, and settled at the Highlands, in the West Parish. His practice extended over a period of about seventy years.

Capt. Isaac Randall died at the Ferry, April 27th, aged eighty-two years. He served several years on the Board of Selectmen, and was an excellent penman, and the records of his keeping are in fine shape.

1810. Ship-building had revived, and carpenters were busy in all of the yards. There were built on the river this year twenty-one ships, thirteen brigs, one schooner and seven other vessels of various dimensions.

On the morning of August 26th Nathan Long's bakery at the Ferry was burnt.

The Nail Factory Company bought of Deacon David Tuxbury half an acre at the pond's mouth, to obtain control of the flowage of the pond.

1812. Rev. Stephen Hull asked a dismission from the First Church, and his request was granted by a council early in 1813.

June 13th. War was declared against Great Britain. It was very unpopular in this town, and but few soldiers entered the army from here. The military companies were drilled, however, to be in readiness should a call be made.

The first factory was now built at the Mills, by Ezra Worthen, Paul Moody and others, and the manufacture of woolen goods begun on a small scale. It was an experiment, but very successful.

1813. The war created a brisk demand for home manufactures, and a second factory was built, by Jonathan Morrill, Esq., commonly known as "Ensign Morrill," and his sons Jacob and Jonathan. Both mills were located on Mill Street, where they still remain, though greatly changed from their original form.

The goods manufactured were mostly designed at first to clothe the army, but changed according to the demand.

Widow Judith Bagley died August 1st, at the Pond Hills, aged ninety-seven years, four months and four days. She was the daughter of Joseph and Judith Sargent, and great-granddaughter of William (1st). Her youngest son (Philip) was jail-keeper at Newburyport and sheriff for many years.

1816. This year is specially noted for the strong effort made to annex the towns north of the Merrimac River to New Hampshire. Amesbury approved the plan, and chose a committee to consult with other towns in regard to the measure. The incentive to this action was probably the moderate taxes in the adjoining State.

Rev. Benjamin Sawyer was installed pastor of the

First Church on the 19th of June. He was from Cape Elizabeth, but had been preaching here since 1814.

The manufacture of earthen-ware was commenced this year at the River Village, by James Chase, who continued the business till his death, in 1858, when his son Phineas succeeded him.

1817. President Monroe passed through the Ferry and Mills this year on his northern tour, stopping long enough to visit the factories then in operation.

No unusual display was had on this occasion, although the people were well pleased to entertain him.

1818. The Iron and Nail Company were now in full operation, doing an extensive business, and it was surmised that the personal property was not fully taxed. The town ordered an investigation, which showed all to be right.

Benjamin Lurvey, Esq., died at the Ferry January 24th, after a long and useful life. He had been honored with nearly every office within the gift of his fellow-townsmen. He was chosen representative to the General Court five times, and was elected a member of the Constitutional Convention, which shows that he was held in high esteem. He served twelve years on the Board of Selectmen and did much legal business, such as writing deeds and wills and settling estates. Being a sea captain, he was familiar with navigation, and received pupils for instruction in that branch.

1819. The Pond School District was established this year, being a portion of the Pond Highway District.

Rev. Moses Welch was ordained pastor of the Second Church in June of this year.

Marchant Cleaves died April 27th. He lived near the Catholic Church, and late in life kept a grocery-store there, but was by trade a tailor, having a shop on the town's land at the Ferry. He served as selectman several years, and was prominent in parish affairs.

1820. The mill now known as No. 3, standing hard by the Mills' Bridge, was built this year.

A post-office was first established at the Mills this year, and Jonathan Morrill appointed postmaster. It was kept near the residence of Mr. Steere.

1822. Warren Lodge of Accepted Masons was chartered this year, Benjamin Sawyer, Edward Dorr, Lowell Bagley, John Colby, Nathaniel Fifield, William O. Mills, Valentine Bagley, George W. Bagley, Daniel Long, James Horton, David Nayson, Benjamin R. Downes, William H. Bagley and Samuel Walton being charter members.

"The Amesbury Flannel Manufacturing Company" was incorporated this year with a capital of two hundred thousand dollars, and Joshua Aubin, Esq., was appointed agent and continued for many years. Mr. "Aubin's factory" was on Mill Street.

The road under the bank from South Amesbury to Pressey's bridge was built this year, being a continuation of the Pleasant Valley Road built in 1786. This completed a direct and very pleasant way between the two villages, over which there is much travel.

October 28th Valentine Colby sold the right to flow his land around the pond to the "Amesbury Nail Company."

1823. The hotel at the Mills, now known as the American House, was built this year by John Gilman, who was landlord for some years. Since its erection it has been enlarged by a new front. The old wooden tavern-house occupied by Daniel Long was removed to make room for the new brick structure.

1824. A portion of the Mills Landing was sold to the Amesbury Flannel Company.

Dr. Jonathan French died April 17th. He was a good surgeon and successful practitioner. Previous to his absence in New York he resided in the house owned by the late James Follansbee.

1825. A poor-farm was purchased near Sanders' Hill, in the Birch Meadow District, this year.

Dr. Philip Towle commenced practice at the Ferry, taking the place of Dr. Rufus Hill, who had gone West

The large mill now known as No. 2 was built this year by the Salisbury Company. The old nail-factory was sold to this company and converted into a weaving-room.

1826. Rev. Peter S. Eaton was ordained pastor of the Second Church September 20th.

1827. St. James' Episcopal Church was organized this year at the Mills.

The road at the Duck Hole was widened and straightened to Haverhill line.

The ferry at Patten's Creek was rented to Stephen Baily for five years at one dollar per year. It had become nearly useless.

A Congregational Society was organized at the Mills this year, being the third of that denomination in town.

The Unitarians, having built a church on Main Street, installed the Rev. David Damon pastor.

The Provident Institution for Savings in Salisbury and Amesbury was incorporated this year. Jacob Brown, Esq., was chosen president and Robert Patten, Esq., treasurer.

1829. The famous breakwater across Joppa Flats was commenced this year, and thousands of tons of stone were boated down the river by John Huntington and David Goodwin, and thrown within the frame-work to solidify the structure.

The first steamer on the Merrimac made a trial trip this year.

1830. The population of the town, by the census taken this year, was two thousand four hundred and forty-five.

Christopher Sargent, Esq., died November 10th, being more than ninety years of age. He was the great-

grandson of William (1st) and a very prominent and useful man in town affairs. He served on the Board of Selectmen thirteen years, was representative fourteen years, and town clerk nine years. He wrote many deeds and wills, and his influence in town is said to have been very great. His grandson Moses now owns the homestead.

The appropriations were,—Schools, $1000; town charges, $2000; highways, $900.

1831. The middle road, from near the house of Geo. W. Bartlett to that of Daniel F. Morrill, was laid out this year, although strongly opposed by the town.

The organization of the Congregational Church at the Mills was effected this year, the late Eleazer A. Johnson being chosen clerk, which office he held for forty years. Jonathan A. Sargent and George Perkins were chosen deacons.

Ephraim Weed died at the Pond Hills December 28th, aged eighty-one years. He served as town clerk twenty-seven years, and as selectman three years.

Jacob Bagley Currier, a Revolutionary soldier, died at the Ferry August 3d, aged eighty.

1832. The people were greatly alarmed this year by the prevalence of the Asiatic cholera in some of the large cities. The most stringent sanitary measures were adopted to guard against this scourge.

Dr. Philip Toole died March 4th at Charleston, S. C., whither he had gone for his health.

This year is also somewhat noted for the attempts to make oil from the sun-flower. Works were erected where the Hollow Mill formerly stood, and power obtained by a dam which flowed the low ground west of the road and produced "Patten's Pond." Farmers were induced to raise sun-flowers, hoping that this new branch of business might prove profitable. But the enterprise did not succeed, and the mill was changed to a tannery, and so occupied for many years.

1833. The articles of amendment to the Constitution of Massachusetts, abolishing the compulsory support of any particular religious sect, came before the November meeting and were approved by one hundred and thirty-five yeas to two nays, thus showing a liberal spirit.

1834. For a few years past the idea of introducing the cultivation of silk has been entertained by a few persons in town. Chinese mulberry trees were set to feed the worms on, and the needed preparations made for successful work. Captain Thomas Bailey, at the Ferry, planted a large number of trees, which grew finely, and in time succeeded in raising more than one hundred thousand worms. His large storehouse on the wharf afforded an excellent opportunity for testing the practicability of the experiment, and all went well till the worms were within ten days of maturity, when some evil-disposed person or persons broke into the premises and destroyed nearly the whole of them. This was fatal to the silk culture in Amesbury.

Rev. Joseph Towne was installed first pastor of the new society at the Mills March 5th.

1835. This year a general widening and straightening of the river road was ordered by the county commissioners.

The aged Revolutionary soldier, William Huntington, died February 15th. He was in the army for some length of time and was present at the surrender of Burgoyne.

Rev. Benjamin Bell, for several years pastor of the First Church, died December 31st. In his early life he was an eloquent preacher, and drew full houses.

Rev. Benjamin Sawyer resigned the pastorate of the First Church, where he had labored since 1814. New societies had drawn away many members and made it very difficult to raise the required salary. He was the last pastor settled by this ancient church and society, which had withstood the changes of time for one hundred and sixty-nine years.

1836. Captain Thomas Bailey erected a mill for grinding and other purposes on the Great Swamp Brook, where it enters the river and where the Merrimac Hat Factory has since been built. Here he set in operation the first planing-machine used in town.

The Universalist Church at West Amesbury was built this year.

On the 30th of October Rev. J. H. Towne, who was installed pastor of the Congregational Church and Society at the Mills in 1834, was formally dismissed.

St. James' Church was consecrated October 22d. The society previously worshipped in Washington Hall. The Rev. Henry M. Davis was now stated supply for one year.

The Powow River Bank was incorporated this year with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars.

The removal of John Greenleaf Whittier from Haverhill, his native town, to Amesbury took place this year. He purchased a residence on Friend Street at the Mills, which is still his home, although much of his time is spent at Oak Knoll, Danvers. His poems have a world-wide fame and his home-ballads possess charms which no other poet can claim.

1837. This year began a very bitter contest in regard to the disposal of this town's share of the surplus revenue which the United States had deposited with the States, and which was passed to the towns. Many were in favor of reserving the sum as a school fund, and on the other hand a strong party advocated its division according to population. Many meetings were held with varying results, sometimes one party being in the ascendency and then, perhaps, the next meeting reconsidering all that had been done. The controversy was continued through the year and into the succeeding one. The final disposal was a division among the people, in the shape of loans, each one giving a note for the amount ($2.00).

Rev. Peter S. Eaton was dismissed from the pas-

torate of the Second Church May 10th, and the Rev. Lucius W. Clark was installed on the 1st of November following.

Rev. E. G. Brooks was this year ordained pastor of the Universalist Society at West Amesbury.

Rev. Charles C. Taylor was called to supply the pulpit of the Episcopal Society and retained till 1840.

Rev. James B. Hadley was ordained pastor of the Union Evangelical Society at the Ferry and Point September 20, 1838.

1839. Daniel Weed, Esq., died October 10th, having held the office of town clerk for the last twenty years. He was a good penman and the records were neatly and faithfully kept while in his possession.

Amos Weed, his brother, succeeded him, holding the office till 1844.

Captain John Blasdell died at the Ferry August 21st. He was in the army during a part of the Revolutionary War and drew a pension some years before his death.

Captain Valentine Bagley died at Bartlett's Corner January 19th. In his early life he was a sea-faring man, and once cast away on the desert of Arabia, where his sufferings were beyond the power of description. The last of his life was spent as landlord of the tavern-stand since owned by the late Daniel Huntington.

The River District built a school-house this year, the second story being occupied as a hall by the citizens.

Rev. J. S. Barry was settled by the Universalist Society at West Amesbury this year.

Rev. Seth H. Keeler was dismissed from the Congregational Society at the Mills October 7th.

1840. The poor-farm purchased in 1825 was anything but satisfactory, on account of its wet and heavy soil, which was unfit for old people to work on. Such being the case, the selectmen were instructed to sell it, which order was carried into effect. The White Hall Road was widened and straightened, greatly improving it.

James H. Davis opened a school in the Academy, which was continued for several years with good success.

Rev. Samuel H. Merrill was installed pastor of the Congregational Society at the Mills September 16th.

1841. The old road from the pound to the late Orlando Sargent's has for many years subjected the town to a good deal of expense on account of the accumulation of snow, and to avoid this difficulty, and at the same time secure a more level route, a road was built under the hill, which was a great improvement.

Rev. Silas Blaisdell was engaged by the Episcopal Society and retained till 1844.

The Universalist Society at West Amesbury settled the Rev. J. J. Locke the present year.

1842. On the 27th of July Nathan Nutter, Thomas Osgood and Isaac Martin sailed out over the bar for a fare of fish and by some misfortune were upset and drowned.

On the 31st of August Rev. L. W. Clark, of the Congregational Church and Society at West Amesbury was dismissed, and December 29th the Rev. Henry B. Smith was ordained pastor.

1843. The custom of holding town-meetings in the meeting-houses was discontinued this year, and a town hall built at Pond Hills.

Little Salisbury (so called) was, on petition of Jonathan Ring and others, annexed to Amesbury.

James Horton and others obtained a charter to build a railroad from the Eastern to the Mills, and Jonathan Elliott and others also obtained leave to build a road to New Hampshire line.

The house of Jonathan Morrill, Esq., was burnt March 5th, by means of the defects in a clay chimney.

1844. Rev. S. H. Merrill was dismissed from the Congregational Society at the Mills, and Rev. John H. Mordough engaged as stated supply.

Rev. D. Gordon Estes was elected rector of St. James' Church, which office he held till 1850, when the Rev. W. Williams succeeded him till 1852.

At the annual meeting Joseph Merrill, Jr., was chosen town clerk, which office he retained till 1880.

1845. The Universalist Society at the Mills was incorporated April 8th. There was many years ago a society of this order in the village which, through neglect, had become extinct. The new society worshipped for about two years in Washington Hall, but purchased the old Episcopal Church, which was removed to Friend Street, and enlarged and refitted for use. Rev. George G. Strickland was engaged as pastor.

1846. The peculiarity of this year was the mania for railways, The first proposition was for a road from the Mills to Plaistow, N. H., and the second was from the Mills to the Boston and Maine, by way of South Amesbury. Both were approved by the town and both came to naught.

The new Episcopal Church was consecrated on the 5th of November.

1847. The subject of a new town was agitated this year, and a petition sent to the Legislature for an act of incorporation. The territory included came as far west as the Kimball road and near John Huntington's, on the river. This move was very strongly opposed by the town, and finally defeated.

Rev. S. C. Hewit was installed pastor of the Universalist Society at the Mills the present year.

1848. The Sandy Hill meeting-house was sold and removed this year, the society having become unable to support preaching. Thus in one hundred and thirty-three years from its erection at the parsonage, and eighty-eight years from its rebuilding at Sandy Hill, this venerable edifice disappears to be seen no more.

The Congregational Church at West Amesbury extended a call to Rev. Albert Paine, and he was ordained September 7th.

The West Amesbury Wheel Company was incorporated this year with a capital of forty thousand dollars. The works are situated on Cobler's Brook, near the grist-mill of the late Humphrey Nichols. This grist-mill and privilege, with a large tract of land in the vicinity, was formerly owned by the Harvey family. The last of the family here was John H. Hoag, who owned a few acres and small house near the Universalist Church.

1849. The present town farm at the Lion's Mouth was purchased this year. This place was for many years the homestead of the Bartletts, Deacons Stephen and Simeon living there in 1762 and subsequent to that time.

The Free Baptist Church on Friend Street was completed this year and dedicated September 20th. It was erected on the lot which for many years was occupied by the Friends' Meeting-house.

Rev. E. Howe was engaged to supply the pulpit of the Universalist Church at West Amesbury, and the Rev. Josiah Gilman that of the Universalist Society at the Mills.

1850. The town schools have been gradually progressing in work and expense until the sum of two thousand dollars has been reached for their support. The population also has increased from 2471 in 1840, to 3143 in 1850, which is a gain of 672 during the last decade.

Ship-building has not wholly died out, as we now find Osgood & McCay asking for the use of part of the town's landing at the Ferry for a ship-yard.

The necessity of some more efficient means of extinguishing fires was most satisfactorily shown by the burning of William Chase's house at South Amesbury, and at the November meeting the sum of two thousand dollars was voted for the purchase of four fire-engines to be located in the four villages.

Rev. Rufus King was ordained at the Congregational Church at the Mills April 7th.

The Society of Friends built their meeting-house, now standing on the corner of Friend and Sandy Hollow Streets.

James H. Davis, who had for the last ten years taught a private school in the academy, removed to his new room on Friend Street the present year.

1851. The mill built by the late Thomas Bailey, very near the spot now occupied by the Merrimac Hat Factory, was, April 2d, swept away by the breaking of the second dam, which precipitated a large body of water against the first dam, which soon gave way, washing the mill with an immense body of sand into the river. A violent rain was the occasion of this disaster.

On the 16th of April a furious northeast storm caused a sudden rise in the river, which swept away the ancient button tree, which was the southeast bound of the landing next to the farm of the late Thomas Page. This tree was very ancient, being mentioned in 1703, and no doubt the local name of "Buttonwood" was derived from it. As age increased the top had crumbled away till the roots outnumbered the branches, and it floated gracefully down the current with its roots uppermost.

The South School-house at the Ferry, standing on the homestead lot of the late Benjamin Lurvey, Esq., was built this year.

Rev. H. P. Cutting was settled by the Universalist Society at West Amesbury this year.

1852. The most unfortunate event of the year was the strike of the operatives in the Salisbury Mills, of which Mr. Derby was agent. The cause of this ruinous proceeding was the abridgment of the ancient privilege of stepping out for a luncheon in the course of the forenoon, a privilege which had nearly died out; but the principle involved was what the operatives contended for. The town sustained the men, appropriating two thousand dollars to aid them, in addition to private subscriptions. But the company had their way, importing help, which materially changed the population of the village, but not for the better.

Rev. J. Davenport was settled by the Universalist Society at West Amesbury and Rev. J. E. Pomfret at the Mills.

Rev. Benjamin Austin was elected rector of St. James' Church and retained till 1854.

A carpenter's shop was this year built by Alfred Bailey near the site of the mill which was washed away, but finally disposed of to the Merrimac Hat Company for a dye-house. During the fall Mr. Bailey placed another building nearer the river for mechanical purposes.

1853. The manufacture of cheap carriages was now commenced at the Mills by Jacob R. Huntington, Esq. A few carriages had previously been built by Charles B. Patten and others, but they were clumsy and expensive. Mr. Huntington put a cheap article on the market, which sold readily, and enabled the multitude to ride. More will be given under the head of manufactures.

1854. A petition by John S. Morse and others was presented to the county commissioners asking for the location of a road from New Hampshire line to Merrimac River. This route avoided the sharp hill near the late Barzilla Colby's by ranging along on the north cant and entering the old road near George W. Sargent's house. It also cut a way from Johnson's Corner to the river near the bridge at South Amesbury. The town opposed the measure, but the petitioners were successful.

Rev. Albert Paine was dismissed from the Congregational Society at West Amesbury April 11th, and Rev. Leander Thompson was installed September 20th.

1855. By leave from the Legislature, the town sold

a portion of the ancient landing at the Mills to the Salisbury Manufacturing Company May 23d. A town-meeting was held to act upon six articles of amendment to the constitution of the State, and they were approved by a vote of twenty-five yeas to five nays.

Rev. Robert F. Chase was elected rector of St. James' Church and continued till 1858.

1856. This was the ever memorable "Know-Nothing" year, and the vote for Governor stood, Henry J. Gardner (Know-Nothing), four hundred and twenty-eight to one hundred and fifty-three for all others. The Presidential vote was five hundred and ninety-six, being the largest ever cast.

Rev. William P. Colby was engaged to supply the pulpit of the Universalist Church at West Amesbury.

Rev. A. C. Childs was installed pastor of the Congregational Church and Society at the Mills.

The Amesbury and Salisbury Agricultural and Horticultural Society was organized this year.

1857. A change occurred in the manufacturing interest of the village, by the organization of a new company under the title of "Salisbury Mills." This company purchased the whole property of the former company for the sum of two hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars. A long period of prosperity followed the new arrangement.

For the convenience of the people at South Amesburg a post-office was this year established, and Ebenezer Fullington was appointed postmaster.

From the earliest date the fish, which were annually caught in the Merrimac, had supplied a large amount of excellent food, but the erection of the massive dam at Lawrence, without a proper sluice-way, prevented the ascent of the fish to their usual spawning-ground, and thus eventually ruined the river-fishing. The impurity of the water may have had something to do with the failure of this business—probably had.

Hezekiah Challis, a well-known resident of the Ferry, died January 20th. He was a skillful mechanic and at the beginning of the manufacturing business at the Mills was employed in building looms and machinery. He was a descendant of Philip Watson Challis one of the original settlers in Amesbury. At his death but two bearing that name survived.

1858. Robert Patten, Esq., died at the Mills, February 27th, aged eighty-one years. For a long period he was a prominent man in town affairs, holding the office of selectman eight years, and that of Representative to the General Court three years. He also served on the Board of County Commissioners one term. His homestead, which he bought in 1808, was the original homestead of John Hoyt, Sr., who came across the Powow with the first grantees.

The well known physician, Israel Balch, died at the Ferry this year aged sixty-nine years. He studied medicine with Dr. Jonathan French, a very popular physician in town, and commenced practice about 1820, and was a skillful surgeon.

Rev. Calvin Damon was this year settled by the Universalist Society at West Amesbury.

Rev. D. G. Estes was again elected rector of St. James' Church and retained till 1872.

1859. The Congregational Church at West Amesbury was this year sold and removed, and a larger and more costly house erected on the spot. It was dedicated January 12, 1860.

1860. A high school was established this year, to be kept five months at the east end of the town and the same length of time at the west end. The school was opened at the academy.

Rev. T. D. P. Stone was installed pastor of the Congregational Church and Society at the Mills October 1.

The appropriations this year were: schools, $2500; poor, $4000; highways, $1000.

The population, according to the census taken this year, was three thousand eight hundred and seventy-seven, a gain of seven hundred and thirty-four in ten years.

1861. This year will ever be remembered as the beginning of the "Great Rebellion," which cost the country untold treasures and probably not far from half a million lives. When the first gun was fired at Fort Sumter, the North was fully aroused to the danger which threatened the Union. A call was made by the President for seventy-five thousand volunteers, which were quickly gathered and mustered into service. A town-meeting was held April 27th, to take measures to raise a company, and to encourage enlistments a bounty of ten dollars per month to single men and twenty dollars per month to married men was offered.

Great enthusiasm prevailed and the proceedings were very harmonious. A company was soon formed and Joseph W. Sargent chosen captain. This company was mustered into service July 5th, and did service during the war in the Fourteenth Regiment, which was subsequently changed to heavy artillery.

Volunteers were readily obtained during the first two years of the war, by bounties ranging from sixty to three hundred dollars. Large sums were appropriated by the town for the recruiting service and efficient measures taken to meet the calls as soon as made.

Dr. Benjamin Atkinson died October 22d, at West Amesbury, where he commenced practice in 1830, and was a very popular and successful physician, having an extensive practice in the vicinity.

1862. Several calls were made this year, the first being for three years' men. To fill the town's quota, three hundred dollars was offered, which proved effectual. Soon a second call came for nine months' men, and one hundred and fifty dollars bounty was offered. This proved sufficient to obtain the men. Most of these men went into the Forty-eighth Regiment, commanded by Col. Eben F. Stone, of Newburyport,

and served near New Orleans. On the 18th of September the town voted to extend the bounty to as many more, in addition to the forty-two men now in camp, as may enlist towards the next call.

The county commissioners having issued an order for the rebuilding of Powow River bridge, the selectmen were ordered to act with those of Salisbury in carrying on the work. It was an expensive, but thorough work, requiring a large amount of stone. The old draw was entirely discontinued.

Rev. T. D. P. Stone was dismissed from the Congregationalist Society at the Mills, July 30th, and Rev. George E. Freeman engaged Nov. 2d.

The great demand for woolen goods induced the Salisbury Mills to enlarge their works by removing the old nail factory and erecting a large mill on the spot, now known as No. 8. This mill was dedicated by a soldiers' levee, which proved the largest gathering ever held in town.

Jonathan Morrill died June 29th, aged seventy-two. He was born in Salisbury and was a descendant of Abraham Morrill, who built the first corn-mill on the Powow. In the War of 1812 he served as master-at-arms on board the privateer "Decatur," which his father, "Ensign Morrill" (as he was generally called), built. He was also interested in the factory on Mill Street, which his father built in 1813. He represented the town two years in the Legislature, and served as selectman several times.

1863. The town having incurred a large debt, which could not well be paid at present, it was decided to issue bonds to the amount of $20,000. These were to draw five per cent. interest, and were redeemable in five years and payable in twenty.

As the war progressed it grew more difficult to obtain men for the army, and resort was had to a draft. This was really an alarming measure, one which the people dreaded and had taken every possible measure to avoid. Eighty-eight men were drafted, from which fifty-nine were to be selected. Some immediately enlisted, while others who were accepted paid the commutation fee of $300. The selectmen were instructed to procure the men called for at the expense of the town.

The "Amesbury Hat Company" was organized this year, and after purchasing a portion of the town's landing near Powow River, proceeded to erect a building for that purpose. The business was highly prosperous, in common with all other branches. Subsequently this company was consolidated with and became a part of the Merrimac Hat Company.

Another mill was built this year, although for a different purpose. The "Hollow Mill," so-called, because located in Patten's Hollow, where the oil-mill and tannery once stood, was intended for the manufacture of woolen goods. It commenced operations by running eight sets of machinery driven by an engine of two hundred horse-power. It was a stock company, owned mostly in Amesbury and Salisbury.

The Wharf Company at South Amesbury was incorporated this year, with the right to extend a wharf into the river one hundred and fifteen feet and also to collect wharfage.

The Mills School District appropriated $3500 to purchase a lot and build a school-house. The old High School building, on School Street, was then built.

The death of Lowell Bagley, Esq., occurred Feb. 26th at the Ferry. His principal business was holding Justices' Courts, writing wills and deeds, surveying land and settling estates. He held the office of selectman five years and was twice elected representative to the General Court.

1864. This year $10,000 was appropriated to continue the recruiting service, and strenuous efforts were put forth to fill the renewed calls. Large bounties were offered, and it is believed that every call received a full quota from Amesbury.

Abner L. Bailey was authorized by the Legislature to extend and improve his wharf at the Ferry and collect wharfage.

A charter was obtained by a company to build a horse railroad from Newburyport to Amesbury, with a capital of $120,000. The road was built and has been of great convenience to those living on the line.

The "Horton Hat Company" was organized the present year by Alfred Bailey and others, and the manufacture of hats commenced near the present brick building of the Merrimac Company.

A national bank was this year established at West Amesbury, with a capital of $50,000, which has since been increased to $200,000.

An effort was made to unite the towns of Amesbury and Salisbury, but when submitted to the people, failed to receive their approval.

1865. The Civil War closed in the early part of the year, and the soldiers who had fought so nobly for their country, returned to their homes. But not all came—many sleep on the Southern battle-fields, and the general rejoicing through the country is to some a sad reminder of husbands, fathers and sons who will return no more. Amesbury furnished about four hundred men. Of these, twenty died of sickness, seven were killed, thirteen wounded and six were confined in Andersonville Prison, two of whom died before reaching home.

A Catholic Church was built this year at the Mills, on the site of the present large structure, and dedicated Aug. 26, 1866.

Rev. Edward A. Rand was ordained pastor of the Congregational Society at the Mills, March 2d.

1866. Amesbury has four villages, and there was no central point for a high school, convenient for all, nor was it convenient to establish two such schools—one at each end of the town; consequently the four grammar schools were raised to the grade of high school requirements. This was expensive, but a very convenient arrangement.

This year the South Amesbury Wharf Company

erected a large building in connection with citizens, who subscribed about eight hundred dollars in order to secure the upper story for a hall. Citizens' Hall has been a very valuable acquisition to the village.

1867. Greenwood Street, containing some fine residences, was accepted as a public highway. This is one of the pleasantest streets in town.

Rev. Leander Thompson was dismissed from the Congregationalist Society at West Amesbury, May 2d, and Rev. E. A. Rand from the Congregationalist Society at the Mills, May 3d. Rev. W. F. Bacon was ordained, September 26th, as Mr. Rand's successor.

A Baptist Church was organized at West Amesbury, April 5th. Rev. John Brady was assigned to the pastorate of the Catholic Church the present May.

1868. This year the bridges across the Merrimac River were made free by act of the Legislature, thus throwing the entire expense of repairs on the towns in the immediate vicinity. Amesbury objected to this heavy tax, and refused to raise money to meet the expenses. Counsel was employed, but without avail, and the responsibility to a proportionate extent was fastened upon the town.

Aubin Street, containing a large population, was accepted as a public highway this year.

The West Amesbury Branch Railroad was incorporated May 8th, with a capital of one hundred and fourteen thousand dollars.

Rev. Henry W. Kling was installed pastor of the Baptist Society at West Amesbury in July.

The school accommodations at South Amesbury failing to meet the wants of the pupils, a new house was built, containing two fine rooms, and costing five thousand dollars.

Hon. William Nichols died at West Amesbury, November 30th. An appropriate sketch of him will be found in Merrimac.

Rev. Lewis Gregory was ordained pastor of the Congregationalist Church and Society at West Amesbury, October 15th.

1869. In consequence of a law abolishing the school district system, measures were taken by the town to appraise all school property, previous to taking control. This law wound up the system which had prevailed for nearly a century.

Communication by rail from the Mills to West Amesbury was greatly to be desired, and a charter for that purpose was obtained. But without town aid, funds could not be raised equal to the work. A full town-meeting was held to obtain an expression of the people, which proved to be adverse to the undertaking and the enterprise was abandoned.

The proprietors of the academy procured an act of incorporation under the title of "Amesbury and Salisbury Academy Incorporation," with power to hold real estate to the amount of ten thousand dollars.

The West Amesbury High School building was enlarged and greatly improved the present year, at a cost of eight thousand dollars.

On the 15th of July the corner-stone of the Baptist Church at West Amesbury was laid by the society founded in 1867.

Rev. William F. Potter was this year settled by the Universalist Society at West Amesbury.

The carriage-factory of J. R. Huntington, in Lincoln Court, was burnt, April 23d, and he commenced building near the depot the following May.

The present post-office building was erected this year, and also the block of stores on the opposite side of the street, by the Salisbury Mills Company.

1870. The population of the town now numbers five thousand five hundred and eighty-one, an increase of one thousand and seventy-four during the last ten years.

The appropriations have largely increased, owing in part to the change in the school system. For schools, $6600; for highways, $2500; for poor and town charges, $7000.

A school-house was this year built at the Ferry, costing seven thousand dollars.

On the 4th of February a most destructive fire occurred at West Amesbury. The wheel-factory of Foster & Howe, with the adjoining buildings and contents, were entirely consumed; the total loss being not far from twenty-eight thousand dollars.

On the evening of the 5th of November the ancient academy was burnt. It was the work of an incendiary, no doubt, and it is a little singular that it was burnt "pope night."

1871. The newly-located roads around "Sargent's square" at West Amesbury were accepted by the town, and also Pleasant Street at the Mills.

A fire district was organized at West Amesbury the present year.

The stable of C. W. Little was burnt June 2d, but most of the contents were saved.

Rev. T. S. Boyd was installed pastor of the Congregationalist Society at the Mills December 27th.

Rev. N. R. Wright was settled by the Universalist Society at West Amesbury.

Captain Thomas Baily died at the Ferry, May 30th, aged eighty-two years. In early life he was a schoolteacher, employed in several districts in town as early as 1812. At a later date he was largely engaged in ship-building. He was frequently on the Board of Selectmen, and served as Representative in 1828.

1872. The Salisbury Mills completed a dam across Powow River at White Hall, flowing a large tract of land, and inclosing a large body of water now known as "Lake Gardner." It was an expensive work, involving an outlay of some sixty thousand dollars.

The necessity of a larger hall in the village has been apparent for some length of time, and this year Messrs. Kelley and Woods completed the Merrimac Opera Hall on Friend Street.

Under a recent act of the Legislature road commissioners were chosen, but their services proving

unsatisfactory, the old system was restored after one year's experience.

Rev. E. M. Bartlett was installed pastor of the Baptist Church and Society at West Amesbury in October of this year.

Rev. Samuel S. Speer was elected rector of St. James' Church, and officiated till 1877.

On the 15th of August, about ten o'clock P.M., the hat factory near Powow River bridge was found to be on fire, and so rapid was the progress of the flames that the engines in town were unable to do but little service, except to protect the neighboring buildings. The factory was a large four-story wooden building, erected in 1863, and employed eighty persons.

On the night of the 24th of August, the barn at the "Major Gordon" place at the Ferry was burnt.

1873. On the evening of November 3d the Town Hall was found to be on fire, and owing to the scarcity of water, the engines which, were promptly on hand, were unable to render much assistance. It was the work of an incendiary without doubt, and done at this time to bother the town-meeting on the morrow.

The people assembled to hold the annual election, simply opening the meeting, and then adjourning to the house of Joseph Merrill, who was then clerk, and the election was gone through with in due form. Failing to elect the full number of Representatives a second meeting was held at Mr. Merrill's Nov. 24th.

Rev. Dr. Corkin was engaged as pastor of the Universalist Society at West Amesbury.

The foundation of the new Catholic Church was laid with appropriate cermonies this year.

The horse railroad from Newburyport to Amesbury was completed this year, and was very liberally patronized.

The Amesbury and Salisbury Christian Society formed a church under the charge of Rev. George T. Ridlon.

The constant increase of population had so increased the number of scholars, that it became necessary to provide additional room. To meet this want, a house was built on Friend Street, at a cost of five thousand dollars.

The town decided to aid in building the "Amesbury Railroad" to the amount of fifty thousand dollars, but the undertaking failed of success.

1874. The death of Dr. Thomas Sparhawk occurred at Newburyport, May 17th. He was a prominent and much beloved physician at Amesbury for many years, removing to the city a short time before his death. He freely gave to all in want, and was ever ready to aid suffering humanity, being truly the "poor man's doctor."

A monument was erected over his grave by his friends and very properly inscribed "To the memory of our beloved physician."

This year a soldiers' monument was erected in the East Cemetery and dedicated by appropriate services.

1876. Amesbury, which for more than one hundred and thirty years had seen but slight change in its territory, was this year, by act of the Legislature, cut in two, and the town of Merrimac established in the West Parish. Thus, one-half the territory and two-fifths of the population were lost. The measure was strongly opposed by many, but without success. Financially the old town lost nothing by the change, while the new town gained some advantages with very little expense.

During the summer the Salisbury Mills suspended operations, which deprived hundreds of persons of employment, causing a very general depression in business.

June 1st. The Ring House at the Pond caught fire from a defect in the chimney, and was entirely consumed, with its contents.

1877. It was now very hard times, and help could be obtained at less than living prices. In fact, many were unable to find work at any price. The only exception was the carriage business, which continued good through the whole period of depression.

1878. During the latter part of last year the Merrimac Hat Company commenced the foundation of the present factory near Bailey's Pond.

The old mill at Salisbury Point had become unfit for use, and the abundant supply of pure water here made this a desirable location.

The building was completed early in the season, and dedicated March 21st, by a fair for the benefit of the Old Ladies' Home. It proved a decided success, the net proceeds amounting to one thousand dollars.

In May the Salisbury Mills were sold to John Gardiner and others for one hundred and sixty thousand dollars. This was a most pitiable price, and citizens should have combined for the purchase. The change brought no relief; the mills were allowed to stand idle.

1879. Dr. Henry S. Dearborn, of the Mills, died August 25th. He was a physician of long standing, and had an extensive practice.

1880. Jonathan Nayson, Esq., died at the Mills April 23d. He was a druggist in town for many years, but had at different periods been engaged in other callings. The *Amesbury Chronicle*, devoted to the election of Andrew Jackson to the Presidency, was published by him and John Caldwell. In 1836 he was elected to the Legislature, and again in 1852, and also to the Constitutional Convention. Under Pierce's administration he was appointed weigher and gauger. Under Van Buren's administration he was appointed postmaster. He also held the office of selectman for several years.

On the 16th of March the Essex Mils were sold to the Hamilton Company for three hundred thousand dollars. The sale of these mills to this wealthy organization was hailed as the harbinger of better times; nor were people disappointed in their expectations, as will shortly be seen.

1881. The Congregational Church at the Mills celebrated its fiftieth anniversary on the 6th of December. It was interesting to note the changes which had occurred since 1831, when the first organization was effected. The village had largely increased since the erection of the factories, and it was felt that the village people ought not to be under the necessity of attending the Sandy Hill meeting. But notwithstanding the large increase of population, there were but eleven found to join in calling a council to organize the new church. In May, 1832, the late Eleazer A. Johnson was chosen clerk, which office he retained for forty years. He was present on this occasion, although very aged, and enjoyed every word spoken. Rev. Joseph H. Towne, D.D., the first pastor, was also present, and took part in the services, calling to mind many recollections of the last half-century. An historical address was delivered by the pastor, Rev. Pliny S. Boyd, full of interesting information, which was listened to by a very large audience.

The Hamilton Company, having purchased the entire property of the Essex Mills, were now making extensive changes and repairs on the corporation, with a view of putting their mills in full operation. New and improved machinery was procured to replace the old and worn, and several mills were changed from woolen to cotton. Business now wore a more cheerful aspect, nearly all of the operatives being busy at work.

1882. The large increase of scholars in town made it necessary to provide more school-rooms, and the committee and selectmen, by a nearly unanimous vote, were authorized to build on the Academy lot. A large two-story house was built with special reference to accommodating the High and Grammar Schools, which were opened here after its completion.

On the morning of the 10th of December the old Catholic Church, which had been removed to the rear of the new one, was burned, including a large and valuable library.

1883. During a severe shower on the 5th of July, the Hollow Mill was struck by lightning, and with its contents consumed. This was an unfortunate event, throwing out of employ a large number of operatives whose monthly pay was about $5000.

The want of better means for extinguishing fires in the village had for a long period caused some fear in case the most thickly-settled part should be attacked by the devouring element, and a contract was made with the new Water Company for a supply of water. The large reservoir of the company is situated on Powow Hill, some two hundred feet above Market Square and the water may readily be carried to all parts of the village.

The Amesbury National Bank, with a capital of $100,000, was organized, and commenced business the present year, with Alexander M. Huntington president, and F. F. Morrill cashier.

1885. The matter of sewerage came before the town April 17th, when a plan for the village was laid before the meeting and was adopted. This system will require some thirty thousand dollars to complete the sewerage of the village. The meeting appropriated six thousand five hundred dollars to commence the work. On the 10th of September Rev. H. M. Schermerhorn was ordained pastor of the Congregational Church at the Mills.

1886. The 28th, 29th and 30th of January will long be remembered for the ice which covered every tree and twig, loading them so heavily that day and night the woods resounded with crashing limbs. The oldest inhabitants had no recollection of its equal, although in 1831 there was a heavy covering which did much damage. This year a little twig became an inch in diameter and it is hardly possible to estimate the load the trees were carrying.

On the morning of October 3d the Merrimac Opera Hall was found to be on fire in the third story, and so far advanced that all efforts to arrest the progress of the flames proved unavailing. Thus the village was left without a large and convenient hall.

At the session of the Legislature commencing January, 1886, a petition was presented, very numerously signed, asking for the annexation of a certain portion of Salisbury to Amesbury. The measure was approved by East Salisbury and was finally successful. But there was some trouble about arranging the line. The bounds agreed upon were to start from the chain bridge, thence running to the powder-house, and from there to the State line near John C. Evans' at a stone bound. This line left most of Rocky Hill in the old town, including the venerable church. However, before the final passage of the bill the line was changed to the eastward, slicing off a much larger portion of the old town. The act went into effect July 1st. On the 4th a very general celebration was held suitable for the day, although the object mostly in view was the union of the towns. But few changes were made in town matters during the remainder of the year. After the destruction of the Opera Hall no convenient room for town-meetings was to be obtained, and they were held in different places. The annual meeting in November was held in Veteran Hall, and several subsequent meetings were held in the carriage repository of R. F. Briggs & Co., and the annual meeting in that of Walker & Shields.

It is probable that before the fall election a large and elegant hall will be completed by a private company, with sufficient conveniences for town purposes. Ground has already been broken for the foundation on Main Street next to the Congregational Church, by Messrs. M. D. F. Steere, Wm. E. Biddle, Thomas D. Nelson and George E. Batchelder, the proprietors.

The front is to be of pressed brick, and the whole structure is to be built in the most thorough manner, and when completed will not cost less than sixty-five thousand dollars.

During the year an extension of Main Street at the Mills was completed across the Sparhawk place to the Sandy Hollow road, which, in connection with Highland Avenue recently opened across the Lasell estate, throws into the market a large number of valuable house-lots. This section is rapidly gaining in population and is destined soon to be one of the pleasantest locations in town. The rapid increase in business has called for additional tenements, and in every part of the village may be found new houses springing up as if by magic. In fact, "Po Hill" is already dotted with residences far up its southern slope, and bids fair within a brief time to be entirely occupied. And its twin sister on the west across Lake Gardner, "Whittier's Hill," will soon share a like fate. Several lots have been purchased far up on the southern side of the hill, where a most beautiful view of the village and surrounding country can be had.

Should present prosperity continue, the town will soon rank with the largest in the Commonwealth and possibly become a city.

MANUFACTURES.—In the early days of the colonies but little manufacturing was done. Some of the coarser articles were made by the slow hand-process, but machinery was nearly unknown. Rough carts, sleds, mill-wheels, plows, hoes and other similar articles were made by the blacksmiths and carpenters, and that was about the extent to which the mechanical arts had attained. The first enterprise which can, with propriety, be considered under this head, is the iron works at the Mills. In 1710 Colonel John March, John Barnard, Joseph Brown and Jarvis Ring petitioned the towns of Amesbury and Salisbury for leave to set up iron works at the falls on Powow River, without being taxed. Leave was readily granted, and the petitioners proceeded to erect suitable works. The manufacture of iron from the ore obtained in this section was, however, a very hazardous business, to say the least, and needed all the encouragement which the two towns could give. Hitherto the industries of the village had been confined almost exclusively to saw-mills, grist-mills and blacksmithing. The fact that iron existed in the neighborhood was probably known at a much earlier date, but the most favorable localities were first selected for the business. The principal inducement for commencing business here was the valuable water-power, which was important on account of the heavy trip-hammer needed in the work.

The ore was not abundant or easily obtained, being mostly taken from the ponds in Newton and Kingston. A small part was dug from the swamp.

That iron exists in this vicinity the casual observer will not fail to notice, from the stones in and near the Powow, many of which strongly resemble the crude ore. The walls by the road-side, in one part of Newton, have that rusty appearance which the presence of iron usually imparts.

This new enterprise was managed by a stock company, the capital of which is unknown. From the sale of the stock, at a later date, it was evidently divided into twenty-four shares. These frequently changed hands, and were described as "one twenty-fourth part." The ore was either boated or carted to the works at the Mills, as circumstances required, where it passed through the smelting process, and, when cooled to the proper temperature, was passed under heavy trip-hammers and drawn into bars ready for the blacksmith's use.

How long these works were continued at the Mills is not known, but probably some twenty-five years, till it became necessary to remove farther into the country, where wood was plenty and cheap.

The business was removed to Trickling Falls, where it was continued many years. The iron is thus described by one who, in his younger days, had worked it: "When I worked with my father, this old iron used to come in to be made over into different articles, but it was very poor, difficult to weld, and when hot would smoke and give out a bad smell. It could not be drawn into nails, and if bent short would break, unless very hot."

This home-made iron was made into anchors, saw-mill cranks, spindles for turning the stones in grist-mills, cart-tires, cranes, fire-dogs and other plain heavy work. A number of Amesbury and Salisbury people removed when the works were taken to Kingston, and their descendants are found in the vicinity at the present time.

Although the manufacture of iron was abandoned, the working of the material into articles of public use was continued for more than a century. In 1796, or near that time, Jacob Perkins, the famous inventor of machinery, set up the first nail-machine in the United States, here on the Powow. Until now nails were forged by the blacksmiths by a very slow process, and were an expensive article. By Mr. Perkins' invention they were made very rapidly. The first machine simply cut them, and a second process was required to head them, but an improved machine was soon invented which completed the nail at once.

The "Gazeteer of Massachusetts," printed in 1828, says: "An extensive iron factory was established at the Mills in 1800, where one thousand tons of iron have been wrought in a year." This, no doubt, refers to the old rolling-mill and nail-factory which continued operations till about 1825. Much heavy work was done at the rolling-mill; many heavy anchors were made, which called into use the heavy trip-hammer worked by water-power.

The late Enoch Winkley continued the nail business in a building on Mill Street for a short time, and was the last to engage in it at the Mills. After the discontinuance of the iron and nail business, the old rolling-mill was used for the manufacture of starch for a brief period. It was finally sold to the Salisbury Company, and in 1862 gave place to the large mill now known as No. 8.

Cotton and Woolen Manufactures.—Where the beautiful Powow comes foaming down over the ragged rocks, falling about ninety feet in a short distance, mills of some kind have been busy from a very early date, but not till 1812 was any attempt made to manufacture cotton and woolen goods on an extensive scale. This year (1812) a company was formed, composed, in part, of the following persons: Ezra Worthen, Paul Moody, Thomas Boardman, Jacob Kent, Mr. Rundlett and Mr. Wigglesworth. Ezra Worthen was appointed agent. This factory was on Mill Street, where it yet stands, although enlarged and greatly changed. The first cloths made found a ready sale to clothe the soldiers and people during the war with England. In fact, the demand was so great for that class of goods that the following year (1813) a second mill was built, just south of the first, by Jonathan Morrill, Esq. (commonly known as "Ensign"). These two mills gave employment to many of the townspeople and were a public benefit. In 1825 a large mill was built on High Street by the Salisbury Company, which gave a new impetus to business and largely increased the population of this section. But tenements could hardly be built to supply this sudden demand, and houses were moved from the Ferry to accommodate the workmen in the mills.

From the small beginning of one mill in 1812 the business has steadily increased until to-day the Hamilton Company have eight large mills in successful operation.

Hatting Business.—Of the first seventeen who became sole proprietors of the town in 1654, not one, so far as can be ascertained, was a hatter. The introduction of this branch was by Deacon Moses Chase, of Newbury, a descendant of Aquila Chase. The exact time when he commenced the business cannot be determined, but in 1767 he petitioned the town for a small piece of land on the Ferry road, next to Powow River, to build a hatter's shop on. The request was granted, he receiving a lot thirty feet square.

There is a tradition that his first shop stood near the small brook in the rear of the houses on the west side of the street, and the fact that he was here and taxed four years before, asking for the lot beside the Powow, would seem to confirm the tradition. In 1763 he paid only a poll-tax, but the next year he was rated for some property, which may have been a shop where he was working.

How long the business was continued at the Ferry by Deacon Chase and his son Bailey is not known, but the shop was occupied for hatting many years. The late Daniel Long manufactured hats here for some time. Nearly three-fourths of a century ago the business was started at the Mills, on Main Street, in the building since converted into a dwelling-house owned and occupied by the late Daniel Morrill.

About 1838 Isaac Martin, a native of the Ferry, commenced hatting near Powow River bridge, in the basement of the house now owned by Timothy Bagley. Associated with him was the late Albert Gale. Subsequently they removed to the old building on the wharf, where the business was continued till about 1853. In the mean time the late Abner L. Bailey had become connected with the business and by his energy and perseverance became very successful. After continuing the business some length of time, mostly at Salisbury Point, under the title of "Merrimac Hat Company," a new company was formed, called the "Amesbury Hat Company," and the town landing (near Powow River bridge) purchased, on which a large factory was built. Before going into operation this company was consolidated with the "Merrimac Hat Company," of which Mr. Bailey was agent and a large owner.

In 1864 Alfred Bailey organized the "Horton Hat Company," which commenced operations near the present large mill on Merrimac Street. This company sold out to the Merrimac Company July 18, 1866, when the latter company assumed the entire business.

The company now employ one hundred and sixty-nine hands, viz.: one hundred and eighteen males and fifty-one females. The number of hats manufactured in 1886 was forty-one thousand four hundred and ninety-eight dozen, valued at two hundred and eighty-three thousand dollars. For the last thirteen years the present efficient agent, R. B. Hawley, Esq., has had charge of the business.

Carriage Business.—About 1800 the carriage business was commenced on a small scale in the West Parish by Michael Emory, wood-worker; William Little, plater; and Stephen Bailey, trimmer. The method of manufacturing was very different from the present, the separate parts being made in shops devoted to that work. It was quite a task to make the exchanges necessary to complete a carriage. There was little variation in style or finish, and the carriages were mostly "the one-hoss chaise."

But from this small beginning an important business gradually grew up, and in 1880 more than sixteen hundred carriages were built, amounting in value to three hundred and seventy-two thousand five hundred dollars. To complete this large amount of work two hundred and fifty hands were employed.

For more than half a century the business was confined to the West Parish, but in 1853 Jacob R. Huntington commenced the manufacture of cheap carriages at the Mills. This was an important move in the right direction. Hitherto carriages had been expensive, those built at West and South Amesbury averaging two hundred and thirty-one dollars each. Mr. Huntington, in putting a cheaper article on the market, supplied a want of long standing. A ready sale was found, and soon others entered the business, spreading far and wide the products of their work-

shops. With the large increase of trade come also great variation in style and finish, to meet the constant demand for higher grade carriages. Work of every style and grade, from the cheap, light carriage to the most costly and elegant, may now be obtained at Amesbury.

There are at present about thirty establishments in the business, varying in their manufactures from a few thousands to three hundred thousand dollars. The largest number of carriages built by one firm in 1886 was 2500. One other firm built 2018, and one 1200. Nearly every firm built several hundreds, and when it is remembered that there are about thirty factories busily engaged, some idea of the large number of carriages made may be had. It has become an important industry, adding largely to the prosperity of the town, and one which is destined to be still further increased by the skill of the workmen and good judgment and enterprise of the manufacturers.

Churches and Religious Societies.—There are eleven churches and societies in town, viz., three Congregational and one each of the following denominations: Baptist, Episcopal, Catholic, Friends, Free Baptist, Methodist, Universalist, Christian Baptist. The most ancient of these societies is the Friends', which was organized and a house built in 1705. From that date they have always had a house of worship on this street, which was very properly named for their order. The society at Rocky Hill was organized in 1714 as the Second Parish in Salisbury, and the present church built in 1785. Most of the other churches have been built and the societies organized within the present century.

Schools.—Amesbury has (including eight parochial) thirty-three schools. The consolidated High School is now occupying the High School building recently built on the ancient academy lot.

The whole number of children between five and fifteen is thirteen hundred, and the sum appropriated for school purposes fourteen thousand dollars. The education of the young is well provided for and carefully looked after by the School Board.

Farms.—The town as now constituted may very properly be designated a manufacturing town. It has a territory of about twelve square miles, being three miles wide and four long.

The eastern section is thickly settled by the village, which extends from the Merrimac River nearly to the New Hampshire line. The western section is devoted to farming purposes. There are about seventy-five farms in town, not including homesteads of two or three acres.

Pleasant Valley, a tract of intervale land bordering the river, is a beautiful locality, containing several excellent farms within its limits. Formerly large quantities of salt hay were boated here for consumption on the farms, but the practice is becoming less frequent, the farmers depending largely upon patent fertilizers for their crops.

The Buttonwood (the southwest section of the town) has a few good farms and a factory engaged in the manufacture of fertilizers, owned and managed by William Lavery.

The Pond Hills District includes nearly twenty farms, and is purely a farming section. The soil is good and in a good state of cultivation. Large quantities of strawberries are raised here, many of which are sent to the Boston market. This street is the main thoroughfare between Amesbury and Merrimac.

The Pond District includes several farms which are somewhat broken by hills and ridges, and the soil is less productive than some other sections. Kimball's Pond is a beautiful sheet of water on the south side of the district and a general resort for pleasure-parties during the hot season.

The Lion's Mouth is a small district, including several farms and the Almshouse. The soil is good and the farms very productive. Having a good market very near has made land very valuable in this vicinity and it readily commands a good price.

White Hall embraces the northern section of the town to the State line. It is mostly an elevated tract of land and affords a very fine view of the village and surrounding country. There are several good farms in the vicinity, which are well-managed and in a high state state of cultivation. Lake Gardner, on the east, is a beautiful body of water extending northward to the South Hampton line. "Whicher's" Hill, on the southwest, is a fine, well-rounded elevation which bids fair to be covered with residences in a few years.

To the eastward of Powow Hill is situated the district long known as "Allen's Corner." Here are several good farms, which, under the good management of their owners, produce large crops.

In the southeast section of the town is situated the district very generally known as Rocky Hill. The ledge, which underlies the entire territory from Haverhill to the Atlantic Ocean, crops out in this vicinity and very likely gave name to the district.

Most of the soil is good here, especially near the village. The eastern part, which borders on the large plain in Salisbury, is sandy, but produces very good crops of corn, rye, etc. The central portion of the district is hilly and somewhat broken by the protruding ledges. There are, however, some good and prosperous farmers. The village is fast encroaching on this romantic territory and soon it will be thickly dotted with residences.

The Amesbury and Salisbury Agricultural and Horticultural Society was organized in 1856 and has been accomplishing good results in its sphere of action.

General Matters.—*Banks.*—Amesbury has two national banks, viz., the Powow, incorporated in 1836, and the Amesbury, incorporated in 1883, and also the Salisbury and Amesbury Institution for Savings.

Newspapers.—The first paper printed in town was the *Amesbury Chronicle*, published every Thursday morning by Nayson & Caldwell, in 1832. In 1833 Mr. Caldwell assumed charge and continued the paper under the title of *Evening Chronicle*. In 1834 Mr. Caldwell changed the title to *Morning Courier*. In 1837 the name was changed to *News and Courier*, C. E. Patten, editor; Caldwell & Whitman, publishers. In 1839 Mr. Caldwell again resumed full control and changed the name to *Evening Transcript*, continuing its publication up to 1840, when he sold to Robert Rich. Mr. Rich soon sold to Joseph M. Pettengill, who changed the heading to *Village Transcript*. Mr. Pettengill retained the management up to 1845, when he formed a partnership with Joseph E. Hood, and the paper was continued under the title of *Essex Transcript*, and was made the organ of the old Liberty party in Essex County. Mr. Hood withdrew after a few months, and G. J. L. Colby was announced as editor. In 1848 Mr. Pettengill sold to Daniel F. Morrill, who continued its publication one year as the *Villager*. In 1849 W. H. B. Currier assumed control of the paper and continued to publish it for more than thirty years. In 1883 Mr. Currier sold to J. M. and L. J. Potter, who continue its publication as *Amesbury and Salisbury Villager*.

In 1880 a second paper was published by J. B. Rogers, called the *Weekly News*, but recently changed to *Amesbury News*. This paper is now on its sixth volume and bids fair to continue indefinitely.

Post-offices.—Until 1820 the Mills had no post-office, but mail matter was left at Clark Maxfield's store. At the above date Captain Jonathan Morrill was appointed postmaster and his office was near the spot where the new Opera Hall is to be located. About 1836 Jacob Carter was appointed and removed the office to Wadleigh's block. President Van Buren appointed Philip Osgood, who removed the office to a small building on the corner of Main and Friend Streets. Near the close of Van Buren's administration Mr. Osgood resigned and Jonathan Nayson was appointed. After the inauguration of President Harrison John Walsh was appointed and established the office in a building where No. 7 Mill now stands. After the accession of Mr. Tyler to the Presidency Daniel Blasdell was appointed and removed the office to the corner of Friend Street again.

In 1853 David Bagley was appointed by President Pierce, and retained the office until President Lincoln's administration commenced, when David Batchelder took the office, holding it till the close of President Johnson's term. He removed the office to the store of David French. In 1869 W. H. B. Currier was appointed, and soon after removed the office to its present location. In 1873 J. T. Clarkson was appointed postmaster, and held the office till 1881, when J. T. Goodrich was appointed and served till the election of President Cleveland and the appointment of Hiram Foot, the present incumbent.

At present the town is enjoying a season of unusual prosperity; business of all kinds is brisk, creating a demand for tenements which cannot be supplied. But many new houses are being erected, the number which will be completed in course of the season being estimated at nearly one hundred. New streets are being opened in various parts of the village, thus bringing into the market many desirable house-lots. The population is rapidly increasing.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

THE ROWELL FAMILY.

Valentine Rowell, from whom most of the family descend, was here in the early settlement. He was granted land in the first division in 1640; married Joanna Pindar, of Ipswich, November 14, 1643; removed to Amesbury 1651; died May 7, 1662. His son Philip, born January 8, 1647, married Sarah, daughter of Abraham Morrill, Sr., of Salisbury, and was killed by the Indians July 7, 1690. His homestead was near the corner of School and Pleasant Streets. Jacob, son of Philip, was born 1669; married Hannah Barnard, of Andover. His homestead was on Friend Street. He died August 18, 1747. He owned a part of the iron-works located near the first dam on Powow River, doing an extensive business for those times. This, with other property he bequeathed to his son Philip, born January 28, 1695; married Elizabeth Purinton, October 10, 1719; died April 18, 1780. His homestead was where the residence of Mrs. Stephen Woodman now is. To him much of the early thrift and business of the village was due. He was not only actively engaged in the iron-works, but was also a surveyor of land, wrote many deeds and wills, and was an exchanger of currency which floated from province to province. He also dealt in English and West India goods. His was indeed the country store of olden days. He, as well as most of his descendants, was attached to the Friends' Society. In his will he gave fifty pounds to the Amesbury Friends' Meeting, which fund is enjoyed to-day. The society's first house was on the site of the Public Library; the second on the site of the brick house, Friend Street; the third, where the Friends' brick meeting-house now stands; their present house is their fourth.

Jacob Rowell, son of Philip, followed many of the avocations of his father. He was born February 12, 1724. His homestead was on High Street, corner of Powow. He married Anna, daughter of James Buxton, of Salem, January 22, 1761. He died September 29, 1813, aged eighty-nine. His wife died November 9, 1822, aged ninety-one years. They had eight children—Philip, who left three sons and one daughter; Abigail, who married Edward Southwich, of Danvers; James, drowned when a lad; John, un-



Jacob Rowell



Robert Patton



J. B. Chamberlain

married; Elizabeth, married James Purinton, Kensington, N. H.; Jacob, of whom more later; Anna, unmarried; James, who left two sons, was drowned June 16, 1826.

Jacob Rowell, the subject of our sketch, was born October 30, 1771. He was a gentleman of sterling integrity, genial and sincere in his attachments. He enjoyed the friendship and confidence of many prominent men in social and business circles. He married Abigail, daughter of John Jones, November 22, 1804, in Friends' Meeting. She was born July 7, 1782, and died June 10, 1843; he died February 6, 1853, and together they are buried in the Union Cemetery, and a monument is erected to their memory. They were the parents of ten children—JOHN, born January 28, 1806, married Sarah M. Stuart, died June 27, 1872, left daughter, *Sarah A.*, wife of S. E. Patten; ELIZABETH, born February 8, 1807, living; JACOB, born December 10, 1808, married Irena A. Jones, died February 22, 1871, left two children, *Mary* and *George J.*; REBECCA, died in childhood; SAMUEL, living, born August 22, 1815, married Lydia J. Neal September 11, 1841, has five children,—*Abbie R.*, wife of Charles Tredic (has two daughters), *Oliver D., Samuel, Jr., Edward H.*, and *John*, who has two children; CHARLES, living, born October 24, 1817, married R. Ann Healey, has *Anna H.*, wife of George F. Talbot, and has two sons; *Jacob A.*, who has two daughters; *Charles, Jr.*, who has one daughter, and *Clarence E.*, who has one daughter; GEORGE, born September 16, 1819, married Rebecca G. Jones January 1, 1856, died November 19, 1871, left one son, *George William*; ABIGAIL J., living; SARAH, died November 23, 1884; MARY, died June 6, 1827.

Jacob Rowell resided during the closing years of his life in the house on Friend Street, corner of Pond, where reside his daughters, who gratefully cherish his memory.

The family, the most part being Friends, have been steadfast in the pursuit of their daily vocations, leaving the civil and military affairs to others, being at at once helpful in keeping alive the manufacturing and business interests, as well as the moral life of the past years of this community.

ROBERT PATTEN.

Stephen Patten, the grandfather of *Robert*, was born June 19, 1707, and his father, Willis, December 11, 1738, and died September 12, 1816. The occupation of Willis Patten, was that of cooper, brickmaker and farmer. He married Hannah Sargent, and had nine children, viz.: Stephen, Jonathan, Willis, Moses, Amos, *Robert*, Hannah, Unis and Thomas.

Robert, whose portrait is here shown, was born at South Amesbury, October 28, 1776, when the great struggle of indepen lence was progressing. About 1807 he bought the John Hoyt, Sr., homestead of one of his descendants and moved to the Mills, where he spent the remainder of his life. He was president of the Powow River Bank from 1850 until his death, February 27, 1858, and was the first treasurer of the Savings Bank, which office he held for several years. He was frequently called into town business, holding the office of selectman nine years, and was three times elected representative to the General Court. In 1841 he was elected county commissioner for three years, and served the town in various capacities during his life. His principal business was farming and brick-making, which he pursued for more than half a century. For many years he furnished all supplies in that line, there being no other brick-yard in this section of the town. No doubt it is the oldest brick-yard in town, and was first used by John Hoyt, Sr., and, in fact, the remains of an ancient yard were to be seen when Robert Patten moved there, so ancient that the oldest inhabitants knew nothing about it.

Mr. Patten married Rodie Sargent, and had Betsey, born March 9, 1804; Abigail, born September 30, 1806; Susan H., born February 4, 1811; Orlando S., born July 10, 1808; Hannah, born July 17, 1814; Robert Willis, born January 13, 1817.

Betsey married Patten Sargent; Abigail married Orlando Sargent; Susan married Daniel Sargent; Orlando (2d) married Ann M. Sawyer; Hannah never married; Robert Willis married Eliza A. Brown, daughterof Enoch Brown, and had two children, viz.: Enoch B. (not married) and Carrie B. (she married Stephen F. Woodman, and had two children, viz.: Willis P. and Esther).

Robert Willis Patten now lives in the old homestead, and carries on farming and the making of brick. When a young man of eighteen he learned the trade of tanning, and at the age of twenty-one years, engaged in this business with his brother Orlando, and continued for thirty years. He has been selectman and was representative in 1858.

JONATHAN B. WEBSTER.

Jonathan B. Webster, who was for many years a prominent citizen of Amesbury, died of pneumonia, February 17, 1870. He was an active and successful man, shrewd in business, of marked integrity and always held in high estimation by all his numerous acquaintances. Starting on the common level with his fellows, he maintained a steady, persistent course of life, until he became one of the wealthiest men in the community. He took no great interest in public affairs, but bestowed his greatest attention on the financial interests of Amesbury, which owes much of its prosperity to his efforts.

Mr. Webster was born at Amesbury Ferry February 23, 1799. When about fourteen years of age he came to the Mills, and worked as an apprentice with Ezra Worthen, the first manufacturer of woolen goods in this place. He continued with Mr. Worthen

until 1827, when he contracted with the Salisbury Mills to finish their goods, occupying that position until 1846, when he succeeded Mr. Nathaniel White as cashier of the Powow River Bank, which office he filled until May, 1858, when he was elected president, that office having been rendered vacant by the death of Robert Patten.

Mr. Webster was one of the principal men in establishing the bank, and was one of its directors from the time of its establishment, in May, 1836, until his death. He was also one of the prime movers in the organization of the Savings Bank, having been its treasurer for twenty years and vice-president for twelve years. He also suggested the formation of the Amesbury and Salisbury Mutual Fire Insurance Company in this town, and through his efforts this institution was incorporated.

At a meeting of the officers of the Powow River and Saving Banks, held February 21, 1870, the following resolutions were unanimously adopted: "*Whereas*, it has pleased the great disposer of events to remove by death J. B. Webster, Esq., one of the officers of this institution; therefore *Resolved*, that in his death we mourn the loss of one whose fidelity and unwearied devotion to the responsible duties of the several offices he has filled, commencing with their organization, his strict integrity, inflexible honesty of purpose, have rendered him deserving of our implicit confidence and highest regard, and we shall ever cherish him in our memories as a safe counselor, faithful friend and upright man. *Resolved*, that we tender to his widow and family our sincere sympathy in their bereavement, and as a token of respect to his memory we will, in a body, attend his funeral. *Resolved*, that these resolutions be published in the *Villager*, and a copy furnished the family of the deceased."

Capt. Stephen Webster, the father of Jonathan B., was born December 6, 1771. He was a ship-captain, and when forty-three years of age sailed from Portsmouth, N. H., in brig "Mars," and as nothing was ever heard from him, it is supposed that he was lost at sea.

Jonathan B. was the oldest in a family of five children, and was born at Amesbury Ferry February 23, 1799. His mother's name was Sarah (Bailey) Webster. He married, for his first wife, Mary Morrill, by whom he had one child,—William B. Mary Morrill died in 1833. The son, William B., married Julia Collins, of New York (no children). William B. died November 6, 1861.

Jonathan B. married, for his second wife, Laura Linscott, who died shortly after marriage. For his third wife, he married Abby R. Ballard, daughter of Henry and Abigail (Richardson) Ballard. She was born in Brattleboro', Vt. November 2, 1818. They had three children, viz.: Abby M., born March 30, 1839; Stephen H., born March 5, 1843, and died September 5, 1818; Stephen H. (again) born July 3, 1849, and died August 25, 1853.

Abby M. married Dr. Arthur T. Brown, a native of Kingston, N. H., and who has been for twenty years a dentist of Amesbury, Mass.

PHILIP JONES.

Philip Jones was the son of Philip and Ruth (Page) Jones and grandson of Ezekiel, and a descendant of Hobart Jones, who settled in Amesbury some two hundred years ago. Philip was born July 3, 1810, and was the only son in a family of seven children, viz., Lydia, born November 15, 1792, and died young; Elizabeth, born March 20, 1795; Ezekiel, born March 3, 1798, and died young; Hannah, born September 2, 1801; Ruth, born October 9, 1806; Philip, born July, 3, 1810; Lydia, born July 28, 1814.

Elizabeth married Hiram Neal; Hannah married John Huntington; Ruth married Josiah Challis; Philip married Ann Osgood, the adopted daughter of Richard Osgood, of Salisbury, Mass.; Lydia married Charles M. Brown.

Philip was brought up on the farm, and was considered authority in all matters pertaining to agriculture. If there was a farm to be sold, Mr. Jones was called upon to appraise it.

He was a quiet man, very methodical and a natural mechanic, did his own iron-work and shoed his own horses. If he wanted a new wagon or carriage, he bought the parts and put them together; was very enterprising and always encouraged improvements, and was considered an A 1 farmer, and his word was as good as his bond.

He was a prominent member of the Society of Friends, had been selectman of the town, and was highly esteemed by all who knew him. Mr. Jones died of paralysis April 9, 1884. Mr. and Mrs. Jones had one child—Lura A. She married a Bartlett. Mrs. Bartlett died November 1, 1869.

REV. NATHANIEL LASELL.

Rev. Nathaniel Lasell was born in Schoharie, N. Y., February 4, 1816. He was the fourth child of Chester and Nancy (Manning) Lasell. His father was a direct descendant of Elder Brewster, and his mother of Gov. Bradford. Thus was he of Pilgrim stock. There was also a Huguenot element in the father's family. His parents moved from Scotland, Conn., to Schoharie in 1806. He had a Christian training in a devoutly Christian home, and early came into the Christian life.

His preparation for college was in the academy of his native town and in New Haven, Conn. He entered Williams College in 1838, and graduated in 1842, among the first in his class. He pursued his theological studies at Auburn, N. Y. He was licensed to preach by the Presbytery of Cayuga April 16, 1845. He supplied the Presbyterian Church in Russia, N. Y., for some time. He was ordained and installed



Philip Jones



Wm Thomas Lasell



Geo. W. Morrill

pastor of the Congregational Church in West Stockbridge, Mass., May 4, 1850, and dismissed July 7, 1853. He was acting pastor of the Congregational Church in Amesbury, Mass., from November 6, 1853, to April 6, 1856. He was installed pastor of the First Congregational Church in Exeter, N. H., June 9, 1856, and dismissed June 12, 1859. He then removed to Amesbury, where he ever after resided. He filled all these later years, however, with ministering to several churches. He was for five years acting pastor of the Union Church, Salisbury, near his residence. Several years he supplied the First Congregational Church in West Newbury. A like service he rendered for a brief time to the church in Brentwood, N. H., and for several years to the church in Mattapoisett, Mass., preaching until within a few months of his death. After a brief sickness he died on his sixty-fourth birthday, February 4, 1880.

As a scholar Mr. Lasell took high rank. As a preacher he excelled. By his clearness of statement, and by a certain freshness and individuality of presentation, he awakened and kept the interest of his hearers, and fixed his sermons in their minds. "It was easy to remember them" is the testimony of a hearer.

As a friend he was greatly esteemed. His affectionate nature, cordial manner, his keen and kindly wit, made him beloved by the people to whom he ministered, and by a large circle of personal friends. And all was consecrated by a strong and earnest piety.

He married Mrs. Susan L. Winkley, June 25, 1856, who survives him.

HON. GEORGE W. MORRILL.

Hon. George W. Morrill was born on May 15, 1818, at Amesbury, Mass. His parents, Moses and Hannah Morrill, were also natives of Amesbury. His father followed the trade of ship-carpenter at various points on the Merrimac River, and when ship-building was dull he worked his farm.

The son had no other school opportunities than those furnished by the common schools of Amesbury. The old academy served as the high school of the time, and even its privileges were not long at the students' command. While still a boy he went to work in the woolen mills for a time. Farm work being distasteful to him, he felt unwilling to defer to his father's wish that he should become a farmer, and went to Boston and formally bound himself as a carpenter's apprentice when eighteen years old.

To the acquirement of his trade he applied himself with the zeal and thoroughness which always characterized his efforts.

The years of his apprenticeship taught him much more than the complete mastery of his trade. His alert mind was awake to the intellectual life of the city, and, so far as he could do so, he made opportunity to share it.

He was careful to keep informed concerning all the great men of the day, and utilized every chance he could secure to listen to their public addresses.

His taste for politics was thus directed by Quincy Adams, Webster and Choate.

In religion and philanthropy John Pierpont and Theodore Parker furnished congenial thought and stimulus.

Music provided wholesome entertainment to a boy gifted with an exquisite ear for harmony. His flute-playing and fine tenor voice enabled him to give as well as to receive musical delight.

Boston was for him happily chosen as the place in which to learn a trade. In graduating from the carpenter's bench he knew the use of other tools, as well as those of his trade. He began the life of a journeyman carpenter in Brunswick, Georgia, whither he traveled by sailing vessel from New Bedford, at the age of twenty-one. He remained in the South three years, following his trade.

While working in the town and upon neighboring plantations he had a near view of the system of negro slavery. His rigid sense of justice condemned the violation of liberty and of human rights.

He naturally affiliated in politics with the anti-slavery Whigs, and became a member of the Republican party as soon as it was formed. Returning to New England, he plied his trade at several places in the vicinity of Boston.

In 1843 he married Lydia F. Wells, who was also a native of Amesbury. As boy and girl they had been playmates; as man and woman they were to be for forty-three years loving companions and helpmeets.

In 1849, at the request of the Wason Brothers, railroad car builders, of Springfield, Mass., he moved to that city, and went to work in the car-shops. In 1851 he helped to fit up and start a car-shop in Cleveland, Ohio, and moved his family to that growing city on the Western Reserve. Besides working in the shop, he served also as its clerk and book-keeper.

His services were of such value that he became a member of the firm, and ultimately its senior partner.

For sixteen years he conducted the car-shops with success, and in 1867 retired from active business with a competency. He took high rank among the business men of Cleveland. He was respected for his unswerving integrity and his ability. He was loved and admired for his winning personality, his graceful, genial manners and his generous charities, of which only the many recipients knew. Political honors sought him, placing him in the City Council for several years.

At this time Cleveland was one of the stations of the "under-ground railroad." Runaway slaves came here to take the night boats for Detroit, where only a river separated them from Canada and freedom.

George W. Morrill was known as a man willing to help the runaways. To him consignments of such

freight were addressed, and he accordingly met the anxious blacks and stowed them safely away aboard the steamboats.

Captain Pierce, agent of the line and an ardent Democrat, was always on the dock superintending the shipment of freights. Knowing Mr. Morrill's repeated violation of the Fugitive Slave Law, he often said to him: "Morrill, if I ever see you taking negroes onto my boats, I certainly shall deliver them up." But on Mr. Morrill's approach with the blacks, the humane captain would turn his back, so that seeing the negroes board the boat was out of the question. Mr. Morrill was pre-eminently a law-abiding man, and he always gave to the nation an active and an unwavering support; but to him the Fugitive Slave Law was subordinate to a higher law, which the human conscience sanctioned and enforced.

His achievements in Cleveland brought him wealth, social position and troops of friends. Most men so circumstanced would have settled permanently amid such surroundings. With him, however, had remained a love for his native New England strong enough to induce his return thither.

By this step he willingly surrendered the certainty of acquiring great riches, as well as the opportunity of winning the political prominence which his sterling merit, business sagacity and great popularity put within easy reach. No man in the city was more loved and honored than he.

In 1867 he moved to Boston and retained a residence there a few years, during a part of which time he traveled in Europe, securing the information a practical man, with keen observation and a just judgment in making comparisons, can obtain from the study which traveling affords.

In 1873 he built his home in Amesbury, and remained there the rest of his lifetime. His love for his native place had never abated, and an ultimate return thither had been his wish and purpose. He felt a warm interest in the prosperity of the town and a pride in the great beauty of its environment.

Political preferment he never sought. It came to him as the spontaneous offer of constituents. Chosen representative to the General Court for the session of 1875–76, he served with ability and characteristic zeal.

His efforts secured to Amesbury an advantageous boundary line, when the act was passed at this session, incorporating the new town of Merrimac. He was chosen Presidential Elector in 1876, and cast his vote for the successful Republican candidate.

In 1884 he was elected to the State Senate from the Fourth Senatorial District of Essex County by a Republican majority vote without precedent. He led his opponent in every town and city in the district. His able discharge of the duties of his position was indorsed by his re-election to the Senate the following year. As chairman of three committees, that of the Treasury being one of them, he conscientiously performed every duty incumbent upon him. It afforded him satisfaction, while in the Senate, to be chiefly instrumental in securing the passage of an act uniting that part of the town of Salisbury known as Salisbury Mills to the town of Amesbury. This union of the towns was, in his opinion, a business need, and as such commanded his approval and received his efficient support. He declined to be a candidate for a third election to the Senate.

George W. Morrill, in private and in public life, gave his best endeavors to whatever he undertook to do. Faithfulness, truthfulness, sincerity and earnestness characterized his every thought and effort. As a mechanic, any deviation from a straight line or a symmetrical curve offended him; as a business man, only scrupulous exactitude and correctness received his approval; as a legislator, he was independent, and only such measures as he believed to be right in principle commanded his support. It is to be regretted that he would not turn his attention earlier to public affairs. Men like him are admirably equipped to give to the administration of public office the advantage of management on business methods.

Descended from Puritan ancestors rigidly narrow in theology, he was himself a vigorous advocate of freedom in religion, as well as in civil and political affairs.

Throughout his life he looked to reason and conscience for guidance; a kind and loyal husband and a loving and indulgent father, who taught by his own daily example, that most impressive of all teachings. Handsome in person, commanding in appearance, genial in manner, generous with his wealth, and with cheery words, his winning personality was universally respected as that of an able and good man.

He assumed no virtue that he did not have. A strong man mentally and morally, he was, at all times and wherever placed, outspoken in his opinions and with the courage of his convictions.

In the early summer of 1886 his health was impaired by a severe attack of erysipelas, and on December 10th of that year he passed away from earth suddenly in the sixty-ninth year of his age. No higher eulogium could be spoken of any man than that pronounced upon him by an old neighbor, who said: "I have known George W. Morrill for sixty years. In all that time he never did a dishonorable thing. He could not entertain a dishonorable thought."

REV. D. GORDON ESTES, D.D.

Rev. D. Gordon, Estes, D.D., was born in Malden, Mass., and received his early education at the seminery in Andover, and was a graduate of Yale of the class of 1839. He was for a short time junior partner of an old-established mercantile house in Boston.

He entered the middle class of the "General Theological Seminary" at New York, and in 1845 was ordained priest of the Protestant Episcopal Church



D. Gordon Estes.



M. D. & S. Steere

by the Rt. Rev. Manton Eastburn, D.D., in St. Peter's, Salem. His first parish was St. James' Church, Amesbury, Mass. In 1847, during a visit to Europe, he was matriculated as a member of the Halle Wittenberg University, and attended lectures of Professors Roëdiger and Tholluck. In 1848 he was present at the forcing of the Ducal Bastile of Venice; also in Naples during their attempt at revolution; and in Paris at the time of the memorable "Four Days of June."

On account of a bronchial trouble, he passed two winters in Florida, one in New Orleans, and resided several years in the West as rector of St. Paul's Church, St. Louis; Christ Church, Boonville; and Christ Church, Lexington, Mo., in the diocese of Bishop Hawks. From St. Paul's College, Missouri, with his dear friend and classmate, William B. Corbyn, he received the honorary degree of D.D.

He returned to Amesbury and to his first parish, which he was again obliged to leave, and passed a winter in St. Croix, West Indies, but never recovered his health, and, after great suffering, died of Bright's disease at his residence at Hillside, Amesbury.

He was a man of gentle dignity, high culture, amiable and affable, a dear lover of a good joke, courteous, hospitable and generous. These qualities made him universally beloved.

He married Hannah M., youngest daughter of Paul Moody, of Lowell.

M. D. F. STEERE.

Among the business men who have made their home in Amesbury, few have given such evidence of enterprise, perseverance and skill as the subject of this notice. Born in Pascoag, R. I., in 1828, he, like many New England boys, was compelled to seek the means of a livelihood at an early age. To him the battle of life was earnest; but with a mind trained to industry, he entered a woolen-mill, learning every department of the business, with the hidden resolution to win success. It was thus he shaped his future years for the good fortune which followed honest endeavor. Advancing step by step, he soon became the owner of a mill in Uxbridge and was engaged in the manufacture of woolen goods in that town, when he received a call to take charge of the Amesbury Woolen Company's mills, one of the largest concerns at that time in New England, and receiving a salary at one period larger than that paid to the President of the United States. From 1858, for nearly twenty-five years, Mr. Steere was employed as the agent of the mills in this town, covering a period of their greatest prosperity. During his agency, the working capacity of the company was doubled by the building of several of its largest factories, the water-power was vastly increased by the erection of a new and large reservoir for the storage of water, and the three companies which did business on the Powow River were consolidated into one by purchase, over which he was the sole agent. In 1882 Mr. Steere resigned his agency to seek needed rest. In 1883-84 he was called to represent the First District of Essex in the Legislature, receiving nearly a unanimous vote. The same year he visited Europe in company with the late John Gardner, then treasurer of the Amesbury Mills. But one born to such active business could not long continue unemployed, and he soon after became a partner in the large carriage firm of Biddle & Smart, and carries into that industry the same energy of character. To him the town is in part indebted for the building of the fine opera-house which now adorns Main Street.

CHAPTER CXXVI.

MERRIMAC.

BY WILLIAM T. DAVIS.

THE town of Merrimac constituted the West Parish of Amesbury until its incorporation as a separate municipality, on the 11th of April, 1876. It is situated on the north side of the river from which it derives its name, and covers a territory about three miles long by two and a half miles wide, bounded on its four sides by the Merrimac River, the city of Haverhill, the New Hampshire line and the parent town of Amesbury. It is described in the act of incorporation as "all the territory now within the town of Amesbury, in the County of Essex, comprised within the following limits, that is to say, beginning at a point on the Merrimac River at the middle of the mouth of Pressey's Creek (so called); thence running northerly in a straight line to the most northerly point of land on the southerly side of Kimball's Pond; thence northwesterly in a straight line to a point on the town line, dividing Amesbury and Newton, N. H., 2050 feet west from the Monument on the State line, dividing Massachusetts and New Hampshire, situated on a road leading from Newton to Amesbury, and near the house of Arthur Robertshaw; thence westerly, southwesterly and southeasterly as the present division lines run between the said town of Newton, City of Haverhill and said town of Amesbury to a point on the Merrimac River; thence easterly by the Merrimac River to the point of beginning."

This territory is beautifully diversified by hill, valley and plain, and shares largely the picturesque qualities for which both shores of the Merrimac River are distinguished. On the south and west extends a range of hills known as "Long" and "Red Oak," which are easy of access and from which interesting views may be obtained of the undulating slopes through which, like a silver thread, the river

stretches from the mountains to the sea. From these points of view glimpses may be obtained, across and beyond the fields and forests nearer at hand, of church-spires along the New Hampshire line, while on the west "Birch Meadow," with its scattered farm-houses, and the summit of "Brandy Brow," the meeting-place of four towns and two States, catch the eye, and on the south and east and northeast the West Newbury highlands and "Bear Hill" complete the panorama of which the villages of Merrimac, the subject of this sketch, are the central and salient points. Near by is the birth-place of Whittier, within the limits of Haverhill, but near the Merrimac line, and bounded by the landscape which, if it did not create the poet, at least kindled his imagination and inspired his pen.

The date of the settlement of the West Parish of Amesbury cannot be definitely fixed. It is known, however, that Edward Cottle was located in that section at a very early period, and that Samuel Foot and John Pressey were there respectively in 1659 and 1664. Henry Tuxbury, Thomas Nichols, John Grimpsen and Thomas Sargent were all settled there before 1670, while the Allens and Fowlers and Morses were to be found there as early as the year 1700. What is now Merrimac was called Jamaco at an early date, and for a century or more it continued to bear that name. As the fear of Indian raids grew less year by year, the eagerness for landed possessions which characterized the settlers of New England pushed the wave of population farther and farther into outlying districts, and under the influence of this wave Jamaco increased gradually in population, adding yearly new families and new names to the settlement. The Davis, Kelly and Clement families made their appearance early in the eighteenth century, and about the year 1722 Abraham Merrill removed to Jamaco from Newbury with his family, including three sons,—Abraham, Isaac and Jacob,—whose descendants have until recently been numerous within its limits.

At an earlier date John Martin and Joseph Peaslee became settlers, the latter locating himself in Newton, then within the Salisbury grant, and finally in Haverhill, where he died. Joseph Lankester, Samuel Hadley and the families of Blaisdell and Hoyt were also there at an early date, and as early as 1666 a grant of land was made to Thomas Harvey. A Thomas Harvey was a ship carpenter and built vessels at Jamaco, on land granted to him by the town, in 1710. He was chosen a deputy in 1690, '94, '97, 1706, 08, '13 and '14. At various times in the history of this district the names of Chase and Kenney also appear and many others, some of which have been long extinct.

As early as 1715 the population of the West District had so far increased as to warrant the desire for a meeting-house within its limits. Indeed, a vote, afterwards reconsidered, was passed by the town in that year to build a house in that district. In 1722 the town agreed definitely to the plan and a meeting-house was at once erected. The West Parish agreed to pay the salary of their minister, and thus a separation of the two parishes was accomplished, which was confirmed by the General Court in 1725. On the 19th of May, 1726, the new church was organized and the church covenant was signed. Previous to the organization of the church the parish, at a meeting held on the 6th of July, 1725, voted to invite Joseph Parsons to settle as its minister. After some negotiations with Mr. Parsons he declined the invitation, and was afterwards ordained, on the 8th of June, 1726, as the third pastor of the church in Bradford, where he died, May 4, 1765.

At a meeting of the parish, held on the 5th of November, 1725, a committee of two was appointed to visit Mr. Hale, of Boxford, or Mr. Samuel Coffin or Mr. Edmund March, of Newbury, or Mr. Wingate, of "Hamtown," and if possible secure one of them to preach three or four Sabbaths. On the 2d of December, 1725, the committee reported that they had secured Mr. Wingate, and the parish appointed a committee, consisting of Captains Foot and Stephens and Mr. John Blaisdell, to confer with Mr. Wingate concerning an engagement to "preach for a considerable time."

At a meeting held on the 3d of January, 1726, it was unanimously voted "to observe a day of fasting for to seek the blessing of heaven, and Thursday y^e^ 20th of January instant, was the day appointed, and Mr. Wells, of the First church, Mr. Cushing, of Salisbury, and Mr. Gooken, of Hampton, N. H., were chosen to carry on the work of a fast & to advise who to call to y^e^ work of ministry." As a result of the advice sought, Mr. Wingate was invited to permanently settle with a salary of "four score pound a year for the first two years and afterward a hundred a year, and the use of the Pasnedg." It was also agreed to give him thirty cords of wood each year, and that "in case his family should increase, there should be an increase of salary; and in case he should settle in the Precinct and provide for himself a horse and a dwelling-place, he should receive fifty pounds a year for the first four years over and above his fixed salary."

Mr. Wingate accepted the invitation, and it was voted "to observe the 19th of May as a day of fasting and specially seeking the blessing of Heaven upon the anticipated ordination." The fast was held as proposed, and Rev. Mr. Wells, of Amesbury, Rev. Mr. Cushing, of Salisbury East Parish, Rev. Mr. Parsons, of Salisbury West Parish, Rev. Mr. Tutts, of Newbury West Parish, and Rev. Mr. Brown, of Haverhill, were present. On the same day, as has already been stated, the church was organized and the Confession of Faith, consisting of fifteen articles, was made and acknowledged, and Rev. Paine Wingate, John Foot, Thomas Fowler, Abraham Merrill, Thomas Colby, Titus Wells, Valentine Rowell, Samuel

Stevens, Joseph Sargent, Joseph Bartlett, Philip Rowell, William Moulton, Tappan Ordway, John Blasdell and Abraham Merrill, Jr. signed the following church covenant:

"Forasmuch as the Lord hath accepted us sinful wretches into covenant with his Majesty, in Christ we therefore avouch the Lord to be our God, and make firm and sure covenant with his Majesty and one with another (through the grace of Christ) to give up ourselves to him; to submit to his Government and all his holy ordinances, acknowledging him for our Prophet, Priest and King; to walk before him in all things according to the rule of his Word; shunning all Atheism and Anti-Christianism with all other errors and pollutions in the worship of God. We do also bind ourselves to walk together with the Church and all the members of it in mutual love and watchfulness to the building up of each other in the faith and love of our Lord Jesus Christ; to yield obedience to his holy will and to carry on the duties of his worship in public and private according to Gospel order and institution; hereby craving help at God's hands for performance hereof we do also with ourselves give up our seed unto the Lord to be his people and to submit under the watch and discipline of this Church according to the Rules of Christ."

The church having concurred in the invitation to Mr. Wingate to settle, the ordination took place on the 15th of June, 1726. Rev. Mr. Wells, of Amesbury, offered an introductory prayer; Rev. Mr. Gooken, of Hampton, N. H., preached the sermon from John 20: 15; Rev. Mr. Tufts, of Newbury, made the ordaining prayer; Rev. Mr. Cushing, of Salisbury, gave the charge; and Rev. Mr. Parsons, of Salisbury, the right hand of fellowship. On the 13th of July Abraham Merrill and Joseph Colby were chosen deacons, and the church organization was complete.

The following list of persons included in the first rate for the minister's salary will convey a pretty accurate idea of the extent and character of the population of Jamaco in 1726:

Abraham Merrill.
Abner Whittier.
Benjamin Hadley.
Cutting Feavor.
David Sargent.
Ephraim Pemberton.
Jacob Hoyt.
Jonathan Colby.
Jonathan Sargent.
John Pressey.
Thomas Davis.
John Martin.
Samuel Hadley, Jr.
Nathaniel Merrill.
Joseph Hadley.
George Hadley.
Henry Dow.
Micah Lanckester.
William Pressey.
Abraham Colby.
Benony Tucker.
Joseph Bartlett.
Charles Sargent, Jr.
Daniel Hoyt.
Elias Colby.
Eben Aboot.
Philip Rowell.
Joseph Sargent.
Philip Sargent, Jr.
Nehemiah Heath.
Samuel Martin.
Ezra Tucker.
Richard Goodwin.
Samuel Silver.
Joseph Moody.
John Lanckester.
Philip Sargent.
Thomas Beedle, Jr.
Thomas Rowell.
John Foot, Jr.
Timothy Sargent.
James Ordway.
Timothy Colby.
Jonathan Clement.
Samuel Poore.
John Ordway.
John Harvey.
Jonah Fowler.
Jacob Sargent, Jr.
William Sargent, Jr.
David Coope.
Jonathan Nichols.
Henry Trussell.
Joseph Pregett.
Joseph Collins.
Nathaniel Davies.
Jedidiah Titcomb.
Jeremiah Fowler.
William Moulton.
John Whittier.
Samuel Foot.
Joseph Currier.
John Davies.
Samuel Stevens.
Joseph Harvey.
John Bartlett, Sr.
Joseph Shoort.
William Harvey.
Jonathan Cleark.
John Hoyt.
Thomas Dow.
John Sargent.
Jacob Pressey.
Abner Brown.
Benjamin Tucker.
Charles Allen.
Daniel Sargent.
Ephraim Davies.
Francis Davies.
Timothy Hoyt.
Samuel Davies.
Samuel Hunt.
John Straw.
John Hunt.
William Davies.
Samuel Hadley.
Richard Kelley.
Isaac Colby.
Joseph Lanckester.
Thomas Stevens, Jr.
John Nichols.
Robert Ring.
John Pressey.
Jacob Sargent.
John Blasdell.
Joseph Davies, Jr.
William Fowler.
Titus Wells.
Jonathan Ferrin.
Isaac Rogers.
Ezekiel Colby.
Samuel Juell.
Henry Trussell, Jr.
Philip Call.
Thomas Beedle.
Thomas Colby.
Jonathan Kelley.
James Dow.
Samuel Colby, Jr.
Nathaniel Tucker.
Israel Young.
Valentine Rowell.
Jonathan Davies.
Thomas Bartlett.
Thomas Fowler.
Andrew Rowen.
Joseph Davis.
John Fowler.
Capt. John Foot.
Robert Beedle.
John Bartlett, Jr.
Thomas Wells.
Charles Sargent.

Mr. Wingate's ministry was a long and eminently successful one. It continued nearly sixty years, and terminated only with his life on the 19th of February, 1786. He was born in Hampton, N. H., in June, 1703, and was the son of Joshua Wingate, of that town. He graduated at Harvard in 1723, and must have been settled in Amesbury soon after the close of his theological studies. His wife was Mary Balch, and his children were Paine, who married Eunice Pickering; Mary, who married Ephraim Elliot; Betsey, who married a Bartlett; Sarah, who married Samuel Bradley; John, who married two wives,—a Webster and a Kimball; Joshua, who married Hannah Carr; Abigail, who married an Ingalls; and Joseph, who married Judith Carr. Paine Wingate, the oldest child, graduated at Harvard in 1759, and after preaching several years in Hampton, N. H., became a judge of the Supreme Court of New Hampshire, and Representative and Senator from that State in the United States Congress. He died at Stratham, N. H., March 7, 1838, in the ninety-ninth year of his age. His father, the Rev. Paine Wingate, lies buried in the cemetery at Merrimac, and the following inscription is cut on his monument:

"In memory of

Rev. Paine Wingate,

First Pastor of the Church in Amesbury West Parish. In his meekness and moderation unaffected Piety and Benevolence were eminently conspicuous. The People of his charge were for a long series of years edified by his preaching and animated to the practice of pure Religion by his example. Having faithfully discharged the duties of his ministerial office near sixty years, beloved and honored by those who best knew him, he departed this life in cheerful expectation of a better on the 19th of Feb., 1786, Etat 83."

Mrs. Wingate survived her husband less than two years, and having died on the 9th of October, 1787, at the age of eighty-one, was buried by his side. As her epitaph states, the monument over her grave was

erected "to record the virtues of the dead and the gratitude of the living."

In 1787 a new meeting-house was erected, and in the next year the church, with the concurrence of the parish, invited Rev. Francis Welch to settle, offering him the use of the parsonage, one hundred pounds as a settlement and a yearly salary of eighty pounds. The invitation was accepted, and on the 3d of June, 1789, the ordination took place, at which Rev. Mr. Webster, of Salisbury; Rev. Mr. Ames, of Newton; Rev. Mr. Noyes, of Southampton; Rev. Mr. Merrill, of Plaistow; Rev. Mr. Cummings, of Billerica; Rev. Mr. Adams and Rev. Mr. Shaw, of Haverhill; Rev. Mr. Peabody, of Atkinson; Rev. Mr. Tappan and Rev. Mr. Kimball, of Newbury; and Rev. Mr. Dutch and Rev. Mr. Allen, of Bradford, constituted the ordaining council. Mr. Cummings offered the introductory prayer, Mr. Merrill preached the sermon from Phil. 1: 8, Mr. Noyes made the ordaining prayer, Mr. Webster gave the charge, Mr. Adams the right hand of fellowship and Mr. Peabody made the concluding prayer.

The ministry of Mr. Welch was a short one, but long enough to impress the people of his charge with his dignity and uprightness of character, with the example of his Christian life, with his eminent ability and eloquence, and to win their warmest affection. He died December 15, 1793, and the slab covering his grave in the cemetery in Merrimac bears the following inscription:

"This Monument
is sacred to the dust and memory of the
Rev Francis Welch,
son of Joseph Welch, Esq., of Plaistow, N. H., who suddenly departed this life December 15, 1793, in the twenty-eighth year of his age and fifth of his ministry; within a year of his nuptial contract with Miss Priscilla Adams, who remains with an infant to mourn the loss of a tender and affectionate husband.

"Through the snares and dangers of life Reason uncontrouled held the Helm of his breast. Religion was his polar star. Modest without [illegible] confident without bigotry and devout without superstition, he was endowed the most important qualifications for the ministerial office and discharged it with faithfulness, reputation and success. Taken [illegible] respects of extensive usefulness, and leaving an evidence of his worth in the universal lamentation of his acquaintance, he has led the way to those blissful mansions which he earnestly labored to fill with [illegible]."

Mr. Welch, as his gravestone states, was the son of Joseph Welch, of Plaistow; and his mother's maiden-name was Hannah Chase. He graduated at Harvard in 1787 in the class with John Quincy Adams, Abel Abbot William Cranch, Thaddeus Mason Harris, James Lloyd Samuel Putnam and others who lived to win a national reputation. His parents were [illegible] at first though his departure from ancestral faith was a source of domestic anxiety for a time, his father, at a later day united with a Congregational Church; and a younger brother followed him into the Congregational ministry. He pursued his theological studies with Rev. Giles Merrill, of Plaistow, and married, December 6, 1792, Priscilla, daughter of Rev. Phineas Adams, of the West Church in Haverhill.

In May, 1794, a call was extended to Rev. Jonathan Brown, which was declined, and in November in the same year Rev. David Smith was invited, and accepted, and on the 17th of January, 1795, Mr. Smith was ordained. The council consisted of the following ministers: Noyes, of Southampton, N. H.; Dana and Frisbie, of Ipswich; Merrill, of Plaistow, N. H.; Adams, of Haverhill; Peabody, of Atkinson, N. H.; Allen, of Bradford; Eaton, of Boxford; Kelley, of Hampstead, N. H.; and Dutch, of Bradford; and Mr. Peabody offered the introductory prayer. Mr. Dana preached the sermon from 1 Thess. ii: 5–8, Mr. Merrill made the ordaining prayer, Mr. Noyes gave the charge, Mr. Adams the right hand of fellowship and Mr. Frisbie made the concluding prayer.

At the end of a little over five years from the settlement of Mr. Smith, an irreconcilable difficulty grew up between him and the parish, in which at first the church took no part, except to oppose the efforts of the parish to bring about his dismission. His relations with the parish became at last, however, so unpleasant that a council was called, the result of which was the dismission of Mr. Smith, on the 22d of May, in the year 1800.

Mr. Smith was the son of Col. Isaac and Ennice (Adams) Smith, and was born in Ipswich, Mass., July 23, 1761. He graduated at Harvard in 1790, and studied theology with his pastor, Rev. Joseph Dana. After leaving Amesbury, he was employed for a time, by the Missionary Society, as a traveling preacher in Western New York, and after residences in Haverhill, and in Bath, N. H., he finally fixed his home in Portland, Me., where he died May 19, 1837. He was married twice—first, to the widow of his predecessor in the Amesbury pulpit, Rev. Francis Welch, to whom he was married September 27, 1795, and second to a lady of Portland, by the name of Cutler. His children, all by his first wife, were John Adams, born in Amesbury, December 20, 1797; David, born in Amesbury, July 3, 1799; William Perkins, born in Haverhill, June 10, 1801; Mary, born in Haverhill, July 23, 1803; Elizabeth, born in Haverhill, January 17, 1805; Charles Henry, born in Bath, N. H., December 12, 1809; and Myra Adams, born in Bath, N. H., September 21, 1812.

After the dismission of Mr. Smith the church remained without a pastor until June 6, 1804, when Rev. Samuel Mead, of Danvers, was installed. The council at his installation consisted of Rev. Messrs. Hull, of Amesbury; Wadsworth, of Danvers; Kelley, of Hampstead, N. H.; Dutch, of Bradford; Tompkins, of Haverhill; Woods, of Newbury; and Rev. Mr. Hull offered the introductory prayer, Mr. Wadsworth preached the sermon from 1 Tim. iv: 6, Mr. Kelley made the installing prayer, Mr. Dutch gave the charge, Mr. Tompkins the right hand of fellowship and Mr. Woods made the concluding prayer.

The ministry of Mr. Mead continued until his death, which occurred on the 28th of March, 1818. He was the son of Zaccheus and Sarah (Barlow) Mead, and was born in Rochester, Mass., in 1766. He graduated at Harvard in 1787, and after pursuing for a short time the study of medicine, prepared himself for the ministry, and was ordained pastor of a church in Danvers before he was called to Amesbury. He married, at Rochester, January 1, 1797, Susannah, daughter of Major Earl Clapp, of Rochester, and afterwards of Woburn, who, after the death of her husband, removed to Woburn. Mr. Mead had eight children,—Samuel Barlow, born December 27, 1797; Jeremiah Clapp, March 4, 1800; Susan Clapp and Sarah Barlow, twins, November 15, 1802; Anna Barstow, December 5, 1804; Abby, March 6, 1806; Mary, April 16, 1809; and Jeremiah Clapp again, September 19, 1812.

After the death of Mr. Mead the church was again without a pastor, and this time for a period of eight and a half years. During a large part of the time Rev. Moses Welch, of Plaistow, a brother of the second pastor, supplied the pulpit, having been ordained as an evangelist on the 7th of July, 1819. In that year he was engaged for a year's supply, and the engagement was renewed annually in the four succeeding years. In 1824 he was invited to continue the supply for another year, but declined, and was subsequently installed over the church in Plaistow, his native town, December 26, 1826, and died in Wenham, February 17, 1831.

The next pastor was Rev. P. S. Eaton, who was ordained September 20, 1826. At his ordination Rev. Mr. Welch offered the introductory prayer; Rev. Dr. Eaton, the father of the pastor, preached the sermon from 1 Cor. 3 : 6; Rev. Mr. Dodge made the ordaining prayer; Rev. Mr. Kelley, of Hampstead, N. H., gave the charge; Rev. Mr. Farnsworth, of Oxford, N. H., the right hand of fellowship; Rev. Mr. Perry made the address to the people; and Rev. Mr. Sawyer the concluding prayer.

Mr. Eaton's ministry continued until May 10, 1837, when he received his dismissal.

Rev. Peter Sidney Eaton was the son of Rev. Peter and Sarah (Stone) Eaton, and was born in Boxford, October 7, 1798. His father was for fifty-seven years the pastor of the church in West Boxford, and his mother's father, Rev. Eliab Stone, was for sixty years pastor of the Congregational Church in Reading, Mass. Mr. Eaton graduated at Harvard in 1818, and from Andover Theological Seminary in 1822, and married, at Charlestown, December 4, 1828, Elizabeth Ann Leman. His children were Sidney Payson, born September 16, 1829; Henry Martyn, born June 28, 1835; and Elizabeth Ann, born May 16, 1841. He died at his home in Chelsea, March 13, 1863.

On the 1st of November, 1837, Rev. Lucius W. Clark was installed as the next pastor, and at the installation the sermon was preached by Rev. Mr. Fitch, of Boston; the charge was given by Rev. Mr. Peckham, of Plaistow; the right hand of fellowship by Rev. Mr. Cushing, of the East Church in Haverhill; and the address to the people by Rev. Mr. Keeler, of Amesbury Mills.

During the ministry of Mr. Clark a new meeting-house was erected on the spot occupied by the present house, and dedicated September 18, 1839. Mr. Clark was dismissed at his own request, August 31, 1842, removed to Vermont, and died in Middlebury, in that State, January 2, 1854. He was the son of James and Jerusha (Morey) Clark, of Mansfield, Conn., and was born in that town July 2, 1801. He graduated at Brown University in 1825, and was licensed to preach by the Mendon Association in October, 1826. On the 9th of December, 1829, he was ordained as pastor of the church at South Wilbraham, Mass., and after three years was dismissed. He afterwards supplied a pulpit in Plymouth five years, and went from that town to Amesbury. He married, April 30, 1830, Lucy Beard Jacobs, widow of Dr. Simon Jacobs, of Oakham, Mass., and daughter of Rev. Daniel and Lucy (Beard) Tomlinson, of Oakham. Mr. Clark had two children,—Lucy Maria, born February 12, 1832, and Lucius Watson, born January 22, 1834.

The successor of Mr. Clark was Rev. Henry B. Smith, who was ordained December 29, 1842. The sermon at the ordination was preached by Rev. William Allen, D.D., of Northampton; the ordaining prayer was made by Rev. Dr. Perry, of East Bradford; the charge was given by Rev. Jonathan F. Stearns, of Newburyport; the right hand of fellowship by Rev. Edward A. Lawrence, of Haverhill; and the address to the people by Rev. Dr. L. Withington, of Newbury. Mr. Smith's ministry continued until September 29, 1847, when he was dismissed to accept a professorship in Amherst College. Mr. Smith was the son of Henry Arixene (Southgate) Smith, and was born in Portland, Me., November 21, 1815. He graduated at Bowdoin College in 1834, and immediately after served as tutor in the college, studied theology at Andover and Bangor, and spent a year or two in professional preparation at Halle and Berlin, in Europe. After leaving Amesbury he was professor of mental and moral philosophy in Amherst College from 1847 to 1850, and professor of ecclesiastical history in the Union Theological Seminary of New York from 1850 to 1854, when he became professor of systematic theology in the same institution, and died in New York February 7, 1877. He married, January 5, 1843, Elizabeth L., daughter of Rev. William Allen, D.D., of Northampton, Mass., and his children were Arixene Southgate, born at Amesbury, November 2, 1843; Maria Malleville Wheelock, born at Amesbury, December 15, 1845; William Allen, born at Amherst, August 16, 1848; and Henry Goodwin, born in New York, January 8, 1860.

The next pastor was Rev. Albert Paine, who was ordained September 7, 1848, on which occasion Rev.

Henry B. Smith, of Amherst College, preached the sermon; Dr. Samuel C. Jackson, of Andover, gave the charge; Rev. D. T. Fisk, of Belleville, Newbury, the right hand of fellowship; and Rev. Dr. L. F. Dimmick, of Newburyport, the address to the people. Mr. Paine's ministry continued until April 11, 1854, when, at his own request, he was dismissed. He was the son of John and Betsey Paine, of Woodstock, Conn., where he was born, July 21, 1819. He graduated at Yale in 1841, and, after studying for a time at Andover, finished his theological course at the Auburn Seminary in 1845. He married, November 20, 1849, Sarah, daughter of Patten Sargent, of Amesbury, and had four children,—Edward Sargent, born May 3, 1851; Charles Hamilton, born March 27, 1853; William Alfred, born January 29, 1855; and Dolly Elizabeth, born October 16, 1856.

The successor of Mr. Paine was Rev. Leander Thompson, who was installed September 20, 1854, on which occasion Rev. Samuel Wolcott, of Providence, preached the sermon; Rev. Ralph Emerson, D.D., of Newburyport, made the installing prayer; Rev. Daniel Dana, D.D., of Newburyport, gave the charge; Rev. Thomas Laurie, of West Roxbury, the right hand of fellowship; and Rev. Albert Paine the address to the people. In 1859, during the pastorate of Mr. Thompson, the meeting-house built in 1839, being found too small, was sold and removed to give place to the present house of worship, which was at once erected and dedicated January 12, 1860. The old house was after its removal used for a time for public purposes.

The ministry of Mr. Thompson continued until his dismissal, May 2, 1867. He was the son of Charles and Mary (Wyman) Thompson and was born in Woburn, Mass., March 7, 1812. He fitted for college at Warren Academy in Woburn, and graduated at Amherst in 1835. He pursued his theological studies at the Andover Theological Seminary, from which he graduated in 1838, and was licensed to preach by the Andover Association, April 10, 1838. He was ordained as an evangelist at Woburn November 30, 1838, and after supplying the pulpit at Granby, Mass., for about a year, sailed from Boston for Syria as a missionary, January 24, 1840. After a protracted and severe illness he returned home in 1843 and was installed as pastor of the South Church in South Hadley, Mass., December 13th of that year. He was dismissed from his pastorate at his own request August 28, 1850, and from that time until his settlement at Amesbury was precluded by ill health from engaging to any great extent in the labors of a ministry. After leaving West Amesbury he supplied for one year the pulpit of the Congregational Church in Woltboro', N. H., the native town of his wife, and for three or four years the Congregational pulpit in Woburn, his own native town. During the last thirteen years he has been obliged, on account of the state of his health, to retire from the pulpit altogether. He has made his native town and the house in which he was born his home and devoted himself largely to literary pursuits, chiefly of an historical character.

Mr. Thompson married, November 6, 1839, Ann Eliza, daughter of Samuel and Mary (Clark) Avery of Wolfboro', N. H., and had six children,—Charles Henry, born in Jerusalem September 27, 1840; Edwin Wheelock, born in Beirût December 13, 1841; Mary Avery, born in South Hadley March 25, 1844; Everett Augustine, March 28, 1847; Anu Eliza, October 29, 1848; and Samuel Avery, born in Wolfboro' October 16, 1850.

On the 15th of October, 1868, Rev. Lewis Gregory was ordained as the successor of Mr. Thompson, and was dismissed October 11, 1875. On the 7th of September, 1876, Rev. W. H. Hubbard was installed and was dismissed May 29, 1883. Thomas M. Miles was installed January 17, 1884, and is the present pastor of the church. In 1879 the name of the society was changed from the Second Congregational Church in Amesbury to the First Orthodox Congregational Society of Merrimac, and now bears that name. The meeting-house was also remodeled and rededicated January 1, 1879.

The history of the Congregational Church has been awarded a large space in this narrative as it was the point round which the population gradually crystalized which has now become the town of Merrimac. Indeed, the population and the church were identical, and no history of the town, though its incorporation was so recent, would be complete without a description of the gradual evolution of a municipality from its germ in the church and parish.

Until 1836 the Congregational Society was the only religious organization within the limits of what is now Merrimac. In that year the Universalists built a meeting-house, and in the next year, 1837, organized a society. Their first pastor was the Rev. Elbridge G Brooks, who began his pastorate in 1837 and remained about eighteen months. He was followed by Rev. J. S. Barry in 1839, and Rev. J. J. Locke in 1841, who preached until 1843, when he was succeeded by Rev. George G. Strickland. The pastorate of Mr. Strickland continued five years, during which he married Ruth, the eldest daughter of Jonathan B. Sargent, a leading member of the society.

Mr. Strickland was followed in 1849 by Rev. L. Howe, who preached one year, and was succeeded in 1851 by Rev. H. P. Cutting. Mr. Cutting was followed in 1852 by Rev. J. Davenport, who served about three and a half years, and was succeeded in 1856 by Rev. William P. Colby, and in 1858 by Rev. Calvin Damon. The pastorate of Mr. Damon continued eight years, and in 1868 Rev. Wm. F. Potter became the pastor, and served two years; Rev. W. R. Wright followed in 1871, preaching one year; Rev. W. D. Corkin in 1874, who preached two years; and Rev. Henry Jewell in 1880, after a supply of the pulpit for several years by students of divinity. Mr. Jewell occupied the pulpit four years, performing

his parochial duties with earnestness and fidelity, and winning the affection and respect of not only his own people, but the whole community. Rev. Anson Titus followed in 1884, who has recently dissolved his relations with the society, and left it at present without a pastor.

The Baptist Society at Merrimacport was organized at the house of Levi Williams August 25, 1849. What is now Merrimacport was then called the river village of West Amesbury, and the church in question was at first called, until 1857, the West Amesbury Baptist Church. Previous to that time, preaching had been supplied since 1847 by Rev. J. N. Chase and Rev. George Keely, of Haverhill. The public recognition of the church took place at Mechanics' Hall, September 20, 1849, at which time there were thirty-seven members, and the church was received into the Salem Baptist Association, at its meeting in Lowell, September 27, 1849. Nathaniel S. Pinkham, from Concord, N. H., was ordained as the first pastor, March 28, 1850. The sermon was preached by Rev. E. E. Cummings, of Concord, N. H.; Rev. George Keely, of Haverhill, made the ordaining prayer; and Rev. D. C. Eddy, of Lowell, gave the right hand of fellowship. The meeting-house which had been erected by the society was dedicated on the same day, Rev. Mr. Pinkham preaching the sermon.

The pastorate of Mr. Pinkham closed in 1852, and Rev. Josiah H. Tilton followed on the 21st of September in that year, who preached until May 3, 1854. On the 13th of September, 1854, Rev. S. T. Thatcher was ordained and served until July, 1857, at which time the church took the name of the South Amesbury Baptist Church, and held it until the incorporation of Merrimac in 1876, when it assumed the name of the Merrimacport Baptist Church, by which it is still known.

Rev. Charles Freeman Foster followed Mr. Pinkham, December 4, 1857, and remained until June 19, 1859. On the 2d of the following September, Rev. John Richardson became the pastor, and continued until his resignation, in 1864. Rev. James J. Peck, succeeded May 2, 1865, and resigned March 1, 1867, followed by Rev. Obediah E. Cox, August 1, 1869, who resigned July 3, 1870.

The next pastor was Rev. Jonathan E. Brown, who began his labors November 1, 1870, and resigned June 1, 1871, followed by Rev. George W. Davis, November 8, 1871, who ended his pastorate March 1, 1874. Until July, 1878, the pulpit was supplied by Rev. R. G. Farley, Rev. J. H. Cox, Rev. A. Dunn and Rev. Otis Wing. In July, 1878, Rev. J. H. Seaver became the pastor, and closed his pastorate in August, 1882. After the resignation of Mr. Seaver the pulpit was supplied by Rev. W. A. Hodgkins, of Lawrence, J. R. Haskins, of Merrimac, J. K. Chase, of South Hampton, N. H., and W. H. Cossum, of Poughkeepsie, N. Y., until January, 1886, when the present pastor, Rev. J. E. Dinsmore, entered on his pastorate. Another Baptist Church was organized in the central village of what is now Merrimac April 4, 1867, with eighteen members,—seven males and eleven females,—and was recognized by an association of Baptist Churches July 3, 1867. The first sermon was preached before the new society July 14, 1867, by Rev. C. H. Corey, D.D., president of the Colver Institute, in Richmond, Virginia, from Acts 5: 38, 39. The corner-stone of a church edifice was laid with appropriate ceremonies July 13, 1869, and the church was dedicated January 12, 1870, Rev. Dr. Lorimer, of Boston, preaching the sermon. The following pastors have been settled over this church: Rev. W. H. Kling, of Baltic, Conn., from July, 1868, to January 1, 1871; Rev. E. M. Bartlett, of Bath, Me., from October, 1872, to July 1, 1876; Rev. W. H. Coffin, of Nantucket, from December 19, 1877, to January 31, 1880; Rev. R. D. Fish, of Cheshire, Mass., from April 21, 1880, to August 20, 1882; Rev. J. R. Haskins, of West Acton, Mass., from June 1, 1883, to March 23, 1884; and Rev. S. D. Ashley, of Huntington, Mass., the present pastor, from March 1, 1885.

At Merrimacport there is a Methodist Society, which was organized in 1875. On the first Sabbath in December, 1874, Rev. E. M. Dinsmore, of the New Hampshire Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, began to preach in Citizens' Hall, and awakened a deep interest among the people. At the next Annual Conference, in April, 1875, he was appointed preacher in charge, and on the 5th of December following a Methodist Church was organized, consisting of twelve members. Mr. Dinsmore was held in high esteem by the whole community, and under his care the church took a permanent root. He was followed in 1878 by Rev. N. C. Alger, and in 1879 by Rev. C. E. Eaton. In 1880 Rev. Charles N. Chase was appointed pastor, and continued in charge until 1883, being succeeded by Rev. F. C. Pillsbury, who remained one year. In 1884 the pulpit was supplied by students from the Boston School of Theology, and in 1885 Rev. A. R. Lunt received the appointment of the Conference, and remained two years. In 1887 Rev. William Love was assigned to the church, and is still its pastor. The church continues to worship in Citizens' Hall, and has increased its membership to thirty-six.

During the summer of 1877, Episcopal services were held for the first time in Merrimac, in Sargent's Hall, Rev. Dr. Twing, of New York, and Rev. E. L. Drown, of Newburyport, officiating. During some years after 1877 occasional services were held at private residences, under the charge of the late Rev. John S. Beers, of Natick, general missionary for the diocese of Massachusetts. Interest in the services increasing, regular semi-monthly services have been held in Coliseum Hall since the autumn, of 1886. The society has no formal organization, but is known as the Merrimac Episcopal Mission.

The Catholics of West Amesbury, now Merrimac, first held services in Mechanics' Hall in 1870. The society being a mission of the Amesbury Parish, has always been under the charge of Rev. John Brady, of Amesbury. At the time of its organization the society numbered about one hundred and fifty. It continued to hold its services in Mechanics' Hall until 1884, when its growth and prosperity warranted the erection of the church it now occupies on Green Street, to accommodate its numbers, which had increased to about three hundred and fifty.

Besides the churches, it is proper that the schools in the West Parish of Amesbury before the incorporation of Merrimac should find a place in this narrative. The education of the youth in earlier years was of a meagre and unsatisfactory character. There were scattered schools open only a small part of the year, and taught by masters hired by votes of the town. The first School Board in Amesbury was chosen in 1792, and Rev. Francis Welch, Willis Patten, Mathias Hoyt and John Kelley were members from the West Parish. In 1803 there were in the parish four school districts—the "River District," receiving $174.49, with fourteen weeks school; the "Esquire Sargent's," receiving $181.17, with fourteen weeks; the "Birch Meadow," receiving $135.10, with eleven weeks, and the "Highland," receiving $92.55, with eight weeks. At the time of the incorporation of Merrimac, in 1876, there were within its limits eleven schools,—a high, grammar, intermediate and primary at the Centre,—a high, grammar and primary at South Amesbury (now Merrimacport), and four district schools at Birch Meadow, the Landing, Bear Hill and the Highlands. The whole number of scholars in the schools at that time was three hundred and sixty-seven. There are now fourteen schools in Merrimac—a High, Centre Grammar, Centre Intermediate, Centre First and Second Primaries, Prospect Street First and Second Primaries, Merrimacport Grammar, Merrimacport Intermediate and Primary, and the Landing, Bear Hill, Birch Meadow and Highland Schools. The whole number of scholars is four hundred and seventy-six. There are eight school-houses, the house at the Centre accommodating five schools, the house in Prospect Street two, two at Merrimacport, accommodating three, and one for each outlying school.

The High School was established in 1873, and Mr. Frank Wiggin was the first principal, continuing in charge until the spring of 1883, and followed by Prof. John A. Nichols, who served during the summer of that year. In the autumn of 1883, George F. Joyce became the principal, and still holds the position. In 1879, Ellen Gunnison was appointed assistant and continued until the summer of 1881, when she was succeeded by Helen K. Spofford who still holds the position.

In 1873, the year of the establishment of the High School, the Grammar School at South Amesbury (now Merrimacport) was raised to the grade of a High School, and was continued as such until 1879, when it was again made a grammar school.

The School Boards of Merrimac have been composed of the following persons:

1876. E. M. Dinsmore.
O. F. Seavey, M.D.
Wm. H. Hubbard.
1877. O. F. Seavey.
C. M. Dinsmore.
H. J. Cushing, M.D.
1878. Wm. Chase.
H. J. Cushing, M.D.
O. F. Seavey, M.D.
1879. H. J. Cushing, M.D.
Frank Wiggin.
Henry Haskell.
1880. C. F. W. Hubbard.
H. J. Cushing, M.D.
Henry Haskell.
1881. Henry Haskell.
H. J. Cushing, M.D.
Thomas H. Hoyt.
1882. H. J. Cushing, M.D.
Thomas H. Hoyt.
William Chase.
1883. Thomas H. Hoyt.
William Chase.
M. Perry Sargent.
1884. William Chase.
M. Perry Sargent.
John W. Hobart, M.D.
1885. M. Perry Sargent.
John W. Hobart, M.D.
Thomas H. Hoyt.
1886. John W. Hobart, M.D
Thomas H. Hoyt.
Charles E. Rowell.
1887. Thomas H. Hoyt.
Charles E. Rowell.
John W. Hobart, M.D.

There are other features in the history of the West Parish which may very properly be alluded to. In 1731 the West Parish established a second cemetery, having purchased land of Captain John Foot, Jr., on the plain, which was the nucleus of the present burial-ground. Another purchase was made of Captain Foot of two hundred and ten rods, for a training-field and parish uses, to "lay common forever." In 1735 an attempt was made to establish a ferry at Savage's Neck, and it was finally granted by the Quarter Court and left with the selectmen to manage.

In 1737 a way two rods wide was opened along the river bank, from the river landing to Cottle's Landing near Haverhill. This new road was given to the town by Captain John Sargent, Deacon Thomas Stevens and others. In the same year the town voted "to allow and pay to Captain Thomas Hoyt one hundred pounds of money for an open road of two rods wide through his land, wheron his son Jacob now dwells, beginning at ye northeast corner of Hannah Grant's land near his dwelling-house, and so through said Captain Hoyt's land to ye highway near ye ould Fort." Thomas Hoyt lived at the Pond Hills and owned the large farm at Tucker's Hill where Moses B. Hoyt recently lived, and his sons John and Jacob lived on that farm. It is therefore probable that the road opened was the present Birchy Meadow Road, to a point near the late Enoch Heath's land, where an old fort once stood. William Moulton, through whose land it was at first proposed to open a road, lived where the late Hon. William Nichols died.

In 1757, during the French War, Amesbury was required to furnish forty-three men to join the forces at Kennebec, Oswego and Crown Point. Of these, the West Parish men were probably:

John Martin.
Robert Ring.
Samuel Colby.
Moses Pressey.
Jacob Hoyt.
Joseph Harvey.

Timothy Sargent, Jr.	Philip Hunt.
Isaac Foot.	Thomas Sargent (3d).
Ephraim Sargent.	Jacob Harvey.
Bartholomew Perkins.	Trueworthy Sargent.
Joseph Buswell.	Joseph Nichols.
Captain Stephen Sargent.	James Sargent.
Thomas Clark.	Samuel Foot.
Timothy Colley.	Samuel Sargent, Jr.
Matthias Hoyt.	Thomas Stevens, Jr.
Thomas Sanders.	William Williams.
Philip Sargent.	Gideon Colby.

In the same year a draft was made from the militia company in the West Parish to recruit the army under the Earl of London,—including John Kelley, Joshua Sargent, Joseph Colby, Sargent Huse, Roger Colby, Thomas Williams, Stephen Sargent, Jr., Jonathan Moulton, Daniel Hoyt, Jonathan Clements, Enoch Chase, Jr., Ephraim Currier, Jr., Benjamin Morse, Wells Chase, Jr., Jonathan Kelley (3d), David Currier, Enoch Nichols, Joseph Harvey, Jr., Elliot Colby, Nathan Hoyt, Joseph Dow, Jr., John Kendrick, Nehemiah Hardy and Christopher Sargent. Fort William Henry, which was their destination, surrendered to Montcalm while they were on the march, and they returned home after four days absence. In 1878 Captain Richard Kelley, with twenty men of his company, joined in the successful expedition against Louisbourg.

In 1771 an account of the property and industrial interests of the West Parish was taken, which showed its total valuation £2261 10*s*. There were two hundred and seventeen acres of tillage land, and the largest amount cultivated by any one man was seven acres. Isaac Merrill had seven acres; Ensign Orlando Sargent, six; Nathaniel Davis, five; Barnabas Bradbury, four; Barzilla Colby, four; Ebenezer Farrington, four and a half; Benjamin Morse, four; Deacon Stephen Sargent, four; Thomas Sargent, Jr., four; Samuel Sargent, four; and Christopher Sargent, four. The number of acres in orchard was twenty-four, of which Isaac Merrill, with one and three-quarters acres, and Ebenezer Farrington, with one acre and a quarter, owned the largest shares. Some of the richest men were Orlando Sargent, valued in land at £36 2*s*. 6*d*.; Isaac Merrill, £47 7*s*. 6*d*.; Benjamin Morse, £31 7*s*. 6*d*.; Joseph Moody, £30 15*s*.; Thomas Sargent, Jr., £27 10*s*.; Josiah Sargent, £26 5*s*.; Christopher Sargent, £25 5*s*.; Thomas Rowell, £28 15*s*.; and Barnard Hoyt, £25. Isaac Merrill owned two negroes; Benjamin Morse, one; and Wells Chase, one. There were fifty-one horses, one hundred and seventeen oxen and two hundred and seventy-four cows. Isaac Merrill owned nine cows; Orlando Sargent, seven; Isaac Sargent, six; Ebenezer Farrington, six; and Barnard Hoyt, five. Jacob Harvey owned two mills on Cobler's Brook.

In 1775, after the battle of Lexington, Amesbury took immediate steps to raise volunteers for the common defense. Captain John Currier, of the East Parish, raised a company of fifty-four men, of whom about twenty belonged to the West Parish, and was in the engagement at Bunker Hill. In this company Wells Chase was lieutenant and Timothy Silver corporal, and both were wounded. Early in 1776 twenty-six men entered the army from the town, and of these, four were from the West Parish. Soon after, fifteen more enlisted, and seven of these were West Parish men. In September of that year ten more men joined the army at Fairfield from the parish, and Wells Chase carted their baggage. Before the end of the year nine more soldiers were paid a bounty of thirty-six dollars each and enlisted, and during the year 1777 repeated calls for men were made, to which Jamaco always responded. In 1780 paper money had depreciated to such an extent that at a special town-meeting the sum of forty-eight thousand four hundred pounds was raised for the town's use. A call had been made for a supply of ten thousand three hundred and seventy pounds of beef, and Ezra Jewell and Seth Kendrick were appointed to procure it, and sixteen thousand pounds was raised to pay for it.

In 1782, the last year of the war, the number of polls in the East Parish was two hundred and thirty-one, and in the West, one hundred and sixty-three. In the former the value of estates was £43,859 3*s*. and in the latter £42,470 8*s*.

In Shay's Rebellion, which occurred in 1786, a call was made on Amesbury for men, and those who reported from the West Parish were Jacob Sargent, Robert Sargent, Moses Sargent and Jacob Hoyt.

In 1808 two prominent men in the West Parish died, Capt. Robert Sargent and Col. Isaac Whittier, both at the river. The former was born in 1716, and was in his ninety-second year. He served as selectman in 1758 and 1769, and held a military commission for some years. He died on the 22d of January. The latter died on the 10th of February, at the age of fifty-three years. He served six years on the Board of Selectmen, and was its chairman. He was a military men and held a commission as colonel.

On the 23d of April, 1809, Dr. Nathan Huse died, at the age of ninety-two years. He was a native of West Newbury, and at the age of twenty-two settled at the Highlands. For about seventy years he practiced in his profession, and always held the respect and affection of the scattered community in which he lived. In 1813, Capt. Mathias Hoyt died. He had been a prominent man, serving during the Revolution on the Committee of Correspondence and Safety, and afterwards for several years on the Board of Selectmen. At one time he kept a tavern where the late Joseph W. Sargent lived, but removed to the Highlands, where he died. In 1816, Deacon Willis Patten died, on the 12th of September. He lived at the river and was a prominent man in that part of the town. In this year James Chase began the manufacture of earthenware at the river, in which he continued until his death, in 1858, when his son Phineas assumed the business.

Since the incorporation of the town the death has

occurred of Colonel Joshua Colby, one of its most prominent citizens. He was born in West Amesbury June 25, 1795, and died in Merrimac August 31, 1881. He occupied many positions of trust in his native town, serving as selectman of Amesbury at various times between 1830 and 1860. He was Representative in the Legislature three years, between 1830 and 1840, and a member of the Executive Council in 1843, associated with Governor Morton. He was for forty years a director of the Powow River Bank of Amesbury, and acquired by his high character the esteem of his fellow-townsmen, and a large influence in their public affairs.

In 1824 a post-office was established at West Amesbury, and Edmund Sargent was appointed postmaster. The present postmaster is George S. Prescott, who was appointed by the present administration at the expiration of the term of George E. Ricker. In 1825, Major Thomas Hoyt died, on the 14th of January. He was a son of Capt. Matthias Hoyt, and served for a number of years both as selectman and Representive to the General Court.

In 1827 the ferry at Patten's Creek was rented to Col. Stephen Bailey for five years, at one dollar per year, and this was the last known transaction concerning ferries on the river. On the 10th of November 1830, Christopher Sargent died, at the age of ninety years. He was the son of Moses and Sarah Sargent, and was born May 18, 1740. He held the office of selectman thirteen years, was Representative to the General Court fourteen years, and town clerk nine years. He lived on the homestead, where his grandson Moses now resides.

In 1848, Thomas T. Merrill, Stephen Patten, Jonathan B. Sargent and their associates were incorporated, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars, under the name of the West Amesbury Manufacturing Company, for the manufacture of carriages and doors and blinds. The first meeting of the company was held June 1, 1848, and Joshua Colby, Stephen Patten, Jonathan B. Sargent, Alfred E. Goodwin and Thomas T. Merrill were chosen directors, and the capital was fixed at eight thousand dollars. Alfred E. Goodwin was chosen treasurer, and on the 10th of June Jonathan B. Sargent was chosen president by the directors. Thomas T. Merrill was appointed manufacturing agent, and held the position until his death, in 1871. The company was engaged exclusively in the manufacture of carriage wheels until they added that of carriage gears, under the charge of John S. Foster. The company has carried on an extensive business, increasing its capital stock until it now amounts to forty thousand two hundred and fifty dollars. Its present officers are Frederick Nichols president, S. S. Blodget treasurer, and M. S. Cobbs manufacturing agent.

In 1850 two fire-engines were bought by the town—one for South Amesbury and one for West Amesbury. In October of the year previous the house of William Chase, at the river, had been burned, and the town became alarmed at its want of fire apparatus.

The present Fire Department of Merrimac was organized in 1884, and is now under the direction of Edward H. Sargent, chief engineer; H. S. Stevens, first assistant; and Albert Parker, second assistant. The apparatus of the department consists of one steamer, "Niagara," third size, built in Manchester, N. H., in 1883, with twenty men—and W. H. Blodgett, engineer; one Howard & Davis hand-engine, first class, built in 1850, with thirty men; one Gleason & Bailey hand-engine, first class, with thirty men; one hook-and-ladder truck, with fifteen men; two thousand feet of hose, and two engine-houses, one at the Centre and one at Merrimacport.

In 1851 several new streets were accepted by the town, one from near the land of Humphrey Nichols to the wheel factory at Cobler's Brook, one near the residence of William H. Haskell and one at the River Village from the house of Ephraim Goodwin to that of Charles L. Rowell. In 1854 a new road was located from the New Hampshire line to the Merrimac River, to avoid the sharp hill at the west end of Bear Hill.

In 1857 a post-office was established at the River Village, and Ebenezer Fullington was appointed postmaster. The present postmaster is William H. Colby, who was appointed by the present administration and succeeded Charles E. Rowell. In 1859 a piece of new road was built at Patten's Creek, connecting the river road with the middle road, which was the means of discontinuing the old bridge.

In July, 1861, Capt. Joseph W. Sargent, of the West Parish, raised a company which was mustered into the United States service and formed Company E of the Fourteenth Regiment. The members of the company were,—

Benjamin C. Atkinson.
Webster Allen.
Benjamin Baxter.
Richard S Bailey.
George Brown.
Henry F. Badger.
Lewis P. Caldwell.
George W. Clark.
Charles W. Currier.
William Crane.
Augustus Cunningham.
Warren Cowdry.
Andrew F. Chaples.
Emmons B. Christian.
Patrick O'Connell.
Edward Cartier.
Wm. L. Dorsett.
Henry N. Dyke.
John Doherty.
Terence Dorsey.
Edwin Follansbee.
Ezekiel Fowler.
Wm. P. Foster.
George F. Foss.
Mathew Fitzgerald.
Charles L. Flanders.
Frank E Griswold.
George W Grant.
John B. Gray.
Wm. M. Hamilton.
John Handley.
Charles Kennett.
Timothy R. Leary.
Peter Liberty.
Wm. F. Martins.
Henry McQuestion.
Charles E. Osgood.
Elbridge A. Ring.
James Ross.
Alexander Smart.
Warren Spear.
Wm. G. Thompson.
Elmer S. Harris.
John Hawksworth.
Frederick B. Kellogg
George F. Little.
Charles S. Lunt.
Joseph Liberty.
John T. Merrill.
John McNanie.
Allen Osgood.
John S. Runnells.
Gustavus D. Sargent
Nathaniel I. Spofford.
Jesse M. Scott.

During a larger part of the war the Fourteenth Regiment was stationed near Washington, and was finally changed to the Second Heavy Artillery. B. C. Atkinson was promoted to be first lieutenant May 28, 1862, and captain October 8, 1864. Henry F. Badger died of fever at Fort Albany, February 2, 1862. Lewis P. Caldwell was promoted to be second lieutenant May 28, 1862; to first lieutenant July 26, 1863, and died of wounds June 17, 1864. William L. Dorsett was promoted to sergeant and died at Annapolis, Md., December 8, 1864, from the effects of starvation in a Confederate prison. Edwin Follansbee was made corporal, and Sergeant William S. Foster became corporal. Charles L. Flanders was taken prisoner and died. William M. Hamilton became second lieutenant August 14, 1863. George F. Little became sergeant and William F. Martin became captain—was taken prisoner at Winchester and lost a leg. Charles E. Osgood became second lieutenant and was severely wounded. Allen Osgood was confined in Andersonville Prison ten months. Eldridge A. Ring was corporal and was promoted to sergeant. John S. Runnels was made quartermaster-sergeant and died September 18, 1863, at Fort Whipple. James Ross and Gustavus D. Sargent were prisoners at Andersonville. Alexander Smart became second lieutenant and William G. Thompson became second lieutenant June 18, 1862, and captain June 1, 1864, and died of wounds May 20, 1864. Capt. J. W. Sargent resigned his command December 24, 1863, on account of ill health. When his company left Washington it joined the Army of the Potomac at Petersburg, and was there engaged in the various attacks on the enemy's works. Some were wounded and several taken prisoners, and many re-enlisted and served through the war. In 1863 a draft was ordered of eighty-eight men, and thirty of these were men of the West Parish.

In February, 1864, the First National Bank of Amesbury was organized with a capital of fifty thousand dollars, and its name was changed by act of Congress December 27, 1876, to the "First National Bank of Merrimac." Its charter was renewed February 24, 1883. In June, 1864, its capital was increased to seventy-five thousand dollars; in October, 1864, to one hundred thousand dollars; in June, 1872, to one hundred and fifty thousand dollars; and in May, 1875, to two hundred thousand dollars. Its original directors were Patten Sargent, Thomas T. Merrill, John S. Poyen, Benjamin F. Sargent and William Gunnison. The present directors are William H. Haskell, president; William P. Sargent, J. A. Lancaster, John B. Judkins, Albert Sargent and Isaac B. Little. Patten Sargent was the first president, and was followed in 1871 by the present president, William H. Haskell, who had been cashier from 1864 to 1869. John L. Pearson was appointed cashier January 12, 1869, and was followed by the present incumbent, Daniel J. Poore, in May, 1874. The bank has always been well managed, and though it has paid to its stockholders an average annual dividend of 8.45 per cent., it has a surplus of fifty thousand dollars.

The Merrimac Savings Bank was incorporated in 1871 as the Amesbury Savings Bank, and received its present name under an act of the Legislature passed in 1877. Its original officers were John S. Poyen, president; John P. Sargent, Isaac B. Little and J. B. Judkins, vice-presidents; treasurer, Wm. H. Haskell; secretary, James D. Pike; and A. E. Goodwin, Wm. Gunnison, Thomas C. Sawyer, A. B. Morse, James D. Pike, W. H. Haskell, John Cleary, Albert Sargent, M. G. Clement, J. Warren Sargent, B. F. Sargent and J. A. Lancaster, trustees. Its present officers are Wm. H. Haskell, president; Daniel J. Poore, treasurer; O. E. Little, secretary; Isaac B. Little, J. B. Judkins and John Cleary, vice-presidents; and Wm. H. Haskell, John Cleary, J. A. Lancaster, M. G. Clement, George G. Larkin, George E. Ricker, B. F. Sargent, Isaac B. Little, A. B. Morse, G. O. Goodwin, L. C. Loud, Albert Sargent, J. B. Judkins, James D. Pike, D. J. Poore and H. O. Delano, trustees. This bank has never lost a dollar, and has paid regular dividends averaging 5.04 per cent.

On the 8th of May, 1868, the West Amesbury Branch Railroad Company was incorporated with a capital of one hundred and fourteen thousand dollars. It was opened in 1872, and leased to the Boston and Maine Railroad Company for ninety-nine years from January 1, 1873.

In 1878 the street from the estate of George W. Currier to that of Mrs. Little, on the hill, was opened as a highway.

In 1876 the town of Merrimac was incorporated. It is unnecessary to recount the successive steps which led to this important event. The act of incorporation was approved by the Governor on the 11th of April, and a warrant for a town-meeting on the 20th was issued by James D. Pike and served by Thomas B. Patten for the purpose of choosing town officers. The meeting was held on Thursday, the 20th, in pursuance of the warrant, at Mechanics' Hall, and called to order by Mr. Pike, by whom the warrant had been issued. Joseph W. Sargent was chosen moderator, and Bailey Sargent town clerk. The selectmen chosen were Wm. H. Haskell, S. S. Blodgett, Alexander Smart. The selectmen, with James D. Pike and E. M. Morse added, were chosen a committee to confer with the town of Amesbury respecting a division of town property, and to adjust all matters between the two towns. At a meeting held on the 27th of April the same committee were authorized to survey and establish a line between Amesbury and Merrimac, and the selectmen were directed to draw up a code of by-laws and report at the next annual meeting.

The selectmen chosen each year since 1876 have been as follows:

1877. S. S. Blodgett.
E. N. Sargent.
J. S. Clement.
1878. Same.
1879. E. N. Sargent.
C. E. Rowell
C. F. Seavey.
1880. E. N. Sargent.
C. E. Rowell.
Albert Sargent.
1881 E. N. Sargent
Albert Sargent.
Phineas Chase.
1882. Albert Sargent.
1882. Phineas Chase.
John Cleary.
1883. Same.
1884. E. N. Sargent.
Wm. H. Colby.
J. E. Currier.
1885. E. M. Morse.
Wm. H. Colby.
J. E. Currier.
1886. Same.
1887. E. M. Morse.
C. E. Rowell.
N. P. Cummings.

Before the incorporation of the town William P. Sargent, of Boston, a son of Patten Sargent and a native of West Amesbury, had promised the new town, in case of its incorporation, the gift of a town-house. Indeed, this prospective gift did much towards smoothing the way towards the formation of a new town. After the incorporation Mr. Sargent at once communicated his intention to the town, and at a meeting held on the 27th of April, 1876, the selectmen were constituted a committee to confer with him on the subject. The result was that the lot on the corner of Main and School Streets was bought and presented to the town by William H. Haskell, A. E. Goodwin, John S. Poyen, William Gunnison and Moses G. Clement, and the corner-stone of the hall was laid on the 27th of July. On the 13th of November it was dedicated under the name of "Sargent's Hall," completely finished and bearing a clock on its tower, presented by Patten Sargent, a native resident of the town. The cost of the land was about five thousand dollars, and that of the building about twenty thousand dollars. At a town-meeting held on the 27th of November, 1876, it was voted to purchase for the sum of two thousand five hundred dollars the lot of land, with the buildings thereon, owned by J. S. Poyen, northerly of the town-house, and to accept the offer from Colonel Joshua Colby to give to the town the land between the town-house and the above lot.

At a meeting held on the 21st of August, 1876, a communication from Dr. J. R. Nichols was read, offering a gift of one thousand volumes as the basis of a public library. The town accepted the gift, and, after voting to establish a public library, chose Patten Sargent, J. A. Lancaster, J. S. Poyen, William Chase, William H. Haskell and Dr. J. R. Nichols, trustees. On the 10th of May, 1877, the library was formally opened on the first floor of Sargent's Hall, a part of which it occupies, the remainder being occupied by the post-office, the National Bank and a [illegible] store. Valuable contributions have been made, from time to time, by various citizens, and in 1882 the sum of two hundred dollars was presented by A. E. Goodwin, the income from which is devoted to the purchase of books. The town also makes an annual appropriation of money for the support of the library, and at the present time its shelves contain nearly four thousand volumes.

In addition to the thanks of the town presented to William P. Sargent for his gift of the Town Hall, the selectmen were instructed in 1877 to cause a tablet to be placed in the vestibule of the building, commemorative of its donor, and in 1882 the sum of three hundred dollars was appropriated to procure his portrait. Among other gifts to the town was one made in 1883 by J. A. Lancaster of a lot of land for a cemetery.

Besides those institutions to which reference has been made, there are others in Merrimac worthy of mention. The Bethany Lodge of Masons was instituted December 30th, A. L. 5869. Its present Worthy Master is William F. Ward, and its Past Masters have been Morton B. Merrill, Frank Wiggin, Ora O. Little, Frederick M. Chase, Elbridge C. Sawyer, Alexander Smart, Ralph H. Sargent and M. Perry Sargent.

The Riverside Lodge, No. 174, of Odd Fellows was instituted December 3, 1875. On the 11th of May, 1887, the lodge dedicated a new lodge-room in the new building of J. S. Poyen & Co., and furnished it at an expense of two thousand dollars. Since its organization it has received from initiations, dues and interest $10,421.63, and paid in sick benefits to its members twelve hundred and thirty-one dollars, in funeral benefits three hundred and fifty dollars, in relief to its members two hundred and sixteen dollars. It has at the present time one hundred and forty members, and the present Noble Grand is F. B. Follansbee.

The Colonel C. R. Mudge Post 114, of the Grand Army of the Republic, was organized December 20, 1869, under the command of Alexander Smart. Its Past Commanders have been, besides Captain Smart, M. B. Townsend, R. G. W. Foster, Ezra Hale, D. L. Getchell, C. J. Churchill, H. M. Howe, A. J. Sawyer, George A. Grant and Charles O. Roberts. Its present Commander is M. P. Brew.

The Young Men's Christian Association was organized January 19, 1867. It has a free reading-room, and prayer-meetings are held at the rooms of the association every Sabbath evening. Its present officers are Walter S. Williams, president; Wilbur E. Alton, secretary, and Charles Wilder, treasurer.

The Merrimac Branch, No. 326, of the Irish National League of America, was organized August 13, 1883, with thirty members and the following officers: Joseph P. Connor, president; Michael Collins, vice-president; Michael Burns, secretary; John Shehan, treasurer, and Daniel Sullivan, collector. At present it has twenty-five members and the following officers: Augustin O'Connell, president; Michael Burns, vice-president; Joseph P. Connor, secretary; Cornelius Murphy, treasurer, and John Shehan, collector.

The Colonel C. R. Mudge Ladies' Relief Corps, No. 24, was organized in December, 1882. Its officers are Mrs. Clara Howe, president; Miss Lena Sherman, secretary, and Mrs. Lydia Sargent, treasurer.

Besides these associations, there are the Monomac Council of the American Legion of Honor, organized May 10, 1882, T. Hayden Patten, Commander; the Attitash Colony of Pilgrim Fathers, organized October 11, 1881, A. J. Scott, Governor; the Good Templars; the Sons of Temperance, organized February 24, 1882; and the Cadets of Temperance, organized in September, 1887.

Merrimac, at the time of its incorporation, was assigned to the Eighteenth Representative District of Essex County, with West Newbury, Salisbury and Amesbury. In 1876 Frederick Merrill, of Salisbury, and Orlando S. Bailey, of Amesbury, were chosen to represent the district.

1877. James D. Pike, of Merrimac; Samuel Coffin, of Salisbury.
1878. Orin Warren, of West Newbury; Albert S. Adams, of Amesbury.
1879. Elias P. Collins, of Salisbury; William Smeath, of Amesbury.
1880. Richard Newell, of West Newbury; Benjamin L. Fifield, of Salisbury.
1881. Oliver A. Roberts, of Salisbury; Albert Sargent, of Merrimac.
1882. Marquis D. F. Steere, of Amesbury; David L. Ambrose, of West Newbury.
1883. John L. Cilley, of Salisbury; John B. Judkins, of Merrimac.
1884 Alexander M. Huntington, of Amesbury; Moses C. Smith, of West Newbury.
1885. Hiram Walker, of Salisbury; George O. Goodwin, of Merrimac.
1886. Alexander Smart, of Merrimac; John H. Pousland, of Amesbury.

In 1886 the same towns constituted District No. 1.

At the last election in November, 1887, James D. Pike, of Merrimac, was chosen Senator from the Fourth Senatorial District of Essex County, composed of Amesbury, Haverhill, Merrimac, Salisbury and Wards Three, Four, Five and Six of Newburyport, and containing at the last apportionment 10,836 voters.

The manufacturing interests of Merrimac are considerable and its manufacturers are active and prosperous. In the early days of Amesbury, agriculture engaged the attention of its people, but in time sawmills were built, the salmon and sturgeon and shad in the river were caught and sent to various markets, and ship-building was carried on to a limited extent in the West Parish. At what is now Merrimacport brick-making was carried on at an early date by the Curriers and Presseys and Sawyers and Pattens and Sargents, and a trade with the West Indies of no inconsiderable extent was engaged in, this place being a distributing place for sugar and molasses among the adjoining and more distant towns. The manufacture of earthenware was begun at the Port as early as 1790, and at a later date James Chase took up the business, which his son Phineas has carried on since his day. Smith Sargent was also, about the year 1825, engaged in the business. The business of coopering was also carried on at the Port at one time with activity, and about the year 1827 a tannery and currying establishment was built there by Jacob Gove, and carried on under the firm-name of Gove, Clough & Rowell. In 1866 the South Amesbury Wharf Company was formed, at what is now Merrimacport, and the coal business started by S. S. Blodgett has become an extensive one.

The Bay State Felt Boot and Shoe Company, organized to manufacture felt boots and shoes by a patent process, was incorporated in 1883 and established in Merrimac, September 15, 1885, with a capital of twenty thousand dollars. The officers are Theophilus King, of Quincy, president; James D. Pike, treasurer; James Brandy, superintendent; and Theophilus King, Elbridge M. Morse, Moses G. Clement, Charles Bryant and James D. Pike, directors. The producing capacity of this company is twelve thousand cases per year, valued at one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The goods find their markets principally in the Western States and in Maine, New Hampshire and Vermont. The demand for these boots and shoes increases yearly in the States where the winters are severe and there is much exposure to snow and cold.

The manufacture of carriages, upon which the prosperity of Merrimac chiefly depends, was begun early in the century by Michael Emery, of West Newbury, who learned his trade in Newburyport. At one time Newbury and West Newbury were considerably engaged in the business, but in some unaccountable way their industries gradually drifted across the river to Amesbury, and finally disappeared. Since the days of Michael Emery the business at Merrimac has been carried on by a large number of enterprising men. Among these may be mentioned the following, who have either died or retired: Joseph Sargent, Patten Sargent, Willis Patten, Joshua Sargent, Jr., John Sargent, Jr., Wm. Gunnison, Ephraim Goodwin, Moses Clement, Francis Smiley, Francis Pressey, Nicholas Sargent, S. S. Tuckwell, William P. Sargent, Edmund Whittier, Stephen R. Sargent, Stephen Bailey, Edmund Sargent, William Nichols, John Sargent, Jonathan B. Sargent, Frederick A. Sargent, Wm. H. Haskell, John Little, Joshua Colby, James Nichols, Wm. Johnson, Caleb Mitchell, Cyrus Sargent, Alfred E. Goodwin, Francis Sargent, O. H. Sargent, James H. Harlow, Stephen Patten, Eben S. Fullington, Joseph W. Sargent, John S. Poyen, Charles H. Palmer, Isaac Jones, Wm. Smiley, Thomas E. Poyen, George F. Clough, Isaac B. Little, George G. Larkin, Thomas B. Patten, Amos T. Small, A. M. Waterhouse and Thomas Nelson. The number of carriages, with their value, manufactured annually by those at present in the business, is as follows:

George Adams & Sons began business in 1857; number of carriages, 200; sleighs, 100; value, $35,000; men employed, 18.

Moses G. Clement & Son began business in 1849; carriages, 200; sleighs, 60; value, $45,000; men employed, 19.

C. E. Gunnison & Co. began business in 1879; carriages, 250; men employed, 20; value, $35,000.

H. M. Howe (late Howe & Clough) began in 1879; carriages, 75; value, $20,000; men employed, 15.

J. A. Lancaster & Co. began in 1858; carriages, 125; sleighs, 112; value, $70,000; men employed, 30.

Loud Brothers began in 1866; carriages, 200; sleighs, 125; value, $82,000; men employed 32.

C. H. Noyes & Son began in 1845; carriages, 90; value, $18,000; men employed, 10.

Daniel M. Means began in 1881; carriages, 75; sleighs, 15; value, $15,000; men employed, 12.

Samuel Schofield & Son began in 1879; carriages, 75; value, $18,000; men employed, 11.

S. C. Pease & Sons began in 1861; carriages, 300; value, $100,000; men employed, 42.

Palmer & Doucet began in 1873; carriages, 175; value, $75,000; men employed, 50.

Clement & Young began in 1884; carriages, 75; value, $18,000; men employed, 12.

Wm. O. Smiley began in 1882; carriages, 75; value, $12,000; men employed, 8.

John B. Judkins & Son began in 1857; carriages, 200; value, $80,000; men employed, 50.

H. G. & H. W. Stevens began in 1869; carriages, 415; carriages repaired, 600; value, $185,000; men employed, 100.

IN MERRIMACPORT.

Wm. Chase & Sons began in 1838; carriages, 50; sleighs, 10; value, $15,000; men employed, 11.

A. M. Colby began in 1868; carriages, 150; sleighs, 40; value, $30,000; men employed, 19.

George Gunnison began in 1882; carriages, 50; value, $9000; men employed, 7.

Willis P. Sargent began in 1854; carriages, 40; value, $6000; men employed, 3.

Merrimac may be said to be almost exclusively a carriage town, and as such has won an enviable reputation both for the style and quality of its work and for the enterprise and business integrity of its manufacturers. The styles of work done take a wide range, from the coach and landau and coupe to the less pretentious road-wagon and sleigh. Different manufacturers produce different classes of work, and almost every one has something in style or quality peculiarly his own. In the early history of the carriage business there were no shops in which a complete carriage was built. The business was carried on by an interchange of parts, one shop making bodies, another gears, another doing the iron-work, and another the trimming and painting. By this interchange of parts the carriages were constructed, and there are those still living who began the business in this way.

The manufacture of carriage-bodies and the wood-work of sleighs has always continued a business to be carried on to a considerable extent by itself, and now employs a large number of men. Among the first shops where this special business has been carried on were those of John Clement, Job Hoyt and Lemuel Belknap, all of whom began about 1820. It is now carried on by Gilman S. Hoyt, Melvin Clement, Joseph W. Nichols, Edward B. Sargent, Charles E. Pierce, Arthur Nichols, Wm. H. Colby and N. J. Spofford, the last two of whom are established at Merrimacport.

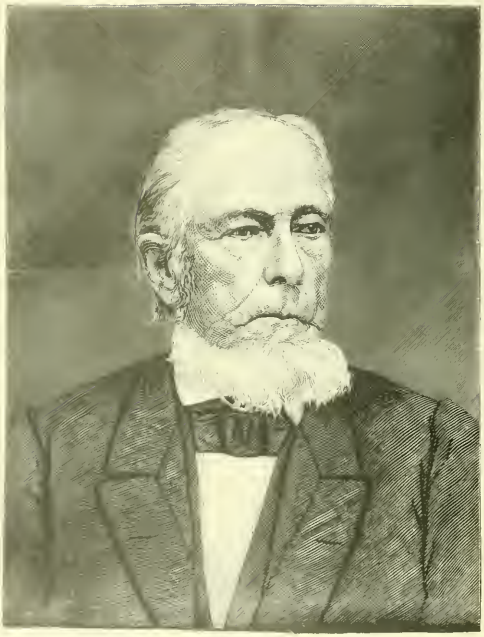
The first application of machinery to the manufacture of carriage gears was made by John S. Foster, who was for several years connected with the West Amesbury Manufacturing Company, subsequently building a factory for the prosecution of that business, in connection with sawing and planing and general job work. In 1867 he formed a partnership with Henry M. Howe, for the manufacture of wheels. Their factory was burned February 15, 1870, and rebuilt and reoccupied in forty-nine days. In 1871 John Cleary became a member of the firm, and in 1879 George S. Prescott became connected with Mr. Foster, under the firm-name of Foster & Prescott. The product of their business was from four to five thousand sets of wheels annually, with other carriage parts. Their mill was burned February 17, 1882, and their business was not resumed.

In connection with the main business of carriage-building there are establishments engaged in the manufacture of special parts of carriages. The Merrimac Manufacturing Company, incorporated in 1848, has already been referred to, and is extensively employed in the manufacture of wheels and gears. There are other establishments engaged in the manufacture of different parts of carriages, among which are those of George B. Patten for carriage bows, and John H. Murphy and Alden B. Morse for silver-plating. The houses of J. S. Poyen & Co. and Little & Larkin are large importers and dealers in carriage materials. They have been established many years, and are doing an extensive business in addition to their home trade, selling largely to manufacturers in other places, their aggregate sales amounting to nearly a million of dollars.

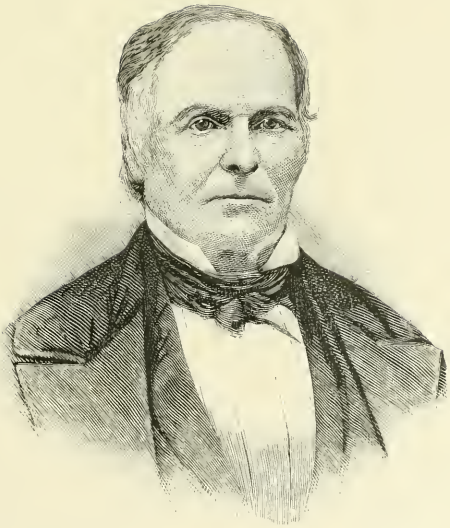
There are four halls in the town,—the Mechanics' Hall, fitted with a stage and appliances for dramatic performances; the Town Hall, called Sargent Hall; the Coliseum Hall, leased to the Army Post, and Citizens' Hall at Merrimacport.

In the autumn of 1882 George W. Currier began the publication of a weekly newspaper called the *Merrimac Enterprise*, the issue of which was continued by him until February 1884, when he sold the establishment to D. J. Poore and James D. Pike. These gentlemen bought at the same time the material of the *Merrimac Reporter*, which, after a short career, had been discontinued. They continued the publication of the *Enterprise* until April, 1884, when they established the *Merrimac Budget*, and as editors and proprietors continued its publication until April, 1885, with an increasing subscription list and a good job printing business in connection with it. At the last date they sold the establishment to Charles A. King, formerly of the *Milford Gazette*, and the *Budget* is now conducted by him as its editor and publisher.

The manufacture of boots and shoes was at one time



John S Morse



Wm. Nichols.

carried on in Merrimac to a limited extent. Moses Goodrich and Charles Sargent were engaged in the manufacture of boots, and Stephen Clement and James B. Hoyt in that of shoes. Some of these, however, are now dead and only a remnant of the old business remains.

Among those connected with the industries of the town may be mentioned George S Prescott, who has been for some years engaged in the setting up of lightning-rods in conformity with scientific inventions and discoveries of his own relating to the connection of electric currents with water courses.

The population of Amesbury in 1875, the year before the incorporation of Merrimac, was 5987; according to the next census, in 1880, it was 3355, and in 1885, 4403. In 1880 the population of Merrimac was 2237, and in 1885, 2378. The valuation of Amesbury in 1875, the year before the incorporation of Merrimac, was $2,331,694.62, and in 1876, $1,802.007. In 1886 it had increased to $1,864,101. In 1876 that of Merrimac was $968,845, and had increased in 1886 to $1,204,136.

Merrimac is well supplied with professional men and traders in the various branches of business too numerous to mention. It has a good hotel, well kept, and with its increasing prosperity is destined to have a larger growth.

NOTE.—The writer acknowledges the great assistance in the preparation of the sketch of Merrimac which he has received from manuscript notes prepared by Joseph Merrill, Esq., of Amesbury, and Hon. James D. Pike, of Merrimac.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

JOHN S. MORSE.

John Sargent Morse, son of John and Patience Sargent Morse, was born March 16, 1780, in that part of Amesbury now incorporated as the town of Merrimac. He was a descendant of Anthony Morse, who was born in Marlborough, Wiltshire, England, May 6, 1606, and emigrated to this country in the ship "James," arriving in Boston June 3, 1635, settling in "Ould Newbury" the same year.

The house in which John S. Morse was born was one of the most substantial structures of the earlier days of New England, and was considered an old house when purchased by his grandfather, Benjamin Morse, in 1728. Although a new and more commodious house was erected near by John S. Morse in his later years (now occupied by his grandson, Edward W. Morse), the old building is still standing in a fair state of preservation. It is now unoccupied, but is kept as a memento of olden time, and still contains the furniture of the past, including the loom, spinning-wheels and other implements of household industry.

The earlier years of John S. Morse were devoted to the usual employment of a New England boy on the farm and to teaching the district school in the winter. This he continued for such a length of time that his later pupils were in many cases the children of his earlier ones.

Early in life he was appointed a justice of the peace, and as administrator or executor settled a large number of estates.

In the surveying of land he had much experience, and his tenacious memory and good judgment were relied upon as almost infallible in fixing boundaries.

He was many times elected one of the selectmen of Amesbury, and always performed his duties with the strictest fidelity. He was also town treasurer and collector. In 1820 he was a member of the State Constitutional Convention. He was appointed inspector of customs at Newburyport by President Jackson, and served eight years in that capacity.

In 1806 he married Judith Weed, daughter of Ephraim and Judith Goodwin Weed.

A man of remarkable calmness and serenity, conscientious and temperate in all things, he had great influence in the community where his long life was passed.

Two children survive him,—Ephraim Weed Morse of San Diego, Cal., and Sally Maria, wife of Philip J. Neal, of Merrimac.

Ephraim W. Morse sailed from Boston, February 4, 1849, in the ship "Leonora" for San Francisco. He returned in 1851, remaining until 1853, when he returned to San Diego, which place he has since made his home. About twenty years ago he made large purchases of land in the vicinity, which has since greatly increased in value. In 1852 he married Lydia Ann Gray, of Amesbury, by whom he had one son, Edward W., who now occupies the old homestead upon Bear Hill in Merrimac. His second wife was Mary Chase Walker, a teacher in San Diego, and formerly of Manchester, N. H.

HON. WILLIAM NICHOLS.

Hon. William Nichols was born August 26, 1787. Concerning the early history of the family we may fittingly use Mr. Nichols' own records:

"From the best evidence which I am able to obtain, I find that about the year 1700 our ancestor, Jno. Nichols, lived in a house standing on the north bank of the Merrimac River, in Amesbury, near where Nichols' Creek discharges its waters into the Merrimac. The Amesbury records inform us that he married Abigail Sargent, of Gloucester, December 17, 1701. Tradition says they had twelve sons and three daughters. That their birth took place in the following order: Their first-born was a daughter, they then had six sons in succession, then another daughter, then six sons in succession, and then closed with another daughter, and the town records go far in corroboration of this."

Humphrey, the tenth child and eighth son, from whom many of the Nichols family now residing in the town are descended, was born April 12, 1723, and married Dorothy Hunt, July 10, 1746. Their children were Elizabeth, Hopstill, Hezekiah, Abigail, Humphrey and Sarah. The son Hezekiah was born August 9, 1752, and married Hannah Colby, January 3, 1775, and moved to Newbury, or what is now Newburyport, near what is called "The Laurels," where his son William was born.

In 1796 the family removed to West Amesbury, to a house on Bear Hill, and subsequently to a house near the Upper "Corner."

In 1814 Wm. Nichols was married to Rhoda Sargent, daughter of Moses and Dolly Sargent, of the same town, and from that time till his death lived at the homestead of the "Moulton Farm," which he had purchased in the spring of the same year.

In 1822 he purchased the farm adjoining his own, known as the "Merrill Farm," which contained the largest orchard in the town.

Even in these earlier days carriage manufacturing was begun, and Mr. Nichols carried on the business of a silver-plater, and sometimes engaged in the manufacture of a few carriages. As more ornamental work was used then than now, the business of silver-plating was at that time and for many years quite an important adjunct to the manufacture of carriages.

He was appointed lieutenant and afterwards captain in the State militia, and thus gained the title of "Captain Nichols," by which he was familiarly known during his whole life.

In 1826 he received a commission as justice of the peace, which office he continued to hold till within a year of his death. In this capacity he did much work in writing deeds, wills and other legal papers, for which his considerable literary qualifications rendered him peculiarly fitted. He was also a land surveyor, and for many years did much of this work in Amesbury and the surrounding towns.

Mr. Nichols was elected Senator in 1832, an office which has been held by no one else at the west end of the town. He afterwards served on the Board of Selectmen ten years, served on many important committees, and was frequently elected moderator of town-meetings, for which, by his firmness and self-command, he was well adapted.

His first wife died April 6, 1860, of the small-pox, which was then prevalent.

In the later years of his life, having become the possessor of considerable valuable land, the plating business was nearly abandoned and his time was mostly given to farming.

In the fall of 1861 Mr. Nichols married Eliza, widow of Hiram Colby, who still survives.

After a sickness of some duration he died November 30, 1868.

Mr. Nichols was a man of great energy of character, a good knowledge of men and affairs. An able man, fair and generous, his advice was often sought and always given to the best of his ability. United with integrity were good judgment and clear sight, so that he was not unjustly considered the ablest man at the west end of the town.

He had four children, all by his first wife.

Betsey, born May 28, 1816, who was married to Frederick Sargent, September, 1841. Mr. Sargent was one of the pioneers of those engaged in the sale of carriage furnishing goods, a business now carried on to a large extent in Merrimac, which business he successfully conducted until the time of his death, which occurred January 12, 1867, leaving his wife with one daughter, Rhoda E. Sargent. Mrs. Sargent died April 25, 1887, universally esteemed for her many excellent traits of heart and mind.

George W., born May 25, 1817. He was married, July 21, 1853, to Fanny Short, of Newbury. Of their three children,—Laura J. (now Mrs. Geo. N. Goodwin), Mary F. and William G.,—the first two, with Mrs. Nichols, still reside in the old homestead. Geo. W. Nichols was a man of wide, general information, well versed in languages and quite a student of natural history. Well read, he was for many successive terms a member of the School Committee, for years a consistent member of the Universalist Church, and its clerk at the time of his death, October 27, 1884.

Both the other sons of William Nichols—Wm. Francis, born April 18, 1819, and Hezekiah Smith, born February 2, 1826,—died in early manhood, the former aged twenty-one, and the latter nineteen. They were both young men of promise and unusually pure character, and their parents deeply felt their loss.

PATTEN SARGENT.

Patten Sargent was born August 16, 1793, in West Amesbury (now Merrimac). He was the son of Ichabod B. and Ruth Sargent, being the second in a family of eight children. His parents were persons of earnest religious convictions and exemplary Christian life, and sought to train their children in the right way. At the age of sixteen their son Patten left the paternal roof to serve an apprenticeship at the trade of a silver-plater, with Mr. William Johnson, a citizen of the town. At the age of twenty-one when his period of apprenticeship had expired, he spent a short time working at his trade in Newburyport and at the village of West Amesbury. He then resolved to undertake business for himself and establish himself at the River Village in Amesbury (now Merrimacport), where he resided till his death. The carriage manufacturing business, now so large and prosperous in that community, was then in its infancy. Mr. Sargent, on his removal to the River Village, while not at once giving up active labor at his trade as a plater, opened a store for groceries, family supplies, etc., and also for carriage hardware and trimmings. He soon found it expedient to en-



Peaton Sargent



J. J. Merrill



James B. Taggart

tirely relinquish labor at his trade and gave himself wholly to his store, and to dealing in carriages. He continued thus in active business as a trader till about the year 1850, when, having acquired what he deemed a competence, he retired from business. His business career was characterized by industry, energy, good judgment and strict integrity. In financial transactions his honesty and truthfulness could always be depended upon, and to all who knew him his word was as good as his bond. He was kind-hearted and sympathic in his feelings, though not demonstrative. He was modest and unpretentious in his bearing, courteous and respectful towards all classes of people and careful in speech concerning the character and conduct of others, his tongue never being that of a backbiter. And yet he was quick in reading the characters of those with whom he had to do. His tastes and habits were simple and frugal and he had no fondness for ostentatious display. He won to an unusual degree the respect and confidence of all. His fellow-townsmen three times elected him their Representative to the General Court. At the organization of the Powow River Bank in Salisbury, in 1836, he was made a member of its board of directors, and at the incorporation of the National Bank in Merrimac, in 1864, he was chosen its first president, a position which advancing age led him to resign in 1872. His life was prolonged to the advanced age of ninety years, his death occurring at Merrimacport, August 17, 1883. He was twice married; his first marriage, which took place January 14, 1819, was to Miss Dolly, daughter of Moses and Dolly Sargent, of West Amesbury. His second marriage, March 4, 1832, was to Miss Betsey, daughter of Robert and Rhoda Patten, of Amesbury. He had six children, all by his first wife. Three—Henry, Laura J. (wife of D. H. Bradley, Esq., of Malden) and Dolly—died during their father's lifetime. Three still survive—William P., head of the late firm of William P. Sargent & Co. carriage manufacturers and dealers of Boston; Sarah, wife of Rev. Albert Paine, of Boston Highlands; and Emily, wife of George O. Goodwin, Esq., of Merrimacport.

THOMAS T. MERRILL.

Thomas T. Merrill was the son of Parker and Betsy Merrill. He was born in South Hampton, N. H., August 19, 1797. He was a direct descendent from the French Huguenots; original name, De-Merle; was the eldest child of a family of four, viz.: Thomas True, William, Betsy and Amos. Like the majority of country boys, he had but limited advantages for an education, yet he improved every opportunity, and when quite young was considered an excellent scholar, especially in mathematics; he taught school very successfully for several years during the winter months in different towns in New Hampshire; in summer worked at his trade of carpenter. He moved to West Amesbury (now Merrimac) in 1838; here he purchased a large farm. At the same time he was engaged in the duties his farm required, he was pursuing his trade, erecting many houses in West Amesbury and vicinity, also Lawrence; he erected the first house in Lawrence, Mass. In 1848 Mr. Merrill, in company with others, established the West Amesbury Wheel Company, and was its agent until his death, which occurred very suddenly, July 12, 1871. He was a strong churchman, and, with his wife, Oliva, united with the Rocky Hill Church in 1832; was very positive in his nature, benevolent, yet prudent, of strong will-power and individuality, with very decided views. In early life he was a strong Whig, later a stanch Republican; no office-seeker, yet he worked hard for his party. He was largely identified with the religious and business prosperity of the place. He was chosen one of the directors of the First National Bank of West Amesbury at its organization, in 1864, which position he held until his death. Prompt to act, a good adviser and a generous giver, he might well be called the unfortunate man's friend. A leader in every good cause, his death was mourned as a public calamity.

He was twice married—his first wife, Oliva, daughter of John and Polly Merrill, died September 30, 1842. By this marriage he had seven children,—Elizabeth J., Joseph T., John F., Emily A., Mary O., Helen A. and Calvin A. (Elizabeth and Calvin deceased.) His second wife, Hannah, who still survives him, was the daughter of Sallie and Edmond Nichols. By his second marriage he had two children,—Lucy M. and Francis S. Mr. Merrill lived to see all his children well married and occupying honorable positions in life. At the time of his death he left twenty grandchildren.

JONATHAN BAILEY SARGENT.

Jonathan Bailey Sargent, son of Ichabod B. and Ruth (Patten) Sargent, was born July 3, 1798. He married Sarah E. Nichols May 22, 1822, and had nine children. Mr. Sargent received a common-school education, and at an early age was apprenticed to Willis Patten (at the River Village), who was a blacksmith. After learning his trade (and previous to his marriage) he set up in business for himself, and shortly after commenced manufacturing carriage-axles, to which he subsequently added carriage-springs.

He was for a number of years an extensive builder of carriages, and was the originator of what has long been known as the half-patent-axle, which is still used more extensively than any other.

Having carried on the manufacture of axles and springs successfully for a number of years, he disposed of this business to the West Amesbury Spring and Axle Company.

Mr. Sargent was a man of marked individuality

and strong convictions, and one of the leading men of West Amesbury, and all religious, educational and other measures tending to advance the interest of his town found in him an able advocate. He represented his town in the General Court in 1850 and '52, and served as selectman several years. He was always largely interested in horticulture, and it would be difficult to say whether he derived the greatest satisfaction from his labors in the orchard and garden, or in distributing their products among his neighbors and friends.

In religion he was a pronounced Universalist, and his house was a home for the clergy of that denomination. Mr. Sargent was a great reader, and probably possessed a greater fund of general information than any other man in the town. His opinion and advice were sought for by all classes in matters of business. He died August 11, 1882.

Edmund N. and Bailey Sargent, sons of the subject of this sketch, were brought up in business with their father. Bailey was the first treasurer of the West Amesbury Spring and Axle Company, after this company had purchased the spring and axle business of his father. He has filled several offices of trust in his town, such as postmaster; also selectman in 1869 and '70, treasurer and collector in 1879 and town clerk, treasurer and collector of Merrimac since its incorporation, in 1876. He also served in the late Rebellion, enlisting in the Massachusetts Second Heavy Artillery, and was first lieutenant at the close of the war.

Edmund N., who died February 10, 1887, was agent of the West Amesbury Manufacturing Company from October, 1884, until his death. He also held many offices of trust in his native town.

The commission of Postmaster, held by Bailey from 1861 to 1863, was, upon his resignation, reissued to his sister Jane, who served as postmistress until April, 1866.

Ruth, the oldest daughter, married G. G. Strickland, a Universalist clergyman, and was settled in Amesbury and Merrimac for several years, and afterwards in Saco, Me.

DR. BENJAMIN ATKINSON.

Dr. Benjamin Atkinson was born in Minot, Maine, January 29, 1806, and at the age of twenty-five he established himself as a physician in West Amesbury. He was one of eleven children, three having studied medicine and one law. He married, December 1, 1831, a daughter of Dr. Seth Chandler, of Minot, Maine—Rhoda Wadsworth Chandler, whose graceful presence will long be remembered by her many friends.

Dr. Atkinson, having settled in the village in its infancy, closely allied himself with its varied interests, both moral and educational. On his thirtieth birthday he was chosen a deacon in the Orthodox Congregational Church, serving until his death.

He was instrumental in procuring for successive seasons the most distinguished men of the time as lecturers in the village, always entertaining them at his own house.

I know of no more fitting tribute to his memory than the following lines, written by his pastor, the Rev. Leander Thompson: "How well he performed the duties of his laborious and responsible profession, those who have known him longest and best need not be reminded."

If the united testimony of a great number of grateful and attached friends who have experienced his professional kindness can be relied upon, he has been a physician of rare fidelity. Always self-sacrificing, full of sympathy and tenderness, he never spared himself,—so long as he had strength to expend,—and his presence, his noble form, his gentlemanly bearing and his kindly manner always inspired confidence around the bed of sickness, and suggested supporting considerations around the bed of death. And he has ever had in his profession a more than ordinary share of success.

His friends confided in his skill as well as in his kindness. To not a few among us he has been thus for many years what Luke was to Paul and other primitive Christians—"The beloved Physician."

He died October 22, 1861, leaving a wife and three children, his son, Benjamin Chandler Atkinson, having served through the Civil War.

His eldest daughter married John P. Whittier, formerly a prominent carriage manufacturer of Boston. The younger daughter married Edward Taylor (2d), of Andover.

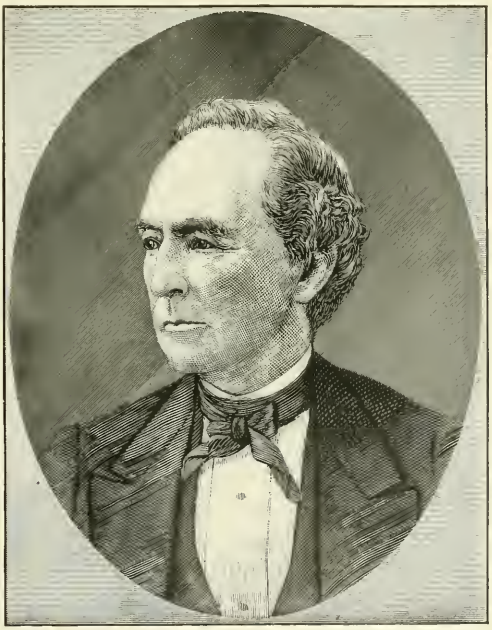
ALFRED E. GOODWIN.

Alfred E. Goodwin was the son of Ephraim and Elizabeth Goodwin, and was born in Amesbury, Mass., October 12, 1807. He was the second child in a family of four, viz: David, Alfred E., Ephraim and Elizabeth. Alfred E. was reared on a farm, and later in life learned the trade of carriage-trimmer with Joseph Sargent. Later he went into business on his own account, manufacturing carriages, until the firm of Goodwin, Sargent & Co. was organized for the sale of carriage findings, groceries and manufacture of shoes. (The firm consisted of A. E. Goodwin, Francis Sargent and Albert Sargent.) Mr. Goodwin remained in this business for a few years, when he became associated with the firm of Sargent, Harlow & Co., becoming the company of this concern, and as such continued for some time, when he entered into partnership with Frederick Sargent. Upon the death of Mr. Sargent, Mr. Goodwin admitted into partnership Albert Sargent. This firm continued until 1880, when they sold out to Little & Larkin.

Mr. Goodwin was one of Amesbury's most honored citizens, and always manifested a deep interest in the town; he was a director in the bank, and deacon in the Congregational Church for forty years. He was



Benj. Harrison



Alfred E. Goodwin



William Gammell

a Republican in politics and represented his town in the Legislature.

His wife was Maria, daughter of Col. Edmund Sargent. They had one child, Alfred N., who died when eight years of age. Mr. Goodwin died of heart-disease, November 1, 1881, aged seventy-four years.

WILLIAM GUNNISON.

William Gunnison was born in Newburyport, Massachusetts, December 11, 1809. Tradition informs us that his ancestry in this country traces back to one Hugh Gunnison (a Swede) who came to America with an English colony in 1832, and settled in Boston. A few years later he, with others, was disarmed for the Hutchinson heresy, and removed to Kittery, Maine, where many of his descendants were born, and among them William Gunnison, grandfather of the William Gunnison mentioned above.

In 1780 he removed to Fishersfield (now Newbury), New Hampshire. A man of great physical endurance, of deep religious principle, firm and unyielding in whatever he considered as the right, he seemed well-fitted as one of the pioneers of a new country.

One of his sons, Joseph, left home at an early age to seek his fortunes elsewhere. He located in Newburyport; married Anna Chase, of Haverhill, Massachusetts. William Gunnison, the second son of Joseph Gunnison, and subject of this sketch, remained at home until twelve years of age, enjoying the limited educational privileges of his native city. His father dying, he went to Newbury, New Hampshire, to live with his grandfather, remaining with him two years working on the farm, and attending school three months each year.

At the age of fourteen he came to West Amesbury (now Merrimac) and apprenticed himself to Ebenezer Fullington for a term of seven years to learn the carriage trade. Faithfully he served the long term of years.

After two or three years as journeyman, he commenced the manufacture of carriages with small capital. Possessed of strong will, indomitable energy, untiring perservance, and with such knowledge of the business as his limited resources, aside from keen observation outside of his apprenticeship, allowed him to acquire, he determined to succeed, and from the lowest round of the ladder worked his way upward, slowly but surely.

December 12, 1833, he married Belinda Hayford, daughter of Nathan Hayford, of Tamworth, New Hampshire, a soldier of the War of 1812. He still made West Amesbury (now Merrimac) his home. Interested in the prosperity of the town and people with whom he had identified himself, he was a willing worker with them to advance its interests.

He continued alone the manufacture of carriages until 1851, when a co-partnership was formed with Mr. William H. Haskell, of Merrimac, and Mr. William P. Sargent, of Boston, and, as a result of hard work and long experience, built up a large business and established an enviable reputation; after ten years the partnership was dissolved.

In 1860, Mr. Gunnison purchased a building lot on Main Street, West Amesbury (now Merrimac), and built a fine residence, which he occupied until his death.

In 1862 he gradually increased his business, by employing small outside concerns to turn out work for him partially finished, which he would complete in his own factory.

During the years between 1862 and 1872 he bought and sold many carriages other than his own manufacture, being unable to meet the demand for his own products. A frequenter of the leading carriage centres, he kept himself fully informed in the line of his business, promptly applying any invention that would add to the utility or elegance of his carriages, thus retaining a front rank as manufacturer.

In 1866–67–68 he gave extensive credits. Seldom, if ever, did he refuse credit to an industrious, honest man. By his genial manners, and the liberal methods by which he conducted his business, he gained the confidence of his patrons, and many of them became his firm friends. In 1874 he removed his business from South to West Amesbury (now Merrimac), and associated with him as partner, Samuel Scofield, his son-in-law, determining to limit his business and take life easier. He enjoyed the fruits of a well-earned competency during the remainder of a long and useful life. Being himself in a measure relieved from the perplexities of business, he took pleasure in assisting many less fortunate than himself. Only those who knew him most intimately were aware of his many kind deeds and acts of friendship. Intensely interested in the organization of the National Bank of Merrimac, he was chosen one of its directors, continuing until his death, which occurred very suddenly, January 2, 1879.

Mr. Gunnison was a man of prepossessing appearance, naturally a good conversationalist. A great reader, well versed in the current topics of the day, and seldom failed to interest. From the resolutions adopted by the Carriage Makers' Convention, of which he was a member, we copy the following: "For over a half a century he has been identified with the carriage trade, and his good works have been so various and important that his long and useful life, recently closed, may be said to form a part of the history of the trade in this country.

"A tribute to his memory: We hold dear the memory of the numerous excellencies which characterize him,—his candor, his honor and undinching devotion to duty, which made him a friend to every man, and every man a friend."

He had eight children. His widow and six children still survive him. The eldest daughter remained

at home, enjoying his companionship to the last. Two daughters and two sons married, and are residents of Merrimac. Belinda married Samuel Scofield, of Yorkshire, England. He was the one referred to as partner. Lydia M. married Bailey Sargent (business, insurance; also holding the office of town clerk and treasurer of Merrimac). The two sons—William W. and Charles E.—are both interested in the carriage business. C. E. Gunnison is one of the leading manufacturers of Merrimac.

Sarah A., the youngest daughter, married Asa F. Pattee, M.D., of Warner, New Hampshire, then a practicing physician of Merrimac; some of his ancestors were of Merrimac origin.

Successful here, during the war he had charge of the Alexander Hospital, Second Division of the Army of the Potomac. He returned to Merrimac in 1865, resuming practice for a year, and then removed to Boston, 1866, where at the present time he resides, a successful practitioner, and a large contributor to medical literature, and from 1881 to 1886 was professor in the College of Physicians and Surgeons, lecturing on diseases of the nervous system.

WILLIAM HENRY HASKELL.

William Henry Haskell, the subject of this sketch, was born in Newburyport September 21, 1810, and obtained his early education in her public schools. In 1824, at the age of fourteen years, he went to West Amesbury, where he learned the trade of silver-plating, then a very important trade in connection with the manufacture of carriages, which was the principal business of the locality.

In 1831 he engaged in the manufacture of carriages, continuing also his silver-plating. In 1850 he entered into co-partnership with Wm. P. Sargent and Wm. Gunnison, under the firm-name of Sargent, Gunnison & Co.

This firm had a repository in Boston for the sale of their carriages, and a manufactory and store in West Amesbury, Mr. Haskell having charge of the store, which was connected with the business of the company, for the sale of carriage findings, together with the usual variety of goods to be found in a country store at that time. This firm was very successful, doing the largest business of any in the town.

Mr Haskell continued a member of the firm until its dissolution, in 1860. In his business life he developed a decided talent for financial pursuits, which found expression in his efforts for the establishment of the First National Bank of Amesbury, which was organized in 1864 with a capital of fifty thousand dollars, and of which he became the first cashier, serving in this capacity until 1869, when he was chosen as its president, which position he still holds.

The Bank has been very successfully managed, and has increased its capital stock from $50,000 to $200,000.

In 1871 the Merrimac Savings Bank was chartered, and in this movement he also was actively interested. He was its first treasurer, and subsequently, on the death of its first president, he was elected to fill that office, which he acceptably fills at the present time.

Mr. Haskell was also prominently connected with the building of the West Amesbury Branch Railroad, owning largely in its stock. He was made president of the company, which position he still occupies.

He was actively interested in the division of Amesbury and the incorporation of the town of Merrimac, serving on the committee which presented the matter to the Legislature, and doing much for the success of the movement.

He was one of the contributors for the purchase and presentation to the town of the land upon which the Town Hall stands, and his service was recognized by his fellow-citizens in his election as chairman of the first Board of Selectmen in the new town.

Mr. Haskell has always been an active participant in public affairs, serving on the Board of Selectmen of Amesbury. In politics a Republican, he represented that town in the Legislature of 1869 as a member of the House of Representatives, where he was an efficient member of the Committee on Banks and Banking. Subsequently his name was presented as a candidate for the office of Senator.

In 1847 he received a commission as justice of the peace from Governor George N. Briggs, which he held for twenty-eight years, declining further service.

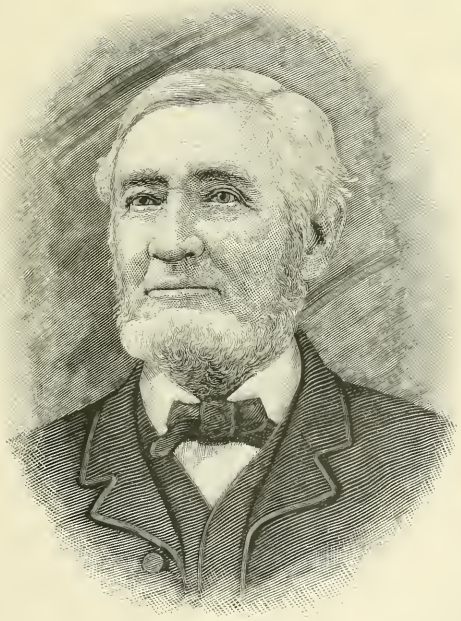
Early in life he identified himself with the temperance cause, and was one of thirteen who organized the first temperance society in Amesbury. In 1828 he united with the Congregational Church in West Amesbury, has been actively interested in its work, and a faithful contributor to its support.

Mr. Haskell's connection with the growth and prosperity of the town has been intimate and active during all the years of his residence in it, and he still holds important trusts and fills a large place in the confidence and esteem of his fellow-townsmen.

Mr. Haskell has been twice married. His first wife was Clarissa Whittier; his present wife is a daughter of the late Edmund Whittier, of West Amesbury. He has had eight children, five of whom are still living.

FRANCIS SARGENT.

Francis Sargent is a descendant in direct line from Richard, of England, who was an officer in the royal navy; he had a son William (first generation), born in 1602, who came to this country early in life and settled at Ipswich, Mass.; from there he went to Newbury, then to Amesbury, where he died in 1675, aged seventy-three years. He married Elizabeth Perkins and had Thomas (second generation), born April 4, 1643. Thomas married Rachel Barnes January 2, 1667, and had a son Thomas (third generation), born November 15, 1676; he married Mary Stevens December 17, 1702;



Wm H Haskell



J. Francis Sargent



John A. Roper

their son was Moses (fourth generation), born Aug. 21, 1707; he married Sarah Bagley July 14, 1727, and had a son Orlando (fifth generation), born April 21, 1728, who married Betty Barnard and had Orlando (sixth generation), born January 20, 1769; he married Hannah Welsh, of Plaistow, N. H.; they had a son *Francis* (seventh generation), the subject of this sketch, who was born November 10, 1810, in the old homestead, West Amesbury (now Merrimac), built by his grandfather Orlando at an early day; he was a farmer, as was his son Orlando, the father of *Francis*.

The grandfather, Deacon Orlando (fifth generation), was prominently identified with the early history of Amesbury, and his name frequently appears on the old records of the town. He often related to his children and grandchildren stories of the Indian troubles and about the old corn-house, which was used for the storing of powder.

Francis Sargent had but limited advantages for an education. When quite young he attended the little district school, and later on the academy at Amesbury, being obliged to walk daily three miles each way. When seventeen years of age he went to learn the house-carpenter's trade, or, as it was called in those days, joiner's trade. After serving four years, it was but a step to take up the making of chaise-bodies. Carriage-making at that early day being a prominent feature of the locality, he closely followed this calling evenings, and sometimes far into the night, and teaching in the same district school, daytimes, where he had once been a pupil.

Mr. Sargent married for first wife Hannah Atkinson, August 28, 1836, sister of Dr. Atkinson. They had two children,—Francis Augustus (eighth generation), born September 9, 1842, and died December 3, 1877; Elmer P., born August 11, 1844. Francis Augustus, married, May 30, 1867, Sarah J. Woodward, of Bangor, and had three children,—Abram W. (ninth generation), born, June 23, 1868; Louise, born June 13, 1872; and Frank A., born October 23, 1877.

Elmer P. married for first wife Louisa Bartlett of Amesbury, Mass., October 18, 1865; they had two sons, —Francis (ninth generation), born December 17, 1866, and Elmer P., Jr., born July 3, 1869. The first wife of Elmer P., Sr., died February 14, 1872, and he married for second wife Judith B. Follansbee, of West Newbury, November 23, 1876; they had two children, —Edith H., born May 17, 1878, and Fanny A., July 25, 1879.

In June, 1881, Mrs. Francis Sargent met with an accident, which resulted in her death July 1, 1881, in her sixty-seventh year. She was a woman of rare strength of character, and thoroughly devoted to all who were near to her, and a most exemplary mother. She was for many years a member of the Congregational church, of which her husband has been a member for more than fifty years.

In 1836, Mr. Sargent, in partnership with the late A. E. Goodwin, commenced the manufacture of shoes, which continued until 1849, when, in connection with the grocery business (in which they were in the meantime interested), commenced the sale of carriage-trimmings, exchanging goods for carriages finished; but during all this time, and since 1833, Mr. Sargent had been drawing carriages through the country for sale, which was the custom in those days. In 1852 the concern of Sargent, Harlow & Co. was formed, one of the largest manufacturing firms in the country at that time. They opened a repository in Haymarket Square, Boston, and soon became widely known. Since 1852, Mr. Sargent has been in continuous business in Boston, and on the retirement of Mr. Harlow in November, 1862, the firm-name was changed to Francis Sargent & Co., and, with different partners, has been carried on under that name.

Mr. Sargent, in January, 1885, finding that his customers were demanding a better grade of work, moved to his present location, and under the same firm-name has been constantly gaining a class of trade who appreciate a first-class carriage, at a reasonable price. Mr. Sargent is vigorous in mind, and possesses great energy, and although still living at Merrimac, he goes to Boston every day, and notwithstanding the ride of ninety miles, is able to do more work than many younger men, and we see no reason why he may not live to the advanced age of so many of his ancestors, as quite a number have reached well into the nineties. His sister living in Merrimac is in good health and in her eighty-ninth year. Mr. Sargent married for second wife Mrs. Sarah Patten, of Kingston, N. H.

JOHN S. POYEN.

John S. Poyen was born at East Haverhill, October 12, 1818. His father, Joseph Rochemont de Poyen, was a direct descendant from the Marquis Jean de Poyen, who emigrated from France to the Island of Guadaloupe, one of the West Indies, in the year 1658. He was a stanch royalist and an ardent defender of Louis XVI.

In 1792 a large number of the inhabitants of Guadaloupe were obliged to flee, on account of the revolution. Many lost their lives, but among the fortunate ones who escaped were the grandfather and father of John S. Poyen. A Newburyport merchant vessel being in the harbor of Point-a-Pitre at this time, they concealed themselves on board of her, and were landed at Newburyport in March, 1792. The grandfather died the same year of his arrival, October 14, 1792, aged fifty-two years, and was buried in Newburyport, in the old graveyard on "Burrial hill."

His son, Joseph Rochemont de Poyen, finally settled at Rock's Bridge, East Haverhill, where he met and became enamored of, and married Sallie, daughter of Thomas Elliot, in spite of the protest of her parents, who did not really like the idea of their daughter marrying a foreigner whom they had not

known for very long. However, they were married and lived happily together. She was a handsome, brilliant girl, and made him an excellent wife. He was an active, genial man, with a little of the French impatience, but a good man and a good husband. He died at the age of eighty-four. Nine children were born to them, John S. being among the youngest.

Mr. Poyen received the customary common-school education of those times, with the additional advantage of a short course of instruction from the distinguished mathematician, Benjamin Greenleaf.

When fourteen years old he came to Merrimac (then West Amesbury) and entered the grocery and carriage supply store of Stephen Patten, who had married his eldest sister, Elizabeth J. Five years later he became a partner, and after ten years of partnership he purchased the interest of Mr. Patten. In the mean time they had begun the manufacture of carriages, in which he continued until 1867, when he sold out the manufacturing business. From that time until his death he continued the business of carriage supplies alone.

In 1871 he gave Mr. H. O. Delano, who was a clerk with him at the time, an interest in the business, and the firm, under the name of John S. Poyen & Co., entered a career of great prosperity and success, and became one of the most prominent of its kind in New England.

He was always ready pecuniarily, and by his personal influence, to promote the public interests of the town, and many times a helping hand was given to young men when he felt they deserved his confidence. He was always liberal in helping those whom he saw trying to help themselves.

The rapid growth in the business of the town, requiring better facilities for banking purposes (the nearest bank for depositors being in Amesbury, five miles distant), he was foremost in promoting the organization of a bank in Merrimac, and in May, 1864, as a result of his efforts, the First National Bank of Merrimac opened its doors for business, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars, which, in July of the same year, was increased to seventy-five thousand dollars, and in November to one hundred thousand dollars. In May, 1875, it had a capital of two hundred thousand dollars. From its first organization until his death he was a prominent director and its largest stockholder.

In 1866 later an institution for savings was established, of which he was made president. He was also one of the trustees of the Public Library for a number of years.

In 1870 the railroad was six miles distant, [illegible] only steam connections; and the increasing [illegible] demanding better [illegible]. Mr. Poyen used his influence and [illegible] which should connect Merrimac with other business centres. After laborious efforts the road was constructed and leased to the Boston and Maine Railroad corporation for ninety-nine years. He was chosen president, which office he also held at the time of his death.

During the years 1870 and '71 he was selectman and advocated the division of the town of Amesbury, believing it would be an advantage to the old and new towns. In 1876 the village of West Amesbury became an incorporated town, and by legislative sanction it took the name of Merrimac.

Various other offices of trust were held by him at different times, and during his business life of forty-two years he served faithfully the best interests of his fellow-townsmen, and by his sudden death Merrimac lost one of its most active and respected citizens.

On the 7th day of December, 1843, he married Miss Elizabeth B., eldest daughter of Dr. Timothy Kenison, a highly-esteemed physician of East Haverhill, and Abagail Longfellow, his wife.

From this marriage were born six children, four of whom are still living. His two sons, John S. and Edward A., still continue in the business established by their father.

In January, 1880, Mr. Poyen, while visiting his father's relatives, for the second time, who were living in Guadaloupe, one of the West India Islands, was attacked by yellow fever, and after a very short illness, died, at Point-a-Pitre, February 22, 1880. A year later he was buried in the family burial-lot at Merrimac.

CHAPTER CXXVII.

ANDOVER.

BY REV. CHARLES SMITH.

EARLY SETTLEMENT.

THE precise date of the first settlement of the town cannot now be ascertained. In 1634, we are told, "Newtown men, being straitened for ground, sent some men to Merrimack to find a fit place to transplant themselves." Moved thereto, doubtless, by these Newtown men, the General Court in the same year "ordered that the land about Cochichewick shall be assessed for an inland plantation, and whosoever will go to inhabit there shall have three years' immunity from all taxes, levies, public charges and services whatever, military discipline only excepted." A committee of three—John Winthrop, Richard Bellingham and William Coddington—was appointed to license such persons as might desire to avail themselves of the benefits of this order. And it was expressly provided that no person should "go thither without their consent, or the major part of them."

But it appears that the "straitened" men of Newtown did not avail themselves of this liberal inducement to remove to the banks of the Cochichewick. They may have found a more inviting location, or they may have been thwarted in their intentions by others, in a like straitened condition, who had fixed a longing eye upon the meadows and forests of Cochichewick. In 1639 we find Rev. Nathaniel Ward, of Ipswich, writing repeatedly to the Governor, with whom he was connected by marriage, and to whom he was counselor, urging him not to "give any encouragement concerning any plantation att Quichichacke or Penticutt (Haverhill) till myselt and some others either speake or write to you about it."

Mr. Ward claimed to have gathered a company of "more than 20 families of very good Christians," a portion of whom were "Newbury men." The solicitations of Mr. Ward were so far heeded that in May, 1640, he secured the coveted grant for his company, but, on the express condition, "that they return answer within three weeks from the 27th p'sent, and that they build there before the next Courte." These conditions were not complied with, and the grant lapsed. Whether this failure was owing to a more favorable opening, to discouragement growing out of the hazards of the enterprise, or to the intrigue and opposition of others covetous of the grant, does not, however, appear.

The following year Mr. John Woodbridge, of Newbury, afterwards the first minister of Andover, presents an urgent request for the township forfeited by the Newtown men, in behalf of certain men of Newbury and Ipswich, some of whom "have sold themselves out of house and home, and so desire to be settled as soon as may be." Perchance these men who had "sold themselves out of house and home" were somehow mixed up in the scheme of the Newtown men. However this may be, the new effort, under the wise and persistent direction of Mr. Woodbridge, led to a happy issue.

Though there is no record of the month or year when this company of Ipswich and Newbury men planted themselves on the banks of the "Cochichewick brook," they must have located there before the beginning of 1643. The evidence of this is in the fact that, on the 10th of May, of that year, in an order passed by the General Court for a division of the whole plantation into four shires, Cochichawicke is mentioned as one of the eight towns comprising the shire of Essex. Very soon after the first settlement of the town its name was changed to Andover, at the desire, most probably, of some inhabitant who had emigrated from Andover, in Hants County, England, though we have no direct testimony to that effect. In accordance with the practice uniformly observed by the Puritans, who made the first settlements in New England, Mr. Woodbridge purchased the land included in the township of the Indians. Cutshamache, the Sagamore of Massachusetts, was the chief with whom the bargain was made, and the price paid was £6 and a coat.

This purchase and the preceding grant were confirmed by the General Court in 1646, when the town was incorporated with its present name. The act of incorporation is as follows:

"At a Genrall Corte, at Boston, the 6th, 3th m°., 1646, 'Cutshamache Sagamore of ye Massachusetts, came into ye Corte, & acknowledged yt for ye sume of £6 and a coate, w'ch he had already received, wee had sould to Mr. John Woodbridge, in behalfe of ye inhabitants of Cochichawick, now called Andiver, all his right, interest, & privilege in ye land 6 miles southward from ye towne, two miles eastward to Rowley bounds, be ye same more or lesse, northward Merrimack Ryver, p'vided to yt ye Indian called Roger & his company may have libty to take Alewifes in Cochichawick River, for their owne eating; but if they either spoyle or steale any corne, or oth' fruite, to any considrable value, of ye inhabitanttes there, this librty of taking fish shall forever cease; & ye said Roger is still to enjoy foure acres of ground where he now plants. This purchase ye Corte alowes of, & have granted ye said land to belong to ye said plantation for ev'r, to be ordred & disposed of by them, reserving liberty to ye Corte to lay two miles square of their southerly bounds to any towne or village yt hereafter may be erected thereabouts, if so they See cause.'

"Cutshamache acknowledged this before ye magistrates, & so ye Corte app'veth thereof, & of the rest in this bill to be recorded, so as to pr'udice no former grant."

We find this spelling Andiver as late as 1648, in the records of the colony. Andiver "was originally bounded by the Merrimack, Rowley, Salem, Woburn and Cambridge, which formerly included Billerica and Tewksbury." Andover in 1829 extended, on its northwestern border, along the banks of the Merrimack River for nearly eleven miles; on its northeastern limits, it was bounded for one hundred and forty-six rods by Bradford, and seven miles, two hundred and forty-one rods by Boxford; on the southeast, three miles and sixty-six rods by Middleton; on the south, four miles by Reading, and two miles and two hundred and eighty-five rods by Wilmington; and on the southwest, six miles and one hundred and ninety-seven rods by Tewksbury, containing thirty-seven thousand seven hundred and thirty-eight acres of land. Territorially, this was one of the largest towns in the county, if not in the State.

The first settlement was made in the North Parish, (now North Andover). The grantees, or proprietors, for convenience, mutual protection, social intercourse and to enjoy the better their religious worship and teaching, settled near each other, around their meeting-house, on "home lots," containing from four to ten acres each, according to the wealth and importance of the occupant. To the owner of a home lot was assigned meadow, tillage and wood-land in the more remote parts of the town. This allotment was in proportion to the size and value of the village lot. These outlying farms were gradually built upon and lived upon by their owners. But not for many years was such occupancy common. For a long time living away from the village was discouraged; and, on one occasion, the town went so far as by vote to forbid any inhabitant's building a dwelling-house in any part of the town other than that which had been set apart for such houses, except by express leave of the

town. The penalty for a disregard of this order was a fine of twenty shillings a month for the time the disobedient person should live in such prohibited place. But, as the population increased, and the roads became more passable, and danger from hostile Indians was largely diminished, people removed to their farms in the present South and West Parishes.

The records of the earliest settlers are scant. But we find in them a list purporting to give, in the order of their settlement, the names of the original proprietors and settlers. The list is as follows:

Mr. Bradstreet.	Henry Jacques.
John Osgood.	John Aslett.
Joseph Parker.	Richard Blake.
Richard Barker.	William Ballard.
John Stevens.	John Lovejoy.
Nicholas Holt.	Thomas Poor.
Benjamin Woodbridge.	George Abbot.
John Frye.	John Russ.
Edmund Faulkner.	Andrew Allen.
Robert Barnard.	Andrew Foster.
Daniel Poor.	Thomas Chandler.
Nathan Parker.	

A goodly number of these family names are familiar to our ears as designating living inhabitants of the town every way worthy of their honorable lineage.

It is to be borne in mind that the original proprietors and settlers took up for their personal property but a small portion of the land, holding the large remainder in common, and in reserve for succeeding settlers who might join them, or for the common use.

A liberal allotment of land was set off for the support of the ministry. This was in accordance with the custom in all the new plantations of that period. Such provision of land for the ministry may account for the noticeable fact that the name of John Woodbridge, leader and minister of the first settlers, does not appear in the preceding list of freeholders. His holding seems to have been that of a tenant at will of the parsonage lands.

CHAPTER CXXVIII.

ANDOVER—(*Continued*).

DIVISION INTO NORTH AND SOUTH PARISHES—THE INDIANS.

In the early part of the eighteenth century, the town having gained largely in population, the meeting-house became too strait for the people. Perchance it may also have become dilapidated or too ancient in architecture to suit the taste of the increasing and prosperous community. Hence it was voted by the town, in 1705, "to build a new meeting-house as sufficient and convenient for the whole town as may be." And in May, 1707, it was voted again to "build a meeting-house for y^e^ inhabitants of Andover of these following dimensions, viz.: of sixty-foot long, and forty-foot wide and twenty-foot studd, and with a flatt roofe." But a serious difficulty arose at the outset as to the location of the new meeting-house. When, at the meeting held September 9, 1707, the vote came to be taken on this important question, the majority decided that the house should be built in the South Precinct, "on the spot of ground near the wood called Holt's Wood, where the cross-paths meet at the southwest corner of George Abbot's ground."

As was natural, the residents of the North Precinct strenuously resisted this removal of their place of worship. They complained that the spot selected was not central, that the consent of the proprietors had not been obtained, and that it was at such a distance from the residence of the minister as greatly to incommode him, it being some two or more miles from the Bradford house, which had become the parsonage. On the other hand, it was urged that a decided majority of the people of the town, as the votes showed, would be better accommodated by the selected location.

Not being willing to submit quietly to this majority vote, forty-five residents and proprietors in the North Precinct petitioned the General Court to interfere in their behalf. To frustrate this petition, the town, December 29, 1707, chose a committee "to attend the gentlemen of the General Court's Committee, to view the places and reply to allegations of the petitioners."

At a meeting held February 27, 1708, for the purpose of choosing commissioners to take the valuation of the plantation, in compliance with an act of the General Court, this matter of the location of the meeting-house was again brought up, and for the third time it was voted to build on the spot first selected. As the people could not agree, the General Court, after two hearings, ordered, November 2, 1708, that the town be "forthwith divided into two distinct precincts," and a committee was appointed to carry this order into effect "within the space of two months next coming, unless, in the interim, the town agree thereon and make it themselves, and that thereupon the north division take the present meeting-house and repair and add to it as they please."

The action of the town and that of the General Court on this matter of the location of a new meeting-house are very significant. They show a great change of the population in the course of half a century. The farm-lands had become homesteads. The majority of the people resided in the South Precinct. The North Precinct was in a decided minority. Power had once for all passed away from the village to the outlying districts. The village sovereigns, as was natural, resisted this transfer of power to the utmost, but numbers prevailed.

It is also noticeable that the organization of a new religious parish and church was of scarcely less moment than the incorporation of a new town. The

General Court took the matter in hand. It assigned to the parish its territorial limits, directed with regard to its minister and his support, and went into the details as to parsonage and ministerial lands. We find that the General Court, in making a division of the town into two parishes or precincts, ordered:

"That there be forthwith laid out for the minister of the South Precinct fourteen acres of land for a house-lot, and forty acres at a further distance, part of it low-land, to make meadow of the common land in said precinct, which will make them equal to the other division, to be for the use of the ministry forever." Also

"That the inhabitants and proprietors of the South Division build a convenient meeting-house for their own use and a ministry house.

"Upon all which Mr. Barnard, the present minister, shall declare his choice of which congregation he will officiate in, and the precinct, north or south, shall fully perform the past contract of the town with him, and the other precinct or division of the town shall call and settle another minister for themselves. And the inhabitants of the respective precincts and divisions are hereby impowered to make choice of some discreet persons among themselves, as committees, to manage and govern their affairs with respect to building a meeting-house and ministry house, the making assessments to defray the charge thereof, and for the support of the ministry, and to appoint collectors to gather the same; and are advised and directed to proceed in these several articles with that peace and friendship, one towards another, that they may honor religion and the government and themselves."

The committee thus appointed ran the division line between the parishes, establishing the metes and bounds. A protracted controversy ensued, but disputed points were settled "by mutual agreement, November 7, 1711. The line was renewed by a mutual committee of the parishes, October 7, 1754."

The town was slow in complying with the order of the General Court, requiring it to set apart land for the ministry house and the support of the ministry in the South Parish. The embarrassed parish made complaint of this dilatoriness, or refusal, and asked for action compelling a compliance with the order issued by the court. On November 7, 1710, a further petition was sent in, asking that Mr. Barnard might be directed to make his choice betweeu the precincts. These petitions accomplished their purpose. The General Court directed the committee appointed to make the division of the town to set off the land assigned to the South Precinct, which was speedily done. It also requested Mr. Barnard to choose his precinct, and "to do so before the 11th of December, or that the South Precinct provide for themselves." Mr. Barnard failing to make any choice, "the South Precinct provided for themselves."

The first legal meeting of the new precinct was held June 20, 1709, with Henry Holt as moderator, and George Abbot as clerk. The first question to be settled was the location of the meeting-house. "The spot of ground near the wood, called Holt's Wood," for which they had so persistently contended, seems not to have met with favor when the new precinct came to select a place for itself alone. Without much controversy, however, it would appear, a site was fixed upon, and accepted by vote of the precinct October 18, 1709. This site was "at ye Rock on the west side of Roger brook," a few rods north of the present South Church edifice. A building was erected upon this ground, and occupied for worship January, 1710. It could not have been a very spacious or a very ornate structure, as only one hundred and eight pounds was levied to defray the expenses of building, and it was occupied for worship within three months from the time the location was fixed. Upon "the young men and maids" was conferred "the liberty to build seats round in the galleries on their own charge."

We have no means of ascertaining the number of inhabitants in the town when this division into North and South Precincts took place. Doubtless the increase in population during the twenty years immediately preceding this divisiou had been more rapid than at any former period in the history of the town. The Indians had ceased to be troublesome and emigration from England had been stimulated by the restoration of Charles II. to the British throne. Andover must have shared fully in this increase of the population of the colony. Some seventeen years previous to the date we are considering, and nearly fifty years after its first settlement, the town ordered a list of tax-payers to be made out, which list has been preserved. It contains one hundred and forty-one names, presumably the names of men who paid a tax on property for civil and religious purposes. The seventeen years which succeeded the making of this list of tax-payers must have added no little to the population and property of the town.

The following is the "rate made for the minister in the year 1692:"

North End of the Towne of Andover.

Abbot, John, junr.	Carlton, John.
Abbot, George, junr.	Carlton, Joseph.
Abbot, Thomas, senr.	Chandler, William.
Andrew, Joseph.	Chub, Pasco.
Aslebe, John.	Cromwell, John.
Austin, Samuel.	Dane, Nathl.
Barker, Richard, senr.	Eires, Nathan.[1]
Barker, Left. John.	Eimes, Robert.[1]
Barker, Stephen.	Emery, Joseph.
Barker, Benjamin.	ffarnum, John, senr.
Barker, Richard, junr.	ffarnum, Ralph, senr.
Barker, William.	ffarnum, John, junr.
Bodwell, Henry.	ffarnum, Thomas.
Bradstreet, Capt. Dudley.	ffarrington, Edward.
Bridges, John.	ffaulkner, ffrancis.
Bridges, James.	ffaulkner, John.

[1] Probably Haverhill or Bexford men.

ffoster, Ephraim.
ffoster, Abraham.
ffrye, Benjamin.
ffrye, Samuel.
Granger, John.
Graves, Mark, senr.
Gray, Robert.
Hoult, Nicholas.
Hoult, Hannah, widdowe.
Hutchinson, Samuel.
Ingalls, Henry.
Ingalls, Henry, junr.
Ingalls, Saml.
Ingalls, John.
Johnson, ffrancis.
Lacey, Lawrence.
Lovejoy, Joseph.
Marble, Samuel.
Marston, John, senr.
Marston, John, junr.
Marston, Jacob.
Marston, Joseph.
Martin, Ensign Samuel.
Nichols, Nich.
Osgood, Capt. John.
Osgood, John, junr.
Osgood, Timothy.
Parker, Joseph.
Parker, Stephen.
Parker, John.
Poor, Daniel.
Poor, Widdow.
Post, John.[1]
Preston, John.
Robinson, Joseph.
Stevens, Cornet Nathan.
Stevens, Joseph.
Stevens, Ephraim, Sergt.
Stevens, Benjamin.
Stevens, Nathan, junr.
Stevens, Widdow.
Stevens, Joshua.
Stone, Simon.
Swan, Samuel.
Tiler, John.
Toothaker, Allen.
White, John.[1]
Singletary, Benjamin.[1]
Tiler, Moses, senr.[1]
Tiler, Moses, junr.[1]
Swan, Robert.[1]
Swan, Timothy.[1]

South End of the Towne.

Abbot, John, senr.
Abbot, George, senr.
Abbot, Nehemiah.
Abbot, Timothy.
Abbot, Benjamin.
Abbot, William.
Abbot, Thomas.
Abbot, Nathaniel.
Allen, Widdow.
Asten, Thomas.
Ballard, John.
Ballard, Joseph, senr.
Ballard, William.
Barnard, Stephen.
Barker, Ebenezer.
Bixby, Daniel.
Blanchard, Jonathan.
Blanchard, Samuel.
Blunt, William.
Bussell, Samuel.
Chandler, Capt.
Chandler, William, senr.
Chandler, William, junr.
Chandler, Joseph.
Chandler, Henry.
Chandler, John.
Chandler, Thomas.
Carrier, Thomas.
Dane, Francis.
Davis, Ephraim.
Barnum, Ralph, junr.
Foster, Andrew.
Frye, Deacon.
ffrye, James.
Graves, Abraham.
Gutterson, John.
Haggit, Moses.
Hoult, Samuel.
Hoult, Henry.
Hooper, Thomas.
Johnson, Thomas.
Johnson, William.
Johnson, James, Left.
Johnson, John, junr.
Lovejoy, William.
Lovejoy, Christopher.
Lovejoy, Nath.
Lovejoy, Eben.
Marble, Joseph.
More, Abraham.
Osgood, Christopher.
Osgood, Hooker.
Osgood, Waldow.
Osgood, Thomas.
Peters, Andrew.
Preston, Samuel.
Phelps, Samuel.
Phelps, Edward.
Phelps, Widdow.
Russell, Thomas.
Russell, Robert.
Russ, John.
Stevens, John.
Stone, John.
Tyler, Hopestil.
Wardwell, Saml.'s estate.
Wilson, Joseph.
Wright, Walter.

It appears from this list of tax-payers that the majority of such inhabitants was at the north end of the town in 1692, when the enumeration was ordered. In 1705, when the question as to the location of the new meeting-house was under discussion, the majority of the voters was found to be at the south end. Doubtless some of the inhabitants had transferred their residence from the north to the south end, and the new comers had more generally located at the south end of the town. From this date the history of the town will more properly be connected with the South Parish, (or Andover, as it now is,) than with the North Parish, (or North Andover, as it now is), as a separate town.

As has been already stated, the first settlement of the town was at the North Parish. Here was the village and here the meeting-house, here were the residences of the minister and the principal citizens; and for more than half a century the officers of the town and the church were for the most part dwellers in the village. The North Parish was especially distinguished as being the residence for a time of Mr. Simon Bradstreet, for thirteen years Governor of the province of Massachusetts Bay, and for six months Deputy-Governor, and as the home of his accomplished wife, Mistress Anne Bradstreet, colonial poetess and hospitable matron. The residence of this single family was enough to give the small village prominence, not only in the surrounding county, but throughout the province. And after the removal of the Governor, his family prestige remained, and his son Dudley, occupying the old homestead, himself a liberally educated, capable and worthy gentleman, received marked respect and exercised a large influence in the affairs of the town. In view of these facts, it seems fitting that the details in the early history of the town, including notices of the leading men of those days, should be conceded to the ready pen of the distinguished gentleman who writes for this volume the history of North Andover. Hence only a cursory notice will here be taken of some of the more important matters entering into the life of the town, and this mainly for the purpose of keeping up the continuity in its history and growth from the Andover of 1643 to the Andover of to-day.

The South Parish, the Andover of to-day, was at first but an outlying section of the township. A small portion of the land was allotted to the original proprietors who had their residences in the village. The larger portion was held in common and used for pasturage or left in woodland. The taken-up farms, being from three to five miles distant from the homes of their owners, were cultivated under adverse circumstances. Rough roads at first and Indian incursions later on, made work on distant and isolated lands both difficult and dangerous. But in time, as the roads became more numerous and better trodden and Indian incursions less frequent, the farming portion of the villagers removed to their outlying lands and built upon them. Thus the first settlers of the South Parish were exclusively tillers of the soil. Yeomanry they were called in the forcible dialect of the day. They were a hardy, industrious, self-denying, devout body of men and women. As a class they were sincerely religious, but not fanatical or demonstrative. For the most part they were unlettered, but yet not undisciplined in mind. They knew how to think and reason correctly, though they might not be

[1] Probably Barnabas or Bezaleel Ingalls.

able to read with fluency or write with accuracy. Their manners may have been uncouth, but their principles were like polished silver. They were men who feared God, loved liberty, respected the rights of their fellow-men, and held opinions for the maintenance of which they were ready to sacrifice ease and worldly interests. They were of the class of people to put at the foundation of a free commonwealth. Such were the first settlers of Andover as it now is.

The early history of many New England villages is darkened by Indian midnight and stealthy attacks, burnings and massacres. Andover suffered in these regards less than some of her sister towns, and the South Parish less than the North. In fact, the people here endured more from the fear and horror growing out of such ravages of the Indians as those at Haverhill and Deerfield, than from any direct injury at their hands. There was but one attack attended by loss of life made by them upon the South Parish during all the Indian and French and Indian Wars. This was on April 18, 1676, by a small band of the allies of King Philip. Their purpose, fortunately to a large degree frustrated, seems to have been, by a stealthy march upon the place, to seize the garrison-house while the men were at work in their fields, and then to burn, capture and slay as they were able. But, as they were crossing the Merrimack River, they were discovered by a scout named Ephraim Stevens, who, mounting a swift horse, gave seasonable notice to the imperiled inhabitants. Thus warned, nearly all who were exposed were able to take timely refuge in the garrison-house.

This house, occupied as a residence by Mr. George Abbot, was situated some few rods south of the present South Church meeting-house, and not far from the residence of the late Mr. John E. Abbot. It so happened that two sons of Mr. George Abbot were at work in a field at some little distance from the house, and did not receive the warning in season to reach the place of safety. The Indians, baffled in their purpose of capturing the garrison-house by a stealthy attack, finding these two young men alone in the open field, fell upon them in overpowering numbers. They made a brave resistance, but were soon overpowered, the eldest, Joseph by name, being slain, but not till he had laid low one or more of his assailants. This young man, then twenty-four years of age, had been, the winter previous, engaged in the campaign against the Narragansetts, where he gained the reputation of being of eminently robust build and resolute spirit. The younger of the two brothers, Timothy, was a lad of thirteen. Him the savages seized and carried as a captive to their encampment. He was retained in captivity for four months only, when he was brought back to his parents by a friendly squaw. The youth received no harm whatever at the hands of his savage captors except a noticeable loss of flesh, owing to the meagre diet of an Indian wigwam. The hunger of these few months, however, left an ineffaceable impression upon the mind of the lad. Tradition tells the story that, many years after, when the lad had become the father of a numerous family, he would never permit a child of his to say that he was hungry, protesting that the child did not know the meaning of the word hunger.

It is highly probable that some few men from the South Precinct lost their lives while in the employ of the Commonwealth, engaged in the military service against the Indians. But aside from this, and the terror awakened among the inhabitants, especially among the women and children, by the known cruelties practised by these ferocious and stealthy men of the forest, the South Parish suffered little at their hands.

Our custom has been to call these natives of the soil savages; they have been pictured to us as by nature cruel, blood-thirsty, as delighting in the torture of women and babes, as destitute of honor or humanity. That they were in time of war, or when they felt themselves to have been grossly wronged, cruel in the extreme and relentlessly savage, killing and burning without mercy, there can be no question. But we must remember that the Indian had never been trained in the teaching of Christ, had never learned His doctrine of forbearance and forgiveness. We should further bear in mind that at first he received the white man with kindness and treated him with respect and generosity. Without the friendship of the Indians, the infant colony of Massachusetts Bay would have perished in its swaddling bands.

For more than a quarter of a century this feeble colony dwelt in safety and prospered, protected by the ægis of the red man's favor. Not till he felt himself wronged, oppressed, humiliated, cheated, insulted, did this hospitable red man wing the deadly arrow or raise the fatal tomahawk against his white neighbor, intruder though he was. Treacherous oftentimes the Indian doubtless was. But was he alone in this? Captain Pasco Chubb, a citizen of Andover, while in command at Pemaquid Fort, at a conference held with representatives from the Penobscot Indians, for the purpose of effecting an exchange of prisoners, deliberately ordered the massacre of these representatives, in which massacre two chiefs were slain. The Indians are accused of being brutal in their treatment of women and children. The accusation is unquestionably true. But are the white people innocent of like brutality? A brief historical record of unquestioned veracity will afford some light on this question.

In the year 1675, a company of one thousand men levied by the United Colonies of New England, and led by "the brave Josiah Winslow, a native of New England," invaded the territory of the Narragansetts in midwinter, when the snow was at great depth, and the weather bitterly cold. They came

unawares upon a little cluster of wigwams, where the tribe had collected their winter stores, their women and children. Suddenly an attack was made, the feeble palisades were overpassed and the torch hurled into the group of inflammable straw-thatched cabins, amidst carnage and slaughter. "Thus," says Bancroft, "were swept away the humble glories of the Narragansetts, the winter's stores of the tribe, their curiously wrought baskets, full of corn, their famous strings of wampum, their wigwams nicely lined with mats,—all the little comforts of savage life were consumed. And more—their old men, their women, their babes, perished by hundreds in the fire. Then, indeed, was the cup of misery full for these red men. Without shelter and without food, they hid themselves in a cedar swamp, with no defense against the cold but boughs of evergreen trees. They prowled the forests and pawed up the snow, to gather nuts and acorns" for food. They ate remnants of horse-flesh to keep from starvation. "Winter and famine and disease consequent on vile diet" destroyed the remnant that had escaped fire and sword of this once proud and numerous tribe of red men—a tribe that for years had been friendly to the white strangers.

Is there anything in the record of the Indian cruelties and barbarities to surpass this story in horror? In the massacre at Deerfield, ever memorable in the early New England annals, was there anything to compare with this burning of a village, in which hundreds of women and children were roasted alive?

So far as Andover is concerned, as between her citizens and the Indians, in the balancing of the good and evil received each from the other, it would be difficult to find the score against the red man.

CHAPTER CXXIX.

ANDOVER—(*Continued*).

ANDOVER IN THE WITCHCRAFT DELUSION.

To Joseph Ballard, a resident in the southeasterly section of the South Parish, near Ballard Vale, belongs the unenviable notoriety of first introducing this pestilent frenzy into the town—early in 1692. The wife of Mr Ballard had been for a long time afflicted with a disease which had baffled the skill of all her physicians. The account of the marvelous powers of certain girls in Salem Village for detecting the causes of disease and applying an effectual remedy came to the ears of this helpless family. Mr. Ballard, in his despair, sought the aid of these wonderful girls in behalf of his afflicted wife. Two of them came to his house. From thence they were taken to the meeting-house. An excited crowd filled the house, drawn by curiosity to see and hear these wonder-working and strange-speaking and acting young women. Fervent prayer was offered by Rev. Mr. Barnard, assistant pastor of the church. The young women were exhorted by him to tell the truth about the sickness of Mrs. Ballard. Thus solemnly introduced and exhorted in the presence of this large assembly of excited people, they proceeded to mention by name certain persons belonging to the town, charging them with being agents of the devil and causing the sickness of Mrs. Ballard. On this accusation by these two stranger girls, without further evidence or inquiry, and without hesitation or delay, a warrant was issued against the persons thus accused, and they were hurried off to Salem Jail. Here they were placed in close confinement, as if guilty of the most heinous crimes. This was the beginning, so far as Andover was concerned, of that terrible tragedy, in which, before its close, forty-one of its citizens, including some of the most prominent and worthy in the town, were accused of being in covenant league with Satan, with having signed his book with blood, and with having received baptism at his hands. Many of these accused persons, some of them delicate women, were imprisoned for months under severe restraints and persecutions. Eight were condemned to death on account of the injuries inflicted upon others by their alleged connection with Satan, of whom one died in prison, one was reprieved and afterwards released, and three were hanged, and their dead bodies ignominiously cast into a common grave. The venerable minister of the town, Rev. Mr. Dane, fell under serious suspicion, while his amiable daughters and granddaughters were accused and imprisoned, and one daughter and granddaughter condemned. Other ladies of the highest rank and culture in the town suffered the same indignity. The fanatical accusers, made bold by their surprising success, struck at the highest personages in the place. Suspicion was cast upon Mr. Dudley Bradstreet, son of Governor Bradstreet, and he was obliged to flee the place to save himself from imprisonment and possible death.

The details of these strange doings, of which the foregoing is but a generalization, are still more mysterious and unaccountable. Mrs. Abigail Faulkner, a daughter of Rev. Mr. Dane, the senior pastor of the church, who for forty-three years had ministered to the people, was accused of being a witch. She was a well-educated, beneficent, most estimable and pious woman. Her two little girls, Dorothy and Abigail, were also accused with her of the same terrible crime. They were arrested, and mother and children were taken to Salem and cast into the common jail.

When brought before the examiners, Mrs. Faulkner was urged to make confession of her crime—confession, being received by them as evidence of penitence, served to palliate the offence and modify the sentence. This she modestly but firmly refused to do. She would not admit, however much pressed, that she was in league with Satan, or had consciously anything to

do with the suffering of the afflicted. Under the repeated urgency of her examiners, who assumed her guilt, she so far yielded as to admit that possibly the devil might be working through her to afflict others, though without her knowledge or consent. She further admitted that, when made almost frantic by the terrible accusations, she had "pinched her hands together" in her agony. It was charged that by this pinching of her hands she had consciously tortured her victims. Admitting the possibility that the clinching of her hands might have occasioned suffering, she stoutly maintained that she had no conscious connection with it, but that it was solely the work of the devil, acting through her without her knowledge or consent. That she did not shed tears at sight of the writhings of the afflicted was taken by the magistrate as evidence of her guilt.

The witnesses brought to substantiate the accusations were, first, Joseph Tyler, Martha Tyler, Johanna Tyler and Sarah Wilson, who confessed that they were witches, but were made such by Abigail Faulkner; and, further, some seven or eight persons from Salem and vicinity were brought forward, who each and all testified that they had been tortured by her.

But the closing act in the tragic trial of this sorely afflicted woman was the bringing forward of her two little girls (one eight, the other ten years of age) as witnesses against their mother. Under the influence of the excitement in which they breathed, and the universal opinion of those around them, and the leading questions of their examiners, who seem to have had no doubt at all as to the guilt of the accused, they testified that they were themselves witches, made such by their own mother.

With this kind of evidence—"spectre evidence," it was called—this worthy woman and loving mother was condemned to death. Through the exertions of her father and other influential friends she received a reprieve, and after lingering for thirteen weeks of intolerable mental and physical suffering in a felon's prison, she was set free, not by a reversal of judgment, but by the general "jail delivery," brought about by a reaction from the frenzy which for a year had ravaged the country.

Elizabeth Johnson, another daughter of Rev. Mr. Dane, was tried on similar charges to those brought against her sister, Mrs. Faulkner. After five months' imprisonment she was acquitted, but her daughter Elizabeth was condemned and her daughter Abigail and her son Stephen, thirteen years of age, were accused and imprisoned five weeks. This daughter Elizabeth, who was said, by her grandfather, to be "but simplish at y^e best," made the extraordinary confession that, at the persuasion of Good-wife Carrier, she had been baptized in her well by the devil, who had "dipt her head over in water;" had been at a witch meeting and seen bread and wine at the devil's sacrament, and had afflicted many persons by puppets. Her free confession to the examiners should have saved her from condemnation.

Her brother Stephen, a lad of thirteen, was charged in the indictment with having "wickedly, maliciously & feloniously, with the devil made a covenant, wherebye he gave himself, soule and body, to the devil, and signed the Devil's Booke with his blood, and by the devil was baptized, and renounced his Christian baptism, by which wicked and Diabolical covenant with the devil made, the said Stephen Johnson is bound a detestable witch." This severe indictment of a mere boy, the child of one of the most respectable families in the town, is a fair specimen of the charges brought against the various accused persons, and upon which some of them were condemned and hanged. The magistrates accepted the "spectre evidence" offered by the "afflicted," also the confessions of the accused, as proof positive of guilt. It fared hard with the accused when they fearlessly and persistently denied the allegation of complicity with the devil, and participation in inflicting pains and damage upon their accusers.

Samuel Wardwell, a carpenter by trade, an eccentric man, given to palmistry and fortune-telling, and not averse to prophesying a little on occasion, was accused of having tormented and tortured one Martha Sprague, of Boxford, by wicked arts, and also of having made a covenant with the devil some twenty years before, by which he promised to honor, worship and believe the devil, contrary to the statute of King James the First in that behalf. After much persuasion, and in the hope of saving his life, and, perchance, with some faint suspicion that it might be true, to a certain extent, he made a confession of guilt. But, very soon, he recanted and declared his innocence, saying that in his confession he had "belyed himself," and would hold to the truth of his recantation, though it should cost him his life. And it did cost him his life. He was one of the three from Andover who were hanged.

Ann Foster was another who suffered the same fate. She was an aged woman, of little strength of mind, sincerely religious, and susceptible to the influences and persuasions of her neighbors. When accused of witchcraft, and confronted by the magistrates, who fully believed in her guilt, and urged by them and her trusted friends, who believed with the magistrates, she also concluded that she was in reality in league with Satan. She was examined four times and confessed that she had bewitched a hog, caused the death of a child, made another child sick, and finally had hurt one Timothy Swan by making rag images or puppets of him, and sticking pins in these puppets. She also confessed to having attended witch meetings in Salem, at which she met the Rev. George Burroughs and another minister with gray hair, who was understood to be Rev. Mr. Dane. A poor, old, broken-down, pious woman, she was in a condition to confess anything her accusers and ex-

amineers desired. Her daughter, who was among the accused, and had confessed, appeared as a witness against her, charging that she herself had been made a witch through her mother's agency. Nothing could persuade or compel the aged mother to confess this diabolical crime. On account of her contumacy in this instance, all her previous and numerous and astounding confessions passed for nothing, and she was adjudged a persistent witch and condemned to death. But a merciful Providence permitted her to die in jail before the day of execution came.

The most marked case of all which Andover furnished in these trials was that of Martha Carrier. She was the wife of Thomas Carrier, a Welshman by birth. Thomas seems to have been a good-natured, even-tempered, shiftless sort of man, who took life easy, and left the affairs of the family and farm mainly to the care of his wife. He lived to be one hundred and nine years old, notwithstanding his troubles. Martha Carrier was in most respects the opposite of her husband. She was energetic, stirring, plucky, quick-tempered, easily angered and at times violent in speech; above all, she was a strong-minded woman, who had the courage to speak as she thought and felt. Thus, when others with weaker minds and more submissive natures yielded to the entreaties of husbands and friends, and confessed crimes of which they were not guilty, no amount of persuasion, entreaty or threatening could induce her to criminate herself unjustly, or to retract a word which she had spoken in defense. The badgering of the examiners, who would have forced a confession from her lips, fell powerless upon her.

The Carrier family, on coming to town, were not made welcome by its officers or citizens. They were not considered desirable inhabitants; their neighbors did not favor their society. Under these circumstances, it was but natural that when, in the fury of a frenzy, women and children in large numbers were being accused of witchcraft, Martha Carrier and her children should fall under suspicion and accusation. As manager of affairs, she had, previous to this, had a business controversy about some land with Benjamin Abbot, in which she did some sharp scolding and severe threatening, among other things saying, that she would "stick to him as close as the bark of a tree." Soon after this Mr. Abbot had a swelling upon his foot and an ulcerous sore upon his side, and believed that Martha Carrier was the cause of these troubles. To confirm this belief, it only needed that he should begin "to mend and grow better" from the day that she was removed to Salem Jail. Besides the Andover sufferers from the machinations of Martha Carrier, there were certain Salem girls, as in some other Andover cases, who appeared before the examiners and charged her with inflicting torture upon them. It was on this account that complaint was made against her by two Salem men, and a warrant issued for her arrest. When she was brought up for examination before her accusers, five women and children from Salem appeared and testified that they were "hurt" by "Goody Carrier." As the examination proceeded, the scene became tragic. It was held in the meeting-house, which was crowded with excited people. When the accused woman looked into the faces of her accusers, they were "seized with fits," and "fell into the most intolerable outcries and agonies." They professed to see a black man standing by her side. One of them, in her frenzy, cries out, "I see the souls of thirteen persons whom she has murdered at Andover." With the swiftness of lightning comes from the lips of the infuriated woman the response, "You lie! I am wronged!" Then, turning about and facing the magistrates, she declares, "It is false; and it is a shame for you to mind what these say who are out of their wits." The accusers immediately reiterate their charges, and, to prove their truth, go into such hysterical spasms, contortions and apparent tortures "that there was no enduring it," says the record. The great crowd of spectators are moved with sympathy with the tortured and writhing girls. They are aroused to the most intense excitement. They believe themselves to be witnessing one of the fierce struggles between the kingdom of God and that of the Evil One.

June and July pass away, and the close prison holds "Goody Carrier," but it cannot cramp her bold spirit. Her children are also there. In August she comes forth once more to face her accusers. Her whole life passes in review, as if it were the final judgment. Sharp, cutting words and deeds of retaliation are recalled; her sons are put to torture till they bear witness against her. Not one word of confession passes her lips. Cotton Mather says, as a reward of her adherence to Satan, she has received the promise that she shall be "queen of hell." August 11th little Sarah, her daughter, is questioned in court. "How old are you?" "Near eight years old; brother says I shall be eight in November." "How long hast thou been a witch?" "Ever since I was six years old." "Who made you a witch?" "My mother." August 19, 1692, witnesses the closing scene. From the scaffold rings out her last testimony, "I am innocent."

CHAPTER CXXX.

ANDOVER—(*Continued*).

THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WARS.

WHILE it is impossible to determine the relative amount of the burden borne and sacrifice made by the North and South Precincts of the town in the French and Indian Wars and in the War for Independence, it is safe to assume that the larger share fell to the

precinct containing the greater number of inhabitants. Hence, in the treatment of the stirring events attending these wars, the action of the town will be taken as the action of its larger precinct. Those persons, however, who, either as officers or soldiers, have claim for special notice in a historical sketch of the town, whose residence is known to have been in the North Precinct, will be yielded, as in the case of the first settlers, to the historian of North Andover for mention.

The French and Indian wars were mainly instigated by the mutual jealousies and ambitions of England and France. They were but the sequence to the more desperate and exhaustive ones carried on in Europe by these rival nations. In them the French seem to have been more successful than the English in enlisting the Indians as allies. And there is reason for believing that they not only used the natural savagery of these allies, but stimulated this native tendency to cruelty and blood.

The Jesuit missionaries, who early gained a footing among the Indian tribes in Canada and other parts of the country, were eminently successful in bringing the natives under their influence and control. They have been charged with inflaming their converts with zeal for the destruction of their English and Protestant neighbors. The page of history gives color to these charges. The party of two hundred French and one hundred and forty-two Indians which, in the winter of 1704, burned the village of Deerfield, slaughtered in cold blood forty-seven of its peaceful citizens and took one hundred and twelve captive, carrying those who could bear the fatigue and cold into Canada, were under the lead of Hertel de Rouville. It was under the same leader that, on the 29th day of August, 1708, a party of French and Indians made at daybreak an attack upon Haverhill. Bancroft says that, when they had "assumed the order of battle, Rouville addressed the soldiers, who, after their orisons, marched against the fort, raised the shrill yell, and dispersed themselves through the village to their work of blood. The rifle rang; the cry of the dying rose. Benjamin Rolfe, the minister, was beaten to death; one Indian sunk a hatchet deep into the brain of his wife, while another caught his infant child from its dying mother, and dashed its head against a stone."

These Indians, thus led, came from the mission stations of the Jesuits. Their French commander did nothing to curb, but everything to stimulate their passion for blood. Of like forays, the Jesuit historian of France relates with pride that they had their origin in the counsels and influence of the Catholic missionaries.

In these wars for colonial supremacy and colonial commerce in America, the colony of Massachusetts heartily co-operated with the mother country. The fisheries on the Banks of Newfoundland then, as now, were a coveted possession. Massachusetts furnished her full quota of soldiers for every expedition having the conquest of Canada, Newfoundland or Acadia in view. In these expeditions many of the young men of Andover enlisted, no inconsiderable number of whom lost their lives, either being killed in battle or dying from wounds, privation or disease. The successful expedition against Louisburg brought grief to many Andover homes.

This expedition was of Massachusetts origin. Wm. Shirley, Governor of the State, advising it, the Legislature authorized the same by a majority of one. The mother country was not consulted in the matter. The force employed was mainly from New England, and composed exclusively of volunteers. Pennsylvania, indeed, sent a small quantity of provisions, and New York furnished a limited supply of artillery.

How many of these troops were furnished by Andover, history does not inform us, but no doubt a proportionate contingent went from this town.

Louisburg was the strongest fortress in North America. Situated on a neck of land on the south side of the harbor, its walls were forty feet thick at the base, and from twenty to thirty feet high, surrounded by a ditch eighty feet wide. For armament it was furnished with one hundred and one cannon, seventy-six swivels and six mortars. This fortress was manned by more than sixteen hundred well-equipped soldiers. The harbor was further defended by a battery of thirty twenty-two pounders, posted on an island, and by a royal battery, situated on the main shore, having thirty large cannon, a moat and bastions, all so complete as to justify the belief that, with a garrison of but two hundred men, it might successfully resist the attack and siege of five thousand.

The forces of New England that had the hardihood to attack this strong, well-equipped and ably-manned fortress consisted of less than four thousand undisciplined militia,—mechanics, farmers, tradesmen, officered by men of like occupations, and commanded by William Pepperell, a Maine merchant. Their offensive armament consisted of eighteen cannon and three mortars, all told. Having effected a landing, a small squad of four hundred men marched by the city, with cheers for the fortress, to the northeast harbor. This bold act produced a panic among those who manned the royal battery, leading them to spike the cannon in the night and flee. This battery thus abandoned fell into the hands of the audacious incursionists, and, speedily refitted for service, was used with effect against its former possessors.

Repeated attempts to take the island battery fail. These failures are not relished by the troops. A volunteer company, under officers of their own choice, enlist for a night attack. Unfortunately, their boats are discovered while on the way to the island, and are riddled by a deadly cannonade from the battery. A fearful contest ensues on the landing of the boats, resulting in the loss of sixty killed and one hundred and sixteen taken prisoners. The remainder take to their

boats and escape. This disastrous attack was on the night of May 26th. On June 17, 1745, without further serious fighting, the fortress, city and batteries were surrendered. Failing to receive anticipated supplies, the garrison had become discontented, and the commander, Duchambon disheartened. The strong hold was given up while still intact and capable of holding out for months against the force besieging it. The conquerors, on entering the fortress, seeing its unequaled and unimpaired strength, are said to have ascribed this easy victory, not to their own valor, but to the God of battles, saying reverently, "God has gone out of the way of His common providence in a remarkable and almost miraculous manner, to incline the hearts of the French to give up, and deliver this strong city into our hands."

This was pronounced "the greatest success achieved by England during the war." But not an English soldier was among the victorious forces. To Massachusetts belongs the glory of the capture. When the news of the victory reached the colony, there were great rejoicings. Bells were rung, thanksgiving praises offered and laudatory sermons preached in the churches. Amidst this general rejoicing there were, here and there among the humble homes upon the hill-sides and along the river banks of the country towns, mourning and tears for sons, brothers, fathers and husbands, whose lives were the price of the splendid victory. Andover had her share in this mourning.

The following soldiers from Andover were killed or died from sickness or wounds received while "in the King's service at Louisbourg:

Benjamin Frie.	Andrew Allen.
Samuel Farnum, Jr	Benj. Carlton.
Ephraim Barker	Joseph Marble.
Andrew Johnson	Philip Abbott.
Jonathan Chandler	Isaac Chandler.
David Johnson.	Jonathan Parlin.
Isaac Abbott	Timothy Johnson, Jr.
Francis Dane	Jacob Martin.

—sixteen in all, most of whom died from sickness.

The war between France and England, including the colonies of each, was brought to a close by the treaties of Aix-la-Chapelle in 1748. After much bloodshed, the accumulation of burdensome debt and incredible suffering on the part of both the belligerents, the treaty restored the condition of each to that before the war. Louisbourg was given back to France.

Peace returned to the colonies for a season, and opportunity for the people to pursue their chosen avocations without the dread of Indian attacks at home, or the fear of enlistments for military service abroad. During this brief interval the town increased in numbers and wealth. Some of its citizens were even imbued with an ambition to form a new settlement. A petition was sent to the General Court in behalf of persons who had been engaged in the Cape Breton enterprise, and the relatives of such as had lost their lives in it, for a grant of land in the county of York, as a recognition of their services and losses. This was signed by Captain James Stevens, who commanded a company in this expedition, and James Frye, a private, both of Andover, and fifty-six others belonging to Essex or Middlesex County. The petition was favorably received and the grant made, "on condition that they take associates of the Cape Breton soldiers, not excluding representatives of those who are dead, so as to make the whole number of grantees one hundred and twenty;" that they provide a suitable house "for the publick worship of God —a learned Protestant Minister of Good Conversation to be settled" among them, and schools. But it does not appear that any of the petitioners from Andover availed themselves of the privileges of this grant.

The peace was of short duration. The jealousies and rivalries of the two neighboring nations could not be overcome by treaty stipulations. An ambition for colonial extension and commercial aggrandizement dominated the statesmen and merchants of both countries. The colonies also, with antipathies nourished by religious animosity, and stimulated by relentless war, could not readily sit down side by side and cultivate the amenities of peace.

In the spring of 1755—only seven years from the date of that elaborate treaty by which its wise framers, the foremost statesmen of the day, who "believed themselves to be the pacificators of the world," had thought to have created a colonial policy for Europe, "on a basis that would last for ages,"—a new war began. Mother country and colonies, both eager for the fight, united in a bold and comprehensive plan, looking to the subjection of all the French colonies in America. With this object in view, four well-furnished expeditions were set on foot—the first under the command of the ill-fated Braddock, with the young man Washington in charge of a Virginia contingent, having Fort Du Quesne as its first objective point; the second directed against Crown Point, by way of Lakes George and Champlain; the third against Oswego, and the fourth against Nova Scotia. Of the latter, Major-General Winslow was in command, with Major Joseph Frye, of Andover, as one of his subordinate officers. In the company of Major Frye were many young men from his native town of Andover. This last expedition was successful. The forces of the enemy were beaten and three strongholds taken. But a sad service awaited the conquerors.

Acadia had been for some years under English rule. The people were peaceful, industrious, virtuous, home-loving and pious; but they were French and Catholic, hence they were distrusted. They had offered no resistance to their English rulers, shown no disposition to rebel, but they belonged to a hostile nation and faith, and they were in a position where they might do mischief to their rulers. The home authorities determined on their removal; and it was further determined that they should not be permitted

to remove, or to be removed, to a French settlement. It was ordered that they be scattered among the English colonies, some to Massachusetts Bay, some as far distant as Georgia. Major Frye was in command of a part of the force under General Winslow, to whom was given the execution of this cruel order. The helpless people, women and children, were forcibly torn from their homes, gathered up from their separate villages, driven to the place of embarkation, like sheep to the shambles, and thrust promiscuously, at the point of the bayonet, upon the decks of the transports; thus were separated families, so that parents were taken to one colony and children to another. While they were thus huddled together upon the decks, wild with grief, the torch was applied to their dwellings, and they sailed away from the land they loved by the lurid light of the homes they had cherished. From country and comfort and fireside freedom they went to exile, poverty and, in some cases, to semi-servitude. If Major Frye was the kind-hearted man that tradition credits him with being, his duty here must have been a far more trying one than any that fell to his lot in the morasses or fights around Louisbourg in the winter of 1746. Those of these wretched exiles who were apportioned to Massachusetts Bay were distributed among the towns with as much regard to humanity, doubtless, as the circumstances and the feelings of the people would admit. They were everywhere received with aversion. They were foreigners of a hostile race,—Papists. Their religion and their nation were alike distrusted, if not abhorred.

In February, 1756, a family of twenty-two Acadians were brought to Andover, "Germain Laundry, his wife, seven sons and thirteen daughters, and," says the report of the selectmen, "one born since, making in all twenty-three who came to town." These, and others who followed them, were cared for by the town as they best might be. Changes were made, so that, in the year 1760, some having been "sett off to the County of Hampshire," there remained, according to the return of the selectmen of July 20th of that year, twelve persons, as follows:

Jno. Laundry.....age 26 (nearly)	Margaret Bear.....age 1
Mary Laundry.....age 26	Amon Dupee.....age 56
Charles Bear.....age 36	Mary, his wife.....age 29
Margaret Bear.....age 24	Mary Joseph.....age 5
Molly Bear.....age 4	Margaret Dupee.....age 2
Charles Bear.....age 2	Hermon Dupee.....age ¾

"After a time," says Miss Bailey, "houses were provided for the families, and most of the Acadians in Andover became self-supporting. The family of Jacques Esbert and Charles Esbert were placed in a house on the estate of Mr. Jonathan Abbot, recently "owned by his grandson," (the late) "Mr. Stephen D. Abbot. The house was empty, Mr. Abbot having built a new one for himself. It was, however, a great annoyance to the Puritan farmer to have these tenants—foreigners and Roman Catholics—quartered near his own residence. But, as his descendants relate, the Acadians completely conquered the prejudices of this family and of the community, and gained the good-will of all acquaintances. They were industrious and frugal. The women worked in the fields, pulling flax and harvesting. They practised the rites of their religion in an inoffensive manner, and commended it by their good conduct. When they went away from Andover, Mr. Abbot's family parted from them with sincere regret."

From this account it would seem that the exiles gradually made their way to the hearts of the people upon whom they were helplessly cast, gained sympathy, kind treatment, respect and warm friends.

In the month of August, 1757, we find Major (now Colonel) Frye among the seventeen hundred provincial troops entrenched under the guns of Fort William Henry, a small fort situated at the head of Lake George, manned by a garrison of less than five hundred English soldiers, under the command of the heroic Lieutenant-Colonel Monro. This fort was besieged by the indefatigable and accomplished Montcalm, with a force of six thousand French and Canadian troops, and seventeen hundred Indian allies of various tribes. After a gallant resistance, succor being refused by General Webb, the superior officer at Fort Edward, the little fort capitulated on the 9th of August, under a guarantee of protection from the French commander. But, at daybreak the next morning, as the officers and soldiers were leaving their intrenchments, they were set upon by the Indians, beaten, hacked, stripped of their clothing, and some twenty or thirty of them massacred. Montcalm would seem to have exerted himself to the utmost, but vainly, to restrain the ferocity of the savages, inflamed, it is said, by intoxicating drink given them by English soldiers the night previous. Some of the officers and men escaped almost naked from the hands of the Indians and fled into the forests. Colonel Frye was one of these. Being dragged into the woods by an infuriated savage, stripped of his clothing, and about to be dispatched by the tomahawk of his captor, seizing a favorable opportunity, he leaped upon his foe and killed him. Then, hastily, with no clothing but a shirt, he ran for the woods, where he wandered for three days, finally reaching Fort Edward nearly famished from hunger and distracted by the cruelties he had experienced and the horrors he had witnessed. He lived, however, for greater exploits and higher honors.

It is not certain that there were other Andover men with Colonel Frye at Fort Henry. Nor does it clearly appear how many or who were the Andover men personally engaged in this war of conquest, which terminated on the 8th day of September, 1760, by the surrender to the English of Montreal, Canada, and whatever territory had been hitherto claimed by France in the Northeast.

But it is reasonably inferred that there were pri-

vate soldiers from this town scattered among the different regiments sent by Massachusetts upon two of these expeditions. From a petition of Abiel Abbot, of Andover, for further pay for services in the army, we learn that he "was surgeon's mate of Col. Frye's regiment, & in that department of it which garrisoned Annapolis Royal in 1759 & 1760." Massachusetts Bay contributed more than ten thousand troops, nearly one-sixth of all able to bear arms, for these expeditions against Canada and Nova Scotia. Andover, of course, must have furnished her proportionate number of these, gathered largely as they were from the agricultural settlements; but, enlisted into different regiments and companies, their names have not been handed down to us.

The taxes for sustaining these military operations for so many years bore heavily upon the inhabitants, especially upon those engaged in farming, as they were largely levied upon the land. Money was scarce; the people were poor; hence much difficulty was experienced in the collection of the taxes.

The property of the delinquent tax-payer was not infrequently seized by the officer and sold to meet the requisition of the colony. Thus, in more ways than one, did trial and grief come to the homes of the humble settlers. We can scarcely imagine the intensity of their joy when the news came that Montreal had capitulated, and all the French possessions in Canada and Nova Scotia had been surrendered. This was a victory that had the promise of permanent peace. Now the sons, brothers, husbands and fathers whom sickness and the bullet had spared, might return to gladden once more the bereft homes upon the hillsides and in the hamlets of New England. Was ever the Thanksgiving more heartily observed than that which followed the closing up of the devastating French and Indian Wars? The bells of Massachusetts Bay rang merrily on that day.

The names of Andover men holding military commission, from 1745 to 1763, as given by Miss Bailey, are as follows:

Col. Joseph Frye.	Capt. Jonathan Poor.
Lieut.-Col. James Frye	Capt. Asa Stevens.
Adjt.-Col. Moody Bridges.	Capt. James Stevens.
Surgeon Ward Noyes.	Capt. John Wright.
Surgeon Abiel Abbot	Capt. Isaac Osgood.
Capt. John Farnum	Lieut. John Peabody.
Capt. Thomas Farrington	Lieut. Nathan Chandler.
Capt. Moses Frye	Lieut. Jacob Farrington.
Capt. Noyes [illegible]	Lieut. Nicholas Holt.
Capt. [illegible]	Ensign Nathaniel Lovejoy
[illegible]	Ensign George Abbot.
[illegible]	Ensign John Foster.
[illegible]	Ensign William Russ.

The descendants of Captain John Abbot, Jr., have in their possession his commission from the hand of Governor Shirley, of which the following is a copy:

"[illegible] WILLIAM SHIRLEY, *Esq.*: Captain-General and Governor in Chief in and over His Majesty's Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay* in *New England*, &c.

"To JOHN ABBOTT, Junr., Gent^n. *greeting:*

"KNOW YE, That by virtue of the Power and Authority, in and by His Majesty's Royal Commission to Me granted to be Captain-General, etc., over this, His Majesty's Province of the *Massachusetts-Bay*, aforesaid; I do (by these Presents) reposing especial Trust and Confidence in your Loyalty, Courage and good Conduct, constitute and appoint You, the said John Abbott, Captain of the second Foot-Company in the Town of Andover, in the fourth Regiment of Militia in the County of Essex, whereof Rich^d Saltonstall, Esq^r, is Colonel.

"You are, therefore, carefully and diligently to discharge the Duty of a Captain in leading, ordering and exercising said Company in Arms, both inferiour Officers and Soldiers, and to keep them in good Order and Discipline; hereby commanding them to obey you as their Captain and yourself to observe and follow such Orders and Instructions, as you shall from time to time receive from Me, or the Commander-in-Chief for the Time being, or other your superiour Officers for His Majesty's service, according to Military Rules and Discipline, pursuant to the Trust reposed in You.

"*Given under My Hand and Seal at Arms, at Boston, the Second Day of July, In the twenty-eighth year of the Reign of His Majesty, King* GEORGE *the Second*, Annoq; Domini, 1754.

"*By His Excellency's Command.* W. SHIRLEY.

"J. WILLARD."

CHAPTER CXXXI.

ANDOVER—(*Continued*).

RESISTANCE TO TAXATION.

WHEN the British government was relieved of its foreign wars by the treaty of Paris, it began to look more carefully after the condition of its American colonies, with the purpose of deriving from them a much-needed revenue.

Various forms of taxation were devised—among them was that of a Stamp Act. This was vehemently resisted by the people of Massachusetts Bay. There were riotous proceedings in Boston when the attempt was made to put the act into operation. Andover was aroused; a public meeting of citizens was called, and held September 11, 1765, at which a vote was passed unanimously expressing "their utter detestation and abhorrence of all such violent and extraordinary proceedings," directing the selectmen and officers of the town "to use their utmost endeavours to suppress the same" and maintain the supremacy of the laws; also urging the freeholders and other inhabitants to aid its officers in the discharge of their duty.

While thus strenuous in their purpose to sustain good order and put down rioting, they were equally determined in their opposition to all unjust acts on the part of the mother country. October 21, 1765, at a meeting held in view of the oppressive acts of Parliament, they chose Col. James Frye, Deacon Isaac Abbot, George Abbot, Esq., Mr. Moody Bridges, Capt. Peter Osgood, Col. John Osgood, Capt. Asa Foster, Capt. John Foster, Capt. Peter Parker, Capt. John Farnum "a committee to draw up instructions for the representative of the town, at the great and general Court of this Province, and report as soon as may be."

The committee reported as follows:

"*To Samuel Phillips, Esq., Representative for the town of Andover in his Majesty's province of the Massachusetts Bay.*

"*Sir*:—We, the freeholders and other inhabitants of said town, legally assembled in town-meeting, on said day, to consider what may be proper on our part to be done at this critical conjuncture, being a time, we apprehend, that we and the rest of his majesty's subjects of this province, as well as those of the other provinces and colonies in British America, are by sundry acts of Parliament of Great Britain, especially by an act commonly called the Stamp Act, in danger of being not only reduced to such indigent circumstances as will render us unable to manifest our loyalty to the Crown of Great Britain, as upon all occasions we have hitherto done, by cheerfully exhibiting our substance for the defence of the British dominions in this part of the world; but of being deprived of some of our most valuable privileges which by Charter and loyalty we have always thought and still think ourselves justly entitled to.

"Therefore, we take it to be a duty justly due to ourselves and posterity to instruct you, that you do not give your assent to any act of Assembly that shall signify any willingness in your constituents to submit to any internal taxes that are under any colour imposed, otherwise than by the General Court of this province agreeable to the constitution of this government; That you join in such dutiful remonstrances to the King and Parliament, and other becoming measures, as shall carry the greatest probability to obtain a repeal of the Stamp Act, and an alleviation of the embarrassments, the commercial affairs of this province labour under by the rigorous execution of the acts of Parliament respecting the same;—and we also desire you to use your utmost endeavours that all extraordinary grants and expensive measures may, upon all occasions, as much as possible, be avoided; and we would recommend particularly the strictest care and the utmost firmness to prevent all unconstitutional draughts upon the public treasury;—that you would use your best endeavours, in conjunction with the other members of the General Court, to suppress all riotous unlawful assemblies, and to prevent all unlawful acts of violence upon the persons and substance of his Majesty's subjects in this Province."

This report was accepted and unanimously adopted and sent to the representative at the General Court.

It is a clear and firm expression of the inhabitants of the town against all lawless and riotous proceedings in opposition to the execution of the offensive acts of Parliament, and also an equally fair and clear expression of their judgment and purpose regarding all unconstitutional and oppressive acts of Parliament. One can read between the lines declaring their loyalty a spirit of independence that will brook no imposition, no oppression, no attempt at coercion. We should recall the fact that, when this resolution was passed in the town-meeting of Andover, the streets of Boston, twenty miles distant, were filled at times with a riotous multitude. This self-restraint, under the circumstances, is as praiseworthy as the settled determination to protect their constitutional rights.

These and similar remonstrances from the colonies secured the repeal of the offensive act, but the right of taxation without representation was not yielded by Parliament. Another act, still more offensive to the colonies, was passed by Parliament, imposing heavy duties on imported articles, such as paper, glass, tea and West India goods. This act, and the attempted forcible imposition of it upon the colonies, especially Massachusetts Bay, aroused the slumbering indignation of the people.

The town of Andover resented this new attempt at unjust taxation. In May, 1770, a meeting, called to "take into consideration the distresses this Province is labouring under by the operation of a late act of Parliament, imposing duties on tea, paper, glass, etc., made and passed for the express purpose of raising a revenue in the American Colonies, without their consent, which act we apprehend is oppressive, repugnant to the natural and constitutional rights of the people, contrary both to the spirit and letter of the royal Charter, granted by their Majesties King William and Queen Mary to the inhabitants of this province, whereby are ordained and established the having and enjoying all liberties and immunities of free and natural born subjects; and subversive of the great and good designs of our most worthy ancestors, who crossed the ocean, willingly exposed themselves to every danger, parted with their blood and treasure, suffered hunger, cold and nakedness, and every other hardship human nature is capable of, to purchase and defend a quiet habitation for themselves and posterity,"—

"*Therefore voted, nemini contradicenti*,—

"1. That it is the duty of every friend to liberty, and to the British Constitution, to use all legal measures to prevent, if possible, the execution of said act; and would embrace this opportunity to express our warmest gratitude to the merchants and other gentlemen of Boston, and other trading towns in this province, for the regular, constitutional and spirited measures pursued by them, from principles truly noble and generous, for repelling tyranny and oppression, and establishing those rights for themselves and country which they are entitled to as men and as Englishmen.

"2. That we will, by all legal and constitutional measures in our power, support and encourage the non-importation agreement of the merchants, and that we will have no commercial or social connexions, directly or indirectly, with those persons who, as enemies to the country, divested of every public virtue, and even of humanity itself, regardless of and deaf to the miseries and calamities which threaten this people, preferring their own private interest to the liberty and freedom of the community, are sordidly endeavouring to counteract such benevolent and salutary agreement.

"3. That we will encourage frugality, industry and the manufactures of this country; and that we will not make use of any foreign tea, or suffer it to be used in our families (case of sickness only excepted), until the act imposing a duty on that article shall be repealed and a general importation take place."

The spirit which dictated and sustained these resolves did not abate in its intensity as the contest grew fiercer. When armed vessels appeared in Boston harbor to force the landing of tea upon its wharves, the people did not succumb to the threatened compulsion. The rather, their sense of the indignity and tyranny of the act, and its method of enforcement, aroused within them a more determined purpose of resistance.

Thus we find the town referring to this same matter again, February 3, 1774,—

"*Resolved*, that no person in this town, who has heretofore been concerned in vending tea, or any other person may, on any pretence whatever, either sell himself, or be in any way accessory to selling any tea of foreign importation, while it remains burthened with a duty, under penalty of incurring the town's displeasure."

The displeasure of the town was more to be dreaded than the displeasure of King and Parliament by the village trader of that day.

A careful examination of these resolves and expressions of opinion, on the part of the town, as from time to time they were put upon the town record-book, shows us the gradual growth among the people of a spirit of insubordination, and a weakening of the hold

of the mother country upon their love and confidence. At first they remonstrated, with the expectation that their complaints would be regarded and their grievances redressed, but gradually they came to feel and believe that they must look out for themselves, and take into their own hands such redress. Thus, step by step, were the people led on to do, in 1776, what few, if any of them, would for a moment have thought of doing when, in 1770, they remonstrated with filial confidence and boldness against an oppressive act of the government they revered and trusted.

CHAPTER CXXXII.

ANDOVER—(*Continued*).

REVOLUTION.

BUT, as the spirit of resistance to the oppressive acts of Parliament grew strong in the colonies, the determination of the British King, Ministry, Parliament and people to exercise supreme authority in America became more firmly fixed. It was finally determined to use force to subjugate the contumacious colonists. Boston, as the most pestilent breeder of sedition, was the first to feel the heavy hand of authority. An act was passed in March, 1774, closing the port of Boston to commerce. This was speedily followed by an act creating General Gage the military commander of America, the civil Governor of Massachusetts, and four regiments of soldiers were given him to enforce his authority. He was further directed to take immediate measures to bring the ringleaders of the revolt to merited punishment. Samuel Adams was singled out as especially worthy of condemnation.

In order to guard against any interference of the local courts, it was also provided that any revenue officer, magistrate, or soldier indicted for murder should be sent to Nova Scotia or Great Britain for trial. And to make the grip of power doubly sure, the quartering of troops within the town of Boston was sanctioned.

So much of the charter of Massachusetts Bay as gave to the Legislature the election of councilors was abolished; town-meetings, except for the choice of town officers, or by permission of the Governor were forbidden; sheriffs were placed under executive authority, and juries were to be summoned by the sheriffs.

While Parliament was thus passing its coercive acts, the people of the provinces were not unmindful of the seriousness of the crisis, or inactive. A representative gathering by committees of the towns of the province was held in Boston for deliberation and unity of action. A Committee of Correspondence embracing all the colonies, was formed. The cause of one was made the cause of all. Outward pressure brought inward unity. The thirteen provinces pledged themselves to sustain one another. Other commercial towns engaged to suspend all commerce with Great Britain and the West Indies.

A solemn league and covenant, drawn up by Warren, suspending all commercial intercourse with the mother country, was signed by the great mass of the citizens of Boston, and of many other towns in the province. The signing of this covenant was called traitorous in a proclamation by the Governor, and magistrates were enjoined to seize, and put on trial all such signers. This threat rapidly increased the number of subscribers to the "solemn covenant." At the suggestion of the Legislature of Massachusetts Bay, a congress of the colonies met in Philadelphia the 1st day of September, 1774, and, after long deliberation and a free exchange of opinion, unanimously resolved not to import any merchandise from Great Britain or Ireland after the 1st day of the coming December, and to export no merchandise (rice excepted) to Great Britain, Ireland or the West Indies after the 10th day of September of the following year, provided the redress of American grievances should be delayed until that time. They also approved the opposition of the inhabitants of Massachusetts Bay to the execution of the late acts of Parliament.

The people of Andover watched with eager interest the action of their own Provincial Congress, but with more intense feeling that of the Continental Congress. After the dissolution of these assemblies, the town of Andover, on the 26th day of December,

"*Resolved*, That it is the indispensable duty of this town strictly to conform and firmly adhere to the Association of the grand American Continental Congress, and to the resolve of the Provincial Congress of the 5th of December thereto relating, and in order that this may be thoroughly effected, that the inhabitants of the town of the age of twenty-one years and upwards subscribe the following agreement, viz.:

"We, the subscribers, having attentively considered the Association of the grand American Continental Congress respecting the non-importation, non-exportation and non-consumption of goods, etc., signed by the Delegates of this and the other Colonies on the Continent, and the Resolve of the Provincial Congress of the 5th of December thereto relating, do heartily approve the same, and every part of them, and in order to make said Association and Resolve our own personal act, Do, by these Presents, under the sacred ties of virtue, honor and love of our country, firmly agree and associate fully and completely to observe and keep all and every article and clause in said association and resolve contained, according to the true intent, meaning and letter thereof, and will duly inform and give notice of every evasion or contravention of either, as far as we are able; and we further covenant, that if any person or persons of the age of twenty-one years and upwards shall neglect or refuse to subscribe this agreement when tendered to him or them, that we will withdraw all commerce, trade or dealing from such, so long as they shall continue thus inimical to the public good, and that their names shall be entered on the records of this town, and published in the *Essex Gazette*, as enemies to their country."

As there are no names of contumacious persons to be found upon the town record, it is to be inferred that all the male inhabitants of the town, of twenty-one years of age and upward, signed the agreement. This agreement was certainly very strict and comprehensive in its terms, indicating an invincible determination to resist to the bitter end all en-

croachments upon their rights. As the prospect became increasingly clear that a resort to arms would be necessary for the preservation of these rights, it was voted, "that one-quarter part of all the training soldiers of the town enlist themselves, and for their encouragement they are promised pay for every half-day they shall be exercised in the art military." While preparation was thus made for war, a large and influential "Committee of Safety" was chosen, whose duty it was to suppress mobs and riots, maintain peace and harmony, good will and affection among the people, and, by their advice and example, promote good manners and correct living. To this committee was soon after added another, called a "Committee of Inspection," whose duty it was to see to it that the "non-consumption agreement be strictly adhered to;" that every species of extravagance and dissipation be discountenanced. They were to recommend a reduction in the articles and expense of mourning apparel, to inspect the traders of the town, and if any had violated the rules of the Association, to publish their names. They were further "to encourage the people to improve the breed of sheep, and to increase their number;" at the same time they were to "promote agriculture, arts and manufactures."

It is to be observed that these frequent town-meetings and their energetic acts were in defiance of law, the Provincial Legislature having been set aside by the Governor, and the town-meeting suppressed by act of Parliament. But never were town officials more efficient or better obeyed. Events moved fast in those days. In January, 1775, the Committee of Inspection was chosen; in February it was voted to furnish the enlisted soldiers "with bayonets at the expense of the town," and for this purpose, after collecting those "in the hands of individuals," the persons in charge were directed to "procure one hundred more to be made as soon as possible, and supply those firelocks that are effective, which belong to the minute-men, with good bayonets as soon as may be." At this time there were four enlisted companies of one hundred men each in the town—two belonging to the South Parish, and two to the North. These were put under drill two or three times a week.

While the provincial towns were thus preparing to defend their rights by arms, the Parliament of Great Britain was sending an address to the King declaring that "a rebellion existed in Massachusetts," and pledging "their lives and properties for its suppression." An act was also passed, aimed especially at Massachusetts, excluding the fishermen of New England from the Banks of Newfoundland. By this act the coercion of idleness and starvation was brought to bear upon disloyalty. Its effect was to change indignation into detestation. The yeomanry of the country deeply sympathized with the fishermen of the coast. These aggressive acts, designed to punish and subdue the malcontents, served to unite all classes of the people, North and South, more firmly, and to deepen their determination to maintain their rights at every cost. The Second Provincial Congress of Massachusetts, sitting in Concord, appointed officers to command the forces of the colony, if there should be occasion for their use; chose a "Committee of Safety," charged to resist every attempt at executing the Act of Parliament, and another committee to draw up regulations for the constitutional army; advised the people to pay their province tax to a treasurer of their own choice; made announcements for collecting military stores; sent out an address to their constituents, in which they declared "that resistance to tyranny becomes the Christian and social duty of each individual," and after appointing a day of fasting, dissolved on the 15th day of April.

On the day after this adjournment General Gage began secret preparations for sending out an expedition to destroy some military stores which had been collected at Concord. As stealthily as possible, on the evening of the 18th of April, under the shelter of the darkness of night, eight hundred infantry and grenadiers, the flower of the army in Boston, left the barracks, crossed the Charles, and took up their march for Concord, delighted at the prospect of an agreeable excursion into the country, and the opportunity of inspiring terror among the boorish rebels of the villages around. This expedition, with its purport, was quickly known to the patriots within the city, and speedily the news of it was communicated to the towns between Charlestown and Concord, and from them spread far and wide over the country. As the expedition, in the dawn of the morning, entered the village of Lexington, it came upon a small body of armed men drawn up near their meeting-house. Here was an opportunity for eight hundred disciplined soldiers, well armed, to show their superior valor in an attack upon some sixty villagers, assembled with muskets to protest against an invasion of their rights. They were bidden to disperse, failing in which, they were fired upon. Seven of these Lexington men were killed and nine wounded—a quarter part of all who, that morning, stood upon the village green, as the picket-guard of American liberty.

The news of this slaughter spread over the country upon the wings of the wind. And while the British company proceeded on this expedition and spiked two old cannon at Concord, destroyed an insignificant amount of flour and some old gun-carriages, wounded two and killed two of the Concord minute-men, losing, in turn, two killed and others wounded, the county towns in Middlesex and Essex had been aroused, and armed men from all quarters flocked to the scene of conflict. In Andover, as in other towns, the meeting-house bells rang out their warning, and the heavy beat of the alarm-drum summoned the farmer at his plow, the mechanic in his shop and the minister in his study; and all, leaving their teams, their tools, their books, without even stopping to change

their clothes, hurried to the places of rendezvous, with musket and powder-horn in hand.

Before night came on, the four militia companies of Andover were on the march. There were two hundred and twenty-two men in these companies, some of whom doubtless belonged to the neighboring towns of Methuen and Boxford. They marched under the command of Captain Henry Abbot, Captain Joshua Holt, Lieutenant John Adams and Lieutenant Peter Poor.

They were, however, too distant to arrive in time to participate in the running fight from Lexington back to Charlestown. They were in season, however, to see some of the results of the first fight in the interest of American independence,—the broken windows, the plundered houses, the burning barns, the wounded and the dead, both grenadier and minuteman. It has been reported, with doubtful authority, that a private of Captain Joshua Holt's company, Charles Furbush, with another, on being fired upon by a British soldier, who was plundering a house, rushed into the house and killed the plunderer. A private belonging to the company of Captain Ames, Thomas Boynton, kept a journal, and has left this record of the day's experience, which was included in the printed documents of the Massachusetts Historical Society for 1877:

"ANDOVER, April 19, 1775.

"This morning, being Wednesday, about the sun's rising the town was alarmed with the news that the Regulars was on their march to Concord. Upon which the town mustered and about 10 o'clock marched onward for Concord. In Tewksbury news came that the Regulars had fired on our men in Lexington, and had killed 8. In Billricke news came that the enemy were killing and slaying our men in Concord. Bedford we had the news that the enemy had killed 2 of our men and had retreated back; we shifted our course and persued after them as fast as possible, but all in vain; the enemy had the start 3 or 4 miles, It is said that their number was about 1500 men. They were persued as far as Charlestown that night; the next day they passed Charles River. The loss they sustained as we hear were 500; our men about 40. To return, after we came into Concord road we saw houses burning and others plundered and dead bodies of the enemy lying by the way, others taken prisoners. About eight at night our regiment came to a halt in no time The next morning we came into Cambridge and there abode."

This is doubtless a correct account of the day's work of the Andover companies. It shows the marvellous celerity with which, in those days, when there was neither telegraph, railroad nor even a daily stage, the news of the marching of the grenadiers from Boston for Concord, on the night of the 18th of April, must have reached Andover in season to have collected together more than two hundred men from all over the town, ready for a march to Concord at ten o'clock in the morning of the 19th. They certainly deserved the name of "minute-men."

The Andover troops went into camp in Cambridge under the command of General Ward. Here they were subjected to a drill not very exacting. Many of them obtained short furloughs to return to their homes, which they had so hastily left, to put their affairs in order and make better provision for their own comfort.

The women and children who were left on this eventful morning, when their husbands, fathers and brothers marched away to join battle with the British forces, were in no enviable condition. The fortune of war being proverbially uncertain, these loved ones might never be seen by them again alive. The suddenness of the departure had precluded any preparation for the care of farm, barn, stock or children. Then, might not the British push forward even so far as Andover? Fear started the rumor in one neighborhood that the dreaded regulars were coming. After the noise of the morning, the stillness of the evening was itself a terror. The isolated farm-house, without the husband and father, became the habitation of anxiety, tears and prayers. But, however painful and burdensome might be this desolation and the augmented care and toil, the women of that day did not hold back their husbands and sons from the perilous contest for their inalienable rights.

The apprehension in Andover was at this time so great that, on the 29th day of May, in town-meeting, it was voted "that a watch should be kept in the town." Sentinels were appointed to patrol the streets at night: and, if any person should be found walking the streets or elsewhere after nine o'clock, he should be questioned as to his business, and if, on being thus questioned, he should neglect or refuse to reply, he should be challenged "with a strong voice," and commanded, on the authority of a "guard," to stop, on his peril. If the challenged person should disregard this summons, then the sentinel was directed to fire. The sentinel was further empowered to detain and bring before a magistrate any person who did not give a good account of himself. This action shows a startled, tremulous state of feeling among the people. There was something in the air to arouse suspicion and demand extraordinary vigilance. Spies, informers, British sympathizers, incendiaries might choose the darkness of the night to do some mischief to the property or families of the absent soldiers. For the first time in its history, the town felt its need of night watchmen to guard its streets with loaded muskets in their hands. But these nervous apprehensions were soon to be overborne by serious distresses.

Lord Howe had superseded Gage in the chief command of the British forces in America. He had brought with him from England large re-enforcements, with an ample supply of military equipments and such able officers as Clinton and Burgoyne. It was chafing to the pride of the British commander and soldiers to be cooped up in a small town by a heterogeneous company of undisciplined, badly-equipped and poorly-officered farmers. An aggressive movement was planned. This becoming known to the Committee of Safety and communicated to the officers and men at Cambridge, a counter-movement was determined upon in advance of the British attack. It was decided to occupy Bunker Hill, one of the neighboring heights which commanded Boston.

A thousand men were detailed under the command of Prescott. Among this detachment were three companies under the command of captains from Andover,—Captain Benjamin Ames, Captain Charles Furbush and Captain Benjamin Farnum. A large proportion of the private members belonged also to Andover, though by no means all. There seems to have been a great mixing up of companies for this enterprise, not a few volunteers falling into the ranks of the detached companies to take the places of absentees.

As the sun was setting on the afternoon of the 16th of June, the forces under command of Prescott were drawn up on Cambridge Common, where they listened to an earnest prayer offered by Dr. Langdon, president of Harvard College. The hour, the special interest shown by all in authority in what was transpiring, the solemn and fervent supplication for the blessing of heaven upon the assembled companies, added to the mystery as to their destination, gave to the common soldier a profound sense of the significance and peril of the work in which he was about to engage, and the honor to which he was called, in being selected to participate in such a work. When night came on and silence reigned in camp, this detachment, laden with pick-axe and shovel, as with musket and powder-horn, marched across Charlestown Neck, with no sound of fife or drum-beat, to Breed's Hill, threw up their intrenchments, and, to the best of their ability, prepared themselves for the desperate and bloody struggle of the next day. The discovery by the British of this earth-work in the early morning, their astonishment, the bombardment by the war-vessels lying in the offing, the embarking of two thousand of the choicest troops of England, with Major-General Howe himself in command, and their landing in Charlestown, the two unsuccessful and disastrous attacks, and the final successful one, together with the retreat of the American soldiers for lack of powder, are familiar in their details to all.

The description of these events by Thomas Boynton, sergeant in the Andover company, commanded by Captain Ames, is worth quoting. It runs thus:

"Three regiments were ordered to paraid at 6 o'clock in the afternoon, namely: Conl. Fryes, Conl. Bridge's and Conl. Prescotts, after which being done we attended prayers and about 9 at night we marched to Charlestown with about a 10 0 men, and at about 11 o'clock we began to intrench in sight of Boston and the shiping. At the sun's rising, they began to fire upon us from the shiping, the 3d or 4th shot they kild one man, and many others escaped very narrowly. At length they ceased their fire. Our work went on continually; they began about 8 or 9 o'clock from Corps Hill and continued a hot fire. About 2 or 3 o'clock the enemy landed and advanced toward us, its thot to the number of 2000 men, and soon plauted their cannon and began the fire and advancing up to our Fort. After they came within gunshot we fired, and then ensued a very hot engagement. After a number of shots passed, the enemy retreated, and we ceased our fire for a few minutes. They advanced again, and we began a hot fire for a short time. The enemy scaling our walls and the number of our men being few, we was ordered to retreat, at which time the enemy were allmost round us and a continual firing at our heals."

It will be observed that there is no mention here of the second repulse, which our histories of the day's transaction uniformly narrate. This omission, on the part of one engaged in the struggle, is certainly noticeable. But this evidence of omission on the part of one narrator cannot invalidate the testimony of many equally competent witnesses to the fact that three attacks were made, with two repulses.

That there was fighting going on in Charlestown, and that the Andover companies were engaged in it, was known in Andover in the early part of the day. The booming of cannons from the ships and from Copp's Hill was heard in the homes of the soldiers in the trenches. The people left their work, gathered in the streets and on the hill-tops. Many hastened to the place of conflict with provisions and other supplies, women brought out their old linen for bandages and their choice cordials, for the use of the wounded, and many a parent's, sister's or wife's heart beat anxiously for the loved one exposed to death, possibly lying wounded, possibly dead.

The next day brought tidings of the battle and its disasters. There is no full record to be found of the casualtics in the Andover companies. It is known, however, that Captain Farnum was badly wounded, that Captain Furbush was disabled early in the fight, and that his lieutentant, Samuel Bailey, Jr., was killed. Of Captain Ames' company, it is known that Joseph Chandler, Philip Abbot and William Haggit were killed, and that Lieutenant Isaac Abbot, Lieutenant Joshua Lovejoy, James Turner, Jeremiah Wardwell, Stephen Chandler and Israel Holt were wounded. Thus was a nation's joy at the successful resistance by undisciplined militia to the systematic and repeated attacks of the veteran soldiers of England tempered by the tears of those who mourned over their heroic dead. The next day was the Sabbath. When its sacred light dawned upon the hillsides of Andover the town was in a ferment of excitement. It was rumored that a large number of her sons had been killed or wounded. Uncertainty, anxiety and grief pervaded the place.

The thoughts of all were turned towards Cambridge. All who could go, hastened thither. The sanctuary was forsaken. The Rev. Jonathan French, the pastor of the South Church, who in early life had been a soldier and afterwards a military surgeon, seizing his Bible and surgical instruments, hastened to the succor of his wounded and bereaved parishioners in camp. This is the account he gives of the state of things on that Sabbath day in June:

"Our houses of public worship were generally shut up. It was the case here. When the news of the battle reached us, the anxiety and distress of wives and children, of parents, of brothers, sisters and friends was great. It was not known who were among the slain or living, the wounded or the well. It was thought justifiable for us who could to repair to the camp, to know the circumstances, to join in the defence of the country and prevent the enemy from

pushing the advantages they had gained, and to afford comfort and relief to our suffering brethren and friends."

The presence of this helpful and sympathetic pastor was a healing balm to his wounded parishioners and a sweet consolation to those who wept over their dead. Dr. Thomas Kittredge, of the North Parish, was the surgeon of Colonel Frye's regiment, and doubtless gave special care to his wounded fellow-townsmen and acquaintances.

But, with all these alleviations, not a few Andover homes were made desolate by these glorious battles, which awakened a nation to a consciousness of its power, and to a determination to use that power for the preservation of its rights.

The Andover soldiers were doubtless better cared for than were those from a distance,—garments, provisions, powder, accoutrements and other things that contributed to their comfort and efficiency were taken to them by relatives, friends and the officers of the town. They also enjoyed the privilege of visits from their parents, wives, children, friends and fellow-townsmen, and the not infrequent opportunity of short visits to their homes. Those who had been engaged in the Bunker Hill fight doubtless felt their importance among their old friends and associates, and never allowed the stories or achievements of that momentous day to lose anything of interest or marvel by frequent repetition. Thus it came to pass that single exploits were claimed by or ascribed to different persons. These men were certainly the heroes of the hour, and their memory is sacred.

The nine months which followed the battle of Bunker Hill previous to the evacuation of Boston were trying months to its citizens. Not a few of the poorer class of the people were driven from the city by the British soldiers. They found refuge and support in the neighboring towns. A company of them came to Andover, where they were hospitably received and their necessities relieved. There were also some rich and well-to-do citizens who voluntarily left the city, who, from their acknowledged sympathy with "the rebels," had reason to fear molestation or insult. Andover had its share of such exiles. Among the number we find Mr. William Phillips, nephew of Rev. Samuel Phillips, first pastor of the South Church. He was a wealthy merchant of Boston, the associate of Hancock and Samuel Adams in their unflinching hostility to the Stamp Act and the tea tax. Mr. Nathan Appleton, also a prosperous merchant and ardent patriot, found for a time a safe retreat on the Andover hills. He describes himself as seeking amusement in his forced retirement from business in "hoeing my potatoes and beans." And when in this quiet retreat a son was born to him, he writes exultingly to a friend. "I named him last Sabbath, George Washington." Another Boston man who at this time made Andover his temporary abode was Mr. Joseph Hall. While here he became the father of a boy, whom "he had christened by the Rev. Mr. French," pastor of the South Church, as "Joseph Warren, to perpetuate the memory of Major-General Joseph Warren, who was slain on Bunker Hill in the ever memorable battle on the 17th of June, 1775."

This christening took place on the 19th of November, five months subsequent to that "ever memorable battle." Most likely it was the first christening of the kind, of which there have been multitudes since, in honor of that high-spirited, self-sacrificing man, who, to rare abilities and generous culture, added purity of life, manly character and fervent patriotism, and who, to crown all, gave up his life fighting as a common soldier in the ranks for the liberty of his country.

In these perilous times Andover became not only the refuge of the poor driven from their homes by hostile soldiers, and the wealthy fleeing from them for safety, but Harvard College sought protection for her choicest treasures within its bounds. By a special act of the Provincial Congress, a portion of the library of the college was transferred to this town, and placed in the residences and under the care of Mr. Samuel Osgood and George Abbot, Esq., This removal was for the purpose of preserving these invaluable books from destruction or capture, should the British, in the fortune of war, gain possession of Cambridge. This small library was held to be of such priceless worth by our fathers as to make it fitting for the Congress, which had taken in hand the task of resisting the tyranny of Britain, to make special provision for its safety.

On the disbanding of the companies first enlisted and the calling out of a fresh levy of troops for a much longer term of service, Andover came promptly forward with a large number of enlistments. The brave and experienced Colonel James Frye, who led her sons in the siege of Louisbourg and at the battle of Bunker Hill, had ceased from his labors, dying at his home on the 8th of January, 1776. Captain Benjamin Farnum and Captain John Peabody, natives of this town, commanded companies in which were enrolled many Andover men. But, in the new disposition of the troops, companies were not made up, as at first, so exclusively of men belonging to one town or section of a town. Thus, in the company of Captain Peabody were to be found men from Haverhill, Methuen, Bradford, Boxford and other places as well as Andover. Hence the Andover soldiers were also scattered among different companies, regiments and brigades. This renders it impossible, at this remove in time, to follow their course or note their conduct. A few of them were assigned to the detachment of General Heath and went with him to the neighborhood of New York. A much larger number were sent North to support the army under the command of General Schuyler. In this service the company of Captain Farnum, composed largely of Andover men, as part

of the regiment of Colonel Francis, was ordered to reinforce Fort Ticonderoga. Their march towards this distant fortress was through roadless forests, muddy morasses, swollen creeks and bridgeless rivers. Before they could reach their destination the stronghold capitulated. This surrender forced a retreat, which, if possible, was more exhausting than the advance. For needed rest, they halted for a time on an island in the Hudson River, between Fort Edward and Saratoga. From hence they marched to this village, shipping their stores down the stream. Here they remained until August 3d, when they were ordered to Stillwater, where they arrived, according to the diary of Captain Farnum, "about one o'clock at nite; lodged on the wet ground. In the morning the ground was laid out for each brigade to camp in. We got our boards out of the river and made our huts. Those that had tents pitched them." Tents were scarce. The soldiers were disheartened by their wearisome and useless marches, retreats, reverses, sicknesses and bad leadership. But to this despondent company there came the cheering news that their compatriots had rallied and beaten the choice soldiers of Britain at Bennington. In his hut at Stillwater, Captain Farnum makes a note of this,—"The following is just from Bennington by express: that the battel their has turned in our favor; that our army has kiled and taken 936; that the loss on our side 20 kiled and 80 wounded. 4 brs. field Peaces taken from the enemy." This good news was refreshing to the wearied soldiers at Stillwater. And when, two months later, Burgoyne surrendered with his army of nearly six thousand choice troops and capable officers, this oil of joy must have done much towards bringing health to their sickened hearts.

When fairly recruited, the company of Captain Farnum was sent to Albany, thence down the river and on to the army of Washington, then operating in the neighborhood of Philadelphia. Here, instead of an active campaign, the excitement of battle and generous fare, they were called to hardships more severe than those endured in their march through the northern wilderness. The winter of 1777–78 is memorable in the history of the war for the terrible privations and sufferings of the army under the immediate command of Washington, in its winter encampment at Valley Forge. Many of the soldiers were destitute of blankets, clothing and shoes. Their marches were tracked with blood. The small-pox and other diseases, aggravated by their destitution, added to their wretchedness. The soldiers from Andover seem to have suffered less in these regards than others, relieved in part, it may be, by friends at home.

In addition to the lengthy enlistments, there were frequent calls upon the militia for short terms of service on special expeditions or to meet a special emergency. Thus, a regiment was called out mainly from Essex County, and placed under the command of Colonel Samuel Johnson, of Andover, for the purpose of assisting the Army of the North after the abandonment of Fort Ticonderoga by Saint Clair and his disastrous retreat through the wilderness. There were a goodly number of Andover men in this regiment, in the two companies commanded respectively by Captain John Abbot and Captain Samuel Johnson. This regiment was placed under the orders of General Lincoln, and was directed by him to harass the rear of Burgoyne. For this purpose they marched upon Fort Ticonderoga in company with two other regiments of a like character. Though not succeeding in recapturing the fort, they secured considerable stores, arms and ammunition from the enemy, destroyed a large number of boats, took nearly three hundred prisoners and set at liberty one hundred American prisoners. By this action the march of Burgoyne southward was greatly embarrassed and much assistance thus rendered towards his ultimate defeat. General Lincoln had joined Gates before the battles which resulted in the surrender of Burgoyne, and it is but reasonable to suppose that the regiment of Colonel Johnson, in which the Andover soldiers served, was engaged in some of the fights which led to this surrender. In an obituary notice of Colonel Johnson, published in 1796, we find the following testimony:

"In 1777 he commanded a regiment detached from the county of Essex, and led them to victory and glory in the memorable action on the 7th of October, where his firmness and courage were particularly distinguished. His regiment was a part of that respectable yeomanry whom General Burgoyne honored as the owners of the soil—men determined to conquer or die."

In the decisive battle on the 7th of October, which Burgoyne had challenged, it is said by Bancroft that "during all the fight neither Gates nor Lincoln appeared on the field," "that the action was the battle of the husbandmen," and "the victory was due to the enthusiasm of the soldiers." The regiment of Colonel Johnson must have taken a hand in this "battle of the husbandmen," composed as it was of the yeomanry of Andover and other farming towns in Essex County.

While the town was busy in fitting out and sending forth her sons to endure wearisome marches, severe privations and sickness in the cheerless winter camps, and wounds and death on the battle-field, she was not unmindful of what was transpiring in the Continental Congress. The idea of national independence had, early in the controversy, been entertained by some leading people in the town, and this idea had been steadily growing in favor during the years of strife and sacrifice. The people in town-meetings and their representatives in the Provincial Assembly gave expression to this idea or wish months before the Colonial Congress ventured publicly to entertain the question. Wisely, Congress waited to

hear the voice of the people. On the 12th day of June, 1776, the citizens of Andover were assembled in town-meeting to pass upon this pregnant question: "Should the Honorable Congress, for the safety of the colonies, declare them independent of Great Britain, will you solemnly engage with your lives and fortunes to support them in the measure?"

This grave question was earnestly discussed in all its bearings, with the serious issues and personal responsibilities involved in it, and then, by a unanimous vote, it was answered in the affirmative.

The attention of the people was also directed towards the creation of a permanent State government. The functions of Governor had been exercised thus far, since the setting aside of the royal authority, by an elective Council and a representative Assembly. This was but a temporary arrangement. The time had come for an established form of government. The matter was brought before the people in their respective town-meetings for consideration and action. The citizens of Andover, being thus called together October 3, 1776, in legal town-meeting, to give their judgment on the subject, after full discussion, passed the following vote:

"That it is the consent of the inhabitants of this town now assembled, that the present House of Representatives of this state of Massachusetts Bay in New England, together with the Council, if they consent in one body with the House, and by equal voice, should consult, agree on and enact such a Constitution and form of government for this State, as the said House of Representatives and Council on the fullest and most mature deliberation, shall judge will most conduce to the safety, peace and happiness of this State, in all after successions and generations, provided said Constitution and form of Government be made public for the inspection, approbation, amendment or disapprobation of the inhabitants before the ratification thereof by the Assembly."

This plan for the creation of a State Constitution and form of government failed. Subsequently a convention of representatives of the people was called for the same purpose. This convention met in Cambridge in September of the year 1779. The delegates from Andover who sat in this assembly were Samuel Osgood, Esq., Mr. Samuel Phillips, Jr., Mr. John Farnum, Jr., and Mr. Zebediah Abbot. A Constitution was drafted and submitted to the people for ratification. In Andover, at a legally called meeting, held May 15, 1780, "after due deliberation and debate," it was "adopted with almost entire unanimity."

These votes show us that all important measures affecting the welfare of the State or country, which came before the Provincial Assemblies or the Continental Congress, were first directly or indirectly submitted to the judgment of the people. The leading men of these times unquestionably did much to create and direct public opinion. But the deliberative assemblies were careful to learn and to follow in this action the expressed wishes of the people. In this respect we see a wide difference between the North American Revolution and the revolutions of South America and Europe.

When, at last, after nearly eight years of hardship, suffering and bloodshed, a treaty of peace was signed in Paris by the representatives of Great Britain and her rebellious American colonies, and the Declaration of Independence of July, 1776, was thus made an accomplished fact, the joy of the people was boundless. The "freeholders and the sons of freeholders" who had done the fighting, endured the privation and suffering, furloughed or disbanded, returned to their homes and farms, bearing little else than their well-tried muskets and a consciousness of having done their duty faithfully and successfully.

During these weary years of war and waiting, Andover continued steadfast in her devotion to the cause she had espoused. She responded cheerfully to the frequent calls for new recruits, re-enlistments and temporary service. Her quota was always full. To encourage enlistments, it was voted, November 18, 1777, "that the town will supply the families of the non-commissioned officers and private soldiers belonging to this town that are engaged in the Continental army with the necessaries of life that their circumstances may require." February 16, 1778, it was "voted to procure for each soldier in the Continental army doing duty for this town one pair of shirts, two pair of stockings, one pair of shoes and a blanket." This undoubtedly was called out by the dire destitution of the troops at Valley Forge, where Andover had a respectable contingent.

In 1779 it was voted "to hire money on the Town's credit, and immediately procure the necessaries of life for the use of the families" of the soldiers in the Continental army.

In July, 1780, it was voted "to provide for the three months' enlisted soldiers, give obligations for their State pay and hire money on the town's credit."

In December of the same year it was voted that "the Town do hereby engage to every able-bodied, effective man that shall Inlist, that in case the monthly pay of forty shillings engaged by Congress, to be paid in money of the new emission, shall depreciate from its present value, which is to be considered as now equal to $\frac{1}{72}$ of the same sum in coined silver, the Town will fully make up such Depreciation at the Expiration of each year's service." As the Continental paper was continually on the downward slide, this backing of the town added no little to the security of the soldier and to the cost of the town.

But the trials of the people were not solely those growing out of the enlistment and support of the soldiers engaged in the war. The withdrawal of a large number of the young and efficient cultivators of the soil caused the farms to be neglected, and thus to become unproductive. The interest of the people was so centred in the doings of the army and the legislative assemblies as to lessen their efficiency in their own secular affairs. They rapidly became poorer year by year. Their homes were made desolate by the death or protracted absence of their sons. But amidst these trials, so wasting and long continued,

we find no murmuring word on the record-book of the town. How many soever may have been the tears shed in secret, and the privations endured in heroic silence, no man wavers in his purpose. There is no looking back to the prosperous days under British rule; no flinching from the next forward step toward independence, however dangerous the step may be. They have a firm faith in the righteousness of their cause, and are willing to trust the issue to the arbitrament of a righteous God. The oppressiveness of their condition, the under-stratum of sadness in their hearts, is, however, sometimes revealed in their public acts.

At the close of the war, the tension of that terrible strife having been taken from the minds and hearts of the people, they found themselves exhausted, unsettled, poor and encompassed with serious difficulties. Taxes were heavy, debts were numerous and large, metallic money was scarce, Continental currency was worth but a fraction of its face value, and daily depreciating. The products of the farm were scanty, owing to the years of neglect. A class of extortioners made their appearance, who exacted enormous interest, with heavy security, for ready money. The habits of the camp followed not a few of the returned soldiers to their homes. The once industrious, frugal and temperate man was too often found with the idlers at the tavern, spending his scanty earnings in drink. Withal, the political atmosphere was unquiet, perturbed. Authority had not become firmly seated in either State or nation. An incipient rebellion broke out in the western section of the State, fomented and stimulated by the discontented and the vagabonds of all other sections. Andover speedily took issue with this spirit of insubordination, while admitting that there were imperfections in the government and grievances in its administration. Under the lead of an able committee, of which Hon. Samuel Phillips, then president of the Senate, was chairman, the citizens passed and put on record this expression of their sentiments Sept. 25, 1786,—"We esteem it our duty at the present day to bear our explicit testimony against all riotous and illegal proceedings, and against all hostile attempts and menaces against law, justice and good government, and to declare our readiness to exert ourselves in support of government and the excellent Constitution of this Commonwealth. But at the same time we suppose there are many things complained of which ought to be remedied, and it is our desire that every grievance may be in a constitutional way redressed." Then follow six specifications where there should or might be changes or amendmends of existing things for the public benefit. The paper, as a whole, while outspoken in regard to the existing abuses that were just subjects of complaint, is firm in its tone against all forcible and unconstitutional methods of redress.

When this discontent had culminated in an armed insurrection led by former officers of the army, the Governor called out a body of militia for its suppression, a fourth of which force was taken from Suffolk and Essex Counties. Andover responded to the call, and sent her soldiers, under the command of General Lincoln, to the scene of disturbance, prepared to fight for the maintenance of order and the Constitution as they had fought to secure national independence. Happily, while there was toilsome marching, there was no occasion for actual fighting. The insurrectionists quickly fled and dispersed on the approach of the State troops. On the dispersion of the malcontents, the General Court created "a special commission to treat with the disaffected and receive their submission," as there was reason to believe that numbers of them were anxious to renew their allegiance. The commissioners selected were General Lincoln, the commander of the troops; Samuel Phillips, President of the Senate, and author of the Andover declaration of sentiment; and Samuel Allyne Otis, Speaker of the House of Representatives. This commission entered at once upon its work, and traversing rapidly those districts of the State most infected with the spirit of resistance, meeting the disaffected in a friendly and conciliatory manner, in the course of a month succeeded in so reconciling the discontented as effectually to prevent any further outbreak.

Those who had personally participated in the insurrection by bearing arms were required to subscribe a paper confessing their wrong-doing, and that they were sincerely penitent for the same and desired to return to their allegiance. And they further pledged themselves to defend the government and to comply with the laws of the State as good citizens. Two credible witnesses were required to substantiate the sincerity of the person making this confession and agreement.

The commissioners, in their report to the General Court, on the 27th of April, stated that seven hundred and ninety persons had returned to their allegiance, and that, on a thorough investigation of the causes which led to the outbreak, they found that chief among them were "private debts," and the principal cause of these debts was "an undue rise of articles of foreign growth and manufacture."

The condition of the currency was a great cause of complaint and a very serious source of trouble. The extreme scarcity of coin and the low and lessening value of the Continental currency induced not a few persons to advocate the issue by the State of paper money. In opposition to this measure the town was outspoken. At a meeting held on the 17th of October, 1785, the following preamble and vote were passed: "*Whereas*, It has been said that a neighboring town has lately, by a public vote, expressed a disposition for a paper currency; voted, that Joshua Holt, Esq. (Representative for the town at the General Court), be, and he is hereby instructed in case any motion shall be made in the General Court for intro-

ducing a paper medium, vigorously and perseveringly to oppose the same, as being a measure calculated, in our opinion, to promote idleness, dissipation and dishonesty, and, by destroying the morals of the people, to bring on the ruin of the Commonwealth."

Our fathers may have forecast the evils consequent upon the issue by the State of a "paper medium" with extravagant forebodings, but their experience with the Continental currency might reasonably cause them anxious solicitude when it was proposed that the State should go into the manufacture of money. They sagely concluded that, while a "paper medium" might pay off debts, it would not promote morality. As early as 1778 the town had authorized the collector of taxes "to receive seventy-five dollars paper as equal to one silver dollar." The authority of Congress, making its paper currency a legal tender, and declaring him a public enemy who refused to take it, could not prevent its depreciation nearly to the point of worthlessness. The citizens of Andover did not wish to see this experiment repeated by their own Commonwealth.

But the difficulties and trials under which the people labored did not rapidly disappear. In fact, their condition in many respects was more trying than when subject to the rule of Great Britain. Under these disheartening circumstances, the General Court sent out an address to the people, among other things recommending and inculcating the practice of "those virtues which are necessary to form the basis of national happiness." On receiving this address, the town chose a committee to take it into consideration, and to report what measures are proper to be adopted to further the purposes of the address. "The Hon. Samuel Phillips, Esq., Capt. Peter Osgood, Hon. Samuel Phillips, Jr., Esq., Joshua Holt, Esq., Mr. Moody Bridges, Mr. Nehemiah Abbot, Lieut. John Ingalls, Mr. John Farnum and Capt. John Abbot, Jr.," composed this committee, and reported as follows:

"That, in their opinion, a deviation from the principles and practice of industry and economy has been the great cause of the scarcity of specie, the delinquency in the payment of taxes, and in the discharge of private debts; which delinquency naturally tends to mar the reputation and destroy the energy of Government, and to produce impatience in creditors, as well as uneasiness and complaint in debtors; and that hence arises the concern and disquietude of many in the community. Your Committee, therefore, consider this deviation as a fruitful parent of the evils we now suffer, and threatening us with speedy and complete ruin, unless prevented by a thorough reform. We, therefore, consider it of the highest importance to recur to those principles from which we have declined, and to exert ourselves for the encouragement of the manufactures of our own country in every proper way, which will consist with the [illegible] but now we [illegible] to engage our first attention, viz., the cultivation of our lands; and for this purpose the following resolve is proposed to be adopted by the town:

"Whereas the Legislature have warned this people of being in the [illegible] which the Parties of States have been generally swallowed up [illegible] warning, solemn as it is, appears to be founded in the highest reason; and as it is a part of sound wisdom to convert comforts and [illegible] into the means of advantage, in cheerful imitation of the patriotic example set us by the first Magistrate of the Commonwealth, his Council and the Legislature of the State. We hereby resolve [illegible] from them, and as far as in our power to prevent the excessive use and consumption of articles of foreign manufacture, especially articles of luxury and extravagance; and that we will exert our best endeavors for the promotion of industry and our own manufactures.'

"And in particular, that we will exert ourselves to increase our wool and flax as far as is practicable. That we will, as far as may be, avoid killing our sheep, or selling them for slaughter, after shearing time, till the wool be serviceable for clothing; And that we will exert ourselves to promote and encourage the manufactures of wool and flax and other raw materials into such articles as shall be useful in the community.

"And the inhabitants of the town of every description, but heads of families in particular, are hereby solicited, as they would falsify the predictions and disappoint the hopes of those who are inimical to our Independence and happiness; as they would gratify the anxious wishes of our best friends and the friends of freedom in general; as they regard the political well-being of themselves and posterity; as they hold precious the memory of the heroes and patriots, and of our own kindred who have sacrificed their lives that we may enjoy the fruits of virtuous freedom; to unite in this resolution, and to exert their utmost influence, in every proper way, to promote the important design of it.

"And upon this occasion, we apply ourselves to the good sense and virtuous dispositions of the female sex, to the younger as well as the elder, that they would by their engaging examples, as well as in other proper ways, devote that power of influence, with which nature hath endowed them, to the purpose of encouraging every species of economy in living, and particularly, that neat plainness and simplicity in dress which are among the best tokens of a good mind, and which seldom fail to command the esteem and love of the virtuous and wise; giving preference to that clothing which is produced from our own flocks, and from our own fields.

"Your Committee, upon considering the principal obstacles that lie in the way of the desired reform, are clearly of opinion that an undue use of spirituous liquors has a powerful influence to enervate the body, to enfeeble the mind, and to promote dissipation, idleness and extravagance, which are never-failing causes of poverty and ruin. They, therefore, consider it of the highest importance to refrain from ourselves, and to discountenance in others, the undue use of spirituous liquors of all kinds."

This lengthy, carefully-prepared report, with its specific recommendations and pledges, was maturely considered, and, being read and put to vote, paragraph by paragraph, was accepted and adopted. It reveals to us a state of things in the town far from pleasing. With debt, delinquency in the payment of taxes, scarcity of money and general unthrift, there was laziness, extravagance and intemperance. There is something pathetic in this urgent appeal for industry, frugality and temperance to the ill-conditioned citizens of a town where once these virtues flourished as if indigenous to the soil. Some might have questioned whether that coveted jewel, independence, had not been bought at too great cost.

The repeated mention of manufactures and the encouragement of home industries shows us that thus early was discerned the impulse to industry, and the source of prosperity and wealth for the people of our State. Home manufactures were then looked to as a means of increasing the value of farm products, enlarging the number and variety of employments, keeping the money expended for manufactured goods at home, and stimulating enterprise and industry among the people.

It is impossible to give the names or the number of the men who were engaged in the service of the country from Andover during the war; nor can we tell with any degree of accuracy how many of the Andover soldiers were slain in battle, or how many died from wounds or diseases contracted while in the army.

One account says that during the war twenty soldiers died from the South Parish. It is hardly to be supposed that this number covers the deaths from all causes of soldiers from this parish, during the eight years of war. Nearly every family had its representative in the army, first or last. More than fifty men from the South Parish were in the company of Capt. Ames in the battle of Bunker Hill, three of whom were killed and seven wounded.

The following is a list of the commissioned officers from Andover who served in the war, as compiled by Miss S. L. Bailey in her carefully prepared and admirable volume, entitled "Historical Sketches of Andover" ("comprising the present towns of North Andover and Andover"). The writer of this sketch is greatly indebted to Miss Bailey for valuable information so laboriously and accurately collected.

Brigadier-General Joseph Frye.
Colonel James Frye.
Colonel Samuel Johnson.
Colonel Thomas Poor.[1]
Major Samuel Osgood.
Adjt.-Genl. Bimsley Stevens.
Captain Benjamin Ames.
Captain Henry Abbot.
Captain John Abbot.
Captain Stephen Abbot.
Captain John Adams.
Captain Benjamin Farnum.
Captain Charles Furbush.
Captain Joshua Holt.
Captain Samuel Johnson.
Captain John Peabody.
Dr. Thomas Kittredge.[2]

CHAPTER CXXXIII.

ANDOVER—(*Continued*).

FORMATION OF CONSTITUTION—INCIDENTS.

THE war having been brought to a satisfactory close, and independence of Great Britain having been achieved and acknowledged by the European powers, the next important and scarcely less difficult task to be undertaken was the formation of a national government. The problem was how to combine into one nation thirteen widely-separated States, with strong sectional and hereditary prejudices, with conflicting interests and sentiments, and diverse social habits, while giving reasonable liberty to each individual, adequate powers to each separate State for the proper conduct of its domestic affairs, and at the same time to confer sufficient power upon the central government to make its authority obeyed at home and respected abroad. The immediate solution of this intricate problem was forced upon the statesmen and people of the country.

The Articles of Confederation, under which the war had been conducted to the desired issue, were felt to be totally inadequate for the basis of a permanent and effective government. The outside pressure of a desperate war for existence being removed, there was not sufficient adhesion in the confederation to prevent the States from falling asunder, and thus creating confusion, rivalry and strife. The confederate Congress itself recognized this fact, and called a convention of the States to meet in Philadelphia to consult upon the condition of the country, and recommend such changes in the then-existing form of government as they might deem wise and necessary. This convention met, according to the call, on the 14th day of May, 1787. Sixty-five delegates, from twelve States, were elected to this assembly, ten of whom never attended. George Washington was made President of the Convention. After four months' thoughtful deliberation and discussion, a plan for a Constitution was submitted to a vote of the convention, approved by a majority of its members and signed by thirty-nine of them. It was then duly submitted to the Continental Congress, and by this body sent to the several States for amendment, ratification or rejection. It at once became the subject of lively discussion the country over. People differed widely as to its merits and the wisdom of its adoption. Leading statesmen were arrayed on either side of the question. The yeomanry of the country divided in like manner. With this state of feeling among the people, the Legislature summoned a convention to meet in Boston on the 9th of January, 1788, to take into consideration the project for a national Constitution and to act thereon.

The delegates to this convention from Andover were Dr. Thomas Kittredge, Peter Osgood, Jr., and William Symmes, Esq. The first two were men in mature life, of tried judgment and experienced in public affairs. The third was a promising lawyer, twenty-seven years of age, the son of the fourth pastor of the North Andover Parish, who had secured the respect and confidence of his fellow-townsmen by his ability, integrity, fairness and independence. This was his first appearance as a representative of the town in a deliberative assembly. The prevailing sentiment of the town was admitted to be against the adoption of the proposed constitution, and the delegates were understood to be in accord with the prevailing sentiment. As early as the 15th of November preceding, nearly two months before the meeting of the convention, Mr. Symmes wrote a private letter to Mr. Osgood, afterwards chosen his colleague, at the request of the latter, giving his impressions as to the new Constitution. In this letter he reviews in detail its more important provisions, condemning some of them in scathing language, while criticising others as of dangerous tendency. The chief brunt of his criticism is levied against the great power vested in the National Congress, the Judiciary and the President. In the closing paragraphs of his lengthy letter he says: "With regard to the Constitution taken into one view, it is a complete system of Federal government, every part of which is full of energy, and if it be established, I think it can never fail of being obeyed by the people; and no combination can ever be sufficiently extensive or secret to subvert it. In short,

[1] Of Methuen, in the latter part of his service.
[2] Surgeon of First Regiment.

the system would make us formidable abroad, and keep us very *peaceable* at home, and with some amendments, might do very well for us, if we would be contented to become citizens of America, and confuse the thirteen stripes and change the stars into one glorious sun. Let us pause. It is not in a few light strictures, it is not, perhaps, in the most acute and methodical essay, that the merits of this unexpected, this wonderful system can be strictly defined. Reading cannot be applied, and experience is out of the question. Thus much we may easily perceive: it is a great, almost a total, and probably a final change with regard to every state. So great a revolution was never before proposed to a people for their consent. In a time of profound peace, that a matter of such infinite concern should be submitted to general debate throughout such an empire as this, is a phenomenon entirely new. Let us make a due return to that Providence by which we enjoy the privilege, by using it like a wise, prudent and free people. Let us equally shun a hasty acceptance or a precipitate rejection of this all-important scheme. And if our final decision be the effect of true wisdom, let us never doubt the end will be happy."

The late Hon. Nathan Hazen, of Andover, who delivered an appropriate address on the life and character of Mr. Symmes at Andover, in the winter of 1859-60, considers this letter as "probably the earliest review made of the entire instrument." It is undoubtedly a fair expression of the views held by a large number of the intelligent citizens of the town at the time, and on this account merits this extended notice.

When the convention assembled, it was understood that a majority of the members were either decidedly opposed to the ratification or strongly leaning in that direction. But the friends of the measure, if in the minority, comprised some of the ablest, most experienced and most trusted men in the State, among whom were John Hancock, Theophilus Parsons, Rufus King, Fisher Ames, James Bowdoin, Caleb Strong and Samuel Adams. With candor, with urgency and eloquence, the friends of the measure justified its objectionable provisions and proclaimed its necessity.

Among the foremost of those to oppose it was Mr. Symmes. After listening to the debate for a week, he arose, and with a modest exordium, in which he expressed his hesitation at differing from men so much his superiors in age, wisdom and experience, gave his reasons for opposing the instrument, especially that section relating to taxation and collection of the revenues. This speech was a clear, forcible and candid presentation of the chief arguments of the opponents of the measure, and placed Mr. Symmes at once among the foremost leaders of the opposition in the chamber. In closing, with rare frankness addressing the chair, he said, "Sir, I wish the gentlemen who so ably advocate this instrument would enlarge upon this formidable clause," (that giving Congress power of taxation and raising revenue), "and I most sincerely wish that the effect of their reasoning may be my conviction. For, sir, I will not dishonor my constituents by supposing that they expect me to resist that which is irresistible—the force of reason. No, sir; my constituents wish for a firm, efficient continental government—but fear the operation of this which is now proposed. Let them be convinced that their fears are groundless, and I venture to promise in their name that no town in the Commonwealth will sooner approve the form or be better subjects under it."

Theophilus Parsons and others made reply to this forcible speech, with such convincing arguments, and set forth the necessity of a strong government with such persuasive reasons, as to carry conviction to the mind of Mr. Symmes. And when John Hancock moved certain amendments to the instrument, which were adopted by the convention—(following Mr. Turner, who had also opposed, but now strongly favored it)—he arose and said,—

"Mr. President, so ample have been the arguments drawn from our national distress, the weakness of the present confederation, the danger of instant disunion, and perhaps some other topics not included in these, that a man must be obstinate indeed to say, at this period, that a new government is needless. One is proposed. Shall we reject it totally, or shall we amend it? Let any man recollect or peruse the debates in this assembly, and, I venture to say, he shall not hesitate a moment, if he loves his country, in making his election.

"Upon the whole, Mr. President, approving the amendments, and firmly believing they will be adopted, I recall my former opposition, such as it was, to this Constitution, and shall, especially as the amendments are to be a *standing* instruction to our delegates until they are obtained, give it my unreserved assent.

"In so doing I stand acquitted to my own conscience. I hope and trust I shall to my constituents, and know I shall before God", (laying his hand on his breast).

This was a manly utterance; heroic, too, in the face of the recent vote of his constituents; for, while the debate was going on in the convention subsequent to the first speech of Mr. Symmes, the town held a meeting "for the purpose of expressing the sentiments of the inhabitants on the subject of the Federal Constitution." This meeting was more numerously attended than any preceding one in its history, and strong feeling was manifested. On the question being put by Judge Phillips, the moderator, one hundred and fifteen votes were counted in favor of the ratification of the Constitution, and one hundred and twenty-four for its rejection. The two colleagues of Mr. Symmes voted in accordance with this action of the town, though the town refused to give instructions to her delegates.

The course of Mr. Symmes, in changing his attitude from that of an outspoken opponent to that of a decided friend of the measure, and his vote for its ratification, had undoubtedly great weight with the wavering members of the convention. Mr. Hazen thinks it probably changed the final vote from rejection to ratification. He reasons in this wise: "It is moderate to suppose that, being the ablest member in the opposition, his knowledge the best, his motives wholly unimpeached, and yielding, as he declared,

only to the power of argument irresistible by his own mind, changing his views, and ranging himself on the other side, in so large an assembly, he would carry nine votes besides his own. The change of vote in this number only would have reversed the judgment of the convention. If, then, he led nine delegates for the Constitution, who, but for his persuasion, would have voted against it, we probably owe to his action whatever benefits the country has derived from the adoption of the Federal Union by Massachusetts at that time. The contemporary opinion was, that, if it had been rejected by this State, it would not have been accepted by nine others." In this view of the matter, the self-sacrificing action of the young, independent and conscientious lawyer from Andover was of inestimable benefit to the whole country. No one now doubts the wisdom or, in fact, the necessity at that time of the adoption of the Federal Constitution.

But Mr. Symmes paid the penalty of disregarding the expressed wishes of his excited constituents. On returning home he met with a cold reception. His honesty and heroism were not appreciated. Friends fell away. Of a sensitive nature and conscious of his own rectitude, he could not long brook this distrust and alienation of his fellow-citizens. He soon removed to Portland, Maine, where he achieved eminence and acquired property. The division which took place in the town on this question was unprecedented and long continued. Says Abbot, in his "History of Andover" (1829), "the disagreement on this subject was the occasion of a lasting division in town."

After the adoption of the Constitution and the election of Washington to the Presidency, nothing of special interest seems to have occurred in the civil history of the town for a number of years. Certain events of local interest that transpired at divers times it may be well here to mention.

It is said that a slave named Salem Poor, belonging to one of the Andover companies that fought at the battle of Bunker Hill, shot and killed Lieut.-Colonel Abercombie, of the British army. The story runs that, on the withdrawal of the Americans from the redoubt, in defending which they had exhausted their ammunition, the British colonel sprang upon the parapet exclaiming, "The day is ours!" Salem, hearing the boastful shout, turned around, and, taking deliberate aim with his musket, shot the officer dead. For this act he was highly commended by the officer in command, and became quite a hero in his company. At a later day he was called "a brave and gallant soldier" in a memorial to the Legislature recommending him as deserving some fitting reward.

On the 23d day of May, 1783, James Otis died, at the house of Mr. Jacob Osgood, in Andover, West Parish, where he had resided for some time. This gifted man had been among the foremost, firmest and most effective patriots of the country in his pronounced resistance to the tyrannous acts of the British Parliament. His eloquent speeches and forcible writings enlightened and electrified his countrymen. In the month of February, 1761, at the beginning of the controversy between Parliament and the colonies, "in the crowded council-chamber of the old Town House in Boston," before Chief Justice Hutchinson and his four associates, arguing against the act of Parliament empowering the collectors of customs to call to their assistance all the executive officers of the colony, he appealed to reason, universal principles founded in truth, the charter of Massachusetts and to the British Constitution itself, declaring that "an act of Parliament against the Constitution is void." So effective was this speech that Hutchinson secured from his associates a delay in their decision. It was likewise the electric spark that fired the soul of the young barrister, John Adams, as he sat listening in the council-chamber. It was the bugle-note which heralded the coming Revolution. Says Bancroft, "With a tongue of flame and the inspiration of a seer, he stepped forward to demonstrate that all arbitrary authority was unconstitutional and against law." This speech before the colonial justices has been called the "opening scene of American resistance." From this time for five years onward we find the name of James Otis associated with the names of Samuel Adams and Joseph Warren in all the patriotic movements of the colony antagonistic to the encroachments of the mother country. But, most unfortunately, his work came to an untimely close. Being of a sensitive and excitable nature, his splendid intellectual powers gradually gave way under the heavy strain put upon them. Enfeebled in mind, but not demented, he lived to see the close of the war, passing his last years at the house of Mr. Osgood. On the 23d of May, a month after the proclamation of peace, a storm coming up, the family hastily came together in the sitting-room of the house. Mr. Otis, with a cane in his hand, stood leaning against the entry-door, diverting the household with a story, when there suddenly came a vivid flash of lightning attended by a clap of thunder that shook the building to its foundations. Without a word, or the movement of a muscle, Mr. Otis fell dead into the arms of Mr. Osgood, who, seeing his condition, sprang forward to catch him. No other person in the room was in the least harmed. No slightest mark could be found on the person of Mr. Otis. He had frequently expressed a wish to die by a stroke of lightning. A kind Providence granted his prayerful desire. There is something in the taking off of this aged patriot by a flash of lightning in singular consonance with the fervid, brilliant and effective oratory of his earlier years.

At the opening of the war a serious difficulty was encountered by the Americans from the lack of ammunition. When Gen. Washington, on taking command of the troops at Cambridge, began to make

preparations for an attack upon the British in Boston, he found to his consternation that there "were not more than about thirty barrels of powder in the camp," and when, after considerable delay, a partial supply had been obtained from the Jerseys, he had scarcely ammunition to serve for more than a single day in a general action. This was an alarming state of things to be kept profoundly secret from foes, and told only in whispers to trusted friends. As one of the confidential friends of the General, and a member of the Massachusetts Assembly, Mr. Samuel Phillips, Jr., became aware of the fact. On the 3d of January, 1776, Mr. Phillips made a proposal to the Provincial Legislature to erect a powder-mill in Andover, with their approval and co-operation. This proposal was accepted, and an agreement entered into to supply him with saltpetre and sulphur, and a bounty of eight pence per pound was granted him for all the powder he should furnish. He was to sell to the government only, or, with their approval, to other States. Mr. Phillips at once entered upon his novel undertaking. Purchasing a mill-seat on the banks of the Shawshin River, he summoned his neighbors to aid him in constructing a canal, frankly telling them the state of things, and saying, "I want your help, and will engage to pay you, if the business pays; but if it fails, you must consent to lose your labor; the powder is needed for the common cause, and we must work together." They eagerly engaged in the arduous work, which was soon completed, Mr. Phillips himself, shovel in hand, working with the rest from morning till night. By the 10th of May he began to deliver powder from his mill, and during the year large supplies were furnished from it for the army and war-vessels,—not less than fifteen thousand and six hundred pounds. In the mean time other mills had been erected; but this was the chief manufactory in the country. The powder-mill, thus patriotically built, proved a pecuniary success, and was continued in operation till 1796, when, having for the second time been partially demolished by an explosion, the business was abandoned.

In the early part of his first administration Washington made a tour through the Eastern States for the benefit of his health, and for the purpose of making personal observations as to the condition of the people and country. He left the executive residence in New York on the 15th of October, 1789, in his private four horse carriage, attended by his official and private secretaries. His entire journey was an ovation.

On his way from Boston to Salem a company of horsemen from Andover, under Capt. Osgood, consisting of fifty men or more in red uniforms striped with green, met him at Lynn, and continued as his escort till he reached Portsmouth. This marked attention was paid the President at the instance of Judge Phillips, a personal friend and enthusiastic admirer.

On the return journey the Presidential party passed the night in Haverhill. Taking an early start the next Thursday morning, November 5th, they breakfasted in Andover at the tavern of Deacon Isaac Abbot, now the residence of the Hon. Samuel Locke. The biographer of Judge Phillips, Prof. J. L. Taylor, relates, "that while tarrying here he asked the little daughter of Deacon Abbot to mend for him his riding glove; and when she had done this, took her upon his knee and gave her a kiss, which so elated Miss Priscilla, that she would not allow her face to be washed again for a week."

After breakfast the President was conducted by Mr. Phillips to his mansion on the hill, in the southeast parlor of which he was introduced to Madam Phillips and familiarly entertained by herself, the Judge and their children for half an hour or so. The moment her distinguished visitor left the room, the courtly madam "tied a piece of ribbon upon the chair he had occupied during the interview, and there it remained ever afterwards until the day of his death, when she substituted for it a band of crape." The people gathered in large numbers on the green before the Mansion House to gaze upon the face and form of the man who had earned the title "Father of his Country." To gratify this laudable and affectionate curiosity of the people, the President, mounting his horse, rode upon the green, and there received the hearty greetings of the crowd of men, women and children, after which he departed for Lexington, attended by Judge Phillips and a cavalcade of citizens. The tavern where Washington took breakfast became thus a place of note, and still continues an object of interest to the inquisitive.

Judge Phillips' residence, built in 1782, was, at the time, the largest and finest house in town. After his death it was purchased by the trustees of Phillips Academy, and, under the name of the Mansion House, has been one of the best-known landmarks of Andover. In the early morning of November 29th, 1887, fires burst forth in two separate portions of the venerated and almost sacred building, and the morning light showed only the three tall chimneys left standing among the smoking ruins.

During the administration of President John Adams the relations of our government with the Republic of France became severely strained. The French Directory treated our plenipotentiaries with marked insolence, openly made aggressions upon our commerce, sent emissaries to stir up a factious opposition to the administration, persisted in extravagant demands for money, and, in manifold ways, by irritating acts, brought the two republics fearfully near an open rupture. In this perilous condition of affairs, the whole country being in a feverish state of anxiety, a legally called meeting of the inhabitants of the town was held on the 14th day of May, 1798, for the purpose, as the call reads, "to see if the town will take any measures for expressing their approbation of the measures taken by the President of the

United States in regard to the French Republic, and that we will support our government against the secret or open attempts of any nation whatever." There was an exceptionally large attendance at this meeting. After a free discussion regarding the state of affairs, a committee was selected to prepare an address to the President. The members of this committee were "Hon. Samuel Phillips, Moody Bridges, Thomas Kittredge, Joshua Holt and George Osgood. After a short recess the committee made the following report:

"*To the President of the United States:*

"Sir, We, the freeholders and other inhabitants of the town of Andover, in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, beg leave to join the multitude of our fellow-citizens in presenting you our warmest gratitude for that wisdom, vigilance, integrity and patriotism which have marked your administration; and in particular, for your persevering solicitude to preserve to these States the blessings of peace and neutrality, upon such terms as would consist with the preservation of our essential rights and interests

"Although repeated attempts to accommodate subsisting differences with the French Republic have not produced the effect which might have been reasonably expected, they may prove essential means of our political salvation by unfolding the designs and enormous demands of that government, which we have been unwilling to conclude our enemy. This disclosure must produce universal conviction that no hope of safety is left for us without our own united virtuous exertion.

"We therefore again thank you, sir, for your solemn and repeated calls on the proper departments to make the most speedy and effectual provision against the worst events; for your firm resolution that you will never surrender the independence or essential interests of the country; and for summoning the people to unite with you in supplicating the direction and blessing of that Almighty Being under whose patronage, if not criminal ourselves, we have nothing to fear from any power on earth. In the same resolution we hold it to be our duty, with that of every American, cordially to concur.

"Every attempt to detach us from our government, which is the work of our own hands, and from whence we have already derived blessings far surpassing the highest expectations of its warmest admirers—we repel with indignation.

"To abandon such a Government, and the invaluable privileges, civil and religious, enjoyed under it, from any considerations whatever, would be acting a part unworthy the descendants of our renowned ancestors, bring indelible infamy on ourselves—be an act of treachery to our posterity, and betray the basest ingratitude to and distrust of that Supreme Being who gave us these blessings.

"With an humble reliance, therefore, on this Being, whom we do, and ever will, acknowledge as the Arbiter of nations; and confiding in the wisdom, patriotism and firmness of the constituted authorities of our country, we are determined at every hazard, to support those measures which they shall prescribe for the defence of these blessings."

After the reading of this report it was "voted unanimously, that the foregoing address be accepted and forwarded by the town clerk to the Representative of this district in Congress, to be by him presented to the President of the United States."

The representative of the district at this time was the Hon. Bailey Bartlett, of Haverhill, who was afterwards, for forty years, high sheriff of Essex County.

A speedy answer was received from the President to this address, which was as follows:

"*To the Freeholders and other inhabitants of the town of Andover, in the State of Massachusetts:*

"Gentlemen,—Your address, unanimously adopted at a legal and very full meeting, has been presented to me by your Representative in Congress, Mr. Bartlett, and received with great pleasure. When you acknowledge in my administration, wisdom, vigilance, integrity, patriotism and persevering solicitude to preserve to these States the blessings of peace and neutrality, upon such terms as would consist with the preservation of our essential rights and interests, you command my sincere gratitude.

"The unfriendly designs and unreasonable demands of that government, whom we have been unwilling to conclude our enemy, have been long suspected by many, upon very probable grounds; but never so clearly avowed and demonstrated as of late. May the discovery prove the essential means of our political salvation. The conviction appears now to be nearly universal, that no hope of safety is left for us without our own virtuous exertions.

"The indignation with which you repel every attempt to detach you from that government, which is the work of your own hands, and from whence you have derived blessings far surpassing the highest expectations of its warmest admirers, and, in short, all the sentiments of this excellent address, do you great honour.

"John Adams.

"Philadelphia, May 25, 1798."

We have here a good illustration of the deep interest taken by the people at large in the affairs of the national goverment. It is doubtless true that Mr. Phillips, then President of the Senate of the State, and for many years an active participant in State and national affairs, exercised great influence with the inhabitants of the town. Still, he was rather the voice than the mind of the people. He gave expression to the opinions of the yeomanry, as they could not have done; but, nevertheless, the opinions were theirs, crudely conceived, it may be, and roughly wrought out in their own minds and experiences.

We see here also with what freedom the people of a small country town addressed the chief magistrate of the land, expressing their opinions with frankness and fearlessly, as to an equal, but respectfully, as addressing the most exalted personage in the country. We see at once, too, in his reply, how highly gratified the President was by this timely address from the inhabitants of the little country town. Remembering that he was the executive of "a government of the people, by the people and for the people," the approval of the people was a solace to his heart and a stimulant to his righteous purpose, when sorely beset with difficulties. The favorable opinion of the obscure and weak not seldom may so confirm the judgment of the exalted and wise as to give them the courage to act according to their convictions. What the address of the inhabitants did to aid John Adams in holding the nation steadfast to her moorings amidst the surges of the French Revolution, no one can tell. It certainly gave him encouragement and comfort.

CHAPTER CXXXIV.

ANDOVER—(*Continued*).

THE WAR OF THE REBELLION.

On the 18th of April, 1861, six days after the first rebel shot was fired against the United States fort,

Sumter, situated in Charleston harbor, and three days after President Lincoln had sent out his warlike proclamation, summoning to arms seventy-five thousand peaceful citizens for the defense of the national authority, Andover began her active efforts to suppress the Rebellion and maintain the sovereignty of the national government. On the evening of that day there was a small, hastily-gathered assembly of the citizens of Frye village and neighborhood in their village hall for consultation with regard to the raising and drilling of troops to answer the call of the President. After some discussion and patriotic speeches it was thought best to defer action as a neighborhood, and await the action of the citizens' meeting, already notified for the coming Saturday evening at the Town Hall.

At this meeting there was a very full attendance of the inhabitants of the town from all sections, comprising persons of both sexes and all ages and classes. It was organized by the choice of Francis Cogswell, Esq., as president, with thirteen of the most prominent citizens of the town as vice-presidents. Prayer was offered by Prof. Stowe, of the Theological Seminary. The following persons were designated to prepare resolutions for the consideration of the meeting Judge Marcus Morton, Jr., Prof. Calvin E. Stowe, Oliver H. Perry, Wm. G. Means and Samuel Raymond, who reported resolutions as follows:

"*Resolved*, That the armed hostility to the United States government, now assumed by a portion of the Southern people, is entirely without justification in anything which the National Administration has done or proposes to do. That the claim of a right to secede at will is utterly subversive of all government, and leaves the nation a prey to anarchy, like that of the South American republics, at the close of every election. That the robbing of the nation by the Secessionists of its money, fortifications, arms, mints, ships, custom-houses and other property, levying war against the government by the raising of troops, and gathering munitions of every kind, firing upon the national flag, and attempting to murder the national soldiers while in the unaggressive discharge of their duties, and the crying out against *coercion* on the part of the General Government, whenever it makes the least attempt at preparation to defend itself and its property against these open, long-continued and insolent assaults, is absurd, malignant and mean, beyond all parallel in civilized history, and deserves the utter contempt and detestation of mankind.

"*Resolved*, That the present position and action of the Secessionists is not in consequence of any grievance actually endured, or even anticipated, from the General Government, but the meditated result of a plan, cherished for more than thirty years past, by certain restless and ambitious men at the South, to establish a great slave empire in the fertile regions around the Gulf of Mexico,—a plan with which the better part of the Southerners themselves have no sympathy. That they are kept quiet by intimidation and violence only, and that the leaders of this rebellious movement are so well aware of the fact that they dare not, and never will, submit their own action to a fair vote of the people.

"*Resolved*, That the exigencies of the present crisis imperatively demand of all patriots and true friends of liberty and order throughout the land that, suspending for the time the discussion of minor party differences, they unite heart and soul to sustain the government against its traitorous assailants, and that the zeal and energy with which all parties are now actually pursuing this course gives the best evidence of the sincerity of their patriotism, and affords the most encouraging indications of the final success of their efforts, and of the perpetuity of the free institutions which have been so wisely established in this western world, at the expense of so much labor and self-denial on the part of our fathers.

"*Resolved*, That, as the present violent proceedings of the Secessionists can be successfully resisted in no other way than by an overpowering military force at the disposal of the National Government, we hereby pledge ourselves to do all in our power to raise, sustain and encourage such a force; and that, either by bearing arms ourselves, or by contributing according to our ability to support the men who do bear arms, and their families, we will take our full share in this great struggle, and fight as our fathers fought when compelled by a like necessity.

"*Resolved*, That the young men of Andover who are about organizing themselves into a military company to be at the disposal of the government, have now, and shall continue to have, our warmest sympathy and most cordial support."

These resolutions were received by the audience with unbounded applause, and, after short speeches in the same strain by able speakers, were unanimously and enthusiastically adopted.

This meeting further raised a committee of twenty-five, to whom was assigned the duty of "devising and carrying into effect such measures as they deem expedient for the support and defence of our national government during the present rebellion." At a subsequent meeting the following persons were designated as members of this committee:

Francis Cogswell, Peter Smith, John Dove, William Chickering, Amos Abbott, Joseph Holt, William P. Foster, Nathan Frye, Jedediah Burtt, Stephen D. Abbott, Willard Pike, Isaac O. Blunt, James Shaw, George Foster, William Jenkins, Calvin E. Stowe, Moses Foster, Jr., Benjamin F. Wardwell, John Aiken, Benjamin Boynton, William Abbott, Nathan Shattuck, John Abbott, James Bailey and Warren F. Draper.

At a subsequent meeting, May 6th, it was voted to furnish each volunteer with a uniform, not exceeding in value fourteen dollars, and seventeen dollars in money, and to every one, on being mustered into service, a rubber blanket and such other articles as shall be deemed necessary, to the amount of six dollars; to remit the poll-tax of every one who shall perform regular drill; to pay each enrolled volunteer fifty cents for each day's drill, not exceeding sixty days in all; to pay the family of each married volunteer, except the commissioned officers, the sum of eight dollars per month during the continuance of such volunteer in the service of the government, or until otherwise ordered by the town. For these purposes eight thousand dollars were voted and appropriated.

The months of May and June were crowded with work and military activity. The patriotism and ardor of the people found expression in frequent public meetings, fervid addresses, vigorous resolutions, enlistments, sewing circles, flag-raisings, military music and patriotic songs, liberal donations (the firm of Smith, Dove & Co. giving $3000), and in amateur military companies, as the "Havelock Greys," composed of theological students, and "Ellsworth Guards," composed of Phillips Academy students. Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe, the authoress of "Uncle Tom's Cabin," furnished an original song to stimulate and give vent to the enthusiasm of the young men.

On the 24th day of June, 1861, after two months' daily drill, the Andover Light Infantry, the first com-

pany from the town to enlist in the service of the country, left for Fort Warren. After receiving the bounty voted by the town, partaking of a collation prepared for them at the Town Hall, and listening to an address by Francis Cogswell, Esq., they marched to the depot under the escort of the "Havelock Greys" and "Ellsworth Guards," attended by a crowd of friends and citizens. With many hearty cheers they left for their destination. On the 5th of July the company was mustered into the United States service, and designated as "Company H., 14th Regiment Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry." On the same day the regiment left Fort Warren for Washington.

The list of officers and men composing this Andover company on departing for the national capital was as follows:

Capt., Horace Holt.	2d Corp., George A. W. Vinal.
1st Lieut., Charles H. Poor.	3d Corp., Peter D. Smith.
2d Lieut., Moses W. Clement.	4th Corp., John Clark.
1st Sergt., Samuel C. Hervey.	5th Corp., Alonzo P. Berry.
2d Sergt., George T. Brown.	6th Corp., Hor. W. Wardwell.
3d Sergt., Orrin L. Farnham.	7th Corp., George F. Hatch.
4th Sergt., Newton Holt.	8th Corp., Phineas Buckley, Jr.
5th Sergt., Frank B. Chapin.	Musician, Newton G. Frye.
1st Corp., George S. Farmer.	Musician, George M. Smart.

Privates.

Anderson, James I.	Hatch, Lewis G.
Ashworth, James.	Hart, William.
Bailey, Thomas R.	Holt, Lewis G.
Beale, William.	Holt, Warren E.
Bell, Joseph.	Howarth, Oberlin B.
Berry, Daniel.	Hunt, Amos.
Bodwell, Willard G.	Jenkins, E. Kendall.
Bohounon, Albert L.	Jennings, William E.
Brown, La Roy S.	Kennedy, John.
Bryant, Epaphras K.	Lavalett, Philip C.
Burris, Stephen.	Logue, John.
Chandler, George W.	Lovejoy, Benjamin C.
Cheever, Benjamin.	Lovejoy, Henry T.
Cocklin, John.	Mahoney, Michael.
Costello, James.	McClennen, Charles W.
Coulie, John D.	McGurk, Bernard.
Craig, George.	Mears, Charles.
Cummings, Charles S.	Mears, Warren Jr.
Currier, Charles.	Melcher, Sylvester C.
Curtis, A. Fuller.	Morse, William B.
Cusick, John.	Nichols, William W.
Cutler, Granville K.	O'Hara, Edward.
Cutler, Abelino B.	Pasbo, William A.
Dane, George.	Pike, George E.
Dugan, Charles.	Rea, Aaron G., Jr.
Edwards, Francis W.	Richardson, Silas, Jr.
Farmer, Edward.	Russell, John B. A.
Farnham, Samuel P.	Russell, Joseph, Jr.
Findley, James S.	Russell, William.
Findley, John A.	Russell, Winslow.
Foster, T. Edwin.	Sargent, John S.
Gilcreast, David D.	Saunders, Ziba M
Gillespie, William.	Shannon, William.
Goldsmith, Albert.	Shattuck, Charles W.
Grant, Farnham P.	Sherman, Henry T.
Gray, Jesse E.	Smith, James.
Greeae, Charles.	Stevens, Benjamin F.
Greene, William H.	Townsend, Milton B.
Hardy, Franklin.	Townsend, Warren W.
Hardy, John.	Wardwell, Alfred.
Hatch, Andrew J.	Wardwell, William H.
Hatch, Enoch M.	Wood, Elliot.

This was the only full company, officers and privates, sent out from Andover during the war. Its history will be referred to later on.

On the 1st day of July, 1862, the President issued another order, calling for three hundred thousand volunteers to serve for three years, or until the end of the war. In accordance with this order, Governor Andrew issued a mandate for the enlisting of the State's quota. Fifty-two men were required of Andover. On being notified of this apportionment, a town-meeting was immediately called to be held on the 28th of July. At this meeting it was voted to pay a bounty of one hundred dollars for each volunteer who should enlist on the quota of the town. Messrs. Smith and Dove pledged ten dollars in addition. The community was still aglow with patriotic feeling, and volunteers came forward rapidly, so that on the 7th of August the quota was full. On the 4th of August, three days before the completion of this enlistment, another urgent order came from the President for a draft of three hundred thousand militia for nine months. To this order also the town promptly responded, expressing a desire to fill up its quota of the proposed draft by "furnishing *volunteers* rather than *conscripts*." A bounty of one hundred dollars was offered for a volunteer who should be duly accepted under this call, and sworn into the service of the United States. Ten dollars additional was offered for expenses if the volunteer should be from out of town. It was estimated that the quota of Andover under this third call would be twenty-three men. This number was soon obtained. But through some inadvertence of the past, and negligence or misconception of the officers of the town in making returns to the Adjutant-General's office of the number of men liable to military duty, it was found that the town was still liable to a draft for forty-two men. Negotiations and explanations were entered into with the State officials, and, after much delay, a new list of the soldiers in the field who should be credited to Andover was made out, and also a new list of persons liable to do military duty. Upon an estimate formed upon the basis of these new lists, it was finally settled that Andover should furnish an additional complement of thirty-six men. These men were to be furnished from the recruiting stations in Boston. It was further agreed, as a partial correction of the original faulty list furnished by the selectmen of persons liable to military duty, that these thirty-six recruits, on being mustered in for three years, should be accepted for the full quota of forty-two men at first required of the town.

As a matter of fact, as the future revealed, none of these thirty-six Boston recruits ever served in the army. They belonged to that large regiment called "bounty-jumpers." The draft which took place in July, 1863, proved a failure. One person only out of the seventy-seven named for the draft was retained for service. Seven men drawn paid commutation money. The bounty-jumpers referred to above received each from the town one hundred and ten dollars. By

whose fault these men, and many others of a like character, escaped service, it may not be easy to determine, but some one certainly failed in his duty.

On the 17th of October, 1863, there was another call from the President for three hundred thousand volunteers; this time for three years or the war. The quota of Andover under this call was thirty-eight men. The town voted to pay for enlistments under this call fifteen dollars for fresh recruits, and twenty-five dollars for veterans, it being understood that this amount would be paid by the United States government. The quota of Andover was readily filled, mostly from veterans in the field, whose terms of enlistment had expired. It was afterwards ascertained that, up to this time, the town had "filled all demands upon it by furnishing three hundred and twenty-five men for the army alone," besides those serving in the navy.

In the call of the President issued February 11, 1864, the quota assigned to Andover was twenty-six men. A much larger number than this had already re-enlisted, since the preceding call, from the veterans in the field belonging to Andover.

Fifty-two veteran soldiers from Andover, belonging to the First Regiment of Heavy Artillery, re-enlisted from December 4, 1863, to February 29, 1864. The selectmen were authorized to pay all recruits credited to the town, under the various calls of the President, such a sum as might be necessary, not exceeding one hundred and twenty-five dollars. This amount was promised these re-enlisting veterans.

July 6, 1864, the Governor issued a call for five thousand infantry volunteers for one hundred days' service, to do garrison duty in the fortifications near Washington. Andover furnished eighteen men for this service.

Congress having authorized recruiting in certain States in rebellion, the town and certain citizens of the town availed themselves of the opportunity and enlisted eleven "representative recruits" from former slaves.

Company H of the First Regiment of Heavy Artillery.—Andover's first company of light infantry formed, as we have seen, Company H of the Fourteenth Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry. The regiment left Fort Warren for Washington August 7, 1861. After a few months' garrison duty in the neighborhood of the capital, it was changed, January 1, 1862, to the First Regiment of Heavy Artillery, requiring an increase in its number.

In September, 1862, Companies H and I, and in October Company C, were ordered to Maryland Heights, opposite Harper's Ferry. There they remained until November 30, 1863, when they rejoined the regiment. Their duties, though not dangerous, and seldom exciting, were frequently tedious and severe. In general, the regiment was expected to protect the approaches to Washington and Maryland from rebel incursion. They perambulated the northern border of Virginia, marching back and forth in the vicinity of the capital, acting thus as a barrier of defense. The detached companies were engaged in erecting barracks, building and destroying fortifications on the heights, as military necessity required. In this useful but uneventful service the regiment passed nearly two years and four months (reckoning from the time it was changed from infantry to heavy artillery), when a welcome interruption came to the monotony. It was ordered to join the Army of the Potomac.

The men were called veterans, having been nearly three years in the service, but had never seen a battle, and had never tested their courage in a serious skirmish with the enemy. The worth of their experience in drilling, manœuvring, marching and camp-life was to be put to a severe trial. They soon became aware that, under the lead of General Grant, in a march on to Richmond, in the face of the ablest army of the Confederacy, under her ablest general, fighting for existence, there would be untold hardships to be borne and deadly fighting to be done. Yet, the change from the dull life of the fortification to the perilous life of an army in almost daily conflict had its charm for trained soldiers. They could not realize, though they might have feared, as they entered the "Wilderness," that their own blood, or that of their comrades, would moisten the road that led to Richmond. Their duty was to obey orders and go forward. They started May 15, 1864. Although a portion of the Army of the Potomac had been engaged in severe fighting in the neighborhood of Spottsylvania for nearly a fortnight before their arrival, it was not until the afternoon and evening of the 19th of May that they had their first experience in a battle, which proved to them a deadly conflict.

The news of this engagement reached Andover on the 21st day of the month, and caused great anxiety. There was a gathering of the people in the evening, but only meagre information could be obtained as to the casualties in the Andover company. There was a rumor, without any certain foundation, that two or three Andover soldiers had been slain or wounded. Three days after, when reliable information had been received, and it was known that Company H had suffered severely in killed and wounded, there was a large gathering of the citizens at the town hall, to express their deep interest in the news, their profound sympathy with the bereaved at home and the suffering in camp. Addresses were made by prominent clergymen and others fitting the occasion. A committee, consisting of Rev. Charles Smith, Josiah L. Chapin and George Foster, was appointed to report resolutions for the meeting, and prepare a letter to be sent to the soldiers.

The following resolutions were reported and adopted:

"WHEREAS, The citizens of Andover have read of the battle of Thursday night, in which Company H of the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery was conspicuously engaged, and in which they suffered severely in killed and wounded;

"*Resolved*, That we express to the soldiers of Company H our admiration of their bravery, and tender them our heartfelt congratulation.

"*Resolved*, That we deeply sympathize with the wounded, and hereby convey to them the expression of our wishes and prayers for their speedy recovery.

"*Resolved*, That we pledge ourselves to assist, to the extent of our ability, our soldiers who are periling their persons and lives for the purpose of suppressing this wicked rebellion.

"*Resolved*, That we deeply sympathize with those who are called to mourn the death of dear friends who have fallen in battle."

At an adjourned meeting it was voted to send a commission to the army to minister to the wounded soldiers from Andover. Rev. J. W. Turner and Mr. Joseph Abbott were appointed for this purpose. The next day, at noon, these commissioners departed for their duty, taking with them five hundred and forty-three dollars, which had been contributed for the purpose, the resolutions passed at the meeting on the 24th inst. and the following letter which had been adopted by the citizens:

"ANDOVER, May 26, 1864.

"*To the officers and privates of Company H and other soldiers connected with the First Regiment Massachusetts Heavy Artillery:*

"DEAR FRIENDS.—Last Saturday morning the exciting intelligence reached us that you had been in an engagement with the enemy, even before reaching the main army. And while your bravery and heroism in the deadly conflict were borne to us on every breeze, our admiration of your noble and perilous deeds was mingled with serious apprehensions that casualties had ensued which would bring sadness and mourning to many of our families.

"The selectmen immediately issued a notice for a meeting of the people, to be held on the same evening. A large number assembled at the appointed time, all anxious to do whatever could be done to exhibit their sympathy for those in painful suspense, and their friends who might be in great suffering. As the information was then meagre, the meeting was adjourned to Tuesday evening.

"The adjourned meeting was a very large one, and the interest manifested was most earnest and sympathetic. Facts gathered from your letters were announced and listened to with intense eagerness. Appropriate addresses were made by several gentlemen, conveying expressions of condolence and tenderness to the afflicted and sorrowful.

"The undersigned were appointed a committee to address to you a letter, and to prepare and report to the meeting resolutions for adoption The subjoined resolutions were reported by the committee, and adopted by a unanimous vote.

"While our attention is at this time more particularly directed to your company and regiment on account of the many killed and wounded of your number, we would at the same time make appreciative reference to our other brave friends, scattered throughout the great loyal army, and, like yourselves, periling all that is dear of earth for the salvation of our beloved country.

"CHARLES SMITH,
"JOSIAH L. CHAPIN,
"GEORGE FOSTER,
"*Committee.*"

The commissioners found, in the various hospitals in the vicinity of Washington, thirty wounded soldiers from Andover, and ministered to their wants as directed. It was afterward ascertained that the entire list of casualties in the company at the first battle at Spottsylvania and the succeeding fights till the 20th of June amounted to eight killed and sixty-two wounded, four of the latter dying from their wounds.

Company H was at first composed of one hundred men, officers and privates, besides two musicians—all Andover men. When the regiment was changed from infantry to heavy artillery, and the company enlarged by the addition of fifty men to correspond with the requirements of that branch of the service, Andover furnished the additional number. The larger portion of these soldiers, who were not either killed or seriously wounded, or prostrated by sickness, continued in the company till their terms of enlistment expired, and a moiety of them to the end of the war, fighting their way to Richmond, and partaking in the honor of witnessing the final struggle and collapse of the Rebellion.

Company H was present with the regiment, and performed its full share in the engagements from Spottsylvania to the surrender of Lee, viz.: North Anna River, May 24, 1864; Tolopotomy Creek, May 31, 1864; Cold Harbor, June 3, 1864; Petersburg, June 16, 18 and 22, 1864; Strawberry Plain, July 26 and 27, 1864; Petersburg Mine, July 30, 1864; Deep Bottom, August 15 and 16, 1864; Weldon Railroad, August 25, 1864; Poplar Grove Church, October 5, 1864; Boydton Plank-Road, October 27, 1864; Raid on Weldon Railroad to Bellfield, December 6 to 11, 1864; Hatcher's Run, February 5, 1865; Hatcher's Run, March 25, 1865; Attack on fort, March 31, 1865; Assault of the line, April 2, 1865; Sailor's Creek, April 6, 1865; Lee's surrender, April 9, 1865.

Some of those who were wounded at Spottsylvania, and others whose term of service had expired, were in due time sent on to Boston and mustered out of service. These men arrived in town on the 21st day of July 1864, after an absence of three years and a month nearly. They were received at the station by leading citizens of the town, and heartily welcomed by their fellow-townsmen, neighbors, friends and the dear ones at home.

According to the record, "the members of Phillips Academy, with their band of music, and attended by their teachers, led the escort from the depot to the Town Hall. Next followed the selectmen, ministers of the town and the committee of reception. The soldiers brought home their drummer, George B. Clark, who beat the accustomed march, and the citizens fell in in a long line."

"At the Town Hall a bountiful collation had been prepared by the ladies, to which the tired and hungry soldiers were most heartily welcomed amidst the greetings and sympathies of their friends." After the collation the soldiers were addressed with words of welcome and commendation by Francis Cogswell, Esq., chairman of the committee on reception.

Company H, as a company, continued in existence till the close of the war, and those Andover soldiers who continued in the field to the end were mustered out of the United States' service on the 25th of August, 1865, having been in constant service four years, one month and twenty-one days. The company went

into the war with one hundred and fifty stalwart men, all from Andover. When mustered out there were but forty-five men to answer the roll-call. Of the one hundred and five absentees, some had been killed, some taken prisoners, some wounded and discharged, some discharged on account of sickness and others on the expiration of their time of enlistment. This small remainder of Company H, returning singly or in small squads, did not, of course, receive the same popular welcome that awaited their comrades of an earlier return.

But they all, the last as well as the first, almost without exception, easily refilled their old places, taking up again, with cheerfulness and vigor, their accustomed duties and vocations before the war.

Nothing of that idleness, prodigality and dissipation that were so bitterly lamented in the case of the discharged soldiers at the close of the Revolutionary War, was ever seen among the returned soldiers of this town who fought the Rebellion to its death. As a rule, they settled back into the ordinary pursuits of peace, as if they had done nothing to gain special notoriety. Those who still survive, and reside in town, are among our most respected inhabitants, and many of them among our most prosperous citizens.

The whole number of men furnished by the town for the service of the country during the War of the Rebellion, in both army and navy, including enlistments, re-enlistments, representative recruits, assignments and substitutes, amounted to five hundred and ninety-nine, or one hundred and sixty-three more than the town's proportion, as determined by the number of inhabitants subject to draft, or military service. These five hundred and ninety-nine soldiers and seamen were distributed among forty-six regiments, serving in different sections of the country, and in an unknown number of war vessels.

The town expended for army purposes, including bounties, during the war, $35,623,85.

There was also paid by citizens, in addition, $27,226, 64, including money paid for bounties, substitutes, and gifts contributed by the ladies' charitable organizations.

No sketch of the War of the Rebellion is complete without an appreciative mention of the unflagging labors of the ladies, old and young, in preparing garments, blankets and other comforts for the soldiers in the field, and cordials and delicacies for those in the hospitals.

Memorial Hall.—After the close of the war the matter of erecting some memorial, to keep in perpetuity from oblivion the names of those who gave their lives for the salvation of the nation, was freely talked over by the citizens. The question was, whether this memorial should be a monument or a library. At one time a monument was deemed upon, and incipient measures taken toward procuring one, but without success. The town voted four thousand five hundred dollars for this purpose; but it failed to enlist the warm co-operation of some of the most influential people. The matter was held in abeyance, though not lost sight of, for a number of years.

In July of 1870 a letter was received from Mr. John Smith, then in Dresden, written to his son Joseph, addressed in part to the town, in which he expressed a desire "to commemorate and keep in remembrance the names of those who gave their lives in defending our National Flag, and saving my adopted country to God and liberty." Mr. Smith was born in Scotland. He further declares his willingness to give twenty-five thousand dollars for a library and reading-room, to be dedicated to this memorial purpose, on condition that a like sum be given by others, and that only thirty thousand dollars of the fifty be expended for land and building. A town-meeting was called for August 1st, to take into consideration the propositions of this letter. At this meeting it was announced that Mr. Peter Smith and Mr. John Dove, the business partners of Mr. John Smith, would each of them give five thousand dollars to assist in making up the twenty-five necessary to secure Mr. John Smith's offer, but on the additional condition that the proposed building should be erected on the lot at the corner of Essex and Main Streets, recently made vacant by fire,—the lot upon which Memorial Hall now stands. To this amount, Mr. Joseph W. Smith, Mr. Peter Smith and Mr. Dove each added one thousand dollars, making the whole sum in pledge thirty-eight thousand dollars.

The proposition of Mr. Smith was received with many tokens and expressions of satisfaction by the meeting, and the thanks of the town were voted him. For the purpose of complying with the conditions of the proposed donations, a committee was raised to solicit subscriptions, it being understood that Mr. Smith expected the requisite amount to be raised by individual contribution, and not by town taxation. At a subsequent meeting the committee thus appointed, reported that, after a thorough canvass of the town, they had secured subscriptions for eight thousand five hundred dollars, in sums varying from three hundred and fifty dollars to ten cents; and as there appeared to be little likelihood of obtaining the deficiency of three thousand five hundred dollars by subscription, the committee recommended that the four thousand five hundred dollars raised by the town to erect a monument, and still in the hands of the treasurer unapplied, be appropriated to a memorial building, and thus complete the sum necessary to secure the promised donations. This latter proposition, being acceptable to the donors present, as no further taxation was called for, the town accepted the proposition of the committee.

A building committee was chosen, consisting of William G. Means, Charles Smith, John L. Taylor, David Middleton and Samuel Raymond.

In carrying out the plan of erecting the building on the designated spot, it was found that additional

land would be required, and further, that an unlooked-for outlay of money would be absolutely necessary to render the foundations firm and safe. To meet this additional expense, and to provide for all other contingencies, Mr. John Smith added five thousand dollars to his original gift, and other liberal-minded gentlemen gave sixteen hundred and fifty dollars towards the increased cost.

The corner-stone of the building was laid with appropriate services on the 19th day of September, 1871.

The finished building was dedicated, formally opened and delivered into the hands of the town on Memorial Day, May 30, 1873.

The dedicatory prayer was offered by Prof. Edwards A. Park, of the Theological Seminary, in front of the Memorial Hall, and the address was delivered in the South Church by Rev. Phillips Brooks, rector of Trinity Church, Boston, a lineal descendant of Samuel Phillips, the first pastor of the South Church.

The building contains ample alcoves for library uses, a reading-room, committee-rooms and a spacious hall to be used as a receptacle for mementos of the war, portraits of donors, distinguished officers and others, pictures of battle scenes and curiosities in general. Its chief object of interest is a marble tablet let into the west wall, containing the names of the patriotic dead, who gave their lives for the salvation of the nation.

The building occupies a conspicuous place in the centre of the village, and, architecturally, is an ornament to the town. With its well-selected library and inviting reading-room, with its silent tablet ever, through the eye, appealing to the heart of the beholder, it is a perpetual incentive to patriotism, to a generous culture of the mind, and, through him who first conceived and most liberally contributed to its erection, to liberal giving for the public good.

The library at the present time contains nearly a thousand books, and the reading-room is well supplied with newspapers and the magazines of the day, and is well patronized.

Before the erection of the building Mr. John Byers, a merchant of New York, a former resident of the town, gave three thousand dollars for the benefit of the library as a memorial of his brother, Peter Smith Byers, first principal-elect of the Punchard Free School, who died before entering upon his duties. Since the opening of the library Mr. Byers has added five thousand dollars to his first donation, the money to be kept as a perpetual fund, the income of which is to be used for the increase of the library.

Mr. John Smith, in addition to his other benefactions, gave three thousand dollars for the benefit of the library. The following is a copy of the tablet in the Memorial Hall:

TO THE MEMORY OF OUR PATRIOTIC DEAD.

JAMES H. BAILEY,
Died of disease at Washington, D. C., Sept. 14, 1861.

ENOCH O. FRYE,
Accidentally killed at Fort Albany, Va., Oct. 29, 1861.

CHARLES H. CALLAHAN,
Died of disease at Chelsea, Mass., May 29, 1862.

AMOS WHITTAKER,
Killed at Gaines' Mills, Va., June 27, 1862.

GEORGE M. SMART,
Died of disease at Fort Albany, Va., July 25, 1862.

WILLIAM GREELEY,
Died of disease at Carrollton, La., Aug. 22, 1862.

BERNARD KAVANAUGH,
Died of disease at Philadelphia, Pa., Aug. 24, 1862.

EDWARD C. MERRILL,
Died of disease at Carrollton, La., Aug. 27, 1862.

WILLIAM H. LUKE,
Died of wounds at Manassas, Va., Sept. 13, 1862.

JEFFERSON N. RAYMOND,
Died of disease at New Orleans, La., Sept. 13, 1862.

JAMES RUSSELL,
Died of disease at Fort Albany, Va., Oct. 19, 1862.

JAMES JAQUITH,
Died of disease at New Orleans, La., Dec. 1, 1862.

HENRY G. KIMBALL,
Died of disease at Newbern, N. C., Jan. 1, 1863.

JAMES W. MERRILL,
Died of disease at Newbern, N. C., Jan. 20, 1863.

JOSEPH CHANDLER, JR.,
Died of disease at New Orleans, La., March 10, 1863.

NEWTON G. FRYE,
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., March 28, 1863.

JOSIAH MASON,
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., April 7, 1863.

JAMES LOGUE,
Died of disease at Baton Rouge, La., May 11, 1863.

NEWTON LOVEJOY,
Died of disease at Vicksburg, Miss., July 9, 1863.

WILLIAM H. WARDWELL,
Accidentally killed at Maryland Heights, Md., Aug. 1, 1863.

CHARLES A. CLEMENT,
Died of wounds at Gettysburg, Pa., Sept. 30, 1863.

WILLARD G. BODWELL,
Died of disease at Fort Strong, Va., March 24, 1864.

THOMAS F. PORTER,
Died of wounds at Hampton, Va., April 15, 1864.

JAMES WARD,
Killed at the Wilderness, Va., May 5, 1864.

SAMUEL AIKEN,
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.

ISRAEL A. BERRY,
Died of wounds at City Point, Va., April 22, 1865.

GRANVILLE K. CUTLER,
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.

JAMES H. EASTES,
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.

EDWARD FARMER,
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.

JONATHAN A. HOLT,
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.

JAMES H. ROTHWELL,
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.

ENOCH M. HATCH.
Killed near Petersburg, Va., June 16, 1864.

BERNARD MCGURK,
Killed at Cold Harbor, Va., June 3, 1864.

ORRIN L. FARNHAM,
Died of wounds at Bryant's Farm, Va., June 17, 1864.

EPAPHRUS K. BRYANT,
Died of wounds at Washington, D. C., July 3, 1864.

WILLIAM RUSSELL,
Died of wounds at Washington, D. C., July 11, 1864.

THOMAS A. BAGLEY,
Died a prisoner at Andersonville, Ga., Aug. 28, 1864.

JAMES B. BLACK,
Died of disease at Fortress Monroe, Va., Aug. 30, 1864.

GEORGE W. GRANT,
Died of disease in Second Corps Hospital, Va., Sept. 7, 1864.

GEORGE A. BAILEY,
Killed at Winchester, Va., Sept. 19, 1864.
FRANKLIN HARDY,
Killed at Poplar Grove Church, Va., Oct. 2, 1864.
EDWARD O'HARA,
Killed at Hatcher's Run, Va., Oct. 27, 1864.
CHARLES P. BARNARD,
Died of disease at Annapolis, Md., Dec. 2, 1864.
JAMES MCCUSKER,
Died a prisoner at Salisbury, N. C., Dec. 2, 1864.
THOMAS WARDMAN,
Died a prisoner at Danville, Va., Dec. 20, 1864.
JOHN MCCULLOUGH,
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., Dec. 24, 1864.
WALTER L. RAYMOND,
Died a prisoner at Salisbury, N. C., Dec. 25, 1864.
GEORGE E. HAYWARD,
Died of wounds at Andover, Mass., July 24, 1865.
LEONARD W. RYLEY,
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., Aug. 30, 1865.
LEWIS G. HATCH,
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., January 4, 1866.
SAMUEL P. FARNHAM,
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., Jan. 12, 1866.
ANDREW K. PATRICK.
Died of wounds at Fredericksburg, Va.

The Andover veterans have an encampment of the G. A. R., called "General William F. Bartlett Post, No. 99," named from the gallant young Massachusetts officer, who came out of the war with a splendid record for heroism and a shattered body. He died in December, 1876, of physical exhaustion, while in the meridian of his years. The purpose of this organization is to care for its sick or destitute members, by extending sympathy or material aid, as circumstances demand. Its present fund is not far from four hundred and fifty dollars. It appears in public every year, "on Decoration Day," but with ever-decreasing numbers.

Among the Andover-born men residing in other States or places at the time the Rebellion broke out, who enlisted and distinguished themselves in the war, we find the names of Lieutenant-Colonel Sumner Carruth, Lieutenant Frank W. Carruth, Lieutenant Samuel F. Tucker, Captain John C. Crowninshield.

CHAPTER CXXXV.

ANDOVER—(*Continued*).

TOPOGRAPHY OF ANDOVER.

When incorporated, Andover was among the largest towns in the colony in territorial extent. Since a portion of its original territory has been taken to form Middleton a large section on its northern border to create the city of Lawrence, and the North Parish has been incorporated as a separate town, its limits have been essentially reduced. But still it is a town of fair dimensions, as compared with the average town of the State. It has a population of nearly six thousand, with a tax list of five million three hundred and seventy-five thousand dollars. It has the Merrimac River and the city of Lawrence on the north, North Andover on the east, North Reading, Wilmington and Tewksbury on the south, and Tewksbury on the west. Its superficial area covers not far from ten thousand acres. It is well diversified with hill and valley, meadow and plain, wood and tillage land. It has a variety of soil from the light sandy to the heavy loam, from the thin covering of the plains to the deep muck of the marshy meadows.

For agricultural purposes the township does not compare favorably with many other towns in the State, especially with those bordering upon the banks of the Connecticut River. Market gardening and the production of milk afford the average farmer his principal sources of income. By these products, the owner of a farm of reasonable dimensions can, with industry, thrift and economy, support himself and family in comfort, meet the pecuniary obligations of a citizen, educate his children, and yearly lay aside a small sum for his profit, extraordinaries excepted, for old age, or to give his children a start in life.

That in the topography of the town which is its most significant feature, which has had more to do with its material prosperity than all other things combined, is the Shawshin River. This river takes its rise in the towns of Lexington and Bedford, and, running in a northeasterly direction, in a zigzag course, passes through nearly the centre of Andover, and enters the Merrimac River within the territory of North Andover. In this small stream, within the limits of the town, there are four falls, giving opportunity, by the erection of dams, to use the water as power and for other purposes in the business of manufacturing. These have been utilized, and around them four manufacturing villages have grown up,—Ballard Vale, Abbot, Marland and Frye, named respectively from the men who first owned or made extensive use of the water-power. These villages contain between two and three thousand inhabitants. Before the erection of dams, the river must have been a most attractive feature of the landscape, meandering among the hills and through the meadows, sometimes rushing over the rapids, and again slowly creeping through the lowlands.

But the river was destined to be a thing for the creation of wealth and beneficence rather than a thing of taste and beauty. It was the power furnished by this modest stream that supplied the Continental army with powder in its direst need. It ran the paper-mill of Judge Phillips after the close of the war, and was the indirect cause of bringing Mr. Phillips to the South Parish, increasing his property, and thus establishing Phillips Academy and the Theological Seminary in this parish. It was the Shawshin River which induced Mr. Abraham Marland and Mr. John Smith to come to this town and here build up their manufacturing establishments. The

existence of the four villages and their great industries is directly traceable to the coming of these enterprising men.

We may go further and say that not only are we indebted to the river for these villages and their profitable industries, but, no less, for a home-market for the products of the farm, employment for a large number of persons, profitable business for not a few mechanics and tradespeople, a large amount of taxable property to aid in meeting the current expenses of the town, and, above all, for the money which has been so munificently given by the manufacturers for the support of churches and the building up of educational institutions. It is well to notice in this connection, as a special advantage enjoyed by Andover, that most of the successful manufacturers on this stream have resided in the town. Their homes and their business have not been divorced. They have built beautiful residences, and otherwise have spent their money in the place of their gains. This gives them a stake in the welfare of the town, and makes them the more careful as to the class of help they employ. As a matter of fact, the employés of the Smith and Dove Company are among our most reputable citizens, many of them being Scotch people from Brechin and its neighborhood.

There are at least four elevations, called hills, in the town, worthy of notice. Half a mile northeast of the centre is Carmel Hill, upon which Mr. Bradley has recently built a handsome residence, and from which a very delightful view is had of the valley of the Shawshin River, Abbot and Frye villages, and the hills that stretch up beyond them in the distant horizon. Pine Hill rises a short distance north of east of the seminary, upon which Landlord Carter has erected a modern cottage, and from which can be had a very charming prospect of the centre of the town, extending also far over the western hills. The Seminary Hill, upon which stand the buildings used for both Phillips Academy and the Theological Seminary, and also the residences of the professors and teachers in these institutions,—of less height than some other hills,—furnishes also a fine view in a westerly and northwesterly direction.

But the hill of chief interest and reputation is Prospect Hill, situated about a mile southeast of the seminary. It is four hundred and twenty-three feet above the level of the sea, and is said to be the highest land in Essex County. It commands an extensive panorama of three-fourths of the circuit of the horizon. From its summit, on a clear day, may be seen the ocean, the smoke of half a dozen cities, some thirty church spires,—the Danvers Insane Asylum, Tewksbury Almshouse, and innumerable hills and mountains in the far distance. Half-way up its grassy side, on a small plateau, is an old-fashioned farm-house, weather-worn and solitary, built more than one hundred and seventy years ago, still firm in its timbers, in which have lived and died eight generations of the Holt family, the proprietors of the hill, some of whom have lived on this breezy height to be more than four-score and ten years of age. The place has passed into other hands.

From all these hills the sunset views are unsurpassed and seldom equaled by those of any other locality known to the writer. The Italian sunsets from the Pincio, at Rome, do not surpass, in bewitching beauty and inimitable coloring, the sunsets of our New England, as seen from these Andover heights. It is true, however, that the view of Monte Rosa, in Italy, from Lake Lugano, when its snow-capped peak is bathed in the morning sunlight, excels in richness of coloring and awe-inspiring grandeur anything ever seen here.

There are three ponds in the town of sufficient extent to attract attention. Foster's Pond, on the southern border of the town, named from a former proprietor of the surrounding land, contains fifty acres, the waters of which, when allowed by the mill-owners, find their way to the Shawshin River, a little above Ballard Vale. Pomp's Pond, named after a negro, who for many years lived in a hut built upon its banks, contains a little more than seven acres. It is situated about half a mile west of the seminary, near the Shawshin, into which it empties. Formerly, when partially surrounded by a heavily-timbered pine forest, this small pond was a favorite place of resort for the pupils of the schools and others, who enjoyed a stroll or a lounge upon ground carpeted by the needles of the pine, and shaded by its swaying, musical branches, in sight of rippling, cooling water. But, since the hills have been denuded of their magnificent trees, and the pond has been thus laid bare to the full gaze of the sun, its loneliness and charm have measurably departed.

Hagget's is the third pond, and far the most important of the three. Its name is derived from that of a family that formerly owned a farm skirting its banks. It is situated in the westerly part of the West Parish, a little less than three miles from the centre of the town. Its superficial dimensions are two hundred and twenty acres. Its outlet is into the Merrimac River. This pond, or lake, as it would be called in any other country, is a charming sheet of water, crystal-clear and sparkling, with shores like ocean beaches for shimmering brightness and inviting cleanliness, with wooded islands dotted here and there upon its rippling bosom, almost surrounded and enfolded by forests, with pine-covered hills rising up from its shores. In England this lake would rank with Windermere and the Rydal Lakes. It much resembles Loch Katrine, in Scotland, made memorable by the genius of Walter Scott, in his delightful poem, "The Lady of the Lake." Here we have the counterpart of Ellen's Isle (only much more beautiful) of the Scotch lake, described by the poet, lying at about the same distance from the pebbly shore, wooded and bewitching in its silvery setting.

An observer upon the neighboring hill—Wood's Hill, an unpoetic name—might recall these lines of the Scotch poet,—

> "An airy point he won,
> Where, gleaming with the setting sun,
> One burnish'd sheet of living gold,
> Loch Katrine lay—beneath him roll'd—
> In all her length far-winding lay,
> With promontory, creek and bay,
> And islands that, empurpled bright,
> Floated amid the livelier light,
> And mountains that like giants stand
> To sentinel enchanted land."

If viewed on a summer's morn, these lines might come to mind,—

> "The summer dawn's reflected hue
> To purple changed Loch Katrine blue;
> Mildly and soft the western breeze
> Just kiss'd the lake, just stirr'd the trees,
> And the pleased lake, like maiden coy,
> Trembled but dimpled not for joy,
> The mountain shadows on her breast
> Were neither broken nor at rest;
> In bright uncertainty they lie,
> Like future joys to Fancy's eye."

To those who enjoy drives in the country there are few places more inviting than Andover. The roads are numerous and good. One can leave the central part of the town for six successive days in the week, returning to nearly his starting point, without passing over many rods of road twice. The winding and woody by-paths are especially attractive. Following them, you are led over sightly hills and through sombre dells, coming unexpectedly upon some delightful view or inviting nook, continually meeting with surprises, thus stimulating a free play of the fancy.

Those who have spent their youth, or have passed their academic days here, keep in memory the beauties of the place, and often recur to them with pleasure.

Dr. William Adams, a native of the town, trained in her schools, on returning here after a long absence, to attend the jubilee exercises of the semi-centennial of the Theological Seminary, in an address to his fellow-alumni of the institution, having referred to the changes that had taken place in men and things since the time of their leaving the seminary, uses these felicitous words:

> "But nothing, I am sure, is here unchanged and unsurpassed—the [illegible] of the summer and the autumn sun behind yonder mountains. I have looked upon the far famed sunsets of Italy, and my sober conviction is, that never was there a display of the beauties and glories of the firmament more magnificent than that which is often furnished, from [illegible] years spent [illegible] who are here in training for the Christian ministry, as if to them, like the Apostle at Patmos, a door were opened into Heaven. [illegible] years of absence, I cannot rid myself of the [illegible] of twilight musings—that the [illegible] of the blessed is [illegible] of pearl and the stones of [illegible] in the western sky, which [illegible] in the light of the setting [illegible]

CHAPTER CXXXVI.

ANDOVER—(*Continued*).

ECCLESIASTICAL.

South Parish.—Andover, as originally incorporated, embraced the present town, North Andover and all of Lawrence lying south of the Merrimac River. The first settlement, as has been previously stated, was at what is now the old centre of North Andover. Here was the house of worship, the home of the minister, the place for the transaction of public business, the residence of the principal men of the town.

But, in the course of half a century, a change took place. Thus, when, in 1707, it became necessary to provide a new meeting-house, it was found, on a test vote as to the location of this new house, that a majority of the voters, and hence of the inhabitants, resided in the southerly and westerly sections of the township. This majority insisted that the new meeting-house should be built much nearer their residences, and hence some distance from the old site. An irreconcilable division took place on this question. The matter was carried to the General Court, resulting finally in a division of the town into two precincts or parishes, by order and under the supervision of the court. This was the beginning, ecclesiastically, of Andover as it now is. Hence, in considering the ecclesiastical affairs of the town, no mention will here be made of the ministers, meeting-houses or other parish matters previous to 1707. This will be conceded to the able historian of North Andover.

The South Parish, having been legally constituted, held its first legal meeting for business purposes on the 20th of June, 1709. The first business of the meeting was "to see whether we can agree where to set our new Meeting-House." After some delay an agreement was finally made to set the meeting-house "at y^e^ Rock on the west side of Roger Brook," near the present site of the Centre Primary School-house. The house was built and occupied for the first time in January, 1710; £108 was raised to meet its cost. "Young men and maids had liberty to build seats round in the galleries on their own charge."

A minister for the new parish and meeting-house was at once sought. Mr. Samuel Phillips, a graduate of Harvard College, not yet twenty-one years of age, was invited to preach as a candidate for settlement. He commenced his novitiate on April 30, 1710. After a six months' trial, the parish, on November 2d, voted "clearly in y^e^ affirmative" on the question of his "continuance" with them. Less than six weeks later, December 12th, the parish "unanimously" requested him to become their "settled minister." Hesitating, on account of his extreme youth, to assume at once so grave a responsibility, he continued



S. Phillips

his ministerial services, without ordination, till October 17th of the following year. On that day he was ordained and inducted by an ecclesiastical council into the office of pastor and teacher of the South Parish and Church in Andover. On the same day, and by the same council, the church was organized and recognized.

The church was composed of thirty-five members, fourteen males and twenty-one females, viz. :

Abbot, George.
Abbot, Dorcas (w. Geo.).
Abbot, John.
Abbot, Sarah (w. John).
Abbot, Sarah (w. Benj).
Abbot, Nehemiah.
Abbot, Abigail (w. Dea. Neh).
Ballard, Rebecca (w. John).
Ballard, Hannah (w. Wm).
Bigsby, Hannah (w. Dan'l).
Blanchard, Anne (w. Jona).
Chandler, William.
Chandler, Sarah (w. Wm).
Chandler, Thomas.
Chandler, Mary (w. Thos).
Dane, Francis.
Dane, Hannah (w. Francis).
Farnum, Ralph.
Farnum, Sarah (w. Ralph).
Foster, William.
Holt, Hannah (w. Samuel).
Johnson, Elizabeth (w. Jas).
Johnson, William.
Johnson, John.
Johnson, Mary (w. John).
Lovejoy, William.
Lovejoy, Mary (w. Wm).
Lovejoy, Mary (w. Eben).
Osgood, Christopher.
Phillips, Samuel.
Preston, Sarah (w. John).
Russ, John.
Russ, Deborah (w. John).
Russell, Mary (w. Robt).
Russell, Phebe (w. Thos).

The first deacons of the new church were John Abbot and William Lovejoy. The ministry, thus begun, continued for nearly sixty years after his ordination, terminating only with the life of the pastor, in the eighty-second year of his age.

As the number of worshippers increased, the meeting-house failed to furnish them suitable accommodation, and in 1733–34 a new house was erected, "after the same form and fashion as the old," only larger, being "thirty feet between plate and sill, and forty-four feet wide, and fifty-six feet in length." This was opened for public service on May 19, 1734. The "seating" of this house, as in all similar cases in the churches of New England of that day, was a very difficult and delicate task. After many plans had been suggested and rejected, it was finally settled that a committee should be appointed to "dignify seats and pews," and another committee should allot the seats and pews according to "their judgment, having respect to money and age." This plan lasted for twenty-three years, and was then abandoned for other and varied methods. In a letter from Hon. Josiah Quincy to Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe, we have a description of this house as it appeared to him, then a pupil in Phillips Academy :

"It was surrounded by horse-blocks innumerable with a disproportionate number of sheds; for the pillion was the ladies' traveling delight, and alone or in pairs, with their husbands or fathers, they seldom failed to come trooping to their devotions. The church itself was a shingled mass, lofty, and, I should think, containing twice the area of its successor. This, however, may be the exaggeration of my boyish fancy, but it had three lofty stories, with three galleries in the interior, always densely filled with apparently pious zeal and earnest listeners. In the left hand gallery sat the ladies, in the right the gentlemen, in the midst of whom and in front sat the tything-man, with his white pole three or four cubits in length, the emblem of his dignity and power, and in his right hand a short hazel rod, which, ever and anon, in the midst of the sermon, to the awakening and alarm of the whole congregation, he would, with the whole force of his arm, bring down with a ringing slap on the front of the gallery, shaking it, at the same time, with a terrific menace, at two or three frightened urchins who were whispering or playing in a corner. In a square box in front of the pulpit sat the Deacons, one of whom had pen, ink and paper, and was carefully taking the heads of the preacher's discourse, preparing documentary evidence, either that the sermon was old, or its doctrines new, or consonant with the orthodox platform. In the front gallery sat Precenter Ames, or Eames, with a pitch-pipe, the token of his authority, with which, as soon as the first line of the Psalm was read, he gave the note to the choir of both sexes,—twenty or thirty of each,—following the Deacon, reading line by line, in an ecstasy of harmony which none but the lovers of music realize. And the mighty congregation seemed to realize their felicity, for they joined the choir with a will, realizing or exemplifying the happiness of which they sung. Upon the whole, it was an exciting scene, elevating and solemnizing the mind, by the multitude that took part in it.

"The windows of the vast building were of diamond shaped glass-panes, of rhomboid form, in length about three or four inches, in breadth perhaps two or three. Opening like doors outward, these windows were loose and shackling. In the winter, when the north wind shook the vast building with unmistakable power, their rattling was often a match, and sometimes an over match, for the voice of the clergyman, while the pious females in the pews, sitting, for the most part, on hard benches, with small muffs, and their feet only comforted with small stoves, or stockings over shoes, or heated bricks, had much ado through their sufferings to keep their attention fixed, or the text in memory, and register the infinitesimal heads into which it was divided."

Rev. Mr. Phillips died June 5, 1771. In less than a year after, May 20, 1772, the church and parish united in giving Mr. Jonathan French a unanimous call to become their pastor. He accepted and was ordained September 23, 1772. Previous to the calling of Mr. French there had been considerable talk in the parish about building another meeting-house. There was now, as heretofore, great diversity of opinion as to the location of the new house. After much conflicting and dilatory action on the part of the parish, it was finally voted, in December, 1787, to go forward and build a new meeting-house according to a plan that had been submitted. This house was seventy feet in length and fifty-four feet in width, "with a porch at each end and one in front," and to stand within six or eight rods of the former house. The new building was completed and occupied December 7, 1788.

Mr. French continued in the pastorate of the church and parish till his death, which took place July 28, 1809, embracing a period of thirty-six years and ten months—covering the time of the American Revolution, with all its attending and succeeding anxieties, privations, distresses and forebodings. It was a ministry of help, sympathy, consolation and cheer.

After the death of Rev. Mr. French the parish remained for more than three years without a settled pastor. This large parish had become somewhat fastidious and hard to please. The fact that a theological seminary had been located within its limits, with a corps of able and eloquent professors, who, with the students, belonged to the congregation of worshippers, may have had something to do with this difficulty in finding a man suitable for the place. After a number of ineffectual trials to unite upon a candidate, "the

attention of the people was turned towards Mr. Justin Edwards, then a member of the middle class in the Theological Seminary." After some conference with Mr. Edwards on the part of the church committee, in which he expressed great hesitation as to assuming so grave a charge, the church and parish with a good degree of unanimity extended to him an invitation to settle with them in the gospel ministry. He was ordained and installed as pastor on the 2d day of December, 1812. The parish at this time included a large circuit of territory and a large number of people. Their meeting-house was the only place of public worship in the precinct. The students and teachers of Phillips Academy and the students and professors of the Theological Seminary were stated attendants upon and active participants in its religious services. The pulpit and pastoral labor of a minister of such a parish was necessarily exacting to both mind and body.

After four years of such labor, in 1816, a portion of the congregation was withdrawn by the formation of a church in connection with the Theological Seminary. Since this date the students, teachers and professors of the two institutions have worshipped in their own chapel.

The West Parish was also set off during the ministry of Mr. Edwards, with the cheerful concurrence of those who remained in the old parish.

After an acceptable pastorate of fourteen years and ten months, Rev. Mr. Edwards was dismissed October 1, 1827.

But a brief interval elapsed before the church and parish unanimously invited Mr. Milton Badger to become their pastor.

He accepted and was ordained and installed January 3, 1828. His ministry continued for seven years, and nine months, when he was dismissed to become secretary of the American Home Missionary Society. During his comparatively brief ministry there were unusually large accessions to the church. It was a time of extensive revivals in the New England churches, the era of evangelists, and the South Parish shared liberally in the influences and blessings of the awakened interest in religious matters.

During his ministry radical changes were made in the arrangement of the meeting-house. The square pews of immemorial usage were taken out and long pews substituted; the front porch was removed; the pulpit transferred to the west end of the house, and the galleries changed to correspond with the other improvements.

It was during this ministry also that the Methodists and Baptists first held public worship in the town. The Methodists drew off a few church members, and a much larger number of tax payers, from the parish. The Baptist Church, formed in 1832, while making no draft upon the church, took quite a number of people from the parish into its society.

Mr. Lorenzo D. Longstroth, having received a unanimous call from both church and parish, was ordained and installed May 11, 1836. Being in feeble health, he was dismissed after a ministry of two years and ten months.

Mr. John L. Taylor succeeded Mr. Longstroth, being ordained and installed July 18, 1839. His ministry extended over thirteen years, when he was dismissed to become the treasurer of Phillips Academy. On his leaving, the church put on record their belief that he had "performed the duties of his high office with great ability, fidelity and discretion." During this ministry the anti-slavery agitation was at its height, and the church suffered no little in its peace, and somewhat in its membership, from the activity of that wing of the Abolitionists styled "Come-Outers."

The day following the dismission of Rev. Mr. Taylor, the church and parish gave a call to Rev. Chas. Smith, which he accepted, and was installed as pastor October 28, 1852. After a ministry of one year and one month, against the wishes of the people, but for reasons satisfactory to himself and the council called to act upon his request for a dismission, he was dismissed to accept the call of the Shawmut Church, Boston.

On the retirement of Mr. Mooar, who succeeded Mr. Smith, the latter was invited to resume the pastorate of the South Church and Parish. This invitation he accepted, and was re-installed December 18, 1861. He was dismissed May, 1876, after a pastorate of fourteen years and five months. His two pastorates together extended over fifteen years and six months, a longer period than that of any other pastor, with the exceptions of Mr. Phillips and Mr. French, the life-tenure pastors. The last ministry of Mr. Smith covered the years of the Civil War,—those years of anxiety, strife and anguish, when the people were called to give their beloved sons a sacrifice for the sin of the nation.

After the first resignation of Mr. Smith the parish was without a settled pastor for nearly two years, when an invitation was unanimously given to Mr. George Mooar, a native of the town, and a recent graduate of the Theological Seminary, to become the pastor. This invitation was accepted, and Mr. Mooar was ordained and installed October 10, 1855. After a pastorate of a little less than five years and six months, the health of his family and his own being somewhat impaired, Mr. Mooar asked a release from his pastorate to accept a charge in Oakland, California. His request being granted, he was dismissed March 27, 1861.

During the ministry of Rev. Mr. Mooar, and largely through his indefatigable exertions, the present house of worship was built. This house, while not the largest built on or near the spot it occupies, is by far the most commodious in its appointments and pleasing in its architectural proportions. The steeple, in its front view, is one of the most satisfying to the eye it has been the fortune of the writer to look upon. It has a seating capacity for nine hundred

people, most ample for all the needs of the parish. As an auditorium, both for speaker and hearer, it is excelled by few buildings of its size.

The second pastorate of Mr. Smith was followed by that of Rev. James H. Laird, who was installed May 10, 1877. After faithfully serving the church and parish for six years, he was, at his own request, dismissed May 11, 1883.

Mr. Laird was followed by Rev. John J. Blair, who was installed May 1, 1884, and is the present efficient and acceptable pastor of the church.

Pastors of the South Church.—Rev. Samuel Phillips, the first pastor of the church, was born in Salem, February 17, 1690. He was the son of Samuel Phillips, goldsmith, and Mary Emerson, daughter of Rev. John Emerson, minister of Gloucester; grandson of Rev. Samuel Phillips, minister of Rowley; great-grandson of Rev. George Phillips, the first minister of Watertown. The last named was a graduate of Caius College, Cambridge, England, and for his first pastorate was settled over a Church of England parish. Coming to entertain conscientious scruples regarding certain ecclesiastical usages of the Established Church, he left its service and joined the Nonconformists. By this change of ecclesiastical connection, his love for the work of the ministry, instead of diminishing, became more ardent. To gratify this holy passion, he joined a company of people entertaining like views with himself, for the purpose of emigrating to the New World. They soon embarked on the good ship "Arbella" for their chosen destination. In this gracious company were included John Winthrop, Rev. John Wilson, Simon Bradstreet, one of the first settlers of Andover, and others of like character and faith. Soon after landing, Mr. Phillips, with a small company, pushed out into the wilderness and commenced a new settlement, now called Watertown. Here he established a church, and, after fourteen years of arduous and successful labor, died, greatly lamented by all the people of his parish, and of the colony as well. He is said to have been, from the first, a leader in the councils of both the church and the colony. By his self-denying, painstaking devotion to the interests of the people, by his simple-hearted fidelity to that which is true and good in faith and life, he so greatly endeared himself to his people that, at his death, in the vigor of his manhood, they took upon themselves, in their poverty, the charges for the liberal education of his eldest son, Samuel, who in time became the honored minister of Rowley. This son was the grandfather of the Rev. Samuel Phillips, minister of the South Parish, Andover.

It was with the prestige of such an ancestry, distinguished alike for their piety and their learning, their conscientiousness and self-sacrifice, their faith in God and their service to men, that he modestly assumed the duties of his high office. His coming was an era in the history of the town. In him was held potentially, its future distinction and celebrity. The family of the worshipful Simon Bradstreet, which had been socially so pre-eminent, and so potent in all public affairs, had disappeared, leaving slight, if any, permanent traces of its dominant influence. A new name came to take its place, destined to impress its beneficent influence ineffaceably upon the institutions and character of the town. From the first Mr. Phillips secured a firm hold upon the esteem and affections of his people, which he retained to the end of his life. Soon after his settlement they describe him, in a petition to the General Court, as "a worthy, learned and pious minister." To this opinion they adhered, from father to son, for three-score years.

The Rev. Abiel Abbot, in his brief but valuable "History of Andover," published in 1829, gives us the following sketch of Mr. Phillips:

"He was endued with good powers of mind, and was a diligent, faithful and useful minister. He early acquired the habit of order, industry and economy in the management of all his affairs, by which he was enabled to accomplish much and obtain his object. Though he sacredly devoted a tenth of his income to pious and charitable purposes, and his salary was small, yet he educated his family liberally, and accumulated a large estate. In his opinions he was a Calvinist of the old school. As a preacher, he was highly respectable, was zealous, and endeavored not only to indoctrinate his people in sentiments which he deemed correct and important, but to lead them to the practice of all Christian duties. Being strongly attached to his views of Christianity, he exerted himself to defend and propagate them, both by preaching and writing, and to guard his people against opinions contrary to them. His anxiety on this subject may be easily seen in some of his last publications. His labours in the pulpit were protracted beyond what is usual at the present day. His hour-glass was turned at the commencement of his sermon, and the last sands ran out before its conclusion. It was his practice to call at every house in his parish at least once in a year, and he often carried Madam with him in those parochial visits. They usually rode together on the same horse, according to the fashion of the times. He had much influence in persuading parents to attend to parental duties and household worship. The people, during his ministry, were remarkably united, and his parish was free from sectaries. Though a man of considerable humour, yet there was an apparent sternness, which caused undue fear in many of his people, and especially in the young. Mr. Phillips was highly respected by his brethren in the ministry, and was frequently invited to preach on public occasions."

This statement of Mr. Abbot is doubtless a fair one, so far as it goes, but it fails to give us the impression of a person of such strength and gentleness, persistency and patience, clear insight into the heart of things, and judicious adaptation to the exigencies of the hour, as we look for in a man who held unquestioned for sixty years the reins of authority in a large and intelligent parish, and gave to the world, through blood and training, a family of children of such marked abilities and virtues. Without being an eloquent preacher or a profound philosopher, he must have been an able, well-proportioned man, filling his place admirably, and, in his children, perpetuating his virile influence down the generations.

It seems hardly credible that a country pastor, on a salary of seventy pounds, or three hundred and fifty dollars, with the use of the ministerial house and lands, should have "accumulated a large estate." The wonder grows when we learn that one-tenth of

this was given to pious and charitable objects; that his was a hospitable house, with attending servants; that he brought up in comfort a family of five children, two of whom were educated at Harvard College; and that the parish was slack in paying him his dues, being in debt to him at one time fifty-three hundred pounds. This heavy default in payment was not allowed to pass unnoticed. The parish was faithfully admonished of its wrong-doing, and urged to make a settlement; then offered an abatement of seven hundred pounds on certain conditions; and, closing his lengthy and mathematically clear statement, the good pastor says,—"And finally, my dear brethren, if, after all y^t has been said, you do rather incline to Defer y^e s^d Settlement, and shall choose to go on Still in Love, as you have done of late, viz., to allow me seventy pounds lawfull money, and my fire-wood annually, I Shall Submit to your Pleasure in that matter."

The parish chose "to go on Still in Love."

It is evident that the pastor and his wife (emphatically the latter) must have possessed rare gifts for the conduct of a household and the wise uses of money. There was, of course, rigid economy in the family, but, so far as we know, no pinching, no shabbiness, no pecuniary distress or embarrassment. We can understand how economy must have been reduced to a system in all domestic affairs, and can credit the statement that the pastor who tithed his income, "was so economical as to blow out the candle when he began his evening prayer." But there was nothing sordid in this minutiæ in saving. Free-giving, but no waste, must have been his motto.

Near the close of his life the parish made such a settlement of his claims as to call out from him the warmest expressions of gratitude, attended by an offer of "one hundred pounds, lawful money, to be improved for such purposes as the parish shall direct." In his will he also left to the parish one hundred pounds, the income of which was to be used for the benefit of the poor of the parish. From that day to the present the poor have yearly profited by this bequest. He also bequeathed one hundred pounds for the propagation of Christian knowledge among the Indians.

Mr. Phillips was a dignified man, and realized fully the distinction belonging to his office. His manners were such as to inspire respect, veneration and, perchance, "fear" on the part of some. The parish minister of that day was the distinguished man of the town to whom deference was paid by all. Mr. Phillips received this deference as his due, and, while courteous to all, was reserved and mindful of his official position.

We have from the pen of an eye-witness a graphic account of his appearance and manner as he came forth to the people on the Sabbath. As he deliberately passed from his house to the meeting-house, on the opposite side of the street at the hour of worship, "he was flanked on the left by his black body-servant, and on his right by madam and her colored maid and the children. His movements were precise and stately, as was becoming in a man occupying his exalted position. As he drew near the house of worship the people who were gathered about the doors hastened within to their seats, and when he entered the house of God, with head uncovered, the whole congregation, as was the hereditary custom, rose from their seats, and remained standing until he had ascended the long flight of steps to the pulpit, entered the sacred enclosure and seated himself. At the close of the service the same deference was paid the minister on retiring, the congregation rising and standing till he and his family had passed into the porch of the sanctuary. This was one of the ways in which both pastor and people deemed it fitting that the worshippers of God should show their reverence for his consecrated ambassador."

The sermons of Mr. Phillips, many of which, in manuscript, have been preserved, are neatly written, methodical in construction and easy to be understood. They are earnest, often bold, in the rebuke of the prevailing vices and follies,—intemperance, licentiousness, extravagence. His preaching was for the most part practical rather than doctrinal, dealing with the condition of his hearers rather than with speculations concerning future possibilities. And, withal, his sermons show a frequent iteration of the same truth, teaching, administration and rebuke.

Mr. Phillips published a number of sermons and small treatises,—one of the most noticeable of the latter being that entitled, "Seasonable Advice to a Neighbor." This treatise, published in 1761, is in the form of a dialogue, and is dedicated to the people of his parish, with the prayer that "they might always hold fast to the form of sound words, and especially that they might not settle any succeeding minister of opposite faith."

In this tract Mr. Phillips clearly manifests his confidence in the Calvinistic theology and the Westminster Confession. He sets forth, with the earnestness born of conviction, the doctrines of "original sin," the "necessity of the new birth," "justification by faith without the works of the law," "divine decrees" and "the saints' perseverance." And, while the author "would not be understood" as intending "to confine real Christianity" strictly "to those who are fully in the scheme called Calvinistic," he is yet "fully persuaded that these truths are most consonant, not only to antiquity, but also to the true standard, the word of inspiration."

Shortly after his settlement, when the ministerial house had been built, January 17, 1711–12, Mr. Phillips married Hannah White, daughter of John White, Esq., of Haverhill. She was a worthy, capable, pious woman, who greatly assisted her husband in his parochial duties, and, by her prudent, discreet conduct in the parish, her careful and judicious man-

agement of their domestic affairs, and her wise oversight and training of their children, contributed largely to the ministerial success of her husband, and to the developement of the noble and generous traits of her sons. She died at the home of her son Samuel, in North Andover, January 7, 1773, two years after the death of her husband, in the eighty-second year of her age.

They had five children,—three sons and two daughters. Mary, born November 30, 1712, married Samuel Appleton, of Haverhill; died December 5, 1737, aged twenty-five.

Lydia, born June 10, 1717, married Dr. Parker Clark, of Andover; died November 4, 1749, aged thirty-two, leaving children. These children were tenderly referred to by Mr. Phillips in his will, made in the seventy-fourth year of his age. His sons had at this time secured for themselves social position and substantial possessions. To them he says: "My desire and prayer is y^t my s^d three sons may continue to live in love, and y^t they still behave respectfully and dutifully towards their aged, tender and good mother, even unto the end; and y^t they go on to shew kindness to y^e motherless children of their beloved sister Lydia. And, in a word, that they make it their care to be found in Christ, and to serve their generation according to y^e will of God, by doing good as they shall have opportunity unto all men, and especially to y^e household of faith; as knowing y^t it is more blessed to give than to receive."

Samuel, born February 13, 1715, died August 21, 1790.

John, born December 17, 1719, died August 21, 1795.

William, born June 25, 1722, died January 15, 1804.

Of these three sons of Mr. Phillips there will be further mention in connection with Phillips Academy.

Rev. Jonathan French, the second minister of the South Parish, was born in Braintree, January 30, 1740. He was the youngest son of Dea. Moses French and Esther Thayer French. On his mother's side he was a descendant of John Alden. His early life was spent on the farm with his father. When seventeen years of age he enlisted as a private soldier in the Continental army, and was stationed at Fort Edward. His health soon becoming impaired by small-pox and fever, he received a discharge, and returned to the paternal farm. On recovering his health, he re-enlisted in the army, and was stationed at Castle William, in Boston harbor. Here he was created sergeant and put in charge of the sutler's store, and not unfrequently, in the absence of the higher officers, of the garrison also. While in this position he made the acquaintance of some literary people from the neighboring city who were accustomed to visit the Castle. To them he revealed his passionate desire for more knowledge and a better education, and in return received encouragement and assistance from them to pursue his studies. The circumstances in which he was placed turned his attention strongly towards medicine and surgery, especially the latter. In these branches of learning he made such rapid advances as to be soon entrusted by his superiors with the care of the sick in the garrison. While thus employed, his mind took a broader reach, and he resolved on a collegiate education, with the further intent of becoming a missionary, or minister. In this purpose he was further encouraged by his Boston friends and the chaplains of the Castle, who furnished him with the needed preparatory books. So zealous was he in these classical studies that, in his daily trips between the Castle and city, in the boat of which he had command, he pursued his studies while the boatmen plied their oars. By such diligence he soon gained the requisite knowledge for a college matriculation, resigned his position at the Castle, and was admitted to Harvard College, to the class which graduated in 1771. He was thirty-one years old when he took his college diploma. Among his classmates and personal friends were Samuel Phillips, Jr., and David Osgood, natives of Andover. After his graduation he remained for a time in Cambridge, in the family of the lately deceased President Holyoke, for the purpose of taking a course of theological instruction. He still adhered to his original intention of becoming a missionary to the Indians. But, through the persuasion of his Andover class-mates, he was induced to preach for a time in the pulpit of the South Parish, recently made vacant by the death of the venerable Mr. Phillips. His appearance, reputation and services were so acceptable to the people that they soon, with great unanimity and cordiality, extended to him an invitation to become their minister. He accepted this invitation, and was ordained and installed pastor September 23, 1772, in the thirty-third year of his age.

As a pastor, Mr. French was faithful, judicious and much beloved. His birth and early life among farmers gave him an experimental acquaintance with the trials, labors and aspirations of the large mass of his parishioners. And his short experience as a soldier prepared him to be a wise counselor to the young men of his parish who went into the Revolutionary War, and a considerate sympathizer with the friends at home. He did not possess the easy dignity of his predecessor, and did not so carry himself in his intercourse with the people as to inspire them with such profound reverence as to make their worship of God intermingle with their veneration for his servant. Being below the medium height and inclined to corpulency, he was heavy of movement and averse to physical exertion. But, notwithstanding this bodily inertness, his pastoral duties were discharged with scrupulous fidelity and loving care. The people in their perplexities often sought his advice in other than religious matters, making him a confidant in their private and family troubles. We find this encomium

of him on record: "Seldom was a minister more beloved, esteemed and venerated by his parishioners."

Mr. French was valued for his practical wisdom. People and parishes beyond the limits of the town sought his advice in difficult matters. It is stated that he "attended seventy-eight ecclesiastical councils," a phenomenal number for those days of few churches and far between and life-long pastorates.

He was fond of anecdote, and could tell a good story with such spirit as to afford pleasure to old and young. The children were delighted to gather around his knee, repeat their catechism and listen to his amusing recitals.

"As a preacher, he maintained a highly respectable rank. His preaching was rather practical than doctrinal. For though he cordially received the Calvinistic doctrines, he very rarely went into a particular exposition of them—much less attempted anything like a formal defence." His manner in the pulpit was impressive and at times uncomfortably deliberate. His style was plain, intelligible to the least cultivated and better adapted to instruct than to please the hearer.

Mr. Mooar, in his admirable "Historical Manual of the South Church," in speaking of Mr. French as a theologian, says: "It seems evident that he not only did not make very sharp discriminations, but was rather averse to having them made. He was, beyond all dispute, no friend to the Hopkinsian theories of his day. Yet, as between such Arminians as Dr. Symmes, of the North Parish, and Dr. Cummings, of Billerica, and the Calvinists as a class, he undoubtedly sided with the latter. He was nearly the only one of his Association whose sympathies were Calvinistic. He was reputed a Calvinist, though living in the atmosphere of Arminianism," and exchanged pulpits with ministers of each wing. "I have heard it said, that, after preaching sound and solemn doctrine, he was in the habit of adding a remark or two which mitigated very much the severity of his statements."

As a man, Mr. French was noted for his cheerful disposition, charitableness towards all classes and for his hospitality, remarkable for even those days, when the ministerial house was expected to be and was the hostelry for all traveling preachers, their families and friends. One who profited by this hospitality has said: "To every brother in the ministry and to a large circle of acquaintances his doors were always open, and every one who came met with a cordial welcome."

As a citizen, Mr. French deeply sympathized with the patriots who resisted the aggression of the mother country and thus precipitated the Revolution. And, when the hour for armed resistance came, he was found among the foremost to encourage such resistance. When the news of the fight at Lexington reached town, his presence and voice stimulated the young men of his parish to hasten to the bloody strife. And when these parishioners of his, in the fight at Bunker Hill, were slain or wounded, he headed the company of citizens who hastened to the scene of conflict with sympathy and aid. And, however wavering, uncertain, or both-sided may have been his position in the doctrinal controversies of the day, he was an unquestioned patriot, with unwavering consistency and constancy favoring the war and the independence of the colonies. The severe trials which came to his people in consequence of the war he cheerfully shared. In a long letter to the parish touching the payment of his salary, dated February 19, 1779, he says: "The true intent and design of the original contract between us, so far as it relates to the money part, was to afford me, with the other things specified in the contract, a comfortable and decent support; which was all I wanted. And, supposing the necessaries of life would continue nearly as they were then, upon an average, one year with another, I imagined this would render it unnecessary for me to encumber myself with the entanglements of the world, and enable me, according to the apostolic direction, to give myself wholly to the work of the ministry. A comfortable, decent support for myself and family was all I desired. Experience showed me that the provisions you made were adequate to this purpose, and yet were not too much to enable me to afford that time and care for this flock which the great duties of my calling required. I was well-contented, and, had things remained in that channel, you never would have heard any complaints from me. But circumstances are greatly altered. In 1775, the first year of the war, the articles necessary for clothing were raised in their prices twenty-five per cent., which diminished my salary, so far as these articles were necessary, one-quarter part. With the decrease of my salary my expenses increased. Soldiers almost daily fell in upon us, and such entertainment as we could we gave them and they were welcome." While many in the parish during these years did not take this change of prices into consideration, others did, and furnished "the necessaries of life at former prices," and "others considered me in their private kindness, so that, on the whole, I was so far from complaining that I gave you a generous and public credit for the same, though I then thought, and still do think, that I sustained my full proportion or more of the public burthen, which I was willing to do." In "the spring of 1778 the necessaries of life, upon an average, had arisen five or six-fold in their demands. My salary decreased in value in proportion. I found the burden then increasing upon me and threatening to become insupportable; and with the best economy I could use, my salary fell far short of procuring the real necessaries of life for my family." This becoming known, he was assisted by private donations, public contribution and help on the farm, so that, while short of his nominal salary, "in proportion to about three for one," he says, "I was fully

satisfied and felt grateful to my people for their marks of justice and generosity towards me."

Having made this review of the past, he comes to the then present price of the necessaries of life,—grain, meat, sugar, drink, "water excepted," "from fifteen to twenty-fold higher than when my contract was made." After going into minute detail and estimate he continues, "upon this calculation,—my salary, which is in the contract £80, is in its value to me now no more than £8." But, "as I desire nothing of you but what is perfectly right and just and perfectly reasonable, and should be unworthy the sacred character I sustain among you if I were not willing to sympathize with you and participate of all your burthens and afflictions as well as rejoice in all your prosperity, I am willing in these public calamities and burthens to rise and fall with you; nor could I be happy to be freed from them myself and see you burthened and groaning under them.—I am therefore willing to have a consideration made me annually or semi-annually, according to the then present circumstances,—I am willing to bind myself to let my salary every year, so long as it shall please God to continue me among you, be regulated in proportion to the prices of the necessaries of life and to your rates to the public, till the debt that has been, or may be, contracted by the present war, shall be discharged. If you will pay me my salary in due proportion, in the necessaries of life, for the past year, I will relinquish one-third part. That the poor may not be oppressed when the rate shall be made, let it be shown me, and I will cross out of the rates of those whom the assessors shall think most needy, a sum equal to the six lowest rates in the bill; and if the parish think this not enough, I will do more."

This proposed plan was in substance adopted by the parish. This letter brings vividly before us, not only the pecuniary embarrassments of the pastor, but the straitened condition of the people. The pastor is in a strait betwixt the pinching need of his family, and the heavy burdens of his people.

The state of things at the parsonage is graphically set forth in a letter of Josiah Quincy, a member of the family at this time, published in Dr. Sprague's "Annals of the American Pulpit;"

"Frugality was the necessity of the time and the law of his household. The only bread we tasted was Indian or Rye, or a mixture of both. Mr French, on the Sabbath, had the special privilege of white or flour bread' because, as he said, the Rye or Indian gave him the heart-burn. As he took, on that day, no other dinner, he justified himself in indulging in that enviable luxury. Chocolate was the breakfast, our dinner pork and beef, with a plentiful allowance of cabbage and all the usual vegetables farmers cultivate. In the winter frozen cod came along from the sea-coast. Bohea, a tea to modern luxury almost unknown, was our table resort, with a qualification of milk at supper time."

The pastor, it seems, took boarders from the pupils at the academy. He also had a family divinity school, from which went out men who afterwards took high rank among their brethren. He was from the first a trustee of Phillips Academy, and gave theological instruction to the pupils for some years. He was the especial confidant and adviser of Mr. Samuel Abbot, his parishioner, in his gifts for the establishment of a theological seminary. He published a number of ordination sermons, and sermons and addresses on special occasions.

Mr. French married, August 26, 1773, Miss Abigail Richards, daughter of Dr. Benjamin Richards, of Weymouth. She died August, 1821.

Their children were, Sarah, born November 18, 1774, died in infancy; Abigail, born May 29, 1776, married Rev. Samuel Stearns, Bedford; Jonathan, born August 16, 1777, pastor at Northampton, N. H.; Mary Holyoke, born August 6, 1781, married Ebenezer P. Sperry, Wenham; Sarah, born December 13, 1784, died April 12, 1788.

Justin Edwards, D.D. (third pastor), was born in Westhampton, Mass., April 25, 1787. He was the son of Justin and Elizabeth (Clark) Edwards. His father was a farmer, industrious, frugal, upright, "a man of few words." His early years were spent in assisting his father upon the farm. Becoming a Christian when eighteen years of age, he began to cherish the idea of obtaining a collegiate education, that he might become a minister. He received his preparatory training at the hands of his pastor, Rev. Enoch Hall. In 1807 he entered the sophomore class at Williams College and graduated three years later with the valedictory address. Soon after graduation he entered the Theological Seminary in Andover. Here he secured the esteem and respect of his associates and teachers, for his scholarship, ability and piety. He became so prominent among his class-mates, and so acceptable as a preacher, as to secure a unanimous invitation from both church and parish of the South Parish to become their pastor, before he had completed the second year of his theological course. In the seminary, as in the college, he was associated with Samuel J. Mills, Gordon Hall and James Richards, and deeply sympathized with their missionary spirit and projects. After leaving Andover, he for a time was engaged as an agent for the American Temperance Society. Afterwards, for more than a year and a half, he was pastor of the Salem Street Church, Boston. His health failing there, he resumed his labors with the Temperance Society and engaged actively in this work, delivering addresses, writing and distributing documents, and forming temperance societies in various parts of the country. In 1836 he was elected to the presidency of the Theological Seminary, which office he held till April 19, 1842. Again he returned for a year to the service of the Temperance Society. On the formation of the American and Foreign Sabbath Union, he became its secretary, and for seven years devoted much time and energy to the interest of Sabbath observance. From 1849 to his death he was in the employment of the American Tract Society, for the most part engaged in preparing a popular commentary of the Scriptures. He had finished the New Testa-

ment and more than half of the Old, when he was laid aside by sickness, and, after lingering for some fifteen months, died suddenly at Bath Alum Springs, Va., July 24, 1853, aged sixty-six years.

Dr. Edwards was much esteemed for his practical wisdom and executive ability. He was for thirty-three years trustee of the Theological Seminary. He was a member of the executive committee of the New England Tract Society; a promoter of the American Tract Society and member of its publishing committee; a director in the American Home Missionary Society and a corporate member of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions. He was honored with the degree of Doctor of Divinity by Yale College, 1827.

In person Dr. Edwards was tall, erect, muscular, a fine specimen of the physical man. In bearing he was stately, dignified, with a grave countenance, and somewhat stiff in manner and formal in address. His voice was a heavy sub-bass, well fitted to startle the Sabbath sleepers when given full scope. His pulpit delivery was in harmony "with the rugged simplicity of his thought and diction." The style of his sermons was simple, with little rhetorical embellishment, little play of the imagination or flash of the seer, or the sharp, terse strokes of the orator. But his sentences were solid, his Saxon words weighty with common sense and Scripture truth, and, when sent home to the minds and hearts of his hearers by his sonorous voice, they often left an abiding impression. He had the reputation, especially in the early part of his ministry, of being an exceptionally able preacher. During the last six of the fifteen years of his ministry in the South Parish, says Dr. Amos Blanchard, "with an undisputed ascendency among his own people, he was known far and near as a powerful preacher and a man of eminent, practical wisdom. . . . Yet, even then, he had neither attractiveness nor popularity; he had, however, what is so much better,—influence: an influence growing out of his personal qualities, and accumulating with every year of his pastoral life." It is evident that the great power gained by Dr. Edwards over his fellow-men was owing largely not so much to his superior intellectual abilities or acquisitions, or to any felicity of speech, as to his downright earnestness, the conviction of his profound sincerity, his simple straightforwardness, his tact in approaching men and his luminous piety. He had, withal, some rare gifts for organization, for bringing men into co-operative action.

As a pastor he was indefatigable,—catechising the children, establishing and maintaining a Bible-class for adults, visiting frequently the large number of homes of his parishioners, scattered far and wide over miles of territory. In this field of labor he was unsurpassed.

Dr. Edwards was the author of a large number of printed tracts, documents, sermons, letters, and the community of which mention has been made.

He married Miss Lydia Bigelow, daughter of Asa Bigelow, of Colchester, Conn., September 17, 1817, a most worthy woman and efficient helper in the pastoral work.

Their children were six in number,—Justin Asa, born January 20, 1819; Jonathan, born July 17, 1820 (ordained at Woburn, September 7, 1848, and since settled in Plymouth Church, Rochester, N. Y., Dedham and Wellesley Hills, where he now resides); Newton, born March 11, 1822, died May 7, 1855; Elizabeth, born November 9, 1824, resides in Andover; Lydia, born March 6, 1826, resides in Andover; Ann Eliza, born September 29, 1828 (married Rev. Thomas N. Haskell).

Rev. Milton Badger was the fourth pastor of the South Church. He was born in Coventry, Conn., May 6, 1800, and was the twelfth child of his parents, Enoch and Mary Badger. He was a graduate of Yale College, in the class of 1823; was for one year the principal of the Academy at New Canaan. After this he passed most of his time for three years at Andover with the class in the seminary which graduated in 1827, yet was tutor in Yale College 1826–27. He was installed pastor of the South Church in 1828. He left this last position to become secretary of the American Home Missionary Society. In this last important position the great labor of his life was performed. As a pastor and preacher he was eminently successful. His ministry embraced a period of extensive and heart-stirring revivals. Protracted meetings and arousing sermons and appeals from such men as Dr. Wisner, Dr. Lyman Beecher, Rev. Charles S. Finney, and others who preached in the South Church, brought many to the exercise of penitence and faith in Christ. Seldom have the churches of New England been so signally enlarged. During Mr. Badger's ministry, some three hundred and thirty joined the church, mostly on profession.

But the work to which Mr. Badger gave the best of his life, and for which he developed a peculiar fitness, was that of a Home Missionary secretary. Here his large heart and far-reaching mind and ever-expanding faith had free scope. His parish was the country, extending finally from the Atlantic to the Pacific. But he was a modest man and buried beneath his work. Little can be learned of Dr. Badger, except what is to be found in the history and progress of the missionary enterprise in our broad Western territory. The importance and value of his services for the thirty-eight years during which he was secretary are beyond estimate. Thousands of feeble churches have been nurtured into vigorous life, and thousands of faithful ministers have been cheered and sustained in their self-denying work by his agency. Revered for his piety, trusted for his wisdom and integrity, honored for his manliness and courage, esteemed for his sagacity and patience, loved for his warm, sympathetic heart, many and many a struggling church and toil-worn minister have risen up to call

him blessed. He died in Madison, Conn., March 1, 1873, aged seventy-three years, mourned by multitudes.

Mr. Badger was married to Miss Clarissa Munger, of Madison, who is still living. They had five children, only two of whom lived to manhood. Both of these entered the medical profession,—Dr. George Badger, died at Panama; Dr. William Badger, lives at Flushing, Long Island.

Rev. Lorenzo L. Langstroth, the fifth minister, was born in Philadelphia, Pa., December 25, 1810. He was a graduate of Yale College, and studied theology in New Haven. After his dismission from the South Church he was for a year principal of Abbot Academy; after this, for four years, principal of the High School for Young Ladies in Greenfield, Mass., preaching for a portion of the time in the Congregational Church in that town. Receiving an invitation to settle there, he was installed and continued its pastor for over four years. On leaving his pastorate he established a Young Ladies' School in his native city, which he was obliged to relinquish, owing to poor health. He was for a time stated supply at Coleraine. He removed to Oxford, Ohio, where he now resides. Of late years he has given much attention to the culture of honey bees, and has published a valuable treatise on their nature and habits, and the methods of raising and treating them. His book is considered one of the most scientific, complete and trustworthy in the language on this subject. As a minister, he secured the favor, respect and love of his parishioners. But his physical strength was not equal to the care and labor of a large parish.

Rev. John L. Taylor, sixth pastor of the church, was born in Warren, Conn., May 20, 1814. His parents were John Taylor and Anna (Beardsley) Taylor. He graduated at Yale College in 1835. After graduation he taught in Ellington, Conn., two years, was tutor in Yale three years, at the same time pursuing a course of theological study, and then became pastor of the South Church for thirteen years.

On leaving this pastorate he took the responsible position of treasurer of Phillips Academy, which he held with marked ability and approval for sixteen years. When a new department, called the "Short Course," was created in the Theological Seminary for the benefit of worthy and suitable men to study for the ministry, who were unable to pursue a collegiate course, Mr. Taylor was appointed its professor in 1868. His title was, "Smith Professor of Theology and Homiletics, and Lecturer on Pastoral Theology." The endowment fund for this professorship had been given by Miss Sophia Smith, of Hatfield, who, at her decease, left the funds to found Smith College, Northampton. Though for a few years this "Short Course" experiment was measurably successful, yet there were not forthcoming so many and so capable men to take advantage of it as had been anticipated by its friends. Prof. Taylor continued to discharge the duties of his office, with great fidelity and much favor, for eleven years, when, owing to paralysis and increasing feebleness, he resigned. After this the department was given up. During his incumbency of the professorship he was also dean or president of the faculty. From the time he became treasurer to near the time of his death he was President of the Andover (National) Bank. In 1868 he received the degree of Doctor of Divinity from Middlebury College. Occupying these diverse and responsible positions in the town for forty-five years, he became thoroughly identified with its best interests—material, educational and religious. The institution, with which he had been intimately connected as financier and teacher for twenty-seven years, was especially dear to him. In his will he made provision for perpetually associating himself in its work, by giving the bulk of his property to further endow the Taylor Professorship of Biblical Theology, which had been established by a liberal bequest of his deceased son, Frederick. He passed away calmly and quietly, as if falling asleep, in his chair, September 23, 1884, aged seventy-three years.

As a minister Dr. Taylor was an able sermonizer, an acceptable preacher and a faithful pastor. His preaching was instructing and impressive. Without shunning to declare the whole truth of God in the doctrines of Scripture as he received them, his main endeavor seems to have been to persuade men to search the Scriptures, believe in Jesus as the Christ of God, and to become followers of Him in faith and love.

As a teacher he was in his element. In his duties as instructor in the Theological Seminary, he took special pleasure. In the class-room, to young men eager for the information that would fit them to become ministers, he could bring forth from his treasures of Biblical learning, religious experience and ministerial work, "things new and old," worthy of their closest attention.

As a man he has been characterized, by one who knew him well, as "self-controlled, sagacious, sanguine, alert, humorous, disinterested, discreet, and as possessing a rare memory for names and faces,"—the last a most happy faculty for a public man. It may be added, from observation of his years of inactivity, loneliness, feebleness and gradual decay, that he was endowed by nature and grace with rare patience, cheerfulness, steadiness of faith and serenity of spirit.

Dr. Taylor united in himself the student and the man of affairs, the teacher and the financier. He could preside, with equal success, over a meeting of bank directors or a meeting of theological professors, in either case with words of wisdom profitable for direction. He was deeply interested in educational matters, from the common school to the seminary. Poor students enlisted his sympathies and commanded his assistance.

In addition to his other labors, Dr. Taylor prepared and published, mostly by request, Sunday sermons preached on special occasions, addresses and brief memoirs. He also prepared the "Memorial of the Semi-Centennial Celebration of the Founding of the Theological Seminary," and a "Memoir of Judge Phillips," which, for completeness, finish and accuracy, ranks with the best of biographies.

He married Miss Caroline Lord Phelps, daughter of Epaphras Phelps, of East Windsor, Conn. They had five children, three of whom died in early childhood. The remaining two were Frederick H. Taylor, who died when but twenty-one years of age, leaving his property, a liberal amount, to the Theological Seminary. Rev. John Phelps Taylor, after successful pastorates in three churches,—at Middletown, Conn.; at Newport, R. I.; and at New London, Conn,—now occupies the chair of Taylor Professor of Biblical Theology, in the Theological Seminary, endowed by his brother and father.

Rev. Charles Smith[1] was born at Hatfield, Mass., August 10, 1818. His character was moulded in that typical New England township where Rev. William Williams preached from 1685 until 1741, and Rev. Joseph Lyman, D D., from 1772 until 1828. The influence of these eminent pastors was distinctly recognized in the town during Mr. Smith's early years. He was related to a family which has become conspicuous by its charitable donations. One member of the family was the founder of the noted "Smith Charities" at Northampton; another was the founder of an academy in Hatfield, the Smith Professorship at Andover, and Smith College at Northampton. Mr. Smith was graduated at Amherst College in 1841, and at Andover Theological Seminary in 1845. In each of these institutions he was held in high esteem as a young man of studious habit and unimpeachable character. His sound mind and strong common sense warranted the expectation of his future usefulness. He was ordained October 12, 1847, as pastor of the Congregational Church in Warren, Mass.; but after about five years of acceptable service there, he was called to the pastorate of the Old South Church in Andover. He labored faithfully and successfully in his second pastorate during the years 1852 and '53, when he was invited to the Shawmut Church in Boston. He was urged by friends of the Andover parish to refuse this invitation, but was persuaded by his Boston friends to accept it. He remained pastor of the Shawmut Church from 1853 to 1858. He spent the years 1860-61 as acting-pastor of the Oak Place Church in Boston. He was then honored by an invitation to resume the pastorship of the Old South Church in Andover. He accepted this invitation, and was re-installed over his former charge. His second pastorate here continued from 1861 until 1876. He spent seventeen years in his ministry at Andover,

[1] Prepared by Prof. Edwards A. Park.

—a longer period than that spent by any other pastor of the Old South Church during the present century. The ecclesiastical council that sanctioned the closing of his lengthened pastorate declared in its result: "We give our hearty testimony to his eminent ability, his abundant labors, his well-accomplished work, and the deep mutual confidence and tender love between his people and himself, which have grown with the years of his labor among them.

"We commend our dear brother to the churches and their pastors as one who, under large and peculiar responsibility in successive pastorates, has proved himself equal to the demand for a high order of culture, of character, and of natural endowments; and is esteemed by us as a learned, eloquent, and edifying preacher, a devout and faithful pastor, and worthy of all confidence as a true and honest servant of our common Lord."

When Mr. Smith resigned his pastorate he was requested by his church to recall his resignation. When he refused to recall it, he was requested by the church and parish to continue his residence in Andover. After having made the tour of Europe in 1876-77, visiting France, Belgium, Switzerland, Italy, Germany, Ireland, England and Scotland, he complied with this request and made Andover his home. He often preached in the neighboring parishes, and although not the pastor of the Old South Church, he continued to be a real minister of the town. He was often called to perform ministerial services in the homes of his former parishioners. Such was the confidence of his fellow-citizens in his discretion and incorruptible integrity, that he was elected for the years 1882, '83, '85, and '87 to represent the town in the Massachusetts House of Representatives. He manifested his well-known sagacity and faithfulness in the Legislature, particularly in saving the waters of the Shawshin River from being turned out of their natural course into a water-supply for the city of Boston. Being intimately acquainted with the interests of the central region, and also of the seaboard, of Massachusetts, he commanded the confidence of varying parties in the Legislature. They found him to be a man of political intelligence and wisdom, a prudent and independent counselor, effective in debate, and fitted to exert a steady and wholesome influence. When a citizen of Andover was needed to prepare the history of the town for the present volume, Mr. Smith was at once selected for the work. He understood the agricultural, mercantile, manufacturing, and educational interests of the town, and thus knew what to write and what to omit. He labored with his wonted vigor and fidelity in representing these various interests until the 27th day of October, 1887. He fully expected to finish his manuscript and forward it to the editor of the "Essex County History" on the 31st of the month. He was attacked on the morning of the 27th with a pain which did not alarm him, and at eleven o'clock in the forenoon of the 29th he died.

Probably he was not aware that his death was near when he suddenly left the world. It did not seem to be death, but a translation to a higher life. The announcement of his departure was received with universal surprise and grief.

He married Caroline L. Sprague, daughter of Hon. Joseph E. Sprague, of Salem. They have three children,—Edwin Bartlett Smith, in business in Minneapolis; Charles Sprague Smith, Professor of Modern Languages and Foreign Literature in Columbia College, New York; Caroline Reed Smith, resides in Andover.

Dr. George Mooar, eighth pastor, was born in Andover, West Parish, May 27, 1830. He graduated at Williams College, 1851. After teaching a year in Falmouth and Brookline he entered the Theological Seminary at Andover, and graduated in 1855. After remaining pastor of the South Church from October 10, 1855, to March 27, 1861, he was dismissed to take charge of the First Congregational Church in Oakland, Cal. Here he was installed May 6, 1861, and continued, with eminent success, for eleven years. In 1872 he was elected Professor of Systematic Theology and Church History in the Pacific Theological Seminary, which position he still retains. In 1874 he became pastor of the Plymouth Avenue Church in Oakland, which position he also retains. In 1863 he became an editor of the San Francisco *Pacific*, the organ of the Congregational Churches on the Pacific coast, where he still shares in the editorial work with his co-laborers.

While in Andover Dr. Mooar prepared a most admirable "Historical Manual" of the South Church, from which much valuable information for this sketch has been derived. Dr. Mooar has been, and now is, engaged upon the family histories of Isaac Cummings, of Topsfield, who immigrated as early as 1644, and Abraham Mooar, of Andover, who immigrated in 1687.

Dr. Mooar received the degree of Doctor of Divinity from Williams College.

Rev. James H. Laird, the tenth pastor of the South Church, was born in Milton, Pa., August 19, 1832. He graduated at Oberlin College in 1860, and at the Theological Seminary in 1864; was settled in North Fairfield, Ohio, December 21, 1864; dismissed 1868. He preached in the suburbs of Chicago, and afterwards settled for two years in Madison, Ohio; then became principal of the preparatory department in Oberlin College, from whence he came to the South Parish. He was installed in Hinsdale July 10, 1883, where he still remains.

Rev. John J. Blair, the present efficient pastor of the South Church, has had but one previous settlement,—in Rockland, Me., 1876 to 1884.

West Parish.—As early as 1771 complaints began to be heard from members of the South Church residing in the westerly section of the parish, on account of their distance from the place of worship. With ever-increasing numbers, their complaints became more pronounced. Whenever the question of a new meeting-house was agitated in the parish, as was frequently the case, the matter of location necessarily came to the front. Those living on the west side of the Shawshin insisted that the house should be on their side of the river. The trouble grew till in 1788, Isaac Osgood and others, residents of the west side, petitioned the General Court to be set off into a separate parish. Their petition was refused. But the majority of the parish recognized the disadvantages under which their brethren in the west section labored, and, in the hope of retaining them, voted that they be relieved of all obligation to aid in building the new house of worship. But this did not satisfy the complainants. The parish, finally, taking into consideration the wishes of these discontented brethren, and further, the onerous labors of the pastor of a parish eight miles in length and four in breadth, concluded to form a new parish on the west side of Shawshin River, and voted, March 12, 1826, that, "should the people on the west side of the Shawshin River erect a Meeting-House at their own expense, they have the cordial approbation of the parish." The house was soon erected by private enterprise, but built of stone taken from the immediate neighborhood. It contained ninety-eight pews, with a seating capacity for six hundred people. This stone structure still stands, though, in its interior arrangements, it has been repeatedly remodeled, refitted and improved. It was dedicated December 26, 1826. The dedicatory sermon was by Mr. Edwards, the pastor of the South Church.

On the 5th of December, 1826, the church was organized, and called the "West Church of Andover." Fifty-six persons constituted its membership, mostly from the South Church. The parish made application to the next General Court to be set off with definite bounds, which application was granted, no one opposing. As thus incorporated, the new parish embraced one hundred and fifty-eight families, or eight hundred and seventy people. On being thus set off, the South Parish granted to the West, for its use perpetually, three-eighths of the income of its ministerial funds.

The Church and Parish have had five pastors:—Rev. Samuel C. Jackson, who was settled June 6, 1827, dismissed September 25, 1850; Rev. Charles H. Peirce, ordained October 9, 1850, dismissed April 11, 1855; Rev. James H. Merrill, installed April 30, 1856, dismissed December 1, 1879; Rev. Austin H. Burr, installed April 29, 1880, dismissed January 21, 1885; Frederick W. Greene, installed September 3, 1885, still the pastor.

Pastors of the West Church.—Rev. Samuel Cram Jackson, D.D., was born in Dorset, Vt., March 13, 1802. He was the son of Dr. William Jackson and Susanna Cram Jackson, a lineal descendant of John Rogers of Smithfield memory. He prepared for college under the tuition of his father, a thorough

classical scholar. When fifteen years of age he entered Middlebury College, and graduated in 1821. Having a natural bent for legal studies, and an inherited fondness for public affairs, he spent one year in the law-office of Hon. Richard Skinner, Manchester, Vt., and one in the office of Judge David Daggett, of New Haven, preparatory to entering the legal profession. While at the latter place, his attention was turned with special interest to the subject of personal faith in Christ. His former skeptical notions gave way under a thoughtful examination of the claims of Christianity, and he consecrated himself to the service of Christ. With this new element of life, came a change in the purpose of life and its vocation. Cheerfully yielding to the wishes of his parents, who had consecrated him to the work of the ministry, and following the advice of Dr. Porter, a friend of his parents, he joined the Theological Seminary at Andover, graduating in 1826 with the valedictory addresses. Soon after this he entered upon his ministerial work with the West Parish, where he remained for twenty-two years. His physical energies having become permanently so impaired as to render his continuance of the labors, cares and responsibilities of a minister inexpedient, if not impracticable, he sought and obtained the position of Assistant State Librarian.

At first his duties were rather those of an assistant secretary of the Board of Education than of an assistant librarian. For all the duties which came to his hands at the State House, he was fully equipped and admirably adapted. First by his legal training, then by his warm interest in all educational and scholarly pursuits and efforts, and finally, by his long and practical experience in founding, supervising and sustaining educational institutions, he had become a sort of expert in the science of education. When the State Library came under his systematic hand, it was redeemed from chaos and made available for use. The reports which came from the office of the secretary assumed new importance and interest. During his occupancy of the office, twenty-eight thousand volumes were added to the library, "making it, in some respects, the best law library in the Commonwealth." But the effective influence and activity of Dr. Jackson there was not merely that of an official. By his position he made the acquaintance of many of the leading educators, statesmen and lawyers of the Commonwealth and of other states. The library became a council chamber for college presidents, promoters of beneficent enterprises and liberal-minded donors to charitable institutions. Such men would rarely fail to drop into the library for a word of cheer or counsel when they visited the city. "His sound judgment, strict integrity and interest in every thing pertaining to the public welfare, gave him, in a high degree, the confidence of wise and good men. Few men in the State House were more consulted or more trusted than he." Such is the testimony of Dr. Sears, for a time associated with him as Secretary of the Board of Education. Hon. Joseph White, another associate for sixteen years as Secretary of Education, says of him: "He brought to his entire work a ripe scholarship, a cool, unclouded judgment, a strong common sense, a fine legal acumen and a habit of prompt, untiring industry. After my sixteen years of observation, I am confident that no man within my knowledge has rendered the commonwealth a more useful and honorable service than Dr. Jackson, a service which will bear rich fruit in future years." Under these two secretaries for twenty-two years he filled the position of assistant librarian at the State House, with much satisfaction to himself, and with great acceptance to those with whom he had to do. But as years went on his health and strength, always on a low base, steadily failed, so that he was constrained to abandon his position in 1876. From this time he rapidly declined. Paralysis, combined with chronic disease, by degrees consumed his powers, both of body and mind, till the glad hour of release came, July 26, 1878.

It was the good fortune of Dr. Jackson to be the first pastor of a new church enterprise. He was by nature and taste an organizer. He possessed something of the spirit of the great Apostle who boasted that his aim had been "not to build on another man's foundation." To him came the pleasing duty of organizing the Sabbath-School, benevolent societies, the order and usages of worship, and the varied activities of a Christian Church. With such care and wisdom was this work done, as to require, like the stone meeting-house, only now and then a little interior renovation or remodeling.

We are told that when he entered upon his ministry "his style was classical, his manner in the pulpit, graceful and sprightly." As a preacher, however, he was distinguished "for his skill in adapting his sermons to the particular needs of his hearers." Says Professor Park, the best of judges, "His sermons were not marked by power, so much as by grace; not by brilliancy, so much as by dignity. They were argumentative, when argument was needed, but were generally didactic, often earnest, uniformly solemn. His manner was so natural; his voice so well cultivated and so expressive; his words were so choice and his thoughts so good; he was in such evident sympathy with his theme and with his hearers, that he drew into the sanctuary some men who had previously absented themselves from public worship; he attracted the uniform attention of his hearers; he satisfied them so fully that they were reluctant to have him exchange pulpits with other ministers, even when those ministers were celebrated men." His discourses on fast days, and thanksgiving days, when the New England pastor feels at liberty to leave slightly the beaten track of Sabbath service, were especially attractive. In his discussions of secular, state, and political affairs, he permitted free play to the varied powers of his

mind in graphic descriptions, keen witticisms, and pungent criticisms, which never failed to give pleasure, instruction and profit.

As a pastor, Dr. Jackson was faithful, attentive, sympathetic and tender. He visited each family in his small parish frequently, and could call all the children by name. He took special interest in the youth of both sexes. And when he found a lad of unusual promise, he took much pains to have him receive a liberal education. Thus, under his wise guidance, not a few West Andover boys have become useful and even eminent men, in the different professions in various parts of the country. He was also the trusted adviser of his people, acting at times as physician, lawyer and even instructor in horticulture and agriculture.

During his long pastorate, there were frequent revivals, in which a large number of persons were gathered into the church, some of whom as ministers, have done, and are still doing, good work for their Divine Master.

Aside from his professional work, Dr. Jackson gave much attention to the cause of education. He was associated with Samuel Farrar, Mr. Badger and other influential citizens, in starting a school in town for the higher education of girls, and was one of the committee selected to devise measures and form a constitution for such a school, and, when a liberal donation from Mrs. Abbot for this purpose had been received, and Abbot Academy had accepted its act of incorporation, he was chosen one of its trustees, in which trust he continued to the day of his death, a period of nearly fifty years. At times of urgent need or perplexity in the affairs of the institution, he was the man uniformly looked to for advice or help. He was a warm friend of Phillips Academy and the Theological Seminary of which he was trustee for thirty years.

While in the ministry, the reputation of Dr. Jackson extended beyond the limits of his own town and Association. He was invited to become president of Middlebury College, and repeatedly to become the pastor of churches much larger and richer than that at Andover. He received the degree of D.D. from Middlebury College.

Dr. Jackson published but little. The annual election sermon, which he delivered before the Governor, Lieutenant-Governor, Council and General Court in 1843, was published and created quite a furor of excitement. No little animosity was aroused by it against its author in certain quarters, on account of its sharp arraignment of the sins of the day.

Dr. Jackson married Miss Caroline True, daughter of William and Rebecca Mariner True. They had five children,—Samuel Charles, a young man of rare promise, who died at twenty-eight years of age; Caroline R., resides in Andover; Susan E., resides in Andover; Mary A. married to Rev. William Warren, Springfield, Ohio; William, doing business in Boston.

Rev. Charles H. Peirce.—The second pastor of the West Parish Church was born in Peru, Mass., November 29, 1822. He graduated at Oberlin College in 1845, taught two years, then studied theology at Andover; graduating in 1850. Soon after graduation, he was settled in the West Parish, where he remained for four years and six months. After his dismission he removed to the West, where he spent some seven years in labor with different churches in Illinois and Tennessee. On returning to this State he was settled in Millbury October 22, 1862, and died in office October 5, 1865, aged forty-three.

Mr. Peirce was a warm-hearted, active, kindly disposed man, who made friends wherever he went. A man of good abilities, and the full average of ministerial scholarship and pulpit talent, it was his misfortune to follow in his first pastorate a man of marked attainments and personal power. Nevertheless, he was esteemed both as a pastor and preacher, and "greatly beloved" by a large circle of friends in the community and in the ministry.

Rev. James H. Merrill.—The third pastor was born in Lyndeborough, N. H., October 16, 1814. He was the son of Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Carpenter) Merrill. He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1834, taught two years in Fryeburg Academy, Maine, studied theology in Andover, graduating in 1839. His first settlement was at Montague, November 25, 1839, where he remained for more than sixteen years, and then became for twenty-three years the beloved pastor of the West Church.

After his dismission, December 1, 1879, Mr. Merrill made a protracted visit to his children living at the West. On returning to town, he located his home on the "Hill," where he lived, and, by slow degrees faded away, till on the 28th day of October, 1886, he fell on sleep.

Mr. Merrill was of slight build, delicate in constitution and of limited strength, with hereditary tendencies to consumption. Hence he never felt himself to be physically equal to the work of a large parish. He courted the quiet country, and was perfectly satisfied to spend his days in ministering to a small church of intelligent and appreciative people. Such a church and people he found and loved in the West Parish. He was exceptionally wise in this, that, quite early in his ministerial life, he took the measure of his strength, and, while expending this strength daily quite up to its maximum, he rarely much exceeded this, save under special stress. It was a matter of conscience with him to husband his vitality. By so doing, he was able to hold back his hereditary enemy, and spread his work over many years, accomplishing more for his people and the cause of Christ and the church, than many others with sound constitution and equal abilities.

Mr. Merrill was an instructive, rather than a stimulating preacher. He was methodical in his pulpit preparation, as in his parochial visits, and brought "beaten oil" into the sanctuary. True to his own convictions, and a critical student of the Scriptures, he always had something fresh and profitable for his people, who took truth from his lips as from the lips of a prophet. His opinions on controverted matters were cautiously formed, firmly held, and frankly stated. Controversy, engendering hard feeling, he religiously shunned. A man of sound judgment, genial temper, affable, courteous, unambitious, without craft, envy or hypocrisy. Recognising the fact that the young men of his parish, in large numbers, left the farm for a wider sphere of activity, he regarded the work of training the youth to a reverence for truth, righteousness, honor and piety, as of pre-eminent importance. This work he never lost sight of, and never failed to emphasize. The result has been that a goodly number of West Andover boys are now to be found among the active and leading lawyers, ministers, railroad and business men all over the country, from Maine to California.

Mr. Merrill was a scholar himself, and a warm friend of all educational institutions, from the common school upwards. As trustee for twenty-three years, of the Punchard Free School, and for a like period one of three composing its Visiting Committee, upon whom devolved the supervision of its instruction, he gave much time and thought to the education of the young. In these varied spheres of activity and usefulness, Mr. Merrill so carried himself as to secure the favor of the people at large, and the esteem and affection of his parishioners and others who were privileged to enjoy his friendship.

Mr. Merrill married Miss Lucia Wadsworth Griswold, daughter of Dr. Oliver Griswold, of Fryeburg, Maine. They have had five children: James G., D.D., Pastor of the First Congregational Church, St. Louis, Missouri; William F., (General Manager of the H. & St. J., C. B. & K. C. R. R.); George C., (deceased) Professor in Washburn College, Kansas, and teacher in Phillips' Academy; Sarah E. married Rev. Joseph D. Wilson, Rector of St. John's Reformed Episcopal Church, Chicago; Lucia S. resides in Andover.

The Rev. Austin Burr, the fourth pastor, was born in Charlestown, Ohio, June 18, 1849; received his collegiate training at Oberlin College, and his theological instruction at Andover Seminary, graduating in 1875. His first settlement was in Franklin, N. H., November 3, 1875, where he remained until 1880 when he came to the West Parish. Since leaving this parish, he has been settled in Peterboro', N. H., where he still remains. He married Miss Fanny Hammond, of Andover.

The present pastor, Rev. Frederick W. Greene, received his collegiate education at Amherst, and his theological instruction at Hartford Seminary, Conn.

LATER CHURCHES OF VARIOUS DENOMINATIONS.

For a century and a quarter, the South Church, with its daughter, the West Church, embraced in its ecclesiastical fold the entire territory of the South Precinct. The people of this territory were all expected to attend public worship, first at the meeting-house in the South Church, and afterwards at that or the house of the West Church. They were by law compelled to pay taxes for the support of worship in one or the other of the parishes, whether they attended the service or not. This was the state of things till the year 1833; then the law was so changed as to give people the liberty to worship where they pleased, and to pay taxes when and as much as they pleased. This was followed by the incoming of other sects.

Methodists.—As early as 1829, the Methodists began to hold occasional services in the bank hall, but not for four or five years did they acquire sufficient strength to establish regular worship and build a meeting-house. For a few years, this society flourished, some of the tax-payers leaving the South Church and joining their number. But little by little they grew feeble, and in 1840 gave up regular service. The meeting-house was finally sold to the parties who formed the "Free Church," and is now, after undergoing extensive alterations, their house of worship. Some of the Methodists followed it to its new site, and joined the "Free Church."

While there has been no Methodist preaching in the center of the town since this sale of the meeting-house, there has been, and now is, a Methodist Society at Ballard Vale. In 1851, a Methodist meeting-house was built in this village, and, since then, with more or less regularity, preaching has been sustained there. By the liberality of Capt. Bradlee, they have a neat place of worship, and a commodious parsonage.

Baptists.—A Baptist Church was formed and recognized October 3, 1832, the services of recognition being held in the South Church meeting-house. The society erected and dedicated a house of their own August 28, 1834. For fifteen years the church sustained regular preaching, having during these years five different pastors, who remained from one to five years each. After the departure of the last of these pastors, October, 1849, the church was without stated preaching until its dissolution, which took place December 8, 1857, sixteen of its members uniting with a Baptist church in Lawrence. The pastor of this church, Rev. Frank Remington, after a time, opened the meeting-house of the denomination in town for services. His preaching drew a full congregation, and was attended with such marked success in the conversion of the unregenerate and the quickening of the old members of the church, that a new church (with one hundred and fifty-six members) was formed and recognized July 28, 1858, a little over seven months from the time the

church had, in despair, disbanded. At this time they received as their pastor Rev. William S. McKenzie, who remained with them for more than two years. Since his dismission, December, 1860, the church has sustained regular services, and had four stated preachers and various temporary supplies. Rev. H. R. Wilbur, who was the pastor from April, 1872, to October, 1876, has been their most reliable and abiding pastor. He is now a resident of the town, a public-spirited citizen, who, by his money and his personal labors in the church and parish, contributes largely to the maintenance of the religious services. The feeble health of Mr. Wilbur forbids his assuming the active pastorate of the church, but his assistance is invaluable to its prosperity, if not to its existence. Dr. Bronson, who recently left the service of the church for a western field of labor, ministered to them for a number of years.

Protestant Episcopal (Christ) Church.—Mr. Abraham Marland, an immigrant from England, a member of the English Church, a successful manufacturer in Andover, and, withal, a man of sterling piety, liberality, and indomitable purpose, has been called, with much aptness, "the father of the Episcopal Society in Andover." It had been his determination for years, while rising from poverty to riches, to see an Episcopal Church established in his adopted home, "even if the whole cost of it were borne by himself." Through his agency, doubtless, a liturgical service was held at the South Church meeting-house, by Rev. Dr. Stone, rector of St. Paul's Church, Boston, as early as December 25, 1833. But, though the society was in embryo in the mind of Mr. Marland at this time, no serious effort was made to form an Episcopal Church till 1835. On July 26th of that year "an Episcopal service was held in the bank hall," conducted by Bishop Smith, of Kentucky. He was followed by other distinguished clergymen of the denomination, including Bishop Griswold. On the 4th day of August following twenty-three men met together, and agreed to "form themselves into a religious society, to be called the Episcopal Society in Andover." They drew up a petition to N. W. Hazen, Esq., justice of the peace, for him "to issue a warrant for calling the first meeting" of the society. This meeting was held August 6th, when an organization was formed, and the customary officers chosen.

The formation of this society was, ecclesiastically, an entirely novel movement in the town, not in sympathy with its antecedents, or prevailing sentiment. It drew from the South Parish a goodly number of able and influential men and prominent families. But this new ecclesiastical departure, attended by a depletion of its membership, was not merely acquiesced in by the South Parish, but generously encouraged by friendly speech and acts. The Christmas service of the new church, with decorations and music, was held for the first time, by invitation, in the meeting-house of the South Parish. These services were conducted by Bishop Griswold, who, in administering the communion, extended an invitation to partake in the ordinance, so liberal as to bring many members of the South Church to receive the sacred emblems at his hands. The present rector of the Episcopal Church, Rev. Leverett Bradley, in his admirable semi-centennial sermon, from which the facts of this paper are mostly drawn, in recalling this passage in the history of his church, says, "Whatever may have been the spirit of the most populous churches towards the Episcopal Church during the first century of her life in America, it is well to know that in Andover the Episcopal Church has received nothing but the best wishes and kindly interest from all denominations." "The South Church by the loan of its building to our people on several occasions, that they might hold liturgical services and listen to preaching by one of their own clergymen, disclosed a spirit of Christian brotherhood, as the most carefully drawn resolutions could not have done,"—giving "new proof of the large-minded, Christian spirit of the officers and members" of this church.

Mr. Marland, as has been intimated, was the most liberal supporter of this enterprise. He gave the cemetery lot, built and donated the "rectory," contributed freely towards building the church edifice, and sustaining public worship. His son-in-law and partner in business, Mr. Benjamin H. Punchard, gave seven thousand dollars, as a testamentary bequest, to the society, the income of which is available for current expenses.

The church has had six rectors and two ministers, all of whom have been worthy and capable clergymen, and some of them notably able. Dr. Fuller, in his two pastorates, served the church sixteen years, and in this time did much towards forming its character and shaping its destiny. He was a man, physically and intellectually, fitted to command the respect of his fellow-men, and in heart and life such as to win their confidence and esteem. His influence was felt beyond his parish in the esthetic, educational and moral interests of the town, and in the councils of the diocese.

In the summer of 1885, Mr. John Byers, a liberal merchant of New York, whose deceased parents were members of this church, wishing to erect some memorial to their memory, and, above all, to do something that would be of permanent service to the church and the cause of Christ, offered to build and furnish a new stone church edifice, and give it to the parish. On the evening of the Sabbath, February 28, 1886, while preparation was going forward for confirmation services, to be performed by the Bishop, the original church building took fire from a defective chimney and was entirely consumed. The present stone edifice, the gift of Mr. Byers, was erected in 1886, and consecrated with appropriate services, Dr. Phillips Brooks

of Boston preaching the sermon, and Bishop Paddock conducting the consecrating rites on January 4, 1887.

The new edifice is a tasty and commodious structure, costing, with its furnishings, not far from forty-one thousand dollars. It is credited by all as a choice specimen of church architecture, an instructive lesson in enduring stone, an ornament to the town and a priceless boon to the church. It is thought by some good judges to be, architecturally, the finest public building in town, while others give precedence to the stone Chapel on the Hill.

"The building is of the Byzantine Romanesque style of architecture, built of reddish granite with trimmings of Kibbe stone. The church fronts to the east, contrary to the usual custom, owing to the position of the lot. The tower, situated on the south-east corner, is a large, plain and solid structure, and contains a semicircular staircase. It serves as the principal porch of the building, and is balanced by a smaller porch on the northeast corner. The chancel is semi-circular in form. The rectangular auditorium has a seating capacity of four hundred. The pews are open and of oak finish. The roof of the main body of the church is of hard pine construction, the panels between the rafters being of spruce, and the whole being shellaced in natural color. The ceiling of the semi-circular chancel or apsis is treated with honeycomb in gold, and is devoid of stars. The decoration throughout the church is exceedingly quiet and simple, particularly the stained glass windows in the apsis, which, although very rich in color, are framed by a ground of rather dark color. Five of them represent the life of John the Baptist,—as a child, in the wilderness, as a preacher, in prison, and received up." A sixth is inscribed to the memory of the donor's brother.

The organ was the gift of Mr. Horace H. Tyer and Miss Catherine L. Tyer in memory of their father and mother, Henry George and Elizabeth Tyer, former worshippers at Christ Church. Miss Catherine Tyer died suddenly intestate. Her heirs discovered among her papers a memorandum of a purpose to give $10,000 to the parish. In recognition of this wish, they have given the above sum as a permanent fund, one-fourth of the income to be expended for the care and improvement of the church grounds, the remainder for the church music. There is a chapel connected with the church at its north-west corner, of corresponding architecture, and built of the same material.

Universalists.—"A Universalist Society was formed in town in the fall of 1838. A church was formed later. Public worship was irregularly sustained till 1846, when for several years it was entirely suspended." The declared purpose of organizing this society, as set forth in its records, was "the promotion of truth and morality among its members, and in the world at large and as the Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ is calculated above all truth to inspire the heart with the emotions of benevolence and virtue, this Society shall deem it one of its main objects to support the preaching of the Gospel according to the Society's ability, and to aid in spreading a knowledge of it among men." The society sustained public worship for twenty-five years, with considerable intervals of suspension, when regular preaching was abandoned, and the meeting-house was finally sold and devoted to other uses. During its existence, this church had seven resident ministers or stated supplies, Rev. Varnum Lincoln being the one longest in service. Mr. Lincoln was pastor for five years, and, after an interval of several years, a regular supply for a time. He now resides in Andover, where he has served for a term on the School Committee, and is an active member of the "Farmers' Club."

The Free Christian Church.—This church was organized May 7, 1846, with a membership of forty-four persons, drawn from the South and West Parishes, and largely from the disbanded Methodist Society. A number of circumstances combined at this time to bring the church into existence. The partners of the Smith & Dove Manufacturing Company were natives of Scotland. Their operatives were almost exclusively from Scotland. They did not fully coalesce with the natives of Andover. The factory village was at some distance from existing places of worship. Above all, the anti-slavery agitation had begun to introduce dissension into the churches. The more determined opponents of slavery held that the church should not fellowship with those churches at the South which upheld slavery, or with those churches at the North that fellowshiped with the Southern churches, nor should they unite with either of them in any missionary work at home or abroad. Many of this class did not go to the extreme of denouncing the entire church as "the bulwark of slavery," or in demanding that all true friends of the State should "come out" of the churches. They wished to have a church connection, but in a church that should be free from all alliance, near or remote with slavery. Messrs. Smith and Dove belonged to the latter class of anti-slavery men.

Under these converging circumstances the project of a new church had its birth. The church took its name—"The Free Christian Church"—partly, it may be, from the attachment of many of its members to the church of their home in the old country, but, more especially, as a declaration of severance from every religious organization which in any way tolerated slavery. Its seats were not free. It did not fellowship with the neighboring churches by sitting in council with them, or by an exchange of pulpit services by its ministers with theirs for a number of years. At first the congregation worshipped in the vacant house of the Universalists. In 1849 the meeting-house of the Methodists was purchased by Mr. John Smith, removed from Main Street to where it

now stands, repaired and fitted up within and without, a spire and bell added, and, altogether, it made a neat and commodious place of worship. It was dedicated March 9, 1850. The expense was borne by Mr. John Smith, who conveyed the property by deed to the parish, and, in addition, gave the society a permanent fund of five thousand dollars. Some years subsequent to this a parsonage was built near by the house of worship, and given to the society by Messrs. Smith and Dove.

At first the church, not recognizing the neighboring churches, did not settle its ministers in the usual Congregational method, through the medium of a council composed of pastors and delegates from other Congregational Churches. They were employed by the year. In this way the church had, between February 1, 1846, and November 5, 1865, five ministers, who served it from one to six years each. This church, while not in fellowship, was always at peace with its neighbors, and its stated supplies were always in brotherly accord with the pastors of neighboring churches. At the close of the War of the Rebellion all distinctions were obliterated. The next minister called by the church—Rev. James P. Lane—was duly installed, after the Congregational custom, by a council composed of pastors and delegates from neighboring churches, and this practice has continued to the present time.

Rev. James P. Lane was pastor from April 4, 1866, to March 27, 1870.

Rev. Edwin S. Williams from November 29, 1870, to April 24, 1872.

Rev. G. Frederick Wright from May 27, 1872, to September 4, 1881.

The present pastor, Rev. F. Barrows Makepeace, was installed January 12, 1882.

Mr. Lane has since been settled in Bristol, R. I., and in Norton, where he now resides. Mr. Williams has been engaged in ministerial work at the West, in various capacities, and has now the charge of city missionary work in Minneapolis, Minn.

Mr. Wright, on leaving his pastorate here, became professor of New Testament Greek, in the Theological Department of Oberlin College, where he received his education. He is still there. Mr. Wright has been much interested in scientific studies, especially those pertaining to geology and biology. He has published numerous papers on these and kindred subjects, which have attracted the attention of scholars. Since the publication of the Bibliotheca has been removed to Oberlin, he has been its principal editor. He has also published a small treatise entitled "The Logic of Christian Evidences," especially designed for the use of the higher schools of learning. He has received the degree of Doctor of Divinity.

The church, from a membership in 1846 of forty-four, has increased to three hundred and sixty-nine, and now has the largest membership of any Protestant church in town, and also the largest Sabbath-school. Its house of worship has been refitted, improved, and made more attractive. With its large financial ability, its increasing and active membership, and full congregation, it has the "promise and potency" of future growth and usefulness, surpassing those of the past.

Union Church, Ballard Vale.—After some unsuccessful efforts to establish an Episcopal Church in the Vale, and to unite all denominations in one religious enterprise, a church was organized in 1850, called the "Union Congregational Church." The Rev. Henry S. Greene was its minister from its organization in 1850 to the day of his death, June 11, 1880. Mr. Greene was born in 1807; graduated at Amherst College, 1834; at Andover Theological Seminary, 1837; was thirteen years settled in Lynnfield, before coming to Ballard Vale. He left no children—his only child, a son educated at Amherst College, having died before him. Through his efforts a comfortable place of worship has been erected for the society which he so long served. He also left to the church for a parsonage his residence at the Vale. The society has always been weak, depending upon the Home Missionary Society for aid. Rev. Samuel Bowker is the present pastor.

St. Augustine (Catholic) Church.—This church was gathered by the Augustine Fathers of Lawrence in 1852. The first pastor was Rev. James O'Donnell. He was followed in 1862, by Rev. Edward Mullen, O.S.A., and in 1863 by Michael F. Gallagher, O.S.A., by Rev. Ambrose A. Mullen, O.S.A., in 1869, by Rev. Maurice J. Murphy, O.S.A., in the fall of 1876, and by Rev. J. J. Ryan in the fall of 1887. This society worshipped in a house built on Central Street, now unoccupied. With the increasing number of worshippers it became necessary to provide a larger house for their accommodation, and the present edifice was erected, and consecrated September 2, 1883. The Sabbath audience here averages not far from six hundred, with a Sabbath-school of one hundred and seventy. There is a branch society at Ballard Vale, served by Rev. J. J. Ryan, the pastor of the Augustine Church, which has a neat little chapel for its religious purposes. The members of this large society are almost exclusively of Irish nativity or descent, showing what a marked change has taken place in the nativity and religion of the people during the last half-century. The charitable and beneficent organizations sustained by it are "the Young Ladies' Sodality," "the Married Ladies' Sodality," and "the Children of Mercy." It has furnished the church with two priests,—Rev. Daniel D. Regan, pastor of St. John's Church, Mechanicsville, N. Y., and Rev. Timothy H. Regan, assistant pastor at Johnsonville, N. Y. These priests are both sons of John Regan, of Andover, and were educated at the Punchard Free School and Villanova College, Pennsylvania.

Ministers. — The following persons, who were either born in Andover South Parish, or resided here

with their parents when children, have become ministers. The list is taken largely from that made by Dr. Moore for the "South Church Manual."

John Blunt, son of William.....graduated 1727
James Chandler, son of Thomas.....graduated 1728
Samuel Chandler, son of Josiah.....graduated 1735
Abiel Abbot, son of Deacon John.....graduated 1737
John Chandler, son of Thomas.....graduated 1743
Nathan Holt, son of Nicholas.....graduated 1757
Abiel Foster,[1] son of Captain Asa.....graduated 1756
David Osgood, D.D., son of Captain Isaac.....graduated 1771
John Abbot,[2] son of Captain John.....graduated 1784
Robert Gray, son of Robert.....graduated 1786
Peter Holt, son of Deacon Joshua.....graduated 1790
Abiel Abbot, D.D., son of Captain John.....graduated 1792
Jonathan French, D.D, son of Rev. Jonathan.....graduated 1798
Thos. Abbot Merrill, D.D., son of Deacon Thomas graduated 1801
John Lovejoy Abbot,[3] son of John Lovejoy.....graduated 1805
Joshua Chandler, son of Major Abiel.....graduated 1807
Jacob Holt, son of Dane.....graduated 1813
Samuel Phillips Newman, son of Deacon Mark..graduated 1816
John R. Adams, son of John[4].....graduated 1821
Amos Blanchard, D.D.,[5] son of Deacon Amos.....graduated 1826
Wm. Adams, D.D.,[6] son of Principal J. Adams..graduated 1827
Leonard Woods,[7] son of Prof. Leonard Woods....graduated 1827
Joshua Emery, son of Joshua.....graduated 1831
Serene Timothy Abbott, son of Asa.....graduated 1833
Samuel Hopkins Emery, son of Joshua.....graduated 1834
Wilson Ingalls, son of Ezra.....graduated 1836
Daniel Bates Woods, son of Prof. Leonard.....graduated 1837
Daniel Emerson, son of Prof. Emerson.....graduated 1839
Jonathan Edwards, son of Dr. Justin.....graduated 1840
Thomas E. Foster, son of Captain Thomas.....graduated 1840
Joseph Emerson,[8] son of Prof. Emerson.....graduated 1841
Charles A. Aiken, D.D.,[9] son of Hon. John.....graduated 1846
Samuel Emerson, son of Prof. Emerson.....graduated 1848
Peter Smith Ryers, son of Jas. (not ordained).....graduated 1851
George Moore,[10] son of Benjamin (West Parish)..graduated 1851
Osgood Johnson, son of Principal Osgood.....graduated 1852
Simon S. Fuller, son of Dr. Fuller (Episcopal)....graduated 1858
John F. Aiken, son of Hon. John.....graduated 1858
William Edwards Park, son of Prof. E. A. Park..graduated 1861
Allen C. Barrows, son of Prof. Barrows.....graduated 1861
John Phelps Taylor,[11] son of Prof. John L.....graduated 1862
James S. Merrill, D.D., son of Rev. James H. (West Parish).....graduated 1863
John H. Manning,[12] son of Thomas.....graduated 1864
David S. Morgan, Andover Theological Seminary..graduated 1866
E. Winchester Donald, D.D., son of William Free Church).....graduated 1869
Daniel D. Regan, son of John (Catholic).....graduated 1870
Moses Stuart Phelps,[13] son of Prof. A. Phelps.....graduated 1869
Charles H. Abbott,[14] son of Henry.....graduated 1875
George H. Gutterson,[15] son of George.....graduated 1878
Lawrence Phelps, son of Prof. Austin Phelps.
J. D. Stone, son of Nuhum (Baptist).

[1] Representative in the General Court, New Hampshire, president of the State Senate, Chief Justice of Court Common Pleas, Rockingham County, Representative in the Continental Congress, and for ten years in the Congress under the present Constitution.

[2] Instructor in Phillips Academy, merchant in Portland, professor of the Greek and Latin languages in Bowdoin College, treasurer of the college.

[3] Librarian of Harvard College, minister of the First Church, Boston.

[4] Principal of Phillips Academy.

[5] Pastor of First Church and Kirk Street Church, Lowell, from 1829 to 1858—till death, forty-one years.

[6] Pastor of Madison Square Presbyterian Church, N. Y., president of Union Theological Seminary, N. Y.

[7] Professor in Bangor Theological Seminary, and president of Bowdoin College, Maine.

[8] Professor of ancient languages, Bowdoin College.

[9] Professor in Dartmouth College, in New Jersey College, president of Georgia College, professor in Princeton Theological Seminary.

[10] Professor in Pacific Theological Seminary, California.

[11] Professor in Andover Theological Seminary.

[12] Professor in Theological Seminary

[13] Professor in Scott College, Northampton.

[14] Chicago Theological Seminary.

[15] Andover Theological Seminary, missionary in India.

CHAPTER CXXXVII.

ANDOVER—(*Continued*).

EDUCATIONAL.

The first settlers of the town were for the most part poorly educated. The men could, as a rule, read, write and perform such mathematical calculations as were required in their ordinary business. There were only a few whose education took a much wider range. A large proportion of the women had even less learning than the men. Many of them, in good social standing, could neither read nor write. When there was occasion for their signatures, they made their marks. But there was no lack of desire for a better education on the part of these thus deficient. There is evidence that, from the first settlement, there was a purpose on the part of the settlers to create schools. They early provided for the education of their children, so far at least as to have them taught to "Read, Rite and Cypher." The ministers were, to a certain extent, teachers; they fitted lads for Harvard College.

Dames' schools were also early established for the instruction of young children. These were taught by women who had more education and leisure than their female neighbors, and were usually kept at the homes of the teachers.

The residence of Gov. Bradstreet and his family in the town for a number of years, doubtless, gave an impulse to all these efforts for a better education. The sons of the Governor, fitted at the parsonage for college, and graduated at Harvard, mingling with the people, helped them the better to realize the value of learning. The educated man was the oracle of the town. As men prospered and acquired the means, they sent their sons to college. As early as 1678 the town sent to Harvard a contribution of twelve bushels of corn as "a compliment for y^e new building of y^e College," showing that the college was an object of interest, and held out aspirations for their children.

In the year 1647, by an act of the Colonial Legislature, every township of fifty families was required to support a school in which children should be taught to read and write; and every town of a hundred families was required to maintain a grammar school, in which boys could be fitted for Harvard College. In 1683 the Legislature further enacted that a township of five hundred families should support

two such grammar schools. The instruction in these schools was required to be of such a grade that the pupils fitting for college could "read any classical author into English, and readily speak and make true Latin, and write it in verse as well as prose, and perfectly decline the paradigms of nouns and verbs in the Greek tongue."

These laws laid a heavy tax upon the people struggling to get a living and establish homes, but they seem to have been for the most part cheerfully borne. It is impossible to say when Andover, by its growth, came under these laws. But it is a matter of record that not till 1701 did the town take measures to comply with the law requiring a grammar school. In February 3, 1700–1, it was "voted that a conveniant school-house be erected at y^e^ parting of y^e^ ways, by Joseph Wilson's, to be twenty foot long and sixteen foot wide." And further, the selectmen were ordered to employ for the school a suitable master from year to year. This latter order was more easily voted than executed. Suitable masters were scarce. The college graduates were in demand for the ministry. The compensation of teachers was small. But Andover at that time was more fortunate than her neighbors in having a son of her own, a recent graduate of Harvard, who was fitted for the place and willing to take it. Mr. Dudley Bradstreet, son of Gov. Bradstreet, in 1704 became master of the first grammar school in town. He was followed in this office, in quick succession, by forty-one others, whose united services covered eighty-seven years. In this line of grammar school masters we find some notable names, among whom are Wm. Symmes, Jr., Samuel Phillips and Eliphalet Pearson. The amount of money appropriated yearly for the support of the school varied from thirty-five to forty-five pounds, not certainly affording a luxurious living to an ambitious graduate of Harvard.

When the town was divided by act of the General Court, in 1708, into "two distinct precincts," the grammar school was not divided, but, under the same master, was held alternately in each precinct. In 1718 a school-house was erected in the South Precinct "upon the Hill, on the Southwest of the Meeting-House." This being done, an agreement was entered into, between the selectmen and Mr. James Bailey, January 12, 1719, according to which he was "to keep a gramer school for one year following, for forty-four pounds, and he is to teach children to Read and elder persons to wright and Sifer as far as they are capable for the Time being, according to the Regular methods of such a school, and to keep the School in each precinct for the s^d^ Term of Time, and to begin the schoole about three-quarters of an hour after seven a'clock, and to keep it according to the accustomed manner in the Sheer Towne."

As the population increased in the "outskirts" of the town, there arose a demand for school accommodation nearer their places of residence. This led to sending the master, for a time, into different localities to attend upon his scholars. We have the following account of one Philemon Robbins, who was master in 1729, as narrated by Miss Bailey:

"Philemon Robbins came first to keep a school in Andover, and began his school in y^e^ south end of y^e^ Town, and continued there 3 months, and then went behind the pond in y^e^ first day of December, and continued there until the 25th day of said December, and then Returned to the middle of the Town and was sent to the south end of the towne, and continued there until the Last of January, and then was sent and continued in the middle of the town into y^e^ Last of February next, and then was sent behind the pond in y^e^ 3d day of March, and to continue there fourteen nights, and then y^e^ 16th March was returned to y^e^ middle of y^e^ towne, and continued there nine weeks."

This wandering of the schoolmaster over the town to teach the children reminds us of the custom which once prevailed in the country towns of New England, for the cobblers and tailoresses to go around among the people, doing the work of their craft in the homes of their patrons.

Regular schools were not established in the outlying districts before 1755. The schools at first were of a lower grade than the grammar school, teaching little save reading, writing and arithmetic. They were taught in winter by men, in the summer by women.

In 1795 the town was divided into twelve districts, in each of which a school was sustained from six to eight months of the year. The money for the support of these twelve schools was raised by taxation, as at present. This money was apportioned to the schools according to the number of families residing in the district. When this arrangement was first made, there were four hundred and one families in the town, and six hundred dollars were raised for their support, or an average of fifty dollars for each school. Two years later the sum raised was eight hundred dollars. When the district system went into operation the grammar school was discontinued. The winter schools being taught by masters, two-thirds of the money raised for the support of scholars was devoted to the winter schools. This practice of having the winter schools taught by men, in which much the larger portion of the money appropriated was expended, prevailed for more than half a century. It was then universally thought that female teachers were unsuitable for winter schools, not so much from their lack of knowledge, as from their lack of muscle. The older boys of the district, who, in the summer, were employed on the farm or in the shop, were expected to attend the winter school for three or four months. These boys were supposed to need discipline no less than instruction. The long ferule and the birch were as necessary an outfit for the master as the Arithmetic

and the Reader. Hence the committee, in looking for a master, had regard to his physical, no less than his intellectual equipment. In these winter schools, in not a few districts in the State, there used to be continually recurring contests between the big boys and the master for supremacy. Not seldom was it that the boys came off victors, though, as a rule, the birch rod and oaken ruler conquered. When the master was overcome and cast from the door of the school-room into a snow-drift, as was sometimes the case, he usually vacated his office.

The writer has personally known of two such instances. As late as 1848, in a district school in a thriving village, which had from the first been under the charge of a master during the winter session, the master was turned out of the school-house and thrown into a snow-drift by the older boys. This was not generally looked upon by the parents as anything to be severely reproved. The struggle between master and boys, like hazing in college, being of ancient custom, was treated with sufferance. In the case referred to, however, a different state of feeling as to this practice having gained influence in the district, the following winter the district committee-man was persuaded to employ a young lady, who had taught the summer school with marked success, to continue in the same school through the winter session. When the news of this new departure spread over the district, it produced consternation in some parents and called forth open opposition and threats from others. The teacher was of small stature but full of pluck, richly endowed with good nature, tact and common sense, and withal, abundantly supplied with knowledge and mother wit. The protesting and indignant parents were told that the lady teacher would take her place in the school-room at the appointed time, that she was amply qualified to instruct their sons in any branch of learning they might wish to pursue, and that, if they sent their boys to school for the purpose of being flogged, the committee would hire an Irishman to discharge that part of the teacher's duty. The school was successfully "kept," and from that day to this no master has been employed in the district.

The district schools in this town were sometimes called "outskirt" schools, sometimes "squadron" schools, and were in session from six to eight months. They were much under the oversight of the minister of the two parishes, who visited them regularly and "catechised" the children. Dr. Edwards distinguished himself for special fidelity in this service. As all the parents belonged to his parish this practice of his, so far from being cause for complaint, was matter of universal approval and commendation.

Within comparatively a short time, great changes have taken place in the public schools of the town. The district system has been abolished. The schools are graded into primary, intermediate, grammar and high schools, and in all the grades are further divided into classes. Those supported by the town are all taught by ladies. The Punchard Free School, which takes the place of a high school, has a male principal and two female assistants. The employment of teachers and the supervision of the schools have been placed in the hands of a committee chosen by the town. Eight thousand dollars a year are appropriated for the support of schools, besides the income from the Punchard fund. The school buildings are all owned and cared for by the town. They are neat, commodious and comfortable, which could not have been said of some of them under the district system. The grammar, and the high or Punchard school buildings, are of brick, large, airy, fitted with all modern appliances for health, convenience, comfort, and for aiding study. The aim is to secure the best teachers, and to continue them in office as long as they give satisfaction or desire to remain. There are at present twenty teachers employed in the town schools.

THE PROPRIETORS' FUND.—This fund, as its name implies, is a gift, or appropriation, made by the proprietors of the town, successors of the original proprietors who purchased the township from the Indian Sagamore, and were confirmed in their title by a grant from the General Court. This company retained its legal existence till all the land included in their purchase and grant had been deeded to individuals, or donated to public uses. In closing up their accounts, previous to dissolution, they found a surplus of money in their treasury amounting to $1749. As this property had come into their hands not for personal advantage, but to be used by them, as trustees, for the public benefit, they decided to devote the money to educational purposes in the town. We find on their book of records that at a meeting held September 23, 1801, it was "voted that the money belonging to the proprietors of Andover be equally divided between the two parishes." After more mature deliberation it was subsequently "voted that the said property be divided into two equal parts; the income of the one-half to be applied to the instruction of youth of both sexes in reading, writing and arithmetic in free schools in the South Parish in said Andover; the other half to be appropriated to the use of the Academy in the North Parish in Andover." At this meeting a committee was appointed to carry the vote into effect. As the matter was finally arranged, a charter was obtained from the General Court creating a self-perpetuating board of trustees for each of the parishes, to hold and use the fund, "*in perpetuum*," in accordance with the vote of the proprietors. The charter for the South Parish is a lengthy one, going much into details. It is carefully drawn, has six sections, provides for the holding of additional funds by the trustees, and evidently manifests an expectation that their fund will become a nucleus for the gathering in of other considerable sums, to be devoted to

free schooling. They, however, limit the amount to be held by their trustees to a sum that will yield an income of one thousand dollars. The expectation of these early friends of free schooling has not been realized in the manner they anticipated. Not a dollar has been added to the original fund, either by gift or bequest. The trustees of the fund are still in existence, and, preserving the principal intact, they yearly pay over the income to the School Committee, who use it to lengthen out the schools beyond the time they are supported by the town appropriations.

But this small sum has the honorable distinction of being the first money set apart in trust, the income of which is to be used for education.

What the silent influence of this small trust fund may have been, no one can say. That it was prophetic is apparent. It was suggestive. It was a constant reminder of a judicious way of forever benefiting a community. The yearly use of the income of a permanent fund for free schools in the town, being a familiar fact to Judge Phillips from his boyhood, may have implanted in his mind, early and unawares, the idea of a trust fund administered for educational purposes. If not thus the seed-corn of an abundant harvest of like benefactions, it was certainly the forerunner of such benefactions, munificent in amount and unspeakably fruitful in results. It is not unreasonable to suppose that the latent germ of a free high school should have been hidden in the proprietors' perpetual fund. However this may be, it was in Andover that the first incorporated institution for the higher education of boys and divinity students, and for a like education for girls, had their birth. Phillips Academy, the Theological Seminary and Abbot Female Academy, each the first of its kind endowed and incorporated in the country, have sent the fame of this small country town over the civilized world, and further still, into the darkness of heathen lands. Other towns in the State far surpass Andover in other respects, some in commercial enterprise and importance, some in the fertility of their soil, some in their manufacturing interests and industries, some in their wealth and architectural adornments, some as places of heroic historic deeds; but Andover is second to no other town in the State, Cambridge excepted, for its historic educational institutions, and the wide influence, through these institutions, it has exerted in the fields of letters, science, statesmanship, morals and religion. Hence, of all the things pertaining to the history of the town, the inception, growth and character of these institutions of learning are of the foremost consequence.

Master Foster's School.—Previous to our notice of these incorporated institutions of learning, it may be proper to mention a select school for lads opened in the South Parish by Mr. William Foster, not long after the removal of Judge Phillips to the South Parish. This private school was, for the most part, patronized from abroad. Mr. Foster took the lads into his family, and gave them such care and training as their age and circumstances required. "Master Foster's" school became quite celebrated, and proved to be, both to master and pupils, a source of profit. It was continued for a series of years, or till the teacher had become enfeebled by age.

Punchard Free School.—The Punchard Free School, as its name implies, was established by the munificent bequest of Mr. Benjamin Hanover Punchard. Mr. Punchard was born in Salem, Mass., December 16, 1799. His ancestors were immigrants from the island of Jersey. His father dying when he was only ten years of age, he was compelled, from that date, to earn his own living. Up to this time he had enjoyed the advantages of good schools and competent teachers. But, at this early age, his educational opportunities terminated.

That he improved well the privileges he enjoyed is evident from the fact that, when a little above the age of eleven, he was employed as a copyist, afterwards as a clerk in a West India store in Boston.

In this latter employment he developed so much ability, and displayed such industry and fidelity, as to secure the confidence of his employers, and, at twenty years of age, a partnership in the firm. But the labor and responsibility of his position wore upon his constitution, enfeebled by undue hardships in his youth. He was obliged to give up business and retire from the firm at twenty-eight years of age. He had, however, in this brief period, acquired a handsome fortune for those days. He came to Andover as a desirable locality for recruiting his exhausted energies. Here he became a stockholder in the Andover Bank, then recently started. He also soon, in partnership with Mr. John Derby, opened a store in the town for trade in miscellaneous goods. Here also he married the daughter of Mr. Abraham Marland, and when, in 1834, the Marland Manufacturing Company was incorporated, he became one of the few incorporators and owners. This business, proving eminently lucrative, added much to his fortune. He built a handsome residence in the centre of the village, the finest at that time in the town. He traveled much in this and foreign countries, partly for the advantage of his health, and partly to increase his knowledge and gratify his taste. He took a deep interest in the education of the young. His own deprivation of educational privileges in his youth, and his residence in Andover, where the atmosphere was impregnated with the school spirit, doubtless turned his thoughts towards a free school, as the most desirable object upon which to bestow his wealth. He was childless, and had few near kindred. He was withal a public-spirited man, and desired earnestly the welfare of his fellow-citizens and countrymen. He had contributed liberally to the support of the Episcopal Church in the town, and in his will left a handsome sum for its maintenance. He was a communicant in this church, a consistent member and de-

vout worshipper. He died April 4, 1850, aged fifty years, three months and nineteen days.

In his will he bequeathed fifty thousand dollars, with a reversion, at the decease of his wife, of twenty thousand dollars additional, for the establishment of a free school for the town. Ten thousand of the fifty thousand dollars were made available for a building, and forty thousand were to be kept in trust as a perpetual fund for the support of the school. The reversionary bequest, when received, was to be added to the permanent fund.

The following provisions for the management of the school are specified in the will:

"Said school shall be under the direction of eight trustees, of whom the Rector of Christ Church is to be one; also, the ministers of the South Parish and West Parish Congregational Societies to be members; also, the remaining five to be chosen by the inhabitants of Andover in Town-Meeting, to serve for three years; two of whom to be taken from Christ Church Society, two from the South Parish Society, and one from the West Parish Society. Said school to be free to all youths resident in Andover, under the restrictions of the trustees as to age and qualifications. No sectarian influence to be used in the school; the Bible to be in daily use; and the Lord's Prayer, in which the pupils shall join audibly with the teacher, in the morning, at the opening; the said trustees to have the sole direction; and power, also, to determine and decide whether the school shall be for males only, or for the benefit of both sexes. Said school to be located in the South Parish, of Andover, but free for all the Parishes equally."

These provisions of the will have been strictly adhered to. Since the North Parish has been incorporated as a separate town, it has established a high school of its own, and, though legally entitled to the benefits of the Punchard School, the people of North Andover have long since ceased to avail themselves of their right.

An act of incorporation for the school was obtained from the Legislature February 26, 1851. Also by act of the Legislature March 28, 1856, the Punchard School was made the High School for the town, thus relieving the town from the statute obligation to sustain by taxation a high school.

The amount of money designated in the will for a school building being quite inadequate for the purpose, and there being much diversity of opinion among the trustees as to the best location for the building, the edifice was not commenced till June, 1855. It was completed in September, 1856. The interest on the money, added to the ten thousand dollars designated in the will, enabled the trustees to erect a building both commodious and attractive. It was dedicated September 2, 1856, the address on the occasion being delivered by Dr. Fuller, rector of Christ Church and trustee of the school.

This building was destroyed by an incendiary fire on the morning of December 15, 1868. The insurance money, not being sufficient to replace the building, and the town having been enjoined by the Supreme Court from carrying out their vote to aid, with an appropriation, the trustees in rebuilding, the school was for a time suspended. The town purchased the site of the Punchard School building of the trustees, erected thereon an edifice similar in design, appearance and structure to the former edifice, with minor changes, which experience had shown to be desirable, and then leased the same to the Punchard trustees for a nominal yearly rent. In this building the school was opened September, 1871.

The course of study in the institution is similar to that of the high schools in the Commonwealth.

The permanent fund, having been increased by the addition of the insurance money and the sale of land, now amounts to seventy-five thousand dollars.

Mr. Peter Smith Byers, A.M., was the first principal elected. He died March 19, 1856, never having filled the position of principal. He was a graduate of Harvard College, had been assistant teacher in Phillips Academy and principal of the High School in Providence, R. I. On account of his scholarship, general ability, success as a teacher and rich promise of future usefulness as the manager and instructor of youth, he was chosen principal of the Punchard School by the trustees in advance of the time for the opening of the school, and given leave to travel for his health, in the mean time drawing the salary of the principal.

His death was greatly lamented, and even to the present day is spoken of with tenderness and regret. One of his classmates at Harvard, speaking of him, writes: "In his threefold character as a scholar, a gentleman and a Christian, he had the entire respect and confidence of all our class. If I were to single out any one who had a more uniform and high respect from all, and who had a higher influence than any other upon the class, I should certainly single him. Until the grave shall have closed over the last of his friends and classmates, the direct influence of his Christian example will live upon earth."

The brother of Mr. Byers, Mr. John Byers, of New York, has given money for an alcove in Memorial Hall with books in his remembrance, also a memorial in Christ Church.

The second principal of the school was Mr. Nathan M. Belden, A.M., a graduate of Trinity College, Hartford, Conn. He was elected January 1, 1856, and resigned February 27, 1857. Mr. Belden was succeeded by Rev. Charles H. Seymour, of Haverhill, who was elected February 27, 1857, and resigned October, 1858.

Mr. William Gleason Goldsmith, A.M., a native of Andover, and a graduate of Harvard College, a student of law, succeeded Mr. Seymour, being elected November 1, 1858. When the school building was destroyed, and the school was to be suspended, Mr. Goldsmith resigned and took the position of Peabody Instructor of the Natural Sciences in Phillips Academy. While he was in discharge of the duties of this position, Dr. Taylor, the principal, died suddenly, and Mr. Goldsmith was appointed to act as principal till the close of the year. On the re-opening of the Punchard School in 1871, Mr. Goldsmith was re-appointed principal, which position he held with

marked success till his resignation, December 22, 1885. He is now postmaster for the town.

In 1885 Mr. Charles H. Clark, M.A., a graduate of Bowdoin College, Maine, was elected principal to succeeded Mr. Goldsmith. He is still filling the office and conducting the school successfully, with the aid of two female assistants.

Hon. Samuel Phillips.—As the potential existence of Phillips Academy dates back to the birth of Samuel Phillips, Senator, Judge, Lieutenant-Governor, conceiver and projector of this institution, and prime mover in every step of its development from a crude idea to an accomplished fact, whose personality was infused into every sentiment and principle upon which the institution is based, it is fitting that any historical sketch of this institution should open with the birth of Mr. Phillips, and synchronize with his life to its close.

Hon. Samuel Phillips, sixth child of Samuel Phillips and Elizabeth Barnard Phillips, and the only one of seven that lived to manhood, was born in Andover, February 5, 1752. He was the fifth in descent from Rev. George Phillips of Watertown, the head of the family in this country, and the grandson of Rev. Samuel Phillips, the first pastor of the South Church. He was not a robust boy, and was much more disposed to books than hardy sports; of a thoughtful and sedate temperament, inclining him to pursuits and companionships unusual to lads of his years. Though his father was a trader, he was a graduate of Harvard, and desired a collegiate education for his only child. With this in view, the boy was sent to Dummer Academy, Byfield, the only institution of the kind then in the country, for a preparatory training. He was thirteen years old, "a remarkably systematic, industrious, mature child, full of bright promise in kindred virtues for the future." At Dummer he met Eliphalet Pearson, then a poor boy, eager and struggling for a liberal education. This school acquaintance ripened into a friendship which grew in strength through the years of preparation, and so on through the collegiate course into their manhood, when it became the source of unspeakable benefit to both and to mankind. Young Phillips from his earliest years was serious-minded, the child of ancestral faith and prayers, blameless in conduct, and of a devout disposition; but not till eighteen years old did he publicly declare his faith in Christ, and, by uniting with the Church, devote himself to the service of God. This act was the result of long deliberation, and was done with such thoughtfulness and firmness of purpose, as to furnish an effectual barrier against the temptations of youth and college life. He was in his junior year at this time, having entered Harvard when but fifteen years old. He graduated in 1771, at the age of nineteen, in the largest class the College graduated till the year 1810. He was second in rank in this class, which contained many men who afterwards gained distinction in various pursuits and professions. He was not a brilliant scholar, but studious; making amends for his slowness in acquisition by his diligence, and by the tenacity with which his memory held what hard labor had gained. He was, withal, exceedingly conscientious in the use of his time and in the improvement of his opportunities. In his journal we find expressions of regret for time wasted in sleep, and for "precious moments unimproved." "Time once gone," he says, "is gone forever. We take no notice of it but by its loss; how short! and of what vast importance is a diligent improvement of it." In this conscientious use of opportunities and time we may find the secret of his manifold labors and marked successes. The proverb of the wise king is here verified: "Seest thou a man diligent in his business, he shall stand before kings." We see here a young man leaving college with a frail body, a mind well trained, but of slow movement, with no genius, unless it be for tireless work, who, by a diligent use of his powers, opportunities and time, achieves marked success in various lines of labor, and lays the nation under obligation by his benefactions and example.

While in college, Mr. Phillips became intimately acquainted with Miss Phœbe Foxcroft, daughter of Hon. Francis Foxcroft. This lady was "highly cultivated in mind and manners, the very center of an attractive and courted circle, sprightly, ardent and sanguine." But she was his senior by more than eight years, having been born August 12, 1743. Notwithstanding this disparity in age, the intimate acquaintance and frequent association resulted in "a devoted and lasting mutual attachment." The youth of nineteen left college affianced to a lady approaching her twenty-eighth birthday. This disparity in years was regarded by the parents of Mr. Phillips as an insuperable obstacle to their union. They were greatly displeased at the arrangement. In consequence of this parental opposition, he deferred indefinitely the marriage which he had proposed should take place soon after his graduation. He submitted to the wishes of his parents in this as in other matters, but his heart could not yield obedience. Naturally frail, he grew more feeble under the severe trial, until there were but faint hopes of his life. On being told the condition of their only child, its cause and remedy, by the family physician, they yielded their opposition, and the marriage took place in 1773, after two years of painful waiting. This marriage proved to be not only a very happy one, but also one peculiarly fitting and helpful.

The same year, and previous to his marriage, while but twenty-one years old, he had been chosen town clerk and treasurer, to succeed his father, who had held these responsible offices for fourteen years. From this time onward, Mr. Phillips was prominent in the public affairs of the town. The country was in a state of ferment on account of the aggressive acts of the British Parliament. While in college, he had been

in the midst of the popular discussions and excitement on this matter. For two years previous to his graduation, the General Court had convened in the college chapel. The British troops had been quartered in Boston, and the massacre had taken place. His mind and heart had been fully instructed and quickened by what he had heard and seen. He had been educated in that nursery of patriots; he had felt the hurt of tyranny. With this training and experience, young Phillips, on returning to his native town, was prepared for leadership in the troublous times to follow. Hence, when a Provincial Congress was called in 1775, he was chosen to represent the town, and, though but twenty-three years of age, took a prominent part in its proceedings. During the ten months of its existence, and the four long sessions through which it sat, he was indefatigable in his labors for the public good. Associated with Samuel Adams, John Hancock and other leading patriots, he gained inspiration from their speech and spirit, and by his youthful ardor and sound judgment added much to the strength of the patriot cause. In this, his first experience in a deliberative body, he gained no little reputation for persuasive speech. Without any claims to the special gifts or arts of the orator or the rhetorician, he spoke with such candor, sincerity, earnestness, clearness and good sense, as to gain the ear of the assembly and produce conviction in their minds. Young as he was, he was placed upon the important committees that held conferences with the Commander-in-Chief, and thus became acquainted with the condition of the army.

In 1779 Mr. Phillips was chosen one of the four representatives from Andover to the convention held in Cambridge, Sept. 1, of that year, to form a constitution for the State. He was selected by the convention as one of the three members from Essex county, to make up a committee of thirty-one, to whom was assigned the duty of preparing "a Frame of a Constitution and Declaration of Rights." The ablest and most experienced men of the State were members of this convention, which comprised three hundred delegates. With this body of distinguished men, Mr. Phillips labored faithfully, wisely and efficiently, contributing his part to the formation of a constitution that met the approval of the people, and, in operation, has proved to be a most judicious fundamental law.

At the first popular election under the new constitution, Mr. Phillips was chosen Senator, receiving a large majority of the votes cast for this office. This was in 1780, when he was twenty-eight years of age. To this honorable position he was re-elected, with practical unanimity for twenty years in succession, with the exception of a single year, 1787, when, with General Lincoln and Samuel Allyne Otis, Speaker of the House, he was employed in the delicate duty of suppressing and quieting the Shays' Rebellion. In 1789 he was chosen president of the Senate, which high position he held for fifteen years, till elected lieutenant governor. In 1781, when twenty-nine years of age, he was appointed by Governor Hancock, one of four justices of the Court of Common Pleas for Essex County. Though not a lawyer, and ignorant of legal usages and precedents, and associated with such able jurists as Benjamin Greenleaf, Samuel Holton and John Pickering, he so conducted himself as to secure the confidence of the bar no less than that of the people, whose cases came before him for trial. What he lacked at first in a technical knowledge of the law, he soon more than made up by his diligence in study, his patience, common sense, sound judgment and unbending integrity. In the manifold cases, petty and important, which came before his court, he gave to each such careful and conscientious examination as to secure the reputation not only of an upright, but also that of a legally sound judge. In fact, such was his judicial standing among the people, that he was popularly known and spoken of as the Judge. He held the position for sixteen years, till his multiplied cares and declining vigor compelled him to demit its onerous duties. During these sixteen years of service, Judge Phillips, though at the same time weighted with the cares of State, and not a few business enterprises, was never absent from his place on the bench at a session of the court but twice, and these two absences were owing to his being at the time engaged upon other important public affairs. His addresses to the grand jurors were especially noted for their direct, plain and forcible presentment of the duty of the grand juror with regard to all crimes, misdemeanors and neglects which should come to his knowledge, either by information or observation. On one occasion he tells them "you may be considered as the eye and the ear of the public, which the law has provided, to notice those offences that come within your knowledge, and which the public welfare requires should be corrected and suppressed. It ought to be remembered, that every law, unexecuted, is a standing monument of the imbecility of the government, and tends to bring its authority into disrepute and contempt." The labor connected with his position as judge and senator was enhanced by the distance of his home from the place of his work. He was obliged to go to Boston, Salem and Newburyport on horseback, often spending much of the night on these solitary and wearisome journeys. In this way his never robust body, when exhausted by a hard day's work, would become much enfeebled, and it is thought that, by this continuous overwork, his days on earth were shortened. He did not know how to shirk or to spare himself.

In addition to his senatorial and judicial functions, he carried on an extensive correspondence with the leading men of the country, regarding its most important interests, at a time of much perplexity, division and discussion, when almost every thing pertaining to the government of the country was in a

chaotic and formative state. He also carried on successfully different branches of business. He was the owner and cultivator of large and profitable farms—maintained stores for country merchandise in three separate places, was a leading member of the Harvard College corporation, and was a large manufacturer for those days, first of powder, and then of paper. Another great work which he early took in hand, and upon which he spent his best thought and most unwearied efforts, was the establishment of a free academy for the education of boys.

PHILLIPS ACADEMY.—This project for a free academy for the education of boys seems to have been latent in the mind of Mr. Phillips at an early date in his life, perchance before he left the walls of Harvard. It began to take shape, and find expression, it is presumed, as early as 1776, when he was intensely interested in the manufacture of powder for the patriot army. There is a manuscript paper extant, in the handwriting of Mr. Phillips, which bears internal evidence of having been written in the early part of 1776, which directly treats of this subject. It is addressed to his father and begins by deprecating the decay of virtue, public and private, the prevalence of public and private vice, "the amazing change in the tempers, dispositions and conduct of people in this country within these thirty years." This decay of virtue and prevalence of vice he attributes to the lack of suitable schools for the instruction of children. This state of things bodes incalculable evil in the future to families and the country. The remedy can not be found in any existing plan for the instruction of youth. The grammar schools are hopelessly unequal to the task of correcting existing evils. Recourse must be had to "*the method of the ancients.*" His imitation of the ancients was only partial, viz.: "That a public building be erected for the purpose, and the children sent, be supported and continued there for a certain term, say from the age of seven to fourteen." A teacher was at hand, "one of the best of men," who, in addition to the intellectual training, should "make it his chief concern to see to the regulation of the *morals* of the pupils, and attentively and vigorously guard against the first dawning of depraved nature. He is to instruct them in the several relations they sustain to God, their parents, the public and their neighbors, and make their whole course of education *one continued lecture on all that is great and good.*" A garden plot is also suggested, where the boys who are destined to become farmers may be taught the art of agriculture. From such an institution as thus outlined Mr. Phillips anticipates a surprising change in the moral condition of the people. He looks for a success surpassing that "from the labors *of priest and magistrate united.*"

He then proceeds to notice and answer the objections which might be urged against the scheme, closing with a gentle hint to his wealthy father that he might aid this "glorious plan" by giving to it the money which it would be a relief to him to part with. And then, looking to the blessing of thus giving, he says, "Who would not gain inconceivably by sparing some of that wealth for which he has no occasion, in order to establish such a design?"

It is to be borne in mind that the writer of this is the only child and heir of the man whom he importunes, by the highest motives, to devote his wealth to a charitable purpose. The school here outlined was not indeed the school finally established. There was no pattern even among "the ancients" for the school that was struggling for birth in his brain. After many and prolonged conferences with his bosom friend and co-worker, was the plan matured and given to the world. At first Mr. Phillips was opposed to making his school a classical school, thinking that the study of the pagan writers did not tend to promote in the young morality and piety—the prime purpose of his project. Neither was he in favor of fostering charity students in his school, believing that the sons of the rich would be numerous enough to take up all the space and attention the institution could offer. He reasons that the opportunity of the rich child for doing good is greater than that of the poor child, while his happiness is of equal consequence. "His *disinterestedness* is a great argument in favor of his honest intentions in following the profession of a minister, that he does it from principle and *not from a lucrative view;* but charity scholars must pursue this; they speak because they are hired to; it is their living, say the scoffers." His views underwent a radical change on these particulars before the ideal academy became a reality. Poor boys were made welcome from the first, and funds were solicited and obtained by himself for their support, and the institution was opened as a distinctively classical school, and, as such, has been conspicuous the country over from that time to this.

There was much consultation and conference with leading educators, especially with his life-long friend, Eliphalet Pearson, as to the scope and shape the Academy should take. A plan was fixed upon. His father and his uncle, John Phillips, of Exeter, N. H., had been persuaded to endow the institution. In fact, through his influence and ardor in the matter, they had come to take a deep personal interest in the project. He seems to have acquired a controlling influence over the hearts and pockets of these, his nearest kindred. He was prospectively heir to their estates, and, in persuading them to devote a portion of their property to this benevolent object, he won them to his wishes by his unselfishness, no less than by his argument. His father gave land, his uncle money. The South Parish was chosen for the location of the institution. Mr. Phillips moved into a house upon the land purchased, that he might be near to the academy, as well as to his powder-mill, then working to supply the army. A charter was carefully drawn up by Mr. Phillips, and under it,

as an act of the Legislature, the academy was incorporated October 4, 1780.

The act of incorporation is as follows:

"1780, *October* 4.

"STATE OF MASSACHUSETTS BAY—An act to incorporate an academy in the town of Andover, by the name of Phillips Academy.

"PREAMBLE.

"*Whereas*, the education of youth has ever been considered by the wise and good as an object of the highest consequence to the safety and happiness of a people; as at that period the mind easily receives and retains impressions, is formed with peculiar advantage to piety and virtue and directed to the pursuit of the most useful knowledge: *and whereas*, the Honorable Samuel Phillips, of Andover, in the County of Essex, Esq., and the Honorable John Phillips, of Exeter, in the County of Rockingham, and State of New Hampshire, Esq., on the first day of April, in the year of Our Lord, one thousand seven hundred and seventy-eight, by a legal instrument of that date, gave, granted and assigned to the Honorable William Phillips, Esquire, and others, therein named, and to their heirs, divers lots and parcels of land, in said Instrument described, as well as certain other estate, to the use and upon the trust following, namely, that the rents, profits, and interest thereof be forever laid out and expended by the Trustees in the said Instrument named, for the support of a Public Free School or Academy, in the town of Andover: *and whereas* the execution of the generous and important design of the grantors aforesaid will be attended with very great embarrassments, unless by an act of incorporation, the Trustees, mentioned in the said Instrument, and their successors, shall be authorized to commence and prosecute actions at law, and transact such other matters in their corporate capacity as the interest of the said Academy shall require:—

"ACADEMY ESTABLISHED.

"I. Be it therefore enacted by the Council and House of Representatives in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same; that there be and hereby is established in the Town of Andover, and County of Essex, an Academy, by the name of *Phillips Academy*, for the purpose of promoting true piety and virtue, and for the education of youth, in the English, Latin and Greek languages, together with Writing, Arithmetic, Music and the Art of Speaking; also practical Geometry, Logic and Geography, and such other of the liberal Arts and Sciences, or Languages, as opportunity may hereafter permit, and as the Trustees, hereinafter provided, shall direct.

"TRUSTEES APPOINTED AND INCORPORATED.

"II. Be it further enacted by the authority aforesaid, that the Hon. Samuel Phillips of Andover aforesaid, Esq., the Hon. John Phillips of Exeter aforesaid, Esq., the Hon. William Phillips and Oliver Wendell, Esqrs., and John Lowell, Esq., of Boston, in the County of Suffolk, and State of Massachusetts Bay, the Rev. Josiah Stearns of Epping, in the County of Rockingham aforesaid, the Reverend William Symmes of said Andover, the Reverend Elias Smith of Middleton, in the said County of Essex, the Reverend Jonathan French, Samuel Phillips, Jun'r., Esq., Mr. Eliphalet Pearson, gentlemen, and Mr. Nehemiah Abbot, yeoman, all of Andover aforesaid, be, and they hereby are nominated and appointed Trustees of said Academy; and they are hereby incorporated into a body politic, by the name of the *Trustees of Phillips Academy*; and that they, and their successors, shall be and continue a body politic and corporate, by the same name forever."

Following these are seven other sections of this act confirming the lands donated to the trustees; authorizing a common seal, with power to sue and be sued; empowering the trustees to make rules and elect officers; limiting to thirteen the number of trustees; designating the principal of the school as, *ex officio*, one of the trustees; authorizing the trustees to fill all vacancies in their body; empowering them to receive property by gift or bequest to the extent that the annual income of the property held shall not exceed two thousand pounds, provided said gift or bequest shall not be so conditioned as to require any act "in any respect counter to the design of the first grantors;" and, further, empowering the trustees, by a two-thirds vote, to remove the seminary from Andover if, in their judgment, the purpose of the founders can thereby be better carried out.

"In the House of Representatives, October 4, 1780.
"This Bill, having been read several times, passed to be enacted.
"JOHN HANCOCK, Speaker.

"In Council, October 4, 1780.
"This Bill, having had two several readings, passed to be enacted.
"JOHN AVERY, D. Secretary.

"We consent to the enacting of this bill,—

"S. Cushiog.	N. Cushing.
J. Fisher.	Wm. Whiting.
Moses Gill.	Samuel Niles.
H. Gardner.	A. Fuller.
T. Danielson.	Jno. Pitts.
Benj. Austin.	Stephen Choate."

When this act of incorporation passed, the school had been in successful operation for more than two years, under the mastership of Eliphalet Pearson, gentleman. On the 21st of April, 1778, the founders signed a constitution for the academy, in which they grant certain parcels of land in Andover and other places to the trustees named in the act, for the purposes set forth in this instrument. In this constitution they state with more particularity the reasons and motives which led them to establish the school. In substance they say a reflection upon the purpose of the Creator, in forming the mind capable of improvement in knowledge and virtue, as well as upon the prevalence of ignorance and vice, creates anxious solicitude to find the source and remedy for these existing evils. The susceptibility of young minds, and their tenacity in retaining impressions, lead to the conclusion that the correction must come from the proper training of the young, intellectually and religiously. Hence the endowment, with the earnest wish that the "institution may grow and flourish," that "its advantages may be extensive and lasting," that "its usefulness may be so manifest as to lead to other establishments on the same principles," that "it may finally prove an eminent means of advancing the interests of the great Redeemer." While defining the duties of trustees, officers and teachers, and the objects and aims of the institution, much emphasis, with varied repetition, is given in this instrument to moral and religious instruction as that of paramount importance. "Above all, it is expected that the master's attention to the disposition of the *minds* and *morals* of the youth under his charge will exceed every other care." The duty of the master is further defined to be "to instruct and establish the scholars, according to their capacities, in the truth of Christianity," and "also early and diligently to inculcate upon them the great and important Scripture doctrines."

In this paper, drawn up by Mr. Phillips, as was also the act of incorporation, and signed by his father and his uncle, John Phillips, the former donates certain parcels of land, and the latter sixteen hundred and fourteen pounds in money, in trust, for the benefit of the academy. The paper is instinct with the

spirit of its writer, the projector of the institution. The training of the boys so that they shall become intelligent, virtuous, religious men, useful citizens, disciples of Christ and benefactors of mankind, is the sole purpose in view. We can discover in this project, from its inception to its completion, no single trace of self-seeking, or purpose to secure posthumous fame.

The number of scholars at first was limited to thirty, and to those who pursued classical studies. The first school building was correspondingly small, being an old joiner's shop, removed to the corner of the present Main and Phillips Streets (where the residence of Professor Churchill now stands), and reconstructed for the purpose. The pupils were from six years of age upwards. Eliphalet Pearson was master. In the autumn of 1786 Mr. Pearson left to become Professor of Hebrew and the Oriental Languages in Harvard College. The school had prospered and a new building became a necessity. This was erected jointly by the three brothers, Samuel, John and William Phillips, the only surviving children of the first pastor of the South Church. This building was much larger and more convenient than the thirty-foot carpenter's shop.

Ebenezer Pemberton succeeded to the mastership. Under his management the school prospered greatly. Poor health led to his resignation in 1793. Mark Newman was his successor, a student of theology, but never a preacher. "His administration was uniformly prosperous, and during the fourteen years of his continuance in office the institution steadily increased in numbers and influence." The reputation of the academy had extended over the country, and pupils from Virginia, from the families of Washington and Lee, were found within its walls. It was during this administration that Lieutenant-Governor Phillips died, at the age of fifty, his feeble body worn out by the unflagging energy and activity of his indomitable spirit. At the preceding State election he had been chosen Lieutenant-Governor on the ticket with Caleb Strong as Governor.

In 1810 Mr. Newman resigned and John Adams became master. With him fresh life came into the institution. Mr. Adams was a man thoroughly in sympathy with the spirit and purpose of the original projector. Earnest, deeply sympathetic, profoundly religious, filled with the spirit of his Master, "he imparted an impulse which will never die to the institution into which he came as a new moral force." In 1818 the school building was destroyed by fire, and a brick edifice was erected, largely through the liberality of Hon. William Phillips. This building is the one now used as a gymnasium. In 1830 a new department was added to the institution, called the Teachers' Seminary. This was the first Normal School in the country. Its aim was to furnish a thorough training in the English branches, in the natural sciences and mathematics, to those who proposed to engage in teaching. While under the control of the trustees of the academy it was distinct from the Classical School in its organization and in its corps of teachers. It had its own building, a stone edifice on Main Street, west of the Samaritan House. This stone academy was destroyed by fire in 1864. The English Commons were built for its use. During its brief history it not only gave a thorough training to common-school teachers, but imparted instruction in civil engineering and in practical and scientific agriculture. Owing to the expense of keeping up two separate organizations, in 1842 the Teachers' Seminary was merged into Phillips Academy proper, and made a department of this institution, which it still is. Dr. Adams continued in the school till 1833, when he resigned, and Osgood Johnson took his place. Mr. Johnson was possessed of rare qualifications for the place. A thorough scholar and a devout Christian, he commanded the respect and won the love of his pupils. His strictness in discipline was so tempered by kindness as to soften the heart while subduing the will of the offender. But hereditary consumption had marked him for an early grave, and he died after only four years' service in the institution.

His successor was Samuel H. Taylor, LL.D.,[1] whose long and brilliant career as a teacher, joined to his remarkable faculty as a disciplinarian, and his charming character as a man, merit special notice aside from this mention.

During Dr. Taylor's administration the institution gained largely in numbers and reputation. Its pupils came from all parts of the country and from other nations. As a classical scholar he excelled, and his enthusiasm for his favorite studies, while making him an exacting teacher, made him also a thorough one. On the destruction of the stone academy, a new building was erected at the junction of Main and School Streets. This is a large and imposing structure of brick, ninety feet long by fifty feet in width. It is three stories high, with an elevated, light and airy basement. The recitation rooms, occupying the first and second stories, are large and commodious. The upper story, lighted chiefly by windows in the roof, is a hall of the full size of the building, adorned with portraits of the founders, teachers and benefactors of the institution, and is used for exhibitions and other public exercises connected with the school. Its seating capacity is twelve hundred.

The successor of Dr. Taylor was Mr. Frederick W. Tilton. Lacking the robust health necessary for the oversight and conduct of so large a school, Mr. Tilton, after two years' service, resigned in 1873, to be succeeded by Mr. C. F. P. Bancroft, the present efficient principal. The school has steadily increased in numbers, endowments, facilities for education and reputation for completeness and thoroughness in its academical instruction. It has at present a

[1] For personal sketch of Dr. Taylor see page 1638.

corps of department instructors unsurpassed by any school of like character in the country. From an attendance of thirty youthful pupils, with which the institution started, it now, in 1887, has an attendance of three hundred and twelve young men with minds sufficiently matured to appreciate the advantages enjoyed.

The following are the amounts of money which have been given to the academy at sundry times by the persons mentioned, to be held in trust, and the income to be used for the benefit of the institution:

PERMANENT FUNDS OF PHILLIPS ACADEMY.

1778. John Phillips	$21,074 00
1788. Samuel and John Phillips	10,290 16
1795. John Foxcroft	532 50
1797. General Court lands in Maine	2,158 45
1804. Hon. William Phillips, Boston	4,633 33
1827. Hon. William Phillips, Boston	15,345 02
1865. Samuel Farrar, treasurer	22,000 00
1866. George Peabody, London	25,000 00
1877. Sundry Contributors, Dr. Samuel H. Taylor (Memorial Fund)	3,700 00
1878. Centennial Contribution—sundry friends	23,288 81
1879. John Smith, $10,000; Peter Smith, $21,000; John Byers, $10,000; for a Memorial Endowment of a Peter Smith Byers chair of instruction	40,000 00
1879. John C. Phillips, of kin to the founder	25,000 00
1881. Dr. Ebenezer Alden—Alden Memorial	5,000 00
1882. Mrs Valeria G. Stone—Stone Educational Fund	25,000 00
Sundry Scholarships and Prize Funds, amounting in all to	13,926 00

In addition to these trust funds, yielding an income for the support of the institution, the academic department owns several houses besides its school buildings, and two rows of unattractive, but still quite useful, wooden dormitories—and a neat, substantial and commodious brick building for the use of the treasurer and principal.

The school is fairly well furnished with charts, models and apparatus necessary for imparting the best instruction in the ancient languages and the modern sciences. An additional equipment in these directions would add no doubt to the effectiveness of the institution.

The students sustain a semi-weekly paper called *The Phillipian*. The ground for athletic exercises has recently been graded at considerable cost, part of which was borne by past and present pupils, and thus rendered more suitable for the games now so popular with collegiate and academic students.

ABBOT ACADEMY.—Abbot Academy in Andover was incorporated by act of the Legislature February 26, 1829.

A few friends of a higher education for girls, similar to that provided for boys by Phillips Academy, had talked the matter over from time to time for a year or two before this. At length, taking courage from their convictions, they issued a notice for a gathering of persons interested in such a project, as follows:

"NOTICE.

"Those persons who feel favorably disposed towards the establishment of a Female High School in the South Parish of Andover are requested to meet at Mr. James Locke's, on Thursday evening next, the 19th inst., at 6 o'clock P.M.

"Andover, February 15, 1828."

The meeting was held, the result of which was a unanimous vote that such an institution was needed, and a further vote to take measures at once to create it. A committee was appointed to select a site, raise funds and enter upon the work of building at the earliest practicable day. Soon after, a subscription paper was started, a board of trustees chosen, a constitution formed, a building planned of definite dimensions and material.

In the constitution it is stated that:

"The primary objects to be aimed at in this school shall ever be to regulate the tempers, to improve the taste, to discipline and enlarge the minds and form the morals of the youth who may be members of it. To form the immortal mind to habits suited to an immortal being, and to instil principles of conduct and form the character for an immortal destiny, shall be subordinate to no other care. Solid acquirements shall always have precedence of those which are merely showy, and the useful of those which are merely ornamental."

The trustees who affixed their names to this instrument were Mark Newman, Milton Badger, Samuel C. Jackson, Samuel Farrar, Amos Blanchard, Hobart Clark and Amos Abbot.

At first the funds requisite for carrying out the resolutions of the projectors were not forthcoming, and they halted in their work. The first site purchased, opposite the residence of the late Hon. Nathan Hazen, was abandoned. Deacon Newman came to the rescue of the halting enterprise by giving an acre of land as a site for the building, where it now stands. In addition, Mrs. Sarah Abbot, widow of Nehemiah Abbot, steward of Phillips Academy, pledged one thousand dollars, to be paid at her decease. Upon this slim pecuniary foundation and a large faith, the trustees went forward to build.

Mrs. Abbot had been a life-long friend of Madam Phillips, and had imbibed her spirit of benevolence and desire to promote the better education of the young. She was also by blood distantly related to Judge Phillips. Samuel Farrar was her trusted adviser. Being childless and advanced in life, she desired to make such disposition of her small property as should be most conducive to the good of men and the glory of God. In consultation with Mr. Farrar, she was led to believe that the building up of a school for girls was the most desirable use she could make of her money. Thus was founded an institution of learning which will carry the name of its first benefactress with blessings upon it to the latest posterity. The building now standing, when erected, was thought to be a very elegant and commodious structure, and was doubtless the most attractive public building in town. Friends of the enterprise loaned money on mortgage of the property to complete it.

While Madam Abbot furnished the money which

laid the corner stone of the edifice, others put into the institution creating energy. Samuel Farrar, treasurer of Phillips Academy, a man who had identified himself with the interests of education in Andover, and Rev. Samuel C. Jackson, of the West Parish, recently settled, were among the most active, zealous and efficient promoters of the enterprise.

Esquire Farrar, as for many years he was commonly called, came to Andover directly after graduation from Harvard College, as assistant teacher in Phillips Academy. He was at once received into the family of Judge Phillips, and treated as a son. He soon became an ardent admirer of the judge and still more so of his noble wife. In 1802 he was elected trustee of Phillips Academy, which position he held for forty-four years. In 1807 he was chosen treasurer and held this position for thirty-seven years. In 1808, on the establishment of the Theological Seminary, he was elected its librarian, and held that position for thirty-four years. In 1826 he was elected president of the Andover Bank, then just organized, and of which he was one of the foremost promoters. He held this office for thirty years. In 1829 he was chosen one of the trustees of the new female academy, and continued so for twenty-one years.

It will be seen, from this summary, that Esquire Farrar was closely identified with the educational and other important interests in the town for nearly half a century. He was one of the efficient agents in securing a union of the divergent parties who coalesced to establish the Theological Seminary. Honest, accurate, energetic, persevering, he was fitted to lead in any new and promising enterprise, which aimed to promote the intellectual, moral or religious well-being of his fellow-men. A high school for the education of women had for years been a dream of his, which his early association with the family of Judge Phillips may have inspired. Professor Park has graphically described the influence of Madam Phillips upon him: "She had been his model for womanhood. It seemed to be the desire of his heart that every young lady should become like Madam Phillips. For fifteen years after her decease he cherished an habitual interest in the higher education of her sex. Towards the end of these fifteen years, a lady, who had been the life-long friend of Madam Phillips, came to him and asked: 'What shall I do with my surplus funds?' He answered 'Found an Academy in Andover for the education of women.' This one sentence did the work. Mr. Farrar was a technical lawyer; he was an incorrigible arithmetician; he was absorbed in the keeping of accounts; he was devoted to rigid methods and exact order; he was constitutionally free from romance. But he had been electrified by Madam Philips; he was a conducting wire from her to the heart of her friend, Madam Abbot; and the electric spark enkindled the Abbot Academy, which for well-nigh fifty (sixty) years has been a burning and shining light. The monetary foundations of the school were laid in the humble estate of a woman; one man raised his finger to lay them there, and that man had been inspired by the modest utterances of a woman; but that woman was a queen."

From its opening, in 1829, to the advent of Miss Nancy J. Hasseltine, in 1853, twenty-four years, the school had seven principals, all young men, recently graduated from the Theological Seminary, or still pursuing their theological studies. Their terms of service varied from one year to three years, with the exception of Rev. Asa Farwell, who was principal from 1842 to 1852. The compensation at best, being only the income from tuition, was not a sufficient inducement for teachers to remain.

In 1853 the trustees changed their policy and chose a woman as principal. From that day to this the institution, to say the least, has lost nothing by the change on the score of management, discipline, popularity or thoroughness of instruction. The first three lady principals, however, Miss Nancy Hasseltine, Miss Maria J. B. Browne and Miss Emma L. Taylor,—together occupied the position but six years. The poverty of the institution doubtless influenced their stay, as it did that of their male predecessors.

In 1859 Miss Philena McKeen was elected principal, and her sister, Miss Phebe F. McKeen, was appointed first assistant teacher. Miss McKeen still continues to occupy her position, which she has now filled with remarkable success for twenty-eight years. Miss Phebe McKeen died, after a lingering illness, in 1880, much lamented. It has been well said of her:

"In the school-room she was distinguished for her clear thought and definite expression. She knew what she meant to say, and said it. Her taste was delicate and accurate. She had an eye for the beauties of nature and art. In her philosophical studies she was quick and keen, sometimes profound. She was an enthusiast in study, and thus imparted an enthusiasm to her pupils. She was original in her thinking, and her originality enkindled in others a love of thought. She united a sisterly affection for her scholars with a kind of maternal authority over them. She was mild and genial; but, if her duty required her to act as a disciplinarian, she could be firm and intrepid. She was courageous. Tracing the history of Abbot Academy, we can detect her influence, as a stream winding through a landscape and adorning it."

The institution started with no endowment, and has always been cramped for means. When Miss Mary Lyon, with the enthusiasm of Peter the Hermit, was going through the towns and villages of Western Massachusetts, preaching to the mechanics and farmers of the country the necessity of establishing a school for the education of capable young women in indigent or moderate circumstances, the trustees of Abbot Academy made a formal proposition to her, to the effect that she should adopt their institution, with certain modifications, for the basis of her contemplated school. But Miss Lyon preferred not to build upon another woman's foundation.

As the school increased in numbers, the accommodations became the more straitened, especially as regarded the pupils from abroad. A boarding-house became a necessity. Through the generosity of Messrs. Peter and John Smith, a building was erected

in the rear of the academy, plain and spacious. It was furnished and fitted for occupancy by the ladies of the town, under the lead of Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe and Mrs. Samuel C. Jackson. It was called Smith Hall, in honor of the principal donors. This building has recently been removed to some distance south of its original location, to give place to a projected new edifice.

The school still increasing beyond its capacity for accommodation, the house belonging to Mr. Farwell, adjoining the seminary grounds, was purchased by Hon. George L. Davis, of North Andover, a trustee, for four thousand five hundred dollars, and deeded to the seminary. It was called Davis Hall, in honor of the donor. Mr. Davis subsequently purchased and gave to the academy contiguous lands.

The estate of Rev. Josiah Turner, on the side of the academy building opposite Davis Hall, was purchased by the trustees, and opened for a family of pupils, the purchase money being loaned by Mr. Davis.

From the surplus earnings of the school a patch of grove and meadow-land was also purchased. Finally, to provide for all future exigencies, and give ample grounds for a large, flourishing institution, the trustees purchased of Mr. John Abbot fourteen acres of contiguous land, including some acres of charming grove.

On the forty-second anniversary of the institution, in 1871, an Alumnæ Association was formed, since which a deeper interest in the welfare of the seminary has been manifested by its graduates. Liberal contributions of money and certain useful and ornamental articles have been received from them. They have also aided essentially the efforts which have been recently made and are at present being made, to raise one hundred thousand dollars to erect new buildings in keeping with the times and the standing of the institution.

In 1875 an observatory was built as a cupola on the academy, which received one of Mr. Clark's valuable instruments. The observatory and telescope cost some twenty-four hundred dollars. For this the seminary is largely indebted to Miss Mary J. Belcher, a teacher, and instructor in astronomy. By persevering effort, with the special co-operation of Colonel George Ripley, one of the trustees, in the course of three or four years she gathered the requisite funds.

In the summer of 1879, after fifty years of useful life, the academy held its semi-centennial anniversary. This was a great success. Graduates with their families were in attendance from all parts of the country. The exercises were of a high order of excellence. Speeches were made by ex-Principals Brown, Farwell and Bittinger, Lieutenant-Governor Long, Rev. N. G. Clark, D.D., Rev. Daniel Butler, Dr. Alexander McKenzie, Dr. A. P. Peabody, Dr. Paul A. Chadbourne, president of Williams College, Dr. L. Clark Seelye president of Smith College, and Professors Park, Smith and Churchill, of the Theological Seminary. The brilliant address of the day, on "the Education of Women," was by Rev. Richard Salter Storrs, D.D., LL.D., of Brooklyn, who married one of the daughters of Abbot Academy.

The course of study includes instruction in English literature and composition, history, physical geography, natural sciences, mathematics, metaphysics, logic, rhetoric, elocution, modern and ancient languages, evidences of Christianity and study of the Bible, painting and drawing, vocal and instrumental music and physical culture. The kind of training proposed by the projectors of the institution is religiously adhered to, and a distinctive Christian influence is diffused through the whole teaching and discipline of the school. From the effect of this influence many devoted and useful Christian women ascribe their consecration to a life "hid with Christ in God."

The most liberal donors to the academy are the following:

Madam Sarah Abbot, gifts and bequest	$10,109.04
Hon. George L. Davis	6,641.00
John Smith, Esq	3,500.00
Peter Smith, Esq	3,111.00

The school has seven scholarships of a thousand dollars each, yielding fifty dollars each, for the benefit of worthy but poor students.

The friends of the institution for the past few years have been putting forth strenuous efforts to place it in a condition to meet the demands of the times for a better accommodation of its boarding pupils, for school buildings in keeping with those of other institutions of like character, and for a larger and better equipment for imparting instruction in the sciences.

Through the persistent energy of Miss McKeen, these efforts have been so far successful that fifty-three thousand dollars have been raised, and a commencement made for the erection of a new building. A complete plan for the entire series of buildings contemplated has been made, and the trustees will push forward the work of erecting them as fast as the funds received will warrant. The exigencies of the school are quite imperious. Sitting accommodations cannot now be furnished for all who apply for admission.

The school in its exceptional history, extending over fifty-eight years, has acquired a reputation for high intellectual, æsthetic, moral and religious culture, that places it among the first in the country, as it is the oldest chartered institution of the kind in the land. It has also become memorable for its healthfulness. Never has there been an epidemic disease within its walls, and but little serious illness. It has been observed that the health of the young ladies while here at school has been above the average health of young ladies at their homes at the same period of life.

The future of this institution is even more promising than its past has been—with an enviable history back of it, with a prestige to give it momentum, with

a valuable experience by which to guide its management with a large circle of alumnæ scattered over the country, with the new friends which success always secures, with wise and capable teachers and trustees, with extensive grounds capable of indefinite adornment, with new buildings and a larger equipment for scientific study anticipated in the near future, there seems to be a fair prospect that Abbot Female Academy will go forward for the next half-century, as in the past, steadily increasing in numbers and importance, ever coming nearer the pattern of a school furnishing the fitting physical, industrial, intellectual, social, moral and spiritual training requisite for the development of the perfect woman.

THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY.—The Theological Seminary is not only by act of incorporation and official management a department of Phillips Academy, but also by growth from the original intention of its projector. In the constitution of the academy drawn up by Mr. Phillips before the institution came into existence, we find this paragraph:

"*And whereas* many of the students in this Seminary may be devoted to the sacred work of the gospel ministry; that the true and fundamental principles of the Christian Religion may be cultivated, established and perpetuated in the Christian Church, so far as this Institution may have influence; it shall be the duty of the Master, as the age and capacities of the Scholars will admit, not only to instruct and establish them in the truth of Christianity; but also early and diligently to inculcate upon them the great and important Scripture doctrines of the existence of one true God, the Father, Son and Holy Ghost; of the fall of man, the depravity of human nature; the necessity of an atonement, and of our being renewed in the spirit of our minds; the doctrines of repentance toward God and of faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ; of sanctification by the Holy Spirit, and of justification by the free grace of God, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ (in opposition to the erroneous and dangerous doctrine of justification by our own merit, or a dependence on self-righteousness), together with the other important doctrines and duties of our Holy Christian Religion."

Here is work enough laid out for a master in theology. It holds the germ of a theological school as it reveals the animating purpose of Mr. Phillips in establishing the academy.

Not for some years, however, did this idea of imparting systematic instruction in the doctrines of the Christian religion receive its full development. Circumstances favored and stimulated this development in 1805. In May of that year Dr. Henry Ware, a Unitarian, was inaugurated Hollis Professor of Divinity in Harvard College. Mr. Hollis had given the fund for this professorship to support an "orthodox" teacher of theology. This apparent disregard of the intention of the donor was the occasion of much criticism and dissatisfaction on the part of the ministers and churches in the State that still held to the Calvinistic theology. Eliphalet Pearson was at that time professor at Harvard, but, in the conflict growing out of the appointment of Dr. Ware, he, siding with the Evangelicals, resigned his professorship and removed to Andover. "Being thoroughly convinced that a new theological seminary ought to be instituted for the purpose of checking the influence of Arminianism and Unitarianism," he engaged with all his native ardor in the effort to establish such an institution. Having been a personal friend of Judge Phillips, his co-worker in the establishment of the academy, and fully conversant with his purposes and aspirations concerning it, he appealed forcibly to the widow and son of the judge to perfect the original purpose of the academy, by endowing a theological department. His appeals were not in vain. Mr. Samuel Abbot, a wealthy merchant who resided in Andover, was also enlisted in favor of the project. Mr. Abbot, being childless, had purposed to give by will the bulk of his property to Harvard College, but, when Harvard lapsed to Unitarianism, this will was revoked. The money was pledged to found the new seminary. Mr. Pearson, with the efficient co-operation of Dr. Morse, of Charlestown, a moderate Calvinist, prepared a draft for a constitution.

But those who were directly interested in establishing a theological school at Andover were by no means the only persons among the ministers and evangelical Christians who were grieved and alarmed at the departure of Harvard from the faith of its founders. The section of the Calvinistic divines that embraced the doctrinal views of Samuel Hopkins, D.D., not being fully in sympathy with Dr. Pearson and those he represented, and not aware of their intention with regard to a theological school, began, early after the election of Dr. Ware, to agitate the creation of a theological seminary. They were able and determined men, represented by such distinguished divines as Dr. Emmons, of Franklin, and Dr. Spring, of Newburyport. They had for coadjutors men of wealth and generosity—Messrs. Bartlet and Brown, of Newburyport, and John Norris, Esq., of Salem. They purposed the establishment of a theological college, based upon the Calvinistic interpretation of the Scriptures, as explained and understood by the Hopkinsian divines. They had gone so far as to have fixed upon West Newbury as the place for their institution, and Rev. Leonard Woods, the pastor at West Newbury, as its theological teacher.

When the news of these proceedings came to the ears of the men promoting the Andover enterprise, they at once sought a conference with the men interested in the Newbury institution. When these representatives of the two wings of the Calvinistic party met, compared views and proceedings, they could not fail to see that the creation of two rival seminaries, within twenty miles of each other, essentially similar in doctrine, purpose and character, would be unwise. Frequent conferences were held, much discussion was had, careful consideration was given to all the details of doctrine and faith,—and, after protracted negotiations, painstaking labor and much tribulation a basis of union was formed, and a creed agreed upon for the united seminaries. The school was to be located at Andover, as the Andover promoters had planned under the charter of Phillips Academy

The constitution which the Andover founders had provided for their seminary, and the trustees of Phillips Academy had accepted, was retained, and certain additional statutes were appended, which together were to form the doctrinal standard of the coalesced seminary.

The two contracting parties were denominated respectively the Original Founders, who were Mrs. Phœbe Phillips, "relict of Samuel Phillips, Esq., late Lieutenant-Governor of the Commonwealth," his son, John Phillips, and Samuel Abbot, merchant of Andover; and the Associate Founders, who were "Moses Brown and William Bartlet, both of Newburyport, merchants, and John Norris, of Salem, esquire." The original founders agreed to erect two buildings for the accommodation of students and the necessary uses of the institution, one to be two and the other three stories in height, and to furnish the sum of twenty thousand dollars, in trust, for the purpose of maintaining a professor in Christian theology. The associate founders agreed to contribute at first thirty (afterwards forty) thousand dollars, in trust, "for the maintenance of two professors in the Theological Institution or Seminary lately founded in the town of Andover."

The fact that there was apprehension of serious difficulty in obtaining from the General Court a charter for a Calvinistic Theological Seminary may have been the balancing argument for establishing the institution at Andover, sheltered by the charter of Phillips Academy.

The original constitution, formed in 1807, is a masterly document, elaborate, comprehensive, providing, with much wisdom and foresight, for the minor details which concern the regulation of a seminary in all possible circumstances and exigencies.

The matters of primary interest in this constitution are contained in Articles XI. and XII.

Article XI. reads as follows:

"Every Professor in this Seminary shall be a Master of Arts, of the Protestant reformed religion, in communion with some Christian Church of the Congregational or Presbyterian denomination, and sustain the character of a sober, honest, learned and pious man; he shall, moreover, be a man of sound and orthodox principles in divinity, according to that form of sound words or system of evangelical doctrines drawn from the Scriptures, and denominated the Westminster Assembly's Shorter Catechism, and more concisely delineated in the Constitution of Phillips Academy."

Article XII. reads as follows:

"Every person, therefore, appointed or elected a Professor in this Seminary shall, on the day of his inauguration into office, and in the presence of the said Trustees, publicly make and subscribe a solemn declaration of his faith in Divine Revelation, and in the fundamental and distinguishing doctrines of the Gospel of Christ, as summarily expressed in the Westminster Assembly's Shorter Catechism; and he shall [illegible] solemnly promise that he will open and explain the Scriptures to his pupils with sincerity and faithfulness; that he will maintain and inculcate the Christian faith, as above expressed, together with all the other doctrines and duties of our holy religion, so far as they appear to his conscience, according to the best light God shall give him, [illegible] to Atheists and Infidels, but to Jews, Mahometans, Arians, Pelagians, Antinomians, Arminians, Socinians, Unitarians, Universalists and to all other heresies and errors, ancient or modern, which may be opposed to the Gospel of Christ, or hazardous to the souls of men; that by his instructions, counsels and example, he will endeavor to promote true Piety and Godliness; that he will consult the good of this Institution and the peace of the churches of our Lord Jesus Christ on all occasions, and that he will religiously observe the Statutes of this Institution, relative to his official duties and department, and all such other Statutes and Laws as shall be constitutionally made by the Trustees of Phillips Academy, not repugnant thereto."

The matters of most importance in the statutes of the associate founders are designated in the II. and III. Articles of these statutes.

Article II. reads as follows:

"Every Professor on this foundation shall be a Master of Arts of the Protestant Reformed Religion, an ordained Minister of the Congregational or Presbyterian denomination, and shall sustain the character of a discreet, honest, learned and devout Christian, an orthodox and consistent Calvinist; and after a careful examination by the Visitors with reference to his religious principles, he shall, on the day of his inauguration, publicly make and subscribe a solemn declaration of his faith in Divine Revelation, and in the fundamental and distinguishing doctrines of the Gospel as expressed in the following Creed, which is supported by the infallible Revelation which God constantly makes of Himself in his works of creation, providence and redemption, namely:—

"'I believe that there is one, and but one, living and true God; that the word of God, contained in the Scriptures of the Old and New Testament, is the only perfect rule of faith and practice; that agreeably to those Scriptures, God is a Spirit, infinite, eternal and unchangeable in his being, wisdom, power, holiness, justice, goodness and truth; that in the Godhead are three Persons, the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost; and that these Three are One God, the same in substance, equal in power and glory; that God created man after his own image, in knowledge, righteousness and holiness; that the glory of God is man's chief end, the enjoyment of God his supreme happiness; that this enjoyment is derived solely from conformity of heart to the moral character and will of God; that Adam, the federal head and representative of the human race, was placed in a state of probation, and that in consequence of his disobedience all his descendants were constituted sinners; that by nature every man is personally depraved, destitute of holiness, unlike and opposed to God; and that previously to the renewing agency of the Divine Spirit all his moral actions are adverse to the character and glory of God; that being morally incapable of recovering the image of his Creator, which was lost in Adam, every man is justly exposed to eternal damnation; so that, except a man be born again he cannot see the kingdom of God; that God, of his mere good pleasure, from all eternity, elected some to everlasting life, and that he entered into a covenant of grace to deliver them out of this state of sin and misery by a Redeemer; that the only Redeemer of the elect is the eternal Son of God, who for this purpose became man, and continues to be God and man in two distinct natures and one person forever; that Christ as our Redeemer executeth the office of a Prophet, Priest and King; that agreeably to the covenant of redemption the Son of God, and he alone, by his suffering and death, has made atonement for the sins of all men; that repentance, faith and holiness are the personal requisites in the Gospel scheme of salvation; that the righteousness of Christ is the only ground of a sinner's justification; that this righteousness is received through faith, and that this faith is the gift of God; so that our salvation is wholly of grace; that no means whatever can change the heart of a sinner and make it holy; that regeneration and sanctification are effects of the creating and renewing agency of the Holy Spirit, and that supreme love to God constitutes the essential difference between saints and sinners; that, by convincing us of our sin and misery, enlightening our minds, working faith in us, and renewing our wills, the Holy Spirit makes us partakers of the benefits of redemption, and that the ordinary means by which these benefits are communicated to us are the Word, sacraments and prayer; that repentance unto life, faith to feed upon Christ, love to God, and new obedience are the appropriate qualifications for the Lord's Supper, and that a Christian Church ought to admit no person to its holy communion before he exhibit credible evidence of his godly sincerity; that perseverance in holiness is the only method of making our calling and election sure, and that the final perseverance of saints, though it is the effect of the special operation of God on their hearts, yet necessarily implies their own watchful diligence; that they who are effectually called do in this life partake of justification, adoption and sanctification and

the several benefits which do either accompany or flow from them; that the souls of believers are at their death made perfect in holiness, and do immediately pass into glory; that their bodies, being still united to Christ, will at the resurrection be raised up to glory, and that the saints will be made perfectly blessed in the full enjoyment of God to all eternity, but that the wicked will awake to shame and everlasting contempt, and with devils be plunged into the lake that burneth with fire and brimstone for ever and ever. I moreover believe that God, according to the counsel of his own will and for his own glory, hath foreordained whatsoever comes to pass, and that all beings, actions and events, both in the natural and moral world, are under his providential direction; that God's decrees perfectly consist with human liberty, God's universal agency with the agency of man and man's dependence with his accountability; that man has understanding and corporeal strength to do all that God requires of him, so that nothing but the sinner's aversion to holiness prevents his salvation; that it is the prerogative of God to bring good out of evil, and that he will cause the wrath and rage of wicked men and devils to praise him; and that all the evil which has existed, and will forever exist, in the moral system, will eventually be made to promote in most important purpose under the wise and perfect administration of that Almighty Being who will cause all things to work for his own glory, and thus fulfil all his pleasure. And, furthermore, I do solemnly promise that I will open and explain the Scriptures to my Pupils with integrity and faithfulness; that I will maintain and inculcate the Christian faith as expressed in the Creed by me now repeated, together with all the other doctrines and duties of our holy Religion, so far as may appertain to my office, according to the best light God shall give me, and in opposition not only to atheists and infidels, but to Jews, Papists, Mahometans, Arians, Pelagians, Antinomians, Arminians, Socinians, Sabellians, Unitarians and Universalists, and to all other heresies and errors, ancient and modern, which may be opposed to the Gospel of Christ or hazardous to the souls of men; that by my instruction, counsel and example I will endeavor to promote true Piety and Godliness; that I will consult the good of this Institution and the peace of the Churches of our Lord Jesus Christ on all occasions; and that I will religiously conform to the Constitution and Laws of this Seminary, and to the Statutes of this Foundation.' "

Article III. reads as follows:

"The preceding Creed and Declaration shall be repeated by every Professor on this Foundation at the expiration of every successive period of five years; and no man shall be continued a Professor on said Foundation who shall not continue to approve himself a man of sound and orthodox principles in Divinity agreeably to the aforesaid Creed."

The original founders, having reserved in their constitution the right to amend that instrument, provided such alteration "be not prejudicial to the true design of said Foundation," that they might bring this constitution into accord with the creed agreed upon with the associate founders, proceeded to establish certain additional statutes.

Their language is,—"We do now, agreeably to the said reserved right, and in furtherance, as we trust, of our origiual design, therein expressed, make and ordain the following Articles, to be added to, and taken as a part of, our said Constitution, and to continue of full force, as a part of our said Constitution, so long as the said Associate Foundation shall continue attached to our said Institution, and no longer."

Article I. of these "Additional Statutes" reads thus:

"Having provided in the twelfth Article of our said Constitution that 'every person, appointed or elected a Professor in the said Seminary, shall, on the day of his inauguration into office, publicly make and subscribe a Declaration of his faith in Divine Revelation and in the fundamental and distinguishing doctrines of the Gospel of Christ, as summarily expressed in the Westminster Assembly's Shorter Catechism,' we now ordain the following addition, to be inserted in said article, in connection with the said clause, viz.: 'and as more particularly expressed in the following Creed, to wit: . . .'"

Then follows verbatim the Associate Creed.

The sentence preceding the creed, in Article I. of the additional statutes, viz., "and as more particularly expressed in the following Creed," has been the subject of diverse interpretation, and of much warm discussion. Some contend that it does not in the least infringe upon or modify the preceding requirements of the founders that their professors shall make subscription to the Shorter Catechism. They claim that the associate creed, is in addition to, not explanatory of, the Westminster Assembly's Catechism.

Others maintain that this clause introduced between the requirement of faith in the Catechism and the associate creed, is a qualifying clause, and was intended to indicate that the creed was to be regarded as an equivalent of the Catechism, or that the creed was to be taken as a more definite expression of what the founders meant to include by the language, "as summarily expressed in the Westminster Assembly's Shorter Catechism," or as embodying so much of, and all of, the Catechism which they desired their professors to accept and subscribe. Wise and good men are to be found on both sides of this delicate question. But practically the question was settled in 1842 by the decision of the board of visitors, the final arbiters on all questions as to the interpretation of the statutes.

The history of this matter is briefly this: From the first till the year 1826 the professors were not required to, and did not, give their assent to or subscribe the Catechism. In that year the Catechism was introduced by the trustees as part of the confession of faith to which the professors must give their adhesion. They conformed to the requirement, and their example was followed till 1842, when one of the professors, deeming the requirement at variance with the demand of the statutes, refused compliance, and appealed to the board of visitors against the demand of the trustees. This board, then composed of Dr. Codman, Dr. Humphrey and Hon. Seth Terry, of Hartford, after an exhaustive hearing, ably conducted on both sides, decided in favor of the professor, on the ground that the statutes did not require the professors and visitors to give their assent to and subscribe the Catechism in addition to the creed. Since this decision the professors have not been required to profess adhesion to the Westminster Assembly's Shorter Catechism.

In addition to this change in the creed, there was a further provision made, in agreement with that in the foundation of the associates, for a visitatorial board. Thus the two projects were assimilated, amalgamated, forming one homogeneous institution.

This provision for a board of visitors is unique. The circumstances and conditions under which the seminary came into existence were also singular.

The recent perversion, as these founders considered it, of the Hollis Fund at Harvard by the trustees of that institution, together with the fact that a majority

of the trustees of Phillips Academy might be, and originally were, laymen, and the anomalous status of their school, the same being placed under the control of persons selected to have charge of a classical institution, and without doctrinal tests or qualifications, led these founders of a theological seminary, who proposed to teach for all time certain specified doctrines, to place their professors under the supervision of a special board. Thus in Article II. of the additional statutes they say:

"That the trust aforesaid may be always executed agreeably to the true intent of our said Foundation, and that we may effectually guard the same, in all future time, against all perversion, or the smallest avoidance of our true design, as therein expressed; We do hereby constitute a Board of Visitors to be, as in our place and stead, the Guardians, Overseers and Protectors of our said Foundation, in manner, as is expressed in the following provisions: that is to say, we appoint and constitute the Honorable Caleb Strong, Esq., late Governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, the Reverend Timothy Dwight, D.D., President of Yale College, and the Reverend Samuel Spring, D.D., of Newburyport, Visitors of the said Foundation; who, with their Successors in office, to be chosen, as hereinafter directed, shall be a perpetual body for this purpose, with all the powers and duties in them here in vested and on them enjoined."

The founders—Messrs. Brown, Bartlet, Norris and Abbot—were added to the three above mentioned, to hold office till resignation or death, when, from that day onward, the board was to consist of only three persons—"two clergymen and one layman—all of whom shall be men of distinguished talents and piety." The elected visitors are not to be "under the age of forty years," nor over "the age of seventy years." "A majority shall be a quorum," and, "in case of an equi-vote, the question shall determine on that side on which the presiding member shall have voted." The board shall fill its own vacancies. The members, on taking their seats, are required to "make and subscribe the following declaration:" "Approving the Constitution of the Theological Institution, I solemnly declare, in the presence of God and of this Board, that I will faithfully exert my abilities to carry into execution the Regulations therein contained, and to promote the great object of the Institution." They are further required "to subscribe the same theological Creed, which every professor-elect is required to subscribe," and to make a fresh declaration of faith in the same every five years. The power and duties of the board are to approve or negative the election of a professor by the trustees; to visit the Foundation once a year, and oftener if necessary; to inquire into the state of the fund and the management of the same with respect to the said Professor; to determine, interpret and explain the Statutes of the said Foundation in all cases brought before them in their judicial capacity; to redress grievances with respect to the said Professor; to hear appeals from decisions of the Board of Trustees, and to remedy upon complaint duly exhibited in behalf of the said Professor, to review and reverse any censure passed by said Trustees upon any professor on said Foundation; to declare void all Rules and Regulations made by the said Trustees relative to said Foundation, which may be inconsistent with the original Statutes thereof; to take care that the duties of each Professor on said Foundation be intelligibly and faithfully discharged, and to admonish or remove him either for misbehaviour, heterodoxy, incapacity or neglect of the duties of his office, and in general to see that our true intentions, as expressed in our said Constitution, in relation to said Professor, be faithfully executed; always administering justice impartially, and exercising the functions of their office in the fear of God, according to these Regulations, the Provisions of the said Constitution and the Laws of the land."

If the visitors, in the exercise of their power, "exceed the limits of their jurisdiction and Constitutional power, the party aggrieved may have recourse by appeal to the *Justices of the Supreme Judicial Court* of this Commonwealth," who are "authorized to judge in such case," and by a majority vote "declare null and void any decree or sentence of the said Visitors" by them deemed "contrary to the said Statutes, or beyond the just limits of their power, therein prescribed."

It is provided in the statutes that the professors, as well as the visitors, shall renew their declaration of faith in the creed and their subscription to the same every five years.

The associate foundation provides further that if the board of visitors and the trustees "be well satisfied," after seven years' experiment, "with the safety and expediency of the Visitatorial system, and that a perpetual coalition is important and desirable, Union shall be established upon Visitatorial principles, to continue as the Sun and Moon forever." Agreeably to this provision, these boards at the time appointed expressed their approval of the system, and hence it has been established "to continue forever."

In establishing this seminary, the design of the promoters and founders was evidently not only to furnish a school for the proper education of ministers of the Gospel, but also to create an institution that should to the end of time antagonize all heresies, and teach those doctrines embodied in their creed which they esteemed Scriptural, fundamental and essential in the religion of Christ. They intended to guard their institution against "the smallest avoidance of our true design." The occasion of this intense circumspection against any perversion of their trust was doubtless owing to the defection of Harvard from the faith of its founders. Their creed has been called "an iron-bound creed." It certainly is a thoroughly panoplied creed for either defensive or offensive service. Its authors heartily believed in the doctrines they so clearly and definitely stated, and purposed to have these doctrines, and none others at variance with them, taught in their school to the end of time.

Whatever may be thought of the wisdom or unwisdom of this creed, of "anchoring" a school of divinity, designed "to continue as the Sun and Moon," the

purpose of its promoters and founders can hardly be open to mistake.

The seminary having been fully established by the acceptance of its constitution, statutes and trusts on the part of the trustees of Phillips Academy, the institution was opened for students September 28, 1808. This was an entirely new departure in the method of ministerial education. It was the first incorporated and endowed institution of the kind in this or in any country. It was designed to embrace Presbyterians as well as Congregationalists, both in the department of instruction and in that of education. This may account, in part, for the introduction of the Catechism into the original constitution of the seminary. The first two professors were Dr. Leonard Woods, designated by one of the original founders, and Dr. Eliphalet Pearson, designated by the associate founders. During the first year thirty-six students, from various sections of the country, were admitted to the privileges of the institution, a number far in excess of the fondest expectations of its founders.

From that first opening year to the present day the institution has gone forward in its beneficent work of educating young men for the ministry of the Gospel of Christ with marked success. Indirectly, also, it has been further instrumental of much good. Its establishment created a revolution in the method of ministerial education. Previous to this, what students for the ministry had by way of instruction and guidance was furnished by the pastors of churches, and that for a limited time. Since the foundation of the Andover Seminary multitudes of like institutions have sprung up, and are continually springing up all over the land, germinated by its example and success. Thousands of young ministers have gone from its halls to preach the glorious Gospel of the Son of God throughout the world.

It is highly probable that it leads every other educational institution, in this or any other land, in the extent of territory over which, and in the number of nations and peoples among which, its graduates have performed labors and exercised a salutary influence. It has carried the name of Andover to the ends of the earth, and that, too, with a benediction. This fact will justify, if it needs justification, the somewhat extended notice here given of the establishment of this institution.

At the close of the first year Dr. Pearson resigned his office of professor, and removed from Andover.

In the spring of the year 1810, Rev. Moses Stuart, the popular pastor of the Centre Church, New Haven, Connecticut, was elected to the Professorship of Sacred Literature. He was in the thirty-third year of his age, "a young man of uncommon promise," who amply fulfilled the promise of his young manhood by his subsequent achievements. He resigned in 1848, after thirty-eight years of exceptionally valuable service in a department of study little understood or pursued in this country previous to his inauguration.

Mr. Bartlet, having founded a Professorship of Pulpit Eloquence, or Sacred Rhetoric, Rev. Edward Dorr Griffin, D.D., of Newark, N. J., was invited by him to accept the position of professor in this department. This invitation he at first declined, but afterwards accepted, on the condition that he might preach half the time at the newly-organized Park Street Church, in Boston, this church having extended to him an earnest invitation to become its pastor. He was inaugurated June 21, 1809. He came to the seminary with a flattering reputation for theological learning and soundness, and for pulpit eloquence. As he entered upon his duties with zeal and efficiency, it soon became apparent "that he possessed extraordinary qualifications for the work he had undertaken." But his time of service was brief. The duties of the two important positions he held proving too much for his health and strength, he resigned the professorship in 1811, and devoted himself exclusively to his ministerial work at Park Street.

Rev. Ebenezer Porter, D.D., of Washington, Conn., was elected to succeed Dr. Griffin, and was inaugurated as professor April 1, 1812. At his request the title of his office had been changed from Professorship of Pulpit Eloquence to that of Sacred Rhetoric. Dr. Porter entered upon his duties with some reluctance and apprehension, owing to his feeble health and his sense of the great importance of the service to be rendered.

He had been a successful pastor, "was possessed of a clear, well-balanced and discriminating mind." With fine literary taste and a nice appreciation of the requirements of the pulpit, he was well fitted to teach young men the arts of sermonizing and the delivery of sermons. With a genial temper, tender sensibilities and great benevolence he combined much dignity and gentle courtesy, thus winning the affection and commanding the reverence of his students. To his intellectual and moral excellencies he added diligence and perseverance, which enabled him to accomplish much, though always hindered by feeble health. On the creation of the office of president of the seminary, in 1828, he was chosen to fill that office. In 1832, owing to impaired health, he resigned his professorship, retaining the presidency till his death, which occurred in 1834.

The number of students rapidly increased year by year, and the wants of the seminary in like ratio increased. The prosperity of the institution deepening the interest of its founders, led them to provide generously for its needs. In 1821 Mr. Brown endowed a Professorship of Ecclesiastical History. The Rev. James Murdock, D.D., an eminent scholar, was elected the first professor on this foundation. Dr. Murdock came to the seminary expecting to find fitting employment for his extensive and erudite learning, and felt aggrieved that he was required to devote so much of his time to rudimentary instruction. Dis-

satisfied with his work, he failed to satisfy his associates. He was accused by them of a neglect of duty, and, on this charge, was arraigned before the trustees. They sustained the accusation. The professor appealed to the board of visitors. After a long and ably conducted hearing, the visitors affirmed the sentence of the trustees and deposed the professor. He appealed his case to the justices of the Supreme Court. They decided that the visitors had not exceeded their powers under the statutes, and hence that their verdict was final. In a subsequent trial for salary, the court decided that the professor could draw his salary up to the time he was deposed by the visitors. By these two decisions the Supreme Court established the power of removal in the board of visitors, and that their judgments of the evidence and merits of a case could not come under the review of this court.

The connection of Dr. Murdock with the seminary closed in 1828.

The Rev. Ralph Emerson, D.D., pastor of the church in Norfolk, Conn., succeeded Dr. Murdock as Brown Professor of Ecclesiastical History in 1829. Dr. Emerson belonged to a family noted for its intellectual force, for its extensive influence and for its efficient activity in promoting the interests of higher education. He was a graduate of Yale College, a tutor for a time there, from which he also received his degree of S.T.D. He was among the earliest graduates of Andover Seminary. When invited to occupy the chair of professor he at first declined. Afterwards, on a renewal of the invitation, he accepted, on condition that Pastoral Theology he added to Ecclesiastical History. This proposition being acceded to, he was inaugurated as Brown Professor in 1829.

Dr. Emerson was especially noted for his rare modesty. Never intrusive, never self-asserting, never forward to express his opinion or to press his measures, never eager for reputation or a foremost place, he had few disagreements, and no quarrels or personal controversies. He was esteemed a man of sound judgment and discretion, whose opinion in matters affecting conduct it were wise to follow. He brought to the discharge of his duties in the seminary patient industry, a conscientious purpose to do his best, and a deep, fatherly interest in the improvement and usefulness of the young men who came under his instruction. The personal advice he gave his students was often the most valuable instruction they received. He had, in large degree, the wisdom of common sense. Hence, while not possessing the learning of his predecessor, or the ability of one of his colleagues, or the enthusiasm of another, he filled a much-needed place in a body of teachers, and, in his unassuming way, was often of incalculable service to the students.

In 1830 Rev. Edward Robinson, D.D., LL.D., was chosen Professor Extraordinary of Sacred Literature. He resigned in 1833, after but three years' service.

In 1[illegible] Rev. Thomas H. Skinner, D.D., was chosen Bartlet Professor of Sacred Rhetoric, to succeed Dr. Porter. He resigned in 1835.

In 1836 Rev. Justin Edwards, D.D., for a time pastor of the South Church, was elected president of the seminary. He resigned in 1842, and has had no successor.

In 1836 Rev. Edwards Amasa Park, D.D., professor in Amherst College, was elected Bartlet Professor of Sacred Rhetoric. In 1847 he was transferred from this professorship to that of Abbot Professor of Christian Theology. He resigned this position in 1881, having been for forty-five years in the service of the seminary—eleven years as Professor of Sacred Rhetoric, and thirty-four years as Professor of Christian Theology,—and in addition Lecturer on Christian Theology for one year previous to his appointment as professor. Since his resignation Dr. Park has employed his leisure, as his health permitted, in preparing his lectures for the press, and in other literary labors. It will be seen that Prof. Park held the position of professor in the seminary for a longer period, by seven years, than any other professor. Dr. Woods and Prof. Stuart held office for thirty-eight years each. By this phenomenal and life-long service in the seminary, overlapping the preceding and succeeding generations of teachers, having given the best energies of his mind and the unstinted devotion of his soul to the interests of the institution, it would not be surprising if Professor Park should come to feel a personal identification with it,—to be so one with it as to feel that his individual honor was involved in its reputation, and his personal happiness interwoven with its welfare. The time has not come, and may the day be distant, for giving a sketch of his life, his work, his theology, his mental characteristics, his idiosyncrasies of character, his personality, but the writer must be pardoned for here expressing his personal obligation to Professor Park, as a teacher, for the intellectual stimulus, quickening, he received under his instruction.

In 1837 Rev. Bela Bates Edwards, D.D., was elected Professor of Hebrew, and in 1848, Associate Professor of Sacred Literature. He died while in office in 1851, much lamented.

In 1852 Rev. Calvin Ellis Stowe, D.D., was elected Associate Professor of Sacred Literature, to succeed Dr. Edwards. A man of varied learning and experience, he brought to the discharge of his duties unusual enthusiasm and energy. With a warm heart, quick impulses and ready speech, he could not fail to give interest to his class exercises. He resigned in 1864.

In 1853 Rev. Elijah Porter Barrows, D.D., was elected Professor of Hebrew, and in 1858, Hitchcock Professor, which position he resigned in 1862. He is still living at Oberlin, Ohio.

In 1848, Rev. Austin Phelps, D.D., then pastor of Pine Street Church, Boston, was elected Bartlet Professor of Sacred Rhetoric, to fill the vacancy made by the transfer of Professor Park. He resigned in 1879, on account of continued ill health. Professor Phelps,

during a considerable portion of the time in which he filled this office, was not able, from poor health, to devote as much time, thought and energy to his work as when he first entered upon his duties. His lectures and personal influence, however, were regarded by the trustees as of such value to the seminary as to make his retention expedient, when his resignation was at their disposal.

In 1853, Rev. William Greenough Thayer Shedd, D.D., was elected Brown Professor of Ecclesiastical History and Lecturer on Pastoral Theology. After nine years of service in these departments, in which he did much to raise to importance the department of history, and to create for himself an enviable reputation as a scholar and theologian, he resigned in 1862. He is now connected with Union Theological Seminary, New York.

In 1863, Rev. Egbert Coffin Smyth, D.D., was elected to succeed Professor Shedd as Professor of Ecclesiastical History and Lecturer on Pastoral Theology. He retained the lectureship till 1868. He still holds the professorship, and is also president of the faculty. He is the oldest in office of the incumbent professors. Under his guidance the department has continued to grow in importance and attractiveness.

In 1864, Rev. Joseph Henry Thayer, D.D., then pastor of Crombie Street Church, Salem, was elected Associate Professor of Sacred Literature. After filling with acceptance his office for eighteen years, he resigned in 1882. He is now Bussey Professor of New Testament Criticism and Interpretation at Harvard College.

In 1866, Rev. Charles Marsh Mead, Ph.D., was chosen Hitchcock Professor of the Hebrew Language and Literature. Wishing to devote himself for a time to special studies, he resigned in 1882. Since then he has been living in Europe, mostly in Germany, pursuing his favorite studies.

The professors now filling departments are the following: Rev. Egbert Coffin Smyth, D.D., elected 1863, Brown Professor of Ecclesiastical History and president of the faculty; Rev. John Wesley Churchill, M.A., elected 1868, Jones Professor of Elocution; Rev. John Putnam Gulliver, D.D., LL.D., elected 1878, Stone Professor of the Relations of Christianity to the Secular Sciences; Rev. William Jewett Tucker, D.D., elected 1879, Bartlet Professor of Sacred Rhetoric and Lecturer on Pastoral Theology; Rev. John Phelps Taylor, M.A., elected 1882, Taylor Professor of Biblical Theology and History; Rev. George Harris, D.D., elected 1882, Abbot Professor of Christian Theology; Rev. Edward Young Hincks, D.D., elected 1882, Smith Professor of Biblical Theology; Rev. George Foot Moore, D.D., elected 1883, Hitchcock Professor of the Hebrew Language and Literature.

Up to 1816 the professors and students of the Theological Seminary, the teachers and students of Phillips Academy, and all other persons having official or other connection with these institutions, attended worship at the South Church, and had their religious connection with it. In fact, up to this date all the religious organizations in town were established upon a territorial basis. The General Court divided the town into territorial parishes, and the people were expected to belong to the one in which they resided, and to attend religious worship in the parish church and pay for its support. There were no divisive denominations in town at that day.

On the 22d day of August, 1816, this territorial parish regulation was, for the first time, infringed upon by the formation of an independent Church at the Theological Seminary, within the territorial limits of the South Parish. The members of the academy and seminary had so increased as almost to necessitate for them a separate place of worship. At first they worshipped in one of the rooms of Phillips Hall; afterwards a chapel was erected for their accommodation. The professors were, and ever have been, the pastors of the church. The church was reorganized Nov. 1, 1865. This church is, ecclesiastically speaking, an anomaly. It has no parish. It has nothing to do with calling, settling, dismissing or supporting its pastor. It is under the charge of a board of trustees, no one of whom necessarily belongs to its membership. No one of the pastors is in the slightest degree amenable to the church over which he presides, and to which he preaches. He may be heretical, heterodox, or otherwise objectionable; the Church can do nothing about it. It cannot even discipline one of its own members without first obtaining the approval of the trustees. The organization of the church may be called Evangelical, but not Congregational.

After worshipping for many years in the building erected by the liberality of Mr. Bartlet for the triple purpose of furnishing recitation-rooms, a library-room and a place of worship, in 1876 a new and elegant Gothic stone chapel was erected on the seminary campus, a short distance northwest of Phillips Hall. This is an ornamental, no less than a much-needed and highly useful, building. Architecturally speaking, it is by far the choicest edifice on the Hill, and, many people think, in the town. Some connoisseurs give the preference to the new edifice of Christ Church. The chapel is used exclusively for religious services, save that the anniversary exercises of the seminary are held there, which, previous to its erection, had been held in the meeting-house of the South Church.

The old chapel has undergone extensive repairs, changes and improvements, and is now an exceedingly commodious structure for lectures and recitation purposes, and all other uses of a similar character.

It may be as well, perhaps, to refer here to the one other new building which has been, in the later years of its history, erected for the benefit of the seminary. Brechin Hall, the library building, standing on the

south side of the seminary grounds, near where stood the second building for Phillips Academy, is the gift of the Messrs. Smith and Dove. It is built of stone, and was designed to be fire-proof. It is a well-proportioned and attractive building, convenient for the purposes for which it was erected. It contains a library of nearly forty thousand volumes (some of them of priceless value), besides magazines, a large number of curiosities, sent by missionaries in foreign lands, as tokens of their love for the institution that gave them their theological training, and the portraits and busts of the patrons and professors who established and gave character to the seminary. The hall was named Brechin, by the donors, in honor of the city of that name in Scotland, in which they were born. In a like spirit, these same generous benefactors of learning named the hill in Brechin, upon which they erected their free school-house for the benefit of the poor in that city, "Andover Hill." Thus they united the place of their birth and the place of their prosperity by an interchange of names and a baptism of far-reaching beneficence.

During the past few years the seminary has been in grievous affliction, by what instrumentality it is no part of our business to inquire. Perchance it is one of those ordeals by which institutions, like individuals, are made (under divine guidance) to pass through sore trials for their profit. The profit in this case, as in the case of the afflicted believer, is not seen at present, but may be seen hereafter. As early as 1883 there began to be rumors that the faith and teaching of some of the professors were not strictly in accord with the prescribed creed of the seminary. These rumors, circulated by newspapers and otherwise, in a measure perhaps fostered, or at least made plausible, by the open avowal of some of the professors in the *Andover Review*, of which they are the editors, of their adherence to a "progressive theology" and a "new departure" in theological development, grew more numerous and pronounced. The publication by the accused parties of a volume of which they are also the editors, made up of articles taken from the *Andover Review*, entitled "Progressive Orthodoxy," led to decisive action on the part of those who felt aggrieved at the course of these professors. The matter came up for consideration before the trustees, who, with a single exception, approved the course of the professors.

The dogma or hypothesis of a probation after death for the heathen and others who had never known or heard of the salvation of Christ, accepted and defended by these professors, was that for which they were especially called to account by the newspapers.

In 1886, the dissentient trustee, in conjunction with two other influential graduates of the seminary, called the attention of the board of visitors to the fact of the alleged heterodoxy of certain professors from the creed of the institution. This was followed, at the instigation of the visitors, by the presentation of a set of charges, drawn up in form, with references to the evidence by which they were supported. Upon these charges, five of the professors were summoned before the board of visitors and put on trial for heterodoxy, or a departure from the prescribed statutes under which they held their professorships. The trial was a protracted one, occupying a number of days. The accused and the accusers were both represented by eminent counsel. Both also presented elaborate and able arguments for the support of the position they respectively assumed. The trial was attended by many eminent theologians and jurists, as well as by the friends of the parties more immediately interested. It was the newspaper sensation of the day. The board upon whom the duty devolved of deciding upon the merits of this controversy of such delicacy and far-reaching significance was composed of Rev. Julius Harriman Seelye, D.D., LL.D., president of Amherst College; Rev. William Tappan Eustis, D.D., pastor of the Memorial Church, Springfield; and Hon. Joshua N. Marshall, of Lowell. After many months' deliberation the verdict of these visitors was announced on the evening of the closing day of the anniversary exercises in June, 1887, by private notes addressed to each one of the accused professors. By this verdict the charge against Professor Egbert C. Smyth was sustained, and he was removed from the professorship he held. With regard to the other four defendants, "Rev. Mr. Eustis declined to act thereon with his associates, upon the ground that he was not present on the day of the hearing," "when said respondents severally appeared." Thereupon the complaints were "considered and none of the charges" "were sustained." Professor Smyth has appealed his case to the justices of the Supreme Court. Awaiting their decision, he continues to hold his office and discharge its duties.

This sad episode in the history of this ancient and world-renowned institution of sacred learning is working serious injury to its prosperity and usefulness at a time when, in its material strength, it was never before so well equipped to do a glorious work for Christ and the Church.

Permanent Funds.—The following amounts have been given by the persons whose names are mentioned, to the theological department of Phillips Academy, for the purposes designated at the time specified:

1808. Samuel Abbot, Abbot Professorship	$20,000
1808. William Bartlet, Bartlet Professorship	25,000
1809. William Bartlet, $10,000 1809. Moses Brown, $10,000 1809. John Norris, $10,000 1845. John Norris, Legacy $30,000 — Associate fund	60,000
1819. Moses Brown, Brown Professorship	25,000
1813-45. Samuel Abbot, Legacy, Abbot Fund	84,000
18[illegible]-48. Misses Rebecca and Sarah Waldo	15,000
1841. William Bartlet, Legacy, Bartlet Fund	50,000
1856. Boston Fund, Sundry Contributors	28,420
1857. Samuel A. Hitchcock, Hitchcock Professorship	15,000

1866–77. Peter and John Smith, and John Dove, support of Library	45,000
1867. Miss Sophia Smith, Smith Professorship	38,965
1871–76. Frederick Jones, Jones Professorship	15,000
1869. Samuel A. Hitchcock, Contingent Fund	40,770
1872. Samuel A. Hitchcock, Relief Fund	50,000
1875. John L. Taylor and family, Taylor Professorship	38,405
1878–80. Henry Winkly, General Fund	66,000
1880–81. Park Testimonial	14,135
1880. Mrs. Valeria G. Stone, Stone Professorship	50,000
1880. Mrs. Valeria G. Stone, General Fund	100,000
1887. N. G. White, Legacy, General Fund	50,000
Sundry sums at Sundry times for scholarships and to aid poor students	97,000
Library Funds	28,000
Lectureship Funds	10,000

In addition to these permanent and income-bearing funds, the trustees hold buildings and lands contributing to the support and carrying forward of the institution valued at two hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

In the above donations, that given by Mr. Bartlet for building Bartlet Hall, Bartlet Chapel, and the president's house are not included; neither is there included the amount, forty-one thousand dollars, given by the Smith & Dove Manufacturing Company to build Brechin Hall, nor the amount given by Madam Phillips and Mr. Samuel Phillips to erect the first seminary building.

PROFESSORS IN THE THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY.

LEONARD WOODS, the first Abbot Professor of Christian Theology in the Andover Seminary, was born in Princeton June 19, 1774, and baptized on the day of his birth.

His father was a farmer in moderate circumstances, but above the average of his class in intellectual activity and attainments. He was always known as "Master Woods," having been appointed first schoolmaster of the town. He was a member of the Provincial Congress and one of Governor Gill's Council. His mother was an energetic woman, full of motherly love and ambition for her children, only too willing to sacrifice herself for their benefit.

At a very early period of his life he showed a fondness for books and for studies in advance of his years. His father had designed that he should follow the farm; but, owing to an accident which brought on an illness that lasted for two years, and which affected his bodily strength, the father was induced to comply with the wishes of the son and the desire of his mother, and permitted him to enter upon the study of Latin with the pastor of the parish. While the father could promise no assistance to him in pursuing a collegiate course, the mother promised to do what she could to aid him. Under these conditions young Woods applied himself assiduously, spending three months at Leicester Academy, but otherwise mainly conducting his own preparatory studies. He entered Harvard College in 1792, and graduated in 1796, the first in the class, which contained some afterwards eminent scholars. His college course came at a time when infidelity and skepticism were popular with young men, and their pernicious influence pervaded all the higher institutions of learning in the land. At one time during his connection with Harvard there was but one professing Christian among its students. Young Woods, though nurtured in a pious family, and taught the Catechism by a praying mother, could not altogether escape the influence of the atmospheric skepticism in which he drew his breath. He did not go to the extreme of disbelief, but his faith in some of the cardinal doctrines of the Christian religion was seriously shaken.

On leaving college he taught school for eight months in Medford. On being thus separated from his college associates, and brought face to face with the work of life, the training of his childhood began to reassert its influence. He entered upon a careful study of the Scriptures with the purpose of finding out for himself the evidence for their truth or falsity. With this spirit of earnest inquiry and candor of judgment, he pursued his investigation till he was led, intellectually and from the heart, to accept the Scriptures as the word of God, and Jesus Christ as the Son of God and the Saviour of men. Soon after this he made a public profession of his faith, and united with the church in Medford. This acceptance of Christ and consecration to his service at once gave direction to his future life. He entered upon a course of theological study, with the ministry in view. It being the custom of those days for an aspirant for the ministry to spend a short time under the instruction of some eminent divine, he spent three months with Dr. Charles Backus, at Somers, Conn. The winter following he spent with his parents, pursuing his theological studies by himself, with some assistance from his pastor.

In the spring of 1798 he was licensed to preach, and in November of the same year was settled as pastor of the Congregational Church at West Newbury. This church was an influential and important one, its retiring pastor being Dr. Tappan, who had been chosen to be a professor in Harvard College. Thus, at the age of twenty-four, after a Christian experience of less than two years and scarcely more than one year of theological study, he entered upon his ministry with an extensive and numerous parish. His mind was mature beyond his years, his knowledge more distinct and available than is common to neophytes in religion and his beliefs were more clear, well-considered and terse than is the case with those who have never wrought their way to an abiding faith through grave doubts and questionings. He at once took high rank among his ministerial brethren as a thinker, sermonizer, preacher and pastor. Being naturally of a genial, conciliatory temper, he was received on friendly terms by ministers of different shades of theological belief between the high and the low, the loose and the consistent Calvinists. After a few years of successful service in West Newbury, he came to be on familiar terms with the distinguished

divines of the region. Dr. Morse, of Charlestown, so valued his friendship and esteemed his ability, as to invite him to become an associate editor with himself of the *Panoplist*, the organ of the old Calvinists. Dr. Spring, of Newburyport, a near neighbor of his and a stanch Hopkinsian, requested his assistance as a contributor to his magazine of the consistent Calvinistic shade.

After ten years of ministerial labor and intercourse with some of the ablest divines in the State, he had attained such consideration that, when the Hopkinsians, under the lead of Dr. Emmons and Dr. Spring, determined on establishing a theological college, they fixed upon him as their theological professor and his parish as the place for its location. And when the important question came up whether there should be one or two theological seminaries to represent the two shades of Calvinism in New England, he was found to be an important medium in bringing the divergent elements into agreement. In the narrative we have from the pen of Dr. Woods, written after he had retired from the professor's chair, describing the difficulties attending the project to unite the two contemplated institutions, we are constrained to believe that it was a fortunate Providence that had brought Dr. Spring and Dr. Woods into such intimate association. Dr. Pearson was doubtless the master mover in all the efforts put forth and all the methods devised to produce harmony between the parties; but Dr. Woods, with less push and persistency and less accumulated power, was able, from his relation to the Newbury men, to exert a most salutary influence in favor of union. He clearly saw the waste and folly of having two theological seminaries within twenty miles of each other, of essentially the same religious character and belief. If we understand his narrative, he was, first and last, in favor of union. And when the difficulties in the way of this union increased, and the fears, jealousies and hitches in the way of harmony threatened disaster to the plan when apparently near its consummation, he put forth strenuous and effective efforts for its accomplishment. On the apparent failure of the negotiations after months of anxious treating, and when the Hopkinsians had renewed their offer to him of a professorship in their college, he declined the honor and urged a renewal of the endeavor to effect a union. If, as seems likely by this narrative, it was largely by the persistent efforts of Dr. Woods towards the close of these protracted negotiations, that the hindrances were finally removed, the church is hardly less indebted to him for this feat of friendly diplomacy than for the able instruction he afterwards gave in the united seminary.

The seminary was opened for the reception of students on September 28, 1808. On that day Dr. Pearson and Dr. Woods were inaugurated as professors. The narrative of this important event will be given in the words of Dr. Woods, who was not only an eye-witness, but himself no small part of it:

"It was an auspicious day, a day of rejoicing and hope, a day involving in no small measure the most precious interests of the church and the world. This was the first Divinity School founded in America, and the large assembly of Christian ministers from different and distant places, and of other friends of the Seminary, indicated the interest and the profound sense of the importance of this occasion.

"The public services were conducted in the Parish Church with consummate order and propriety, while earnest attention, deep silence and solemn feeling prevailed in the Sanctuary.

"As Dr. Pearson was a layman, the Statutes of the Founders required that he should receive ordination. The prayers on the occasion were appropriate and fervent. The sermon was preached by Dr. Dwight; the Rev. Jonathan French gave to Dr. Pearson the customary charge, and Dr. Morse gave the right hand of fellowship. Dr. Pearson, President of the Board of Trustees, then gave an historical sketch of the events which contributed to the establishment of the Institution, and read such portions of the Constitution and Statutes as the occasion called for. After this he was inducted into office as Professor of Natural Theology, and the Rev. Leonard Woods as Professor of Christian Theology, and the Seminary was declared to be open for the admission of Theological Students.

"After the close of the public solemnities, the Founders of the United Institution, and their principal advisers and agents, were all together, and how cordial were their mutual congratulations! They felt it to be the happiest hour of their lives. What joy brightened their countenances, and how deep and unutterable their emotions of gratitude to God, as their excited minds glanced over the crowded transactions and events of the two preceding years!"

Dr. Woods entered upon his duties with great eagerness and high expectations.

Students came to his class-room in greater numbers than could be well accommodated. His popularity and usefulness increased from year to year, till, in 1833, the seminary admitted to its privileges eighty new students.

As a lecturer on theology, Dr. Woods was lucid, didactic, somewhat diffuse, scriptural rather than philosophical, resting his conclusions on the statements of the Bible rather than on the deductions of reason. Of a calm temperament, his words were carefully weighed before they were uttered. He never indulged in speculations that unloosed his foothold upon Scripture truth. There was in him, doubtless, a lack of imagination, or vision to see, as is given to some, the germinating life that lies hidden in the letter of Scripture statements. But, whatever his limitations, he was an able and sound theologian, who, from his lecture-room, exerted a wide and salutary influence upon the minds of a multitude of ministers, and thus did an incalculable service to the interests of evangelical religion.

As the seminary came into existence in part as a protest against what its promoters regarded as unsound doctrine, it was from the beginning involved in controversy. As a controversialist, Dr. Woods was, to an unusual degree, dispassionate and courteous. He treated his adversary with fairness and his arguments with candor, while presenting his own position in a clear and commanding manner. Naturally conciliatory, and having had personal experience in the region of doubt and unbelief, he was the more ready to treat with forbearance and charity the errors of others, though he never yielded a point he deemed scripturally true.

As a man Dr. Woods secured the esteem and con-

fidence of his fellow-men to a marked degree. Tall in person, dignified in manner, approachable, with a winning smile and affable speech, kind and sympathetic, he won the hearts of young men, and led his associates to rely, not only upon his ability, but also upon his steadfastness and integrity. As a Christian, his heart was in full sympathy with his doctrinal belief. That which he taught in the lecture-room he accepted as the rule of life. From personal experience he could speak of the depravity of human nature, the influence of the Holy Spirit, the new birth of the soul through repentance, and faith in the Lord Jesus as the Christ of God. His piety had in it a trace of the Puritan piety of the Commonwealth as described by Macaulay. At times, he was all penitence and self-abasement before God, while, before men, he was serene and self-sustained. His sense of personal guilt was profound, if not at times bitter. But his confidence in the atoning merits of the Lord Jesus and the enduring mercy of the Heavenly Father was equally strong and profound. He uses this language regarding himself: "The sight of a thousandth part of my sinfulness of heart and life has filled me with amazement and shame. But O, there is very plenteous redemption—sufficient even for me; and if for me, for any one on earth."

In addition to his duties as professor in the seminary, Dr. Woods took a conspicuous part in the controversy with the Unitarians, and was forward in originating and promoting all those beneficent projects which had in view the moral improvement of the people or their enlightenment, and the preaching of the gospel to those to whom it was unknown. Many of the charitable, reformatory and missionary organizations of the day had their origin on the Hill, or, if not their origin, their most potent assistance. Dr. Woods was one of those who originated the Education Society, the Tract Society, the Total Abstinence Society, and was an early and efficient friend of the Foreign Missionary Board.

In 1846 he resigned his office as professor, after having served in that capacity for thirty-eight years. At the request of the trustees he employed himself, after his resignation, in preparing a history of the seminary. While engaged in this work he was called hence in the eighty-first year of his age. His history, a most valuable volume, was published in 1885, under the editorial supervision of his grandson, Dr. George S. Baker.

Eliphalet Pearson,[1] LL.D., was born in Byfield, a parish in Newbury, Massachusetts, June 11, 1752, and died in Greenland, New Hampshire, September 12, 1826, aged seventy-four years, three months, and one day. He entered Harvard College in 1769, and was graduated with high honors in 1773. His eminence was then predicted by his instructors. Soon after graduation he was called to teach a grammar school at Andover (now North Andover), the home of his friend, Samuel Phillips, afterwards Lieutenant-Governor of Massachusetts.

In 1775 Governor Phillips was commissioned by the General Court to manufacture gunpowder for the Revolutionary army. In this enterprise he relied very much on the scientific attainments of Pearson. He relied on the same while he was laying the foundation of Phillips Academy at Andover. Pearson became the first principal of the academy, and remained in this office from 1778 to 1786. He was one of the twelve original trustees, and was the first president of the board who did not belong to the Phillips family.

In 1786 he was called to the Professorship of the Hebrew and Oriental Languages at Harvard College,—an office for which he was then well qualified. He delivered to the students a valuable course of lectures on language. He was particularly successful as a teacher of rhetoric. Occasionally he spent the entire night in correcting the compositions of the students, in order that he might spend the day in the multiplied extra-official duties which were heaped upon him. He labored with rare zeal and tact for the financial as well as literary welfare of the college. He searched the documents which illustrated the claim of the university to certain disputed possessions; examined old deeds in the registry of probate, old notes pertaining to farms, ferries, bridges, in which the university had, or was thought to have, an interest. For twenty years he was an uncommonly laborious professor in the college; for six years was a leading member of its Board of Fellows, and for a long time performed many of the duties belonging to the President. Among his pupils were some of the most eminent men of the day, such as John Quincy Adams, Judge Story, Presidents Kirkland and Quincy, Drs. William E. Channing and Edward Payson, John Pickering, Alexander H. Everett. It has been often said by President Quincy that if Governor Phillips had lived, Pearson would have been elected President of Harvard College, as successor to Dr. Joseph Willard.

He resigned his office at Cambridge in 1806. He immediately repaired to Andover, where he gave the first impulse to the formation of the Andover Theological Seminary. He originated its remarkable constitution. He worked with wonderful energy in order to unite with each other the members of his own theological party. Afterward he was a conspicuous agent in effecting the union between his own party and a dissenting one,—that is, between the seminary planned at Andover and that which had been planned by Dr. Samuel Spring, of Newburyport. He rode from Andover to Newburyport thirty-six times for the purpose of consummating that union. He was elected the first Professor of Sacred Literature in the Seminary. He was the first president of the board of trustees after the theological institution came under

[1] Prepared by Prof. Edwards A. Park.

its care. He retained the presidency of that board nineteen years,—a longer period than any other one, either before or since his time, has held it. He continued a member of the board forty-eight years.

Dr. Pearson was noted for the variety of his talents and interests. A large collection of his papers impresses the readers of them that he was merely "a man of affairs." He was an adept in the fine arts; he possessed remarkable skill and taste in music; he had also an architect's eye and forecast. The oak tree is yet standing which he climbed in order to lay out the plan for the building and grounds of Andover Seminary. For many years he had been an industrious member, and also the secretary, of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. He had associated mainly with men of letters, of science and of political renown. He had not addicted himself to the niceties of theological studies, but was an accurate critic of the Hebrew and Greek Scriptures. He once published a Hebrew grammar. With great care he revised and prepared for the press Thomas Wilson's "Sacra Privata," Leslie's "Short Method with the Deists," Baxter's "Saints' Rest," Baxter's "Call to the Unconverted," Doddridge's "Address to a Master of a Family;" also several pamphlets and tracts. Occupied, as he was, with great schemes, theological and political, he yet interested himself in securing the publication and extending the circulation of Dr. Watts' "Divine Songs for Children." Watts and Doddridge were his favorite authors. He also held in high esteem the writings of Owen, Leighton, Flavel, Tillotson and Bishop Thomas Wilson. He originated the "Massachusetts Society for the Promotion of Christian Knowledge," and was the most conspicuous man in forming the "American Education Society." His enterprising spirit made him a pioneer in many great and good works, which need not be particularized here. His person was noble and commanding, his manners were dignified and courtly. As a teacher he was faithful; as a disciplinarian, exact and severe. His severity excited some opposition among his pupils, but many of the most eminent among them regarded him as their prominent benefactor.

The establishment of Andover Theological Seminary was opposed with great vigor by men of great influence in New England. Some of them had been the scholars of Pearson at Cambridge. The brunt of their opposition was borne by him; he was the target against which their deadliest missiles were aimed and thrown. President Josiah Quincy was familiar with the obstacles which Pearson was called to resist, and with the herculean efforts which the brave man made in resisting them. Mr. Quincy says: "What no other man would have dared to attempt with any hope of success he effected. Whatever good has resulted, or shall result, from the mere fact of this union between the two parties who coalesced in forming the Seminary, the merit of establishing it belongs to Eliphalet Pearson. I speak without reserve. I had better opportunities of knowing his principles, motives, and causes of success perhaps than any other man. I was *eight* years, from 1778 to 1786, his pupil, *four* years under his instruction in college. Afterwards through life I had frequent intercourse with him. In 1808, as a trustee of the academy, I witnessed his zeal, his labors, and the untiring spirit with which he pursued, until he succeeded in effecting, the cherished object of his heart. After his retirement from the government of the Seminary he made me the confidant of his opinions and feelings concerning it. I mean no disparagement to Dr. Spring and his associates. The institution is an ever-enduring monument of their zeal for religion and their munificence. But I owe it to truth and to the memory of Dr. Pearson to declare that his influence and power effected the desired union and fixed the locality of this Theological Seminary." (See a Memorial of the Semi-Centennial Celebration of the founding of the Theological Seminary at Andover, pp. 119, 120.)

Moses Stuart[1] was born in Wilton, Conn., March 26, 1780, and died in Andover, January 4, 1852, aged seventy-one years, nine months, and nine days. When a lad of but twelve years he became absorbed in the perusal of Edwards on the Will. In his fifteenth year, entering an academy in Norwalk, Conn., he learned the whole Latin grammar in three days, and then joined a class who had devoted several months to Latin studies. In May, 1797, having been under the careful tuition of Roger Minot Sherman, he was admitted as a sophomore to Yale College. Here his tastes were pre-eminently for the mathematics.

At his graduation, in 1799, he delivered the salutatory oration, at that time the highest appointment awarded to the class. One year after leaving Yale he taught an academy in North Fairfield, Conn., and in the following year was principal of a high school at Danbury, Conn. Having pursued the study of the law, he was admitted to the bar in 1802 at Danbury. His fertile and versatile mind, his enthusiasm and prodigious memory, gave promise of eminent success in the legal profession. From his study in fitting himself for this profession he derived signal advantages through life. A few weeks before his admission to the bar he was called to a tutorship in Yale College. Here he distinguished himself as an inspiriting teacher. At this time he publicly devoted himself to the service of God.

Having pursued the study of theology with President Dwight, he was ordained March 5, 1806, pastor of the First Congregational Church in New Haven, Conn. During his pastorate of three years and ten months two hundred persons were admitted, all but twenty-eight by profession, into his church. His

[1] Prepared by Edwards A. Park.

deep, solemn, and sonorous voice, his commanding and impassioned manner, his translucent style, his vivacity of thought, his energy of feeling, contributed to make him one of the most eloquent of preachers. Many supposed that he mistook his calling when he left his pulpit for the professor's chair. Doubtless in his early manhood "the pulpit was his throne."

On the 28th of February, 1810, he was inaugurated Professor of Sacred Literature in Andover Theological Seminary. In about two years he composed a Hebrew grammar for the immediate use of his pupils. They copied it day by day from his written sheets. When he printed it he was compelled to set up the types for about half the paradigms of verbs with his own hands.

The following letter is perhaps the earliest notice of all his published works :

"*To Rev. Dr. Pearson, Present, December* 12, 1813 :

"Rev. and Dear Sir: Please to accept a copy of the Heb. Grammar I send you, and to read it with a view to note its errors and defects, for it has both. I have printed only about 120 copies, and have not ventured to put any into the Library, my object being to get the aid of all the Heb. scholars in our land in bringing it to a state of more perfection before I venture to offer it to the Trustees as a classical book. Robertson's True and Ancient Method came too late, or I should have discussed his principles briefly in the Preface. I shall place much dependence on your Remarks. Please to write them down.

"Your obed't servant, Moses Stuart."

Eight years after writing this germinal letter he printed his larger "Hebrew Grammar." This he remodeled with great painstaking, and published it in a second edition two years after the first. Not satisfied with this, he re-examined all its principles anew, wrote some of it three, four, and a small part of it seven or eight times over, and published the third edition five years after the second. Professor Lee, of Cambridge University, England, speaking of this edition, said : "The industry of its author is new matter for my admiration of him." The fourth edition of this grammar was republished at Oxford University, England, under the superintendence of the celebrated Professor E. B. Pusey. In correcting the proof-sheets of the grammar Mr. Stuart read some of them over seven times, and a few of them eleven times.

This is one example of the care which he took for securing the accuracy of his publications. Another example is found in his edition of "Newcome's Greek Harmony of the Gospels." He published it without the accents in a duodecimo and also a quarto form. He requested the students in the seminary to re-examine the proof-sheets of the "Harmony," and offered a small pecuniary recompense for the detection of any, even the minutest, error in them.

In the midst of his labors on his "epoch-making" grammar he published his "Letters to Rev. William Ellery Channing," a work which, on the whole, has been the most popular of all his writings. The first edition of these letters was sold within a week; two other editions followed it very soon in America, and four in England. The last American edition was published in 1846. Perhaps Mr. Stuart's "Commentary on the Epistle to the Hebrews" stands next to these Letters in general popularity among clergymen. It was published in 1827–28, in two octavo volumes. It has passed through four editions in America, and perhaps twice as many in England. The celebrated Dr. John Pye Smith characterized it as "the most important present to the cause of sound Biblical interpretation that has ever been made in the English language." His commentaries on the Epistle to the Romans and on the Apocalypse are even more elaborate than his work on the Hebrews.

All his published writings cannot be here enumerated. Among them are more than twenty volumes; fourteen pamphlets; thirty-four articles containing fifteen hundred pages in the *American Biblical Repository;* fourteen articles containing four hundred and ninety pages in the *Bibliotheca Sacra;* thirty-three important articles in other periodicals. The pamphlets and periodical essays occupy more than two thousand octavo pages.

The publications of Mr. Stuart fail to exhibit the large proportions of the man. He was greater than his books. His greatness was most conspicuous in his lecture-room. Hundreds of his pupils will indorse the words of Dr. Francis Wayland, a late President of Brown University, who said: "I have never known any man who had so great power of enkindling enthusiasm for study in a class. It mattered not what was the subject of investigation, the moment he touched upon it it assumed an absorbing interest in the eyes of all of us. I do not think that there was one of us who would not have chosen to fast for a day rather than to lose one of his lectures."

He was the inspiring teacher of more than seventy presidents or professors in our highest literary institutions, of more than a hundred missionaries to the heathen, of about thirty translators of the Bible into foreign languages. Several of our most important volumes pertaining to Biblical literature were begun by his pupils "in the bosom of his family."

From the fact that he was the pioneer in familiarizing our clergymen with Hebrew and German learning, and thus opening a new era in our theological history; from the fact that by the wonderful magnetism of his character he quickened the literary zeal of men who afterward became leaders of popular thought; from the fact that he prepared more than fifteen hundred of his pupils for appreciating the richness of the Bible in its original languages, and elucidated those languages in a fresh and attractive way, he has been called "The Father of Biblical Literature in our Land." In no small degree he deserves to be honored as a father of Biblical literature in Great Britain also. His influence is the more noticeable as his life was a perpetual struggle with infirm health, and he was wont to remark that he never allowed himself to work as a real student more than three hours in the day.

Bela Bates Edwards, D.D.,[1] was born in Southampton, Mass., July 4, 1802, and died in Athens, Georgia, April 20, 1852, aged forty-nine years, nine months, sixteen days. His ancestors were among the first settlers of Springfield and Northampton, Mass. His grandparents were parishioners of Jonathan Edwards in Northampton; his maternal grandmother was for some time an inmate in Jonathan Edwards' family, and transmitted to her descendants no small degree of the virtues derived from her pastor's instruction and example. The paternal grandfather of Professor Edwards was a soldier in two colonial armies, one of which captured Louisburg in 1745, and the other defeated Burgoyne in 1777. During his boyhood Prof. Edwards labored on his father's farm and enjoyed the truly intelligent society of his father's household. While thus laboring, he devoted every leisure hour to his books. He fitted for college partly under the guidance of his pastor, Rev. Vinson Gould; partly under that of his pastor's wife, a lady of remarkable learning, who prepared several young men for college; partly under the special care of Rev. Moses Hallock, of Plainfield, Mass., a distinguished teacher in that day. He was graduated at Amherst College in 1824; taught an academy in Ashfield, Mass., in 1825; spent the year 1825–26 as a member of Andover Theological Seminary; was then called to a tutorship in Amherst College; passed two years in that office; returned to the seminary in 1828; was graduated there in 1830, having held an exceptionally high position in a class of exceptional ability. Before he returned to the seminary three offices were pressed upon him,—he was invited to be a professor in Amherst College, the assistant secretary of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, the assistant secretary of the American Education Society. The last of these offices appeared to him the least honorable, but with his characteristic modesty he accepted it. He continued to discharge its duties while he was a member of the seminary, and when the office of the society was removed from Andover to Boston he removed his residence to the city.

In Boston he spent five years and a half of his busy life, managing the details of his office, and at the same time taking the principal charge of the *American Quarterly Register*, a periodical which he made to bristle with statistics. In 1833 he founded the *American Quarterly Observer*, which he afterwards united with the *American Biblical Repository*, which he subsequently merged into the *Bibliotheca Sacra*. For these periodicals he wrote uncounted essays and reviews, translated various articles from the German and other languages, and conducted an extensive correspondence in order to enlist youthful writers in literary work.

He was thus a benefactor of the young. He cannot be said to have founded all the periodicals which he edited, but he originated new plans for them all, and in process of time became the chief supporter of them all. His conscientiousness in editing them is illustrated by the fact that, in order to write two paragraphs in a review of a scientific work, he once read the whole of an elaborate treatise on geology. Throughout his life he superintended the publication of thirty-one octavo volumes of periodical literature, and in these volumes inserted many paragraphs, which he wrote with scrupulous care and in exquisite taste.

While Mr. Edwards was thus promoting the cause of literature in his periodicals, he was incessant in his efforts for the literary and moral improvement of society at large. His published writings were numerous. Among them were two admirable schoolbooks—the "Eclectic Reader" and the "Introduction to the Eclectic Reader"—the "Biography of Self-taught Men" (a volume republished in England as well as this country), the "Missionary Gazeteer," the "Memoir of Rev. Elias Cornelius, D.D.," the "Introductory Essay" to the "Memoir of Henry Martyn," and valuable "Notes" to the Memoir which he edited with rare fidelity. He united with Professor Park in translating and publishing a volume of "Selections from German Literature;" with Dr. Samuel H. Taylor in translating and publishing the "Larger Greek Grammar" of Dr. Kühner; with Dr. Sears, afterward President of Brown University, and Professor Felton, afterward president of Harvard College, in publishing a volume entitled "Classical Studies." During a large part of his life he was a trustee of Abbot Academy, and a leading trustee of Amherst College,—an institution of which he was urgently solicited to be president. The founders of the seminary at South Hadley and of Williston Academy acknowledged their obligation to him as their trusted adviser. Perhaps no man was so familiarly acquainted as he with the policy and the needs of our colleges and higher schools. He formed a plan, and expended much of his strength in toiling, for the establishment of a Puritan Library and Museum in Boston, and the present library in the Congregational house may be looked upon as in large degree a monument to him.

His philanthropic labors were not performed in a perfunctory way. He devoted his whole sensitive nature to them. When the Choctaws and Cherokees were driven from the graves of their fathers, when the British forced the opium trade upon China, his gentle spirit was roused to unwonted indignation, and it seemed to those who heard his utterances that he was the one oppressed. His deepest sympathies, however, were with the enslaved African. His enthusiastic desire for the freedom of the bondmen was developed as early as 1825, and it never left him. A sense of the wrong done to the negroes burned like fire in his bones. For several months he felt anxious to devote his entire life to the African cause. After

[1] By E. V. Wilcox, of Edward Park, Cleveland, N. Y.

he had decided that it was not his duty to do so, he found that he could not resume his interest in study until he forcibly abstained from thinking on the subject. The first address which he ever delivered from the pulpit was on the evils of slavery; his first "Fourth of July" oration was on the same theme; so was the first pamphlet which he ever published. For twenty-six years he was an unwavering friend of the Colonization Society. The secretary of the Massachusetts Branch of that institution declared that the Branch was kept alive, during its earliest years, mainly by Mr. Edwards' efforts. He was one of the founders of "The American Union for the Relief and Improvement of the Colored Race," and gave the greater part of two years' work to the establishment of that society, which, by its appeals and published statistics, roused general attention to the evils of slavery, and finds its work grandly continued by the "American Missionary Association" of the present day. This Association was in some degree a result of the antecedent "Union." As Mr. Edwards was anxious at one time to spend his life in the service of the enslaved, so he was anxious at another time, but finally was restrained from gratifying his desire, to spend his life as a missionary of the American Board. He was a close friend of Jeremiah Evarts, Samuel Hubbard, Rufus Anderson, and others who were most intimately connected with the board.

As a preacher, Mr. Edwards was not popular with the masses, but was highly prized by the more intelligent men. His natural diffidence sometimes embarrassed him, his voice was not strong, his gestures not graceful, he had the "student's nearsightedness," which compelled him to keep his eyes close to his manuscript. But there was an earnestness in his manner, a delicacy in adjusting the light and shade upon the idea which he was developing, a tender yet powerful sympathy with his hearers, making him yearn to have them see his theme as he saw it, and feel about it as he felt. Behind his utterances there was a pure and large personality which overcame all elocutionary defect, changed his diffident manner to one of persuasive eloquence, and enabled him to hold an intellectual audience spell-bound. The day of his preaching in the Andover Chapel was a "high day" for the auditors.

We have not yet approached the more important part of Mr. Edwards' life-work. In 1837 he was appointed Professor of the Hebrew Language in Andover Theological Seminary. In 1848 he was elevated to the Profe-sorship of Sacred Literature in the Seminary,—the office previously occupied by Professor Moses Stuart. For this office he had eminent qualifications. In fact, he began unconsciously to prepare himself for it in his early childhood. Before he was eleven years old he had read through the Bible seven times, and all of Dr. Scott's "Notes" twice. At the age of twenty-two he began the study of Hebrew, which he pursued almost daily as long as he lived. He made immense acquisitions in philology, solely in order to qualify himself for the task of Biblical interpretation. That he might understand Wickliffe's translation of the Bible, he studied the old Saxon of Chaucer. In order to familiarize himself with Greek words and particles used in the New Testament, he read the tragedies of Æschylus. He studied Arabic, Syriac and various dialects cognate with the Hebrew. He mastered the minutiæ of interpretation by correcting proof-sheets of Greek and Hebrew writings. Desiring to enlarge his acquaintance with the science of Biblical interpretation, he read German authors until their words became to him as his mother tongue.

His manner in the lecture-room was singularly fascinating. He had a clear and exact sense of the meaning of a Scriptural passage, traced out in the original the finer modifications of its import, saw at once the emphatic expression to which the preceding paragraphs contributed, and enthusiastically led the minds of his pupils up to the full height of the poet's or prophet's meaning. Some of his scholars can even now remember his rebuke when a commonplace translation was presented,—"Such a meaning is jejune and frigid. It does not come up to the *splendor of the words*." The late Professor John N. Putnam, one of Dr. Edwards' pupils, wrote concerning his teacher: "Indeed it was by no means alone by what he *said* that he instructed us, but by what he *was* in the lecture-room. He formed us by a calm and constant influence that dropped as the rain and distilled as the dew. By some it was not felt at first, but it grew upon us silently day by day, and we found at the year's end that we had gained more than our note-books could show,—a greater fineness and precision of view, a calmer and surer habit of mind. He taught us *in himself* how often the perception of the final truth may depend on the moral feeling more than on logical keenness."

As soon as Mr. Edwards took the professorship at Andover he began to execute the broad plans which he had formed in earlier life. He began to prepare a Commentary on Habakkuk, Job, the Psalter, and the First Epistle to the Corinthians; also an Introduction to the Old and New Testaments. He began to collect the gems which he might insert into their fitting caskets, and to gather into a uniform series of works the results of his multifarious reading. The hopes of literary men, however, were disappointed by the pulmonary disease which terminated his labors on earth. One of his friends has remarked: "The day of his entrance on his professorship reminded me of the sun rising upon the seminary; the day of his burial reminded me of an Andover sunset."

If this man of restless energy and far-seeing prudence had devoted his life to the acquisition of wealth, he might have amassed such treasures as would have been conspicuous in even the rich valley of the Merrimack. His wealth was his *character*. Other men might possess his unconquerable industry,

but we have yet to find the man who can leave upon others the exact impression which Dr. Edwards left. It is impossible to portray him as he seemed to those about him, or transfer to other minds the impression which was stamped by his very presence. His aptitude for Biblical interpretation gave unmistakable signs of genius, but it was not a merely intellectual attribute. Genius may get nearer to the throne when she rises higher than the intellect, and takes her seat in the moral powers. It awakens admiration, not so much for the *mental faculties*, as for the *man* who directs them. A nature uncommonly disinterested, profoundly reverential; an originality of feeling more than of thought, a rare combination of apparently opposite qualities; great strength of purpose with an exquisite refinement of character and taste; a profound humility, with self-reliance in reserve, ready for the proper moment; a union of strong practical sense with deep imaginative and poetic instincts; a singularly active mind, joined to a richly contemplative one; good reasoning power, animated by the warmest emotions; and, withal, a tender-hearted humor that played like a sunbeam around his lofty meditations,—all these elements gave a singular interest to Dr. Edwards' character. Beyond this, there was a fascination which no written description can explain, a mysterious something to which the heart responded, but which the mind could not analyze.

A Memoir of Prof. Edwards, seven of his sermons, and sixteen of his addresses and lectures were published after his death, in two volumes. They contain instructive extracts from the papers which he wrote during his tour through England, Scotland, France, Germany, and Italy in 1846 and 1847. He was married in 1831 to Miss Jerusha W. Billings, daughter of Col. Charles E. Billings, of Conway, Mass., and descended from clergymen, among whom are Richard Salter Storrs, of Longmeadow; Solomon Stoddard, of Northampton; Timothy Edwards, of East Windsor; John Williams, of Deerfield; Eleazer and Richard Mather.

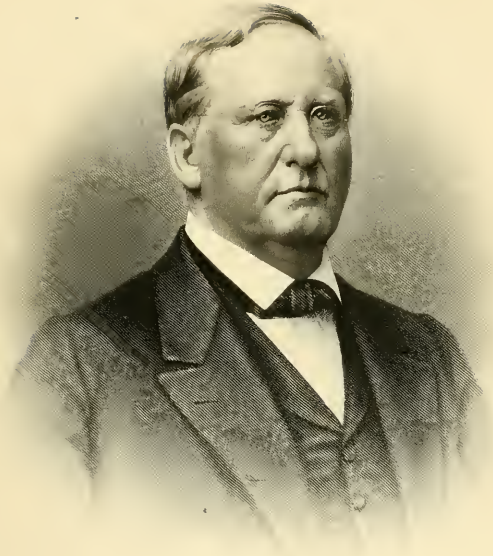
SAMUEL HARVEY TAYLOR, LL.D.,[1] was born October 3, 1807, and died January 29, 1871, aged sixty-three years, three months, and twenty-six days. He was descended from Scotch Covenanters, who established themselves in the old township of Londonderry, New Hampshire. Mr. Horace Greeley says that probably "more teachers now living trace their descent to the Scotch pioneers of Londonderry than to any equal number anywhere else." In the single State of New Hampshire six descendants of these pioneers "have been Governors of the State, nine have been members of Congress, five, judges of the Supreme Court, two members of the Provincial Congress, and one was a signer of the Declaration of Independence."

Mr. Taylor is supposed to have derived his Christian name from Samuel Harvey, a youthful hero who distinguished himself at the celebrated siege of Londonderry in Ireland.

After an eventful childhood and boyhood, Mr. Taylor entered Dartmouth College, where he was conspicuous for his iron diligence and mental grasp. After his graduation, in 1832, he entered the Theological Seminary at Andover. Professor Stuart and Dr. Edward Robinson often expressed their admiration of his zeal and accuracy in his Hebrew and Greek studies. Dr. Leonard Woods had confidence in his theological views, for Mr. Taylor was an early conservative in theology. His pastor and father-in-law was an intimate friend of Dr. Daniel Dana, and through life Mr. Taylor retained the high esteem of Dr. Dana as well as Professor Stuart. His fellow-students, as much as his instructors, trusted him as an interpreter of the Bible and as a theologian. With such antecedents he was called from the seminary to a tutorship in Dartmouth College. This call appeared to be an omen that his future course would be a literary one. He remained in his tutorship about two years, and returned to Andover so as to receive his regular diploma in the autumn of 1837. Before he acquired his high reputation as an instructor and disciplinarian at Dartmouth College, he had won golden opinions as an assistant teacher in Phillips Academy, Andover. He was chosen principal of this academy and began to discharge the duties of his new office near the close of his theological studies.

He might have received ampler emoluments in other schools, but the trustees of the academy recognized his peculiar qualifications for this school. They saw that he united accuracy in the details of classical literature with an enthusiasm in its life-giving spirit; an uncommon quickness of perception with an uncommon solidity of judgment; a singular devotion to the Greek and Roman classics with a general interest in scholarly pursuits and the affairs of life. In a peculiar degree he united the factitious with the natural qualifications for a teacher. In several particulars he resembled his great predecessor, Eliphalet Pearson. Like Pearson, he had a stalwart frame and sonorous voice. It may be said of him, as was said of another: "The commander was visible and vocal in him." His personal appearance gave him a right to his Christian name—"Samuel Harvey." When he was directing the movements of the "Phillips fire-engine," he spoke and looked like a military general. Indeed, he seemed to have a decided military taste. His dignified presence and expressive emphasis gave him one kind of power. Another kind was given him by his reputation for trustworthiness;—this reputation was the fruit of his previous success, and this success was the means of his continuing to succeed. Before he became the principal of the academy it was not the prominent school which it became before he left it. Sometimes the senior class, to whom the principal mainly devoted himself, had consisted, on an average,

[1] Prepared by Prof. Edwards A. Park



I. H. Taylor



Austin Phelps.

of about twenty members; but after he came the class consisted of thirty-five, forty, forty-three, forty-eight, fifty-eight, sixty-four or seventy-three members. These were members of the Classical Department alone. The senior class was called *his* class, and it was the great magnet of the institution, attracting young men to it from the plantations of Georgia, the cotton-fields of Louisiana, the banks of the Ohio and Mississippi, and the Canadian provinces. It was common to remark that students went into "*his* class" as boys, and came out as men.

He adopted no artificial means for swelling the number of his pupils, his heart was intent on magnifying rather than multiplying them. He founded the new success of his school upon its intrinsic worth. His great aim was not to make an outward show, but to work on the inner spirit of his scholars.

His perpetual inquiries were: "How can the academy be made to exert the best influence in promoting regular habits of work among the young men who are soon to be members of the learned professions, and whose usefulness will depend upon their regularity in study? How can it be most effectual in promoting a respect for law and government, and thus guarding the future citizens of the republic against the spirit of anarchy,—against the American tendency toward irreverence for superiors? How can it be most successful in training our future statesmen for the dignified performance of their duties in the legislative hall?" He has been criticised for paying too scrupulous attention to the minutiæ of scholarship, but his motto was: "Trifles make perfection, and perfection is no trifle." He believed himself to be discharging the duties of a true patriot, when he was preparing his pupils for holding intimate communion with the sages and poets of Greece and Rome; when he was holding up a high standard of classical learning, and urging young men up to that standard, himself leading the way in the laborious ascent, and demanding that his pupils should follow him. Many a pupil is now living who can say, "I should have ruined myself by indolence, if it had not been for Dr. Taylor;" "My life would have been broken into fragments, if it had not been for his persevering exactions of duty." Hundreds of his pupils have said: "I owe more to *number nine*, than to all other recitation rooms in which I was ever drilled."

Such was Dr. Taylor's interest in Phillips Academy and kindred institutions, that he prepared for them several text books. In 1843 he published a "Guide for Writing Latin" translated from the German of John Phillip Krebs; in 1844 (in connection with Prof. B. B. Edwards) a "Grammar of the Greek Language" translated from the German of Dr. Raphael Kühner; in 1846 an "Elementary Greek Grammar" compiled from a similar work of Dr. Kühner. He published also in 1861 a volume entitled "Method of Classical Study, illustrated by Questions on a few Selections from Latin and Greek Authors;" in 1870 a volume entitled "Classical Study; its Value illustrated by Extracts from the Writings of Eminent Scholars," with an introduction by himself. Among his other writings is a Memoir of his father-in-law, Rev. Edward L. Parker, prefixed to Mr. Parker's "History of Londonderry" edited in part by Dr. Taylor, also a Memorial of Dr. Taylor's brother-in-law, Joseph P. Fairbanks, a liberal and most exemplary benefactor of various literary institutions. From the year 1852 to the time of his death Dr. Taylor was an editor of the *Bibliotheca Sacra*. He corrected the proof-sheets of eighteen volumes of this quarterly, and wrote several anonymous articles for it.

One of the most remarkable of his literary exploits is found in his unpublished letters and journal, written during the foreign tour which he took in 1856. He wrote suggestive notices of Paris, Malta, Alexandria, Cairo, Palestine, Constantinople, the Plains of Troy, Athens, Marathon, Corinth, Herculaneum and Pompeii, Rome, Florence, Switzerland, the university towns of Germany, England, Scotland, and was absent from his favorite academy only six months. His record of his travels is a monument of his literary enterprise and patience, his inquisitive spirit and his success in gratifying it, his care and deliberation in forming his judgments, his extensive investigations preparing him to make the tour, and his more extensive learning derived from his having made it.

On Saturday morning, January 28, 1871, Dr. Taylor exhibited his wonted vigor in the exercises of his school, visited Boston and Cambridge in the afternoon, returned to his home in the evening with more than usual buoyancy of spirit. He rose on Sabbath morning and prepared himself for his large Bible-class in the academy. He went forth like a hero, carrying his New Testament through the deep and rapidly falling snow, to the new academy edifice, which had been erected under his care and according to his plan. His pupils were assembling to receive his Christian instruction, the bell was yet tolling; he stopped in the vestibule of his academy; his countenance was changed; he fell; he said not a word; he neither sighed nor groaned, but ascended from the circle of his astonished and loving and weeping pupils to become a glorified pupil in the school of his Redeemer.

Rev. Austin Phelps, D.D.,[1] Professor Emeritus of Sacred Rhetoric in the Andover Theological Seminary.

The Phelps family in America trace their descent from an ancient Staffordshire house in England. The English families of the name believe themselves to be a branch of the Welfs (*ffelfs*) or Guelphs, whose eminence in European history is well-known.

The good ship "Mary and John" brought, in 1630,

[1] By one of his pupils.

to Massachusetts Bay, William Phelps, his wife and four sons, and his brother George. Another brother, who remained behind, was the secretary of the Protector in 1654. After the Restoration he was in this country, in hiding, at the same time with the regicide judges.

William was one of the leaders of the colony from Dorchester, which settled the town of Windsor, Conn., in 1635, and one of the eight who, by authority of the Massachusetts Colony, instituted the first organization of the infant settlements in Connecticut, in the following year. Dr. Stiles, in his "History of Connecticut," represents the Hon. Wm. Phelps as a man of mark in the affairs of both church and state. His third son, Nathaniel, was the founder of a family of Phelps in Hampshire County, Mass., which became numerous and of local fame. It is in the line of this family that the name descended to the subject of this sketch. His grandfather was for many years the foremost citizen of Belchertown. He represented that township in the General Court of Massachusetts for sixteen successive years.

The father of Professor Phelps, the Rev. Eliakim Phelps, D.D., was born March, 1790, and died December 1880. He was an admirable specimen of the ministers of the Gospel, whose piety, courage and progressive spirit made the earlier half of this century a period so fruitful of Christian enterprise and of enterprising Christians.

His wife, Sarah Adams, the daughter of a substantial farmer of Wilbraham, Mass., was born on the 25th of June, 1791, and died November 13, 1845. On the maternal side she was connected with the Connecticut family of Skinner, honorably known in that Commonwealth, and also in Virginia and among the earliest settlers of Ohio.

Austin Phelps was born in the parsonage at West Brookfield, Mass., January 7, 1820. A tradition survives that he was so puny a child as to call from a friend of the father, on the day following, the remark: "You will hardly expect to raise that boy." The reply had in it the spirit which pervaded the atmosphere of his household; "Oh, yes! He shall be a member of Congress yet!" In 1826 the family removed to Pittsfield, Mass., and in 1830 to Geneva, N. Y., where the father was pastor of the First Presbyterian Church. In 1836 he removed to Philadelphia.

These facts in the father's career are noteworthy for their relation to the education of the son. At the age of eight years the latter began his preparation for college, in the High School of Pittsfield, under the direction of Rev. Chester Dewey, D.D. The tutor who introduced him to Latin literature was the late Rev. Mark Hopkins, D.D. In 1829 he went to the Wesleyan Academy at Wilbraham, then under the charge of Dr. Wilbur Fisk, afterward president of the Wesleyan University at Middletown, Conn. In 1833 he entered the High School in Geneva, then conducted by Rev. Dr. Justus French, the most eminent educator in Western New York for many years. In 1833, *i.e.*, at thirteen years of age, he entered what is now known as Hobert College, in Geneva. There he came under the magnetic influence of Professor Horace Webster, subsequently president of the College of the City of New York. In 1835 he was transferred to Amherst College, in Massachusetts, and in 1836, after his father's removal to Philadelphia, he entered the University of Pennsylvania, where he graduated in 1837, with the honor of the valedictory oration.

The year succeeding his graduation he spent in post-graduate study, chiefly in history and English literature, under the direction of Prof. Henry Reed, the editor of the works of Wordsworth in this country. He then commenced the study of theology, his preceptors being his father and the Rev. Dr. Albert Barnes. In December, 1839, he went to Union Theological Seminary, in New York, where he studied Hebrew with Dr. Isaac Nordheimer, and attended the lectures of the Professor of Theology, Rev. Charles White, D.D. In the spring of 1840 he was licensed to preach by the Third Presbytery of Philadelphia. At about the same time he went to New Haven, and attended the lectures of Rev. N. W. Taylor, D.D., in systematic theology. Later he was enrolled as a resident licentiate in the Theological Seminary at Andover. Here he pursued his studies for a year and a half, attending chiefly the lectures of Prof. Moses Stuart, and of Prof. E. A. Park, D.D., then Professor of Sacred Rhetoric. This period of study was concluded by his call to the Pine Street Congregational Church in Boston, where he was ordained pastor March 31, 1842. He was most fortunate in the succession of eminent and stimulating educators in whose hands he was placed in that formative period of his mind. He has somewhere expressed his consciousness of being deeply indebted to the silent influence of the large-minded and erudite men with whom he was brought into contact.

Probably to none was he under greater obligation, for the development of his mind at that time, than to the lamented Prof. Henry Reed. The classic taste and wise counsels of the accomplished instructor could not but leave a lasting impress upon a pupil so fitted by a certain affinity of genius to encourage and reward his endeavors. Professor Reed led his docile pupil into an appreciative study of the poetry of Wordsworth. Of Milton's verse and prose the young student was already a passionate admirer. A chance hearer of one of his early sermons said, in leaving the church, "That young fellow preaches as if he had lived on Paradise Lost!" Other favorite authors balanced what was then an extravagant taste. Jeremy Taylor, Dr. South, Edmund Burke and John Foster were among the feeders of his early culture.

Hardly less fortunate was Mr. Phelps in his associates than in his instructors. He became more or less

intimate, in his academic years, with many men who at a later period achieved distinction. Among these may be mentioned the Right Reverend A. Cleaveland Coxe, D.D., of Western New York; Rev. R. D. Hitchcock, D.D., the late president of the Union Theological Seminary in New York City; Rev. Edwin E. Bliss, D.D., of Constantinople; Rev. D. W. Poor, D.D., of Philadelphia; and, among civilians, Hon. Ensign H. Kellogg, late Speaker of the Massachusetts House of Representatives; Hon. Henry Williams, of the Supreme Court of Pennsylvania; Judge Walter March, of Indiana; the late Hon. Charles Folger, Secretary of the Treasury of the United States; and Hon. Horace Maynard, late Postmaster-General of the United States.

His own estimate of his six years' pastorate in Boston is not extravagant. But the congregation and the community which knew him best received a different impression, from another stand-point than his. A straw which shows the drift of opinion in the general public was his election to the chaplaincy of the House of Representatives in 1843–44, and, a year or two later, to that of the Senate, in which he alternated with Rev. James Freeman Clark, D.D. Something also in the man and in his pastoral career attracted the attention of wise men to him as a fit candidate for the vacant chair of Sacred Rhetoric in the Theological Seminary at Andover, from which Rev. E. A. Park, D.D., had been recently transferred to the department of Systematic Theology. Mr. Phelps became his successor in March, 1842, at the age of twenty-eight years.

This change was an unlooked for and an undesired deflection from the strong current of his tastes and prepossessions. He was devoted to the profession of his choice. He had chosen it by a sort of moral gravitation. The traditions of his family had indicated it to him. The atmosphere of his father's house had predisposed him to it. In his memorial of his father's pastoral career, he tells us that from the age of four years he had felt himself predestined to it. His own religious culture, in later years, had led him to it as the type of service to which he was inwardly called. He had concentrated upon it his chastened ambition as a man and his apirations as a Christian. He had come to it exceptionally well prepared for it as a life's work. He had been heard to speak of his retirement from it as the great trial of his professional career. One consideration only overcame his reluctance to leave it. His laborious ministry had overtasked his strength, and he felt the premonitions of disease in the near future. That he did not overestimate his peril was proved by the fact that on the morning of the day on which his pastoral relations were dissolved he was attacked by an amaurosis, from which he did not recover for four years.

He was inaugurated at Andover September 6, 1848. From that date his life was given to the duties of his professorship, till declining health compelled his retirement in June, 1879, a period of thirty-one years. In the years which have since elapsed he has lived in comparative seclusion, but has performed some of the most valuable literary work of his life. His pen has been in almost constant use. He has been a welcome contributor to the representative religious journals. He has actively participated in current theological discussions. He has put to press several volumes, and, altogether, has evinced an intellectual vigor never surpassed in the years of his prime.

Of course the part of his career which invites the more careful criticism is that spent in the labors of his professorship. The work of that period is central in his life. It was the work he was born to do. It was work most significant in its relation to the future of twelve hundred young preachers of the Gospel, many of whom have become educators of younger men in the same sphere of public influence.

His methods of procedure in the conduct of his department are best given in his own words. He says:

> "I set myself to work, *de novo*, as if the department had no history. I aimed to construct the science out of the materials of the art. I watched the working of the minds of my pupils. I encouraged an inquisitive spirit. I kept a record of their inquiries, and answered them as best I could by the spur of mother-wit. These answers to practical inquiries, in the lecture-room and out of it, constituted the backbone of my instructions. I was dealing with young minds, with live minds, with minds wide awake to the exigencies of a noble profession. The collision of my mind with their minds, under such conditions, struck out almost all that I know of the department which it was my province to create and to expand. They asked, and I answered; that is the whole story. I was a daily student with them. My mind was growing, in company with theirs."

This is undoubtedly a just statement in the main. What it needs to be absolutely correct is an enlargement of the obvious meaning of the phrase "by the spur of mother-wit." It was "mother-wit" reinforced by the results of wide critical reading and severe self-criticism by a mind of acutely appreciative instincts and a marvelous power of appropriation.

A life-work entered upon by such a man with such a spirit and in such a method, and prosecuted for more than thirty years, it is needless to say, was a great and successful work. The usefulness of it could hardly be over-stated. Never did more felicitous relations of instructor and pupil exist than were illustrated in that lecture-room. Never were instructions more quickening, more sympathetic, more genially adapted to find out and to fetch out the best of which a pupil was capable. The courses of lectures always seemed to glow with the heat of recent thinking. They were wise, conscientious, scholarly, exhaustive discussions.

The whole atmosphere of the class-room was pure and bracing. Many a minister looks back to his experience there, as to the most quickening period of his education, quickening not only to his intellect and executive powers, but to his spiritual culture as well.

An important factor of Professor Phelps' influence

as an instructor was his own power in the pulpit. The limits of this sketch forbid a description of this at length. It may be summed up in the single fact that, to his pupils his preaching illustrated and emphasized his homiletical instructions. The ecclesiastical records of those days indicate that on nearly a hundred occasions in his first fifteen years at Andover he was called to preach in services of dedication, ordination or installation.

His literary work since he resigned his professorship cannot receive here any adequate discussion. In amount it is very large. It is the matured fruitage of the industry of his whole previous life. It belongs to the best thinking of his time. Of the aggregate influence of his professional labors it is impossible as yet to take the measure. Of one of his lesser books, the circulation has reached 150,000 copies. His temperament, and the naturally disheartening effect of ill-health, led him to deplore the relinquishment of his chair as "the premature closing of a life's work." Really, however, his pastorate, his professorship and his life in retirement present to a juster estimate three periods of cumulative usefulness. His latter days must be recognized as the most fruitful of all.

With the name of Andover is associated the fame of many eminent men. It has been the home of not a few of the first rank of able preachers and successful teachers. Among these Professor Phelps has taken his abiding-place in the history of the American churches.

Dr. Phelps married, first (September, 1842), Elizabeth, the eldest daughter of Professor Moses Stuart. She was the author of ten volumes for use in Sunday-schools, which have reached an aggregate sale of between two and three hundred thousand copies. She died in Boston, November, 1852, at the outset of what promised to be a brilliant literary career.

Of this marriage were born: 1st. Elizabeth Stuart (August 31, 1844), who has become widely known as the author of "Gates Ajar" and twenty-six other works of fiction.

2d. Moses Stuart (March 16, 1849), who, after graduating at Yale College, 1869, served as tutor in that institution three years, and as Professor of Mental Philosophy in Middlebury College one year, and as professor of the same department in Smith College, Northampton, five years, till his death, in 1883.

3d. Lawrence (August 22, 1852), graduated at Middlebury College, 1876, and is now pastor of the Congregational Church at Gardner, Mass.

Professor Phelps married again, April, 1855, Mary, the third daughter of Professor Stuart. She died September, 1880.

He married again, June, 1878, Mary A., the youngest daughter of Samuel Johnson, Esq., of Boston. Of this marriage have been born, 1st. Francis Johnson, December 7, 1879, and 2d. Edward, April 18, 1883, both of whom have recently finished their studies at Yale College.

Of Dr. Phelps' published discourses the following deserve special mention, viz.: A Sermon before the Pastoral Association of Massachusetts, in 1851; A Sermon before the General Association of Massachusetts, in 1853; A Sermon before the Convention of Congregational Ministers of Massachusetts, in 1859; An Election Sermon before the Government of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, in 1861; and several addresses before Collegiate and Theological Societies, 1848 to 1868.

His published volumes are the following, viz.:

1. "The Still Hour," a work on prayer, which has been republished in England, Scotland, and translated into the German, the French, the Dutch and the Italian languages.

2. "The New Birth," a treatise on regeneration, also republished in Europe.

3. "Studies of the Old Testament," a collection of sermons on events and characters in the Old Testament.

4. "Sabbath Hours," a small volume of religious essays.

5. "The Solitude of Christ," meditations suggested by the sacrament of the Lord's Supper.

6. "The Sabbath Hymn Book," "The Sabbath Hymn and Tune Book," "The Sabbath Tune Book," "The Sabbath School Hymn and Tune Book," a series designed for public worship, constructed jointly with Rev. E. A. Park, D.D., and Dr. Lowell Mason. Baptist editions of the same revised by Rev. Francis Wayland, D.D. Sale about 200,000 copies.

7. "Hymns and Choirs," essays on Hymnology, constructed jointly with Rev. E. A. Park, D.D., and Rev. Daniel Furber, D.D., of Newton, Mass.

8. "The Theory of Preaching," a series of lectures on Homiletics, delivered in Andover Theological Seminary.

9. "Men and Books," a second series of lectures on homiletics.

10. "English Style in Public Discourse, with special reference to the dialect of the Pulpit," a third series of homiletic lectures.

11. "My Portfolio," a memorial of his father and other essays on topics of current interest.

12. "My Study," a memorial of the founders of Andover Theological Seminary and other essays on topics of current interest.

13. He has now in preparation a volume entitled "My Note Book; or, Fragmentary Studies in Theology."

Edwards A. Park, D.D., LL.D.,[1] Professor Emeritus of Andover Theological Seminary.

[The following sketch has been compiled from several bibliographical narratives—particularly from the new "American Cyclopædia," "Allibone's Dictionary of Authors" and the supplement to the "Schaff-Herzog Encyclopædia."]

Edwards A. Park, D.D., LL.D., was born in Providence, R. I., December 29, 1808. He is descended on the paternal side from Richard Park, one of the original settlers of Newton, Mass. (see Jackson's "History of Newton"), and on the maternal side from Robert Ware, one of the original settlers of Dedham, Mass. (see the "Genealogy" of the Ware family). His father was Rev. Calvin Park, D.D., formerly professor in Brown University, afterward Congregational pastor in Stoughton, Mass. His mother was Abigail Ware, daughter of Capt. Nathaniel Ware, of Wrentham (which was formerly part of Dedham, Mass.). The subject of this sketch was graduated at Brown University, 1826; at Andover Theological Seminary, in 1831; pastor at Brain-

[1] By Rev. Daniel L. Furber, Newton Centre, Mass.



Edwards A. Park.

tree, Mass., 1831–33; Professor of Mental and Moral Philosophy at Amherst College, 1835–36; Professor of Sacred Rhetoric at Andover Theological Seminary, 1836–47; Professor of Christian Theology at Andover, 1847–81. He held a professorship at Andover forty-five years, and has had some connection with the seminary nearly fifty-five years. In the years 1852–62 he devoted much time and labor to the plan of enlarging the endowments of the seminary, of creating new professorships, erecting new buildings, improving the accommodations of the library, etc., etc.

During the years 1842–43 he spent sixteen months in Switzerland, and at the Universities of Berlin and Halle, in Germany; during 1862–63 he spent the larger part of sixteen months at Hanover and at the Universities of Marburg, Berlin and Halle, in Germany; during 1869–70 he spent about sixteen months in Great Britain, Italy, Egypt, Palestine and Greece.

He began to write for the secular newspapers in 1826, and for the religious periodicals in 1828. Since that time he has written for the *American Quarterly Register*, the *Spirit of the Pilgrims*, *American Quarterly Observer*, *American Biblical Repository*, the *Congregational Quarterly*, the *Christian Review*, the *Bibliotheca Sacra*, and for various cyclopædias, theological and ecclesiastical dictionaries or histories.

He has published sixteen or seventeen separate pamphlets; one, a Sermon at the Funeral of Rev. Charles B. Storrs, President of Western Reserve College (Boston, 1833); one, a Sermon at the Funeral of Prof. Moses Stuart; one, a Sermon commemorative of Prof. B. B. Edwards; one, an Essay commemorative of Rev. Joseph S. Clark, D.D.; one, a Sermon at the Funeral of Rev. Richard S. Storrs, D.D., of Braintree; one, a Sermon at the Funeral of Rev. Samuel C. Jackson, D.D. of Andover; one a Discourse commemorative of Dr. Leonard Woods, president of Bowdoin College. Besides these biographical essays he has published four lengthened biographies,—one of Rev. William Bradford Homer, pp. 136, 12mo., first edition 1842, second edition 1848, with an introductory essay of forty-nine pages; one, of Prof. B. B. Edwards, D.D., pp. 370, 12mo., 1853; one, of Rev. Samuel Hopkins, D.D., pp. 264, 8vo., 1854; one, of Rev. Nathanael Emmons, D.D., pp. 468, 8vo., 1861.

Some of his pamphlets have been repeatedly republished—as his sermon preached before the Legislature of Massachusetts in 1851, on the "Indebtedness of the State to the Clergy." Some have started some controversy. One of these was his "Dudleian Lecture," delivered at Harvard College in 1845, on the "Intellectual and Moral Influence of Romanism," pp. 37, 8vo. This was controverted in an elaborate review by Dr. Orestes A. Brownson, who had then recently joined the Catholic communion. The sermon delivered in 1850 before the convention of Congregational ministers of Massachusetts, on the "Theology of the Intellect and that of the Feelings," pp. 36, 8vo., called forth various replies. One of them was an essay published by Rev. Dr. Charles Hodge, of Princeton, New Jersey, and was soon followed by two essays from the same writer on the same theme. To these three essays Professor Park responded in three separate pamphlets, all of them originally published in the *Bibliotheca Sacra*, as Professor Hodge's criticisms were first published in the *Princeton Biblical Repository*.

A large part of his work has been editorial. In connection with Prof. B. B. Edwards, in 1839, he edited and translated an octavo volume of 472 pages, entitled "Selections from German Literature." In 1842 he edited the writings, to which he prefixed his memoir, of Rev. William Bradford Homer. In 1845 he edited the "Preacher and Pastor," a collection of treatises on homiletics and the pastoral care, to which he prefixed an introductory essay of thirty-six pages. In 1859 he edited a collection of "Discourses and Treatises on the Atonement," to which he prefixed an introductory essay of eighty pages. He has also written introductory essays for several other volumes not edited by him. The last two of these essays are one of twenty-seven pages, prefixed to the volume on the "Life and Education of Laura Bridgman," the deaf, dumb and blind pupil of Dr. S. G. Howe; and one essay of about the same length, prefixed to the "Autobiography of Rev. W. G. Schauffler, D.D." In connection with Professor Austin Phelps, D.D., and Dr. Lowell Mason, he compiled and edited the "Sabbath Hymn Book." Between the years 1859 and 1866, with the appendages of tunes for congregational worship, it reached a circulation of about 120,000. In relation to this hymn-book, he, with Drs. Austin Phelps and Daniel L. Furber, published a volume entitled "Hymns and Choirs." Of this work an essay of sixty-one pages, on the "Text of Hymns," was written by Prof. Park. In 1844 Prof. Edwards and Prof. Park established the *Bibliotheca Sacra* on its new plan. Prof. Edwards was editor-in-chief from 1844 till 1851. Prof. Park was editor-in-chief from 1851 till 1884. Having been engaged forty years in the editorship of the work, and in the preparation of its forty volumes for the press, he has continued to interest himself in the work since it was removed from Andover to Oberlin. In 1883 he published a pamphlet containing ninety-eight pages, on the "Associate Creed of Andover Theological Seminary." His last publication was "Discourses on some Theological Doctrines as related to Religious Character," 1883, pp. 398, 8vo.

For more than thirty years he has been president of the board of trustees of Abbot Academy at Andover; by the the will of the founder he was appointed one of the original trustees of Smith College at Northampton; since 1863 he has been a member of the Board of Fellows of Brown University. He has been elected a member of the Victoria Institute in

England, and of several historical societies in the United States.

CHAPTER CXXXVIII.

ANDOVER—(*Continued*).

MANUFACTURING INDUSTRIES.

At quite an early period of its history the town held out substantial encouragement for the establishment of manufacturing industries within its borders. In 1673, by vote of the town, there were "granted to Edward Whittington and Walter Wright, five acres of land for encouragement of erecting a fulling-mill, which they promise to set about the next spring." In 1675 "liberty was granted a tanner that he shall be allowed by the town to make use of what bark is needful for his works in town, provided he fell no trees that are fit for building or mill-timber." In 1682 "liberty was granted to any man that the town or committee shall choose, to set up a saw-mill, fulling mill and grist-miil upon Shawshin River, near Rogers Brook, to take up twenty acres of land adjoining said place and to enjoy the same forever, with the privilege of a townsman."

In 1688 "it was voted that the twenty acres of land shall be improved by Joseph and John Ballard and their heirs, so long as they shall keep up a grist-mill, fulling-mill, &c. In the same year it was voted to encourage setting up iron-works."

In 1768 the town raised an influential committee "to consider of some measures that may tend to encourage prudence and manufactures, and to lessen the use of superfluities." This committee, in their report, among other valuable recommendations, to further which the inhabitants of the town should use their utmost endeavors, mention this, "to promote and encourage manufactures in the town."

In 1770, when taking action concerning the distress in the province growing out of the operation of the late act of Parliament, imposing duties on tea, paper, etc., the town votes to "encourage frugality, industry and the manufactures of this country." And again, in 1775, the town votes "to discountenance and discourage every species of extravagance and dissipation," and "to encourage frugality, economy and industry, and to promote agriculture, arts and manufactures." We thus find, continually, manufactures associated with the economic and moral virtues, as things which are to be distinctly and specifically encouraged and promoted.

Joseph and John Ballard are mentioned as having received grants of land, on the condition of building and keeping up grist and fulling mills, where is now Ballardvale. Frye Village takes its name from Sam'l Frye, who, in 1718, built a saw and grist-mill at that place on the Shawshin River. A fulling-mill was added by a son of Mr. Frye.

Not far from the spot where the mills of Hon. Moses T. Stevens are now located in Marland Village, the Lovejoys had iron works. The business of these mills was necessarily on a small scale, and not always profitable to the owner. While on the Shawshin River there were, first and last, quite a number of small mills established, employing a few operatives, not till 1775 was there any very extensive or important manufacturing enterprise established in the town.

In the winter of 1775-76 Mr. Phillips built a powder-mill on the Shawshin River, in what is now Marland Village. This mill, as has been previously mentioned, was erected to meet a pressing necessity of the Continental army, not as a business venture. It proved to be, however, not only of immediate service to the army and of immense importance to the country, but of large pecuniary profit to its owner. When it ceased to be a necessity to the army and country it was continued for a number of years as a strictly business enterprise; and this was not abandoned till the year 1796. In October of that year an explosion took place, which killed two men and made havoc of the mill.

Some few years previous to this, the demand for powder having slackened, Mr. Phillips had introduced the manufacture of paper, for this purpose using the powder-mill, when there were no orders for powder. In 1789 he erected a paper mill. The associate of Mr. Phillips in this business was Mr. Thomas Houghton, an Englishman, a practical paper manufacturer, who, having met with reverses in his own country, came here to retrieve his fortunes. He was a devout Quaker, persistent, hopeful, energetic and well-trained to his business. By agreement, as Mr. Houghton states it, "Mr. Phillips builds the mill and I am to manage the work. My care and management is to stand against the Rent and we are to share profits equally." The "building occupied as a paper-mill," as described by Mr. Phillips, was "thirty-six by thirty-two feet, with two vats upon the ground floor, which have a Cast Iron pot in each of them, sunk into Brick chimneys, for heating the vats. The first floor has two engines for beating-stuff, a room for dressing rags, with a brick chimney and fire-place, also two other rooms for rags. The second floor is occupied for a Rag ware-house.

"Another building connected to the mill by a covered passage way of 20 feet long, used for drying and keeping paper before finished, 20 by 24 feet, at the end next the mill; a part of the drying-house is taken off for a finishing room, 27 by 24 feet, in which is a cast-iron stove used in the winter season. At one side of the finishing-room is a sizing copper, set with bricks and brick chimney. Another building, 35 feet from the mill, that is 24 feet by 20, for Rags and finished paper. Another building, 131 feet from the mill, 20 by 13 feet, for Rope and other lumber. No

other building near on the same side of the river. A Grist Mill upon the opposite side of the river, at about 140 feet distance."

This may seem to us insignificant as compared with the more numerous and much more extensive buildings and appurtenances of the mills owned by Mr. Stevens, now occupying the same site, but, in these days of beginnings in manufacturing, this was an extensive plant and worthy of minute description. As a new enterprise, competing with others in the neighborhood of like character, with a scarcity of material and with untrained workmen, its success at first was not up to the expectations of its projectors. In time, however, when experience had brought skill to the workmen, and the rag-bag material to the mill, and the market had enlarged, the business became profitable.

Mr. Houghton, after an experience that tested his faith and strength of character, emerged from his impoverished condition to one of comparative ease. His son succeeded him. Colonel Samuel Phillips succeeded his father in the ownership. On the death of Colonel Phillips, in 1820, the property changed hands. Messrs. Amos and Abel Blanchard and Daniel Poor carried on the business. The financial results not proving satisfactory, the manufacture of paper was abandoned after a few years, and the property fell into the hands of Mr. Peter C. Brooks, and ultimately into the possession of the Marland Manufacturing Company.

This company came into existence through the perseverance, energy and ability of one man—Mr. Abraham Marland.

Mr. Marland was born in Ashton Parish, Lancashire, England, February 22, 1772. His father, Jonathan Marland, was a millwright and afterwards a linen-weaver. Losing his mother at the early age of four years, he was taken into the family of a maternal uncle. For three years he enjoyed the privilege of attending a school where the younger children, of whom he was one, learned to read the New Testament, and little else. At less than eight years of age he was put into the woolen-mill of his uncle, where, by practice for seven years, he learned the business of weaving. On the death of his uncle, preferring to rely upon his own efforts for a living, rather than return to the house of his father, who had married again, he entered the service of another woolen manufacturer, earning here three shillings a week above his board, and thinking himself quite well off at that.

It was while in this place that he sought and obtained confirmation in the Established Church of England, for which he ever after had a strong predilection and warm affection. He continued in the same employment for two years, acquiring a good knowledge of the business, and a reputation for frugality, ingenuity, persistency and application.

In 1790 he was chosen to take charge of carding and spinning in a new mill in Shrewsbury, at a salary of a guinea a week. His success was such that his compensation was soon raised. He continued here for two years, when, by some misfortune of the owners, the enterprise failed and was closed up. Not finding congenial employment in that vicinity, young Marland next went to London, seeking his fortune. Here for a time he found employment in a flannel-mill at low wages. Becoming restless, he was induced by certain allurements to enlist in the service of the East India Company. But while on shipboard, waiting the day of sailing, he became disgusted by his taste of subordination and the prospect before him. Unceremoniously, without bidding good-bye to any one, on the night previous to the sailing of the ship, he slipped from her deck, boarded a small boat, landed on the wharf, and put a long distance between the vessel and himself before the morning dawned. After much waiting and destitution, he found employment in the ware-house of a firm of linen drapers and cotton manufacturers. He soon after went to Leeds, where he engaged in the manufacturing business, first as an employé, and afterwards on his own account with a partner, and then again as a manager of a manufactory owned by Mr. John Wood. Here Mr. Marland married, his wife bringing a dowry of two hundred pounds.

In 1801, investing his savings and the property of his wife in woolen cloths, he embarked for America with his family, landing in Boston September 17th.

It ought not to be passed over, in this connection, that the cloth Mr. Marland brought with him to this country was placed in the hands of a merchant in Boston for sale. Before any returns were made, the merchant failed, and Mr. Marland lost nearly the whole of his venture, which represented his own savings and the dowry of his wife. This heavy loss, instead of depressing the new immigrants, only gave steadiness to their courage and vigor to their efforts. He is reported to have said that, on starting in this country, he had but one hundred dollars in his pocket. The success of Mr. Marland has been attributed, in part, to his admirable wife. She was distinguished for her courage, industry, frugality, helpfulness, good management of family affairs and religious character. She gave aid and comfort to her husband under all circumstances, and was especially helpful in times of disaster or discouragement.

Soon after landing in Boston, Mr. Marland went to Beverly, and entered the employment of Colonel Burnham, a superintendent in cotton-spinning and in the manufacture and running of factory machinery. His compensation, esteemed by him, at the time, large, was seven shillings a day. After two years he removed to Lynnfield, where he engaged in the manufacture of wick-yarn on his own account; to this was soon added custom carding of wool for the farmers. In all this business Mr. Marland succeeded beyond his expectations. As his business increased he was embarrassed for want of power, and, to remedy this

want, removed to Andover in 1807. Here he at first established himself in Abbot Village, engaging in the manufacture of cotton, the yarn being spun in his factory and woven into cloth by hand, by women living in the neighborhood. This was a day of small things, demanding economy, industry and energy.

The business of manufacturing cotton being injurious to his health, on account of the dust arising from it, Mr. Marland turned his attention to woolen manufacturing—the employment of his youth.

In 1820 the mill privilege and property formerly belonging to Judge Phillips came into the possession of Mr. Peter C. Brooks, a wealthy merchant of Boston.

Mr. Marland, desirous of enlarging his business, entered into negotiations with Mr. Brooks, which resulted in his leasing the property for a term of twenty years. By the terms of this lease Mr. Brooks was to erect a new brick mill and a large tenement block, and to receive nine per cent. on the entire property.

After eight years the business had been so profitable, and was so well established and extended, that Mr. Marland was prepared to purchase the entire plant —buildings, machinery, land and power. This he did for $22,000. The year after, he built a new mill, larger than the one standing, and at that time esteemed a very large structure.

The business still increased in profitableness as it increased in extent, and in 1834 Mr. Marland took his two eldest sons and Mr. Punchard, his son-in-law, into partnership, they forming a stock company and obtaining from the Legislature an act of incorporation as "The Marland Manufacturing Company." The elder of the two sons, John Marland, receiving a flattering offer, went to New Zealand the next year to purchase wool for a Boston company. On his return, the following year, he and his brother William withdrew their interest in the Marland Company, and started a manufacturing enterprise, in connection with others, at Ballard Vale. Mr. Abraham Marland and Mr. Benjamin H. Punchard remained, and, from this time till the death of Mr. Marland, February 20, 1849, were practically the owners of the property. Mr. Punchard followed his father-in-law a little more than a year later, dying April 4, 1850. Up to this time the business had been remarkably remunerative, paying a dividend of twenty-five per cent., year after year, for many successive years. Those manufacturers, as has been mentioned in another place, made a liberal disposition of their large profits, by which disposition their renown and usefulness are perpetuated, and will continue to be perpetuated through all coming generations.

After the decease of Messrs. Marland and Punchard the mills were operated by the heirs of these gentlemen and the other stockholders who had from time to time obtained an interest in the property. Mr. Nathan Frye was chosen president and manager of the company, and continued such for nearly thirty years. Mr. Frye was highly esteemed by his fellow-citizens and business associates for his courtesy, integrity and public spirit. For a time under his management the mills prospered, but, in a season of financial embarrassment, they suffered losses, were financially crippled, and finally the company was obliged to sell out and wind up its affairs.

Hon. Moses T. Stevens, of North Andover, became the purchaser of the property in 1879. Mr. Stevens, the son of one of the earliest manufacturers of the undivided town, himself an experienced, extensive and successful manufacturer of woolen goods, has repaired and refurnished the old mills, built new ones and furnished them with the best styles of machinery, repaired the old tenement-houses and erected others, thus putting the whole property into first-class condition. For the last eight years these mills have been in successful operation, the class of help employed has been improved, and the whole aspect of Marland Village has been greatly changed for the better.

MR. JOHN SMITH was born in Brechin, Forfarshire, Scotland, May 19, 1796, an ancient city, noted not so much on account of the number of its inhabitants, or the extent of its commercial or manufacturing enterprises as for its antiquity, and that it has been a cathedral town since 1150, when it was created an Episcopal See by David I. then King of Scotland. John's father, whose name was Peter, was a carpenter by occupation. John was the second of five children. His father died in 1809, when he was a little over thirteen years old, leaving to his mother the support of two children younger than himself. The circumstances of his father were such that, from the age of nine years, John had been placed at work on a farm in the neighborhood of his home during the summer to assist in the support of the family, while during the winter he was permitted to remain at home and attend school. On the death of his father he was apprenticed to learn the trade of a millwright, which at that time included work on both wood and iron. It embraced not only the construction of water-wheels, with their frame-work and appurtenances, but, in addition, the machines to be used in the various departments of manufacturing. This profitable apprenticeship he served faithfully, and thus qualified himself to become a master millwright.

When thus fitted for active life he went to Glasgow seeking employment. As he was moneyless, he performed the journey of a hundred miles on foot. He remained in the city for a year and a half, in which time he familiarized himself to a certain extent with the construction and operation of machinery as it was conducted in this great centre of the textile industries of Scotland. But desirable situations in his business were not easily obtained. The supply of competent young men was greater than the demand. The young mechanics of the city became infected with a desire to emigrate to America, where it was represented that wider fields and better opportunities

awaited capable and enterprising workmen. Mr. Smith, being of a sanguine temperament, and of a courageous spirit, shared in this adventurous desire.

So it came to pass that he left Greenock, August 24, 1816, for America, and landed in Halifax after a tedious voyage of sixty days, in which the vessel narrowly escaped being wrecked. He obtained work here for a short time as house carpenter. After a little observation, he became persuaded that in Halifax his dreams of prosperity in a new country could never be realized, and hence, after a stay of less than two months, he sailed for Boston, where he landed after a voyage of six days. There he learned that there was a cotton factory in Watertown, to which he made his way, seeking employment. The mill he sought he found two miles beyond, in Waltham. Mr. Paul Moody, the master machinist of this mill, which was that of the Boston Manufacturing Company, was glad to see the young Scotchman fresh from the works of Glasgow, those headquarters of manufacturiug industries.

It was a fortunate circumstance for Mr. Smith that Mr. Moody was at that time anxious to learn about the latest improvements in cotton machinery abroad, and the methods adopted for combining the spinuing of the yarn and the weaving of the cloth. It so happened that Mr. Smith, in his short stop in Glasgow, had been employed in a factory that united all the processes of the manufacture, from picking the cotton to finishing the cloth—a practice than unknown in this country. Mr. Moody, eager to obtain the information the young workman was able to impart, took him through his factory, showing him all his machinery and its working, at the same time revealing his hindrances and desires. The result was that Mr. Smith entered at once into the service of the company, a very auspicious beginning for a stranger in a strange land, with no introduction but his honest face and the knowledge he carried in his brai n.

Mr. Smith continued in the service of this company for a little over two years and six months, when he started on a trip to the South, partly to see the country, but more especially to find a suitable place to locate himself in business. He was not satisfied to be an employé, however advantageous the situation might be. He was ambitious to start up a business on his own account, and take the risks and profits. By easy stages, stopping here and there, for a longer or shorter time, he reached Augusta, Ga., where he found a friend and fellow-workman at Waltham established as a machinist. Here he remained till July of the next year. After a careful observation of the condition of things at the South, its climate, its peculiar institutions, its social relations, its business methods, he become more and more disinclined to make his home in that section of the country. Having satisfied himself, he returned to Waltham. Here he learned that four of his fellow-workmen in Waltham had established themselves in Medway as manufacturers of cotton machinery. He entered into employment with them, where he continued for some twenty months, continually on the lookout for some opening for starting up a business of his own.

At length the time and opportunity came. In the spring of 1822 he and two of his fellow-workmen, Joseph Faulkner and Warren Richardson, entered into a partnership, under the name of "John Smith and Company," for the manufacture of machinery. After a careful examination of places for a location, extending as far as Paterson, N. J., and Philadelphia, Pa., they finally fixed upon Plymouth, Mass., induced thereto partly by the promise of a profitable contract for the building of the machinery of a cotton-mill, situated about three miles from the village of Plymouth. Their stay here, however, was short,—some two and a half years.

Messrs Faulkner and Richardson were natives of Andover. This, together with the fact that Andover, Mass., was better located with r egard to the factories from which they might look for work, and the further fact that they might obtain from the Shawshin River abundant power for all their need, decided them to remove their enterprise to Andover. They purchased the mill privilege in Frye Village, now occupied by the lower mills of the Smith & Dove Manufacturing Company, and at once built a machine-shop, which is the building now standing on the east side of the Shawshin. The shop was seventy-two feet long by thirty-seven feet wide, and three stories above the basement. Business flowed in to the company from the start. Profitable contracts came from Newmarket, Lowell and other parts of New Hampshire and Eastern Massachusetts. The amount of business developed during the first five years may be estimated from the fact that, at the end of that period, they employed thirty men. They started in Andover in 1824. Five years later Mr. Richardson died. Two years after the death of Mr. Richardson, Mr. Faulkner died, leaving Mr. Smith the sole survivor of the firm. He purchased the interests of his deceased partners, and assumed the responsibility of the entire business, placing his brother Peter, who had been in the employ of the company for nine years, in charge as superintendent.

Previous to this, in the summer of 1829, Mr. John Smith had commissioned his brother Peter to go to Scotland (his expenses being paid, and his family supported in the mean time) to bring over Miss Agnes Ferguson, of Glasgow, his betrothed. This young lady Mr. Smith had known and tenderly regarded when, twelve years before, he lived in Glasgow, but his circumstances then forbade any mention of marriage. In 1828, on a visit to Scotland, he had renewed the acquaintance, which, before many months, had resulted in a betrothal. Mr. Peter Smith successfully executed his important commission, and the young lady was safely landed in Boston on the

1st day of August, 1829, and soon after the marriage took place. This lady died December 30, 1851.

On March 5, 1860, Mr. Smith married Miss Sarah Gleason, who survives him.

In 1835 Mr. John Smith joined his brother Peter and Mr. Dove in the new undertaking of flax-spinning, and after that he gradually drew out of the machine-making business till it was wholly given up. It had been very lucrative, and Mr. Smith had acquired a handsome property, which was used to good advantage in carrying on the flax-spinning enterprise.

As to the personal characteristics of Mr. Smith, no better, more discriminating, more just delineation can be given than that we have from the pen of Rev. William B. Brown, D.D., of Orange, N. J., who for some years was Mr. Smith's pastor and for thirty years on terms of friendly intimacy with him. Mr. Brown writes: "Mr. Smith's friends have never claimed for him that he was, in the ordinary sense, an educated man; yet, if education consists in thorough mental discipline, as it does largely, then he was highly educated. But few men have attained to his power of concentrating their thoughts upon a given subject.

"Nor has John Smith been known as a public speaker; yet in the many little addresses he has made, especially on social occasions, he has spoken with a directness, an earnestness and power that has thrilled many a heart. He always strikes the central thought in his first sentence. His remarks are brief, but pointed and to the purpose. I remember one of his speeches that was characterized as 'common sense on fire.'

"Nor has Mr. Smith ever aspired to civil office, yet, by his life and deeds, he has done more to make public sentiment and to mould society than have most men who hold high political stations and live in the public gaze.

"One of the leading characteristics of Mr. Smith was his *unfaltering integrity*. Rectitude was a part of his nature—duty to God and man his supreme law. He could not take a mean advantage or do a mean thing. He could never look upon injustice or any kind of evil-doing with toleration. His love of rectitude made him, in early life and ever after, a reformer. He denounced slavery and took part with the fleeing fugitive when it cost something so to do. From the first he took strong and advanced ground on the temperance question, and made studied and effective speeches in favor of total abstinence that would be profitable reading at this day. But the point I make is, that Mr Smith's position as a reformer followed as naturally from his integrity of character as does effect from cause. Being what he was, he could not do otherwise than as he did.

"Considered as a business man, in which capacity Mr Smith's success was most remarkable, I should say that unusual [illegible]y and other qualities to match were at the foundation. He had a genius for business. He could see openings before others had dreamed of them. While young, his resources of brain were equal to any emergency. Whatever he touched turned to gold. This was not the result of chance or good fortune, but of quick business sagacity. He knew how to take the tide at its flood, while others waited till the tide began to ebb. The co-operating qualities of his character were courage, energy, perseverance and common sense. With sagacity to perceive and common sense to plan, he had courage to enter the lists, and patience and perseverance, accompanied by rich resources, to secure victory.

"Mr. Smith was a conscientious and benevolent man, as his many and large contributions to educational and other beneficent objects abundantly witness. He gave on principle, not from impulse. Constituted as he was by nature and beginning life as he did, men are not likely to be generous, and Mr. Smith might not have been, save for his religious principles. He regarded himself as the Lord's steward, and that, having received much, of him would much be required. Thus he brought religion into his business, and made business a part of his religion. His giving was under the lead of conscience, not of fancy, nor the result of importunity, not at all out of regard for popularity or posthumous fame. He was modest by nature and shrank from vulgar notoriety. His largest gifts were resolved upon in the quiet of his own chamber, alone with his God.

"Socially, Mr. Smith was always open, free and genial. He was subject to dyspepsia, and at times to depression from the effects of over-work. But this was sickness and foreign from his nature. When well he was uniformly cheerful and companionable. When engrossed in business he was taciturn, but when the hours of business had passed he was ready for a lively chat and a cordial greeting.

"In religion, Mr. Smith was worthy the imitation of business Christians. He never let his business, however pressing, stand in the way of his religious duties. In his attitude toward God he had the reverence, trust and affection of a little child. What God would have him do, he esteemed a privilege more than a duty to do. His life was for the most part passed in the sunshine of the Heavenly Father's countenance—but when His face was for a time hidden by the dark clouds of bereavement or despondency, his faith did not fail him—he had songs in the night."

The last ten years of his life were years of declining strength, and withdrawal from the cares of the world and the society of his fellow-men. He greatly missed his old associates in business, but, for the most part, was cheerful and happy, calmly awaiting the summons that should call him to his Father's house. That summons came February 25, 1886. He was aged eighty-nine years, nine months and six days.

A most charming, *the* most charming, feature in the character of Mr. Smith, not referred to by Mr. Brown,



Peter Smith



John Smith

which ought not to be overlooked, was seen in his filial, almost religious, devotion to his mother. As a lad, his slender earnings were sacredly hoarded, and placed in the hands of his mother for the family support. When grown to manhood and in a foreign land, his thoughts continually went back to the humble home in Brechin, where the loving mother toiled at spinning, and loving epistles frequently followed these thoughts to cheer the lonely woman. And when the fruits of his industry began to come in, a liberal share of these fruits found their way, month by month, across the ocean to cheer that mother's heart in her desolate home. No sooner had he made for himself a home in the New World than he sent for the beloved mother, and from the day of her arrival to the day of her departure hence, gave to her the best the house afforded, thus making her last days as peaceful and comfortable as her early days had been troublesome and pinching. Perchance, however, he may have been, instinctively, but paying a debt of nature; since to her mainly, by heredity, he was doubtless indebted for the energy, courage and faith which carried him on to wealth and eminence.[1]

Mr. Peter Smith was born in Brechin, Forfarshire, Scotland, September 21, 1802. He was the fourth of five children, and bore the name of his father, who was a carpenter by trade. When eight years of age his father died, which left the mother in charge of the children, and in straitened circumstances. The oldest son was her only assistance in providing for the support of the family. Her means of earning a livelihood was the spinning-wheel, which she plied with great diligence. The year after the death of his father the lad went to work for a farmer during the harvest season, and from this time onward till his fifteenth year was engaged for brief periods in different employments as he could obtain them, courageously striving to support himself and assist his mother in her arduous task. He passed through not a few trying circumstances and scenes which tested his powers of endurance and perseverance. When fourteen years of age, he took it into his head to go to Glasgow, where his brother James worked, in pursuit of employment. This city was more than one hundred miles from Brechin. Over this distance, on foot and alone, drenched by rain and benumbed by snow, with money sufficient only for one night's entertainment at a public-house, he boldly plodded his way to his destination. Too proud to beg for food, and too destitute to purchase it, he depended upon the pity and kindness of the good people whose doors necessity compelled him to enter for shelter and nourishment. In reviewing this episode in his life, he writes: "It was only by perseverance and the kind providence of my Heavenly Father that I ever got there."

He spent a year in work as a weaver in Glasgow, where he attended an evening school for a time, made the acquaintance of a "good Christian man," who, possessing a fine library, encouraged him in reading profitable books. This "good Christian" took a very lively interest in the plucky boy, and suggested to his brother James that weaving was not the employment for which he was best adapted. This suggestion was heeded and led to his attaining, through the influence of a maternal uncle, a situation as apprentice to a wheelwright in Kerrimuir. His return to Brechin was on foot, as had been his departure, but not without money sufficient for food and lodging. Having made a short visit to his mother, he proceeded to his destination, and served an apprenticeship of four years to the trade of a wheelwright. The first two of these years were uneventful. During the third his attention was specially called to the subject of personal religion. As a boy, he had been trained by his mother in the Catechism, to forms of worship and to respect and value religion. But at this time, as never before, he was brought to see the importance of personal piety, and to seek acceptance with God through repentance and faith in Jesus Christ. In this spiritual awakening his moral and intellectual faculties received a marked development. The realities of the present life, its responsibilities and possibilities, and the realities of the life to come, as set forth in the Scriptures, took such hold upon his mind and heart as not only to create him anew in the purposes and desires he cherished, but also served to awaken and enlarge his mental powers. He says of himself at this time, "The Lord led me in a wonderful way to seek salvation and to make a personal application of the truth of His Word." The wheelwright's apprentice, with no schooling, sprang at once into the office of teacher. Overcoming his natural diffidence and the defects of his education, he took part in the social and prayer-meetings of the place, was a teacher in the Sabbath-school, and, on invitation, addressed large audiences in neighboring places with acceptance and effect.

Having faithfully served his apprenticeship, on coming to the age of twenty years he began to look about for the place of his life's work. From early youth his cherished desire had been to make his home in America. His brother John had already established himself here. With him he communicated, making known his wishes. This resulted in his receiving an invitation from his brother to come to him. He embarked at Liverpool for this country August 1, 1822, without a penny in his pocket. He landed in Boston, where he was to meet his brother, on September 3d of the same year, with one cent in his pocket, which he had received as a gift from one of the passengers. His brother was not in the city to receive him. The solitary cent was spent for a drink of ginger beer, and then the penniless young man went out into the great city to await his fate. He was directed to a hotel kept by Scotch people,

[1] The engraving of Mr. John Smith was made from a photograph taken when he was eighty-nine years and eight months old, and in comparatively good health, and only about four months before he died.

where he received a cordial welcome. His own words best describe this reception. It was at the Burns Tavern, kept by a Mr. Nicholson and wife. "I suppose that all the Scotchmen that were then about Boston called to see me and get the news from Scotland. I was feasted as if I were some great character. In the midst of it all I began to think there was too much whiskey used. I often look back with thankfulness to God that I was preserved from the temptation of drink, which was freely offered to me. I was then in my twentieth year, and, with the excitement of landing on a foreign shore, I was in a condition to become an easy prey to the temptation of strong drink; but, thanks be to God, I was saved!" In a short time his brother John came on, and a most hearty greeting was exchanged between the brothers.

Mr. John Smith was established in business at Plymouth, and thither they proceeded. Peter entered the employment of the company of which his brother was the head at eight dollars a month, "board and washing included." He had not been here many months before he found himself in the midst of a religious awakening, similar to that in which he had received such marked benefit while an apprentice. His spiritual nature had become somewhat sluggish and cold, but soon felt the old flame rekindled, and his whole being revived and replenished by the love of God. Again he resumed the duties of a Sabbath-school instructor and became a participant in social prayer-meetings. His labors in these regards were well received and productive of good. With such felicity, earnestness and success did he address assemblies of people, that he was urged by the good Christians of the place to study for the ministry and devote his life to preaching the Gospel. His brother John, though not at that time a professing Christian, offered to furnish him with the money necessary to obtain a collegiate and ministerial education. This was a matter for the most serious consideration. An entire change in the plan and labor of life was proposed. After long, painful, prayerful deliberation he came to the conclusion that the ministry was not the calling for which he was best fitted. He never regretted his decision on this momentous question.

August 24, 1824, at the age of twenty-two, he married Miss Rebecca Bartlett, of Plymouth, with whom he lived for nine years in the enjoyment of the truest conjugal trust and affection, when she was taken from him by death, leaving five children, the youngest of whom was but a day old.

In 1825 the firm of "John Smith & Co., machinists," removed to Andover, where better facilities were offered for conducting their business. Mr. Peter Smith, being in the employment of this company, came with them to Andover. Here he was soon recognized as an earnest Christian man, active and zealous in every good word and work. He united with the South Church, afterwards with the West Church. With regard to his Christian work at this time, he says, "I was often called upon to take part in the prayer-meetings. I was very timid at first, but, as I became more acquainted with the brethren and sisters of the church, I gathered more courage, and felt that they would overlook any imperfections in my speech, if my daily life was 'such as becometh the Gospel of Christ.'" He was also quite interested and active in reform measures—temperance and anti-slavery. His chief pleasure, aside from that connected with his family, was derived from his religious privileges and activities, and throughout his life of constant engagement in business affairs the Sabbath and the prayer-meeting were ever the source to him of the most serene and satisfying enjoyment.

Two years after the death of his first wife he married Miss Esther H. Ward, June 5, 1835. She still survives him, in a good old age, having been the mother of seven children, four of whom are living. Dea. Peter Smith had twelve children, four of whom died before him. The death of these children was a severe affliction, but his faith in the loving-kindness of his Heavenly Father and the Christian faith and character of these departed dear ones served greatly to assuage his grief.

Soon after the coming of Mr. Dove to Andover, in the employment of John Smith & Co., Mr. Peter Smith and Mr. Dove entered into partnership for the manufacture of chalk lines from cotton. This was to be done with a machine invented by Mr. Dove. Mr. Smith proposed to furnish five hundred dollars to pay for the material, and to support Mr. Dove's family while he should be engaged in constructing the machine; Mr. Smith meanwhile retaining charge of his brother's shop until there should be a good prospect of success in this new enterprise. The profits of both the business and the patent for the machine were to be divided equally. However, before the enterprise had made much headway, Mr. John Smith, having satisfied himself that the business would be a success, made an offer to join the two younger men in his employ, in this new venture. This offer was gladly accepted, being regarded by the younger brother as most timely, as the elder had the means for starting a new enterprise.

When thus constituted, the firm took the name of "Smith, Dove & Company." The name was afterwards changed to "The Smith and Dove Manufacturing Company," and it has continued doing business under this name to the present time, though all the original proprietors have passed away.

At first this company manufactured machine twine from cotton yarn. In 1836 they commenced the manufacture of yarn from flax. It is in this flax manufacture that they have achieved such signal success. The patterns for the flax machinery were brought from the flax-spinning district of Scotland by Mr. Dove, who visited his native country for the purpose of obtaining them. The first invoice of shoe

thread made by this company was carried to Boston by Mr. Peter Smith, in a bundle weighing thirteen pounds, on a stage-coach. The manufacturer found great difficulty in disposing of his goods, and not till he became much discouraged by several unsuccessful attempts was he able to effect a sale.

Dea. Smith, or Dea. Peter, as he was familiarly called, to distinguish him from his brother John, was not confined in his active labors to the exacting business in which he was engaged. He was a director in several banking and railroad corporations; a corporate member of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions; trustee of Phillips Academy and the Theological Seminary; trustee, and for some time president of the board of Abbot Academy; superintendent of the West Parish Sunday-school, and deacon of the church for a long series of years; member of the State Legislature for two years, and deeply interested in all public matters affecting the welfare of the town. When the War of the Rebellion broke out, he was intensely interested on the side of the country, promoting enlistment by speech and liberal contributions, sending his sons into the army, and giving pecuniary assistance to the government by the purchase of its securities. He was a Christian patriot and philanthropist. The unity of the States and the freedom of the slave moved his soul to its depths. In this warm devotion to his adopted country he did not forget the place of his nativity and his fellow-countrymen. He gave liberally to establish free schools in Brechin, and was a most generous supporter and member of the Scots Charitable Society, of Boston.

As a husband and father, son and brother, he was an example worthy of imitation. His especial delight was at his own hearth-stone, with his numerous family around him. His great anxiety for his children ever was that they might become the disciples of Christ, and so spend their lives as to glorify their Creator, that they might enjoy Him forever. In his business relations he was just, fair, honest, diligent and above suspicion. He was generous, kind-hearted, and on principle, a promoter of religious and philanthropic enterprises. He was diligent in business, "fervent in spirit, serving the Lord." He was economical, careful in details and wise in the disbursement of charity. He was modest; reticent as to himself, shunning rather than courting notoriety or conspicuous position.

But Deacon Smith had his limitations and defects. He was human. It may with justice be said, however, that his many and wide-spreading excellencies of life and character would cover a multitude of blemishes, did they exist. "He was a man into the four corners of whose house there had shined, through the years of his pilgrimage, the light of the glory of God." In the dawning light of July 6, 1880, at the age of nearly seventy-eight, with a mind unclouded, with a heart still warm with tenderest love, his ransomed spirit gently, peacefully, sweetly sank to rest on the bosom of his Lord.

Mr. John Dove was born in Brechin, Forfarshire, Scotland, May 5, 1805. In early life his opportunities for education, while limited, were somewhat superior to those enjoyed by his townsmen with whom he was afterwards associated in business. He was a schoolmate and playmate of the celebrated astronomer, Professor Nichol, and the no less celebrated preacher, Dr. Guthrie. He was not, however, distinguished for his studiousness and proficiency in school studies at this early day. He preferred to spend his time in getting up some mechanical contrivance for his own amusement and that of his associates. The bent of his mind was decidedly towards mechanics. On leaving school he followed this natural bent and was apprenticed to a machinist. There he was systematically and carefully trained, according to the custom of that day and country, in all the details of the craft. On leaving the shop of his master he was a thorough workman, qualified to engage in the business on his own account.

But remunerative employment was difficult to obtain in Scotland. He married, and, when twenty-eight years of age, finding it far from an easy task to support a family from the proceeds of his labor, he began seriously to meditate trying his fortune in a foreign land. Australia and America were the two countries then presenting the greatest inducements for emigration. After much inquiry and thought he fixed upon the latter as his future home. Leaving his native country, he landed in New York in 1833. Here he found employment for a year. But this was unsatisfying. At this crisis in his history a slight circumstance—providential, he was accustomed to regard it—intervened to determine his life-work.

The brothers, Peter and John Smith, townsmen of his, had preceded him, and were located in Andover. Peter had been in childhood for a short time a school-mate. He had also been for some months a fellow-workman in the same shop with him. Before leaving his native city, Mr. Dove had received a letter from an aged citizen of the place, introducing him to Mr. John Smith. This letter, written at the request of Mr. Dove's father, and by a friend of the Smith and Dove families, had been put at the bottom of his trunk by the young man, as a thing of little practical use, and was forgotten. There it lay for a year after his arrival in New York. One day, on an overhauling of the trunk, this forgotten letter came to light. The unsettled condition of Mr. Dove led him to use it as a possible means of obtaining suitable employment. The letter, being forwarded to Andover, reached its destination just at the time when Mr. John Smith was preparing to take a business trip to Washington. On his way thither he stopped over in New York to see his correspondent and countryman. In the friendly interview which took place between the natives of Brechin in a foreign

city, they were drawn towards each other, not only by their common nativity, but also by sympathy and mutual respect. It also appeared that Mr. Smith, engaged in the manufacture of machinery, needed a well-trained machinist to oversee his shop, and that, in this regard, Mr. Dove was just the right man for the place. It was soon arranged that he should go on to Andover, make a personal examination of the business, and see if some arrangement might be made between him and the company, by which he could enter their service to their mutual advantage. Finding the condition of things satisfactory, he at once engaged with the Machine Company, and went to work in their shop.

But his fertile mind could not be confined to the routine of his daily labor. His busy thoughts were alert to discover some way by which certain products, made by hand, might more readily be made by machinery. The problem was to devise machinery suitable for the purpose. The result was his invention of a machine for the manufacture of chalk-twine from cotton thread, and also a partnership between himself and Mr. Peter Smith, in which the new machine was to be utilized. But, before this enterprise had gone into operation, Mr. John Smith entered into the partnership, and the plan was changed. Instead of manufacturing cotton twine they resolved on the manufacture of flax thread by machinery.

At that time there was no such thread made by machinery in the country. Mr. Dove was sent to Scotland to obtain drawings for the requisite machinery, which he speedily secured. His labor in this direction was made the more easy from the fact that his father was at that time proprietor of flax-spinning mills on the South Esk River, about four miles south of Brechin.

The position of Mr. Dove in this new company was that of superintendent of machinery. In this employment he found much pleasure. The construction and management of machinery, and the overcoming of difficulties in its working, gave his mind its appropriate exercise and consequent satisfaction. It was a common remark of his: "I never enjoy myself better than when my mind is taxed to overcome some mechanical difficulty."

Aside from his aptness for mechanics and his genius for mechanical invention, Mr. Dove had a decided taste for scientific studies in other directions. In his hours of recreation he turned to them with delight. Had his chief attention been given to the natural sciences instead of the application of mechanics, he would doubtless have distinguished himself as a scientist in the special direction to which he would have given his energies and his life.

He was something more than a skillful machinist and successful business man. He had a loving heart, full of sympathy for the ignorant and poor. He gave freely to the needy and to objects of charity. He was especially interested in, and generous towards, institutions of learning. He found pleasure in assisting promising but poor young men to obtain a liberal education. In co-operation with his associates in business, he contributed liberally to found a free high school in his native city. In like manner, with his associates, he contributed largely to the Theological Seminary. To the Memorial Hall building and Library he gave seven thousand dollars. He was a warm and liberal friend of temperance and the slave. While thus prosperous and benevolent, he was never assuming, self-conceited, or exacting in his treatment of the less successful. While firm in his convictions and independent in his conduct, he was modest in his demeanor towards others not in agreement with himself. In a word, he was a practical no less than a professed Christian. He united with the church at the West Parish July 4, 1841, and ever after honored his profession. His piety was of the reticent, unostentatious sort, not given to much talk, but operative in his daily life. It was influential in his treatment of his workmen, in his bearing towards the poor and ignorant, in his business transactions, in his daily intercourse with his fellow-citizens, in his strict and what some would call Puritanical observance of the Sabbath, (he reading upon that day scarcely any book but the Bible), in his regular and reverent attention to family worship, in a general interest in the promotion of religion at home and abroad, and in the cultivation of a meek and quiet spirit, that would be at peace with all men. His example as a business man of sound judgment, unimpeachable honesty, unquestioned honor, always true and reliable, gentle, cordial, cheerful and devout, is still felt as a blessing by his fellow-citizens. He died at his home in Andover, Nov. 20, 1876.

Smith & Dove Manufacturing Company.—In the fall of 1834, Mr. John Dove and Mr. Peter Smith, both then in the employ of Mr. John Smith in his machine shop, the latter as superintendent, entered into an agreement to form a partnership for the manufacture of chalk-twine from cotton, Mr. Dove having invented a machine for that purpose. The machine of Mr. Dove was to be patented. Before this was accomplished, and while the new partners were hesitating about the best way of procedure, in 1835, they were joined by Mr. John Smith bringing in capital to their aid. But before actually starting operations the plan was modified, and it was determined to set up the manufacture of flax thread. This led to the sending of Mr. Dove to Scotland to obtain drawings of flax-spinning machinery. These he, with some difficulty, obtained, and returned after a few months' absence, when the proper machinery was made in the machine shop of Mr. John Smith. In the mean time Mr. Smith erected a building of brick, on the west side of the Shawshin River, in Frye Village, opposite his machine shop, for the purpose of carrying on the business, which went into operation in 1835. The goods manufactured were flax yarns for carpet weav-



John Doue

ers, sail twines, shoe thread and other goods of a like character. At that time there was no flax-spinning machinery in operation in the country. All the goods of the class they made that were in the market were imported.

There had been, as early as 1820, an enterprise of a similar character started in Patterson, N. Y., but after a short existence it failed. The Messrs. Smith & Dove may be said to have been the first successful manufacturers of flax thread by machinery and power in the country. They had no competitors at the start, nor for some time after, in America.

Their competitors were foreign manufacturers, chiefly the mills of Great Britain. At first they met with considerable difficulty in disposing of their product, there being a prejudice in favor of the foreign article on the part of both merchant and consumer. This had to be overcome by the manufacture of an equally good or better class of goods, at a cheaper rate if possible. These enterprising manufacturers undertook this difficult task. That they succeeded is evident from the fact that within a few years they secured a market for all the goods they could make, and a reputation for the quality of their goods that placed them on an equal footing in the market with the best foreign made of the same grade. In less than eight years from the start the demand for their threads exceeded their ability for manufacturing. This led to the purchase, on the 1st of December, 1843, of the mill privilege and buildings of the woolen-mills at Abbot Village.

These mills had been established in 1814 by the brothers Abel and Paschal Abbot. They at first built a wooden mill on the west side of the Shawshin, afterwards, as their business increased, adding other buildings. In these mills were manufactured flannel and cassimeres, and cotton and woolen yarns were spun for sale, and for the accommodation of farmers, who came from a considerable distance with their wool to have it spun for domestic uses. This enterprise was pecuniarily unsuccessful, and, in the financial crisis of 1837, the Abbots were obliged to succumb.

Besides the business of the brothers Abbot in this village there was, on the east side of the river, a stone mill, in which the manufacture of flannels was commenced in 1824 and continued for some years by James Howarth's sons, under the firm-name of "John Howarth & Company." This company also failed in the financial crisis of 1837. The property of this company fell into the hands of Mr. Henry H. Stevens, of North Andover, and others, who carried on the woolen manufacture till 1843, when they also sold out their interest to Smith, Dove & Company.

The mills on both sides of the river were repaired and furnished with flax-spinning machinery, thus very essentially enlarging the producing capacity of the company. Still the demand for their goods kept pace with the production, and a lucrative business was carried on for a series of years—John Smith having the general management of the mercantile and financial department, Peter Smith the superintendence of the mills and of the operatives, and Mr. Dove having charge of the machinery, looking not only to its running, but also to any improvement that would increase its efficiency.

In 1864 the firm underwent some modifications. A joint stock company was organized. The sons of the original proprietors—Joseph W., son of John Smith, James B., son of Peter Smith, George W. W., son of John Dove—and George H. Torr were taken into the company. From that time to this the business has been successfully prosecuted, necessitating the erection of new buildings, and in all directions an enlargement of their capacity for the production of goods.

Other mills producing the same class of goods have sprung up in the country, so that, of late years, the competition has been more sharp, thus demanding more close attention to all the minor details of the business and reducing to a degree its profits. It is still a profitable business as at present managed.

The original promoters and proprietors have all passed away, Mr. Dove dying first in 1876, Mr. Peter Smith in 1880 and Mr. John Smith in 1886.

The property is now owned and operated by the heirs of the above-named original proprietors. Joseph W. Smith is president of the company; James B. Smith, George W. W. Dove and George H. Torr are directors, and the latter is secretary, treasurer and general manager. Mr. Torr came into the employment of the firm in 1858, taking charge of its books, leaving for this position a situation he held with the Cocheco Manufacturing Company, at Dover, N. H. On the resignation by Mr. Peter Smith of his position as treasurer and agent in 1876, Mr. Torr was chosen to fill his place, having, by eighteen years' service in the employment of the company, merited and secured their confidence in him as a man of the strictest integrity, of sagacity, of untiring industry and of good business ability. The business of the company under its present management is apparently prosperous. The help employed is of the best character. A strike or lock-out has never been known in its history. A large number of the employés are from Scotland, and make permanent and valuable citizens.

The original firm was rarely constituted. They were, in the first place, all of them, men who had been trained in the school of poverty—who knew what it was to struggle for their daily bread—men who had the daring to breast difficulties, dangers and fearful hardships—men whom no obstacles or failures could cast down or greatly discourage. Secondly, they were all men of great energy and native capacity for business. Though possessing but a meagre education from the schools, they had been taught in the weaver's room, in the wheelwright's shop, in their contacts with men, lessons in endurance, persistent

effort and sagacious conduct, which gave them a mental training and practical knowledge well calculated to fit them for their after-career. They were also men of tried and unimpeachable integrity, altogether trustworthy, and trusting implicitly each other. They were not only natives of the same city, but their general views of life, its moralities and duties, were much the same. They were alike religious, and acknowledged their obligation to serve God with their substance as with their speech. So harmonious were they in their opinions, judgments and sentiments as to business affairs, moral duties and religious obligations, that there never was any serious disagreement between them on any matter, and never an angry or harsh word passed from one to another during their long connection.

Their diversities of judgment but served to increase the sum total of their combined practical wisdom. While diverse in temper, they were united in conduct. So in agreement were they as to contribute jointly in their large donations to beneficent objects—such as Brechin Hall, the free schools in the city of Brechin and the Memorial Hall.

And further, each was especially adapted to fill that department of the work in which he engaged. Mr. John Smith was by nature a skillful financier, a far-seeing and sagacious manager of monetary affairs. Mr. Peter Smith had a talent for the management of men and the minute regulation of the internal affairs of a large industrial establishment. Mr. Dove had a genius for mechanics. To work amongst machinery, search out its defects, make improvements, invent new methods and combinations, and thus get the most possible out of a given plant, was his great delight. They were a cord of triple strands which, thus bound together, made a cable of rare strength. Such a combination is seldom seen, and, when seen, commands our admiration, and is sure of success.

Ballard Vale Manufacturing Company.—When the Ballard Vale Manufacturing Company was incorporated, in 1836, the village contained but a few scattered and cheap houses. Mr. John Marland was the enterprising manager and treasurer of the company. Some Boston gentlemen of wealth and a few citizens of Andover were associated with the Marland Brothers in this enterprise. The first business engaged in was the manufacture of flannels. This was profitable. But Mr. John Marland was not satisfied with this measure of prosperity. His ambition craved a larger business and a variety of production. He experimented a little in the manufacture of silk, and set the farmers to work in planting mulberry trees. He aimed not only to take the lead in the country in the manufacture of the finest flannels, but also in that of the choicest woolen fabrics of all kinds.

In 1843 he started the manufacture of delaines and stuff goods, and, for this purpose, imported from England the latest style of machinery adapted to it. His activity extended beyond the Vale. In other parts of the country he superintended the erection of delaine mills, taking an interest in them. His ambition and enterprise went beyond the manufacture of textile fabrics to that of machinery. For this latter purpose he erected a large stone building at the Vale, in which he purposed to carry on the manufacture, not only of factory machinery, but that of locomotives and all other products of a like nature.

These extended and varied operations were beyond the financial ability of the company, and beyond the business ability of Mr. Marland as well. The company failed, the stockholders lost heavily and Mr. Marland's career as a manufacturer closed.

Mr. Marland was a man of boundless ambition, of large projects, of a sanguine temperament, of supreme confidence in himself, daring, but indiscreet. His attempts largely exceeded his means. He had the genius of an inventor. Could his ability as a manufacturer, his knowledge of the special business in which he at first engaged and his indomitable energy have been under the control of a cool head, steadied by practical wisdom, his success must have been phenomenal. Soon after his failure he went to England seeking to retrieve his fortunes, returning, however, the next year. Again, in 1858, he went to England, returning in 1861. But he was unable to secure the confidence of moneyed men so as to start up another business. He settled down in a modest, quiet but comfortable home in Andover for some years. But his restless mind sought occupation. He obtained an island on the coast of Maine upon which he engaged in farming. Here he lived two years industriously cultivating the soil. This labor was too arduous for him. He contracted a disease of the heart, and died April 16, 1865, aged sixty-two years and four months.

The flannel-mill, after the failure of the company, came into the hands of its treasurer, Mr. J. Putnam Bradlee, of Boston, who was a creditor of the company to a considerable amount. When he purchased the property he knew nothing about the manufacture of flannel, but at once applied himself to acquire the requisite knowledge. Concentrating his indomitable energy and masterly business tact upon the work, he was soon able to pay up the stockholders, whose stock he had purchased, from the profits of the mills. The flannels here manufactured have acquired a reputation for beauty and quality, in this and in foreign countries, second to that of no other establishment of the kind in the world. The business in the hands of Mr. Bradlee became very profitable, so that, at his death, he left an estate valued at over a million of dollars, most of which, at the decease of his surviving sister, is to be devoted to charitable purposes.

Mr. Bradlee not only profited himself by the running of these mills; he was also of great service to the village and to a large number of employés and their families. When other enterprises in the place failed, and loss and disconragement came to the people of the

village, when financial stress closed other similar establishments and their operatives were set adrift, his mills were kept in full operation and his employés paid their customary wages. By his death, which occurred in January, 1887, Ballard Vale met with a severe loss. There was sincere mourning among his work-people when the news of his decease was spread through the rooms of the factory.

Mr. Bradlee ever had the interests of his employés at heart, and did everything in his power to better their condition. The result is that Ballard Vale is considered one of the finest manufacturing villages in the State. Evening schools were established, a selected library of some two thousand volumes provided and a public hall and reading-room erected. A course of lectures and concerts was given every winter. All this was free to his employés. The churches in the village—three in number, Methodist, Congregational and Roman Catholic—have all been furnished and repaired at his expense.

Since his death the mills have been operated by his executors and trustees in accordance with the methods he had established.

Craighead and Kintz Manufacturing Company.—The stone building erected for a machine-shop by Mr. Marland was, for a time, used by a Boston corporation, called the Whipple File and Steel Company. This company, in the spirit of the original designer of its work-shop, laid out a large sum of money in buildings, machinery and improvements, and, for a time, carried on an extensive business in the manufacture of steel and files. After a few years, either from misfortune, mismanagement or the lack of business sagacity in its inception and conduct, the losses of the company were so great that they were forced to close up their shops. The extensive buildings remained for a number of years unoccupied—going to decay.

A new company, called the Craighead and Kintz Manufacturing Company, now occupies a portion of the file-shops. This company was started in 1883 for the manufacture of brass and bronze goods of a miscellaneous character. It is now in successful operation, employing some two hundred and eighty hands, much the larger portion of whom are men. Their products amount to about one hundred thousand dollars yearly.

A number of other manufacturing enterprises have been started at Ballard Vale, first and last, within the past thirty years, which have flourished for a brief period and then disappeared. The only business that has been carried on there successfully for a series of years has been that of the fine flannel-mill of Captain Bradlee. This has prospered and held on steadily in times of financial stringency, as well as in times of financial plethora. The whole outcome has been a large fortune, which Captain Bradlee has left mostly for charitable purposes, after the decease of his maiden sister.

The Tyer Rubber Company.—The Tyer Rubber Company was incorporated February, 1876. It manufactures rubber goods in what was formerly a shop of the Boston and Maine Railroad Company. Among the various articles manufactured by this corporation are to be found the diagonal rubber cloth used in the Congress Arctic over-shoe, and a line of goods in use for medical and surgical purposes. The company employs about fifty hands, mostly females.

The founder of this company, as the name indicates, was Mr. Henry George Tyer. Mr. Tyer was born in England in 1812. He came to this country in 1840. His first settlement here was in New Jersey, where he was connected with the rubber business. After remaining there for a time he removed to Andover, first establishing himself at Ballard Vale, but afterwards, in 1856, he took up his residence in the centre of the town, to which locality he removed his business. Since this removal the business has gradually increased till it has reached it present respectable amount.

Mr. Tyer was an inventor in the line of rubber and rubber goods. He discovered the method of producing white rubber, from which all the white rubber articles now manufactured are made. The full value of this discovery he did not at first appreciate, and consequently did not take the necessary steps to derive from it the remuneration to which he was reasonably entitled. The "Compo shoe" is an invention of his,—also the Arctic over-shoe and the diagonal rubber cloth. For these and other inventions he received letters patent, and from some of them derived a fair remuneration.

Mr. Tyer was a business man, confining himself largely to his calling, and, in his business relations and transactions, was strictly upright, straight-forward and reliable. By nature he was reticent, self-contained, and was seldom seen in the public gatherings of the people. He was courteous in manner, and had the bearing of a well-to-do Englishman, intent upon his own affairs. He was a warm adherent of the Episcopal Church, and, as an officer and communicant in Christ Church, did much to advance its interest and maintain its worship. He was a man of great energy and persistency of purpose, who saw things clearly and pursued the right, according to his judgment, with vigor. He was a firm believer in the Christian religion, and a devout worshipper of his God, after the customs of his fathers, and the mother church he so heartily revered and tenderly loved. He died at his residence in Andover on July 10, 1882, and was buried in the cemetery of Christ Church, in "consecrated ground," for which he had a reverential regard too seldom seen among our native inhabitants.

BANKS AND INSURANCE.

The Andover National Bank.—This bank was originally chartered by the State Legislature, in 1826, under the name of the President, Directors and Com-

pany of the Andover Bank. The corporators were Samuel Farrar, Joseph Kittredge, Amos Abbot, Nathaniel Swift, Amos Spaulding, Henry Skinner, Francis Kidder, Hobart Clark and Mark Newman. April 3, 1826, Amos Blanchard was chosen cashier. October 3, 1826, Samuel Farrar was chosen president. The first semi-annual dividend of three and one-half per cent. was declared March 2, 1827. The same rate was continued till April, 1837, with the exception of one in April, 1832, of three per cent. After passing four dividends, they were resumed at the same rate and so continued till 1842. For the five succeeding years the average rate was two and seventy-two hundredths dollars. From this date till 1865 the rate of dividends varied from three and one-fourth dollars to three and eighty-three hundredths dollars.

In 1865 the bank was reorganized under the laws of the United States, and took the name of "The Andover National Bank." Since that it has paid four per cent. semi-annual dividends for five years, five per cent. for eight years, three and one-half per cent. for four years, and a trifle more than three for the remainder of the time till 1887.

The bank, like other national banks in the State, has paid the taxes assessed upon the shares of its stockholders, amounting in 1886 to over $3080.

In 1842 Deacon Blanchard resigned his office of cashier, and was succeeded by Mr. Edward Taylor.

Deacon Taylor resigned in May, 1845, and was succeeded by Francis Cogswell, Esq.

Esquire Cogswell resigned in October, 1856, to take the office of president of the Boston and Maine Railroad, and was succeeded by Moses Foster, Esq., who has held the office continuously to the present time, twenty-one years.

Esquire Farrar held the office of president till October, 1856, thirty years, when he resigned, and John Flint, Esq., was chosen to fill the place.

Esquire Flint held the office till his decease, in June, 1873. Professor John L. Taylor was chosen to succeed Mr. Flint, and held the office till Jan., 1880.

Professor Taylor was succeeded by Deacon Edward Taylor, treasurer of Phillips Academy, who still holds the office.

All the presidents of the bank have been treasurers of Phillips Academy with the exception of Mr. Flint.

The present directors are Edward Taylor, George W. W. Dove, Moses T. Stevens, Joseph A. Smart, Joseph W. Smith, John H. Flint and John F. Kimball.

The bank has always been conservative in its management, running few risks, and hence incurring few losses.

Andover Savings Bank.—The Andover Savings Bank was incorporated in 1834. The first president of the bank was Deacon Amos Abbot, who was chosen February 9, 1830, and resigned January 1, 1845. His successor was Nathan W. Hazen, Esq., chosen January 1, 1845, and resigned January 1, 1852. Mr. Samuel Gray was chosen January 1, 1852, and resigned January 1, 1861. His successor was Mr. Nathaniel Swift, who was chosen January 7, 1861, and resigned in 1878. Mr. John E. Abbot was chosen in 1879, and continued till his death, in 1881. Moses Foster, Esq., was chosen May 16, 1881, and is still in office.

The treasurers of the bank have been Mr. John Flint, chosen February 23, 1835, and resigned October 1, 1870; Mr. John F. Kimball, chosen September 15, 1870, and still continues in office.

The amount of deposits in 1886 was $1,696,587. Profits on hand at that time, $50,123. The guaranteed fund is $55,000.

The bank, as will be seen, is in good financial standing, has uniformly been honestly and judiciously managed, and has paid fair dividends semi-annually to its depositors. By its regulations no one person can place on deposit to his own account more than five thousand dollars.

Merrimac Mutual Fire Insurance Company.—This company was incorporated by the General Court, February, 1828, for the limited term of twenty-eight years, the act of incorporation to take effect when subscribers for insurance should be obtained to the amount of $100,000. This amount was speedily obtained, and in the month of April of the same year the company was organized, choosing for its first president Hobart Clark, Esq. Mr. Clark served till April, 1839, and was succeeded by Samuel Merrill, Esq., who served till the time of his death, in December, 1869, and was succeeded by Nathan W. Hazen, Esq., who served till January, 1875, and was succeeded by Mr. Samuel Gray, who served till November, 1880, and was succeeded by Mr. William S. Jenkins, the present president.

Samuel Phillips, Esq., was the first secretary. He served one year, and was succeeded by Samuel Merrill, Esq., who served till December 19, 1835, and was succeeded by Mr. Samuel Gray, who served till 1885, his successor being Mr. Joseph A. Smart, the present secretary.

This company has had its office in Andover from the first, though doing a large portion of its business in other towns and cities. Its executive officers have always been citizens of this town. Its business has been conducted in a careful and conservative manner, so as to secure the best results for its policy-holders. It avoids specially hazardous risks, and risks on property with an inflated valuation. The result of this policy has been that it has given eminent satisfaction to its membership, has steadily grown in strength and in favor in the community, and to-day stands among the most reliable and prosperous companies of its class in the commonwealth. In the year 1886 it divided sixty per cent. on its five year policies. It now has surplus assets for the payment of losses amounting to nearly $300,000, with outstanding policies amounting to nearly $20,000,—a steady but substantial growth.

ACKNOWLEDGMENT.—As the author of the preceding history was called so suddenly from his almost finished work, the duty of acknowledging assistance in its preparation devolves upon another. Thanks are here given to Professor Edwards A. Park, D.D., for his notices of Professors Pearson and Stuart, of Dr. Samuel Taylor and of the author; to Rev. William E. Park for his notice of Professor Edwards; also to various persons who have furnished material either by manuscript or funeral sermons to facilitate the writing of memorials of their deceased friends; and to others who have given verbal information as it was needed. Thanks are given also to the authors of the following works, to which resourse has been had: Abbot's "History of Andover," Miss Bailey's "Historical Sketches of Andover," Raymond's "Record of Andover in the Rebellion," Moar's "Manual of the South Church," Taylor's "Memoir of Judge Phillips" and Wood's "History of the Andover Theological Seminary."

If there is an omission to render thanks where thanks are due, it is hoped that the peculiar circumstances of the case will furnish a sufficient apology.

C. L. S.

CHAPTER CXXXIX.

NORTH ANDOVER.

BY GEORGE B. LORING.

Ecclesiastical — Civil and Military — Education — Industries — Witchcraft — Associations.

THE town of North Andover occupies that portion of the original town of Andover which lies northerly and easterly of a line running from the Shawshin River, at a point not far from where the Salem turnpike crosses it, in a southerly direction to the town-line of North Reading. By this line the town was divided in 1855, and the name of Andover was bestowed by the Legislature upon that portion of the territory lying southerly and westerly of this line, and formerly known as the South Parish. The North Parish, as it was called from 1709 to the date of the act dividing the town, became North Andover, and it is bounded on the northwest by the Shawshin and Merrimac Rivers, on the northeast by Bradford and Boxford, on the southwest by Andover and on the southeast by Middleton and North Reading. It contains about fifteen thousand four hundred acres, and constitutes a territory full of interest to the geologist and the agriculturist. Its rocky foundation belongs to the oldest periods of the world, "antedating by a vast period the strata of the White Mountains in New Hampshire," and it furnishes a field for most interesting speculation, wide, diverse and comprehensive, reaching to the more manifest geological arrangements of the glacial epoch, whose marks are visible everywhere throughout the town. The result of these earlier and later geological operations is a most fertile and beautiful tract of country, abounding in imposing lens-shaped hills, originally wooded to the summit, deep valleys of fine extent and sweep, all interspersed with lakelets and streams. It is seldom that a more interesting geological formation than this can be found; and nowhere, as the result of nature's handiwork, does a more lovely landscape appear—the view stretching from each one of these rounded elevations miles away to the Wachusett and Monadnock on the northwest, while, to the immediate gaze, the mysterious group stands around as fascinating monuments of an ancient age. The explanation which is given of these unusual hills is most interesting, and carries the mind back to the time when the great seas of ice covered this hemisphere, and left the record of their slow and steady march as a guide to man in his endeavors to unravel the mystery of the earth's formation and his own creation. However formed, they are really hills "in verdure clad," being immense mounds of fertile soil, composed of clay and sand, well watered from the far-off spring-heads which, at their origin, overtop them, and constituting, with the fertile valleys which lie between them, a most attractive and admirable tract of farming land, adapted to grass, and grain, and fruits, and gardens and pasturage. Standing upon the top of one of these "commanding hills," the observer may view a far-off western horizon whose sunsets vie with those for which Italy is famous,—a wide-spread landscape dotted with villages and towns, and interspersed with field and woodland, the long line of the Merrimac a flashing silver stream, the "Great Pond" a crowning gem and the sauntering Cochichewick, which finds its way slowly through reedy meadows before it steps down and at last plunges into the river, which bears its waters to the sea.

It was this territory of which, in 1634, by action of the court, "It is ordered that the land about Cochichewick shall be reserved for an inland plantation, and whosoever will go to inhabit there shall have three years' immunity from all taxes, levies, public charges and services whatever, military discipline only excepted." "John Winthrop, Richard Bellingham and William Coddington, Esquire, are chosen a committee to license any that may think meet to inhabit there, and that it shall be lawful for no person to go thither without their consent or the major part of them."

The land referred to in this order was purchased by Rev. John Woodbridge, of Newbury in 1641, after a long correspondence with Gov. Winthrop, and various demonstrations by the people of Ipswich, Newbury and Rowley, which seem to have resulted in a mere temporary occupation. There were acts of the General Court, but exactly to what they applied is not known. In 1646, however, the purchase and grants were confirmed by the court, and the

town was named Andover, "with reference to some of the planters who came from Andover in Hampshire, England." Upon this order the town began to take shape. The temporary settlers, who were few, gathered themselves together on the banks of the Cochichewick and in the region lying westerly and northwesterly from Wire Hill, a spot which for many years was occupied by the meeting-house and such other buildings as would constitute it the centre of the town. The oldest list of settlers, probably made before 1644, while the affairs of the settlement were somewhat unadjusted, gives the following names as original residents of the plantation of a permanent character:

John Osgood.	Henry Jaques.
Joseph Parker.	John Aslett.
Richard Barker.	Richard Blake.
John Stevens.	William Ballard.
Nicholas Holt.	John Lovejoy.
Benjamin Woodbridge.	Thomas Poor.
John Frye.	George Abbott.
Edmond Faulkner.	John Russ.
Robert Barnard.	Andrew Allen.
Daniel Poor.	Andrew Foster.
Nathan Parker	Thomas Chandler.

These men received the titles of the lands they occupied from the town, the conveyance being made by a vote of the town, and all freeholders being considered proprietors and voters. The lands were divided into small lots,—ten acres for house lots; remote from these, tillage lots; wood-lots elsewhere; swamp and meadow-lands wherever they could be found. A large contiguous farm was unknown, and scattered lots are even now the order of the day.

Meanwhile records of private business transactions have been brought to light by the faithful chroniclers of the town. In 1643 William Hughes, of Ipswich, sells heifers, bulls, kine, calves, a house and a house-lot to Richard Barker, of Cochichewicke. "In 1650 a house and land and three cows in Andover are mortgaged by Job Tyler to John Godfrey, of Newbury." Mr. Simon Bradstreet sells a house lot and dwelling-house and fifty acres of land to Richard Sutton, many of whose descendants have had large interests in Andover, some of whom in this generation are engaged in most important transactions.

The following description of Andover is given by Captain Edward Johnson, of Woburn, in 1654:

"About this time there was a town founded about one or two miles distant from the place where the goodly river of Merrimack receives her waters into her own body, and upon the river Shawshin, which is [illegible] Mr Simon Bradstreet taking up his [illegible] a great means to further the work, it being [illegible] the bow-woman's head, were it not that remote[illegible] towns of trade [illegible] both some inconveni[illegible] to carry their corn far to market [illegible] to cleared and improved [illegible]

In the foundation of a New England town the [illegible] nature of a civil [illegible] not be forgotten especially [illegible] which privileges which belong to it. To many nationalities and peoples a town means nothing more than a cluster of houses surrounded by a wall and fortified, or the realm of a constable, or the seat of a church; but to New England the town was in the beginning, as it is now, the primary organization, sovereign in itself. "The colonists had no sooner formed a settlement and erected their cabins in proximity to each other than they organized themselves into a town—an independent nationality—in which every citizen had a voice and a vote." The first duty of these organizations in the minds of the fathers was the establishment of a church, and the erection of a meeting-house and a school-house received their earliest care and attention. It is remarkable and interesting to see how, in the little municipalities of New England, all the rights of citizenship were cherished, and how silently and unostentatiously all the elements of a free state were fixed and developed. Starting away from the original colonies, they planted themselves in the wilderness, and assumed at once the duty of independent organizations. Their citizens, in town-meeting assembled, had control of all matters relating to their civil and criminal jurisdiction. "In the New England colonies the towns were combined in counties long after their establishment and representation as towns; so that the county here was a collection of towns, rather than the town a sub-division of the county."

This system of town organization is maintained throughout New England to the present day, constituting one of the most interesting features of the civil polity of this section of our country. Says Palfrey in his "History of New England: "With something of the same propriety with which the nation may be said to be a confederacy of republics called States, each New England State may be described as a confederacy of minor republics called towns." Neither in New York with its great landed properties, at first held and occupied by a kind of feudal tenure, and afterwards with its counties; nor in the Western States, where the town survey carries with it no local political authority; nor in the South where the county organization is the one which governs local matters, can be found that form of self-government which gives to the New England towns their individuality and which has enabled them to enroll their names on the brightest pages of American history. How in the olden time they cherished the church and built the meeting-house; how they fostered education and erected the school-house; how they selected their wisest and bravest men for the public councils; how they resolved for freedom in open town-meeting; how they hurled defiance at the oppressor and sprang up, an army of defiant communities, each one feeling its responsibility and ready and anxious to assume it! To study the valor of the early days and learn where the leaders and statesmen were taught their lesson of independence and nationality, it is only necessary to

turn to the recorded resolves of the New England towns.

The motives and manners and customs of those who founded North Andover and its associate towns are interesting and important. They formed a part of that large body of dissenters who, under various names, came to New England and settled the colonies of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay. They came, it is true, to enjoy religious freedom, but they also sought a civil organization, founded on the right of every man to a voice in the government under which he lives. In the charters granted to all the towns by the General Court, it was provided that the grantees were "to procure and maintain an able and orthodox minister amongst them," and to build a meeting-house within three years. This was their first motive. In all their customs they were obliged to exercise the utmost simplicity, and they voluntarily regulated their conduct by those formal rules which in their day constituted the Puritans' guide through the world. As an illustration of their character and manners, in 1651 dancing was forbidden at weddings by the laws of the colony.

In 1660 William Walker was imprisoned a month "for courting a maid without the leave of her parents." In 1675, because "there is manifest pride appearing in our streets," the wearing of "long hair or periwigs," and also "superstitious ribands," used to tie up and decorate the hair, were forbidden under severe penalties. Men, too, were forbidden to "keep Christmas," because it was a "Popish custom." In 1677 an act was passed to prevent "the profaneness" of "turning the back upon the public worship before it is finished and the blessing pronounced." Towns were directed to erect a cage near the meeting-house, and in this all offenders against the sanctity of the Sabbath were confined.

At the same time children were placed in a particular part of the meeting-house by themselves, and tithing-men were chosen, whose duty it was to take care of them. So strict were they in the observance of the Sabbath that John Athertou, a soldier in Colonel Tyng's regiment, was fined by him forty shillings for "wetting a piece of an old hat to put into his shoes," which chafed his feet upon the march; and those who neglected to attend meeting for three months were publicly whipped. Even in Harvard College students were whipped for grave offenses in the chapel in the presence of students and professors, and prayers were had before and after the infliction of the punishment.

The domestic economy of the early colonists was simple and, in many cases, rude; their dwellings were small, coarsely constructed and deficient in all those appointments which are now considered necessary to the health and comfort of the family; their diet was coarse and common. Palfrey tells us that "in the early days of New England wheaten bread was not so uncommon as it afterwards became," but its place was largely supplied by preparations of Indian corn. A mixture of two parts of the meal of this grain with one part of rye has continued until far into the present century to furnish the bread of the great body of the people. In the beginning there was but a sparing consumption of butcher's meat. The multiplication of flocks for their wool and of herds for draught and for milk was an important care, and they generally bore a high money value. Game and fish, to a considerable extent, supplied the want of animal food. Next to these, swine and poultry, fowls—ducks, geese and turkeys—were in common use earlier than other kinds of flesh meat. The New Englander of the present time, who, in whatever rank of life, would be at a loss without his tea and coffee twice, at least, in every day, pities the hardships of his ancestors, who, almost universally, for a century and a half, made their morning and evening repast on boiled Indian meal and milk, or a porridge, or a broth made of peas and beans and flavored by being boiled with salted beef or pork. Beer, however, which was brewed in families, was accounted a necessary of life, and the orchards soon yielded a bountiful supply of cider. Wine and rum found a ready market as soon as they were brought from abroad; and tobacco and legislation had a long conflict, in which the latter at last gave way.

The people who lived in this fashion were generally very poor; the amount of money circulating among them was very small. They built with their own hands, and their trade was mainly barter. The commodities in which they dealt were fish, which was sent into France, Spain and the Straits; pipe-staves, masts, fir-boards, some pitch and tar, pork, beef and horses, which they sent to Virginia, Barbadoes, etc., and took tobacco and sugar for payment, which they often sent to England.

It was on the territory now inclosed in the boundary of North Andover that the farms were cultivated, and the dwellings erected, and the church built, and civil government organized, which constituted the ancient town of Andover; was named the North Parish by act of the Legislature in 1709, and was left in 1855 by the South Parish, which assumed the original name of the town. The locality of the settlement, and early history, remains, however, with its landmarks; and its events, which constitute the annals of Old Andover, are now in the keeping of North Andover.

The first practical business of the settlers of North Andover, as of all other New England towns, was the division of the lands around a central point into house-lots. These lots consisted of about eight acres, and were grouped together, probably for common defense. The isolation of the wilderness had few charms when the life therein was exposed to sudden surprises from Indian and wild beast. Each house-lot carried with it, however, larger tracts called farm lands, for ploughing, grazing, tillage and mowing.

The meeting-house formed, as it were, the centre of the group, near which was located the burying-ground, which often remains with all its significance, long after the house of God and the abodes of the living have disappeared. The locality of this primeval civilization of the town of North Andover is now marked by the old burying-ground, whose gravestones bear a date as early as 1672. On this point the accurate and accomplished author of "Historical Sketches of Andover" says:

"It is difficult to ascertain with certainty anything definite about the first house-lots and their occupant, who seem to have removed from place to place in the town. In 1658 Richard Sutton bought a house which had belonged to Mr. Bradstreet. The deed gives a clew to the residence of some of the other settlers. George Abbot, senior, had a house-lot on the north, and George Abbott, junior, (not the son, but a younger man, George Abbott, 'tailor,' or 'of Rowley,' as the Genealogical Register designates him), had the lot south. Robert Barnard's lot adjoined Mr. Bradstreet's; Mr. Dane lived near; John Stevens seems to have lived near the burying ground to the east. Joseph Parker had his lot 'towards the Mill River, southeast of the meeting-house, bounded by the house-lot of Nicholas Holt and by Mr. Francis Faulkner on ye common.' This was probably as late as 1670. Henry Ingals lived near the meeting-house, 1687. The Osgood and Johnson lots were towards the Cochichewick and north of it. Richard Barker's was contiguous. It is a tradition that John Frye lived south of the Bradstreet House and the Peases near the Shawsheen. Thus we learn that the first settlers, whose estates lay now in the South and West Parishes of Andover, lived in the beginning in the north part of the town."

For many years there was a strong and persistent determination to retain the early system of land-holding, for the convenience and security it afforded. As late as 1660 the town forbade all citizens "to go out of the village to live," by the following order:

"At a generall town meeting March, 1660, the Towne taking into consideration the great damage that may come to the Towne by persons living remote from the Towne upon such lands as were given them for ploughing or planting and soe, by their hoggs & cattle, destroy the meadows adjoyning there-unto, have therefore ordered and doe hereby order that whosoever, inhabitant or other shall, build any dwelling-house in any part of the towne but upon such house-lote or other place granted for that end without express leave from the town shall forfeit twenty shillings a month for the time he shall soe live in any such p'hibited place, p'vided it is not intended to restrain any p'son from building any sheds for himself or cattle that shall be necessary for the ploughing of his ground or hoeing of his corne, but to restrayne only from their constant abode there, the towne having given house-lotts to build on to all such as they regard as inhabitants of the towne."

The houses erected in the village were not distinguished for architectural beauty or for fine and costly furnishing. There was but little attractive furniture, and, with one or two exceptions, no plate or porcelain, no drapery, no fine linen. The domestic utensil was as simple as the dwelling itself. Pewter dishes and wooden platters constituted a large part of the table furniture. Around the wide fire-place, capable of taking an eight-foot stick for a back-log, with a chimney corner into which the younger members of the family could gather and survey the stars from the chimney-top, sat the solemn fathers and mothers, warmed by the roaring blaze in front and protected from the cold of the open room by the high-backed settle, screening and comfort in mind and body on the rough outside of the scene. In the cold night air perhaps the ear was startled by the wild cries of the tenants of the forest and by the creaking of the great branches tossed by the wintry blast; but the home was warmed by contrast; the dimly-lighted room was solemn with its shadows, and the faculties of the self-reliant family were strengthened by every circumstance around them. In winter's cold and summer's heat they had wild and untamed nature about them with all its ennobling influences; and these sons of a primitive civilization were filled with great courage and endurance by their life in the wilderness.

Of all the houses erected in that early day perhaps only one or two remain. The mansion built in or about 1667 by the Hon. Simon Bradstreet stands near the site of the first meeting-house, is hard by the old burying-ground, and undoubtedly formed a part of the cluster of houses which constituted the village which is now North Andover. Its history is most interesting. Here Anne Bradstreet found her home after the original house on this spot had been destroyed by fire; here she wrote her verse which has given her an immortal name in American literature; here lived Simon Bradstreet, the wise and good Governor during the most active years of his life; here lived Dudley Bradstreet, the honest magistrate, who resisted the witchcraft delusion and was obliged to flee before the wrath of a deluded people; here the murderous savage made his attack, to be disarmed by the memory of Christian acts of kindness bestowed upon the tribe by the same humane ruler; here resided for half a century the Rev. Wm. Symmes, the faithful and devoted pastor of the first church in Andover; here lived for a short season his pious and devoted young successor, the Rev. Bailey Loring. And entering upon the scene as the prince of classical teachers, and the autocrat of discipline, then appeared Mr. Simeon Putnam, to cast over the ancient dwelling an air of culture and careful scholarship which can never be forgotten by those who were subjected to its stimulating influences. And in more recent days it has been occupied by Mr. Otis Bailey, whose daughter, Sarah L. Bailey, has given to the public a most delightful and graphic history of the town—a model local sketch. This house still stands and is likely to stand a century longer, unless its huge and solid oaken timbers are violently destroyed, while everything about it decays and changes. Its contemporaries are all gone. But there have sprung up in the region about it many more modern companions, around which gather some of the noble incidents in the town's history. The Phillips mansion stands opposite, built in 1752 in the most approved style of that day, of which the Collins house, the Pickman house and the Cabot house in Salem are well-known and historic examples. It was built by the Hon. Samuel Phillips, distinguished in the Revolutionary period, Representative and Senator; was afterwards the residence of his son, the Hon. Samuel Phillips, Jr., who influenced his father to aid in founding

Phillips Academy; and at his death was inherited by his son, Col. John Phillips, who died at the age of forty-four and left a widow with thirteen children, who maintained the honor and dignity of the family and passed the venerable name on to the distinguished members of the present generation. Near by stands the Kittredge mansion, erected in 1784 by Dr. Thomas Kittredge, one of the ablest surgeons of the Revolutionary army, a public-spirited citizen, a capable and useful public officer—the ancestor of a line of surgeons and physicians who have done most important service in the community. In a secluded and shaded spot on the land north of Cochichewick Brook stands the old Osgood house, similar in structure to the Bradstreet house, and contemporaneous with it. The house of Col. John Osgood, the ancestor of many illustrious persons of that name, nearer the brook and on the border of the meadow, is the birth-place of Hon. Samuel Osgood, of Revolutionary and Constitutional fame,—a fine specimen of the architecture of that period. On an elevation to the northward of this house is the stately mansion built by Isaac Osgood, Esq., about 1798, for years the abode of great refinement and hospitality. On the same road, and on the old Johnson lot, "north of Cochichawick," may be seen the house built by Captain Timothy Johnson in 1771, near the spot where Penelope Johnson was murdered by the Indians, 1798, recently the residence of the Rev. Samuel Johnson, the Oriental scholar and liberal divine. On an elevated site, southerly from the village stands the house of Colonel James Frye, once shaded by the elm which Chaplain Frye planted when he left to join Lovewell's band on their way to Pequaket, in which engagement the chaplain lost his life. The house is now occupied by Mr. Nathaniel Peters. From these houses went out a brave and patriotic band of men, who, on all occasions, served their country well. The duty which their ancestors imposed upon them, when the goodly town was founded in the wilderness, was well performed. It would be difficult to find in any one neighborhood so large a number of controlling and guiding minds. Quincy had her Adams in Revolutionary days; Shrewsbury her Ward; Boston, the capital city of Massachusetts, her Samuel Adams, her Otis and Warren, and Quincy and Revere and Hancock; Salem her Timothy Pickering. North Andover sent from her farms and homes Osgood to the army and councils of the nation, Phillips to the halls of the State, Frye to the front of the fighting regiments, and scores of sons to the ranks. In field and in council the town appeared with strong influence, and with leaders who came from a community ready to support them in all deeds and words which redounded to the honor of the country.

The settlement at North Andover was fortunate in the direction it received from many of the early planters. Among them Simon Bradstreet undoubtedly stands foremost. Abbot says of him, he "was son of a non-conforming minister, and was born March, 1603, at Horblin, Lincolnshire. His father died when he was fourteen years old, and he was committed to the care of the Hon. Thomas Dudley for eight years following. He spent one year at Emanuel College, Cambridge, pursuing his studies amidst various interruptions. Leaving Cambridge, he resided in the family of the Earl of Lincoln, as his steward; and afterwards lived in the same capacity with the Countess of Warwick. Having married a daughter of Mr. Dudley, he, with Mr. Winthrop, Mr. Dudley and others, agreed to emigrate and form a settlement in Massachusetts; and being appointed as assistant, he, with his family and others, went aboard the "Arbella" on the 29th of March, 1630; anchored June 12th, near Naumkeag, now Salem; went on shore, but returned to the vessel at night; came on the 14th into the inner harbor and went on shore; on the 17th went to Massachusetts and returned the 19th. He attended the first court, the 23d of August, at Charlestown.

The adventurers had but little time to prepare for themselves temporary shelters for the winter, which set in about the 1st of December, and from Christmas to about the middle of February was very severe. It was with great difficulty that they could render themselves comfortable. Provisions were very scarce and extremely dear. Wheat meal was fourteen shillings sterling a bushel; peas, ten shillings; and Indian corn from Virginia, ten shillings. Many were exposed to cold, lying in tents and wretched cabins, and suffering much, being obliged to feed on clams and other shell fish; and, instead of bread, to eat acorns and groundnuts. They had appointed a fast, the 22d of February; but on the 5th the ship "Lyon" arrived with provisions, which were distributed, and they turned the fast into a thanksgiving. Many died during the winter and spring.

In the spring of 1631, Mr. Bradstreet, with other gentlemen, commenced building at Newtown (now Cambridge) and his name is among those constituting the first company that settled in that town in 1632. He resided there several years. In 1639 the court granted him five hundred acres of land in Salem, in the next convenient place, near Mr. Endicott's farm. It appears that he resided a short time at Ipswich.

Mr. Bradstreet was among the first settlers of North Andover, and was highly useful in promoting the settlement, in bearing the burdens incident to a new plantation and in giving a right direction to affairs. About the year 1644 he built the first mill on the Cochichewick. He was a selectman from the first record of town officers to 1672, soon after which he probably spent most his time in Boston and Salem.

He was the first secretary of the colony, and discharged the duties of the office many years. He was one of the first commissioners of the United Colonies in 1643, and served many years with fidelity and usefulness, in this office. In 1653 he, with his colleague, vigorously opposed making war on the Dutch in New York, and on the Indians; and it was

prevented by his steady and conscientious opposition and the decision of the General Court of Massachusetts, though earnestly and strenuously urged by all the commissioners of the other three colonies.

In 1662, in a time of great alarm and distress, he was sent agent with Mr. Norton to England to congratulate Charles II. on his restoration, and, if possible, to secure the privileges granted in the old charter. The mission was attended with more success than could have been expected, considering that the colonists were republicans in opinions, and strict Puritans, and had no respect for nobles and bishops. But many of the magistrates and people were dissatisfied, as they conceived the charter privileges were invaded. The agents fell under no small degree of resentment and public obloquy. Mr. Bradstreet, conscious of rectitude and feeling a cold indifference to the opinions and clamours of the multitude, continued to discharge the duties of his station.

He was Deputy-Governor from 1672 to 1679, when he was elected Governor, and continued in office till Mr. Joseph Dudley, his nephew, was appointed, in 1686, head of the administration, and the government was changed and the charter annulled. He was appointed counselor under Dudley, but declined.

Mr. Bradstreet was considered at the head of the moderate party, and, when the charter was demanded by King Charles, thought it better it should be surrendered than that it should be taken away by judgment, as in that case it might be more easily resumed. The King promised lenity on compliance, and threatened severity if the colony forced him to a judgment against the charter. He judged it wise and provident to save part of the privileges of the colony rather than lose the whole. It was, moreover, submitting to the necessity of the times, and to a power they were unable to resist. He was reproached for his pusillanimity, but his views were probably best for the country. The censure of the opposite party ought not to transmit reproach to posterity, or in the least to tarnish his character.

He strenuously opposed the arbitrary proceedings of Andross; and when, in 1689, the people put down his authority, they made their old Governor their President. He continued at the head of the administration till May, 1692, at the advanced age of eighty-nine years, when Sir William Phips arrived from England with the new charter, in which Sir William was appointed Governor and Mr. Bradstreet first assistant. He had been in service in the government sixty-two years, excepting the short administration of Dudley and Andross. No man in the country has continued in so high offices so many years and to so advanced age. He was a popular magistrate, was opposed to the witchcraft delusion in 1692, which cast a great cloud of distress at the commencement of Governor Phips' administration. He lived to be the Nestor of New England; all who came over from England with him died before him.

Mr. Bradstreet was not distinguished for splendid and powerful talents, but for those abilities and qualifications which rendered him eminently useful. He was upright in his principles, of sound judgment, strict integrity, persevering in business, and sought usefulness rather than popularity. He was not the most highly esteemed by any party, but was despised by none. He was one of the fathers of the Massachusetts colony, and contributed much to its establishment and prosperity. He was a man of fortitude and suffered, with the other early settlers, many privations and hardships, discouragements and disappointments. The first two or three years were very trying and afflicting. They were exposed to the severity of the climate, with poor accommodations, to scarcity of provisions and the necessaries of life, and to sickness, which proved mortal to many of them.

The following inscription is on his monument erected in Salem:

"Simon Bradstreet.

"Armiger, exordine in Colonia Massachusettensi ab anno 1630, usque ad annum 1673. Deinde ad annum 1679, Vice-Gubernator. Denique ad annum 1686, ejusdem coloniæ, communi et constanti populi suffragio,

Gubernator.

Vir, judicio Lynceario preditus; quem nec numma, nec honos allexit. Regis authoritatem et populi libertatem æqua lance libravit. Religione cerdatus, vita innocuus, mundum et vicit et deseruit 27 die Martii, A. D. 1697, annoque Guliel: 3ti, IX et Act. 91."

Mr. Bradstreet was married in England to Miss Ann Dudley, daughter of Mr. Thomas Dudley, when she was sixteen years old. She bore eight children, —four sons and four daughters,—and died in North Andover, September 16, 1672. She is the most distinguished of the early matrons of our country by her literary powers, of which proof is given in a volume of poems, the second edition of which was printed at Boston, 1678, by John Foster, in a respectable 12mo of 255 pp. It does honor to her education, by her frequent allusions to ancient literature and historical facts and to her character as a daughter, a wife, a parent and a Christian. This volume is a real curiosity, though no reader, free from partiality of friendship, might coincide in the commendation of the funeral eulogy of John Norton:

"Could Maro's muse but hear her lively strain,
He would condemn his works to fire again.
* * * * * * * * *
Her breast was a brave palace, a *broad street*
Where all heroic, ample thoughts did meet,
Where nature had such a tenement ta'en,
That other souls to her's, dwelt in a lane."

Dr. Mather, in his "Magnalia," gives high commendation of her, "whose poems, divers times printed, have afforded a grateful entertainment unto the ingenious, and a monument for her memory beyond the stateliest marbles."

Her poems were also highly praised by President Rogers, of Harvard College, who said that "twice drinking of the nectar of her lines," left him "weltering in delight." "Edward Phillips, the nephew of

Milton, speaks of her as the tenth muse sprung up in America."

"None of the descendants of Simon Bradstreet are now living in North Andover. He married for his second wife a sister of Sir George Downing, who was in the first class graduated at Harvard, and who was ambassador of Cromwell and Charles II. to Holland."

Some of the other prominent citizens of the town were John Osgood, of whose descendants, Isaac F. Osgood, (town-clerk and postmaster), T. Osgood Wardwell, Mrs. Charlotte (Osgood) Stevens, with her children and George B. Loring (2d) and John O. Loring, a son of I. Osgood Loring, are now residents; John Stevens whose descendants have been numerous and efficient; John Frye, ancestor of distinguished soldiers in the French and Revolutionary Wars; Daniel Poor, whose descendants have occupied important positions; William Johnson, Andrew Peters, and Ephraim Foster, all of whom have left an honorable record, which has been maintained by their descendants; Nicholas Holt, the ancestor of many influential and learned men; John Lovejoy, the great grandfather of Gen. Nathaniel Lovejoy, who was graduated at Harvard in 1766, and was a merchant in North Andover; Andrew Foster, the ancestor of Hon. Ephraim Foster, statesman and patriot in the Revolutionary period, and of the Hon. Dwight Foster, United States Senator; Joseph Parker, a miller on the Cochichewick, ancestor of many worthy citizens of the town.

Ecclesiastical.—Of all the obligations imposed by the General Court on the founders of the towns in New England, no one was considered more imperative and binding than that which required them "to provide and maintain an able and orthodox minister among them," and to build a meeting-house within three years. In obedience to this order, and in accordance with the pious impulses of a people impressed with the importance of freedom of conscience in matters of religion, the settlers around Cochichewick selected, soon after their arrival, a spot on which to erect their sacred edifice. The precise date of the erection is not known; but in 1669 a new meeting-house was constructed; and a house was destroyed, on which the following order has been issued:

"At a lawful town-meeting, the 3d of Feb'y, 1661, itt is ordered 'that all first comers of inhabitants that have been at the charges of purchasing the plantation and building the minister's house, the mill and the meeting-house, For and in consideration thereof are allowed an acre and a halfe to every acre house lote of Low and Swamp land, and every other inhabitant that have been at the charges of building the meeting-house and mill is to be allowed one acre to every house lott, and this land to be apportioned to the lots.'"

It is evident, therefore, that soon after 1646 the first house was built, and there is every reason to believe that it stood near the "Old North Burying-ground," and on the high land opposite the house of Governor Bradstreet. Its successor stood probably on the same spot and was evidently a commodious building, furnished with a bell which was used until 1755; was protected by legislation against "doggs"; was provided with a sexton to sweep it and ring the bell, and was "seated" by a committee appointed to select the pews for the worshippers according to their position in society and the church. The selectmen undertook to keep the boys quiet in the galleries during divine service, and to stop their "prophanenes of y^e^ Sabbath" in front of the church at noon-time.

Sabbath-breakers were punished severely under special laws, by being confined in a cage; they were reproved publicly by the minister, and heavily fined.

This second meeting-house stood until 1711. A new one was then erected, which stood until 1753, when in June of that year a meeting-house was raised; 300 pounds sterling were voted for its construction, and January 1, 1754, pews were sold for £667 15*s.* 8*d.*; the highest pew at £17 0*s.* 8*d.*; the lowest at £6 13*s.* 4*d.*

The first of the ministers engaged in conducting public worship in these meeting-houses, whose existence covered the first century of the town, was John Woodbridge. He came early to the town and took part in a conference of messengers of churches, which met in September, 1644, and appointed two churches to be gathered, one at Haverhill, the other at Andover, both on the Merrimac River. At this meeting, which was held in Rowley on account of the inability of the two towns mentioned to entertain the assembly, "most of those who were to join together in church-fellowship at that time refused to make confession of their faith and repentance, because, as was said, they declared it openly before in other churches upon their admission into them." This assembly broke up, but was called together again in 1645, when the difficulty was settled, and Mr. John Ward was ordained pastor of the church at Haverhill, on the north side of the Merrimac, and Mr. John Woodbridge was ordained pastor of the church of Andover, on the south side of the same. These two churches were the twenty-third and twenty-fourth organized in Massachusetts.

Ten male members, including the pastor, composed the church gathered at that time, viz.: Mr. John Woodbridge, teacher; John Osgood, Robert Barnard, John Frye, Nicholas Holt, Richard Barker, Joseph Parker, Nathan Parker, Richard Blake, Edmond Faulkner.

The Rev. John Woodbridge was a most extraordinary character. He was instrumental in purchasing the Andover plantation from Cutshamache. He came to this country in 1634, took up lands in Newbury and soon became one of the most active and useful members of the colony. He was master of the Boston Latin School at the time he came to North Andover, having turned his attention to the ministry as a means of advancement. He was, alternately, deputy to the General Court, justice of the peace, religious teacher, schoolmaster, Indian trader and, in England, chaplain of the commissioners who treated with the

banished monarch, Charles I. Having lost his living for non-conformity in England, he returned to New England, took up his abode again in Newbury, where he became assistant in the ministry of his uncle, magistrate and justice of the peace. He inclined somewhat to the English Church, so far as the powers and prerogatives of the minister were concerned. He died in 1695, at the age of eighty-two, leaving "three sons with two sons-in-law improved in the ministry of the Gospel, and four grandsons happily advanced thereto."

Cotton Mather, in his biographical sketches of the "young scholars, whose education for their designed ministry not being finished, yet came over from England with their friends, and had their education perfected in the country, before the college was come into maturity enough to bestow its laurels," says of Mr. Woodbridge:

"But he that brings up the Rear is Mr. John Woodbridge, of whom we are able to speak a little more particularly. He was born at Stanton, in Highworth, in Wiltshire, about the year 1613, of which Parish his father was minister, and a minister so able and Faithful as to obtain an high esteem among those that knew at all the invaluable worth of such a minister. His mother was daughter of Mr. Robert Parker, and a daughter who did so virtuously that her own personal character would have made her highly esteemed if a Relation to such a Father had not further added to the lustre of her character.

"Our JOHN was, by his worthy parents, trained up in the way that he should go and sent unto *Oxford*, where his education and Proficiency at school had ripened him for the University, and kept at Oxford until the Oath of Conformity came to be required of him, which neither his father nor his conscience approving, he removed from thence unto a course of more *Private Studies*. The vigorous enforcing of the unhappy ceremonies there causing many that understood and regarded the Second Commandment in the Laws of Heaven, to seek a peaceful recess for the pure worship of the Lord Jesus Christ in an *American Desert*, our young Woodbridge, with the consent of his parents, undertook a voyage to New England about the year 1634, and the company and assistance of his worthy uncle, Mr. *Thomas Parker*, was not the least encouragement of the voyage. He had not been long in the country before Newberry began to be planted, when he accordingly took up lands and so seated himself that he Comfortably and Industriously Studied on, until the advice of his father's death obliged him to return to England, where, having settled his affairs, he returned again into New England, bringing with him his two brothers, whereof one died on the way. He had married the daughter of the Honble Thomas Dudley, Esq., and the town of Andover then first peeping into the world, he was, by the hands of Mr. Wilson and Mr. Worcester, September 16, 1641, ordained the teacher of a Congregation there. There he continued with good Reputation, discharging the duties of the ministry until, upon the invitation of friends, he returned once more to England."

The Rev. Francis Dane succeeded Mr. Woodbridge. The time of his ordination is unknown, but it was about the year 1648. He was a resident of Ipswich in 1641, and according to Felt "he removed to Andover in 1648." He was not graduated at either of the universities in England, but finished his studies in this country at "the college," before degrees were conferred. He left no autobiography, nor was any sketch of his life or of his pastorate written and published, although he was pastor of an important parish forty-eight years, and was intimately connected with some interesting proceedings of the colony. A record of his mind, which he left written out in a note-book, shows him to have been inclined to liberal views, although accepting the doctrines which prevailed generally among the Puritans. His mind and heart were evidently in sympathy with all Christians of whatsoever denomination and with the universal church of Christ. It is not known that he had any part in the severity of the theological hierarchy which ruled New England, especially during the years of his ministry; and there is no reason to suppose that he had any controversy with them. He was evidently inclined to peace in his parish, and was not ambitious to be conspicuous in the controversies of his time or active in the organization of the colony. A difficulty which arose between himself and his church regarding the continuance of his salary when the infirmities of years rendered it necessary to furnish him assistance in the pulpit, either by colleague or associate, was amicably settled by the General Court, on terms satisfactory to all parties; and the peace of the parish remained unbroken. By this step the church was saved from the painful consciousness of having neglected a faithful pastor, who had shared their joys and sorrows during the life of more than a generation—and the pastor was supported in his infirmities by the assurance that the tender relations which had been established between himself and his people were not ungratefully forgotten.

Mr. Dane and his colleague labored together sixteen years for the edification of a united people and for their mutual benefit and happiness. He was a man of good judgment, practical wisdom and courage. In his old age he defied the madness of the witchcraft delusion, even when his own life was in danger and many members of his own family were under arrest, bore all his trials with Christian fortitude and resignation, and died, patiently submissive to the Lord's will, February 17, 1697, aged eighty-one years, "having been an officer in the church at North Andover forty-eight years."

The Rev. Thomas Barnard was the colleague of Mr. Dane and his successor in the pulpit at North Andover. He was a son of Francis Barnard, of Hadley; was graduated at Harvard 1679, and was the founder of an illustrious line of clergymen,—his son, John Barnard, who succeeded him as pastor of the First Church in North Andover; his grandsons, Rev. Thomas Barnard, of the First Church in Salem, and the Rev. Edward Barnard, of Haverhill; and his great-grandson, the Rev. Thomas Barnard, Jr., who in 1772 was ordained first pastor of the North Church in Salem. On the death of Mr. Dane, he became sole pastor of the church, and seems to have infused new life into his parish. The parsonage-house was improved; a new meeting-house was built; the territory was set off by the General Court into the North Parish, and Mr. Barnard was allowed to make choice of the parish over which he was to act as minister. He had his trials also. The division of the town gave rise to difficulties not easily removed. The South Parish had built their meeting-house, and still Mr.

Barnard was undecided which precinct to choose, and did not decide until the General Court compelled him, and the South Parish decided that "Mr. Samuel Phillips shall be our pastor." Mr. Barnard by this act lost many valuable parishioners and members of the church, and he complained to the General Court that "the north part of the town, that was the first settlement, are dissatisfied that they are made the lesser part"—a complaint which was renewed a century and a half later, when the town was divided. The erection of the new meeting-house followed the division, and it was a commodious building, suited to a devoted and growing parish. "During the long and warm altercation, Mr. Barnard conducted with such prudence and affectionate fidelity as to retain the esteem and confidence of all his people." He was always on terms of warm friendship with Mr. Phillips, of the South Parish, who said of him in public:

"I have always esteemed it a favor of Providence that my lot was cast in the same town with that holy man of God, who was pleased to express the kindness of a father to me, and where I had for some years the advantage of his guidance and example. He was really one of the best of ministers, had the tongue of the learned, was a sound & eminent divine, delivered excellent sermons, and had the spirit as well as the gift of prayer; was gentle as a father, yet maintaining government & discipline in the church, very obliging toward all men, and always studied the things that make for peace."

At his death the parish set apart a day of "fasting and prayer to all-mytie God that the Lat & awfull Strok in taking away the Reverend Pastuer by so sudden a death be sanctified to His Flock left destitute of a Preacher." The funeral expenses were liberally paid by the parish, and a simple upright gravestone marks the spot where he was buried.

Mr. Barnard married, December, 1686, Elizabeth Price, who died October, 1692; for a second wife, May, 1696, Abigail Bull, who died August, 1702. He was married to his third wife, Lydia Goffe, August, 1704. Thomas, his oldest son, born October, 1688, died before his father, without issue. John, born March, 1690, was graduated at Harvard, 1709, ordained minister of Andover North Parish April, 1719, died June 14, 1757. Theodore, his youngest son, born February, 1692, died February, 1725, aged thirty-two years, leaving three children—Elizabeth, Theodore and Hannah. Elizabeth was the wife of the Hon. S. Phillips, and mother of the late Lieutenant-Governor S. Phillips.

Rev. John Barnard, son of the Rev. Thomas Barnard, was graduated at Harvard 1709, and was invited as successor to his father December 16, 1718, only two months after the death of the latter. He began to preach as settled minister in January, 1719, and was ordained the 8th of April following. Prior to his ministry he had taught school in Andover and in the North Grammar School, Boston.

The history of Mr. Barnard's ministry has been carefully written by both of the able and excellent annalists of Andover. He is represented by them as a man of piety, gentleness and pleasantry, of faithfulness in the discharge of his ministerial duties, highly respected as a preacher, and possessed of a sound understanding, benevolence and urbanity.

"His ministry," says Miss Bailey,

"was a period of stirring events in the religious world and in the provincial history, and yet this would not appear from the church and parish records. Then, notwithstanding the prominent part of members of the parish in the Indian and French Wars, and the connection of the pastor with the controversy in regard to the Rev. George Whitefield and the Great awakening, nothing more exciting appears on the record than building and seating the meeting-house, buying silver for the communion service and clock and bell for the meeting-house. Mr. Barnard was not in sympathy with Mr. Whitefield. He did not believe in itineracy, he was no enthusiast, but had a supreme regard for propriety. He was himself regarded by some of the clergy as belonging to the party of doubtful orthodoxy. But, whatever his theology, he disapproved the fanaticism, as he thought it, and abhorred what he regarded as the irreverence and impiety of the great evangelist, who denounced the dignitaries of the commonwealth, and buried anathemas at the ancient and venerable seats of learning, Harvard College and her younger, but also honored sister, Yale College. Nor could Mr. Barnard, like some of his brother ministers, overlook the evil and find the good in the movement. His name, therefore, heads the list of one of the two neighboring associations of ministers in the county who addressed a letter to the Associated Ministers of Boston and Charlestown remonstrating on the admission of Mr. Whitefield into their pulpits.

"The North Church prospered under Mr. Barnard's hands. Five hundred new members were added and there were twelve hundred baptisms during his ministry.

"In 1753 the North Parish built another new meeting-house. Pews sold, Jan. 1, 1754, for £967 15s. 8d. Silver was procured for the communion service, and the pewter 'plate formerly used was given to the church in Methuen. . . .'

"The silver service is massive and elegant. It consists of eleven tankards with covers and two flagons. The oldest tankard was given by Mrs. Sarah Martyn, of Boston, 1724. The others were the gifts respectively of Benjamin Stevens, Esq., 1728; Mrs. Mary Asbebs, 1739; Ebenezer Osgood, 1745; Peter Osgood, 1754, in fulfillment of the desire of his grandfather, Timothy Osgood: widow Elizabeth Abbot, 1756; Capt. Timothy Johnson, 1761; there are three inscribed 'For the use of the First Church of Christ in Andover, A. D., 1728, one 1729.' The two flagons were given, one by Benjamin Barker, 1765; the other in 1801, by Capt. Peter Osgood."

The discipline of the church members, during Mr. Barnard's ministry, was such as is usually found in the records of the New England parishes, and indicated a determination to expose and punish those demoralizing habits which were too common in our colonial period.

Mr. Barnard was married, 1725, to Miss Sarah Osgood, a daughter of Deacon John Osgood, who died 1765, aged eighty-three. His son, the Rev. Thomas Barnard, was settled in Newbury, 1740, and in 1755 over the First Church in Salem. His son Edmund was settled in Haverhill. Mr. Barnard died suddenly, June 14, 1757, aged sixty-seven years, and after a ministry of thirty-eight years. He was sincerely mourned by his people, and the best minds of the community hastened to pay tribute to his memory.

The printed discourses of Mr. Barnard were, one on the death of Mr. Abiel Abbot; one at the ordination of the Rev. Timothy Walder, of Concord, N. H., and an election sermon, 1746.

The faith which had prevailed thus far in the First Church of Andover was that brought over by the Puritans and preserved by them with great care. They believed that all men are, by nature, destitute of true piety; that they naturally grow up in the practice of sin; and that no one becomes religious except by a change in his habits of thought, feeling and conduct, which they ascribed to the special operation of the Holy Spirit as a supernatural cause.

They believed that the truly pious are ordinarily conscious of this change in the action of their own minds when it takes place, and are able to describe it, though they may not then know that the change of which they are conscious is regeneration.

The creed adopted by the Theological Institution organized in 1808, in the South Parish of Andover, is perhaps the most perfect embodiment of the Puritan religious belief; viz.,—

"We believe in the existence of one true God, Father, Son and Holy Ghost; that the Scriptures of the Old and New Testament were given by divine inspiration and contain the only perfect rule of faith and practice; in the fall of man and in his entire moral depravity; the necessity of an atonement and of our being renewed in the spirit of our minds; the doctrines of repentance toward God and of faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ; sanctification by the Holy Spirit, of justification by the free grace of God through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ; in the doctrine of a general resurrection and future judgment; in the everlasting blessedness of the righteous and the endless punishment of the finally impenitent, and generally in the principles of religion contained in the Assembly's Shorter Catechism."

In all the revivals which took place in the colony, especially in that of 1740, in which Whitefield took an active and powerful part, it was held that every man is born in sin, and, unless some evidence appears to the contrary, is to be esteemed an heir to perdition, and that regeneration is a change accompanied with evidence by which it may be proved.

A growing uneasiness under these doctrines became manifest about the middle of the last century, and throughout New England there was an inclination to adopt the views of Arminius, that God had resolved from eternity on the salvation and damnation of men dependent on man's belief or unbelief, by which he would be saved or damned; that Christ died for all men, but nobody could partake of his salvation except he believe, and that man must be born again of God in Christ through the Holy Ghost to be saved, that nobody can without the grace of God think, will or do anything good, because all our good works have their origin in God's grace; that the faithful can struggle against Satan successfully by the assistance of the Holy Ghost.

It will be remembered that the Rev. Francis Dane, in a creed of his own composition, manifested considerable moderation in doctrine, and that his orthodoxy was somewhat questioned. Through the minds of his successors this liberality evidently ran, and although the fraternity of the churches was maintained, there was evidently a dividing sentiment growing up between them. On the death of the Rev. John Barnard the tendency of the First Church in Andover to liberal views was shown by the settlement of the Rev. William Symmes over the bereaved parish. Dr. Symmes, as he is usually called (having received the degree of D.D. from Harvard), was born in Charlestown, was graduated at Harvard in 1759, began to preach in North Andover soon after the decease of Mr. Barnard, and was on the 5th of December, 1767, invited to settle over the parish. On account of sickness his ordination was postponed until November 1, 1758.

Dr. Symmes held a high rank among the clergy of his day. He came to North Andover with a good reputation as a scholar and a learned divine. He had enjoyed the social opportunities of Boston and Charlestown in his youth, and had been a tutor at Harvard for three years, from 1755 to 1758. He possessed great intellectual delicacy and a nature responsive to all good thoughts and noble emotions. As a writer he was one of the purest of his day. His sermons were carefully prepared, methodical in their arrangement and conclusive in their reasoning. He delivered them in a calm and dignified manner, without the grace or fervor of oratory, but in a way calculated to arrest the attention of the thoughtful and to carry conviction to the cultivated mind. He may have been deficient in worldly wisdom and exposed at times to the designs of the selfish and unprincipled; but his piety, sincerity and devotion to his calling were never questioned, and in times of great civil, social and financial trial he bore himself with great calmness and submission, and retained his commanding influence among his people. His views of domestic discipline were somewhat severe; but he was a kind and indulgent parent, ready at all times to sacrifice himself for the good of his children. He was quick and at times irritable; but he usually held himself in perfect control. His church was harmonious, and sectarian disputes were unknown in his parish. He was prudent and economical in his affairs, and was so careful in his expenditures that when the parish voted to raise £1940 to pay the deficiency in his salary since the depreciation of paper money during the Revolutionary War, he relinquished one thousand dollars of the sum so generously and thoughtfully bestowed. During his ministry the French War was raging; the Revolutionary War, with all its preliminary troubles, was carried on to its glorious, but exhausted conclusion; the disturbances of the French Revolution reached our infant State and society, and disorder reigned throughout the civilized world. But through all Dr. Symmes accommodated himself to circumstances, took a wise and judicious survey of passing events, and preserved the good order and unanimity of his parish.

Dr. Symmes, in his views of the Calvinistic school, went beyond his predecessors. Dr. Abbot says of him: "In opinions he accorded rather with Arminius than with Calvin; and with Arius rather than Athanasius." True, he exchanged pulpits with the Rev. Mr. French, of the South Parish, but they differed widely in their views, and that divergence began which early in the ministry of his successor resulted in a complete separation and non-intercourse. At his death his church was already classed with the Unitarian organizations of New England, and from that time has been united with that denomination.

The manuscripts of Dr. Symmes were destroyed at his death, in accordance with his own instructions, and a valuable mass of information on local affairs

was lost. His printed publications were a Lecture on Psalmody; a Thanksgiving Sermon, 1768; Sermon at the General Election, 1785.

Dr. Symmes married, in 1759, Anna, daughter of the Rev. Joshua Gee, of Boston; she died in 1772. They had five sons and four daughters, all of whom, except Daniel and Mrs. Cazeneau, died before him. William, a counselor-at-law, died in Portland, January, 1807, in the forty-sixth year of his age, not having been married; Daniel, born October, 1764, went to the southward; Joshua Gee, a physician, died at sea; Elizabeth, died August, 1784, aged nineteen years; Theodore, a physician, settled in Falmouth, died at New Gloucester.

Anna married Mr. Isaac Cazeneau, lived in the homestead for many years, removed to Boston about 1836, where she died in 1849. Converse died young. Lydia and Charlotte were twins, and died in infancy, December 30, 1771.

His second wife was Miss Susannah Powell, who died July, 1807, aged seventy-nine.

Dr. Symmes died May 3, 1807.

The parish, after having a number of candidates for the ministry, united July 10, 1810, in calling the Rev. Bailey Loring, of Duxbury, to settle in the Gospel ministry. The ordination was on the 19th of September, 1810.

It is a curious and interesting fact that the church covenant that had been in use previously to this time could not be found when Mr. Loring entered upon his ministry. The church, however, soon adopted the following:

"You profess to believe in One God the Father—maker of all things—and in Jesus Christ his Son, the Messiah and Saviour of men, the only Mediator between God and man, and in the Holy Spirit which bears testimony to the truth and confirms the Faith of Christians. You receive the Holy Scriptures of the Old and New Testament, as being profitable for doctrine, reproof, correction and instruction in righteousness, and through Faith in Christ, sufficient to make men wise unto Salvation. You profess repentance of all past vices and a full purpose of heart to forsake every evil and false way and to cleave to that which is good. You do now publicly covenant with God that you will search after and obey the Truth as it is in Jesus—that fleeing sinful lusts, you will follow after Righteousness, charity and peace—that you will not forsake the assembling of yourself with the people of God for public worship; but make it your constant study to walk in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blamelessly—and that walking in communion with this church, you will submit to its watchful care and discipline, praying for its edification and the prosperity of Zion."

In 1817 the parish purchased land of Jonathan Stevens for a burying-ground, on the high land north of and near the church. In 1822 stoves were introduced into the meeting-house. In 1825 the training-field north of Dr. Kittredge's house, and near the spot where the first meeting-house stood, was exchanged for four acres in front of the meeting-house, to be opened for a common.

"In 1834 a few members of the First Church withdrew, and uniting with fourteen members from the South Church, formed 'the Evangelical Church in North Andover,' and established religious worship in a meeting-house which had been built by subscriptions of the Evangelical Churches of Essex County."

In the same year the First Church and Parish decided to build a new meeting-house in place of the structure erected in 1753, and voted to appropriate seven thousand dollars to build. The house was dedicated June 1, 1835. The cost of the building was eleven thousand five hundred dollars; and it stands near the site of the old one. The old clock and bell were preserved. Into this meeting-house an organ was introduced in 1844—and the clarionet and bassoon and violin and bass-viol of the old orchestra were heard no more. Dr. Rufus Wyman was thanked by the society for the "gift of a very elegant Bible for the pulpit of the new meeting-house."

An extended biographical sketch of Mr. Loring will be found toward the close of this history of the town.

The seventh minister was the Rev. Francis Williams. He was ordained February 27, 1850, and continued in office to May 27, 1856. He resigned to accept a call to Brattleborough, Vt. He left many warm friends in the parish.

The eighth minister was the Rev. Charles C. Vinal, ordained May 6, 1857. He continued in office thirteen years, to March, 1870. During his pastorate a parsonage was built, the parish having received for that purpose a testamentary bequest of six thousand dollars, from the late Hon. William Johnson. Mr. Vinal, in 1870, accepted a call to the Unitarian Church in Kennebunk, Maine, where he is now the pastor. His resignation was received with regret and he is kindly remembered in the parish.

The parsonage was destroyed by fire while it was unoccupied in 1870, and the parish library, the gift of the Rev. Mr. Loring, and the later church records were burned. The new parsonage was built in 1871.

The ninth and present pastor, the Rev. John H. Clifford, was ordained August 29, 1871. He and the two preceding pastors were graduates of the Cambridge Divinity school.

The deacons of the First Church during the one hundred and eighty-nine years in which it was the only church in North Andover, and who sat in a special seat in front of the pulpit, were the following: John Frye, John Barker, 1693; Joseph Stevens, 1694; John Osgood, 1719; John Farnum, 1727; Samuel Barker, 1736; Samuel Phillips, 1748; Joseph Osgood, 1763; Joseph Barker, 1766; Benjamin Farnum, 1790; John Adams, 1797; George Osgood, 1797; Joshua Wilson, 1813; Jedediah Farnum, 1824; William Frost, 1824.

The Evangelical Church of North Andover, 1834, was the next religious organization made in the old town. The establishment of the Theological Seminary had tended to bring questions of creed more prominently before the churches, and to emphasize the importance of doctrinal distinctions. The churches and individuals came more and more to consider it a duty to define their position and to range themselves conspicuously on one side or the other of the denominational lines, which, about the beginning of the present century, began to be closely drawn. The questions which finally ended in the division of the Congregational body into Unitarian and Trinitarian

were discussed with more earnestness and acrimony. The North Church, from the beginning, had been more Arminian than Calvinist, in tendency, although its pastors had associated in cordial fellowship with their brother clergy of the Calvinistic creed, and even in later times the names of Dr. Symmes and Mr. Loring were on the "Andover Association" (now of Calvinistic and Trinitarian Congregational order). But a strong feeling had grown up in the town that the First Church was not of the true faith, or supporting an Evangelical ministry, and that another church ought to be organized in the North Parish for the accommodation of individuals of the First Church who were not in sympathy with its prevailing tone, and for persons of Calvinistic faith, who had become residents of the parish, but had not removed their connection from the churches in the respective towns of their former residence.

The South and West Churches and the Church of the Theological Seminary favored this movement, and aid was pledged by the Home Missionary Society. Subscriptions were obtained among the churches of the county and a meeting-house was erected in North Andover, a little east of the North meeting-house. The house of worship was dedicated September 4, 1834, and on the same day the Evangelical Church was organized. It consisted of thirty-one members; seven of whom were from the First Church, fourteen from the South Parish. The others were from churches in various towns, but probably nearly all residents of North Andover.

The church was supplied with preachers for some months by the neighboring churches. In 1835, September 9th, the first minister was settled—the Rev. Jesse Page.

In 1865 the original house of worship at the centre of the town was abandoned, and a new and commodious church edifice was built in the Machine-shop Village.

The names of the ministers are as follows: Rev. Jesse Page, graduate of Dartmouth College 1831, of Andover Theological Seminary 1835; Rev. William T. Briggs, graduate of Oberlin Institute 1844, ordained in North Andover November 4, 1846; Rev. Levi H. Cobb, graduate of Dartmouth College 1854, Andover Theological Seminary 1857, ordained at North Andover October 28, 1857; Rev. Benjamin F. Hamilton, graduate of Amherst College 1861, Andover Theological Seminary 1864, ordained at North Andover June 28, 1865; Rev. Rufus C. Flagg, graduate of Middlebury College, Vt., installed at North Andover September 26, 1872; Rev. George Pierce, graduate of Dartmouth College 1863, installed at North Andover October 16, 1878.

The following churches have been organized in North Andover in addition to those already mentioned: Methodist Episcopal Church, 1845; Roman Catholic Church, 1865; Protestant Episcopal Church, 1880.

Civil and Military.—The civil and military movements of North Andover are for a long series of years so intimately connected with the entire town, as originally founded, that it is difficult to deal with either precinct or parish separately. The events, however, which occurred on the territory of North Andover, and the persons who took an active part in them may with propriety be referred to in this sketch.

The first town-meeting, according to the records, was held in 1656 at the house of John Osgood. The freeholders were expected to attend these meetings and were fined for absence. Perfect order was preserved in these assemblies; and it was ordered that if any man speak in town-meeting after silence commanded twice by the moderator, he shall forfeit twelve pence. Care was taken that the metes and bounds of the various estates should be preserved accurately by inspection every three years. The discipline with regard to seats in the meeting-house was severe. Young persons were not allowed abroad on Saturday or Sunday nights, and no entertainments could be given after nine o'clock. The settlement of mechanics and tradesmen was especially encouraged; and the building of mills was favored greatly. In 1686 Henry Ingalls was allowed to set up a saw-mill on Musketoe River; and in 1695 Samuel Osgood, John Abbot, Sr., Joseph and Henry Chandler, had liberty granted them to erect a saw-mill on Cochichewick Brook two or three rods above the lower ford way, probably near the site of the North Andover Woolen Mills.

An act was passed June, 1801, by the General Court requiring the treasurer of the proprietors of Andover to pay over one-half of all the moneys and estate which was or may hereafter be in his hands as treasurer unto the trustees of the Free School in the North Parish in Andover for instruction in the school.

In 1765 it was voted that:

"*Whereas*, sundry of the inhabitants of the town are threatened with injuries and abuses from riotous assemblies said town unanimously voted their utter abhorrence of all such violent and extraordinary proceedings; and that the selectmen, the militia officers and magistrates of the town be desired to use their utmost endeavors agreeable to law to suppress the same; and that the freeholders and other inhabitants will do everything in their power to assist them therein."

In 1765 a committee, consisting of Colonel James Frye, Moody Bridges, Peter Osgood, Colonel John Osgood and others, residents of North Andover, addressed the following instructions:

"*To Samuel Phillips, Esq., Representative for the town of Andover in his Majesty's Province of the Massachusetts Bay:*

"Sir, We, the freeholders and other inhabitants of said town, legally assembled in town-meeting on said day, to consider what may be proper on our part to be done at this critical juncture, being a time we apprehend that we and the rest of his Majesty's subjects of this province, as well as those of the other provinces and colonies in British America, are by sundry acts of Parliament of Great Britain, especially by an act commonly called the Stamp Act, in danger of being not only reduced to such indigent circumstances as will render us unable to manifest our loyalty to the Crown of Great Britain, as upon all occasions we have heretofore done, by cheerfully exhibiting our substance for the defence of the British dominions in this part of the world; but of being deprived

of some of our most valuable privileges which by charter and loyalty we have always thought and still think ourselves justly entitled to;

"Therefore we take it to be a duty justly due to ourselves and posterity to instruct you, that you do not give your assent to any act of Assembly that shall signify any willingness in your constituents to submit to any internal taxes that are under any colour imposed otherwise than by the General Court of this province, agreeable to the constitution of this government: That you join in such dutiful remonstrances to the King and Parliament and other becoming measures as shall carry the greatest probability to obtain a repeal of the Stamp Act, and an alleviation of the embarrassments, the commercial affairs of this province labour under by the vigorous execution of the acts of Parliament respecting the same; and we also desire you to use your utmost endeavors that all extraordinary grants and expensive measures may upon all occasions as much as possible be avoided; and we would recommend particularly the strictest care and the utmost firmness to prevent all unconstitutional draughts upon the public treasury; that you would use your best endeavors, in conjunction with the other members of the General Court, to suppress all riotous unlawful assemblies, and to prevent all unlawful acts of violence upon the persons and substance of his Majesty's subjects in this Province."

In 1756 the following expression of sympathy with the sufferers during the commotion respecting the Stamp Act is honorable to the town: "Being put to vote whether the town will instruct their Representative to use his influence in the Great and General Court of this province that the sufferers in the late troublesome times in Boston may have a consideration paid them out of the Province Treasury, or such other way as said Court shall judge to be most fit and equitable:" it passed in the affirmative.

In 1768 it was voted that Samuel Phillips, Capt. Peter Osgood, Col. James Frye and others be a committee to consider some measures that may tend to encourage prudence and manufactures and to lessen the use of superfluities in the town, and report at the annual meeting of the town in May next. The committee appointed reported: "That in order to securing to ourselves and transmitting to posterity these invaluable rights and privileges, both civil and religious, which have been dearly purchased by our predecessors, the first settlers of this country, the loss of which is greatly threatened by the great and growing imprudences and immoralities among us,—The committee are humbly of the opinion that it is absolutely necessary that the inhabitants of this town use their utmost endeavors, and that they enforce their endeavors by their example, for the suppressing of extravagance, idleness and vice, and for the promoting of industry, economy and good morals; and by all prudent means endeavor to discountenance the importation and use of foreign superfluities, and to promote and encourage manufactures in the town." The above report was unanimously accepted by the town.

In 1770, "The town, taking into consideration the distresses this province is laboring under by the operation of a late act of Parliment imposing duties on tea, paper, glass, etc., made and passed for the express purpose of raising a revenue in the American Colonies without their consent, which we apprehend is oppressive, repugnant to the natural and constitutional rights of the people, contrary both to the spirit and letter of the royal Charter granted by their majesties William and Queen Mary to the inhabitants of this province, whereby are ordained and established the having and enjoying all liberties and immunities of free and natural born subjects; and subversive of the great and good designs of our most worthy ancestors, who crossed the ocean, willingly exposed themselves to every danger, parted with their blood and treasure, suffered hunger, cold and nakedness, and every other hardship human nature is capable of, to purchase and defend a quiet habitation for themselves and posterity; Therefore voted, *nemine contradicente*.

"1. That it is the duty of every friend of liberty and to the British constitution to use all legal measures to prevent, if possible, the execution of said act, and would embrace this opportunity to express our warmest gratitude to the merchants and other gentlemen of Boston and other trading towns in this province for the regular, constitutional and spirited measures pursued by them, from principles truly generous, for repelling tyranny and oppression and establishing those rights for themselves and country which they are entitled to as men and as Englishmen.

"2. That we will, by all legal and constitutional measures in our power, support and encourage the non importation agreement of the merchants; and that we will have no commercial or social connexions, directly or indirectly, with those persons who, as enemies to the country, divested of every public virtue, and even of humanity itself, regardless of and deaf to the miseries and calamities which threaten this people, preferring their own private interest to the liberty and freedom of the community, are sordidly endeavoring to counteract such benevolent and salutary agreement.

"3. That we will encourage frugality, industry and the manufactures of this country; and that we will not make use of any foreign tea, or suffer it to be used in our families (case of sickness alone excepted), until the act imposing a duty on that article be repealed and a general importation take place."

In 1774 it was,—

"*Resolved*, That no person in this town who has heretofore been concerned in vending tea, or any other person, may, on any pretence whatever, either sell himself, or be accessory to selling, any tea of foreign importation, while it remains burthened with a duty, under penalty of incurring the town's displeasure."

In December, 1774, it was,—

"*Resolved*, That it is the indispensable duty of this town to conform and firmly adhere to the Association of the Grand American Continental Congress, and to the resolve of the Provincial Congress of the 5th of December, thereto relating; and in order that this may be thoroughly effected, that the inhabitants of the town of the age of twenty-one years and upwards subscribe to the following agreement, viz.:

"We, the subscribers, having attentively considered the Association of the Grand American Continental Congress, respecting the non-importation, non-exportation and non-consumption of goods, etc., signed by the Delegates of this and other colonies on the Continent, and the resolve of the Provincial Congress of the 5th of December thereto relating, do heartily approve the same and every part of them; and in order to make said Association resolve our own personal act, Do, by these presents, under the sacred ties of virtue, honor and love of our country, firmly agree and associate fully and completely to observe and keep all and every article and clause in said Association, and resolve contained, according to the true intent, meaning and letter thereof, and will duly inform and give notice of every evasion or contravention of either, as far as we are able; and we further covenant that if any person or persons of the age of twenty-one years and upwards shall neglect or refuse to subscribe this agreement, when tendered to him or them, that we will withdraw all commerce, trade or dealing from such, so long as they shall continue thus inimical to the public good, and that their names shall be entered on the records of this town and published in the *Essex Gazette* as enemies to their country."

January 2, 1775, a committee was appointed, of which Colonel James Frye, Colonel Samuel Johnson, Captain John Farnum and Moody Bridges were members, to observe that the resolves of the Grand American and Provincial Congresses be strictly adhered to. The instructions to the committee require them to—

"Use their utmost endeavours that the non-consumption agreement be strictly adhered to; to encourage the people to improve the breed of sheep and to increase their number; to encourage frugality, economy and industry, and promote agriculture, arts and manufactures, and discountenance and discourage every species of extravagance and dissipation, and that they recommend to the people of the town that they, on the death of any near relations, go into no further mourning dress than a black crape or ribbon on the arm or hat for men, and a black ribbon or necklace for women; that said Committee inspect the merchants and traders in this town, and give information to the public of all persons as shall violate the Ninth article of the Association by advancing the price of their goods; that they apply to all merchants and traders in this town immediately after the tenth day of October next, and take a full inventory of all the goods, wares and merchandize which shall then be in their hands, and shall require them to offer no more of those goods for sale; and if any merchant, trader or others shall refuse to have an inventory taken, or shall offer for sale after the tenth of October aforesaid any such goods, wares or merchandize, the Committee is directed to take the goods into their possession, at the risque of the proper owners, until the repeal of the Acts referred to, and publish the names of such refractory merchants or traders, that they may meet with the merits of enemies to their country; and the town doth hereby engage to assist and support said committee in the discharge of their trust; that the Committee inspect the conduct of every person in the town touching the aforesaid Association; that if any person or persons shall wilfully violate said Association, that the majority of said Committee cause the name of such person or persons forthwith to be published in the *Gazette*, to the end that all such foes to the rights of British America may be publicly known; and it is further recommended to said Committee that they act in every respect as it shall appear to them to be their duty as a Committee of inspection, whose duty is more fully pointed out in the Continental Association and Provincial Resolves."

June 12, 1776, the question being put, "Whether, should the Honorable Congress, for the safety of the colonies, declare them independent of the Kingdom of Great Britain, you will solemnly engage with your lives and fortunes to support them in the measure," it passed in the affirmative unanimously.

Oct. 3d, 1776, it was voted to support the House of Representatives, should they conclude to submit a constitution and form of government for the State to the people thereof.

In 1777 the town voted to supply the families of non-commissioned officers and private soldiers belonging to this town, that are engaged in the Continental army, with the necessaries of life, that their circumstances may require, agreeable to a resolve of the General Court.

July 2, 1779, Mr. Sam'l Osgood, Mr. Sam'l Phillips, Jr., Mr. John Farnum and Mr. Zebediah Abbot, were elected delegates "to attend at the convention to be holden at Cambridge, on September next, for the purpose of forming a Constitution of Government."

The conduct of the town during the Revolutionary War was most exemplary. There was great unanimity of feeling and a resolute determination to stand by the patriot cause. In raising men and taking care of their families, the town was patriotic, charitable and liberal. And the persons to whom the work was entrusted had the entire confidence of the people. The sentiments of the town were expressed in the resolves which have been already quoted.

In the French and Indian Wars which preceded, and in the Revolutionary War, which followed the adoption of these resolves, North Andover took an important and conspicuous part. Her soldiers in the French War were in almost every engagement; her officers were able, efficient and distinguished. Col. James Frye, who seems to have been a leading man in the town, commenced at Crown Point that career as a commander which culminated in the Revolutionary War.

Col. Joseph Frye, who was conspicuous in the destruction of Acadia, commenced in this war his long and brilliant career of service. His house in North Andover stood near the famous elm-tree planted by Chaplain Frye when he departed with Lovewell's expedition. He had command of a small body of troops outside Fort William Henry, when the disastrous attack was made on it by Montcalm with his savages. He fought the enemy in front, opposed capitulation in the rear, and slew the savage who led him forth a prisoner to torture and death.

"In the massacre which followed the surrender he was dragged into the woods, stripped of his clothes, except his shirt, and was about to be murdered, when, in the sudden strength of desperation, he sprang upon his foe, all unarmed and naked as he was, beat down and dispatched the warrior who was already exulting in his anticipated scalping. Three days he wandered through the forests in a state bordering on distraction, suffering in body and mind from the long protracted horrors of the fight, the terrible scenes of the massacre and his perils and exposure. At last he found his way back to Fort Edward in a most pitiable condition, half starved and nearly crazed, and in the same naked condition in which he had escaped from the savage. But with tender nursing he regained strength of body and mind, and lived to render more valiant service in the war, and in the Revolution he received the commission of brigadier-general."

A petition was granted him to purchase land in the region of the Saco and Ossipee Rivers, and about 1770 he settled there with some associates from Andover.

On May 23, 1759, John Farnum, of Andover, solicited aid from the government on account of his services in the Canada expedition. John Beverly and others made a similar application, and their applications were successful.

The prominent officers in the French and Indian War from North Andover were Captain Joseph Frye, Lieutenant-Colonel James Frye, Colonel Moody Bridges, Surgeon Ward Noyes, Captain John Farnum, Captain Thomas Farrington and Captain Abiel Frye.

The military experience of the French and Indian War soon proved to be most valuable to the colonies, in the great conflict out of which the independence of this country was secured. As it became necessary to defend the principles avowed by the citizens of North Andover in the resolves and instructions they adopted, the soldiers and officers of the English and American forces in the French War came to the front with their skill and courage, and the declarations of the town were renewed with greater force. New names appeared, it is true, but many a familiar form presented itself ready for the new conflict. Into the councils of the town entered Samuel Phillips and Samuel Osgood, and in martial array stood Gen. James Frye with his military training and his soldierly genius; Col. Moody Bridges with his fervid popular

oratory and his courage and resolution; Capt. Peter Osgood, Capt. John Farnum, Capt. Henry Ingalls with their old comrades-in-arms. Samuel Phillips had spoken the voice of the young men of the town when he declared, "We must watch against every encroachment and with the fortitude of calm, intrepid resolution oppose them. Unborn generations will either bless us for our activity and magnanimity, or curse us for our pusillanimity." His successor in the House of Representatives, Col. Bridges was instructed as to his duty in language somewhat familiar to himself, in which it was declared, "May all that is dear in nature defend us, and not only us, but our domesticities that are possessed of the least degree of feeling, from such an inquisition." Col. Bridges was sent to the First Provincial Congress which met in Salem, September, 1774. A Committee of Inspection for the town was chosen January 2, 1775, to see that the resolves of the Continental and Provincial Congresses were adhered to, and "to inspect the conduct of every person in the town touching the aforesaid association." On this committee were Col. James Frye, Col. Samuel Johnson, Ensign Joshua Holt, Capt. John Farnum, Col. Moody Bridges, Ensign Stephen Holt, Samuel Frye and Lieut. John Ingalls. A Committee of Safety was also appointed, on which the names of those who have appeared so often are repeated.

At this time there were four companies in the town, numbering in all four hundred men. Two companies appear on the muster-rolls of the "Lexington Alarm," in the regiment of Col. James Frye.

Col. Johnson labored incessantly to fill up the ranks of the patriotic forces, and appealed to the people with great earnestness and force. His regiment was rapidly filled, and his address to his soldiers was eloquent and inspiring. The first resistance to British attempts to seize the arms and ammunition of the colonists had been made by Leslie and his forces in Salem, in February, 1775, and had been successful under the leadership of the firm and fearless Timothy Pickering; and when a few weeks after, the country was roused and alarmed by the struggle at Concord and Lexington, the soldiers of North Andover, already organized, marched to the conflict. Four companies are recorded as having marched from Andover to Cambridge, April 19, 1775. A "number of aged men and some unable to bear arms, rode to Cambridge on the day of the alarm and the following day to carry provisions to those who stood in need." At this time Samuel Osgood appeared on the field and commenced his long career as soldier and statesman.

The journals of the soldiers and the records all give evidence of the zeal and devotion of the town in the opening skirmish of the war, and in the memorable engagements which followed and taught the British government and all men in the colonies that there were Americans who were ready to fight for their rights, and the independence, if need be, of their country.

The town promptly responded to the communication from the Provincial Congress, signed by Joseph Warren, president, that "General Gage had utterly disqualified himself to serve the colony as Governor," by choosing Mr. Samuel Phillips, Jr., to represent them in the Provincial Congress to be held at the meeting-house in Watertown on Wednesday, the 31st of May inst. (1775). Mr. Phillips' services in this Congress are thus recorded by his biographer:

"During this period Mr. Phillips was twice on a committee to confer with General Washington upon points connected with the war; he was also in rapid succession upon committees to countersign the colony notes emitted by the Continental Congress, and the notes of the Receiver-General; to direct the mustering and paying of one militia company, to muster and pay another, etc., etc. In all this he distinguished himself and did honor to the town he represented."

The difficulties under which the soldiers labored at this time are strongly set forth in the following communication, dated "Camp in Cambridge, August 2, 1775," addressed "To the Honorable, the Council and House of Representatives of the Colonies of Massachusetts Bay in General Court assembled," by Benjamin Ames, a captain in Colonel James Frye's regiment:

"Your petitioner, a captain in Col. James Frye's regiment, begs leave to relate that the company which he has the honor to command, consisting of fifty seven non-commissioned officers & soldiers, came into camp at Cambridge on the 19th of April last; that since that time said company has regularly done duty; but, though they have been in the service of this colony above three months, not one man has received one part of the forty shillings which a late Congress promised should be advanced to them. That these soldiers, with many of their families, have suffered difficulties that are not small by reason of this delay. Their necessities have been growing daily more urgent, till, at length, I am able to withstand their importunity no longer. I am, therefore, constrained most earnestly to entreat of this Honorable Court that relief to which your humble petitioner presumes he has some claim in justice, & your Petitioner, as in duty bound, shall ever pray."

The prayer of the petitioner was granted, and Mr. Samuel Phillips was empowered to carry out the necessary arrangements.

It is difficult to realize the effect the battle of Bunker Hill had upon the people of the colonies generally, of the colony in which it was fought especially, and of the towns which, at great sacrifice, had sent their fathers and sons into the conflict. The return of the dead and wounded to a peaceful and quiet rural community sent a thrill of horror through all ranks and orders of men. The heat of preliminary debate had roused the passions of men to a point of resistance, but the result of the blows struck being brought to their very firesides, changed the indignation of conflicting opinion to the exasperation of grief and the desperation of the mourner. The mild and feeble emotions were roused at once to defiant impulses, and the community dwelt upon every personal detail of the struggle with keen and intense interest. The story of Colonel Frye, who hastened in the midst of the battle to the bloody scene, was rehearsed with pride at his home. The account given by John Barker, of his rescue of Benjamin Farnum from the jaws of death in the midst of the battle, has been passed with pride from generation to generation.

Salem Poor, a slave, became a hero in the town. The painful doubt which surrounded the fate of Captain Furbush and Samuel Bailey, Jr., hung like a pall over the community. The generation which saw Captain Farnum brought home on a litter improvised by his neighbors has entirely passed away, it is true, but there are those who remember the old Christian hero as he hobbled to his seat as deacon of the First Church, a model of faith and heroic patriotism. And conspicuous among all was the surgeon of Colonel James Frye's regiment—Dr. Thomas Kittredge—the beloved physician, the influential citizen, the wise public servant, the patriotic soldier, during more than half a century of useful service in war and peace.

While the sons of North Andover were busy on the field of battle, many of the citizens of beleaguered Boston sought refuge in her safe and quiet homes. A large portion of the library of Harvard College was sent to Samuel Osgood for safe keeping. The town seems to have been a favorite place of refuge during the dangers of wars and sieges. Not only in the Revolution, but in the War of 1812, the merchants of Salem and Boston took up their abode among its charming hills and valleys and in the families of its thrifty and cultivated citizens.

The suffering in the town at this period became great. The absence of a great number of the able-bodied men during the summer season of 1775 prevented the pursuit of a large part of the farming industry and the provision usually made for winter in that sparsely-settled region. As the war went on this difficulty was not removed. When the siege of Boston was brought to a successful termination, the soldiers of the American army were transferred to remoter fields, and their absence from home was necessarily of longer continuance. They were found in many engagements and in every section of the country. They were in service in New York. The men of North Andover were enrolled in the Continental army. Their brave old colonel, James Frye, had fought his fight and was reposing in the grave-yard, not having reached the infirmities of old age, nor having reached the consummation of his life-long effort for the independence of his country. *Homo fait*, truly says his epitaph. But Johnson and Farnum remained, and the soldiers followed them wherever their services were needed. They were at Bennington and Stillwater. They shared the sufferings of the winter camp at Valley Forge. Captain Samuel Johnson and his men were engaged in Rhode Island. And of the services of Colonel Johnson at Stillwater and during the entire campaign, which resulted in the defeat of Burgoyne, it has been said:

"In 1777 has commanded a regiment detached from the county of Essex and [illegible] Bailey on the most notable action on the 7th of October, which has [illegible] and patronage was particularly distinguished. [illegible] that respectable yeomanry whom Gen[illegible] [illegible] men, determined to [illegible] It was the Fourth Massachusetts Regiment, which Colonel Johnson commanded through the war, and with promptness and punctuality answered the requisitions of Government in a manner highly satisfactory to the several corps which composed the regiment."

As the war went on the sufferings of soldiers and citizens increased. Business was neglected. There was a scanty supply of food and clothing; the lands became exhausted; the flocks and herds decreased. But the people of North Andover did all in their power to rise above the general disaster, encouraged the soldiers and provided for their families. The manufacturing industries of the town were not neglected. The work of furnishing homespun clothes for citizens and soldiers was diligently carried on in the houses. The town was liberal in bestowing bounties on the soldiers.

No family was more intimately connected with the welfare of the country before and during and after the Revolutionary War than the family of Phillips. Descended from one of the most influential ministers of the colony, the Rev. Samuel Phillips settled in the South Parish of Andover in 1710, and through his own agency and that of his remarkable sons and grandsons he shaped the destiny of that portion of the original town. Of his sons, Samuel, born February 24, 1715, graduate of Harvard 1734; John, born January 7, 1720, graduate of Harvard 1735; and William, born July 6, 1725, Samuel settled in North Andover, and in 1752 built the house which has already been described, and is an heir-loom of the family. He established himself there in trade. He married Elizabeth Barnard, a cousin of the minister and "his household was a model of a Christian family, his wife being a lady of rare virtues and himself deacon of the North Church, a man of inflexible principles and integrity." He was among the most distinguished men of the Revolutionary period, being Representative, Senator and the friend of the most eminent statesmen of the times. He died in 1790, leaving one son, Samuel Phillips, Jr., who married Miss Phebe Foxcroft, of Cambridge, and who was known as "Judge" Phillips. He resided after his marriage in the South Parish, and induced his father and his uncle to found Phillips Academy. The original design was to locate the academy in the North Parish, near the family homestead, but it was found difficult to purchase the land, and the South Parish was made the important and influential centre of academic and theological education. The constitution and deeds of trust were signed April 21, 1778. Shortly after this "Judge" Phillips removed to the South Parish, where he died February 10, 1802.

His son, John Phillips, a graduate of Harvard in 1795, entered into trade in Charlestown and married Miss Lydia Gorham, daughter of the Hon. Nathaniel Gorham, shortly after which he moved to North Andover. It was on the event of his marriage that partisan papers of the day announced that the peace of the Commonwealth was secured, as the rival families of Phillips and Gorham were at last united. John Phillips died at the age of forty-four years,

leaving a widow with thirteen children, three sons. A more dignified and exemplary family never lived in North Andover.

Mrs. Phillips was a cultured, self-contained Christian woman, and her daughters possessed the refinement of the mother combined with that calm judgment and discretion for which the family of Phillips had long been noted. The presence of herself and her family gave tone to the town.

The description of the Phillips Manse given by Miss Bailey ought not to be omitted here :

"The Phillips manse is probably the richest of any in the town in ancient relics of ancestral grandeur. The fine old family portraits, the portrait of Washington" [now removed] "presented by his nephews, the antique silver tankard and porringers, the massive sideboard, the carved cabinet in which used to be kept mysterious packets of ancient letters, too private and sacred to be read by any outside the family, the tapestries wrought by hands long ago mouldered to dust, the samplers in frames over the mantel, and the profiles of the first master and mistress of the manse; in the hall the library of quaint old books owned by generations of ministers dating back to the settlement of the colony,—all these appeal powerfully to the imagination and stir the feelings deeply, as one goes from room to room in this ancient house."

One of the most important political movements during the war was the adoption of a State Constitution by Massachusetts. Until 1776 the Provincial Congress had constituted the civil power of the Commonwealth, and it was found necessary to complete the executive, legislative and judicial departments of government, for the sake of harmony and efficiency in the organization. This question, like all others involving a radical change, created a very considerable commotion and gave rise to sharp discussion and hot debate. Andover voted to leave the matter with the House of Representatives and the Council, and finally assumed direct opposition to the measure. To the House of Representatives, who were engaged in discussing the question of organizing the government, the North Parish furnished the member for the town,—Col. Samuel Johnson, who accepted willingly the instructions of the town in which it declared, "We therefore conclude that to set about the forming a New Constitution of Government at this time is unnecessary, impolitic and dangerous; and it is accordingly our direction that you oppose it with those solid arguments of which you are so fruitful, and that you do it vigorously and perseveringly."

The House having failed to accept the report of a committee appointed to draft a Constitution, a convention was called to meet in Cambridge in 1779, and the town was represented by Samuel Osgood, Samuel Phillips, Jr., Zebediah Abbot and John Farnum, Jr.

It was at this juncture that a most important step was taken by the towns of Essex County,—a step which had a controlling influence on the organization of the State under a Constitution. The difficulties surrounding this question were immense. The spirit of the Revolution was still on the people. In their efforts to throw off a foreign yoke they had become jealous of all authority, and were hardly willing to clothe any government with power sufficient to give it even a practical operation. Liberty was in danger of degenerating into license.

It was in this state of public affairs that Theophilus Parsons, a young lawyer in Newburyport, stepped forth and commenced that career which placed him in the position of chief justice of Massachusetts—perhaps the greatest of all her jurists. At his instigation a meeting of the freeholders and other inhabitants of the town of Newburyport, the place of his residence, by law qualified to vote in town affairs, was held on the 27th of March, 1778. Resolutions were adopted setting forth the defects in the Constitution already proposed, desiring the selectmen to issue circular letters to the several towns in Essex County, to meet by delegates in convention, and choosing, as representatives of Newburyport in the convention, Theophilus Parsons, Tristram Dalton, Jonathan Greenleaf, Jonathan Jackson and Stephen Cross. This convention met in Ipswich in April of that year, and among the names recorded appear those of Ward, Goodhue, Andrews, Goodale, Springer, of Salem; Putnam and Shillaber, of Danvers; Farley and Noyes, of Ipswich; Coffin and Porter, of Gloucester; Gould and Clarke, of Topsfield; Dodge, of Wenham; Perley, of Boxford; and the "Honorable Caleb Cushing, Esq., of Salisbury."

Under a vote of the convention Messrs. Parsons, Goodale and Putnam were appointed a committee "to attempt to ascertain the true principles of government; to state the non-conformity of the Constitution prepared by the convention of this state to those principles; and to delineate the outlines of a constitution conformable thereto, and to report the same to this body."

Can we at this day estimate the difficulty of this task? The spirit which had thus far animated Massachusetts, and had kept her up to the standard adopted by her at the North Bridge and Lexington and Concord, at Bunker Hill and in the streets of Boston, rendered her peculiarly sensitive with regard to every form of popular right. She had impoverished herself for the war. Her sons were at that very hour suffering from the horrors of that winter at Valley Forge. The western counties, governed by "that public virtue and the unbounded love of freedom and their country with which the militia of the state had always been inspired," had sent their hardiest men to win the glories of Bennington and Saratoga. The eastern counties were already moving for the expedition against the British in Rhode Island. The people were on fire for freedom—for a common cause—for a common country. The appeals were spirited and ardent. Said the Boston *Gazette:* "He who wishes for permanent happiness, let him now put forth all his strength for the immediate salvation of his country, and he shall reap immortal pleasure and renown. It is good for us to anticipate the joy that will fill our

minds when we shall receive the reward of our labors; when we shall see our country flourish in peace; when grateful millions shall hail us as the protectors of our country, and an approving conscience shall light up eternal sunshine in our souls."

To deliberate calmly in an hour of mingled desperation and hope, when our armies were sinking through weariness even on victorious battle-fields, and were freezing in their winter-quarters, when the only remaining power through all was an indomitable love of freedom, was by no means easy. The lessons of free government, moreover, were few, and not by any means successful. Ancient states had gone down into the darkness of anarchy or despotism; modern states had been organized chiefly as colonial dependencies. There was much confusion; there were many jealousies; there was but little light when that committee met to lay the foundations of a Constitution for Massachusetts. The work they performed is called the "Essex result." It was an earnest endeavor to declare how progress and conservatism, "liberty and order, might be adjusted in human institutions, that freedom should be secure and happiness might be the children of freedom."

As an essay on free government it has hardly been equaled. Avoiding the misanthropy of Rousseau and the consolidation of the ancient republics, it assumed that the moving springs of a free government are political virtue, patriotism and a just regard to the natural rights of mankind, and that in its operations a just distribution of power is supremely essential. Upon its suggestions was based the first Constitution of Massachusetts, carried as they were by the young lawyer of Newburyport into the subsequent State Convention, and submitted to the Bowdoins and Adamses and Lowells and Pickerings and Strongs of that distinguished body.

The town of North Andover finally gave its adhesion to the Constitution, after expressing an opinion that all citizens should be taxed to support public worship, and that religious tests should be applied to candidates for office.

It was the organization of the State government which saved the Commonwealth from anarchy and ruin during the Shay's Rebellion, which broke out with armed insurrection in 1786; and to aid in the suppression of which, by reason, as well as by force, Andover chose a Committee of Consideration, of whose members North Andover furnished Peter Osgood, Moody Bridges, John Ingalls Col. Samuel Johnson, and on which were four of the family of Abbot, from the South Parish.

The popular jealousy extended at this time not only against all civil authority, but also against all lawyers and all persons connected with the courts. There is a letter in existence, not before this time published, written by William Symmes, who became distinguished ten years later in the convention which adopted the Federal Constitution, to Isaac Osgood, Esq., who was at that time clerk of the courts of Essex County, under date of October 25, 1786, an extract from which will indicate the estimate in which lawyers were held at that time. He says:

"The profession by which I am to get my bread, nay the very court in which I can at present exercise it, is denied. The Supreme Judicature itself is punished with impunity. The legislature is irresolute, and therefore private credit is a mere cipher in all calculations, money out of circulation and a tender act (and heaven knows what else) impending. When? When I am but just admitted to the bar, have some debts to pay, am without reputation, or clients, and can raise no money either where it is or where it is not due. . . .

"You have here, my dear Sir, a sketch of my present condition. If the General Court should finally act with the spirit and effect so much to be desired, I shall hesitate no longer. But if the strength of the government be found inadequate to the suppression of tumult and the support of law, if the constitution be too feeble to conquer the present sickness of the state, I had rather be here than in Salem. But I had rather be in Turkey than here."

FEDERAL CONSTITUTION.

The War of Independence had been fought, and North Andover had performed well her part in the great struggle. The confederation had proved to be a "rope of sand," and led on by Virginia, the States had assembled to form our present Federal Constitution. It had been adopted by the convention which framed it and accepted by Delaware, Pennsylvania, New Jersey, Georgia and Connecticut. All eyes were turned on Massachusetts; for on her action depended very much that of New York, Maryland and Virginia. The mass of the people here were opposed to its adoption—some from interest, some from principle as they supposed, and some from jealousy. It met with violent opposition from the insurgents of Shay's army, many of whom represented the Western counties in the convention assembled to consider the question.

General Knox wrote to General Washington:—

"The opposition has arisen not from a consideration of the merits or demerits of the thing itself; but from a deadly principle leveled at the existence of all government whatsoever,—the principle of insurgency, deriving fresh strength and life from the impunity with which the rebellion of last year was suffered to escape. It is a singular circumstance that in Massachusetts the property, the ability and the virtue, of the state are almost solely for the constitution; opposed to it are the late insurgents, and all those who abetted their designs, constituting four-fifths of the opposition. A few, very few indeed, well meaning people are joined to them."

The debate in the Convention of 1788 sitting in Boston grew warmer and warmer as each day went on. There were men who, guided by personal ambition, sat with their fingers on the popular pulse, and governed their course by the unreasonable and narrow demands of an excited and just now rebellious community. The temptations of local elevation were more than they could resist. There were their obligations to Massachusetts, the opportunities which she presented, the favors which she had to bestow on

her sons who obeyed the behests of her people. There were then none of the achievements of a powerful republic, none of the prosperity attending a constitutional confederation, no commanding presence before the nations of the earth, no flag crowded with a galaxy of increasing States, no projects in which all had a common interest. The history of the Revolution, with its privations and its brilliant close, seemed to be the only bond which held together rival States, each one of which was drifting farther and farther from its companions and partners in the great work which they had commenced shoulder to shoulder.

To the convention three citizens of North Andover were sent as delegates on account of their entire sympathy with the often-expressed opinion of the town that the Constitution ought not to be adopted. These delegates were Dr. Thomas Kittredge, Capt. Peter Osgood and William Symmes, the last the youngest, most impulsive, and most unreserved of the three. Soon after the adoption of the Constitution by the convention which framed it he addressed a letter to Peter Osgood, afterwards one of his colleagues, dated November 15, 1787, in which he discussed the Constitution at length, asked for it a candid and fair consideration and for the first time gave definite expression to the points of the opposition. This letter undoubtedly gave him his election. On the 22d of January he made a most powerful argument against the Constitution, one of the few fully reported in the doings of the convention, his strongest point being the danger of empowering Congress to levy taxes in the States. His speech closed with a candid declaration of his readiness to be convinced of the wisdom of the instrument, at the same time fearing, as his constituents did, "the operation of this which is now proposed." His argument seems to have produced one effect which he probably did not anticipate,—a reply from Theophilus Parsons, who had hesitated to indorse the Constitution.

It was at this time that Washington fearlessly and strenuously exerted his influence in favor of the Constitution which, as president of the Convention, he had submitted to the States. It was unquestionably the weight of his influence which carried the Constitution through the State of Virginia, against the persistent opposition of Richard Henry Lee and Grayson, Harrison and Patrick Henry and the indifference of George Mason. But not in Virginia alone was the hand of Washington felt. In Pennsylvania, where the opposition was a factious and violent minority, the arguments which Lee had disseminated were counteracted by James Wilson, whom Washington approved as being "as able, candid and honest a member as was in the convention," and whose speech in reply to Lee he published for wide circulation in Virginia.

In Massachusetts the struggle was long and bitter in the convention containing such names as King, Gorham, Strong, Bowdoin and Hancock, Heath and Lincoln of the army, John Brooks and Christopher Gore, Theophilus Parsons, Theodore Sedgwick, John Davis, Fisher Ames and Samuel Adams. Elbridge Gerry, who, although a member of the convention at Philadelphia, had been defeated for the convention in Boston, had, under the influence of Richard Henry Lee, written a letter to the two Houses of Massachusetts, intimating that the Constitution needed amendments and should not be adopted until they were made. At this point he was met by Washington. "If another federal convention is attempted," wrote he, "its members will be more discordant, will agree on no general plan. The Constitution is the best that can be obtained at this time; it is free from many of the imperfections with which it is charged. The Constitution or disunion is before us to choose from. If the Constitution is our election, a constitutional door is open for amendments, and may be adopted in a peaceable manner, without tumult or disorder." Guided by this suggestion, Parsons, Bowdoin, Hancock and Adams determined to combine with its ratification a recommendation of amendments, and with Parsons' "conciliatory resolution," as it has been called, the Constitution was adopted. This resolution, which embodied the famous States' rights doctrines of the Constitution, was one of the early amendments, and was as follows:

"That it is explicitly declared that all powers not expressly delegated to Congress are reserved to the several States to be by them exercised."

That much is due to Mr. Symmes for the adoption of this resolution, which has played so important a part in the history of the republic, there can be no doubt. He was young, ardent and eloquent. His mind was entirely occupied with public affairs, and he contemplated the political events of the times with the deepest interest. His letter to his colleague, Peter Osgood, and his speech in the convention embodied the views of a very considerable portion of the people of the Commonwealth. He spoke the opinions of a large body of the delegates composing the convention, and when he made up his mind to vote for the adoption he had a most brilliant and able body of associates in the change. It is much less difficult to see why a larger number of delegates did not come to the conclusion to be converted to the support of the Constitution, than it is to see why he did. And yet, with the fate not unusual to converts, he fell under the bitter condemnation of his constituents, and alone of all those who followed Bowdoin, and Hancock, and Christopher Gore, and Fisher Ames, and Samuel Adams, and Theophilus Parsons in accepting the wise and patriotic advice of Washington, he was compelled to submit to ostracism and exile, was obliged to seek his fortune elsewhere than in his native town, and died in middle life a disappointed man. Of the honesty of his convictions there is no doubt. He expected the approval and support of the distinguished men with whom he was associated, and in obeying the dictates of his conscience anticipated the fair and

candid consideration of his townsmen. But his services were not appreciated, his feelings were wounded, his ambition was broken. He was freely charged with bad motives, and with an overweening desire to be found with the majority. His fate was a hard one, and stands, not as a warning, but as an intimidation to those who, with honest convictions, rise above their party, and support conscientiously the cause they have adopted. If any native of North Andover should have a memorial tablet, it is William Symmes, who defied popular indignation in obedience to the dictates of his conscience, and gave his support to the great charter of our freedom, the most remarkable governmental document ever designed by man.

On October 17, 1785, it was voted,—

"That Joshua Holt, Esq., be and he is hereby instructed in case any motion shall be made in the General Court for introducing a paper medium, vigorously and perseveringly to oppose the same as being a measure calculated, in our opinion, to promote idleness, dissipation and dishonesty, and by destroying the morals of the people, to bring on the ruin of the Commonwealth."

In 1786 a committee, of which Peter Osgood, Moody Bridges, John Ingalls and Samuel Johnson were conspicuous members, was appointed to consult and agree upon some measures which may promote the general welfare. The committee made the following report, which was unanimously accepted:

"It is the duty of the free and virtuous people of the Commonwealth at all times to keep a watchful eye against all encroachments upon their dear-bought rights and privileges; that they carefully guard against all grievous acts of the Legislature on the one hand; and against all contentious and unconstitutional opposition to Government on the other.

"We esteem it our duty at the present day to bear our explicit testimony against all riotous and illegal proceedings; and against all hostile attempts and menaces against law, justice and good government, and to declare our readiness to exert ourselves in support of Government, and the excellent Constitution of this Commonwealth. But at the same time we suppose there are many things complained of which ought to be remedied; and it is our desire that every grievance may be in a constitutional way redressed. We would take particular notice of these following, viz.:

"1. We conceive that the method commonly practiced in our Courts of Common Pleas for receiving debts is attended with great and needless expense. . . .

"2. The delinquencies of many towns in the payments of their public taxes, more especially in the western part of the State, as appears by the Treasurer's accounts, we conceive is one great cause of the disturbances which have arisen in those parts. . . .

"3. We apprehend the method of paying the Representatives out of the public Treasury lays an unequal burden on many parts of the State which might be alleviated by each town paying their own Representatives from their services out of their own Treasuries.

"4. As private and economy ever become a virtuous people, so are they peculiarly necessary in these infant states. We are of opinion, that the [illegible] that the public officers and their respective salaries ought to be [illegible] their pay and services duly compared and proportioned; that all superfluous offices be abolished, and the salaries of [illegible] are inadequate to their pay be lowered, and [illegible] expense of government and burden on the people be lessened."

They also suggested that the removal of the General Court from Boston would lessen the expense of the government.

On January 7, 1786, the town accepted the report of a committee appointed "to consider what measures are proper to be adopted for promoting industry and economy and those other virtues which are represented by the Legislature in their address to the people as necessary to form the basis of national happiness, as follows:

"That in their opinion, a deviation from the principles and practice of industry and economy has been the great cause of the scarcity of specie, the delinquency in the payment of taxes, and in the discharge of private debts, which delinquency naturally tends to mar the reputation and destroy the energy of government, and to produce impatience in creditors as well as uneasiness and complaint in debtors; and that hence arises the concern and disquietude of many in the community. Your committee therefore consider this deviation as a fruitful parent of the evils we now suffer, and threatening us with speedy and complete ruin unless prevented by a thorough reform. We, therefore, consider it of the highest importance to recur to those principles from which we have declined, and to exert ourselves for the encouragement of the manufacturers of our own country in every proper way which will consist with the business which ought to engage our first attention, viz.: The cultivation of the land, and for this purpose the following resolve is proposed to be adopted by the town:

"Whereas, the Legislature have warned this people of being in the precise channel in which the liberties of States have been generally swallowed up, and the warning, solemn as it is, appears to be founded in the highest reason; and as it is a part of sound wisdom to convert misfortunes and calamities into the means of advantage, in cheerful imitation of the patriotic example set us by the first magistrate of the Commonwealth, his council and the Legislature of the State: We hereby resolve to refrain from, and as far as in our power to prevent, the excessive use and consumption of articles of foreign manufacture, especially articles of luxury and extravagance, and that we will exert our best endeavors for the promotion of industry and our own manufactures

"And in particular that we will exert ourselves to increase our wool and flax as far as it is practicable. That we will, as far as may be, avoid killing our sheep or selling them for slaughter after shearing time, till the wool be serviceable for clothing; and that we will exert ourselves to promote and encourage the manufactures of wool and flax and other raw materials into such articles as shall be useful in the community.

"And the inhabitants of the town of every description, but heads of families in particular, are hereby solicited, as they would falsify the predictions and disappoint the hopes of those who are inimical to our Independence and happiness; as they would gratify the anxious wishes of our best friends and the friends of freedom in general; as they regard the political well-being of themselves and posterity; as they hold precious the memory of the heroes and patriots, and of our kindred who have sacrificed their lives that we may enjoy the fruits of virtuous freedom—to unite in this resolution, and to exert their utmost influence in every proper way to promote the important design of it.

"And upon this occasion we apply ourselves to the good sense and virtuous dispositions of the female sex, to the younger as well as the elder, that they would by their engaging examples as well as in other proper ways, devote that power of influence, with which nature hath endowed them, to the purpose of encouraging every species of economy in living, and particularly that neat simplicity and neatness in dress, which are among the best tokens of a good mind and which seldom fail to command the esteem and love of the virtuous and wise; giving preference to that clothing which is produced from our own flocks and from our own fields.

"Your committee, upon considering the principal obstacles that lie in the way of the desired reform, are clearly of opinion that an undue use of spirituous liquors has a powerful influence to enervate the body, to enfeeble the mind, and to promote dissipation, idleness and extravagance, which are the never-failing causes of poverty and ruin. They therefore consider it of the highest importance to refrain from ourselves, and to discountenance in others, the undue use of spirituous liquors of all kinds.

"Your committee further recommend to the town to take it under consideration whether some other measures than those which have heretofore been practised may not be adopted for the support and employment of the poor, which may be productive of advantage to them, and diminish the charge to which the town is subjected for that purpose."

This report—taken with a statement made not a long time previous by the town, that the practice in the Court of Common Pleas was a needlessly expensive

method of collecting debts; that the delinquencies of the towns in paying their taxes were dangerous; that the towns should pay their own representatives; that the salaries of public officers should be thoroughly looked into; that the accounts of the United States with the Commonwealth should be adjusted; and that the General Court ought to be moved from the town of Boston—indicates the tone and temper of the town in that early day, and shows what a severe sense of propriety and civil independence and economy the delegates of the town and the representatives were obliged to deal with. The question of the adoption of the Federal Constitution was not only fatal to Mr. Symmes, but it served to divide the town into two political parties—Federalists and Republicans—a division which has generally continued to this time. The North Parish, from which Kittredge, Osgood and Symmes went to the convention, became strongly devoted to the Republican party, led by Mr. Jefferson, and it has adhered to his doctrines through the various changes of name which in the last century have attended the political organization which claimed to be the especial custodian of his policy, while in the South Parish the Federalists prevailed in the beginning, to be succeeded by Whigs and Republicans as their legitimate heirs. As it was in the North Parish, so is it in North Andover to-day.

From 1771 to 1792 the North Parish furnished a representative to the General Court—fifteen years—during which Capt. Peter Osgood, who opposed the adoption of the Constitution to the end and truly represented his section of the town, served during six sessions.

The most distinguished citizen of North Andover in this Revolutionary and Constitutional period was Samuel Osgood, son of Peter, who was in the fifth generation from John Osgood, one of the founders of the church in 1645, and the first representative of the town in the General Court in 1657. He was a brother of Isaac Osgood, who was for many years clerk of the courts of Essex County, and a resident of Salem until he returned to North Andover, in 1804, and led a life of great dignity and repose until his death, in 1846. Samuel Osgood was born in 1748 and died in 1813. He was graduated at Harvard in 1770. His mind turned naturally to theological studies, and he commenced preparation for the ministry immediately on leaving college. He was a quiet, sedate, devout young man. He was modest and unassuming in his deportment, avoided all violent disputations, was confident of his own judgment, careful in his investigations, firm in his convictions. Soon after entering upon his theological studies he impaired his health and injured his eyes by close application, and went into mercantile business with his brother Peter. He took a deep interest in the great questions which occupied the public mind during the events which preceded and led to the Revolution, and was considered a leader in the town during all that stormy period. The financial disturbances of the war destroyed the business in which he and his brother were engaged as partners, and threw all the obligation of liquidating the debts of the concern on him. This duty he discharged completely and honorably. For some time before the breaking out of the war he was chosen a member of the Provincial Congress, where he exerted great influence as a wise, far-seeing and judicious legislator. In preparation of the great event, he had organized a company of minute-men, probably a body of his patriotic friends, with whom he marched to Lexington on hearing of the conflict, and thence to Cambridge to join the Continental army stationed there. He was appointed an aid by General Ward and remained in that official station until 1776, "when," as he says, "he quitted the army, not having much taste for military affairs."

On his return to civil life he commenced anew his career as a legislator and passed from the Provincial to the Continental Congress, and was appointed one of the Board of War. His services in that capacity secured the confidence and esteem of Washington, who relied on his judgment and patriotism in all his appeals to Congress for support in the great crises of the conflict. He took part in the Convention for framing the State Constitution of Massachusetts in 1779; and on the organization of the confederacy, he was selected as first commissioner of the treasury, and signed, on behalf of the government, the papers transferring a portion of the Northwest Territory to the Ohio Company, who, led by Manasseh Cutler, laid the foundation of western civilization at Marietta and secured the adoption of the Ordinance of 1787. Upon the organization of the Federal Government and the entry of Washington upon his administration, Mr. Osgood was selected as the Postmaster-General. Of this event he says in his unpublished autobiography: "It was not expected that he should have had any office offered him, he having been opposed for a time to an unqualified adoption of the new Constitution. Parties being highly exasperated, those who had exerted themselves in procuring the adoption of the new Constitution were to be rewarded with all the offices. But General Washington had been well acquainted with him from the commencement of the war, and offered him the Postmaster-General's department, which he accepted and held for about two years, with a salary of $1500 a year. He had been encouraged to believe that this would be increased, but seeing no prospect of it, he resigned and continued in private life till the year 1800."

In all the duties of public and private life he conducted himself with a strict regard to honesty and fidelity. His own town, his own State believed in him implicitly. On his appointment as commissioner of the treasury, he expressed an unwillingness to call on his friends for the heavy bonds of $100,000 required by the Federal Government, and "the government of Massachusetts became voluntarily responsible in his

behalf." When Congress left the city of New York, he resigned his office on account of the inadequacy of his salary and declined to follow the government to Philadelphia. He was soon after appointed surveyor of the port of New York, which office he held until his death.

In early life he had married Martha Brandon, a niece of Mrs. Phœbe Foxcroft Phillips, a woman of rare accomplishments, of a brilliant intellect, an amiable disposition and great personal beauty. Devoted to her friends, she left her own home to minister to the sufferings of her uncle in Cambridge during a long and severe illness, and died there after three years of married life, childless. Mr. Osgood's tribute to her memory in his autobiography is tender and touching.

During his official life in New York he secured for Washington a residence in Franklin Place, adjoining the dwelling of Mrs. Martha Franklin, who was the owner of the block. Mrs. Franklin won his heart and became his devoted wife to the end of his life. By her he had a son, Walter Franklin Osgood, and daughters—Julia, who married her cousin, Samuel Osgood, of North Andover; Martha, who married Mr. Genet, the French minister; and Susan, who married Mr. Field, of New York.

He now became identified with life in New York. He was surrounded by a charming circle of friends and by an affectionate and devoted family. He took an active part in politics and was placed on the ticket by which Aaron Burr overthrew the power of Hamilton in the Legislature of New York and elected as delegates to the Assembly George Clinton, General Horatio Gates, Samuel Osgood, Brockholst Livingston, John Swartwout and seven others, all influential citizens, supporters of Jefferson and Burr, among whom Osgood was most conspicuous and influential. He devoted himself to literature, was an original member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences and found great delight in investigating those questions of theology and metaphysics to which he had turned his attention in early life as a student of divinity. His treatment of Locke's chapter on the will attracted the attention of the best students of the time. North Andover has always been proud of his memory.

The records of the town, copies of which are deposited with the town clerk of North Andover, Mr. Jona. F. Osgood, contain but little from 1800 to the division of Andover, in 1855, besides the ordinary routine of town business, relating to schools, roads and bridges and the fisheries of the streams.

In 1802 Thomas Kittredge was chosen Representative to the General Court over John Phillips, and he continued to represent the town every year, except 1805, until 1809. In 1811 he was also elected in connection with Joshua Chandler and John Cornish.

July 6, 1812, the town voted to make up to the soldiers detached from the militia of the town pursuant to a law passed the 10th day of April last, such compensation, which, together with that allowed by government, shall amount to twelve dollars per month for each soldier while in actual service.

In 1813, Timothy Osgood, Dr. George Osgood and Benjamin Jenkins were elected Representatives over Thomas Kittredge, John Kneeland and Stephen Barker.

The same year notice was issued to all male inhabitants twenty-one years of age and upward, possessed of freehold estate with an annual income of $10, or any estate to the value of $200, that they had the right to vote.

September 19, 1814, during the War of 1812, the town voted: "That the town treasurer be authorized to hire a sum of money, not to exceed six hundred dollars, for the purpose of purchasing arms and equipments for the militia of the town that are unable to equip themselves."

Also voted: "To make up to the soldiers of Captain Henry Poor's Company, who have been called into actual service, such compensation which, together with that allowed by government, shall amount to twelve dollars per month for each soldier while in actual service."

In 1815 Thomas Kittredge was elected member of the Legislature, and in 1816 he ran for Congress. In 1817 he, in connection with John Kneeland and Stephen Barker, represented the town in the General Court.

And here the useful and honorable career of Dr. Kittredge as a citizen and a public servant ended. He died suddenly, October, 1818, in the midst of his activity,—the last acts of his life being devoted to the welfare of his neighbors and friends. A touching tale is told by a conspicuous citizen of the town, who was a child when the occurence took place, and whose father was the object of Dr. Kittredge's kindness, of his solicitude for the jaded horse of this townsman, whom he met returning from an excursion, and whom he urged to place the animal in his own stable for rest while one of his own horses was used to complete the journey. When, on the following morning, his horse was returned, the kind-hearted and generous physician had gone to his long home.

Dr. Thomas Kittredge was the third son of Dr. John Kittredge, who was born in Tewksbury and settled in North Andover, near the mouth of the Cochichewick Brook about 1741. He was born in 1745, pursued his academical studies at Dummer Academy, and studied medicine with Dr. Sawyer, of Newburyport. He commenced practice in North Andover in 1776. He was not only a skillful physician and surgeon, of whom Dr. John Warren, surgeon general of the Revolutionary army, said "He had more natural skill than any man in the country," but he was a most patriotic citizen also and a most valuable public servant. He was appointed surgeon of the army while it was at Cambridge; was present at the battle of Bunker Hill,

and served in his professional capacity during the war. He was a dignified and commanding gentleman a man of honor and honesty, and possessed great courage and sound judgment. He had a true comprehension of the object of the war, entire faith in its result and a large understanding of the character and destiny of the republic. Jealous of the rights of the States and citizens under the central government, he adopted the views and principles of Jefferson, and during a long public service as legislator and delegate he represented his ancient town as a Republican of the strictest sort. In the halls of legislation and as a member of the leading societies of his profession he had great influence. His capacity for business enabled him to accumulate a handsome fortune, and the stately mansion he erected a hundred years ago still stands a monument of his substantial taste and his understanding of an appropriate home for a prosperous citizen. His household was organized in accordance with the social customs of his times and was ample in its outfit, liberal in its hospitality and dignified in its conduct.

Dr. Kittredge married Susanna Osgood, a sister of Samuel Osgood, a most sensible and large-hearted woman. They had two sons; Joseph and John, and three daughters,—Martha, who married Dr. Lemuel Le Baron, and Catherine and Maria who married Judge David Cummins.

It has been deemed proper to give this conspicuous and influential citizen a place in the civil history of the town he loved and adorned.

The two sons of Dr. Thomas Kittredge were distinguished physicians also. Joseph, who was born in 1753, was graduated at Dartmouth in 1806, commenced practice with his father in 1809, and was the leading physician of the town and the surrounding country until his death, in 1847. He inherited the medical skill of the family and adopted modes of practice by intuition, which was proclaimed and adopted by scientific investigators long after they had become familiar to him. When the European schools advised the use of wine and opium in typhoid fever as a new discovery, they entered on a treatment which he had pursued for years with great success. He was not only a good physician, but he was a public-spirited and influential citizen. He was a sound adviser in town-meetings; he represented the town in General Court, and was a candidate for Congress in many hotly-contested elections. He invested largely in the manufactures of the place, and managed a large farm in an economical and exemplary manner. He was a sincere friend, a courteous gentleman, a warm-hearted husband and father and an honest man.

Dr. Kittredge married Miss Hannah Hodges, of Salem, daughter of Capt. George Hodges, in 1819 (December 19th). Mrs. Kittredge was distinguished for those sterling qualities which characterize the town in which she was born. She had a strong and well-balanced mind, a kind and charitable disposition and great personal dignity. Her influence was felt throughout the town, and she contributed largely to the worth and culture of the society in which she moved. She died in 1877, thirty years after her husband, leaving three sons—George Hodges, Joseph, and John—and four daughters.

Of the sons, Joseph, a graduate of Dartmouth College and the Harvard Medical School, succeeded to his father's practice in North Andover, and secured by his skill and judgment the entire confidence of the town. He died in 1878, leaving two sons,—Thomas, a successful physician and a valuable citizen in Salem, and Joseph, a prosperous and skillful physician in Marblehead.

John, the other of the sons, has long been attached to the Lunatic Asylum at Taunton, an efficient and useful officer.

The daughters of Joseph and Hannah (Hodges), Kittredge are Mary Hodges, Susan, Sarah and Hannah Armstrong. Susan married Dr. George C. S. Choate. The others occupy the fine old estate in North Andover.

After the death of Dr. Thomas Kittredge the town was represented for many years by Stephen Barker William Johnson, Samuel Merrill and others of Federal faith, until about 1830, when the fortunes of political contests varied. The best known of the representatives from that time to 1850 were George Hodges, Joseph Kittredge, Nathaniel Stevens and William Stevens.

Commencing in 1831, and ending June 10, 1833, one of the most interesting and memorable political contests which have taken place in Massachusetts occurred in what at that time was known as the Essex North Congressional District. In this contest North Andover had a peculiar interest, one of her foremost citizens, Gayton P. Osgood, being the candidate of the Democratic or Jackson party during the twelve successive trials which resulted in his election and the defeat of Caleb Cushing, the candidate of the Whig party of that day. The contest was long and bitter, and was characterized by unusual animosity and personal detraction. The opponents of Mr. Cushing were unsparing in their attacks and criticisms; and the opponents of Mr. Osgood were unwearied in their efforts to defeat him by adopting candidates who they hoped would demoralize and divide his party. North Andover, though divided at times in her allegiance between Mr. Osgood and Dr. Kittredge, who was substituted for Mr. Cushing during the trials, at last declared herself by an emphatic vote for Mr. Osgood as against Mr. Cushing, who was again a candidate; and so went the district.

The two representatives of the old town in 1854, the last year before the division, were William Jenkins and Daniel Carlton.

At this time, on the petition of Amos Abbott and others, the South Parish of Andover was set off into an independent municipality, and was authorized to

adopt the name of Andover, not on account of its priority of settlement, but as a matter of convenience to the seminary and schools which had received their charters as within the territory of that name. The committee chosen to carry out the sentiment of the town in relation to division were Samuel C. Jackson, William Chickering, Marcus Norton, Jr., Solomon Holt and John Aiken, all residents of the South Parish, to whom, at an adjourned meeting, were added Benjamin F. Jenkins and Daniel Carleton. A fair division of property was made, a copy of the town record was lodged with the town clerk of North Andover and the new town was organized by mutual consent.

The first town-meeting held in North Andover after the division was held April 23, 1855.

George N. White was chosen moderator; Hiram Berry, clerk; Daniel Carleton, James C. Carleton, and Farnham Spofford, selectmen; Hiram Berry, treasurer; Farnham Spofford, Daniel Weed, Jr., and Hiram Berry, school committee; James Stevens, Jedediah H. Barker and Isaac Wilson, auditors.

The representatives of the town since the division have been: For Senators, Moses P. Stevens, 1867–68; George L. Davis, 1874–75; John A. Wiley, 1880–81; Newton P. Frye, 1885. For the House of Representatives, Moses T. Stevens, 1861; John A. Wiley, 1867; B. P. Saunders, 1870; Hiram Berry, 1872; Andrew Smith, 1875; Newton P. Frye, 1878; Thomas K. Gilman, 1880; Frank W. Frisbie, 1883; Newton P. Frye, 1884; Calvin Read, 1885. In most cases the representatives served a second term.

Among the distinguished citizens of North Andover during the period which ended with the division of the town of Andover was the Hon. Gayton Pickman Osgood. He was a son of Isaac Osgood and Rebecca T. (Pickman) Osgood, and was born in Salem, July 4, 1797. He was fitted for college in North Andover, and was graduated at Harvard in 1815, with high honors, in a class of which John Gorham Palfrey and Jared Sparks were members. He studied law in Salem, and practiced there a short time, when, his health failing, he took up his residence with his father in North Andover, where he resided the remainder of his life. He abandoned his profession and, being engaged in no business, he led a life of scholarly and elegant leisure and ease. He became, however, deeply interested in politics, and was one of the most active leaders in the movement in favor of General Jackson for the Presidency, and one of the ablest advocates of the principles of that great Democratic organization which placed Jackson in power. In 1831 he was nominated for Congress by the Democracy of the Essex North Congressional District, and was elected after a long and vigorous campaign and many elections. Having been defeated for the succession, he retired to private life, and declined all further public position.

The influence of Mr. Osgood on the town is still well remembered. To a certain extent he was a recluse: he was not active in society or in the affairs of the town. Beyond his aged father and mother and their family he had few companions. His time was spent in his large and carefully selected library. His courteous and dignified presence, always in repose, was one of the features of the town. And yet, recluse as he was, his influence was felt throughout the community. His character gave force to his opinions, and without advocacy from him they were adopted. His advice was sought in all public enterprises, and freely though cautiously given. His impressive bearing was so without condescension that all classes respected it. He was recognized as a scholar, and his scholarship was acknowledged by the most practical of his townsmen as an ornament to their vocation. He was recognized as an accomplished critic, and he was a centre around which the cultivated men of the region gathered for advice and sympathy. The Latin and Greek classics constituted a part of his daily reading. Without imagination or creative faculty of his own, he comprehended the genius of the great English poets. From his solitude he watched with keen scrutiny the eloquent utterances of Everett, the masterly statesmanship of Webster, the fervid work of Bancroft, the productions of American authors in every literary walk, as they came upon the stage; and his judgment of them was wise and discriminating—his judgment of their strength and weakness.

The productions of his pen were few and, notwithstanding the severity of his criticism, somewhat florid, but pure. As a public speaker he was strong and convincing, attractive and eloquent. Governed by his convictions, he knew no fear, and never considered the effect of his declarations on his own personal fortunes. When, as a member of Congress, he spoke, it was for his country, and he was always proud of the compliment paid him by Mr. Van Buren, who introduced him to a group of statesmen as "the fearless representative who spoke for the good of his constituents as he understood it, and not for his own success."

Mr. Osgood secured the confidence and esteem of his friends by his sagacity and integrity, and by the manifest sincerity of his opinions. Those of his immediate companions and connections who differed from him, and they were many, had no controversy with him, recognizing as they did the broad and firm foundations of his belief, and the dignified intelligence with which he maintained them. He was a product of the social stateliness of the Revolutionary and early constitutional period of our country, and represented that class which gave great strength to the rural districts, from whence in those days our guides and leaders came. He died June 26, 1861.

CIVIL WAR.

The social and civil current of North Andover ran on as usual until the breaking out of the Civil War. The obligations which rested upon it in this startling

event were promptly and liberally fulfilled. At a town-meeting, held May 6, 1861, it was voted to appropriate five thousand dollars to uniform and equip a company of volunteers, and to provide for their families. The men were to receive fifty cents per day while drilling, and ten dollars per month from the date of their muster in to the date of discharge. I. Osgood Loring, George L. Davis and Moses T. Stevens were appointed a committee to assist the selectmen in disbursing the funds. A company was immediately formed.

July 28, 1862, voted to pay a bounty of two hundred dollars to each volunteer who should enlist for three years within ten days, and should be credited to the town. August 25th the bounty was increased to two hundred and fifty dollars.

March 8, 1864, voted to raise one hundred and twenty-five dollars for each recruit who shall enlist on or before the 15th of June next to fill out the quota.

July 5, 1864, voted to pay the same bounty to each volunteer who shall enlist as part of the quota of the town prior to March 5, 1865, under any calls of the President.

The town furnished two hundred and fifty men for the war, fifteen more than were called for, of whom thirty-three died, viz.:

Geo. H. Farnham, April 3, 1862.
Thos. Russell, June 4, 1862.
Ansell Burnham, Nov. 24, 1862.
John Berkeley, Feb. 13, 1863.
Otis S. Merrill, Mar. 2, 1863.
Chas. W. Cole, Mar. 3, 1863.
Andrew J. Fish, Apr. 18, 1863.
Nicholas Tuttle, Apr. 25, 1863.
Michael Hughes, May 26, 1863.
Martin Hayward, June, 1863.
C. W. Needham, June 30, 1863.
Henry E. Chase, July, 1863.
John F. Spofford, July 8, 1863.
Chas. Lee Foster, Aug. 8, 1863.
Ansel Peabody, Aug. 19, 1863.
Benj. W. Pingree, Dec. 14, 1863.
Henry W. Stevens, Mar. 11, 1864.
Thos. S. Porter, Apr. 16, 1864.
L. G. Phelps, July 22, 1864.
G. W. Ray, Sept. 23, 1864.
C. W. Bridges, Sept. 24, 1864.
Wallace W. Ray, Sept. 25, 1864.
J. A. Needham, Dec. 14, 1864.
Chas. Angier, Dec. 15, 1864.
Abram Hayward, Oct. 1, 1865.
Harrison Longley, May 12, 1867.
Henry L. Lovejoy, Sept. 1, 1867.
Elbridge G. Manning, May 31, 1869.
J. B. Fuller, Mar. 27, 1871.
Jos. H. Farnham, Jan. 14, 1873.
Danl. L. Plummer, Feb. 4, 1874.
Wm. Johnson Damon, July 3, 1875
Chas. K. Hedley, Apr. 30, 1877.

The whole amount of the money raised and spent by the town on account of the war, exclusive of State aid, was $40,795.10. The amount of money raised and spent in aid of payment of State aid to families of volunteers during the four years of war, and repaid by the Commonwealth, $12,936.94.

Among the sons of North Andover who have made themselves distinguished by civil and military service, and by great qualities in the Civil War, General Isaac I. Stevens ranks with the foremost. He was a son of Isaac Stevens; was born in 1817; educated at Franklin and Phillips Academies; was appointed a cadet in West Point in 1834 by the Hon. Gayton P. Osgood, at that time member of Congress; was graduated in 1838, and entered the engineer corps of the army. He was stationed for many years at Newport, R. I., in charge of Fort Adams; and while there he married Miss Hazard, a lady of talents and accomplishments. In 1853 he was appointed Governor of Washington Territory by President Pierce, and, in connection with General Frederick W. Lander, surveyed the route now occupied by the Northern Pacific Railroad. In 1855 he was returned as a delegate in Congress from that Territory, and distinguished himself by his activity and industry for his constituency in that important section of the country. He was a Democrat in politics, and took an active part in the campaign of 1860. When the war broke out, in 1861, he entered at once in active military service, and his skill and courage were at once recognized. He was killed at Chantilly, Va., September 1, 1862, while rallying his men.

General Stevens possessed great intellectual powers, which manifested themselves from early boyhood. He was in many respects the first scholar of his day at Franklin Academy, and was a favorite of Mr. Simeon Putnam, the most critical of teachers. On his entry at West Point he rose to high rank at once, and was graduated with the first honors of his class. In addition to his mathematical genius, which was great, he possessed strong reasoning powers, keenness of perception and the courage of his convictions. His death was sincerely and deeply mourned.

Education.—In North Andover the attention of the people was turned early to the work of education. Not only were they directed by the order of the court, providing for this "inland plantation," but their own judgment led them to consider how schools should be established and the children taught. The leading men in the Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay colonies were well educated, many of them being graduates of English universities, and they set high value on education as the foundation of a civil organization.

"The Legislature, in 1647, considering the great importance of a general diffusion of knowledge, made provision for free schools by ordering that every township of fifty families shall provide a school, in which children may be taught to read and write; and that every town of a hundred families shall maintain a grammar school, in which youth may be prepared for college, to which another was added in 1683, providing that every township of more than five hundred families should maintain two grammar schools and two writing-schools, a burthen which, considering the feeble means of the colony, and the dark period when it was assumed, was no doubt vastly greater than any similar burthen that has been borne since; and, when compared with the present wealth of the State, greater than any one of its civil expenses. It is a singular fact, too, that no legal requisitions made since, have, even in name and form, come up to this noble standard established by our poor and suffering forefathers in the middle of the seventeenth century.

"In 1701 it was voted that a convenient school-house be erected at the parting of the ways, by Joseph Wilson's, to be twenty feet long and sixteen feet wide; and the selectmen were directed to employ a grammar school master from year to year. Soon after the division of the town, the grammar school was kept alternately in each parish.

"Schools for small children were maintained by subscription in various parts of the town, and kept by females."

Mr. Dudley Bradstreet was in 1703 selected by the selectmen of the town, teacher of the school provided for by the building near Joseph Wilson's, and he was undoubtedly the first officially appointed teacher in

the town—at least he is the first on record. In the business of teaching he was succeeded by John Barnard 1709, Joseph Dorr, William Cooke, Thomas Paine, and in 1718 by Mr. Withum. In the middle of the eighteenth century provision was made for schools in the outlying districts. From that time the district school system was carefully supported and diligently pursued. In them the great mass of the children were educated. The children and youths of each district, ranging in age from ten to twenty-one years, filled the modest school-houses, often to the number of fifty, and most of them closely connected by family ties. The discipline of these schools was usually enforced by great physical energy; the teachers were often the poor and energetic undergraduates of New England colleges, and the pupils were graduated with all their natural faculties unimpaired for the active service of life. Out of this primitive system has grown the grading of schools now in vogue in the country, of which the town of North Andover has "six district schools—two of which are graded—making in all thirteen schools, including the grammar schools."

Teaching during the existence of the district school system was a profession adopted by well-educated men as an honorable and useful and somewhat profitable occupation. Dr. Berry and Mr. Stevens, natives of North Andover, teachers in Nashville, Tenn., and Mr. Henry Osgood in Danvers, were distinguished in their day for their efficiency as teachers of schools of a high order. Mr. Farnham Spofford, a teacher in the district schools of his native town, North Andover for many years, removed in 1827 to Nantucket, where for fourteen years, till 1841, he had charge of the principal grammar school of the island. Without the training of normal schools and without any special education for their task, these men, and many others similarly situated, conducted useful and influential schools, advancing many of them, from the grammar school to the academy; and from the same sphere in life came a faithful and capable class of female teachers, mindful of their domestic duties and family ties—motherly teachers, to whose hearts children appealed, and whose minds were strong enough for school purposes, and who gave additional reputation to the Fosters and Peterses, whose names they bore. Over all these schools the minister of the parish kept a watchful eye and exerted a most useful influence. In 1800 Thomas Kittridge, Deacon Benjamin Farnum, Samuel Johnson, Michael Parker, Nathan Barker and Jonathan Ingalls were appointed a committee, in addition to the ministers of the gospel and the selectmen of the town, to visit the schools and to inquire into the regulations thereof, and to report to the proficiency, conduct and regularity of the scholars, and to advise, assist and direct respecting the same, as they shall judge will best promote a virtuous, religious and useful education.

From the humble beginning of the fathers, North Andover has advanced to an annual appropriation of $13,300, and to six hundred and eighty-four pupils in all the classes of her schools.

As the demand for higher education increased, the endowment of the academy became quite general in the colonies. The branches taught in these institutions constituted the foundation of classical culture in the colleges, gave the youthful minds who pursued them great strength, and established a corps of scholars from whom the distinguished students sprung. The course of study was not extensive, but it had nothing in it which was superfluous or confusing. A graduate from an academy found himself prepared to enter at once on the curriculum of the college, and adapted to the companionship of the learned men in those days, who made scholarship a profession. For the practical purposes of life the district school furnished all the necessary accomplishments; but those who occupied the pulpit, and interpreted and applied the laws, and devoted themselves to the health of the community, pursued a higher course of study, and to a certain degree formed a class by themselves. Their minds seemed to be strengthened by classical culture, and the educational methods adopted by scholars in the academy and students in the college recognized no royal road to learning. The strongest mental powers were called into action, and when the foundation of academic culture was laid, it was laid for a life-time, and formed a part of the character of him who had laid it. Minds thus cultivated were fitted for any walk in life to which vigorous thought could be applied; and the strength they acquired by concentrated scholarly discipline enabled them to grasp with ease those minor subjects which belong to daily life.

To these institutions, therefore, the leaders of state and society turned for the mental discipline their duty required. The public high school was unknown. The privately-endowed academy grew up out of the social and civil requirements of the earlier days, as the State-endowed high and normal schools are the natural growth of these later days. Phillips Academy at Exeter, Phillips Academy at Andover, Dummer Academy at Byfield, Franklin Academy at North Andover all belong to those institutions of learning which are classed with Rugby and Eton, and can boast of sons to whom Christian civilization owes an incalculable debt,—clergymen, jurists, physicians, statesmen, authors, scientists, ethical teachers. The scholar in those days was counted of value to society.

As early as 1787 the establishment of an academy in North Andover began to be discussed, and after the lapse of more than ten years, in 1799, land liberally offered by Jonathan Stevens was accepted for the location, and subscriptions were made for the erection of a building. The school was organized for the education of both sexes, and was called the North Parish Free School until 1803, when, by an

act of the court, it was named Franklin Academy. The history of the school is almost entirely a matter of tradition. It seems to be well known that Mr. Stowe, of Reading, was the first preceptor, and that he was succeeded in 1800–1 by the Rev. James Flint, D.D., afterward a distinguished divine and author of many favorite and beautiful hymns. About 1801–4 Nathaniel Peabody managed the male department and Elizabeth Palmer the female, who were afterwards married, and were the parents of Elizabeth P. Peabody, the well-known writer and philanthropist, and Sophia Peabody, the wife of Nathaniel Hawthorne, and Mary Peabody, the wife of Horace Mann. The school, under their tuition, was successful, and they were long remembered with great affection by the people of the town. Samuel L. Knapp, a graduate of Harvard in 1804, a bright writer, an eccentric thinker, an enthusiastic author of lives of distinguished lawyers and editor of the *Boston Gazette*, had charge of the school in 1805 and 1806. He was followed by Samuel L. Burnside, afterward a prominent lawyer in Worcester, and James C. Merrill, who rose to the distinction of judge.

Following these were David Damon, in 1812, who became an able, eloquent and powerful Unitarian preacher, and whose capacity and attainments were the admiration of all who knew him; the Rev. Robert Page; John Cleaveland, brother of the distinguished teacher, Nehemiah Cleaveland, of Topsfield, and afterward a successful lawyer in New York in 1825; and Stephen Coburn in 1826, a graduate of Andover Theological Seminary, a teacher and postmaster for many years in Ipswich.

The reputation of the school, however, was made by Simeon Putnam, who took charge about 1817 and continued as teacher until shortly before his death, May 19, 1833, with the exception of a little over a year, 1825–27, during which, on account of a disagreement with the trustees, he occupied a building his own. During nearly sixteen years, from 1817 to 1833, Mr. Putnam was the great teacher of youth in the town. He was born in Rutland, Mass., was graduated at Harvard in 1811, a contestant with Edward Everett for the first scholarship of the class, and having taken his second degree in 1817, commenced his work as a teacher, for which he was thoroughly accomplished. He believed in discipline and endeavored to enforce it by means not now recognized as a necessary part of school arrangement. He did not quite understand the limitations of a dull mind, and felt that application alone was necessary to solve the hardest problem and to learn the most difficult lesson. The value of time he believed in, and often advised his scholars to "make time" when they complained that the hours were too short for their purposes. For a brilliant scholar, however, he had the warmest affection. He was in immediate sympathy with a fine recitation, and the boy who made it was at once close to his heart. The relations he established between himself and the talented youth who were placed under his care were not those which exist between a teacher and his pupils, but those which bring scholars into a cultivated fraternity. His knowledge of the classics was most accurate, and his faculty for imparting his knowledge was extraordinary. It was his delight to analyze the structure of a sentence, and to solve an idiom, and his rendering of Greek and Latin into English was exact and at the same time graceful and expressive. It has been said that he was harsh—but while he met disobedience with severity and knew no remedy for disorderly conduct but condign punishment, the encouragement he offered the bright and the obedient was as kindly as the influence of spring upon the face of nature. The tributes paid him by his patrons and pupils were full of kind regard and respect, and were a recognition of the power of great and good qualities to obliterate the memory of petty annoyances and irritations. Over all his life was shed the influence of a stern religious faith to whose requirements he was always obedient. In morals, religion and action, he accustomed himself to hew to the line, and he expected those connected with him to follow his example. His books were selected with great care; his horses were swift and spirited; he rode with precision; he marshaled boys like a martinet. "If you had been in Bonaparte's army you would have been shot," he said to a clumsy and unfortunate youth, who dropped his books by the way, as he was marching in line from one school building to another.

Among his neighbors and friends, Mr. Putnam met all his obligations with exactness, and discharged his duties liberally and conscientiously. In the social circle his conversation was most attractive—the outporing of a well-stored and discriminating mind. In his sphere he was an autocrat, and the community in which he lived recognized his power. As a teacher he strengthened many a weak mind and inspired and developed many a strong one. Timothy and Brewster Walker and Cornelius Conway Felton were scholars of whom he was proud; there were hundreds in whom he took a personal interest through life. He had a keen understanding of the duty of an educator.

In 1827 Mr. Putnam took as an associate teacher the Rev. Cyrus Pierce, who had been a faithful and useful Unitarian clergyman, settled for a long time in North Reading, and subsequently the "father of the normal-school system" of Massachusetts. The sturdy qualities of Mr. Pierce made the association complete.

Mr. Putnam married Abigail S. Fay, of Concord, a sister of Judge S. P. P. Fay, a most amiable and intelligent woman, whose kindly influence was felt wherever she was known. Their children were Rev. Charles S., rector in the Church of the Redeemer, Brooklyn, N. Y., who died in 1860, aged forty-two; Professor John N., of Dartmouth College, a most accomplished Greek scholar and a man of the sweetest character, who died in 1863, aged forty-one; and

Samuel P. P. F., a beautiful boy, who died at the age of four from an accident.

The other preceptors of the academy were Benjamin Eddy Cotting, 1833; John A. Richardson, 1833-36; John White Brown and Charles Allen, 1839-40; John Maynard, 1841-45; Geo. B. Loring, 1841; Hiram Berry, 1845-47. The succeeding teachers were Isaac T. Case and Spencer Wills, of Bowdoin College. The school was given up about 1853, and the old academy building has since been used as a stable to the Bradstreet house, the former residence of Mr. Putnam.

Franklin Academy was one of the first schools of this description, in which female scholars were taught and female teachers employed. During its early years a preceptor and a preceptress were engaged, and the academy building was divided into two rooms for their accommodation. The female teachers were somewhat distinguished. They were Elizabeth Palmer, to whom allusion has already been made; Abby Dowse, who was the mother of the Rev. Chandler Robbins and the Rev. Samuel D. Robbins; Susan Bulfinch, Charlotte Verstille, Hannah Bancroft, Joanna Prince, Nancy Denney, Adeline and Susan Abbott, daughters of the Rev. Abiel Abbot, of Beverly; Hannah Osgood, Martha Lincoln, Mary Kendall, Lucy Jane Hamlen.

Industries.—North Andover has always been a prosperous town. Possessed of a good soil, it attracted an industrious and thrifty body of settlers, and it took a foremost rank in agricultural enterprise, when the cultivation of the soil constituted almost the entire occupation of the people. The farms have varied in size from ten to three hundred acres, and still retain about these proportions. The early occupants of the land possessed great skill in the selection of good soil, and for many years they were able to raise large crops without expensive fertilizing, or an extravagant amount of labor: and the farmers contributed their share of the remarkable crops recorded for Essex County by Colonel Timothy Pickering. The pasturage also was remarkably good. Scattered over the entire territory, from the fertile and well-tilled lands lying east of the Great Pond to the boundary now drawn between the two towns, was a body of yeomanry who secured an ample subsistence from well managed farms. Their homesteads were in good order and constructed with ample proportions; and they constituted a rural population which, in intelligence and resolution, in good order and business success, could not be surpassed. The history of their farms and homes is a tale of industry and economy, of commanding influence and energy which have entered into every great enterprise in our country. While the fathers have pursued their quiet avocations at home, the sons have gone forth to broader fields and more conspicuous service, having learned the lesson that the same qualities which secure success in a narrow sphere will avail in a large one. In the economy of these farms has been reared many a successful merchant; in the domestic intelligence of these homes have been taught the rudiments of an education which has often broadened into the capacity and culture required by influential public service.

Formerly the agriculture of the town consisted in the raising of the ordinary products required for subsistence and the local markets. The orchard, the cornfield, the meadow all contributed their proportion, and dairying was esteemed a profitable pursuit. Recently all this enterprise has been diversified, and largely increased by the great local markets which have gathered in the neighborhood, and the growing wealth of the people has converted many of the farms into estates. The North Andover of to-day is not only a good farming town, but presents a most beautiful and attractive landscape, charming enough by nature, but most charming from cultivation.

In the mean time manufactures have increased to a great extent. From the primitive mills of Joseph Parker and Stephen Johnson, who dammed the Cochichewick in 1671 or thereabouts, the growth of mill property has been enormous. It is unnecessary to recall the long list of mill-sites, of which nothing now remains but a decayed timber or the grassy mounds which once restrained the water. Grist-mills were always encouraged by the colonies, and they multiplied on every stream. Fulling-mills were a necessity also. But the spinning and weaving were performed by members of the family, the flax and wool being raised on the farm—and here and there a weaving-room and spinning-wheel, long gone into disuse, may be found in the ancient houses. The later attempts at the manufacture of paper and powder were not entirely successful, and gradually the water power of the town was devoted to turning the wheels of woolen-mills and machine-shops. The early founders of the woolen industry seem to have been attracted by the Cochichewick, and some of the most skillful of those who came from England to pursue this business established themselves here. Arthur, John and James Scholfield were the pioneers, and it was they who gave the first real impetus to that industry which has at last grown to such huge proportions. They bought land in Andover, on the Cochichewick and Shawshin, set up their carding-machines, but ultimately joined Nathaniel Stevens in his more capacious and better organized building on the same stream. On the site of the primitive carding-mill has grown up a large manufacturing establishment, and the Stevens Mill has grown into an imposing structure, well-equipped and successfully managed.

The pioneer in all this enterprise was undoubtedly Nathaniel Stevens. He was born in North Andover, October 18, 1786, a son of Jonathan Stevens; was educated at Franklin Academy with his brothers William, who was graduated at Harvard in 1819, and was for a long time judge of the Municipal Court at Lawrence, and Isaac, who was distinguished as a philanthro-

pist and reformer. He commenced life as a seaman, making a voyage to Leghorn in 1804, and afterwards a trader in his native town from 1810 to 1812. In 1815 he married Miss Harriet Hale, daughter of Moses Hale, of Chelmsford, having, in 1813, through the advice of his father-in-law, embarked in the manufacturing of flannels. Having engaged James Scholfield to manage his mill, he united with Dr. Joseph Kittredge and Josiah Monroe in conducting the business. Captain Stevens (a title which he acquired from commanding a company of militia in 1815) was the first to introduce American-made flannels into the market. In spite of the discouragements of small capital, narrow quarters, a market flooded with foreign goods and the adverse counsels of his friends, he persevered and lived long enough to witness a handsome fortune of his own, and a national woolen industry employing profitably millions of dollars of capital and thousands of operatives enjoying the comforts which attend labor in the United States under the fostering care of a protective tariff. As his business increased, his bounty was bestowed on all the worthy objects of the town. He encouraged internal improvements, cared for the poor, cultivated with great success his ancestral acres, was a model of industry and energy. He never felt fatigue, he said, "until he was fifty years old." He believed in the value of sound learning, and he gave his numerous family the best education to be found. In politics he was an ardent Democrat, a supporter of Jackson, and a most formidable antagonist in debate whenever called on to defend the policy of his administration, and when in his old age he found his country in danger of disruption, his loyalty was fervid, his hand was ever open to support the flag, and his voice was raised in defense of the principles for which the war was fought. He died in 1865.

Capt. Stevens left five sons, all of whom engaged in the business of manufacturing,—Charles A. Stevens, an enterprising manufacturer at Ware, Mass., for some years a member of the Governor's Council; Henry H. Stevens, the founder of an extensive linen-mill in Douglas, Mass.; Moses T. Stevens, the owner of the largest private woolen establishment in the country, formerly a Senator from Essex County and Representative from North Andover; George Stevens and Horace N. Stevens, both of whom were connected with the business in North Andover and who died in middle life. He also left three daughters, Julia Maria, who married the Rev. Sylvan S. Hunting; Catharine, who married the Hon. Oliver Stevens; Ann Eliza, who married John H. D. Smith.

A contemporary of Capt. Stevens was Abraham Marland, who at one time carried on a mill in North Andover.

Next in order on the Cochichewick comes the machine shop established in 1836 on the privilege owned by Isaac Osgood and occupied by his grist-mill. The founders of the machine shop were Charles Barnes, George H. Gilbert and Parker Richardson. The property underwent several changes until, in 1851, George L. Davis and Charles Furber bought the entire interest. Mr. Furber died in 1857 and his place in the firm was filled by Daniel T. Gage and John A. Wiley, the former of whom withdrew in 1860. In January, 1861, Joseph M. Stone, of Manchester, N. H., became a partner; and in 1867 George G. Davis, Joseph H. Stone and James H. Davis became members of the firm. Since that time George G. Davis has withdrawn to business in Boston, and in 1886 James H. Davis died

This concern has been remarkably prosperous and has organized a manufacturing village of large proportions and great industry. The partners in the business have all been most exemplary men,—accurate and trustworthy in business, useful members of society, and several of them having rendered valuable service to the State in the Senate and House of Representatives. The founder, the Hon. George L. Davis, still lives to enjoy the ample returns of his business, and the respect and esteem of a community in which he has for a long time been a generous benefactor and a faithful supporter of Christian institutions.

Below this "Machine-Shop Village" stands the North Andover Mill, erected near the site of the old stone mill, which was occupied in 1828 by George Hodges and Edward Pranker. In 1839 the new mill, a large brick structure, was put in operation, and was owned by a company consisting of Eben Sutton, Dr. Joseph Kittredge and George Hodges. This property fell mainly into the hands of Eben Sutton, and together with the Sutton Mill, lower down the stream, constituted a part of the large estate left by Eben Sutton at his death, in November, 1864. The management of this property is now in the hands of General Eben Sutton, a son of General William Sutton, and a nephew of the final founder of the mills.

The three woolen-mills on the Cochichewick employ about three hundred and twenty operatives and manufacture about 1,050,000 pounds of wool.

Witchcraft.—A belief in a personal devil and his agents on earth was a prevailing idea among the Puritans,—an idea which they did not leave behind them when they came to America. Demonology had played a prominent part in every form of faith in the East, from the earliest days. It was worked into Greek philosophy and poetry, and when Christianity dawned, the doctrine of demons was accepted as a necessary element of religious life. The supernatural possessed an indescribable charm, and conjurers and sorcerers and exorcists were considered as important in society as lawyers and the whole order of priestcraft. An epidemic witchcraft broke out in 1374, in France, in which great groups of festive men and women became entranced. For more than two centuries all Europe was apparently overrun with sorcerers and witches, thousands of witches suffering death by fire annually. In the reign of Francis I.

more than one hundred thousand witches are said to have been put to death. Demoniacal traditions were brought to this country by the early settlers, and the frightful judicial discipline applied in Essex County in 1692, although of comparatively small extent, constitutes a painful chapter in our colonial history, mitigated only by the fact that here alone in the world the delusion was suppressed by the popular voice—and suppressed completely—while it still lingered in many parts of Europe.

The Tragedy of 1692, usually attributed to Salem, was enacted also in North Andover. More than fifty persons were complained of there, and Dudley Bradstreet, the magistrate who refused to grant more warrants, was obliged to flee for his life. A recital of the experiences of persons belonging to North Andover will give a clear and definite idea of the widespread outrage in which this town was involved.

Nahemiah Abbot was taken to Salem for trial, April 22, 1692, and the following is his examination :

"What say you, are you guilty of witchcraft, of which you are suspected or not? No, sir. I say before God, before whom I stand, that I know nothing of witchcraft. Who is this man? Ann Putnam named him. Mary Wolcott said she had seen his shape. What do you say to this? I never did hurt them. Who hurt you, Ann Putnam? That man. I never hurt her. Ann Putnam said he is upon the beam, just such a discovery of the persons carried out she confessed; and if you would find mercy of God you must confess. If I should confess this I must confess what is false. Tell how far you have gone; who hurts you? I do not know. I am absolutely free. As you say, God knows. If you will confess the truth, we desire nothing else, that you may not hide your guilt, if you are guilty, and therefore confess, if so. I speak before God, that I am clear from this accusation. What, in all respects? Yes, in all respects. Doth this man hurt you? Their mouths were stopped. You hear several accuse, though one cannot open her mouth. I am altogether free. Charge him not, unless it be he. This is the man say some, and some say he is very like him. How did you know his name? He did not tell me himself, but other witches told me! Ann Putnam said it is the same man, and then she was taken in a fit. Mary Wolcott, is this the man? He is like him, I cannot say it is he. Mercy Lewis said, it is not the man. They all agreed the man had a bunch on his eyes. Ann Putnam in a fit, said, Be you the man? Ay, do you say you be the man? Did you put mist before my eyes? Then he was sent forth till several others were examined. When he was brought in again, by reason of much people and many in the windows so that the accusers could not have a clear view of him, he was ordered to be abroad, and the accusers to go forth to him and view him in the light, which they did, and in the presence of the magistrate and many others, discoursed quietly with him, one and all a-putting him but yet said he was like that man, but he had not the wen they saw in his apparition.

"Note. He was a lully-faced man, and stood shaded by reason of his own hat, so that for a time he seemed to some by-standers and observers to be exceedingly like the person the afflicted did describe.

"Mr. Samuel Parris, [minister] desired to take in writing the examination of Nehemiah Abbot, both that which is aforesaid, and upon hearing the [illegible] examination.

"John Hawthorne, } Assistants."
"Jona. Corwin, }

As a [illegible] to this [illegible] comes another examination [illegible] September 2, 1692, before the same John Hawthorne and his associates—this time of a most exemplary woman, Mary Osgood, wife of a worthy man, Captain Osgood, and bearing a name which has been known at this day as a synonym of all female loveliness and Christian virtues.

"She [illegible] was in a melancholy state and condition, she used to walk abroad in her orchard; and upon a certain time she saw the appearance of a cat, at the end of the house, which yet she thought was a real cat. However, at that time, it diverted her from praying to God, and instead thereof she prayed to the devil; about which time she made a covenant with the devil, who as a black man came to her and presented her a book, upon which she laid her finger, and that left a red spot; and that upon her signing the devil told her he was her god, and that she should serve and worship him; and she believes she consented to it. She says further that about two years agone, she was carried through the air in company with Deacon Frye's wife, Ebenezer Barker's wife, and Goody Tyler, to five-mile pond, where she was baptized by the devil, who dipt her face in the water and made her renounce her former baptism, and told her she must be his, soul and body, forever, and that she must serve him, which she promised to do. She says the renouncing her first baptism was after her dipping, and that she was transported back again through the air, in company with the forenamed persons in the same manner as she went, and believes they were carried upon a pole. *Q.* How many persons were upon the pole? *A.* As I have said before, viz., four persons and no more, but whom she had named above. She confesses she has afflicted three persons, John Sawdy, Martha Sprague and Rose Foster, and that she did it by pinching her bed-clothes and giving consent the devil should do it in her shape, and that the devil could not do it without her consent. She confesses the afflicting persons in the court by the glance of her eye. She says as she was coming down to Salem to be examined she and the rest of the company with her stopped at Mr. Phillips', to refresh themselves, and the afflicted persons being behind them up in the road, came up just as she was mounting again, and were then afflicted, and cried out upon her, so that she was forced to stay until they were all past, and said she only looked that way towards them. *Q.* Do you know the devil can take the shape of an innocent person and afflict? *A.* I believe he cannot. *Q.* Who taught you this way of witchcraft? *A.* Satan; and that he promised her abundance of satisfaction and quietness in her future state, but never performed anything; and that she has lived more miserably and more discontented since than ever before. She confesses further that she herself, in company with Goody Parker, Goody Tyler and Goody Dean, had a meeting at Moses Tyler's house last Monday night, to afflict, and that she and Goody Dean carried the shape of Mr. Dean, the minister, between them, to make persons believe that Mr. Dean afflicted. *Q.* What hindered you from accomplishing what you intended? *A.* The Lord would not suffer it so to be; that the devil should afflict in an innocent person's shape. *Q.* Have you been at any other witch-meetings? *A.* I know nothing thereof, as I shall answer in the presence of God and his people; but said, that the black man stood before her, and told her that what she had confessed was a lie; notwithstanding, she said that what she had confessed was true, and there to put her hand. Her husband being present was asked, if he judged his wife to be in any way discomposed. He answered, that having lived with her so long, he doth not judge her to be any way discomposed, but has to believe what she has said is true. When Mistress Osgood was first called, she afflicted Martha Sprague and Rose Foster by the glance of her eyes, and recovered them out of their fits by the touch of her hand. Mary Lacey and Betty Johnston and Hannah Post saw Mistress Osgood afflicting Sprague and Foster. The said Mary Lacey and Hannah Post and Betty Johnson, jun., and Rose Foster and Mary Richardson were afflicted by Mistress Osgood, in the time of their examination, and recovered by her touching of their hands.

"I, underwritten, being appointed by authority to take this examination, do testify upon oath, taken in court, that this is a true copy of the substance of it, to the best of my knowledge. January 5, 1692-93. The within Mary Osgood was examined before their Majesty's justices of the peace in Salem.

"Attest, JOHN HIGGINSON, Just. Pac."

The following recantation made by these unhappy women presents a most humiliating spectacle of the arrogance of one side and the pitiable demoralization of the other, and fills us with indignation and shame alike :

"We, whose names are underwritten, inhabitants of Andover; when as that horrible and tremendous judgment, beginning at Salem Village in the year 1692, by some called witchcraft, first breaking forth at Mr. Paris' house, several young persons, being seemingly afflicted, did accuse several persons for afflicting them, and many there believing it to be so, we being informed that if a person was sick, the afflicted person could



Barney Loring

tell what or who was the cause of that sickness; Joseph Ballard, of Andover, his wife being sick at the same time, he either from himself or by the advice of others, fetched two of the persons called the afflicted persons from Salem Village to Andover, which was the beginning of that dreadful calamity that befel us in Andover, believing the said accusations to be true, sent for the said persons to come over to the meeting-house in Andover, the afflicted persons being there. After Mr. Barnard had been at prayer, we were blindfolded, and our hands were laid on the afflicted persons, they being in their fits and falling in their fits at our coming into their presence, as they said; and some led us and laid our hands upon them, and then they said they were well, and that we were guilty of afflicting them Whereupon we were all seized as prisoners, by a warrant from the justice of the peace and forthwith carried to Salem. And, by reason of that sudden surprisal, we knowing ourselves altogether innocent of that crime, we were all exceedingly astonished and amazed, and consternated and affrighted out of our reason; and our nearest and dearest relations, seeing us in that dreadful condition, and knowing our great danger, apprehended there was no other way of saving our lives, as the case was then circumstanced, but by our confessing ourselves to be such and such persons as the afflicted represented us to be, they, out of tenderness and pity, persuaded us to confess what we did confess. And, indeed, that confession that it is said we made was no other than what was suggested to us by some gentlemen, they telling us that we were witches, and they knew it, which made us think that it was so; and our understandings, our reason, our faculties almost gone, we were not capable of judging of our condition; as also the hard measures they used with us rendered us incapable of making our defense, but said anything and everything which they desired, and most of what we said, was in effect a consenting to what they said. Some time after, when we were better composed, they telling us what we had confessed, we did profess that we were innocent and ignorant of such things; and we hearing that Samuel Wardwell had renounced his confession, and quickly after condemned and executed, some of us were told we were going after Wardwell. Mary Osgood, Deliverance Dane, Sarah Wilson, Mary Tyler, Abigail Barker, Hannah Tyler."

To the good character of all these women Dudley Bradstreet, Francis Dane, Sr., Thomas Barnard and fifty others bore witness in an elaborate statement.

The credulity and superstition and cruelty of this delusion are all manifested in these papers, and the sons of North Andover may well rejoice that the wave which swept inland from Salem had spent its force when it reached their community, and that with them the first protest against the madness was proclaimed.

Associations.—The citizens of North Andover have always been ready to associate themselves together for mutual improvement. As early as 1825 a temperance society was formed under the presidency of the Rev. Bailey Loring, who was an ardent and exemplary advocate of the cause, and through whose influence such speakers as Lucius Manlius Sargent, E. H. Chapin, Hosea Hildreth were induced to deliver their powerful arguments.

A lyceum was established in 1829, and courses of lectures were delivered in the church by Wilber, the astronomer, and in the hall of the brick-store by Hon. Gayton P. Osgood, Rev. Bailey Loring, Hon. Wm. Stevens, Dr. George Choate, of Salem, and others of distinction in the county. These courses of lectures were continued from time to time for many years.

A debating club was formed in 1841, of which James Stevens was president and George B. Loring secretary. This club met in Franklin Academy and discussed the prominent questions of the day.

A lodge of Free and Accepted Masons was organized some time prior to 1820, and had a large membership. Its records seem to have disappeared, and in the anti-Masonic excitement following 1830 the existence of the lodge was suspended. The order was revived, however, and June 24, 1875, the officers of Cochichewick Lodge were installed by the M.W. Percival J. Everett, Grand Master, and officers of the M. W. Grand Lodge of Massachusetts. The order of exercises consisted of a reception of Grand Officers, prayer by the Grand Chaplain, opening hymn, ceremonies of consecration, constitution by the M. W. Grand Master, hymn, procession to the church, installation of Worshipful Master, installation of the Senior Warden, installation of the Junior Warden, installation of the other officers, proclamation, prayer, hymn and an address by Brother Geo. B. Loring.

The officers of the lodge consisted of Louis Weil, W.M.; Joseph F. Allen, S.W.; John Parkhurst, J.W., Horace N. Stevens, Treasurer; Chas. F. Johnson, Secretary; Robert Brookhouse, Jr., S.D.; S. William Ingalls, J.D.; Joseph N. Taylor, Marshal; C. P. Merrill, Chaplain; Isaac N. Dixon, S.S.; Henry Newhall, J. S.; Fred. P. Hanaford, Tyler.

Ths following are the Past Masters who have presided over the lodge since the installation in 1875: John Parkhurst, 1876–77; Charles P. Merrill, 1878–79; Thomas K. Gilman, 1880–81; William W. Chickering, 1882–83; Loring B. Rea, 1884; Clinton C. Barber, 1885–'86; Calvin Rea, 1887.

The lodge has continued in a flourishing condition and its work is well performed. The officers for the year 1887–88 are Calvin Rea, W.M.; George L. Smith, S.W.; John Barker, J.W.; John H. Sutton, Treasurer; Charles F. Johnson, Secretary; John S. Sanborn, Chaplain; Eben B. Downing, Marshal; Frank Tisdale, S.D.; George S. Weil, J.D.; George H. Perkins, S.S.; Artemas V. Chalk, J.S.; Edmund S. Colby, Organist; Frederick P. Hanaford, Tyler.

The object of this sketch is not so much to give the details or incidents of the town in full, as to record the part taken in the important events of local and national history in that portion of the ancient town first settled, and now called North Andover. The influence of the pioneers here was great; the theatre of their actions for generations was conspicuous in the colony and State; the political position was singularly important; the military service most honorable. The characteristics of the town have been remarkably preserved to this day; its prosperity and importance have been continued.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

REV. BAILEY LORING.

The Rev. Bailey Loring was born in Duxbury, Mass., December 10, 1786. He was the youngest child of William and Alithea (Alden) Loring, and

was descended from Caleb Loring, the founder of the family in the town of Hull. His father was a farmer and inn-keeper on the road from Plymouth to Boston, near the line of the town of Pembroke, and was an industrious, prudent citizen, well known to the numerous enterprising young men who traveled on foot from Cape Cod and the Old Colony to Boston in search of that fortune and distinction which many of them secured. The mother of Mr Loring was a descendant in direct line from John Alden, who came over in the "Mayflower," and who was a prominent magistrate of the Plymouth Colony. Chosen by Miles Standish to solicit for him the hand of Priscilla Mullins, he was met with the well-known inquiry: "Prithee, John, why do you not speak for yourself?" And the romantic matrimonial adventure which followed has become a subject of song and story, and forms a bright and radiant spot in the hard and gloomy annals of the colony. Mrs. Loring inherited the beauty of her paternal ancestor and the quiet wit of her maternal. Of their large family, five sons and two daughters, Bailey seems to have been the favorite. He was a handsome lad of an amiable disposition, which endeared him to the domestic circle, and his apt scholarship led to his selection as the son to be educated for the ministry—a calling to which every Puritan father felt he must dedicate at least one son at whatever cost and degree of self-sacrifice. Bailey Loring was graduated at Brown University in 1807, and entered at once on the study of divinity. He was the first scholar in his class, and had for his competitor and room-mate the Rev. Adoniram Judson, whose career as a missionary among the heathen was so distinguished and important. Mr. Loring commenced his theological studies with the Rev. John Allyn, of Duxbury, a graduate of Harvard in 1785, a rare scholar, a powerful thinker, an impressive preacher and a leader in the Arminian movement of that day, which advanced rapidly to Unitarianism and modified largely the theological thought of New England. The advantages offered by the Theological School at Andover, which was opened September 28, 1808, attracted the attention of all young men preparing for the ministry, and Mr. Loring presented himself at the dedication of that institution for the purpose of entering its classes. To an active and studious and devoted young man, with his mind bent on the sacred calling opening before him, and anxiously searching for the truth, the obligations which would be imposed on a graduate of the school were of deep importance. To professor and student alike, the Andover Creed was laid down as a rule of faith, and belief in it was naturally made the test of fitness for connection with the institution. In an interview with the Rev. Eliphalet Pearson, Mr. Loring was informed that he could not enter upon the ministry with the sanction and license of the school as then founded if he entertained theological views different from those laid down in the creed and taught by those who believed in it. He therefore returned to Dr. Allyn, and completed his studies under his guidance.

On May 3, 1807, the Rev. William Symmes, who had been pastor of the First Church in Andover for nearly half a century, died, and the parish made diligent search for a successor during the three following years. The Rev. Samuel Gay, on the verge of ordination, proved to be too Calvinistic; the Rev. Samuel Osgood preferred Springfield; the Rev. Timothy Alden and others, who preached as candidates, either did not suit or were not suited, and the choice fell at last on the Rev. Bailey Loring, a young man of twenty-three, who had been recommended as "an Arminian in theology and a Republican in politics" by the Rev. Joseph Richardson, the strong and independent leader, political and theological, in that day in Hingham, whose long service as a pastor covered many generations, and whose civil service extended to the halls of Congress.

He was ordained September 19, 1810. There seems to be no record of the council under which he was ordained or of the clergymen who took part in the services. But he took up the work where the Rev. Dr. Symmes had laid it down, and placed himself in intimate relations with the liberal clergy of that time, between whom and their Calvinistic brethren the lines were soon distinctly drawn. The Rev. Abiel Abbot, whose ministry in Coventry, Conn., was brought to a close by the Consociation of Tolland County "on the ground of his holding heretical doctrines," was his friend and adviser. The Rev. Abiel Abbot, D.D., of Beverly, who until 1810 was in the habit of exchanging with ministers denominated "Orthodox," but who, as the Unitarian controversy advanced, confined himself to an association with those whose "opinions were supposed to be in substantial accordance with his own," was a frequent occupant of Mr. Loring's pulpit. The Rev. Charles Lowell, D.D., sympathized with him and preached often for him. John Bartlett, David Damon, Hosea Hildreth, Cyrus Peirce, Nathaniel Whitman, Samuel Barrett, Ezra Stiles Gannett, Alexander Young, Charles W. Upham, James Flint, John Brazer, Peter Eaton, all frequented his house and his pulpit, and the Essex County Unitarian Association gathered annually around his fireside for friendly intercourse and an encouraging interchange of views. His relations with his Christian brethren of all denominations were friendly and liberal, and he was extremely reluctant to recognize that dividing line between the two branches of the Congregational Church, even while avowing and defending his liberal theological views. The divisions which arose were not created by himself; and when, in response to an invitation, he took part in an ecclesiastical council for the ordination of an Orthodox brother, his questions and suggestions were not considered quite pertinent, he quietly remarked: "It is evident I am but a carnal



Geo. B. Loring

spoke in your spiritual wheel," and withdrew. With the pastor of a church erected by subscriptions of the evangelical churches of Essex County, for the accommodation of a few worshippers in his own parish inclined to orthodoxy, he maintained most friendly intercourse. At the same time he placed the First Church of Andover in the front rank of the Unitarian Congregational Churches of the country and for forty years discharged the duties of a faithful and affectionate pastor and a sound and effective preacher. In the business affairs of his people and his parish, his advice was constantly sought and followed.

In hours of trial and sorrow his consolation came from the heart of a patient, devoted, trusting, pious Christian, and reached with solemn effect and support the wounded spirit. His sympathy with his parishioners was intense,—as intense as that of a father with his children. His manner in the pulpit was most impressive. His sermons were filled with sound advice, broad Christian doctrine, confidence in the Creator and love of his Son Jesus Christ. His prayers, for the fervor and power of which he was distinguished, were uttered in most devotional tones and expressed in language of great Scriptural beauty and devout effect. He was watchful for the general welfare of the community in which he lived; established a lyceum and contributed to its course of lectures; was a warm and early friend of temperance, and organized a total-abstinence society; encouraged the public schools, and visited them often; patronized the Franklin Academy, and always stood by the teachers; joined the young men in a debating club; and encouraged improvements in agriculture, of which he was extravagantly fond. He planted trees along the highway before village improvement societies were known. He represented his town in the Legislature.

Mr. Loring had no love of public display. He did his duty faithfully and conscientiously. In extemporaneous speech he was eminently successful, but he never made a point for the sake of applause, and he never allowed his zeal to outrun his judgment. In settling private disputes and public controversies, he gave each side the weight to which it was entitled, and impressed both with his desire for equal and exact justice. He published but little either in newspaper or magazine, two sermons preached in 1829, —one on "Gratitude" and one on "Profanity," and bound together—constituting all the work of this description he laid before the public. His power with his hearers consisted of his manifest suavity, his clearness of statement, his honest conviction and the sweetness of his voice and the serenity of his manner. He was a favorite and acceptable preacher in the pulpits of his denomination.

Mr. Loring resigned his pastorate February 17, 1850; and he died May 5, 1860. On his death the following resolutions were adopted in honor of his memory:

"*Resolved*, 1st. That the members of this Religious Society are deeply sensible of the loss they have sustained by the death of the Rev. Bailey Loring, who for nearly forty years was their Spiritual Instructor and Guide, and for nearly half a century an esteemed and respected citizen of the town.

"2d. That during the long period in which he officiated as our minister he displayed, in an eminent degree, all the virtues and graces that belong to and adorn the character of a Christian Divine. That as a preacher he was always found faithful to the cause of his Master in expounding the doctrine and enforcing the precepts of his holy word, reproving and rebuking sin wherever it was to be found, and inciting his hearers by the most alluring and weighty considerations to the love and practice of the Christian virtues. That as a pastor, he was instant in season and out of season in visiting the sick and relieving the distressed, so that every member of his society was sure of finding, at all times and under all circumstances of life, a friend, adviser and comforter in his minister; and that by his death the cause of education, morals and religion in this society and community has lost one of its strongest advocates and most sincere supporters.

"3d. That the interest he manifested in the welfare of his church and society, after his official connection with it was dissolved, and especially his regard for the intellectual improvement of his successors in the ministerial office, by the donation of his theological library for their use and benefit, will always be remembered by us with the most lively emotions of gratitude."

Mr. Loring married, February 20, 1816, Miss Sally Pickman Osgood, eldest child of Isaac and Rebecca T. (Pickman) Osgood, born in Salem, April 12, 1796. At the time of her marriage she was residing with her father in the North Parish, Andover. She was a person of rare beauty, a strong mind, a warm heart, and of fine social and domestic accomplishments. Educated to a life of luxury and ease, she entered upon her duties as a minister's wife with devotion and self-sacrifice, and endeared herself to the people of his charge by her constant sympathy and kindness, and by her zeal in the cause of the church which she had joined. She died July 18, 1835, and neither the pastor nor the people recovered from her loss. She left four sons,—George Bailey Loring, Isaac Osgood Loring, Gayton Pickman Loring and John Alden Loring.

GEORGE B. LORING.

Hon. Geo. B. Loring was born in the North Parish, Andover, November 8, 1817. He is the oldest son of the Rev. Bailey and Sally Pickman (Osgood) Loring, daughter of Isaac Osgood and Rebecca T. (Pickman) Osgood, born in Salem April 12, 1796.[1] She was a

[1] See life of Rev. Bailey Loring in this volume.

niece of Samuel Osgood, colonel in the Revolutionary army, member of the Continental Congress, first commissioner of the treasury, first Postmaster-General under Washington, and surveyor of the port of New York. Dr. Loring was fitted for college in Franklin Academy under the tuition of Simeon Putnam and Cyrus Pierce and John Richardson. He entered Harvard University in 1834 and was graduated in 1838. For a year after his graduation he taught school in Boston and in Andover, an occupation which he had taken up before he entered college, in the town of North Reading. In 1839 he began the study of medicine with Dr. Joseph Kittredge, of North Andover, pursued it for a time with Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes, and after attending medical lectures at Harvard and Dartmouth, he received the degree of M.D. at Harvard in 1842. For a short period he practiced in North Andover, and in 1843 he was appointed surgeon of the Marine Hospital, Chelsea, by John C. Spencer, Secretary of the Treasury, and entered upon the duties of his office September 1st of that year. He remained in this position until September 1, 1850, during which time he had made a journey to Europe (in 1848) to witness the revolutionary proceedings of that year, in which he was a correspondent of the *Boston Post*, from London, Paris and Naples; and he had also made an elaborate examination of and report upon the Marine Hospital System of the United States to Hon. Robert J. Walker, Secretary of the Treasury. In 1851 Dr. Loring removed to Salem, where he married and became interested in agriculture and the political questions of the day, and commenced a series of addresses, lectures and essays, which have been delivered in great numbers in many parts of the country. He was appointed postmaster of Salem in 1853 and remained in office until 1857. He then entered upon the business of agriculture with great assiduity and was active in the introduction of new methods and new machinery in that business. He was among the first to introduce the thorough drainage of clay lands into Massachusetts; encouraged the growing of root-crops largely, and imported and bred Ayrshire cattle as the breed best fitted to the New England farm. He became a careful student of farming in all its relations to American society and industry and discussed carefully, in writing and debate, its most important problems. He was for many years a member of the State Board of Agriculture in Massachusetts; was a Trustee of the Massachusetts Society for Promoting Agriculture from 1859 to 1863; was for a long time a Trustee and is now Vice-President of the Essex Agricultural Society, and has published a large collection of books and reports and addresses on the subject of agriculture. In 1864 he founded the New England Agricultural Society and has been its President from that time.

In politics, Dr. Loring was educated as a Democrat, in the school of Jackson, and under the immediate influence of his uncle, the Hon. Gayton P. Osgood, formerly member of Congress from the Essex North District. He was an earnest advocate of all those measures which were supposed to be conducive to the peace and prosperity of the country. The position of his party deprived him of all voice in the public affairs of Massachusetts, and he found himself at the beginning of the Civil War, which he had long predicted, in opposition to the party in power in the country. On the outbreak of hostilities, however, he commenced at once to encourage the support of the government, discussed in public address the importance of an active prosecution of the war and its inevitable results, and although differing in theory from the administration and believing for a time that the policy which induced the conservative men of Massachusetts to place Gen. Devens in the field as candidate for Governor against Gov. Andrew in 1862, was the way to success and honor, he took part in that struggle. His work as a political writer and speaker now became active and constant. He had taken a leading part in many conventions, State and national, and could not well avoid that kind of service which finds expression in such assemblies. In 1864 he declined to act with the Democratic party longer, refused to attend its national convention and declared himself in favor of an earnest support of President Lincoln's administration. In a letter addressed at that time in reply to Caleb Foote, John Bertram, Stephen B. Ives, Augustus Storey and others of Salem, he said:

"I am confident that our country will come honorably out of this contest, purified as gold that is tried by the fire. However much I may have deplored the strife, however much I may have regretted any policy which seemed to prolong and embitter it, I can see nothing before us at this hour but a determined march in the course pointed out to us. God knows the sufferings of the war are enough to appal the stoutest heart, and the sorrows which follow in its train are innumerable and sickening. But never before has such a service been placed in the hands of armies as is now submitted to ours. Never before have the statesmen of any age been charged with a duty so momentous as that which rests so solemnly on ours. I would have this people strengthen the hands of all its public servants, confident that when the day of peace does dawn it will bestow its light upon a nation united by common suffering, and engaged in one attempt to preserve unharmed a great, free government. That the prosperity and happiness, the good order and elevation of the nation absorb all the thought and effort of those who hold our destinies in their hands I cannot for a moment doubt. That our soil has been watered by the blood of our bravest sons in vain I cannot for a moment believe."

And in the same letter he made the following prediction, now so wonderfully fulfilled:

"But when the power of our country shall be established by the sword, and labor shall return to its accustomed channels, the fabulous wealth of India can hardly compare with that which may be drawn from our mines and our soil, and which will be created by the ceaseless ingenuity of our people on the land and on the sea."

Shortly after the re-election of Mr. Lincoln, Dr. Loring was called on to serve as a Republican in the Massachusetts House of Representatives. He entered that body in January, 1866, at a time when the contest had arisen between President Johnson and the party which placed him in power. In the adjustment of matters involved in the domestic econ-

omy of the Commonwealth, Dr. Loring took an active part; but as chairman of the Committee on Federal Relations, he felt especially called on to secure the approval of the Legislature for the stand taken by Charles Sumner in the matter of reconstruction, for which he had been bitterly denounced by the President. In his speech before the House on the state of the Union, he supported his resolutions with such convincing arguments that they were adopted almost unanimously by the House, and the course of Mr. Sumner, which became the policy of the country, was sustained. In 1867 he was returned again to the Legislature by a strong majority.

In 1868 Dr. Loring was selected as a State delegate to the Republican National Convention and took an active part in the nomination and election of Gen. Grant. He entered the field at this time as a lecturer and was constantly employed in this service, much of which was voluntarily contributed to the associations which called on him. In 1872 he was again elected a delegate to the Republican National Convention held in Philadelphia, in which he joined warmly in the renomination of Gen. Grant, and, as chairman of the Massachusetts delegation, brought forward the nomination of Henry Wilson to the Vice-Presidency. Again, in 1876, he was sent from the Sixth Congressional District as a delegate to the Republican National Convention at Cincinnati, and he used every endeavor to secure the nomination of Hon. James G. Blaine as Republican candidate for the Presidency. When the choice of the Convention fell upon Gov. Hayes, he entered warmly into the campaign, and in his canvass for Congress in the same year, carried the Republican ticket safely through his district.

During the campaign of 1872, Dr. Loring was elected Senator from the Second Essex District, composed of Marblehead, Salem, Peabody, Danvers, Wenham and Lynnfield. He was chosen president of the Senate in January, 1873, with but one dissenting vote, and during the four terms, 1873, '74, '75 and '76 he was re-elected to this position. While in the Senate he took active part in the debates on the important questions of the day. He advocated the grant of $50,000 to the Museum of Comparative Zoology, and secured the passage of the last act in this direction requested by Agassiz for the prosecution and completion of his immortal work. He opposed the union of the Hoosac Tunnel into a line of railroad owned and managed by the Commonwealth, and laid down the policy on which the tunnel was for years conducted. He led off in the debate which ended in the rescinding of the resolutions of the Legislature of 1872, condemning Charles Sumner for his proposition with regard to regimental colors. He presented a carefully-prepared argument on the right of suffrage under a republic in connection with the application for woman suffrage, and he pronounced eulogies on Dr. S. G. Howe, Charles Sumner and others who died during these years. These speeches were elaborately prepared, and were denominated in certain quarters "Legislative Orations."

Dr. Loring's Senatorial service ended in 1876, and he entered at once on a campaign for Congress in the Sixth Massachusetts District. The district was in the hands of the Democratic party, which was ably represented by the Hon. Charles P. Thompson, of Gloucester. The contest was conducted with great vigor by Dr. Loring, who presented his argument in favor of the Republican candidate for the Presidency and the platform of the party so forcibly that he was elected by a majority of twelve hundred votes. He took his seat in the Forty-fifth Congress and was re-elected to the Forty-sixth. During his Congressional service his speeches commanded the attention of the House. His argument on the currency question in favor of resumption, in November, 1877, was pronounced at the time to be one of the most comprehensive and powerful arguments made on that subject. There is space only for a single excerpt, touching our commercial relations with other countries:

"But we are warned, Mr. Speaker, that the time has now arrived when the United States can establish an independent financial basis, and subduing all commercial nations to her own system, can sit in triumph over a universal monetary empire of their own creating. Now, sir, if this were necessary even, it is impossible. When our bonds were first placed upon the European markets during the war, they were obliged to meet the great discrepancy which then existed between our paper currency and coin. The existence of war was an impediment, it is true, to favorable negotiation. The disturbed condition of the country had injured our credit. But the fact that we were using as legal-tender a currency vastly depreciated at home, which might at any moment be forced upon the holders of our securities, was the foremost obstacle to our financial success. We were then running a system of our own, and were obliged to pay the price for that luxury. Can we expect to change this natural law of financial intercourse by legislative enactments and bend all policies to our own? No, gentlemen, the attempt to set aside the commercial laws of the world is a reflection upon the commercial wisdom of those nations with whom we are compelled to deal, and is sure to cast discredit upon ourselves. The best commercial relations are established by a monetary system as nearly uniform as possible between those nations which are engaged in commercial transactions. Our trade is becoming more and more intimately connected with the great markets of the world. Can any man suppose that this trade can be advantageously conducted by placing ourselves in discredit, while we are offering bills of exchange drawn on us in the conduct of our internal affairs? I think not. My anticipations with regard to the future of this country will not allow me to entertain a thought of such folly, even through a mistaken policy. The time, I doubt not, is rapidly approaching when the immense resources of our land will so far enter into the commerce of the world that the controlling financial forces will be turned into our hands. It is not unreasonable to suppose that our supply to foreign markets will for the future far exceed our demand upon them. The growth of our great inland States, with all the accumulation of productions which increasing skill and untiring energy can create, must necessarily stimulate a commercial activity which for power and extent has hardly yet been equaled. The unrivaled channels of communication which make this continent a commercial highway must of necessity be occupied, not only by our local traffic, but by that tide of trade which has for so many ages set from east to west, and only now requires mercantile enterprise and mercantile solvency to be turned in the opposite direction. Whenever we honestly and firmly place ourselves in accord with the great commercial nations of the earth, and unite with them in supporting a standard of value on which they can all rely, the time will have arrived which will ultimately give us the controlling financial power of the world."

His speech in favor of an appropriation to rebuild William and Mary College was most enthusiastically

received by the entire House, and won for its author a high reputation as a scholar, and the warm respect of educated men in every State in the Union, as well as the deep gratitude of the sons of Virginia everywhere. His eulogy on Judge Collamer, on the presentation of his statue by the State of Vermont, was a just and eloquent tribute to that distinguished statesman. His defense of Massachusetts made a great impression on the House, and refuted completely the charges of disfranchisement and disloyalty which had been made against her. And his support of all measures conducive to the development of agriculture always met with a warm and favorable response on the part of the House.

In his defense of Massachusetts, January 20, 1881, he said:

"Now, sir, how could a State, animated by this force, fail to make itself felt in all the great crises which have attended the formation and growth of that free republic of which it forms a part? As a colony, Massachusetts was always heard when the great occasion called for utterance, and always responded to the high and honorable appeal of others. Torn and riven by internal contentions, tossed on a sea of ecclesiastical controversy, this colony of school-houses and meeting-houses presented always a solid front for popular right and privilege. The people of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay were a valiant as well as a godly people. They carried the 'sword of the Lord and of Gideon,' as their comrades and brothers did at Marston Moor and Naseby, and they believed as much in the courage of Miles Standish as they did in the holiness of Elder Brewster. During the two centuries and a half of their existence on this continent they have been ready at any time to gird on the sword. In the early Indian wars they traversed the forests with the fatal persistency of the slow hound, from the waters of the bay to the Green Mountains, and from the blazing towns of Bristol and Essex to the eastern lakes, upon whose bosoms fall the shadows of Agamenticus and Mount Washington. In the last great struggle of France to retain her foothold on this continent Massachusetts soldiers stormed Abraham Heights with Wolfe, and cherished his memory for generations in their households; the merchants of Massachusetts supplied the outfit for the siege of Louisbourg, and left behind them, as a proud memento for their sons, the tokens of regard for their devotion bestowed upon them by the Colonial Legislature; and to-day the Senate of Massachusetts, as it assembles in its chamber, passes beneath the Puritan drum which beat the tattoo, and the Puritan musket which blazed in the line when the power of the mother country was established along the waters of the St. Lawrence and far on toward the Iroquois seas. . . . The history of mankind is radiant with its record of great deeds and inspiring endeavor, but not one can outshine that wonderful picture of devotion and valor where a little band of Puritan rustics defied the military authority of Great Britain and fired that first gun whose echoes roused the colonies and brought New England and New York, New Jersey and Delaware, Pennsylvania and Virginia, Maryland and the Carolinas and Georgia into a sacred association, whose memories are still fondly cherished and whose bond is not yet broken."

As pertinent to the vital issues of to-day, it may be well in this connection to give one or two illustrations of Dr. Loring's thoughts on the subject of "American Industry," the first of which was delivered in the House of Representatives, May 23, 1878:

"Now, sir, how this unparalleled growth of a [illegible] assembling in less time than was [illegible] and when worthy of a [illegible] to be set down [illegible] ated into [illegible] all dangers and [illegible] men who have [illegible] mind of the [illegible] of the broad [illegible] and, moreover, that under the protection of good government their skilled labor would meet with an ample reward. That policy to which I have alluded, as declared by the founders of our Government, brought over from the mills of England and Scotland, in the early days of the Republic, a thrifty, skillful and ingenious race of men, who planted the seeds of our manufactures all along the water-courses of New England. And the same policy has made the ocean a highway for the laboring classes of Europe as they pass from the narrow lanes of the Old World into the broad avenues to social and civil elevation, which citizenship under a free government offers. We have reason to be grateful to our fathers for the high virtues which they exercised, for their wisdom and for their great accomplishments. But they performed no higher service than when they declared it to be the duty of government to protect its own people in all their industries, and thus to preserve those characteristics which constitute, in every variety, the nations of the earth. . . . It was with them a question of how best to establish and invigorate an American nationality as distinct from every other nationality; and as they surveyed with proud gaze the great social and civil system which they had founded, they resolved to surround it with every necessary support, to the end that its grand design might be accomplished; and so far as France preserves her very life-blood by protecting her own artisans and manufactures against foreign competition, and England protects her cheap labor and great masses of capital against the skilled products of more favorable latitudes, so they resolved that the toiling citizen, the dearer capital and the better paid laborer of America should at least try the great experiment unmolested."

And this from his speech at the Cooper Institute, New York, November 29, 1881:

"It is the intimate relation between agriculture and manufactures which makes general farming what it is, and will gradually make American farming what it should be. The benefit, moreover, which the manufacturer derives from his free and intimate relations with the agriculture of the country cannot be overlooked. On the one hand, drawing his raw material largely from the immense and various resources of our country—iron, cotton, wool, hides, etc.; and on the other hand, finding a home market in the great agricultural regions, the American manufacturer possesses opportunities and advantages hardly known to any other country on earth, and illustrating most forcibly the self-supporting power of our people. So closely are these interests united that what benefits one naturally benefits both. What injures one injures both. The same policy which has been extended over our mills has been extended also over our fields, and the result in both cases will demonstrate its true value. While the American manufacturer has furnished the American farmer with almost all his necessary articles, such as cotton goods and fabrics, boots and shoes, axes, forks, spades, shovels, hoes, harrows, plows, rakes, cultivators, reapers, mowers, wagons, tinware, glassware, etc., cheaper than they can be purchased in the English market, the American farmer has furnished his products, wool, cotton, provisions, grain, &c., at rates established by our own supply and demand, and not in accordance with rates fixed abroad. The traffic is free and equal, and it is between parties enjoying equal privileges and opportunities; rates of interest, wages of labor, taxes, social and civil expenses, all being regulated by one system and varying only with different localities."

In 1881 Dr. Loring was appointed United States Commissioner of Agriculture by President Garfield, who gave him his commission and instructions the day before he was mortally wounded. The instructions of the President were strong and earnest for the enlargement and development of the department, and to this work Dr. Loring applied himself with great diligence until the close of his official career as commissioner, April, 1885. Under his guidance the department secured the respect and confidence of the American people, and was referred to abroad as a model organization of the kind. In the collection and arrangement of statistics it advanced to the front rank, and was considered authority on industrial matters that came before it. In the investigation of the annual industry of the country, and into the



George L. Davis

nature and danger of animal diseases, it secured confidence and collected a large fund of valuable information. In the examination of the sugar-producing qualities of various plants it secured the reputation of carrying on fair, dispassionate and useful experiments. In all entomological and botanical work it obtained the best scientific aid, and Congress manifested a growing confidence in the department by increasing its appropriations from year to year, often beyond the estimates of the commissioner.

Meanwhile the amount of work which Dr. Loring did outside of the department was very large. In many of the States he delivered addresses on questions relating to agriculture, and joined the boards and associations in their deliberations for the benefit of that industry. He discussed the industries of the South at the exhibition at Atlanta in 1881; he addressed the Mississippi Valley Sorghum-growers in 1862; the Cattle Association at Chicago in 1862; the Dairy Association of Iowa in 1863; the American Forestry Association at Cincinnati in 1862; at St. Paul in 1863, at Montreal in 1864, besides speaking at many State fairs from Wisconsin to South Carolina.

In 1872 Dr. Loring was appointed Centennial Commissioner for the State of Massachusetts, and was placed on the executive committee of the commission where he served until the close of the exhibition in Philadelphia in 1876.

Dr. Loring was first married in November, 1851, to Mary Toppan Pickman, daughter of Dr. Thomas and Sophia (Palmer) Pickman, a most brilliant and accomplished woman, who died December 1, 1878, leaving one daughter, Sallie Pickman Loring. In 1880 he married Mrs. Anna Smith Hildreth, of New York, whose rare social gifts and hospitality have made his home a centre of great enjoyment and happiness.

Dr. Loring still takes an active part in the public discussions of the day, and a portion of his contributions to the literature of the times may be found in the "History of Literature in Salem," in this volume.

HON. GEORGE L. DAVIS.

The subject of this sketch was a farmer's son, born in Oxford, Mass., in 1816. He descended in a direct line from William Davis, who came from Wales to this country about 1635, and settled in Roxbury, Mass.

His boyhood days were spent upon his father's farm, and to the discipline which farm-labor brought, together with the guidance and moral training given by noble Christian parents, is largely due his physical strength, sterling integrity and large business capacity.

He was educated in the common schools of his native town principally, only enjoying for a short time the privilege of a select school. When eighteen years old he taught the village school in the neighboring town of Sutton, Mass.; but deciding that a business career was preferable to that of teaching, and that a trade might be "a stepping stone" to business, he left home, with his parents' consent, in the spring of 1835, for Andover, where he went to work for the then well-known firm of Barnes, Gilbert & Richardson, machinery builders, to learn the machinist's trade. In the spring of 1836 his employers removed their business to North Andover, to their new shop. In 1841, when the old firm dissolved, Mr. Davis became the junior member of the succeeding firm of Gilbert, Gleason & Davis. In 1851 this firm dissolved, and a new co-partnership was formed with Mr. Davis as senior partner, and one associate, Mr. Charles Furber, under the firm-name of Davis & Furber, continuing the business of building wool machinery, at the same place. The firm of Davis & Furber was successful and continued without interruption until the death of Mr. Furber, in 1857.

This was a sad loss to Mr. Davis, as in the death of his partner he parted with a true friend, an honest, upright man, a most genial and kind business partner, and a good business adviser. After the death of Mr. Furber, still keeping the old firm-name of Davis & Furber, he associated with himself John A. Wiley and D. T. Gage, and continued the business of manufacturing wool machinery. In 1860 Mr. Gage withdrew, and in 1861 Joseph M. Stone entered the firm, and this last co-partnership continued until 1882, when the corporation of the Davis & Furber Machine Company was formed, with Mr. Wiley as president and Mr. Davis as treasurer. The business of this corporation is the manufacture of wool machinery, shafting, pulleys and all kinds of card clothing. Commencing business with limited means and a small water privilege, the firm, in its successful growth, has seen the thriving village of North Andover grow up around it, the city of Lawrence spring into existence and develop into a large manufacturing centre, and the entire manufacturing business of the country reach its now extensive proportions, to all of which this firm has very largely contributed. They began with a very few men, but have gradually increased and enlarged, until now in their shops and foundries they employ a large number of men. But Mr. Davis is not only well known in business circles, but has been widely an influential man in other respects. He has always resided in North Andover, and early in life became actively identified in all religious, educational and charitable matters. He has been an active member of the Congregational Church in North Andover for many years, and was deacon of that church from 1857 to 1885. The firm were large contributors when the new church building was erected, in 1865.

Mr. Davis is a large stockholder in the Bay State National Bank, of Lawrence, and for some twenty years has been its president. In politics he has always been a Republican, and his party, honoring

him and his ability, have sent him four times to the State Senate; he was elected and served in the sessions of 1859 and 1860, and also 1875 and 1876. During all four terms he ranked well as a Senator and held important committeeships.

CHAPTER CXL.

GROVELAND.

BY WILLIAM T. DAVIS.

ON the 4th of September, 1639, the town of Rowley, which had been settled by Rev. Ezekiel Rogers with about sixty families, and which was called for a time Rogers' Plantation, was incorporated. It included the territory now occupied by the towns of Rowley, Georgetown, Groveland, Boxford and Bradford. The name of Rowley was adopted in honor of Mr. Rogers, who had come from Rowley, a parish of East Riding, Yorkshire, England. Among the companions of Mr. Rogers were John and Robert Hazeltine and William Wilde, and in 1649 these three men, desirous of more land, sought the rich meadows and fields along the Merrimac, in the Indian territory of Pentucket, for a permanent settlement. They received grants from the town of Rowley, each of forty acres of upland, the use of the commons for twenty head of cattle for each, and also for each twenty acres of meadows, one thousand pipestaves annually, for seven years, from 1649, timber for building a house and for fencing and firewood.

As the number of settlers in Rowley village, on the Merrimac, increased, the name of the settlement was changed to Merrimac and finally to Bradford. The first mention of the name "Bradford" in the Massachusetts records is under date of October 13, 1675, in the list of rates for expenses of King Philip's War, but the name is mentioned in the town records as early as 1665. It took its name from Bradford in England, the native town of some of the early settlers. The incorporation of the town is expressed in the following order passed by the General Court May 27, 1668:

"In answer to the petition of the inhabitants of Rowley, lying over against Haverhill, the Court, having considered the petition, perused the town of Rowley's grant to the petitioners, heard Rowley's Deputy and also considered a writing sent from Rowley with what els hath been presented to the case, doe find that there is liberty granted to the petitioners by the town of Rowley to provide themselves of a minister and also an ability to release them from the township when they are accommodated as aforesaid, and therefore see not but this Court may grant the petitioners to be a town up per se; they doe gett and settle an able [illegible] ex officio [illegible] to maynteyne him or els to return to Rowley as formerly."

A meeting of the town is recorded as having been held February 20, 1668–69, at which Thomas Kimball was chosen constable; John Gage, Robert Haseltine, Joseph Pike, John Griffing and John Tenney, selectmen; Joseph Pike, clerk of writs; Samuel Worcester, Benjamin Gage, Benjamin Kimball and David Haseltine, overseers.

In 1667 or 1668, Rev. Zachariah Symmes was engaged as pastor, with a salary of £40, one-half of which was to be paid in wheat, pork, butter and cheese and the other half in corn and cattle. During the first two years religious services were held in a private house, perhaps in the parsonage which was built at once after the arrival of Mr. Symmes and under his direction. Another parsonage was built opposite the old cemetery in 1708, which is described as being forty-six feet by twenty, with fifteen feet stud and four "chimbleys."

On the 18th of April, 1670, it was voted by the townsmen that "Sargent Gage, Robert Haseltine, Benjamin Kimball, Thomas Kimball, John Simmonds, Nicholas Walington, and John Griffing be chosen for the ordering, setting up and furnishing of a Meighting House according to their best discretion for the good of the town."

The erection of a meeting-house had been in contemplation several years, as is shown by a vote passed January 5, 1665, the preamble of which is: "Whereas, John Haseltine, sen., of Haverhill, having given ye inhabitants of ye town of Bradford one acre of land to set their meeting-house on, and for a burying place," etc.

Notwithstanding the church had been practically in existence since 1668, and had since that time listened to the preaching of their pastor, Mr. Symmes, it was not until the 27th of December, 1682, that it was formally organized. On the same day Mr. Symmes was ordained. Those subscribing the creed were Zachariah Symmes, Samuel Stickney, John Tennie, John Simmons, Wm. Huchence, Joseph Palmer, Thomas West, David Haseltine, Richard Hall, John Watson, Samuel Haseltine, Robert Haseltine, Joseph Bailey, Abraham Haseltine, Benjamin Kimball, Robert Savory, John Hardy and John Boynton. In 1705, Mr. Hale was engaged as a colleague to Mr. Symmes, who had become somewhat infirm, and on the 22d of March, 1707, Mr. Symmes died. During his pastorate a new meeting-house was built on the hill a few rods east of the old one, which is described as forty-eight feet long, forty wide and twenty feet stud.

Mr. Symmes was the son of Rev. Zechariah Symmes, of Charlestown, who came from England in 1634. The latter was born in Canterbury, England, in 1599, and was the grandson of William Symmes, ordained to the ministry in 1588, and great-grandson of another William, who was a distinguished Protestant in the reign of Queen Mary. Mr. Symmes was born in Charlestown, January 9, 1637, and graduated at Harvard in 1657, the first scholar in a class of seven, one of whom was John Cotton, son of Rev. John Cotton, of Boston, and for many years the pastor of the First Church in Plymouth. Another

member of the class was Rev. John Hale, who was probably the Mr. Hale selected as the colleague of Mr. Symmes, and whose full name is not given in the records. Mr. Symmes preached in Rehoboth from 1661 to 1666, and married, in the latter year, Susannah Graves, of Charlestown. A second wife was Mrs. Mehitabel (Palmer) Dalton, widow of S. Dalton, of Hampton, New Hampshire.

The successor of Mr. Symmes was his son Thomas, who was born February 1, 1667, and graduated at Harvard in 1698. He was settled at Boxford, December 30, 1702, and installed at Bradford in December, 1708. He died October 6, 1725, and was succeeded by Joseph Parsons, who was ordained June 8, 1726. At his ordination Rev. Joseph Parsons, of Salisbury, preached the sermon, Rev. John Rogers, of Boxford, gave the charge, and Rev. Moses Hale, of Newbury, the right hand of fellowship.

It is unnecessary to follow the history of this church farther, for in the first year of the pastorate of Mr. Parsons, the church in the East Parish of Bradford (now Groveland) was organized, and became the nucleus of that community which, more than a hundred years later, obtained the privileges and benefits of a separate municipal government.

The church in the East Parish of Bradford was incorporated June 17, 1726, and formally organized on the 7th of June, 1727. Immediately after the incorporation a meeting-house was erected near the site of the present one, and the first parish meeting was held July 4, 1726. At first forty-eight males were dismissed from the parent church and admitted as members of the new organization. These were:

William Balch.	Caleb Hopkinson.
Samuel Tenney.	Abraham Parker, Jr.
Richard Bailey.	Samuel Jewett.
William Savory.	William Hardy.
Samuel Hale.	Francis Walker.
John Hutchins.	Eben Kimball.
Daniel Hardy.	Moses Worster.
Ezra Rolf.	Thomas Stickney.
Thomas Savory.	Benjamin Hardy.
James Bailey.	Thomas Hardy.
Isaac Hardy.	Edward Wood.
Jacob Hardy, Jr.	Robert Savory.
Thomas Hardy, Jr.	Joseph Hardy, Jr.
Samuel Hale, Jr.	James Hardy.
Francis Jewett.	David Tenney.
Joseph Worster.	Edward Hardy.
William Hardy.	Timothy Hardy.
John Pemberton.	Jonathan Hale.
Jacob Hardy.	Jonathan Tenney.
Joseph Hardy.	Joseph Bailey.
Richard Hardy.	Joshua Richardson.
Thomas Bailey.	Thomas Hardy (3d).
Eben Burbank.	Samuel Hardy.
Samuel Palmer.	Jonas Platts.

On the 28th of July, 1727, fifty-three females were admitted, and these were,—

Widow Bailey.	Jane Harriman.
Widow Hopkinson.	Hannah Tenney.
Widow Hardy.	Hannah Bailey.
Wife of Thomas Hardy, Sr.	Hannah Savory.
Wife of Joseph Hardy.	Hannah Hardy.
Wife of James Hardy.	Hannah Kimball.
Wife of Thomas Hardy, Jr.	Hannah Hardy.
Wife of Richard Hardy.	Hannah Richardson.
Wife of John Tenney.	Hannah Smith.
Wife of Samuel Hardy.	Eunice Bailey.
Martha Hopkinson.	Eunice Foster.
Martha Hardy.	Dorothy Tenney.
Martha Pemberton.	Abigail Bailey.
Martha Leason.	Abigail Worster.
Sarah Worster.	Mary Wood.
Sarah Hardy.	Mary Stickney.
Sarah Burbank.	Mary Hardy.
Sarah Tenney.	Mary Bailey.
Sarah Jewett.	Bethiah Hutchens.
Elizabeth Hutchens.	Rebecca Savory.
Elizabeth Worster.	Rebecca Hardy.
Elizabeth Parker.	Mercie Worster.
Elizabeth Palmer.	Deborah Hardy.
Joanna Bailey.	Deborah Wallingford.
Ruth Jewett.	Esther Hardy.
Anna Jewett.	Mehitabel Hardy.
Anna Platts.	

On the 7th of June, 1727, the day of the organization of the church, Rev. William Balch was ordained, having preached for the church since the preceding November. The council at the ordination consisted of the churches of Newbury, Byfield, Beverly and Haverhill. Samuel Tenney was the elder of the church, and Richard Bailey deacon. Mr. Balch was to receive one hundred pounds settlement and one hundred pounds salary and the use of the parsonage. At the end of the first year the church membership had increased from 101 to 179, and William Hardy, Jr., was chosen assistant deacon. Mr. Balch was an educated man, a graduate of Harvard, in the class of 1724, fifteen of whose forty members became ministers. Through a long pastorate of sixty-five years he retained the affection and esteem of his people, and closed his pastorate with his life in 1792. During the last year of his life, in 1791, a new meeting-house was built. On the 17th of November, 1779, Rev. Ebenezer Dutch, of Ipswich, was ordained as colleague, and on the death of Mr. Balch became full pastor, dying in the service of the church, August 4, 1814.

On the 28th of September, 1814, Rev. Gardner Braman Perry was installed and continued his pastorate until his death, December 16, 1859. Mr. Perry was a man who early won, and retained until his death, a wide reputation among the clergy of the Orthodox Congregational faith. He was born in Norton, Mass., and graduated at Union College in 1804. Before his settlement at East Bradford he had been a tutor in Union College, and received honorary degrees from his *alma mater* and Harvard in 1814. On the 4th of September, 1851, Rev. David A. Wasson was settled as his colleague, but only remained one year. Mr. Wasson was a graduate of the Bangor Seminary, and, though his confession of faith was believed to be sufficiently evangelical, he soon manifested in his preaching a strong disinclination to advocate the tenets of the church in which he had been ordained. He was, in fact, more Unitarian than Orthodox, and,

of course, his ministry was unsatisfactory to his people. The result was the resignation of Mr. Wasson at the end of a year, and the secession of some who had been leading members of the church, but who were more inclined to follow the teachings of their colleague pastor than those of the older faith. Those who adhered to Mr. Wasson hired the meeting-house of the Methodist Society, then in a languishing condition, and formed an Independent Congregational Society with him as their pastor. He was followed by Rev. James Richardson, whose service continued one year, after which time the society gradually disintegrated, finally restoring the meeting-house to the Methodists for their permanent use.

After the resignation of Mr. Wasson, Rev. Daniel Pickard was ordained as colleague, and remained about four years. Thomas Daggett was ordained as colleague March 4, 1857, and in the same year the name of the church was changed by a legislative act from the Second Congregational Church of Bradford to the Congregational Church of Groveland. Mr. Daggett was dismissed April 20, 1864, and Rev. Martin S. Howard was ordained December 29th in the same year. Mr. Howard was dismissed October 5, 1868, and was succeeded by Rev. John C. Paine, who was installed April 20, 1870, and dismissed October 30, 1877. Rev. James McLean supplied the pulpit for a time after the dismissal of Mr. Paine, and was followed by Rev. Augustus C. Swain July 6, 1881, and by the present pastor, Rev. Bernard Copping, in October, 1887.

Besides the Congregational Church, a Methodist Church was organized in East Bradford before its incorporation as Groveland, and must be referred to as one of the preliminary steps leading to a distinct municipality. This church was formed on the 15th of October, 1831, under the direction of Rev. Thomas W. Gile, a Methodist Episcopal local preacher, and Aaron Wait, who was employed by the Christian Union Association. Rev. Charles S. McReading was the first preacher sent by the Conference, and began his pastorate in the spring of 1832. In 1833 the meeting-house now used by the society was built, and March 3, 1838, the "Trustees of the First Methodist Episcopal Meeting-House in Bradford" were incorporated. Mr. McReading died April 11, 1866. In 1833 Rev. Robert D. Easterbrook took charge, and was succeeded in 1834 and 1835 by Rev. David Culver. Mr. Easterbrook died in November, 1852. Rev. Moody Dwight followed Mr. Culver in 1836, and was succeeded by Rev. Apollos Hale in 1837–38. Mr. Dwight died in 1883. Rev. William Ramsdell followed in 1839, and Rev. Increase B. Bigelow in 1840. From 1841 to 1845, inclusive, Rev. Bryan Morse, a local preacher, supplied, and from about 1853 to 1859 the church was dropped from the Conference, the meeting-house being used part of the time by the adherents of Rev. Mr. Wasson, who had formed them into an Independent Congregational Society. On the 11th of May, 1853, an act of the Legislature was passed changing the name of "The Trustees of the First Methodist Episcopal Meeting-House in Bradford" to "Trustees of the First Independent Church in Groveland."

In 1859 the Methodists reoccupied their house and their pulpit was supplied by Rev. Horace Moulton. Mr. Moulton died April 11, 1873. Rev. B. W. Chase had charge in 1860, Rev. Newell S. Spaulding in 1861, and during the next three years the pulpit was supplied by Rev. E. Peaslee. Rev. John Capen had charge in 1866–67 and Rev. S. H. Noon 1868, '69, '70. In 1871–72 Rev. H. S. Booth had charge of the Methodist pulpits in both Georgetown and Groveland, and in 1873 Rev. Henry Mathews was assigned to Groveland. In 1874–75 Rev. A. H. Dwight had charge; in 1876 Rev. Lewis Fish, who died March 26, 1877; in 1877 Rev. R. W. Allen; and in 1878 the pulpit was supplied by Rev. H. S. Booth. From 1879 to 1881, inclusive, Rev. A. W. Baird had charge; in 1882 Rev. J. Alphonso Day; in 1883–84 Rev. Walter Wilkie; and in 1885, to June, 1886, Rev. F. C. Thompson. Since that time the pulpit has been supplied by Rev. David Roberts. The Methodist Church is now in a prosperous condition. In January, 1871, the debt of the society was two thousand three hundred dollars, of which one thousand two hundred dollars was paid by Abner Chase, Eliza D. M. Merrill, W. W. Ray and Allen Hardy, by the surrender of notes held by them for money advanced. In 1873 Miss Merrill surrendered a note for one thousand dollars, which, with interest, amounted to one thousand five hundred dollars. In that year the meeting-house was altered and improved at a cost of two thousand six hundred dollars and reopened on the 23d of December. Towards defraying the cost of the work on the house, Miss Merrill contributed one thousand six hundred dollars, and in 1881, the semi-centennial year of the society, the last remnant of the debt, amounting to nine hundred and fifty dollars, was canceled.

There are other matters in the history of the town of Bradford which should be treated in a sketch of Groveland, besides those connected with the churches of the East Parish. The educational as well as the religious career of the town deserves a place in this narrative. The first allusion in the records to a school is in the year 1701, when it was voted "that the selectmen should provide a school according to their discretion and that they should assess the town for the expense of the same." We are, in our day, so accustomed to public schools, and are so apt to look upon them as essential to popular education, that we are inclined to look on the absence or scarcity of these schools in the days of our fathers as indications of their disregard of the cause of education. We must remember that popular free education has grown with the growth of our institutions, and that not until after the Revolution was it established on a solid and permanent founda-

tion. Parental education and private schools largely prevailed, and the fact that Harvard College was so early established, for admission to which competent teachers must have been employed, is sufficient evidence of the interest felt in early days in the best instruction of youth.

In 1780 the town voted "one month's schooling at the school-house near John Burbank's," in the East Parish.

In 1795 the first School Committee was chosen in Bradford, consisting of Nathaniel Thurston, James Kimball, Nathan Burbank and Seth Jewett. But the old fondness for private schools lingered long after the enlargement and improvement of the public school system. It manifested itself all over New England in the formation of academies, some of which still flourish, but many of which have languished and finally disappeared. In the establishment of these academies the town of Bradford took a leading and prominent part. At a meeting of a number of its inhabitants held in the First Parish on the 7th of March, 1803, "it was mutually agreed upon that a building should be erected for an academy, and subscriptions were raised to defray the charges of building said house."

In three months the building was completed and the academy opened for pupils. Samuel Walker, of Haverhill, was the first principal and Hannah Swan the preceptress. It was incorporated February 10, 1804, and the preamble of the act of incorporation states that Rev. Jonathan Allen, Benjamin Carlton, Daniel Carlton, Joseph Chadwick, Jonathan Chadwick, Asa Gage, Uriah Gage, Jeremiah Gage, Peter Gage, John Griffin, John Haseltine, Moses Kimball, James Kimball, Edmund Kimball, Edward Kimball, John Smiley, Nathaniel Thurston, Ezra Trask, Benjamin Walker and Samuel Webster had built a good and convenient house for the purpose of an academy, for the education of youth of both sexes in the West Parish of Bradford, and had given the sum of fifteen hundred dollars, the interest of which was to be applied to the support of the academy. Among the successors of Samuel Walker, the first principal, there were many distinguished men. Samuel Greeley, a native of Wilton, N. H., took charge of the academy in 1804; Rev. Dr. James Flint, in 1805; Rev. Abraham Durnham, D.D., of Dunbarton, N. H., in 1806; Isaac Morrell, of Needham, Mass., in 1807; Samuel Peabody, of Boxford, in 1808; Rev. Daniel Hardy, of Bradford, in 1809–10; Rev. Luther Bailey, of Canton, Mass., in 1811; Hon. Samuel Adams, of Rowley, Richard Kimball, of Bradford, and Rev. Eben Peck Sperry, of New Haven, Conn., in 1812; Hon. Nathaniel Dike, of Beverly, in 1813; Daniel Noyes, in 1814; and Benjamin Greenleaf, from 1814 to 1836, who was the last male principal. Since 1836 the academy has been devoted exclusively to the education of girls, and has been under the principal charge of Miss Abigail C. Haseltine (who had been preceptress from 1815 to 1836), Miss Abby Haseltine Johnson, Miss Annie E. Johnson and others with short terms of service.

Rev. James Flint, one of the principals, was born in Reading, Mass., Dec. 10, 1779, and graduated at Harvard in 1802. He was the pastor of the East Church in Salem from September 19, 1825, to December 17, 1851, and died March 4, 1855. Isaac Morrell graduated at Harvard in 1805. Benjamin Greenleaf was born in Haverhill, September 25, 1786, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1813. His name is well known by teachers and pupils of the two last generations as that of the author of a series of mathematical text-books used in the schools. He died in Bradford, October 29, 1864.

But the East Parish was not far behind the West in the cause of academic education. It was far enough behind, however, to see the public schools established on a solid foundation, and affording adequate instruction before its movement was made towards the establishment of an academy. The eighteen years which had elapsed since the organization of the Bradford Academy, during which the public school system had not thoroughly won popular favor and support, enabled that institution to gain a reputation so widespread and so great that the impetus it received has not even now perceptibly diminished. The academy in the East Parish, coming at so late a day, found it difficult to compete with the privileges of the schools, and finally succumbed under the burden it was attempting to carry. It was organized in 1821, and incorporated February 7, 1822. The first section of the act of incorporation provides that "Rev. Gardner B. Perry, Benjamin Parker, M.D., Moses Parker, William Greenough, Jeremiah Spofford, M. M. S. Ebenezer Rollins, Capt. George Savery, Capt. Samuel Tenney and Phineas Parker are nominated and appointed trustees of the said Academy, and they are hereby incorporated into a body politic by the name of the Trustees of Merrimac Academy in the County of Essex." The act provided that it was established "for the education of youth of both sexes in such languages, and such of the liberal arts and sciences as the trustees may direct." The academy building was raised July 4, 1821, and cost about nine hundred dollars. In its most flourishing days its pupils numbered from fifty to seventy-five. More than one thousand of the inhabitants of Groveland and vicinity received the greater part of their education within its walls, there seeking a higher education in Greek and Latin and mathematics than the common schools afforded, and eagerly taking advantage of its privileges. The academy was sustained partly by tuition fees, and partly by contributions from its friends. Its early preceptors were Stephen Morse, David L. Nichols, John Tenney, Alonzo Chapin, Sylvanus Morse, Rufus C. Hardy and A. J. Saunders. In later years its teachers have been females,

among whom have been Miss Hattie Paine and Miss Martha and Miss Jenny Thompson.

The academy was burned September 1, 1870, and rebuilt in 1871 at the cost of two thousand dollars, with increased accommodations. In 1878 the trustees leased the academy to the town for the term of ninety-nine years, the consideration being an agreement to occupy it for educational and public purposes, and to assume the debts of the academy, which amounted to $1229.92. Since the town has occupied it, the building has been enlarged, at a cost of eighteen hundred dollars, and now furnishes accommodations for two schools in the lower story, and for a Town Hall in the upper.

The school system of the town at the present time is well supported and well managed. According to the last report of the School Committee, covering the year 1886, there were at that time ten schools,—the High School, with an average membership of twenty-eight, under the charge of R. A. Hutchinson; the Central Grammar School, with an average membership of twenty-eight, under the charge of Miss Mattie P. Parker; the South Grammar School, with an average membership of twenty-five, under Miss Hattie E. Boynton; the Central Intermediate, with a membership of forty-one, under Miss Abbie C. Hopkinson; the South Intermediate, at various times under Mrs. Sarah E. Peabody, Miss Ada R. Mason and Miss M. Newhall; the East Mixed School, at different times under Miss Clara M. Organ and Miss Amy C. White; the North Primary, with membership of twenty-one, under Miss Sadie Stickney; the Central Primary, with a membership of thirty-nine, under Miss Mattie I. Morse; the First South Primary, with a membership of fifty-one, under Miss Eleanor A. Fester; and the Second South Primary, with a membership of fifty-four, under Miss Nellie G. Hill. For the support of these ten schools the town appropriated in 1886 $4200 for teachers' salaries and text-books and school maintenance, $300 for repairs and incidentals, $125 for apparatus for the High School, and received $227.33 from the Massachusetts School Fund,—making a total of $4852.33. The expenses were $3501 for salaries, $116.27 for text-books and supplies, $256.43 for fuel, $156.58 for repairs and incidentals, $382.79 for philosophical apparatus $118.26,—making a total of $4831.33.

Nor must the Revolutionary career of the town of Bradford, in which the East Parish was prominent, be omitted in this narrative. Its patriotism, its burdens and its honors were shared by the people of each parish, and to the history of each they legitimately belong. In 1773 Capt. Daniel Thurston was Representative of Bradford in the General Court. At that time the special grievances of taxation and the salaries of the judges had created an excitement which was spreading like a fire through the province of Massachusetts Bay. The people of Boston had taken a determined stand, and those of various other towns were extending to them encouragement and support. On the 17th of January, 1773, a town-meeting was called to see what instructions should be given to their Representative in view of the perils which surrounded them. A committee was appointed, consisting of Dudley Carleton, William Greenough, Benjamin Gage, Jr., Thomas Webster and Amos Mullekin, to draw up instructions, who subsequently reported the following address to Captain Thurston, which was adopted by the meeting:

"Sir,—We, his majesty's most dutiful and loyal subjects, freeholders and other inhabitants, of the town of Bradford, legally assembled this 7th day of January, 1773, take this opportunity to express our very great uneasiness at the infringements on our natural and constitutional rights by many of the late measures of the British administration, particularly of the taxation of the Colonies and the granting of salaries to the Judges of the Superior Court,—measures adapted, as we apprehend, to lay a foundation in time to render property precarious, and to introduce a system of despotism which we cannot but view with the utmost aversion and to which we cannot submit while possible to be avoided. We recommend it to you, as our Representative in General Assembly, to use your influence to obtain redress of all our grievances, and in particular to inquire whether the support of the Judges of the Superior Court has been adequate to their services, offices and station, and if not, to use your influence in obtaining suitable grants and establishments as may be thought sufficient to remove all pretense that government is not supplied among ourselves.

"We also vote the thanks of this town to the town of Boston for the care and vigilance they have discovered for the rights and privileges of this province as men, as Christians and as patriots."

Capt. Daniel Thurston was also a member of the Provincial Congress which convened in Salem, of which John Hancock was president, and also of the Second Congress, over which Dr. Joseph Warren presided. The town laid in a store of ammunition before hostilities began, and appropriated the sum of £30 for its purchase. Minute-men were equipped and drilled, and after the battle of Lexington Capt. Nathaniel Gage marched to Cambridge with forty men, and was engaged in the battle of Bunker Hill. At a meeting of the town, held on the 20th of June, 1776, an address to Dudley Carleton, the Representative of Bradford in the General Assembly, was reported by a committee consisting of Thomas Webster, John Burbank, Nathaniel Gage, Benjamin Muzzy and Capt. John Savory, and adopted by the town. The address was as follows:

"To Dudley Carleton, Esq., representative from the town of Bradford in the General Assembly, sir.—When we consider the despotic plan of government adopted by the King's Ministers and Parliament of Great Britain to enslave these American colonies, we consider that instead of redressing our grievances they have turned a deaf ear to the repeated petitions and remonstrances of all the united colonies, and have also been and still are endeavoring to enforce their arbitrary plans upon us by spilling our blood, by burning our towns, by seizing our property and by instigating the savages of the wilderness and negroes to take up the cause against us; when we consider these things it rouses our indignation, that we, who have always been loyal subjects to the King of Great Britain, should be so unconstitutionally and inhumanely treated. Such tyrannical impositions and abuses of power we cannot, as men, submit to. Therefore, utterly despairing of a happy reconciliation ever taking place between Great Britain and their colonies, you are hereby desired as our representative to use your utmost endeavor, that our delegates in Congress be instructed to shake off the tyrannical yoke of Great Britain and declare these united colonies independent of that venal, corrupt and avaricious court forever, provided no prospects for a happy reconciliation be offered which the honorable Congress think proper to accept; and we hereby engage that we will, at the risk of our lives and fortunes, endeavor to support and defend their plans."

In 1776 also a committee was appointed, consisting of Colonel Daniel Thurston, Deacon Thomas Kimball, Benjamin Muzzy, Major Benjamin Gage, Jr., and John Burbank, who reported a vote, which was adopted by the meeting, opposing the adoption of a State Constitution by the Legislature and Council, to be ratified by the people, and proposing the draft of a constitution by the Legislature and its submission to the towns concerned, before its adoption in the Assembly.

On the 23d of September, 1776, the town voted to appropriate £41 15*s.* 2*d.* for gunlocks, lead and flints; and also voted to pay £14 to each soldier drafted from the militia. On the 11th of October, 1779, it was voted to appropriate £1995 to hire ten men to join the army of Washington in New York. On the 12th of June, 1780, it was voted to raise sixteen men for six months, and on the 28th of June four men for six months and nineteen for three months, and the sum of £12,527 was raised to meet town charges. On the 12th of October, 1780, the sum of £43,844 10*s.* 6*d.* was raised for town charges, including the cost of 10,750 pounds of beef, which the town had been called upon to furnish. On the 4th of December, 1780, a call was made on the town for 20,642 pounds of beef, and on the 3d of January, 1781, the sum of £61,926 was raised to defray its cost.

In 1779 the delegate from Bradford in the Convention to form a Constitution was Peter Russell, and the Constitution was promptly adopted by the town. The most prominent men of the town in military affairs, most of whom were at some period of the war in active service, were Capt. Nathaniel Gage, Lieut. Daniel Kimball, Lieut. Thomas Stickney, Lieut. Eliphalet Hardy, Lieut. Moses Harriman, Lieut. Phineas Colby, Adjt. Daniel Hardy, Lieut. Abel Kimball, Lieut. Nathaniel Parker, Lieut. Nathaniel Plumer, Capt. John Savory, Col. Daniel Thurston, Benjamin Muzzy, Maj. Benjamin Gage, John Burbank, Thomas Webster, Dudley Carleton, William Greenough and Amos Mulliken.

The population growing up round the churches in the East Parish, to whose spiritual wants they ministered, amounted in 1850 to about thirteen hundred, which was only a little less than half of that of the whole town of Bradford. At that time, owing to various causes of dissatisfaction, the people of the East Parish sought and obtained an act of incorporation. One of these causes, which may seem a trivial one to those unfamiliar with the jealousies which often arise in small communities, related to the post-office. The only office in Bradford, up to the year 1843, was established in 1811 and was located in the East Parish, under the name of the Bradford post-office. In 1843 the people in the West Parish secured a new office in their neighborhood, and used sufficient influence with the Post-office Department to have their office called the Bradford office and that in the East Parish the East Bradford office. At that time George Savory was the postmaster at Bradford and Jeremiah Spofford at East Bradford.

The act of incorporation was passed March 7, 1850, and describes the new township as

"all that part of the town of Bradford which lies east of a line beginning at the Merrimac River at the west side of Johnson's Creek at low water mark; thence running southerly up the westerly side of said creek about 70 rods to a small white oak tree; then south 15 degrees west 89 rods to a bound on the southerly side of the highway near Jonathan Kimball's house; thence south 54 degrees west 86 rods 17 links to a walnut tree on the easterly side of a road near the house of William Brown; thence south 38½ degrees west 151 rods to a bound at the northerly angle of the highway; thence south 45 degrees west 149 rods 9 links to a bound at the northwesterly angle of said highway, near Johnson's Pond; thence south 27 degrees west to a bound at the westerly side of said highway at Boxford line."

The parent town included a territory about seven miles long, on the average, and two and a half miles wide, containing about ten thousand acres, of which about one-half was set off to the new town. The bounds of Groveland were the Merrimac River, West Newbury, Newbury, Georgetown, Boxford and Bradford. On the 21st of March, 1856, an act was passed by the General Court providing that all that part of the town of Boxford should be annexed to Groveland, "beginning at a stone monument at the northwesterly corner of the town of Georgetown and northeasterly corner of said town of Boxford; thence running south 10 degrees 30′ west 311 rods 5 links on a line between said town of Georgetown and Boxford to a stone monument at an angle between said towns; thence running on an angle with the first-mentioned line, containing 46 degrees 30′ 558 rods 20 links northwesterly, and between the houses of William Ross and John C. Foot, and across Johnson's Pond to a stone monument between the towns of Bradford, Boxford and Groveland; thence running easterly on a line between said towns of Boxford and Groveland (which is the present dividing line between said towns) to the point first begun at."

The larger part of the territory of Groveland was originally laid out in lots running south from the river, which were granted in the following order, beginning down the river at the easterly end, to Joseph Richardson, Jonas Platts, John Hopkinson, Joseph Bailey, Edward Wood, Benjamin Savory, William Hutchens, Ezra Rolf, Samuel Tenney, Francis Jewett, Samuel Worster, Samuel Stickney, John Hardy, William Hardy, Abraham Parker and Daniel Parker, and adjoining these was the Carleton Patent. The location of the town is exceedingly picturesque, lying along the southerly bank of the Merrimac, and not only beautiful in itself, but looking out on the undulating slopes with the alternating pasture and wood of the outskirts of Haverhill on the opposite shore. A large part of Johnson's Pond, a fine sheet of water on the Boxford line, is within the limits of the town, and from this flows Johnson's Creek, with a fall of seventy-five feet to the river.

The name "Groveland" had no historic origin, but is believed to have been suggested by the exis-

tence of attractive groves within its limits, one or more of which had been for many years resorted to for amusement and pleasure. Under authority of the act of incorporation, Jeremiah Spofford, a justice of the peace and a citizen of the new town, issued a warrant to Nathaniel Ladd, of Groveland, directing him to warn its inhabitants to meet at the vestry of the Congregational Church on the 18th of March, 1850, to choose town officers and take such measures as might be necessary to effect a settlement between the old and new towns. Jacob W. Reed was chosen moderator and Moses Foster, Jr., town clerk. The selectmen chosen were Stephen Parker, Paul Hopkinson and Nathaniel Ladd. The overseers of the poor were Phineas Hardy, Jacob W. Reed and Elijah Clark, Jr.; the town treasurer, Otis B. Merrill; school committee, Gardner B. Perry, Bryan Morse and Rufus C. Hardy; and the committee to settle with the town of Bradford, Jeremiah Spofford, George Hudson and Charles Harriman.

At an adjourned meeting, held April 1st, George Eaton, Moses Foot, Moses Morse, Eben P. Jewett, Eldred S. Parker, John Tappan, Reuben Sawyer, Paul Hopkinson, Thomas Burbank, Enoch S. Noyes, Richard Lunt and Manly Hardy were chosen highway surveyors, and Burton E. Merrill, Ira Hopkinson, Jonathan Balch, Moses Foot, Allen H. Goss, Eben E. Morse and Rufus P. Hovey, tithingmen. On the same day the sum of eighteen hundred dollars was appropriated to defray the expenses of the town for the year, and the sum of five hundred dollars for highways.

On the 20th of January, 1851, it was voted that the overseers be authorized to receive proposals for the purchase of a house or farm for the poor of the town, and to report to the town. At the annual meeting held on the 3d of March, 1851, it was voted that the old and new boards of overseers be authorized to purchase or hire a farm. Before the meeting held on the 7th of April, it seems that the overseers bought a farm, for on that date they were instructed by the town "to purchase the Conniff farm and to sell the other."

The selectmen chosen each year since 1850 have been as follows:

1851. Charles Peabody.
Elijah Clark, Jr.
George Hudson.
1852. Paul Hopkinson.
Charles Harriman.
Edwin T. Curtis.
1853. Nathaniel H. Griffith.
Thomas M. Hopkinson.
Eben P. Hartman.
1854. Thomas M. Hopkinson.
Enoch Harriman.
Jesse George.
1855. Nathaniel H. Griffith.
John Tenney.
Edmund L. Page.
1856. Nathaniel H. Griffith.
H. A. Spofford.
A. Shaw.
1857. Nathaniel H. Griffith.
H. A. Spofford.
George S. Walker.
1858. George S. Walker.
J. C. Foot.
Thomas Burbank.
1859. Thomas M. Hopkinson.
George Hudson.
George S. Walker.
1860. Nathaniel Ladd.
Thomas M. Hopkinson.
Nathaniel Parker.
1861. Nathaniel Ladd.
Solomon Spofford.
Charles W. Hopkinson.
1862. Same.
1863. Nathaniel Ladd.
Charles W. Hopkinson.
Samuel Balch.
1864. Nathaniel Ladd.
Z. C. Wardwell.
Charles W. Hopkinson.
1865. Same.
1866. Nathaniel Ladd.
Z. C. Wardwell.
James L. Wales.
1867. Nathaniel Ladd.
Charles A. Shaw.
Paul Hopkinson.
1868. Nathaniel Ladd.
Charles W. Hopkinson.
E. T. Curtis.
1869. Nathaniel Ladd.
Edwin Hopkinson.
Charles F. Stiles.
1870. Nathaniel Ladd.
Edwin Hopkinson.
Edwin T. Curtis.
1871. Moses Foster.
Nathaniel H. Griffith.
Charles A. Shaw.
1872. Edwin T. Curtis.
D. H. Stickney.
Charles H. Hopkinson.
Enoch Harriman.
Mark Griffin.
1873. Charles H. Hopkinson.
Edward C. Peabody.
Enoch Harriman.
1874. Charles H. Hopkinson.
Edward C. Peabody.
Norman Nichols.
1875. Charles H. Hopkinson.
Norman Nichols.
John W. Libbey.
1876. Charles H. Hopkinson.
John W. Libbey.
Edward Harriman.
1877. Same.
1878. Charles H. Hopkinson.
Edward Harrington.
Charles F. Stiles.
1879. Charles H. Hopkinson.
John W. Libbey.
Thomas P. Harriman.
1880. Same.
1881. Same.
1882. Charles N. Hardy.
Samuel Gage.
Gardner P. Ladd.
1883. Gardner P. Ladd.
W. S. Peabody.
Abel S. Harriman.
1884. Same.
1885. Same.
1886. Gardner P. Ladd.
Ellsworth P. Nichols.
Benjamin Horne.
1887. Same.

The moderators, clerks and treasurers have been as follows:

1850. Jacob W. Reed, moderator; Moses Foster, Jr., clerk; Otis B. Merrill, treasurer.

1851. Albion M. Merrill, moderator; Ira Hopkinson, clerk; Charles G. Savory, treasurer.

1852 Albion M. Merrill, moderator; Joseph Savory, clerk; George Hudson, treasurer.

1853. Albion M. Merrill, moderator; George S. Walker, clerk; Edwin T. Curtis, treasurer.

1854. Albion M. Merrill, moderator; Edwin Hopkinson, clerk; John S. Ladd, treasurer.

1855. Eben P. Jewett, moderator; George S. Walker, clerk; Moses Foster, Jr., treasurer.

1856. George W. Hopkinson, moderator; George Hudson, clerk; Moses Foster, Jr., treasurer.

1857. George W. Hopkinson, moderator; William Hopkinson, clerk; William Hopkinson, treasurer.

1858. George W. Hopkinson, moderator; J. M. Spofford, clerk; Wm. Hopkinson, treasurer.

1859. George W. Hopkinson, moderator; J. M. Spofford, clerk; J. M. Spofford, treasurer.

1860. George W. Hopkinson, moderator; J. M. Spofford, clerk; J. M. Spofford, treasurer.

1861. George W. Hopkinson, moderator; Morris Spofford, clerk; Morris Spofford, treasurer.

1862. Eben S. Jewett, moderator; Morris Spofford, clerk; Morris Spofford, treasurer.

1863. Charles D. Page, moderator; Morris Spofford, clerk; Morris Spofford, treasurer.

1864. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Morris Spofford, clerk; Morris Spofford, treasurer.

1865. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Chas. H. Hopkinson, treasurer.

1866. Thomas M. Hopkinson, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Charles H. Hopkinson, treasurer.

1867. Uriah G. Spofford, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Charles H. Hopkinson, treasurer.

1868. Thomas M. Hopkinson, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Charles H. Hopkinson, treasurer.

1869. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Chas. H. Hopkinson, treasurer.

1870. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Charles H. Hopkinson, treasurer.

1871. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Chas. H. Hopkinson, treasurer.
1872. Thomas M. Hopkinson, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1873. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1874. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1875. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1876. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1877. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1878. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1879. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1880. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1881. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1882. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1883. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1884. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1885. E. P. Jewett, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1886. Edwin T. Curtis, moderator; J. B. P. Ladd, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1887. Charles H. Hopkinson, moderator; J. B. P. Ladd, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.

The Representatives to the General Court have been chosen as follows:

1850. Moses Foster.
1851. Albion M. Merrill.
1852. None.
1853. None.
1854. Nathan Purley.
1855. John Tenney.
1856. John Tenney.
1857. From the Fourth Representative District of Essex County composed of Georgetown and Groveland, Mark F. Edmonds, of Georgetown.
1858. Edwin B. George, of Groveland.
1859. From District No. 6, composed of the same towns, Samuel Hood, of Georgetown.
1860. George W. Hopkinson, of Groveland.
1861. Joseph J. Stickney, of Georgetown.
1862. Thomas M. Hopkinson, of Groveland.
1863. Charles Beecher, of Georgetown.
1864. D. H. Stickney, of Groveland.
1865. O. B. Tenney, of Georgetown.
1866. From District No. 5, composed of the towns of Georgetown, Groveland and Boxford, Joseph C. Stacy, of Groveland.
1867. Roscoe W. Gage, of Boxford.
1868. John G. Barnes, of Georgetown.
1869. Zenas C. Wardwell, of Groveland.
1870. Stephen Osgood, of Georgetown.
1871. Leverett Hopkinson, of Groveland.
1872. Charles Perley, of Boxford.
1873. Joseph E. Bailey, of Georgetown.
1874. Daniel P. Hopkinson, of Groveland.
1875. Sherman Nelson, of Georgetown.
1876. From District No. 17, composed of the towns of Georgetown, Groveland and Bradford, Charles Stickney, of Groveland.
1877. Chauncey O. Noyes, of Georgetown.
1878. Albert Kimball, of Bradford.
1879. Andrew J. Huntress, of Groveland.
1880. George H. Carleton, of Georgetown.
1881. Albert E. Towne, of Bradford.
1882. W. Scott Peabody, of Bradford.
1883. Simeon T. Peakes, of Georgetown.
1884. John B. Farrar, of Bradford.
1885. Mosely D. Chase, of Georgetown.
1886. Nathaniel E. Ladd, of Groveland.
1887. William A. Butler, of Georgetown.

In 1853 Gardner P. Ladd, of Groveland, was a delegate to the Constitutional Convention.

When the War of the Rebellion broke out the citizens of Groveland at once took active steps towards the performance of their share of patriotic duties. At a town-meeting held on the 30th of April, 1861, it was voted "to choose a committee consisting of E. B. George, Elijah Clark, John C. Foot, Nathaniel H. Griffith and D. H. Stickney, who shall furnish all persons who are called into active service for this town with all necessary articles, and to provide for their families during their absence at the expense of the town." It was also voted "that all volunteers from this town in regularly organized companies, holding themselves liable to instant call to the service of their country, and in constant drill to prepare themselves for service, to be paid the sum of ten dollars per month by the town while so employed."

The latter vote continued in operation until the 22d of the following June, when it was annulled, and at the same date the duties of the committee chosen on the 30th of April were transferred to the Board of Selectmen.

On the 19th of July, 1862, the town voted to pay a bounty of one hundred dollars to each soldier enlisting before August 5th for three years to fill the quota of twenty-one then required of the town. On the 26th of July the bounty was increased to one hundred and fifty dollars. On the 13th of August, 1862, a bounty of one hundred and fifty dollars was offered for enlistments for nine months to the extent of the required quota. On the 12th of December, 1862, it was voted to pay no more bounties to nine months' men, and to authorize the selectmen to fill the quota of the town with three years' men on the best possible terms. On the 8th of April, 1864, the selectmen were authorized to pay one hundred and twenty-five dollars for each enlistment to fill the quota then required of the town. On the 1st of August, 1864, it was voted to procure subscriptions for additions to the bounty of one hundred and twenty-five dollars offered by the town, and it was also voted to guarantee to each soldier the sum of two hundred and fifty dollars. On the 15th of August the committee having the subscriptions in charge reported that they had received the sum of one thousand three hundred and sixty-four dollars from one hundred and twenty subscribers. On the 10th of February, 1865, the selectmen were authorized to furnish the soldiers required of the town on the most favorable terms, and draw on the town treasurer for the necessary funds. These are some, if not all, of the votes passed by the town during the war, and they show no signs of hesitation to meet fully and promptly every call upon its patriotism and resources.

The following is as complete a list of soldiers enlisted at various times as can be made up from the

records. It contains the names of only one hundred and fifty-eight, while one hundred and eighty-five were credited to the town. It is probable that the remaining twenty-six were soldiers credited to the town by the State, unknown to the town authorities.

Regt.

John G. B. Adams, [illegible] yrs. ......[illegible]th
Isaac N. Adams, [illegible] yrs. ....[illegible]th
George H. Adams..........................Navy
Enoch T. Adams, 1[illegible] dys. 17th Un.
Wm. Auf[illegible], [illegible] yrs..........[illegible]d Cav.
James J. Anderson, [illegible] yrs., 1st H. Art.
Hiram T. Bal[illegible], [illegible] mos 48th
E. Groveland Brad[illegible]rd, 1 yr., 4th H. Art.
Joseph A. Banks, [illegible] yrs.............[illegible]d
W[illegible] A. Bal[illegible]h, 1[illegible] days, 1 yr., 17th Un.
C. T. Bal[illegible], 1[illegible] dys ......17th Un.
E[illegible] C. Brown, 1[illegible] dys., 17th Un.
Edwin F. Berdge, [illegible] yrs.........1[illegible]th
Charles H. Brown, 1 yr., 4th H. A.
J[illegible] E. Brown, 1 yr., 4th H. Art.
M[illegible] Brown, [illegible] yrs.......... ......[illegible]d
La[illegible] Bailey, [illegible] yrs 17th
John A. Ba[illegible]n, 9 mths. ...... [illegible]th
Charles Boynton, [illegible] yrs 19th
Joseph B[illegible]ks, [illegible] yrs.......... [illegible]d
Marcus M. Chase.
William Carr, [illegible] yrs.......... 1[illegible]th
Wallace N. Chase, [illegible] yrs..........[illegible]d
Willard K. Chase.
Leonard J. Chase.
An[illegible] P. Chase, [illegible] yrs............[illegible]d
Charles H. Can[illegible]ett, [illegible] yrs. ...17th
John N. C[illegible], 100 dys., 17th Un.
George C. Curtis, [illegible] yrs..........[illegible]
T[illegible] W. Cr[illegible], [illegible] mos. 48th
George E. Danforth, [illegible] mos. ..48th
J[illegible] Donaldson, [illegible] yrs.......... 11th
A[illegible] Danforth, 3 yrs..... 1[illegible]th
M[illegible] Dow, [illegible] yrs.......... 1[illegible]th
Wm. G. Foster, 3 yrs ...... 2[illegible]d
Leverett Fegan, 3 yrs. [illegible] H. Art.
John Fegan.
H[illegible] S. F[illegible], [illegible] mos. 48th
George H. Foster, 3 yrs .... 1[illegible]th
C[illegible] C. French, [illegible] yrs 19th
Charles A. Foster, 3 yrs ....[illegible]
Frank M. Foster, [illegible] mos. 48th
W[illegible] P. Foster, [illegible] yrs., 1st H. A.
[illegible] A. Farrington, [illegible] yrs., 1st H. Art.
[illegible] yrs. 17th
[illegible], 1[illegible] days, 1 year, [illegible]
[illegible] W. [illegible], [illegible] yrs 22d
M[illegible] [illegible] Cav.
[illegible] 1[illegible] days 17th Un.
[illegible] ....4[illegible]th
[illegible] W. H[illegible], [illegible] yrs...[illegible]
[illegible] H[illegible] yrs.......... [illegible]
[illegible] yrs [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] H[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

Regt.

Sumner G. Hardy, 3 yrs., 3d H. A.
Lowell H. Hopkinson, 3 yrs. 11th
Melvin Hopkinson, [illegible] yrs., 2d H. A.
Aaron W. Hardy, [illegible] mos 48th
Lyman H. Hopkinson, 1 yr., 4th H. A.
Rufus Hopkinson, 3 yrs., [illegible]d H. A.
Leverett Hopkinson, 1 year.
Paul Hopkinson, 1 year.
Wm. H. Hopkinson, 1 year.
Wendell Hopkinson, 1[illegible] days, 17th Un.
John H. Hardy, 1st, 9 mos. 48th
James W. H[illegible]lister, 3 years.
John H. Hardy [illegible], [illegible] mos .. 48th
David S. Hardy, 3 years.
Asa F. Hardy, [illegible] mos ... .48th
John F. Hoyt.
John H. Hardy, 9 mos. 48th
James P. Ivory, 3 yrs. 11th
George H. Johnson, [illegible] yrs. ...11th
Samuel E. Jones, 3 yrs.. ....19th
Horace Jaques, [illegible] yrs..............59th
Charles H. Kimball, [illegible] yrs., 4th Cav.
Asa Kimball, 3 years.
Marcus Kimball, 3 yrs......... 13th
James M. Kimball, [illegible] years.
Jeremiah B. P. Ladd, 3 years.
B[illegible]rt L[illegible], [illegible] yrs..........2d Cav.
Nathaniel E. Loveland, 3 yrs.........[illegible]d
Nathaniel Loveland, 3 yrs .....1[illegible]th
Wm. D. Mitchell, [illegible] yrs..........17th
Charles H. Mitchell, [illegible] mos.....48th
John Malone, 3 yrs .... 1[illegible]th
George H. Mitchell, [illegible] mos.... 48th
John Malone, [illegible] yrs...........2d Cav.
Augustus F. Noyes, 3 yrs. ... 11th
Darius H. Nelson, 9 mos........48th
Edwin C. Noyes.
George A. Ordway, 3 years.
Henry N. Page, 1 yr., 4th H. Art.
Charles Parker, 9 mos............48th
Rufus E. Parker, [illegible] mos .. . [illegible]th
Charles E. Peabody, 3 yrs.. ...12th
Samuel T. Perry, 3 yrs.......... 17th
Wm. S. Perry, 3 yrs. ... .3[illegible]d
Eustace G. Parker, [illegible] yrs . ...1[illegible]th
Aaron B. Parker, 1 yr . 4th H. A.
Eugene Parker, [illegible] years.
G[illegible]an N. Parker, [illegible] yrs ...1[illegible]th
Orlando S. Paris, 3 yrs........Navy
Morrison Proctor, 3 yrs 17th
Benj. F. Pike, 3 years.
Daniel S. Pike 3 yrs.. .. .. 3[illegible]d
Oliver S. R[illegible], 3 yrs ... 1[illegible]th
E[illegible] A. Richardson, 1 year, 17th Un.
John P. R[illegible], [illegible] yrs ...[illegible]
Edward R[illegible]son, 1[illegible] days, 17th Un.
Henry G. R[illegible], [illegible] mos. ..48th
Henry C. R[illegible], [illegible] yrs 12th
E[illegible] H. Ricker, 1[illegible] days, 17th
[illegible] yrs. ...... [illegible]
W[illegible] 1[illegible] days, 17th Un.
[illegible] yrs. .11th
[illegible]
T[illegible] .....[illegible]th
W[illegible] [illegible]th

Regt.

Timothy A. Stacey, 3 yrs.. ......3[illegible]d
Joseph C. Stacey, 3 yrs..........2d
John M. Stacey, 3 yrs.............19th
Albert C. Stacey, 3 yrs.............33d
Moses H. Stickney, 3 yrs 33d
Chas. H. Smith, 1[illegible] days, 17th Un.
Edward Savary, 1 yr., 4th H. Art.
Charles B. S[illegible]mes, 1 yr., 4th H. A.
Nathan Sargent, 1 yr., 4th H. Art.
Warren Sargent, 1 yr., 4th H. Art.
Oscar F. Stevens, 9 mos.......... 5th
Edwin T. Stevens, 3 yrs., 3d H. A.
Peter Stillman, 3 yrs..............19th
Peter Stillman re-enl., 3 years, 19th.
Oscar M. Stickney, 9 mos........48th
I. B. Sanborn, 9 mos............ 48th

Regt.

Charles H. Tandy, 1[illegible] days, 17th Un.
A. Dana Torrey, 3 yrs............19th
Charles D. Twombly, 3 yrs., 3d H. Art.
Charles W. Watkins, 3 mos.....5th
James S. Walsh, 100 days, 17th Un.
Henry B. Webber, 3 yrs 17th
Wellington B. Webber, 3 mos..5th
George H. Wiggin, 9 mos......48th
Justin R. Wood, 1 yr., 4th H. Art.
George Willey..........................Navy
Cyrus R. Wiggin, 9 mos.........5[illegible]th
Luther P. Withum, 1 yr., 4th H. A.
Joseph A. Walsh, 100 days, 17th Un.
Wm. Young, 3 yrs., 16th Light Bat.

Of these, Isaac N. Adams was wounded at Antietam, and died September 22, 1862, Charles Boynton was killed on the Peninsula in 1862, William Carr died of wounds received at Gettysburg, John Fegan and David S. Hardy died in Andersonville Prison, Frank M. Foster and John Harriman died in Louisiana, Granville Hershel died of wounds in North Carolina, Asa Kimball died in Libby Prison, Nathaniel Loveland was killed on the Peninsula, Darius H. Nelson was killed at Port Hudson, William S. Perry died in Washington, John M. Stacy died in Washington, Moses W. Stickney died in Philadelphia, Edward C. Ricker died at Falmouth, and Charles W. Watkins was killed at Cold Harbor. Edwin F. Berdge, Marcus M. Chase, Willard K. Chase, Leonard J. Chase, Michael Glister, William D. Mitchell, Charles H. Mitchell and William O. Sides are stated in the town records to have died but whether of wounds or disease there is no record to show.

The whole number of men furnished during the war was one hundred and eighty-five, of whom seven were officers. The total sum of money appropriated for war purposes was $27,812.57. A marble shaft was erected on the common in memory of the dead soldiers of the war and dedicated in 1866. In 1867 the Charles Sumner Post, No. 107, of the Grand Army of the Republic was known as the L. B. Schwabe Post, and its name was subsequently changed to the one it now bears in honor of the late distinguished Senator.

On the 8th of May, 1868, Francis Sargent, William Gunnison and John S. Poyen, all residents of what is now Merrimac, were, with their associates, incorporated as the West Amesbury Branch Railroad Company, with a capital of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. They were authorized to locate within two years a road from "West Amesbury near the Four Corners, thence westerly near the house of Joseph R. Thomas, thence more northerly to the State line near a corner of Newton, there to connect with any railroad which may be authorized by the laws of New Hampshire from said State line to a point on the Boston and Maine Railroad, or from said State line to a point on the State line separating Haverhill from Plaistow, near the house of James Brickett, and from said last-named point may locate, construct and main-

tain and operate a railroad in said town of Haverhill to a point on the Boston and Maine Railroad not less than one mile northerly from the depot in Haverhill."

On the 12th of June, 1869, they were authorized to so change the location as to commence "at some convenient point in West Amesbury and run through said town to the east part of the town of Haverhill, thence through said easterly part of Haverhill to the Merrimac River, at or near the Rock's Bridge and cross the river by a new bridge or by building suitable structures on the present bridge, on such terms as may be agreed upon by the County Commissioners of Essex County, Haverhill, West Newbury and Amesbury, thence through West Newbury and Groveland to the railroad in Groveland." The town of Groveland was also authorized to subscribe for stock not exceeding five per cent. of its assessed valuation. The result of the whole matter was that Groveland did not subscribe and the road was built on one of the routes mentioned in the original act of incorporation.

For many years prior to 1826 there was no established ferry across the river at Bradford. Muliken's ferry, at West Bradford, was established in 1745, and continued in operation until the Haverhill bridge was built, in 1794. After that time the scattering travel at points below, as far as East Bradford, was accommodated by individual enterprise, which was far from satisfactory. Under the lead of Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, subscriptions for the establishment of a chain ferry were raised, and a stock company formed which carried on its business with profit, until the construction of the iron bridge in 1871. The increase of travel from Groveland and West Newbury and other points to Haverhill rendered at this time better accommodations necessary, and in response to a petition to the General Court, an act was passed March 6, 1870, requiring the county commissioners within two years, to construct a suitable bridge, and assess its cost in such proportions as they thought just on the county of Essex, the city of Haverhill and the towns of West Newbury and Groveland. On the 20th of July, 1870, the commissioners laid out the bridge and at once set about its construction. Its cost was $84,962.70, of which the sum of $38,233.22 was assesed on the county, $26,904.85 on the city of Haverhill, $11,328.36 on the town of Groveland and $8496.27 on the town of West Newbury. The bridge was opened April 10, 1872. In the spring of 1881 the bridge fell, and by an act of the Legislature, passed on the 20th of March, the commissioners were authorized to rebuild it and assess the cost as before. In April the commissioners decided to build a new bridge, and its cost of $73,105.40 was assessed, $36,552.70 on the county, $28,197.78 on the city of Haverhill, $5744 on the town of Groveland and $2610.92 on the town of West Newbury. In 1877 the Haverhill and Groveland Street Railway was built, which crosses the bridge. It has since been extended to West Newbury, thus adding a new tributary to the enterprising city of Haverhill, which should have been secured to Newburyport. While on this point it may not be impertinent to suggest that the people of Newburyport might find it for their interest, not only to build a horse railway to West Newbury, their neighboring town, but also to extend their Amesbury road to Merrimac.

Besides the Congregational and Methodist Churches, of which mention has been made as organizations in existence at the time of the incorporation of the town, there are others which have sprung up since that time, all of which are in that part of the town knowu as South Groveland. In 1855, through the enterprise mainly of Jacob W. Reed, a church was built in that section, which, for a time, was occupied by various denominations. That, however, has disappeared. Since that time the St. James Episcopal Church has been built, in which a flourishing society holds its Sabbath service. The church, complete and ready for occupation, was the gift of E. J. M. Hale, of Haverhill, the owner of a large manufacturing establishment in its neighborhood. The last officiating clergymau was Rev. Albert E. George, but at present it is without a pastor. The St. Patrick's Catholic Church has been also built, Mr. Hale contributing the land on which it stands and a liberal sum also towards defraying the cost of its construction. Rev. Edward Murphy, of Georgetown, has the present charge of this church.

On the 8th of March, 1828, Moses Parker, Jeremiah Spofford and Benjamin Parker, and their associates, were incorporated as the Bradford Mutual Fire Insurance Company. After the incorporation of the town, on the 29th of April, 1850, the name of the company was changed to the Groveland Mutual Fire Insurance Company, and on the 14th of April, 1855, its charter was renewed for twenty-eight years, from March 8, 1856. Its present officers are Moses Foster president and Nathaniel H. Griffith secretary. The company pays its expenses and losses by assessments on deposit notes, which, on the 31st of December, 1886, amounted to $104,852.69, while the amount at risk at that date was $1,615,799.

On the 1st of May, 1869, Nathaniel H. Griffith, Nathaniel Ladd and Edwin T. Curtis, and their associates, were incorporated as the Groveland Savings Bank, and the officers of the company were Moses Foster president and Nathaniel H. Griffith treasurer. After being in operation sixteen years its affairs were gradually wound up.

The industries of Groveland, though now except in South Groveland well-nigh extinct, have in the past been varied and extensive. At a very early date the advantages of Johnson's Creek were discovered, and in 1670 a grist-mill was built on that stream. In 1684 the town of Bradford received proposals from Richard Thomas, of Rowley, and John Perle, of Marblehead, to set up a corn-mill on the creek. Mills were also built there by Edward Carleton,

Phineas Carleton and Aaron Parker. In 1740 Joseph Kimball and Eliphalet Hardy built mills. In 1760 Thomas Carleton established a fulling-mill on the creek, and in 1790 Retier Parker built a tanyard. In the same year William Tenney, Jr., established a chaise-factory, which flourished for thirty years. In 1784 Francis Kimball used the waters of the stream for a saw-mill, and Benjamin Morris for a fulling-mill.

Rev. Gardner B. Perry, of East Bradford (now Groveland), stated, in an historical address delivered in 1820, that up to that time there had been on the creek four saw-mills, five grist-mills, three fulling-mills and two bark-mills.

In 1820 there were in the East Parish five tanyards in active operation, the first of which, in point of time, was established by Shubael Walker, who removed his business from the West Parish. In connection with the preparation of leather the manufacture of shoes sprang up, chiefly devoted to the production of a coarse article which found its market in the Southern States and the West Indies. Jesse Atwood carried on a chocolate-factory, Stephen Foster the manufacture of brass and pewter buckles, Jotham Hunt the coopering business, Moses Parker the manufacture of tobacco, and others were engaged in making bricks and straw bonnets. Nor was ship-building neglected. In this industry Bradford shared to a limited extent a business which was carried on so extensively in the towns on the Merrimac nearer the sea.

Until about the time of the incorporation of Groveland the waters of Johnson's Creek had only been utilized by the smaller mills, to which reference has been made. These, however, gradually disappeared. In 1837, William Perry removed to the East Parish, from Bridgewater, and built a brass foundry, which in 1843 was converted into a shoe-thread factory, carried on by Perry & Swett. In 1854 it became the property of E. A. Straw of Manchester, N. H., and Nathaniel Webster, of Amesbury, who converted it into a factory, for the manufacture of seamless bags. In 1859 it was purchased by E. J. M. Hale, of Haverhill, who changed it into a woolen-factory. Mr. Hale soon doubled the size of the old mill, and supplied it with a forty horse-power engine. In 1861 he built a new mill, one hundred and thirty-seven feet by fifty-two, four stories high, and attached to it an eighty horse-power engine. In 1875 an addition was made, eighty feet by fifty-four, three stories high. In 1869 Mr. Hale built still another mill below the others, three hundred and sixteen feet by fifty-two, four stories high in the main building, and supplied it with an engine of one hundred and fifty horse-power. All the mills contained thirty-six sets of machinery including one hundred and eight carding-machines, forty-two spinners, and two hundred and thirty-eight looms engaged in the manufacture of flannel. There are also connected with the mills a repair-shop, four picker-houses, a dye-house, a forging-shop, three store-houses and a large number of tenements for operatives. About four hundred hands are employed in and about the mills, and as the mills were gradually enlarged, the population of the south section of the town increased until it had become about one half of that of the whole town.

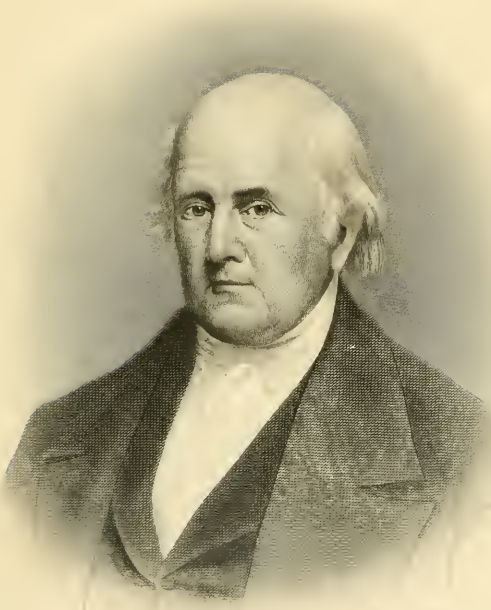
It is unnecessary to make special mention of those citizens who have been prominent in the town since its incorporation, as, with but few exceptions, their names are included in the lists of town officers or Representatives in the early part of this sketch. There will be found the names of Capt. George Savory, Rev. Gardner B. Perry, Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, Nathaniel Ladd, and of the recently deceased Daniel B. Hopkinson, all of whom have passed away, leaving honorable records and a fragrant memory.

A few statistics, some of which are given to show the relative growth in population and valuation of Groveland and its parent town, must close this sketch. The population of Bradford in 1850, after the incorporation of Groveland, was 1328 and that of Groveland 1286. The valuation of each town at that time was about $400,000. In 1885 the population of Bradford was 3106 and that of Groveland 2272. In the same year the valuation of Bradford was $1,423,243 and that of Groveland $874,444. The affairs of the town are managed with intelligence, prudence and economy. The current expenses of the town for the year 1886 amounted to $34,515.48, and the town debt March 1, 1887, to $17,517.73, while the property of the town, including the town farm, school-houses, etc., amounted to $25,098.61. The financial soundness and strength of the town is apparent; and while its growth has been checked by causes which have ceased to operate, it seems certain that, with its good soil, its admirable location, the prosperity of the Hale mills and its proximity to the flourishing city of Haverhill, its future increase and prosperity are assured.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

GARDNER B. PERRY, D.D.

Gardner Braman Perry was the fifth child and second son of Nathan and Phœbe (Braman) Perry, of Norton, Mass. He was born August 9, 1783. He was a lineal descendant of Anthony Perry, one of the first settlers and most influential citizens of Rehoboth. His father was a farmer, a man of quiet, methodical and industrious habits, yet energetic and public-spirited when the occasion demanded it. A good evidence of this was afforded by his enlistment after the battle of Bunker Hill and service in the siege of Boston. His readiness thus to leave his young wife and infant child at a period when the colonists had not yet fully testified their ability to



Gardner B. Perry

resist regular troops showed both patriotism and pluck.

If he inherited good principles and quiet decision from his father, he was indebted to his mother for that energy, noble ambition and geniality by which he was so eminently characterized. It was the testimony of more than one of Mrs. Perry's children that their success in life was mainly attributable to her instructions and example. She was a woman of rare sweetness, sprightliness and tact. She was a sister of the late Isaac Braman, D.D., who, called to be pastor of the church in Georgetown, after more than fifty candidates had been heard, retained the position until his death, sixty-one years later, and ruled his flock in peace. Soon after his death the old quarrel broke out under new pretexts, but between the grandchildren of the former combatants, who were ranged pretty much as their ancestors had been. The disease was probably inveterate, but Dr. Braman's rare good sense proved a thorough palliative through two generations.

We can discover many common traits in Gardner Perry and his uncle. Yet there were differences: while both were emphatically peace-makers, Dr. Braman often avoided difficulties by strictly confining himself to his parish duties. Dr. Perry, on the contrary, was a zealous reformer, yet free from the asperity and one-sidedness unhappily too common among the champions of new measures. He thus retained the esteem and good will even of those who strongly dissented from his methods and objects.

Nathan Perry's family was a large one, and Bristol County farms are not over-productive; but he, and especially his wife, were determined that their children should be well educated. Gardner was therefore fitted for college in the academy in his native town, and in 1800 entered Brown University. The president of the institution, Dr. Maxey, was a man of unusual magnetism, and accordingly, when, in 1802, he resigned his office to accept the presidency of Union College, at Schenectady, he was followed thither by several of his pupils, young Perry and the late Bishop Brownell, of Connecticut, among the members.

Mr. Perry held high rank as a scholar. He was graduated in 1804, and immediately after took charge of the academy at Ballston, N. Y. A year later he returned to Schenectady and became tutor and instructor in French. In 1807 he was invited to become principal of the Kingston (N. Y.) Academy, where he remained five years. He was very successful and popular as an educator. Indeed, it was the opinion of his younger brother and pupil, the late Dr. William Perry, of Exeter, N. H., that he was especially designed for a teacher, and that the class-room rather than the pulpit was his appropriate field. However well founded, or the reverse, this belief may have been, his literary and executive abilities were highly esteemed by his *alma mater*. When Dr. Nott's resignation of its presidency was expected, about forty-five years ago, Dr. Perry was prominently mentioned as his successor. Dr. Nott concluded, however, to remain and so Dr. Perry's services were not required.

He had entered the ministry from thoroughly conscientious motives. He was earning a comfortable livelihood and could not hope for as large an income from his pastoral labors. No one was better aware than himself that he lacked those showy qualities which attract crowds and bring apparent, though superficial success. Nevertheless, he felt that he was called to preach the gospel, and in 1812 was licensed by the Presbytery of Albany. Though pastor of a Congregational Church in New England, we believe that he always retained his connection with the body which admitted him to the ministry.

In 1814 he accepted a call from the East Parish in Bradford Mass. (now Groveland), and was formally installed September 28th. The engagement proved a life one. He was sole pastor until 1851, when a colleague was called. He entered upon his duties with a zeal which was unintermitted until the infirmities of age compelled him to leave to others the more arduous responsibilities of his position. If the field was not a large one, the fact was not allowed to give an excuse for luxurious ease. It was thoroughly, intelligently and prayerfully cultivated.

Mr. Perry—he received the Doctorate of Divinity from Union College in 1843—was the father, brother and fellow-worker of all his people. In the pulpit, and out of it, he had their wants and their highest good constantly in mind. He pointed them to the world above, but he ever kept in their minds the necessity of making the best use of the world that now is. Hence he instructed them to be frugal, to till their lands, so as to return the largest profits, to provide thorough instruction for their children and to be temperate in all things. No one could be long in his company without receiving some practical suggestion.

His interests were not limited to his parish. Throughout Essex County, and beyond, he was foremost as an advocate of eduction. The common schools of Eastern Massachusetts owe him much, for he was the predecessor of Horace Mann and furnished that noted educator with many of the facts and statistics which he used so much to his own, as well as the public's advantage. Dr. Perry was an earnest supporter of the temperance cause. He had grown up in an age when excess was far too prevalent among all classes, and he labored for a better state of things with signal success.

He was very influential among his ministerial brethren. When heated discussions occurred, all sides were anxious to hear Dr. Perry's opinion, for he never yielded to excitement and his decisions were as impressive in form as judicious in their substance. He had a rare grace in saying even unpleasant things. His courtliness was that of the "old school," minus its

pomposity. He was always the true gentleman, but without mannerism or effort. He was gracious in expression and action, because he obeyed the impulses of a thoroughly kindly heart. This quality impressed itself upon strangers who never heard him preach and who exchanged few, if any, words with him. His mere look was full of benignity.

As a preacher he was instructive, but not magnetic. The thoughtful hearer would always find food for reflection in his sermons and would gain new appreciation from them by reading after hearing them. He was best enjoyed by those who were regular attendants on his ministry, and had accustomed themselves to look for what was said rather than toward the manner of saying it. A centennial sermon, preached in 1823, contains a real history of the church and parish. As such it is much prized by antiquaries. As copies of the first edition grew scarce, the price increased until the pamphlet was worth almost its weight in gold. A new edition was printed—an honor conferred on very few pulpit discourses.

Dr. Perry's long and useful life closed on the 16th of December, 1859, when he had reached the age of seventy-six years. Until shortly before his death he had been able to enjoy the attentions which all his relations and friends were anxious to bestow upon him. If his strength declined, his appreciation of the universal esteem—reverence would be the better word—in which every one held him must have increased. Yet his genuine modesty ever forbade him to take much credit to himself. He had tried to do his duty; that was all. Time is, however, a great test of character. Nearly thirty years have passed since Gardner B. Perry was borne to the grave, and his name and virtues are still warmly cherished in Groveland and throughout Essex County. He is remembered by all his contemporaries as a truly good and useful man, clear-headed and sound-hearted, and they have imparted their estimate to their children and grandchildren.

Dr. Perry was thrice married,—first to Maria P. Chamberlain, of Exeter, N. H.; second to Eunice Futtle, of Acton, Mass.; and third to Sarah Brown, of Grafton. His surviving children are Mrs. Charles Robinson and Mrs. Peter Parker, of Groveland; Mr. Gardner B. Perry, of Buenos Ayres; and Mr. Charles F. Perry, of Boston.

CHAPTER CXLI.

NEWBURY.

BY WILLIAM T. DAVIS.

THE river Kennet rises in the county of Berks, England, and flows into the Thames at Reading. On its northern bank a settlement was made by the Romans, remnants of which continued until the time of the Norman Conquest, when a new settlement was made on the south side of the river, which was called the "New Bourg" or "New Town." The termination Bourg, from the Latin *Burgus*, had originally signified a fortress, but became gradually changed to the meaning now attached to it. The spelling of the word has experienced various transformations, none of which, however, have changed its application to a town, or district, or borough. These changes are illustrated in the names of towns familiar to us, such as Newbury, Newburg, Newberg, Attleboro', Middleborough and Newberry.

In the English town of "New-Bourg," or "Newburg" as it has been long called, on the south side of the Kennet, there lived in the early half of the seventeenth century a man to whom a reference would be appropriate at this point in our narrative. This man was the Rev. Thomas Parker, who, for some time previous to 1634, taught the free school of the town. He was the only son of Rev. Robert Parker, who was said by Cotton Mather to have been "one of the greatest scholars in the English nation." He was admitted to Magdalen College, Oxford, but his father having been exiled for non-conformity, he removed to Dublin, where he studied under Dr. Usher, and afterwards to Holland, where he continued his studies with Dr. Ames. About the year 1617, when he was twenty-two years of age, he published a treatise on repentance, entitled "*De traductione peccatores ad ritam*," which won for him a high reputation, and afterwards a treatise on the book of Daniel. It was after his return from Holland that he became the teacher of the free school in Newburg.

In May, 1634, Mr. Parker arrived in New England, one of a company of about one hundred, who went first to Ipswich, then called Agawam, to settle. After passing the winter at Ipswich it was found, as Hubbard says, in his "History of New England," "so filled with inhabitants that some of them presently swarmed out into another place a little farther eastward. Mr. Parker was at first called to Ipswich to join with Mr. Ward, but he choosing rather to accompany some of his countrymen (who came out of Wiltshire in England) to that new place, than to be engaged with such as he had not been acquainted withal before, removed with them and settled at Newbury, which recess of theirs made room for others that soon after supplied their places."

There has been a division of opinion as to the precise time of the settlement of Newbury by Mr. Parker and his companions. But upon examination this division will be found to have originated in the confused expressions of writers concerning dates under the old and new style. It may be stated now with a considerable degree of positiveness that the settlement took place at some time during the early part of 1635, if we reckon the year as beginning on the 1st day of January, or during the latter part of

1634, if we reckon it as beginning according to the old style on the 25th of March. That it could not have occurred before the 29th of December, 1634, is demonstrated by the following extract from the records of Ipswich:

"December 29, 1634. It is consented unto that John Perkins, junior, shall build a ware upon the river of Quascycung (Parker River) and enjoy the profitts of it, but in case a plantation shall there settle, then he is to submit himself unto such conditions as shall by them be imposed."

That it could not have been later than the 6th of May, 1635, is demonstrated by the following extract from the records of Massachusetts Colony, which includes the only act of incorporation ever passed concerning the town of Newbury:

"May 6th, 1635. Quascacunquen is allowed by the court to be a plantation and it is referred to Mr. Humphrey, Mr. Endicott, Captain Turner and Captain Trask or any three of them to set out the bounds of Ipswich and Quascacunquen, or so much thereof as they can and the name of the said plantation shall be changed and shall hereafter be called Newberry.

"Further, it is ordered that it shall be in the power of the court to take orders that the said plantation shall receive a sufficient company to make a competent towne."

The Indian name Quascacunquen is applied in the records to the whole territory between Agawam (Ipswich) and the Merrimac River. Its Indian application, however—its meaning being a "waterfall"—was merely to the "falls" on the river Parker, and perhaps also to the immediate vicinity. More properly the whole territory from Naumkeag River to the Merrimac may be considered as having been a part of Agawam, as these two rivers bounded the jurisdiction of Masconomo, the Sagamore of Agawam.

At some time, then, in the spring of 1635, reckoning according to the new style, Rev. Thomas Parker, with his little band of immigrants, removed from Ipswich to Newbury. They went by water through Plum Island Sound and thence up the river, to which they gave the name of their honored leader. Their landing-place was on the north side of the river, not far below the bridge which now connects Newbury old town with Rowley. They were about forty in number, and the following are those whose names are known: Thomas Parker, James Noyes and wife, John Woodbridge, Henry Sewall and servants, James Browne and wife, Francis Plumer and wife, Nicholas Easton and wife, John Easton, Wm. Moody and wife and four sons, Anthony Short, Henry Short and wife, John Spencer, Richard Kent, Sr., and wife, Richard Kent, Jr., Stephen Kent and wife, James Kent, Nicholas Noyes, Thomas Browne, Richard Browne, George Brown, Thomas Coleman, Joseph Plumer and Samuel Plumer.

It is not unlikely that some of these were old residents of the English Newbury. Kent, at least, was a Newbury name, and may be found in the records of that town at about the period of the settlement of its namesake on this side of the ocean. During the summer of 1635 other settlers came in, and the population gradually extended farther and farther from the river. Among these new comers were Richard Dummer and John and Richard Pike, and John Emery, and after their arrival, probably in June or July, the first church was formed. Mr. Parker preached his first sermon in the open air, beneath the branches of a primeval oak which stood on the north bank of the river about one hundred yards below the Rowley bridge and near the original landing-place. The precise location of the first meeting-house, while it has been fixed by tradition as the lower Green, is rendered somewhat doubtful by evidence, which will be referred to hereafter, tending to fix it at Fisherman's Green, adjoining the old burial-ground. The first houses clustered about the meeting-house, in conformity with the order of the General Court, "that no dwelling-house shall be built above a half a mile from the meeting-house on any new plantation without leave from the Court, except mills and farm-houses of such as have their dwellings in town."

The only record extant concerning the formation of the church is contained in the testimony of John Pike, John Emery and Thomas Browne, given at the court in Ipswich during the church controversies which occurred in 1669, '70, '71, to which reference will be made hereafter. The testimony of Mr. Pike was as follows:

"I, John Pike do testifie that I was present at the gathering of the church at Newbury, and I did hear our reverend pastor preach a sermon on the eighteenth of Matthew, seventeenth verse; 'And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church; but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican,' wherein he did hould forth that the power of discipline belonged to the whole church, yt the matter of the church ought to be visible saints joyned or gathered together, that the manner of their joyning together ought to be by covenant, yt the end of it is for the exercisinge and enjoyinge of the ordinances of Christ togeather. He strongly proved his doctrine by many places of the Scripture, both in the old and new testament. The which sermon, together with the Scripture, did much instruct and confirme us in that ways of church discipline which as I understood he then preached for, namely, the Congregational ways, some noates of the said sermon which I then took from his mouth I have here ready to show if you please. The sermon being ended the brethren joyned together by express covenant, and being joyned they chose their pastor, Mr. Parker, who accepted the call and joyned with them according to the covenant aforesaid; and those that afterward joyned to the church consented to the said covenant explicit. The brethren of the church acted in these admissions of ye members expressinge their voats therein by lifting up the hande, and soe continued together lovingly a considerable number of yeares until other doctrine began to be preached amongst us.

"Per me, JOHN PIKE

"Sworne in Court, 30 March, 1669.

"Robert Pike also testifies that the meeting was on the Sabbath and in the open air under a tree.

"At the same time that Mr. Parker was chosen pastor, Mr. James Noyes was chosen teacher."

In 1636 Edward Woodman, John Woodbridge, Henry Short, Christopher Hussey, Richard Kent, Richard Brown and Richard Knight were chosen to manage the affairs of the town. The election of these men was had by authority of the following order, passed by the General Court on the 3d of March, 1635–36:

"*Whereas* plicular townes have many things wch concerne onely them selves & the ordering of their owne affaires and disposeing of businesses

in their owne towne, it is therefore ordered, that the ffreemen of evy towne, or the major pte of them, shall onely have power to dispose of their owne lands & woods, with all the previlidges & appurtenances of the said townes, to graunt lotts, & make such orders as may concerne the well ordering of their owne townes, not repugnant to the laws & orders here established by the Genal Court; as also to lay mulks & penaltyes for the breach of their orders, & to levy & distreine the same not exceedeing the some of xxs.; also to chuse their owne pticulr officers, as constables, surveyors for the high wages & the like; & because much business is like to ensue to the constables of sevall townes, by reason they are to make distresses & gather ffynes, therefore that evy towne shall have two constables, where there is neede, that soe their office may not be a burthen unto them, & they may attend more carefully upon the discharge of their office, for wch they shalbe lyeable to give their accompts to this Court when they shalbe called thereunto."

These officers were the germ from which sprang, at a later day, the Board of Selectmen.

In 1637 eight men were furnished by Newbury for the Pequod War, and in the same year Richard Dummer, John Spencer and Nicholas Easton were disarmed by the General Court for holding erroneous opinions on theological matters. John Spencer returned to England, Nicholas Easton removed to Rhode Island, but Richard Dummer remained in Newbury. In the year before a grant of land was made to Mr. Dummer and Mr. Spencer at the falls of River Parker for the erection of a grist-mill.

After the departure of Mr. Spencer the mill was carried on by Mr. Dummer alone, and in 1638 the following agreement was entered into concerning it:

"August 6th, 1638. Whereas it is agreed with Mr. Richard Dummer, of Newbury, by the persons whose names are underwritten, hereunto subscribed, that in case Mr. Dummer doe make his mill fitt to grynd corne and doe maintaine the same as also doe keep a man to attend grynding of corne, then they, for their part, will send all the corne that they shall have ground, and doe likewise promise that all the rest of the towne (if it lye in their power to promise the same) shall also bring their corne, from tyme to tyme, to be ground at the same mill. And it is further agreed that (the aforementioned conditions being observed by Mr. Dummer) there shall not any other mill be erected within the sayd towne.

"Edward Woodman.
"John Knight.
"Edward Rawson.
"Richard Brown.
"Henry Shore."

Three, at least, of these subscribers were members of the committee of seven chosen to manage the affairs of the town, and on the 6th of October, 1638, their promise was agreed to by the town. Additions were constantly making to the population of the town, and among those arriving in 1637 were Edward Rawson, Richard Singleterry, William Palmer, John Moulton, Thomas Moulton, Nicholas Busbee and Abraham Toppan, all of whom were formally admitted as inhabitants.

On the 13th of March, 1639, it was ordered by the General Court that "Plum Island is to remain in the Court's power only for the present. Ipswich, Newbury and the new plantation (Rowley) between them may make use of it till the Court shall see cause to dispose of it."

It so continued until 1649. On the 15th of May in that year the town of Newbury petitioned the General Court for a grant of the whole island. The town stated in their petition that:

"The substance of our desires is that, if, after you have heard and perused what we say, that in right Plum Island belongs not to us, yet out of your just favor it may be granted to us to relieve our pinching necessities, without which we see no way to continue or subsist. Our fears were occasioned by a petition which was preferred to the last General Court for it. Our apprehensions of our right to it are, First, because for three or four miles together there is no channel betwixt us and it. Second, because at low water we can go dry to it over many places, in most with carts and horses, which we usually do, being necessitated so to do since our gift to Rowley on the Court's request and promise that we should have anything in the Court's power to grant. Thirdly, because the Court's order gives all lands to dead low water mark, not exceeding one hundred rods, to towns or persons, where any lands do so border. In many places Plum Island is not ten rods, at no place one hundred rods from low water mark. Fourth, because we only can improve it without damage to our neighboring plantation, which none can do without much damage to your petitioners, if not to the ruining of both the meadow and corn of your petitioners and so forth. The premises considered, we hope (and doubt not) this honorable Court will see just grounds to answer our request and confirm the Island to our town, and we shall always, as in duty we are bound, pray and so forth.

"Thomas Parker. James Noyes.
Percival Lowle. William Gerrish.
John Spencer. Edward Woodman.
John Saunders. Henry Short.
Richard Kent in ye name of ye rest."

The result of the petition was that on the 17th of October, 1649, the court granted two-fifths of the island to Newbury, two-fifths to Ipswich and one-fifth to Rowley.

In 1639 an important change was made in the territorial limits of Newbury by the settlement of Rowley. Rev. Ezekiel Rogers arrived in New England in December, 1638, and with about sixty families settled on land which was afterwards incorporated as the town of Rowley. On the 13th of March, 1638-39, Mr. Rogers and Mr. John Philips and their company had granted to them by the General Court "eight miles every way into the country where it may not trench upon other plantations already settled." This grant was called Rogers Plantation until the 4th of the following September, when it was ordered by the court "that Mr. Ezechi Rogers plantation should be called Rowley."

Previously to the grant to Mr. Rogers, Newbury and Ipswich were adjoining towns. The Rogers grant took a slice from each of these towns and extended to the Merrimac River, including what are now the towns of Bradford, Groveland, Georgetown and part of Boxford. Its boundaries were fixed by the court on the 13th of May, 1640, when, as the record says, "it is declared that Rowley bounds is to bee eight. miles from their meeting-house, in a straight line, and then a crose line diameter from Ipswich Ryver to Merrimack Ryver, where it doth not pjudice any former grant." These boundaries in a somewhat indefinite manner fixed also the boundaries of Newbury, which may be described as having been in 1639 the line of Rowley, the Merrimac River and the ocean. Within these boundaries it was about thirteen miles long and about six miles broad, and contained not far from thirty thousand acres, of which

abont two thousand acres were covered with water. Prior to the grant of the Rogers plantation Newbury, in the exercise of its ownership of a part of the newly-granted territory, had made grants of farming-lands within its limits, and after the grant to Mr. Phillips and his company by the court, it expended the sum of eight hundred pounds in buying back the farms it had granted, and then surrendered them to the court's grantees. The records of Newbury say concerning this matter that

"The towne being assembled together and being desirous to manifest theyr earnest desires and willingness to give due incouredgment unto the worthy gentilmen who desire to set down between us and Ipswich as to part with such a portion of land as cannot any way be expected from them, or they may without endangering their present necessityes afford. Hoping on good grounds it may fully answer their desires and expectations they have determined as followeth:

"By the common and general suffrages of the body of freemen, none excepted, there was granted to the said gentilmen all the upland and meadows and marish between us and Ipswich incompassed by the line heer underwritten, namely:

"That their line shall begin from the head of the great creek between the great river (Parker) and Mr. Dummer's, running due west as we come to the great creek, being the bounds of John Osgood's farm, which issues into Mr. Easton's river, and above that creek all the land southward of Mr. Easton's river and from that river from the path leading to the falls to run a due west line into the country a mile and afterwards to run on a northwest line so as it come not within half a mile of the side line of Mr. Dummer's farm. Likewise it comes two miles distant of Merrimack. Provided, that if after they have entered by building or otherwise on this part of land so granted them, and leave off from going on with a plantation or a towne between us, that then the grants abovesaid shall be void to all intents and purposes and to remaine the proprietyes and inheritances of the towne of Newberry in as ample a manner as before the grant hereof in all respects."

In this year 1639, Mr. Coffin, the historian of Newbury, says: "The people having built a ministry house, a meeting-house which was soon used as a school-house, had a ferry established at Carr's Island and became an orderly community, and began not only to lay out new roads, but as they were rapidly extending their settlement farther North, to take special care of the town's timber by prescribing a penalty of five shillings for every tree cut down on the town's land without permission. Nearly the whole of what is now called West Newbury, or that part above Artichoke River, was called the 'upper woods.' In this year, also, Anthony Somerby, Henry Somerby, John Lowle, Richard Lowle, Percival Lowle, Wm. Gerrish and Richard Dole, all ancestors of long lines of Newbury descendants, were admitted inhabitants of the town. Anthony Somerby was the first schoolmaster in the town, and in the year of his arrival, 1639, the town granted to 'him for his encouragement to keepe schoole for one yeare, foure akers of upland over the great river in the necke, also six akers of salt marsh next to Abraham Toppan's twenty akers.'"

In 1640 the town of Salisbury was incorporated and shortly after that town granted to George Carr the island which still bears his name. Mr. Carr was appointed ferryman by the court held at Ipswich, and thus Newbury, which had been the border town on the east, became connected with a new town, which now enjoyed that distinction. The natural tendency of this new state of things was to draw the Newbury people away from their first settlement on the banks of the river Parker, and attract them farther towards the Merrimac. The result was the laying out of what was called the new town farther to the north, and the removal of the meeting-house to a new site. The lots of land in the new town were laid out, and the town records under date of January 11, 1644, say:

"It is hereby ordered and determined by the orderers of the town affairs that the plan of the new town is and shall be laid out by the lot layers, as the house lots were determined by their choice, beginning from the farthermost house lot in the South Street, thence running through the pine swamp, thence up the High Street, numbering the lots in the East Street to John Bartlett's lot, the 27th, then through the west side of the High Street to Mr. Lowell's, the 28th, and so to the end of that street, then Field Street to Mr. Woodman's, the forty-first, thence to the end of that street John Cheney's, the 50th, then turning to the first cross street to John Emery's, the 51st, thence coming up from the river side on the east side of the same street to the other street, the west side to Daniel Pierce's, the 57th, and so to the river side on the side the street to Mr. Clarke and others, to Francis Plummer the 66th, as hereinunder by names and figures appear:

"Thomas Parker	33	Anthony Somerby	44
James Noyes	32	Richard Bartlett	25
Edward Woodman	41	John Bartlett	27
John Knight	9	Wm. Titcombe	24
Richard Knigat	10	Nicholas Batt	47
John Pike, Jr.	55	Robert Coker	59
Archilaus Woodman	42	Thomas Dowe	23
John Pomberton	46	Richard Badger	4
Richard Littleale	49	John Cheney	50
Richard Fitts	50	Edward Greenleaf	7
Henry Travers	1	John Oliver	17
John Emery	51	Lt. John Lowle	28
Henry Palmer		Anthony Short	8
Richard Kent, Sr.		John Hutching	34
Wm. Palmer		John Clark	60
Thomas Cromwell		Edward Rawson	31
Samuel Scullard	45	Widow Goffe	
Thomas Silver		Thomas Browne	56
Walter Allen		Wm. Ilsley	
Francis Plummer	66	Nicholas Noyes	6
Abraham Toppan	20	Henry Lunt	43
John Musselwhite		Wm. Browne	18
Thomas Hale		John Cutting	30
Thomas Coleman	12	Mr. Lowle, Sr.	29
Widow Browne	19	Samuel Plummer	65
John Pike, Sr.	2	Anthony Morse	54
Daniel Pearse	57	Wm. Morse	
Thomas Blumfield		Henry Rolfe	11
Nathaniel Badger	58	Daniel Thurston	38
John Bond		Abbe Hues	39
John Swett	26	John Poore	35
Wm. Hilton		James Merrill	40
Robert Lewis		Abraham Merrill	36
Gyles Badger	63	John Fry	
Widow Stevens	138	The Ferry Lot	
John Stevens	14	John Indian	61

At an earlier date, on the 17th of March, 1642, it was

"declared and ordered, according to the former intention of the town, that the following persons be acknowledged to be freeholders by the town, and to have a proportionable right in all waste lands, commons and rivers undisposed, and such as buy from or under them, or any of their heirs, have bought, granted and purchased from them or any of them their right and title thereunto and none else, provided, also, that no freeholder shall bring in any cattle of other men's or towns on the town's commons, above and beyond their proportions, otherwise than the freemen shall permit.

"Richard Dumer.
Henry Sewall.
Edward Rawson.
John Lowle.
Henry Short.
Thomas Cromwell.
Richard Holt.
Henry Rolf.
John Morrill.
John Emery.
Anthony Somerby.
Richard Bartlett.
William Moody.
William ffranckling.
Abraham Toppan.
Henry Somerby.
Thomas Silver.
Henry Travers.
Richard Litleale.
Giles Badger.
Thomas Parker
James Noyes.
Percivall Lowle.
Stephen Dumer.
Richard Kent, Jr.
Samuel Scullard.
Edward Greenleaf.
John Osgood.
Abel Huse.
Joseph Carter.
John Knight.
Henry Lunt.
Richard Knight.
Richard Browne.
Mrs. Oliver.
Stephen Kent.
John Cheney.
Richard Badger.
Anthony Morse.
William Thomas.
Nicholas Noyes
Widow Stevens
Nathaniel Wyer.
John Kelley.
Mr. Woodman.
John ffry.

Thomas Hale.
Joseph Peasly.
William Mors.
John Goff.
John Stevens.
Antho: Short.
John Pemberton.
John Pike, Sr.
John Musselhwhite.
Thomas Browne.
John Hutchins.
Daniel Thurston.
John Poer.
John Pike, Jr.
Henry Palmer.
William Titcomb.
Nicholas Batt.
Thomas Smith.
William White.
Thomas Davis.
William Ilsley.
Samuel Guile.
Thomas Dow.
Archelaus Woodman.
John Sweet.
Christopher Bartlett.
Mrs. Miller.
John Russ.
John Spencer.
John Clark.
John Woolbridge.
John Cutting.
James Browne
Francis Plummer.
William Palmer.
John Bartlett.
Robert Coker.
Richard ffits.
Thomas Blumfield.
Thomas Colman.
George Browne.
Nathaniel Badger.
John Bond.
William Berry
Walter Allen.

Counting the above ninety-one freeholders and the probable average number in their families, together with such as may not have been freeholders, the population of Newbury may be estimated to have been in 1642, seven years after its settlement, at between three and four hundred. Among these freeholders are found the names of Bond, Browne, Pearse, Mors, Ffranklin, Morrell, Smith, White, Knight, Allen, Hutchins, Clark, Kent and Poor, all of which may be found in various lists of residents of English Newbury at the same period. It is not improbable that many immigrants from that town to New England who followed Rev. Thomas Parker, were attracted by the name to make the American Newbury their permanent home. Descendants of the early settlers of Newbury seeking the home of their ancestors on the other side of the ocean, and their family connections in the old country, would probably find a genealogical mine in the old English town which has not yet been to any great extent explored.

In 1645 a second grist-mill was built, but whether in addition to or in place of the old Dummer and Spencer mill the records do not state. A committee was appointed on the 18th of December in that year "to procure a water mill for to be built and set up in said towne," and it was agreed to give John Emery and Samuel Scullard twenty pounds and ten acres of upland and six acres of meadow, said mill to be free from all rates for seven years, and to be a freehold to them and their heirs, they on their part agreeing to set up the mill between Holt's Point and Woodman's Bridge.

Early in the year 1647 the removal of the meeting-house farther north, into or near what was called the new town, became necessary in consequence of the desertion of the old settlement by a majority of the members of the church. On the 2d of January, 1646–47, the following order was issued by James Noyes, Edward Woodman, John Cutting, John Lowle, Richard Knight and Henry Short, six of the seven men having charge of the affairs of the town:

"Wee, whose names are in the margent expressed for the settleing the disturbances that yett remayne about the planting and setling the meeting house that all men may cheerfully goe on to improve their lands at the new towne, doe determine that the meeting house shall be placed and sett up at on or before the twentieth of October next in, or upon a Knowle of upland by Abraham Toppan's barne within a sixe or sixteen rodd of the side of the gate posts, that are sett up in the high way by the said Abraham Toppan's barne."

This knowle of land is understood to have been on the northwest corner of the present burial-ground. Edward Rawson, one of the town committee or selectmen, as they may as well be called, dissented from the decision of his associates, and a petition was sent to the General Court signed by those opposed to the removal, asking for such interference and aid as the court might feel itself able to interpose and render. The following extract will show the motive and reasons actuating the petitioners:

"To come to the last passages which stir and set on the great of our sorrows. Discourse at last was had of taking down ye meeting-house. Those (as well as we can guesse) that paid two parts of three to the building of it, consented not, many strongly opposed it, yet the voices of many, that were the servants, and never paid a penny to it, prevailed, down it is taken without any satisfaction given us, and besides what we are forced to pay toward it. The highway in part, that served both town and country and the very places assigned to bury the dead and where many dead body's lye are sold away (as wee are informed, though all things are secretly carried) to sett up againe, where both old and new towne judge it unmeete for both, but especially for us of the ould. The present and already seen inconveniences in respect of enjoying the ordinances, which we came so many miles to be partakers of, hath caused us oft to sigh in secret and forcibly put us on thought to provide for ourselves, and not to betray the blood of our poor innocents, which cannot (or exceeding rarely) be partakers of the ordinary means of salvation; nor we ourselves, but uncomfortably and with great distractions which they of the new towne can experience to us by that little they have already felt. Divers propositions we have made. Att the beginning of these motions we promised the elders, both of you, their maintenance (which must needs be to our great charge) if they would engage themselves to abide with us. We were rejected in this. Since, we have made several propositions. The towne being continued and stretched out neare five miles, if not upwards, besides the inconveniences of a great river at the old towne, whereby it cannot be imagined that we, ould, feeble men, women and children of all sorts can possibly goe above three miles to meeting, besides the necessary occasions in the winter time of attendance of cattell, which require will divers to be nearer, most men having small help, but by themselves, and ye two ends of ye towne being most populous, wee have therefore desired either first that one of the elders might be resident with

us, though the other be there, the church and maintenance still continuing one and the same, or secondly, that there might be two churches, and one elder might be ours, or thirdly, if neither of the former might be obtained, then to let us be a church of ourselves."

This extract not only exhibits the feeling which the removal of the meeting-house occasioned, but throws also side-lights on the extent and character and condition of the settlement. The allusion in the extract to the sale of a part of the highway and the burial-place is woven by an intelligent writer in the Newburyport *Herald* into an argument tending to show that Fishermen's Green, and not the lower green, was the location of the first meeting-house. He says:

"The common belief that this building first stood upon the lower Green rests entirely on traditional grounds, while there is considerable evidence which decidedly indicates that its site was about one-third of a mile to the northward and adjoined the old burial-ground, now in the field opposite the residence of Joseph Ilsley, but on what was then called 'fishermen's green.' The town records show that this burial-ground was reserved from the sale of the green to John Emery in May, 1647, eight months after the house had been removed. It is hardly possible that such reservation would have been made except that the dead were already there; and tends strongly to establish the fact that this was the first and only place of burials of the early settlers up to this time. As our ancestors came from a land where it was a common custom to include the grounds for the meeting-house and burials in one lot, a custom continued by them when they relocated at the New-Town, it is but reasonable to believe that when at Old-Town they had set apart grounds for the same uses, they had connected them in the same manner."

His argument is, in a few words, that the old burial-place was at Fishermen's Green, and that it is probable that, in accordance with the English custom, the burial-place was the churchyard. So far as the Plymouth colony was concerned, the English custom was invariably followed; but the writer of this sketch has heard it stated by a learned antiquary of Essex County, that in that county, except in Ipswich, it did not prevail. It certainly was not followed in Salem, but the settlers of Newbury, having remained long enough in Ipswich to observe its ways, may have adopted them in their future home.

There is no record of any vessel up to this time having crossed the bar at the mouth of the Merrimac. It is probable that at the time of the settlement of Newbury the bar was considered practically impassable, while the river Parker was easily accessible and to a certain point navigable for the class of vessels at that time used. Hubbard says in his history: "Merrimack is another gallant river, the entrance into which, though a mile over in breadth, is barred with shoals of sand, having two passages that lead thereunto at either end of a sandy island that lieth over against the mouth of sayde river. Near the mouth of that are two other lesser ones, about which are seated two considerable townes, the one called Newberry, the other Ipswich, either of which have fayre channels wherein vessels of fifty or sixty tons may pass up safely to the doores of the inhabitants whose habitations are pitched near the banks on either side." And there is no doubt that the first vessels built in Newbury were built on the river Parker. But there is some reason to suspect that the movement of the settlement towards the Merrimac River was owing to the discovery that the bar was not such a hindrance to navigation as had been supposed.

The settlement of Salisbury, in 1640, must have been not only the result of this discovery, but the cause of a further dissipation of previously entertained fears concerning the river obstructions; and it is not unlikely that the Newbury people began at this early day to take advantage of the deeper water, the more advantageous shore and the better connection with the sea which the Merrimac afforded. It is a matter of record that as early as 1655 the town granted to Captain Paul White a half of an acre of land on the Merrimac "for the purpose and on condition that he build a dock and warehouse there." Previously to that time, however, trade on the river had been carried on, which demanded the convenience of a wharf to supplant the prevailing method of loading and unloading vessels by means of small boats.

In 1649 the business of tanning was begun in Newbury by Nicholas Easton, in a yard north of the Parker River Bridge, on the east side of the road, and in the same year John Bartlett appears to have been engaged in the same business. In 1658 a movement was made towards the erection of a new meeting-house, as is indicated by the appointment of a committee of the town to sell to Edward Woodman twelve acres of marsh, and take pay in boards or nails for the meeting-house. It was probably finished some time in 1661, as under the date of January 28th, in that year, it is recorded that the selectmen agreed with Henry Jaques "to build a gallery in the new meeting-house at both ends and all along on the west side with three substantial seats all along both sides and ends; the said Henry Jaques shall fell the timber and provide all the stuff, both planks, boards, rayles, and joyces and nayles, and to bring the stuff all in place and make it for three payre of stayres and whatever else is requisite to compleate the said gallery, for which he is to have thirty pounds in good current pay or provisions. Also that Henry Jaques shall have all the old stuffe of the old gallery in the old meeting-house. The said Henry Jaques is also to lay a floure all over the meeting-house from beame to beame, and the towne doth engage to provide joyces, boards and nayles and so forth and so forth." The new house stood south of the old one, and the old one appears to have remained in use until the new one was completed. The first house was probably not only unsubstantial in its character, but too small for the increasing number of its congregation. Under date of 1651 Johnson, in his "Wonder-working Providence," said that the town consisted of about seventy families, and that "the soules in church fellowship were about one hundred." Before 1660 the number had doubtless increased to such a number as would render such a building as they would have been likely to erect at

the time of the first settlement altogether too small for convenient use.

In 1663 the Newbury meeting-house was the scene of that extraordinary exhibition by Lydia Wardwell of her naked person during divine service. For this offense she was carried before the court at Salem and sentenced to be whipped and to pay the costs of court, amounting to twelve shillings and sixpence. Her maiden name was Perkins, and she was the wife of Eliakim Wardwell, of Hampton. This fanatical act was justified by George Bishop in his "New England Judged" as follows:

"His wife, Lydia, being a young and tender chaste woman, seeing the wickedness of your priests and rulers to her husband, was not at all offended with the truth, but as your wickedness abounded, so she withdrew and separated from your church at Newbury, of which she was sometimes a member, and being given up to the leading of the Lord, after she had been often sent for to come thither, to give a reason for such a separation, it being at length upon her, in the consideration of their miserable condition, who were thus blinded with ignorance and persecution, to go to them, and as a sign to them she went in (though it was exceeding hard to her modest and shame-faced disposition) naked amongst them, which put them into such a rage, instead of consideration, they soon laid hands on her, and to the court at Ipswich led her, where, without law, they condemned her to be tyed to the fence post of the tavern, where they sat, and there sorely lashed her with twenty or thirty cruel stripes. And this is the discipline of the church of Newbury, in New England, and this is their religion, and their usage of the handmaid of the Lord, who, in a great cross to her natural temper, came thus among them, a sign, indeed, significatory enough to them, and suitable to their state, who, under the vision of religion, were thus blended into cruel persecution."

Rev. James Noyes, the assistant of Rev. Thomas Parker, having died October 22, 1656, Rev. John Woodbridge was engaged in his place, the town agreeing to pay him thirty pounds for the half-year beginning on the 25th of September, 1663. Mr. Noyes was born in Choulderton, England, in 1608, and was a cousin of Rev. Thomas Parker, his mother having been a sister of Rev. Robert Parker, the father of Thomas. He studied at Oxford, and after preaching a short time came to New England in the same ship with his cousin, and was settled in Newbury as his assistant in 1635. Mr. Parker said of him,—

"My worthy colleague in the ministry of the Gospel was a man of singular qualifications, in piety excelling, an implacable enemy to all heresie and schism, and a most able warriour against the same. He was of a reaching and ready apprehension, a large invention, a most profound judgment, a rare and tenacious and comprehensive memory, fixed and unmovable in his grounded conceptions, sure in words and speech without rashness, gentle and mild in all his expressions, without all passion or provoking language. And as he was a notable disputant, so he would never provoke his adversary, saving by the short knocks and heavy weight of argument. He was of so loving and compassionate and humble carriage that I believe never were any acquainted with him but did not desire the continuance of his society and acquaintance. He was resolute for truth, and in defence thereof had no respect to any persons. He was a most excellent counsellor in doubts, and could strike at a hair's breadth like the Benjamites, and expedite the entangled out of the briars. He was courageous in dangers, and still was apt to believe the best, and make fair weather in a storm. He was much honored and esteemed in the country, and his death was much bewailed. I think he may be reckoned among the greatest worthies of the age."

Not long after the death of Mr. Noyes serious difficulties arose in the church, owing to differences of opinion concerning church government. Mr. Parker was strongly inclined towards the Presbyterian form and his opinions were approved by many of the leading men among his people. On the other hand, quite as many of the church opposed his views, and the result was a controversy which threw a cloud over the later years of Mr. Parker's ministry. It is not necessary in this narrative to give a full history of the controversy, which did not come to a termination until 1672. Both Mr. Parker and Mr. Noyes had entertained the same views for many years, and it is not a violent presumption that only the sweet and loving spirit of Mr. Noyes prevented the outbreak during his life. It was not until after Mr. Woodbridge had become the assistant of Mr. Parker that the real trouble began. Mr. Woodbridge entertained the same views as Mr. Parker, and, having been engaged from year to year, it was voted by the town, May 21, 1670, that "the order in the town-book that gives Mr. Woodbridge sixty pounds a year for his preaching is made void."

Mr. Woodbridge was the son of Rev. John Woodbridge, of Stanton, in England, and was born in 1613. His mother was a sister of Rev. Thomas Parker, and he came with his uncle and his younger brother, Benjamin, to New England in 1634, and married, in 1639, Mercy, daughter of Governor Thomas Dudley, and was ordained September 16, 1644, the first minister of Andover. He was the first town clerk of Newbury, and served until 1638. In 1647 he returned to England. He had eleven children, who grew to manhood and womanhood, three of whom—John, Timothy and Benjamin—became clergymen, the two former being graduates of Harvard. In 1663 he returned to New England, and preached, as already stated, in Newbury seven years. He continued to live in Newbury, acting as magistrate of the Massachusetts colony and justice of the peace, and there died, March 17, 1695. Woodbridge's Island takes its name from him, and in 1665 a town in New Jersey, settled by emigrants from Newbury, was called Woodbridge in his honor.

Mr. Woodbridge had eleven children—Sarah, born in Newbury, June 7, 1640, and died in 1690, probably unmarried; Lucy, born in Newbury, March 13, 1642, and married first Simon, son of Governor Bradstreet, and afterwards Capt. Daniel Epps, of Ipswich, and died June 18, 1710, at the house of her son, John Bradstreet, in Medford; John, born in Newbury in 1644, graduated at Harvard in 1664, settled in the ministry at Killingworth, Conn., 1666, ordained in 1669, installed at Weathersfield in 1679, married Abigail, daughter of Gov. Wm. Leete, of Connecticut, and died Nov. 13, 1691; Benjamin, born probably in Andover, in 1645, married first, June 3, 1672, Mary, daughter of Rev. John Ward, of Haverhill, and second, in August, 1686, Deborah, widow of Henry Tarleton, and daughter of Daniel Cushing, of Hingham, settled in the ministry at New Castle, N. H., Bristol, R. I., Windsor, Conn., and Medford Mass., at which last

place he died January 15, 1709–10 ; Thomas, born in England in 1648, who married a daughter of Paul White, and died March 30, 1691 ; Mary, born in England, married Samuel Appleton, of Ipswich, and died June 9, 1712 ; Timothy, born in England January 13, 1656, a graduate of Harvard in 1675 ; Dorothy, born in England in 1650, and died in New England, in 1723 ; Anne, born in England in 1653, and died in Massachusetts, February 28, 1701 ; Joseph, born in England in 1657, married Miss Martha Rogers, May 20, 1686, and died Sept. 17, 1726 ; Martha, born in England 1660, married, probably, Thomas Ruggles, and died in 1738.

On the 20th of October, 1675, Rev. John Richardson was ordained as assistant to Mr. Parker, in the place of Mr. Woodbridge. His salary was to be "one hundred pounds a year, and each person was to pay one-half of his share in merchantable barley, and the rest in merchantable pork, wheat, butter or Indian corn, or such pay paid unto Mr. Richardson to his satisfaction, as every person may understand upon inquiry of Tristram Coffin, who was chosen in April the town's attorney to gather Mr. Richardson's rates, and in case the said Tristram Coffin shall neglect his trust herein, he shall pay forty shillings fine to the selectmen."

But Mr. Richardson was not long associated with Mr. Parker, for the latter died on the 24th of April, 1677, in his eighty-second year. Mr. Parker, was as has been stated in an earlier part of this narrative, the son of Robert Parker, and born in Wiltshire, England in 1595. Rev. Robert Parker was one of the chief dissenting clergymen in the time of Bishop Bancroft, whose writings were especially feared. In the year 1598 Bishop Bilson published a work entitled, "A survey of Christ's suffering and descent into Hell," in which he maintained that Christ at His death actually visited the regions of the damned. Mr. Parker in 1604, in answer to the Bishop, published a learned work, entitled "De Descensu Christi ad Infernos." In 1607 he published another learned work against symbolizing with Antichrist in the ceremonies, but especially against the sign of the cross. In consequence of this publication he was driven into exile to avoid arrest, and went to Holland, carrying with him his son Thomas, who had been obliged to leave Oxford in consequence of his father's troubles. Mr. Parker went first to Amsterdam and then to Dyesburg, a fortified town of the Netherlands, where he died in 1614, leaving his son nineteen years of age. In looking over the career of this man, it is not difficult to discover the source of those views of church government entertained by his son. Nor is it easy to believe that the son experienced any change in those views, or that they were not entertained from the first day of his settlement. It is quite likely that if Mr. Noyes had lived until the close of Mr. Parker's pastorate, the unfortunate controversy which for a time alienated pastor and people would not have occurred. Mr. Parker was an old man at the time, suffering from a loss of eyesight and from an impairment of all those qualities of mind and heart which had made him a skillful manager of church affairs, and more than all from the loss of the guiding hand of Mr. Noyes, so long his wise and moderate counselor. With the advent of Mr. Woodbridge, who, though he was declared by Cotton Mather "a great reader, a great scholar, a Christian and a pattern of goodness," was more pronounced and emphatic in the statement of his convictions, the difficulty which had long been kept slumbering came to an inevitable head.

In 1678 trade on the Merrimac River was enlarging, and Richard Dole, of Newbury, was granted lands for a wharf. In 1679 a third grist-mill was provided for, and the town granted to John Emery, Jr., "twelve acres of land on the west side of Artichoke River, provided he build and maintain a corn-mill to grind the town's corn from time to time, and to build it within one year and a half after the date hereof." In the same year the selectmen chose fourteen tithingmen, who for certain purposes were to have charge of a certain number of families. These purposes are designated in the following copy of instructions to Abraham Merrill, a tithingman, taken from Coffin's "History of Newbury":

"*To Deacon Abraham Merrill:*

"At a meeting of the Selectmen, March 31st, 1679, you are hereby required to take notice that you are chosen according to court order by the Selectmen to be a tithing man, to have inspection into and look over these families, that they attend the publick worship of God, and do not break the Sabbath; and, further, you are to attend as the court order declares. The names of the families are Edward Woodman, Junior, Samuel Bartlet, Richard Bartlet, Abel Pilsbury, John Stevens, Christopher Bartlet, Thomas Chase, Goodman Bailey, John Chase.

"By order of the Selectmen.

"ANTHONY SOMERBY, *Recorder.*"

The law under which these appointments were made was passed at the session of the General Court held on the 23d of May, 1677, and is as follows:

"This court, being desirous to prevent all occasions of Complaint referring to the Prophanation of the Sabbath, and as an Addition to former Lawes,

"Do Order and Enact that all the Lawes for Sanctification of the Sabbath, and preventing the prophaning thereof, be twice in the year, viz., in March and September, publickly Read by the Minister or Ministers on the Lord's daye in their several respective Assemblies within this jurisdiction, and all people by him cautioned to take heed to the observance thereof. And the Selectmen are hereby Ordered to see to it there be one man appointed to inspect the ten Families of their Neighbours, which Tithing man or men shall and hereby have power, in the absence of the Constable, to apprehend all Sabbath-breakers, disorderly Tipplers, or such as keep Licensed Houses, or others that shall suffer any disorder in their Houses on the Sabbath day or evening after, or at any other time, and to carry them before a Magistrate or other Authority, or commit to Prison, as any Constable may do, to be proceeded with according to Law.

"And for the better putting a restraint and securing Offenders that shall in any way transgress against the Laws on the Sabbath, either in the Meeting-House, by any abusive carriage or misbehaviour, by making any noise, or otherwise, or during the day time, being laid hold on by any of the Inhabitants, shall, by the said person appointed to inspect the Law, be forthwith carried forth and put into a Cage in Boston, which is appointed to be forthwith by the Select Men set up in the Market-place, and in such other Towns as the County Courts shall appoint, there to remain till Authority shall examine the person offending, and give order

for his punishment, as the matter may require according to the Laws relating to the Sabbath."

This law and the appointment under it are quoted at length for the purpose of correcting a popular misconception concerning the word "tithingman," and explaining its true meaning. The word took its name rather from the manner in which the tithingman was selected than from the nature of his office. Indeed, the precise functions of the office, as exercised in this country, have never been satisfactorily defined. In the Plymouth Colony the office was first mentioned in the laws of 1682 "with reference to the Indians for their better regulating and that they may be brought to live orderly, soberly and diligently." One of the provisions of these laws was that, in addition to a general overseer, "each towne where Indians doe reside every tenth Indian shall be chosen by the Court of Assistants, or said overseer yeerly, whoe shall take the inspection, care and oversight of his nine men and present theire faults, etc." A tithingman was simply a tenth man. A Saxon tithing consisted of ten families, and ten tithings made up the "hundred." In the Plymouth Colony in the management of the Indians, and in the Massachusetts Colony in enforcing an observance of the Sabbath, it was found convenient to give every tenth man the oversight of the other nine, and consequently he was called a tithingman. After the union of the Plymouth and Massachusetts Colonies, laws were passed requiring the election of tithingmen and making them practically constables to inspect and regulate licensed houses as well as to preserve the peace and good order on the Sabbath. After a lapse of years the office gradually lapsed into that of a sort of ecclesiastical constable with jurisdiction and powers limited to Saturday evening and the Sabbath. Thus the name was retained after the method of election was changed and the popular mind became confused as to its real significance.

The few next years, up to the close of the year 1686, were characterized by important and stirring events. The trials of Caleb Powell and Elizabeth Morse for witchcraft cover the only instances in which the people of Newbury are recorded as having been drawn into the prevailing extraordinary delusion. William Morse, the husband of Elizabeth, was the supposed victim, but Powell was acquitted, and Mrs. Morse, after condemnation to death, was reprieved. The Rev. John Hale, of Beverly, states that:

"She being reprieved, was carried to her own home, and her husband (who was esteemed a sincere and understanding Christian by those that knew him) desired some neighbour ministers of whom I was one to discourse his wife, which we did, and her discourse was very Christian and still pleaded her innocence as to that which was laid to her charge. We did not esteem it prudence for us to pass any definitive sentence upon one under her circumstances, yet we inclined to the more charitable side. In her last sickness she was in much trouble and darkness of spirit, which occasioned a judicious friend to examine her strictly, whether she had been guilty of witchcraft, but she said no, but the ground of her trouble was some impatient and passionate speeches and actions of her while in prison, upon account of her suffering wrongfully, whereby she had provoked the Lord by putting contempt upon his word. And in fine she sought her pardon and comfort from God in Christ and dyed, so far as I understand, praying to and resting upon God in Christ for salvation."

In reviewing the terrible delusion of witchcraft, of which so many innocent persons were the victims, the only consoling reflection is that the persons condemned so thoroughly shared the universal belief that they may themselves have come to the conviction at last that they were the unconscious instruments of the devil, and, in accordance with the command of the Scriptures, "thou shalt not suffer a witch to live," deserved the punishment they were about to suffer.

In 1682, a Baptist Church was formed in Newbury, of which George Little, Philip Squire, Nathaniel Cheney, William Sayer, Benjamin Morse, Edward Woodman, John Sayer and Abel Merrill were members, but how long it lived and when it died does not appear. In this and succeeding years additional grants of lands for the construction of wharves on the Merrimac were made, and the business interests along the banks of that river steadily increased. In 1686 a division of common lands was made. The order of the town passed in 1642, which has been quoted, declared the ownership of the commons to be possessed by the ninety-one freeholders of the town at that time and their heirs and assigns. All other inhabitants of the town were excluded, and in the proposed division those who were not included within the scope of the order now claimed a right. After a prolonged agitation on the subject, on the 5th of May, 1686, a committee of seventeen was chosen to consider and report a proper method of division, and on the 20th of October the committee made a report, which was adopted by the town:

"That the upper commons be divided in manner following: namely, the six thousand acres, one-half of them in quantity and quality, be divided among the freeholders; to every freeholder a like share, and the other half of said commons be divided among all such inhabitants of this towne and freeholders as have paid rates two years last past, proportionable to what each man paid by rate to the minister's rate in the year 1685.

"And that about eleven hundred acres of the lower commons be divided according to the above method and laid out into five general pastures and so forth, and the rest of the commons to be divided and laid into wood lots according to the above division and same rule."

A committee, consisting of Daniel Pierce, Stephen Greenleaf, John Emery, Joseph Pike, Tristram Coffin, Nathaniel Clark and Henry Short, was chosen to divide the lots. Before the division was made it was agreed that Indian River should be free as far as the tide flows for the passage of boats, and that every freeholder shall draw his lot as his name was entered in the town-book. It was further agreed:

"That the persons concerned in the rate division of the upper commons shall be drawne into four companys, then one man of each company shall draw in the name and for the said company, and he that draweth figure one that company shall have theyr proportions first. Then every man's name of every company and the names of the four companys shall be putt into four several baggs, and the committee chosen to lay out the said rate proportion shall take a paper out of the bagg belonging to the first company, and that man's name that first comes to hand shall have

his lott first laid out, and so all the rest successively, until the whole be laid out and so for the rest of the companyes."

The division began next to the farm of John Gerrish, at the line of the town of Bradford, and the land was laid out by Tristram Coffin and Henry Short. Afterwards a committee was chosen to divide the eleven hundred acres of the lower commons into five general pastures, and "to measure the old towne common and proportion it to the old towne men, and proportion the rest of the land adjacent to the rest of the inhabitants in the same proportion."

In 1687 a committee was appointed "to treat with Peter Cheney about setting up a corne-mill and a fuiling-mill upon the Falls River." Both in the Massachuetts and Plymouth Colonies this seems to have been about the date of the introduction of the domestic manufacture of cloth and consequently the erection of fulling-mills. It is believed that before that time English cloth was chiefly used, a belief somewhat confirmed by the absence of spinning-wheels in the early inventories, and by the mention of large supplies of English materials for clothing and other domestic uses.

In all these years the town had been gradually extending to the westward until in 1685 a very considerable part of its population occupied that section. Its interests had become so distinct from those of the older part of the town, and the distance from the church was so great, that on the 10th of March, 1684, its inhabitants sent the following petition to the town:

"To the town of Newbury the humble request of some of the inhabitants of this town doe desire and entreat that you would be pleased to grant us your consent, approbation and assistance in geting some help in the ministry amongst us, by reason that we doe live soe remote from the means, great part of us, that we cannot with any comfort or convenience come to the publick worship of God; neither can our families be brought up under the means of grace as Christians ought to bee, and which is absolutely necessary unto salvation; therefore we will humbly crave your loveing compliance with us in this our request."

No definite action appears to have been taken by the town on this petition, but the motives which inspired it became only the stronger with the lapse of time, as will be seen hereafter in this narrative. In 1690 a second request was made of the town, and a committee of eight persons was chosen to consider the subject, who reported:

"That considering the times as troublesome, and the towne being so much behind with Mr. Richardson's salary, the farmers and the neckmen being under greater disadvantages upon many accounts, do desire and expect, if such a thing be granted, that they should have the same privilege to provide for themselves, which we think cannot conduce to peace, therefore desire the new towne to rest satisfied for the present."

In 1692 another petition was presented to the town requesting aid in the support of the ministry in a meeting-house which had been built at Belleville. It is not proposed to enter into a history of the formation of the new parish in this narrative, as it may be found in detail in the history of West Newbury. It is sufficient to say that on the 3d of January, 1695, Tristram Coffin, Henry Short and Abraham Merrill divided the town into two parishes, and that on the 26th of October, 1698, a church was gathered in the West Precinct and the Rev. Samuel Belcher was ordained their minister. Nor is it necessary to follow the career of this church, as the history of West Newbury, to which it more properly belongs, contains it in full.

On the 27th of April, 1696, Rev. John Richardson terminated his pastorate by death. Little is known of the career of Mr. Richardson before he entered on his ministry in Newbury. He graduated at Harvard in 1666, and married Mary Pierson, of Cambridge, October 28, 1673. It was at a critical period of the Newbury Church that he received a call to settle as its pastor. He accepted it on condition:

"1st, so long as the people of God here do continue in the true faith and peace of the Gospel as in Acts 11. 42.

"2nd, so long as I have the liberty of my ministry.

"3d, Discharge my duty to my family; thus I say I do express myselt willing to settle among you with a true intention and a true affection."

During his pastorate he exerted a conciliatory influence and did much to heal the differences which, for many years, had divided the church. His monument bears the following inscription:

"Resurrection to immortality—is here expected from what was mortal of the Reverend Mr. John Richardson (once Fellow of Harvard College, afterwards Teacher to the Church in Newbury), putt off Apr. 27, 1696, in the fiftieth year of his age.

"When Preachers dy, the Rules the pulpit gave,
To live well, are still preached from the grave.
The Faith & Life, which your dead Pastor taught,
In one grave with him, Syrs, bury not.
Abi viator.
A mortuo disce vivere moriturus
E Terris disce cogitare de Coelis."

On the 9th of September, 1696, Rev. Christopher Toppan was ordained as the successor of Mr. Richardson, and two years later, on the 5th of July, 1698, the "town voted that they would build a new meeting-house and for that purpose chose the worshipful Colonel Daniel Pierce, Captain Thomas Noyes and Sergeant Stephen Jaques a committee." On the 21st of December the town voted "that Sergeant Stephen Jaques should build a meeting-house sixty feet in length, fifty feet in breadth, and twenty feet in the stud, for five hundred and thirty pounds," and in the next February voted "to have the meeting-house twenty-four feet post instead of twenty, and to pay Sergeant Jaques twenty pounds more." The meeting-house was finished in 1699, and on the 18th of December in that year Colonel Daniel Pierce and Colonel Thomas Noyes were deputed to employ "ye honorable Captain Samuel Sewall to procure a good and sufficient meeting-house bell." The new meeting-house was erected near the old one, and on the 17th of March, 1703, the town voted "that the old meeting-house be repaired and fitted for a court-house, school-house, and town-house."

Having brought this narrative up to the beginning of a new century, it will not be out of place to close this first chapter with a reference to some of the

representative men of Newbury in the first period of its history.

Edwin Rawson was one of the early settlers of Newbury, having made his appearance there in 1636. He was born in Gillingham, Dorsetshire, England, April 16, 1615, and was connected by marriage with the two distinguished New England clergymen Hooker and Wilson. It is stated in the town records that on the 19th of November, 1638, "it was ordered that Edward Rawson shall supply the place of Mr. Woodbridge and be the publick notary and register for the towne of Newbury, and whilst he so remains to be allowed by the towne after the rate of five pounds per annum for his paynes." In the same year he was appointed, with John Woodbridge and Edward Newman, commissioners to try inferior causes. His farm, which extended up towards Turkey Hill, was sold in 1647, when he removed to Boston to occupy the position of secretary of the Massachusetts Colony, to which he was appointed and which he held until 1686. One of his sons, William, settled in Braintree, and another, Grindall, graduated at Harvard in 1678, and was pastor of the church in Mendon from 1680 to 1715. A daughter Rebecca married an Englishman named Thomas Ramsey, who claimed to be Sir Thomas Hale, nephew of the Lord Chief Justice of England, and who carried her to England and there deserted her after securing all her rich dresses for the benefit of his real wife at Canterbury. Rebecca supported herself in England for a time by painting on glass, and was finally killed by an earthquake at Port Royal, S. C., where the ship in which she sailed for home had touched. Mr. Rawson was the author of several works, among which were "The Revolution in New England Justified," published in 1691, which was issued by him in conjunction with another author, who signed himself S. S.; and "The General Laws and Liberties Concerning the Inhabitants of the Ms." published in 1660. He died in Boston August 27, 1693.

John Spencer was one of the company who landed at Newbury with Rev. Thomas Parker in 1635. With Richard Dummer he built the first corn-mill in the town, represented Newbury in the General Court and in 1636 was chosen a magistrate. In 1637 he was discharged from the office of captain in the Pequod War, owing to his religious opinions, he being an adherent of Mrs. Hutchinson, and in the same year was disarmed by the General Court for the same cause. If he went to England he must have returned, as he died in Newbury in 1637, the year of the date of his will, and his name does not appear in the records after his disarmament. The Pettingell place now or recently owned by Edward H. Little, was his, and tradition states that the old stone house on the place was built by him. In his will he gave the place to his nephew, John Spencer, who in 1651 sold it to Daniel Pierce, and gave him possession by the old common law ceremony of turf and twig. The files of the court for 1679 contain the following deposition of Anthony Somerby, aged seventy:

"This deponent saith about ye yeare 1651 or '52 I was at the farm yt Mr. John Spencer sold to Mr. Daniel Pierce, in Newbury, and Mr. Spencer and Mr. Pierce, with myself and another, I suppose it was Mr. William Thomas, and as we were going through ye land of ye said farm, Mr. Pierce said to Mr. Spencer you promised to give me possession of turfe and twigge. Mr. Spencer said and so I will if you please to cut a turfe and twigge; and Mr. Pierce cut a twigge off a tree and cut up a turfe, and Mr Spencer took the twigge and stuck it into the turfe and bid us bear witness that he gave Mr. Pierce possession thereby of the house and land and farm that he had bought of him and gave ye turfe and twigge to Mr. Pierce, and further saith not."

Messrs. Tracy, Boardman, Pettingell and Little have owned the place since.

There were four persons by the name of Kent among the early settlers in 1635—Richard and Stephen, brothers, who had wives, and Richard, Jr., and James, sons of Richard, Sr. It is possible that they emigrated from Newbury in England, as the name appears about that time on the records of that town. Richard, Sr., was one of the seven men chosen in the first year to manage the affairs of the town. He was a prominent man, often mentioned in the records, and lived during the latter part of his life on or near the street that afterwards received his name.

Kent's Island was granted on the 7th of February, 1647, to Richard Kent, Jr. At the time of the laying out of the new town the record speaks of his being in possession of ten acres of upland and sixty-four acres of marsh, and afterwards he received by grant and purchase the whole island, which comprised about six hundred and forty acres. The estate was kept in the family for many years by the will of Richard Kent, Jr., who bequeathed it to his oldest male descendant. In process of time a Mrs. Kent had twins, and through the carelessness of the nurse it was impossible to prove the precedence of either, and consequently a John and a Stephen each claimed, as the oldest son, the whole estate. There was another brother, Moses, who took no part in the quarrel, but finally the General Court annulled the proceedings and the property was divided among the three. The island remained divided until the time of the father of the late Paul Kent, who became possessed of the whole, and from him it finally passed into the hands of Joshua N. Kent.

Anthony Somerby appeared in Newbury in 1639, and was the first schoolmaster in the town. In April, 1647, on the death of John Lowle, he was appointed "clerk of the writs at Newbury and to record births, deaths and marriages, in the place of John Lowle deceased." He was from Little Bytham, Lincolnshire, England, and was a man of education and learning. He continued in office as town clerk until his death in 1685.

John Lowle was a native of Bristol, England, and appeared in Newbury in 1639. After the appointment of Edward Rawson as secretary of the Massachusetts colony, he was chosen his successor as town clerk in April, 1647, and died on the 29th of the following June. He was the ancestor of the Lowell family,

of which, during the last three generations, there have been so many distinguished members, in law, literature and divinity.

Henry Lunt, one of the early though not the earliest settlers, was a substantial farmer, and came from England in the "Mary and John." He acquired a considerable amount of real estate, and left a family from which have come a large number of descendants. Indeed, there were so many bearing the name in the southerly part of Newbury, at one time, that it was called by many Lunt's Town. After the death of Mr. Lunt his widow, Ann, married Captain Joseph Hills, Speaker of the first House of Representatives, whose first wife was Rose Dunsten, sister of Rev. Henry Dunsten, the first president of Harvard College, who died in Scituate in 1659. The late Rev. Wm. Parsons Lunt, D.D., of Quincy, and the late Hon. George Lunt were descendants of Henry Lunt.

Richard Dummer appeared in Newbury in 1635, and in May of that year the General Court ordered Mr. John Humphrey, Mr. John Endicott, Captain Nathaniel Turner and Captain Wm. Trask to set out a farm for him about the falls of Newbury. He seems to have been thought to have some erroneous views on theological matters, and on account of them was disarmed by order of the court. He was a prominent man in the town, and with Edward Woodman took a leading part in the controversy with Rev. Mr. Parker. Mr. Dummer's farm extended from Oyster Point, the junction of Rowley Mill River with the River Parker, to the old county road, and fell to his son Jeremiah, who was a silversmith in Boston and who occupied the farm as a summer residence. Governor Dummer will be referred to more fully in connection with the Dummer Academy, in the next chapter.

Benjamin Woodbridge was the younger brother of John Woodbridge, already referred to. He was probably born at Stanton, England, about 1620, and was entered at Magdalen Hall, Oxford, where he remained under the instruction of William Eyre until he came to New England with his brother John and uncle Thomas Parker, in 1634. After his arrival here he entered Harvard, and his name stands at the head of the list of members of the first graduating class in 1642. He was an ambitious man and sought a broader field of action than New England at that time afforded. Consequently he returned to England and re-entered Magdalen Hall, receiving the degree of Master of Arts in 1648. He soon became a preacher at Salisbury in England, and before 1653 was appointed to the rectory of St. Nicholas, at the English Newbury, an old and large parish which is still flourishing in that ancient town. On the 23d of April, 1655, the High Court of Chancery issued an order for a survey of church livings, and the following report, as stated by Mr. Thomas W. Silloway, was returned concerning this parish:

"Nubery is a Parsonage worth £77 16s. 6d., formerly in the gift of ye late King. Mr. Benjamin Woodbridge is ye present Incumbent, being a godly, able and painefull minister. The parish is at present large, being a greate Market Towne. And we conceive it may be fitt for another church to be built in some parte of ye Towne, and that a parte of ye parish of Speene, called Speenham, Land adjoyneing Nubery, together with the chappelcy of Sandleford, with a hamlet called Greenham in the parish of Thatcham, be annexed thereto."

Mr. Woodbridge was the friend of Rev. John Cotton, the vicar of St. Botolph's, in Boston, and wrote the epitaph inscribed on his gravestone, in Boston, in New England, as follows:

"A living Breathing Bible; Tables where
Both Covenants at Large engraven were;
Gospel and Law, in's Heart, had each its column;
His Head an Index to the sacred volume;
His very name a Title Page; and next,
His life a Commentary on the Text,
O, what a Monument of glorious worth,
When in a New Edition he comes forth
Without Erratas may we think he'll be
In Leaves and Covers of Eternity."

After the restoration of Charles II., Mr. Silloway says that he became popular with the King, who made him one of his "Chaplains in ordinary," and offered him the position of Canon of Windsor. Though a minister in the English Church, fond of its ceremonies and attracted by its fascinating forms, he nevertheless had more or less Presbyterian blood in his veins and was forced to decline the canonry. He finally left St. Nicholas' Church, and after for a time following his non-conforming instincts, was again attracted into the church, and in 1665 took holy orders from the Bishop of Salisbury in the church of "St. Peter in the East," in Oxford. But again he was disappointed and once more fell back into the ranks of the dissenting brethren, where he remained until the breaking out of the Presbyterian plot in 1683, when he returned to Inglefield and died unmarried in November, 1684.

It is impossible in the space allowed for this narrative to do justice, even by a casual reference, to all the men who made their mark in Newbury during the first century of its life. In the words of Hon. George Lunt:

"Familiar names they bore, not lost,
Kent, Parker, Moody, Pope,
Franklin and Tracy, Noyes and Lunt,
Sons of immortal hope.

But why recall the crumbled roll,
Short, Woodbridge, Spencer, West,
Bartlett and Osgood, all their throng,
Beneath their daisied rest."

CHAPTER CXLII.

NEWBURY—(*Continued*).

THE new century opened with an increasing and still more scattered population. The people living on the borders of Newbury and Rowley built a meeting-house in 1702, and combining the names of the two towns at first called the parish "Rowlbury."

In 1704 the parish was incorporated as "Byfield Parish." As the story goes, the name owes its origin to a rivalry between the Sewall and Dummer families. Henry Sewall, the settler, selected his farm along the north side of the river Parker, while Richard Dummer selected his along the south side. Though the families had for generations lived harmoniously, when that section of the town became a parish there was quite a sharp contention between them about the name. Both families claimed the honor of the name, and when the contest was carried into the General Assembly it was finally settled by Judge Byfield, a member, who rose and offered to make the parish a present if they would name it for him. His proposal was at once agreed to and he presented to the church the plate for the communion service and also a bell. The silver tankards were afterwards burned with the church, but other pieces of the service are still in use. Judge Nathaniel Byfield was born in Long Ditten, Sussex, England, in 1653, and was the son of Richard Byfield, one of the Westminster Assembly divines. He came to New England in 1674, and after a short residence in Boston as a merchant he removed to Bristol, then the shire-town of Bristol County in Massachusetts, where he occupied for thirty-eight years the position of judge of the Court of Common Pleas. In 1724 he returned to Boston, where he also served as judge in the same court. He was also at various times Speaker of the House of Representatives, member of the Council and judge of the Admiralty Court.

The first minister of the Byfield Parish was Rev. Moses Hale, who was ordained November 17, 1706. He was the grandson of Thomas and Thomasini Hale, who came from Hertfordshire in England and settled in Newbury in 1635. He was born in Newbury, July 10, 1678, and graduated at Harvard in 1699. His ministry closed with his death, in January, 1743.

In 1705 the town voted to grant the old meeting-house of the First Parish to Richard Brown, with liberty to remove it. Thus the plan to convert it into a court-house and school-house was abandoned. In 1706 Henry Short, one of the first settlers, died while holding the office of town clerk, as its fifth incumbent. Up to the present time that office has been held by the following persons:

John Woodbridge, appointed in 1635.
Edward Rawson, appointed November 19, 1638.
John Lowle, appointed April 1, 1647.
Anthony Somerby, appointed June 30, 1647.
Henry Short, appointed March 20, 1685.
Richard Browne, Jr., appointed October 30, 1706.
Nathaniel Coffin, appointed October 9, 1711.
Joseph Coffin, appointed March 14, 1748–49.
Dudley Colman, appointed September 23, 1773.
Edmund Sawyer, appointed April 9, 1776.
John Atkinson, appointed March 14, 1786.
Ezra Hale, appointed April 6, 1807.
Stuart Chase, appointed March 12, 1844.
Joshua Coffin, appointed March 14, 1850.
William Little, appointed March 2, 1857.

The present clerk, Frank Ferguson, of Byfield, the successor of Mr. Little, was first chosen in 1884. In 1725, the Third Parish in Newbury, now the First in Newburyport, was organized, and on the 25th of June their meeting-house was dedicated. On the 19th of the following January, Rev. John Lowell was ordained as the pastor. It is not the purpose of the writer to trace the history of this church, as it will be found where it more properly belongs, in the sketch of Newburyport.

In 1731 the town voted to build a town-house, in Chandler's Lane, now Federal Street, and in the same year the Second Parish was divided, and the Fourth formed, an account of which may be found in the sketch of West Newbury. The town-house was finished in 1735, and deeded to the county on the 19th of February in that year, on the condition that it should revert to the town and parish if no court should be held in it for nine months. Instead of Chandler's Lane, its first proposed location, it was erected at a cost of £530 10*sh.* on land given by Benjamin Morse, opposite the head of Marlborough Street, where it remained until March 5th, 1789, when it was sold by auction to John Mycall. While in the possession of the town and county it was occupied as a town-house, court-house and school-house.

In 1744 the Society of Friends in Newbury built a meeting-house in what was afterwards called Belleville, but it was finally occupied by the Congregational Church in the West Parish as a vestry, and the Friends built another house near Turkey Hill.

In 1743 a controversy arose between Rev. Christopher Toppan and some of the members of his church, which for a time disturbed and excited the town. In the course of the controversy Mr. Toppan wrote to his disaffected church members the following letter:

"To Charles Pierce, Esquire, in Newbury:

Sir: I have been informed that some yt are called schemers, by others new-light men (for Satan being now especially transformed into an angel of light, they pretend unto), have drawn up some articles against me, some respecting my doctrine taught in publick, some respecting my belief in several articles of religion, and some respecting my practices, and I have been told you have the original by you. I have long desired to see it, but could never yet obtain it. This is, therefore, a desire of you to send me the original, or a copy of it, attested, for I am obliged to go to York Superior Court ye next week, and would carry it with me to show to the superior judges for their judgment upon the whole as to my doctrines, whether they be right or no, for which I propose to carry my sermons reflected upon, as to my principles, whether they be right or no (though in the paper before mentioned I believe there are many things false, for I never yet knew a scheme that would not lie). As to my practices, whether right or no, I shall leave them to judge and determine. I purpose to carry with me a copy of what I now send to you, to shew it to them, if you answer not my request in sending me the original or an attested copy.

"Sir I am yours to serve in what I may,

"Christopher Toppan."

In the next year the aggrieved brethren called an *ex parte* council of eight churches, which met at Newbury on the 24th of July, and examined nine charges made against their pastor. The council justified the brethren and condemned Mr. Toppan, advising them, however, "to hearken to any reasonable method whereby their final separation from the

church and parish might be prevented," and concluding by saying that "however, we utterly disapprove of unnecessary separation as partaking of great guilt and accompanied with great scandal, yet looking upon your circumstances as extraordinary and deplorable, we cannot think you blameworthy, if, with good advice, you seek more wholesome food for your souls and put yourselves under the watch of a shepherd in whom you can confide."

On the 31st of August an *ex parte* council, called by the friends of Mr. Toppan, met at Newbury, and after an examination of the charges, acquitted Mr. Toppan of nearly all the charges and censured his opponents for their "disorderly walking," advising them to return "to the bosom of the church and to the pastoral care of him who had been so faithful and useful a pastor for near fifty years."

The result of the difficulty was that the aggrieved brethren joined with some disaffected members of the Rev. Mr. Lowell's church and formed, in 1746, what is now the First Presbyterian Church in Newburyport, and settled in March, Rev. Jonathan Parsons as their pastor. A further reference to this church also will be found in the sketch of Newburyport. The following is the covenant which was signed by nineteen seceding members of the First Church:

"We, the subscribing brethren, who were members of the First Church in Newbury, and have thought it our duty to withdraw therefrom, do also look upon it our duty to enter into a church estate; specially as we apprehend this may be for the glory of God, and the interest of the Redeemer's kingdom, as well as for our own mutual edification and comfort.

"We do therefore, as we trust, in the fear of God, mutually covenant and agree to walk together as a church of Christ, according to the rules and order of the Gospel.

"In testimony whereof we have hereunto set our hands and seals this 3d day of January, 1746.

"Charles Pearce.
Moses Bradstreet.
Edward Presbury.
John Brown.
Richard Hall.
Benjamin Knight.
William Brown.
Benjamin Pierce.
Daniel Noyes.
Major Goodwin.
Thomas Pike.
Daniel Wells.
Joseph Hidden.
Nathaniel Atkinson, Jr.
Jonathan Plummer.
Daniel Goodwin.
Silvanus Plumer.
Samuel Hall.
Cutting Pettiogell.

On the 14th of January, 1746, the parish of Byfield voted to build a new meeting-house, fifty-six feet long and forty-five feet wide, which was completed during the following summer. In 1748 the town granted to John Crocker liberty to build a rope-walk "along by the windmill" and to improve the place for ten years for the manufacture of rope and no other purpose. The windmill stood near the frog pond and was erected in 1703. On the 10th of November, 1745, Rev. John Tucker was settled as a colleague with Rev. Mr. Toppan. In January, 1743, Rev. Moses Hale, pastor of the Byfield Church, died and Rev. Moses Parsons, of Gloucester, was settled June 21, 1744, in his place.

After the death of Rev. Mr. Toppan, on the 23d of July, 1747, Mr. Tucker entered into the full charge of the pastorate. Mr. Toppan was a native of Newbury and a graduate of Harvard in 1691. His monument bears the following inscription:

"Here lyes the Body of the Rev. Mr. Christopher Toppan, Master of Arts, fourth Pastor of the First Church in Newbury; a Gentleman of good Learning, conspicuous Piety and Virtue, shining both by his Doctrine and Life, skilled and greatly improved in the Practice of Physick and Surgery, who deceased July 23, 1747, in the 76th year of his age and the 51st of his Pastoral office."

In 1761 the Fifth Parish in Newbury was incorporated, and settled Rev. Oliver Noble as their pastor. Mr. Noble was born in Coventry, Conn., in 1736 and graduated at Yale College in 1757. He was settled in Newbury September 1, 1762, and resigned April 7, 1784, being afterwards settled in New Castle, N. H., where he died December 15, 1792. This church is now within the limits of Newburyport, and has been known in later years as the Belleville Congregational Church, to which further reference may be found in the sketch of Newburyport.

The year 1763 was made memorable by the opening of Dummer Academy, on Monday, February 27th in that year. William Dummer, the founder of the academy, was the grandson of Richard Dummer, who came from the small parish of Bishopstoke, near Southampton, in 1632, and after a four years' residence in Boston and Roxbury, settled in Newbury. His brother, Stephen, came to New England in 1638, but returned with his family ten years after, one of his daughters, Jane, marrying Henry Sewall, one of the early settlers of Newbury and progenitor of the family of which Judge Samuel was a distinguished member. Richard Dummer became a large landholder and probably the richest man in the province. Having been a magistrate, after Winthrop had completed his victory over Harry Vane, with whom Dummer took sides, he was dropped from the magistracy and lost his gun and sword under the disarming act. He lived on his farm, imported cattle and fruit-trees from England, built a mill at the river, and steadily increased his estate. Of his five sons, Jeremiah, the silversmith of Boston, has already been referred to.

Jeremiah was the father of two sons, Jeremy and William the founder of the academy. William was born in Boston in 1677, and the first we know of him was his living in Plymouth, England, and acting as commissioner for the Massachusetts Colony. While thus employed he received from government the appointment of Lieutenant-Governor of his native province. He returned home in 1716, on the retirement of Governor Joseph Dudley, whose daughter Katherine was his wife. Samuel Shute came from England at the same time as the successor of Governor Dudley. Governor Shute, by carrying out the instructions of the King to insist upon a fixed annual salary, made himself unpopular with the colonists, and after a contest of six years he gave up the battle and suddenly embarked for England. Though nominally Governor, he never returned, and William Dummer during that time acted in his place. After a service

of six years, in 1728, William Burnet was transferred from the chief magistracy of New York and New Jersey to that of Ma-sachusetts, and served one year until his death, in September, 1729, when Mr. Dummer was re-instated, to be supplanted by Wm. Tailer as Lieutenant-Governor in the following year, who acted as Governor until the accession of Jonathan Belcher, August 8, 1730. During the thirty-nine remaining years of his life he lived in Newbury, for the most part in retirement, but always dispensing a generous hospitality, and indulging his generous instincts by benefactions, of which the foundation of the Byfield Academy was the most important and lasting. His wife was born in England in 1690, and brought up with all the social advantages which the position of her father as member of Parliament and Lieutenant-Governor of the Isle of Wight necessarily afforded. She died in Boston, in 1752, where he also died October 10, 1761. By his will, made seven years before, he gave to Rev. Messrs. Foxcroft and Chauncey, of Boston, and Nathaniel Dummer, of Newbury, trustees, his dwelling-house and a farm in Newbury, the rents and profits to be employed in erecting a school-house and in support of a master. The appointment of master was placed in the hands of a committee of five Byfield freeholders to be chosen annually at the regular parish meeting, and to act with the minister of the parish for the time being.

The master was to be chosen for life, unless, on the ground of incompetency or immorality, the overseers of Harvard College should see fit to remove him. The ability to read English was the only qualification for admission.

The trustees erected a small building in 1762, which is represented to have been a common one-story building, about twenty feet square, which stood nearly on the site of the present academy. The first master chosen by a committee, whose names have been lost, was Samuel Moody, a descendant of William Moody, one of the first settlers of Newbury. William had three sons,—Samuel, Joshua and Caleb. Caleb was the father of another Samuel, minister of the parish in York, who had a son Joseph, a graduate of Harvard in 1718, town clerk of York, register of deeds, county judge and finally a preacher in Upper York. Joseph was the father of Samuel, the first master of Dummer Academy.

Samuel, the master, graduated at Harvard in 1746, and afterwards took charge of the York Grammar School, which he taught about sixteen years, until his election to the preceptorship of the academy.

Under Master Moody the institution met with unexpected success. It was established at a time when the people of New England were beginning to feel ambitious for the attainment of a higher education than the common schools were able to furnish, and Dummer Academy precisely met their wants. In the twenty-seven years closing with the year 1790, there were five hundred and twenty-five students in the academy; from 1790 to 1809, two hundred and ninety-four; from 1809 to 1819, one hundred and four; from 1819 to 1821, sixty-one; and from 1821 to 1843, inclusive, five hundred and thirty-three; or for the seventy years of its life, the records of which are accessible to the writer, an average of twenty-one per year. Among these may be found the names of Hon. Theophilus Bradbury, of Portland; Hon. Richard Cutts, of Kittery; Hon. Moses Davenport, of Newburyport; Hon. Elias Hasket Derby, of Salem; Hon. Edward Dowse, of Charlestown; Hon. Jonathan Freeman, of Boston; Hon. Nathaniel Gorham, of Charlestown; Hon. Rufus King, of Scarborough; Hon. Jeremiah Nelson, of Rowley; Hon. Samuel Ogood, Hon. Theophilus Parsons, of Byfield; Hon. Oliver Peabody, of Andover; Hon. Benjamin Pickman, of Salem; Hon. Samuel Phillips, of Andover; Commodore Edward Preble, of Portland; Hon. William Prescott, of Pepperell; Hon. Samuel Sewall, of Boston; Rev. Samuel Webber, of Cambridge; Hon. John Wentworth, of Somersworth, N. H., and Hon. Phillips White, of Newburyport. The above were all before 1790. There may be found on the lists since then the names of Parker and Nehemiah Cleaveland, of Byfield and Topsfield; Nathaniel Cogswell, of Rowley; Patrick T. Jackson, of Newburyport; Alfred Johnson, of Freeport, Maine; Edward S. Rand, of Newburyport; Joseph Hale Abbott, of Wilton, N. H.; Benjamin Apthorp Gould, of Newburyport; Rev. Ephraim Peabody, of Wilton, N. H.; Nathaniel J. Lord, of Ipswich; Rev. Chandler Robbins, of Roxbury; Otis P. Lord, of Ipswich; Ebenezer Bradbury, of Newburyport; William D. Northend, of Byfield, and Rev. George D. Wildes, of Newburyport.

In 1782 the academy was incorporated and the entire charge of the institution, including the selection of teachers, was placed in the hands of fifteen trustees. Mr. Moody resigned March 25, 1790, and died at Exeter on the 17th of December, 1790.

His gravestone in an old graveyard in York, Maine, where he was buried, bears the following inscription:

"Integer vitæ scelerisque purus."

"Here lies the remains of Samuel Moody, Esq., Preceptor of Dummer Academy, the first institution of the kind in Massachusetts. He left no children to mourn his sudden death, for he died a bachelor, yet his numerous pupils in the United States will ever retain a lively sense of the sociality, industry, integrity and piety he possessed in an unusual degree, as well as the disinterested, zealous, faithful and useful manner he discharged the duties of the Academy for 30 years. He died at Exeter, N. H., December 17th, 1790, aged 70 years."

Dummer Academy, called in its earlier years Dummer School, is still a flourishing and useful institution. The trustees under the act of incorporation were Hon. Jeremiah Powell, Hon. Benjamin Greenleaf, Hon. Jonathan Greenleaf, Rev. Joseph Willard, Rev. Charles Chauncey, Rev. Moses Parsons, Rev. John Tucker, Rev. Thomas Carey, Samuel Moody, William Powell, Micajah Sawyer, Dummer Jewett, Samuel Osgood, Nathaniel Tracey and Richard Dummer, and among their successors have been Theophilus Par-

sons, Daniel Appleton White, John Pickering, Timothy Pickering, Samuel S. Wilde, Rev. Thomas B. Fox and Leverett Saltonstall.

Rev. Isaac Smith, of Boston, and a graduate of Harvard in 1767, succeeded Mr. Moody and served until 1809, when he returned to Boston, where he died in 1827. In 1797, during the administration of Mr. Smith, the academy received from the State a grant of half a township of land. Mr. Smith was followed by Benjamin Allen, a graduate of Brown University in 1797, who held the office only two years, being appointed, in 1811, Professor of Ancient Languages in the Pennsylvania University. After leaving the professorship he taught an academy in Hyde Park, New York, where he died. Rev. Abiel Abbott, a native of Wilton, N. H., succeeded Mr. Allen in 1811, and served until 1819. He gradnated at Harvard in 1787 and before going to Byfield was a tutor at Harvard and pastor of a church in Coventry, Conn. After leaving the academy he lived for a time on his farm in Andover, after which he was settled over a church in Peterboro', N. H., and died in 1859.

The successor of Mr. Abbott, in 1819, was Samuel Adams, a native of Georgetown and a graduate at Harvard in 1806. He taught school in Salem and was a member of the State Senate before going to Byfield. He resigned in 1821 and died in the same year.

Mr. Adams was followed in 1821 by Nehemiah Cleaveland, a native of Topsfield, who had been a student in the academy, and who graduated at Bowdoin College in 1813. Before going to Byfield he was a tutor at Bowdoin, and after a service as principal of nineteen years he resigned in 1840, and was appointed principal of the High School of Lowell. He subsequently received the appointment of principal of a female seminary in Brooklyn, N. Y.

The successor of Mr. Cleaveland was Rev. Frederick A. Adams, a native of New Ipswich, New Hampshire, and a graduate at Dartmouth College in 1834. When appointed principal, in 1840, he was a settled minister in Amherst, New Hampshire. The recent history of the Academy is too well known to be traced in this narrative.

In 1763 two hundred and six of the "water-side people," as they were called, petitioned the General Court to be set off from Newbury and incorporated as a town. In 1764 the prayer of the petitioners was granted and Newburyport was incorporated. The circumstances attending the incorporation will be found more fully referred to in their appropriate place in the sketch of Newburyport.

Until the breaking out of the Revolution little occurred specially deserving mention in a narrative necessarily confined to the more prominent features in the town's history. Nor is it proposed to allude to the causes which led to that event in our national career. It will be sufficient to state in a few words the part which Newbury took and record the names of the men it furnished in that memorable struggle.

In the various wars which had affected the colony and province of Massachusetts, Newbury had been always inspired with patriotic sentiments, and had borne its full share of the burdens.

The settlement on the river Parker had been scarcely made before the Pequod War confronted the colonies, and Newbury was called on to furnish eight of the one hundred and sixty men included in the Massachusetts quota. In King Philip's Wars, between August 5, 1675, and January 28, 1676, Newbury furnished forty-eight men and forty-six horses, and had thirty-seven men impressed, making eighty-five men out of one hundred and fifty-nine ratable polls.

In the French and Indian War, which not long after followed, Newbury was at the front, and Captain Stephen Greenleaf, Lieutenant James Smith, Ensign Wm. Longfellow, Sergeant Increase Pillsbury, Wm. Mitchell and Jabez Musgrave were cast away and lost on an expedition against Cape Breton.

In the expedition against Louisbourg in 1745 many Newbury soldiers were engaged, among whom was Major Moses Titcomb, a descendant of William Titcomb, one of the early settlers. In the expedition against Crown Point, in 1754, Major Titcomb was prominent, and was killed in the battle of Lake George, September 8, 1755. On the plains of Quebec, with General Wolfe, Newbury had its representatives, among whom was William Davenport, who established the tavern which bore the name of his fallen commander.

William Davenport was born in Boston in 1717, and went to Newbury, where he married, in 1740, Sarah, the daughter of Moses Gerrish. In 1759 he was living in a house on the corner of Liberty Street and Market Square, and before the expedition against Quebec, under General Wolfe, he received a captain's commission, and, recruiting a company, marched to join the army, and was present with his men at the surrender of the French stronghold. When Capt. Davenport left home and wife and five children he gave his wife a guinea, all the money he had, and told her she must make that answer while he was gone. After an absence of seven months, he asked her, on his return, how "she had got along," and she answered by producing the guinea and presenting it to him. He shortly after established the "Wolfe Hotel," on the corner of Threadneedle Avenue and State Street, which was burned in the fire of 1811. A sign bearing a portrait of Gen. Wolfe, painted by Moses Cole, a French refugee, hung over the door, and is now in the museum of relics and curiosities at the home of the late Major Ben: Perley Poore, at Indian Hill.

The following is a roll of Capt. Davenport's company, most of whom were probably residents in Newbury:

Wm. Davenport, Capt.	Jonathan Merrill, Ensign.
Thomas Sweet, Lieut.	Moses George, Sergt.
Gershom Burbank, Lieut.	John Moody, Sergt.

Daniel Pike, Sergt.
Matthew Pettingell, Sergt.
Joshua Colby, Corp.
Theodore Ford, Corp.
Stephen Morse, Corp.
Daniel Poor, Corp.
Wm. Stevens, Drum.

Privates.

Luke Swett.
Stephen Colby.
Theodore Barnard.
John Brock.
Wm. Matthews.
James Ward.
John Caswell.
Daniel Knight.
Nathaniel Roby.
Richard Pierce.
Theodore Moody.
Andrew Hilton.
Paul Pearson.
Nathan Peabody.
Wm. Clarke.
Zebediah Hunt.
Michael Short.
John Currier.
Joseph Woodman.
Ezra Cluff.
Daniel Pillsbury.
Joshua Morse.
Eben Burbank.
Enoch Bailey.
Zachariah Beal.
Wm. Griffin.
Jeremiah Pearson.
Enoch Chase.
Edmund Bailey, Jr.
John Stevens.
Samuel Wyatt.
Wm Cheney.
Nathaniel Brown.
Richard Sanborn.
Sherburn Tilton.
Jacob Burrill.
Samuel Huse.

After the passage of the Stamp Act, in 1765, a town-meeting was held in Newbury, on the 21st of October in that year, at which instructions were given to Joseph Gerrish, the Representative of Newbury, concerning his proper action in the premises. In the spring of 1770, by a vote of the town, a committee of sixteen was appointed to circulate a written agreement to be signed by persons agreeing not to purchase any goods of certain importers, and not to purchase or use any tea. The following is the agreement circulated by the committee:

"*Whereas* it evidently appears to be absolutely necessary for ye Political welfare of the Provinces to Discourage and by all Lawful Means Endeavour to prevent ye Transportation of Goods from Great Britain, and Encourage Industry, Oeconomy and Manufactures amongst our Selves;

"We, therefore, ye Subscribers being Willing to Contribute our mite for the Publick Good, do hereby promise and Engage to and with each other, That we will, as much as in us lies, promote and Encourage ye use and Consumption of all useful Articles Manufactured in this Province, and that we will not (knowingly), on any pretence whatever, purchase any goods of, or have any Concerns, by way of Trade, with, John Bernard, James McMasters, Patrick McMasters, John Meen, Nathaniel Rogers, William Jackson, Theophilus Lillie, John Taylor and Ame and Elizabeth Cummin, all of Boston, or Israel Williams, Esquire, and son, of Hatfield, or Henry Barns, of Marlborough, or any Person acting by or under them, or any of them, or any other person or persons whomsoever that shall or may import Goods from Great Britian contrary to ye Agreement of ye United Body of Merchants, or of any Persons that purchase of or Trades with them, or any of them ye sd Importers before a General Importation takes place (Debts before Contracted only excepted).

"And if it doth or may hereafter appear that there is any Ship Builder in Newbury Port, or any other Town whereseever in New England, that has so little regard for ye Publick welfare as to undertake to Build any Ship, Schooner or Sea-faring Vessel for any Foreign or any other Person, And take ye pay for ye same, or any part thereof, in Goods Imported Contrary to ye Agreement of sd Merchants, We promise and Engage not to have any Connection by way of Trade and Commerce (Debts before Contracted only excepted) with any such Ship Builder, nor sell them any materials for Building any Such Vessels But we will look up all Such Ship Builders (as well as Importers and Traders with Importers) as persons Destitute of ye principles of Common Humanity (Swayed only by their own Private Interest), Enemies to their Country and worthy of Contempt. And whereas a great part of ye Revenue arising by virtue of ye Acts of Parliament is produc'd from the duty paid on Tea, We do, therefore, Solomnly Promise not to purchase any Foreign Tea or Suffer it to be us'd in our Families upon any Account until ye sd Revenue Acts are Repeal'd or a General Importation takes place, and we will each one of us, as we have proper opportunitys, Recommend to all persons to do ye same. And we do hereby of Our own free will and Accord Solemnly promise to and with Each other, That we will, without Evasion or Equivocation, Faithfully and truly keep and observe all that is above written, And whosoever shall or may sign these Articles, And afterwards (knowingly) break ye same shall by us be esteem'd as a Covenant Breaker and Enemy to his Country, a Friend to slavery, Deserving Contempt. All and Singular of these Articles to Continue and Remain in Force untill ye sd Acts be Repeal'd or a General Importation takes place. As witness our Hands."

On the 29th of December, 1772, a committee of sixteen was appointed by the town "to take under consideration our publick greavances" and "the infringment of our rights and liberties and report forthwith." The committee reported on the 4th of January, 1772, and it was voted "to accept the report of their committee and that it be entered among the reports of the town, there to stand as a lasting memorial of the sense they have of their invalnable rights and of their steady determination to defend them in every lawful way as occasion may require."

On the 22d of December, 1773, it was voted by the town unanimously:

"Not to receive the tea sent by the East India Company to America upon the terms we are ioformed it is now sent upon, and that this town will use their utmost endeavours to hinder the importation of tea in America, so long as the duty shall remain thereon, either by the East India Company or in any other way whatever."

On the 4th of January, 1774, a report and resolutions were adopted by the town, which closed with the following admonition:

"Beloved brethren, let us stand fast in the liberty, wherewith God and the British Constitution, in conjunction with our own, have made us free, that neither we nor our posterity after us (through any faults of ours) be entangled with the yoke of bondage."

The time having now arrived for actual hostilities to begin, Newbury entered into the patriot cause with ardent zeal, and at once set about furnishing men and means to make it successful. On the night after the battle of Lexington, soldiers were forwarded to Cambridge, and these were followed by a steady stream of recruits running through the seven years of the war. The following is a list of soldiers furnished by Newbury, as correct as it can be made up from the State archives.

Soldiers from Newbury who marched April 19, 1775, and formed a part of a company in the Second Regiment, commanded by Col. Samuel Gerrish, serving six days,—

Jonathan Poor, Capt.
Moses Ilsley, 1st Lieut.
Simeon Hale, 2d Lieut.
Benj. Todd, Sergt.
Paul Plumer, Sergt.

Privates.

Stephen Dole.
Henry Dole.
David Dole.
Samuel Gerrish.
John Hale.
Daniel Hale, Jr.
Anthony Ilsley.
John Noyes.
Wm. Plumer.
Mark Plumer.
Stephen Poor.
John Thurston.
Benj. Thurston.
John Nichols.

Soldiers in the company of Wm. Rogers, who marched to Cambridge, April 19, 1775, serving nine days,—

Wm. Rogers, Capt.
Samuel Carr, Lieut.
Wadligh Noyes, Sergt.
Joseph Newell, Sergt.
Nathaniel Hills, Sergt.
Joshua Brown, Sergt.
Samuel Pillsbury, Corp.
Ezekiel Merrill, Corp.
Nathan Emery, Corp.
Moses Moody, Corp.
Daniel Pillsbury, Drummer.
Ephraim Emery, Fifer.

Privates.

Joseph Noyes.
Joshua Chase.
John Chase.
John Eliot.
Thomas Follansbee.
Nehemiah Follansbee.
Aaron Noyes.
John Flanders.
Joseph Goodridge.
Obediah Hills.
Samuel Hills.
Thomas Hills.
Samuel Jaquish.
Jacob Merrick.
Parker Noyes.
Benj. Pettengal.
Moody Smith.
Jonathan Thurston.
Wm. White.
Francis Dean.
Moses Chase.
Mark Woodman.
Samuel Sawyer.
John Merrill.
Parker Smith.
Asa Bayley.
John Smith.
Zebulon Eugersol.
John Emery.
Abel Woodman.

Soldiers in the company of Gideon Woodwell which marched to Cambridge, April 19, 1775, serving six days,—

Gideon Woodwell, Capt.
Henry Somerby, Sergt.
Patt. Garnish, Sergt.
John Dole, Corp.

Privates.

Daniel Knight.
Audrew Stickney.
Joseph Allen.
David Stickney.
John Bly.
James Safford.
Parker Knight.
Peter Stanwood.
John Smith.
Wm. Hale.

Soldiers in the company of Thomas Noyes, who marched to Cambridge, April 20, 1775, serving four days,—

Thomas Noyes, Capt.
Enoch Long, Lieut.
Abner Bayley, Ens.
Moses Brickett, Ens.

Privates.

Joseph Ames.
Joseph Brown, Jr.
Thomas Chase.
Abel Chase.
Joseph Chase, Jr.
John Chase.
Parker Chase.
Daniel Cheney.
Winthrop Colby.
Nathan Chase.
Enoch Davis.
Robert Davis.
Nathl. Emery.
Wm. Foster.
Joseph Goodridge.
Wm. Hills.
Benj. Hills, Jr.
Thomas Hose.
Enoch Long, Jr.
John March.
Moody Morse.
Peter Rogers.
Thomas Rogers.
Silas Rogers.
John Rowling, Jr.
Barnes Short.
Joshua Sawyer.
Daniel Thurston.

Soldiers in the company of Stephen Kent in the service of Massachusetts, stationed at Newbury in 1775,—

Stephen Kent, Capt.
Dudley Cushman, Lieut.
Richard Pettingell, Lieut.
Daniel Knight, Sergt.
John Pearson, Sergt.
Josiah Goodrich, Sergt.
Hezekiah Goodhue, Sergt.
Parker Jacques, Corp.
John Hiddeu, Corp.
Eben Brown, Corp.
Edward Swazey, Corp.
Samuel Pearson, Drum.
George Blunt, Fifer.

Privates.

Joseph Lunt.
Enoch Hale.
Andrew Stickney.
James Safford.
Moses Akers.
Isaac Tilton.
Eben Moody.
Joseph Poor.
John Sweat.
David Boynton.
Samuel Pettingell.
Isaac Adams.
Josiah Pettingell.
Joseph Allen.
Wm. Bayley.
Richard Flanders.
Stephen Mitchell.
Daniel Knight, Jr.
John Dole.
Caleb James.
John Cheever.
Daniel Stickney.
John Bly.
Benj. Woodwell.
Elias Cook.
Amos Stickney.
Benj. Jackman, Jr.
Benj. Maine.
Cutting Pettingell, Jr.
Amos Morse.

Soldiers in the company of Captain Gideon Parker, and Colonel Moses Little's regiment, who enlisted in 1775, for eight months,—

John Halliday.
Chase Rogers.
John Silloway.
Jonathan Buswell.

Soldiers in the company of Jacob Gerrish, in the same regiment, and enlisted in 1775, for eight months,—

Jacob Gerrish, Capt.
Silas Adams, Lieut.
Amos Atkinson, Lieut.
Nathl. Pearson, Sergt.
Stephen Lunt, Sergt.
Wm Searl, Sergt.
Nathl. Adams, Sergt.
Jacob Hale, Corp.
Wm. Morgeridge, Corp.
Eliphalet Kilburn, Corp.
Joseph Carr, Corp.
Benj. Newman, Drum. & Fifer.
John Kenney, Drum. & Fifer.

Privates.

Enoch Adams.
Mark Anthony.
Edward Deverish Burke.
John Burbank.
Jacob Chizamore.
Benj. Beedle.
John Currier.
Jedediah Currier.
William Corrier.
Benj. Carr.
John Choat.
Eben Choat.
John Cheney.
Enoch Flood.
Wm. Flood.
Daniel Goodridge.
Oliver Goodridge.
John Lunt.
Annis Merrill.
Christopher Merrill.
Richard Martin.
Peter Ordway.
Moses Pettingell.
Samuel Place.
Benj. Poor.
Amos Poor.
Eliphalet Poor.
Joseph Rogers.
Richard Rolfe.
Moses Rollins.
Stephen Smith.
John Sawyer.
Absalom Thorla.
Joshua Tappan.

Soldiers in Captain Barnard's company, same regiment, same date of enlistment, and same service,—

Thomas Brown, Lieut.
Nicholas Titcomb, Sergt.
Edmund Colba, Sergt.
Willoughby Hoit, Corp.
John Cook, Corp.
John Brown, Corp.
Isaac Howard Drum. & Fifer.

Privates.

John Frazier.
Benj. Cotton.
Jacob Cooper.
Makepeace Colby.
Aaron Davis.
Nathl. Godfrey.

There were scattering enlistments in various companies and regiments in 1775 for eight months, as follows:

In the company of Captain Jonathan Evans, Colonel James Frye's regiment, private Peer Hall; in the company of Captain Gleason, Colonel Nixon's regiment, private Samuel Leacoren; in the company of Captain Daniel Gallusher, Colonel Ruggles Woodbridge's regiment, Lieutenant Daniel Pillsbury; in the company of Captain William Scott, Colonel Paul Dudley Sargent's regiment, private John Tucker; in the company of Captain Nailer Hatch, Lieutenant-Colonel William Bond's regiment, private Moses Woodward; and in the company of Captain John Papkin, Colonel Richard Gridley's regiment, private Abraham Waldron.

Soldiers in the company of Captain Joshua Prence, in Colonel Edward Wigglesworth's regiment, enlisted in 1776,—

Nathl. Adams, Lieut.
Eliphalet Kimball, Sergt.
John Flanders, Sergt.
Joseph Ryers, Sergt.
John Brown, Corp.
Nathl. Chase, Drum.

Privates.

Nehemiah Follansbee.
Benjamin Woodbury.
Jacob Pettengell.
Daniel Bradley.
Samuel Lankister.
Abel Greenleaf.
Jonathan Thurston.
Timothy Saunders.
Moody Morse.
Abner Kimball.
Samuel Jaquish.
James Barker.
David Hale.
John Copp.
Trustrim Thurley.
Stephen Thurston.
Thomas Bolton.
Silas Rogers.

Soldiers drafted in 1776 for the company of Captain Robert Dodge in the regiment of Colonel Francis,—

Lieut. Ilsley.
Ensign Pilsbury.
Oliver Clark, Lieut.

Privates.

Jonathan Plummer.
Joshua Moody.
Thomas Follansbee.
Richard Martin.
Jonathan Carleton.
Moses Lull.
Nathan Jaquish.
David Emery.
David Dustin.
George Thompson.
Pero Hall.
Enoch Boynton.
Oliver Martin.
Amos Carleton.
Wm. Murray.
Parker Knight.
Samuel Rankin.
Wm. Nichols.
James Scott.
James Follansbee.
Isaac Plummer.
Benjamin Chase.
Jonathan Hazeltine.
John Emery.
John Bennett.
Moses Rogers.
Amos Merli.
Hosea Ilsly.
Parker Chase.
John Bayley.
Charles Walker.
Eliphalet Rollins.

Soldiers enlisted 1777 in the Continental army for three years,—

John Catton.
Jedediah Adams.
Prena Brown.
Charles Cassady.
Benjamin Chase.
Eliphalet Chase.
Joshua Chase.
Joshua Chase, Jr.
Joseph Dowry.
Amos Dwinnels.
Edward Deacon.
Wm. Duggins.
Thomas Emerson.
John Eliot.
Samuel Eliot.
Ephraim Emery.
Stephen England.
Benjamin Flanders.
Benjamin Fellows.
Wm. Goodrich.
Daniel Goodridge.
John Graham.
Richard Goodwin.
John Nichols.
Eliphalet Noyce.
Joseph Noyce.
Obedeah Nut.
Cutting Pettingell, Jr.
Chase Pillsbury.
James Page.
Samuel Wright.
William White.
William Williams.
Jonathan Warmouth.

Moses Woodman enlisted in 1777 in the company of Captain Samuel Page, Colonel Eben Frances' regiment, for the expedition to Bennington, and Abijah Kenney enlisted in the same year in the company of Captain David Reed, on service unknown.

Soldiers enlisted in 1778, for six months, in the company of Captain Richard Rogers, regiment of Colonel Gerrish,—

Stephen Whitney.
Wm. Gould.
Aaron Rollius.
Jonathan Stickney.
Joseph Welch.
John Huff.
Samuel Bragdon.
Thomas Rogers.
Benj. Burbank.
Jonathan Stone.
George Moody.
John Nason.
Samuel Smith.
Thomas Brown.
James Bartlett.
Ezekiel Eastman.
Joseph Hodgdon.
Jeremiah Lord.
Jonathan Horsam.
Ephraim Tibbetts.
Samuel Fitts.
Nathaniel Ramsdell.
Theodore Barker.
Daniel Briant.
Moses Row.
Landras Graot.

Soldiers drafted in 1778, for eight and nine months' service,—

Caleb Parsons.
Wm. Reed.
David Marston.
Eliphalet Cauley.
Jacob Smith.
Jeremiah Smith.
Daniel Gale.
Nathaniel Wadleigh.
Enoch Adams.
Isaac Plummer.
Simon Lull.
Samuel Beaverly.
Jacob Freese.
Jonathan Goodwin.
Wm. Parker.
Wm. Chambers.
Josiah Maloone.
Enoch Adams.
Wm. Alld.
Phillip Barker.
James Sulivan.

William Duggins also enlisted in 1778 in the company of Captain Nicholas Blaisdel, Colonel Edward Wigglesworth's regiment.

Soldiers enlisted in 1779, for nine months,—

James Follansbee.
Benj. Chase.
John Bayley.
Charles Walker.
Eliphalet Rollins.
James Scott.
Wm. Nicholas.

Soldiers on the county rolls in 1779,—

Thomas Eliot.
John Welch.
Andrew Labenta.
John Mullins.
Thomas Wood.
James Kavan.
Thomas Wood, Jr.
Wm. Follansbee.
Nathan Haskell.
Wm. Noyes.
Benj. Dresser.
John Newman.
Joseph Felton.
Pero Haskel.

Soldiers enlisted in 1780, in the Continental army for three years,—

Wm. Contee.
Richard Little.
Joseph Hancock.
Daniel Cockran.
Boston Pickering.
Wm. Conly.
John Rimeak.
Sambo Carlton.
James Cavendre.
Pero Hall.
Jube Merrill.
John Biman.
Stephen England.
Joseph Noyes.
Silas Noyes.
Wm. Perry.
Thomas Churchell.
Levi Hall.
Theodore Atkinson.
Joseph Conneen.
Joseph Holmes.
Jacob Annis.
Joseph Lambert.
Joseph Leroche.
Robert Runnells.
Patrick Rowland.
Joshua Rodwell.
John May.
Elisha Lake.
Wm. Conlin.
Nathaniel Davis.
Ichabod Twilight.
Samuel Currier.
Oliver Martin.
Henry Bickford.
Daniel Rimbam.
Peter Bab.
Fortune Freeman.
Cato Seward.
John Richards.
Jonathan Cadwell.
Samuel Chase, Jr.
John Stone.
James Varnum.
John Lewis.
Joseph Winter.
Elijah Kelley.
Jack Warner.
Cæsar Hodgdon.
Moses Fessenden.

Soldiers who enlisted in 1780 for six months,—

Benoni Eaton Knapp.
Richard Shay.
John Harris.
James Cordy.
Eliphalet Poor.
Enoch Dole.
Wm. Currier.
John Burbank.
John Dow.
Isaac Plummer.
Benj. Willet.
Wm. Plummer.
Seth Plummer.
John Thomson.
Aaron Rogers.
Moses Rogers.
Richard Martin.
Wm. Read.

Micajah Lunt.
Jonathan Martin.
James Martin.
Jacob Burrel.
Jonathan Morse.
John Currier.
Moses Somerby.
John Lull.
Moses Read.
John Thurston.
Prince Brown.
Jonathan Bartlett.
Stephen Davis.
Cuff Downey.
Simeon Chase.
John Harvey.
Jonathan Lyford.
John Beau.
London Rogers.
Samuel Randall.
Joseph Pillsbury.
Paul McPherson.
John Archer.
Josiah Conner.
Lancaster Brecke.
James Scott.
James Huntress.
John Randall.

Soldiers who enlisted in 1780 for three years, for the Continental army,—

Aaron Mellen.
Stephen Mitchell.
James Pendon.
Daniel Goodrich.
John Stockman.
Eliphalet Noyes, Sergt.
Samuel Stock, Drum.
Oliver Lunt.
Benj. Murray.
Wm. White.
Roger Lord, Sergt.
Thomas Emerson.
Wm. Poor, Corp.
Pomp Jackson.
Robert Creaton.
John Tucker, Sergt.

New levies for six months in 1782,—

John Thompson.
Richard Martin.
Jonathan Martin.
James Martin.
Moses Reed.
Michael Lunt.
John Burbank.
Samuel Randall.
John Archer.
Isaiah Maloon.
David Maloon.
Paul McPherson.
Nathl. Hunt.
Eben Haynes.
James Smith.
Oliver Richards.
Benj. Woodbury.
Enoch Tool.
Moses Gage.
Benj. Cotton.
Ezekiel Sterns.
Jonathan Calley.
Elepites Calley.
Jeremiah Smith.
Stephen Smith.
Benj. Smith.
Caleb Todd.
Geo. Sanders.
Daniel Gale.
Samuel Dudley.
Jonathan Steward.
John Woodbury.
John Harrie.
David Dowman.
Benoni Knapp.
Richard Shay.
Moses Titcomb.
Samuel Colby.
Moses Gage, Jr.
James Thomas.

Miscellaneous enlistments at unknown dates,—

Thomas Clark.
Hollis Huckins.
Benj. Fletcher.
Reuben Caneda.
Josiah Hunt.

Thus it will be seen that, including field officers, Newbury furnished at various times five hundred and forty-three men during the war. Few towns can show a better record. From the time of the first exhibition of a spirit of resistance among the men of Massachusetts to the exactions and tyranny of England, when not a single voice was raised in Newbury in support of the crown, until the surrender of Yorktown, the men of Newbury responded to every call and kept well the promise made to the merchants of Boston, to sacrifice their lives and fortunes in defense of the public cause. In 1790 the population of Newbury was three thousand nine hundred and seventy-two, probably not much larger than during the Revolution, about one-seventh of which (with no allowance for re-enlistments) braved the perils of war.

On the 11th of December, 1783, Rev. Moses Parsons, the second pastor of the Byfield Church, closed his pastorate and his life. He was born in Gloucester in 1715 and graduated at Harvard in 1736. He was one of the trustees named in the act of incorporation of the Dummer Academy in 1682, and Hon. Theophlus Parsons, of distinguished memory, was his third son.

Rev. John Tucker, the sixth pastor of the First Parish, died March 22, 1792. He was born in Amesbury in 1720 and graduated at Harvard in 1741. His epitaph furnishes the best description of his character and life :

"Beneath are the remains of the Rev. John Tucker, D.D., Pastor of the first church and Congregation in this town, who died March 22d, 1792, Aetat. 73. Blessed with strong mental powers, a liberal education and an uncommon mildness of Temper, all directed and improved by that faith which purifies the heart, rendered him dearly beloved in every Relation in which he was placed, and more especially made him conspicuously useful as a minister of the Gospel. When meeting with peculiar Difficulties, he eminently complied with that direction of his Master to the first Preachers of the Gospel,—'Be ye wise as serpents and harmless as doves.' As he lived a life of piety, he met death with serenity. By his doctrine and example he taught the humility, and at his death he exhibited the dignity and triumph of the real Christian. To perpetuate the memory of so excellent a character, and as a testimony of their affectionate regard, the bereaved flock have erected this Sepulchral Stone."

On the 19th of December, 1787, Rev. Elijah Parish was settled over the Byfield Parish as the successor of Rev. Moses Parsons, and on the 23d of March, 1796, Rev. Abraham Moore was settled over the First Parish as the successor of Rev. Mr. Tucker. Mr. Moore died June 24, 1801. He was born in Londonderry, N. H., in 1769 and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1789. Rev. John S. Popkin was settled as his successor, September 19, 1804, and resigned in 1815. Mr. Popkin was born in Boston in 1771 and graduated at Harvard in 1792 with the highest honors. He was ordained in Boston in July, 1799, having preached for a time at Wenham, Mass., and Londonderry, N. H. In 1815 he accepted the position of Greek Professor at Harvard, which he held until 1826, when he was appointed to the Professorship of Greek Literature as the successor of Edward Everett. In 1833 he resigned, but continued to reside in Cambridge until his death, in 1852.

On the 4th of May, 1806, Rev. Mr. Popkin preached for the last time in the meeting-house of the First Parish, which was built in the year 1700, and on the 6th of May the house was taken down. A new meeting-house was raised near the same site on the 17th of June, and dedicated on the 17th of September. This meeting-house was burned on the 25th of June, 1868, and the present one was built immediately after, and dedicated March 4, 1869.

After the resignation of Mr. Popkin the Rev. Leonard Withington was settled October 31, 1816 and continued to perform the duties of his office until October 31, 1859, when his resignation was reluctantly accepted. He was born in Dorchester August 9, 1789, and graduated at Yale in 1814.

He was followed by the Rev. John R. Thurston,

who was ordained January 20, 1860, and the Rev. Francis W. Sanborn.

Rev. Elijah Parish, the third minister in the Byfield Church, closed his pastorate with his life October 15, 1825. He was born in Lebanon, Conn., November 7, 1762, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1785. He was succeeded by Rev. Isaac R. Barbour, a native of Bridgeport, Vermont, and a graduate of Middlebury College in 1819, who was installed December 20, 1827, and resigned in April, 1833. Rev. Henry Durant succeeded Mr. Barbour and was ordained December 25, 1833. His pastorate continued until his resignation, in 1848. He was born in Acton, Mass., June 18, 1802, and graduated at Yale in 1827, serving as tutor in the college after his graduation and previous to his settlement in Newbury. Rev. Francis V. Tenney followed Mr. Durant and was settled in 1850, serving until 1857, when he resigned to take charge of a parish in Manchester. Mr. Tenney was followed by Rev. Charles Brooks in 1858, who resigned in 1863, and was afterwards settled in Unionville, Conn., where he died in 1866. Rev. James H. Childs was ordained October 7, 1875.

The Methodist Episcopal Church, at Byfield was organized or rather received its first inspiration in 1827. In the spring of that year Rev. William French, of Sandown, N. H., while traveling on business, visited West Newbury, and by his conversation on matters of religion so far interested some of the people living near the "Great Rock" as to induce them to form a class in April, 1828. This class consisted of David Clifford (leader), Simeon Pillsbury, James Burrill, Jerusha Burrill, Alice Pillsbury, Eleanor Perry, Amos Pillsbury, Sally Clifford, Hannah England, Wm. W. Perry, Abner Rogers and Betsey Poor. Mr. French continued to visit his flock until 1830, at which time the class had been enlarged by the addition of John Bailey, (a local preacher,) Myra Bailey, Abigail Rogers, Samuel Stickney, Judith Gould, Betsey Rogers, Eunice Stickney, Mary Rogers and Lydia Rogers. In that year a small chapel was built near the Great Rock. It was very small and not furnished with seats, the women during service sitting on stones brought in from the outside, and the men standing outside and looking in through the open windows.

For a time the Sabbath services were carried on by local preachers among whom were Messrs. Beebe, Marsh, Flanders, Peaslee, Gile and Barrett. In April, 1831, the church asked for a Conference preacher and received from the New England Conference Rev. Philo Bronson. During this year the chapel was finished and furnished, and further additions were made to the class. In 1832 an attempt was made by the society, for the first time, to support a preacher, but the scant sum of $92.15 was all that could be raised. In that year Rev. Joseph Brown was sent to the society by the Conference, but remained only one quarter and was succeeded by Rev. Thomas W. Gile, who supplied the pulpit during the remainder of the year. In the same year a church proper was formed, and also a parish, under the name of "The First Parish of the Methodist Episcopal Church for the towns of West Newbury and Newbury." Micajah Poor was chosen clerk of the parish and served many years.

In 1833 Rev. Samuel W. Coggshall was appointed preacher in charge of the station, and the classes were newly organized. In April, 1834, Mr. Coggshall left and was succeeded by Rev. Hezekiah Thatcher. During the pastorate of Mr. Thatcher a movement was made to remove the chapel to the Mills village of Byfield, which caused much bitterness of feeling and resulted in a change of the classes, the resignation of two of the trustees and the continuance of the chapel in its original location. Mr. Thatcher continued his service until 1838, and after that time, until 1846, the church was supplied by local preachers, among whom were E. K. Colby and Wm. Giddings. In 1846 the station was connected with the Newburyport charge, and until 1852 was without a pastor. Among the preachers supplying the church during this time were Messrs. Heath, Chase, Eastman, Witham, Dalton, Fay, Hutchings, Pillsbury and McKinley.

In 1852, through the influence of Elder D. P. Pike, of Newburyport, Rev. Mr. Bartlett, of the Christian denomination, took charge of the pulpit for a short time, and was succeeded by Rev. John L. Trefren, a local preacher from Newburyport, who remained with the church two years. During his pastorate, in 1853, the chapel was removed to its present location in Byfield, at the Mills village, and repaired and enlarged.

During the years 1855–56 the church was supplied by Mr. Higgins, a local preacher from Chelsea, who was followed by Messrs. Mudge and Peaslee in 1856–57, and in April, 1858, by Rev. O. S. Butler, during whose pastorate the chapel was again enlarged. Mr. Butler remained three years and was followed by Rev. Daniel Wait in 1861, who remained two years, and by Rev. George Washington Green in 1863, who withdrew shortly after his settlement. Rev. Mr. Butler again came to the church and remained until 1866, when Rev. Wm. D. Bridge took charge and remained one year. In 1867 Rev. Wm. Sullivan came to the church, but was obliged by ill health to withdraw. He was followed by Rev. A. Moore, who preached a year and was succeeded by Rev. Garret Beekman, during whose service the chapel was moved to its present site and much enlarged. In 1873–74 Rev. C. T. Johnson had charge of the church, and was succeeded by Rev. Henry Mathers in 1874, and by Rev. W. A. Nottage in 1877. Since the withdrawal of Mr. Nottage the succession of ministers up to the present time has been: Rev. Wm. Pentecost in 1881, Rev. C. M. Melvin in 1882–83, Rev. Ivens A. Mesler in 1884, Rev. F. B. Graves in 1885–86, and the present pastor, Rev. H. G. Buckingham.

In 1877 a society bearing the name of "The Plym-

onth Brethren" was formed by seceders from the Methodist society and others, and continues to hold services on the Sabbath in a hall over the present post-office in the Mills village of Byfield. This is a sect of Christians which, chiefly under the leadership of John Darby, an Anglican clergyman, was organized in London in 1838. Its members were at first called Darbyites, but its doctrines attracted so large a number of adherents in Plymouth, England, where a society of fifteen hundred members was formed, that the name of Plymouth Brethren was adopted. In England there are at present more than one hundred and fifty places of worship belonging to the sect.

As in Newburyport, the enforcement of the embargo act in 1807 met with great opposition, and a large majority of the people in the town were opposed to the policy of the government. On the 2d of August, 1808, a town-meeting was held to take into consideration the distressing situation of the country occasioned by the cessation of trade, and on the 23d of January, 1809, resolutions were passed and a memorial to the General Court adopted protesting against the unnecessary and severe embargo measures.

The War of 1812 was as unpopular as the embargo, and resolutions were adopted in town-meeting condemnatory of its declaration. Peace was hailed with joy and the memory of its suffering and disasters was only sweetened by the intense relief which peace and its cessation of pain furnished.

In 1819 the town of West Newbury was incorporated. The circumstances attending and causing this second division of the town will be found sufficiently narrated in the sketch of that town contained in these volumes. The loss of the territory and population contained within the limits of the new town was natural, and in the order of things to be expected. An ample territory and a sufficient population remained, the old town still had its foothold on the Merrimac, its ship-building industry was intact and the town was content. But a sad disappointment was in store for the ancient settlement, which had once extended from river to river, and from Rowley village on the Merrimac to the sea. In 1851 a third division of the town was made, and the town of Newburyport, ambitious to become a city, sought and obtained from the mother town the necessary population and territory and wealth which it lacked within its own borders. For an account of the annexation of 1851 and its extent, the reader is referred to the sketch of Newburyport.

For the performance of its duties in the War of the Rebellion, Newbury was not unprepared. On the 22d of April, 1861, the Board of Selectmen, consisting of Paul Titcomb, Edward H. Little and Eben P. Ferguson issued a warrant for a town-meeting to be held on the 30th. At that meeting resolutions were passed pledging the faith of the town to the comfortable maintenance of the families of those who should enlist. The sum of $300 was appropriated to place the company of riflemen then in existence in the town in better condition for service, and the treasurer was authorized to borrow the sum of $3000 for contingent war expenses. In July, 1862, a bounty of $150 was offered to soldiers enlisting to fill the quota at that time required of the town, and the requisite number of men was at once obtained. In August 1862, a bounty of $250 was offered to those enlisting for nine months under the President's call for 300,000 men. At a later period of the war men were obtained on the payment of various bounties, which were raised as occasion required by the addition of private subscriptions to the amounts appropriated by the town. The following roll contains the names and rank of the soldiers of Newbury during the war:

Wm. H. Foster, capt, 3 yrs...40th
Nathan Longfellow, 3 yrs.....2d
Nathan W. Withington, sergt., 3 yrs.....11th
George H. Northend, 3 yrs.....14th
Richard Withington, corp., 3 yrs.....17th
Paul A. Perkins, 3 yrs.....17th
Joseph Perkins, Jr., 3 yrs.....17th
Benjamin P. Rogers, 3 yrs.....17th
John H. Willis, 3 yrs.....17th
Wm. C. Haynes, 3 yrs.....17th
George E. Carleton, 3 yrs.....19th
John Carr, 3 yrs.....19th
Leander S. Falls, 3 yrs.....19th
Samuel T. Jellison, 3 yrs.....19th
James Fee, 3 yrs.....19th
Benjamin W. Jellison, lieut., 3 yrs. 19th.
Micajah Rogers, Jr., 3 yrs.....19th
Wm. E. Northend, 3 yrs.....19th
Varnum Rogers, 3 yrs.....19th
Daniel E. Rogers, 3 yrs.....19th
Albert Rogers, 3 yrs.....19th
Benjamin F. Stephens, 3 yrs...19th
Joseph H. Pearson, 3 yrs.....19th
Edward W. Bartlett, 3 yrs.....19th
Elijah T. Rogers, lieut., 3 yrs. 19th.
John H. Brown, 3 yrs.....19th
Joseph Floyd, 3 yrs.....19th
Lawrence M. Massury, 3 yrs...19th
Ezekiel Osborne, 3 yrs.....19th
Thomas B. Robbins, 3 yrs.....19th
Wm. H. G. Rogers, 3 yrs.....19th
George W. Gibson, 3 yrs.....19th
Mighill A. Rogers, 3 yrs.....19th
John Davis, 3 yrs.....19th
Augustus Koss, 3 yrs.....19th
George M. Kimball, 3 yrs.....19th
Abraham A. Dow, corp., 3 yrs. 19th.
Sidney M Smith, 3 yrs.....19th
Joseph Gould, 3 yrs.....33d
Isaiah Rogers, 3 yrs.....33d
Eben Rogers, 3 yrs.....33d
Woodbridge A. Rogers, sergt., 3 yrs., 33d.
George P. Goodwin, 3 yrs 35th
Nathl. M. Ilsley, 3 yrs.....35th
Walter G. Peckham, 3 yrs.....35th
Charles C. Day, 3 yrs.....35th
Charles L. Cole, 3 yrs.....35th
Ira H. Allen, 3 yrs 35th
Richard W. Swan, 3 yrs.....35th
Henry P. Griffith, 3 yrs.....35th
Joseph W. Lunt, 3 yrs. 35th
Jacob G. Clarkson, 3 yrs.....35th
Amos M. Little, 3 yrs.....38th
George Burrell, corp., 3 yrs. 40th N. Y.
Charles H. Bray, 3 yrs.....1st Cav.
Seth Young, corp, 3 yrs....1st Cav.
Charles Caldwell, 3 mos.
Ezra Hale, Jr, corp., 9 mos...48th
Lewis H. Hale, 9 mos.....48th
George E. Young, mus., 9 mos. 48th.
Moses Young, sergt., 9 mos...48th
Harrison W. Dearborn, 9 mos. 48th.
Eben H. Dearborn, 9 mos.....48th
Eben Bray, Jr., 9 mos.....48th
Francis M. Pillsbury, sergt., 9 mos. 48th.
Charles Little, corp, 9 mos....48th
James N. Frost., corp., 9 mos. 48th.
Edward L. Rogers, 9 mos.....48th
Gorham P. Rogers, 9 mos.....48th
Lewis B. Rogers, sergt., 9 mos. 48th.
Philip Rogers, 9 mos.....48th
Melvin B. Rogers, 9 mos.....48th
Enoch S. Rogers, sergt. 9 mos.48th
Christopher Rogers, 9 mos.....48th
Philip L. Rogers, mus., 9 mos. 48th
Wm. T. Sanborn, wag., 9 mos. 48th.
Andrew F. Smith, 9 mos.....48th
Charles H. Prince, 9 mos.....48th
Horace R. Pillsbury, 9 mos....48th
Leonard Pillsbury, 9 mos.....48th
Lorenzo B. Bluisdell, 9 mos.. 48th
Benjamin S. Bailey, 9 mos.....48th
Henry Bailey, 9 mos.....48th
Phineas B. Gould, 9 mos.....48th
Walter Noyes, 9 mos 48th
Nathl. Noyes, sergt., 9 mos...48th
Benjamin F. Noyes, capt., 9 mos. 48th.
Isaac F. Tenton, 9 mos.....48th
Mighill A. Rogers, 9 mos. 48th
John W. Kelly, 9 mos. 48th
Isaac F. Porter, 9 mos..... 48th
Joseph E. Willard, 3 yrs 20th
Timothy Conway, 3 yrs 20th
Adam Simpson, 3 yrs.....20th
John Mongan, 3 yrs.....20th
Thomas Williams, 3 yrs.....20th

Joseph Young, 3 yrs.....20th
Wm. H. Barney, 3 yrs.. ....20th
John Brennan, 3 yrs.....20th
Bonney Robbins, 3 yrs.....20th
Wm. Edwards, 3 yrs.....20th
Thomas Brady, 3 yrs.....20th
George H. Shaw, 3 yrs.....20th
John C. Foss, corp., 3 yrs.....23d
Simeon P. Rogers, 3 yrs.....32d
Thomas P. Lunt, 3 yrs.....32d
James H. Pickering, 3 yrs.....32d
Hiram K. Poore, 9 mos.....50th
Francis A. Wiley, 9 mos.....50th
Charles W. Rundlett, 9 mos...50th
John Parsons, 9 mos.....50th
John H. Parsons, 9 mos... ....50th
Lyman Floyd, 9 mos.....50th
Charles E. Tenney, 9 mos.....50th
John G. Tenney, 9 mos..... 50th
Wm. P. Bailey, corp., 9 mos...50th
James P. Greeley, sergt. 100 days, 60th.
Justin N. Adams, 100 days....60th
John A. Bean, 100 days.....60th
Thomas Noyes, 100 days.....60th
Charles E. Rogers, 100 days, 17th Un.
George W. Pearson, 100 days, 17th Un.
Elijah Pearson, 100 days, 17th Un.
Orin T. Pearson, 100 days, 17thUn.
Leonard Pillsbury, 100 days, 17th Un.
Asa Rogers, Jr., 100 days, 17th Un.
Charles H. Woodman, 100 days, 17th Un.
Wm. Woodman, 100 days.....Un.
Daniel D. Bailey, 1 yr....17th Un.
Wm. P. Bailey, corp.
Albert M. Currier, 1 yr...17th Un.
Lorenzo B. Blaisdell, 1 yr., 17th Un.
John B. Edmunds, 1 yr., 17th Un.
Hiram K. Poore, 1 yr.....17th Un.
Wm. H. Gould, 1 yr.....17th Un.
Thomas B. Larkin, 1 yr..17th Un.
Phineas B. Gould, 1 yr....17th Un.
Wm. F. Larkin, 1 yr.. ....17th Un.
Charles A. Newton, 1 yr. 17th Un.
Moses T. Pearson, 1 yr....17th Un.
Wm. P. Pearson, 1 yr.....17th Un.
James Howe, 1 yr.....17th Un.
James H. Johnson, 90 days, 3d Un.
Joseph Knight, 90 days.....3d Un.
John Douglas, 3 yrs .....13th Bat.
George E. Noyes, 3 yrs...14th Bat.
Stephen W. Goodrich, 3 yrs., 1st H. Art.
Jewett Rogers, Jr., 3 yrs., 2d H. Art.
Charles W. Sargent, 3 yrs., 3d H. Art.
Eben P. Davis, sergt., 1 yr., 4th H. Art.
Greene Adams, 1 yr....4th H. Art.
Benjamin S. Baily, 1 yr., 4th H. Art.
Samuel R. Bailey, 1 yr., 4th H. A.
Joseph P. Bassett, 1 yr., 4th H. A.
Silas F. Bean, 1 yr.....4th H. A.
John N. Bray, 1 yr.....4th H. A.
Eben Bray, Jr., 1 yr.....4th H. A.
John D. Floyd, 1 yr.....4th H. A.
John M. Horsch, 1 yr...4th H. A.
Charles B. Rogers, 1 yr..4th H. A.
George Cammett, 3 yrs., 1st Bat. H. Art.
Daniel Rogers, 3 yrs., 1st Bat. H. Art.
Ira Rogers, 3 yrs., 1st Bat. H. Art.
David Kent, 3 yrs., 1st Bat. H. A.
Jacob Kent, 3 yrs., 1st Bat. H. A.
Wm. H. Kent, 3 yrs., 1st Bat. H. A.
Charles Roberts, 3 yrs.....2d Cav.
Dudley Ward, 3 yrs.....2d Cav.
Wm. A. Dudley, 3 yrs.....2d Cav.
Gilbert Tye, 3 yrs.....2d Cav.
Robert R. Minchin, 3 yrs.2d Cav.
Calvin S. Warner, 3 yrs....3d Cav.
George H. Minchin, 3 yrs.1st Cav.
Jonathan Linfield, 3 yrs.....2d
Joseph Steele, 3 yrs.....2d
Patrick Kelley, 3 yrs.....9th
Reuben Record, 3 yrs.....11th
Reuben Record, re-en., 3 yrs..16th
Richard Rowe, 3 yrs.....18th
George W. Carleton, 3 yrs.....22d
Isaac Walker, 3 yrs.....28th
Thomas Lane, 3 yrs.....28th
James Dunlap, lieut., 3 yrs...59th
John D. Butler, 3 yrs.....59th
Horace S. Woodman, 3 yrs....59th
Mighill W. Rogers, 3 yrs.....59th
Timothy W. Rogers, 3 yrs.....59th
Hugh M. Osborne, vet. res.
Joseph Gould, vet. reserves.
Andrew F. Smith, vet. res.
Nathan K. Withington, vet. res.
Elisha Beane, Jr, 3 yrs.....14th
Stephen Haley, 1 year.
George D. Knight, 1 year.

The above list contains 195 enlistments—ten more than are entered on the war record of the town, those ten being found on the rolls of the State. Of these, Joseph H. Pearson was killed at the battle of Antietam, Samuel T. Jellison at Turkey Bend, Benjamin F. Stevens at Glendale, Thomas P. Lunt at Chancellorsville, John H. Brown May 24, 1864, and James Dunlap July 30, 1864, Sidney M Smith died August 26, 1864, Robert R. Menchin at date unknown, Henry P. Griffith November 3, 1862, Joseph W. Lunt at New York March 30, 1865, Jacob G. Clarkson at Falmouth, Virginia, January 19, 1863, Harrison W. Dearborn at Baton Rouge at date unknown, Walter Noyes January 4, 1863, and Nathaniel Noyes at Baton Rouge.

The town came out of the war with a heavy debt, which, by prudent and skillful management on the part of the officers of the town, has been so far reduced as to promise its entire liquidation within the next two or three years.

The settlers of Newbury began at a very early date to give their attention to the education of their youth. In Newbury, as elsewhere in the Massachusetts and Plymouth Colonies, the main reliance of the people was for a time on private instruction, that of the family and of the pastor of the parish. In the Plymouth Colony, where the number of adventurers was large and of mechanics and hired men was small, the demand for public schools was not urgent until a comparatively late day. The number of children, as compared with intelligent heads of families capable of educating them, was small, and little necessity existed for public instruction until the wave of population crossed its borders from the sister colony. But in Massachusetts private instruction soon failed to suffice. Winthrop came with fifteen hundred men, a large portion of whom were uneducated, and had children with them whom they were unable themselves to educate, and so numerous, that in self-defense the General Court was obliged at an early date to make some provision for the establishment of public schools.

In Newbury, the Rev. Mr. Parker and his colleague, Rev. Mr. Noyes, were both educated men, and with their knowledge of Latin and Greek undoubtedly rendered valuable service in the cause of education, but probably in the direction chiefly of fitting young men for the new college at Cambridge. It is probable that Rev. James Bailey, a Harvard graduate of 1669, Rev. Shubael Dummer, a graduate of 1656, Rev. Joseph Gerrish, a graduate of 1669, Rev. James Noyes, Jr., a graduate of 1659, Judge Samuel Sewall, a graduate of 1671, Rev. Timothy Woodbridge, a graduate of 1674, and Rev. John Woodbridge, a graduate of 1664, were qualified for admission to college by one or the other of the first two pastors of Newbury.

In 1639, however, Anthony Somerby appeared in Newbury and was appointed schoolmaster by the town, with a grant of "four acres of land near the river Parker and some meadow land," as an inducement to keep school for a year. Mr. O. B. Merrill thinks it possible that he kept a part of the time near Frog Pond, as in the laying out of the lots in the new town "ffrog meadow" was assigned to Master Somerby. In 1652 it was voted to build a school-house, and £20 a year was appropriated for the support of the school. This school, like all others in Newbury before 1719, was supported partly by tuition charged to all the scholars, and not until the above date were the schools of Newbury made absolutely free. In 1658 Newbury was admonished for not maintaining a "lattin scule," and fined £5, to be paid to the Ipswich Latin School, "if bye the next courte they do not provyde a lattin scule master according to law." In 1675 Henry Short was employed as a teacher and was promised £5 for his first half-year, and sixpence a week from each

scholar. The next year he was hired also, and if there were twenty boys the school was to be kept in the watch-house. The number of scholars was only seventeen, and Mr. Short taught them at his own house.

After Newbury became divided into three villages—the old town, the new town and the West District—it was for a long time a contested question where the school of the town should be kept. Up to 1691 the school was kept in the neighborhood of the old town settlement, but in that year a vote was passed requiring it to be kept one-third of the year in each village. Mr. Seth Shove, a graduate of Harvard in 1687, was hired as a teacher, and it was stipulated that he should teach "readers" free, Latin scholars at sixpence a week and "cipherers" fourpence a week. In 1695 Rev. Christopher Toppan, a graduate of Harvard in 1691, and afterwards the pastor of the First Parish, was employed, with the promise of "£20 in money and £300 in good country pay so long as he shall carry on half the ministry, and £30 in good country pay as long as he shall keep the writing and grammar school." The next year his salary was raised to £300 in country pay and £50 in money. Nicholas Webster, a graduate of Harvard in 1695, was the next teacher, with a salary of £30 in country pay, fourpence a week for Latin scholars and nothing from "readers, writers and cipherers." In 1700 Richard Brown, a graduate of Harvard in 1697, was employed and taught until 1711, when he was ordained as minister at Reading. Mr. Brown was also town clerk from October 30, 1706, to October 9, 1711, and at his resignation said:

"I have served Newbury as school-master eleven years, and as Town Clerk five and a half years, and have been repaid with abuse, ingratitude and contempt. I have sent nigh as many to college as all the masters before since the Reverend and learned Parker. Those I bred think themselves better than their master (God make them better still), and yet they may remember the foundation of all their growing greatness was laid in the sweat of my brow. I pray that from unacknowledging Newbury may get them that may serve them better and find thanks when they have done. If to find a house for the school two years when the town had none; if to take the scholars to my own fire when there was no wood at school as frequently; if to give records to the poor and record their births and deaths gratis deserves acknowledgement then it is my due, but hard to come by."

In 1713 John Woodbridge, a graduate of Harvard in 1694, was employed at twenty-five pounds per year and kept the school eighteen years, with a salary at no time exceeding forty pounds. In 1728 the town voted thirty pounds for each of the three parishes and the Third Parish, which included substantially the territory which was incorporated as Newburyport in 1764, added thirty pounds to its share and established a school near the head of Market Street. In 1731 this parish voted sixty pounds for the support of a school and also voted that no children should attend unless they could read in a psalter. In 1732 Stephen Sewall, a graduate of Harvard in 1731, succeeded Mr. Woodbridge and taught for nearly fifty years. The town appropriated one hundred and sixty pounds, and what remained after supporting the Grammar School was to be divided *pro rata* between the parishes for the education of their youth. In 1733 the Third Parish voted to support a school at its own expense, and in the same year the town voted forty-pounds for the support of a grammar school on the west side of the Artichoke River. In 1736 the General Court authorized the Third Parish to raise money for its own school, and exempted it from paying for the support of any other school, and in 1740 this parish raised one hundred and twenty pounds for a grammar school, to be taught by Samuel Moody, and a writing school, under the instruction of Leonard Cotton.

In 1753 the town voted that a writing school be kept one year in each parish "until it has served the whole town." In 1763 the town voted to build a grammar school house near the head of Fish Street, and in 1774, fifteen years after the incorporation of Newburyport, Samuel Moody made a donation of one hundred pounds to the town in addition to a previous gift of twenty pounds for the purpose of creating a fund for a grammar school.

But it is useless to go further into details concerning the schools. It is sufficient to say that the school system after the Revolution grew rapidly in favor with the people and steadily advanced in usefulness. In 1821 the town was divided into nine school districts, each of which had its school, though the territory, population and wealth of the town had been only two years before largely diminished by the incorporation of West Newbury. At present there are the following schools in the town: the Lower Green, the Ridge, the Upper Green, the Farm, the South Byfield, the Byfield Primary and the Byfield Grammar Schools, with a total attendance of about two hundred and forty scholars.

The early industries of Newbury were chiefly those connected with saw-mills and grist-mills and fulling-mills. Some of the earliest of these have been referred to. At a later day tan-yards were established and rope-walks were built; but in recent years, since the incorporation of Newburyport and West Newbury and the further annexation of territory to Newburyport, its old industries have either, with few exceptions, died out or, as in the case of the chief industry of ship-building, been transferred by legislative acts to the newly-formed municipalities. Those still remaining are at the Mill village in the Byfield Parish. In 1794 the first incorporated woolen company in the State built a factory at Dummer's Falls, the machinery for which was made by Guppy & Armstrong, of Newburyport.

The early history of this mill is not without its interest. In 1793, John and Arthur Schofield, sons of Arthur Schofield, who lived at Standish-foot, in Saddleworth, Yorkshire, came to New England and settled first in Charlestown. There they began to make patterns for the machinery of a woolen-mill, and Rev. Jedediah Morse, of Charlestown, became interested in their work. Mr. Morse was then engaged with Rev. Elijah Parish, of Byfield, in writing a "History of

New England," and through the two clergymen the Schofields became acquainted with capitalists in Newburyport. The result was that William Bartlett and Benjamin Greenleaf and others became sufficiently interested in the enterprise proposed by them, to procure an act of incorporation as the "Proprietors of the Newburyport Woolen Company." The persons named in the act were Benjamin Greenleaf, Philip Auben, Wm. Bartlett, Offin Boardman, Jr., Moses Brown, David Coffin, Wm. Coombs, John Coombs, Mark Fitz, Abel Greenleaf, John Greenleaf, Andrew Frothingham, Jonathan Gage, Michael Hodge, Wm. Pierce Johnson, Nicholas Johnson, James Kittell, Nathaniel Knapp, James Knight, Peter Le Briton, Joseph Moulton, Wm. Noyes, John P. Bryan, Theophilus Parsons, James Prince, Wm. Welstead Prout, Edward Rand, Joseph Stanwood, Ebenezer Wheelwright and Edward Wigglesworth.

In the same year Paul Moody, of Newbury, sold to the corporation six acres of land, partly covered with water, for four hundred and fifty pounds, and also his grist-mill, "together with the stream of water commonly called the Falls River, with the right of flowage," etc. This land was a part of that granted by the town to John Spencer and Richard Dummer to build a mill upon in 1636, and was sold by Nathaniel Dummer, in 1710, to William Moody, the grandfather of the grantor to the woolen company, in 1794. In the mean time the Schofields had removed, in December, 1793, to Newburyport, and at once began to construct a carding-machine, which was put together in a room of the stable of Timothy Dexter. This was the first carding-machine made in this country. This and other experiments proving satisfactory, the Byfield factory was built and finished in 1795, when the Schofields, who had been for a few months engaged in Newburyport in the manufacture of woolen cloth by hand, sold their machines to the corporation and removed to Byfield to superintend the mill. They remained in Byfield about five years, when John removed to Montville, Connecticut, and Arthur to Pittsfield, Massachusetts.

In 1804 William Bartlett, who had obtained possession of the mill, sold it to John Lees for eight thousand five hundred dollars, who converted it into a cotton factory, and for a time was successful. Reverses, however, came to him, and in 1824 the mill was sold by Deputy-Sheriff Philip Bayley to Gorham Parsons. Mr. Parsons repaired and rearranged the mill, and about the year 1830 leased it to Wm. Cleaveland, who for several years was engaged in the manufacture of cotton cloth. Mr. Gorham Parsons subsequently sold it to Theophilus Parsons, who again sold it to M. E. Hale, of Newburyport. By Mr. Hale it was sold to Dr. Francis V. Noyes, who leased it as a bedstead and cabinet-shop. It was afterwards owned by Alfred Durant, with his brother, Rev. Henry Durant, and finally by Charles Hold, during whose ownership it was burned. After the fire the land and privilege were bought by Leonard Morrison, who rebuilt it for a fancy yarn mill, and at the present time, under the ownership of H. U. Ewing and others of Boston, it is employed in the manufacture of blankets.

Besides the woolen-mill there are on the river two snuff-mills, and near the railroad station at Byfield a shoe-factory, carried on by Mr. J. O. Rogers, with a product of about one thousand cases a year.

The business of ship-building in Newbury was first carried on on the river Parker. The vessels built there were probably small sloops of light draught, and no positive record exists concerning them. Hon. John J. Currier, in his valuable pamphlet on ship-building on the Merrimac, adduces evidence to show that on that river vessels were built as early as 1652. In the year 1652 mention is made of "an old building yard" on Carr's Island, and Mr. Currier furnishes a list of vessels built in Newbury for English owners between 1698 and 1713. From those early times down to 1851, when Newbury was cut off from the upper shore of the river by the annexation of a portion of its territory to Newburyport, ship-building continued to be its leading industry. The following vessels were built in Newbury and registered by the authority of the government of the province of Massachusetts Bay:

	Tons.
1698. Sloop Unity	40
1698. Bark Tryal	20
1698. Brigatine Neptune	35
1698. Sloop Dolphin	30
1698. Brigantine Endeavor	20
1698. Sloop Ann	40
1698. Bark Elizabeth	50
1698. Sloop Elizabeth	30
1698. Ketch Belford	35
1698. Sloop Dolphin	25
1699. " Sea Flower	29
1699. " Unity	30
1699. Bark Hopewell	30
1699. Ketch Endeavor	30
1699. Sloop Sterling	25
1700. " Edward and Elizabeth	35
1700. Brigantine William	40
1701. Ketch Merrimack	30
1702. Sloop Adventure	30
1702. Bark Abigail and Margaret	40
1703. Ship Samuel and David	100
1703. Ketch Adventure	25
1703. Sloop Lamb	25
1703. Brigantine Elizabeth	50
1703. Sloop Dolphin	25
1703. Ketch Hopewell	20
1704. Sloop Neptune	30
1704. " Swallow	75
1704. Ketch Endeavor	25
1704. Sloop Endeavor	40
1704. " Hopewell	40
1705. Ketch Merrimac	50
1705. Brigantine Welcome	60
1705. " Dove	35
1705. Sloop John and Mary	—
1705. " None Such	30
1706. " Friend's Adventure	28

	Tons.
1706. Ship Mary Fortune	55
1706. Brigantine Expectation	100
1706. " Sarah	60
1706. " Richard	60
1706. Ketch Hopewell	20
1707. Sloop Dove	30
1707. " Tryal	30
1708. " Speedwell	40
1708. " Union	35
1708. " Susanna	25
1708. Ship John	120
1709. " Bond	310
1709. " Leopard Galley	70
1709. Sloop Friendship	40
1709. Ship Prince Eugene	160
1709. Sloop Sarah and Mary	20
1709. Brigantine Bradford	45
1710. Sloop Review	25
1710. " Hetty and Mary	25
1710. " Adventure	50
1710. " Rebecca	30
1710. Ship Abigail and Rebecca	200
1710. Brigantine Katharine	30
1710. " Newbury	60
1710. Sloop Anne	25
1710. " Greyhound	40
1711. Bark Sea Flower	20
1711. Ship Strawberry	70
1711. Sloop Mary and Abigail	30
1711. " Hannah and Elizabeth	60
1711. Bark Samuel	40
1711. Sloop Hannah and Mary	30
1712. " Fisher	25
1712. " Ann and Mary	70
1712. " Thistle	40
1712. Ship Nathaniel	60
1712. " Rowlandson	150
1712. " Content	90

	Tons.
1712. Brigantine Swan	45
1712. Sloop Sea Flower	30
1713. Brigantine Success	45
1713. Sloop Greyhound	40
1713. " Pellegan	25
1713. " Galatea	25
1713. Bark Pannope	50
1713. Sloop Elizabeth	30
1713. " Mary and Sarah	20
1713. Brigantine John and Mary	40
1713. Ship Samuel	36
1713. Brigantine Lamb	40
1713. Sloop Daniel	40
1713. " Content	25
1713. " Peter and Mary	40
1713. Sloop Thomas	30
1713. " Adventure	15
1713. Brigantine Elizabeth and Hannah	70
1713. Brigantine Sarah	70
1713. ——— ———	50
1713. Sloop William and James	40
1714. Ship Sea Flower	50
1714. Sloop Adveature	30
1714. Ship Marlborough Galley	130
1714. Sloop Flower de Luce	40
1714. " Burlington	35
1714. Brigantine Adventure	40
1714. " George	50

The following record contains the names of vessels built in Newbury, and enrolled at the Custom-House in Newburyport from 1789 to 1851:

	Tons.
1781. Sloop Lydia	54
1782. Schooner Haydon	20
1783. " Port Packet	46
1783. " Adams	50
1784. " Hope	66
1785. " Hope	59
1785. " Blossom	22
1787. " Betsey	22
1788. " Sally	22
1788. " William	65
1790. " Peggy & Polly	79
1792. " Sentinel	24
1792. " Lydia	27
1792. " Lydia	32
1793. " Industry	39
1793. " Polly	63
1793. " William	62
1793. " Lucy	77
1794. " Rising Sun	22
1794. " Friendship	21
1794. " Raven	21
1796. " Mary	32
1796. Brig Sally	102
1800. " Fame	83
1800. Schooner Mary Ann	101
1800. " Amazon	110
1800. Sloop Branch	78
1801. Schooner Samuel	88
1801. " Lewis	47
1801. Brig Fame	24
1804. Schooner Regulus	94
1804. " Two Sons	107
1804. " Jane	60
1804. " Jane	99
1807. Sloop John	49
1807. Brig Gideon	204
1809. Schooner Phebe	49
1810. Brig Leo	125
1811. " Emily	127
1811. " Abby	136
1812. Schooner Rolla	98
1813. " Green	81
1813. " Scorpion	28
1813. " Harriet	32
1814. " Juno	41
1814. " Malvina	33
1814. " Comet	24
1814. " Platoff	43
1814. " Atlas	40
1814. " Swift	30
1814. " Emily	26
1815. " Phenix	72
1815. " Mary	106
1816. " Speed	21
1817. " Tom Bowline	55
1817. Schooner Wasp	4
1817. " Lively	43
1817. " Three Friends	43
1818. " Java	49
1818. " Enterprise	39
1818. " Washington	39
1818. " Essex	43
1818. " Volant	52
1819. " Decatur	42
1819. Schooner Sylph	54
1820. " Blossom	41
1820. " Constellation	45
1821. " Albert	60
1821. " Citizen	130
1824. " Mercy & Hope	56
1825. " Mary Buntin	76
1825. " Brilliant	76
1825. " Wasp	51
1826. " Bellevillo	84
1826. " Minerva	67
1827. " Temple	71
1827. " Warren	55
1828. " Baltic	86
1828. " Caspian	60
1828. " Statesman	47
1828. " Joppa	86
1828. " Eunice	74
1828. " Pacific	37
1829. " Luther	54
1829. " Cyrus	58
1829. " York	74
1829. " Fulcrum	74
1829. " America	43
1829. " Meriam	74
1829. " Nautilus	52
1830. " Inez	43
1830. " Pembroke	84
1831. " Augustin	50
1831. " Laurel	48
1831. " Charles	37
1831. " Phebe	44
1832. " George	49
1832. " Palm	49
1833. " Pilot	74
1834. " Emerald	41
1834. " Mary Ann	46
1834. " Go Ahead	48
1834. " Patriot	47
1834. " Ivy	46
1835. " Stoic	60
1835. " Gem	44
1835. " Magnet	44
1835. " Ruby	44
1835. " Columbus	62
1836. " Albion	52
1837. Schooner Ellen	66
1837. " Forest	65
1837. " Atlantic	61
1837. " Union	39
1840. " Mary Clark	97
1845. " Mary C. Ames	108
1845. " Oregon	122
1846. " Harvest Home	67
1846. Steamboat Ohio	225
1846. Schooner Harp	23
1846. " Fremont	69
1847. " Far West	57
1848. " Harbinger	65
1848. " Ada	63
1848. " Thistle	63
1848. " Empire	93
1848. " Alice Parker	61
1850. " Edw'd Burke	59

The following record contains the names of vessels built in Newbury and registered at the Custom-House at Newburyport from 1793 to 1851:

	Tons.
1784. Brig Pomona	127
1785. Schooner Nancy	51
1786. " Hope	83
1786. " Hawk	63
1786. " Hope	65
1787. Brig Mary	166
1788. Schooner John	90
1789. Brig William	94
1789. Ship William	277
1791. Schooner Dolphin	19
1792. Brig Hannah	143
1793. Brig Mary	185
1793. Schooner Lucy	77
1793. " Betsey	76
1793. " Polly	63
1793. " William	92
1794. Brig William and Eliza	123
1794. Ship Columbia	206
1794. " Charles	225
1795. Ship Hibernia	186
1795. Brig Swan	130
1795. " Diana	125
1795. " Union	129
1795. " Hannah	128
1795. " Fanny	186
1796. Schooner Hannah and Eliza	262
1796. Brig Sally	102
1797. " Eliza	151
1797. Ship Packet	288
1797. Brig Joseph	146
1797. " Ranger	137
1797. Ship Herald	280
1798. " Rufus	162
1798. Brig William	123
1798. " William	140
1799. " Joanna	121
1799. Ship Alligator	196
1799. Brig Humming Bird	84
1800. Brig Edwin	129
1800. Brig Constellation	142
1800. Ship Calliope	201
1800. Brig Ann	172
1801. Schooner Joseph	72
1801. Brig Star	156
1801. Scow America	158
1801. Brig Tiger	148
1801. Ship Grand Sachem	250
1801. Ship Essex	256
1801. Brig Mary	204
1802. Schooner Regulator	94
1802. Sloop Eliza	31
1802. Brig John	168
1802. Ship Nancy	235
1802. Brig Mary	180
1802. " Nancy	134
1802. Ship Hunter	189
1802. Brig Eliza	159
1803. Sloop Susan	72
1803. Ship Mary	235
1803. Ship Sally	220
1803. Ship Restitution	248
1803. Brig Elizabeth	120
1803. " Elizabeth	135
1803. Ship Edwin	277
1803. " Washington	197
1804. " Reward	242
1804. Bark Packet	169
1804. Brig Mary and Ellen	136
1804. Ship Wm. P. Johnson	292
1804. " Elizabeth	279
1804. " Hercules	300
1804. Brig Commerce	129
1805. " Ann	187
1805. " Ruby	111
1805. Ship Moses Brown	337
1805. Ship Romulus	337
1805. Brig Commerce	138
1806. Brig George	104
1806. Schooner Hannah	85
1806. Brig George	100
1806. Ship Arrow	275
1807. Ship Edward	246
1807. Ship Mayland	395
1807. Brig Topaz	213
1807. Brig Sophila	181
1807. Ship George Planter	345
1807. Brig Adze	114
1808. " Otter	239
1808. " Pomona	138
1808. " Pilgrim	269
1808. " Ellen Maria	168
1808. Schooner Betsey	85
1808. Brig Latona	178
1809. Ship Ceres	279
1809. Schooner Abigail	87
1809. Brig Mariner	113
1809. Brig Camelia	310
1809. Bark Ida	189
1809. Ship Hope	309
1810. Brig Lloyd	220
1810. Ship Harriot	275
1810. Ship Ocean	279
1810. " Neptune	354
1810. " Fingal	382
1810. " Volant	457
1810. Brig Leader	216
1810. Ship Oscar	336
1810. " Hercules	309
1810. Brig Leo	156
1810. " Abigail	255
1810. Ship Packet	281
1810. Brig Gorsamer	224
1810. Ship Salus	292
1810. " Virginia	399
1811. Brig America	341
1811. Schooner Go On	15
1811. Ship Agawam	328
1811. " Milo	395
1811. Brig Start	174
1811. " Pickering	256
1811. Ship Wallace	344

	Tons.
1811. Brig Dolphin	198
1811. " Gen. Stark	230
1812. Sloop Angenoria	62
1812. Brig Essex	294
1812. Schooner Yankee	77
1812. Brig Ives	196
1813. Schooner Mary	108
1814. " Sally	264
1814. " Happy Jack	17
1814. Boat Maria	20
1814. Brig Hope	195
1814. " Indus	262
1814. Schooner Essex	106
1815. Ship Aristides	278
1815. Schooner Peace	110
1815. Brig Alert	262
1815. Schooner John	87
1815. Brig Copernicao	119
1815. Schooner Success	75
1815. Brig Olive	157
1815. " New Leader	271
1815. " Syren	182
1815. " Brahmen	242
1815. Ship Caroline	322
1815. Brig Ann	134
1816. Schooner Paragon	83
1816. " Strong	82
1816. Sloop Harvard	93
1816. Ship Draper	291
1816. Brig Caspian	194
1817. Schooner Constitution	86
1817. " Alexander	103
1817. Brig Packet	128
1817. " Dove	145
1817. Ship Atlantic	323
1817. Schooner Wasp	40
1817. " Democrat	47
1818. Brig Rajah	250
1818. Schooner Gen. Putnam	113
1818. Ship Herald	302
1818. Brig Formax	110
1819. Ship Meteor	325
1819. Ship Glide	282
1819. Schooner Planet	123
1819. " Tom	50
1819. Ship Henry	259
1819. Schooner Essex	43
1819. " Constellation	46
1820. " Hannah and Susan	4 67
1821. " Borneo	82
1821. " Maid of the Mill	76
1821. Ship Delta	314
1821. Schooner Ann	61
1821. " Haytian	38
1821. Ship Florida	300
1821. Schooner Dennis	39
1822. Brig Argus	156
1822. Ship Pioneer	319
1822. " Clifford Wayne	305
1823. Schooner Mechanic	50
1823. Ship Francis	328
1824. Brig Mars	270
1823. Schooner Falcon	60
1823. Brig Hampton	224
1823. Ship Tally Ho	420
1823. " Bowditch	399
1824. " Shylock	278
1824. " Plutarch	357
1824. Schooner Lady Howard	64
1825. Brig Henry	151
1825. Schooner La Fayette	76
1825. " Fairy	82
1825. Ship Golconda	359

	Tons.
1825. Schooner Herald	74
1826. Ship Meridian	298
1826. Schooner Minerva	67
1826. " Rufus	128
1826. " Duck	52
1827. Ship Fredonia	406
1827. " Science	388
1827. " Parachute	341
1827. Schooner Mans	106
1827. Brig Elizabeth	218
1827. Ship Londou	357
1827. " Vesper	321
1827. Schooner Caroline	84
1828. Brig Wayland	217
1828. Schooner Convoy	81
1829. Brig Czarina	218
1829. " Powhattan	263
1830. Schooner Nile	86
1830. Brig Pocahontas	282
1830. " Alice	281
1831. Schooner Herald	49
1831. Brig Aquila	288
1831. Ship Levant	382
1831. Brig Angola	137
1831. Bark Tasso	286
1832. Ship Brenda	343
1832. " Concord	391
1832. Brig Palos	277
1832. Ship Franklin	302
1832. Schooner Leo	58
1832. " Wave	58
1832. Ship Modora	314
1832. Brig James Caskie	283
1832. Ship Caravau	330
1832. " Republic	399
1833. Bark Thalia	291
1833. Brig Carthage	296
1833. Ship Merrimac	414
1833. " Emerald	435
1833. Bark Oberlin	331
1833. Ship Jacob Perkins	379
1833. " Saladia	256
1833. " Surat	346
1833. Brig Ark	298
1834. Ship Newburyport	341
1834. " Spartan	475
1834. Brig Corinth	299
1834. Ship St. Clair	414
1835. " Persia	332
1835. " Mary Kimball	373
1835. " Leonone	370
1835. Schooner Columbia	62
1836. " Hammet	94
1836. Bark Alliotb	330
1836. Ship Angelo	417
1836. " Columbus	594
1837. Brig Pallas	102
1837. " Nathaniel Hooper	427
1837. Schooner Peru	69
1837. Ship Talbot	624
1837. Brig Shawnut	205
1838. " Geneva	458
1838. Bark Byron	346
1839. Ship Washington	372
1839. " Forrester	428
1839. " Flavio	698
1839. " Navigator	417
1839. " Izaide	411
1839. Schooner Burlington	97
1839. " Brighton	90
1839. Ship Huntress	547
1839. Bark Strabo	420
1840. " Essex	273
1840. Schooner Petrel	83
1840. Ship Gen. Harrison	410

	Tons.
1840. Brig Zotoff	220
1840. Ship Rosalind	398
1840. " Delia Walker	427
1840. " Virginia	400
1841. Brig Athen	300
1841. Bark Apollo	319
1841. " Chosan	240
1841. Brig Massachusetts	300
1841. Bark Wessaucucon	321
1841. " Mary Broughton	323
1841. Brig Cheuamus	202
1841. Ship Hannah Sprague	410
1842. " James D. Farwell	699
1842 Bark John Caskie	349
1842. Brig James Gray	300
1842. Ship Ashburton	449
1842. " Courier	380
1842. " Euphrasia	487
1843. " Augustine Heard	491
1843. Schooner Wm. C. Ellison	43
1843. Ship St. George	845
1843. " Pacific	531
1843. Schooner Nassau	107
1843. Bark Talisman	347
1843. Ship Amity	499
1844. " Amazon	741
1844. " Radius	517
1844. " Rambler	399
1844. " Java	538
1844. " John R. Skiddy	980
1844. Brig Salisbury	296
1841. Ship St. Patrick	896
1844. " Brutus	550
1844. " Joshua Bates	620
1845. Bark Edward Koppisch	250
1845. Ship Nebraska	516
1845. Schooner Wave	40
1845. Ship Huguenot	935
1845. " Howard	493
1845. Brig Keying	300
1845. " Monseratte	170
1846. Bark Freiouin	800
1846. Brig Almira	176
1846. Ship Gen. Taylor	597
1846. " Roman	649

	Tons.
1846. Ship Far West	598
1846. " Annie	572
1846. Bark Gypsey	295
1846. " Laura	219
1846. " Wenham	524
1846. Ship John Currier	697
1847. Schooner Maria Theresa	119
1847. Ship Naomi	547
1847. " Capital	687
1847. " Fanchon	969
1847. Bark Chilton	278
1847. " Kate Hastings	448
1847 Ship Richard Cobden	665
1847. " Lebanon	697
1847. Bark Francis	460
1847. Ship Ocean Queen	824
1847. " Amaranth	666
1848. " Nestorian	698
1848. " Raduga	587
1848. " Buena Vista	547
1848. Steamboat Lawrence	142
1848. Brig Elizabeth Ann	128
1848. Ship Musconoma	824
1848. " Franchise	700
1848. Bark Henry Rangs	197
1848. " Tyringham	609
1848. Schooner Margaret Ann	100
1849. Bark Crusoe	342
1849. " Helen Augusta	242
1849. " Lyman	369
1849. " Domingo	230
1849. Ship Charles Hill	700
1849. " Icargo	578
1849. " Florida	697
1849. Bark Hollaoder	499
1850. Ship Castilian	1000
1850. Bark Annie Blackman	530
1850. " Dragon	290
1850. Schooner Pearl	31
1850. Bark Said Ben Sultan	302
1851. Ship Edward	675
1851. " Clarissa Currier	1000
1851. " Racer	1669
1851. " Astrae	749

After the year 1851, when the territory on the river between Newburyport and West Newbury was annexed to Newburyport, the Newbury ship-yards were within the city limits and ship-building in Newbury ceased.

In connection with the industries of Newbury may be mentioned the inventive skill of its people. At the factory at the Falls Jacob Perkins first set up the machine for cutting nails, which, though adding little to the prosperity of the town, made its inventor one of the benefactors of the industrial world. In Newbury, too, Paul Pillsbury lived at the old Pillsbury homestead in Byfield, the inventor, among other things, of shoe pegs and the revolutionizer of the business of making shoes. Mr. Pillsbury was born in what is now West Newbury in 1780 and died in 1868. He was one of seven brothers, of whom Enoch and Phineas were clergymen, Parker a blacksmith, Oliver a mechanic, and Samuel and John farmers. Oliver was the father of the late Abolitionist, Parker Pillsbury. Paul, the subject of this sketch, went, when a boy, to live with Paul Lunt, of Newbury. As he grew to manhood he established himself at Ames-



Yours truly,
Leonard Withington

bury as a shuttle-maker, but after a short time he returned to Byfield, taking possession of the homestead bequeathed to him by his uncle, and made shuttles and machines for the cotton factory there.

His first invention was a corn-sheller, for which he received a patent in 1803, and which was the first advance made on the old style of hand-work. In 1808 he received a patent on the bark-mill which was the prototype of all the bark, cob, coffee and spice-mills now in use. The old method of preparing bark for the vats, which his mill superseded, was by rolling it with a grind-stone fitted to an axle and drawn by a horse.

His next and chief invention was that of shoe pegs, and the machinery for their manufacture. The manufacture of pegged boots and shoes at once began and Mr. Pillsbury had the monopoly of the peg trade. He ran his mill with closed doors, and carried on for a time a profitable business. His profits, however, were soon reduced by competition, which he had no patent to prevent, and only a portion of the trade at reduced prices was retained by him.

Among other inventions of his were a rotary fire-engine, a seed-sower, churn, a gold-washer and sifter, coffee-burner, coffee-mill, window-fastener, bee-hive, and others too numerous to mention.

But this imperfect sketch of the old town of Newbury must be brought to a close. The story, though half told, must yield to the necessary limitations of space. The semi-centennial celebration of 1885 has not been alluded to, nor the mineral regions, nor the historical society; and the various rich and historic farms, occupied generation after generation by descendants of the first settlers, have been passed by unnoticed. Nor have the historic families of the town received the attention they deserve. The Parsons, Longfellow, Sewall, Moody, Noyes, Coffin, Plummer, Gerrish, Tenney and Pierce families, with others equally distinguished, must find their historian and eulogist in one who has ampler space at his command, and who is better equipped for the performance of his task. Of individual lives which have distinguished Newbury, including those of Chief Justices Sewall and Parsons, and some of lesser fame, sketches may be found in the chapter on the "Bench and Bar," and in the "History of Newburyport," in another place in these volumes.

NOTE.—The writer wishes to express his indebtedness to the valuable files of the *Newburyport Herald*, to the scrap books of the late Benj. Perley Poore, to the "History of Ship-Building on the Merrimac," by Hon. John J. Currier, to Coffin's "History of Newbury," and to Mr. Ferguson, the town clerk of Newbury, for materials which have rendered even this imperfect sketch possible at his hands. W. T. D.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

LEONARD WITHINGTON.[1]

Leonard Withington was born in Dorchester (now a part of Boston), August 9, 1789. His parents were Joseph Weeks and Elizabeth (White) Withington, the family having been of the original settlers of the town, respectable and respected, holding offices in the town and in the church, his great-grandfather, Ebenezer Withington, having had a commission from the King as a captain in the French War. His mother was a woman of genius and force of character, though of little book-learning, except what she had read after her marriage, which occurred while she was very young, and she had much influence over her eldest son, who was so near her own age that they were frequently taken by strangers to be brother and sister. The father was considerably older, had served as a soldier in the War for Independence, and was a man of solid sense, but not of brilliant talents.

The schools of those days were not very good, and in after-years Mr. Withington told the story of how he inquired of the mistress of the Dame school as to the meaning of a punctuation mark, and was told by her that if he looked at all the fly-dirts in the book, he would never learn to read. He did, however, learn with extraordinary facility, and from a very early age displayed a great avidity for books. One of the first which fell into his hands, as was to be expected in a Puritan family, was Bunyan's wonderful allegory of "The Pilgrim's Progress," which took such a powerful hold upon his imagination that he set out on a pilgrimage when a very small boy, and contriving a burden for his back, like that of Christian, took the gate of a pasture for the wicket gate at which Bunyan's hero sought admission. It was a characteristic of his life, the vividness of imagination which transformed the homely realities into poetic dreams, and made him see more in sensible objects than appeared on the retina of the eye.

Though the schools were poor, and the springs of learning ran low in them at that time, he was aided in his struggle to gain instruction by an uncle, who was rather a bookish man for that community, and he had read a good deal for a boy in his circumstances, when, at the age of fifteen, he was apprenticed to the late Joseph T. Buckingham, of Boston, to learn the printer's trade. This part of his life he thoroughly enjoyed. It opened to him a new world. He had greatly larger opportunities for reading, the association with men of culture and education, the company of aspiring young men, the advantage of a debating society, in which there were several youths of talent, and the theatres of Boston, which opened to him a new world, and where he witnessed the performances of the great lights of the stage at that time. He was a favorite with Mr. Buckingham, who gave him the best opportunities and printed some of his writings in the later years of his apprenticeship, and a regard grew up which ripened into a friendship which continued as long as the master lived.

The young man became ambitious of a literary

[1] By Nathan N. Withington.

career, and especially of becoming editor of a magazine or review, and to this end was desirous of a liberal education. Mr. Buckingham gave him most of the last year of his apprenticeship, and Mr. Withington attended Phillips Academy at Andover for one year, fitting for college in that time. The next year he studied at home, and he then was admitted to the sophomore class at Yale, having been induced by Rev. John Codman, D.D., of Dorchester, to enter at the orthodox college, rather than at Harvard, which was nearer home. The family had attended the church of which Rev. Dr. Harris was pastor; but it was at a time when the division was taking place in the churches, and Dr. Harris' church was liberal, and they left it for Dr. Codman's, the orthodox church, with which Mr. Withington united in 1810.

From the beginning he took a high stand in his class at Yale, and was expected to take the highest honors; but a serious illness interrupted his studies, and for a while his life was despaired of, so that he took the second place at graduation, and as a writer he was considered the first in college of his time. During the college course, through the influence of Dr. Codman and President Dwight, of Yale, Mr. Withington changed his plan of a literary career, and decided to study theology. Accordingly, after graduation in the class of 1814, he studied first with President Dwight, and afterwards with Dr. Codman, and was approbated to preach in 1816 by the Union Association of Boston and vicinity, at the house of Rev. Dr. Morse, in Charlestown, and before his death he was the oldest surviving graduate of Yale and the oldest Congregational minister in the United States.

Soon after he was licensed to preach he received two simultaneous invitations from churches to become their pastor. One was from the First Church in Newbury, and although the salary was but one-third of that offered by the other, the larger salary being from the income of a fund, he felt that there would be little interest on the part of the parish which did not pay for its own preaching. Accordingly, he accepted the call from the church in Newbury, and was ordained its pastor on the 31st of October, 1816, and remained with it until his death, on Wednesday, April 22, 1885, a pastorate of over sixty-eight years, the longest of any in the record of a church remarkable for the long life of its ministers, and the long continuance of their service with the same church.

Mr. Withington, as a pupil of President Dwight and of Dr. Codman, was a Calvinist, and the parish to which he was called was ranked among the liberal, or Arminians, and his first sermons were not such as to disturb the people who had been accustomed to the preaching of Rev. Dr. Tucker and Dr. Popkin, who resigned to accept the Professorship of Greek in Harvard University. But many of the Calvinists were drawn into the society, and the association with liberal churches was gradually dropped, and under the pastorate of Mr. Withington the church became thoroughly identified with the orthodox Congregationalists, the covenant was changed into a creed, and while at the ordination Rev. Dr. Andrews, pastor of the Unitarian Church in Newburyport took part, fellowship with that church was discontinued.

From the first of his pastorate Mr. Withington made himself felt as an active force in the vicinity. He was a scholar, and he inspired the Essex North Association of Congregational Ministers with the contagion of scholarship. They read the Scriptures in the original Hebrew and Greek, so that throughout New England this body became noted among the clergymen of the denomination as a scholarly body of men. He interested himself in the first libraries, in the first lyceum, in schools and academies, and was made a trustee and officer of several of these institutions.

Very soon after his ordination, January 17, 1817, he was married to Sophia, youngest daughter of William Sherburne, Esq., of Boston, and he established his family in the home where all his children were born, in the house built by a predecessor in the pastorate, Rev. Abraham Moore, and which still stands on High Street, opposite the head of Marlborough Street. His first wife died April 1, 1826, leaving three sons, one of whom died in infancy soon after his mother, and the other two dying before their father, in young manhood, the second, bearing his father's name, leaving issue of daughters. On May 28, 1827, he was married to his second wife, Caroline, daughter of Hon. Nathan Noyes, M.D., of Newburyport, by whom he had five sons and four daughters, of whom the daughters and two sons survive. The second wife died in August, 1860, and from that time he remained a widower till the close of his life.

Mr. Withington had a dislike for college titles of honor, which was understood at Yale, so that such were not offered him from that college, but in 1850 he received the degree of Doctor of Divinity from Bowdoin, an honor which he deserved by his scholarship and his writings, which were numerous. Among his published addresses were the election sermon, preached before the Massachusetts Legislature in 1831; a poem before the Phi Beta Kappa at Yale, September 11, 1821; an address to the alumni at Yale in 1846; an address to a society in Dartmouth College in 1837, besides numerous lectures before lyceums, and addresses to various bodies. He contributed to newspapers and magazines until nearly the close of his life, and published many sermons and pamphlets upon public topics, and to the *Bibliotheca Sacra* he contributed after he was considerably past eighty years old. He published two books. One of these was "The Puritan," a collection of essays and sketches with a slight thread of narrative running through the whole. This book was published in 1836. The other book was "Solomon's Song," translated and explained in three parts, and



Moses T. Stevens

published in 1861, of which one of the theological reviews said it was "the ablest exposition ever published of the wrong theory of explanation of Solomon's Song." Dr. Withington's own estimate of his work after it was published was always extremely modest, and he did not like to hear his books mentioned. The publishers wished to issue a second edition of the "Puritan," but, though there was a good demand for it, he positively refused to consent.

Dr. Withington was a preacher, a scholar, a wit, a brilliant conversationalist and a vigorous though unequal writer. He had a critical knowledge of English literature, and was thoroughly familiar with the best writers. Literature was his delight, and it was that he might devote himself to it that he preferred to remain in a country parish on a small salary, where he had leisure for study, and for such writing as he liked, though he had many calls to more lucrative positions. As a preacher he was striking and impressive, though not elegant nor eloquent. He was original in thought and in speech, and his sermons and addresses were characterized by force of expression and aptness of illustration. This was especially to be noticed in his extemporary Tuesday evening lectures to his people, which were illustrated by the freshest readings and observations of the speaker, who would often be carried away from his subject and carry his people with him. At these lectures the chapel was always filled, and they were an intellectual stimulus which was felt by all who heard them. They were not formal discourses, and often the speaker did not know when he began where the inspiration would lead him, but they were delightful talks of a pious scholar, wit and humorist, which attracted many besides the members of the parish. In his faith he described himself as "a modified Calvinist."

In conversation Dr. Withington excelled, and in his family he delighted in relating stories to his children of pathos or terror which he wove out of his fertile imagination, and in composing for them little poems on events in the family. He was an indulgent father, who desired that his children should read and think for themselves, and he had a habit of asking them questions in order to set them to studying to find the answers, which he did not give. His learning and brilliant conversation attracted many distinguished men and women to the house, so that there was always intellectual entertainment for the household.

Dr. Withington's life was a complete whole, and it can hardly be said that he died, but his life was finished after nearly ninety-six years' continuance, and its close was a gradual failure of the vital forces, bodily and mental, like a fire which had burnt out the material upon which it fed. Although not of a robust frame, and in early life of rather feeble health, he grew to be more healthy as life advanced, and his old age was one of calm happiness. Indeed, his life was a happy one. He had become convinced that it was his duty to become a minister, and the duties, not disagreeable to him in the beginning, became his pleasure. He was contented in the country parish in which he had settled, and he had there the leisure for the literary labors which were his delight. He retired from the pastorate while his mental powers were in full vigor, leaving no impression upon his people of their decline, so that they would gladly have retained his active services, and his serene old age was passed in the companionship of children, grandchildren and great-grandchildren, who admired his genius and were devoted to his comfort. At the last his only desire was to be at rest, and his only complaint that he remained, while others, younger than he, had laid down the burden of life, and he laid it down as one falls asleep, peacefully and unconsciously.

MOSES COLMAN.[1]

Moses Colman has sprung from one of the oldest families of the town of Newbury, or the county of Essex, and a family that has lost nothing of the vigor of heart and mind in the lapse of years.

He is now seventy years old, showing no more marks of age than he did at fifty. The first of the family in America was Thomas Colman, a native of Marlboro', England. He arrived in Boston in 1635, and at once joined the first settlers of the town, whose piety did not prevent their appreciating the beauties of the location, the fertility of its uplands and the ability of its widespread meadows and marshes to furnish support to horses, cattle and sheep.

Religious liberty and civil rights they desired, but the Dummers, Sewalls, Saltonstalls and other wealthy men did not lose sight of this grand emigration to and colonization of this section of the New World. Thomas Colman was a very valuable man, for at home he had gained a reputation for knowledge in the breeding of horses and cattle, which was as much their object as to-day it is of the settlers in Montana, Colorado and Texas, or the men locating on the wide prairies and vast plains of the West.

He had come over the seas on their invitation,—they needed his skill, and he at once entered upon the duties for which he had been engaged. He became one of the proprietors of the town, of which the whole number was one hundred and thirteen, and had lands assigned him in Byfield, which, in part, are in the possession of Mr. Moses Colman to-day, for there upon the ancient homestead dwelt Thomas Colman for seven years. Then he removed to Hampton, N. H., and finally, in 1680, with a part of his children, he made a new home on Nantucket, more desirable on account of the milder climate; and

[1] By George J. L. Colby.

hence we hear of the Nantucket as well as of the Newbury branch of the family. Five years later Thomas died at the ripe age of eighty-three years, and four-score years or more, barring accidents, may be counted upon as the Colman inheritance.

Thomas Colman married three wives, who bore him five sons and one daughter.

Benjamin was the oldest, and possibly it was he whom tradition says "owned a parcel of land extending from near the Meeting-House to where the Glen Mills now are," some two miles or so.

It was, however, his last child, Tobias, the son of his old age, by his third wife, Margery, who was the great ancestor of the Byfield Colmans. Later on Benjamin, born in 1724, who married Anne Brown, living at Brown's Springs, in West Newbury, was the most distinguished member of the family in its early days, by his long controversy with his pastor, Rev. Moses Parsons, on the slavery question. He has become historical,—one of the way-marks along the line of human progress, showing how fast the world moves.

He seems to have been a logical, well-educated, strong-minded man; if not the William Lloyd Garrison of that day, certainly the fore-runner of him who was to come and "the voice crying in the wilderness, 'Prepare ye the way.'" He was deacon of the church, and thought it his duty to arraign the pastor as a "man-stealer" for keeping a person in slavery.

And this reminds us that the Lexington and Bunker Hill of the anti-slavery revolution were not at or near Boston, but in Byfield. Thence came the tribes that overran the land, and there was the preliminary contest between Deacon Benjamin Colman and Rev. Moses Parsons.

Looking along the line of the Colman family we find that Moses (born in 1755) inherited the paternal acres, which descended to his son, Colonel Jeremiah, and from him became the property of the subject of this sketch, who has greatly improved the estate and made it one of the finest rural summer residences of this county.

In process of time the area has been reduced to one hundred acres. Moses, of 1755, married two wives; the first became the mother of Jeremiah, and the second, the Widow Emery, was the mother of David Emery, and afterwards of Daniel Colman, so that the three boys who became prominent citizens, lived under the same roof-tree as brothers, though no two of them had the same mother and father.

Colonel Jeremiah, like the first Thomas, had knowledge of and love for a horse. He was the best rider ever seen on our streets, and when young he paid no attention to roads, but would leap every fence or stone wall in a five-mile ride. He was for many years a colonel of a cavalry regiment, in one company of which every man could dismount and regain his saddle with his horse at a canter.

In 1810 he became general agent of the Eastern Stage Company, with his headquarters in Newburyport, and he retained that position twenty-nine years, to 1839, when the corporation retired, dissolved before the Eastern Railroad Company.

Seldom has a man lived having the confidence of the public to so great a degree, or his popularity so deep and well-grounded, as Colonel Colman.

He was one of the founders of the Essex Agricultural Society and an officer as long as he lived. For twenty-five years he was marshal at the annual fairs. He was one of the founders of the Ocean Bank, a director from its incorporation till his death, thirty-three years, and was the last of the original board. So he was an officer of the Institution for Savings, a trustee of Dummer Academy, thirty-two years deacon of the First Church in Newbury, for many years chairman of the Board of Selectmen of Newburyport, and for fifteen years a Representative to the Legislature. This unprecedented record was no accident, but was founded on the merits of the man as a Christian gentleman, guileless and unspotted.

Moses Colman, whose portrait we give, indicating in his face and appearance the manner of the man, is the eldest son of Colonel Jeremiah. He was born in Newburyport and educated by her best teachers—Alfred W. Pike, David P. Page, Roger S. Howard and Preceptor Cleveland, of Dummer Academy, all of high rank in their profession.

At seventeen he became the clerk, accountant and paymaster of the Eastern Stage Company, one of the greatest institutions of Newburyport in the last generation of men, which furnished quick and cheap travel from Boston to Bangor, and by its branches reached to the centre of New Hampshire and the back towns of Maine.

Oh! what a rush of people in any exciting time to the Wolfe Tavern as the coach, drawn by four or six horses, dashed down the street with Forbes, Akerman, Shaw or Annable on the box, blowing the horn when High Street was reached. Then came the scramble for newspapers, "only five hours from Boston!" We believe that all but three or four of the drivers have passed away; the oldest now living is, we think, Esek Saunders, of Worcester. One of the most famous was Stephen B. Marshall, who always had "room for one more inside."

About 1859 Moses Colman removed to Boston, where, keeping up with the times and the demands of the people for improved modes of travel, he began a brilliant career on street railroads. First he became superintendent of the Metropolitan road, the first horse railroad in Massachusetts. His previous experience with stages, which were run by time-tables as the railroads now are, and were as true to their time of starting, amply fitted him for his new position, and at once he became a popular and energetic manager, and no small part of the prosperity of the Metropolitan at that date and since was due to his skill and the impetus which he gave to it.

He remained there three years, then for five years he owned and operated with much success the South Boston Horse Railroad, and sold it only when it seemed more profitable to sell at his own price than to keep it. We believe this is the only case in any large city of this Commonwealth where one individual has been sole proprietor and manager of a road of much magnitude, but there was not a man in the State better qualified for the duties. He was at home in every department of the work, active, industrious, vigilant.

In 1866, in connection with his son E. C., he established the auction and commission house where it now is, on Portland and Friend Streets, in Boston, for the sale of horses and their furnishings of every description. In this business, not before established at the North End, he has remained for twenty-four years, during which time it has constantly increased. There is not a man in this county, if there is in any other, that knows a horse better than he, can quicker see his good points or detect his "onts."

The number of horses and carriages that have passed through his hands is beyond our calculation. At the opening of the late war, Andrew, the Governor of this Commonwealth, availed himself of Mr. Colman's knowledge and experience in this business, and gave him large orders for cavalry supplies.

The simple name of the firm conveys no idea to the average mind of the extent or importance of the business, but when we say that it reaches more than one hundred thousand dollars per annum, something may be learned.

Being a man of orderly habits, the business is as well arranged and systematized as that of any other house dealing in dry-goods, groceries, leather or shoes. Moses Colman is a man of much personal intelligence; by constant reading since he left school he has formed scholarly habits and kept up with the times in literature, but has had little leisure for political life. He has held a seat in the City Council of Boston, and while there took a prominent part in its actions, but he could not neglect the demands of his enormous business, and the adherence to the rule of fully attending to the one iron in the fire has given him success.

He has the leading traits of the family, is free, generous, hospitable, is firm in his opinions, but urbane in his manners; follows in the footsteps of his fathers in the religious principles that lie at the bottom of New Engtand society.

For many years he has been a worthy member of the Congregational Church. He has his winter home in Boston, but spends his summers in Newbury, of which town he is still a citizen, warmly interested in its prosperity.

Mr. Colman has been twice married,—first, to Elizabeth L., daughter of Edmund Coffin, of Newbury, by whom he had nine children, six of them now living, —three sons and three daughters; no children by the second marriage.

CHAPTER CXLIII.

NEWBURYPORT.[1]

BY WILLIAM T. DAVIS.

FIRST PERIOD.

From the Incorporation of the Town to the Close of the Revolution.

In 1642 the inhabitants of Newbury granted authority to Thomas Parker, James Noyes, John Woodbridge, Edward Rawson, John Cutting, Edward Woodman, John Lowle and John Clark to lay out a new town. This town, or rather district of the old town, included what afterwards became the "Port" of Newbury, and in later times, Newburyport. This new section or district of the old town, lying as it did on the banks of the Merrimac River and not far from the ocean, eventually gained more rapidly in population, and became more thickly settled than the districts remote from the river, which were cut up into farms, and whose people retained the characteristics of an agricultural population. As early as 1725 a part of the First Parish in Newbury, living near the "water side," as the district lying on the river was sometimes called, was incorporated as a separate religious society, and in 1738 a Protestant Episcopal Church was built on the site of the present St. Paul's Church, by the "water side" members of the old Queen Anne's Chapel, the church on Newbury Plains, which had been built at the time of the organization of its society, in 1711. In 1725 the First Church in Newburyport was organized, and on the 3d of January, 1746, another society was formed at the water side by seceders from the old First Parish at Newbury, which is now known as the First Presbyterian Society of Newburyport. The formation of these societies at the "Port" could not fail to draw, still more distinctly than it had before existed, the line between the two sections of Newbury. As long as on the Sabbath those whose worldly interests were separate, met together in worship at the same altar, there was a tie binding them as one community, which, after the establishment of different societies and the erection of new places of worship, was irretrievably broken. By the enterprise of the "water side" people a new feature was added to their settlement by the erection, at their own charge, of a new town-house, and in 1752 the old one on High Street, built in 1735, was abandoned. The location of the new town-house, sought as it was by each section, was a contested problem which the liberality and public spirit of the "new town" people speedily solved. But with the possession of these elements of a distinct community, the municipal tie which bound the two sections together was gradually becoming a

[1] Owing to the death of Major Ben: Perley Poore, with whom arrangements had been made to write the history of Newburyport, the material gathered by him was placed at the disposal of the writer and has been freely used in the preparation of the following history.—W. T. D.

serious inconvenience to the inhabitants of the new town and an obstacle in the way of their welfare and progress. Not the least of the annoyances which they keenly felt related to the education of their children.

The public-school system had been planted with a firm root in the minds of New England people, but while thickly-settled communities, with the culture and refinement and growing wealth which were more and more characterizing them, greedily sought its advantages and liberally supported it, the more thinly-populated farming districts had not been aroused to its importance, and were reluctant to afford it adequate pecuniary aid. Thus the people of the "Port" were obliged to establish private schools, in order that their children might receive such instructions as a well-organized public-school system ought to furnish, but from which, by the votes of those outside of their immediate boundaries, they were precluded. And aside from all other considerations, seeds of jealousies had been sown and were rapidly growing, and the fruits of these were feelings of hostility and dissension, which could not fail to be fatal to a continuance of municipal sympathies and ties.

Such was the condition of things in 1763, when two hundred and six of the "water side" people presented a petition to the General Court, headed by William Atkins, Daniel Farnham, Michael Dalton, Thomas Woodbridge and Patrick Tracy, to "be set off from Newbury and incorporated a town by themselves." In the following year the General Court passed the following act:

"*Anno Regni Regis Georgii Tertii Quarto.*"

"An Act For Erecting Part of The Town of Newbury into A New Town By The Name of Newburyport."

"*Whereas*, The town of Newbury is very large, and the inhabitants of that part of it who dwell by the water side there, as it is commonly called, are mostly merchants, traders and artificers, and the inhabitants of the other part of the town are chiefly husbandmen, by means whereof many difficulties and disputes have arisen in managing their public affairs:

"Be it enacted by the Governor, Council and House of Representatives, That that part of the said town of Newbury and the inhabitants thereof, included within the following lines, viz.:

"Beginning at the Merrimac river, against the northeasterly end of the town way, commonly called Cottle's Lane, and running as the said Lane doth, on the eastwardly side of it, to the highway commonly called the High Street and so westwardly, as the said highway runs, on the northwardly side thereof, till it comes to a highway known by the name of Fish Street, and thence southwestwardly as the way goes, and on the eastwardly side thereof, leading by Benjamin Moody's to a place called the West Indies, until it intersects a straight line drawn from the southwestwardly side of the highway, against Cottle's Lane, as aforesaid, to a rock in the great pasture, near the dividing line between the third and fifth parishes there, and so as the straight lines goes, until it comes to the dividing line aforsaid, from thence as the said dividing line runs by the said fifth parish down to Merrimac river, and thence along said river to the place first mentioned, be, and hereby are constituted and made a separate and distinct town by the name of Newburyport, vested and endowed with all the powers, privileges and immunities that the inhabitants of any of the towns within this province do, or ought by law to enjoy.

"FRANCIS BERNARD, Governor.

"The twenty-eighth day of January, one thousand seven hundred and sixty-four, *Anno Domini*."

At the date of its incorporation Newburyport contained a population of twenty-two hundred and eighty-two, and the territory set off by act from Newbury included six hundred and forty-seven acres. The town of Newbury had previously included about thirty thousand acres, and was one of the largest towns in Massachusetts, being about thirteen miles long and about six miles broad in the widest place. But though Newbury was so large, the new incorporated town was the smallest in the State. Of course, as is the case in the division of all towns, there were equitable settlements of privileges and expenses to be made; but these, with the exception of those relating to common lands, which were not affected for many years, were all satisfactorily and speedily adjusted. It is needless in this narrative to enter into the details of the vexed questions concerning these lingering settlements, as they are sufficiently explained in the various published histories, to which the reader has access.

Immediately after the passage of the act of incorporation a warrant was issued, dated Ipswich, January 31, 1764, by John Choat, one of His Majesty's justices of the peace, directed to Daniel Farnam, one of the principal inhabitants, requiring him to call a meeting at the Court-House, on Wednerday, the 8th of February next ensuing at ten o'clock, for the choice of a moderator, town clerk, selectman, treasurer, assessors, overseers of the poor and all other officers. The notification of the meeting was given February 1st, and at the meeting held in pursuance thereof the following officers were chosen:

Moderator, Michael Dalton.

Selectmen, Stephen Cross, Enoch Titcomb, Jr., Timothy Pike, Daniel Farnam.

Treasurer, Nathaniel Carter.

Clerk, Stephen Sewell.

Assessors, Jonathan Greenleaf, Dudley Atkins, Samuel Greenleaf.

Overseers of the Poor, Captain Patrick Tracy, Joseph Cottle, Ebenezer Little, Captain Henry Titcomb.

Constables, John Wyat, Edmund Morse, Jr., Stephen Wyat.

Fire-wards, Edmund Bartlett, Richard Greenleaf, Cutting Bartlett, Jonathan Titcomb, Samuel Gerrish.

Cullers of Staves and Hoops, Captain Cutting Moody, John Stone, Joseph Stickney.

Surveyors of Lumber, Isaac Johnson, Francis Hollider, Samuel Gerrish, Ichabod Woodman, Samuel Roif, Samuel Greenleaf, William Harvey, Moses Rogers.

Cullers of Fish, Jacob Giddins, Caleb Haskel.

Wardens, Ralph Cross, Cutting Moody, Cutting Bartlett.

Clerks of Market, Samuel Tuft, Ebenezer Greenleaf, Jeremiah Pearson, Cutting Moody, Captain Wm. Davenport.

Sealers of Leather, Edmund Bartlett, John Kent.

Hay-ward, John Harris.

Surveyors of Highways, Samuel Titcomb, William McHard, Deacon Thomas Moody.

Hog-reeves, Thomas Bartlett, Enoch Pilsbury, Samuel Toppan, Samuel Rolf.

Fence-viewers, Deacon John Kent, William Price.

Sealer of Weights and Measures, Captain Jeremiah Pearson.

Informer of Deer, John Hidden.

To consider Schools and School-houses and Report in March, Nathaniel Carter, Captain Robert Roberts, Captain Cutting Moody, Benjamin Greenleaf, Ralph Cross.

It may not be without interest to present at this point in the narrative lists of those who were chosen

at annual meetings to the various offices of moderator, town clerk, treasurer and selectmen from the date of the above election until the orgauization of the city government, in 1851. Such lists are often valuable for reference, and need no excuse for their insertion.

Moderators.

Michael Dalton.....Feb. 1764
Daniel Farnam.....Mar. 1764
Daniel Farnam.....1765–66
Dudley Atkins.....1767
Daniel Farnam.....1768–70
Jonathan Greenleaf.....1771
Tristam Dalton.....1772–73
Daniel Farnam.....1774
Stephen Cross.....1775
John Lowell.....1776
Theophilus Parsons.....1777
Jonathan Titcomb.....1778–79
Stephen Cross.....1780
Jonathan Titcomb.....1781
Enoch Titcomb.....1782
Nicholas Pike.....1783
Enoch Titcomb.....1784
John Tracy.....1785
Jonathan Titcomb.....1786–87
John Tracy.....1788
Jonathan Greenleaf.....1790–91–92
Nicholas Pike.....1793–94
Jonathan Greenleaf.....1795
John Tracy.....1796
Stephen Cross.....1797
Nicholas Pike.....1798–99
John Tracy.....1800–01–02
Enoch Titcomb.....1803–04
Nicholas Pike.....1805
William Bartlett.....1806
Nicholas Pike.....1807
Jonathan Gage.....1808
William Bartlett.....1809
Nicholas Pike.....1810
Jonathan Gage.....1811
William Bartlett.....1812
Daoiel A. White.....1813–14–15–16
Ebenezer Mosely.....1817–18–19
William B. Bannister.....1820
Ebenezer Mosely.....1821
Asa W. Wildes.....1822
Ebenezer Mosely.....1823
William Bartlett.....1824
Ebenezer Mosely.....1825
John Merrill.....1826
Ebenezer Bradbury.....1827
Caleb Cushing.....1828–29
Ebenezer Bradbury.....1830
Eleazer Johnson.....1831
Caleb Cushing.....1832
Ebenezer Bradbury.....1833–84
Caleb Cushing.....1835
John Merrill.....1836
Caleb Cushing.....1837
John Merrill.....1838–39
Ebenezer Bradbury.....1840–41–42–43–44–45–46
Henry W. Kinsman 1847–48–49–50
Philip K. Hills.....1851

Town Clerks.

Stephen Sewall.....1764–75
Nicholas Pike.....1776–79
Michael Hodge.....1780–89
Enoch Titcomb.....1790–96
Robert Long.....1797–1805
John Fitz.....1806–12
William Work.....1813–15
Samuel Cutler.....1816–30
Eleazer Johnson.....1831–51

Treasurers.

Nathaniel Carter.....1764–65
Daniel Dole.....1766–67–68
Cutting Moody.....1768–75
David Moody.....1776–81
Moses Frazier.....1782
David Moody.....1783
Enoch Titcomb.....1784–1810
Samuel Tenney.....1811
Benjamin Whitmore.....1812–16
Solomon H. Currier.....1817–22
John Potter.....1823–31
Isaac Stone.....1832–34
Moses Merrill.....1835–43
Jonathan Coolidge.....1844–51

Selectmen.

1764. Stephen Cross.
Enoch Titcomb, Jr.
Timothy Pike.
Daniel Farnam.
Stephen Cross.
Enoch Titcomb, Jr.
Timothy Pike.
Daniel Farnam.
William Atkios.
Benjamin Greenleaf.

1765. John Berry.
Robert Roberts.
Cutting Moody.
Ebenezer Little.

1766. Daniel Farnam.
Robert Roberts.
Benjamin Greenleaf.
John Sprague.
John Berry.

1767. Dudley Atkins.
Moses Bradstreet.
Benjamin Greenleaf.
Samuel Greenleaf.
Robert Roberts.

1768. Ralph Cross.
Benjamin Greenleaf.
John Berry.
Daniel Farnam.
Robert Roberts.

1769. Daniel Farnam.
Ralph Cross.
John Berry.
William Atkins.
Edmund Bartlett.

1770. Ebenezer Greenleaf.
Daniel Dole.
Cutting Bartlett.

1771. Tristram Dalton.
John Lowell.
Matthew Perkins.
John Stickney.
David Moody.

1772. Benjamin Greenleaf.
Tristram Dalton.
John Lowell.
Stephen Cross.
Abel Greenleaf.

1773. John Stickney.
Richard Smith.
Jonathan Titcomb.
Matthew Perkins.

1774. Tristram Dalton.
Benjamin Greenleaf.
Jonathan Titcomb.
Stephen Cross.
John Lowell.

1775. Richard Smith.
Benjamin Greenleaf.
Stephen Cross.
Jonathan Titcomb.
John Lowell.

1776. John Lowell.
Tristram Dalton.
Abel Greenleaf.
Jonathan Marsh.
Moses Little.

1777. Jonathan Titcomb.
Abel Greenleaf.
Moses Little.
Samuel Tufts.
Jacob Boardman.

1778. Jonathan Titcomb.
Abel Greenleaf.
Moses Little.
Samuel Tufts.
Moses Frazier.

1779. Same.

1780. Jonathan Titcomb.
Abel Greenleaf.
Nathaniel Tracy.
Samuel Tufts.
Moses Frazier.

1781. Same.

1782. Enoch Titcomb.
Nathaniel Tracy.
Moses Brown.
Nicholas Pike.
Jonathan Mullikin.

1783. Joseph Moulton.
Edward Wigglesworth.
David Coats.
Michael Hodge.
Wm. Coombs.

1784. Edward Wigglesworth.
David Coats.
Wm. Coombs.
Michael Hodge.
Wm. Bartlett.

1785. Same.

1786. Jonathan Titcomb.
Moses Frazier.
David Moody.
John Fletcher.
Joseph Huse.

1787. Joseph Huse.
Joshua Titcomb.
Benjamin Balch.
Henry Hudson.
Stephen Cross.

1788. Jonathan Titcomb.
Stephen Cross.
John Tracy.
Moses Brown.
Josiah Smith.

1789. Thomas Thompson.
Benjamin Balch.
Wm. P. Johnson.
Edward Rand.
Joseph Noyes.

1790. Joseph Noyes.
Edward Rand.
Wm. Pierce Johnson.
John O'Brien.
Nicholas Johnson.

1791. Joseph Noyes.
J. O'Brien.
Nicholas Johnson.
Anthony Davenport.
Henry Hudson.

1792. Moses Hoyt.
Anthony Davenport.
Henry Hudson.
J. O'Brien.
Nathaniel Carter.

1793. John Mycall.
Moses Hoyt.
Bishop Norton.
Thomas Thompson.
Joshua Carter.

1794. Nathan Hoyt.
John Pettingel.
John Mycall.
Bishop Norton.
Joshua Carter.

1795. John Mycall.
Joshua Carter.
Wm. Noyes.
John Pettingel.
Theophilus Bradbury, Jr.

1796. John Pettingel.
Theophilus Bradbury.
Daniel Horton.
Ebenezer Stocker.
Gilman White.

1797. Theophilus Bradbury.
John Pettingel.
Abraham Wheelright.
Gilman White.
Eben Stocker.

1798. Abraham Wheelright.
Leonard Smith.
Samuel A. Otis.
John Pearson, Jr.
Charles C. Raboteau.

1799. Charles C. Raboteau.
Jonathan Gage.
Wm. Wyer, Jr.
Thomas M. Clark.
James Prince.

1800. Nehemiah Haskell.
John B. Titcomb,
John Fitz.
Alexander Caldwell.
Moses Hoyt.

1801. Moses Brown.
Wm. Bartlett.
Nicholas Johnson.
Abner Wood.
Benjamin Balch.

1802. Abner Wood.
Israel Young.
Jonathan Gage.
Anthony Davenport.
John Greenleaf.

1803. Same.

1804. Samuel French.
Joshua Toppan.
Benjamin Wyatt.
Gilman White.
Edward Little.

1805. Same.
1806. Zebedee Cook.
John Peabody.
David Coffin, Jr.
Samuel Foster, Jr.
Robert Foster.
1807. Abraham Perkins.
Samuel H. Foster.
Zebedee Cook.
John Peabody.
Robert Foster.
1808. Zebedee Cook.
Abraham Perkins.
Daniel A. White.
Stephen Holland.
Amos Toppan.
1809. Jeremiah Nelson.
Amos Toppan.
Sewall Tappan.
Daniel A. White.
Stephen Holland.
1810. Jeremiah Nelson.
Sewall Tappan.
Stephen Holland.
Wm. Woart.
Jacob Stone.
1811. Jeremiah Nelson.
Jacob Stone.
Isaac Adams.
Eleazer Johnson.
Nicholas Johnson, Jr.
1812. Isaac Adams.
Nicholas Johnson.
Eleazer Johnson.
Ebenezer Mosely.
George Jenkins.
1813. Ebenezer Mosely.
George Jenkins.
Isaac Stone.
Edward S. Rand.
Joshua Greenleaf.
1814. Joshua Greenleaf.
Isaac Stone.
Edward S. Rand.
Wm. B. Bannister.
Allen Dodge.
1815. Joshua Greenleaf.
John Wood.
Edward S. Rand.
Wm. B. Bannister.
Allen Dodge.
1816. Wm. B. Bannister.
Richard Bartlett.
Phillip Coombs.
Edward Bartlett.
Obadiah Horton.
1817. Ebenezer Mosely.
Abraham Williams.
Robert Clark.
Thomas M. Clark.
Jacob Stone.
1818. Richard Bartlett.
Stephen Howard.
Arthur Gilman.
Samuel Emerson.
John Scott.
1819. Samuel Emerson.
Arthur Gilman.
Prescott Spalding.
Stephen W. Marston.
Daniel Swett.
1820. Stephen W. Marston.
Daniel Swett.
Wm. Cross.
Joseph O Brien.
James Prince.
1821. Stephen W. Marston.
Daniel Swett.
Wm. Cross.
Phillip Coombs.
James Prince.
1822. Stephen W. Marston.
Phillip Coombs.
Ebenezer Wheelright.
John Wood.
Anthony Smith.
1823. Phillip Coombs.
Ebenezer Wheelright.
Anthony Smith.
Ebenezer Mosely.
Wm. Davis.
1824. Ebenezer Mosely.
Ebenezer Wheelright.
Phillip Coombs.
Anthony Smith.
Wm. Davis.
1825. John Wells, Jr.
Samuel S. Plummer.
Asa W. Wildes.
Whittingham Gilman.
Green Sanborn.
1826. Samuel S. Plummer.
Asa W. Wildes.
Whittingham Gilman.
Green Sanborn.
John Cook, Jr.
1827. Asa W. Wildes.
John Cook, Jr.
Thomas Buntin.
John S. Pearson.
Moses Merrill.
1828. John Cook, Jr,
Thomas Buntin.
Moses Merrill.
Charles H. Balch.
Caleb Cushing.
1829. Charles H. Balch.
Eben Stone.
Samuel T. DeFoord.
Henry Frothingham.
Henry Merrill.
1830. Charles H. Balch.
Eben Stone.
Samuel T. DeFoord.
Henry Frothingham.
Henry Merrill.
1831. Charles H. Balch.
Eben Stone.
Henry Johnson.
Nathaniel Horton.
Tristram Coffin (3d).
1832. Chas. H. Balch.
Stephen Tilton.
Henry Johnson.
Nathaniel Horton.
Tristram Coffin (3d).
1833. Chas. H. Balch.
Stephen Tilton.
Richard Stone.
Jos. George.
Ebenezer Bradbury.
1834. Jos. George
Moses Merrill.
Coffin Boardman.
Stephen Frothingham.
Nathaniel Jackson.
1835. Eben Stone.
John N. Cushing.
Chas. H. Balch.
Henry Merrill.
Jeremiah Colburn.
1836. Same.
1837. Nathaniel Horton.
John N. Cushing.
Chas. H. Balch.
Henry Merrill.
Jeremiah Colburn.
1838. Nathaniel Foster.
John Burrill, Jr.
John Pearson.
Wm. D. Lankester.
John M. Cooper.
1839. John Merrill.
Stephen Caldwell.
Isaac Pearson.
Anthony Knap.
Jacob Horton.
1840. Thos. Buntin.
Moses Merrill.
Isaac H. Boardman.
Wm. Moody,
Moses Davenport, Jr.
1841. Thos. Buntin.
Moses Merrill.
Isaac H. Boardman.
Ezra Lunt.
Moses Davenport, Jr.
1842. Moses Merrill.
Geo. Emery.
Samuel Currier.
Edward Toppan, Jr.
John Pearson.
1843. Moses Merrill.
Geo. Emory.
Wm. Nichols.
Edward Toppan, Jr.
John Pearson.
1844. John Pearson.
Edward Toppan.
Wm. Nichols.
Moses Davenport.
John Burrill, Jr.
1845. Wm. Nichols.
John Pearson.
Edward Toppan, Jr.
John Burrill.
John Huse.
1846. Chas. French.
Henry Johnson.
John Stone.
Nathaniel Horton.
Isaac Stevens.
1847. Thos. Davis.
1848. Same.
Albert Currier.
Henry Johnson.
Robert Bayley, Jr.
Nathaniel Horton.
1849. Same.
1850. Same.
1851. Nathaniel Horton.
Henry Johnson.
John M. Cooper.
Samuel Phillips.
Samuel T. Payson.

The following is a list of Newburyport members of the General Court and of the Provincial Congress, chosen in the years set against their names. From 1858 to 1867 Newburyport formed parts of three Representative Districts,—Amesbury, Salisbury and Ward 6 formed the First Essex District, Wards 1 and 2 the Eighteenth Essex District and Wards 3, 4 and 5 the Nineteenth Essex District. From 1867 to 1877 Newburyport and Newbury formed the Sixth Essex District, and since 1877 they have formed the Sixteenth Essex District:

1764. Daniel Farnham.
1765. Dudley Atkins.
1766. Benj. Greenleaf.
1767. Benj. Greenleaf.
1768. Benj. Greenleaf.
1769. Jonathan Greenleaf.
1770. Benj. Greenleaf.
1771. Jonathan Greenleaf.
1772. Jonathan Greenleaf.
1773. Jonathan Greenleaf.
1774. Jonathan Greenleaf.
1775. Jonathan Greenleaf.
Stephen Cross.
Benj. Greenleaf, excused.
1776. Jonathan Jackson.
Tristram Dalton.
John Lowell.
Moses Little.
1777. Jonathan Greenleaf.
Jonathan Jackson.
Stephen Cross.
Moses Frazier.
Jacob Boardman.
1778. Jonathan Greenleaf.
Stephen Cross.
Jonathan Titcomb.
Moses Frasier.
Wm. Coombs.
1779. Jonathan Greenleaf.
Jonathan Titcomb.
Stephen Cross.
Theophilus Parsons.
1780. Jonathan Greenleaf.
Jonathan Titcomb.
1781. Jonathan Titcomb.
Nathaniel Tracy.
Moses Frazier.
1782. Nathaniel Tracy.
Jonathan Titcomb.
Tristram Dalton.
1783. Jonathan Titcomb.
Stephen Cross.
1784. Tristram Dalton.
Rufus King.
1785. Edward Wigglesworth.
Rufus King.
Tristram Dalton.
1786. Jonathan Titcomb.
Stephen Cross.
1787. Daniel Kilham.
1788. Jonathan Greenleaf.
Theophilus Parsons.
Wm. Coombs.
Jonathan Marsh.
1789. Wm. Coombs.
Theophilus Parsons.

Jonathan Marsh.
1790. Jonathan Greenleef.
Theophilus Parsons.
Jonathan Marsh.
1791. Same.
1792. Enoch Titcomb.
Stephen Cross.
Josiah Smith.
1793. Enoch Titcomb.
1794. Same.
1795. Same.
1796. Same.
1797. Same.
1798. Same.
1799. Enoch Titcomb.
Wm. Coombs.
Jonathan Marsh.
Joshua Carter.
1800. Same.
1801. Enoch Titcomb.
Wm. Coombs.
Jonathan Marsh.
Wm. Bartlett.
1802. William Coombs.
Jonathan Marsh.
William Bartlet.
George Bradbury.
1803. Jonathan Marsh.
Jeremiah Nelson.
Nicholas Johnson.
Thomas Carter.
Thos. M. Clark.
Mark Fritz.
1804. Same.
1805. Jonathan Marsh.
Nicholas Pike.
Andrew Frothingham.
Bishop Norton.
Ed. St. Loe Livermore.
Edward Little.
Jonathan Gage.
1806. Jonathan Gage.
Edward Little.
Ed. St. Loe Livermore.
Mark Fitz.
Andrew Frothingham.
Stephen Howard.
John Pearson.
1807. Same, without Mr. Livermore.
1808. Mark Fitz.
Jonathan Gage.
Andrew Frothingham.
John Pearson.
Stephen Howard.
Thos. M. Clark.
Abner Wood.
John Peabody.
1809. Same, with Joseph Dana in place of Mr. Clark.
1810. Mark Fitz.
Andrew Frothingham.
Jonathan Gage.
Stephen Howard.
John Peabody.
Joseph Dana.
Ebenezer Gunnison.
Samuel H. Foster.
Wm. B. Bannister.
1811. Same, with Isaac Stone and Isaac Adams in place of Mr. Dana and Mr. Peabody.
1812. Jonathan Gage.
Stephen Howard.
Ebenezer Gunnison.
Wm. B. Bannister.
Isaac Adams.
Isaac Stone.
Samuel Newman.
Wm. Chase.
Samuel L. Knapp.
1813. Same, without Mr. Gunnison.
1814. Same, without Mr. Bannister.
1815. Jonathan Gage.
Stephen Howard.
Isaac Adams.
Samuel L. Knapp.
Wm. Chase, Jr.
Ebenezer Mosely.
Edward S. Rand.
1816. Same, with Wm. Chase in place of Wm. Chase, Jr.
1817. Ebenezer Mosely.
Stephen Howard.
1818. Same.
1819. Abner Wood.
Ebenezer Mosely.
George Jenkins.
Stephen Howard.
Stephen W. Marston.
Edward S. Rand.
1820. Stephen Howard.
Stephen W. Marston.
1821. Stephen W. Marston.
Abner Wood.
1822. Same.
1823. John Merrill.
John Coffin.
1824. Same.
1825. Ebenezer Shillaber.
John Coffin.
Caleb Cushing.
1826. John Coffin.
Robert Cross.
1827. Wm. Farris.
Stephen W. Marston.
1828. Wm. Farris.
Caleb Cushing.
Ebenezer Bradbury.
Stephen W. Marston.
Whittingham Gilman.
1829. Wm. Farris.
Charles H. Balch.
Stephen W. Marston.
Abner Wood.
Henry Frothingham.
Wm. S. Allen.
1830. Same, with George Lunt and Ebenezer Bradbury in place of Wm. S. Allen and Abner Wood.
1831. Charles H. Balch.
Wm. Farris
Thos. M. Clark.
William Davis.
Wm. S. Allen.
1832. Caleb Cushing.
Charles H. Balch.
Wm. S. Allen.
Wm. Davis.
Moses P. Parish.
Wm. Farris.
1833. Same, with Ebenezer Mosely in place of Mr. Parish.
1834. Ebenezer Mosely.
Charles H. Balch.
Wm. S. Allen.
Wm. Davis.
Tristram Coffin.
Solomon H. Currier.
1835. ———
1836. Isaac Stone.
Charles H. Balch.
George Lunt.
1837. Joseph B. Morse.
1838. Joseph B. Morse.
Henry W. Kinsman.
Thomas M. Clark.
Samuel L. Plummer.
1839. Joseph B. Morse.
James Blood.
Joseph Couch.
1840. Ebenezer Bradbury.
Frederick I. Coffin.
George Lunt.
1841. Wm. Davis.
Isaac H. Boardman.
Henry C. Perkins.
1842. John M. Cooper.
Edward Toppan, Jr.
Nathaniel Foster.
1843. Isaac H. Boardman.
Ebenezer Bradbury.
Charles H. Balch.
1844. Frederick I. Coffin.
John Coombs.
Benjamin R. Knapp.
1845. None.
1846. Ebenezer Bradbury.
Caleb Cushing.
1847. Ebenezer Bradbury.
1848. Ebenezer Bradbury.
Henry W. Kinsman.
Ralph C. Huse.
1849. Jeremiah Colman.
Ralph C. Huse.
Mark Symons.
1850. Jeremiah Colman.
Edward Toppan, Jr.
Isaac Stevens.
1851. Isaac H. Boardman.
Moses Davenport.
Amos Wood.
1852. Wm. E. Currier.
Moses Davenport.
Amos Wood.
1853. Wm. E. Currier.
Henry W. Kinsman.
Amos Wood.
1854. Wm. H. Huse.
Daniel M. Reed.
Joshua D. Robinson.
1855. Joshua D. Robinson.
Daniel M. Reed.
Wm. H. Huse.
1856. Thomas Atwood.
Harvey Kimball.
David Wood.
1857. Caleb Cushing.
R. S. Spofford, Jr.
1858. Caleb Cushing.
Wiothrop O. Evans.
R. S. Spofford, Jr.
1859. Enoch S. Williams.
John Woodwell.
1860. Frederick J. Coffin.
George Goodwin.
Joshua Hale.
1861. Albert Currier.
Caleb Cushing.
1862. John D. Pike.
Caleb Cushing.
George J. George.
1863. George Goodwin.
Albert W. Stevens.
1864. Henry W. Moulton.
Thomas C. Goodwin.
Albert W. Stevens.
1865. Thomas C. Goodwin.
Richard S. Spofford, Jr.
1866. Eben F. Stone.
Rufus Adams.
George W. Woodwell.
1867. George W. Jackman, Jr.
George W. Woodwell.
Rufus Adams.
1868. David T. Woodwell.
Horace Choate.
Joseph N. Rolfe.
1869. David T. Woodwell.
Horace Choate.
George J. L. Colby.
1870. George J. L. Colby.
Nathaniel Pierce.
Moses H. Fowler.
1871. Robert Couch.
George W. Clark.
Wm. Cushing.
1872. Robert Couch.
George W. Clark.
Benjamin C. Currier.
1873. Benjamin C. Currier.
Joseph B. Morse.
Elbridge G. Kelley.
1874. Benjamin C. Currier.
Michael Atkisson.
1875. Caleb B. Huse.
Michael Atkisson.
1876. Eben F. Stone.
Caleb B. Huse.
1877. Eben. F. Stone.
John W. Ricker.
1878. Benjamin F. Atkisson.
Samson Levy.
1879. Eben F Stone.
Amos Coffin.
1880. Amos Coffin.
Edward P. Shaw.
1881. John P. Coombs.
Edward P. Shaw.
1882. John P. Coombs.
Thomas C. Simpson.
1883. Henry M. Cross.
George P. Bishop.
1884. Henry M. Cross.
Willard J. Hale.
1885. Edward A. Mosely.
Daniel M. Felch.
1886. Daniel M. Felch.
Edward A. Mosely.

Newburyport entered its municipal life at a critical period. The committee chosen at the meeting in February, 1764, to consider the question of public schools, reported recommendations to the town in March, and these were no sooner adopted and the machinery of town government put in motion, than the popular mind became absorbed by anxiety con-

cerning the condition of public affairs. The spark of liberty, which was kindled by the unfriendly attitude and acts of Parliament and the crown, was destined to burst into a consuming flame. No small part of the capital of the merchants was invested in trade with the French and Spanish West Indies, and large importations of sugar and molasses were constantly received, giving occupation to many mechanics and laborers and adding wealth and prosperity to the town. During the first year after the incorporation of Newburyport, heavy duties were imposed on these articles, and British naval officers were made officers of revenue to enforce with vigor the revenue laws. Thus a serious check was given to a trade before large and prosperous, and the first of a series of misfortunes was experienced, which only the close of a long and disheartening war partially terminated. In the next year the Stamp Act was passed. Under the provisions of this act no writing was valid which did not bear a stamp on its face. Every deed, ship's clearance, will, contract and other papers entering into the business of every-day life required a stamp varying in price from a half-penny to six pounds. The indignation of the colonies at this infringement on their rights was so strong, that before any stamps were paid for or used in Newburyport, the obnoxious act was repealed. The bitter opposition of the citizens of the young town to this act was displayed to a marked degree. By the more excited it manifested itself in noisy demonstrations and in hanging and burning the effigy of the stamp distributor. By the wiser and more calm, efforts were made, through legitimate channels, to convince the government of the inexpediency and injustice of the act and the necessity of its immediate abrogation. A town-meeting was held on the 21st of October, 1765, and an address to Dudley Atkins, the representative of Newburyport to the General Court, was adopted, with instructions as to his course of action in the premises, of which the following are extracts:

"We have the most loyal sentiments of our gracious King and his Illustrious family; we have the highest reverence and esteem for that most august body, the Parliament of Great Britain; and we have an ardent affection for our brethren at home; we have always regarded their interests as our own, and esteemed our own prosperity as necessarily united with theirs. Hence it is that we have the greatest concern at some measures adopted by the late ministry and some late acts of Parliament, which we apprehend in their tendency will deprive us of some of our essential and high-prized liberties. The Stamp Act, in a peculiar manner, we esteem a grievance, as by it we are subjected to a heavy tax, to which are annexed very severe penalties, and the recovery of forfeitures, incurred by the breach of it, is in a manner which the English constitution abhors, that is, without a trial by jury, and in a court of admiralty. That a people should be taxed at the will of another, whether of one man or many, without their consent in person or by representative, is rank slavery. . . The embarrassments on our trade are great, and the scarcity of cash arising therefrom is such that by the execution of the Stamp Act we should be drained in a very little time of that medium, the consequence of which is, that our commerce must stagnate and our laborers starve.

"These, sir, are our sentiments on this occasion; nor can we think that the distresses we have painted are the creatures of our imagination. . . . We, therefore, the freeholders and other inhabitants of this town, being legally assembled, take this opportunity to declare our just expectations from you, which are—That you will, to the utmost of your ability, use your influence in the General Assembly that the rights and privileges of this Province may be preserved inviolate; and that the sacred deposit we have received from our ancestors may be handed down, without infringement, to our posterity of the latest generations; That you endeavor that all measures, consistent with our loyalty to the best of Kings, may be taken to prevent the execution of the above grievous innovations, and that the repeal of the Stamp Act may be obtained by a most dutiful and, at the same time, most spirited remonstrance against it; That you do not consent to any new or unprecedented grants, but endeavor that the greatest frugality and economy may take place on the distribution of the public monies, remembering the great expense this war has involved us in, and the debt incurred thereby which remains undischarged; That you will consult and promote such measures as may be necessary, in this difficult time, to prevent the course of justice from being stayed and the commerce of the Province standing still; That, if occasion shall offer, you bear testimony in behalf of this town against all seditious and mobbish insurrections, and express our abhorrence of all breaches of the peace, and that you will readily concur in any constitutional measures that may be necessary to secure the public tranquillity."

But confidence and peace of mind did not long continue after the repeal of the Stamp Act. The government at home had learned nothing from the lesson which the history of that act should have taught. In 1767 a tax was laid by Parliament on paper, glass, painters' colors, tea and other merchandise, and the old spirit of opposition to injustice and oppression was again aroused in the province. The tax on tea was especially obnoxious, as that was an article of every day household use, and was felt by every man and woman in every town alike. It is a story of tradition, though not of definite history, that the first destruction of tea took place in Newburyport, and that a considerable quantity was seized and burned in Market Square under the direction of Eleazer Johnson, a prominent ship-builder of the time.

But neither did the cupidity for the importation of tea cease nor its continued destruction, as the following protest from the Committee of Safety, presented to the town in 1775, will show:

"*To the Inhabitants of Newburyport in Town-meeting assembled.*

"*Gentlemen*,—Your Committee of Safety, who are also appointed a Committee of Inspection to see that the Resolves of the Continental Congress are carried into execution, have, with constancy and cheerfulness, attended on the duties of their appointment, being sensible of the importance of the Trust reposed in them, and they hope the Town in general have approved of their conduct. They have met with only one obstruction in their proceedings, which they think needful to lay before you, as their future influence and determination depend on the sentiments of the Town thereon. Some time ago a small quantity of tea was brought in here in violation of the Continental Association, which the Committee took into their custody and had deposited in the Powder House in order that it might be kept secure until the Town or the Committee should determine something further respecting it, but before there was an opportunity therefor, some of our inhabitants, in a very sudden and hasty manner, laid hands on it and destroyed it. Now, your Committee apprehend that it will be very unsafe for them to take into their care any kind of goods that may in future be introduced in the like disorderly manner, provided they must be exposed to the same fate. Wherefore they desire the opinion of the Town upon the matter.

"By order of the Committee.

"EDW. HARRIS, *Clerk*"

In response to the imposition of these new taxes the Boston merchants proposed, in a circular sent to the various seaport towns, a non-importation agreement. An answer to this circular, written by

John Lowell, was adopted at a town-meeting held March 10, 1768, of which the following is a copy:

"The Committee beg leave to report, that they are of opinion that the subjects therein contained deserve the most serious attention of the town in particular, as well as of the public in general. This town has been in a great measure supported for many years past by the building of ships, which have been purchased mostly by the inhabitants, and for the use of Great Britain. The manner in which we have been paid for our ships has been mainly by British manufactures. So that the importation and purchase of these, and our staple business, if we may so express it, have been almost inseparably united. It is with the greatest difficulty that a number of people, who have for the most part of their lives been used to a particular employment, can suddenly strike into a new channel, and carry on a business to which they have always been strangers.

"Hence, though we highly respect the town of Boston for its zealous attachment to the liberties of the country, and are ready to assist them in all measures to which prudence may direct, we cannot think it can consist with the prudence and policy of this town to join in their particular resolutions respecting the importation and purchase of the enumerated articles of British manufacture. And not only from this principle, but from one less selfish, we cannot wish that the frequent and mutual intercourse which has hitherto subsisted between Great Britain and us should abate. 'Tis but of late that we regarded Great Britain with all the respectful affection of a child to its parent; and though by some late measures, which we conceive to be highly misjudged, there seems to have arisen a cloud, which obscures the true interests of the nation from the eyes of those at the helm, we cannot but expect, as well as impatiently desire, that it will be soon removed, and a mutual confidence be established on the firmest foundation.

"In the meantime, as jealousy, in a constitution like the British, is the great preserving principle, we think it necessary to be watchful against any encroachments on our rights as Englishmen and freemen, and to be uniformly and resolutely determined that these shall not be infringed, while our fortunes, or even our lives continue."

The tone of both the instructions to Dudley Atkins concerning the Stamp Act and the above answer to the circular of the Boston merchants concerning non-importation displays the cautious, conservative spirit prevailing in Newburyport. This spirit no doubt had its root in the large material interests whose welfare or ruin depended on the solution of the great question of the time. But the vital importance of those interests to the prosperity of the town and the comfort of its people emphasizes the unselfish patriotism which finally settled the question, by the sacrifice of business and wealth to the great principle of popular freedom.

As in every great crisis, there was a tide which seemed to have a power and will of its own, and the tide which was now at the flood was setting with resistless force and breaking down all barriers which prudence or conservatism might impose. The Home Government, performing unconsciously its part in the great movement which Providence was directing, towards the establishment of a free popular government, persisted in its policy, and in the autumn of 1768 non-importation was agreed on by the merchants of the province. At a meeting held on the 4th of September, 1769, the town approved of the agreement, and voted to further and maintain the same and to consider any person who should evade it an enemy to his country. In March, 1770, it was voted by the town not to buy or use any foreign tea; in January, 1773, Jonathan Greenleaf, the representative to the General Court, was instructed "to use his utmost endeavors to procure a full and complete redress of all our public grievances;" in December, 1775, a letter to the Boston Committee of Correspondence was adopted in town meeting, assuring them of assistance and support, and finally in May, 1776, the town voted "That if the honorable Congress should, for the safety of the United Colonies, declare them independent of the Kingdom of Great Britain, this town will with their lives and fortunes support them in the measure."

Thus Newburyport and its people floated with the tide. Along the seaboard of Massachusetts, notwithstanding the great interests which needed to be sacrificed, there was no town so free from Loyalists or Tories, as they were called. Indeed, Newburyport was a striking exception to the rule, so far as seaports were concerned. Boston and Salem and Ipswich had their numerous Loyalists, and it is said that in Plymouth, where the business of its merchants was very similar to that of those in Newburyport, James Warren was almost the only man of social standing who was an outspoken and active supporter of the Revolutionary movement. In Marshfield the loyal feeling was sufficiently strong at first to control the actions and votes of its town-meetings, and on the 20th of February, 1775, it was voted "not to adhere to or be bound by the resolves and recommendations of the Concord Provincial Congress or any illegal assemblies whatever."

But in Newburyport it has never been claimed that more than four persons were tainted with loyalty, and neither of these was a merchant. These were Daniel Farnam, Bishop Edward Bass, Dr. Jones and a man by the name of Frye. Frye left the country and went to Scotland; the bishop and Dr. Jones took the oath of allegiance, or gave satisfaction to the Committee of Correspondence, and Col. Farnam remained the only prominent and confessed Loyalist in the town. The charge of loyalty against Bishop Edward Bass has never been proved. Hon. Eben F. Stone has discovered in a collection of old papers, which he has had an opportunity to examine, evidence both for and against the charge. In an old letter written by Henry Atkins, an officer of the Newburyport Custom-House, in the service of the crown, his loyalty is strongly claimed; on the other hand, a letter dated May 24, 1783, from Col. Peter Frye, a graduate of Harvard, and for many years a resident of Ipswich, then living as a refugee Loyalist at the Middlesex Hospital, Suffolk County, England, states that it was said by the people of Newburyport, after the death of Col. Farnam, that the town was purified and had not a Loyalist in it. A letter from Samuel Peters, dated June 19, 1783, says that Messerve, collector of Portsmouth, and Samuel Porter, a lawyer of Salem, "agree that there never was known to be in Newburyport more than four loyal subjects, one of whom went off to Scotland, Col. Farnam was killed by the rebels, Mr. Bass and Dr. Jones gave satisfaction to the rebels and remained there."

At any rate, Edward Bass, the bishop was, suspected. He was at that time, however, not a bishop, but

rector of St. Paul's Church. He was born in Dorchester, November 23, 1726, and graduated at Harvard in 1744. He taught school after his graduation until 1747, and then pursued the study of theology until 1751. In 1752 he became the associate of Rev. Matthias Plant at St. Paul's, and went to London, where he was ordained by Dr. Sherlock, then bishop of London, and returned at once to begin his pastoral work. In 1789 the University of Pennsylvania conferred on him the degree of Doctor of Divinity, and in 1796 he was unanimously chosen at a convention of the Protestant Episcopal Churches of Massachusetts to be their bishop. He was consecrated May 7, 1797, by the bishops of Pennsylvania, New York and Maryland, and at a later date was chosen also bishop of the Episcopal Churches of Rhode Island and New Hampshire. He died in Newburyport September 10, 1803, having served as rector of St. Paul's fifty-one years.

Daniel Farnam or Farnham, the only unqualified Loyalist in the town, was born in York, Maine, in 1719. He was a son of Daniel Farnham, a native of Andover, Massachusetts, and was fitted for college by Rev. Samuel Moody, of York, who was a lineal descendant of Caleb Moody, of Newburyport. Mr. Farnham graduated at Harvard in 1739 and studied law with Edmund Trowbridge, who was considered the best lawyer of his time, and who held a seat on the bench of the Superior Court of Judicature from 1767 until his resignation, in 1775. In July, 1740, soon after his graduation, he married Sybil, daughter of Rev. Samuel Angier, of Watertown, and granddaughter of Rev. Urian Oakes, president of Harvard College from April 5, 1675, to July 2, 1681. After his admission to practice he removed to Newburyport, or, as it then was, the "Port" of Newbury, and began his professional life. It is believed that at that time there was no lawyer east of Salem. He was a man of great industry and boundless activity, both controlling a large professional business and taking a leading part in the direction and management of public affairs. About 1750 he bought a lot of land of Abiel Somerby, where the Kelley school-house now stands, and there erected a large square dwelling-house in the style of the colonial period. It stood a little back from the street, with three fine elm-trees in front, and the garden was inclosed by a solid brick wall, which gave a substantial appearance to the whole estate.

Col. Farnham was a public-spirited man, and was at the head of every important improvement in and about his adopted town. He was one of the leading signers to the petition for the incorporation of Newburyport, the person to whom the warrant for its first town-meeting was directed, the moderator of its first annual meeting, and the chairman of its first Board of Selectmen. Hon. Eben F. Stone, from whose manuscript sketch of Col. Farnham the writer has already freely drawn, says that,

"In the early special meetings of the town relating to the stamp act and other measures of England to extort a revenue from the colonies, before all hope of a peaceable adjustment of the controversy was abandoned, he took an active and important part. But when the opposition of the Province to the policy of the Crown had passed the point consistent with loyalty, and every citizen was compelled to choose between two courses, neither of which was free from doubt and peril, Col. Farnham, like the great majority of those who were well situated under the subsisting relations between the Colonies and the Government of England, and who could find in the alleged grievances no sufficient excuse for disloyalty or rebellion, remained true to his principles and stood by the King. Ardent, high-spirited and impetuous, he disdained to yield to the suggestions of prudence, which controlled the conduct of some of his friends, and boldly denounced the leading whigs and liberty men as law-breakers and rebels."

He died at his home in May, 1776. The suggestion that he was killed by the rebels is sufficiently silenced by the following letter written by his son-in-law, Dr. Micajah Sawyer, to another son-in-law, Rev. Mr. Weld, of Braintree:

"NEWBURYPORT, 18 May, 1777.

"DEAR SIR,—By this I am to inform you of the dreadful news of the death of your late honored father, Col. Farnham, after a short sickness, in which the symptoms were violent and the progress irresistibly rapid; for a more particular account I must refer you to Dr. Smith.

* * * * * * *

"M. SAWYER."

Before the exigencies of the Revolutionary period had actually arisen, the town had gone on perfecting the operations of its municipal machinery and was in a good condition to meet the storm. A little dissatisfaction, however, with the new state of things, had occasionally existed and several feeble attempts were made to bring about a re-union with Newbury. On one of the trials of the question in town-meeting, fifty-two were found to vote in the affirmative out of a total of three hundred and fourteen. It is a singular fact that, at a town-meeting held in January, 1773, it was voted to change the name of the town to "Portland," what is now "Portland" being then "Falmouth," and that the vote has never been either taken any notice of nor repealed. In 1774 the first stage-coach in the country, drawn by four horses, was established by Ezra Lunt, connecting with Boston by the way of Salem and making three trips per week.

On the 23d of September, 1774, a Committee of Safety and Correspondence was appointed by the town, consisting of the following gentlemen:

Hon. Benjamin Greenleaf.	Capt. Jonathan Greenleaf.
Patrick Tracy, Esquire.	Dr. Micajah Sawyer.
Dr. John Sprague.	Mr. David Moody.
William Atkins, Esquire.	Mr. John Bromfield.
Capt. James Hudson.	Mr. John Stone.
Mr. Edmund Bartlett.	Major William Coffin.
Mr. Ralph Cross, Jr.	Capt. Thomas Thomas.
Tristram Dalton, Esq.	Capt. Joseph Buse.
Mr. Edward Harris.	Capt. Samuel Batchelor.
Mr. Enoch Titcomb, Jr.	Mr. Moses Nowell.
Capt. Jacob Boardman.	Mr. Jonathan Jackson.
Mr. William Teel.	Mr. Richard Titcomb.
Mr. Samuel Tufts.	Mr. John Herbert.
Capt. Moses Rogers.	Mr. Moses Frazier.
Mr. Jonathan Marsh.	Capt. Nicholas Tracy.

The seizure of the public stores at Concord by the British troops and the battle of Lexington were finally the signal for action. On the receipt of the

news at Newburyport, Capt. Moses Nowell at once mustered his company of militia and started at eleven o'clock at night to render assistance. Their service was probably only for a few days. The members of this company were as follows:

Moses Nowell, capt.
Benjamin Perkins, lieut.
Elias Davis, lieut.
Stephen Jenkins, lieut.
Paul Lunt, sergt.
Timothy Ford, sergt.
William Auer, sergt.
Samuel Clark, sergt.
Moses Pike, corp.
Nathaniel Tilton, corp.
Nathaniel Montgomery, corp.
Samuel Foster, corp.
Benjamin Pearson, drum, and fife.
Richard Hale, drum, and fife.
Calel. Haskell, drum, and fife.

Privates.

Joseph Cross.
John Somerby.
John Wyatt.
Wm. Shackford.
Edmund Pettengel.
Timothy Palmer.
Michael Tappan.
Moses Kimball.
Thomas Hayoes.
Moses Pidgeon.
John Brett.
John Chase.
John Beckford.
Wm. McClintock.
Josiah Teel.
Thomas Gould.
Joseph Somerby.
Samuel Harris.
Thomas Morrill.
David Rogers.
Moses Newman.
Edward Tappan.
Benjamin Backley, Jr.
John Adams.
Edmund Morse.
Richard Titcomb.
Samuel Wyatt.
Wm. Holliday.
Hezekiah Goodhue.
Moses Greenleaf.
John Little.
Nathaniel Mitchell.
William Hazeltine.
Thomas Boardman.
John C. Roberts.
Joseph Somerby, Jr.
Enoch Moody.
Benjamin Eaton.
Silas Parker.
John Cook.
Amos Pearson.
Wm. Stickney.
Stephen Morse.
John Sleeper.
Thomas Hammond.
Thomas Merrill.
Jonathan Dole.
Wm. Damm.
Jesse Amory.
John Perry.
Henry W. Tines.
Thomas Frothingham.
Samuel Nowell.
John Pettingel.
Thomas Leigh.
Jacob Knap.
Benjamin Greenleaf.
Thomas Gardner.
John Kettle.
Joseph Toole.
Stephen Giddins.
John Stickney.
Joshua Mitchell.
John Hammond.
Nathaniel Warner.
Isaac Frothingham.
Zebulon Titcomb.
Jonathan Carter.
John Ward Brown.
Jonathan Plumer.
Michael Titcomb.
Isaac Marble.
Samuel Huse.
Paul Noyes.
John Brown.
John Cheever.
Nicholas Moody.
Thomas Weskom.
Joseph McHard.
Wm. Conner.
Joseph Herbert.
Jacob True.
Joseph Smith.
Mayo Greenleaf.
David Pearson.
Samuel Swazy.
Asa Dickson.
Joseph Stickney.
Philip Johnson.
John Goodhue.
Amos Follansbee.
Nathaniel Smith.
Lemuel Coffin.
Tristram Plumer.
Isaac Currier.
Richard Stockman.
Samuel Hall.
Wm. Farnham.
Lewis Gay.
John Holliday.
Moses Cross.
Joseph Davis.
Moses Moers.
Francis Rogers.
Daniel Somerby.
James Brown.
Caleb James.
James Forth.
Amos French.
Roger Lord.
Enoch Plumer.
John Little.
Nehemiah Haskell.
Joseph Pearson.
Moses Fessenden.
Luke Webster.

It is possible that some of the above men belonged to the adjoining towns, as it hardly seems probable that Newburyport could have sent in one company fifteen officers and one hundred and fifteen men. They are called, however, on the rolls at the State-House, Newburyport men.

On the 9th of May, 1775, a volunteer company was provided with accoutrements by the town and marched to join Colonel Moses Little's regiment in the Continental army, the members of which were as follows:

Ezra Lunt, capt.
Paul Lunt, lieut.
Nathl. Montgomery, lieut.
Robert Fowler, sergt.
Nathl. Mitchell, sergt.
John McLary, sergt.
Edmund Morse, sergt.
Timothy Palmer, corp.
Wm. Holladay, corp.
Moses Kimball, corp.
Eliphalet Pilsbury, corp.
Benj. Pearson, drummer.
Benj. Newman, drummer.
Bishop Norton, fifer.
Caleb Haskell, fifer.

Privates.

Wm. Coker.
Wm. Shackford.
Daniel Ela.
Thomas Gould.
Enoch Pierce.
Parker Chase.
Michael Cogswell.
Enoch Richardson.
Moses Cross.
John Brown.
Nathaniel Stevens Batson.
John Stickney.
John Sleeper.
Moses George.
Moses Moores.
Nathan Smith.
John Perry.
Robert Haskell.
John Smith.
Thomas Bolton.
Samuel Stickney.
Joseph Woods.
Moses Rogers.
Josiah Carr.
John Goodhue.
Abraham Knowton.
Jacob True.
Timothy Condrew.
Mayo Greenleaf.
David Pearson.
John C. Roberts.
David Rogers.
Nathan Warren.
Samuel Lankester.
Enoch Fort.
Jesse Emery.
Thomas Hammond.
Bart. L. Spooner.
John Matchett.
Richard Shay.
Benj. Davis.
Scipper Lunt.
Moses Nowell.
John Shackford.
James Pinder.
Richard Goodwin.
John Chase.

Another volunteer company marched for Cambridge in the latter part of May to join the Continental army, and, with the company of Captain Lunt, was at the battle of Bunker Hill. The members of the company were as follows:

Benj. Perkins, Capt.
Jos. Whittemore, Lieut.
Stephen Jenkins, Lieut.
Wm. Stickney, Ens.
Samuel Foster, Sergt.
Amos Pearson, Sergt.
Thomas Frothingham, Sergt.
Thomas Wescomb, Sergt.
John Brazier, Drummer.
Richard Hale, Drummer.
Isaac Howard, Fifer.
John W. Folsom, Fifer.

Privates.

Jonathan Carter.
Edward Swain.
Jeremiah Smith.
Moses Wickes.
Isaac Frothingham.
John Dilaway.
Charles Jarvis.
Stephen Wyatt.
John Kettle.
Josiah Teel.
Paul Stevens.
Joseph Davis.
Thomas Merrill.
Benj. Eaton.
Joseph Stickney.
Wm. Conor.
Solomon Aubin.
Joseph Somerby (2d).
Nicholas Titcomb.
Silas Parker.
Moses Carr.
Amos Hale.
John Brett.
Jonathan Norton.
Moses Newman.
Thomas Haynes.
Aaron Davis.
Benj. E. Knapp.
Benj. Perkins.
Moses Pidgeon.
Daniel Pike.
Edmund Rogers.
Nathl. Godfrey.
Thos. Boardman.
Samuel Coffin.
Zebulon Titcomb.

Joseph Somerby.
Samuel Harris.
Jacob Knapp
John Cook.
Thos. Wyatt.
Abraham Toppan.
Philip Johnston.
Abiel Kent.
Joseph Mitchell.
Patrick Harrington.
Joseph Noyes.
Charles Butler.
John Coffin.
Joseph Knight.
John Murray.
Joseph Pettingel.
Makepeace Colby.
Jacob Foss.
Jacob Willard.
Simeon Noyes.
Patrick Tracy.
Wm. Page.
Benj. Cotton.
Daniel Lane.
Shadrick Ireland.
Daniel Somerby.
Benj. H. Toppan.
Benj. McClenning.
Michael Titcomb.
Wm. Elliot.
Samuel Nelson.

Of this company at the battle of Bunker Hill, Jonathan Norton, Amos Pearson and Joseph Whittemore were wounded, and Samuel Nelson was killed.

Another company was raised and marched to Cambridge in 1775, of which the following were the Newburyport members:

Samuel Gerrish, Capt.
Silas Adams, Lieut.
Benj. Stickney, Lieut.
Paul Moody, Sergt.

Privates.

Joseph Danforth.
Jedediah Stickney.
John Noyes.
Nathaniel Adams.
John Currier.
Jedediah Currier.
John Cheney.
Joseph Choat.
Wm. Flood.
Oliver Goodridge.
John Lunt.
David Chute.
James Chute.
Timothy Dorman.
Daniel Hale.
Abner Woodman.
Enoch Boynton.
Nathaniel Pearson.
Wm. Searl.
Jacob Low, Jr.
Richard Martin.
Benj. Poor.
Amos Poor.
Eliphalet Poor.
Stephen Smith.
John Sawyer.
Abram Thorla.
Nathan Adams.
Jacob Hale.
Jacob Low.
Enoch Adams.
John Turner.
Thomas Smith.
Enoch Adams, Jr.
Amos Stickney.
Stephen Lunt.
Stephen Gerrish.

Members of the Newburyport company commanded by Captain Moses Nowell, stationed at Newburyport from November, 1775, to January, 1776,—

Moses Nowell, Capt.
Elias Davis, Lieut.
Moses Greenleaf, Lieut.
George Gibbon, Sergt.
Moses Pike, Sergt.
John Adams, Sergt.
John Wills, Corp.
Zebedee Farnham, Corp.
Richard Goss, Corp.
Isaac Johnson, Corp.
Jacob Kuhn, Drummer.
Joseph Cross, Fifer.

Privates.

Nathaniel Tilton.
Samuel Brown.
Tristram Turner.
Moses Davenport.
Roland Stockman.
John Butman.
Enoch Greenleaf.
Samuel Swazey.
Jacob Brown.
James Morrell.
John Butten.
Joseph Davis.
Orlando Brown.
Moses Davis.
John Bickford.
Moses Wills.
Enoch Dole.
Nathaniel Dummer.
John Stanwood.
Wm. Stickney.
Lewis Gray.
Somerby Chase.
David Pettingel.
Joseph Chase.
John Powell.
Joseph McHard.
Samuel Barrell.
Oliver Putnam.
Thomas Lakeman.
Enoch Sweat.
John Stickney.
Wm. Johnson.
Jonathan Titcomb.
Richardson Norton.
Moody Stickney.
Enoch Moody.
Samuel Nowell.

Other enlistments in 1775 were for the company of Captain Jacob Gerrish, in Colonel Moses Little's regiment,—

John Choat.
Eben Choat.
Samuel Place.
Michael Stockman.
John Stockman.
Benj. Newman, Drummer.
John Spinney, Fifer.

The following were miscellaneous enlistments:

Benj. Marriners.
John Foster.
Patrick Harrington.
Shedrick Ireland.
John Murray.
Solomon Offin.
Wm. Pottle.
Daniel Pike.
Joseph Harbott.
William Ray.
Samuel Phipps.
Richard Swan.
John Smith.
John Stone.
Patrick Tracy.
John York.
Benj. Clannen.
Charles Butler.
William Farnam.

Enlistments in 1776 for three years,—

Wm. Noyes.
Obadiah Robertson.
Stephen Kent, drummer.
John Fling.
Cato Shaded, fifer.
Wm. Duggins.
John Lunt.
John Stockman, Jr.
John Brown.
Chas. Jarvis.

Detachment of Captain Moses Nowell's company stationed at Plum Island from November 20, 1776, to January, 1777,—

Moses Nowell, capt.
Jos. Whittemore, lieut.
Nicholas Titcomb, lieut.
Moses Pike, sergt.
Enoch Moody, sergt.
Daniel Knight, sergt.
Moses Cross, sergt.
Isaac Knapp, corp.
Benj. Newman, corp.
Stephen Bartlett, corp.
Wm. Shackford, corp.
Theodore Pearson, corp.
Samuel Newman, drummer.
Jonathan Kettel, fifer.

Privates.

Annis Merrill.
Richardson Norton.
Joshua Davis.
Jas. McDonald.
Enoch Sweat.
Mayo Greenleaf.
Benj. Toppan.
Moses Cleary.
Richard Jackman.
Tristram Pilsbury.
Isaac Adams.
Christopher Merrill.
Wm. Ramsdell.
David Lull.
John Low.
Peterson Roby.
Joseph Pike.
Enoch Rogers.
Joseph Poor.
Stephen Stickney.
Daniel Somerby.
Samuel Long.
Moses Davis.
Simeon Pearson.
Jonathan Lowell.

Enlistments of Newburyport men in the company of Captain Timothy Barnard, of Ipswich, in Colonel Moses Little's regiment in 1776 for two months,—

Moses Kent, lieut.
Nicholas Titcomb, sergt.
John Cook, corp.
John Brown, corp.
Isaac Howard, fifer.

Privates.

Benj. Colton.
Makepiece Colby.
Aaron Davis.
Jeremiah Farnham.
Thos. Giles.
Nathan Godfrey.
Patrick Harrington.
Shadrick Ireland.
Richard Swan.
John Smith.
John Stone.
Josiah Tool.
Patrick Tracy.
Wm Young.
John York.
Benj. Clannen.
Chas Butler.

Enlistments of Newburyport men in the company of Captain Moses Greenleaf in battalion of Colonel Eben Francis for the expedition to Bennington in 1776,—

Morrill Whittier, sergt.
Thos. Holliday, drummer.
Privates.
John Flyn.
John Stickney.
John Knight.
Eliphalet Griffin.
John Connolly.
John White.
John Ennis.
Chas. Jarvis.
Samuel Lowell.
Daniel Price.
James Summers.
James Donnoly.
James Lindsey.
James Ward.
John Dexter.
John Askin.
Oliver Cromwell.
Wm. Williamson.
Jonathan Buswell.
Richard Lowell.
Makepeace Colby.
Leonard Cotton.
Robert Pembroke.
David Roberts.
Wm. Lewis.

Newburyport members of the company of Captain John Peabody, of Andover, in the regiment of Colonel Eben Francis, drafted in 1776,—

Moses Greenleaf, lieut.
Jacob Kuhn, drummer.
Privates.
James Chase.
Jos. Somerby.
Jonathan Noyes.
Jas. Brown.
John Cheavers.
Enoch Hale.
Jas. Jewet.
Christopher Merrill.
Wm. Pidgeon.
John Ham.
Richard Smith.
Jos. Topping.
John Willard.
Moses Woodman.

Enlistments of Newburyport men in 1777 for two months in Rhode Island in the company of Captain Moses Nowell in Titcomb's regiment,—

Moses Nowell, capt.
Daniel Pike, drummer.
Samuel Stickney, fifer.
Amos Poor, corp.
William Elliott, corp.
Joseph Pike, sergt.
Thomas Green, sergt.
Privates.
Hugh Thompson.
Hugh Thompson, Jr.
Benjamin Pike, Jr.
Isaac Frothingham.
Caleb Foot.
Joseph Rolings.
Eliphalet Rolings.
Israel Hardey.
Thomas Cheaney.
Jonathan Emerson.
Joseph Wright.
Humphrey H. Richards.
Nehemiah Choat.
Nathaniel Bradstreet.
Nathaniel Johnson.
Moses Hobson.
Jeremiah Hobson.
Benjamin Whipple.
Joseph Dodge.
Joseph Brown.
Benjamin Pike.
Joseph Annable.
Nathaniel Dummer.
Joseph Wright, Jr.

Newburyport men enlisted in 1777 for three years and members of various regiments,—

John Dolley.
John Atkins.
Makepeace Colby.
Daniel Collins.
Leonard Cotton.
Paul Coffin.
John Colaney.
John Cancey.
George Coffin.
Michael Crosby.
Eben Choat.
James Delaney.
David Duning.
Jonathan Day.
John Davis.
John Ennis.
Moses George.
Eliphalet Griffith.
Thomas Goodale.
Thomas Giles.
Solomon Aubin.
Jonathan Buswell.
Thomas Goss.
Jeremiah Goldsmith.
Henry Greenleaf.
John Nason.
Wm. Ray.
Wm. Poor.
Daniel Pierce.
Robert Pembroke.
James Pinder.
Oxford Tash.
Peter Thomas.
Benjamin H. Toppan.
Morrell Whicken.
Wm. Williamson.
Moses Whicken.
John White.
Nathaniel Willet.
James Ward.
Moses Woodman.
Nathan Whitney.
Stephen Wyatt.
Joseph Wiles.
Benjamin Willet.

Enlistments of Newburyport men in the Continental army in 1778 for various regiments,—

Samuel Davis.
Joseph Little.
Anthony Boston.
Charity Kittout.
Timothy Farrar.

Enlistments in 1778 for nine months,—

Benjamin Webster.
Samuel Davis.
Jonathan Huntoon.
James Bafford.
John Rowe.
Joseph Little.

Nine months' men enlisted for the Continental army in 1779,—

Thomas Eliot.
Benjamin Bagley.
John Welch.
Andrew Labonta.
John Mullins.
Thomas Wood.
Thomas Wood, Jr.
James Kavan.
Wm. Follansbee.
Nathan Haskell.
Wm. Noyes, Jr.
Benjamin Draper.
Samuel Newman.
Hugh Felton.
Cicero Haskell.
Isaac Johnson.
Thomas Beck.
Samuel Ober.
Abram Dodge.
Joshua Pettingal.
John Thompson.
John Buttman.

Six months' men enlisted for the Continental army 1780,—

Jonathan Beck.
Thomas Beck.
Moses George.
Stephen Smith.
Josiah Melvon.
David Melvon
Benjamin Smith.
Jeremiah Smith.
Daniel Gale.
Ezekiel Sterns.
Eliphalet Calley.
Caleb Fogg.
George Saunders.
Samuel Dudley.
Moses Titcomb.
Wm. Murray.
David Collier.
John Stone.
Jeremiah Spencer.
Jonathan Prescott.
Samuel Cram.
Jonathan Sayward.
John Woodbury.
Michael Pike.
Eben Haines.
Enoch Foot.
Benjamin Woodbury.
James Woodbury.
Samuel Webber.
Oliver Richards
Nath'l Hunt.
James Smith.
John Mann.
Moses George, Jr.
David Donning.
Wm. Stoneman.
Levi Davis.
Nath'l Howard.
Jeremy Smith.
Benoni Knapp.
Enoch Trott.
Eben Sterns.
Lancaster Beck.
Moody Stickney.
John Parker Wilson.
Nathan Chapman.
Cicero Haskell.
Oxford Task.
Leonard Cotton.
Isaac Pinkham.
John Haines.
James Norris.
Jonathan Calley.
Benjamin Cotton.
James Thomas.
Richard Shay.
James Condy.
Paul McPherson.
John Archer.
James Neal.
John Mullins.

Enlistments in the company of Capt. John Robinson, of Boxford, and regiment of Col. William Turner for five months' service in Rhode Island, in 1781,—

Lieut. Daniel Cotton.
Corp. Samuel Barker.
John Riley.
Joseph Mitchell.
Jonathan Greenough.
Edward Millikin.

Levies for the Continental army in 1782 in the company of Capt. Joshua French, of Salisbury, and regiment of Lieut.-Col. Enoch Putnam,—

Lieut. Joshua Davis.
Sergt. Timothy Rolf.
Sergt. Samuel Noyes.
Corp. Annis Merrill.
Corp. James Jackson.
Fifer Jesse Spofford.
John Simson.
Simeon Chase.
Wm. Perry.
Stephen Carlton.

John Ferguson.
Jacob Marsh.
John Butler.
John Murray.
George Poor.
Benjamin Bishop.
Isaac Frothingham.
James Ferguson.
David Hale.
Edward Tenney.
Josiah Coburn.
Paul McPherson.
Wm. McFarland.
James McFarland.
Wm. Malloon
Benjamin Davis.
John Castello.
Wm. Tapley.
Benjamin Mullikin.
John Dow.
Amos Kemp.
Daniel Cole.
Jesse Cole
Samuel Parker.

Three years' men enlisted in 1782,—

Joseph Tarr.
Wm. White.
John Ellis.
Wm. Shepard.
Adventer Kent.
Roger Beadel.

Thus Newburyport furnished during the seven years of the Revolutionary War seven hundred and seventeen enlistments. It is true that some of the soldiers enlisted more than once, for different terms of service; but, after all due allowance is made for these, the fact remains that few towns drew more heavily on their resources to carry the war to a successful termination. It is manifest that such a contribution of men to the army could not have been made without the imposition of a serious pecuniary burden on the treasury of the town and the purses of its people. At one time it was voted to pay a bounty of twenty pounds to every soldier enlisting for three years or the war; at another, to give each man seven pounds ten shillings per month, in addition to the State and Continental wages. Still later it was voted to give nine pounds per month, including State and Continental wages, and six pounds per month advance to soldiers enlisting as a guard to the troops of General Burgoyne. It was again voted to give one hundred shillings per month to each man enlisting within twenty-four hours; and, again, to give four hundred and fifty pounds advance to each soldier enlisting for three months' service. In 1780 the town voted to raise seventy-five thousand pounds by tax, to be paid before the 1st of September, to procure and equip the town's proportion of the militia required by the resolve of the General Court, dated June 8th in that year. These are a few only of the votes of the town assuming onerous pecuniary burdens, and in addition to the expenditures of money which they involved, others were incurred in preparing and sinking piers in the channel of the river, in building forts at Salisbury and on Plum Island, and in constructing floating batteries and other defenses against possible attacks from British fleets. For the eight years which elapsed from the battle of Lexington to the proclamation of peace Newburyport appropriated the sum of five hundred and four thousand five hundred pounds, of which it was estimated that four hundred and ninety-eight thousand five hundred pounds was expended for purposes connected with the war.

Nor was this all. Men of Newburyport were found on the ocean wherever the new flag flew in the face of the cross of St. George, and wherever a gun was fired in defense of liberty. The first privateer fitted out in the colonies sailed from Newburyport in August, 1775, and was owned by Nathaniel Tracy, a prominent merchant. She was the pioneer of a fleet equipped by Newburyport merchants, among whom, besides Mr. Tracy, Mr. Joseph Marquand was specially conspicuous. Nor should the names of the commanders be omitted. Capt. James Tracy of the "Yankee Hero," Cutting Lunt of the "America," Captain William Russell of the "General Ward," Captain William Springer of the "Hornet," Capt. Jack Lee of the "Hawk," Capt. John O'Brien of the "Hibernia," Capt. Moses Brown of the "General Arnold," Capt. Wingate Newman of the "Vengeance," Capt William Knapp of the "Pallas," and others too numerous to mention, for a time struck terror into the hearts of British seamen, and reaped rich harvests for their owners. It is stated that the cruisers in which Mr. Tracy was interested captured one hundred and twenty English vessels, amounting to twenty-three thousand three hundred and sixty tons, and carrying twenty-two hundred and twenty-four men. The cargoes of these vessels were sold for three million nine hundred and fifty thousand dollars in specie, of which sum Mr. Tracy contributed or advanced one hundred and sixty-seven thousand two hundred and nineteen dollars to the public service. Privateering, however, did not prove a permanent success. As convoys were more carefully furnished to English ships, prizes became less frequent, and the usual hazards of the sea, together with energetic efforts on the part of British men-of-war to check the career of these "birds of prey," brought disaster and ruin to many of those that had at first dreamed of wealth and luxury as the fruit of their enterprise. No less than twenty-two vessels fitted out at Newburyport, manned by a thousand men, were either wrecked or destroyed, leaving no record of their fate.

Nathaniel Tracy, the leader in privateering enterprises, was born in 1749, in that part of Newbury which was in 1764 incorporated as Newburyport. He was the son of Patrick Tracy, a prominent merchant of that town, and graduated at Harvard in 1769. After leaving college he very soon entered into business with Jonathan Jackson, and at the beginning of the Revolution was conducting a large and profitable foreign trade. His rapidly-acquired wealth enabled him to live surrounded by all the comforts and luxuries harmonizing with his refined tastes, and in his town house in Newburyport, and at his country house in Salisbury, he dispensed boundless hospitality. At one time he was the owner of the Cragie mansion in Cambridge, in which Washington had his headquarters, and which received its final consecration from the life and death of Longfellow within it walls. By the final misfortunes of the war, among which was the failure of the government to reimburse him for

expenditures in the public service, he was reduced to a bankruptcy from which he found it impossible to recuperate. The brick mansion-house on State Street built and occupied by him has been somewhat remodeled for the use of the Public Library, which now occupies it. The alterations, however, which it was necessary to make, have not obliterated or concealed the elegance which once characterized it. In 1789, on the occasion of the visit of Washington to Newburyport, the house of Mr. Tracy was his home, and there he spent the night of Friday, November 1st, previous to his departure for New Hampshire the next day. There he was welcomed by an address written by John Quincy Adams, then a student in the office of Theophilus Parsons, to which Washington replied that in visiting Newburyport he had obeyed a favorite inclination, and was gratified by its indulgence, that in expressing a sincere wish for its prosperity and the happiness of its inhabitants he did but justice to his own sentiments and their merits.

The house afterwards came into the possession of James Prince, and while occupied by him was the home of Lafayette during his visit to Newburyport in August, 1824. The bed and furniture of the chamber in which Washington had slept had been retained, notwithstanding the change in their ownership, and were now, thirty-five years later, at the service of Washington's distinguished friend.

Jonathan Jackson, Mr. Tracy's partner in business, was born in Boston and was a graduate of Harvard in 1761. He was a member of the Continental Congress in 1780, marshal of the district of Massachusetts under Washington, treasurer of Harvard College, and also treasurer of the Commonwealth. His wife was a Miss Barnard, of Salem, and the distinction which he won by a life of activity, integrity and usefulness was fully maintained by his sons,—Charles, a graduate of Harvard in 1793, and a lawyer, who became in 1813 Judge of the Supreme Judicial Court; James, a Harvard graduate of 1796, and for many years the honored head of the medical profession in Boston; Henry, an eminent shipmaster; and Patrick Tracy Jackson, the distinguished merchant, who, by his consummate skill and business enterprise, conjoined to the inventive genius and mathematical powers of his partner and friend, Francis C. Lowell, laid the foundations of the cotton manufacture of New England, and finally conceived and created the city of Lowell.

There were other citizens of Newburyport to whom some reference should be made before this narrative leaves the Revolutionary period of its history. The members of the bar of that period, as well as of all other periods covered by this history,—Theophilus Parsons, Rufus King, Tristram Dalton, Daniel Farnham, Charles Jackson, John Lowell, Benjamin Greenleaf, Stephen Sewall, Theophilus Bradbury and many others,—are sketched in the chapter on the Bench and Bar in this work, and require no further mention here. There were others in various walks of life, who performed their full share in giving character to the generation in which they lived. Without any attempt to classify these, they will be mentioned in the order in which they suggest themselves.

Newburyport has been able to boast of few men more distinguished than Jacob Perkins. Though he won his chief distinction after the close of the war, his business life began while it was in progress, and gives the Revolutionary period a right to claim him as its own. He was born in Newburyport, July 9, 1766, two years after its incorporation. His father, Matthew Perkins, removed in early life from Ipswich to Newburyport, and was descended from Abraham Perkins, who appeared in Hampton as early as 1639. The family seems to have inherited from its ancestors a fondness for Biblical names, to which the Matthews and Marks and Lukes and Johns and Isaacs and Jacobs in various generations have abundantly testified. The only education which Jacob Perkins received was that of the common schools of his native city, the welfare and perfection of which the separation from Newbury was sought to promote, and it is possible therefore that to that separation may have been due the display of the mechanical powers which he afterwards so remarkably exhibited. At the age of twelve he was apprenticed to a goldsmith of Newburyport by the name of Davis, who died three years afterwards, and left him in the management of his business. He won his earliest reputation in the manufacture of gold beads, then in fashion, from the Portuguese joes, in circulation at that time, and shoe-buckles, a new method of plating which, discovered by him, enabled him to undersell all competitors. He next turned his attention to machinery. Under the old confederation, the State of Massachusetts established a mint for striking copper coins. Perkins, then at the age of twenty-one, was employed by the government to make a suitable die, and the old Massachusetts cents stamped with the eagle and the Indian were the work of his skill. At the age of twenty-four he invented a machine for cutting and heading nails by one operation,—a machine which, with later improvements, has carried the daily product of one man's labor from one thousand nails to ten kegs of one hundred pounds each. He next invented the stereotype check-plate for the prevention of counterfeit bank-bills, and thus imposed an important obstacle in the way of frauds, from which the community were daily suffering. During the War of 1812 he was employed in constructing machinery for boring out old honey-combed cannon, and in perfecting the science of gunnery. He discovered the method of softening and hardening steel, by which the process of engraving on that metal was made more easy. He demonstrated the compressibility of water, and, in connection with this discovery, invented the bathometer to measure the

depth of the sea by the pressure of water, and the pleometer to measure a ship's speed.

After leaving Newburyport in 1816 he lived for a time in Philadelphia, and there devoted himself to experiments on the power of steam, by which he invented a new method of generating it by suddenly letting a small quantity of water into a heated vessel and it is said that he succeeded in employing steam at a pressure of sixty-five atmospheres, or 975 pounds to the square inch. After a short residence in Philadelphia he removed to London, where the steam gun, which he had patented in the United States in 1819, attracted the notice of the government, and which he exhibited with trials of its operation before the Duke of Wellington, in 1823. At a distance of thirty-five yards the gun sent its balls through eleven planks, each an inch thick and placed an inch apart, and was capable of discharging one thousand balls per minute. Nothwithstanding his unremitting and useful labors in the cause of science, he never acquired a fortune, and died in London, July 13, 1849, leaving behind him in the country of his adoption a well-earned fame and the title of the "American Inventor."

Michael Hodge was a man who filled a large space in Revolutionary days. Previous to the Revolution he was a captain in the merchant marine, and in 1776 was appointed naval officer of the port of Newburyport. It is probable that previous to that time, since about the year 1750, the revenues had been collected by a collector appointed by the King. But in 1776 an act was passed by the General Assembly of the State of Massachusetts entitled an "Act for establishing a naval office and for ascertaining the fees," which provided that in the "several seaports of Boston, Salem, Marblehead, Gloucester, Newburyport, York, Pepperelborough, Falmouth on Casco Bay, Townsend (Boothbay), Penobscot, Goldsboro', Machias, Plymouth, Barnstable, Dartmouth and Nantucket, within this State, there be an office kept, to be called and known by the name of the Naval Office, for the purpose of entering and clearing of all ships and other vessels trading to or from this State, to take bonds in adequate penalty for observing the regulations made, or which shall be made by the General Congress or the General Assembly of this State concerning trade, take manifests upon oath of all cargoes exported or imported and keep fair accounts and entries thereof, give bills of health when desired, and sign certificates that the requisites for qualifying vessels to trade have been complied with, and the fees to be demanded and received in said office shall be these following and no greater, that is to say:

	s.	d.
For entering any ship and vessel from any part of the state	2	0
For clearing any ship and vessel to any part of the state	2	0
For entering any ship and vessel from any other of the United States	6	0
For clearing any ship and vessel to any other of the United States	6	0
For entering any ship and vessel from a foreign voyage	6	0
For clearing any ship and vessel for a foreign voyage	6	0
For a Register	6	0
For Indorsing a Register	1	0
For Recording Indorsement	1	6
For any Bond	2	0
For a certificate to cancel Bond	1	0
For a bill of health	2	0
For permit to unload	1	0
For a cocket	0	3
For a let pass	0	8

Under this act, on the 22d of November, 1776, Capt. Michael Hodge was appointed naval officer, and it is believed continued in the office until 1789. In that year Newburyport was made by Congress a port of entry, and the district included Salisbury, Amesbury and Haverhill. The first appointments under the act of Congress were made shortly after the visit of Washington to Newburyport, in 1789, and Stephen Cross was made collector, Jonathan Titcomb naval officer and Michael Hodge surveyor. In 1792 Mr. Cross was superseded by Edward Wigglesworth, who was succeeded in 1795 by Dudley A. Tyng. In 1803 Ralph Cross, succeeded Mr. Tyng, and remained in office until his death, in 1811, when he was succeeded by Joseph Marquand, who also held the office until his death, in 1820. James Prince held the office from 1821 until his death, in February, 1829, when Solomon H. Currier, the deputy collector, held a temporary appointment until the following July, giving way to Samuel Philips, who was appointed by President Jackson, and remained in office until the accession to power of the Whig administration in 1841. Henry W. Kinsman followed in 1841, William Nichols in 1845, Henry Kinsman again in 1849, James Blood in 1853, Enoch G. Currier in 1861, Wm. H. Huse in 1870, and George W. Jackman August 1, 1886.

In the naval office Jonathan Titcomb, the first incumbent, remained only three years, and was succeeded by Daniel Swett, who again in 1825 was superseded by Thomas Carter, who died in office in 1828. Daniel Foster was appointed in 1825, and at his death, in 1833, he was succeeded by Benjamin Stickney. Thomas M. Clark followed in 1841, Enoch Fowler in 1845, Thomas L. Clark in 1849, Nicholas Brown in 1853, George J. L. Colby in 1861, under whose administration the office was abolished in 1864.

Michael Little, the first deputy-collector, appointed in 1789, held office until 1821, when he was succeeded by Solomon H. Currier. Charles Titcomb followed in 1829, Thomas W. Burnham in 1841, Daniel P. Pike in 1861, and Charles W. Davenport, September 1, 1886.

Captain Hodge, who was appointed surveyor in 1789, as has been before stated, continued in office until his death, June 24, 1816. He was succeeded by William Cross, who was the father of Robert Cross, attorney-at-law, and his brother, George Cross. It is said the name of Cross was so well known in Washington and so identified with Newburyport, on

account of the war service and later civil service of many members of the family bearing it, that when the President received the application for an appointment to office of one of the Crosses, he asked if there were no persons of some other name in the town capable of filling a public station. Nathaniel Jackson succeeded William Cross in 1832, and was followed by William Pritchard in December, 1860, who was appointed to fill the vacancy occasioned by Mr. Jackson's death. In May, 1861, Henry Stover was appointed and held the office until it was abolished in 1874.

From 1780 to 1789 Captain Hodge was the town clerk, chosen by the town at its annual meetings, and in 1783–84–85 one of the Board of Selectmen.

In 1772 an association was formed in Newburyport called the Marine Society. It had its origin in the voluntary association of six individuals who met on the 5th of November, 1772, and agreed to form a society to promote the interests of shipmasters and to create a fund for the assistance of needy masters and their families. These six persons were Thomas Jones, William Wyer, Benjamin Rogers, Samuel Newhall, Edward Wigglesworth and Michael Hodge. The society was incorporated in 1777 and is now in the possession of a building and a fund of about $52,000, the income of which, enlarged by annual increments, enables the corporation to carry out with fidelity the purposes for which it was created. The following persons were members of the society at the time of its incorporation:

James Hudson.
Jonathan Parsons.
Samuel Newhall.
David Coates.
William Rogers.
Joseph Stanwood.
Wm. P. Johnson.
Henry Friend.
Nicholas Johnson.
James Johnson.
Wm. Nichols.
Joseph Rowe.
Benjamin Rogers.
Edward Wigglesworth.
Jeremiah Pearson.
John Barnard.
Robert Jenkins.
Joshua Hill.
John Fletcher.
Thomas Jones.
Wm. Friend.
Michael Hodge.
Wm. Stickney.
Moses Hale.
Joseph Noyes.
Nathl. Nowell.
Joseph Newman.
Moses Brown.
Wm Wyer.
Wm. Coombs.
Thomas Thomas.
Anthony Knap.
Eleazer Johnson.
Joseph Choate.
James Nichols.
Peter Roberts.
Andrew Geddings.
Amos Tappan.

The society has been legatee under the wills of Captain Joseph P. Russell to the amount of $2000; Micajah Lunt, $2000; Lucy M. Follansbee, $2000; and John Mussey, $500. The first board of officers consisted of Jonathan Parsons, Jr., president; Henry Friend, vice-president; Samuel Newhall, secretary; and William Coombs, treasurer. The present officers are Robert Couch, president; Albert Cheever, vice-president; William H. Bayley, secretary; and William H. Lunt, treasurer. Mr. Parsons held office from November 13, 1772, to November 20, 1772, and was succeeded by James Hudson November 20, 1772; Samuel Newhall, November 29, 1781; William Coombs, November 28, 1782; Michael Hodge, November 29, 1804; Nicholas Johnson, November 25, 1814; Abraham Wheelwright, November 25, 1824; Eleazer Johnson, November 26, 1829; Micajah Lunt, November 24, 1842; Gyles P. Stone, November 27, 1862; William Graves, November 29, 1876; Nathaniel S. Osgood, November 29, 1877; Stephen P. Bray, November 27, 1879; Henry Cook, November 27, 1883, and Robert Couch, the present incumbent, November 27, 1884.

During the Revolution the Marine Society performed effective service in the national cause. It was through the influence of its members, if not of the organized body itself, that measures were conceived and executed to put the town in a state of defence. They were active and conspicuous in efforts to organize and equip a military force by dividing the town into districts. Coates, Newhall, Hodge, Coombs, Thomas and Wigglesworth, all members of the society, were among the most active in sinking piers in the river and planting fortifications about its mouth.

When the military forces of the town were organized in 1775, six captains of guns were appointed,—Thomas Thomas, William Coombs, Joshua Titcomb, David Coates, William Friend and Michael Hodge,—with squads of six or eight men attached to each gun. It is not improbable that the Newburyport Artillery Company was a company which crystallized round these squads as the nucleus of its organization. There was formed in the first years of the life of the Marine Society an independent marine company, of which James Hudson, the president of that society, was captain, and it has been thought by some that this company grew into the Artillery Company. It is more probable, however, that while the artillery company was so far related to the Independent Marine Company as to owe its origin to the same source, the old company disappeared and the new one was organized in 1778. The first officers of this company were Thomas Thomas, captain; David Coates, captain-lieutenant; Michael Hodge, first lieutenant; Samuel Newhall, second lieutenant. The immediate cause of the enlistment of this company seems to have been a circular sent by the President of the Council to the various independent companies of the State,—

"Council Chamber, Boston, July 26, 1778.

"Gentlemen:—General Sullivan has signified to this Board his design of making a sudden attack on Rhode Island by General Washington's express command, and has called upon this state to aid his design, with three thousand of her militia, and to communicate his requests to the several Independent Companies and Gentlemen volunteers in this state to co-operate with the French fleet in the reduction of that Island. In compliance with such earnest requests of the General, and from the idea of the glory of such a conquest, we invite you and the worthy gentlemen under your command to march immediately to Providence to share largely in the honor of banishing forever, from the New England States and from America, the remnant of a British army, too long suffered to deal in blood and rapine in these sovereign Independent States. The gloom dissipates and we have reason to expect, from every appearance, that our exertion once more will close the scene of blood, and fix

you and your offspring forever free and independent of a tyrant, and place you at the greatest remove from connection with that field of blood, the British Isle.

"Gentlemen, you will signify to us as soon as may be your determination on this important enterprise, that General Sullivan may be immediately made acquainted with the force designed him from this state.

"Gentlemen, we are your most obedient, very humble servant.

"JERE: POWELL, President.

"Commanding officer of the Independent Company Newburyport."

The following was sent in reply:

"NEWBURYPORT, 31 July, 1778.

"Your much esteemed favor of the 26th and 27th of July this moment came to hand; am happy to have it in my power to inform the Honorable Board that the Independent company under my command do, with the utmost cheerfulness accept of their invitation, and will be ready to march by Tuesday morning next, at farthest, and flatter themselves that they will be joined by numbers of the good people of this town, as we are now beating around for volunteers.

"Am, Sir, with due regards, your most obedient, humble servant,

"THOMAS THOMAS.

"To the Honorable Jeremiah Powell, President of the Council."

This company, the rolls of which seem to be wanting in the State archives, is to be added to the list already given of soldiers furnished by Newburyport. In the expedition for which it was enlisted the town was well represented. General Jonathan Titcomb, of Newburyport, was in command of the troops from the four counties of Essex, Plymouth, Worcester and Bristol, and in the order of battle had command of the brigade on the left wing of the second line. John Tracy, son of Patrick Tracy and a graduate of Harvard in 1771; Stephen Sewall, a graduate of Harvard in 1761 and town clerk from 1764 to 1775; Michael Hodge, and Rufus King, a graduate of Harvard in the previous year, and afterwards the distinguished United States Senator from the State of New York, then a resident of Newburyport, were on the staff of General Jonathan Glover, of Marblehead, who commanded the brigade on the left of the first line. Enoch Titcomb acted on the staff of General Titcomb, while the ranks of the Artillery Company contained many men prominent in various walks of life. The expedition, as is well known, was a failure, and after a short absence the company returned as a distinct organization from the only service in the field which it was called on to perform during the war.

Hon. Eben F. Stone, in an address delivered May 16, 1877, before the veteran Artillery Company, already freely used in this narrative, says that in "the first year of the existence of the Artillery Company Michael Hodge was its life and soul." He was the son of Charles and Elizabeth (Titcomb) Hodge, and married Sarah, daughter of Stephen Sewall, one of his predecessors in the office of town clerk. He was engaged in commerce and shipping for many years, and was secretary of the first insurance company established in Newburyport. He died June 24, 1816, leaving a son, Michael, a graduate of Harvard in 1799, a lawyer and a man of unusual culture, who married, in 1805, Mary Johnson, of Newburyport, and in 1814, Betsey Hayward, daughter of Dr. James Thacher, of Plymouth, and widow of Daniel Elliott, of Savannah, Georgia.

Captain Thomas Thomas, the first commander of the Artillery Company, who commanded it in the Rhode Island expedition, was a Welshman, who, before the war, was in the merchant service in the employ of Michael Dalton, the father of Hon. Tristram Dalton, the United States Senator. He was one of nine merchants to furnish four vessels of war for the disastrous Penobscot expedition—the ship "Monmouth," Capt. Alexander Ross; the ship "Sky Rocket," Capt. Burke; the brigantine "Pallas," Capt. James Johnson; and the ship "Vengeance," commanded by himself. After the failure of Jonathan Jackson, the partner of Nathaniel Tracy, who built the house in later times known as the Dexter house, Captain Thomas purchased the house and there died in 1796. He was a man "of great spirit and courage, full of daring and adventure," and in the early part of the war, in command of the "Yankee Hero," met with great success as a privateersman.

David Coates, another officer of the artillery, was a native of Gloucester and before the war sailed as master in the employ of Nathaniel Tracy and Jonathan Jackson. He served his adopted town in the Legislature, and in 1783–84–85 was a member of the Board of Selectmen. Samuel Newhall, the second lieutenant of the artillery, so far as is known, held no public office and died soon after the war.

Samuel Allyne Otis, for some time a member of the firm of Coffin & Otis, whose place of business was on Summer Street, was a brother of Harrison Gray Otis, of Boston. He came to Newburyport in early manhood and made that place his residence until his death, October 27, 1814. The widow of Mr. Otis married Arthur Gilman, the father of the late well-known Arthur Gilman, the architect, of Boston. He was descended from John Otis, of Barnstable, England, who settled in Hingham, Massachsetts, in 1635. A grandson of John bearing the same name removed to Barnstable, Mass., and had a son James, who married Mary, daughter of Joseph Allyne, of Wethersfield, Conn., and was the grandfather of Samuel Allyne. He was born in Boston in 1773 and died in 1817. He was on the Board of Selectmen in 1798.

Nicholas Pike should be remembered as a prominent man of this period. He was the son of Rev. James Pike, of Somersworth, where he was born in 1743. He graduated at Harvard in 1766, and was principal of the grammar school in Newburyport for many years. He published, in 1788, an arithmatic which had for a long time a place in the public schools of New England and was the first publication of the kind in America. He acted as moderator of annual town-meetings in 1783, '93, '94, '98, '99, 1805, '07, '10; was town clerk from 1776 to 1779 and a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1782. He died December 9, 1819.

Of Stephen and Ralph Cross nothing more fitting can be said than the following, taken from Cushing's "History of Newburyport." "Stephen was born in 1731

and Ralph in 1738. They were both brought up shipwrights in the building yard of their father, Ralph Cross, opposite the bottom of Lime Street. Stephen was one of a number of his trade who went to the lakes in 1756, to construct a flotilla. He and his associates were made prisoners at the fall of Fort Oswego, and carried to Quebec and thence to France. On his return he formed a co-partnership with his brother Ralph. The business of the firm was extensive. In addition to their ship-building, the partners were engaged in trade at home and abroad, and at the commencement of the Revolution were fast becoming affluent. . . . Stephen was chosen one of the delegates to the First Provincial Congress. He died March 30, 1809. At the commencement of the Revolution Ralph was a captain in the militia, commissioned by the Royal Governor in 1772. In 1777 he joined the army as lieutenant-colonel of the regiment commanded by Colonel Johnson, of Andover." He was in the battle which occasioned the surrender of Burgoyne. "The brothers, with others, contracted with the State and built the frigates 'Hancock,' 'Boston' and 'Protector' and several other vessels of war. The 'Hancock' was built in the yard of Jonathan Greenleaf, between Bartlett's and Johnson's wharves, and the two others at the yard of Stephen Cross, afterwards occupied by Titcomb & Lunt as a mast-yard." Stephen was a member of the first Board of Selectmen and served in the same capacity in 1772, '74, '87, '88. He also served as moderator in 1775, '80 and '97. He was also the first collector of the port, having been appointed by Washington to that office in 1789. Ralph was a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1768, a member of the first School Committee, a member of the Committee of Safety and Correspondence and collector of the port from 1803 until his death, September 4, 1811. He was also, from 1790 to 1796, brigadier-general of the militia and for a time commissioner under the bankrupt law.

Jonathan Greenleaf was born in that part of Newbury which is now Newburyport, in 1723. He was a cousin of Benjamin Greenleaf, who was Probate judge. He was apprenticed when young to Edward Presbury, a prosperous ship-builder, and afterwards married his daughter. He rose to wealth and influence, and was a member of the Continental Congress and in both branches of the State Legislature. From 1799 until his death, May 25, 1807, he was president of the board of trustees of Byfield Academy, and during his whole life commanded the confidence and respect of his townsmen. In the organization of the town, in February, 1764, he was chosen one of the assessors and presided at the annual town-meetings of 1771, '90, '91, '92, '95, and was a member of the Committee of Safety and Correspondence. Benjamin Greenleaf, his cousin, was born in Newburyport in March, 1732, and died in January, 1799. He was a graduate of Harvard in 1751, a member of the Executive Council during the war, a member of the Committee of Safety, a member of the Massachusetts Senate, chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas, and judge of Probate for the county of Essex. He was also president of the trustees of Byfield Academy from 1784 to his death, in 1799. He was one of the town committee chosen in 1764 to organize the school system of the town, and a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1764, '66, '67, '68, '72, '74, '75.

Micajah Sawyer was an eminent physician, who was born in Newbury in 1737 and graduated at Harvard in 1756. He was a member of the Committee of Safety and the treasurer of Dummer Academy from 1784 to 1809. He married a daughter of Daniel Farnham and died September 29, 1815.

Patrick Tracy came from Ireland as a young sailor, and making Newburyport his home, became first an enterprising ship-master and finally a prosperous merchant. He was the father of Nathaniel Tracy, of whom mention has already been made. At the time of the organization of the town he was chosen one of the overseers of the poor, and he was one of the Committee of Safety and Correspondence.

Colonel Moses Titcomb is worthy of mention in connection with this period. He was descended from William Titcomb, one of the original settlers in Newbury. He was a blacksmith by trade and a man of gigantic strength. In 1747, by order of Brigadier-General Waldo, he took command of the troops stationed at Falmouth (now Portland), where he remained from May to October of that year. He was a member of the Third Church in Newbury, within the limits of what afterwards became Newburyport, and though he died a few years before the incorporation of that town, the military spirit which he displayed, and which was afterwards, during the Revolution, repeated by many of his kinsmen in Newburyport, deserves a place in this record. He was killed in the battle at Lake George, September 8, 1755, by one of the Indian allies of the French, who had gained the flank of his regiment unperceived.

Enoch Titcomb was a prominent citizen in the earlier days of the town. At its first meeting, in February, 1764, he was chosen one of the Board of Selectmen and served again in that capacity in 1782. He was town clerk from 1790 to 1796 and presided at the annual town-meetings of 1782–84, 1803–04. He served as an officer under General Sullivan in Rhode Island, and after the war was many years either Senator or Representative in the State Legislature. He died August 13, 1814, at the age of sixty-two.

Jonathan Titcomb was also prominent in the early days of the town. He was moderator at the annual town-meetings in 1778, '79, '81, '86, '87, and a selectman in 1773, '74, '75, '77, '78, '80, '86, '88. He commanded a regiment under General Sullivan, was a member of the convention to form the State Constitution and a member of the first General Court of the Commonwealth. He was also appointed naval

officer of the district of Newburyport by Washington in 1789. He died March 10, 1817.

Ezra Lunt was born in Newburyport and enlisted and commanded a company which was raised after the battle of Lexington, and marched to Cambridge in time to participate in the battle of Bunker Hill. In that battle his company formed the rear-guard, which protected the retreat. Capt. Lunt saw much service during the war and at its close opened a tavern in Federal Street, but soon removed to Ohio, where he died in 1803. His brothers Henry and Daniel were both active in their country's service—as daring and fearless on the sea as their brother on the land. Their cousin, Cutting Lunt, was also engaged in sea service and added his share to the well-earned fame of the family to which he belonged. Henry first sailed, in 1776 in the privateer "Dalton," owned by Stephen Hooper and commanded by Eleazer Johnson. She was captured and her officers and crew were sent to Mill Prison. In the spring of 1779 he was released and went to France, where, as midshipman, he shipped on board the "Bon Homme Richard," commanded by J. Paul Jones. He was soon promoted to a second lieutenant and remained with Jones in the "Richard," "Alliance" and "Ariel" until his arrival in Philadelphia in 1781. He then became first lieutenant of the ship "Intrepid," a letter of marque, owned by Nathaniel Tracy and commanded by Moses Brown. After the war Mr. Lunt continued in the employ of Mr. Tracy in the merchant service until his failure, and afterwards in the employ of Brown & Bartlett and Farris & Stocker and others, and died in 1805. Daniel Lunt was with his brother in the "Dalton" and his fellow-prisoner in Mill Prison and died in 1787. Cutting Lunt was also an officer on board the "Bon Homme Richard" and a prisoner in Mill Prison. Afterwards, while on a cruise in the privateer "America," owned by Joseph Marquand, he was lost with all on board. Richard Lunt, a brother of Cutting, was also in Mill Prison, and it is presumed that he was on board the "Bon Homme Richard," and captured with his brother while in a boat pursuing in the fog a boat's crew of deserters. The following letter, the original of which is temporarily in possession of the writer, was written by Richard Lunt to his brother Paul while in prison:

"PLYMOUTH, Mill Prison, September 24, 1778.

"LOVING BROTHER,—I embrace this opportunity to let you know that I am in good health by the blessing of Almighty God and hope these few lines will find you in good health. I was taken the 24th of December after I left Newbury by the 'Reasonable' ship of war off Cape Finistere, and carried into Plymouth and kept on board the ships till the 7th of June following, and then committed to this prison for high treason and see no more likelehoods of having my liberty than there was the first day I was committed, only time brings all things in this world to an end and whether they desire to hang us or not I cannot tell. Our friends have raised a donation for the prisoners in England, that we are comfortable for food and raiment, and I desire to be content with the allotment of providence. I live in hopes of see home again, but am afraid it will be a long parting. I hear that Dr. Franklin have been trying for an exchange, but as we are committed for treason I do not think of being exchanged before the war is over, and when that will be nobody in this world knows. So no more at present, but remains

"Your Loving Brother till Death,

"RICHARD LUNT.

"P. S. I remember my kind love to you and to your wife and my duty to my parents, and likewise my love to my wife and children, and to brothers and sisters, hoping they are in good health.

"Brother Cutting is in good health and desires to be remembered to all friends. Ebenezer Brown likewise. The Newbury people are in health."

Edward Wigglesworth was a native of Ipswich and, after graduating at Harvard in 1761, removed to Newburyport and entered the employ of Nathaniel Tracy and Jonathan Jackson as supercargo and shipmaster. In 1776, as colonel, he commanded a regiment raised in the counties of Essex, York and Cumberland under General Gates. Under instructions from General Gates, he went on board the fleet on Lake Champlain the third in command, General Arnold and General Waterbury being first and second. In 1777 his regiment took part in the battle of Monmouth, and in 1778 he was appointed by Washington president of a court of inquiry to investigate the loss of Forts Montgomery and Clinton, which were surrendered by Governor Clinton. In 1779 he resigned his commission and retired to private life. He was a member of the Board of Selectmen of Newburyport in 1783 and 1784, and in 1792 was appointed by Washington collector of the port, which office he held until 1795. He died December 8, 1826.

Moses Brown was born in Salisbury, January 23, 1742. At the age of fifteen he began a sea life with Capt. William Coffin; at eighteen was mate, and at twenty-five was in command of the schooner "Phebe," of Newburyport, which place continued afterwards to be his residence. In 1777, while he was in command of the brig "Hannah," he was captured and held a short time on board a prison-ship at Rhode Island. In 1778 he commanded the privateer "General Arnold," and in one of his cruises in her was captured by the British ship "Experiment." After his release he was in command of the "Intrepid," twenty guns, and the "Hercules," and a letter of marque of twenty-two guns, for which he was commissioned by the Continental Congress. In 1798 he was appointed to the command of the "Merrimac," mounting twenty nine-pounders and eight six-pounders, and joined the squadron at the West Indies. While in this command he captured the brig "Brilliante," sixteen guns; the "Magiciene," fourteen guns; the "Phœnix" and "Bonaparte," each fourteen guns, and retook a number of English and American vessels that had been captured by the French. Under the administration of Jefferson, Capt. Brown left the service and once more engaged in the merchant marine, and while on a voyage home died, January 2, 1804.

In the enumeration of those who were active in the Revolutionary period, the Rev. Jonathan Parsons, of the old South Church, must not be forgotten. He made patriotism a part of his religion, and to his inspiring words much of the spirit which characterized the people of Newburyport was due. After the news of the battle of Lexington was received, he made an appeal to his hearers at the close of the ser-

mon on the next Sunday, to form volunteer companies at once, and invited those who wished to aid to step into the aisle. Capt. Ezra Lunt stepped out, and enough with him, and then and there the first volunteer company in Newburyport was formed. He was born in West Springfield in 1705, and graduated at Yale College in 1729. He was first settled in the ministry at Lyme, Conn., and was there living when Rev. George Whitefield made his first visit to America, in 1728. In 1746, on the 3d of January, the First Presbyterian Church was formed by nineteen persons who had seceded from the old First Parish of Newbury. During the few first years of its life Rev. Joseph Adams, a graduate of Harvard in 1742, presided over its ministrations in a small building situated on High Street. In 1756 the society was incorporated, and the present venerable place of worship, at the corner of Federal and School Streets, was erected. It is indicative of the habits of that time that it was noted and has always been remembered that the frame of the meeting-house was raised without the utterance of an oath by the workmen and without the occurrence of an accident. The probable explanation of so remarkable a fact is, that no intoxicating liquors were drunk during the performance. While Mr. Parsons was at Lyme, he and Mr. Whitefield had formed a strong friendship, and by the advice of the latter, Mr. Parsons was invited to settle over the young society. In 1756 he was installed, and remained with the society until his death, July 19, 1776. He was buried under the pulpit of his church, by the side of his distinguished friend.

In the eastern corner of the church is erected a cenotaph to the memory of Whitefield, who, in a ministry of eight years, preached more than ten thousand sermons and crossed the Atlantic thirteen times. He preached his first sermon in Newburyport, September 30, 1740, and September 30, 1870, he there died, and was buried under the pulpit of the church in whose welfare he had felt a lively interest. Mr. Whitefield was born in Gloucester, England, where his mother kept the Bell Inn, in 1714. From the school of his native town he entered as servitor at Pembroke College, Oxford, and was ordained for the ministry by the Bishop of Gloucester. He preached in prisons and the open fields, and multitudes followed to hear him exhibit his persuasive eloquence. He first came to America in 1738, making occasional visits afterwards, as he could be spared from his labors at home, until death cut short his career. Many years ago some of the bones of Whitefield were stolen from the coffin and carried to England, but in 1849, many years after, the pastor of the church received a box, which, on being opened, was found to contain the missing members.

Rev. John Lowell was a descendant of John Lowle, a Welshman, who was one of the earliest settlers of Newbury. He was born in Boston in 1702, and graduated at Harvard in 1721. In 1725 the First Church of Newburyport was established by seceders from the First Parish of Newbury, and in the following year, on the 19th of January, Mr. Lowell was settled as its pastor. He was a man of culture and refinement, and to his example and influence was due much of that elevation of character for which Newburyport became distinguished. His library, large for those days, his scholarly attainments, his wide knowledge, together with a free and liberal use of his powers, could not fail to stamp and give tone to the community in which he lived. He died in 1767, leaving one son, John Lowell, born in Newbury, June 17, 1743, and a graduate of Harvard in 1760, who, besides many other honors, received the appointment in 1801 of justice of the United States Circuit Court for Maine, New Hampshire, Massachusetts and Rhode Island. Indeed, few men have been more distinguished, both for their own attainments and for those transmitted to their descendants, than the Rev. Mr. Lowell. Three of his grandsons, sons of Judge John Lowell, maintained the reputation of the family. John Lowell, born at Newburyport, October 6, 1769, graduated at Harvard in 1786, and was admitted to the bar in 1789. He received a degree of LL.D. from his *alma mater* in 1814, and became distinguished as a writer on politics, agriculture, theology and other topics. He was one of the founders of the Massachusetts General Hospital, the Boston Athenæum and the Hospital Life Insurance Company. Francis Cabot Lowell, born in Newburyport, April 7, 1775, graduated at Harvard in 1793, was influential in introducing the cotton manufacture into the United States, and the city of Lowell, named for him, stands as a monument to his memory. Charles Lowell, born in Boston, August 15, 1782, graduated at Harvard in 1800, and became the well-known minister of the West Church in Cambridge Street, Boston. Nor did this generation exhaust the energies of the family blood. John Lowell, son of Francis Cabot, and great-grandson of Rev. John Lowell, of Newburyport, was born in Boston, May 11, 1799, and at his death, in 1836, bequeathed the sum of two hundred and fifty thousand dollars to maintain forever in Boston, his native city, annual courses of free lectures on natural and revealed religion, physics and chemistry, botany, zoology, geology and mineralogy, philology, literature and eloquence. This establishment, known as the Lowell Institute, went into operation in the winter of 1839–40. James Russell Lowell the poet, son of Rev. Charles Lowell, is too well-known to be mentioned here. John Amory Lowell, of Boston, son of John, the founder of the hospital, graduated at Harvard in 1815, and became one of Boston's most distinguished merchants. Nor was the family blood exhausted in this generation. John Lowell, son of John Amory Lowell, a Harvard graduate of 1843, and, until his recent resignation, judge of the United States District Court, and Charles Russell Lowell, a graduate of Harvard in 1864, who, from a captaincy of the

Sixth Cavalry, in 1860, rose to be brigadier-general in 1864, and died soon after from wounds received at Cedar Creek, in Virginia, have borne ample testimony to the purity and vigor of the blood which flowed in the veins of Rev. John Lowell, of Newburyport.

Dudley Atkins Tyng, though a member of the bar, is believed to have neither studied nor practiced law in Essex County, and may therefore be more properly mentioned in this narrative than in the chapter on the Bench and Bar. He was born in Newburyport, September 3, 1760, and grew into manhood while the Revolution was going on. He was the fifth child of Dudley Atkins, who died at the age of thirty-seven. He received his early education at Dummer Academy, and by the liberality of Tristram Dalton, Jonathan Jackson, Nathaniel Tracy and John Tracy was enabled to reap the advantages of a college education. He owed his name to his grandmother, Mary, daughter of Governor Joseph Dudley, who married his grandfather, Joseph Atkins, an officer in the British navy, who settled in Newbury, and died in 1773, at the age of ninety-three. He graduated from Harvard in 1781, and in his senior year while the war was in progress, when the government obtained from the British commander then in possession of Penobscot Bay permission to send Dr. Williams, Professor of Astronomy at Harvard, to that bay for the purpose of observing a total eclipse of the sun, expected in October, 1780, the professor selected John Davis, of Plymouth, and Dudley Atkins, members of the graduating class, as his assistants in the expedition.

After leaving college he became teacher in the family of Mrs. Selden, sister of Judge Mercer, one of the judges of the highest court in Virginia, and also entered his name in the office of the judge for the study of law. He was admitted to practice in Virginia, and on his return to Newburyport was admitted to the bar of Essex County in 1791. About the time of his return an event occurred which, for a time at least, imposed a check to his career in his chosen profession. Mrs. Winslow, of Tyngsborough, Massachusetts, sister of James Tyng, then recently deceased, and the last male heir to a considerable landed estate in that town, feeling a pride in the continuance of the property, in at least the family name, selected him, a distant relative, as its possessor, and bequeathed to him a thousand acres of land on the condition, (which he accepted) that he would add Tyng to his name. After a few years of unsuccessful experiment on his farm he returned to Newburyport, and was appointed by Washington, in 1795, collector of that port. In 1803 he was removed from office by Jefferson, and at once took up his residence in Boston with the determination of pursuing his profession. Not long after his arrival in Boston, Ephraim Williams, the first reporter of the decisions of the Supreme Judicial Court, resigned his office, and Mr. Tyng was appointed in his place. His exactness and thoroughness as a reporter have always been recognized by members of the bar. His Reports cover the period from September, 1804, to March, 1822, and are contained in seventeen volumes. In the summer of 1822 he returned to Newburyport, and as a graduate of Dummer Academy, he organized an association of its alumni, and gave not a little of his time and thought in his declining years to the institution where his early instruction was acquired. In 1823 he received a degree of LL.D. from his *alma mater*. He married, about 1792, Sarah, eldest daughter of Stephen Higginson, and had a number of children, among whom were Rev. Stephen Higginson Tyng, a graduate of Harvard in 1817, who died in New York in 1885, at the age of eighty-five, and Dr. Atkins, of Newburyport, who resumed the old family name. He died in Newburyport, August 1, 1839.

There are others among the representative men of the Revolutionary period who might be mentioned, if the space allotted to this narrative permitted. Enough, however, has been said to illustrate the patriotic spirit which actuated the people of Newburyport in the trying times of the war, and the energy and liberality with which it was exhibited.

CHAPTER CXLIV.

NEWBURYPORT—(*Continued*).

SECOND PERIOD.

From the Revolution to the Close of the War of 1812.

After the close of the war the old industries and trade of the town at once revived. The activity which once characterized it had not died; it had, by the necessities of the time, been drawn into new channels, where it lost none of its vigor. As the necessities disappeared and these new channels were closed, it resumed its wonted course in the ordinary pursuits of peace. Like the ship after a storm, whose tattered sails and broken spars must be first repaired before the voyage can be successfuly pursued, there was much in the condition of the town's municipal affairs to be examined and readjusted before the people could with an easy mind enter into the race for personal gain. The debts of the war must be paid or secured; the schools must be once more carefully supervised and improved; long-neglected streets must be renovated, and all those interests which, during the seven years of war, had been overlooked, must once more claim aid and support. With these at last properly cared for, Newburyport entered again on a career of prosperity and wealth. The fisheries, foreign trade and ship-building rapidly grew, while the business of distilleries, which had never very much languished, largely increased in volume. So far as the fisheries are concerned, they cannot be said to

have been at any time identified with Newburyport, though at times one of its chief pursuits. In the first quarter of the present century there were employed in the district of Newburyport probably about forty vessels in the cod fishery and seventy-five in the mackerel fishery. The latter fishery had its beginning after the War of 1812. The fur seal and whale fisheries, both at one time carried on with varied success, have been long since abandoned. At the present time the fishery business has entirely disappeared, Messrs. Boardman and Sanborn having been the last to be engaged in it. The trade with foreign ports seems to have reached its maximum at the very beginning of this century. The stimulus given to business by the return of peace carried the navigation of the town before 1789 up to 99 vessels of 11,607 tons; in 1796 to 19,752 tons, and in 1806 to 29,713 tons. Of this amount, 25,291 was the amount of registered tonnage engaged in foreign trade. At the same time the duties on imports received in the district amounted to nearly $200,000. In 1805 there belonged to Newburyport alone, 41 ships, 62 brigs, 2 snows, 2 barques and 66 schooners.

There is no industry so thoroughly identified with Newburyport, and so creditable to its people, as that of ship-building. There are certain occupations and enterprises which seem indigenous to certain localities. They can neither be transplanted to new soils, nor be replaced by those which belong to other localities. A business to be successful must grow with the place, as the boy and his trade, the farmer and his farm, the merchant and his commerce. Nantucket has attempted in vain to introduce the cod-fishery: Newburyport and Plymouth have failed in their efforts to introduce the whale-fishery. We see all along our seaboard today, in ports which have languished with the decline of their navigation, what we cannot help looking upon as unnatural efforts to transform them into manufacturing towns, and thus divert them from their true destiny. It is perhaps, not too much to hope, that when the process of centralization which, during the last sixty or seventy years, has been drawing foreign trade from the smaller outposts to Portland and Boston and New York shall cease, the full waters of commerce will flow back to these depleted harbors, and restore the level which, in the natural order of things, must at last everywhere exist.

To Newburyport ship-building has always been an indigenous growth. The river along its front, reaching into the timber lands of New Hampshire, furnished at the lowest cost the best materials for ships. The ribs, planking, ceiling, beams and knees cut from oak timber, were floated from the forests directly to the building-yards, and enabled the builders to successfully compete with those in other less-favored places, where more costly transportation was necessary.

The building of vessels on the Merrimac was probably carried on at a date much earlier than any date which positive evidence can fix. On the 5th of January, 1680, the town of Newbury voted "To grant the petition of Benjamin Rolfe, Doctor John Dole and Richard Dole, for four or five rods on the flats from Watts' cellar spring to Ensign Greenleaf's, for a place to build a wharf, and a place to build vessels upon, provided they come not within ten or twelve feet of the spring, and make up said wharf within three years." Here seems to be tangible evidence that as early as 1680 ship-building was carried on on the river. According to Mr. John J. Currier, from whose valuable pamphlet, entitled an "Historical Sketch of Ship-Building on the Merrimac River," the writer has freely drawn, Watts' cellar was near the spot where the market-house now stands. In 1698, Ezra Cottle "began to build ships where Mr. Johnson did," just below Chandler's Lane (now Federal Street). Mr. Johnson seems to have been engaged in the business in 1695. Between 1681 and 1714 one hundred and thirty vessels were built on the river, one hundred of which were built in Newbury. The industry was recognized by the town as so important that it was fostered as one of its most valuable interests. For many years most of the building-yards were the property of the town, and leased for longer or shorter terms, in whole or in part, according to the wishes of the lessees. In 1711 a building-yard near Watts' cellar was let to Colonel Partridge, Mr. Clement and Mr. Hodges. In 1734 other leases are recorded, either made by the town or by the "Proprietors," who owned a strip along the river, intersected by the landing places and the building-yards belonging to the town. Mr. Currier states that in 1723 there was a ship-yard at Thurlo's Bridge over the Parker River, and that ships were built there that year. In the middle of the last century Gideon Woodwell built fifty-two vessels on the lower side of Water Street, near the foot of Marlboro' Street. Farther up the river Samuel Moggaridge was engaged in ship-building in 1720, and it is said that in 1766, two years after the incorporation of Newburyport, seventy-two vessels were on the stocks, between Pierce's farm and Moggaridge's Point.

Mr. Currier says, "All the vessels built at this period were doubtless duly registered, but no trace of them can be found among the colonial records at the State-House in Boston; and the papers and documents at the Custom-House in Newburyport do not extend further back then the year 1789, so that information in regard to them can be obtained from neither of these sources." It would be interesting to know something of the size, ownership and general construction of these vessels. It is worthy of remark, however, that many of them were built for merchants in England, and when completed they sailed from Newbury loaded with timber and agricultural products. The "Jew's Rafts," so called, were built in Moggaridge's yard for a Mr. Levi, a Jew. An English paper of 1770 announces the arrival of one of them as follows:

"The 'Newbury,' Capt. Rose, from Newbury in New England, lies at

the Orchard House, Blackwell. The above is a raft of timber in the form of a ship, which came from Newbury to soundings, in twenty six days, and is worthy the attention of the curious."

Among the leading builders before the Revolution, were Ralph Cross, who was born in Ipswich in 1706, and was the father of Stephen and Ralph Cross, already mentioned in this narrative; and William Gerrish, a descendant of William Gerrish, an early settler of Newbury. At a later day, during the Revolution, the construction of privateers was largely carried on, and in 1777 a sixteen-gun ship, called the "Neptune," was built, and when leaving port capsized and sank in sixteen fathoms of water. After the Revolution Elias Jackman established a yard and carried it on thirty years, and Orlando B. Merrill, who in 1798 built the brig "Pickering," fourteen guns, for the United States. In the same year William Bartlett, William Coombs, Dudley A. Tyng, Moses Brown, W. P. Johnson, Nicholas Johnson, William Farris, Ebenezer Stocker and Samuel A. Otis, Jr., and other citizens built and loaned to the government the ship "Merrimack," of about three hundred and fifty tons burden, which was commanded by Capt. Moses Brown, and during her five years' service captured a number of French vessels and recaptured many English and American prizes. She was built by Major Cross, under the direction of William Hackett, in seventy-five days. Her cost was $46,170, and at the end of five years she was sold in Boston for $21,154, when, with her name changed to the "Monticello" she was soon after wrecked on Cape Cod.

In 1799 the ship "Warren," eighteen guns, was built in Mr. Webster's yard in Salisbury, under the direction of Nicholas Johnson, of Newburyport, by contract with the United States, and commanded by Capt. Timothy Newman, of Newburyport. In 1810, the year after the embargo, which was so disastrous to shipping interests, was repealed, there were built on the Merrimac River twenty-one ships, thirteen brigs, one schooner and seven small craft, with a combined tonnage of twelve thousand tons. In 1813, during the War of 1812, the United States sloop-of-war, "Wasp," was built by Orlando B. Merrill, and about the same time two gun-boats were built by Stephen Coffin, in Newbury.

Among the later builders have been Joseph Coffin, Elisha Briggs, Stephen Dutton, Jonathan and Thomas Merrill, Joseph Jackman, William Currier, James L. Townsend, George E. Currier, Charles H. Currier, John Currier, John W. S. Colby, Enoch P. Lunt, Stephen Jackman, Jr., George W. Jackman, Jr., Eben Manson, Fillmore & McQuillen, Atkinson & Fillmore, Donald McKay, Joseph Pickett, W. B. Coffin, and Cyrus Burnham. The following vessels have been built in Newburyport since the Revolution, most of which are either enrolled or registered in the Newburyport Custom-House.

	Tons.		Tons.
1783. Brig Hibernia	108	1783. Schooner Hibernia	78
1783 Schooner Hope	95	1784. Brig Success	147

	Tons.
1784. Ship Thomas	230
1784. Brig Vulture	172
1785. " Sally	137
1785. Sloop Washington	67
1785. Schooner Fanny	148
1786. " Two Brothers	52
1786. " Abigail	73
1787. " Success	38
1788. " Polly	44
1788. " Betsey	21
1789. Sloop Nancy	83
1789. Ship Industry	206
1789. Schooner Hannah	82
1789. Schooner Pilgrim	58
1790. Brig Olive Branch	140
1790. Brig Mary	206
1791. Schooner Martha	33
1791. Ship Mary	163
1791. " Henry	262
1791. Schooner Martha	33
1792. " Dove	28
1792. Brig Nymph	35
1792. Sloop Three Brothers	77
1792. Brig Nancy	84
1792. Schooner Nymph	97
1792. Brig Sally	122
1792. Schooner Sally	89
1793. Schooner Stork	70
1793. Brig Minerva	143
1793. " Union	146
1793. Ship Peggy	213
1794. Brig Minerva	150
1794. Brig Peter	178
1794. " Wm. and Mary	92
1794. Schooner Mary	130
1795. " Three Sisters	69
1795. Brig Minerva	115
1795. Schooner Harmony	89
1795. Brig Friendship	155
1795. " Harriet	119
1795. Schooner Three Sisters	99
1796. Ship Wm. and Henry	251
1796. Schooner Sally	74
1796. Ship Commerce	173
1796. Brig Mary	135
1796. Schooner Bee	76
1799. " Alexander	81
1799. Brig Mary	134
1800. Ship Angeline	238
1800. Brig Salem	137
1800. " Amazon	110
1800. Schooner Cyrus	111
1801. " Triton	108
1801. Sloop Mary	85
1801. Brig Jefferson	138
1801. " Triton	43
1801. Sloop Mary	85
1803. Brig Mac	143
1804. Schooner Ann	76
1804. Ship Ango	270
1804. Brig Geo. Washington	132
1805. Schooner Eleanor	103
1805. " Rebecca	108
1806. Brig Unity	176
1806. Ship Boaz	304
1807. Brig Adeline	133
1807. Bark Circle	145
1807. Sloop John	73
1809. Schooner Alexander	47
1811. Brig St. Paul	266
1811. " Juno	196
1813. Schooner Traveller	77
1813. " Little Duck	42
1813. " Mink	32
1813. " Lark	41
1814. " Union	38

	Tons.
1814. Schooner Peace	36
1814. " Crocodile	40
1814. Brig Hesper	157
1815. Schooner Frances	72
1816. " Dolphin	80
1816. " Caleb	84
1816. " Four Sisters	115
1817. " New Packet	75
1817. " Eagle	97
1817. " Governor	58
1817. " Lady Brooks	109
1817. " Pickerel	41
1817. " Aegler	54
1817. " William	35
1817. " Dispatch	118
1817. " Horoet	38
1818. " Perch	43
1818. Brig William	138
1818. Schooner Success	58
1818. " Driver	53
1818. " Sea Serpent	65
1818. " Chas. Sydney	103
1818. " Teazer	61
1819. " Franklin	45
1819. " John Howard	54
1819. " John	41
1819. " Peacock	41
1819. " Peacock	51
1819. Brig Hannah	154
1820. " Ohio	129
1820. Schooner Robert	17
1820. " Oscar	54
1823. Brig Rapid	233
1825. Schooner Sarah Atkins	56
1825. " Euterprise	47
1825. Brig Patron	177
1827. Schooner Harriet	55
1828. " Essex	50
1828. " Maize	72
1828. " John	24
1828. " Francis	60
1829. " Bounty	60
1830. " Globe	48
1830. " Hurkasee	74
1831. " Triton	56
1832. " Fame	48
1832. " Mechanic	48
1833. " Glide	74
1835. " Regulator	46
1835. " Warren	46
1836. " Sea Flower	54
1837. " Asia	69
1837. " Unicorn	66
1837. " Rienza	66
1837. " Equator	64
1838. " Angola	30
1838. " Harriet	23
1845. " Alert	21
1845. Brig Merrimac	148
1846. " Ansonia	199
1846. Brig Lanerk	299
1847. Schooner Factory Girl	20
1847. " HannahGrant	104
1847. Ship Joshua Mansion	546
1848. Schooner Margaret Ann	100
1849. " Alice	21
1849. " Antelope	75
1850. " Pearl	31
1850. " America	30
1850. Ship Arab	525
1851. " Inez	700
1851. Bark Falcon	510
1851. " Hesper	392
1851. Ship Victory	670
1851. " Huzzar	725
1851. Schooner Gen. Cushing	98

Tons.

1851. Schooner Mary Felker.. 109
1851. " Herald..... 94
1852. " Arctic..... 115
1852. " Abby Yale..... 22
1852. " Caroline Knigbt 121
1852. " Lydia..... 99
1852. " Huntress..... 99
1852. " Flash..... 126
1852. " Golden West.. 144
1852. Ship Jirah Perry..... 335
1852. Bark Flash..... 344
1852. Schooner Rival..... 125
1852. Ship Parthenia..... 849
1852. " Russell Sturgis.....1000
1852. " Ariadne..... 800
1852. Ship Howadji..... 695
1853. Schooner Golden Eagle.. 42
1853. " Tekoa..... 144
1853. Ship Highflyer.....1195
1853. Bark Naiad Queen..... 319
1853. Ship Gulding Star..... 900
1853. " Constitution 1188
1853. " John N. Cushing... 633
1853. " Jabez Snow.....1073
1853. " Dreadnaught.....1414
1853. Schooner Fearless..... 122
1853. Ship Volaut..... 900
1853. Schooner Amelia..... 129
1853. Ship Whistler..... 820
1854. " Star King..... ...1170
1854. " Black Prince.....1059
1854. Schooner Flying Cloud.. 40
1854. Ship Sonora..... 708
1854. " Troubadour.....1200
1854. " Merrimac..... 598
1854. " Commonwealth.....1245
1854. Sch'ner E. N. Williams 55
1854. Bark Rapid..... 331
1854. Ship Free Trade.....1284
1854. " Mercury..... 849
1854. " Driver.....1595
1854. " Oliver Putnam.... 1074
1854. " Gleaner..... 1000
1855. Schooner Edward Hill.. 276
1855. Ship Moses Davenport.. 899
1855. " Brewster..... 985
1855. " Lawrence Brown.. 795
1855. " Old Colony..... 889
1855. " Lyra..... 812
1855. " Grace Gordon. 781
1855. " George West.....1123
1855. Brig Palestine..... 212
1855. Ship Gallego..... 610
1855. " Charmer.....1060
1855. " War Hawk.....1060
1856. " Courier..... 554
1856. " Daring.....1070
1856. " Blandina Dudley.. 873
1856. " John Wells..... 834
1856. " Blondell..... 630
1856. " East Indian..... 897
1856. " Indus..... 849
1856. Bark Algonquin..... 650
1856. " Orlando..... 270
1856. Ship Eddystone..... 950
1856. " Crown Point.....1099
1857. Ship Victory..... 1214
1857. " Sarah Newman..... 909
1857. " Riena del Seano... 1033
1857. Schooner Sarah Woodbury..... 222
1857. Ship Josiah L. Hale.... 1094
1857. " Reynard..... 1051
1857. Brig Timanda..... 173
1857. Ship Elizabeth Cushing 888

Tons.

1858. Schooner Lola Montez 105
1858. " Bucephalus.... 105
1858. " Hiawatha 166
1858. " R. B. Sumner 144
1858. " Enchantress... 159
1858. Ship Black Hawk..... 941
1858. " Star of Peace..... 941
1858. " Gaspee..... 856
1858. Bark Heroine..... 416
1858. Ship Renown..... 1040
1859. Schooner Lizzie Williams..... 86
1859. Schooner Prioress..... 36
1859. " Halo..... 163
1859. Ship Lucretia..... 896
1859. " John Porter..... 997
1859. " Charles H. Luut... 998
1859. Schooner Carrie Huse.. 178
1859. " Edward Lameyer..... 164
1859. Bark Germantown..... 393
1859. " Gehu..... 335
1859. " Persia..... 660
1859. Schooner Merrimack... 85
1860. Ship Fear Not..... 1012
1860. Bark Abdel Kader. 420
1860. Ship Albert Currier.... 1000
1860. Schooner Henry Perkins..... 196
1860. Ship Sarah Chase..... 568
1860. " Jacob Horton..... 1141
1860. " Glendower 1093
1860. " Albert Edward..... 840
1860. Schooner Charmer..... 116
1861. Ship Kenmore..... 1000
1861. " Whampoa..... .. 1144
1861. Bark Schamyl..... 416
1861. " Nabob..... 534
1861. " Star of Peace..... 125
1862. " Burnside..... 456
1862. Gunboat Marblehead.. 529
1862. Ship Mary Warren..... 925
1862. " Rangoon..... 1144
1862. " Winona..... 1142
1863. Bark Sarah..... 496
1863. " A. W. Stevens... 475
1863. Ship Valparaiso..... 1159
1863. Brig Newbury..... 261
1863. Gunboat Ascutney..... 1040
1863. Bark A. N. Franklin... 426
1863. Ship George Warren... 970
1863. " Longwood..... 1179
1864. " Edith..... 1116
1864. " Winged Racer..... 1228
1864. Bark Calypso..... 666
1864. " Eugenia..... 583
1864. " Mary Alice..... 710
1864. Schooner Eustace..... 236
1864. Ship Sapphira..... 1205
1864. Schooner Samuel E. Fabens..... 155
1864. Ship Naples 826
1864. " Elcano..... 1210
1864. Schooner Mary Lunt... 178
1865. Ship Herald..... 773
1865. " Tennyson..... 1217
1865. " Calumet..... 912
1865. Brig Sally Brown..... 426
1865. Schooner Oliver A. Lewis 23
1865. Bark George Kingman 412
1865. Ship John Harvey..... 756
1865. Brig Isis 338
1866. Schooner G. W. Brown 65
1866. " Ocean Pearl... 125

Tons.

1866. Brig Mary Plumer..... 397
1866. Ship Montana..... 1269
1866. Bark Warren Ordway . 481
1866. Ship Nonantum..... 1150
1866. " Elsinore..... 688
1866. Steamship Ontario..... 3000
1866. Ship Timour..... 900
1866. Bark John H. Pearson 422
1866. Schooner Matchless..... 96
1867. " Pyrola..... 135
1867. " Carrie E. Butler..... 92
1867. Steamship Erie..... 3000
1867. Ship Garden Beach..... 974
1867. " United States..... 1315
1867. Schooner Crown Point 103
1867. Brig Lizzie H. Kimball 290
1867. Schooner Commerce.... 107
1867. " Lizzie Thompson..... 71
1867. Schr. Lottie E. Cook.... 82
1868. " Martha T. Pike 81
1868. " Harvest..... 64
1868. Bark Signal..... 375
1868. Ship Augusta..... 1326
1868. Brig Tula..... 181
1868. Bark Agate..... 626
1868. Ship Monte Rosa..... 1338
1868. Schooner David J. Adams..... 103
1868. Schooner Charles A. Ropes..... 103
1868. Bark Metis..... 620
1869. " S. E. Kingsbury.. 520
1869. " Escort..... 636
1869. Schr. Annie Hooper.... 103
1869. Schooner F. A. Smith.. 117
1869. " Ben : Perley Poore..... 120
1869. Schooner Edw. Burnett 192
1869. Ship Whittier..... 1295
1869. Schooner D. A. Wilson 19
1869. Bark Envoy..... 589
1869. Schr. Hattie E. Smith.. 100
1870. Schooner Nettie Adams 25
1870. Schr. Rebecca J. Adams 78
1870. " Mary Burdett.... 196
1870. Ship Importer..... 1270
1870. Schooner Victor..... 166
1870. Bark Essex..... 700
1870. Schooner Spring Bird.. 124
1871. " Nellie C. Foster 125
1871. " Fannie Byrnes 103
1871. " F. H. Odiorne.. 270
1871. " Mary Bradford 8
1871. Bark Harvester..... 780
1872. Schr. Miantonomah.... 77
1872. Ship Franconia..... 1313
1878. Bark Jas. G. Pendleton 938
1872. Schr. Frank G. Dowe.. 411
1872. Schooner Cayenne..... 88
1872. " Jacob Housemau..... 150
1873. " W. S. Jordan.. 460
1873. Bark Wakefield..... 904
1873. Schooner South Shore... 390
1873. Ship Neauchus.....1288
1873. Schooner Cecile..... 174
1873. Ship Victoria..... 1349
1873. Schooner Edith L. Steere 265
1873. Bark John J. Marsh..... 410
1873. Ship Thomas Dana.....1445
1874. Schooner Annie C. Quinner..... 97

Tons.

1874. Steamboat Everett..... 25
1874. Bark Edward Kidder....1015
1874. Schooner Jordan L. Matt..... 139
1874. Ship Exporter.....1370
1874. " Susan Gilmore.....1204
1874. " Radiant.....1608
1874. Schooner Anson Stinson 224
1874. Ship G. C. Trufant.....1502
1874. " Reporter.....1350
1874. " Landseer 1419
1874. " Harmonia..... 1497
1874. Schooner Willie H. Lord 134
1874. " W. H. Lewis... 525
1874. " Wm. B. Herrick 550
1874. " Henry Withington..... 550
1874. " F. F. Nickerson..... 90
1875. Bark Albert Russell..... 762
1875. Ship Big Bonanza.....1473
1875. " Daniel J. Tenney..1687
1875. " Brown Brothers...1493
1875. Bark John Shepard..... 675
1875. Schooner Hattie S. Newman..... 145
1875. " Phantom 50
1876. " Ella M. Johnson..... 28
1876. Bark Haydor Brown..... 906
1876. Ship Farragut. 1549
1876. Schooner Ellie F. Long. 150
1876. Bark Obed Baxter..... 900
1876. Scow New Era.....200
1877. Bark William Hale..... 868
1877. Schooner Josie Johnson 27
1877. " San Blas..... 101
1877. Bark H. G. Johnson 1080
1877. " Abbie Carver..... 983
1877. Steamer Kitty Boynton. 45
1877. Ship Jabez Howe.....1648
1877. Schooner Forest Maid... 42
1877. " Mary E. Smith 33
1878. " Gertie Freeman 15
1878. Bark Harvard.....1033
1878. Schooner Genevre..... 8
1878. " O. T. Baley.... 58
1878. " M. A. Barstow 47
1878. " Ernest M. Snow..... 9
1878. Ship Frank N. Thayer..1647
1880. Schooner Jennie Seaverus..... 112
1880. Steamer City of Haverhill..... 174
1880. Schooner Promenade..... 8
1881. " Cox & Green.. 591
1881. " Ezra L. Ferris 590
1881. Ship W. H. Lincoln.....1727
1882. Bark B. F. Hunt, Jr....1190
1882. Schooner Benj. Hale..... 597
1882. " Ida L. Hull.... 498
1882. Ship John Currier.....1995
1882. Steamer Merrimac..... 263
1883. Schooner Chas C. Dame 597
1883. " Albert H. Cross..... 358
1883. " Albert T. Stearns 508
1883. Ship Mary L. Cushing..1658
1883. Schooner Maude Sherwood..... 524
1883. " William C. French..... 408

1883.	Schooner	Warner Moore	444
1883.	"	James B. Page	642
1884.	"	Rose Esterbrook	657
1884.	"	Leander F. Gould	70
1884.	"	John C. Gregory	379
1884.	Schooner	Maggie Andrews	615
1885.	"	Mary A. Trendy	425
1887.	"	Senator Morgan.	
1887.	"	Surprise	15
1887.	Steamer	Josie M.	20
1887.	Sloop	Tremont	9
1887.	Steamer	Minnesota.	43

The ship "Mary L. Cushing," built in 1883, was the last ship built in Massachusetts.

It will be noticed in the above list that the class of vessels materially changed in 1851. This was owing partly to the demand for larger vessels after the discovery of California gold, but chiefly to the annexation to Newburyport, in April, 1851, of a part of Newbury containing building yards, in which vessels of a large tonnage had previously been built.

The prosperity of Newburyport continued, with no other check than that imposed by European complications, in the last years of the last century, until the embargo in 1807. The population, which at its birth in 1764 was 2282, had increased to 4837 in 1790, to 5946 in 1800, and about 7500 in 1807. The registered tonnage, which was about 9000 at the close of the war, had increased to 14,819 in 1794, to 15,412 in 1800, and in 1807 to 26,799. This amount of registered tonnage has never since been exceeded, except in the years 1809 and 1810, immediately after the repeal of the embargo, when in the former of these years it amounted to 29,571 tons, and in the latter to 29,897. In 1808, during the embargo, it was reduced to 22,191 tons. The enrolled tonnage which, at the close of the war, was about 2500 tons, found its maximum in 1828, when it amounted to 14,707 tons. The tonnage employed in the fisheries was the largest in 1838, when it amounted to 7709 tons. In 1851 it amounted to 7435 tons, and since then has been steadily declining.

In the First Congress, after the adoption of the Constitution an appropriation was made for the support of the Plum Island Lights, and the light houses, with a certain amount of land, were ceded to the government. Previous to that time such coast lights as there were, were maintained by the States or by local authorities. Those at Plum Island had been maintained by the Marine Society. In 1790 Abner Lowell was appointed by the government "light tender," under the following commission:

"GEORGE WASHINGTON, *President of the United States of America.*

"To all who shall see these presents know ye: that I have appointed and do appoint Abner Lowell keeper of the light-houses on Plum Island, Massachusetts, to exercise and fulfil the powers and duties of that office, and hold the same, with three-quarters of a mile of said island on the north, and with all the authorities and privileges and emoluments thereunto appertaining during the pleasure of the President of the United States for the time being.

"Given under my hand at the City of New York the tenth day of March, A.D. 1790.

"GEORGE WASHINGTON."

The fleet at that time sailing from Newburyport consisted of six ships, forty-five brigs, thirty-nine schooners and twenty-eight sloops, making probably as many as two or three arrivals per day during the year. Mr. Lowell was succeeded by his son Lewis Lowell, who held the position until 1823, and will, perhaps, be remembered by some readers. He was a remarkable man, and united the performance of his light duties with those of a pilot and a life-saving service. The families of Newburyport whose husbands or fathers or brothers were on the sea, slept more in peace, knowing that the watchful eye of Lewis Lowell was open and ready to guide them into the river, or warn them of the dangers of a storm-beaten shore. He died at his post. On a wintry night he placed a basin of burning charcoal in one of the lanterns to keep his oil from chilling, and remaining too long under the influence of its fumes, was overcome, and found dead in the morning.

He was succeeded in 1823 by his son, Joseph Lowell, who served ten years, and was followed in 1833 by Phineas George, who served until 1856. Succeeding Mr. George were Francis D. Carlton, who served until 1861; Solomon Park, who served from 1861 to 1866; Joseph Lowell, from 1866 to 1870, and Henry Hunt, from 1870 to 1882. Since 1882 appointments to light-houses have been made by the Light-House Board by promotions in the service without regard to the claims of localities. When, by such promotions, a vacancy in Massachusetts is created, as is the case when a death or resignation occurs, the vacancy is reported to the collector of Boston and is filled by him.

A temporary ripple on the surface of public affairs, exciting an interest in the minds of the people of Newburyport, was caused by the efforts to form a State Constitution. In 1776 the Legislature voted that the Council and House "should enact such a Constitution for the State as they shall think best for the well-being of the country," and that it previously be made public for the perusal and approbation of the people. The old Assembly, which had existed under royal authority, was dissolved by Governor Gage in June, 1775. Until July of the next year Massachusetts had no legally organized government, and was for five years without a Governor. In July, 1776, a House of Representatives was chosen, in accordance with writs issued in the name of James Warren, the president of Provincial Congress, and was summoned to meet at Watertown. The new Legislature was substantially like that of the province, but was dependent upon the co-operation of the towns for the maintenance of its authority. As stated by Mr. Cushing, "the General Court was rather the Congress of these little corporations than the Legislature of an individual Commonwealth. When the General Court desired to ascertain the sense of the people it was usual to propose the subject in town-meetings."

The draft of a Constitution prepared by the General Court and then submitted to the town was not satisfactory to the people of Newburyport. At a meeting held March 26, 1778, it was voted:

"That this town are of opinion that the mode of representation contained in the constitution lately proposed by the convention of this date

is unequal and unjust, as thereby all the inhabitants of this state are not equally represented, and that some other parts of the same constitution are not founded on the true principles of government; and that a convention of the several towns of this county by their delegates, will have a probable tendency to reform the same, agreeably to the natural rights of mankind and the true principles of government."

It was also voted:

"That the selectmen be desired in behalf and in the name of the town, to write circular letters to the several towns within the county proposing a convention of those towns by their delegates to be holden at such time and place as the selectmen shall think proper; in said circular letters to propose to each of the towns aforesaid, to send the like number of delegates to said convention as the same towns have by law right to send representatives to the General Court."

In accordance with the proposition contained in these votes, a convention was held at Ipswich, in which Theophilus Parsons, then in the second year of his law practice, was a delegate from Newburyport. After a full consideration of the Constitution a committee was appointed to draw up a report, of which Mr. Parsons was a member, and his report, known as the "Essex Result," so satisfied the public mind of the unsatisfactory terms and provisions of the submitted Constitution as to lead to a convention to draft a new one in the winter of 1779–80, of which Mr. Parsons was a member and the final adoption of the Constitution under which, with its amendments, the people of Massachusetts have lived and prospered. In the Massachusetts Convention of 1789, to consult on the adoption of the Federal Constitution, Mr. Parsons and Rufus King were delegates from Newburyport, and it is perhaps not too much to say that the town they represented was largely influential in the final adoption of that instrument.

In 1789 the burdens of taxation had become so heavy on the people of the Commonwealth that an insurrection broke out in some of the counties, which has gone into history under the name of "Shay's Rebellion." A company was raised in Newburyport to join the expedition against Shay, the leader of the disturbance, and in March, 1789, the town voted "to grant to the soldiers that went against Shay a sum sufficient to make up their pay to forty-eight shillings per month." Capt. Ezra Lunt, who raised the first company in the War of the Revolution, took command of the company, but before he reached the scene of the insurrection news was received that it had been successfully quelled.

In the same year, as has been already mentioned, Washington visited Newburyport, and spent the night of Friday, the 1st of November, at the house of Nathaniel Tracy.

The troubles of the United States with France may be said to have begun with the commencement of the French Revolution in 1792. During the American Revolution our government and France entered into a treaty dated February 6, 1778, by the eleventh article of which France guaranteed our independence, and our government in return promised assistance in protecting the interests and possessions of France. The article was as follows:

"The two parties guarantee, mutually, from the present time and forever, against all other powers, to wit; The United States to His Most Christian Majesty, the present possession of the Crown of France in America, as well as those which it may acquire by the future treaty of peace. And his Most Christian Majesty guarantees, on his part, to the United States their liberty, sovereignty and independence, absolute and unlimited, as well in matters of government as commerce, and also their possessions, and the additions or conquests that their confederation may obtain during the war."

At the date of the treaty the islands of Martinique and Guadaloupe belonged to the French. The latter island, discovered by Columbus in 1493 was settled by the French in 1635, and continued a French possession until 1794, when it was taken by the English. After that date, during the next half-century, it was captured and recaptured and finally ceded to France in 1814. At the time of the French and American treaty, in 1778, it was in the hands of the French. The island of Martinique, also discovered by Columbus in 1493, was settled by the French in 1635, and continued a French possession until 1794, when it was taken by the English and restored in 1802, to be again taken in 1809, and finally given up to France in 1814. This island also, at the time of the French and American treaty, was in the hands of the French.

During our Revolutionary War, France faithfully met all her obligations under the treaty. During her own revolution her possessions in the West Indies were threatened by the English; but our government not only failed to meet its treaty obligations, but in 1793 issued, through President Washington, a proclamation of neutrality. The town of Newburyport supported the President in his proclamation, and in town-meeting unanimously voted:

"That in the opinion of this town the neutrality of the United States during the war now waged by the several belligerent powers in Europe, is consistent with the honor and good faith of our government, and not repugnant to any treaties existing between the United States and any of those powers."

It was also voted unanimously:

"That in the opinion of this town a strict and uniform adherence to that neutrality is of the utmost importance to the best interests and happiness of our Country; That in the opinion of this town the late proclamation of the President declaring that neutrality was a constitutional and wise measure, resulting from his ardent affection for his fellow-citizens, his knowledge of, and vigilant attention to, their just rights and interests; That in the opinion of this town any infraction of the laws of neutrality by any of the citizens of the United States fitting out, or being interested in, armed vessels to cruise against the citizens or subjects of either of the belligerent powers, or personally engaged in such cruise, will naturally tend to injure essentially the agricultural, manufacturing and commercial interests of this Country."

The United States government was placed in a peculiar attitude. The eleventh article of the treaty of 1778 could not be carried out without violating its "treaty of peace and amity" with Great Britain. A severe pressure, however, was brought to bear upon the government and people by those having, at the time, authority in France; and Citizen Genet was sent to America, commissioned to make the observance of the article a condition of our free commerce with the West Indies. Through the ingenious machinations of Genet a party sprang up among our people in favor of the French claim and in hostility to the neutral

policy of Washington. His influence extended so far as to cause the House of Representatives to refuse to vote the necessary supplies for carrying out the treaty with England. There seemed to be danger of a new war with the mother country, and alarm spread far and wide. At this juncture the inhabitants of Newburyport, ever on the alert to maintain the national peace and honor, met at the town-house and unanimously voted to present a petition to the House of Representatives, praying that the treaty concluded between Great Britain and the United States might be carried into operation, which they considered "essential to preserve the faith, honor and interest of our young and rising Republic."

Neutrality was sustained, and the treaty of peace and amity with England was observed. But new complications arose. English cruisers, on the one hand, claimed the right to seize goods of France found on board American vessels, and France, indignant at our failure to observe the treaty of 1778, adopted measures of retaliation and made our merchantmen the prizes of her privateers. Again, England, with the allied powers, agreed to prevent neutral ships from supplying France directly or indirectly with the necessaries of life. In accordance with this agreement, seizures or detentions of many vessels belonging to Newburyport occurred, causing great annoyance and serious loss. The annoyances of French cruisers and privateers were especially distressing, and the government of the United States at last issued letters of marque and ordered the construction of cruisers of its own to protect its commerce. At this time and for this purpose the frigates "Hancock," and "Boston," and "Protector" were built for the State by Stephen and Ralph Cross, and the brig "Pickering" by Orlando B. Morrell, for the general government. At this juncture, also, the "Merrimack" was built, as has already been stated, by the merchants of Newburyport and loaned to the government. It looked again like war, but this time with France. The people of Newburyport, however, were ready to meet the emergency and make the needful sacrifice. At a town-meeting held on the 30th of April, 1798, a committee, consisting of Benjamin Greenleaf, Charles Jackson, Theophilus Parsons, Samuel A. Otis, Jr., and Jonathan Boardman was chosen, and by direction of the town sent the following address to President Adams:

"*To the President of the United States:*

"SIR—The inhabitants of the town of Newburyport, fully impressed with the present important crisis of public affairs, are prompted, no less by a sense of duty than by their own feelings, to express those sentiments which the occasion so naturally inspires in the breast of every American. From the long experience of your conduct in the many public offices to which you have been called by your own country, they feel the most perfect confidence in your wisdom, integrity and patriotism; and they with cheerfulness declare their entire approbation of your attempt to adjust all existing disputes with the French Republic by an amicable negotiation of that spirit of conciliation which dictated your instructions to our ministers, and of the principles of justice on which they were founded. They learn, with equal indignation and astonishment, that this spirit of conciliation has been repelled with contempt, that those principles of justice have been disregarded, and that a heavy tribute, with humiliating concessions on our part, have been proposed to us in a manner arbitrary and unfriendly, as the price at which we must purchase the right of being heard. The inhabitants of this town duly appreciate the blessings of peace and neutrality, but they will never complain at the loss of these blessings when constrained them, to the honor, the dignity and the essential interests of the country. They consider the present interesting state of public affairs as a solemn appeal to the hearts of all independent Americans, and a call on them to come forward with unanimity and firmness in support of the government and the men of their choice, to resist with becoming dignity any vain attempt to derogate from our common sovereignty, or to derogate our national character from the rank it now justly holds among nations, to convince the world that we are alike uninfluenced by corruption and by fear, and that we will not be a divided people, the miserable slaves of a foreign power, or the despicable tools of foreign influence.

"Impressed with these sentiments, and relying with full confidence on the wisdom and patriotism of every branch of government, they take this occasion solemnly to pledge their lives and fortunes to support the measures judged necessary by the President and Congress, to preserve and secure the happiness, the dignity and the essential interests of the United States."

President Adams replied as follows:

"*To the Inhabitants of Newburyport:*

"GENTLEMEN—The address of the inhabitants of the ancient, populous and wealthy town of Newburyport, passed without a dissentient voice, at a late meeting, as certified by your selectmen, and presented to me by your representative in Congress, Mr. Bartlett, does me great honor.

"The astonishment and indignation you express at the contempt with which a spirit of conciliation has been replied to; your resolution never to complain at the loss of the blessings of peace and neutrality, when constrained to sacrifice them to the honor, dignity and essential interests of your country; to resist, with becoming dignity, any vain attempt to derogate from our common sovereignty, or to degrade our national character from the rank it now justly holds among nations; to convince the world that you are alike uninfluenced by corruption and by fear; that you are not a divided people, the miserable slaves of foreign influence, do equal honor to your hearts and judgment.

"Your reliance, with full confidence, on the wisdom and patriotism of every branch of the government, and the solemn pledge of your lives and fortunes to support the measures of the legislature and the administration to preserve and secure the happiness, dignity and essential interests of the United States, are all the assurances which the best of governments could desire from the best of citizens.

"JOHN ADAMS.

"Philadelphia, May 8, 1798."

But not until the year 1800 were the complications of our government with France settled. In the mean time those losses occurred which formed the basis of what are now called the "French Claims." Of these losses Newburyport had its full share. After 1793, whenever either Martinique or Gandaloupe was in the possession of the English, French vessels of war, under orders from their government, captured all vessels bound to such port with supplies, whether neutral vessels or vessels flying the flag of an enemy. Among the neutral vessels were many belonging to the United States. On the 30th of September, 1800, in order to be released from the embarrassing entanglements of the treaty of 1778, our government entered into a new treaty with France, by which it was released from its obligations on the condition that it would assume and pay all claims which American citizens had at that time against France for the capture and condemnation of their vessels and cargoes. These are what are called the French Claims, and only those are valid which are based on losses before the ratification of the treaty, September 30, 1800. There were losses occurring after that date, but in 1803, at the time of the purchase of Louisiana from the

French, the claims for these were denominated in the treaty of purchase a debt, and for the liquidation of this debt our government retained twenty millions of francs out of the eighty millions of the purchase money, and paid the claims to the claimants. There were still other losses occasioned by the French, and at the time of the purchase of Florida from Spain, in 1819, a part of the purchase money was retained for the payment of claims by American citizens for losses by the capture by the French of vessels in Spanish waters. These claims, called "Spanish Claims," were also duly paid by our government to the claimants. In 1831, during the administration of President Jackson, representations having been made that other captures had occurred after September 30, 1800, a schedule of these losses, amounting to nearly a million of dollars, was prepared and a peremptory demand made for the payment. These claims also were allowed by the French government, and the claimants have been reimbursed by the government. It is hoped that by recent legislation the claims which have been so long pending for losses, of which $682,608.05 were incurred by the merchants of Newburyport, will at last, before many months have expired, reach a final settlement.

The invasions of American commerce continued to be carried on. Not only England and France, but Holland and Naples and Denmark, joined in the depredations, and were rapidly sweeping American ships from the seas. Without either the ability or desire to check these ravages, our government entered upon a series of restrictive measures which changed the method of the destruction of our commerce, but did not avert it. In 1805 Congress passed a law forbidding armed vessels to leave the United States—adopting the policy of avoiding collisions instead of that of defending our rights. In 1807 a second law was passed forbidding vessels to go to foreign ports. Wherever this law was obeyed foreign trade was killed at a blow. In 1802 the duties on imports received at Newburyport amounted to two hundred thousand six hundred and ninety-five dollars, and in 1812 had fallen to forty-six thousand one hundred and ninety-one dollars. But when it was found that this law was successfully evaded, additional restrictions were imposed, and, in 1808, even the coasting trade was forbidden. Against this last act of the government the merchants of New England zealously remonstrated, and the merchants of Newburyport were not less zealous in their remonstrances than those of other towns along the seaboard. In 1809 the embargo was repealed, and once more trade and commerce revived. The non-intercourse act followed, prohibiting trade with Great Britain and France, and hung for a time like a cloud over the sea—but the restrictions which it imposed soon gave way before the concessions of these powers.

The next event touching the interests of Newburyport was the War of 1812. It is unnecessary to rehearse its causes and the long list of aggressions which led to it. It is sufficient to say that in that year war was declared with Great Britain. At that time the navy of that power comprised 254 ships of the line, 247 frigates, 183 brigs and enough other smaller vessels to make up the number to 1082 vessels. The United States had ten frigates, ten sloops and 165 gun-boats. Private enterprise must be invoked to enlarge and strengthen the resources of the government. At that time the population of Newburyport was about 8000; its tonnage was 22,933 tons; its duty on imports $46,181; its total property valuation $6,074,600. The war was no more popular in Newburyport than in other parts of New England, and spirited addresses were adopted by the town; and in anticipation of requisitions for troops, a general disinclination was felt to go beyond the lines of the State to fight. Votes were passed refusing to pay bounties to stimulate enlistments, and the almost universal feeling among the Federalists was opposed to any participation in the war. There were, however, many who not only obeyed the dictates of patriotism, but were inclined to follow where the hope of profit led, and there were soon fitted out privateers to engage in the struggle. The early capture of the "Guerriere" by the "Constitution," of the "Frolic" by the "Wasp," of the "Macedonian" by the "United States" and the "Java" by the "Constitution," excited national pride and tended to blunt the edge of opposition in the minds of some, but the Peace party continued strong and persistent. It is not certain that the heat of party feeling did not serve to stimulate the supporters of the government and induce greater activity in its behalf than would have otherwise prevailed. At any rate, before the summer of 1812 had passed, Newburyport had a busy fleet of privateers on the sea. The town, through a committee, on the declaration of war, in June uttered its protest to the Legislature, declaring that its people would march to the war only under the orders of the Governor and Council, and while they would defend their soil, they would "not stir an inch beyond." This committee was composed of Jeremiah Nelson, John Pierpont, Joseph Dana, William Bartlett and William Farris. But, nevertheless, troops were raised, armed men were sent to Plum Island and Cape Ann for coast defense, and a company of artillery served in the battles in Canada.

The first privateer to sail from Newburyport was the "Manhattan," and she was followed by the "Yankee," and the "Decatur," and the "Bunker Hill." Before the summer had passed, the United States sloop-of-war "Wasp," after capturing the "Frolic," had herself been taken, and another United States sloop bearing the same name was built by Orlando B. Merrill and launched in September. The "Argus" and "Antelope" letters of marque were soon at sea and all did good service in thinning out the merchant fleets of the enemy. The career of

Captain Wm. Nichols, of the "Decatur," deserves a more extended mention. He was the son of Captain William Nichols and was born in Newburyport in 1781. In 1796 he began his sea life, and at the age of nineteen he had been taken twice by the French—once in the "Fox," in 1798, and again in the "Rose" in the following year. After the last capture he was sent into Guadaloupe, from which place he escaped in a Swedish vessel and finally reached New York. Before the War of 1812 he was placed in command of the brig "Alert," owned by Captain Benjamin Pierce, one of the prominent ship-owners of Newburyport of that day. Captain Pierce gave the vessel to the government, and in the Smithsonian Institute at Washington a picture of the brig is preserved. While in command of the "Alert," Captain Nichols was chased by the British frigate "Vestal," soon after leaving Bordeaux and obliged to surrender. A prize crew was placed on board, and Captain Nichols and his mate and three sailors were left in her. Soon after the departure of the "Vestal" Captain Nichols, watching his opportunity, with the assistance of his mate, regained possession of the brig, putting the Englishmen in a boat with provisions and a compass and setting them adrift. Shortly after the recapture he was overhauled by another British frigate, and although he claimed that he had already been searched, he was taken prisoner and carried into Portsmouth, England, where the "Alert" was condemned and sold. This was one of those outrages which finally led to the War of 1812. Captain Nichols managed to escape his captors at a public inn, where, with prudence in drinking on his part, he induced imprudence on theirs, and gave them the slip. After many trials he succeeded in reaching Liverpool and securing a passage home.

Soon after his return, on the declaration of war, he was placed in command of the brig "Decatur," of one hundred and ninety-seven tons burthen, costing twenty thousand dollars and mounting fourteen guns, with one hundred and fifty men. Her principal owner was the owner of the "Alert," Benjamin Pierce. Soon after leaving Newburyport, by his courage and good judgment, he quelled a mutiny among his men and only a few hours after, so completely had he made himself the leader of his crew, he captured the bark "Duke of Savoy" and the next day the brig "Pomona." Within a week from leaving port he had taken one bark and four brigs. His prizes had so far depleted his crew that he decided to return to the United States. On the way he was overhauled by the English ship "Commerce," carrying fourteen guns, and a desperate fight ensued, in which Captain Nichols, by giving orders to shoot every man at the wheel, rendered his antagonist unmanageable and won a signal victory. The cargo of the "Commerce" consisted of 325 hogsheads of sugar, 118 puncheons of rum, 77 bales of cotton, 225 bags of coffee and some other general cargo. The "Decatur" arrived safely in port, having in fifty days captured ten prizes.

After refitting, Captain Nichols started on a second cruise in the "Decatur" capturing several prizes, whose prize-crews had so reduced the number of her men, that, when overtaken, on the 18th of January, 1813, by the British frigate "Surprise," of thirty-eight guns, he was, after a desperate struggle, obliged to haul down his flag. He was carried into Barbadoes, where he was recognized by the captain of the "Vestal," from whom he had recaptured the "Alert," and placed in close confinement on board the prison ship. His place of imprisonment was a cage built on the quarter-deck, five feet wide and seven feet long, and after thirty-four days confinement, he was taken on board the frigate "Tribune," and carried to England. Upon his arrival there he was subjected to the same severe treatment, heavily ironed and refused all parole. A remonstrance of the United States government was followed by the close confinement of Captains Woodworth and Barrs, two British privateer masters, with the same treatment as that under which Captain Nichols was suffering. After a sharp correspondence between the two governments, the English authorities yielded and issued the following, for a copy of which the writer of this narrative is indebted to the files of the *Newburyport Herald*, from which also this sketch of Capt. Nichols is almost literally drawn :

"By the Commissioners for conducting His Majesty's transport service, for taking care of sick and wounded seamen, and for the care and custody of prisoners of war.

"These are to certify that Mr. William Nichols, as described on the back hereof, an American prisoner of war, late master of the 'Decatur,' American merchant vessel or privateer, has been released from Chatham, and permitted to return to the United States of America in exchange for Mr. W. Barrs, taken when master of the 'Liverpool Packet,' British privateer, late a prisoner of war. And whereas the said Mr. Nichols is permitted to proceed direct and without delay from Chatham to Dartmouth, where immediately on his arrival he is to present himself to Mr. Jno. Puddecombe, the board's agent, for the purpose of being embarked on the 'Saratoga' cartel for America. All and singular, His Majesty's officers, civil and military, are hereby desired and requested to suffer him to pass accordingly, without any hindrance or molestation whatever, provided he leaves the kingdom within fourteen days from the date hereof; but if he should deviate from the route hereby pointed out, or be found in this country after the time allowed to him, he will be liable to immediate apprehension and imprisonment. Given under hand and seal of office at London this twenty-fourth day of June, 1813.

"George N. George.
"J. Douglas.
"John Fordes."

Soon after the return of Capt. Nichols he was placed in command of the brig "Harpy," of Baltimore. She was fitted out in Portsmouth, New Hampshire, and sailed Oct. 1, 1814. While in command of that vessel he captured the ship "Amazon," Oct. 10th; the ship "Bridget," Oct. 15th; the brig "Halifax Packet," Oct. 16th; the ship "Garland" and schooner "Britannia," Oct. 19th; the ship "Jane," Oct. 29th; the brig "William Nielson," Nov. 13th; the schooner "Nine Sisters," Dec. 24th; the ships "William and Alfred," and "Jane," and the

brig "Louisa," January 3, 1815, making eleven vessels in eighty-five days. One of these prizes sent home was valued at $300,000, and among his prisoners were a major-general and other officers of the British army.

During the war, though many months a prisoner and inactive, he captured twenty-eight prizes and six hundred prisoners, making up a record which cannot probably be excelled by any in the naval annals of our own or any other nation.

After the close of the war Captain Nichols was engaged in the merchant service from Newburyport, principally with Russian ports, and retired from the sea in the year 1830. A Democrat in politics, he was appointed collector of the port by President Polk in 1845, and, notwithstanding his eminent services in behalf of his country, was succeeded by a Whig on the change of the administration in 1849. He died at his home on Harris Street, February 12, 1863, and beside the imperishable record of his heroism, there were only left of his possessions two swords, a barometer, a silver tea service and a few papers to tell the story of his life.

In this record Captain Harry Parsons must not be overlooked. He commanded the letter of marque "Argus," and met with success far inferior to that of Captain Nichols, but yet large and creditable. Besides these two, there were few whose cruises were not either failures or only slightly profitable. On the other hand, there were many who were either captured or lost or returned to port with nothing of adventure or gain. On the whole, it is doubtful whether the returns from privateering equaled the outlay. Though the captures by that branch of the American naval service were small, considering the number of vessels along the seaboard employed, its very existence threatened such injury to British commerce, that the means adopted by Great Britain to prevent it, by either keeping her vessels at home or diverting her ships of war from hostile cruises to the services of convoying her fleets, as to give it an importance and value which no tangible results could estimate or measure.

With peace came congratulations and joy, qualified, however, by the burdens of debt and taxation which rested heavily on every member of the community. But before entering upon the third period of our narrative, which opened on the restoration of peace, some further mention must be made of the prominent men during the period which that event terminated. As the town had advanced in population and education and business, the number of such men had been steadily increasing, and it will, therefore, be impossible, within the prescribed limits of this sketch, to do justice to all.

The most notorious man of this period, of course, was Timothy Dexter. It is entirely unnecessary to enter into details concerning his character and life.

It is only necessary to say concerning them that his folly was merely the mask of wisdom and that often, when the object of ridicule, he was disguising sagacious investments and enterprises. He tolerated the popular belief that his shipment of warming-pans to the West Indies was made in ignorance of the climate of that latitude, and indeed encouraged that belief in order that the real purpose of his speculation might not be known, and that he might be alone in the market. He was born in Malden, January 22, 1747, and died at Newburyport October 22, 1806, giving in his will to that town $2000, the income of which was to be given to the poor of the town outside of the poor-house.

One of the eminent sons of Newburyport, born within the period, but better known in other localities, was Gardiner Spring. He was the son of Rev. Samuel Spring, chaplain in the army under Arnold in the expedition against Quebec. After the death of Rev. Christopher Bridges Marsh, the pastor of the Second Congregational Church (died in 1773), the church was without a minister for four years. An invitation was sent to Rev. Samuel Spring to preach as a candidate. His answer was dated Ticonderoga, August 12th, in which he declined the invitation as incompatible with his engagement as chaplain in the army. At a later date he accepted the invitation, and was finally ordained in August, 1777, remaining as the pastor of the church until his death, in 1819. His son Gardiner was born in Newburyport, February 24, 1785. At an early age his parents determined to prepare him for the legal profession, and after receiving a grammar school education, he fitted for college under the direction of Theophilus Parsons, and graduated at Yale in 1805. The next three years he spent in teaching school in Bermuda and reading law with Judge Daggett, of New Haven, and in 1808 was admitted to the bar. Soon after beginning practice he abandoned law and entered the Theological Seminary at Andover. In 1809 he was licensed to preach, and August 10, 1810, he was settled over the society worshipping in the Brick Church on Beekman Street, in New York. In 1861 the society removed to their new edifice on Murray Hill, and though repeatedly urged to accept professorships in Hamilton and Dartmouth Colleges, he remained with the society in the faithful performance of his pastoral work until his death, in 1874. During the last twelve years of his ministry the Rev. William G. T. Shedd was his assistant. He was the author of many works, among which are "The Attraction of the Cross," 1845; "The Mercy-Seat," 1849; "First Things," 1851; "The Glory of Christ," 1852; "The Power of the Pulpit," 1848; "The Obligations of the World to the Bible," 1844; "Memoirs of Rev. S. J. Wells," 1820; "Pulpit Ministrations," 1864; and "Personal Reminiscences," 1866.

John Pierpont, one of the town committee in 1812 to protest against the war, was born in Litchfield, Conn., April 6, 1785. In early life he was an assistant in the academy of Dr. Backus, at Bethlehem, and

in 1805 took the position of tutor in the family of Colonel William Alston, in South Carolina, which he retained four years. He afterwards studied law at the Litchfield school, and when admitted to the bar, settled in Newburyport in the practice of his profession. After a few years he abandoned law and entered mercantile life in Boston and Baltimore. This, too, he abandoned in 1816, and studied theology preparatory to his ordination as pastor of the Hollis Street Unitarian church, April 14, 1819. During his pastorate his pronounced views on the temperance question, which he did not hesitate to declare, caused dissensions among his people, and in 1845 he asked for his dismission. He was then pastor of the Unitarian Society in Troy, New York, until 1849, when he took a settlement over the Medford Unitarian Society, which he terminated by his resignation April 6, 1856. He was active in the anti-slavery as well as the temperance cause, and was the candidate at one time of the Liberty party of Massachusetts for Governor, and in 1850 the candidate of the Free Soil party in his district for Congress. At the age of seventy-six he took the position of chaplain of a Massachusetts regiment in the Rebellion, but soon left the field for a position in the Treasury Department at Washington. He published a volume of poetry in 1840, and was the compiler of the American First Class Book, which for a long time held its place in the schools of New England, and though superseded by others, has never been equaled. He was a man more than six feet high, erect in figure, quick and firm in step, with a face exhibiting unusual firmness and strength, with a spirit as bold and undaunted as it was sympathetic and gentle. Many of his poetical pieces were beautiful in the extreme, combining, as did their author, tenderest beauty with fervid fire. Many readers of this sketch will remember the following striking passage in the oration delivered at the laying of the corner-stone of Bunker Hill monument in 1825:

"Let it rise till it meet the sun in his coming; let the earliest light of the morning gild it, and parting day linger and play on its summit."

Let those who would learn the source from which Mr. Webster received the inspiration for this sentiment turn to the "Pilgrim Ode," written by Mr. Pierpont for the celebration of the anniversary of the landing of the Pilgrims, December 22, 1824, in which they will find the following stanza, unsurpassed for its brilliant imagery:

"The Pilgrim fathers are at rest;
When Summer's thrones on high,
And the world's warm breast is in verdure dressed,
Go, stand on the hill where they lie.
The earliest ray of the golden day
On that hallowed spot is cast;
And the evening sun, as he leaves the world,
Looks kindly on that spot last."

Mr. Pierpont died in Medford, Massachusetts, August 27, 1866.

Moses Brown was born in 1743, in that part of Newbury which is now the town of West Newbury. His birthplace, as stated by O. B. Merrell in the *Newburyport Herald*, from the files of which this sketch of Mr. Brown is taken, was the farm known as Brown's Springs. His education was limited to that which the common schools could furnish, and in his neighborhood the school was a movable one, often far away from his home. At an early age he was bound out to serve his time with a chaise-maker, whose shop was on Prospect Street, in what is now Newburyport. Young Brown was faithful, both to himself and his master, and when of age set up a shop on his own account for making and repairing carriages. He was a hard worker, and as he accumulated a little money, as was the custom in those days, when there were no savings banks, nor small stocks to invest in, he secured opportunities of sending small ventures to one or more of the foreign ports to which Newburyport vessels might be bound. These ventures consisted of small articles of merchandise, or hats or shoes, or dried cod and pickled fish or any other articles which he thought would sell at a profit. Sometimes a small box of fish costing five shillings would sell for forty shillings, and perhaps oranges taken in pay at two cents a dozen would bring at home five or six times as much. If the venture were a larger one, perhaps a barrel of molasses or a box of sugar would be taken in return, and readily sold in the Newburyport market. In this way the fortunes of many men found their foundations soon laid, and Mr. Brown was one of them.

It was not long before the carriage business was given up, and the purchase made of the wharf at the foot of Green Street, then called Hooper's wharf. Other investments in real estate were not long after made, of which the square, called Brown's Square given by him to the town, was a part. At the close of his career he was probably the largest owner of real estate in Newburyport. During the earliest part of his business life he lived in a house which stood on the corner of State and Charter Streets, but in his later days bought and occupied the house on State Street, which had been occupied by Tristram Dalton in his palmy days.

It affords some indication of the foreign trade carried on in Newburyport, to state that Mr. Brown, only one of its many merchants, at one time owned twenty brigs and schooners sailing to ports in the West Indies and Russia. A portion of the molasses received from the West Indies was used in the distillery which, in connection with other branches of business, was carried on by him. During the embargo and the War of 1812 Mr. Brown suffered heavy losses, but they were nothing compared with the deprivations of the poor mechanic and laborer, and to those, in the midst of his losses, he was a father and friend. He was one of the merchants who built the "Merrimac" in 1798, and loaned her to the govern-

ment, and all through the troubles which that vessel was built to assist in removing, he was always active and useful in his patriotic efforts to uphold and aid the government.

The Andover Theological Seminary, of which he was one of the associate founders, received from him a gift of $10,000, and the town of Newburyport owes much to his liberality. Besides the gift of Brown's Square to the town, he made a bequest to the town, which the following clause in his will will explain:

"I give and bequeath to the inhabitants of the town of Newburyport aforesaid, the sum of six thousand dollars, as a fund for the use and support of a grammar school in said town forever. And I do hereby direct that a special committee shall be annually chosen at the meeting of the said inhabitants holden in the month of March annually, for the purpose of managing and taking care of the said fund until a Board of Trustees may be established for that purpose.

"And I do expressly direct that the said principal sum of six thousand dollars shall be kept at interest, and that interest and produce thereof shall be applied and added to the said principal sum of six thousand dollars until the sum shall accumulate and amount to the sum of ten thousand dollars before any part of the said interest or produce shall be applied and appropriated towards the support of said school, and when the said principal sum shall amount to the sum of ten thousand dollars then the annual interest and produce of the same shall be applied for and towards the support of a Grammar School in the said town of Newburyport forever."

The will was dated October 2, 1824, but by a codicil dated April 2, 1827, the fund was required to accumulate until it reached fifteen thousand dollars before its income could be used. "And if," says the codicil, "the inhabitants of said town shall discontinue or neglect to maintain a grammar school in said town for the space of one full year, at any one time in continuance, then the said bequests shall become forfeited thereby."

Mr. Brown died February 9, 1827, leaving a large estate. By the death, in 1880, of his granddaughter, Sarah White Hale, widow of Dr. Ebenezer Hale and daughter of William B. Bannister, a considerable amount of entailed property in Newburyport was released from an entail which was a serious obstacle in the way of public improvements. Mr. Brown was a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1782, '88, 1801.

William Bartlett, descended from one of the earliest settlers of Newbury, was born in Newburyport, January 31, 1748. He received his education in the common schools and was apprenticed to a trade. At the age of twenty-one he had accumulated a small amount of money, and with this he bought a small piece of a vessel, which made a successful voyage and laid the foundation of his wealth. For more than fifty years he was an active merchant, passing through the storms of the Revolution, the complications with France, the embargo and the War of 1812, without any serious check to his career. He was one of the selectmen in 1784, '85, 1801, and was always relied upon in emergencies by his fellow-citizens for judicious advice. He was one of the associate founders of the Theological Seminary at Andover and gave $30,000 towards its establishment. He subsequently endowed a professorship and erected a dwelling-house for its incumbent. His total benefactions to this institution are said to have reached $250,000. He died at Newburyport, February 8, 1841.

John Barnard Swett was descended from John Swett, one of the original settlers of Newbury. He was born in Marblehead in 1752 and graduated at Harvard in 1767. He studied medicine in Edinburgh under Dr. William Allen and afterwards attended the hospitals in Paris, returning home in 1778. He joined the army as surgeon and took part in the expeditions to Rhode Island and the Penobscot. After his return he became eminent in his profession and died in 1796 from yellow fever, on its visitation to Newburyport in that year.

Nathaniel Bradstreet was born in Topsfield Oct. 4, 1771. He graduated at Harvard in 1795 and taught school in Plymouth immediately after leaving college. While teaching he was a student in medicine with James Thacher, of Plymouth, and a fellow-student was Benjamin Shurtliff, a graduate of Brown in 1796, and the recipient of an honorary degree from Harvard in 1802. Both married Plymouth ladies,—Dr. Bradstreet, Anna, daughter of William Crombie, and Dr. Shurtliff, Sally, daughter of Ichabod Shaw. The late Dr. Nathaniel Bradstreet Shurtliff, at one time mayor of Boston, was the son of Dr. Benjamin Shurtliff and was named after his fellow-student and friend. Dr. Bradstreet was the son of Henry and Abigail (Porter) Bradstreet, of Topsfield, and was the fifth in descent from Gov. Simon Bradstreet, through his son John, grandson Simon, great-grandson Simon and the last Simon's son Henry. He died in Newburyport October 6, 1828.

Jeremiah Nelson was born in Rowley, Mass., September 14, 1769, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1790. He afterwards engaged in mercantile pursuits in Newburyport and became a prominent man there during the troubles with France and the last war with England. He was an active and uncompromising Federalist, and as such was chosen a member of the Ninth Congress and served from December 2, 1805, to March 3, 1807. He was again chosen a member of the Fourteenth, Fifteenth, Sixteenth, Seventeenth and Eighteenth Congresses, and served from December 4, 1815, to March 3, 1825, and again a member of the Twenty-Second Congress, serving from December 6, 1832, to March 2, 1833. He was conspicuous in town affairs, having been a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1809, '10, '11, and died at Newburyport October 2, 1838.

Of Oliver Putnam there is little to record concerning his career. He was born of humble origin in 1778 and thrown on his own resources in early life. By good fortune in business he acquired a fortune at an early age and then devoted himself to the culture of his mind and tastes. He died in 1827, leaving a will, with Aaron Baldwin, of Boston, and Edward S. Rand and Caleb Cushing its executors. He bequeathed a sum of money for the support of a free

school, which is explained by the following clause in his will: "The residue of my property I give and bequeath for the establishment of a free English school in Newburyport, for the instruction of youth, wherever they may belong, and the executors will, if at the final payment of the foregoing legacies it should amount to fifty thousand dollars, pay it over as hereafter provided; but if at that time it should not amount to that sum the executors will retain it to accumulate till it does, and then pay it over to trustees for that purpose, to be elected by the selectmen of Newburyport. After the appointment of the first trustees, vacancies in their board to be filled by nomination from them, subject to the approval of said selectmen, who, besides, are always and at all times to have and exercise the right of visitation, for the purpose of looking to the security of the funds, and that the interest or income of them is applied according to the bequest.

"In the selection of trustees no reference is to be had to their places of residence, but only to their qualifications for the trust. The trustees are to invest the principal in good and sufficient securities, bearing interest or producing income to the satisfaction of the said selectmen, to be and remain a permanent fund, the interest or income only of which to be applied to the establishment and support of the school. The youth to be instructed in reading, writing and arithmetic, and particularly in the English language and in those branches of knowledge necessary to the correct management of the ordinary affairs of life, whether public or private, but not in the dead languages. The monitorial system of instruction to be introduced and used so far as it may be found on experience that it can be done with advantage."

A further allusion to this bequest and the school established under it will be made in the chapter relating to the schools of the town.

Jacob Little was a native of Newburyport, and born in 1797. At the age of twenty years he went to New York to seek his fortune. He there secured a clerkship in the counting-room of Jacob Barker, one of the earliest of the large merchants of that city. He remained with Mr. Barker about five years, when he began business on his own account as an exchange and specie broker. It was his habit to attend closely to his office business during the day and to visit the retail houses in the evening for the purchase of uncurrent money. In 1834 he was well known in Wall Street as an energetic, industrious, honest business man. He gave his whole time to his business until his annual income amounted to one hundred thousand dollars. On the introduction of railroads he identified himself with their construction and thus added to his accumulations until his wealth was measured by millions. But disasters finally fell upon him. After his first failure he paid finally his debts in full, and had a large fortune left. He continued in business with varying fortunes until his death, March 28, 1865. He was a bachelor until 1844, when he married Miss Augusta McCarty, sister of Madame de Dion, and at his death left one son.

Robert Treat Paine, though not a native of Newburyport, was a resident during a part of this period and may, therefore, properly be mentioned. He was a son of Robert Treat Paine, the signer of the Declaration of Independence, and was born in Taunton, Mass., December 9, 1773. He graduated at Harvard in 1792, and entered soon after upon a mercantile life. Finding this uncongenial to his tastes, he turned to literature and politics, and established a paper called the *Federal Orrery*. In 1795 he published a poem entitled "Invention of Letters," which attracted widespread notice, and soon after another, entitled "Ruling Passion" which added to his reputation. In 1798 he wrote the national song of "Adams and Liberty," and in 1799 delivered an oration on the first anniversary of the dissolution of the French alliance. At this time, inclining to the study of law, he entered the office of Theophilus Parsons and was admitted to the bar in 1802. He remained in Newburyport several years, gaining, however, more reputation as an orator and poet than as a lawyer. While there he delivered a eulogy on Washington, in January, 1800, and in 1801, by permission of the Legislature, changed his baptismal name of Thomas to that by which he has since been known. He gave as a justification for the change his reluctance to be confounded with the author of the "Age of Reason," and his consequent desire to bear a "Christian" name.

Nor must John Andrews be omitted, who, though a native of another town, was long a resident in Newburyport, and an example before its people of the highest virtues of a Christian life. He was born in Hingham, Massachusetts, in March, 1764, and graduated at Harvard in 1786, receiving a degree of Doctor of Theology from his *alma mater* in 1824. Two years afterwards, on the 10th of December, 1788, when only twenty-four years of age, he went to Newburyport, and was settled as colleague pastor with Rev. Thomas Cary over the First Church in that town. Mr. Cary died November 24, 1808, and from that time until his resignation, May 1, 1830, Dr. Andrews remained the sole pastor of the parish. He was succeeded in the ministry by Rev. Thomas B. Fox, and the *Christian Register* in a notice of his death said: "One trial which Dr. Andrews was called upon to meet, which none but his brethren in the ministry, and perhaps only the elders among them, can fully understand, was the voluntary dissolution of his connection with the society of which he had been so long the pastor—a trial which he met without jealousy or repining, giving with a truly Christian spirit a kind welcome to his successor, becoming his friend, extending to him an affection almost parental and thus showing that as he had been a faithful minister, so he could see another occupy the pulpit in which he had himself stood for years, and he was one of the most charitable

of hearers and one of the best of parishioners." He died in Newburyport, August 17, 1845, at the age of eighty-one years.

Edward Sprague Rand was the oldest son of Edward Rand, and Ruth Sprague, daughter of Dr. John Sprague. Edward Rand, the father, was the brother of Dr. Isaac Rand, of Boston, and both were sons of Dr. Isaac Rand, who, before the battle of Bunker Hill, lived in Charlestown, and afterwards in Cambridge. Edward, the father, removed in early life to Newburyport, and was largely engaged in business as an importer of English goods and hardware. Edward Sprague Rand, the son, was born in Newburyport, June 23, 1782, and at the age of seven years became a pupil at Dummer Academy, under Master Moody. After leaving the academy he entered his father's store, and remained there until he was eighteen years of age, when he was sent to Europe as supercargo. After two or three voyages, in 1801, before he was twenty-one years of age, he established himself as a commission merchant in Amsterdam, and continued in business there several years. After his return home he made a voyage to Russia, and on his passage home, in 1810, was wrecked on the coast of Norway, and finding no opportunity of leaving, was obliged to remain in Norway during the winter, thus causing the belief among his friends that he had been lost at sea.

After this voyage, previous to which he had been married to Hannah, daughter of John Pettingel, he remained at home until the peace of 1815, when he resumed business and for many years was engaged in the East India trade and a general freighting business. In 1821 he bought a woolen-mill in Salisbury, in company with George Jenkins, John Wells and James Horton, which, afterwards enlarged, became first the Salisbury Manufacturing Company and later the Salisbury Mills, of which he was for many years the president. From 1825 to 1827 he was president of the Mechanics' Bank, and was for several years Senator and Representative in the State Legislature. Mr. Rand died in Newburyport, October 22, 1863, leaving two children,—the late Edward S. Rand, of Boston, who was lost at Martha's Vineyard, on board the "City of Columbus," and the wife of Dr. E. G. Kelley, of Newburyport. Another daughter, not living at the time of his death, married Dr. S. A. Arnold, of Providence, Rhode Island.

Francis Todd was born in Newburyport, February 6, 1779, and began business in the dry-goods line at the age of twenty years. He early engaged in the West India and Southern carrying trade, and gradually extended his business, and enlarged his fleet of vessels to carry it on. The tobacco, cotton and sugar trade with the South and the West Indies, and trade with Russia, South America and the Northern Pacific came within his grasp and brought him into intimate relations with the leading bankers of the world. He made the first consignment of merchandise to George Peabody when he began business in Baltimore, and always retained his warm friendship. An obituary in the Boston *Daily Advertiser* of December 2, 1861, from which this sketch is chiefly drawn, says: "Mr. Todd was over half a century in active commercial business without interruption, enjoying perfect health, from his uniform regular and temperate habits of life. He was punctilious in the fulfillment of all his engagements and expected others to be the same with him, liberal to all who were unable from misfortune to fulfill their contracts, and ever ready to aid and assist the young merchant commencing life. His charities were freely bestowed upon the poor and worthy, without display, and known only to himself and the recipients. Modest and retiring in his habits, having no tastes for public life, he ever refused to allow his name to be used for public office, considering his sphere was especially intended for mercantile pursuits." He died in Newburyport, on Thursday, November 28, 1861, in the eighty-third year of his age.

Nathaniel Horton was born and entered upon active life within the period now under consideration. He was born in 1786 and early in life engaged with his brother, Capt. James Horton, in the satinet manufacture, in which industry he was among the earliest in the country to embark. He was afterwards in the shoe trade. In the exciting political years of the administration of Jefferson and Madison he was an ardent Democrat, and with all his energies sustained the measures which the government thought it necessary to adopt. He was a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1831, '32, '37, '46, '48, '49, '50, '51, and as its chairman introduced President Polk to the people on his visit to Newburyport in 1847. Upon the organization of the city government in 1851, he was chosen alderman for Ward 4 and continued in office three years. He died Saturday, December 28, 1861, and on the following Monday the *Newburyport Herald*, in noticing his death, said: "He was a faithful officer as he was a true man; he was a good officer as he was a good citizen. Strong-willed and sometimes hasty, he was manly, high-minded and strictly honest. He did business for the city as he did it for himself, and his integrity was so indisputable that no one thought of obtaining from the town or city through him what they would not have expected for doing the same services for himself as a private man. This stern integrity of the olden time, and this iron conscientiousness that was as unbending as his own firm will, were the distinguishing traits of his character, and are worthy of the more notice as they are less common now than they were in the generation to which he belonged. It is grand to see a man so stand up intellectually and morally in his own sphere and strength; to go bravely through the world without shrinking from duty, and at last lie down at the end of so many days and fall asleep."

Before closing this list of sketches it will not be

out of place to make a brief mention of George Peabody, of London, who began his business career in Newburyport. He was born February 18, 1795, in that part of Danvers which in 1855 was incorporated as South Danvers and in 1868 named Peabody. He there received his early education, and in 1811, at the age of sixteen, left school and entered as clerk the store of his uncle, David Peabody, in Newburyport. His companions there in social life were Charles Storey, Abner Caldwell and Francis B. Somerby, and it was on the evening of the last of May, 1811, that these young men started for home from Hart's tavern, where they had been bowling, and young Peabody, leaving Storey and Caldwell near the foot of Kent Street and Somerby at Market Street, proceeded on alone. On reaching Inn Street he saw flames bursting out from Lawrence's stable and gave the alarm. This was the beginning of the great fire, as it is always called, which swept over sixteen and a half acres of the most compactly built and the busiest part of the town. More than two hundred buildings were consumed between half-past nine o'clock in the evening and sunrise the next morning. Nearly all the shops for the sale of dry-goods, four printing-offices, the custom-house, the post-office, two insurance offices, four book-stores, one meeting-house and a hundred dwellings were consumed, and suffering and privation ensued which the warm-hearted liberality of Boston and other towns only partially alleviated.

Mr. Peabody remained with his uncle until some time after the fire, when he made arrangements to go into business in Baltimore. So well had he performed his duties as clerk, that he obtained from his uncle and Prescott Spalding and others a joint letter to James Reed, a large wholesale dry-goods dealer in Boston, offering to be security for Peabody in the aggregate sum of $2500 for goods which Mr. Reed might furnish to establish his store. The signers of the letter were all customers of Mr. Reed, who believing that he could trust the person in whom they put their faith, told him that $2500 would be rather a small amount to start a dry-goods store in Baltimore, and offered him goods to the amount of $2500 more to sell on commission for him, so that not only did Mr. Peabody learn his first business lessons in Newburyport, but to the merchants of that town he owed also that timely aid without which that career of prosperity and wealth upon which he afterwards entered may never have been begun.

Not long after he became a partner of Elisha Riggs in the dry-goods trade in New York, and afterwards again in Baltimore. During all this period he made occasional visits to Newburyport, and always remembered with pleasure his old friends in that town. A writer in the Newburyport *Herald* remembers hearing Frank Somerby on a morning in the summer of 1826 or '27 shout to Spalding, "Here comes George Peabody." "I looked," says the writer, "and saw coming down the street a tall, fresh-looking, well-dressed man of about thirty years of age. He was swinging his right arm and shouting, 'Hello! Frank.' In a few moments there were a dozen old friends gathered about him, and the warmth of the greeting gave ample evidence of the estimation in which he was held." This was his first visit to Newburyport since he left it twelve or thirteen years before.

In 1843, or thereabouts, Riggs and Peabody separated, and their business, which had expanded and largely changed its character, was divided. Riggs took the Baltimore business, Peabody the London and Mr. Corcoran, who had been some time also a partner, took the Washington. His career in London is too well known to be restated. Out of his abundant wealth, without waiting for that separation from his riches which death must eventually cause, he preferred the bestowment of benefactions during his life. In 1852 he gave to his native town $20,000 for the foundation of an institute, and afterwards increased the amount to $200,000. He contributed $10,000 to the first Grinnell Arctic Expedition, and in 1857 gave $300,000 to found an institute of science, literature and the fine arts in Baltimore, afterwards increasing it to $1,400,000. For the benefit of the poor of London he gave in 1862 £500,000, in recognition of which the Queen presented him with her portrait, and the city of London presented him with the freedom of the city in a gold box, and after his death the citizens erected a statue to his memory. In 1866 he gave to Harvard College $150,000 to establish a museum and professorship of American archæology and ethnology, and afterwards $150,000 to found a geological professorship in Yale College, and $2,000,000 to the Southern Educational Fund.

On the 20th of February, 1867, two years before his death, he gave to "Edward S. Mosely, Caleb Cushing, Henry C. Perkins, Eben F. Stone and Joshua Hale, and their successors, the sum of $15,000 to be held by them in trust and kept permanently invested, and the income thereof used and applied in their discretion to the enlargement of the public library of the city of Newburyport."

During the mayoralty of Moses Davenport he again visited Newburyport and was introduced by him to the people. Among the crowd was a gray-haired veteran who, on taking him by the hand, said: "You do not remember me, Mr. Peabody." He at once replied: "You are Prescott Spaulding, and were a clerk in the store next to ours at the time of the fire in 1811, which drove me away from this good old town." An old lady said: "Let me shake hands with you, Mr. Peabody; you do not certainly remember me." "Yes, I do," said he, after a moment; "I think you are 'Becca Tracy, and I am glad to see you. We will not tell these gentlemen about our playing whist forty years ago."

Mr. Peabody was said to have had a love-affair in Newburyport, and it was further said that the father of the lady said: "George is a very good young man,

but he has no money and can never support you in the style you must live in." He died in London, November 4, 1869.

William Moulton was born in State Street, Newburyport, August 19, 1872. His ancestors were among the early settlers of Newbury. On his mother's side they went there in 1635, and on his father's in 1637. The Moultons were among the pioneers in Eastern and Central New Hampshire, and the town of Moultonborough derives its name from them. Mr. Moulton always lived in Newburyport, and for a half a century was in business and familiarly called the honest goldsmith. No man enjoyed or deserved a higher reputation for those noble qualities which make up a manly character. As was said in a notice of him after his death, by the late Daniel N. Haskell, he was inflexibly honest, cheerful in his disposition, kind in his feelings, reliable in every relation of life, respected by the community and beloved by his kindred. He was not ambitious for political honors, though he was public-spirited, and when in the full vigor of manhood took an active part in all movements of general interest. He was for many years the only original occupant of any of those fine mansion-houses erected on the "Ridge" of High Street sixty years ago. He died in Newburyport, February 14, 1861.

William Faris, or Farris, was born in Belfast, Ireland, about 1750 and came to Newburyport when he was twelve years of age. He early engaged as an officer in the United States navy during the Revolution. He was a midshipman in the frigate "Boston," and afterwards served as lieutenant and commander in the privateer service. At the close of the war, after a brief employment by Jackson & Tracey, he began business on his own account as a member of the banking firm of Faris & Stocker. This firm were bankers for the French refugees, and he is known to have stated that Louis Philippe and Chateaubriand, on their arrival in this country, went to Newburyport, *incognito*, and had an interview with Talleyrand, then living in the house next the Dexter house, in his counting-room, and that he furnished them with additional funds for their western journey. He further stated that they visited the Dalton house, in Newbury, while they were in town.

Mr. Faris was for some time president of the Marine Insurance Company of Newburyport and for several years was a member of the Legislature. He died about 1835, at the age of eighty-four years.

There were many others belonging to the period, beginning with the close of the Revolution and ending with the peace of 1815, whose names are worthy of mention, but who can receive only a passing notice. These were David Peabody (the uncle of George Peabody), James Caldwell, Prescott Spaulding, Arthur Gilman, Joseph Marquand, James Prince, Nicholas Johnson, John Cook, Benjamin Pierce, Micajah Lunt, Eben Stocker, Eben Wheelwright, Charles Story, John Wells, Sr., Peter Le Breton, Stephen Holland, Jacob and Isaac Stone, Abraham Wheelwright, John Coffin, Timothy Pilsbury, David Wood and others too numerous to mention, all of whom performed their part in the history of their town. Indeed, there are few towns in whose career so many of their citizens are found to have performed deeds and lived lives worthy of a lasting record.

CHAPTER CXLV.

NEWBURYPORT—(*Continued*).

THIRD PERIOD.

From the War of 1812 to the Incorporation of the City.

THE next period in the history of Newburyport, extending from the peace of 1815 to the annexation of a portion of Newbury and the incorporation of the city in 1851, was not especially eventful. It began with a population of about seven thousand—a valuation in round numbers of about three million five hundred thousand dollars, and a tonnage of about twenty-three thousand tons. All three of these items had, of course, fallen off during the war. The town had gone through the experiences of the disastrous French and English complications and the embargo. Between the two, and as if these were not enough to break the courage of its people, the ravages of fire had been added, and yet their hearts were not dismayed nor their hopes entirely clouded. In the winter of 1816—17 a mercantile company was formed for the purpose of pursuing the cod fisheries, and in the following summer sixty vessels, with a tonnage of two thousand eight hundred and seventy-four, were employed with profit in the business. But what the town gained in this branch of its marine interests it more than lost in others. With the peace of 1815 with England, came also peace in Europe, and the American neutral ship was no longer the monopolist of the ocean. Thus when, in 1819, the coasting and fishery tonnage had increased to ten thousand three hundred and thirty-five tons from five thousand three hundred and ninety-eight tons in 1810, the registered tonnage, or the tonnage engaged in foreign trade, had fallen in the same time from twenty-nine thousand eight hundred and ninety-seven tons to fourteen thousand eight hundred and ninety-three. In the same time the population had fallen from seven thousand six hundred and thirty-four to about six thousand eight hundred, and the assessor's valuation from seven millions sixty-nine thousand dollars to three millions forty-four thousand nine hundred dollars.

Nor was the peace of Europe the only cause of the decline in the shipping interests of the town. As has already been stated, the centralizing process had set in, and the seaboard towns were reluctantly yielding

the trade they once enjoyed to Boston, the growing capital of New England. The effect, however, of this decline of commerce would have been less disastrous had the capital it had employed been at once diverted into other channels of industry. But while wharves and warehouses gradually fell into disuse and decay, while the trades of the cooper, the blacksmith, the sail-maker and the caulker and graver languished, and laborers were seeking employment where little was to be found, the capitalists still held their ownership in navigation, which, though hailing from Newburyport, never touched its wharves, and yielded dividends no part of which found its way into the pockets of the laborer or mechanic. Except so far as bare household expenses were concerned and the taxes paid, the capitalist might, with equal benefit to the town, have held his residence in Boston or New York.

And again, besides the centralizing process which was naturally going on, there was a cause of its hastened movement to be found in the gradually increasing size of vessels and the difficulty, amounting at last to an impossibility, of their entrance into the harbor across the bar.

Up to 1810 only two vessels had been built on the Merrimac exceeding 350 tons. These were the ship "Caledonian," 357 tons, built at Amesbury in 1805 for Thomas Thomas and others, and the ship "Maryland," 395 tons, built at Newbury in 1807 for Thomas Thomas and G. Brown. The first vessel of over 400 tons was the ship "Tally-Ho," 420 tons, built in Newbury in 1823 for Russell Glover, of Boston; and the first of over 500 tons was the ship "Flavio," 698 tons, built in Newbury in 1839 for Eben Stone and others. While the average tonnage of registered vessels built during the ten years from 1800 to 1809, inclusive, was 124½, that during the ten years from 1830 to 1839, inclusive, was 274. Of course the ten following years, beginning with 1840, would show a much higher average even than that.

How soon this process of centralization will cease it is of course difficult to foresee. That it will at some time cease is as sure as the fact that we are as yet a young nation, with its resources not yet fully developed, and that the changes of the next fifty years will be as sudden and startling as those of the last. The conditions of trade will be controlled by the same law which controls all tributary streams which, when they have filled the central reservoir, will flow back to the sources from whence they came. The grain and cattle trades with Europe, now in their infancy, but destined to be gigantic in their proportions, cannot long be conducted along the shore-fronts of populous cities and must seek the cheaper vacant lands of the outports for their successful pursuit. With the policy of our government growing more liberal from year to year to improve our rivers and harbors by the removal of bars and the deepening of tide-water basins, the ports of New England, now comparatively deserted by navigation, must in time become the recipients of the overflow from the harbors of Boston and New York, and once more be the scenes of active commercial life. In our rapidly growing country, no harbor that can be deepened and made accessible by the use of money in the hands of scientific skill, can long remain idle.

In the summer of 1817, President Monroe visited Newburyport. A Committee of Reception was appointed of which Ebenezer Mosely was chairman and the town of Newbury was invited to join in the ceremonies. The President was received at Ipswich by a deputation of Military Officers and at the lower green in Newbury a Company of Cavalry under Colonel Jeremiah Coleman, with the Sheriff of the County, the Committee of Arrangements and a large body of citizens took him in charge and escorted him into the town. After the ceremonies of reception he was conducted to the Wolfe Tavern, where a dinner was provided at which General Swift presided. After dinner the President proceeded on his journey into New Hampshire.

In 1820 the "Institution for Savings in Newburyport and its vicinity" was incorporated, and rapidly grew into favor with the people who in the increasing depression of business felt the necessity of lessening their expenditures and laying up something to meet the uncertain days of the future. This institution has been conducted with prudence, and commands the confidence of the people.

Its present officers are Edward S. Mosely, President: Isaac H. Boardman, and Eben F. Stone, Vice Presidents; Philip V. Hill, Treasurer; Lawrence W. Piper, Secretary; and George W. Piper, Auditor. Its deposits are about $4,800,000.

In 1854 the Newburyport Five Cents Savings Bank was incorporated, and is also a prosperous institution. Its Treasurer is John A. Maynard, and its deposits are more than $1,000,000.

During this period also, the Merrimac Bank was incorporated June 25, 1795, its charter terminating July 1, 1805, and William Bartlett was its President. The Newburyport Bank was incorporated March 8, 1803, and Dudley A. Tyng was its President. The Newburyport Bank on the expiration of the charter of the Merrimac in 1805 was united with that Bank and continued business under its old name until the expiration of its charter in 1812, William Bartlett being President and its capital being $550,000. At the expiration of the charter in 1812 a new Act of Incorporation was obtained under the same name with a capital of $210,000, which expired in 1831. The successor of this Bank is the present Merchants National, which was incorporated as the Merchants' Bank March 18, 1831, and has a capital of $120,000. In 1864 it became the Merchants' National Bank.

Another Bank bearing the name of the Newburyport Bank was incorporated in 1836, with a capital of $100,000 which was wound up in 1845.

The Mechanics' Bank was incorporated in 1813, and has a capital of $250.000. In 1864 it became the Mechanics' National Bank.

The Ocean Bank was incorporated March 20, 1833, and has a capital of $250,000. In 1865 it became the Ocean National Bank.

The First National Bank was organized in 1864, and has a capital of $300,000.

In 1826 a charter was obtained for the bridge known as the Newburyport Bridge, crossing the Merrimac from the foot of Summer Street to the Salisbury shore, and finished in 1827, at a cost of $70,000 and opened on the 1st of September in that year. The Essex Merrimac Bridge connecting what was Newbury with Salisbury being now within the limits of Newburyport may be properly referred to in this narrative. It was projected in 1791, and a subscription was at once started for its construction, of which the following is a copy taken from the original:

"No. 1. NEWBURY PORT, May 30th, 1791.

"*Whereas*, a Bridge over Merrimack River, from the Land of the Hon'ble Jonathan Greenleaf, Esquire, in Newbery, to Deer Island, and from the said Island to Salisbury, would be of very extensive utility, by affording a safe Conveyance to Carriages, Teams and Travellers at all seasons of the year, and at all Times of Tide.

"We, the subscribers, do agree, that as soon as a convenient Number of Persons have subscribed to this, or a similar Writing, We will present a petition to the Hon'ble General Court of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, praying for an Act incorporating into a Body politic the subscribers to such Writing, with Liberty to build such Bridge, and a Right to demand a Toll equal to that received at Malden Bridge, and on like Terms, and if such an Act shall be obtained, then we severally agree each with the others, that we will hold in the said Bridge the several shares set against our respective Names, the whole into two hundred shares being divided, and that we will pay such sums of Money at such Times and in such Manners as, by the said proposed Corporation, shall be directed and required.

Names.	Place of abode.	Shares.
"Edward Rand,	Newburyport	10
George Searle,	Newburyport	10
Joseph Tyler,	Newburyport	10
Richard Pike,	Newburyport	4
Joshua Toppan,	Newburyport	3
Elizabeth Roberts,	Newburyport	2
Andrew & B. Frothingham,	Newburyport	6
Moses Hoyt,	Newburyport	1
Daniel Horton,	Newburyport	1
William Teel,	Newburyport	2
Robert Long,	Newburyport	1
S. Emerson,		1
E. Wheelwright,		1
W. Coombs,		6
M. Brown,		10
E. Titcomb,		1
E. Sawyer,		4
J. Burroughs,		1
Jere. Pearson,		1
Jon. Marsh,		1
James Prince,		4
Thomas White,		4
Sam Bailey,		4
Joseph Cutter,	Newburyport	3
William Ingalls,	Newburyport	1
Wm. H. Prout,	Newburyport	2
Wm. Wyer,	Newburyport	5
Wm. H. Pront, Jr.,	Newburyport	2
Nathl. Healey,	Hampton Falls	2
Hannah Dummer,	Newburyport	3
John Mycall,	Newburyport	1
Nathl. Carter, Jr.,	Newburyport	10
Thomas Cary,	Newburyport	6
Tristram Dalton,	Newburyport	10
Timothy Dexter,	Newburyport	10
Tristram Coffin,	Newburyport	2
Steph. Cross,	Newburyport	2
Dudley A. Tyng,	Newbury	15
Stephen Hooper for Miss Sarah Roberts,	Newbury	10
Stephen Hooper as guardian to Thomas W. Hooper,	Newbury	5
Joseph Swazey,	Newburyport	4
True Kimball,	Newbury	2
Sam. Gerrish,	Newbury	2
Jacob Brown,		2
S. L. Tyler,		20
Total,		200"

After the subscription for the necessary number of shares, a petition was sent to the General Court, and on the 13th of June, 1791, notice was served on the town of Newbury. On the 4th of November that town voted to oppose the building of the bridge, and on the 30th of November reconsidered the vote. Finally, on the 15th of December, the reconsideration was reconsidered, and the representative from Newbury was instructed to oppose it. On the 9th of January, 1792, a strong remonstrance, numerously signed, was sent to the General Court, but the charter was granted, and on the 26th of November, 1792, the completed bridge was opened. It was built in seven months under the direction of Timothy Palmer, of Newburyport, a native of Boxford. On the 4th of July, 1793, the *Essex Journal* says that "Timothy Dexter delivered an oration on the bridge, which for elegance of style, propriety of speech and force of argument, was truly Ciceronian."

Until 1868 these two bridges were toll bridges. On the 5th of June, in that year, an act was passed by the legislature directing the county commissioners, within sixty days, to lay out as highways the several bridges over the Merrimac River, known as Andover Bridge and Lawrence Bridge, in the City of Lawrence; Haverhill Bridge, between Haverhill and Bradford; Rock Bridge, between West Newbury and Haverhill; Essex Merrimac Bridge, between Salisbury and Newburyport; Newburyport Bridge, between Salisbury and Newburyport; and the Essex Bridge, over North River between Beverly and Salem; and to determine what proportion of the amount of damages shall be paid by the county of Essex, and by the several cities and towns benefited by the laying out.

Under this act the County Commissioners gave notice of the laying out of these bridges on the 4th of August, 1868. The charter of the Newburyport Bridge, having expired no damage was awarded to its proprietors, and it was decreed "that so much of said bridge as lies southerly of a line drawn three quarters of the whole distance from the southern end of said bridge, being three-fourths of said bridge next adjoining to said Newburyport, shall be maintained, kept in repair and supported, and the expense thereof and of raising the draw in said bridge, shall be paid

by said city of Newburyport; and that the remainder of said bridge, being one-fourth part thereof lying next to Salisbury, aforesaid, shall be maintained, kept in repair and supported, and the expense thereof shall be paid by said town of Salisbury."

With regard to the Essex Merrimac Bridge, the commissioners decreed that the damages sustained by its proprietors amounted to thirty thousand dollars, of which the county should pay ten thousand, the city of Newburyport ten thousand, the town of Salisbury five thousand, and the town of Amesbury five thousand dollars. They also decreed, "that so much of said Essex Merrimac Bridge as lies within the city of Newburyport, shall be maintained, kept in repair and supported, and the expense thereof shall be paid by said city of Newburyport; and that so much of said bridge as lies within the town of Salisbury, shall be maintained, kept in repair and supported by said town of Salisbury; but the expense thereof and of raising the draw in said bridge, shall be paid in equal moieties by said town of Salisbury and said town of Amesbury; and said town of Amesbury shall reimburse to said town of Salisbury, one-half the expense thereof."

In 1824, as has been already incidentally stated, Lafayette visited Newburyport. He came to the United States as the guest of the nation, and was welcomed with the most gratifying testimonials of respect wherever he went. A town-meeting was called at which the selectmen with ten other gentlemen were appointed a committee to make necessary arrangements for his reception. The 31st of August was the day arranged for the visit, and it was expected he would reach the town early enough in the day to enable the programme, which included a procession in the afternoon, and bonfires and fireworks in the evening, to be fully carried out. A long detention, however, at Salem, where he was honored by a public dinner at which Judge Joseph Story presided, and later detentions at Beverly, where he was addressed by Robert Rantoul, at Ipswich, where Nathaniel Lord addressed him, with halts at Hamilton and Rowley, delayed his arrival until after ten o'clock in the night. During a heavy rain he was escorted into the town and conducted to the mansion of James Prince, now the Public Library Building, where, as stated in the earlier part of this narrative, he occupied the room, and bed in which Washington had slept during his visit in 1789. Prince Stetson, the landlord of the "Wolf tavern," supplied his table and Charles Stetson his son, afterwards one of the proprietors of the Astor House in New York, was detailed for special attendance to his wants. The next day was too inclement to permit the parade of school-children which had been intended, and Lafayette went on his way to Portsmouth, where he was entertained by a ball, and from whence he returned to Boston, passing though Newburyport in the early morning without ceremony or even the knowledge of the inhabitants.

We are brought now to what was the darkest period in the history of Newburyport. To all other causes which had operated to depress its commerce, the Navigation Laws of 1820 had been added, serving still more to discourage capitalists and trade. From 1810 to 1820, the population had fallen from 7634 to 6852, and in 1830 it had fallen still further down to 6741. The tonnage of the town had been also reduced from 35,296 tons in 1810 to 16,577 in 1830, a reduction of more than one-half. The tide was at its lowest ebb. The market, which in earlier days had been filled with country teams, was almost deserted; the East and West Indies and Mediterranean commerce had well-nigh disappeared, and masters of vessels, once active on the sea, were spending their time in the Reading Room and Insurance office, hoping against hope, for a revival of the good old times. An intelligent antiquary in a series of articles written for the *Herald* of Newburyport, says "that everything grew old and rusty and dead; nobody thought of painting a building and there were so many of them empty, that rent was nothing, and the purchase price of anything was less than that. If an old fence blew down, there it lay unless it was picked up to burn, and when a pump-handle broke no more water came from that well."

But it is as true of municipalities and of men as of the order of nature, that the darkest time is just before morning. Capital, as closely attracted by the hope of profit as the needle by the magnet, began to feel that there were other channels than those of navigation open to it. Lowell had been incorporated in 1826, and the cotton manufacture was everywhere attracting the attention of enterprising men. A new wave of industry and enterprise was sweeping over New England, and Newburyport felt it and rejoiced that the tide had turned. The Essex mill was built in 1833, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars, and though it was neither long-lived nor largely profitable, it served, before it was finally burned on the 8th of March, 1856, to lead the way for others to follow, with surer steps and a better success. Several years after the erection of the Essex mill, as the Newburyport antiquary already referred to states, "a new man appeared among us, a well-formed, noble-looking person, such a man as you do not often meet, full of power, energy and enterprise, who had studied machinery till he was himself one of the most powerful machines; who had been among steam-engines till he was a perfect steam-engine himself; thinking nothing of what to others seemed mountains of difficulties, and having an influence over the opinions and purses of our staid old capitalists that no other man had possessed for a long time. He could wake up some that had been sleeping since the great fire; he could talk his projects into them; he could set them to work and make them do something."

This man was Charles Tillinghast James, of Providence, R. I., then about thirty years of age, and by his skill and energy, aided by the capital of William

Bartlett, then eighty-nine years of age, and others, the Bartlett mills were incorporated in 1837 and put in operation in 1838, under the name of the We-sa-cumcon Mills. Two years afterwards, mill No. 2 of this corporation was built, and the name changed to the Bartlett Mills. The capital of the mills was three hundred and fifty thousand dollars, and with four hundred and forty-eight looms and twenty-two thousand spindles, their product was seventy-five thousand yards of fine sheetings and shirtings per week. These mills, situated on Pleasant Street, were burned on the morning of March 1, 1881, and were not rebuilt.

Through the exertions of Mr. James, another mill was incorporated in 1842 and named after its enterprising projector, the "James Steam Mills." The original capital was one hundred and fifty thousand dollars—but in 1871 a new company was formed, with a capital of two hundred and fifty thousand dollars, and the name changed to the "Masconomet Mills." The property of this mill was sold in 1876 to a new company, now called the "Victoria." It has three hundred and fifty looms, seventeen thousand two hundred and sixteen spindles, and its product of brown and bleached sheetings and shirtings is forty-eight thousand yards per week.

In 1845 the Globe Steam Mills were incorporated, but reorganized, and changed its name in 1868 to the "Peabody Mills," with a capital of three hundred thousand dollars;—four hundred looms, nineteen thousand spindles, and a product of ninety thousand yards of print cloths and sheetings per week.

The Ocean Mill was incorporated in 1846, and enlarged in 1868. In 1871 a new company was formed, with a capital of three hundred thousand dollars. In 1886 a new company was organized, and the name of the "Whitefield Mills" adopted. It has five hundred and seventy-three looms, twenty-seven thousand spindles, and produces one hundred thousand yards of print cloths and fine sheetings per week.

These three mills give employment to nearly a thousand persons, who represent probably a population of twenty-five hundred. It is quite doubtful whether they alone do not furnish more labor and disburse more money among the people than the entire commerce of Newburyport in its most prosperous days. Their effect on the population was immediate. From sixty-seven hundred and forty-one in 1830, it rose to seven thousand one hundred and sixty-one in 1840, and to nine thousand five hundred and thirty-four in 1850.

Nor was this all. In 1840 railroad connection with Boston was completed, and not only infused new spirit into the people, but afforded ready opportunities for its exercise. Inland commerce by rail has taken the place of the commerce by sea and is ten-fold larger. It can only be said that new industries have taken the place of old, and with a full adjustment of the people and business to new conditions, it will be found that the depression which attended the transition has gone forever. The stage driver mourns over the old days on the box, but he is made station agent or conductor, and settles down to his new vocation, happier and better paid than before. The shipmaster groans over the departed glories of the sea, and while he groans, he is remembered by the capitalist whose ship he sailed, and called to better and more satisfying posts. The lumper on the wharves, kicks the cap log with his heels, believing the country is doomed to destruction because his accustomed work has failed, but the factory, the gas-house, the freight station or horse railroad wins him at last into better opportunities of developing himself, of educating his children, of giving him a happier home.

On the 25th of December, 1847, the telegraph between Boston and Newburyport was opened and in the same year a company was raised for the Mexican War to be attached to the regiment of which Caleb Cushing was commissioned colonel. In 1850 the Newburyport Railroad connecting with the Boston and Maine was opened and this brings us to a point in the history of Newburyport when it was soon to throw off its old municipal garb and assume the dignity of a city. Its people had never been satisfied with the territorial lines drawn at the time of their incorporation as a town in 1764. In May of that year a petition was presented to the General Court praying that the limits of the town might be enlarged. In 1794 a committee was appointed to prepare a petition to enlarge the bounds of the town. In 1821, 1827 and 1835 the subject was again agitated, and again in 1843 and 1846. At the Annual Meeting in March, 1850, it was voted to build a new Town Hall at a cost not exceeding thirty thousand dollars, and the building now occupied as the City Hall was erected and opened on the 4th of March, 1851. In that year efforts for enlargement, which had been so long ineffectual, were brought to a successful issue and the following Act of Annexation was passed by the General Court:

"In the year one thousand eight hundred and fifty one an act to annex a part of the town of Newbury to the town of Newburyport.

"Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives, in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same, as follows:—

"*Section* 1. So much of the town of Newbury, in the County of Essex, as lies within the following lines, to wit: beginning at the northerly boundary of Newburyport, on the Merrimac River, thence running by the Newbury line on the said river to the line of West Newbury, at the mouth of Artichoke River, thence up the said last-named River and through the middle thereof about five hundred and seventy-two rods and twenty-two links, to a place in the said stream known as the 'New Log,' thence south about twenty-five degrees east, about three hundred and sixty rods to the most easterly corner of Newburyport, thence by the line of Newburyport to the southerly side of a stream called Little River, thence by the southerly side of the said last-mentioned stream to the southeasterly side of the road at Clarke's Bridge, so-called; thence on a straight line to an elm tree near the Newburyport turnpike, on land of Daniel Colman, southerly of said Colman's house, thence to the northerly side of Marlborough street, on High street, thence to the most southerly bend of the Plum Island turnpike, thence on a straight line to the ocean, four rods southerly of the light-keeper's house, on Plum Island, thence by the ocean to Salisbury line, thence by the line of Salisbury to Newburyport, with all the inhabitants and estates thereon, is hereby set off from the town of New-

bury and annexed to the town of Newburyport; and the said inhabitants shall hereafter be considered as inhabitants of Newburyport, and shall enjoy all the rights and privileges, and be subject to all the duties and liabilities of the inhabitants of the said town. Provided, however, that for the purpose of electing the representatives to the General Court, to which the said town of Newbury is entitled until the next decennial census shall be taken in pursuance of the thirteenth article of amendments to the Constitution, the said territory shall remain and continue to be a part of the town of Newbury, and the inhabitants resident therein shall be entitled to vote in the choice of such representatives, and shall be eligible to the office of representative in the town of Newbury, in the same manner as if this act had not been passed.

"*Section* 2. The said inhabitants and estates so set off shall be liable to pay all taxes that may have been legally assessed on them by the town of Newbury, in the same manner as if this act had not been passed, and the town of Newburyport shall be holden to pay their just and equitable (share) of the debts of Newbury, and shall also be entitled to receive their just and equitable portion of all the property owned by the town of Newbury, the said proportions to be ascertained by the taxes paid by the inhabitants, and upon the property annexed in the part set off and the part remaining the past year.

"*Section* 3. The said towns of Newbury and Newburyport shall be respectively liable for the support of all persons who now do, or shall hereafter, stand in need of relief as paupers whose settlements were gained by, or derived from a residence on their respective territories.

"*Section* 4. In case the said towns shall not agree on a division of property, debts, paupers, and all other existing town liabilities, the Court of Common Pleas for the County of Essex shall, upon the petition of either of the said towns, appoint three competent and disinterested persons to hear the parties and award thereon; and their award, accepted by the Court, shall be final Provided, however, that until the division of the said property, as aforesaid, the same shall be and remain under the control of the town of Newbury, and the inhabitants of Newbury may hold their town-meetings in the town-house as heretofore.

"*Section* 5. The Selectmen of Newburyport shall annually, fourteen days at least before the second Monday of November, furnish the Selectmen of Newbury a correct list, so far as may be ascertained from the records of the town of Newburyport, or any of its officers, of all persons resident on the territory hereby set off, who shall be entitled to vote for representatives as aforesaid in Newbury; and, for every neglect by the said Selectmen so to furnish such list, the town of Newburyport shall forfeit the sum of one hundred dollars; and for the making of any false return in respect to any part of such list, shall forfeit the sum of twenty dollars for every name in respect to which a false return shall have been made, to be recovered in the same manner as is provided by the fourth section of the third chapter of the Revised Statutes, in respect to penalties for neglect or false returns of collectors of towns.

"*Section* 6. The said towns of Newbury and Newburyport may at town-meetings, duly notified within seven days after the passage of this act, grant and vote such sums of money as they may respectively judge necessary for all purposes authorized by law, and reconsider, modify and change any votes on that subject passed at their annual meeting the present year.

"*Section* 7. This act shall take effect from and after its passage.

"House of Representatives, April 16, 1851.

"Passed to be enacted.

"N. P. Banks, Jr., *Speaker*.

"In Senate April 17, 1851.

"Passed to be enacted.

"Henry Wilson, *President*.

April 17, 1851.

"Approved. George S. Boutwell."

The allusion to the town-house, at the end of the fourth section, refers to the fact that the Newbury town-house then in use was located on the annexed territory. By this Act the territory of Newburyport was enlarged from six hundred and forty-seven acres to more than six thousand, and the population from 9534 to 12,866. At a town meeting held on the 24th of April, 1851, a committee was appointed, consisting of Caleb Cushing, Henry W. Kinsman, Joseph Roberts, E. S. Williams, Joshua Hale, Samuel Phillips, Thomas Huse, E. F. Stone, Henry Frothingham and Moses Davenport, to prepare and present to the Legislature a petition for a city charter. In pursuance of this petition an act of incorporation was passed May 24, 1851. The act provided that the selectmen should, as soon as might be, after its passage and its acceptance by the people, proceed to divide the city into six wards; the wards to contain, as nearly as practicable, an equal number of inhabitants, the same to be subject to revisal once in five years.

At a town meeting held on the 3d of June, 1851, the selectmen presiding, the whole number of votes cast upon the acceptance of the act was five hundred and ninety-four, of which four hundred and eighty-four were in the affirmative. In the election for city officers the following were chosen ward officers:

Ward 1. Major Goodwin.
Mathew Meriam.
David T. Woodwell.
Cutting Pettingell, Jr.
Henry A. Lander.

Ward 2. Phillip Johnson.
John B. Goodwin.
Charles M. Bayley.
Rufus Smith.
Nicholas Brown.

Ward 3. Amos Toppan.
Joseph H. Bragdon.
D. S. Blake.
Nathaniel S. Osgood.
Rufus S. Griffith.

Ward 4. Wm. Thurston.
Daniel Granger.
Eleazer R. Walker.
William A. Marston.
John Burtin.

Ward 5. Edward Burrill.
Moses H. Hale.
William H. Brewster.
Henry Stover.
Robert Sherman.

Ward 6. John Merrill.
Abraham Toppan.
Amos Wood.
Samuel C. Currier.
Daniel T. Colman.

The mayor, aldermen and councilman were subsequently chosen as follows:

Mayor.

Caleb Cushing.

Aldermen.

Ward 1. Thomas Huse.
" 2. John Porter.
" 3 Moses Davenport.
Ward 4. Nathaniel Horton.
" 5. John M. Cooper.
" 6. Joseph Roberts.

Common Council.

Ward 1. Zacheus P. Thurlo.
John Woodwell.
George W. Knight.

Ward 2. Phillip Johnson.
Frederick Knight.
Jacob Stone.

Ward 3. Isaac H. Boardman.
Charles T. Brockway.
Moses Hale.

Ward 4. Phillip K. Hills.
William C. Balch.
Eben F. Stone.

Ward 5. Albert Runnell.
Jacob Horton.
Jacob Hale.

Ward 6. John Currier, Jr.
John Colby.
Joseph Newell.

School Committee.

Ward 1. George J. L. Colby.
Harvey Kimball.

Ward 2. William Graves.
Mark Seymour.

Ward 3. Randolph Campbell.
Newman Brown.

Ward 4. Daniel P. Pike.
J. H. Sawyer.

Ward 5. H. W. Kinsman.
E. Lawrence.

Ward 6. A. L. Merrell.
Henry Merrell, Jr.

Overseers of the Poor.

Ward 1. Charles H. Ireland.
" 2. Eleazer Johnson.
" 3. Daniel Colman.
Ward 4. Daniel P. Pike.
" 5. Richard Stone.
" 6. John Colby.

The following gentlemen have served as mayors during the years specified with their names:

1851. Caleb Cushing.
1852 (part). Caleb Cushing.
1852 (part). Henry Johnson.
1853. Henry Johnson.
1854. Moses Davenport.
1855. Moses Davenport.
1856. William Cushing.
1857. William Cushing.
1858. William Cushing.
1859. Albert Currier.
1860. Albert Currier.
1861 (part). Moses Davenport.
1861 (part). George W. Jackman, Jr.
1862. George W. Jackman, Jr.
1863. Isaac H. Boardman.
1864. George W. Jackman, Jr.
1865. George W. Jackman, Jr.
1866. William Graves.
1867. Eben F. Stone.
1868. Nathaniel Pierce.
1869. Nathaniel Pierce.
1870. Robert Couch.
1871. Elbridge G. Kelley.
1872. Elbridge G. Kelley.
1873. Warren Currier.
1874. Warren Currier.
1875. Benjamin F. Atkinson.
1876. Benjamin F. Atkinson.
1877. George W. Jackman, Jr.
1878. Jonathan Smith.
1879. John James Currier.
1880. John James Currier.
1881. Robert Couch.
1882. Benjamin Hale.
1883. Wm. A. Johnson.
1884. Wm. A. Johnson.
1885. Thomas Simpson.
1886. Charles C. Dame.
1887. Job Otis Winkley.

The following persons may be mentioned as associated with Newburyport in the third period of its existence:

William Wheelwright was born in Newburyport in 1798. He was the son of Capt. Ebenezer Wheelwright, a prominent merchant of that town, and he began life as a sailor before the mast in the employ of Wm. Bartlett. At the age of nineteen he was placed in command of the ship "Rising Sun" of two hundred and eighty-four tons, and made several voyages to South America, in one of which he was wrecked near the mouth of the river La Platte. After his safe arrival at Montevideo he crossed the continent to Guayaquil, and engaged in the coasting trade in a vessel which he named the "Fourth of July." In this business he accumulated a moderate fortune and returned to Newburyport, where he married the granddaughter of his early employer, who returned with him to South America. Soon after 1830 he went to England and organized a company which built two steamers, the "Peru" and "Chili," which were the first steamers to double Cape Horn, and which became the nucleus of what is now known as the British Pacific Steamship Company. His next enterprise was the introduction of gas street lights in Valparaiso which was soon followed by the construction of aqueducts.

Mr. Wheelwright built the first railway on the west coast of South America from Caldera to Copœbo, and afterwards turning his attention to the eastern coast constructed the Argentine railroad from Buenos Ayres to Cordova, and was engaged in building a railroad from Buenos Ayres to Ensenada with the view of a final connection with the harbor of Valparaiso.

In the execution of these enterprises he exhibited great business capacity united with patience, power of endurance, tact and knowledge of men. In 1873, he went to London where he died on the 26th of September, 1873, leaving a widow and an only child, the wife of Paul Krell, both of whom were with him at the time of his death. He left a large fortune, two-ninths of which he bequeathed to trustees for the purpose of founding a scientific school in his native city, for the education of young men of the Protestant faith. The trustees were Robert Codman and Charles C. Wood, of Boston, and Wm. B. Atkinson, Lavinia B. Cushing and Eben F. Stone, of Newburyport. His remains were brought from England in the steamship "City of Paris," and after private funeral services at his late residence in High Street, Newburyport, on the 15th of October, his body was conveyed to the old South Presbyterian Church, where public obsequies took place. The flags on the public buildings were hung at half mast, and during the passage of the funeral procession the church bells of the city were tolled.

Jacob Newman Knapp was born in Newburyport November 7, 1773, and was the second of nine children of Isaac and Susan (Newman) Knapp, of that town. His parents were poor, and, though their whole library consisted of a Bible and hymn book, "Paradise Lost," a few odd volumes of Shakespeare, Josephus and a few printed sermons, they were unwearied in their efforts to secure for their children the full advantages of the public and Sunday-schools. Samuel Lorenzo Knapp was one of the children, and his career, sketched in the chapter on the bench and bar, as well as that of Jacob, attests the success of their efforts. Joseph Knapp, another brother, practiced medicine in North Carolina many years, and there died after a successful professional career.

The subject of this sketch at the age of five years entered the common schools of his native town, and for ten years reaped the benefits of an instruction under the care of Masters Sewall, Norton and Nicholas Pike. He remembered well and often spoke of the visit of Washington to Newburyport in 1789, the last year of his attendance at school. He said that "the children of the schools were drawn up in lines to receive the Father of his Country. The children were badged according to their proficiency, the elders carrying a slate and pencil in token of their having attained to cyphering. Those who had mastered spelling carried a primer, while those that could write held each a sheet of paper and a pen in hand."

When about sixteen years of age he taught school in Loudon, New Hampshire, having forty pupils of boys and girls. He said that most of the children under ten years of age wore leather aprons, reaching from their chins to their ankles, and that many of the girls took snuff in accordance with the fashion of the day. The next year he tied up his worldly goods in a handkerchief, and walked to Sanbornton, in the same State, where he taught four years. Notwithstanding the low wages of a teacher—six dollars a month and board—he was able before entering upon the second step of his career to purchase for his father fifty acres of woodland, and to clear up ten of them for cultivation.

He next entered Phillips Academy of Andover, of which Professor Mark Newman, a cousin of his

mother, was principal. On leaving the academy he sought a school in which he might earn enough to enter college, but at this very time his schoolmate, Cassius Lee, son of Richard Henry Lee, of Virginia, who was about entering Princeton, died and bequeathed to him fifty guineas. With this money he entered Harvard, and by the aid of teaching in winter, transcribing college documents, hiring two hundred dollars, and further gifts from the family of his former friend Lee, graduated with high honors in 1802.

After graduation he taught the town-school of Charlestown, Mass., and at the same time studied theology with Rev. Dr. Jedediah Morse, the author of the old geography. After a three-years' course of teaching and study he preached in Boston and Salem, but, being afflicted with a serious trouble in his eyes, was obliged to relinquish all hope of a settlement.

In 1805 he opened a private school for boys in Salem, where he remained about ten years, having Wm. H. Prescott, Francis Peabody and others who afterwards became well-known, among his pupils. While in Salem he was urged to become a candidate for Congress, but declined, and was asked by Mr. Webster to permit his name to be presented to the trustees of Dartmouth College for the presidency of that institution. The state of his eyes was, in his opinion, such as to disqualify him for either of these positions.

After leaving Salem he soon opened a home school for boys in Brighton, which he afterwards removed to Jamaica Plains, where he taught until 1824. During his career as a teacher he fitted about two hundred young men for college, all of whom were admitted without conditions. On the 3d of June, 1819, he married Louisa, daughter of Colonel Joseph Bellows, of Walpole, New Hampshire, and in 1824 bought a farm in Walpole,and ever afterwards made it his home.

Rev. Dr. Bellows, after seeing him at the age of ninety-three, said:

"I had gone to school in my boyhood to this venerable man and from him learned the Latin accidents and the Greek alphabet. I remember he seemed to me then—it is forty-five years ago—when he was forty-nine years of age, as old as anybody ever ought to be, and far older than I could conceive myself as ever becoming. Since then nearly a half century had passed and here a few weeks ago he still was, his body bent, his limbs shrunken, his flesh nearly dried up in the suns of almost a century, his hair as white as snow, and his voice quivering with age, but with his intellect active and keen, his imagination lively and playful, his interest in events as natural and eager as ever, full of humor and jest, apt at quotations from classic and from English poetry; his affections tender and warm, but, above all, with a religious confidence and aspiration as firm and soaring as when his blood was in its fullest tide, and his experience of weakness and bodily decay had not begun."

Mr. Knapp died in Walpole, July 27, 1868, at the age of ninety-five, leaving two sons, Francis Bellows Knapp and Rev. Frederick Newman Knapp, both graduates of Harvard in 1843, and now living in Plymouth.

William Ingalls, a descendant of Edmund Ingalls, who came from England in 1629, and finally settled in Lynn, was born in Newburyport, May 3, 1769. He graduated at Harvard in 1790, studied medicine, was professor of anatomy in Brown University and afterwards an eminent physician of Boston. He published several medical works and died at Wrentham, Massachusetts, September 8, 1851.

Ebenezer Bradbury.—Was born in Newburyport, July 31, 1793. He was the sixth in descent from Thomas Bradbury, the agent of Sir Ferdinand Gorges who came to New England, in 1634, and after a short stay at Agamenticus, now York, settled in Salisbury. Thomas married Mary, daughter of John Perkins, of Ipswich, and had Wymond, born in 1637, who married Sarah Pike. Wymond's son Wymond born in 1669, married Maria Cotton, and had Theophilus 1706, who married Aun Woodman. Jonathan son of Theophilus born in 1734, married Abigail Smith, and had Theophilus, the distingnished lawyer of Newburyport, whose sketch may be found in the second chapter of this work, relating to the Bench and Bar of Essex County. Theophilus married Lois Pillsbury, and Ebenezer, the subject of this sketch, was his son.

Ebenezer received only a common school education and then learned the trade of silversmith, which in the days when nearly every well-trained boy was taught some trade was thought, perhaps of all the trades, the most respectable. His education was not completed, however, with his graduation from school. He possessed an elasticity of mind which rendered it more and more susceptible of knowledge, and from his youth he continued to grow in intellectual capacity and strength. He early interested himself in town affairs, and at town-meetings learned that art of oratory and that knowledge of parliamentary affairs which proved a means of advancement in his later career. He was selected as moderator of the annual meeting of the town in 1827, and acted in that capacity again in 1830, '34, '40, '41, '42, '43, '44, '45, '46. In 1828, he represented Newburyport in the House of Representatives and again in 1830, '41, '44, '47, '48, '49, and in 1847, he served as speaker. In 1845, he was a member of the Executive Council, and from 1849 to 1851 he was treasurer and receiver general of the commonwealth.

While holding the office of treasurer he removed to Newton, and was a delegate from that town to the Constitutional Convention, in 1853. In June, 1859, he removed to Milford, where he was appointed judge of the Police Court of the town of Milford, to succeed Sullivan Thayer, who resigned June 30, 1859. He held that office until the court was abolished in June, 1861, and in November, 1861, removed to East Salisbury where he died June 19, 1864.

Robert Bayley was for many years an enterprising and honorable merchant in Newburyport, and contributed largely to the reputation which that town acquired for commercial activity and wealth. He was the son of Robert Bayley, and at the age of

twenty-two he entered into business with his father under the firm name of Robert Bayley & Son, and continued in business until January 1, 1879. The firm was largely engaged in the importation of sugar and molasses and coffee, and its dealings in these articles were the largest ever carried on in Newburyport. For many years the house paid customs duties to the amount of fifty thousand dollars a year, and for several years exceeding one hundred thousand dollars. During his business career he was highly respected, and as a citizen was public-spirited, and always ready to encourage and aid in whatever was for the benefit of the community. He was married July 6, 1830, and after fifty-three years of married life the death of his wife in August, 1883, was followed by his own on Sunday, November 4th, in the same year.

DANIEL DANA was born in Ipswich, July 23, 1771, and was the son of Rev. Joseph Dana, who for sixty-three years was pastor of the Congregational Church in that town. At the age of six he entered the public school and remained two years. At the age of eight he began the study of Latin, and the next year Greek, and at the age of fourteen commenced a school for girls, associated with his brother Joseph. In 1785 he entered Dartmouth College, and at his graduation in 1789 delivered the Greek oration. After leaving college he was appointed preceptor of Moore's charity school at Andover, and shortly afterwards accepted the preceptorship of Phillips Academy at Exter. After two years' connection with the academy, he returned to Ipswich, and pursued his theological studies with his father.

On the 19th of June, 1794, he received a call to become pastor of the Federal Street Church, in Newburyport, and on the 19th of November he was ordained. In 1814, he received the degree of D.D. from his *alma mater*, and in 1820, assumed the position of president of that institution. He resigned the presidency at the end of one year on account of ill health, and was settled at Londonderry, New Hampshire, in February, 1822. In March, 1826, he received a call from the Harris Street Church, in Newburyport, and was installed May 24, 1826. Thus after an interval of six years he returned to a former field of labor, though in another church and pulpit. The Harris Street Church contained some members who had seceded from the Federal Street Church at the time of his first settlement, and were not long in discovering that their distrust of his soundness in doctrine had been unfounded. Dr. Dana died in 1859, and on the 4th of September, a funeral discourse was delivered in the Federal Street Church, by Rev. Heman R. Timlow, pastor of the church over which he was last settled.

THOMAS HUSE was born in that part of Newbury which was annexed to Newburyport in 1851, on the 30th of January, 1813. He was descended from Abel Huse, who was born in London in 1602 and was among the earliest settlers of Newbury. It is said that the family to which he belonged can be traced to the old Norman Barons who went into England with the Conqueror. He was the son of Samuel Huse and grandson of Captain Samuel Huse, who, with his brother, Colonel Joseph Huse, was among the most devoted patriots of 1776. He had ten brothers and sisters. Of six brothers, including Thomas, one was lost at sea, four died more than sixty-three years of age, one was seventy-three at the time of the death of Thomas; and of the three sisters who survived infancy, one died at seventy-three and two at the time of their brother's death were seventy and eighty-two. He married Hannah L. Poor, whom he left a widow with a son and daughter.

Mr. Huse had seen something of public life, having served Newbury in the General Court, and the city as Alderman from Ward 1 in 1851–52. For twenty years he was in business at the head of Coffin Wharf, and died on Thursday, December 18, 1879, in the sixty-seventh year of his age.

CHARLES TOPPAN was born in Newburyport in 1796, and was a descendant from Abraham Toppan, who settled in Newbury in 1637. Edward Toppan, the father of Charles, after serving in the Revolutionary Army with his uncle, Colonel Moses Little, was a partner in the mercantile house of Hoyt, Coolidge & Toppan. As a boy, Mr. Toppan displayed artistic talent, and while yet young he was placed under the instruction of Jacob Perkins, the inventor, with whom he remained until 1814, when, at the age of eighteen years, he went to Philadelphia to enter the house of Draper, Murray & Fairman. In the early days of the Republic, the bank-notes used were generally printed from type, on poor paper and without any safeguards against the operations of the counterfeiter. Among the early pioneers, as is stated in a paper read before the Antiquarian and Historical Society of old Newbury, which is freely used in this sketch, who led the way in the path of improvement, was Gideon Fairman, of Connecticut, who established himself in Philadelphia as an engraver, and in 1811 formed a partnership with Draper and Murray. In 1816 Jacob Perkins, also of Newburyport, went to Philadelphia and entered the employment of the firm.

The engraving of bank-notes was carried by the firm to such a state of perfection that in 1819 Mr. Perkins and Mr. Fairman went to England, in the expectation of obtaining the work of the Bank of England. Mr. Toppan, then only twenty-three years of age, but already skilled in his profession, was taken with them. In a letter dated September 3, 1819, Mr. Toppan wrote from London that

"The engravers and amateurs in the arts are one and all extravagant in their encomiums upon the beauty of the work and the merits of the plan, and are willing to recommend it for adoption. . . Some of my specimens have been shown and I was pleased to hear them well-spoken of. My large plate of Washington's farewell address, the title of which I have just completed, has astonished them. There has never been a plate of anything near the size engraved here, and there are at this time no engravers in the city who will attempt any large piece."

Upon the failure of the firm to sell its patent to the Bank of England, Messrs. Perkins and Fairman remained in London, where they established a house in Fleet Street, and Mr. Toppan returned to the United States in 1825. The next year he married Laura A., daughter of Dr. Robert Noxon, of Poughkeepsie, N. Y., and granddaughter of General Lazarus Ruggles, a Revolutionary officer from Connecticut. In 1828 he began business again as a bank-note engraver in Philadelphia, and was finally joined by Mr. Draper of the old firm and Mr. Carpenter, when the name of the house became Toppan, Carpenter & Co. In 1858 all the bank-note firms in the country were consolidated under the name of the "American Bank Note Company," and Mr. Toppan was chosen President. After organizing branches of the company in Philadelphia, Boston, Cincinnati, New Orleans and Montreal, with a principal office in New York, Mr. Toppan resigned after two years' service. Work is now done by this company not only for our own government, but for Russia, the Swiss Cantons, Canada, Greece, Italy, Spain, Japan and the South American States. Mr. Toppan died in Florence in October, 1874, leaving a widow and two children, Harriette Rogers Toppan and Robert Noxon.

JOHN NEWMARCH CUSHING was born in Salisbury, May 8, 1779. He was the sixth in descent from Matthew Cushing, who came to New England in 1638 with his wife Nazareth, and settled in Hingham. The ancestry of the family is easily traced back to the middle of the fifteenth century. Matthew, the immigrant, was son of Peter Cushing, of Hingham, England, who married Susan Hawes in 1585, and Peter was son of Thomas whose father, John, was son of Thomas, of Hardingham, who lived in 1450. John Newmarch was son of Benjamin and Hannah Hazeltine Cushing, and married Lydia Dowe, by whom he had two children—Caleb, born in Salisbury, January 17, 1800, who died January 2, 1879, and Lydia, born in Newburyport in 1806, who died in April, 1851. He removed to Newburyport in 1802, and, after the loss of his first wife, married Elizabeth, daughter of Nicholas Johnson of that town, by whom he had four children,—Phillip I., born in December, 1817, who died in 1846; John Newmarch, born October 20, 1820, now living; William, born August 10, 1823, who died October 15, 1875; and Mary Anna, born in March, 1816, who died in August, 1831.

His father, Benjamin, was in slender circumstances and unable to give his son a better education than the common schools of Salisbury afforded. Nor did he enjoy that long, for at about the age of ten or eleven years he began a sea life, and his preparatory instruction for a business career was the result of his native power of observation, applied to the various incidents and events going on under his eyes on ship-board and in the different parts to which he sailed. While learning the sailor's profession he looked beyond its narrow horizon into the field of commerce in which the vessels he sailed in were engaged, taking a note of the cargoes out and the cargoes home, the wants of the people in foreign lands, the methods of dealing with them, and all the formula of trade, and thus, in a higher and better school than cities and towns could devise, laid the foundation of a mercantile career.

At about the age of twenty-one he became master, and, not long after, part owner of the vessel he commanded. In 1806 the ship "Hesper," of 303 tons, was built in Amesbury for Samuel Toppan and John N. Cushing, and it is not unlikely that this was his first venture in ownership and that he commanded the vessel of which he owned a part. In 1814 the brig "Hesper," of 187 tons, was built in Newburyport, of which he was the chief owner, and it is probable that before that date he had abandoned the sea and as a merchant had begun to make use of his acquired knowledge. In 1815, with Nicholas Johnson, Jr., whose sister he about that time married, he built at Newbury the schooner "Success," of 75 tons, and in 1823, with the same associate, at Newburyport, the brig "Rapid," of 223 tons. In these two vessels Mr. Johnson was the chief owner, but after 1823 Capt. Cushing seems to have accumulated sufficient capital to stand alone and to extend more widely the business in which for many years he was prominent and successful.

Beginning with the West Indies trade, he soon added to that a trade with Russia, Holland and other north of Europe countries, and was among the first to reap the benefits of the trade on the northwest coast of America, in which Astor, of New York, and Bryant and Sturgis, of Boston, took a prominent part. In 1828 he built the "Czarina," of 218 tons; in 1830 the brig "Pocahontas," in which Henry Johnson was a part owner; in 1632 the brig "Palos," of 277 tons, of which his son Caleb owned a part; in the same year, with Henry Johnson as part owner, the brig "James Caskie," of 283 tons; in 1833, with Mr. Johnson, the brig "Carthage," of 296 tons; in 1833, alone, the brig "Ark," of 298 tons; in 1834, with his son Philip, the brig "Corinth," of 414 tons; in 1837, with Mr. Johnson, the brig "Pallas," of 102 tons; 1840, with Mr. Johnson, the brig "Essex," of 273 tons; in 1841, with the same, the brig "Athens," of 300 tons, the brig "Massachusetts," of 308 tons, and the brig "Chenamus," of 202 tons; in 1842, alone, the brig "James Gray," of 300 tons; in 1844, alone, the brig "Salisbury," of 296 tons; and in 1845 the brig "Keying," of 300 tons. No other vessel appears to have been built by him on the Merrimac before his death, which occurred at Newburyport, January 5, 1849. His son, bearing his name, has, however, added largely to the fleet of which Newburyport has in the past been able to boast, and among the vessels built under his chief ownership may be mentioned the brig "Hesper," 1851, of 392 tons; the ship "John N. Cushing," 1853, of 633 tons; the ship "Sonora," 1854, of 708 tons; the ship "Lawrence Brown," 1855,

of 795 tons; the ship "Lyra," 1855, of 812 tons; the ship "Elizabeth Cushing," 1857, of 888 tons; the ship "Elcano," 1864, of 1210 tons; the ship "Whittier," 1869, of 1295 tons; the ship "Nearchus," 1872, of 1288 tons; and the ship "Mary L. Cushing," 1883, of 1658 tons.

To the qualities of quick perception, keen observation, knowledge of human nature, active industry, indomitable energy and promptness of decision, indicated by the career here outlined, Mr. Cushing added a dignity of character and a sterling integrity which commanded the confidence and respect of his fellow-citizens.

DANIEL INGALLS TENNEY was the son of Richard and Ruth (Ingalls) Tenney, and was born in Newburyport, May 2, 1800. His father was a carpenter, who lived at one time on Federal Street and at a later date on the corner of Orange and Fair Streets. Perley Tenney, a brother of his father, kept a store on Market Square, and in this store Daniel, at the age of twelve years, was entered as a boy or clerk. During the business depression caused by the War of 1812 he left his uncle and went on foot to Boston to seek employment. He there entered the office of his uncle, Dr. William Ingalls, a distinguished physician, who furnished him with occupation until he obtained a situation as an apprentice in mercantile life. After a few years' residence in Boston he removed to the city of New York to serve as a clerk for his brother, William I. Tenney, who was carrying on a jewelry store at the corner of Murray Street and Broadway.

It was not long before his aptitude for business made him sufficiently useful to his brother to be taken into partnership with him, a connection which continued until his brother's death, in 1848. The business was carried on after that date under his sole management until May 1, 1856, when he withdrew from active business life, with a well-deserved fortune. Though leaving Newburyport when a young man and forming absorbing interests, surrounded by the bustle and activity of city life, he never permitted his attachment to his native town to wither and fade.

In 1863 he subscribed the sum of four hundred dollars to aid in the purchase of the building now used for a Public Library. This was his first benefaction in behalf of the city. His second was a new year's gift, in 1877, of the lamp-posts and lanterns which light the entrance to the City Hall. Previous to this last gift his sister, Mrs. Eliza Hanaford, who died in Brooklyn in 1872, leaving Mr. Tenney the only survivor of the family, made a bequest of five thousand dollars to the Society for the Relief of Aged Females in Newburyport. On the 7th of October, 1878, the city government received the following communication.

"To His Honor the Mayor and City Council of the City of Newburyport:

"GENTLEMEN:—I have the honor to announce to you that Daniel I. Tenney, of New York City, a native of Newburyport, feeling a very deep interest in his birthplace, has contracted with the celebrated artist, J. G. A. Ward, for a bronze statue of Washington, which, when completed, he proposes to present to this city.

"As his representative, I would respectfully petition your honorable body for leave to locate the statue in the triangular spot at the east end of the Bartlett Mall, and for permission to occupy the ground during its erection.

"Respectfully Yours,
"EDWARD F. COFFIN."

The request of Mr. Coffin was, of course, granted, and on the 8th of November following a committee of the city government was appointed "to make the necessary arrangements for the reception and unveiling of the munificent gift." A committee was duly appointed, but in consequence of unavoidable delays a new city government came into office before the reception of the statue, and a new committee, consisting of His Honor, John J. Currier, Aldermen Charles L. Ayers and William H. Noyes and Councilmen Joseph Hall, Thomas Huse, Jr., and Thomas H. Boardman, was appointed to take charge of the ceremonies.

The statue was cast in bronze by George Fischer & Brother, of New York City, and the pedestal was wrought of granite by M. T. Jameson, of Rockland, Maine, from designs drawn by Rufus Sargent, of Newburyport. The reception and unveiling took place on the 22d of February, 1879, the former, in consequence of the inclemency of the weather, in the City Hall.

The ceremonies of the reception were in accordance with the following programme:

Grand Fantaisie.....Bosquet.
Haverhill Cornet Band.
Introductory Prayer.....Rev. Samuel J. Spalding, D.D.
"Angel of Peace"..... ....To the music of Keller's American Hymn.
Sung by a chorus of sixteen voices.
Address of Rev. Stephen H. Tyng, D.D., to the sons of Newburyport in New York City, with accompanying resolutions presented by Rev. Geo. D. Wildes, D.D.
Original Hymn.....By a Son of Newburyport.
"Washington"—an original sonnet.....By Hon. George Lunt.
Read by Rev. George D. Wildes, D.D.
Selections from "Martha".....Arranged by Hartman.
Haverhill Cornet Band.
Address.....Right Rev. Thomas M. Clark, D.D.
"Freedom, God and Right,".....J. Barnby
Sung by a chorus of sixteen voices.
Presentation of Statue.....By Edward F. Coffin, Esq.
Acceptance of Statue.....By John J. Currier, Mayor.
Musical Selections.....Haverhill Cornet Band.

At the close of the exercises in City Hall a procession was formed under the direction of Lieutenant-Colonel Charles L. Ayers, chief marshal, escorted by Company M of Lawrence (Sherman Cadets), Capt. Lawrence Duchesney; Company A (Cushing Guard), of Newburyport, Capt. David L. Withington; Company F (Haverhill City Guards), of Haverhill, Capt. Marshall Alden; and Company B (City Cadets), of Newburyport, Capt. Samuel W. Tuck,—four companies of the Eighth Regiment, forming a battalion under the command of Major Edward F. Bartlett,—and marched from Brown Square to the Mall, where the statue was unveiled without further ceremony. Mr. Tenney died at the Metropolitan Hotel, in New York, where he had lived for many years, on Wednesday, November 23, 1881, and was buried on Friday, the 25th, in Greenwood Cemetery.

ELEAZER JOHNSON was born in Newburyport on the 12th of November, 1790. He was educated first at Dummer Academy, and afterwards entered Harvard College, but did not remain. His brother, Jonathan Greenleaf Johnson, named after his grandfather, who died in September, 1868, entered college at the same time, and graduated in 1810. After leaving Cambridge, Mr. Johnson made Newburyport his permanent place of residence, and few men within its limits have been more conspicuous in town affairs and more generally popular. As early as 1811 he was chosen selectman and served in that capacity two years. In 1831 he was moderator of the annual town-meeting, and in the same year was chosen town clerk, continuing in office until the incorporation of the city, in 1851. On the organization of the city government he was chosen city clerk, and remained in office until his death, February 25, 1869. Upon the announcement of his death, the church bells were tolled and the flag on City Hall was displayed at half-mast.

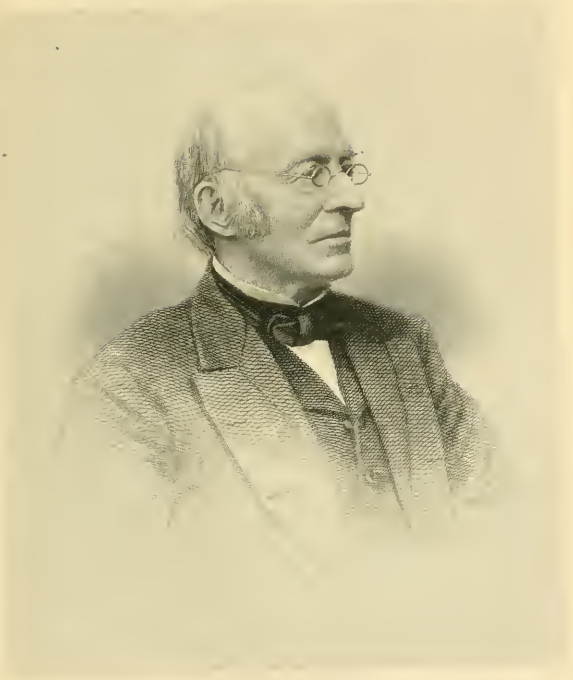
Funeral services were held at the house of Mr. Johnson at half-past one on Wednesday, March 2d, followed by public services in the Pleasant Street Church, attended by the Masonic societies of the city, the city government and the living ex-mayors. A large concourse attended the exercises and followed the remains to the grave.

JOHN J. SPRAGUE was born in Newburyport in 1810, and in early manhood was private secretary of Lewis Cass. In 1834 he received an appointment as second lieutenant in the Marine Corps. He served through the Florida War under General Worth, and in 1844 married the general's oldest daughter. When the war broke out in 1861 he was in Texas, in command of a part of the troops surrendered by General Twiggs. He was released on his parole and appointed adjutant-general of the State of New York by Governor Seymour. In 1865, he was appointed colonel of the Seventh Regular Infantry, and was made military governor of Florida. When the army was reduced he was placed on the retired list and settled in St. Augustine. He died in New York Hospital, in New York, on Friday, September 6, 1878, at the age of sixty-eight.

WILLIAM LLOYD GARRISON was born in a little frame house, believed to be still standing on School Street in Newburyport, December 10, 1805. His father was Abijah Garrison, a master of a vessel who had settled in Newburyport in the spring of that year. Abijah Garrison was born on the Jemseg, a tributary of St. John's River in 1773, and was the son of Joseph Garrison, who was a farmer and is believed to have been an Englishman, found there by grantees of lands, who emigrated there from Essex County in 1763. Joseph Garrison married, August 14, 1764, Mary, daughter of Daniel Palmer, one of the Essex emigrants, who was great-grandson of Sergeant John Palmer, who settled in Rowley in 1639. The wife of Abijah Garrison was Frances Maria, daughter of Andrew Lloyd, of Deer Island, in Passamaquoddy Bay, whom he met while in port on one of his coasting voyages. In 1804 Abijah removed to St. John, and subsequently to Granville, Nova Scotia, from which place the migration to Newburyport was made. His children were Mary Ann, born on the Jemseg, who died in infancy; James Holley, born in St. John, July 10, 1801; Caroline Eliza, 1803; William Lloyd, Dec. 1, 1805; Maria Elizabeth, July, 1808. Not long after this last date Abijah Garrison left his family and never returned. He went to New Brunswick, where he is known to have been living in 1814, and is believed to have died in Canada. Mrs. Garrison, left poor, managed, by the aid of friends and by her services as nurse, to support her family, and when William Lloyd was old enough, he would be sent out on election and other public days to earn a few pennies to add to the family store.

During the War of 1812, Mrs. Garrison removed to Lynn, taking James with her to learn the shoemaker's trade, and William went to live with Deacon Ezekiel Bartlett, who lived at the corner of Water and Summer Streets. His earliest instruction was obtained at a primary school in School Street, and his later education at the grammar school on the Mall for three months, at the end of which he was taken from school to do chores for Mr. Bartlett. Being fond of music, he joined, while yet a boy, the choir of the Baptist Church and sometimes acted as chorister.

At the age of nine years he was apprenticed to Gamaliel W. Oliver, of Lynn, to learn shoemaking, but the work proved too hard for his delicate frame and constitution. In October, 1815, he went with his mother and brother to Baltimore, in company with Paul Newhall, a shoe manufacturer, who was removing his business to that city. The experiment, however, proved a failure, and Mr. Newhall returned to Lynn, followed soon after by William, whom, at his own earnest solicitation, his mother sent to Newburyport. Soon after he was apprenticed to Moses Short, of Haverhill, cabinet-maker, but, becoming home-sick, was permitted to return to his old friend, Mr. Bartlett, in Newburyport, where, in the autumn of 1818, he was apprenticed to Ephram W. Allen, editor and proprietor of the *Newburyport Herald*, to learn the printer's trade. On the 18th of October he entered on an apprenticeship of seven years, during which his mind rapidly strengthened and improved in the literary atmosphere about him. He wrote not only for the *Herald*, on which he was employed, but for the *Salem Gazette* and other papers. In 1825, at the close of his apprenticeship, he established the *Free Press* in Newburyport, which proved a failure, and in 1827 he became editor of a total abstinence paper in Boston, called the *National Philanthropist*. The next year he went to Bennington, Vermont, as editor of the *Journal of the Times*, and from thence to Baltimore, in 1829, to edit the *Genius of Universal Eman-*



Wm. Lloyd Garrison.



W. H. Simpson

cipation. His mother had previously died in Baltimore on the 3d of September, 1823. In 1830, in Baltimore, he was convicted of libel for denouncing Francis Todd, of Newburyport, for domestic piracy, and for non-payment of a fine of fifty dollars and costs was confined in jail forty-nine days.

On the 1st of January, 1831, he established the *Liberator* in Boston, and on Wednesday, the 21st of October, he was the victim of a mob, from whose violence he was with difficulty rescued. In 1865 the *Liberator* was discontinued, the purpose for which it was established, the freedom of the slave, having been accomplished.

The anniversary of the completion of his apprenticeship, October 18, 1875, he spent in the office of the *Newburyport Herald* in setting up a poem by Whittier, and again in 1878 he visited the office and set up some sonnets of his own, which are copied below from the impression made by the types set by his hand.

Mr. Garrison married, September 4, 1834, Helen Eliza, daughter of George Benson, of Brooklyn, who was born in Providence, February 23, 1811, and removed with her father to Brooklyn in 1824. He died in New York, at the house of his daughter, Mrs. Willard, at a quarter before eleven o'clock on the evening of Saturday, May 24, 1879, and the memory of the man whom Boston mobbed, Boston has honored by the erection of a bronze statue in the park of Commonwealth Avenue.

SONNETS.

BY WM. LLOYD GARRISON.

I.

High walls and huge the BODY may confine,
And iron grates obstruct the prisoners' gaze,
And massive bolts may baffle his design,
And watchful keepers mark his devious ways;
Yet scorns th' immortal MIND this base control!
No chains can bind it, and no cell enclose.
Swifter than light, it flies from pole to pole,
And in a flash from earth to heaven it goes!
It leaps from mount to mount—from vale to vale
It wanders, plucking honeyed fruits and flowers;
It visits home to hear the fireside tale,
Or in sweet converse pass the joyous hours.
'Tis up before the sun, roaming afar,
And in its watches wearies every star!

II.

They tell me, LIBERTY, that in thy name
I may not plead for all the human race;
That some are born to bondage and disgrace,
Some to a heritage of woe and shame,
And some to power supreme and world-wide fame;
With my whole heart I scorn the doctrine base,
And as an equal brotherhood embrace
All peoples, and for all fair freedom claim.
Know this, O man! whate'er thy rank or state,
God never made a tyrant or a slave!
Woe then to those who dare to desecrate
His glorious image! for to all he gave
Eternal rights, which none may violate,
And by a mighty hand th' oppress'd he yet shall save.

III.

(*Written at the half-way stage.*)

If to the age of three-score years and ten,
God of all life, thou shalt my term prolong,
Still be it mine to reprobate all wrong,
And save from woe my suffering fellow-men.
Whether in freedom's cause my voice or pen
Be used by Thee, who art my joy and song,
To vindicate the weak against the strong,
Upon my labors rest Thy benison!
O! not for Afric's race alone I plead
Or her descendants; but for all who sigh
In servile chains, whate'er their caste or creed.
They not in vain to Heaven send up their cry;
For all mankind from bondage shall be freed,
And from the earth be chased all forms of tyranny.

MICHAEL HODGE SIMPSON was born in Newburyport, November 15, 1809. He was the son of Paul Simpson, a prosperous ship-master and ship-owner in the most prosperous days of Newburyport. His father married the widow of John Hodge, son of Michael Hodge, and thus the son acquired his name. Mr. Simpson attended the Newburyport Academy, and at the age of fourteen was placed in the commission house of Adams & Emery, of Boston. Soon after, however, he was employed by Jonathan Emery & Son. This firm was engaged in mercantile business, and young Simpson was permitted to send ventures to foreign parts, and so was enabled to lay the foundations of a business on his own account. His partner in these ventures was Charles H. Coffin, of Newburyport, who afterwards became his partner also in business on India Street, in Boston, in company with George Otis, a son of Harrison Gray Otis. It is said that before the young men were of age they sent a ship and cargo to Calcutta, of which they, with the captain, were the sole owners.

By the connection of the firm with the wool trade of South America the attention of Mr. Simpson was drawn to the necessity of freeing Buenos Ayres wool from burs, and thus enhancing its value in the market. After long study his native ingenuity perfected machinery for the purpose, which he sold to Whitwell & Bond, who were the proprietors of the Saxonville Woolen Mills. The failure of this firm in 1837, of whose creditors Mr. Simpson was one, forced the sale of the mills, and he became the agent of the purchasers. Mr. Simpson, however, soon became their chief owner, and so continued up to his death, and the chief owner as well of the Roxbury Carpet Co., an outgrowth of the Saxonville Mills.

During his whole active career he never forgot his native town, for which, by various benefactions, he manifested his love. For the enlargement of the Public Library building he contributed $18,000; for the improvement of the Mall he gave $2500; at Plum Island he laid a plank-drive from the hotel to the beach, a quarter of a mile in length, and at his death bequeathed the sum of $20,000 to the city, the income of which was to be devoted to sprinkling the streets. Mr. Simpson married, early in life, Elizabeth, daughter of Jeremiah Kilham, of Boston, by whom he had several children, and later in life Evangeline Marrs, of Saxonville, whom he left a widow. He died at his residence in Boston, on Sunday, December 22, 1884, aged seventy-five years.

Rev. Daniel P. Pike died at Newburyport, December 4, 1887. He was born at Hampton Falls, N. H., March 1, 1815. His father, Sewall Pike, was a United States detective during the War of 1812, and dying in 1816, the son was taken to Kensington, N. H., where he lived with his grandfather, Robert Prescott. His early life was spent in farm labor. He studied three and one-half years at Hampton Academy, and about the same length of time at Phillips (Exeter) Academy, and on completing his academical course he taught school for several years in New Hampshire and Massachusetts.

The devoted piety of his mother led him early to make a public profession of religion, and he united with the Christian Church at Kensington, N. H., in April, 1831, retaining his membership to his death. He began his ministerial labors five years later, preaching his first sermon in March, 1836, and was ordained July 5, 1837. His first pastorate at Hampton Falls was short, but successful, and he left there to accept the pastorate of the Christian Church at Salisbury Point, Mass. Many families from the north end of Newburyport attended services at the neighboring town, and May 7, 1840, a Christian Church was organized in Newburyport, and Elder Pike accepted unanimous invitation to become its pastor, entering Nov. 1st on duties which continued for nearly half a century. His sermons averaged more than two each week, making nearly 5000 preached; married more than 1000 couples; attended fully 1000 funerals, and baptized by immersion nearly 1100 persons. April 4, 1858, the elder baptized 97 candidates on the banks of the Merrimac, in the presence of 10000 persons, many of whom came many miles to witness the ceremony. After the baptism he gave the right hand of fellowship to 107 new members in the Unitarian Church (the largest in the city), which was crowded to its utmost capacity, and many hundreds were turned away, so great was the interest. In 1844–45, his society built a church on Court Street, and for a series of years one of the largest societies worshipped therein. Outside of his parish his work has not been limited. He became an active participant in the anti-slavery cause in 1833, and continued until Lincoln's emancipation. He has been engaged in temperance work from boyhood, has given hundreds of temperance addresses, and has secured thousands of signatures to his total abstinence pledge.

The deceased was an active citizen, as well as minister, and was several times honored by his fellow-citizens, — nine years on the School Board, two years as overseer of the poor, one year an alderman, several times a candidate for mayor, and in 1856 a member of the Governor's Council. In May, 1861, he was appointed by President Lincoln deputy collector of customs at Newburyport, holding the position through the different administrations till August, 1886. During his life he published many tracts and sermons, and for many years was associate editor of the *Herald of Gospel Liberty*, the oldest religious paper in the country. This paper for twenty yeary was published at Newburyport (prior to 1867), when he was sole proprietor and editor. He also edited and published, from 1867 to 1872, the *Weekly Christian Herald*, and his labor of sixteen hours per day was too much, even for his iron constitution, and in 1873 he was confined to his bed for about four months. He slowly rallied, and during the past few years had regained much of his old-time vigor.

He was twice married, his first wife being Sophia P. Morrill, of Salisbury Point, who died in 1879. His second wife, who survives him, is a daughter of Rev. Israel Chesley, of Rochester, N. H. Three children survive—Mrs. B. F. Greely and Mrs. F. P. Craig, of Marlboro', in this State, and Benjamin S. Pike, of Washington, D. C.

Daniel N. Haskell was born in Newburyport January 1, 1818. He went to Boston early in life, and entered as clerk the fancy goods store of Elisha V. Ashton, on Washington Street a little north of School Street, where he remained seventeen years. Mr. Ashton having accumulated a fortune, spent much of his time in Europe, leaving Mr. Haskell the sole manager of his business. The further accumulation of his wealth was due to the care and business sagacity of his clerk. At an early period in his Boston life Mr. Haskell took an active interest in politics, and in the last years of the old Whig party, in 1849 and 1850, he was chosen a member of the City Council. He was an active member also of the Mercantile Library Association, and in 1848 delivered an address on the occasion of the dedication of its new hall in Summer Street, Boston. He became also a correspondent of the Newburyport *Herald*, a contributor to the *Boston Transcript* and the *Saturday Evening Gazette*, and thus laid the foundation for the editorial career which he afterwards pursued. In 1853 he took editorial charge of the *Boston Transcript*, and for twenty-one years administered his editorial duties with ability and success. He died in Boston Friday, February 10, 1871.

Ebenezer Stone was the son of Capt. Ebenezer and Sarah (Moody) Stone. He was born September 4, 1785, and was brought up in the counting-room of his uncle, Major David Coffin, a large and enterprising merchant and ship-owner of Newburyport. He was for a considerable part of his life engaged in shipping, but for some years before his death was the treasurer of the Bartlett Mills. He was a man of stern integrity and correct business habits, to whom projectors of new enterprises looked when they sought an officer who would command the confidence of capitalists and the community. When it was proposed to build the second mill of the Bartlett corporation, William Bartlett, when asked to subscribe, said that he would put in $100,000 if Mr. Stone was appointed treasurer. Mr. Stone was appointed and the mill was built. He



was the father of Hon. Eben F. Stone, and died January 2, 1855.

Richard S. Spofford, M.D.—The name of Spofford is of Saxon origin, and appears in "Domesday Book" as the name of a domain parceled out under William the Norman to William, Earl Percy, at the time of the Conquest in 1061. The town of Spofforth still occupies the locality, and its castle, one of the most ancient in England, whose ruins cover nearly an acre of ground, still bears the name.

The chief representatives of the name were connected with the ecclesiastical hierarchy in the earlier epoch of English history. From John Spofford, Vicar of Silkiston, in the West Riding of Yorkshire, whose church is known, on account of its beautiful structure, as the Minster of the Moors, and who was ejected for non-conformity in 1663, all branches of the name in the United States are directly descended.

John Spofford, the first settler of the name in America, a son of the non-conforming vicar, came over with a group of families, about twenty in number, who accompanied the Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, their pastor, and who settled between Newbury and Ipswich, in Massachusetts. His name appears in the record of the first division of land or household lots in 1643, in the town of Rowley, where he lived for about thirty years, until he removed to what was then a frontier of the wilderness, known since that time as Spofford Hill, a farm of broad proportions still owned and occupied largely by his descendants.

Richard S. Spofford, of Newburyport, the subject of this sketch, was born at Rowley, in the county of Essex, in the sixth generation from the pioneer emigrant, John Spofford. He was the son of Dr. Amos Spofford, an eminent physician and one of the original members of the Massachusetts Medical Society, who was likewise an extensive farmer and respected citizen. His grandfather was Colonel Daniel Spofford, of Rowley, who was present at the Lexington fight and commanded a regiment in the Revolutionary War; having previously acted as chairman of Committee of Correspondence of the town of Rowley, a tried and trusted citizen, a representative in the Legislature, and a member of the convention which formed the Constitution of Massachusetts. The mother of Dr. Spofford was Irene, daughter of Captain Moses Dole and Ruth, daughter of Deacon Nathan Peabody, of Boxford; by another tie of relationship he was a cousin of the philanthropist, George Peabody, whose grandmother was Judith Spofford, a daughter of Colonel Daniel Spofford.

While quite a youth, his father being engaged in a wide practice, as was also an older brother, he had familiarized himself with many secrets of the healing art, read many medical works, and gained no inconsiderable skill in the compounding of medicines. Through all the generations the family have been distinguished by eminent practitioners in the medical profession, and in adopting that profession Dr. Spofford, of Newburyport, followed in an hereditary track. He was fitted for college at Phillips Academy, Andover, and entered Harvard College in the class which graduated in 1812. While in college he was pre-eminent as a mathematical scholar, carrying off the "Great Slate," which in those days was accorded to the best mathematician of the class, passing from hand to hand as a college heir-loom. The contest in this case was between himself and the late learned Judge Peleg Sprague, as the latter once informed the writer of this sketch.

Dr. Spofford pursued the studies of his profession with his father and with his brother, finishing his course at the Philadelphia College. On receiving his diploma he joined his brother in practice at Rowley, but in 1816 he removed to Newburyport, where he remained in active practice for a period of more than fifty years, having withdrawn therefrom only a few years before his death, which occurred at his home in Newburyport, January 19, 1872.

To speak of Dr. Spofford's skill and attainments in his profession is simply to rehearse a universally admitted fact while he was living, one which will long have a traditional verification in all the country-side where his arduous practice lay, including Newburyport and the adjacent towns. Called often in consultation with other leading physicians of the metropolis and of other States, and having had the care of many illustrious patients, there was that just appreciation of his wisdom and learning, of his zeal and fidelity, his quick perceptions and intuitive resolutions, which made his name known and respected far beyond the local limits of his professional arena. Always a student and lover of scientific inquiry, he brought to the augmentation of his efficiency as a physician great knowledge in all the departments of natural science, a mind balanced with that equipoise derived from mathematical studies and the tender feelings of a sympathetic nature.

The following are the words of a notice published in the *Newburyport Herald* at the time of his death: "He was generous and unselfish, and where he was called by distress he went to its relief without asking whence the fee was to come. Indeed, his benevolence leaned to the side of a fault in his character. He was a kind friend, witty and entertaining in conversation, his memory stored with extensive reading of ancient and modern literature and science. He was equally ready with a quotation from Homer, a discussion of Huxley and Tyndall and Darwin, or a problem of the higher mathematics. Dr. Spofford had a wonderful quickness of insight. Those great eyes of his saw everything within the range of their vision and saw through it at once. Accordingly, he was great in the diagnosis of disease."

Dr. Spofford's activity as a citizen was in nowise limited by his professional life. There was nothing concerning the public interest to which he was indifferent, although personally he was never moved by

political aspirations. He was an early friend and admirer of his fellow-townsman, Mr. Caleb Cushing, and a strong and enthusiastic supporter of that distinguished statesman in the memorable contests of his early manhood. He co-operated with Mr. William Bartlet in the introduction of the cotton manufacture at Newburyport, acting as one of the building committee and directors of the Bartlet Mills. He was a member and one of the founders of the "Merrimack Humane Society," and connected with other societies of local interest. For a number of years he was one of the overseers of Harvard University. Becoming interested in early life in Free-masonry, its charms and philosophies continued to enlist his study and to command his devotion to the hour of his death. He had risen to the highest of its degrees and brought to their illustration, as he advanced from one position to another, the wealth of his research and learning.

At his decease Dr. Spofford left a widow surviving him (Mrs. Frances Spofford, an accomplished and intelligent woman, since deceased), two children (Richard S. Spofford and Frances H. Spofford), and a step-daughter (Mrs. Georgiana Hall, the child of Mrs. Spofford by a previous marriage).

The impressive character of the services at Dr. Spofford's funeral bore witness to the popular respect in which he was held, and to his public and private worth. All classes, rich and poor, learned and unlearned of the professions, without distinction of school or creed, the Masonic orders, the community indeed as a whole, withdrew from their accustomed employments to pay the last tribute of respect to his memory—a memorable incident occurring as the remains were followed to their last resting-place in Oak Hill Cemetery, and one showing the depth and tenderness of the public feeling, when, with a spontaneous impulse, the schoolboys of the Turnpike School stood with uncovered heads as the funeral procession passed by. On his burial casket was the following inscription: "Richard S. Spofford, M. D., May 24, 1787, Jan'y 19, 1872. *Homines non accedunt proprius deos quam salutem hominibus dando.*" These words may be translated, "Men never approach nearer to gods than when giving health to their fellow-men."

JOHN CURRIER, JR., was born April 14, 1802, in that part of Newbury called Belleville, which was annexed to Newburyport in 1851. He was descended from Richard Currier, one of the early settlers in Salisbury, Mass., and an inhabitant of that town at the time of its incorporation in 1640. Richard Currier was among the first who went from Salisbury to Amesbury and signed the eight articles of agreement between the two towns, January 14, 1654. He was one of the Board of Selectmen from 1669 to 1683, and died February 22, 1687. He had a son Thomas born March 8, 1646, whose son Richard, born April 12, 1653, had a son John, born April 5, 1704. John had a son John, born June 6, 1752, whose son John, born November 26, 1771, married, December 31, 1795, Hannah Coffin, of Newbury. John and Hannah had eight children, four boys and four girls, among whom was the subject of this sketch, who always retained, after his father's death, the name of John Currier, Jr. Only one of these children, Samuel C. Currier, born February 3, 1814, is now living.

The subject of this sketch received his education at the common schools, and at an early age began work in the ship-yard of Elisha Briggs, at the foot of Ashland Street, in what was then Newbury. Elisha Briggs was a master carpenter, who came from Pembroke, Mass., and was the son of Seth Briggs, of that town. During a temporary depression in the ship-building industry on the Merrimac he went, in company with a number of other ship-carpenters, to New Brunswick and found employment in the yards on the St. John's River.

Returning home after a brief stay, he began work as a ship-builder in the yard then owned by Nathan Merrill, just below Moggaridge's Point, and there built the ship "Brenda" three hundred and seventy-five tons, in 1831; the ship "Republic," three hundred and ninety-seven tons, in 1832; the bark "Oberlin," three hundred and fifty tons, in 1833; the ship "Newburyport," three hundred and thirty tons, in 1834; and the ship "St. Clair," four hundred and twenty-two tons, in 1834. It is possible that in the construction of the first three he may have had other carpenters associated with him in the contracts.

In 1834 he bought land on the banks of the Merrimac, which he fitted for a ship-yard, and where, until 1884, he carried on business on his sole account. During the fifty-three years from 1831 to 1884 he built ninety-seven vessels, of which ninety-two were ships, four barks and one was a schooner, the whole amounting to ninety thousand and thirty-two tons, making an average of a fraction over nine hundred and twenty-eight tons to a vessel. During an unusually active period between 1854 and 1856 he launched six ships, averaging eight hundred tons, in twelve months. In 1883 he built the ship "Mary L. Cushing," of one thousand five hundred and seventy-five tons register, which was the last ship built within the limits of Massachusetts.

Previous to 1850 it was the custom of builders to contract with owners to deliver the ship with hull and spars only. After that date it was customary with Mr. Currier to furnish the ship complete and ready for sea, with sails, anchors, rigging, boats, cabin furniture, crockery, bedding, ballast, etc. During the last thirty years of his business life his son, John J. Currier, was associated with him, though not as a partner, and during most of the time had charge of the financial department and made purchases of materials for construction and outfit. During those thirty years, too, Samuel C. Currier, his brother, had charge of the planking and raising department, but was in no way interested as a partner. Another brother, William Currier (now dead), was at one time

associated as a master-builder with James L. Townsend. A list of vessels built by Mr. Currier may be found below.

Mr. Currier married, in December, 1830, Clarissa, daughter of Levi Carr, and had two children—Mary Putnam, who died March 26, 1845, aged seven years, and John J. Currier, born October 22, 1834, who was mayor of Newburyport in 1879 and 1880, and now holds many responsible offices of trust in that city. After the year 1884 he was engaged in no active business, but occupied his time with his domestic cares and with the management of vessels, in which he was largely interested up to his death, September 2, 1887. He was a man of a reserved and retiring disposition, too much absorbed in the business engagements which pressed upon him to seek political or other public preferment, but nevertheless seeking at all times, and while bearing the heaviest burdens, the happiness and welfare of his home, and never permitting his attachment to the church of which he was a member to languish or fade. Though surrounded by worldly cares and the possessor of that increasing wealth which too often binds men to earth and earthly things, he remembered always that life was but probation, and walked humbly and reverently before his God. In his last hours, not forgetful of the ties which bound him to his fellows, he instructed his son to give to the Society for the Relief of Aged Men, the Society for the Relief of Old Ladies, the Ann Jacques Hospital, the Hale Fund for the Care of Disabled Firemen, and to the Baptist Society, each, the sum of five hundred dollars.

It was said by his pastor at the funeral ceremonies:

"I have known but few men, if any, in whom the highest virtues were more perfectly united. He fills out Cowper's measure in a most remarkable degree: 'I venerate the man whose heart is warm, whose hands are pure, whose doctrine and whose life coincident exhibit truest proof that he is honest in the sacred cause.'"

List of vessels built by John Currier, Jr.

		Tons.			Tons.
1831.	Ship Brenda	375	1846.	Ship John Currier	681
1832.	" Republic	397	1847.	" Lebanon	682
1833.	Bark Oberlin	350	1847.	" Fanchon	924
1834.	Ship Newburyport	330	1847.	" Nestorian	690
1834.	" St. Clair	422	1848.	" Franchise	705
1835.	" Leonore	375	1849.	" Charles Hill	705
1836.	" Columbus	597	1849.	" Castillian	993
1837.	" Talbot	622	1850.	" Clarissa Currier	993
1838.	" Flavio	635	1851.	" Inez	705
1838.	" Navigator	414	1851.	Bark Hesper	414
1839.	" Huntress	543	1852.	Ship Parthenia	857
1839.	" Strabo	437	1852.	" Howadji	650
1840.	" Rosalind	402	1853.	" Guiding Star	904
1840.	Schooner Petrel	72	1853.	" John N. Cushing	671
1840.	Ship Virginia	409	1853.	" Volant	896
1841.	Bark Wessacumcon	325	1853.	" Sonora	708
1841.	Ship Jas. D. Farwell	700	1854.	" Merrimac	598
1842.	" Augustine Heard	497	1854.	" Mercury	849
1843.	" Pacific	517	1854.	" Oliver Putnam	1074
1843.	" Amity	502	1854.	" Gleaner	1060
1844.	" Java	543	1854.	" Moses Davenport	899
1844.	" Brutus	546	1855.	" Lawrence Brown	795
1845.	Bark Fredonia	855	1855.	" Lyra	812
1845.	Ship Huguenot	899	1855.	" George West	1123
1846.	" Roman	642	1855.	" Blondel	630
1856.	Ship Indus	849	1865.	Ship Tennyson	1247
1856.	" Blandina Dudley	873	1865.	" Montana	1269
1856.	" Crown Point	1099	1866.	" United States	1315
1857.	" Sarah Newman	909	1867.	" Garden Reach	974
1857.	" Josiah L. Hale	1094	1868.	" Augusta	1326
1857.	" Eliza, Cushing	888	1868.	" Monterosa	1338
1857.	" Black Hawk	941	1869.	" Whittier	1295
1858.	" Star of Peace	941	1869.	" Importer	1270
1858.	" Gaspee	856	1871.	" Franconia	1313
1859.	" John Porter	997	1872.	" Nearchus	1288
1859.	" Lucretia	896	1873.	" Victoria	1349
1859.	" Charles H. Lunt	998	1873.	" Thomas Dana	1445
1859.	" Albert Currier	1000	1874.	" Radiant	1608
1860.	" Jacob Horton	1141	1874.	" G. C. Trufant	1502
1860.	" Glendower	1093	1874.	" Harmonia	1498
1861.	" Kenmore	1100	1875.	" Big Bonanza	1472
1861.	" Whampoa	1144	1875.	" Daniel I. Tenney	1688
1862.	" Rangoon	1144	1876.	" Farragut	1548
1862.	" Winona	1162	1877.	" Jabez Howe	1648
1863.	" Valparaiso	1159	1878.	" Frank N. Thayer	1647
1863.	" Longwood	1179	1881.	" W. H. Lincoln	1727
1864.	" Winged Hunter	1228	1882.	" John Currier	1945
1864.	" Sapphire	1205	1883.	" Mary L. Cushing	1658
1864.	" Elcano	1210			

There are other ship-builders, who, though belonging to a later period, may properly be referred to here.

B. F. Atkinson and J. T. Filmore, as partners or separately, have built, since 1869, at the ship-yard on Merrimac Street at the foot of Titcomb Street, the following vessels:

		Tons.			Tons.
1869.	Bark Sarah E. Kingsbury	520	1877.	Bark Abbie Carver	983
1870.	Bark Escort	636	1878.	" Harvard	1033
1871.	" Harvester	780	1881.	Schooner Cox & Green	591
1872.	" James G. Peedleton	938	1881.	" E. L. Ferris	590
1873.	Bark Wakefield	904	1882.	" Benj. Hall	597
1874.	" Susan Gilmore	1204	1883.	" C. C. Dame	597
1874.	" Edward Kidder	1014	1883.	" A. H. Cross	358
1875.	" Albert Russell	762	1883.	" W. C. French	408
1875.	Ship Brown Brothers	1493	1883.	" W. Moore	443
1876.	Bark Haydn Brown	864	1884.	" J. C. Gregory	379
1877.	" William Hales	868	1885.	" M. A. Trundy	425
			1887.	" Sen. Morgan	——
			1887.	Steamer Minnesota	43

C. H. Currier, George E. Currier and John Currier (3d), as partners, and George E. Currier alone, have built, since 1857, at the ship-yard at the foot of Ashland Street, the following vessels.

The last seventeen were built by George E. Currier alone.

		Tons.			Tons.
1857.	Schr. S. Woodbridge	250	1872.	Schooner F. G. Dow	411
1857.	Brig Timandra	173	1873.	" W. S. Jordan	500
1859.	Bark Germantown	390	1873.	" South Shore	425
1859.	Schooner Charmer	116	1873.	Bark John J. Marsh	425
1860.	Bark Persia	565	1874.	Schooner W. H. Lewis	525
1860.	" Abdel Kader	420	1874.	" W. B. Herrick	550
1860.	Schooner Hortensia	98	1874.	" H. Withington	550
1861.	Bark Schamyl	417	1875.	Bark John Shepard	675
1861.	Schooner E. H. Hatfield	170	1876.	" Obed Baxter	916
1862.	Ship Mary Warren	925	1876.	Scow New Era	200
1863.	" George Warren	970	1877.	Bark H. G. Johnson	1080
1865.	Bark J. H. Pearson	1202	1882.	" B. F. Hunt, Jr	1190
1866.	Ship Timour	900	1882.	Schooner Ida L. Hull	498
1867.	Bark Signal	424	1883.	" A. T. Stearns	508
1868.	" Metis	620	1883.	" M. Sherwood	524
1868.	" Agate	649	1883.	" Jas. B. Pace	642
1870.	" Essex	735	1884.	" R. Esterbrook	657
1871.	Schooner F. J. Odiorne	283	1884.	" M. Andrews	615

J. W. S. Colby and E. P. Lunt have built, since 1866, at the ship-yard on Merrimac Street at the foot of Ashland Street, the following vessels:

		Tons.
1866.	Schooner Matchless	99
1867.	" Pyrola	135
1867.	" C. F. Butler	92
1868.	" D. J. Adams	103
1868.	" C. A. Ropes	103
1869.	" Annie Hooper	103
1869.	" F. A. Smith	117
1869.	" B. P. Poore	127
1870.	" Spring Bird	124
1871.	" Fan. Byrnes	103
1871.	" N. C. Foster	125
1872.	" Cayenne	130
1872.	Schooner J. J. Houseman	150
1873.	" Willie H. Lord	134
1874.	" F. F. Nickerson	90
1874.	" J. L. Mott	191
1875.	" H. L. Newman	145
1876.	" E. F. Long	150
1876.	" E. M. Johnson	51
1877.	" J. Johnson	150
1877.	" San Blas	101
1877.	" K. Boynton	45
1880.	" J. Scaverus	112

George W. Jackman, Jr., has built, since 1850, at the ship-yard on Merrimac Street at the foot of Forrester Street, the following vessels:

		Tons.
1850.	Bark Hollander	525
1850.	Ship Arab	525
1850.	Bark Anne Buckman	550
1851.	Ship Hussar	725
1851.	Schooner Lydia	100
1852.	Bark Falcon	520
1853.	Ship Whistler	820
1854.	" Storm King	1170
1854.	" Black Prince	1050
1855.	" Charmer	1060
1855.	" War Hawk	1060
1856	" Daring	1070
1857.	" Reynard	1051
1858.	" Renoron	1040
1858.	Bark Said Ben Sultan	330
1861.	" Nabob	530
1862.	U. S. Gunboat Marblehead	529
1863.	U. S Steamer Ascutney	1040
1863.	Bark A. N. Franklin	425
1863.	Brig Newbury	220
1864.	Ship Fear Not	1012
1864.	" Monantum	1075
1866.	Steamship Ontario	3000
1867.	Steamship Erie	3000
1873.	Ship Exporter	1370
1874.	" Reporter	1352
1874.	" Landseer	1421

Mr. James L. Townsend, in connection with his early partner, Wm. Currier, built the following vessels before 1862, in a ship-yard on Merrimac Street at the foot of Ashland Street, which was in Newbury before 1851:

		Tons.
——.	Ship Memnon	416
——.	" Lancer	420
——.	" Tzar	460
——.	" Harvard	496
——.	" Ariel	560
——.	" Eloise	700
——.	Bark Angola	263
——.	" May Queen	300
——.	" Arrow	303
——.	" Swallow	350
——.	" Ala	570
——.	Schooner Mary C. Ames	106
——.	Propeller Decatur	142
1843.	Bark Talisman	347
1844.	Ship Rambler	399
1844.	" St. Patrick	896
1845.	Bark Edward Koppisch	250
1845.	Brig Monserat	170
1846.	" Almira	176
1846.	Ship Far West	598
1847.	" Richard Cobden	665
1847.	" Naomi	547
1847.	" Amaranth	666
1848.	" Raduga	587
1848.	" Buenavista	547
1849.	Bark Crusoe	342
1849.	Ship Scargo	578
1849.	" Florida	697
1850.	Bark Dragon	290
1851.	Ship Racer	1669
1852.	" Jirah Perry	435
1852.	" Russell Sturges	1000
1853.	" Highflyer	1195
1853.	" Constitution	1188
1853.	" Jabez Snow	1073
1853.	" Dreadnaught	1414
1854.	" Troubadour	1200
1854.	" Commonwealth	1245
1854.	" Driver	1595
1854.	" Free Trade	1284
1855.	" Brewster	985
1855.	" Courier	554
1855.	" Old Colony	899
1855.	" Grace Gordon	781
1855.	" Gallego	610
1856.	" East Indian	897
1856.	Bark Algonquin	650
1857.	Ship Eddystone	950
1857.	" Victory	1214
1857.	" Reina del Oceana	1033
1861.	" Name unknown	950

CHAPTER CXLVI.

NEWBURYPORT—(*Continued*).

FOURTH PERIOD.

From the Incorporation of the City to 1887.

THE ward lines of the city were established as they now are by the Board of Aldermen and City Council on the 10th of November, 1876.

Ward One contains all the territory southeasterly of a line beginning between 129 and 131 Water Street, and thence running on the west side of Salem to Purchase Street, thence between numbers 10 and 12 Purchase, crossing Milk between 33 and 35, and 38 and 40 to Newbury Street, between numbers 12 and 13, and thence on the east side of Parsons to High Street, and thence on a straight line to the southwest boundary of the city, leaving all of the inhabitants on Salem Street in Ward One and those on Parsons Street in Ward Two.

Ward Two contains all the territory northwesterly of the last-named line to Federal Street, including all the houses bounded on said street, and pursuing a line southwesterly from the northwest side of said street to the bounds of the city.

Ward Three contains all the territory from the northwesterly line of Ward Two to a line commencing on the northwest side of Market Hall building, to include both sides of Inn Street and Tracy's Court, continuing through the centre of Park Street, crossing High and the Mall into Pond Street, taking in the south side of Pond Street, both sides of Hill Street to Parker Street, thence running on the same course to the southerly bounds of the city.

Ward Four contains all the territory from the northwest boundary of Ward Three to a line beginning between numbers 146 and 148 Merrimac Street, thence continuing on the northwest of Boardman Street, including all the houses bounding on said street, including the house on the southwest corner of said street and High Street, crossing High Street between numbers 191 and 195, and continuing on a straight line to the bounds of the city.

Ward Five contains all the territory from the northwest line of Ward Four to a line commencing at the Merrimac River on the southeast corner of the wharf at the foot of Broad Street, through the centre of Broad Street, crossing High Street and continuing in a straight line southeast of Toppan Street, touching and continuing the ward line of 1866 at the house of Wm. T. Colman, leaving said Colman's house in Ward Five.

Ward Six contains all the territory northwest of the last-mentioned line.

Until the war of 1861 the life of Newburyport was comparatively uneventful. In its new garb of a

manufacturing town it was gradually assuming a more prosperous expression, and increasing in both population and wealth. In 1852 gas was introduced into the city, and the Gas Company, of which Eben F. Stone is treasurer, meets both the wants of the people and the expectations of its projectors. Other enterprises have, one after another, been undertaken, to which reference must here be made, though not in the order of their initiation. The Newburyport Mutual Fire Insurance Company, the Newburyport and Amesbury Horse Railroad, the Plum Island Street Railroad, the Newburyport City Railroad, connecting tide-water with the Bostou and Maine Railroad, the coal pocket of the Philadelphia Coal and Iron Company, furnishing storage for coal destined for inland markets, the Newburyport Water Company, with a capital of three hundred thousand dollars, the Harvard Brush Company, the Towle Manufacturing Company, the A. F. Towle & Son Co., for the manufactnre of silver and silver-plated goods, the Victor Manufacturing Company, the Chrolithion Manufacturing Company, with a capital of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars, the Newburyport Quarry Company, the Merrimac River Towing Company furnish means of employing labor, most of which were unknown in the palmy days of navigation.

In addition to these are the Bayley Hat Company, incorporated in 1863, with a capital of seventy-five thousand dollars, of which Benjamin Hale is president and John James Currier, treasurer, and the daily product of which is one hundred and fifty dozen fur and wool hats, amounting to two hundred and fifty thousand dollars per year; and the shoe factories of E P. Dodge and Nathan Dodge, which employ nearly one thousand hands, and under the management of their enterprising and skillful owners have, within a very limited period, advanced from small beginnings to large and profitable industries.

In 1859 the death of Henry Johnson, one of the earliest mayors of the city, occurred. He was chosen mayor in 1852, to fill the vacancy occasioned by the death of Caleb Cushing, and he again served in 1853. Mr. Johnson was the son of Capt. Nicholas Johnson, and was born in Newburyport October 4, 1796. His mother was Mary Perkins, sister of Jacob Perkins, the inventor, who has been referred to in this narrative. He was a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1831 and '32, '46, '47, 48, '49, '50, '51, and during the last years of life was president of the Merchants' Bank. He was extensively engaged in navigation, and was often an associate of John N. Cushing, Sr., in the owner-hip of vessels. He died March 13, 1859.

In 1861 the death of Moses Davenport, another ex-mayor of the city, occurred. Mr. Davenport belonged to a family long associated with Newburyport. William Davenport was born in Boston in 1717, removed to that town in early life and married, in 1740, Sarah Gerrish. He was captain of a company under Gen. Wolfe at the capture of Quebec, in 1759. Upon his return he established the Wolfe Tavern, in 1762, where he died and was succeeded by his son Anthony, who was the grandfather of Moses. Anthony finally went into business at the head of Ferry wharf and took his son John, the father of Moses, into partnership. Moses was born February 14, 1806, and was brought up in the dry-goods business, in which he continued until about 1848, when, having become extensively engaged in navigation, he devoted himself almost exclusively to commercial affairs. He was one of the chief owners of the ship "Gen. Harrison," 410 tons, built in 1840; the ship "Ocean Queen," 824 tons, built in 1847; the ship "Charles Hill," 700 tons, built in 1849; the ship "Parthenia," 849 tons, built in 1852; the ship "Moses Davenport," 899 tons, built in 1855; and the ship "Star of Peace," 941 tons, built in 1858. He was active, prompt, methodical and bore a stainless reputation as a merchant and a man. He was president of the Mechanics' Bank, a Representative in the Legislature in 1852 and '53, a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1841 and '44, and mayor of the city in 1854 and '55, and in 1861 his death, February 18th of that year.

William Cushing, another ex-mayor, died in 1875. He was the son of John N. Cushing and half-brother of the late Caleb Cushing. He was born in August, 1823, and fitted for college at the school kept by Elias Nason in the Newburyport Academy building, now a dwelling-house opposite the head of Fair Street. He graduated at Harvard in 1843, and afterwards visited the Sandwich Islands and Oregon. On his return he became associated in business with his father and his brother, John N. Cushing, and after the death of his father continued in mercantile business with his brother. Mr. Cushing was president of the Ocean Bank, and was four times elected mayor of the city, serving in 1856, '57, '58, and the fourth time declining to serve. In 1871 he was a member of the Legislature. He was universally beloved and respected by his fellow-townsmen, who were always ready to support him for any public position he was willing to accept. He died at Newburyport Friday, October 15, 1875.

Capt. William Graves, another ex-mayor, died about 1877. He was a shipmaster in early life and afterwards become an owner and manager of vessels. At a still later period he became interested in manufacturing, and at the time of his death had been many years treasurer of the Bartlett Mills. At the organization of the city, in 1851, he was chosen a member of the School Board, and in 1866 served as mayor. He was an agreeable and affable man, popular with his fellow-citizens, and worthy of the confidence and respect which he possessed.

The death of Eldridge G. Kelley, another ex-mayor, occurred about five years since. Dr. Kelley married the daughter of Edward S. Rand, and lived while mayor, in the house formerly of Timothy Dexter. The house was remodeled by him, and the grounds were improved. In early life he was a dentist,

but relinquished professional business and devoted much of his time to the gratification of horticultural astes. He was a member of the Legislature in 1873 and mayor in 1871. After the expiration of his term of office he went to Europe and there died.

The death of Isaac H. Boardman, another ex-mayor, occurred during the year 1887. He was at one time extensively engaged in the cod fisheries, and is believed to have been the last owner of a Bank fisherman in Newburyport. He was a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1840 and 1841, a member of the House of Representatives in 1842, 1844 and 1852. He was also at one time a member of the State Senate, and served as mayor in 1863. At the time of his death he was president of the Merchants' National Bank.

A sketch of Caleb Cushing, the first mayor of the city, whose death occurred at Newburyport, on Thursday, January 2, 1879, may be found in the second chapter of this work, relating to the Bench and Bar of Essex County, and of course needs no repetition here.

Few towns or cities are in the enjoyment of more benefactions than Newburyport. It is not so much a matter of special note that so many of its sons at home and abroad acquired wealth. But while in many towns, those who have gone out and acquired higher social position as well as large fortunes, are often reluctant to revive memories of poorer days, the sons of Newburyport seem to have always retained their affection for their early home and to have remembered it with substantial gifts in their dying hours. Some of these benefactions have already been mentioned in sketches of the benefactors. There are others which ought to be referred to.

Moses Atkinson, of Newburyport, who died in 1814, made the following provision in his will:

"I give to the school district to which I belong, toward the support of a school for reading, writing, arithmetic and English grammar, after the payment of the several legacies herein above bequeathed, all the money and notes which my said wife shall leave unexpended, except the last article in the first clause of this instrument; also about ten acres of salt marsh, situate in Salisbury in said county; also about seventeen acres of land in said Newbury, being part of my homestead; also three and three-fourths cow rights in the general pasture in said Newbury; also about four acres of pasture land in said Newbury. . . . All the said bequests to be under the direction of a committee to be chosen by a majority of the legally qualified voters in said district in the month of April, annually forever."

By the will of Margaret Atwood, who died in 1832, "an annual legacy" of twenty dollars was left in aid of the infant-school of Newburyport.

By the will of John Bromfield, of Boston, who died in 1849, it was provided that

"The sum of $10,000 be invested at interest in the Hospital Life Insurance Company in the city of Boston, so and in such manner as that the selectmen or other duly authorized agents of the town of Newburyport for the time being may annually receive the interest which shall accrue or become payable for or in respect of said deposit; and I direct that by or in behalf of said town, the interest so received shall be annually expended, one-half in keeping the side-walks in the public streets of said town in good order, and the other half in the planting and preserving trees in said streets, for the embellishing and ornamenting of said streets for the pleasure and comfort of the inhabitants."

By the will of Rev. William Horton, who died in 1863, it was provided that after the death of his wife and mother the city of Newburyport should be his residuary legatee to the extent of one-quarter for the purchase of land and for the erection of a commodious almshouse.

Under the provisions of the will of Mathias Plant Sawyer, of Boston, the sum of five thousand dollars was paid to the municipal authorities of Newburyport, of which the income was directed to be paid annually to persons having the control of the public Library.

By the will of John M. Bradbury, of Ipswich, son of Ebenezer Bradbury, of Newburyport, who died in 1876, a further sum of one thousand dollars was given to the Public Library.

In 1865 a number of public-spirited citizens and former residents subscribed a sum of money, and purchasing the Tracy mansion, on State Street, at a cost of sixteen thousand dollars, conveyed it to the city for a public library building. The sum of five thousand dollars remaining of the subscription after the purchase of the estate was paid over to Edward S. Mosely, Caleb Cushing and Henry C. Perkins, trustees, the income thereof to be expended in the repair of the library building or its general maintenance.

On the 26th of March, 1870, William C. Todd gave to the Public Library the sum of three hundred dollars annually, for a term of years, to be expended in the maintenance of a public reading-room in the library building.

By the will of Mrs. Lucy M. Follansbee, of Salem, daughter of Thomas M. Follansbee, of Newburyport, the sum of three thousand dollars was given to the city, the income to be expended in the purchase of fuel for distribution among the worthy poor.

By the generosity of John S. Toppan, of New York, son of Jerry Toppan, of Newburyport, the handsome gateway to Oak Hill Cemetery was furnished.

By the will of Joseph A. Frothingham, of Newburyport, who died in 1880, the sum of one thousand dollars was given to the Public Library, the income to be used in the purchase of books.

The following clause in the will of Mrs. Eunice Atkinson Currier, who died June 17, 1873, explains the conditions upon which the property now known as "Atkinson Common," was devised to the city of Newburyport:

"And whereas I desire to leave some testimonial of my regard for my native place, and to have as a monument to the memory of my father, the late Matthew Atkinson, the last of whose family I am, a piece of land in the city of Newburyport to be used as a 'Common' public and free to all the inhabitants of said city, and to be known forever as the 'Atkinson Common;' therefore upon the express condition that my wishes in regard to said Common are fully carried out by the city council of Newburyport, I do give and devise to the city of Newburyport a lot of land, infield and pasture, situate in said city, between High street and Merrimac street, and between land of the late Wm. C. Merrill on High street and Moses L. Chase on Dexter street, and adjoin-

ing land of Thomas Merrell, Jr., on Merrimac street, so long as the same shall be used as a common, as aforesaid; and I do also with intentious as aforesaid give and devise to the said city of Newburyport, so long as the same shall be used as a Common, as aforesaid another lot of land, situated on High street in said city and nearly opposite the afore mentioned field and pasture lots, and described as lying between land of the late Robert Dodge and land of George Roof; and I further will and declare with the intention of creating a Common, as aforesaid, that my executor, with the advice and consent of the board of mayor and aldermen of Newburyport may sell this last-named lot (and in this case my wish is that it first be offered at private sale to the heirs of the late Robert Dodge for a reasonable sum) and with the proceeds of said sale may purchase a lot now owned by heirs of the late Wm. C. Merrill on High street and contiguous to the afore-named field and pasture lot, to be added thereto as a part of said common, or in the event said lot of said heirs of Merrill cannot be purchased at a reasonable sum, then the said proceeds, or any surplus remaining after said purchase, shall be paid to the city treasurer in trust, to be applied to the general improvement of said common. And the above devises of land to the city of Newburyport are upon the express condition that the said city council shall formally accept the same within one year after my decease, agreeing to comply with the conditions, wishes and requests herein made and expressed. It is my wish and request that no hospital, almshouse, asylum, school-house, or any building that may be offensive to the neighborhood, shall be erected on said common, and that no public street be laid out or cause to pass through the same; and in case the city council of Newburyport shall fail to comply with all the afore-named conditions, wishes and requests, then and from that time the aforesaid lots of land shall revert to Joseph Atkinson, of Newbury, in the state of Vermont, and I give and devise the same, in that event, to him, his heirs and assigns forever."

After this digression from the current of this narrative, we come to the War of the Rebellion, in which the record of Newburyport was no less patriotic than in the War of the Revolution.

As is well known, on Monday, the 15th of April, 1861, after the surrender of Fort Sumter, the President issued a call for seventy-five thousand troops to suppress the insurrection. The Third, Fourth, Sixth and Eighth Massachusetts Regiments were ordered from headquarters in Boston, to muster forthwith on Boston Common. The Eighth was an Essex County regiment, under the command of Colonel Munroe. The Cushing Guards, of Newburyport, under the command of Captain Albert W. Bartlett, was Company A in that regiment. Captain Bartlett received his orders by telegraph at 3.30 P.M. on Monday, and at once ordering his carriage, served before dark a summons upon his entire command to meet that evening in the armory. All necessary arrangements were made for departure the next morning, and on Tuesday the company left Boston with its regiment for Washington. Its service expired at the end of three months. The experiences of this regiment are well known. Its journey to Perryville, in Maryland, its passage by steamer to Annapolis, after the discovery that the railroad to Baltimore had been destroyed, its rescue of the "Constitution," its occupation of the railroad station, and its repair of engines and tracks of the railroad leading to Annapolis Junction have all become parts of imperishable history. On the return of this company it was received by the Veteran Artillery Association and a salute was fired on the arrival of the train. The following ode, in honor of the occasion, was written by Anne G. Hale, of Newburyport:

"Go forth with shout and song to meet
The patriots home returning!
Be every star upon our flag
With brightest lustre burning,
To honor those whose noble hearts,
Fair Freedom's weal embracing,
Their life-blood offered for the blot
Its ruddy stripes defacing!

"And vie we proudly to extend
A welcome rich and royal
To greet the kingly souls who sped,
With a devotion loyal,
When fiercest dangers threatened us,
The nation's cry obeying;
Their young lives—all that life holds dear—
Upon her altar laying.

"No timid dastards, tarried they,—
Awaiting calls to glory
Till bright the cloud of battle hung
O'er fields of victory gory;—
But, first and foremost hastened on,
Nor once from duty swerving,—
Their courage high, their prowess bold,
Less valiant brothers nerving.

"Brave, generous, just and true we know
Our country's first defenders—
A Massachusetts soldier now
Her good name ne'er surrenders!
The same upon her laureled heights,
The blue Potomac warding,
As were our grandsires, years ago,
Our bays and rivers guarding.

"So lift our banner high to day,
Made brighter by their story,
And cry 'God bless them one and all—
Redeemers of its glory!'
The soldier-lads of sixty-one,—
We will their memory treasure,
And pray 'where'er their fortunes lead,
God bless them without measure!'"

The next company which left Newburyport for the war was the McClellan Guard, which, under the command of Captain Luther Dame, left Massachusetts June 27, 1861, and was assigned to the Eleventh Regiment. It took part in the engagements at Bull Run, Yorktown, Williamsburg, Fair Oaks, Savage Station, Glendale, Malvern Hill, Bristoe Station, Second Bull Run, Chantilly, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Wilderness, Kelly's Ford, Locust Grove, Spottsylvania, Petersburg, Strawberry Plains, Deep Bottom, Poplar Spring Church, Boydtown Road, North Anna and Cold Harbor—twenty-four battles in all.

The next company entering the service was Company B, of the Thirty-fifth Regiment, under the command of Captain Albert W. Bartlett. It was mustered into the service August 21, 1862, and was mustered out June 9, 1865. It was in the engagements of Antietam, Fredericksburg, Jackson, Campbell Station, Knoxville, Spottsylvania, North Anna, Cold Harbor, Weldon Railroad, South Mountain, Vicksburg, Poplar Spring Church, Hatcher's Run, Fort Sedgwick, Fort Mahone and Petersburg.

The next company was Company A, of the Forty-eighth Regiment, under the command of Captain C. M. Woodward. The regiment was commanded by

Colonel Eben F. Stone, of Newburyport, and was enlisted for nine months' service. It left the State December 27, 1862, and served in the assaults on Port Hudson and Donaldsonville. Other companies and individual enlistments followed, furnishing Newburyport men for the Eighth Regiment, Third Battalion of Riflemen and Third Unattached Company, all for three months; the Sixtieth Regiment, for one hundred days; the Eighth Regiment, Forty-fifth and Forty-Eighth Regiments for nine months; the Sixty-first and Sixty-second Regiments for one year; the Ninth, Eleventh, Twelfth, Seventeenth, Eighteenth, Nineteenth, Twentieth, Twenty-second, Twenty-third, Twenty-fourth, Twenty-sixth, Twenty-eighth, Twenty-ninth, Thirtieth, Thirty-first, Thirty-second, Thirty-fifth, Fortieth, Fifty-fourth, Fifty-sixth, Fifty-seventh and Fifty-ninth Regiments for three years; the Fourth, Fifth, Ninth, Thirteenth and Fourteenth Batteries of light artillery for three years; the First, Second, Third and Fourth Regiments of heavy artillery for three years; the First Battalion of heavy artillery for three years; the First, Second, Third, Fourth and Fifth Regiments of cavalry for three years; the Fortieth and Forty-eighth New York, the First Company of sharp-shooters for three years; and the Veteran Reserve Corps, the Regular Army, the United States Veteran Volunteers and the United States Colored Troops.

The whole number of enlistments in the army credited to Newburyport was thirteen hundred and forty-three, including two colonels, one chaplain, one adjutant, fifteen captains, twenty-three lieutenants, one sergeant-major, sixty-eight sergeants, one commissary-sergeant, eighty-eight corporals, eighteen musicians, one artificer, one blacksmith, one saddler, one wagoner, and eleven hundred and twenty-one privates. Besides these there were two hundred and forty-two enlistments in the navy credited to Newburyport, making the total number of credits fifteen hundred and eighty-five.

Immediately after the departure of the first volunteers, sewing and knitting circles were formed by the ladies, and these, with other associations subsequently formed, did much to relieve the soldiers from discomfort. One of the circles was formed in the south part of the city, under the direction of Mrs. Samuel Pettingell, and another by the Misses Aubin and her friends. A knitting circle was formed in October, 1861, under whose direction, before the 15th of that month, two hundred pairs of socks and fifty blankets were sent to Dr. Elliott, of St. Louis, in response to an appeal sent by him to New England. The Rev. S. J. Spalding, in an interesting series of articles on Newburyport in the Rebellion, published in the *Newburyport Herald*, says, that "parish sewing circles turned their activity to the aid of the soldiers, and from Chain Bridge to the Oldtown Church our women were busy in the preparation of articles for the boys in the army."

He also says that "on Tuesday, August 16, 1862, a public meeting of the ladies was called at the City Hall, and the Soldiers' Relief Association was formed, and Mrs. John C. March was elected president. This society collected in cash during the three years of its existence, $12,714,21, and the boxes sent to the army between August 14, 1862, and July 28, 1865, contained 3222 cotton shirts, 1589 flannel shirts, 2522 pairs of woolen socks, 781 pairs of drawers, 286 dressing gowns, 2700 bandages, 5258 handkerchiefs, 3100 towels, 562 pairs of slippers, 1666 comfort bags, 1120 packages of farina, etc., 1859 boxes of condensed milk, cocoa and broma, 238 pounds of tea and sugar, 2031 bottles of wine, and 287 bottles of cologne. It is estimated that the total amount of money and articles appropriated was about $30,000." At the close of the war an unexpended balance of about $1500 remained, which has been distributed in charities to the needy children of soldiers.

Nor was the city in its municipal capacity backward in its efforts to furnish soldiers, by the payment of bounties, and by promised protection and care of soldiers' families. The war debt of the city reached the sum of one hundred and twenty-three thousand dollars, and no man murmured at the increased taxation which it involved. The following is a list of Newburyport men who were killed or who died in the war, taken from the files of the *Newburyport Herald*:

Capt. Albert W. Bartlett, Co. A, 8th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.

Capt. Goodwin A. Stone, 2d Mass. Cav.; died at Washington from wounds July 18, 1864.

Lieut. John L. Perley, 4th Mass. Cav.; died of yellow fever at Charleston, S. C., while prisoner, November 15, 1864.

Capt. Oscar R. Livingston, 11th U. S. Col. H. A.; lost at sea Nov. 14, '65.

Lieut. John Dunn, Co. A, 17th Regt.; died June 3, 1865.

Lieut. Dean R. Martin, Co. B, 3d Mass. Cav.; killed at Sabine Cross-Roads Apr. 8, 1864.

Sergt. Moses C. Bartlett, Co. B, 35th Regt.; killed at Petersburg July 30, 1864.

Sergt. James W. Bartlett, Co. A, 35th Regt.; died of wounds June 6, 1864.

Edward T. Bennett, Co. B, 48th Regt.; killed at Donaldsonville June 13, 1863.

James L. Barnes, Co. A, 18th Regt.; killed at Fredericksburg Dec. 13, '62.

Fred. D. Ballou, Co. B, 40th N. Y. Regt.; killed at Fredericksburg Dec. 13, 1862.

Wm. H. Bricher, Co. B, 40th N. Y. Regt.; killed at Spottsylvania May 12, 1864.

John Black, Co. C, 11th Regt.; died at Newburyport Aug. 29, 1862.

Corp. Wm. C. Colby, Co. B, 35th Regt.; died of wounds Sept. 17, 1862.

Ezra Currier, Co. B, 35th Regt.; died March 9, 1864.

Albert E. Cressy, Co. B, 40th N. Y. Regt.; killed at Fair Oaks May 31, '62.

Joseph Cossar, Co. B, 35th Regt.; died of wounds Sept. 17, 1862.

Corp. Ebenezer Cressy, Co. A, 17th Regt.; died at Newbern Nov. 30, 1862.

Charles A. Chesley, Co D, 17th Regt.; died in North Carolina May 28, '65.

George W. Colby, Co. B, 19th Regt.; died of wounds Oct. 5, 1862.

James M. Collyer, Co. B, 11th Regt.; died Nov. 18, 1862.

Leonard W. Colman, Co. A, 1st Mass. Cav. (grave No. 10); died a prisoner at Andersonville Nov. 6, 1864.

Christopher C. Conklin, Co. A, 40th Regt.; killed Feb. 10, 1864.

Rufus W. Chandler, Co. H, 32d Regt.; died at Washington Jan. 10, '63.

John Colton, Co. I, 30th Regt.; died of wounds Oct. 22, 1864.

Evans Covington, Co. A, 54th Regt.; died Sept. 25, 1864.

Joseph Couilliard, Co. B, 40th N. Y. Regt.; killed at Gettysburg July, '63.

Albert W. Davenport, Co. B, 35th Regt.; drowned at Fredericksburg Jan. 22, 1863.

Corp. Edward D. Dodge, Co. B, 35th Regt.; died at Crab Orchard Dec. '63.

Jacob F. Dove, Co. A, 35th Regt.; died of wounds April 15, 1864.
Albert Drown, Co. A, 17th Regt.; died at Morehead City Feb. 14, 1864.
Michael F. Devine, Co. B, 11th Regt.; died of wounds June 5, 1862.
Amos Dove, Co. C, 11th Regt.; died of wounds March 4, 1864.
Sewell Dennett, Co. D, 4th Mass. Cav.; died at Annapolis April 1, 1865.
Corp. Wm. Doyle, Co. D, 28th Regt.; died at Hilton Head Feb. 28, 1862.
Charles Delanty, Co. I, 30th Regt.; died Dec. 5, 1862.
John Devereux, Jr., navy, "Colorado;" died at New Orleans Oct. 13, 1862.
J. W. Dockman, Co. B, 49th N. Y. Regt.; killed at Bull Run July 21,' 61.
Corp. Charles T. Emery, Co. G, 48th N. Y. Regt.; died at Andersonville Sept. 23, 1864.
John L. Foss, Co B, 19th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.
John E. Foulds, Co. A, 11th Regt.; died prisoner at Augusta April 30,'64.
Wm. C. Forbes, Co. H, 3d Mass. H. A.; died at Newburyport Nov. 9,'64.
Samuel Fowler, Co. I, 35th Regt.; died Oct. 29, 1863.
Enos Floyd, Co. C, 17th Regt.; died at Greensboro', N. C., June 29, 1865.
James Gray, Co. A, 35th Regt.; died of wounds Sept. 29, 1864.
Elbridge Graves, Co. A, 45th Regt.; died of wounds Dec. 16, 1862.
John M. T. Goodwin, Co. M, 2d Mass. H. A., died at Newbern Jan. 17, 1865.
George S. Hewlett, Co. H, 11th Regt.; died of wounds May 6, 1862.
Corp. Whitman Holmes, Co. B, 4 4th N. Y. Regt.; died at Falmouth, Va., June 30, 1863.
Daniel P. Howard, Co. B, 19th Regt.; killed at Fredericksburg Dec. 13, 1862.
David R. Hinkley, Co. B, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.
George W. Hodgdon, Co. B, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, '62.
Thaddeus Houston, Co. A, 48th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge April 22, '63.
George H. Jackman, Co. I, 23d Regt.; killed at Drury's Bluff May, 1864.
Corp. Wm. H. Jackman, Co. B, 48th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge April 28, 1863.
Joseph A. Jewett, Co. I, 30th Regt.; died at New Orleans Aug. 1, 1862.
Patrick Kalloa, Co. M, 2d Mass. H. A.; died at Newbern Oct. 3, 1864.
Jere Long, Co. B, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.
Corp Joseph W. Lunt, Co. B, 35th Regt.; died May 30, 1865.
Richard K. Lunt, Co. A, 48th Regt.; killed at Port Hudson June 14, 1863.
Alfred Lee, Co. A, 2d Mass. Cav.; died at Vienna, Va., April 7, 1864.
Charles M. Littlefield, sergt., Co. E, 4th Mass. Cav.; died at Portsmouth, Va., August 2, 1864.
Wallace B. Littlefield, Co. M, 4th Mass. H. A.; died at Fort William, Va., Feb. 26, 1865.
Jeremiah Lynch, Co. C, 22d Regt.; died at Andersonville Sept. 15, 1864.
Frederick G. Lunt, corp., Co. H, 60th Regt.; died at Indianapolis Oct. 3, 1864.
Wm. D. Lee, Co. E, 11th Regt.; died at City Point, Va., Dec. 28, 1864.
Michael H. Leary, Co. H, 11th Regt.; died at Newburyport Sept. 5, 1864.
George W. Littlefield, Co. I, 30th Regt.; died April 16, 1862.
Dennis Leary, navy, "Brooklyn;" lost at sea, 1862.
George W. Mace, Co. C, 19th Regt.; killed at White Oak Swamp, June 30, 1862.
Patrick Monahan, Co. F, 19th Regt.; killed at White Oak Swamp June 30, 1862.
Benj. L. McLaughlin, 1st Co. Sharpshooters; supposed to have died of wounds, 1862.
Bernard Mullin, Co. D, 28th Regt.; died of wounds Nov. 1, 1862.
Coruwall Merritt, Co. B, 19th Regt.; killed at Fredericksburg Dec. 13, 1862.
Lawrence Morrison, Co. B, 28th Regt.; killed at Fredericksburg Dec. 13, 1862.
John P. Neal, Co. H, 3d Mass. H. A.; died Aug. 28, 1864.
Francis J. Nash, Co. B, 35th Regt.; died at Middletou, Md., Dec. 15, 1862.
Andrew Nash, Co. B, 35th Regt.; killed at South Mountain Sept. 14, 1862.
Thomas Nolan, Co. L, 2d Mass. H. A.; died at Annapolis Dec. 22, 1864.
Wm. O'Grady, Co. D, 28th Regt.; killed at Gettysburg July 2, 1862.
Caleb C. Pike, Co. B, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.
Nicholas F. Peabody, Co. A, 48th Regt.; died of wounds June 17, 1863.
Wm. F. Perkins, Co. A, 48th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge May 21, 1863.
Charles W. Poore, Co. A, 48th Regt.; killed at Port Hudson May 27, 1863.
Wm. C. Pressey, Co. M, 4th Mass. H. A.; died at Fort William, Va., March 12, 1865.

Walter W. Pingree, 1st Co. Sharpshooters; died Sept. 11, 1864.
Solomon Park, Jr., Co. A, 23d Regt.; died at Newbern, Dec., 1861.
Stephen C. Pearson, Co. B, 49th N. Y. Regt.; died at Andersonville.
Benjamin H. Rogers, musician, Co. B, 35th Regt.; died of wounds Oct., 1862.
Alphonso P. Reed, Co. B, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.
Winfield Rappell, Co. B, 19th Regt.; killed at Fredericksburg Dec. 13, 1862.
Charles N. Rogers, Co. F, 11th Regt.; died Aug. 29, 1862.
Jason S. Rines, 1st Co. Sharpshooters; killed at Petersburg, Va., Sept. 28, 1864.
George Robinson, Co. B, 40th N. Y. Regt.; killed at Fair Oaks Dec. 10, 1862.
Samuel Smith, Co. A, 17th Regt.; died in New York May 27, 1863.
Moses Short, Co. B, 19th Regt.; died of wounds June 25, 1862.
Dennis Sexton, Co. H, 11th Regt.; died at Alexandria, Va., grave 1724, April 20, 1864.
John S. Sayward, Co. F, 4th Mass. Cav.; died at sea Sept. 4, 1864.
Louis D. B. Somerby, musician, Co. M, 2d Mass. H. A.; died at Portsmouth, Va., March 24, 1864.
Addison Tarr, Co. A, 35th Regt.; killed at South Mountain Sept. 14, 1862.
John Twombly, Co. E, 28th Regt.; died July 18, 1864.
John H. W. Talbot, Co. B, 11th Regt.; died of wounds Nov. 4, 1862.
Richard A Van Moll, 1st Co. Sharpshooters; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.
Louis Vought, Co. B, 40th N Y. Regt.; died at Falmouth, Va., June 1863.
Henry P. Wetherby, Co. D, 4th Mass. Cav.; died at Gainesville, Fla., August 17. 1864.
F. Eliphalet Winter, sergt., Co. H, 32d Regt.; killed at Fredericksburg Dec. 13, 1862.
Charles O. White, Co. C, 2d Mass. H. A.; died at Andersonville, July 4, 1864.

Newburyport men credited to other places,—

Henry P. Griffith, Co. A, 35th Regt.; quota Newbury, died Nov. 3, 1862.
Jacob G. Clarkson, Co. A, 35th Regt.; quota Newbury, died Jan. 9, 1863.
Thomas P. Lunt, sergt., Co. H, 32d Regt.; quota Newbury, killed at Chancellorsville May 5, 1863.
Hezekiah Colby, color sergt., Co. K, 12th Regt.; quota Gloucester, killed at Bull Run Aug. 30, 1862.
C. Lyman Cole, Co. F, 40th Regt.; quota Newburg, died in New York, March 7, 1864.
Horatio Hackett, Co. A, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.
George S. Tapley, Co. D, 16th Ohio Regt.; quota Ohio, killed at Antietam, Sept. 17, 1862.
Henry W. Winkley, 4th N. H. Regt.; quota New Hampshire, killed at Beaufort, S. C.
James Coffin, Co. B, 11th N. H. Regt.; quota New Hampshire, died in prison.

The last event in the history of Newburyport remaining to be referred to is the arrival of Lieutenant Adolphus Washington Greely, a native of the city, followed by the public reception which was accorded him. As heroic and daring as were the deeds of the sons of Newburyport during the Revolution and the War of 1842, none exceeded the exploits of this young man, who illustrated by his patience, his fidelity, his indomitable courage in the frozen regions of the North, the lines of the poet, that

> "Peace hath her victories
> No less renowned, than war."

It is doubtful whether, in all the trying scenes through which our country has passed, of fire and battle and flood, the hearts of the American people have been touched by a tenderer sympathy or a sweeter joy than the discovery of that little band of

heroic men, of which he was the devoted leader, and their gallant rescue excited.

Adolphus Washington Greely was born in Newburyport March 27, 1844. His early education was obtained at the public schools. Though fond of study and ambitious to receive a collegiate education, he was precluded from his wished-for career by circumstances which it was impossible for him to control, and at the age of seventeen he entered as clerk the jewelry store of Fairbanks & Paul, in his native city, and seemed likely to pursue the devious and uncertain path of a business life. Six months later, however, the war broke out, and among the volunteers for three years' service he was one of the earliest to subscribe his name. He enlisted as private in the Byfield Rifle Rangers, who were afterwards assigned as Company B. to the Nineteenth Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers, under the command of Colonel Edward W. Hincks. Having speedily reached the position of orderly-sergeant, he felt that he was worthy of a commission. He was as brave as the bravest, and never thought of danger in the performance of his duty. Though immersed in the surroundings of war life, it is significant, both of his literary taste and utter fearlessness, that on one occasion, when going into a battle, he was more concerned about the fate of a scrap cut from a newspaper, laid aside to be read, than about the dangers of the contest which he was about to enter.

In some way Governor Andrew became interested in him and wrote to Colonel Hincks concerning him. Colonel Hincks promptly replied, "There is no man in the army who deserves promotion more than A. W. Greely, and if I had a regiment like him I could whip the whole South." In consequence of this recommendation Governor Andrew appointed him second lieutenant in the regiment commanded by Colonel Robert G. Shaw. Another appointment, however, awaited him, and was accepted, of a second lieutenancy in a colored regiment, destined for New Orleans, under General Ullman. Lieutenant Greely was at the surrender of Port Hudson, and afterwards at New Orleans, where he had command of his regiment, as acting major. He was afterwards examined for admission into the regular army, and received a commission as second lieutenant, from which position he was afterwards promoted to be first lieutenant, and detailed into the Signal Corps. While in the service of this corps he was sent into Texas to build a government telegraph line, fifteen hundred miles in length, which was constructed, under great difficulties, in a manner entirely satisfactory to General Ullman, under whose directions he was acting. He was attached to the Signal Service when he undertook his expedition into the Arctic seas. The details of this expedition are a part of history, and need no reference to them in this narrative to perpetuate their memory. His rescue and return also rather illumine than borrow light from the historic page, and as long as the human heart is capable of sympathizing with hardship and suffering, and admiring fidelity and heroism, these incidents will be again and again recalled and applauded.

By an arrangement with the government Newburyport was assigned as his landing-place. On Thursday, the 14th of August, as the guest of the city, he was accorded a public reception. The order of exercises for the day included a procession, a formal welcome by Mayor W. A. Johnson, a response by Lieut. Greely, followed by a State welcome by Gov. John D. Robinson, collations for military and other organizations, speeches in the afternoon from the grand-stand in Brown Square, and fireworks in the evening. The procession, under the direction of Col. Charles L. Ayers, chief marshal, marched under escort of the Eighth Massachusetts Regiment of Volunteer Militia, Lieut.-Colonel Francis A. Osgood commanding, and included the A. W. Bartlett Post 49, of Newburyport; the Major How Post 47, of Haverhill; Post 122, of Amesbury; the Everett Peabody Post 108, of Georgetown; the Charles Sumner Post 101, of Groveland; the Col. C. R. Mudge Post 114, of Merrimac; the Sons of Veterans, and Father Lennon Benevolent Association, of Newburyport; the Newburyport Commandery Knights Templar; the mayor and Lieut. Greely, and invited guests; the Fire Department, of Newburyport, with their guests—Merrimac No. 1, of Merrimac; the Volunteer Company, of Salisbury; and the Hook-and-Ladder Company No. 1, of Amesbury. The music was furnished by the Salem Brass Band, the Newburyport Cadet Band and Drum Corps, the Reading Brass Band, Carter's Band of Boston, the Georgetown Cornet Band, the National Band of Lynn, the Rowley Brass Band, and the First Regiment Drum and Fife Corps. In the afternoon a band concert by Carter's Band was followed by speeches by Hon. Eben F. Stone, Major Ben: Perley Poore, Richard S. Spofford, Esq., Rev. H. M. Mott, James Parton, Esq., and Hon. E. M. Boynton. The commandery, with guests, dined in their hall; the mayor and guests dined in Fraternity Hall; the Eighth Regiment dined in City Hall, and the other organizations were provided for in various places. In the evening, fireworks at March's Hill and band concerts closed the exercises of a reception both well deserved and admirably conceived and carried out.

St. Paul's Church is an outgrowth of Queen Anne's Chapel at the Plains. The first Church of England minister to settle over the chapel was Rev. John Lambton, who came from England and assumed his duties November 12, 1712. In 1715 he returned to England, and was succeeded by Rev. Henry Lucas, who committed suicide August 23, 1720. Rev. Matthias Plant followed in 1722, and remained until his death, April 2, 1753. These three ministers were sent from England by the "Venerable Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts." About the year 1740 St. Paul's Church, on the site of



REV. ARTHUR J. TEELING, RECTOR.

R. C. CHURCH AND SCHOOL PROPERTY,

NEWBURYPORT, MASS.

the present church, was opened, and Mr. Plant officiated in both St. Paul's and Queen Anne's. In 1751 Rev. Edward Bass, afterwards bishop, a Harvard graduate of 1744, became his assistant, and after his death succeeded to the full pastorate. In 1766 Queen Anne's Chapel was abandoned, and during the Revolution was blown down. Mr. Bass was rector until 1803, and was succeeded after his death by Rev. Dr. James Morse (Harvard, 1800), who remained in the pastorate until his death, April 2, 1842. Rev. John S. Davenport followed in 1845, remaining a year, and followed by Rev. Edward A. Washburn (Harvard, 1838) until 1852, who was succeeded by Rev. William Horton (Harvard, 1824), in 1853. Mr. Horton served until his death in 1863. Rev. John C. White followed with a service of seven years, resigning in 1870 to take the rectorship of St. Andrew's Church at Pittsburgh, Pa. The next rector was Rev. George D. Johnson, who served until 1875, and is now rector of Christ Church, New Brighton, S. I. Rev. Edward L Drown became rector in 1876, resigning in 1883, and followed by the present incumbent, Rev. James H. Van Buren. The present church edifice was built in 1800.

Church of the Immaculate Conception.—Of the establishment and history of the Catholic Church in Newburyport the following interesting sketch has been furnished to the writer by Miss Katherine A. O'Keefe, of that city.

Among the twenty-three first settlers of Newburyport who built their simple homes on the River Parker, over two centuries and a half ago, there was, probably, no representative of Catholicity. It is even doubtful if there was one open Catholic in all of what is now Massachusetts; for in that colony Puritan intolerance against Roman Catholics had full sway. Indeed, in all New England there were but few Catholics, those few being French missionaries, mostly Jesuit, who came in the hope of converting the Indians. As early as 1650, however, although the Massachusetts General Court of 1647 had enacted that "Jesuits entering the colony should be expelled, and, if they returned, hanged," we find one of that order, Rev. and Father Druillettes, received as an envoy from Canada, and hospitably entertained by the Governors of Plymouth, Massachusetts and New Haven, while another, Rev. John Pierron (the latter, however, disguised), traversed New England twenty years later, administering to the spiritual wants of the Catholics he found there.

The Revolution of 1688, and events resulting from it, drove many Catholics from Great Britain and Ireland to Massachusetts and other parts of this country in a vain search for religious freedom. Debarred from the consolation of their religion in this colony, they sought it as far away as Canada and New Brunswick, as we learn from a letter written in 1698 by the French commander, who asked for an Irish priest at St. John's for Catholics from Boston and vicinity, who had to go to French settlements in order to attend to their religious duties.

The first considerable body of Catholics that came to New England were the Acadians, who were east from their homes in 1755, and, to the number of two thousand, landed in various sea-ports of Massachusetts in 1756. As Newburyport was then one of the most important of these ports, it is probable that not a few of these exiles sought refuge there; and some of the many Newburyport names, clearly of French origin, may have been imported then as well as later, when they are supposed to have come as the results of the French Revolution.

The first tolerance given to Catholics in Massachusetts was during the Revolutionary War, when, in November, 1775, while Washington was in Boston as commander-in-chief, he forbade his soldiers celebrating what was known as "Pope's Day," on the ground that the custom was offensive to the many Catholics in the American army and to Catholic France, their faithful ally. A still greater encouragement was given to Catholicity three years later, in 1778, when, Count D'Estaing and his Catholic soldiers being in Boston harbor, divine services were openly celebrated on the French fleet, and frequently attended by some of the most influential of Boston's Protestant citizens.

The records of the Revolutionary War show the important part taken on the side of liberty by Catholics in all departments; but so bitter had been the feeling against them in New England, that few of the many Catholic Revolutionary heroes went forth from our vicinity. At the close of the struggle, we, accordingly, find only a small number here; the history of Boston showing only a few French and Spanish, and about thirty Irish Catholics. These few were allowed the use of a school-house for religious services, and had for their first pastor Father de la Porterie, who had been chaplain in the French Navy. He left Boston in 1789, and was succeeded for a brief period by another French priest, Father Rousselet, after whom the Catholics of Massachusetts were fortunate enough to have for their next pastor Rev. John Thayer, a native of Boston, who joined the Catholic Church while visiting Rome in 1783. Having studied for the priesthood and been ordained, he returned to this country and, in January, 1790, was given charge of the Boston Catholic Mission by Very Reverend Dr. Carroll, who, about the close of the Revolution, had been appointed prefect apostolic, and who soon after, August 15, 1790, was appointed first bishop of the United States.

The French Revolution of 1790 sent out another detachment of Catholics, priests and laymen, and that several came to Newburyport may be seen by a collection of graves on the old burying hill, where those who died between 1792 and 1812 were buried. Of these, Mrs. Emery, a venerable old resident of Newburyport, in her "Reminiscences of a Nonagena-

rian," says: "Doubtless the whole number were Catholics, and, as at that period no ground had been consecrated in the Puritan town, this quiet spot was chosen in a Protestant burial-ground." Amongst the priests who came were Rev. Francis Matignon, who was sent by Bishop Carroll to Boston in 1792. This last event had quite an intimate connection with Newburyport, as Father Matignon's coming enabled Father Thayer to visit every large town and village then settled in Massachusetts. The year of this visitation is not certainly known, but it was between 1792 and 1796. Within these dates, then, we may surely place the first visit of a priest to Newburyport—a noteworthy fact in a history of its Catholicity.

October, 1796, marked another date of some importance to Catholics in Newburyport,—the coming of Rev. John de Cheverus to Boston. There were thus three priests there, so that Father Cheverus was able to annually visit Salem, Newburyport, Portsmouth, etc. It is not probable that there are any now living in Newburyport who remember these visits, but there are several who remember to have heard their parents speak of them and always with pleasure. Amongst these is Mrs. Alsar, a highly respected lady of Newburyport, whose father, the late Captain Brown, was an intimate friend of Father Cheverus. From her we learn that there were several French Catholic refugees there at the close of the last and the beginning of the present century, to whose spiritual wants, we may be sure he attended, as, also, to those of the Irish Catholics, of whose presence here about that time we get an idea from the many undoubtedly Irish Catholic names on Newburyport's records—names, for instance, like O'Brien, who, if, as we are told, they belong to the Maine O'Briens must have been originally Catholics, as the heroes of Machias Bay, the "Lexington of the Seas," were certainly members of that church.

The number of Catholics in the United States having so greatly increased, that Baltimore was made an arch-diocese in 1808, Boston was made an episcopal see, with Rev. Dr. Cheverus as the first bishop, his diocese being all New England. Concerning this period, we again quote Mrs. Emery: "Captain William Cutler, of Newburyport, married a French lady, a member of the Roman Catholic Church. To baptize her infant and perform [administer] other sacraments, Bishop Cheveraux, of Boston, occasionally visited Mrs. Cutler, of Newburyport, at her residence. There were some half-dozen French exiles and other foreigners in the place, also Catholics, who would assemble on these visits, in a chamber which Mrs. Cutler had fitted up for an oratory. These were the first Catholic services ever held in Newburyport."

After Bishop Cheverus' departure for France, where he was appointed cardinal, Very Rev. Benedict Fenwick was consecrated his successor at Boston, and he, at that time, found at his disposal, in all New England, only three priests. Of these, the one in Boston was Father Byrne, and there are still Catholics in Newburyport who remember persons going to Boston to be married by him, and carrying children there to be baptized.

We learn from a sketch of Bishop Fenwick that in 1827 he visited Newburyport, and other places in the eastern part of his diocese, administering the sacraments and preaching wherever it was practicable; and learning from Mr. Colby, a well-known resident of Newburyport, that he remembers his father's going about that time to hear a Catholic clergyman speak at the old court-house on the Mall—the hearers being mostly Protestants—we conclude that Bishop Fenwick must have been the one. Father Wiley, of Salem, who was ordained 1827, is also remembered to have preached at the court-house, and was one of the first to celebrate divine service in the town, which he did at the residence of Mr. Hugh McGlew and others, at intervals until about 1840. From an address delivered on the occasion of Newburyport's two hundred and fiftieth anniversary by its present Catholic pastor, we learn that, "as far back as 1839, Father French [afterwards pastor of a church in Lawrence from 1846 to 1851], on his way from Portland to Boston, stayed over and collecting the few Catholics, offered for them the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass in the house of one of the Catholic residents." About 1841 the number of Catholics was found to have somewhat increased by the building of the railroad and the cotton factory. The number of Catholic families in the town at that time was ten. Of these, the older members, the parents, are all now dead except Mrs. Michael Murphy, who still lives on Middle Street. The members of these ten families having appealed to Bishop Fenwick for a priest, the first one especially appointed to take charge of the Catholics of Newburyport was Rev. Patrick Canavan, then the resident pastor of Dover, N. H. At first Father Canavan's visits were quarterly, then once a month, on which occasions he, at first, celebrated Mass at private houses. Some time about 1844, however, there was a sufficient number to warrant the purchase of a building to be used as a chapel. The vestry of the Old South Church, at the corner of Federal and School Streets, was, accordingly, bought by Mr. Hugh McGlew, representing the Catholics, and moved to a lot already purchased on Charles Street. Here Father Canavan officiated until the spring of 1848, when, Bishop Fenwick having commissioned Rev. John O'Brien, the late respected and beloved pastor of St. Patrick's Church at Lowell, to take charge of the faithful in Chelsea, Newburyport and other eastern sections, the desire of the Newburyport Catholics was at length gratified. Father O'Brien selected their town as the headquarters of his mission.

Father O'Brien's first visit is well and pleasantly remembered by many persons still in Newburyport. He spent his first night at the Merrimac House, and the following day, accompanied by two of his prospective parishioners, took a survey of the place and

hired a tenement, the present No. 6 in a block on Tremont Street. Afterwards, in order to be nearer to the little church, he moved to another tenement in a block on Charles Street.

During Father O'Brien's stay in Newburyport he did everything possible to advance the cause of religion; his genial manner, cultured mind, pious zeal and interest for the good of the general public, both Catholic and Protestant, being very powerful in softening the asperities with which those who differ from them in religion are apt to look upon the first Catholic priest that takes up his residence amongst them. His superior abilities and marked success in Newburyport led to his being called to a broader field. He was accordingly appointed to the pastorate of St. Patrick's Church at Lowell, where he remained until the 31st of October, 1874, when he departed to his reward, leaving a memory that will be long revered.

Father O'Brien's successor was one who was also much loved and respected by all who knew him, Rev. Henry Lennon. Father Lennon was ordained in May, 1848, after which he went for a few months to St. Albans, Vt., as assistant to Father Hamilton; whence he went to Newburyport Christmas eve, 1848. Soon the little church on Charles Street became too small for the congregation, and from deeds kept on file by the present pastor we learn that land for the church on Green Street was bought from Moses E. Hale and John Osgood by John H. Nichols, of Salem, and conveyed by the latter to Bishop Fitzpatrick, of Boston, for the Catholics of Newburyport. The last deed was dated May 10, 1851, and the price paid was $1800.

The corner-stone of the church erected on this land—the present Church of the Immaculate Conception—was laid, with the usual impressive ceremonies, Tuesday, April 27, 1852, by Rt. Rev. Bishop Fitzpatrick, attended by twenty priests, in the presence of about two thousand people; and the sermon was delivered by Rev. Father McElroy, a learned and eloquent Jesuit priest, who had, a few years previous, served as chaplain in the American army during the Mexican War. The *Newburyport Herald* of April 30, 1852, thus concludes its synopsis of this sermon: "The speaker paid a deserved compliment to the pastor of the church for his labors, for his self-denial, his modest and retiring character and the signal success that had attended his ministrations; and concluded by thanking the citizens of this city for their liberality and good feeling towards the society and the city authorities for the use of the City Hall on the occasion." This last refers to the fact that the City Hall was placed at the disposal of the Catholics that morning. It was there the priests vested themselves, and thence they and the members of the congregation passed to Green Street.

The architect of the church was Mr. P. C. Keely, of Brooklyn, N. Y., this being the first church in the diocese built under his direction. Work progressed so rapidly that it was ready for dedication in a little less than a year. The cost of the building, including altar and pews, was $20,000. The dedication took place St. Patrick's Day, 1853, the ceremony being performed by Rt. Rev. Bishop Fitzpatrick, and the sermon preached by Rev. Father Boyce, of Worcester.

Over a score of years the Catholics of Newburyport were blessed with the ministrations of Rev. Father Lennon, and disturbed by little, save a trifling and transient cloud of intolerance which attended the formation of the "Know-Nothing" party in 1854. During that long period Father Lennon won for himself and, through his good influence upon his people, for them also, the good will and confidence of the community. The beneficial result of this was strikingly manifest during the financial crisis of 1857, when, by the good advice he gave his people, he prevented a "run" on the Institution of Savings, and thus, probably, saved it from financial difficulty. His health, however, was precarious, and his labors in attending not only to the Catholics in Newburyport, but to those in Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury, West Newbury, Salisbury and Amesbury were so great that he was obliged to procure an assistant, the first being Rev. M. Carraher, during whose term of service Father Lennon took a short vacation, soon after the dedication of the church. While he was absent Father Carraher, acting for the parishioners, purchased from a minister of the Baptist Church, for a parochial residence, the one long used for that purpose on Court Street, and they agreeably surprised Father Lennon with it on his return. Father Carraher having been called to another field of labor, was succeeded by various other assistants, the principal of whom were Rev. John Brady, during whose service the church in Amesbury was built, of which he is now the pastor, having been appointed to that position in the fall of 1867; and Rev. P. J. Halley, who was officiating at the time of Father Lennon's death. This sad event took place about nine o'clock, Thursday evening, July 13, 1871, at which time he was fifty-one years old. His funeral took place the following Saturday, July 15th, and the universal respect in which he was held was particularly manifested on that occasion, when the church was crowded by sincere mourners of all denominations. The funeral Mass was celebrated by Very Rev. P. F. Lyndon, of Boston, and the discourse—a most touching tribute to the virtues of the departed—was by Rev. James A. Healey, then of Boston, now the Right Rev. Bishop of Portland, Me.

At the conclusion of the Mass the remains were borne to the grave prepared for them at the southeast side of the church. And, "Thus," says the *Newburyport Herald*," was buried a good man and a good pastor, one whose influence on his people is admitted by people of all sects to have been beneficial to them

and for the interest of the community in which he and they lived."

It may be a not uninteresting fact that Newburyport's next and present pastor, Rev. Arthur J. Teeling, was, at that time, and had been for three years, assistant to Rev. John O'Brien, of Lowell, Newburyport's first pastor. Perhaps from the one whose brief sojourn in that town had been so successful, and who had given the good work such a strong impetus on the right road, Father Teeling, in the impressionable days of his early priesthood, imbibed some of the zeal that, during his pastorate, has crowned the church of Newburyport with a success almost unprecedented in the ecclesiastical records of Massachusetts and equal to that of any church in the country similarly situated.

Although Father Lennon had, considering the time of his pastorate and the slow growth, at first, of the number of Catholics, done excellent work, there still remained much to be attended to when Father Teeling, then a young man of twenty-seven, took the heavy burden on his shoulders in August, 1871. The church was still $9000 in debt, $4700 of which was a mortgage to the Institute for Savings, the remainder being due mostly to depositors and there was neither bell-deck, bell nor spire upon it. There was no burial-ground for deceased Catholics. There was no parochial residence; for the house on Court Street, which had been in Father Lennon's name, passed, as he had died intestate, to his sister, Miss Margaret Lennon; and, of all the land now covered with fine buildings used for religious purposes, there was none then owned by the Catholics of Newburyport except the lot on which the church stands.

A parochial residence being the most pressing necessity, the one formerly used as such, together with its furniture, was purchased from Miss Lennon by Father Teeling, in the name of the archbishop, for the parishioners, for $5500, the payment of which sum was completed July 31, 1872.

Just prior to Father Teeling's coming, Father Halley, the late Father Lennon's assistant, had suggested to the people the raising of a monument to the memory of their lamented pastor. The suggestion was most generously acted upon, the sum of $1825 subscribed, and one of Father Teeling's first acts was to see to the erection of a handsome monument, in front of the church in Green Street, over the remains.

As Father Teeling was for a year without an assistant, he soon found it difficult to attend to Ipswich; so, after about six months, the church in that town was placed under the spiritual care of Rev. Thomas Shahan, then pastor of Beverly, now of Arlington.

After erecting the monument, the next step was to build a bell-deck and spire. Of this work, also, Mr. Keely was architect, the builder Mr. Wigglesworth, of Boston, and the cost was $5000. The bell, which cost $1000, came from the famous foundry of Messrs. Meneely & Co., of West Troy, and everything being in readiness, it was baptized on Sunday, March 15, 1874. Catholics, of course, understand that this "baptism" and bestowal of a name on the bell is not the sacrament of Baptism, but a ceremony which outwardly resembles it in so many respects that it cannot well be designated by any other word. The bell of which we speak was baptized St. Patrick, and the ceremony was performed by Archbishop Williams, attended by about thirty priests and eleven hundred sponsors. After the naming of the bell it is practically taught its mission by its "sponsors," that is, those who have contributed towards its purchase, who, all together, or in the person of one of their number, cause it to send forth its first peal. This was done, on the present occasion, by Rev. Father Teeling at benediction. The bell having been raised to its proper position, the next day, Monday, March 16th, its first service was to toll for that eminent statesman, Charles Sumner, during the time of his funeral services which took place that day. The day following being the feast of St. Patrick, the bell named in his honor, for the first time, called the people to divine service, and rang its most joyful peals afterwards as a grand procession, consisting of all the Catholic and Irish societies in the city, accompanied by the city officials, passed through the principal streets in honor of the spread of Christianity by Ireland's great apostle.

On Father Teeling's appointment to Newburyport, one of the first injunctions placed upon him by Bishop (now Archbishop) Williams was, "Get a burial-place for your dead." In obedience to this, a piece of land, formerly the old training-ground for the militia of Newburyport and vicinity, was purchased from Mr. Jacob A. Balch April 30, 1874. Upon this stood the house and barn ever since used by the superintendent of the cemetery, and the entire property cost two thousand one hundred dollars. This cemetery, which is one of the finest in the county, was surveyed by Mr. John T. Desmond, the present city surveyor of Haverhill; and is laid out in the form of a Celtic cross; the "priests' lot," which is surmounted by a handsome Celtic cross of granite, forming the circle surrounding the junction of the arms and upright. Within the confines of its twenty-three acres are fifteen hundred and thirteen well-defined burial-lots; the length of its avenues is a mile and a half, and of its paths two and two-thirds miles. In its present improved condition it cost ten thousand dollars. In the early summer of 1876 it was solemnly consecrated by Archbishop Williams, soon after which, the remains of nearly seven hundred persons were conveyed by their friends from various neighboring cemeteries, and there deposited. Handsome monuments were then erected, and ever since everything possible has been done to beautify it. With this intention Father Teeling, for the sum of three hundred dollars, had imported ten thousand seedlings of Norway spruce and four hundred of Scotch pine. An unused portion of the cemetery was

set apart as a nursery, and so well did it thrive that, with the young trees, the cemetery and all the church property grounds were decorated; the remainder was sold, and, as a result of the sale, the sum of seven hundred dollars was placed to the credit of the church.

The terrible disaster at Santiago, in which so many lives were lost by the burning of a church that had not adequate means of exit—all its doors opening inward—called the attention of the authorities to the subject, and led to the issuing of an order that all public buildings must have proper egress. In obedience to this order, the front of the church was altered; the two doors were enlarged and opened outward, and another one was added. Articles of agreement for these alterations were signed July 12, 1877, the architect being Mr. James Murphy, of Providence, the builder, Mr. Healey, representing Mr. Batterson, of Hartford, and the sum agreed upon was one thousand two hundred and seventy-five dollars. In order to make these improvements, and to put in front of the church the fine walk at present there, Father Lennon's monument and remains had to be removed to the cemetery. This was done after a Solemn High Mass of Requiem had been offered; and once again the respect of his brother priests and of the community in general for Father Lennon was manifested. Thirty of the former and all the Catholic societies in the city accompanied the remains, and business was quite generally suspended. As the beautiful monument had already been put up, the burial immediately took place and the good priest was laid to rest surrounded in death by those to whom in life he had ministered.

The next want to be filled was a chapel for the meeting of Sunday-schools and various church societies. For this purpose the First Christian Baptist Church—together with its organ and furniture—was purchased from Elder Pike for the sum of seven thousand two hundred dollars in July, 1873.

Soon after this, having in view the establishment of parochial schools at no distant day, the site of the "Female High School," at the corner of Washington and Court Streets, was purchased in August, 1873, for $4800 from Robert Couch.

Father Teeling having taken, during the summer and fall of 1878, a well-earned vacation, returned in November to his place, which had been filled during his absence by his assistant, now the pastor of the Church of our Lady of the Rosary, South Boston—Rev. John J. McNulty, aided by Rev. James O'Reilly, now pastor at York, Pa. Reference to these reverend gentlemen recalls the fact that, after his first year here, Father Teeling received as assistant Rev. Edward S. Galligan, who remained a year. After an interval of about another year a second assistant, Rev. John McNulty, whom we have already mentioned, was sent to the parish, and remained there until August, 1879. Some time prior to that, however, refreshed and strengthened by his trip, and with faculties and judgment developed by his travels, Father Teeling set about another great work—the freeing of the church from the debts remaining upon it, and solemnly consecrating it to the divine service: something that cannot be done while there is a cent of debt upon it. The congregation, entering heartily into his great design, responded more generously than ever, and on the 24th of June, 1879, shared with their pastor the joy attendant on the fulfillment of their pious desires,—and the church was solemnly consecrated. The celebrant on this occasion was Most Rev. Archbishop Williams, and the sermon was delivered by Rt. Rev. Bishop O'Reilly, of Springfield. Archbishop Williams also presided at Vespers in the evening, and delivered an address of congratulation to the Catholics of Newburyport for the glorious work accomplished by them—freeing their church from debt, and being thus the first in the present archdiocese of Boston to solemnly consecrate a parish church to the service of God. Next after the congregation, its pastor and its assistant, the archbishop stated that he himself experienced the most heartfelt thrill of joy at the grand success.

After the departure of Father McNulty, Rev. John T. Gormley succeeded, and remained nearly two years. Before his arrival, however, it became evident that the energetic pastor did not yet consider his work complete. July 1, 1879, he bought from George J. L. Colby, Esq., his estate on Court Street, next to the parochial residence, for two thousand three hundred dollars; and we learn from the *Semi-weekly Germ*, dated November 12, 1879, that "Father Teeling informed his congregation on Sunday last that in a year from that time a Catholic school would be in the full tide of successful operation in the Catholic square on the corner of Court and Washington streets, on the former site of the 'Female High School.'" From another Newburyport paper, the *Merrimac Valley Visitor*, dated December 20, 1879, we copy: "The plans for the Catholic school building have been completed by Rufus Sargent, and the contract for labor will be given out in January." Again, the same paper, bearing date September 15, 1880, under the heading, "Something they may be proud of," reads as follows: "The Catholic Church is paying for their school-house as it is being built, and to this day have no debt upon it. It is the largest wooden building in the city, and will be an elegant structure, costing at least $40,000." [It cost thirty thousand dollars.] "If they can have it free from debt next September, it will be a monument of their industry and devotion to religious education. The parsonage on Court Street and the infant schools at the north and south ends will also be completed next year. It is not probable that the Catholic Church will long confine Father Teeling's great executive ability to this parish. If he had a broad field in some Western State, he would make his mark upon the country."

For the first year the work went steadily on, but just as everything was most promising, in April, 1881, an event occurred which would have discouraged a less determined and less generous people. This was the destruction by fire of the pastor's former residence, which, though old and dilapidated, would have been made to do duty until the other undertakings that had been commenced could have been completed. Such was not to be, however, and once more the energy of pastor and people met the emergency, and immediate preparations were made for the erection of the present pastoral residence, to which, in August, 1882, the people so gladly welcomed their priests after the latter had been obliged to live for nearly a year and a half at quite an inconvenient distance from the church.

Notwithstanding the unfortunate event we have mentioned, such had been the progress that the Parochial Hall was ready and formally dedicated to religion, patriotism, poetry, music and good cheer on the natal anniversary of Ireland's great poet, Thomas Moore, May 28, 1881, when, at a social gathering there, his genius and patriotism were commemorated.

September, 1881, the beautiful chapel was completed and dedicated. Thenceforward work progressed with no interruption until the completion of all,—school-house, convent and parochial residence. The latter, as we have said, was occupied in August, 1882. Its cost was seven thousand dollars. Nine Sisters of Charity came from Kentucky the following week, and took possession of the house prepared for them by removing the Colby estate to the northeast side of the Parochial Hall, and there making such changes as were necessary to adapt it for a convent. The cost of this was four thousand dollars. The Sisters, who are known as Sisters of Charity of Nazareth, belong to an order founded in Kentucky in the year 1812 by three pious and charitable women, under the inspiration and direction of Catherine Spalding, a near relative of the famous Archbishop Spalding, of Baltimore. This was the first colony of the order that came east of Kentucky; but in the many cities of the West and South, where they have long had charge of schools, they have won an excellent reputation as teachers and disciplinarians. The schools opened under their charge Tuesday, September 5th, after celebration of Mass by Archbishop Williams.

Meanwhile, Father Gormley had been succeeded by another assistant, Rev. William A. Ryan, who came to Newburyport in June, 1881. Still another became necessary the following Christmas, and the present able and zealous priest, Rev. Murtagh E. Twomey, having been just ordained after a collegiate and seminary course, in which he achieved rare distinction, came to Newburyport. His services have been particularly valuable in the schools, the highest grade of the boys' department being ever since entirely under his care. A depression in business, the closing of the Ocean Mill and consequent departure of some of the residents rendering a retrenchment necessary, Rev. Father Ryan's services had to be reluctantly dispensed with, and another position at the Church of the Assumption, Brookline, was assigned him.

Owing to the unexpectedly large number of pupils that sought the instruction of the Sisters, the number of the latter had to be increased by three, and others have since been added, so that there are now eighteen, having over seven hundred children in charge. For the benefit of the younger children living at the two extreme ends of the city, two of the city school-houses, which had become vacant, were leased September 19, 1883, for ten years, for the sum of fifty dollars a year.

A few months after this, April 28, 1884, the school, convent and parochial house were, under the name of the Immaculate Conception Educational Association, incorporated according to the laws of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts; and August 2d of the same year, under the special act of the Legislature for Roman Catholic Churches, the church and cemetery were incorporated under title of the Immaculate Conception Society of Newburyport.

In the early summer of 1886 the Wills estate, at the corner of Washington and Green Streets, having come into the market, it was deemed advisable to purchase it as a residence for the Sisters, whose number had outgrown the accommodations of the first convent provided for them. This purchase was made July 6, 1886, for the sum of eleven thousand two hundred and fifty dollars, and the Sisters, moved into their new home the next month. A portion of the first convent was then converted into schoolrooms, the remainder into apartments for the meeting of a Literary and Musical Club connected with the church.

And thus have the Catholic religion and Catholic education progressed in Newburyport, until now their condition presents a most gratifying recompense to the people who have so earnestly and unselfishly worked for this advancement, and who now rejoice in beholding in them a strong bulwark against immorality and infidelity.

There are two churches in Newburyport which were originally seceders from the First Church in Newbury,—the First Religious Society and the First Presbyterian Church.

The First Religious Society was organized in 1725, and settled Rev. John Lowell (Harvard 1721) in 1726. In 1735 it was formally set off by an act of the General Court. Mr. Lowell continued in the pastorate until his death, in 1767, and was succeeded by Rev. Thomas Cary (Harvard 1761) in 1768. Mr. Cary served twenty years, when Rev. John Andrews (Harvard 1786) was settled as his colleague, and succeeded him in the full pastorate on his death, which occurred November 24, 1808. Mr. Andrews continued

in the pastorate until 1830, and was succeeded by Rev. Thomas B. Fox (Harvard 1828), whose followers have been Rev. Thomas W. Higginson (Harvard 1841), Rev. Charles Bowen, Rev. A. B. Muzzey (Harvard 1824), Rev. George L. Stowell and Rev. D. W. Morehouse, who resigned in October, 1887. The first meeting-house of the society was in Market Square, and the present edifice on Pleasant Street was built in 1801.

The First Presbyterian Church was formed out of the First Newbury Church, January 3, 1746. Nineteen members of that church had seceded, and for two years had worshipped in a small building on what is now High street, with Joseph Adams, a graduate of Harvard in 1742, as its officiating clergyman. On the 19th of March, 1746, Rev. Jonathan Parsons was installed and has been followed by Rev. John Murray, Rev. Daniel Dana, D.D., Rev. S. P. Williams, John Proudfit, D.D., Jonathan F. Stearns (Harvard 1830), A. S. Vermilye, R. H. Richardson, Charles F. Durfee, William W. Newell, Jr. (Harvard 1859), and Rev. Charles C. Wallace. The meeting-house occupied by the society was built in 1756, and Whitefield was buried in a vault under its pulpit.

The Fourth Religious Society was incorporated in 1794 and made up of seceders from the First Presbyterian, who were dissatisfied with Rev. John Murray. They had built their present house of worship in 1793, and Rev. Charles W. Melton was installed March 20, 1794. Mr. Melton continued in the pastorate until his death, March 31, 1837, and was succeeded by Rev. Randolph Campbell in the same year whose assistant, I. H. Ross, was settled in 1877, and Rev. P. S. Hurlbert. Their church edifice was remodeled in 1800.

The Second Presbyterian Church was organized October 29, 1795, by seceders from the First Presbyterian, who were dissatisfied with the settlement of Rev. Daniel Dana. The first pastor was Rev. John Boddely, of Bristol, England, who died November 4, 1802, and was succeeded by Rev. John Giles, also an Englishman, who resigned in 1823. Rev. Wm. Ford followed in 1824 and Rev. Daniel Dana in 1825. In 1845 Dr. Dana resigned, and in 1846 Rev. W. W. Eels was settled, followed by several others, of whom Rev. J. A. Bartlett was settled in 1877, and was succeeded by the present pastor, Rev. Theodore Beigley.

The North Congregational Church was formed in 1768 and incorporated as the "Third Religious Society of Newburyport." Its first members were persons who left the First Church at the time of the settlement of Rev. Thomas Cary. The secession, which was due to the liberal sentiments of Mr. Cary and of those who supported him, was entirely harmonious, as is shown by the vote of the old church passed January 18, 1768, to divide the church plate and stock between the seceding and remaining brethren. Rev. Christopher Bridge Marsh (Harvard 1761) was settled October 19, 1768, and was followed, after an interval of four years from his death, which occurred December 3, 1773, by Rev. Samuel Spring, who was ordained in August, 1777. Dr. Spring died March 4, 1819, and was succeeded by Rev. Luther F. Dimmick, D.D., December 8th in the same year. Rev. E. C. Hooker succeeded December 11, 1860, who left at the end of four years and was succeeded by Rev. W. A. McGinly in 1865, by Rev. James Powell in 1869 and by Rev. Charles R. Seymour and Rev. Charles P. Mills. The meeting-house of this society, built in 1769, was burned in 1861, and at once rebuilt on the old site.

The Belleville Church was incorporated in 1808 under the name of the "Fourth Religious Society" in Newbury, and was originally set off as a separate parish in 1761. At first this society occupied the old Queen Anne's Chapel, and in 1763 built a place of worship of its own. Rev. Oliver Noble was settled in 1762 and served until 1784. After an interval of twenty-four years without a settled minister, Rev. James Miltimore was settled in 1808. He was succeeded in 1832 by Rev. J. C. March, a native of Newburyport, who remained until his death, in September, 1846. The Rev. Daniel T. Fisk was ordained in 1847 and resigned during the last summer. Rev. Willis A. Hadley has since accepted a call. The house of worship of the society stands on the site occupied by the old one, which was struck by lightning and burned in 1816.

The Green Street Baptist is an outgrowth of the Baptist Church which was formed in 1804 and organized in the next year. Rev. Joshua Chase preached for a short time and was followed late in 1805 by Rev. John Peak. Rev. Hosea Wheeler succeeded Mr. Peak in 1818 and was followed by Nathaniel Williams, Wm. B. Jacobs, Jonathan Aldrich, Albert N. Arnold and Nicholas Medbury, when it ceased to exist. In 1809 a brick meeting-house was built on Liberty Street, which was burned in the fire of 1811. In 1812 the building on Congress Street, afterwards occupied by the Christian Society, was built. The Green Street Society was organized in 1846 with the Rev. Nicholas Medbury, of the old society, as its pastor, and the meeting-house now in use was erected in 1848. There were dissensions and secessions in the old organization, but the present society has closed and healed all former divisions. Its pastors since Mr. Medbury have been Revs. John Richardson, J. R. Lane, J. T. Beckley and Eugene E. Thomas.

The Purchase Street Methodist Episcopal Church, called the "People's Church," had its origin in the labors of Rev. John Adams, who in 1819 collected a congregation which, until 1825, was connected with the Salisbury Conference. In 1825 Newburyport was made a station and placed under the charge of Mr. Adams. In the same year a meeting-house was built on Purchase Street. In 1826 Rev. Bartholomew Othman was appointed to the station. The present pastor is Rev. F. K. Stratton.

The Washington St. Methodist Episcopal Church was organized June 20, 1827, and a meeting-house on Liberty Street was built in the same year. Rev. Bartholomew Othman was its first pastor. Its present house of worship is on Washington Street, and its pastor is Rev. W. A. Manaton.

The Universalist Society was organized Dec. 26, 1834. Its meeting-house on Middle Street was dedicated in 1840. Its pastors have been William M. Fernold, Darius Forbes, Edwin A. Easton, James Shrigley, A. R. Abbot, Daniel M. Reed, Willard Spaulding and J. H. Hartley.

The Christian Church was organized May 7, 1840, and Rev. Daniel P. Pike was settled as its first minister. In 1845 a meeting-house was built on Court Street, which is now owned by the Catholic Church. The old Baptist Church on Congress Street was afterwards purchased and is now occupied by this society.

The Second Advent Church was organized in December, 1848, under Rev. John Pearson, Jr. After meeting several years in Washington Hall, the society built its present handsome edifice on Charter Street.

The Whitefield Congregational Church was organized January 1, 1850. Rev. John E. Emerson was ordained its first pastor, but died a little more than a year after his settlement. Rev. Samuel J. Spaulding, D.D., succeeded him, followed by Rev. Henry E. Mott. The meeting-house of this society was built in 1852.

The Seventh-Day Adventists were organized in 1877.

A more minute history of the churches is impracticable within the limited space to which this narrative must be confined, and after reference has been made to the schools, the Public Library, to other organizations not yet spoken of, and the press, this necessarily incomplete history of Newburyport must be brought to a close.

According to the last report of the School Committee, the number of children in the city of school age was 2515, and the number in the public schools 1783. For the instruction of these children seventeen schools are furnished. These are the Brown and Girls' High School, with one principal and three assistants, and an average attendance of 98; the Kelley School, one principal and seven assistants, with an average attendance of 282; the Jackman Boys' Grammar School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 56; the Johnson Girls' Grammar School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 64; the Bromfield Street Girls' Grammar School, one principal and one assistant, with an average attendance of 52; the Currier Boys' Grammar School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 55; the Forrester Street Girls' Grammar School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 59; the Plains Mixed Grammar and Primary School, one principal and an average attendance of 25; the Moultonville Mixed Grammar and Primary School, one principal and an average attendance of 28; the Bromfield Street Primary School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 55; the Jackman Boys' Primary School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 56; the Johnson Girls' Primary School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 58; the Temple Street Girls' Primary School, one principal and an average attendance of 23; the Davenport Boys' Primary School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 42; the Davenport Girls' Primary School, one principal and an average attendance of 26; the Kent Street Mixed Primary School, one principal and an average attendance of 29; and the Ashland Street Mixed Primary School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 75.

For the support of these schools an appropriation of twenty thousand dollars was made in 1886, but this sum does not represent the cost of their maintenance, as the income of several funds is devoted to that purpose, among which are the Putnam and Brown funds, already referred to, for the support of the Putnam Free School and the Brown High School, both of which are now merged in the Boys' and Girls' High School.

In 1856 the Public Library was founded by a gift of five thousand dollars from Hon. Josiah Little. This fund has been increased from time to time by gifts already described, and finally the library was established on a permanent basis by the gift of the Tracy mansion, to which reference has been made. The number of books in the library at the time of the last report, in 1886, was twenty-three thousand eight hundred and thirty-three. In connection with the library there is a free public reading-room, which is fully performing its part in making that institution an educating and elevating influence in the community.

The local press of Newburyport consists of the *Weekly Herald*, published on Fridays, the *Daily Herald* and the *Merrimac Valley Visitor*. The first newspaper started here was *The Essex Journal and Merrimac Packet, or the Massachusetts and New Hampshire General Advertiser*, by Thomas & Tinges, of which Isaiah Thomas was the senior partner. The first number was dated December 4th in that year. On Friday, June 30, 1775, its name was changed to *Essex Journal, or the Massachusetts and New Hampshire General Advertiser*. On the 4th of August, 1775, it was changed to *Essex Journal, or New Hampshire Packet*, and November 1, 1776, it was again changed to *Essex Journal, or New Hampshire Packet and the Weekly Advertiser*. The *Impartial Herald*, a Federal paper, was started in 1793 and was the parent of the present *Newburyport Herald*. The first number was issued May 17, 1793, and consisted of four pages of

four narrow columns each, and the price was nine shillings per year. It was published on Saturdays, in Market Square, "opposite the southeast corner of Mr. Andrews' meeting-house." The two proprietors were Edward M. Blunt and Howard S. Robinson. Mr. Blunt was the author of the "Coast Pilot," and served his apprenticeship with John Mycall, the successor of Isaiah Thomas in the *Essex Journal*. Angier March succeeded Mr. Robinson and became a partner of Mr. Blunt in 1794. On the 16th of December in that year the *Herald* became a semi-weekly and continued such until Friday, June 6, 1879, when it became again a weekly. On the 6th of November, 1795, the office was removed to Mr. Blunt's bookstore on State Street. On the 24th of September, 1796, Mr. Blunt retired and left Mr. March the sole proprietor. The price, which since Mr. March joined Mr. Blunt had been twelve shillings, was now fixed at two dollars and fifty cents per year. On the 31st of October, 1797, William Barrett became associated with Mr. March and the paper called the *Political Gazette*, which he had started on the 30th of April in that year, was merged in the *Impartial Herald*, under the name of the *Newburyport Herald and Country Gazette*. On the 22d of December, 1797, the partnership was dissolved and Mr. March returned to his old quarters. On the 29th of November, 1798, he removed again to State Street and there remained until December 31, 1799, when he removed to the north corner of Market Square.

On the 1st of April, 1800, the price was raised to three dollars, and from April 11, 1800, to October 17, 1800, it was published by Chester Stebbins for the proprietor. On the 4th of August, 1801, Mr. March retired, the office having been previously removed to the south side of Market Square. The new proprietors were Ephraim W. Allen and Jeremy Stickney, who had been publishing a paper called the *American Intelligencer*, which was merged in the *Herald*. Their office was on Middle Street until December 4th, when it was moved to No. 7 State Street. On the 15th of June, 1802, Mr. Stickney retired, selling his interest to John Barnard, who remained until July 8, 1803, leaving Mr. Allen the sole proprietor, as he continued during most of the time until 1834. At the time of the fire his office was on Middle Street, and was burned. Until December 13, 1811, Mr. Allen occupied a temporary office on Merrimac Street at Brown's wharf. His next removal was to No. 16 State Street in December, 1811, where the *Herald* has remained up to the present time.

Mr. Allen, at various times, had as associates Henry R. Stickney, his brother William B. Allen and his two sons, William S. Allen and Jeremiah S. Allen. On the 1st of June, 1832, Mr. Allen started the *Daily Herald*. In 1834 the whole establishment was sold to Joseph B. Morse and William H. Brewster, who conducted it until January 1, 1854, when the *Daily Evening Union*, which had for five years been a competitor of the *Herald*, was united with it, and its proprietor, William H. Huse, became part proprietor of the *Herald*. In 1856 Messrs. Morse and Brewster retired, and William H. Huse & Co. became the sole proprietors. Since 1856 Mr. Huse has had associated with him George J. L. Colby, from 1856 to 1862; J. Q. A. Stone, from 1856 to 1859; George Wood, from 1859 to 1866; John Coombs, from 1862 to 1871, and Arthur L. Huse and Caleb B. Huse from 1859 to the present time, and Arthur L. Huse from 1871 to the present time. In 1880 a *Daily Evening Herald* was started, and the establishment now issues a *Weekly Herald* on Fridays, at $1.50 per year; a *Daily Herald* at $6.00 per year, and an *Evening Herald* at one cent for each paper. The *Daily Herald* was the first daily paper in Massachusetts outside of Boston, and has always maintained a reputation for enterprise and for intelligent management.

The *Merrimac Valley Visitor* was established in 1872 and is published every Saturday by Colby & Coombs, with George J. L. Colby as editor. During the life of the *Herald* many papers have appeared and disappeared, but the *Visitor*, under its able management, long since found a firm footing and has established itself as a permanent enterprise.

Of the organizations not yet mentioned, now in existence, there is the Cushing Guard (Company A of the Eighth Regiment). This company was originally organized October 24, 1775, as the Newburyport Artillery Company. In 1844 its name was changed to the Washington Light Guard, and in 1852, in honor of Hon. Caleb Cushing, it was changed to the Cushing Guard. Its service in the war has been already referred to.

There is also Company B of the Eighth Regiment, called the "City Cadets," which did service also during the war.

In addition to the above is the "Newburyport Veteran Artillery Association," composed of men above thirty-five years of age. It was organized August 1, 1854, by ex-members of the Newburyport Artillery Company.

It will be proper to mention also among the organizations, Post 49 of the Grand Army of the Republic, named in honor of Capt. Albert W. Bartlett, who commanded the Cushing Guard in the War of the Rebellion, and also the Newburyport Commandery of Knights Templar, instituted in 1795 and chartered in 1808; the King Cyrus Chapter, Royal Arch Masons, instituted A.L. 5790; the St. Mark's Lodge, instituted A.L. 5803; and the St. John's Lodge, instituted A. L. 5766.

Odd Fellowship was inaugurated in Newburyport, March 7, 1844, and now has the Merrimac Encampment, No. 7, the Quascacunquen Lodge, No. 39, and the Canton Harmony, No. 47, Patriarch Militant. There are also among the organizations and institutions the Merrimac Humane Society, incorporated in 1804; the Howard Benevolent Society, instituted in

1818; the General Charitable Society, organized in 1850; the Royal Arcanum Council, No. 112; the United Order of the Golden Cross; the Newburyport Lodge, No. 512, Knights of Honor; the Knights and Ladies of Honor, Harbor Lodge, No. 260; the American Legion of Honor; the Ancient Order of United Workmen, Merrimac Lodge, No. 31; the United Order of Pilgrim Fathers, George Whitefield Colony, No. 68; the Improved Order of Red Men; Monomack Tribe, No. 22; the Mountain Hill Lodge, No. 45 (a temperance organization); the Woman's Temperance Union; the Union Division Sons of Temperance; the Young Men's Christian Association; the Newburyport Mutual Benefit Association; the Newburyport Bethel Society; the Old Ladies' Home; the Garfield Associates; the Anne Jacques Hospital; the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals; the Freedman Aid Society; the Merrimac Bible Society; the Women's Christian Association; the Newburyport Female Charitable Society; and the Father Lennon Benevolent Association.

No sketch of Newburyport could make any claim to completeness without a reference to the literary character of its people and to the writers in poetry and prose which it has developed. Few towns have manifested a love of home so strongly as that which characterizes the natives of that city, and the columns of its press show that they never tire of recalling memories of the past and of the men who distinguished it. The offspring of this love is always and everywhere discovered in a sentiment which finds its most fitting expression in verse, and in the city on the shores of the Merrimac, with a surrounding scenery which lends its inspiring aid, we find no exception to the rule. Though the list of writers and poets is long, it is worthy of a place in this record. Caleb Cushing and George Lunt and John Pierpont have been already referred to; but to these must be added the names of Susie W. Moulton, Hannah F. Gould, William W. Caldwell, Harriet Prescott Spofford, Albert Pike, Robert S. Coffin, Samuel L. Knapp, George D. Wildes, Foster Sweetser, George Bancroft Griffith, Henry C. Knight, Frederick Knight, Anne G. Hale, Ann E. Porter, Lucy Hooper, Anna Cabot Lowell, Mrs. George Lee, Daniel Dana, Thomas Tracy, O. B. Merrill, S. J. Spaulding, Mrs. E. Vale Smith and James Parton, a son of Newburyport by adoption.

The population of Newburyport by the census of 1885 was 13,716, and its valuation in 1886 was $8,523,113. The expenditures for 1886 were $167,666.26, and the debt of the city on the 18th of December of that year was $384,243.46. The city property, at the same date, amounted to $331,100, made up of the following items: real estate, $94,400; school-houses, $97,500; engine-houses, $12,600; personal property, $126,600.

With these few statistics, this history of Newburyport must be brought to a close. Its many imperfections must be attributed to the fact that its author was not to the manor born, and has consequently encountered obstacles which it was by no means easy for a stranger to overcome.

NOTE.—The writer wishes to acknowledge the aid he has received in the preparation of this history from Hon. John James Currier, both personally and as executor of the will of the late Ben: Perley Poore; from William H. Huse, Esq., editor of the *Newburyport Herald*, and from the files of that journal; from Hon. Eben F. Stone and Hon. R. S. Spofford, of Newburyport, and from George H. Stevens, Esq., the city clerk of Newburyport. W. T. D.

Plymouth, November 8, 1887.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

HON. WILLIAM BARTLET.[1]

Mr. Bartlet spelled his name with one t. He said there was no use in making two letters where one would do as well; but as there have been several ways of spelling it, that is of little consequence. He was a great man and a good man, one of the greatest and best that Newburyport, so rich in distinguished citizens, ever produced. He was great physically; great mentally; great morally; great in his conceptions and his power of executing his designs, having courage where ordinary men would have failed; great in his influence and in his manner of perpetuating that influence to succeeding generations, aye, adown the ages. All this will appear in any sketch of his life that does justice to the man. He was of gigantic form, endurance and strength. Tall, over-topping the average man by half a foot; full-chested, broad shouldered, firm-set, sinewy, weighing—as we call him to mind—about two hundred and fifty pounds. He moved lion-like among the crowd, not arrogant or proud, but seemingly as conscious of his ability as Napoleon was in riding into battle.

Thus William Bartlet could be and do, since he was born an athlete. Knowing him only in his old age, it seems to us as though he never was an infant, never had seen an hour of weakness. He was descended from the old Norman knights of the era of the Crusades; from the men who followed William the Conqueror into England, to give to that island, to be the cradle of the modern Romans, new life and new laws, new government and a new destiny; creating for them that high place in history they have so nobly filled; moving them on to the empire so vast that the sun never sets upon it, whose morning and evening drum-beat is heard around the globe; which empire may yet, for aught that now appears, hold universal dominion. The grand army that conquered the world under Alexander the Great marched eastward, and have died; the Anglo-Normans marched west to greater victories, for they found other worlds to conquer.

The name Bartlet was originally Bartelot; and the

[1] By George J. L. Colby.



first of the family in England, like the first man in the creation of the world, was named Adam; and as the human race dates not back of Adam, it is not well to go deeper into the mists of antiquity, for this family, than to Adam Bartelot or Bartlet. He, with sixty thousand other followers of the Conqueror, the Norman knights and their vassals, had the promise of the spoils of victory; and from 1066, when the battle of Hastings was fought, the barons of England love to date their honors and names. In the pavement of the old stone church, on the ancestral estate of seven thousand acres, in Sussex County, in England, the Bartlets can trace their genealogy—the foot-prints of a noble family. It is one of the finest estates in Great Britain; has been in their hands more than eight hundred years, and can never be sold or pass from them. Their coat-of-arms witnesses to the heroic deeds of men whose portraits hang in the halls of that ancient castle; whose Christian names are the inherited appellations in our own country and age, as William, Edmund, Richard, John and Thomas—the names they brought over the seas and have transmitted.

The first Bartlet immigrants in America were three,—the sons of Edmund, whose landed estate was in Ernley, which, by the law of primogeniture, passed to their brother Edmund, and left them—Richard, John and Thomas—to inferiority or to make to themselves new homes elsewhere. They came to America in 1634. Thomas settled in Watertown and left no sons. John and Richard came to Newbury in 1635, with the first settlers; and two years later they had left the banks of the Parker and settled at "Bartlet Cove," in a beautiful bend of the Merrimac, nearly opposite the Powow, as it empties into the Merrimac. There they built themselves houses, and there their descendants have lived to this day. John had but one son, and Richard had three, with several daughters. It is with the latter and those of his lineage that we have to do.

Richard Bartlet, the shoemaker, was a man of sterling character and marked piety; and his son, Richard, Jr., was one of the leading men of the town; for several years Representative in the General Court.

A third Richard, son of Richard, Jr., born in 1649, married Hannah Emery; and as the Emerys have always been thrifty, she may have added to his real estate. Certainly she did to his personal estate, for she bore him ten children,—eight sons and two daughters, the latter beginning and ending the brood. Her last son was Thomas, and a grandson of that Thomas was the Hon. William Bartlet, whose portrait we here give. He was born in 1748, and died in his ninety-fourth year; but his "eye was not dim, nor his natural force abated."

Already the Bartlets had become numerous and some of them distinguished. They had learning, energy, piety and patriotism. One of them, Samuel, on the first intimation of the outbreak against Governor Andros, mounted his horse, started for Boston, and was there in time to participate in the arrest and imprisonment of the obnoxious chief magistrate. It is a tradition that he rode so fast that his long sword, dragging over the ground, left a stream of fire all the way.

Another was the celebrated Josiah Bartlet, from Stephen, the seventh son of Richard and Hannah Emery, a man of varied attainments. He stood in the first rank of his profession as a physician and was the founder of the Medical Society in New Hampshire, where he lived; was a member of the Legislature and of Congress; was the last President and the first Governor of the State; was a signer of the Declaration of Independence and a colonel in the Revolutionary army, serving with General John Starke; was a judge in the Inferior and Supreme Courts and chief justice of the State.

But had the family made no record before, General William F. Bartlet, by his daring in the late inter-State war, would have redeemed them all. A student in Harvard when the bugle sounded, summoning the citizens to defend the Union and its flag, he at once enlisted and became a captain in the Twentieth Massachusetts Regiment. Before Yorktown, Va., a rifle-shot required the amputation of one leg. Six months later he was again in the field, colonel of the Fifty-ninth Regiment, and at Port Hudson, leading the assault, the only man on horseback, and therefore in the most hazardous position, he was again disabled by a shot in the wrist. A truce being declared to bury the dead, the first inquiry of the Confederate officer was, "Who was that man on horseback?" Being told, he said, "He is a gallant fellow; a brave man; the bravest and most daring we have met during the war. We thought him too brave to die, and ordered our men not to fire at him!" Recovering from his wound, he was again in the field, colonel of the Fifty-second Regiment; was promoted to a brigadier-general; captured in assaulting the enemy's works at Petersburg; shut up in Libby Prison three months, and at the close of the war found him in command of the Ninth Corps, in Virginia. He was a soldier, a scholar and an orator; magnetic in word and action.

Having glanced at the heroism of the Bartlets in war, we turn to their acts in peace, and these well prove that "peace hath its victories as well as war." We have stated their leading traits of character, thrift, enterprise, intelligence, piety and personal daring. They have been the accumulators of property It is their inherited tendency, though, like all transmitted faculties, it may not appear in every individual. Their intelligence comes from the high culture of the family for a thousand years, and beyond that to where the record reaches not. In America more than a hundred of them graduated from our colleges, and seven lineal descendants from Richard Bartlet have been judges

in the courts of New Hampshire alone; and it has been so in all the learned professions. They have always been religiously inclined, and not one of them more than William Bartlet, whose convictions were strong, and who freely gave thousands and hundreds of thousands of dollars for religious purposes. This, too, has come down in the blood, the names of four of them in England, who suffered martyrdom for their faith, being given in Fox's "Book of Martyrs." For personal daring they have done no discredit at any time to him whose name is in the Battle Abbey roll, or those who won the honors indicated by their "coat-of-arms."

And now we come more particularly to William, the merchant, born in the eighteenth century, and living to the full age of ninety-three years. He was of comparatively poor parents, and of little education; but nature had done much for him, giving him what art cannot create—a level head, quick perception, sound judgment, and, what was more and better, a good heart, backed by a predominant will, which secured to him honesty and honor in his dealings.

We find him first with his father, learning the art of making shoes. He served his seven years' apprenticeship, and then, at the demand of his father, six months more to make up any lost time. That was what apprentices then did under strict and "hard" masters. Perhaps it was here that he learned how to treat his own children, in whom he would not permit the least disobedience of orders, and absolutely removed his son William from the command of one of his ships because he went beyond orders, though he thereby made a prosperous voyage. The making or losing was not a question with him, but strict construction of orders and energy in the performance of duty. When he reached manhood "he stuck to his last," his lapstone and his awl, and long years after, when he had done with them, he preserved them as memorials of young and happy days. There was then no discussion of the hours of labor, and the holidays were few and far between.

So great was his industry, in his humble occupation, that the first sunbeams found him on his "seat," the noonday saw him running to and from his dinner, for he could not stop to walk, and the night hours were struck high by the clock before he went to rest. A person of less physical power and a lower ambition might have broken down and died, but he was ever fresh for another day. By his savings at "cobbling" he soon had a little money to invest in small matters, within arm's reach, for trade.

This was the beginning of the man, afterwards the greatest merchant Newburyport ever had, surpassed by none of his time in Massachusetts, unless William Grey, of Salem, and later of Boston, might have been the single exception. He gave away and lost at sea more property than any estate probated in the county of Essex to that date, and still was a millionaire, when there were not so many millionaires in the whole country as can now be found in San Francisco alone, upon which an American eye had then never rested. So busy was this man, so indefatigable in his labors, that in a hundred years, save seven, he never, but once, was seventy miles from the house in which he was born. He had no time to travel, when his ships were in every quarter of the globe; their cargoes were piled in the stores of the leading seaports of Europe, America, the East and West Indies; and his name so familiar in Amsterdam or London that his credit would have been good with the English and Dutch bankers for a half-million.

But we are running ahead of our story. As soon as he was able, he tried an "adventure" at sea. An "adventure" was a small parcel of goods that a seaman or officer on a ship might carry free. That brought him profit, and he took the return home on a wheel-barrow. There was no "quarter" for a drayman when he could do the work himself. Next he purchased a part of a vessel, and then a whole one, and finally fleets of shipping that were bringing iron and hemp from Russia, carrying tallow from the Baltic to the Thames, coffee by the million pounds and sugar by the cargo from the East Indies to Antwerp, when that was a great centre of trade; salt from Cadiz to America, and molasses, coffee and other merchandise from the West Indies, South America and other parts of the world to his stores, which were first on the Long wharf, which he made longer by building further into the channel, now called Bartlet Wharf, at the foot of Federal Street, and then others below were added, covering the whole river-front, till he included the Coombs Wharf, below Lime Street. At one time he had three full ship-loads of coffee in Holland and two more in Boston, and two of tallow in London. His stores were full of hemp and iron, and other evidences of his great wealth and business. The government decreed non-intercourse, embargoes and war, but they did not check his enterprise, exhaust his funds or shake his credit. Something may be learned of the man and the extent of his business by the depredations made upon his shipping by European belligerents in the last century and early in this, for which he had claims, some of which were paid, and some are held by his heirs to-day. His claims on France, prior to 1800, were $180,000; on Denmark, before 1812, $173,000; on England, before the War of 1812–15, $198,000. Here is a total against three governments for losses of ships and cargoes valued at $551,000. Other claims he had against Naples, Spain and Norway, which, without counting interest, would swell the whole to $650,000; but the exact sums against the three last-named countries we cannot give. More or less, they did not daunt him or impede his action.

Mr. Bartlet's largest loss was that of the ship "Rose," Capt. William Chase, on her passage from Surinam for Newburyport, with sugar, cotton, dyewoods and other merchandise—captured by the French privateer "L'Egypt Conquise," after a gal-

lant defense of nearly two hours. That was in 1799. The "Rose" was two hundred and fifty-six tons burden, and carried seven heavy guns. The privateer was larger, with more guns and more men. Capt. Chase was wounded early in the engagement. The mate continued the defense, and even after the enemy had boarded, refused to surrender, and was literally cut to pieces on his own deck. Two seamen were killed, two fatally wounded and thirteen injured before her flag came down. She was sent to Gaudaloupe and confiscated. Her loss was one hundred and three thousand dollars. Another captured was the ship "Hesper," John N. Cushing, master, who later in life was himself the first merchant and the largest ship-owner in town. He was from Russia, loaded with hemp and iron, for Newburyport, and the vessel and cargo were valued at seventy-eight thousand dollars. Many of the names of Mr. Bartlet's captains are still familiar, as Joseph Tyler, who lived on Lime Street; John Goon, on Federal Street; William Chase, on Temple Street; Dennis Condry, on High Street; Israel Young, on Greene Street; Sewall Toppan, at the north end; Hector Coffin, on State Street; Stephen Holland, John Bailey, Friend Dole; John March, father of the late pastor of the Belleville Church; William Wheelwright, in the "Rising Empire," lost near the river La Plata, in South America, which carried him to his great mission in that quarter of the world; and Ambrose White, who sailed the "Potomac," the last ship Mr. Bartlet sent to sea.

Mr. Bartlet by no means confined his operations to the seas. He was greatly interested in agriculture, made it a study, and took delight in his garden and fields in the town, and at one time owned one of the finest farms in Essex County, at Methuen. He was also largely in manufactures; was the proprietor of the mills in Byfield, which manufactured the first cotton cloth in the United States, where every part of the work was done under one roof. Later, in 1794, it had the first act of incorporation in the State for a woolen-mill, and there was made flannels and broad-cloth. The capital invested was fifty thousand dollars, and when the other proprietors could no longer sustain the losses in this experiment, he bought out the original holders and sold the property to other parties who would continue it. Later he was an owner in all the cotton-mills built in Newburyport; and it is doubtful if there ever would have been one here, but for his enthusiasm in that direction causing him to invest two hundred thousand dollars in those works. When the Bartlet Mill, No. 1, was erected, he was told that the directors counted upon his subscription for ten thousand dollars. His reply was, "Very well; you can make it twenty thousand." Later when Mill No. 2 was commenced, the work dragged for want of funds, and might have been abandoned had not General James, the superintendent, asked of the directors a delay on the vote for a half an hour, till he could see Mr. Bartlet, then in his ninety-third year. Within the half-hour he returned with Mr. Bartlet's subscription for fifty thousand dollars, and his check for the money. As old as he was, he had lost none of his mental vigor; and was an example to men of twenty-three or fifty-three, "the noblest Roman of them all;" ever ready, even to the time when other men would have been making preparations for death, to do what he could for the benefit of his town, his country and the world. He realized that the best preparation for another life was usefulness in this life.

In all public matters he proved himself the man of men, when Newburyport had hosts of other sons and citizens to honor every business and profession. When it was proposed, in 1798, that the town should present the federal government with a ship of war, he was with the foremost in building the frigate "Merrimac;" when piers were needed for the harbor, he loosed his purse strings; when light-houses were called for on Plum Island, before the government had assumed their care, his donation was so large that the town voted "that William Bartlet appoint the light tender." When a bridge was needed over the river, at Deer Island, he was down among the largest subscribers to its stock; and when he saw the value of the Merrimac River to Newburyport, ere the government expended money on it, or the people appreciated the facts, about 1816, William Bartlet, Moses Brown and John Pettingill were incorporated "for clearing the river and locking the falls," to the stock of which he pledged largely. Had he succeeded in making others see the importance of the matter, as he with prophetic eye foresaw, Newburyport to-day would have held the first rank among the cities of Massachusetts, standing next to Boston. To go over all that he did or proposed to do would require a large volume, but he hesitated at nothing which would advance the interests of his native town or the State in which he lived or the country in which he gloried. As to individuals, he was ever ready to help those who would help themselves. The idle, the dissipated, or those who by dishonest means would rob honest labor of its due, he held in contempt, and for them had little money. He closed his heart and his hand to the loafers and vagabonds. If they died, let them die; it would make more room for those who deserved to live.

He had no time for politics, though he was an intense Federalist.

The only office he ever held, that required his attention out of town, was when a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1820. In local affairs he sometimes took an active part, especially on financial questions, and often named the sums voted in the annual assessment. A little incident will illustrate the humorous side of his character. He had complained of the bad condition of Federal Street, on which he lived, which displeased the former sur-

veyor's friends, who nominated William Bartlet surveyor of the highways, not expecting or desiring that he would accept. He turned their joke into a grim reality, when he promptly accepted, and with his usual energy at once entered upon duty, spending every cent of the appropriation on Federal Street. So thorough was the work, that in forty years thereafter it did not require forty dollars for repairs. This, however, was his usual mode of action—to do so well and so strong, that nothing more would be needed in his day. His house in which he lived is a specimen, and his brick store on the wharf cost as much in its foundations as the building above the ground. Time may eat into its walls, but its foundations will surprise the man who strikes them a thousand years hence, should they not be broken up before, as do the underlyings of the ancient ruins of Roman structnres.

Economy is a virtue, though the prodigal and thoughtless often mistake it for a crime. William Bartlet, born to labor and never excelled in industry, was for himself economical in all his expenditures; but he was munificent and magnificent in his gifts for public and religious purposes. He never belonged to a church, nor did he rely upon what he could do, or think, or say for salvation hereafter. He held to the Calvinistic creed in all its fullness; was the personal friend of his pastor at the North Church, Rev. Dr. Spring; and afterwards a liberal supporter of worship at the First Presbyterian Church, in which he placed the large, beautiful and costly cenotaph to the famous George Whitefield, whom he had heard preach in his youth. By his religious feelings—a sense of duty that a rich man owes to the world—he donated largely to associations of Christian endeavor and to the spread of virtuous and Christian principles everywhere. In his donations and bequests he surpassed any other man who had preceded him or has succeeded him in the town, as much as he did in wealth or business. He gave to Andover Seminary not less than a quarter of a million of dollars, and his donations were chiefly unsolicited. He suggested, in anticipation, that such and such things be done, and backed his propositions with his money. He was one of the three founders of the Seminary (not one of them, by the way, a member of any church at the time) and made it the object of his care and love. He was its first, oldest and longest-continued friend, its largest benefactor, its most constant supporter. He also made liberal donations to the Harvard Divinity School, to Williams College and to Amherst; was one of the vice-presidents of the American Education Society, and by his own contributions was made a director for life. He was one of the originators of the American Board for Foreign Missions and his name stands alone in the preamble to the act of incorporation. He was present at the first meeting of the prudential committee in 1810; and in 1815 the board voted special thanks to him "for his distinguished liberality." For three years he was the first vice-president of the American Tract Society and its generous patron. He was likewise a leading temperance man, steadily for the cause, with voice or purse, when it was fashionable for all classes to drink spirituous liquors. In fact, William Bartlet was ready to assist any religious or benevolent institutions that commended themselves to his good judgment, and he did actually expend not less than three hundred thousand dollars for their benefit.

Having carefully considered and studied the life, acts and character of William Bartlet, though no biography of him, we regret to say, has ever been written, we finally conclude that in strength of mind and will for the execution of its purposes, he was not excelled by any man who has lived in the town; that he was more wealthy than any other citizen and more liberal than any other; that from the least means, by his own industry and perseverance, he was the most successful merchant, as he was the most public-spirited; that he was not only pure in his morals, a model of integrity, but if faith in God and love for man be a test of character, he was a Christian as well as a gentleman; that he did not throw around his money loosely in wild endeavors to make everybody as rich as himself may not have satisfied the insane desires of some, but would God that he would vouchsafe more men like William Bartlet, to Newburyport! He sleeps his last sleep in Oak Hill Cemetery.

MOSES BROWN.[1]

Moses Brown was one of those good men, accumulating and expending as his generous soul prompted, living for the good of others as much as himself. He was born in West Newbury in 1742, one of the five children of Joseph and Abigail (Hill) Brown near Brown's Springs, on the main road from Newburyport to Haverhill. The farm on which he labored in his youth still remains in the possession of the family. The house is a large, old-fashioned frame building,—a farm-house, where for scores of years the country teams from the north as far as Canada, sometimes a hundred a day, passed to Newburyport, then a great port for shipments, and would, more or less, put up. In the next house eastward lived the Feltons, a family which sent three sons into the world seldom equaled in modern times, and who would have given fame to a whole State. One was president of Harvard College; another was the greatest lawyer that ever entered a court-house in California; and the third, still living in Pennsylvania, is a railroad magnate.

At the time of Moses Brown's birth this section was famous for the manufacture of wagons and chaises; and Moses Brown learned the art of carriage-building. On reaching his majority he established himself in that business at Newburyport, and the first work he was called to do, was repairing a

[1] By George J. L. Colby.



carriage for the Hon. Tristram Dalton, living on State Street, opposite the "Wolfe Tavern," in an elegant mansion. Mr. Dalton was a high-toned gentleman of influence, wealth and learning—perhaps the most cultivated man in the town. At a later day he was elected Senator, the first from Massachusetts in the Federal Congress, and became the close and trusted friend of President Washington. Mr. Dalton invited Moses Brown into the house, where he, born of poor parents and to hard work, amazed at the rich furniture, the elegant pictures on the walls, the abundance of books, and other magnificent surroundings, almost lost himself in wonder and delight; nor was he less pleased in going to the carriage-house, at the neatness of the premises, the beauty of the flowers, uttering their morning prayers in their odors rising heavenward, and the acres of fruit and shade-trees imported from Europe. If he ever knew envy at the better condition of another man it was then, when he picked up the shafts of the carriage, and drew it by hand to his work-shop, for he said to a friend: "If I ever have the means and the opportunity, the Dalton house would be the first piece of real estate I would buy." In process of time he had his desire gratified. He did buy it, lived happily in it many years, dispensed a large hospitality, and finally died with the gates of heaven ajar and at hand. Tristram Dalton grew poorer, largely by speculation in Washington, then "the city of magnificent distances," and finally removed from Newburyport, and sold the property. Moses Brown, by diligence in business and fortunate voyages, from small beginnings grew rich, and the Dalton estate passed into his hands. He never forgot, however, that he had been poor; and when God blessed his endeavors, and his wealth abounded on sea or land, he considered the poor in his poverty.

How did Moses Brown become rich? It would be a sufficient answer to say: "By honest industry." Rather than have become so by ways that are dark and means of doubtful morality, he would have preferred poverty, if it had ground him to powder. Having been dead only sixty years, there are those surviving who knew him well, and this is the universal testimony, that he would have held coals of fire in his hands sooner than ill-gotten farthings. All the traditions of him coming down to us declare that he preferred obedience to God rather than great riches. He continued to labor at his trade and to save his moderate earnings, till he acquired enough to try his "ventures" on the sea. As he was sagacious, he was fortunate, for sagacity is the mother of "good luck." To one vessel he added another; to one piece of real estate a second parcel; so that in the prime of his days he was the largest real estate owner in the town, and was second only to William Bartlett in general wealth. About the close of the last century he was taxed on a valuation of more than three hundred thousand dollars.

In real estate he owned all to High Street above his residence, except the Berry Titcomb property. Crossing High Street, he owned an unbroken line on the Turnpike to the "old brick school-house," and we think to Parker Street. He owned other property on the upper side of the Turnpike, and from Greenleaf Street his land ran to High Street, thence through Pond to Lowe Street, and by Greenleaf Street for its whole length—including within these limits what was called the "Brown farm." But, without stopping to describe or identify the different parcels, we may say, he owned on South (now Bromfield) Street, on Lowe, Kent, Franklin, Harris, Buck, Fruit, State, Titcomb, Dove, Beck, Lime, Merrimac, Green, Broad and Pond Streets, all at one time, as the assessors' books show, and at the same time Brown's Square, named for him, on which he built the Brown Square house for the dry-goods trade, and intended to extend it to Green Street; also the Brown Wharves, and all that attaches to them, from the public landing at the foot of Green Street to the Patch Wharf. He extended his domain from his pier-heads to the premises now owned by Rev. Dr. Spalding.

If we take a look down the Brown Wharf, as it was in "ye olden time," we come first to his counting-room, on the right, in which half a dozen of clerks and employees were busy. On the left hand is his distillery, in full blast, changing his molasses to New England rum. That was in accord with the spirit of the time. Moses Brown was a temperance man at heart and in spirit; he would not have a man about him who drank to excess. When the American Temperance Society was formed, he headed the list of donors to the cause in Newburyport, with five hundred dollars—and he continued his annual contributions as long as he lived. And now, as we pass down, we see his blacksmith-shop on one side and his cooper-shop on the other, and farther down, where his riggers, the Pipers, did work, and on the floor above, Sailmaker Haynes is cutting the canvas, and around him the sails that shall waft ships to foreign ports and distant seas are being made up—all of these have employment from Moses Brown. But before we leave the "Long Store," we shall see that it is crooked or "hogged," which was done by overloading it with coffee, as big as it is; and where the thatch is growing and little water is now found in the dock, beside that building, ships from the Baltic and the Mediterranean Seas, and barques and brigs from the West Indias could be seen unloading their cargoes. Within sight there is a full acre of molasses in casks, and along the sides of the piers are ships and brigs and schooners, loading or unloading or waiting in the stream for a chance to reach the wharves. We have no means of reaching the figures of this great business. As a merchant he was second only to William Bartlet, though probably never worth more than half as much, for Mr. Bartlet was among the first merchants of the world, the fore-

most at Newburyport, when this was the third commercial port in the United States. Moses Brown, however, had a large coastwise and foreign trade, in Europe with the principal commercial nations, Russia, Holland, France, Spain and England, but more largely with their colonies in the West Indies and South America. He had a large number of vessels in the fisheries, which were so extended on the Merrimac River that sixty and more have sailed for the Labrador coast in two days. After landing their catch and having them "cured," the same vessels would take them to foreign markets, bringing home their value in the products of the countries where they sold, and making ready at the proper season to sail again. These were what the old people, who can remember when we had a foreign commerce, called "round voyages."

We have spoken of Moses Brown in connection with William Bartlet, though in their general "make up" they were very unlike each other; yet in their energetic business movements, in their readiness to favor private or public enterprises that would tend to the common good and improve the town, they were alike, and still more in this: that back of both of them stood one man of great learning, broad conceptions and an energy not less than their own. That man was their Christian pastor, Rev. Dr. Samuel Spring, who in religious and moral action was their guide. We name this because we find them disposing of large sums of money for religious and benevolent purposes in which he was heartily engaged. Neither of them, nor their wives, was a member of any church, save that Mr. Brown joined the North Congregational a little before his death.

No one, unless informed, would have suspected, from their habits of life and their generous donations for pious purposes, that they had not been baptized in infancy, confirmed at maturity and been at the communion every Sunday. It was Dr. Spring who conceived the idea that ripened into the Andover Theological Seminary. At first it was proposed to locate it in West Newbury, with Rev. Dr. Leonard Woods, then residing there, and afterwards becoming its president, at its head. When the Phillips and Abbott donations were made, this was changed, and Andover was selected. Dr. Spring laid the subject before Moses Brown, who promptly replied: "It is a great object; I will give ten thousand dollars to begin with, and more afterwards." This pledge was kept; to the ten thousand dollars he added, from time to time, and made a final donation of twenty-five thousand dollars. We think his entire aid to the Andover Seminary must have been between forty and fifty thousand dollars. He was equally liberal in all other directions. He gave fifteen thousand —principal and interest—to establish the Latin School that bears his name in Newburyport, one thousand five hundred dollars to relieve the distress occasioned by the "great fire" in 1811, made one donation of a thousand to the American Education Society, one thousand to the Greenville (Tennessee) College, one thousand to the Howard Benevolent Society, one thousand acres of land in Brownville, Me., which township he owned, to the Bangor Theological Seminary, and was continually giving to missionary, Bible, tract and like societies, to poor churches and poor people. Nobody knows how much he did give. And he did not let one hand know what the other gave. The total would be put low at one hundred thousand dollars; and half as much more he gave to individuals near to or distant from him. To one individual he gave twenty thousand dollars at one time. This was before the era of great fortunes and of millionaires.

But while we may admire Moses Brown for his many donations and bequests, we may the more commend his personal character—the purity of his life, the goodness of his heart, the nobility of his nature. Rev. Dr. Woods, who knew him well, truly said: "The name of Moses Brown cannot be pronounced without respect and love. For more than a half-century, in which he was engaged in acquiring and using his property, his reputation for integrity and honor was unsullied. It was his uniform principle to take no advantage to himself that would prove injurious to his neighbor. He countenanced no vice. He would not deviate a hair's breadth from what he believed the right."

In personal appearance he was modest, diffident, but always dignified; of a kind and benignant look and a very persuasive voice. He was of medium height and spare in person. He seems to have cultivated no worldly ambitions. He sought neither public applause nor public position. He never attempted to conceal the lowness of his origin, but rather gloried in it, as by his experiences he better knew the wants of the poor and was more ready to extend aid to the deserving and comfort to the afflicted. He pursued business as though the gains therefrom were not for his use alone, and he distributed them as a trust for the good of others. The law of rectitude was in his heart, and the balances of equity in his hand.

In his family and personal relations he was agreeable and happy, kind and affectionate; but from his family and those in his employ, whom he had the right to control, he demanded obedience to the rules of the best society and the highest morals. He was quiet, placid, thoughtful and at times serious; but ever he maintained the most absolute confidence in God and cherished a fraternal love for man. His folded hands, when they were not in use, was indicative of his supreme tranquility. He had reached a peace that nothing disturbed and hope that nothing dimmed. He was a model husband, a loving father, a firm friend and an honored citizen.

Moses Brown twice married,—first, to Mary Hall, who died in 1778, leaving no children; and second,



Yours Truly

Mary White, of Haverhill, who held a large property in her own right. She was a lady of rare cultivation, esteemed for the sweetness of her temper, her moral serenity, her kindness to all persons and her devout spirit. Seldom are a couple so much alike. She was his mentor, discreet in her counsels; and he, to her death, was her admirer and lover. Years increased their attachment and old age brought them into oneness. Her death was to him an incurable affliction. She bore him two children,—a son who died in infancy and a daughter, his sole heir, who, later on, became the wife of Hon. William B. Bannister, a lawyer of good repute. Mrs. Bannister died, also leaving a daughter, who, as the inheritor of the estates of her grandfather and grandmother, was the greatest heiress then living in the county of E-sex. She married Ebenezer Hale, M.D., who died early, leaving her a widow with one son, who did not reach his majority, and, as Mrs. Hale died without issue in 1880, here terminated the family of Moses Brown.

The largest heir to Moses Brown's estate, which reached more than a quarter of a million dollars, was Miss Effie Brown Moody, who was a grand-niece of his nephew, Moses Brown. The whole generation of his family, including three brothers, had died a half-century before the estate was settled. Their descendants had scattered into many of the States and one of them resided in the Sandwich Islands.

BENJAMIN HALE.

Benjamin Hale was born November 23, 1797, in the Belleville Parish of Newbury, Mass., now included in the limits of the city of Newburyport.

He was the eldest son of Thomas Hale, who was the grandson of the fifth Thomas Hale in the series of Thomas Hales, whose first member came to Newbury in the year 1663.

His mother was a daughter of Col. Josiah Little, who was a son of Col. Moses Little, an officer of the Continental army, who served with distinction at Bunker Hill, and during the siege of Boston, and on Long Island, and in the battles near New York City. On both sides of the house he came of a race of vigorous, energetic and industrious men, honored by their fellow-citizens, and distinguished for exemplary habits and faithfulness in the discharge of varied trusts and duties.

In childhood he was studious and kind, commencing his education at the age of three years, at the school of Ma'am Fowler, a well-known local teacher, who died in 1854, at the age of ninety-six. Newbury and Newburyport in those days were well supplied with competent and accomplished teachers. Benjamin Hale, who was himself studiously inclined, esteemed Archibald McPhail as the best of those he came in contact with. Speaking of a walk with him, when he was nine years old, to the Boiling Spring, he said "That walk invested the Spring with a good deal of poetry." He was also at the Newburyport Academy when Mr. Abiel Chandler was the principal, who had not the faculty of making himself very attractive to younger scholars, though a scholarly man and interested in education, which he many years afterwards exhibited by endowing the Chandler Scientific Department of Dartmouth College.

He fitted for college at the Atkinson Academy, in Atkinson, N. H., then under the charge of the Hon. John Vose. He entered Dartmouth College in 1814, and was among the youngest of some thirty members of his class. His health becoming impaired, he left college early in the sophomore year.

He, however, pursued his studies under the directions of Rev. Mr. Abbott, of Dummer Academy, and entered the sophomore class of Bowdoin College early in 1816, then under the presidency of Rev. Dr. Appleton. Here he stood high in a class of uncommon excellence. The class was the largest in the history of the college up to that time. In 1818 he graduated with the second part in his class, giving the salutatory oration. Heeding the advice of his old pastor, Dr. Spring, "that one who meant to be a minister would do well to try his hand at being a school-master," he took charge of the Academy at Saco for one year. In the autumn of 1819 he became a member of the Theological Seminary, at Andover. Here his college classmate became his classmate and room-mate, Dr. Anderson, of the A. B. C. F. M.

Dr. Anderson thus writes of him:

"Our friendship was founded in mutual knowledge and esteem, and continued during his life. The operations of his mind were effective, equally so in nearly every branch of learning. He was quick and accurate in mathematics, in the languages and in music. I know not in what one branch he was best fitted to excel. While perfect in all his recitations, he was social, always ready for conversation when I desired it. He had, and through his whole life retained, my entire confidence as a man of God, nor was I surprised at the eminent position he afterwards attained in the church of Christ. Pleasant is his memory, and pleasant is the thought of meeting him in a better world."

While at Andover he had leisure for reading, and that part of it which he devoted to ecclesiastical history had an important influence as it turned out, in deciding his future ecclesiastical connection. At the commencement of Bowdoin College in 1820 he was appointed tutor. He taught the junior class in natural philosophy, and Locke's Essay on the Human Understanding, and the sophomore class in geometry and some other parts of mathematics and in logic. At the same time he continued to pursue his theological studies, and in January, 1822, was licensed to preach by the York Association.

In September, 1821, he delivered a Latin valedictory oration, and took his degree of A.M. With regard to this period of his life his fellow-tutor, Professor Packard, thus writes:

"Mr. Hale gave at once the impression of a kind, generous, faithful heart, a clear, acute and rapid intellect, and a vigorous grasp of any subject to which he gave his thought. He was a diligent student. He loved books. Without conceit, he had sufficient self-reliance, which was always of service to him as a teacher and governor. He always had

the good-will of his pupils, and whether with them or with his colleagues, he exerted an influence above rather than below his age and standing. He was a true man, unselfish, of a decidedly social turn, of warm affections, of a genial humor."

After being licensed to preach he performed that duty quite regularly, one-half of the day in the church at Brunswick, President Allen preaching the other half. He was also called upon to preach occasionally in neighboring Episcopal Churches. This shows that denominational lines sixty-five years ago were not always drawn very vigorously.

In the summer of 1822 he received proposals from R. H. Gardiner, Esq., to take charge of a new institution which he had determined to establish for the education of farmers and mechanics in the true principles of science.

Closing his connection with the college at commencement, in the year 1822, he went to Gardiner in the autumn, completing the preliminary arrangements.

January, 1823, he opened the Lyceum, was inaugurated as its principal, and delivered an address on the occasion, which was published. This was one of the earliest of the schools of technology, which have since then won their way to so important a part in the educational systems of the present day.

Having obtained what was a remunerative salary in those days of stricter domestic economy, and a position of consideration, he took to himself a wife, Mary C. King, eldest daughter of Hon. Cyrus King, M.C., of Saco, Me., April 9, 1823. The Lyceum, attracting many students, became a flourishing institution; additional teachers were added. The principal gave lectures in chemistry, and taught mathematics and natural philosophy, and in the winter had classes in architecture and agricultural chemistry, preparing for the former of these classes a book on "The Elementary Principles of Carpentry," in the year 1827. His health having suffered from the confinement and the arduous duties of his position, he decided with many regrets to leave a situation for which he was in every way well suited, and to accept a less arduous one as Professor of Chemistry in Dartmouth College, where he delivered his inaugural address in August, 1827. His colleagues in the medical college were the esteemed and widely-known Professors Reuben D. Mussey, M.D., and Daniel Oliver, M.D.

The importance of physical studies was not then appreciated in the colleges and universities. Dartmouth College had not taken a scientific periodical for half a century. There was no cabinet of minerals. "There was not," writes Dr. Oliver, "a single modern volume in the college library upon either mineralogy or geology, and scarcely one, if one, upon chemistry, later than the days of Fourcroy or Vauquelin. The prevailing taste was decidedly anti-physical. It was directed another way, and not only so, but there was among the college faculty a disposition to undervalue the physical science." Dr. James F. Dana, the predecessor of Professor Hale, writing of the college in reference to physical science, used this striking illustration: "It was anchored in the stream, and served only to show its velocity."

When Professor Hale was engaged, his duties comprised a course of daily lectures to the medical class, through the lecture term of fourteen or fifteen weeks, to which lectures the members of the senior and junior classes were to be admitted for a small fee, and instruction to the junior class in some chemical text-book, by daily recitations for five or six weeks. *This was all.*

Professor Hale voluntarily, each year, gave to the academic classes a separate course of over thirty lectures, at his own expense. He substituted a larger and more scientific text-book for that in use, and obtained an increase in the number of recitations from thirty to forty.

He laid the foundation of the cabinet of minerals by giving five hundred specimens, classifying and labeling (with some assistance) all additions, leaving the collection in a respectable condition, with twenty-three hundred specimens. He also gave annually about twenty lectures in geology and mineralogy, hoping to excite an interest in those subjects; and for some years was the instructor of the senior class in the philosophy of natural history. For two years also he took charge of the recitations in Hebrew, and also took other recitations. All of the above services were voluntary and gratuitous. It is no wonder that students thus cared for should respond as they did with enthusiasm and regard. Happily, in this department as well as in all others, Dartmouth College is now in motion, and with the foremost in the current of physical studies. Professor Hale's architectural genius and constructive ability were also brought into active exercise during the process of repairing the old college buildings, and erecting new. Of this he writes, December 11, 1827: "I have made out a plan for the repair of the college buildings, and the addition of a building for libraries for the use of the trustees at their next session." Again March 20, 1828: "I have the honor of being half of the building committee, Professor Chamberlain being the other moiety, and we are commencing operations. The prospects of the college are now so bright that the plan I first proposed, and which was adopted by the trustees, is abandoned, and we are preparing to erect two brick buildings, three stories high and fifty by seventy feet in size, one for students' rooms, the other for public rooms. And what is more comforting, our funds are improving so much that the building will not distress us very much if the thirty thousand dollars should not be realized."

During his last three years Professor Hale was president of the Phi Beta Kappa Society. His portrait, presented by the members of the society, hangs, or did hang, in the college library."

Professor Hale's closing experiences at Dartmouth

were not pleasant. Having thought it was his duty to resume preaching, but in the Episcopal Church, he was ordained deacon by Rt. Rev. Dr. Griswold, bishop of the Eastern Diocese, and January 6, 1831, priest by the same. In this course he in no sense violated any provision of the college charter, or any condition connected with any single article of endowment. In fact, some of the most prominent of the early friends of the college were Episcopalians.

He scrupulously attended services at the village church; in the evenings, however, he held a service in his own study for his own family and that of Dr. Oliver, and for such other communicants of that church and other friends as desired to attend. Dr. and Professor Crosby, in a contribution to the Medical History of New Hampshire, briefly refers to the result, saying, "I cannot forbear to recall, for an instant, the name of Professor Hale, who, after serving the college in the chair of chemistry for a few years, lost his connection with the institution in a manner by no means creditable to the trustees. The board determined on his removal, but as it could not legally be accomplished under the college charter, the Alexandrian method of treating this heretical knot was adopted. A vote was passed abolishing the professorship."

Professor Hale, at the request of his colleagues, delivered the course of lectures following, and at the close published his valedictory letter to the trustees.

The same year he published Scriptural illustrations of the liturgy.

In October, 1835, the degree of D.D. was conferred on him by Columbia College, of New York City.

In 1835 he spent the winter in the island of Santa Cruz, on account of a severe attack of bronchitis. His published letters, signed "Valetudinarius," were very pleasant.

August 2, 1836, he was elected president of Geneva College, and entered on his duties the October following, delivering his inaugural address December 21st. The history of that institution for nearly twenty-two years was intimately connected with the history of its president. His labors, thoughts, hopes and prayers were given to it. One of its trustees wrote of its condition: "His presidency embraced a most critical period in the history of the college; life was already nearly extinct, and death would soon have followed had not the president given himself wholly to his work, with a faith that never faltered, a perseverance strengthened with difficulties, and a thorough conviction that his work, if well done, would promote the glory of God, and of his church through all time. Verily, he had a most difficult task. He did it nobly. He saved the college."

"It was an excellent thing for our college," writes Joseph M. Clark, D.D., "that it was able to secure in 1836 the services of Dr. Hale, as its third president. The college had averaged during the ten years of its existence four graduates a year. And up to the beginning of 1836 all the endowments, exclusive of buildings and ground, only yielded $1500 a year. About as much was given from church sources in 1836," and later some money was granted by the State. "All the faculty lived lives of great self-sacrifice, but I think Dr. Hale was pre-eminent in this respect." Yet in the depth of these trying times he refused an offer of a situation, at a salary which would have placed him at once in luxury. He knew that he must stand by or the ship was lost.

"At last the venerable corporation of Trinity Church, New York City, came to the relief of the institution, and granted an annuity to sustain it." Dr. Hale instructed thoroughly and easily in every department of learning, though most fond of ethical and metaphysical studies. His courses of lectures on civil and ecclesiastical architecture invested those subjects with very great interest.

When the division into Eastern and Western Dioceses was first voted on in 1838, Dr. Hale published a pamphlet advocating the measure, besides making other active efforts in its favor.

He also, a little later, originated the "Society for Educating the Sons of the Clergy." His health beginning to suffer, to secure an entire change for awhile, in December, 1852, he sailed for Europe, to make a brief tour. His health improved, and he thought of home, though he excessively enjoyed and appreciated what he saw. He wrote: "The wealth of Rome absolutely fatigues me in its works of art, especially by its richness in architectural and sculptural decorations. All I see in Europe, so far, makes me glad that I and my children were born in America."

He was welcomed home, on his return June 29, 1853, by the faculty and students, who met him at the railroad station.

His health was so far restored that he could resume his work with vigor. His letters and journal furnish delightful reading, and his mind was full of interesting and attractive reminiscences. His health again beginning to decline in the autumn of 1857, he was obliged to lay aside his work, and on the 19th of January, 1858, presented his letter of resignation to the trustees, which was accepted, and some very just and commendatory resolutions were unanimously adopted. In 1859 Dr. Hale removed again to Newburyport, near to his birth-place, and not far from the graves of his fathers. A valuable service of plate was presented to him by the alumni and friends of the college. Rev. Mr. Van Rensellear, in presenting it, said: "Your monument will be found in these halls of learning; in the influence of your faithful instructions and paternal counsels upon the minds of the young men who have gone forth into the world from their shadows; in those distinguished names who, either in the church or the republic, will show the fruits of their training here."

In his new abode he met with a cordial reception,—

"he was not alone respected, he was loved." For a few years only was he able to enjoy the earthly rest he had sought. After a short period of sickness he entered his eternal rest the 15th of July, 1863, leaving to mourn his loss four sons and one daughter.

We are much indebted to Dr. Douglas's "Life of Dr. Hale," as well as Dr. Hale's letters to his children, for much information in preparing this short sketch.

JOSIAH LITTLE HALE.[1]

Among the early emigrants who settled in "Old Newbury" were George Little and Thomas Hale. In the veins of their descendants has flowed some of the best blood of New England. For two hundred and fifty years the Littles and the Hales have figured largely and honorably in the history of Newbury and Newburyport. Few family names among us have represented more intelligence, enterprise and moral worth than these two. The subject of this sketch fitly bore both these names, as he, in so large a degree, combined in himself the many excellent qualities of mind and heart which these names represent.

Josiah Little Hale was born in that part of Newbury, now included in Newburyport, called Belleville, December 9, 1803. He died February 26, 1875, in the same house in which he was born. His father, Thomas Hale, was of the seventh generation in the direct line of descent from the emigrant, Thomas Hale, who settled in Old Town, Newbury, in 1637. His mother, Alice Little, was of the sixth generation, in the direct line of descent from the emigrant, George Little, who came from London, England, to Newbury, New England, in 1640. He was the fifth born of a family of ten children, only two of whom are now living, viz.: Mrs. Alice Little March, and Dea. Joshua Hale.

Mr. Hale, in his early years, received an excellent religious training, for which he was ever afterwards truly grateful. His childhood and youth were singularly guileless and pure. He even then exhibited those gentle, amiable, winning traits which were so conspicuous in later years; which made him a favorite with his play-mates and fellow-pupils, and won the love and admiration of all who knew him. That filial obedience and devotion which he always delighted to see in children were beautifully illustrated in himself. One day, a short time before his death, alluding to his early life, he said: "I do not remember that I ever did anything which I was not willing my parents should see, or ever said anything I was not willing my parents should hear." The child was father of the man.

Mr. Hale was, in the best and only true sense of the word, a self-made man. Of a quiet, gentle spirit, he yet had great self-reliance and energy of purpose. He was emphatically the architect of his own fortune. Waiving all his rights in the patrimonial inheritance in favor of his sisters, he resolved to make his own way in the world. At the age of seventeen he left home for Boston and secured a place as office-boy in the Merchants' Insurance Company. By his diligence, fidelity and courteous manners he soon won promotion and was made secretary of the Washington Marine Insurance Company, and such satisfaction did he give in this capacity that when, a few years later, that company decided to open a branch office in New York, Mr. Hale was selected to have charge of it. After a year of marked success in that responsible position, it was proposed to him to unite with the late Walter R. Jones in establishing the Atlantic Mutual Insurance Company of New York. This proposition involved the necessity on the part of Mr. Hale of securing subscriptions to the stock of the new company to the amount of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. For this purpose he visited Boston and laid the matter before his friends there, and so great was their confidence in his integrity and business ability and in the success of any enterprise in which he might engage, that in one hour twice the required sum was subscribed—no slight tribute to a young man of twenty-five. Mr. Hale was chosen president of the company and Mr Jones vice-president, and for a long term of years these two men held these offices. Under their wise and efficient management the Atlantic was eminently successful and became the foremost insurance company in the United States.

For more than a quarter of a century Mr. Hale held a prominent place among the leading business men of New York. He had a wide and ever-enlarging circle of friends in that city, and enjoyed the confidence and esteem of all who knew him. One who was intimate with him at that time bears this testimony: "He combined, in a rare degree, great business talent, remarkable fairness, and strict integrity, and never-failing urbanity."

The pressure of business never deadened his sympathies nor repressed his overflowing kindness of heart. He felt a special kindly interest in young men, and was ever ready to encourage and aid them, and even to befriend them, when involved in trouble by their own folly and wrong-doing. More than one young man, through his kind offices, was saved from the consequences of his indiscretions.

When a prominent business gentleman of New York heard of his death, he exclaimed with great feeling: "I owe to Mr. Hale all that I am." He had, when a young man, for some irregularity, been dismissed from his place; but Mr. Hale interested himself in his behalf and secured for him another place, where he could take a new start and retrieve his character, which he did.

To the frequent appeals for charity, which are the annoyance of so many business men, Mr. Hale always had an open ear and a responsive heart. If he knew the pleasure of acquiring, he knew also the greater

[1] By D. T. Fiske, D.D



Joseph Wall

pleasure of giving; but his giving was not ostentatious, and often was unknown except to the recipients.

For many years Mr. Hale was a parishioner of Dr. Gardner Spring, and was a constant worshipper at the old Brick Church, and a regular attendant upon the weekly evening meetings conducted by the pastor and members of that church. Afterwards, residing in Brooklyn, he was one of the originators of the enterprise which resulted in the formation of the Congregational Church and Society of the Pilgrims, and the settlement over the same of the Rev. Dr. R. S. Storrs.

In 1854 impaired health compelled Mr. Hale to resign the responsible position he had so honorably and successfully filled, and to retire altogether from active business.

The trustees of the Atlantic Mutual Insurance Company marked the occasion in a manner alike creditable to themselves and to him by passing very complimentary resolutions, and presenting to Mr. Hale a valuable silver service "in testimony of their regard, and for his long, faithful and efficient services."

Leaving New York, he returned to his early home, where the last twenty-one years of his life were happily and usefully spent among kindred and friends. Here he was universally beloved and esteemed, and his presence was a perpetual benediction. He was deeply interested in everything touching the good name and welfare of his native town, now grown to be a city. His public and private charities were numerous, and no one could come in contact with him without knowing what a well-spring of kindness was in his heart. His character was not only attractive when seen at a distance, but closer inspection revealed more clearly its rare and manifold beauties. He was a man of excellent judgment, quick perceptions, great suavity of manners, candid, charitable, sympathetic, cheerful, modest, gentle, peaceable, yet not lacking in firmness of purpose nor in fortitude, either moral or physical. He was in the best sense of the word a Christian gentleman. His love for the Bible was strong, and his faith in its teachings implicit. Without being a bigot or a sectarian, he held with a firm and intelligent conviction what are termed the "Evangelical" doctrines of religion. A member of the Belleville Congregational Church, he lived and died in the faith of his fathers, and in the confident hope of a blessed immortality.

Mr. Hale never married, but he was an object of tender and almost venerating affection to a large circle of relatives, and his name will long be held in grateful and loving remembrance in the community where the last years of his life were spent. His end was peace. The final summons came unexpectedly, but found him all ready to go. His body was laid to rest in the Belleville Cemetery, which he did so much to enlarge and adorn while living.

MICHAEL HODGE SIMPSON.

Michael Hodge Simpson was born in Newburyport, November 15, 1809. His father was Captain Paul Simpson, a ship-master and merchant of Newburyport, a man in prosperous circumstances and of influence and highly honorable standing in the town. The name of Michael Hodge was given him in respect to the memory of his mother's first husband, who was also a prominent member of one of the most respected families in town, and from him Mrs. Simpson inherited the house on the corner of Lime and Prospect Streets, where she and Captain Simpson lived during the remainder of their lives and where the subject of this sketch was born.

Michael Simpson attended the public schools and the Newburyport Academy and well improved his time, but having a strong inclination for business, left school at the early age of fourteen for clerkship in the house of Adams & Emery, of Boston, and gave such satisfaction that on the dissolution of the firm, soon afterwards, he was retained by Jonathan Emery & Son, the successors of the old house. He not only ably fulfilled all the duties of his position, but also sent out ventures of his own in his employers' ships to the various ports with which they traded, receiving in exchange the goods of the countries, which he was enabled to dispose of at a profit, thus laying the foundation of his future career as a merchant. The fellow-clerk who joined Mr. Simpson in these ventures was Charles H. Coffin president at the time of this writing of the First National Bank of Newburyport. By their shrewdness and foresight in selecting the goods for these ventures these young men amassed quite a little capital, which enabled them to start into business for themselves at a very early age, Mr. Simpson being only eighteen at the time. This connection continued quite successfully for several years and then Mr. Simpson went into partnership with George Otis, son of the distinguished Harrison Gray Otis. The new firm sent ships to Calcutta of which they and the masters of the ships were sole and equal owners. The business prospered, enlarged and extended to other parts of the world, the trade with South America in hides, horns and wool becoming before long the most important part of their business. The South American trade developed a new, or rather a hitherto unsuspected, talent in young Simpson—that of an inventor in mechanical appliances, which was as important to his after success in life as was his sound judgment in commercial affairs. These two talents combined made him successful in business from the outset and enabled him in the end to amass a large fortune.

It often happens that the inventor lacks the balance-wheel, and others profit by his ingenuity, but in Mr. Simpson's case his mechanical genius was combined with practical knowledge and being applied to his business, the profits inured to his own benefit. The wool which they imported from South America was so burry that it very materially reduced its market

value, as at this time all the burrs had to be removed by hand, thereby entailing a very heavy expense to make it fit for manufacturing purposes. Mr. Simpson's attention was at this time directed to a crude invention for removing the burrs from the wool by machinery, the idea of which to him seemed good, although the mechanism was an absolute failure. Mr. Simpson, by his perseverance and the use of his inventive ability, finally succeeded, after repeated disappointments, discouragements and the expenditure of a large part of his fortune, in bringing the machine to a successful issue. This machine is practically today used on every set of cards employed in woolen manufacturing in the world.

It was only by the most persistent efforts and perfect confidence in his ability to succeed in whatever he undertook, united with an obstinate determination never to be beaten, that he succeeded in this, his first and one might almost say his most difficult and important invention.

About this time his partner, Mr. Otis, died, and Mr. Simpson kept on by himself in his mercantile business, to which was added various inventions, all of which were connected with the woolen business. After the burring-machine was perfected and there was a certainty of large profits from its operations, he sold it to Whitwell, Bond & Co., importers of wool and largely interested in the woolen mills at Jacksonville, but the disastrous times of 1837 caused a failure of the firm, who made an assignment in favor of their wool creditors, of whom Mr. Simpson was one, and who also held notes of theirs for the burring-machine which he had sold to them. Owing to this failure, the Saxonville Mills were reorganized under the name of the New England Worsted Company, of which Mr. Simpson became the agent. He continued his mercantile business, importing large quantities of wool for the mills, and keeping his position as agent until 1857, when the wide-spread financial disasters caused the failure of the mills, leaving Mr. Simpson one of the largest creditors. At this time he, in connection with a friend, purchased the mills from the other creditors, from which time, under his sole management, it had a marvelous prosperity. Shortly afterwards he built and started the Roxbury Carpet Mills in connection with the woolen-mills at Saxonville, and continued his active connection with these manufacturing interests until his death.

At the age of twenty-four Mr. Simpson married Miss Elizabeth Kilham, a beautiful girl of sixteen, daughter of Mr. Jonathan Kilham, a Boston merchant, with whom he passed a happy married life of nearly fifty years. She bore him five children, of whom three survived their parents,—a son, Mr. Frank E. Simpson, of Boston, and two daughters, Mrs. W. W. Seely and Miss Grace Simpson.

A few years before his death Mr. Simpson married a second time, taking for his wife Miss Evangeline Marrs, of Saxonville, with whom he lived until his death, December 21, 1884. He left no children by his second wife.

A man who amassed such a fortune and won the affectionate respect of all who knew him must have been endowed with remarkable qualities of mind and character, and such Mr. Simpson possessed in an abundant degree. In the first place, he had a wonderfully clear intellect; he formed his plans and knew to the minutest detail what needed to be done to carry them out. Even when his business had grown to vast proportions, he was not satisfied with the general supervision, but he looked after every department with assiduity which would have broken down a feebler man at an early age. He had great tenacity of will, as was indicated by his sticking to his invention for wool-cleaning when others were discouraged and wished to give it up. And he required those under him to carry out his plans, although he was a kind and considerate man to all his employees. He had the instinct for business, so that whatever he undertook turned to profit, and while some thought it was luck, in reality it was intelligence, promptness in decision, a careful supervision of the business in all its details and an indomitable will which turned a seeming defeat into victory.

Mr. Simpson was not merely a business man, but he was also one of the most benevolent and kindly of men, attached to his friends and doing acts of beneficence of general benefit to the public, and especially to those in his own employ. An illustration of the care he had for his workmen was furnished in what followed when the mills burned down, about a year before his death. The condition of business at the time did not seem to warrant the rebuilding, but when he saw his people out of work and needing the wages thus lost by the fire, he decided to rebuild at once, and that the people might not suffer in the meanwhile, he made provision to aid those who had families dependent on them for support until there was steady work for them in the rebuilt mill.

The poor man who was willing to work and needed employment was certain to find in Mr. Simpson a kind and sympathizing friend, who would provide something for him to do if possible, and it would almost seem even if it were not possible. As an instance of this, at the time when there were so many unemployed men tramping through the country he purchased large tracts of woodland in the vicinity of his Saxonville home, upon which he employed any man who came to him asking for work. These lands he converted into beautiful parks by clearing, draining and making roads, thus giving employment (and that was his principal motive) to many unemployed men for several years. At one time he had over three hundred men on his private pay-roll employed in this work, and after the parks were completed he threw them open to the public.

The public benefactions of Mr. Simpson were munificent, especially those made to his native town. The



Aaron A Sargent

increase of books in the Newburyport Public Library rendered an enlargement of the library building necessary. This need was represented to Mr. Simpson, who very generously contributed $18,000, which was the greater part of the expenditure of making the enlargements. In commemoration of this gift the addition was named the Simpson Annex. He also contributed largely for the improvement of the Mall in Newburyport and an annuity of a thousand dollars for watering the streets during the summer, which he made perpetual in his will. He also contributed some thirty thousand dollars to a new college building at Wellesley College.

Such a life as his is one of beneficence. His large fortune was won by the application of extraordinary talents to supplying the wants of his fellow-men by inventions and manufactures of general benefit, and it was generously used by its possessor when it was gained. He left a name honored and beloved by all who had had dealings with him and especially by those who had been in his employ. The people of his native town remember him with gratitude, and a few older men who knew him from youth and were most intimately acquainted with him are those who honor and respect him most, and that is saying much, since there are few distinguished men who bear well the test of intimate acquaintance and continue heroes to the friends of their boyhood. That test Mr. Simpson bore, and it is the highest testimonial to his character and ability, not excepting the monuments of his beneficence, public and private, which have been mentioned.

Among the many eminent men produced by Newburyport the name of Michael Hodge Simpson will always bear an honorable place.

HON. AARON AUGUSTUS SARGENT.[1]

Hon. Aaron Augustus Sargent, recently deceased in California, in which State he had resided for nearly forty years, and which conferred upon him the highest positions and honors it had to give, was emphatically an Essex County man. Here, in Newburyport, he was born in 1827; here he passed his early life, and here he married his wife. His father was here before him, and for two hundred and fifty years his ancestors had lived on the banks of the Merrimac. William Sargent, the first of the name in Massachusetts, was among the first settlers of Salisbury in 1640, and had his residence only two miles north of Newburyport, in the First Parish, where was located his village lot, and near by were his tillage and woodlands, his pastures and his seaside meadows; and largely his descendants may now be found in Salisbury, Amesbury and Merrimac; but no one of them ever attained the celebrity of Aaron A. Sargent.

He was what "in Yankee land" is called a "self-made man," rising rapidly through all the grades of public life, to the highest save the Presidency of the Republic, by his own power. Never did he gain one step by accident, wealth, partial friends or any extraneous or fortuitous event. He enjoyed not one advantage that is not to-day within the reach of every boy in the city or county in which he was born and bred; and, therefore, the lesson of his life deserves to be recorded that it may be the study of the youth to whose fathers he was personally known. This one advantage he had: nature had given him a sound, well-balanced mind in a strong and healthy body, and it had endowed him with a will that never failed to carry him through difficulties, wherever and whenever they appeared. He early perceived that his future must be of his own making; and he seemed to have taken from the first this motto: "Whatever man has done is within the possibilities that belong to me, as the inheritance from my fathers." It was therefore given to him to pluck greatness from seeming nothing, and from the humblest beginnings to make an enduring fame. The schools of his native town were open to him, and in them he obtained the rudiments of education, and laid the foundations of a great and noble life, a life which was pure, upright, moral, well-spent and progressive, as will appear in this narrative.

His father, who was a practical man and a mechanic, designed that he should learn some handicraft that would assure him a livelihood on his reaching man's estate, and so placed him in one or two situations where he could have a trade or business; but they were not suited to his tastes, nor to the ambitions, meritorious and honorable, that gave visions to his youth and inspired his later years. Dissatisfied with the labors of a cabinet-maker and the duties of a clerk, though then, as ever, he endeavored to do his best in any situation he might be called to fill, he sought a place in the printing-office of a daily newspaper, the *Courier*, published by the late Enoch Hale, in Newburyport. There he fed his love of knowledge while he learned the art of type-setting, and there were his first efforts at authorship. We call to mind a series of papers, criticisms on "the manners and matter" of the several clergymen of the town, that first attracted public attention, causing general comment. These were followed by well-written essays upon various topics, so that when not more than eighteen years old he had won a local reputation in literature. All the time he was a hard student—reading was his delight, his recreation, his life. He was never known to be idle, and the hours of sleep were shortened at both ends that he might the better be prepared for the work that was before him. Like an athlete in the old Grecian games, he made ready for the race; he prepared for the struggle; he longed for the battle when yet it was afar off.

At the age of twenty he struck out into the deeper waters of the world for himself, to try his chance and

[1] By George J. L. Colby.

bear his burdens. For a time he was at his trade, as a printer, in Philadelphia, "following in the footsteps of that illustrious type-setter, Benjamin Franklin." Thence he moved on to Washington City, where he formed the acquaintance of a Representative in Congress from the State of New York,—a man of strong mind, but limited literary attainments, for whom he acted as private secretary. They were friends and of mutual benefit to each other. This work now was to his liking. He formed an extensive acquaintance with eminent men; the Congressional Library was open to him; he could hear the debates of great men on great questions, and feel the inspiration of the voices and the manners of that trinity of statesmen to whom the world listened,—of Webster, the mighty power, of Clay, the eloquent orator, and of Calhoun, the most splendid logician of that era. He could see and converse with statesmen and scholars such as this country had not seen before or known since,—men who moved the world upward and onward. Perhaps these were the happiest days of his life. He was American thoroughly and fully; every heart-throb was for his country, and every prayer for the glory of the republic, and here was the American government before him. He was a student, thoroughly devoted to literature, morals, politics, and no university in America or Europe could afford him so much instruction for his coming career.

We know not the course of his thoughts, "The wind bloweth where it listeth," but this must have been patent to his sagacious and watchful mind; that for the accomplishment of his purposes he must have means of action. The story of the foolish virgins who were in the dark because they had forgotten their oil; the loss of Bunker Hill to the patriots of 1775 because they were short of ammunition, could not have been lost on him; and, therefore, it was not surprising that, on the first announcement of the discovery of gold in California, he was ready to emigrate to the Pacific coast. Perhaps he had previously anticipated such a migration, since he had made the acquaintance of Fremont, and learned from him of the "goodly land" which waited the advent of those who would possess it. Be that as it may, he started with other Argonauts, from Baltimore, early in 1849, for San Francisco, *via* Cape Horn. Touching at Rio, Dom Pedro entertained the Americans by a public reception, and was highly pleased with the manly deportment and general intelligence of Mr. Sargent. This seems to have been his first lesson in diplomacy. Sailing thence, he gave all his time to his books till he reached Valparaiso, Chili, where he left the ship, and spent some time in learning the resources and opportunities opening in South America. He was then on the track of an older townsman, William Wheelwright, whose fame fills that country, and found others from his native town there engaged in commercial operations. Obtaining the position of supercargo on another ship, he continued his voyage, and passed the Golden Gate in December, ten months from his leaving Baltimore.

Probably never a man landed in California with prospects less promising, who reached any great eminence, and he would have been among the last of whom anybody but a prophet would have said: "In less than forty years this young man, twenty-two years old, without money, without business and without a friend to help him, will be the first man of this great State, and in political honors above them all." But so it was, and so inscrutable are the ways of Providence. What is he to do? Something must be done, and done at once. The country was full of printers, for they ever are in advance of the foremost wave of civilization. His first venture was in lightering ships—receiving the cargoes in scows and transporting the merchandise up the Sacramento and San Joaquin Rivers. This he followed with all the energy that ever attended his labors. Then he plied the pick and the shovel in practical mining; and for a time held a situation on the *San Francisco Courier*, the first Whig paper in the State, and in 1851 he was setting type on the *Nevada Journal*, of which he soon became editor, and the next year he was prominent in politics, which were intensely exciting, in the struggle between Northern and Southern men for dominancy in the State. He carried himself so bravely through that crisis as to win credit and renown.

Two years later, having turned his attention to the law, he was admitted to the bar in Nevada County, and at once entered upon the practice of his profession with marked success, and the very next year he was elected district attorney. It will not, of course, be claimed that he immediately became a great lawyer, for the law is not a profession in which miracles are wrought, and there were learned counselors and attorneys at the Nevada bar; but he had all the elements of a great lawyer to be developed,—industry, without which genius fails and brilliancy grows dim; then, the determination, which was ever his rule, to do his best in every case that came before him, and to know all the facts and the law relating to the cause to be tried. This ever brings success; for, feeling the foundation sure beneath him, he is prepared for his duty, while the unprepared contestant is sure of defeat. He succeeded so well as to gain the approval of his clients and the applause of the people. He was the leading counsel in some of the most important cases ever tried in California; and at the time of his death he had pending in the courts land suits involving millions of dollars.

Leaving him as a lawyer, we notice him next in politics and statemanship. In 1856 he headed the Fremont Presidential ticket, and from the start adhered to the Republican party. In 1860 he was a delegate to the National Convention that nominated Lincoln, and in 1861 was himself elected to Congress. Thus we find him in ten years rising from a scowman

on the Sacramento to represent one of the greatest and richest States in the National Legislature. At the end of the term he returned to the law and to his mining interests demanding his attention.

In 1868 he was re-elected to Congress, and so well served his constituents that a third time he was elected to the House in 1870; and in the same year was chosen by the Legislature for a full term as Senator, which made him twelve years at Washington, devoting all his energies to further the interests of the Pacific coast. He drew the bill for the first Pacific Railroad, and advocated it to its enactment. His action in favor of the mint at San Francisco, and of the navy-yard at Vallejo, and, in fact, of all measures in the interest of the Pacific States, was fully up to the demands of people in that eventful era. He especially met their prejudices and their wishes on the Chinese question, and was the first man to remove this national issue from the "Sand Lots" to Washington, and lift it above the Kearneys to the plane of statesmanship. He saw the evil to his State; investigated, reported and suggested the remedy which was applied. We may not stop to notice the many topics of importance he was compelled to discuss, and on which he was acknowledged to be one of the ablest debaters in the House or Senate; and when he finished his service there, he retired with clean hands and a pure heart. He had not aggrandized himself to the injury of others. He had not enriched himself at the expense of his State or his country. Millions were within his reach, but he touched them not with the point of his finger; indeed, if he had never seen Congress his estate at death would have been many times bigger than it was. He was educated a Puritan, and he lived and died true to his convictions. He was loyal at heart in life, and as patriotic in legislation as was his grandfather in the Continental army.

In 1882 he was appointed minister plenipotentiary to Germany. It was a very good appointment, as he had the qualifications for the place. In addition to his experience at home, and his reputation as a statesman, he was an excellent German scholar, and could converse fluently in French, which is the language of diplomacy in Europe; and better than all, he had a clear head and a brave heart. He had fought the battles of life and overcome every obstacle with a courage that never quailed in human presence. He was to stand before the German Cæsar and to meet his prime minister, who thinks himself master of the world. He did it, this printer-boy, presenting his case as he would in the Senate chamber of the United States, defending American rights as became a man. Unfortunately, the government allowed the publication of his private despatches, which occasioned his resignation. The confidence of our government in him, however, was not lost, and President Arthur immediately nominated him minister to Russia, which nomination was confirmed by the Senate without the usual reference to a committee. He preferred to come home to the more lucrative business of the law, and declined the appointment. It stands, however, to his credit that he was appointed to two first-class foreign missions, which has not fallen to the lot of any other man in the Pacific States, and to but very few in any other State of the Union. It is by no means clear, had his life been prolonged, that even the highest honors of his country would not have been conferred upon him.

We have said that Mr. Sargent was true to his convictions, and had the courage to abide by them through "good or evil report." He was progressive and often proposed action in advance of his time, as in suffrage unlimited by sex, or the enfranchisement of women. When he was a candidate for the Senate an opposing journalist charged this as an offense. He made no reply. Thereupon the journalist exultingly asked: "Will he dare deny it?" Still he was silent. But shortly there was a female suffrage convention held in San Francisco; he attended and made a radical speech in favor of woman suffrage, at the close saying, "They have my views now and can make the most of them; I would not conceal them to be Senator!" This was in 1872; in both houses of Congress he advocated equal suffrage for both sexes.

In his domestic relations Mr. Sargent was fortunate and happy. In 1852 he married Miss Ellen Clark, of Newburyport, an estimable lady, who survives him. To them were born two daughters and a son, all of whom he educated to practical duties and callings, and they have shown that they inherited the abilities of their parents. The son, George, has succeeded to the place of his father in the law-office; Lizzie has been thoroughly educated in the schools of this country and Germany as a physician, and in the treatment of the eye and ear is the highest authority in California; Ella is a popular writer for the newspaper press and magazines.

On the death of Mr. Sargent, in August, 1887, there was universal mourning in California. All personal feeling and political animosities disappeared, and the people vied with each other in their tokens of respect for the dead. The many associations to which he belonged hastened to eulogize his character. At his funeral more than a hundred carriages were in the procession, and the grave in which he was laid was literally filled with flowers. The newspapers overflowed with kindly words, and could have said no more had he died President of the United States. He sleeps his last sleep far from the place of his birth, but where the people had learned to trust, respect and love him. His name passes into the history of his country, and his fame will be more enduring than brass and more pure and white than the marble that will mark his last resting-place.

"Around his grave are quietude and beauty.
And the sweet heaven above—
The fitting symbols of a life of duty,
Transfigured into love."

WILLIAM WHEELWRIGHT.[1]

Mr. William Wheelwright was literally a citizen of the world, and the world wherever he dwelt upon it was made better by his presence. In whatever country he might be, he was there for the improvement of the condition of the people, for their advancement in material prosperity and intelligence. He was a missionary sent abroad by himself, at his own expense, inspired by a spirit of enterprise which communicated itself to all around him. He could say with the old Roman, "*Homo sum et nil humanum a me alienum puto*," for everything that benefited mankind benefited him, because he was, in the noblest sense of the word, himself a man. He never undertook any great work from merely selfish motives. While he accumulated wealth for himself, he added vastly more to the wealth of others, and what he gained he did not employ for the purposes of self-gratification, but for the use of sweet charity. It was a pleasure to him to earn a fortune, simply because it would come into his possession for distribution. That was absolutely the only value he attached to money. His aged parents and his relatives received his first care, but his benevolence did not end there. It went out to hospitals, schools, colleges and to the poor around him, and his early religious training prompted him to contribute to missionary work among the benighted nations of the earth.

He was born in Newburyport, Massachusetts, on the 16th of March, 1798, having descended from that sturdy old Puritan, Rev. John Wheelwright, who emigrated from England in 1629, and after being persecuted and driven from place to place by his fellow-colonists, finally settled at Piscataqua. He was a brother-in-law of Ann Hutchinson and advocated her vagaries, participating in the persecutions she endured. In his youth he and Oliver Cromwell were intimate friends and labored together for the "glory of God," which they desired to spread throughout the world. It was determined that one of them should make the Eastern Continent the theatre of his operations and that the other should evangelize the new continent of the west. To apportion the division of work they drew lots, and thus by the length of a straw the fate of a kingdom was decided, and after the lapse of many years, republics had cause to be grateful.

As certain physical resemblances are transmitted from generation to generation, so moral and intellectual characteristics are often perpetuated in the heart and brain. Even religion may be said to be hereditary. New Englanders generally, as long as their blood was not mixed with the stream of immigration which has flowed in later years from all nations, have been noted for their tenacity of purpose, which it is not unjust to say emanated from what we now term bigotry, but which they regarded as a conscientious acting up to their own ideas of right, causing them to be certain that all others who did not agree with them were unquestionably wrong. A great injustice has been done to the memory of these men in attributing to them the pretense of expatriating themselves that they might maintain the cause of religious freedom, so that every man should have "the right to worship God, according to the dictates of his own conscience." They never laid any claim to this purpose. They said emphatically that they had come here to worship God in their way, and, as has just been instanced, they intimated very distinctly to those who did not agree with them, that America was a very large country and that there was room enough for them elsewhere. Had they been like the liberal people of the present day, whose temperament is the result of opposing forces that have neutralized each other, they would have had no such fixed principles to transmit to their descendants. The absolute certainty that they were right in their religion made them quite sure that they were right in their politics and in their opinions on other subjects that would elsewhere be discussed, but by them were simply announced.

No boy could be born at the close of the last century without inheriting this trait of his ancestry and being confirmed in it during his childhood. When the subject of this memoir was sent to school at Andover at the age of fourteen it was still more forcibly impressed upon him. But when he emerged from his youthful surroundings and commenced his profession as a seaman, coming in contact with mankind in general and discovering that Massachusetts was not all the world and that all the world did not think exactly like the people of Massachusetts, the genial part of his nature developed itself, and the ocean, his new home, taught him a new theology in its lessons of almighty power and benevolence enforced by its storms, bestowed by its sunshine and breathed into his soul by its poetry. The sun and stars over his head, the universe around him by day and night, told him that God was everywhere, and it was revealed to him that the Father is worshipped in all places of his dominion as well as in Jerusalem or in New England. His views became enlarged and his religion embraced all humanity. Still there remained within him one of the best elements of his inheritance and early training—a stubborn adherence to what he conceived to be right and a determination to succeed in whatever he undertook to perform. This firmness of purpose was his great characteristic. It made him indomitable in all his enterprises, which were first well considered and then carried out regardless of all opposition. In his steps of advancement from the humble position of a cabin-boy to the command of a ship, at which he arrived at the early age of nineteen, he recognized the authority of those under whom he served, and when he was placed over others the youthful commander maintained a discipline that no sailor dared to disobey. Without resorting to severity, he held his crews in check by the mere

[1] By John Codman.



W. Whedbee

force of his character, for they knew that his was a will that at all hazards would be asserted. His father and his maternal grandfather had been ship-masters and afterwards merchants. The last business naturally followed the first in those days, graduating from its preparatory school. The captain of a vessel was not then a mere wagon-driver sent from place to place by telegraphic orders and carrying freight "for whom it may concern." He was entrusted with the cargo as well as with the ship, and cargoes were generally "for owners' account."

The writer of this sketch may be excused for quoting a letter of instruction given him at a much later period, but at a time when this method still prevailed:

"Boston, Nov. 1st, 1841.

"Sir,—You will proceed around the Cape of Good Hope to such port or ports as you may select, dispose of your cargo, purchase another and return to Boston. Very truly yours,

"Curtis & Stevenson."

It was this confidence reposed in American ship-masters that made them the superiors in their profession to those of all other nations. From the early days of New England down to the time that our sailing ships were supplanted by foreign steamships this superiority was maintained, and it would have been continued to this day, notwithstanding the changes of trade, if our government, in its anxiety to "protect" the effete industry of wooden ship-building, had not forbidden its citizens to be ship-owners and had not condemned its captains, officers and sailors to abandon a profession of which they were so justly proud.

Mr. Wheelwright rose rapidly through all the grades of seamanship, from that of cabin-boy to master of different vessels, so that while he was yet almost a boy he was entrusted with the command of the fine ship "Rising Empire," owned by William Bartlet, a distinguished merchant of Newburyport. It was not the custom then for merchants who had become moderately successful in small seaports to find themselves dissatisfied with their surroundings and to be stirred by ambition to remove to Boston as a larger and more central point for their operations. Salem and Newburyport were active claimants for their share of the world's commerce, and the Pingrees, Derbys, Peabodys and their associates, who had begun their lives in poverty in Salem, remained there to end them in wealth; and so in Newburyport, Bartlet, Coombs, Wheelwright, Lunt and others of the same character, there began, continued and ended their mercantile career. Mr. Bartlet, next to William Gray, was then the largest ship-owner in New England. He could say with Gray, "I don't care how the wind blows. It is fair for some of my ships." It was not an idle compliment for a youngster like Mr. Wheelwright to be offered, without solicitation the command of one of his best ships, and it was a proof of Mr. Bartlet's confidence in him, that when the first apparently great misfortune of his life overtook him in the loss of the vessel his owner did not attribute it to his fault. He would have conferred another command upon him at once, had circumstances been such that he could have accepted it. Not long afterwards he gave his cheerful assent to his taking from his household a prize which the young captain valued more than all the ships of his fleet and all of his wealth. "Whoso findeth a wife findeth a good thing, and obtaineth favor of the Lord." Mr. Wheelwright was a close student of the Bible, and if there was any text more firmly impressed upon his remembrance than any other it was this. For forty-four years they lived together a life of happiness, which prosperity did not increase nor adversity diminish, interrupted only by the loss of their children, for which no honor or wealth could compensate them. Some of us can remember the bride as, fresh in her youthful beauty, she stood at the altar and gave her hand and her whole heart to the noble man who was so justly entitled to them. Together they went from continent to continent again and again. Together they dwelt sometimes in luxury, sometimes undergoing privations in a land of strangers with no congenial society but their own, and they still live together in spirit, although he has found his haven of rest in another sphere, while she, in the old homestead, serene and cheerful, awaits the reunion with those who have gone before.

The loss of his ship, which would have been discouraging to almost any other young man in the outset of his career, aroused the energy of Mr. Wheelwright instead of abating it. It proved to be a benefit to him and to the South American Continent, which thenceforward became the chief sphere of his operations.

Señor Alberdi, of Buenos Ayres, who, for the instruction of his own people, has written a memoir of Mr. Wheelwright in their language, thus practically and truthfully summarizes them: "It may be said that Wheelwright had two births, two lives, two countries; at least his life may be divided into two parts, which form, as it were, two separate existences. The first of these begins with his birth in 1798 and closes at the age of twenty-five; the other, with his escape from shipwreck in 1823, when he nearly lost his life, in Buenos Ayres, until his death in London, fifty years afterwards. Forty years of his life were spent on the Pacific Coast, and twelve on the banks of the Rio de la Plata. It was a singular but very natural circumstance that this man of the two Americas should have directed his operations from London; for that city is the centre of universal progress; it is the great mine of capital, of freedom and of intelligence for all nations.

"Thus Wheelwright was a gift which the waves of the Rio de la Plata brought to South America, his vessel having gone to pieces on the Bank of Ortiz. A new Hernando de Cortes, he remained in the land of his shipwreck, in order to conquer its soil, not by

arms, but by steam; not for Spain, but for civilization; not for the all-absorbing North America, but to assure South America in the possession of herself."

The late Caleb Cushing, a townsman of Mr. Wheelwright, wrote in the same strain: "Peace has her heroes as well as war. Bolivar and San Martin well earned their titles of 'heroes of the Andes,' by scaling those lofty summits with their cannon; but shall we deny the same title to Wheelwright and Meiggs, his countryman, who have crossed them with iron locomotives? Such an exploit is almost as wonderful as that of Vasco Nuñez de Balboa, who carried over them, three centuries before, the first European vessels ever seen in the Pacific."

This is the warp of the story, and we have only to fill in the threads.

The shipwrecked crew of the "Rising Empire," after an exhausting pull of twenty-four hours in their boats, landed weary and forlorn on an inhospitable shore; but they conciliated the Indians, whom they fortunately met, by presenting them with everything that they had saved from the wreck, in return for a supply of food and for pilotage through the forest to the nearest Spanish settlement. From thence they found their way to Buenos Ayres, and as there were no vessels there in which they could return to the United States, they dispersed to obtain employment in others. It was the good fortune of Mr. Wheelwright to secure the situation of supercargo of a ship bound around Cape Horn to Valparaiso. This voyage gave him a practical knowledge of the southwestern coast, which was afterwards of immense advantage. From Valparaiso, as he could obtain occupation, he still further explored the coast to the north, his errands sometimes leading him into the interior. Twice, in these journeys, he was roughly handled by bandits, who robbed him of everything and severely wounded him. Escaping all the dangers of travel, he at length arrived at Guayaquil, where he found such encouragement to enter into business that he resolved to remain. So scanty were the postal conveniences in those days that two years elapsed before he heard from home in answer to his first letter announcing his shipwreck. He had, however, little reason to complain, since his address was so difficult to find.

He commenced business at once in Guayaquil, and soon the appointment of United States consul was conferred upon him. It was an office of little emolument, but it gave him a social position, and promoted his mercantile interests. Gradually the destitute sailor, who had been thrown a waif on the southeastern shore of the continent, became a prosperous merchant on its northwestern boundary. In five years, the man who had been indebted to the Indians for his bread, could command one hundred thousand dollars of his own. He had triumphed over all his early disappointments, escaped perils of travel by land and by sea, the effects of fevers and attempted assassination; and he had cause to thank God, as he fervently did, for all His goodness towards him. He had reached the first summit of his ambition, from which he was destined to descend into the depths again, to rise once more to loftier heights.

He was now thirty years of age, in robust health and in the pride of manly beauty. He was rich, too, as wealth counted in those days, and the prosperity that had dawned upon his path, lighting up the shadows of the past, threw its cheering rays far into the future. Long before this he might have claimed his promised bride, but he would not ask her to share his disappointments; he wished her to be the partner of his success. Little did he know what her value would be to him in both conditions that were to follow. He arranged his business in a manner that he deemed secure and left it in the control of an associate. On his way home he made his first journey over the Isthmus, which led him afterwards to institute the earliest surveys, indicating almost exactly the line on which the Panama Canal is being constructed. The joy of the happy meeting after an absence of six years may be imagined, and of his reunion, too, with his parents and his brothers and sisters, who had waited so long to welcome him. He was married to Martha G. Bartlet, daughter of Edmund Bartlet, Esq., on the 9th of February, 1829, and almost immediately they started for the Isthmus.

At the present day the voyage from New York to Guayaquil is a pleasure excursion of fifteen days by steamship and railroad. In 1829, Mr. and Mrs. Wheelwright had a very different experience on their bridal trip. They embarked on a wretched sailing packet at New York for Carthagena, subsisting on salted provisions and hard-tack for a month. After remaining at Carthagena for ten days they came to Chagres in a small schooner in four days. From thence, in alternate heat and pouring rain, they were poled up the river in three days more. It was an absolute relief for them to get upon mule-back and to descend in this manner to Panama. On arrival there they found the port blockaded, so that there was no ingress or egress for nearly two months. At last they escaped in a leaky boat, pumping and bailing continually, stopping along the coast frequently for repairs and provisions, and threatened with mutiny and desertion of the crew. In this way they arrived at their destination, more than three months after their departure. The only alleviation was the hospitality and kindness which they received from the friends of Mr. Wheelwright at Carthagena and Panama, and which never could have been more welcome or more highly appreciated.

But, through all their disappointments and vexations, there loomed up before them in imagination the blessed light of their future home. Happily, they did not know that it had been extinguished by the perfidy of a trusted friend and partner, who, in Mr. Wheelwright's absence, had robbed him of every

dollar that he possessed and left him as poor as when he had landed, a shipwrecked sailor, on the southern coast. He was doubly poor now, for it was poverty for one who was far dearer to him than life. It was a crushing blow, under which few men could have stood. He had capital, however, that he had not in his first experience of misfortune. It was the capital that he had since acquired, and it was one which would not, like riches, take to itself wings and flee away. It was the confidence and friendship that his character had honestly earned. For the whole length of the coast, in all the different republics, and among parties hostile as they might be to each other, there were friends for Mr. Wheelwright.

He wrote to his brother-in-law in New York to send out to him a small schooner, in which he proposed to begin his life anew. Accordingly the little "Fourth of July," of sixty tons, was despatched to Valparaiso, whither he went, and where, for many years, he established his home. The schooner arrived in due time, and, sailing under the American flag, she enjoyed immunity in all ports, and the popularity of Mr. Wheelwright was such that she had a monopoly of the transportation of specie and bullion, the profit upon which was enormous. Fortune smiled once more, and he became a successful merchant in Valparaiso.

Two of his children were born there, and his faithful wife, whose health had suffered in an uncongenial climate, returned in 1835 with her little girls for a visit to her home, making a rapid passage of sixty-five days in a sailing ship around Cape Horn. The younger child succumbed to the rigor of a northern winter, but the elder, with her brother, afterwards born at Newburyport, accompanied her parents in their subsequent voyages from continent to continent, abiding with them for the most part in Valparaiso and Rosario. She afterwards married Mr. Paul Krell, and, having survived her father, settled at Oatlands, in the suburbs of London. Inheriting, with a share of her father's fortune, his amiable disposition and generous impulses, she devoted herself to a life of charity, exemplifying her religious faith by carrying its precepts into practice. She died in 1886, deeply mourned by her surviving parent and lamented by the poor, whose welfare she always had at heart.

Mr. Wheelwright's son, William, died in England, at the age of twenty-two. He was a youth of rare promise, who, having received a thorough education, was preparing to join and succeed his father in the management of his great railroad interests. But the fond hopes of his parents were frustrated by his early death, the only consolation remaining to them being his happy release from the sufferings of a lingering disease.

When we consider the difficulties which the first projectors of steam navigation between England and the United States had to encounter, we may more fully appreciate the labor of Mr. Wheelwright in convincing people that it was feasible to navigate steamships around Cape Horn and to establish them permanently on the west coast of South America. It was but recently that one of the greatest scientists of the age had demonstrated, to his own satisfaction and to that of the public in general, that it was impossible for a steamship to carry a sufficient supply of coal to take her from Liverpool to New York; and notwithstanding the intelligence of the Anglo-Saxon race and of the desire of that great family who lived under different governments, but who were bound together by so many ties of consanguinity, friendship, literature and trade, they had well-nigh resigned themselves to the impossibility announced by Dr. Lardner.

It was while this despondency prevailed in England and in the United States that Mr. Wheelwright had the audacity to propose to the slow, indolent and easy-going people of the Spanish South American republics, that they should aid him in bringing to them steamships over an ocean expanse of ten thousand miles and should put them in regular communication with each other—changing the time of months and weeks to those of days and hours. "There comes that insane Wheelwright!" exclaimed the president of one of those republics; "tell him I am not at home!" It is doubtful if he, with all his indomitable pluck, would have had the courage to persevere, had not his well-known character enlisted the sympathy of the European residents and particularly of the merchants, who saw the advantages of an enterprise which even they looked upon with doubt. They would not have listened for a moment to any other man. At last an influence was brought to bear on the different governments. This was more difficult to bring about, as they were antagonistic, jealous of each other and not infrequently at war. Here, an admirable resolution of Mr. Wheelwright's was of immense value. In all his intercourse with those nations, from the beginning to the end, he had determined to preserve a strict neutrality. He made friends with them all and even with the "mammon of unrighteousness," whether they fought with each other or among themselves, and he never betrayed the confidence reposed in him by the men who happened to be in power, by revolutionists or pronunciados. To fuse these discordant elements into an appreciation of their common interests was the labor which he undertook and accomplished. But it was not done in a day. Months and years rolled on, sometimes the hands of the dial turned backwards, but gradually they moved forward, until they reached the high-noon of his desires. He never asked for any direct pecuniary aid. All that he demanded was the grant of four "concessions,"—1st. An exclusive steam privilege for ten years. 2d. The liberty to put into all ports for freight and passengers. 3d. The right to establish receiving ships for coal.

4th. No interruption in the speedy despatch of the ships.

It appears strange that there should have been any hesitancy about the first three, when the prospect was regarded as so utterly chimerical. To those of us who are acquainted by experience with the vexations which attend the loading and discharging of ships in South American countries, owing to absurd custom-house regulations, lazy and insolent officials, frequent church holidays and interminable red tape, the opposition to the fourth concession does not excite surprise. In return, Mr. Wheelwright promised to repay them in a hundred-fold more benefit to them than he could possibly count upon for himself. And yet it took three whole years to conclude this simple bargain! It was accomplished as far as South America was concerned, and now it remained to organize a company and to build the steamships, either in the United States or in England. On the former country, the land of his birth, Mr. Wheelwright placed little reliance, but he gave his countrymen the first opportunity. The answer he received was virtually this: "We are a great people among ourselves; we do not understand commerce to mean the exchange of commodities with foreigners. We propose to produce everything; at least a few of us will produce everything at the cost of the others. Consequently, as they will pay more than foreigners will pay for our productions, we care not to sell anything, and we prefer not to buy anything if it can be avoided. Besides, we have no colonies to be indirectly benefited by such a scheme as yours, and we have very few commercial houses in South America. Good-bye; you had better go to England."

He did not waste time in trying to upset our protective policy. It was something that he scorned. He had seen enough of the custom-house cut-throat system in South America to make him an earnest advocate of universal free trade. It was a part of his religion, too, bound up in his heart and soul. So he went to England, the country from which our fathers emancipated themselves, because she forced them to pay a duty on tea to the King, leaving it to their descendants to levy a duty on two thousand articles for the benefit of a few kings of their own.

Mr. Wheelwright arrived in England in 1838. During his sojourn in South America the problem of Atlantic steam navigation had been solved. That bugbear, at the portal of his hopes, had been removed, and the question to which he now addressed himself was not of the possibility of his enterprise, but of its success as a profitable investment. He forthwith enlisted the press in his behalf. The London *Times* and the *Morning Post* joined with some scientific journals of wide influence in its advocacy. His reputation for acquaintance with South American navigation and trade had preceded him, and the honesty of his purpose was made convincing by his agreeable manners and his persuasive eloquence. The *Morning Post* corroborated his argument that "thus would be opened, not only a more expeditious route to the West Indies and the Pacific, but that there would be assured a more rapid communication with the East Indies, China and Australia."

He had not now to deal with capricious and short-sighted South American Spaniards, but with a people whose interest it was to extend their vast commercial empire. Mr. Wheelwright heartily seconded the proposition to establish direct steam communication between England and the Isthmus of Panama, knowing that the benefits would be extended to his own line. Thus both objects were accomplished nearly at the same time, and the result has been the maintenance of British steamship supremacy all over the globe. His steamships, the "Chili" and the "Peru," were built at Limehouse. Ridiculously small they would be considered at this day, for they were only seven hundred tons burden, and one hundred and fifty horse-power. Mr. Wheelwright accompanied them on their voyage, and they were the first steamships that passed through the Straits of Magellan. The enthusiasm with which they were received at Valparaiso was unbounded. The *Mercurio* astonished its readers with a description of the "ponderous ships which moved without sail or oar," as they were viewed by the inhabitants of the city, who had turned out *en masse* to witness what many of them supposed to be a miracle. For days the cabins and decks were crowded. There was a constant ringing of bells and firing of guns. Speeches laudatory of Mr. Wheelwright were made, and he was, as he deserved to be, the hero of the day. When the first steamer arrived at Callao the same scene was repeated. Nor were the people far wrong in calling it a miracle. It raised them from the dead slumbers of ages, infused into them a new life, brought them into line with the world's civilization, and started them on their march of progress.

In some respects Commodore Vanderbilt and Mr. Wheelwright were alike. Each commenced his ocean career at the lowest step of the ladder. Alike they saw in the future the certain success of steamship enterprise. One was its pioneer on the northern, and the other its pioneer on the southern continent. When they had both successfully accomplished their missions on the sea they left them in other hands and turned their attention to the land. The education and habits of neither of them tended in that direction. They had never studied civil engineering or surveying, but with the wonderful versatility that genius often develops, they adapted themselves instantly to their new calling, and went to their work backed by that great quality they so eminently possessed—determination—a determination which, incubating in brains like theirs, is sure to hatch out success. They both became "railroad kings." Vanderbilt was the king of the north, Wheelwright was the king of the south. They both conferred great good upon the people. This was incidental to the suc-

cess of the one, while it was the main object for which the other strove to succeed.

The steamship line was now fully established, although its continuance had been seriously threatened by the difficulty of obtaining a regular supply of coal, for which it depended upon England. To overcome it, Mr. Wheelwright had instituted searches for this indispensable article, and had found indications of its presence in Southern Chili. These "prospects" were developed into abundantly producing mines, and thus was procured the fuel so much needed by the miraculous steamships and by the future locomotives, of which the popular imagination had not as yet begun to dream.

The products of the copper mines of the interior had hitherto been brought down to the coast with infinite labor and great expense, on mule-back and in native carts. So long as the ocean carriage was done in sailing vessels, the land carriage by mules appeared to be its proper commencement. But the new motive power on the water called for an equal improvement on the land. This led Mr. Wheelwright to the conception of the first South American railroad. He now found no difficulty in obtaining influence and capital for any undertaking.

Accordingly, the eight hundred thousand dollars needed was immediately subscribed by himself and his friends. It was a short road, extending only twenty-four miles; but it became at once very profitable, and, as we shall see, was regarded by Mr. Wheelwright as the first link in the iron chain that is to bind the Pacific to the Atlantic. He next proposed to build a railroad from Santiago to Valparaiso of ninety miles, over a range of mountains. The Chilian government, however, regarded this as an absolute impossibility, and refused to grant him a concession, although he showed them his plans and assured them that it could be accomplished. "You will be convinced of it by-and-bye," he said; "I will leave my plans for some one else to build it, for I cannot wait. I will go to the other side, and from thence you shall see a railroad coming across the Andes to your doors."

Precisely on the plans proposed, the railroad from Santiago to Valparaiso was afterwards built.

On his arrival in the valley of the Plata, in 1860, Mr. Wheelwright had fewer obstacles to encounter then he had surmounted in Chili and Peru. Years had elapsed; the day star had not appeared in the east, but unlike other stars, it had arisen in the west, throwing its light over the Andes. Mr. Wheelwright's name was familiar in the councils and in the newspapers of all the Spanish republics. On his part, his more intimate knowledge of the language and habits of the people, gained by long experience, served greatly to lighten his labors. Still, he had to contend with the same factious opposition and jealousies of States and individuals as before. These he was never able entirely to overcome. His plan was first to build a railroad from Rosario, at the head waters of river navigation, to Cordova, with the ultimate expectation of pushing it over the Andes, and connecting it with the road he had just completed. For the present the line from Rosario to Cordova of two hundred and forty-seven miles would accomplish the important result of developing the Argentine Republic, increasing its domestic trade and its European commerce. Mr. Wheelwright was fortunate in enjoying the personal friendship and in enlisting the efficient aid of General Mitre, the president of the republic, at the outset of this great undertaking. With his own hands, at Rosario, General Mitre turned the first spadeful of earth, adding his enthusiasm to that of the delighted crowd by energetically continuing the exercise. "Every one must rejoice," he said, "on the opening of this great road, for it will tend to people solitudes, to give riches where there is poverty, and to institute order where anarchy reigns. It will pass over the wide prairies until at length it will scale the mountain summits of the Andes, and thus become the great railway of South America."

Mr. Wheelwright himself, appearing to look upon the line over the plains as an accomplished fact, went on to amaze his semi-barbarous hearers with estimates that would have astonished an American audience in 1863:

"The route to be adopted will be from Cordova to Chañar; from Chañar to Horquctа, a central point in Catamarca; from thence to Rioja and Copacabana, at the foot of the Andes, a distance of seven hundred miles; from whence it will commence the ascent, climbing up the side of the eastern slope of the Cordilleras to the pass of San Francisco, at an elevation of 16,023 feet above the level of the sea, where it culminates and then descends the western slope to the valley of Copiapo and Caldera, by a route already defined and declared practicable."

Since that time we have seen such engineering in Colorado and Utah, where the height of more than twelve thousand feet has been scaled. With us, it is a reality. There it was a dream—a dream that would have come to pass already had its projector's life and strength been spared for its accomplishment.

Mr. Wheelwright, in connection with the well-known and wealthy contractor, Thomas Brassey, had no difficulty in obtaining capital for the Grand Central Argentine in England. It was immediately commenced, and the first ten miles were finished early in 1864, but as the Paraguayan war supervened, interrupting operations, the whole line was not completed until May 17, 1870. Its inauguration was celebrated with an enthusiasm equal to that exhibited at its commencement. The President of the republic, Sarmiento, who had succeeded Mitre, Derqui and Urquiza, was not present, and although other spectators were loud in their praises of Mr. Wheelwright, the Minister of the Interior studiously refrained from the mentioning the name of the man to

whom this great work was due. The motive of this insulting neglect is readily explained. It was the desire of the government to use Mr. Wheelwright as an instrument for negotiating a loan in England, nominally for the purpose of continuing the railway across the Andes, while its intention was to devote the money to the construction of ironclads for a contemplated war with Chili, the nation with which it pretended a wish to unite itself in the bonds of a peaceful commerce. Mr. Wheelwright indignantly refused to aid in this perfidy. He declared his willingness to raise the loan, but on the sole condition of receiving a pledge that the avails should be invested in the work ostensibly but ambiguously set forth as its object. The refusal to embody this promise aroused his suspicion, which was justified by the fact that the enormous amount of thirty million dollars was asked for immediate use, when but a comparatively small sum was needed for present and progressing expenses. Thereupon the government rescinded the concession it had formerly solemnly pledged to Wheelwright and Brassey for the extension of the road, and postponed for years the completion of an enterprise that in their hands would have been carried to a triumphant conclusion.

One more small but important undertaking completed Mr. Wheelwright's railroad operations in South America. Buenos Ayres, on the bank of a great river, had always been the most unapproachable port in the world. The water is so shallow near the shore that vessels were obliged to anchor at the distance of several miles. Their cargoes were taken in lighters to be discharged in their turn into bullock carts, and thus dragged up on to the beach.

Thirty miles towards the sea is the snug little harbor of Ensenada, not capacious, but affording abundance of water for vessels of the heaviest draft, which may there discharge and load their cargoes at the wharf.

When Mr. Wheelwright proposed to make it the receiving port of the city of Buenos Ayres, it will scarcely be believed that he met with the violent opposition of the people who were to derive such an immense advantage from the facilities it would afford. Every possible obstacle was thrown in his way. It is needless to enumerate all the difficulties he encountered in the nine long years occupied in building this short but important road, which is now recognized by the city of Buenos Ayres as the most valuable aid to its commerce.

It was opened on April 18, 1872. There, at the scene of his last triumph, Mr. Wheelwright made his last speech. Before the audience at Quilmes the Governor of Buenos Ayres said that "of the many lines of railway which had been laid in that province, this was the first constructed without subsidy or any kind of aid from the Government. Whenever the company required land, it purchased or obtained it without calling upon the State, a fact which manifested the spirit of progress that was daily being developed, and which had its greatest representative in the person of his friend Wheelwright."

Mr. Wheelwright replied "that grateful as he felt for the compliment of Governor Castro, he had no other ambition than that of honest industry." He recalled the fact "that he had arrived at that place shipwrecked, almost without shoes to his feet, that the inhabitants had received him cordially, and he was proud to be able to present that road, partially inaugurated that day, as a return for their never-to-be-forgotten hospitality."

On what spot could he have more gracefully taken his pathetic adieu of his "second country"? He had finished the work that God had given him to do, and no missionary of the church can claim a brighter crown than this missionary of civilization and humanity.

Besides introducing steamships, building one railroad on the west coast and two on the east, the discovery of coal and the development of the mines, without which the former enterprises would scarcely have been profitable, Mr. Wheelwright contributed important benefits to some of the cities, notably to Valparaiso in the introduction of water and gas.

It was there, at the headquarters of his first great undertaking, that he was most honored and loved. His portrait graces the hall of the Exchange, and a statue of heroic size in bronze represents him in the public square.

As he was about to say farewell forever to the continent of the South, what more fitting tribute could have been offered him than the request that he should send from the East to the West the first congratulatory telegraphic message? The responses he received were the last benedictions of a grateful people. The projector of the telegraph replied:

"VALPARAISO, July 26, 1872.

"*William Wheelwright, Buenos Ayres:*—I feel proud in receiving your warm congratulations, which I beg you to share with me for the happy success obtained this day. This country, Mr. Wheelwright, is indebted to you for the elements of progress introduced here since 1840. Not only steam nagivation, railways, gas and water-works, coal mines and a number of other works introduced by you have flourished in Chili, but the first electric telegraph erected in South America by you in Chili twenty-two years ago, is to-day extended to Buenos Ayres, thus enabling the West Coast to salute gratefully the illustrious promoter of progress on both sides of the Andes.

"Accept, therefore, my dear sir, my congratulations.

"JOHN R. CLARKE."

From Señor de Sarratea,—

"CITY OF VALPARAISO.

"Your name and progress are indelibly fixed in the minds of our citizens, and while we celebrate the great event of the day we do not forget how much we owe to your foresight and untiring constancy. I salute you in the name of all friends in Valparaiso."

From the President of the Republic of Chili:

"SANTIAGO, July 30, 1872.

"A thousand thanks for your enthusiastic congratulations. I return my cordial salutations to the man who has so many titles to the love and gratitude of my country.

"F. ECHAZURRIA."

Mr. Wheelwright, with his wife and daughter, embarked for England in May, 1873.



Isaac W. Wheelwright

He well knew that he would never see South America again, and it was even doubtful if his strength would endure until the arrival of the steamship at Southampton.

It was imprudent for him to have continued the cares of business in his condition of health at such an advanced period of life, but his indomitable will sustained him to the last.

He landed in England to die in the house that was his home in that country, on the 26th of September, 1873. His body was taken to the home of his nativity, where he sleeps his long sleep, after a life so fully completed, in the burial-ground which is overlooked from the house in which he was born.

During his life-time Mr. Wheelwright was his own executor. Although he left a large fortune, the fortune that he bestowed upon others before his death exceeded it. When he could give no more, he resigned it into the hands of others to give. Among his bequests to different charities there was a foundation for the "Wheelwright Scientific School in Newburyport." But education does not bestow brains. It may cultivate and sometimes its hot-house training may run them to seed without making their fruit of any value. If Mr. Wheelwright himself had received a "liberal education," and had "taken the first honors of his class," he might doubtless have graced either of the three learned professions, but he never could have acquired at schools, colleges or universities the knowledge of the world and of mankind that he gained from practical experience and from a reliance upon God and upon himself.

ISAAC WATTS WHEELWRIGHT.

Isaac Watts, a younger brother of William Wheelwright, was born at Newburyport, September 17, 1801. Sharing the same Puritan ancestry and nurtured in the same traditions, he was endowed with a temperament wholly different from that of his brother, and although they carried on their work to a certain extent in the same country, their spheres of labor were entirely distinct. A shy, retiring boy, he did not mingle in the lively sports of his elder brothers, finding a greater pleasure in books and study. At the age of twelve he was sent to Phillips Academy, Andover, and after four years spent there he entered Bowdoin College, where he was domiciled in the house of president Appleton, and according to a singular custom more or less in vogue in New England at that time, an exchange of children was effected, whereby the president's daughter Jane became an inmate of young Wheelwright's home at Newburyport. This arrangement proved mutually satisfactory, and Miss Appleton endeared herself very much to the family of which she became a member, and which she left to become the wife of Mr. Franklin Pierce, afterwards President of the United States. Meanwhile the young collegian pursued his studies and graduated in 1821, the very year when those distinguished sons of Bowdoin, Hawthorne and Longfellow, entered college. It had always been a foregone conclusion in the family that this younger son, who had grown up a serious-minded youth, was to be a minister, and it was doubtless with this idea in her mind that his devout mother gave him the name of her favorite hymnologist, Doctor Watts. But, although he had tacitly consented to this decision, he had never felt that he was adapted to the profession, and his subsequent experience convinced him, as well as others, that his true vocation was that of a teacher. On leaving college, therefore, he was very glad to have the final decision deferred for one year and to accept a tutorship at Phillips Academy. At the expiration of that time he decided to enter the Theological Seminary. These were the years in the political history of New England when Webster exerted such a potent influence, and it was not unnatural that the fascination of his brilliant intellectual gifts should have been keenly felt by the rising generation. Our young theologian shared the enthusiasm for the great statesman, and it was with the desire to hear him speak that he and his friend and classmate, Leonard Woods, afterwards president of Bowdoin College, found their way to Bunker Hill on the occasion of the laying of the corner-stone of the monument. It was on a cloudless day of June, 1825, that the two young men pressed through the surging crowds until they found themselves in close proximity to Lafayette, and where they could look into the face of the great orator, whose burning words of eloquence could never be forgotten. "Let it rise till it meet the sun in its coming, let the earliest light of the morning gild it, and the parting day linger and play on its summit!"

On finishing his theological course, in 1826, Mr. Wheelwright returned to his favorite occupation of teaching, going to Dummer Academy as assistant to one of its most distinguished principals, the Hon. Nehemiah Cleaveland. After two years he left Dummer to become the principal of the Newburyport Academy. In 1833 he was appointed agent for South America of the American Bible Society and he sailed in that year for Valparaiso, where his brother William was then living. As he familiarized himself with the language and the manners and customs of the people, he became more and more convinced of the utter hopelessness of sowing Bibles broadcast in a ground so totally unprepared. Education was the first requisite in a country where ignorance was exalted into a virtue, and when he was ready to proceed to Guayaquil, his original destination, he had fully resolved to begin operations there by establishing a school. The wisdom of this decision was attested by the fact of his discovering in the Custom-House of Guayaquil, on his arrival there, several large cases of Bibles, which had been sent out months before by the Brit-

ish and Foreign Bible Society. Mr. Wheelwright's school soon found favor in the town, and it was not long before he was invited to go to Quito to establish a similar one there, which he subsequently consented to do, having found some one to take his place at Guayaquil.

Quito is picturesquely situated at an altitude of ten thousand feet above the level of the sea, and is overshadowed by the snow-covered peak of Pichincha, five thousand feet above the level of the town. Here Mr. Wheelwright spent the greater part of the five years—the term of his appointment by the Bible Society—and established higher as well as primary schools, which soon became as popular as the one he had founded at Guayaquil. His first object in both places had been to secure from the government its authority for reading the Bible in these schools, which was finally accomplished, in spite of the opposition of the priests. The President of the Republic of Ecuador at that time was a most enlightened man, and he so appreciated the civilizing influence of Mr. Wheelwright's labors that he made him one of the directors of education. The support of the civil Government, however, did not protect him from the attacks of the ecclesiastical authorities, who finally removed the Bibles and Testaments from the schools. Mr. Wheelwright published a protest and defense of his course, which was followed by a circular letter from the ladies of Quito, endorsing his action and defending him from the charge of proselytism. But it was all of no avail, for neither the civil government nor public opinion had the power to influence the decisions of the Church.

About this time (November, 1836) Mr. Wheelwright at the invitation of the President, accompanied him and his Cabinet to Yaruqui, to visit some monuments erected there just one century previous, by three French academicians,—Louis Godin, Pierre Bougin and Carlos Maria de la Condamine. They had been sent out by Louis XV. to mark the line of the Equator and to measure a degree thereon, in order to arrive at the exact circumference of the earth. Their observations, which exiled them for seven years, at length resulted in finding that the line must pass somewhere between the two monuments, which at a later period were destroyed by Charles IV. of Spain, who was jealous of that scientific invasion of his kingdom by representatives of a rival power. The more enlightened President of Ecuador, his country having happily escaped from the tyranny of Spain, and he himself recognizing no national boundaries in the domain of science, had ordered the restoration of the monuments, which, on the occasion above referred to, were dedicated and marked with a suitable inscription.

Shortly after his return to Quito, Mr. Wheelwright was obliged to leave the town on account of the breaking out of a revolution which made residence there unsafe. He had, in fact, remained there all these years at the peril of his life, having received many threatening letters from his enemies and having been constantly warned by his friends that he was a marked man. At this juncture he received a letter from his brother at Valparaiso urging him to undertake a mission in his behalf to Bogotá, with the object of securing from the Colombian government an exclusive privilege for opening a canal through the Isthmus of Panama, which would complete his plan for steam communication between the west coast of South America and Europe. The journey to Bogotá was a difficult and in many respects a dangerous one, but preparations were finally made to join a party who were crossing the Andes by the Pass of Chimborazo. In light chairs strapped to the backs of sturdy mountaineers, Mr. Wheelwright with his companions made the ascent of the mountains, and, arrived at the other side, he pursued his way northward accompanied by guides. Penetrating the thick forests of the interior, sleeping sometimes under trees, the thick foliage of which protected him from the rain, and sometimes in some deserted hut, which on one occasion proved a dangerous asylum, for, on waking in the morning, he was horrified to find a huge snake coiled about a beam just above his head, he finally reached Bogotá and presented his brother's petition, which was favorably received and the bearer himself treated with great consideration by the President and his ministers. But he waited in vain for a reply, which was put off from day to day and month to month, till, at length, he was privately advised that on account of unsettled questions pending between that government and the United States, the proposal to build a canal could not be entertained. He accordingly left Bogotá, and after another difficult and perilous journey through tropical forests, arrived at Carthagena, on the Atlantic coast, whence he sailed for New York.

His long residence in hot climates, and the hardships encountered in his travels, had undermined his health to such a degree that rest and change of climate were essential before he could undertake any other work. He remained at home for two years, save for a few months spent in England and France, and then, with re-established health, he sailed once more for South America, his destination being Valparaiso, where he had for a long time hoped to organize a school for the higher education of young women. His project having been received with marked favor by the best families of the city, he made all the preliminary arrangements, and then returned to the United States for a short visit. On the 27th of October of that year (1842) he married Sarah Dana, the youngest daughter of the Rev. Daniel Dana, D.D., ex-president of Dartmouth College, and at that time pastor of the Old South Church, at Newburyport. They sailed at once for Valparaiso, where Mr. Wheelwright founded and for nearly ten years carried on the school which still flourishes there. Señor Alberdi, in his "Life of William Wheelwright," makes the following reference to the school and its teacher:



Joseph B. Morris

"About this time (1843) a brother of Mr. Wheelwright, a man of liberal education, pleasing manners and refined taste, established a college for young ladies in Valparaiso, and among those who were educated there may be mentioned many who afterwards held a high social position in Chili, and to this day remember with gratitude and hold in veneration the name of their much-beloved principal."

In connection with this period of his life should be mentioned the name of the Rev. David Trumbull, whom Mr. Wheelwright was instrumental in bringing to Valparaiso. Mr. Trumbull had just graduated at the New Haven Theological Seminary when he received a letter from Mr. Wheelright urging him to come out to South America, where a field was already open to him. After some further correspondence Mr. Trumbull consented to go out for three years, which he spent in Mr. Wheelwright's family, where he found a congenial home. He began his ministrations in a warehouse, preaching to a handful of English and Americans, and so successful has been his work that he now numbers two hundred Chilians among his hearers, in addition to a large congregation of foreigners, consisting of English, Scotch and American residents in Valparaiso.

In 1849 Mrs. Wheelwright's failing health made a visit to the United States an imperative necessity, and as her husband was unable to accompany her, it was arranged that Mr. Trumbull should be her escort. The visit was prolonged on account of continued illness till at length Mr. Wheelwright felt that he must relinquish his duties for a time in order to join his wife, still hoping to return to his work once more and to bring her back with him. These hopes were not destined to be realized, and little as he thought it, he was bidding farewell to his adopted country forever. On arriving at Newburyport he realized for the first time the great change for the worse in his wife's condition and immediately took what measures he could to make her life as comfortable as possible. To this end he purchased the Byfield parsonage, a retreat sheltered from the east winds of their native town and yet sufficiently near to admit of frequent visits to their parents. It was a house of some historic interest, having been the birth-place of Theophilus Parsons, chief justice of Massachusetts, whose mother, Susanna Davis, a direct descendant of the Rev. John Robinson, of Leyden, was a great-great-aunt of Mr. Wheelwright.

At this time Mr. Wheelwright definitely gave up his school at Valparaiso and devoted himself to the care of his wife, who was gradually fading away and at length succumbed to the disease which the milder climate of South America had only kept in abeyance. In 1858 he married Adeline, daughter of Stephen Adams, Esq., of Byfield, and has ever since resided in the old parsonage sacred to the memory of a long line of pastors, who from the early settlement of the country have made it their home. Here, surrounded by his family and his books, respected and beloved by neighbors and friends, removed from worldly care, an observer only of the stirring events of the day, he can say with his favorite poet,—

> "'Tis pleasant, through the loopholes of retreat
> To peep at such a world; to see the stir
> Of the great Babel, and not feel the crowd;
> To hear the roar she sends through all her gates
> At a safe distance, where the dying sound
> Falls a soft murmur on the uninjured ear."

JOSEPH BROWN MORSS.[1]

Mr. Morss adhered to the original manner of spelling his name, while some other branches of the family spell it Morse. The first of the name were Anthony, William and Robert, who came to America from Marlborough, England, in the ship "James," and settled in Newbury in 1635. Anthony was the oldest, being forty-three when he came here to live, and at that time was married; but shortly his wife must have died, for he married a second time four years later; and himself died in 1678, at sixty years, leaving a large family. He was a shoemaker, as was William, his brother, who came over with him and died in 1683, at sixty-nine, also leaving a family. Robert may have been still younger; at least his children were born later.

From these sprang all the Morsses. All came from the same root in England and were transplanted here in three stalks. Anthony and William were among the original landed proprietors, the acknowledged freeholders, and entitled to their proportionate parts to all the waste lands, commons, rivers, etc. The whole number of "commoners" was one hundred and thirteen. In the second generation Jonathan Morss married Mary Clarke, in 1671. She was of the Clarke family that lived in the house at the corner of High and Marlboro' Streets, then called the Clarke house, and later the Morss house, which name it bears to this day, having ever since remained in whole or part to the Morsses. It was for long years, when that was the "corner,"—that is, the central place for trade and business,—a tavern, and we find the two names, Clarke and Morss, combined in one person, Mr. Clarke Morss, who was the father of Joseph B. Morss, and lived in Middle Street near the head of Centre Street, when his house was burned in the "great fire" of 1811. He was a cabinet-maker.

Joseph Brown Morss was born in 1808, and was in the sixth generation from Anthony and William. His mother, who was left a widow in early life, before her marriage bore the name of Brown, whence it descended to him. He began life under every disadvantage. He had no father, no fortune, no influential friends, and his health was so poor that on account of it he was almost entirely deprived of schooling till he was ten years old, and then had the benefits only of the common schools of the Lancasterian style, in which, by his studiousness, aptness to learn and good

[1] By George J. L. Colby.

behavior, he soon became a "monitor." It was customary in those days for persons who wanted apprentices to consult the school-teachers and select them on their recommendations; so when Ephraim W. Alden inquired, the teacher pointed out to him Joseph B. Morss, said he was industrious, honest, sincere, reliable, and would do honor to himself in whatever situation placed. He took him into the *Herald* office to learn the art of type-setting, and he proved to be all he was recommended and more. That printing-office became his school; he labored; he studied; he attained a full knowledge of his business and was one of the most intelligent and careful of workmen; so that, without ever studying grammar, he was one of the best proof-readers, and seldom failed in the spelling of a word or its proper use; and without studying rhetoric, often wrote, as the occasion called, in the best style of the art of composition. He entered the printing-office a sickly and uneducated, penniless boy; he graduated a robust man, of remarkable powers of endurance, a thorough printer and journalist, knowing the business from bottom to top; a student equipped in knowledge of books and men, and fitted for the brilliant career upon which he was about to enter. As an apprentice and journeyman he remained in the *Herald* office to 1834, when he was twenty-six years old, and, Mr. Allen retiring, he became editor and proprietor of the *Herald*, daily and semi-weekly, with William H. Brewster as a partner, and there remained to 1856, after which he successively and successfully edited, and managed in part, the *Boston Traveller* and the *Boston Courier*.

In his business he put his whole heart and soul. His labors never ended, his studies never ceased. There was no wage-worker in his employ that labored more than half his hours during the year. He was almost sleepless. When all others had left the office his one light burned dimly to the small hours, as he culled the latest news; and there he was found at the case putting matter in type; and so careful was he of the manner of making up the paper, that, without complaining of the work of others, he would often take the form apart and rearrange the whole to suit his taste. He excelled especially as a mercantile editor. He examined the trades reports far and wide, and aimed at having early and reliable news from all the markets, reduced in size to suit this meridian. For years he reported the arrival of every ship at all the ports of the United States; gave special notice of cargoes and the rates of freights paid; and so in the markets every advance and decline that would affect Newburyport in its great products and staple manufactures were noted; and oftentimes his conclusions were quoted by Boston and New York papers as authority. In most of our industries, as he acquired property, he had investments, and often he purchased stocks that he might know more about them and thereby have the avenues of knowledge and acquaintance with men open to him. Thus, he was a large ship-owner; and not only reported the value of their property, new and old, but he was an oracle that a large number of others, less informed, consulted for the government of their action. So in cotton and woolen manufactures, he not only owned largely in this city and was president of three corporations, but he invested in Maine and New Hampshire as well as Massachusetts, and watched the rise and fall of stocks as closely as Greely's exploring party did the thermometer when there was danger of being frozen to death. In more than three-score years we have never known a man who so carefully informed himself of what pertained to the welfare of our citizens or was more ready to invest in what would advance the interests of the town. If a steamboat, or a steam railroad, or a steam factory was needed, or the introduction of a horse-railroad, or water supply, he was the first to advocate the measure and the first to pay his money. There was no "boodle;" there was no pressing for the advantage over others; there was no selling the columns of his paper. A more honest man did not live. We saw him lose two thousand dollars one day, because the sale of his stock in a corporation in which he was a director, was likely to create a panic among other holders to their injury. As a rule he was successful in business transactions, save in real estate, and there his sympathy with the rent-payers prevented. After a trial of some years he sold all his real estate, save what he occupied, at a loss, because he would not distress the tenants. Nor would he suffer those more favored by fortune to influence his paper in the least against the masses of the people.

An intense excitement was raised in town by parties for and against the division of the "surplus revenue" nearly a half-century ago. It ran so high, virtually between the rich and the poor, that the former sent a committee to demand that one of the latter, favoring distribution, should no longer be employed in the *Herald* office. "Gentlemen," said he, "who runs this office? If I own it, I will never suffer any man to say who shall be employed in it." They went back, reported and returned to say that if the person named was not discharged, they would withdraw their patronage. "Go back," said he, "and say I will endure no dictation in the transaction of my own business." The next day one-third of all the patronage of the office was withdrawn; and near nightfall a very influential and wealthy gentleman called to say: "I am sorry you force us to ruin you." "I hope you will waste no sympathy," was his reply. He handed the gentleman his bill, and with it said, "Mr. ——, you see that coat hanging on the wall?" "I do," was the answer. "I have worn that garment," continued Mr. Morss, "seven years. I can wear it seven years more. You can stop your paper; you have a right to; to control my office you have no right, and you never shall do it." Time ran on, and one by one they returned, thinking, in their calmer moments, more of the man who dared to do right.



Irving Page

When his rights were invaded or any principle was at issue he was as brave as a lion, as immovable as a mountain, as unyielding as any soldier that ever stood on a battle-field, and as faithful as any martyr that ever died for his religion. At the same time he was one most charitable for the weak or erring; most liberal in opinions, always respecting the rights of others; most tender, sympathetic and self-sacrificing for the poor and the distressed. He would forgive a wrong done to himself, but not a wrong done to his friend or neighbor; and being square and honorable in his own action, if he hated anybody in human form, it was a deceiver and a hypocrite, the man who was selfishly false or the coward who dared not tell and defend the truth. He was very economical; he wasted nothing; but it was not a saving to hoard for himself, for he was generous to a fault. Sitting by his side for years, we never knew him to refuse aid to a charitable cause or repel the needy; and when affliction was upon those near to him there was an exceeding tenderness which we might look for in a woman, but seldom find in a man. No care was too great for him, no watching too long, no expense too lavish. The hard side of his nature turned towards himself; the tender and loving was for others, especially the young, the weak, the defenseless. But here we may not enlarge. We give an extract, not designed for the public eye, addressed to Rev. Dr. Daniel Dana, a better picture of the internal of the man than we could draw:

AN OLD LETTER.

The following letter was addressed to the late Rev. Daniel Dana, D D., on occasion of the fiftieth anniversary of his settlement as pastor of the Old South Church. A celebration was held at the house of Dr. Dana on High Street, which Mr. Morss was unable to attend. The letter is characteristic of the writer, whose kindness and lasting gratitude for kindness received from others, is conspicuous throughout, and it is expressed in his plain and limpid style, which was the charm of our friend's writings. The occasion itself will be remembered by many and the letter read with interest:

"TUESDAY MORNING, Nov. 19. 1844.

"REV. DR. DANA, Dear Sir:

"The unceasing round of duties which the care of a daily newspaper imposes will prevent me from uniting with your friends this evening in person, but I cannot forbear saying that in spirit I shall assuredly be with them and you. In the multiplicity of kind offices which you have been busy during a long life in bestowing upon others, you, perhaps, may have forgotten under how much obligation you have laid a humble individual. But, sir, I have never forgotten that from the age of seven to that of twelve years, when poverty and sickness bore heavily upon me, and promised to be my only inheritance in this life, I was indebted to you for much of sympathy and generous aid. The first books which I ever read were in those moments of sorrow and de olation, received from your library, and I never recollect this now without that peculiar thrill which comes over us all, when we recur to moments in the past too ecstatic and too enrapturing to be looked for more than once in a lifetime. They opened to me vast and inexhaustible worlds of mental power and wealth, of which my young imagination had never dreamed. It was then that I acquired that taste for reading and reflection, which a great man has timely said are the greatest gifts that can be bestowed upon a mortal. They came upon me like opulence and liberty upon the tenant of a gloomy dungeon—like all the glories and the wonders of creation upon the newly-opened eyes of the blind. That I have not often acknowledged to you the kindness then shown to a child of sorrow and pain, is not because I had forgotten or was ungrateful for it, but because I know that such generous devotion was but the ordinary even tenor of your whole life, that your reward would come from that source whence cometh every good and every perfect gift, and that in the multitude of your able and willing friends I could claim a right to follow only afar off. Since those days to which I have alluded, God has bestowed upon me health, friends and prosperity far beyond not only what I have deserved, but all that I could have expected. In what I have learned of some things, however, I have found only that of innumerably more I was utterly ignorant; that the mind which would vainly seek to soar into the regions of the empyrean, in the effort only falls like an unfledged bird from its nest. In all the earthly blessings which cluster around us—in all fields of knowledge which lie in the distance around us—and in all the yet unanswered aspirations of the soul—I have been taught by the experience which both adversity and prosperity bring, that humility and kindliness are the only attributes to which frail mortality may aspire with the hope of reaching.

"Excuse, my dear sir, this hasty and, I fear, incoherent epistle, for it is written in the midst of my daily avocations and pressing business calls, which are not only unfavorable to philosophical reflection, but prevent me from looking over what the pen has briefly and hastily traced.

"Truly yours,

"REV. DR. DANA." "JOSEPH B. MORSS.

In politics Mr. Morss was a Liberal Whig, and the *Herald* gave that party support, when Caleb Cushing was our Representative in Congress and Everett and Webster stood for Massachusetts in the Senate, and Henry Clay gave voice to that party in the country. After the dissolution of that party he supported the Democratic side. He was not ambitious of political honors, but was proud of his position as a journalist, believing it the place where he could have the largest influence for good. Still, he was four times a member of the Legislature,—in 1838, '39, '40 and again in '76. He was a delegate to the Constitutional Convention of 1853; two years he was an alderman, a director of the Public Library, and a trustee of the Putnam School. In addition to his being president of three cotton corporations he was president of the Water Company and director and treasurer of the Horse Railroad Company, and of the last two corporations he was the largest stockholder in town.

In religion he was a Unitarian, an active member of the First Church in his young days, during the pastorate of Rev. Thomas B. Fox, who was his near friend. The main points of his faith were the existence of the one God, the universal Providence that rules the world for good, and his firm belief in a future life, of which he had no doubt, and for which his constant effort was to be prepared. Life to him was an unending series of states and conditions, a progressive, onward existence, to which death was a change but not an end. He died in September, 1883, at the age of seventy-five years. Following of his offspring, four boys and one girl,—and leaving a widow and three daughters,—one of whom has since gone to her last rest.

DAVID PERKINS PAGE.[1]

David Perkins Page was born in Newburyport August 13, 1836, and was the son of a father of the same name, and Susan Maria (Lunt) Page. The father was one of the most distinguished teachers of his time, for several years master of the English High

[1] By Nathan N. Withington.

School in Newburyport, and at the time of his death principal of the New York State Normal School at Albany. He was the author of valuable books upon the profession of the teacher and methods of teaching, and a man of untiring industry and zeal in his profession, and of a thoroughness in whatever he undertook, which was an inherited trait of his son. The descent in the paternal line was from John Page, who was born in Dedham, England, in 1586, and who came to New England with Governor Winthrop in 1630, and settled in Dedham, Mass., and the family has from the first been one honored and respected in New England.

On the mother's side, the subject of this sketch came from old Newbury stock, which was noted from the settlement of the town for enterprise and patriotism. A Lunt had fought with John Paul Jones, they had been soldiers in the French and Indian Wars and in the War of the Revolution, and Captain Micajah Lunt, Mrs. Page's father, was one of the merchant princes of New England, a man of ability and integrity, who left children worthy of such a father; and his daughter, who became the wife of the distinguished teacher, and mother of Capt. David P. Page, was a woman of most lovely and estimable character refined manners and uncommon intelligence, a lady whom it was a privilege to meet in social converse.

Captain Page was worthy of such ancestry. As a youth he was a favorite with his comrades and his teachers, active on the play-ground and assiduous in his studies. He attended the public schools of Newburyport and the Putnam Free School, and finished his studies at Thetford Academy in Vermont, profiting from his schooling by industry and attention, as was shown in his after-life that he had laid a good foundation in youth by reading and observation, and the power of expressing himself by fitting words, which appeared in articles contributed by him to the *Newburyport Herald*, over the signature of "Folium," and in the columns of *Harper's Magazine*. In the latter was also an indication of his artistic talent, as the illustrations were from his own pencil, and were of a high order of merit.

In 1852, when sixteen years of age, the youth went to sea, as was common with intelligent and enterprising young men in those days of commercial prosperity, when a seafaring life opened a promising career to enterprise, and energy, and sobriety. A sober, intelligent and active youth was almost certain to achieve the command of a ship in early manhood, with the prospect of becoming a merchant on his own account before he had arrived at middle-age. Such a career had been common with his relatives on his mother's side, who had first been ship-masters and then merchants. It was a family instinct which he followed, and in 1857, when he was but twenty-one years old, he obtained the position of captain of a ship trading to the East Indies, and as such he sailed until the breaking out of the Civil War, in 1861.

The war opened a new epoch in the life of Captain Page, as he entered the volunteer naval service as acting-master in command of the gunboat "Wateree," rendering efficient service in protecting the commerce of the United States on the Pacific coast, which was assigned to him as a cruising-ground during the war, and the service was well performed, though it offered small occasion for distinction as a naval officer, the scenes of active operations being upon the other side of the continent; yet it was a no less useful service in the protection it afforded.

At the close of the war he again took command of a merchant ship, the "Sacramento," owned by William F. Weld & Co., of Boston, continuing in this employ successfully for several years. He was a skillful seaman and a good business man, and was highly appreciated by the owners, who were strict in their demands upon the ship-masters in their employ.

On the 5th of December, 1867, Captain Page was married to Miss Emily C. Wills (only daughter of Rufus Wills, Esq.) in St. Paul's Episcopal Church, in Newburyport. The family of the bride for several generations had been of the prosperous merchants of what had been one of the most prosperous commercial towns of the Commonwealth, and who, by their enterprise and business intelligence, had maintained their standing as merchants whose ships whitened every sea, after commerce in Newburyport had fallen into decay; their trade being with the East Indies, where one or the other usually resided. Two days after the marriage, on the 7th of December, 1867, the newly-married pair sailed on the steamship "Ontario" on their wedding tour, which embraced several months' travel, during which they saw the principal countries of Europe.

After the wedding journey Captain Page took command of the ship "Josiah L. Hale," owned by his uncle, Hon. Micajah Lunt, of Newburyport, and others, bound for Calcutta. On this voyage he was accompanied by his young and charming bride, and on the return voyage, on January 4, 1869, a son was born to them, who lived but a few hours. It was a sad loss, occurring, as it did, far from home and sympathizing friends, on the pathless wastes of the deep. They arrived in Boston in the spring of 1869, and this voyage was the last of Captain Page's seafaring life.

Upon his retirement from sea-going, at the early age of thirty-two years, in June, 1869, he commenced the business of ship-brokerage, in company with Mr. Charles H. Coffin, of Newburyport, in which city Captain Page continued his residence. This partnership lasted for three years, when it expired by limitation, and he formed a new partnership in the same business with Mr. E. L. Reed, which continued until the death of Captain Page, which occurred at Newburyport on the 23d of January, 1874, after a painful illness, during which he showed the courage and



Chas. Topham

endurance of a hero and the resignation of a Christian. He left two children, named respectively for their paternal and maternal grandfathers,—David Perkins Page, born August 12, 1870, and Rufus Wills Page, born July 13, 1872, who reside with their widowed mother in Newburyport, giving good promise to be worthy of their parentage.

The death of Captain Page was a shock to a large circle of friends, as it was terrible to his family, as he was not thirty-eight years old, and so shortly before had seemed to be in the full possession of a vigorous manhood. The death of his father had been a like sudden affliction, as he had died at about the same age, the period of life when the mental and physical powers are strongest, and when death is most terrible. He was a man, too, like his father, who had his faculties at command, and made the most of them, and the death of such men before the life's work is done is a public loss, as well as a private grief to their friends.

Captain Page had a large circle of friends and acquaintances by whom he was beloved for his kindly, genial nature, respected for his integrity of life and character, and admired for his courage, energy and intelligence. He was affable and gentlemanly in his manners and inspired confidence in himself by his countenance, open as the day, and by his easy, self-possessed bearing he made others easy in his presence. He was a favorite with all who knew him, and his death was mourned by many besides the family to whom he was so dear.

His life was one of business or in the service of his country during the war, and he held no public office except that of vestryman of St. Paul's Episcopal Church in Newburyport, and the esteem in which he was held is expressed in the following resolutions, which were unanimously adopted at a meeting of the wardens and vestrymen of the church, January 28, 1874:

"*Whereas* it has pleased God in his wise Providence to remove from our midst by a short and distressing illness our late associate, Captain David P. Page, therefore,

"*Resolved*, That we place upon our records this testimony of our estimation of his character as a member of our board, deeply interested in all that concerned the welfare of this ancient Parish.

"*Resolved*, That while we bow with submission to the Divine Will, we cannot but deeply regret the loss to the Parish and to ourselves of an exemplary Christian man, and gentleman, who during the short time he was a fellow-worshipper, won our esteem by his modest, unassuming demeanor and earnest desire to promote the spiritual welfare of his fellow-men.

"*Resolved*, That while we extend to his bereaved widow and family our sincere sympathy in their great loss, we would respectfully suggest the comforting assurance, drawn from the teachings of Jesus Christ, that a life passed like his, in earnest endeavors to imitate the Divine Master and Saviour, has entitled him to a place among the saints made perfect."

CHARLES TOPPAN.

Among the early settlers of Newbury, Mass., was Abraham Toppan, who sailed from Yarmouth, England, in May, 1637, and who, in October of the same year, was admitted to the rights and duties of a freeman of the infant colony, becoming, soon after his admission, one of the selectmen of the town. He seems to have been a man of education, as his signature, still preserved, is written in a scholarly hand, while his enterprise in business carried him to the West India Islands on several voyages which proved successful financially.

His numerous descendants, some of whom changed the spelling of the name to Tappan, became connected by marriage with many of the old and prominent families of Massachusetts and other States.

How the name was first changed is described by Lewis Tappan in the biography of his brother Arthur, who states that "after the death of Rev. Benjamin Toppan, in 1790, his children at a family meeting agreed to change the spelling to Tappan at the suggestion of the eldest son, who had for some time adopted that way of writing it."

One of the sons of Abraham Toppan, named Jacob, married Hannah Sewall, the sister of the able and widely-known Chief Justice Samuel Sewall, and of this line was born, in Newburyport, Charles, on February 10, 1796. His father, Edward, after serving in the Revolutionary army with his uncle, Colonel Little, of Newbury, became a partner of the mercantile firm of Hoyt, Coolidge & Toppan, whose losses caused by French spoliation have not yet been paid by the national government. His mother, who is described as a beautiful and amiable woman, was a sister of Captain Michael Smith, of the United States navy.

In early boyhood Mr. Toppan evinced great fondness for drawing, his leisure hours being devoted to sketching, and having read an account of the process of etching, he made so successful an attempt at copying an engraving of "Napoleon Crossing the Alps" that he was encouraged to further efforts. He was further stimulated by the approbation bestowed upon one of his drawings by Monroe, then Secretary of State.

His talent becoming known to Messrs. Draper, Murray & Fairman, the only bank-note engraving firm then existing in the country, which was established in Philadelphia, as the most important city of the Union at that time, he was invited by those gentlemen to join their ranks, which he did in 1814.

Applying himself to his profession with great ardor and perseverance, he soon became one of its leaders, being remarkable for the accuracy of his work, and being exceedingly rapid in execution.

In 1819 he went to London, accompanying Mr. Perkins, the inventor, and Mr. Fairman, who crossed the Atlantic with the expectation of being employed by the Bank of England, whose notes had been extensively counterfeited. Mr. Perkins was the inventor of a process which rendered counterfeiting very difficult and which had been successfully used in the

United States. Upon their arrival in England they were cordially received. In a letter to a member of his family, at home, Mr. Toppan writes from London:

"The engravers and amateurs in the arts are, one and all, extravagant in their encomiums upon the beauty of the work and the merits of the plan, and are willing to recommend it for adoption and assist for that purpose in any manner in their power. Heath, Lowry, Warren and many others who rank the highest in engraving have been to see us. They mostly called and introduced themselves, which is an evidence of their wish to form our acquaintance and a proof of the high estimation Messrs. Perkins and Fairman possess in the opinion of the public. We have found them all men possessing all the requisites of gentlemen in appearance and manners, and mental accomplishments corresponding to their rank as artists. Some of my specimens have been shown, and I was pleased to hear well spoken of. My large plate of Washington's farewell address, the title of which I have just completed, has astonished them. There has never been a plate of anything near the size engraved here, and there are at this time no engravers in the city who will attempt any large piece."

The English engravers claimed, however, that they were without rivals in the field of minute and fine letter engraving, as one of their number had engraved the Lord's Prayer in a circle somewhat larger than the space occupied by a ten-cent piece. Mr. Toppan, actuated by a feeling of national emulation, engraved not only the Lord's Prayer, but also the Ten Commandments in a yet smaller space. This is undoubtedly the most minute engraving ever made by hand on steel. By using a strong magnifying glass every letter is seen to be distinctly cut, and with perfect regularity.

In another letter to his family, speaking of the prospects of obtaining the work of the Bank of England, he writes:

"As yet nothing has been decided upon, but the prospects are so favorable as almost to assure us of success. Mr. Perkins dined a few days since with Sir Joseph Banks, who is president of the Bank Committee, and from the opinion he expressed with respect to the beauty, safety and ingenuity of the specimens shown him, there is no doubt of his influence being exerted in favor of their adoption. The specimens that have been presented by the English artists, and on which all their talent has been exerted, fell far short of the American in every respect, in the opinion of all who have seen both of them; and I am pleased to say there does not appear to be the least jealousy or the least hesitation among the artists and citizens in acknowledging the superiority and giving it as their wish that our plan should be adopted."

They were, however, disappointed in their expectations, the Bank Committee deciding not to use Mr. Perkins' patent at that time on account of the large price asked. In the mean time other bank work came to them on account of their acknowledged superiority, and the firm then established still exists in a flourishing condition in London.

After an absence in Europe of six years, during which he witnessed the funeral services of George III., the coronation of George IV. and the rejoicings in Paris over the birth of the Count de Chambord, the heir of the Bourbon line, Mr. Toppan returned to the United States, and in 1826 married Miss Laura A. Noxon, daughter of Dr. Robert Noxon, of Poughkeepsie, and granddaughter of Captain Lazarus Ruggles, who served in the Revolutionary army from Connecticut.

In 1828 he recommenced his career of bank-note engraving in Philadelphia, being joined by Mr. Draper,—Mr. Fairman being no longer living. For thirty years the firm, of which he was head, maintained the highest rank for beauty and excellence of work, until 1858, when the various bank-note engraving houses of the country united under the corporate name of the American Bank-Note Company. Mr. Toppan was chosen unanimously the first president, as his qualifications fitted him eminently for the position. After organizing and harmonizing the different parts of this large corporation, whose principal seat was in New York, with branches in Philadelphia, Boston, Cincinnati, New Orleans and Montreal, he resigned the presidency in 1860.

During his term of office Russia was the first foreign government to give a large order for bank-notes, recognizing the superiority of the American work; although some of the Canadian banks and some of the banks of the Swiss cantons had previously employed Toppan, Carpenter & Co., before the consolidation was effected, in 1858. Other foreign nations soon followed. Greece and Italy had certain series of their national notes engraved and printed in New York, Spain her revenue stamps. All the States of South America, which formerly sent to England for their bank-notes, now have recourse to the United States, while the distant empires of Japan and Australia complete the circuit of the globe.

Mr. Toppan was a member of various societies, a director of the Franklin Institute, of Philadelphia, a director of the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts and member of the Century Club, of New York. He was on terms of friendship with Irving, Bryant, Leslie, Newton, Marsh, Sully and other *literati* and artists.

In his views he was broad and liberal, conscientious in the discharge of duty, social and cheerful in disposition and was very generous, especially to young artists, many of whom he befriended. Being an excellent judge of art, he gathered around him a choice collection of paintings. His love for the beautiful in nature and art did not diminish with advancing years, as only a few days before his decease he was busy with his pencil sketching the picturesque scenes in the neighborhood of Florence, Italy, where he died in October, 1874.

SAMUEL JONES SPALDING.[1]

Samuel Jones Spalding was born in Lyndeborough, N. H., December 11, 1820, and was the son of Abijah and Hannah (Eastman) Spalding, of a family of Puritan descent, the first of the direct line being Edmund Spalden, who, for a time, lived in Braintree, Mass., and was made a freeman May 13, 1645, and was one of the original proprietors and one of the officers of the town of Chelmsford, in the same State,

[1] By Nathan N. Withington.



S. J. Spalding

which was incorporated May 29, 1655. The family is one which has given leading and educated men to many parts of the Union in every generation.

The early life of the subject of this sketch was like that of many New England boys of that period. In April, 1824, his family removed to Dunstable (now Nashua), where the Nashua Manufacturing Company had begun the excavation of their canal, and were laying the foundation of their factories; and it was the prospect of more remunerative employment which had tempted the father to leave his farm among the hills. The schools which the boy attended were the old district schools, and he has no remembrance of the earlier teachers, as there were new ones each term, and there was only one short term in winter and one in summer.

At the early age of ten he was put into the machine-shop of the cotton-mill, and worked there more or less, each year, until he began to fit for college. He united with the Olive Street Congregational Church February 1, 1835, and the same spring began to fit for college in a select school, taught by George Cook, afterward president of the University of Tennessee; and he studied under several masters until he entered Dartmouth College, in 1838, where his room-mate during the entire course was Milton Mason, now of California, and where he maintained a good standing for scholarship, and was elected to the Phi Beta Kappa Society, which was the only relic of college rank.

During his college term Mr. Spalding taught school during the vacations, and on his graduation, in 1842, he taught a select school at Medway, Mass., and he intended to devote two or three years to teaching, but the opportunity offering, he entered the Theological Seminary at Andover in November, 1842, and teaching during the leisure time of the course, graduated from the seminary September 4, 1845, having been approbated to preach April 8th preceding, by the Andover Association.

On the afternoon of the day of his graduation he was urged by Dr. Toppan, of Augusta, Me., to go into the service of the Maine Home Missionary Society, which invitation he accepted, and engaged in the work for some time. In March, 1846, he was invited to preach by a new congregation, in Salmon Falls, N. H., and he was ordained as pastor of the church October 28, 1846, and under his pastorate a new church edifice was begun in 1849, and was dedicated May 1, 1850.

Mr. Spalding was married at Medway, Mass., June 27, 1848, to Sarah Lydia Metcalf, daughter of Hon. Luther and Sarah (Phipps) Metcalf; but in little more than a year she died, and was buried in Medway with the son she had borne.

Early in the spring of 1851 Mr. Spalding received a call from the Whitefield Church in Newburyport to become its pastor, and two councils were called before he was dismissed from the pastorate of the Salmon Falls Church, and was installed over the Whitefield Church June 30th of the same year, the installation ceremonies being held in the North Church, of which Rev. Luther F. Dimmick was then pastor, the Whitefield Society worshipping in Market Hall. The work of building the Whitefield Church on State Street was begun soon after, and the edifice was dedicated March 2, 1852, when the sermon was by Rev. Lyman Beecher, D.D.

Mr. Spalding had married, for his second wife, Sarah Jane Parker Toppan, daughter of Hon. Edmund and Mary (Chase) Toppan, at Hampton, the residence of the widowed mother of the bride, on September 16, 1851, the marriage ceremony having been performed by Rev. R. D. Hitchcock, D.D.; and after boarding for a while they went to house-keeping, at 28 Green Street, on the 24th of August, 1852, where they have since resided, dispensing a generous hospitality in a home made attractive by a lady of brilliant conversational powers and extensive knowledge of books and men and women worth knowing. In this house Dr. and Mrs. Spalding have entertained many of the notable people of the time, and no hosts in Newburyport could entertain more delightfully than they. It was in the days of lyceums that they began their house-keeping in the fine, old-fashioned house on Green Street, and many of the noted lecturers were invited to partake of their hospitality.

Here came Horace Greeley, founder of the *New York Tribune* and leader of the generous and hopeful youth of America, simple, benevolent and brave. Professor and Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe were several times entertained by them, and on one occasion Mr. Stowe was met there by Miss Hannah F. Gould, just after "Uncle Tom's Cabin" had roused the reading world by its dramatic power. Miss Catharine Beecher, Mrs. Stowe's sister, was another guest. Charles Sumner passed a night in their house, and sat up till past midnight, looking over autographs, of which he had one of four of the best collections in the United States. John P. Hale, who went out of the Democratic party on the admission of Texas, and revolutionized the politics of his State, so that he was elected as a Free-Soil Senator, was another guest. Bayard Taylor, the poet, traveler and lyceum lecturer, was so pleased with his reception that in speaking of travel, he said: "New England against all the world for solid comfort! It has all the best of Old England, with the freedom and accommodation that make it set as easy as an old coat." Dr. I. I. Hayes, the Arctic explorer, was here hospitably received. Theologians of all shades and degrees have said grace at their table. Professors Phelps, Shedd, Park, Smyth, Tucker, Gulliver, Churchill, of Andover, and Professor Burrows, formerly of Andover and later of Oberlin, were here hospitably received. Rev. Drs. A. P. Peabody and James Freeman Clarke, Rev. Starr King and Bishop Clarke, of Rhode Island, were

among the guests. On one evening there were assembled at the tea table Rev. Dr. Withington, President White, of Cornell, Professor Vermilye, of Hartford, and Rev. Dr. Seth Sweetser, of Worcester, and there was a delightfully brilliant discussion. The kindly and considerate poet, John G. Whittier, and his sister Elizabeth, whom he describes so beautifully in "Snow Bound," with her large, sweet, asking eyes, liked to visit this home. Lucy Larcom, the friend of Whittier and his sister, and the poet of kindred muse, is a frequent guest. Miss Mary Abby Dodge (Gail Hamilton) has here had many a merry encounter with other visitors. Miss Harriet W. Preston, author of "Aspendale," Mrs. Adelaide Budd, a poet, and widow of the editor of one of the agricultural papers in California, George William Curtis, the accomplished orator, essayist, critic and editor, and other notabilities have found in Dr. Spalding and his accomplished wife the most agreeable and entertaining hosts, liberal and sympathetic, with all that was profound in thought, brilliant in wit and generous in humanity. Such a home could not but become noted for its hospitality and attractiveness among a wide circle of people worth knowing.

Mr. Spalding was appointed December 29, 1862, chaplain of the Forty-eighth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers by Colonel E. F. Stone, its commander, and sailed from New York for New Orleans on January 17, 1863. This regiment was in active service at the siege of Port Hudson, and at Donaldsonville, and returned to Boston, arriving Sunday morning, August 30, 1863. During his service as chaplain of this regiment Mr. Spalding was given a vacation by the Whitefield Church and Society, by whom the pulpit was filled during his absence.

The degree of Doctor of Divinity was conferred on Mr. Spalding by Ingham University in 1861, and the same degree was conferred by Dartmouth College in 1872. Dr. Spalding has been actively interested in schools and education from early manhood to the present time. He served on the school committees of Somersworth, Rollinsford and Salmon Falls, and was fifteen years prominent and useful as a member of the School Board of the city of Newburyport. He was elected trustee of South Berwick Academy in 1849, and resigned in 1851. November 13, 1856, he was elected trustee of Hampton Academy, and is still a member of that board. He was elected trustee and secretary of Dearborn Academy in Seabrook, N. H., December 5, 1855, and resigned as secretary in 1864, and is still one of the trustees. He became one of the trustees of Dummer Academy, in 1857, and secretary and treasurer of the board in 1864, but resigned as secretary in 1877, still retaining the office of treasurer of the board. He is also a member of the Massachusetts Historical and Genealogical Society. He has also taken an interest from the first in the Public Library, of which he is one of the permanent directors.

The resignation of Dr. Spalding as pastor was received and acted upon by the Whitefield Church November 2, 1883, to take effect on the first Sunday in January, 1884, unanimously passing resolutions of regret at parting with him as their pastor, of acknowledgment that the success of their church and its power for good in the community had been in a great measure due to the earnest labors and Christian example of their pastor, giving assurances of their confidence in his ability, integrity and piety, and earnestly hoping for his complete restoration to health, and many years of usefulness in the profession to which his life had been devoted. The parish also passed resolutions strongly regretting the separation of pastor and people, and of hopes that Dr. Spalding would retain his connection as a member of the church and society; and the council, also, which dismissed him, January 3, 1884, passed resolutions regretting the retirement of Dr. Spalding, and of high commendation of him, these resolutions having been drawn up by Rev. Charles Smith, of Andover, Rev. R. H. Seeley, D.D., of Haverhill (both since deceased), and Rev. D. T. Fiske, D.D., of Newburyport.

Under Dr. Spalding's ministrations the Whitefield Church was built up and flourished for many years; the membership increased, and additions and improvements were made to the church edifice which was erected on State Street early in his ministry. But it was not to his own church and society that his activities were limited, for Dr. Spalding has been one of the most public-spirited of the citizens of Newburyport, ready for every undertaking which would benefit its people, or make it attractive to strangers, either by beautifying it, or extending his own liberal hospitality, or encouraging merit in young men whose talents were yet untried. Whatever was for the advancement of any true interest of the city, moral, intellectual or material, he has been among the first to raise his voice and give a helping hand. While the lyceum lectures continued to attract audiences, Dr. Spalding was a leader in that enterprise, and entertained many of the lecturers at his own attractive house. He was one of those most active in forming the Tuesday Evening Club, a literary and social organization which has continued since 1870, and is still flourishing and vigorous; and scarcely an enterprise of any kind which promised well for the city of his adoption but has received the hearty support of Dr. Spalding, and he has refused it to none to which his attention has been called.

Dr. Spalding is vigorous in body and mind, having the *mens sana in corpore sano*, sound, wholesome and manly. He is a good preacher, and has remarkable powers as a debater, and writes with facility and force. He has the energy of a man of affairs, and a shrewd common-sense which makes him successful in what he undertakes, and restrains him from undertaking what is impracticable. But his most marked



Charles C. Dame

charaeteristic is a catholic and tender sympathy, responsive to the intellectual, moral and physical wants and needs of others. It is this trait which has made him in such great demand for conducting funeral services, not only of members of his own congregation, but of very many others in Newburyport and its vicinity. The Episcopal Church has the burial service set down in the prayer-book, but the Congregational minister has the much more difficult and embarrassing task of making remarks and offering a prayer which shall not violate the truth nor the feelings of the surviving friends of the deceased. Dr. Spalding has the uncommon gift of saying enough and not too much, of not omitting what ought to be said, and of adding nothing to the truth, so that he has had calls from those who had no claim upon him but that of his generous nature and sympathetic feelings. It is this trait of sympathy which makes him excel in debate. He knows when he has those whom he addresses with him, and what arguments or appeals will affect each member and the whole body; and in the school committee room, with the trustees of the several academies of whose boards he is and has been a member, or in the association of ministers, or the church conferences, he is always a leader, and he either carries the question he advocates or makes it appear that it ought to succeed. His has been an active and busy life, and yet he has found time to encourage the young who are struggling for an education, and who have found in him a sympathizing friend. His life in Newburyport has been a beneficent one, both as a religious teacher and pastor of a progressive Congregational Church, and as an active citizen ready to raise his voice and employ his hand in every good word and work.

HON. CHARLES CHASE DAME.[1]

Hon. Charles Chase Dame rightfully receives an honorable place in this work, not because he is a son of Newburyport, but because, since his young manhood, he has been identified with the interests of this city and because he has here won and preserved a high reputation as a wise counselor, a trustful, public servant and as a man of sterling, irreproachable character.

Charles C. Dame is a descendant of John Damé, (formerly spelled Dam and Damme), who came from England in 1633 with Captain Thomas Wiggin and settled in what is now Dover, N. H. John Damé signed the celebrated protest of 1641; was one of the first deacons of the First Church in Dover (1633) and was prominent in the public affairs of this early colony on the Piscataqua.

Judge Dame, of Rochester, N. H.; Jonathan Dame, for many years a bank cashier in Dover, N. H.; and Harriet F. Dame, who received the thanks of the New Hampshire Legislature for her tender services to the sick and wounded in the field for four years, 1861–65, are also of this family.

Charles C. Dame[8] is of the eighth generation from John Dame, the original emigrant, viz.: John[1], John[2], John[3], Richard[4], Benjamin[5], Samuel[6], Joseph[7], Charles C.[8] Samuel[6] and Olive (Tuttle) Dame resided in Wakefield, N. H., where their children were born. Joseph[7], their eldest son, was born May 1, 1784, who, by his wife, Satira, had eight children, viz.: Mary Ann[8], born April 10, 1817; Charles C.[8], born June 5, 1819; Loammi B.[8], born November 17, 1821; Joseph Calvin[8], born March 19, 1824; Luther[8], born March 3, 1826; Marshall Morrill[8], born July 9, 1828; Satira A.[8], born December 20, 1830; and Anna Chase, born May 14, 1833.

Charles Chase Dame[8], married Frances A. Little of Newbury, Mass., September 1, 1842. They have had four children, two of whom survive, the others having died in childhood.

Mr. Dame was born June 5, 1819, at Kittery Point, District of Maine, Commonwealth of Massachusetts, where his parents resided. His father, born in Wakefield, N. H., was the first person in that town to enlist in the War of 1812, and was stationed at Fort McCleary, Kittery Point. After his military service he settled in Kittery and married, December 2, 1814, Satira, daughter of Joshua T. Chase, of Kittery, who was a man of note and enjoyed the confidence and suffrages of the inhabitants, for representative to the General Court at Boston for the seven successive years previous to the separation, and to the House of Representatives in Maine for the nine years next after the separation.

On the maternal side, Mr. Dame is a direct descendant of Aquila Chase[1], of Newbury, Mass. He was one of the first settlers of Hampton (1639), but in 1646 removed to Newbury, and received several grants of land there. He was the first pilot on Merrimac River, and was a master mariner. Thomas Chase[2], son of Aquila[1] and Anne (Wheeler) Chase, a resident of Newbury, was the father of Rev. Josiah Chase[3], born November 30, 1713 (H. C. 1738), who was ordained as the first minister over Spruce Creek Parish, Kittery, September 19, 1750. He married, in 1743, Sarah Tufts, who was a great-granddaughter of Governor Bradstreet. Joseph Tufts Chase[5], the maternal grandfather of Charles C. Dame, was a grandson of Rev. Josiah, who for thirty-eight years was the minister at Spruce Creek.

Joseph Dame[7] was a school-master, and taught for several years, prior and subsequent to his marriage, at New Castle, N. H., to which town the family moved when Charles C. was seven years of age. The family returned to Kittery Point four years after, and at the age of eleven years the lad, Charles C., began life for himself. He worked at honorable employment, and attended the usual winter school of that time. He was a student, a boy-farmer, a clerk in a store and a youthful mariner, as opportunity presented. At the

[1] By Oliver Ayer Roberts.

age of fourteen years he attended the High School at Portsmouth, N. H., for one year. The winter after he was sixteen he undertook the profession of his father, and taught school at Kittery Foreside, Maine. His teaching had quickened his own desire for more knowledge, and at the age of eighteen years he entered the South Newmarket Academy and pursued an academic education. He subsequently taught in Brentwood, N. H., and in June, 1839, came by request to Newbury, the home of his ancestors, and took charge of the school at the "Upper Green." Here he remained two years, when he was invited to take charge of a grammar school in Lynn, Mass., which he accepted on the 7th of February, 1841. Another promotion awaited him; for, May 2, 1842, he was elected principal of the South Male Grammar School in Newburyport, Mass. He was soon, however, transferred by the school committee of this city to the Brown High School. His health being somewhat impaired by his continued application to private study and teaching, he resigned on the 22d of February, 1849, and made a voyage to the Pacific shore, stopping for a short time in South America. He was absent two years. Returning to Newburyport, with his health and strength fully restored, he was invited in the fall of 1851 to take charge of the English Department of the Chauncy Hall School, Boston, – then, as now, one of the most noted and successful private schools in the country. Here he taught for nine years, but resigned in 1860, and opened a law-office in Boston, having been admitted in the county of Suffolk to practice in the courts of Massachusetts on the 8th of September, 1859. He was admitted to practice in the Circuit Court of the United States, District of Massachusetts, October 17, 1859, and as an attorney and counselor in the Supreme Court of the United States March 22, 1876. He retained his residence in Newburyport while teaching in Lynn and Boston, and also while practicing law in the latter city. He was appointed by President Andrew Johnson collector of internal revenue for the Fifth District of Massachusetts,—a position which he held under the successive administrations of Presidents Johnson, Grant, Hayes, Garfield and Arthur, until August 1, 1883. The field of his official care was greatly enlarged in 1875 by the addition by consolidation to the Fifth District of the Sixth, Seventh and a part of the Fourth Districts of Massachusetts. During his fifteen years of public service as collector of internal revenue, though the average collections were one million of dollars per year, the government did not lose a dollar by his administration, nor were there any discrepancies in his accounts. At the conclusion of his service his accounts were promptly adjusted and settled, Mr. Dame having proved himself a model officer in both method and manner. The great increase in his duties and cares, occasioned by the consolidation of 1875, caused him to entirely forego the practice of law until 1883, when he opened a law-office in Newburyport, where he still resides and pursues his chosen profession. His residence is on the easterly side of High Street, between Bromfield and Marlboro' Streets. It is a large, comfortable dwelling,—the same in which he established his home in 1842, and the same house in which he tarried when he came to Newburyport in June, 1839. He is a director of the Merchants' National Bank, a trustee of the Institution for Savings and a member of the various educational and philanthropic institutions of the city. He is a member of the Veteran Artillery Company of Newburyport, also of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Boston. He was the commander of the former in 1870, and is at present judge advocate.

Mr. Dame has been interested in national and State politics and especially in the welfare of his adopted city. He has been a member of the School Board of Newburyport, of its Common Council and of its Board of Aldermen. In 1886 he was the mayor of the city. His administration was characterized by conservative action, careful expenditure and a studied attention to the best interests of the people. He was elected to the State Senate in 1868, to represent the Fourth Essex District. Originally he was a Whig, but at the formation of the Republican party he gave it his adhesion and has since been identified with it. He was a member of the Republican State Committee for several years prior to his appointment as collector, but under the order of President Hayes, in regard to officers of the national government identifying themselves with local politics, he resigned that position. He was replaced upon that committee in the year 1886.

Mr. Dame has been prominently identified with the Masonic Fraternity, and has given to its interests his best thought and strength. He became a member of Revere Lodge, in Boston, in 1857; of St. Andrew's Royal Arch Chapter, and of Boston Commandery K. T., in 1858, and of Boston Council of Royal and Select Masters, in 1859. He received the Ineffable Degrees in Raymond Lodge of Perfection, Lowell, Mass., in 1862; in Raymond Council of Princes of Jerusalem, in Mt. Calvary Chapter of Rose Croix, and in Massachusetts Consistory, all in Lowell, Mass., in 1862. On the 22d day of May, 1863, he was made an honorary member of the Supreme Council of Sovereign Grand Inspectors-General of the Thirty-third and last Degree of the Northern Masonic Jurisdiction of the United States of America—an honor to which his valuable services to Freemasonry well entitled him.

He was Worshipful Master of Revere Lodge in 1860 and 1861, High Priest of St. Andrew's Royal Arch Chapter in 1861 and 1862, having served as King in 1860 and as Scribe in 1859, and previously held subordinate offices in that Chapter. He was Grand King of the Grand Royal Arch Chapter of Massachusetts in 1862. Having received the Orders of Knighthood in Boston



Albert C. Titcomb

Commandery K. T. in 1858, he was the Eminent Commander of that Body in 1866–67.

Sir Charles C. Dame was Commander of Hugh De Payens Commandery K. T., of Melrose, while it worked under a dispensation, and by his efforts in its behalf won the esteem and love of all his associates. He is an honorary member of that Body. He is an honorary member of all the Masonic Bodies, Lodge, Chapter and Commandery, in his adopted city, and in 1867, when a new lodge of A. F. and A. M. was constituted in Georgetown, Mass., the Brethren interested gave it the name of Charles C. Dame Lodge. He was the Illustrious Commander of Boston Consistory, A. and A. Rite, in the years 1863, 1864 and 1865. He held the office of Deputy Grand Master in the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts, A. F. and A. M., in 1862, 1863 and 1864, and was elected Grand Master of Masons in Massachusetts in 1865, 1866 and 1867. He became, by unanimous election, in 1881, a member of the Board of Directors of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts for two years, and has been continued upon that Board until the present time.

December 10, 1884, at the establishment of the Masonic Education and Charity Trust, he was elected a Trustee thereof, for the term of seven years from January 1, 1884, and at the organization of the Board of Trustees he was elected its Secretary, a position which he still occupies.

He has also served on prominent special committees of the Grand Lodge, to whose work he always brought that sound judgment and conservative action for which he is so well known.

In no other position which he has held were his anxieties and responsibilities greater than during his term of three years as Grand Master of Masons in Massachusetts. The Grand Lodge had previously voted that its Temple should be built (the foundation was laid), and that the debt should be paid, but it provided no means with which to do either. M. W. Charles C. Dame continued the building, on the site purchased and on the foundation laid, through two years of business depression and of ceaseless anxiety, when, his own resources being exhausted, nothing but herculean labor and an heroic soul could prevent immediate and absolute disaster. The friends of the Masonic Institution, by the efforts of the Grand Master, gave their assistance, and at his solicitation R. W. Sereno D. Nickerson became a member of the Board of Directors, and entered upon the duty of surmounting the difficulties which embarrassed the Grand Lodge.

The work of building did not cease, and the property of the Grand Lodge did not suffer. It was a long, hard struggle, in which Brethren with brave hearts and ample resources gathered around and supported their Grand Master in this work—the greatest the Fraternity ever undertook in Massachusetts. In 1867 the Temple, on the corner of Tremont and Boylston streets, was dedicated, with elaborate and solemn services, in the presence of President Andrew Johnson, of distinguished Freemasons from different States, and of an immense concourse of Massachusetts Brethren. M. W. Charles C. Dame triumphed in the completion of the Temple, a triumph second only to that when, in 1883, the entire debt of the Grand Lodge was wiped out.

The character and ability of Hon. Charles Chase Dame are apparent from the foregoing facts.

Of limited opportunities in boyhood, like many others, working his way upward in the world, persistent, studious, honorable, he has attained a place in the esteem of the community which commands respect, veneration and love. Unassuming, and, to some extent, diffident, he possesses powers of execution, as well as of judgment, which cannot be easily baffled. True to his sense of right, calm amidst anxieties, manifold in resources, fearless of opposition, generous and kind, his great rule in life seems to have been, "To do to others as he would be done by." He is respected near and far by all who have met him; he is beloved by all who share an intimate acquaintance with him. In form he is the embodiment of health and strength; of mind, clear and logical; of heart, tender and sympathizing; honorable in every relation, true under every circumstance. Such a man is Charles Chase Dame, and is, therefore, entitled to an honorable place in the history of the city and county.

ALBERT CUSHING TITCOMB.[1]

Titcomb is an honorable name in the annals of our town. William was the first, coming from Newbury, England, on the ship "Hercules," in 1634. The next year he was at Newbury, with Rev. Thomas Parker, founding a town bearing the name of their former residence. Many of their associate settlers were from the same neighborhood. His name appears as an original land-holder. He was a farmer; a man of education and means; was a freeman in 1642, selectman in 1646, representative to General Court in 1655 and always influential in church and town affairs. In the long contest between the majority of the First Church and Mr. Parker, on church government, he was active on the popular side—that the people, not the pastor, should rule. Mr. Parker had been willing *to permit* such control; they claimed it of *right*. The Puritans were jealous of all encroachments upon civil or ecclesiastical freedom. Bancroft says: "They asked no absolution; they raised no altar; they invoked no saints; they paid no tithes; they saw in the priest nothing more than a man. The church, as a place of worship, was nothing but a meeting-house. They dug no graves in consecrated ground; they married without a minister and buried their dead without a prayer." Cherishing such ideas, they rebelled against authority not confirmed by the people, and went so far as to notify Mr. Parker that they had

[1] By George J. L. Colby.

voted his suspension. The court being appealed to however, sustained the pastor, and William Titcomb, with others, was fined. He died in 1676, leaving children born to him by his wife, Joanna Bartlett. By his will his son Penuel was his heir.

Early the Titcombs owned land in what is now the centre of the town, back of Oak Hill Cemetery, and on Greenleaf street, where the Boston and Maine freight station stands, and in process of time they had estates in other parts of Byfield, West Newbury and Newburyport, as they are now called. When the water-side became the chief place of business, we find them both below and above Market Square, owning wharves and stores. William, many years a revenue officer, was located just below where the Custom-House now stands. Josiah was just above the Market, on Broadway, when it was a broad way, before encroachments had narrowed it. He had a fine mansion at the head of what was then Titcomb's wharf, where he gave the most fashionable parties, the gentlemen wearing wigs and short clothes with silver knee and shoe-buckles; the ladies wearing caps and ruffles, after their fashion; and all drinking punch from the silver cups common in that day. There, too, the servant girls received their lovers at the back-doors, and charmed them in the corners of the big fire-places o' winter nights beside the oak logs on huge andirons. It is only about thirty years since fire devoured the building. Near by was the blacksmith's shop belonging to the gallant Colonel Moses Titcomb, one of the great men of colonial times. On the opposite side of the road still stands the Hodge house, which belonged to Michael Hodge, who married one of Josiah's daughters. Above, near the east corner of Green and Merrimac Streets, was the residence of the redoubtable General Jonathan Titcomb, one of the heroes of the Revolution, who thought he was entitled to sleep o' nights, and when a company beating a bass-drum heeded not his order to depart in peace, having only his night-clothes about his person, he rushed into the street and thrust his trusty sword through the drum-head, silencing it forever. On Market Street was the home of Master George and Honorable Enoch, the birthplace of generations of Titcombs. Then there was Samuel, after whom Titcomb Street was named, living on State Street, where the John Carr house now stands, who owned the whole square from High to Harris, and from State to Green Street, with the exception of the site of the Wolfe Tavern. Captain John Buntin married his daughter Rebecca, and with the bride received the house-lot on the south corner of the square named, where three generations of Buntins have had a home. Samuel was a rich merchant, and had estates in West Newbury and Pelham, and Salem, New Hampshire.

We may not stop for all the details. What we have said of William, the root of the prolific tree that has extended its branches to all sections of the country, from Maine to the Pacific, and from the Lakes to the Gulf of Mexico, is true of them all. They are a race sturdy and strong, excelling in mental culture, furnishing teachers, preachers and business men of high character. They have been eminent in the churches, inclined to godly works and conversation, thrifty and wealthy above the average of families, and as brave and fearless defenders of liberty and right as the country has ever had.

Our space does not admit of the names alone of the many Titcombs who won renown in war, but no one of them stands higher than that of Colonel Moses, who, nevertheless, according to the usage of the times, was a slave-holder. We find under date of 1739, William Johnson, shipwright, "giving, granting, selling and conveying to Moses Titcomb, his heirs and assigns forever, a certain negro man named Cambridge, of twenty-one years," and affirming that the "said Moses Titcomb, his heirs and administrators, shall, by virtue of this deed, have, hold, use and improve the said negro man Cambridge, during the whole of his natural life." Colonel Moses was born in 1700, to William Titcomb, whose wife was Anne Cottle, and she was also a slave-owner, for in the graveyard of the First Church of Newbury can now be seen a head-stone to one of Mrs. Cottle's slaves. The Cottles lived on what is now Bromfield Street, formerly "Cottle's Lane," and were quite rich. Anne was one of the beauties of the town, traditions say. Then Colonel Moses married Merriam Currier, and his daughter became the wife of Nicholas Tracy, whose house was what is now the Public Library building—a man of great wealth, of many estates on the land, of whole fleets of ships on the seas, and also of unbounded liberality, public spirit and patriotism. We see, therefore, how Colonel Moses Titcomb, himself a blacksmith, with his fires burning at the head of the first wharf below Green Street, had a use for men servants and maid servants, and how he could draw funds for his uses in war.

From the portrait of him, as we have seen it, he was a very handsome man, large, stately, with broad shoulders, abundant dark hair, full black eyes and a lovely mouth; he did credit to the pretty Anne Cottle, his mother, and was one of the most popular men and military leaders that Essex County ever produced. He was the best type of those whom nature designs for noblemen. With every muscle developed in the active labors of his business, he stood, towering above the average man like a Greek or Roman athlete of ancient days. When in his military career, his soldiers needed amusement, as they tired in the delays in the siege of Louisbourg, he could beat any man in the regiment in pitching heavy quoits, throw any one in wrestling, excel any in lifting, and was as fearless as he was strong. In that war, under Gen. Pepperell, holding commission as major, from his own means, he furnished a battery of five forty-two pounders, called Titcomb's battery. Hutchinson says: "It did as great execution as any

battery in the reduction of the city;" and his readiness to engage in the most hazardous part of the service "was acknowledged and applauded." He returned from the victorious contest with high honors, bringing as a memorial trophy the bomb-shell that now decorates the stone post at the corner of Middle and Independent Streets. Later, in 1755, he was colonel of a regiment, on the extreme right of Gen. Johnson's line, in the battle of Lake George. As he approached the enemy's breast-works, and was near thereto, for the preservation of his men he ordered them to lie down, where they were covered from view by the bushes, while, the better to direct them, he stood behind a pine tree, an Indian, creeping across a swamp to the rear, fired upon and killed him. As his men retreated, his body was never recovered.

Col. Titcomb was a member of the First Church (now Unitarian), and a close friend of his pastor, Rev. John Lowell, who preached a farewell sermon when the regiment left and a funeral sermon on the return. His language could only be justified by Col. Titcomb's fame as a man and a soldier, for he spoke of his loss as a national calamity which would be mourned by the whole country.

Among other military men of the family we may not forget General Jonathan Titcomb, who was also a Christian soldier—an elder in the Presbyterian Church. He was born in 1727, and greatly distinguished himself in the battle of Rhode Island, under General Sullivan. Lafayette declared it the best-fought battle during the Revolutionary War, and said that the conduct of Generals Lovell and Titcomb, commanding the Massachusetts troops, was deserving of "high praise;" in fact, it was a victory wrung from the very jaws of defeat. General Titcomb was a member of the convention that framed the Constitution; was Representative of the first Legislature after the evacuation of Boston; was first naval officer of this port; and was chief of the committee of reception when Washington was here, in 1790. His death occurred in 1817.

Under General Titcomb in the battle of Rhode Island was Major Enoch, born in 1752, who died in 1814, full of honors, for few men were ever held in higher esteem by the town. He was an exemplary Christian—deacon of the First Presbyterian Church, and afterwards of the Second Presbyterian, of which he was one of the founders, almost its father; at least he was its most liberal friend; he gave a thousand dollars towards building the "meeting-house," and ceased his contributions for its support only at his death. It was through him that Timothy Dexter gave the bell that now calls the people to their weekly worship. As a magistrate, which he was for many years, it became his duty to sentence Timothy to the house of correction for "imbibing" too freely; Dexter rode to the prison in his own coach, as Jonathan Plummer, his poet, wrote, his horses "champing their silver bits." His sentence was soon remitted by the kindly intervention of Esquire Enoch, whom he would gladly have remunerated. When the money was declined, he gave it for the belt, which was cast in England, with Timothy's name on the rim of it as donor. Hon. Enoch held many positions of honor and trust. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention; a Representative and a Senator in the Legislature for a long time; and for twenty-eight successive years town treasurer. He declined further elections only when failing health warned him of approaching dissolution. The profound respect of the people for this man, who had served "his day and generation" in peace and war, in church and state, was indicated at his funeral, when the head of the funeral procession was at the grave on Burying Hill, before the last of the mourners had left the house on Market Street. He died in 1814, aged sixty-two.

Hon. Enoch was the father of Francis, who married Miss Sallie D. Dodd, of Salem. He was a silversmith, learned his trade of William Moulton, and was a long time in his employ. Francis was the father of seven children—five sons and two daughters—all of whom have passed through "the gates ajar" and gone to their final rest, except Albert C. Titcomb, born in 1831, whom we have chosen as the living representative of this family, and herewith present his portrait.

Albert C. obtained the rudiments of a common-school education in his native town, and was left to finish it by intercourse with the people and by travels and observations in this "wide, wide world." He was one of the pupils of Masters Coolidge, Caldwell and Read, who managed the "monitorial" school on the west end of the Mall, from which he graduated to begin life for himself at fourteen, in the dry-goods store of Joseph F. Toppan on State Street. After that he was clerking in Boston, two years, when, in 1849, the California gold fever, which carried off so many of our young men, struck him. He sailed for San Francisco, from this port, in the brig "Charlotte," Captain William Bartlett, paying fifty dollars passage money and working out the remaining fifty dollars before the mast; the voyage was around Cape Horn, and required just six months. He was an argonaut seeking the golden fleece. On the 23d day of July, 1849, he landed in a strange city without money and without friends to help him. He remained in California two years, mining and clerking; then he sailed for Relejo, Central America. Here he invested his funds in the hotel business, and in purchasing coffee and shipping the same to San Francisco. The prospect of success was good, as the expectation was that Relejo would become an important place; but suddenly it was left off "the main road of travel" by the opening of the Port of Virgin Bay, which shortened the distance, *via* Lake Nicaragua, by over one hundred miles. The stampede that followed left Relejo desolate, and the investments Mr. Titcomb had there made worthless. The spring of 1852 found him

twenty years old, at home, somewhat broken in health, but not subdued in spirit.

His next venture was in the machine-shop of the Bartlett Mills, under Herbert A. Ingraham, master mechanic, agreeing to work for six months without compensation, to learn a trade. At the end of two months Mr. John Balch, agent of the corporation, pleased with his industry and skill, put his name on the pay-roll at forty-two cents a day; and when his six months had expired, he was in a machine-shop in Roxbury for one year; and thence went into the shop of the Old Colony and Fall River Railroad till 1855. That ended his career as a machinist. Next he was engaged for a traveling salesman with Robinson, Potter & Co., manufacturing jewelers, at Providence, R. I., for two years. After that he was in the same line of business for himself in the South and West, with a wholesale and retail store, for jewelry and fancy goods, at Mobile, which he regarded as his permanent residence. He did a prosperous business, and made many friends in Alabama and was a member of the Mobile Cadets, which was composed of the *élite* of the city—the flower of Southern chivalry, ready for the fight when the booming shells on Sumter's walls announced the opening of the Rebellion. He had but little time to decide which side he would take; nor did he hesitate. "I am Northern born and Northern bred," he said. "My ancestors were among the first settlers of New England, and every war for American liberty has found them in the field; I go to my kindred." He experienced some difficulty in getting himself and wife out of the country, and a property of more than twenty thousand dollars was abandoned to confiscation. Again he was to begin the world anew; and this time with a debt of many thousands owed in New York. But he was not appalled. An honest purpose and a brave heart remained, and they carried him through. He met his creditors, who knew him, believed and trusted him; and in 1863 he was re-established in the same business in the West Indies—at the Islands of St. Thomas and Curaçoa, the latter a free port, so near the coast as to have a large trade with South America, which was then opened to him. His receipts were in gold, which was at a high premium at home, and he was soon able to redeem his outstanding notes. All the demands of his creditors were paid in gold. "I took your gold from you," he said, "and I return your gold to you with the premium that goes with it." They receipted his bills and sent him complimentary letters, of which he is justly proud, as will be his children after him.

It is with a degree of admiration that we follow him thus far in life; see him a poor boy, steady, industrious, honest; watch him working his passage around Cape Horn; seeking wealth in the golden sands; overcoming difficulties in Central America; resisting Rebellion at the South; retrieving his fortunes in the West Indies; re-establishing financial credit in New York; and trusting to his own hands, head and heart in making the road to success before he traveled over it. All along he cherished his first love for California, and as soon as circumstances would permit he was away to the State where his hopes and affections centered. For seven years, from 1868, he was of the firm of Titcomb & Williams, wholesale dealers in watches, diamonds and jewelry in San Francisco; and after that for twelve years he was the sole proprietor of the house, the business increasing till his sales reached $250,000 per annum. He became a leader in his trade, and was president of the Wholesale Jewelry Association of San Francisco. Chiefly his business was along the Pacific Coast, from the Mexican ports on the south to Washington Territory on the north. Over the waters it reached the Sandwich Islands, and in the interior it was known as far as Utah, which he visited himself, making the acquaintance of John W. Young, son of Brigham Young, the late president of the Mormons, and also of H. B. Clawson, the manager of the great central house, "Zion's Co-operative Mercantile Institution."

He employed commercial travelers and personally visited the large cities. Since 1849, Mr. Titcomb has traveled forty times to California. Once he went around the Horn, six times through Central America and *via* Panama, and the remaining trips across the continent overland by rail.

In his business he has visited nearly all the States of the Union.

Twice has he married,—first to Miss Ellen Graves in 1860, a lovely woman who bore him two sons, one of whom died early and the other, William Graves Titcomb, is now employed in the office of the Waltham Watch Company, Boston. She died in 1882.

Two years later he married Hitta Louise, the accomplished daughter of Mr. Amos C. Clement, of Plaistow, New Hampshire, by whom he has one son, Albert Clement, and an infant daughter.

He is now retired from active business, enjoying his vacation in one of the most pleasant homes on High Street, formerly occupied by the late Rev. Dr. Morss, the well-known rector of St. Paul's Episcopal Church.

He is himself, as were his parents, of the same religious faith, and given to Christian benevolence and the propagation of the truth as he has received it. While in San Francisco he was one of the reincorporators of the Young Men's Christian Association and one of the foremost of its friends in aiding Evangelist Moody to raise eighty-three thousand dollars to free it from debt.

The activity of his past has unfitted him for a life of indolence, and as heretofore he makes himself of value to the community in which he resides.

He was largely instrumental in the reorganization of the Newburyport Veteran Association.

At the recent municipal election he was elected by



P. H. V. Blumpoey

the largest majority as alderman from Ward Four on the Independent Citizens' ticket.

Mr. Titcomb is a thorough sportsman, passionately fond of his dog and gun and the pleasures and excitement of the chase.

In his travels through the length and breadth of this vast continent he has had many and varied opportunities to gratify this taste and has killed nearly every species of game to be found in America.

To the devotees of the gun, whose opportunities for bird-shooting have been limited to the waters of this and surrounding parts, an abstract from an article which appeared in the *San Francisco Chronicle* of January, 1883, will seem remarkable. We quote:—"On Thursday last Mr. A. C. Titcomb bagged one hundred and forty-two ducks in one day that were retrieved, not including a large number that fell in tules and were lost. This bag included seventy-two canvas-backs, fifty-two sprigs, four mallards and fourteen teal. It is doubtful if Mr. Titcomb's record has ever been beaten on this coast."

We know of no man better calculated to enjoy social and domestic life. In the prime of his days, possessed of large means, active, public-spirited, actuated by Christian charity, with an open hand and an open heart, alive to the misfortunes of others and the sufferings of friends, he attaches to himself all within the sphere of his usefulness.

A cleaner, gentler or more kindly nature never man possessed. It is surprising that one could have been so much about the world, seeing the rough and dark as well as the light and sunny sides, and kept his mind so clean and his heart so pure and childlike. Still, there is nothing weak or effeminate about him, for in the defense of an opinion or the honor of a friend he is as bold as a lion. It is true of him that "his flag is white because 'tis pure, but not because his soul is weak."

With an open countenance and a pleasant smile, he wears a modest and unruffled demeanor and is always the same, whatever events befall, ready for every good word and work.

With feminine delicacy and tenderness, he is still the most manly of men. Large and liberal in his views, he exhibits no envy or jealousy; rejoicing with the glad, sympathizing with the sorrowing, he is a man to be loved, one who will sacrifice for a friend or forgive an enemy. He reminds us of the words of Whittier on Joseph Sturge:

"The very gentlest of all human natures,
He joined to courage strong,
And love, outstretching unto all God's creatures
With sturdy hate of wrong.

"Tender as woman; manliness and meekness
In him were so allied
That those who judged him by his strength or weakness,
Saw but a single side.

"Men failed, betrayed him; but his zeal seemed nourished
By failure and by fall;
So large the faith in human kind he cherished,
And in God's love for all."

PHILIP HENRY BLUMPEY.[1]

Philip Henry Blumpey is a merchant, and was apparently born at the place he has filled and does now occupy, than which there is none more honorable or more useful. There is always a ruling class in society—in the world, differing according to the grade of civilization reached. In a barbarous age it is the aristocracy of the soldiers; and the point of the sword writes the law and determines the sovereignty. Next after comes the aristocracy of birth, and men claim to rule simply because they were born; above that is the aristocracy of gold, and money governs. To-day the merchants—the men who buy and sell, collect and distribute—are the most prominent, respectable and powerful class. They include not alone the man of the shop, but the banker, the money-changers, the loaners, the manufacturers, the owners of ships, the builders of cities and the dealers in all sorts of goods and values. The occupation of the merchant is a continued school, and hence in the large cities they are the most distinguished and influential men of the land. Congress may make laws, but they make Congress—which is obedient to this will; and so in the end are the people, the foundation of all. When, therefore, we say a man is a merchant, we say what is most honorable to him; and so we mean to place it in the case of Philip H. Blumpey, who is of French origin, his father coming from those bold and sturdy religionists, the Huguenots, driven out of France by persecutions, who have in themselves and their descendants added materially to the best population in America. They are in all parts of the United States, their names often indicating their origin.

The father of Mr. Blumpey, in the island of Guernsey, in the English Channel, was known as Philip Blanc, the surname being the same as the loftiest peak of the Alps. When eleven years old he left his native island for the life of a seaman on the bounding billows. Shortly he is seen on board of an English ship, where the sailors corrupted the name in its use, and ever since it has been called Blumpey. The father came to Newburyport some eighty years ago, a very handsome young man, with black hair and bright, penetrating black eyes. He stood little less than six feet in height, was strong and wiry. He married Ruth Rowe, of Hampton, N. H., but continued a seaman till well along in life, when he was in the employ of the Pipers, riggers, on Brown's Wharf, and frequently with Moses Brown, in the care and repair of his shipping. He died at eighty-four years.

The family lived at different times on Pond Street, near the hay-scales, then standing to the east of the present railroad station, on the corner of Birch and Summer Streets, and in Temple Street. Here they were when, in 1819, a fire broke out in the stable standing where the present one is, that swept away several buildings including the house where the

[1] By George J. L. Colby.

Blumpeys lived, from which the parents escaped, saving the life of their child, Philip H., then an infant. Their little savings were lapped up by the flames, and penniless in the world, it was too late for them to recover their situation in a day when the accumulations of money by hard work were slow.

Philip H. Blumpey, therefore, started life as the child "of poor but respectable parents," but destined to overcome his accidents by persevering industry and faithfulness to duty. He had the benefit of our common schools, of the teachings of Master Jonathan Cooledge, in the West Male Grammar School, and of Master George Titcomb in the South Grammar School, on School Street. He left these institutions, educational and correctional, as most boys found them, at the age of thirteen years, to learn the art of making sails with Thomas H. Boardman. The learning of a trade was deemed a good start in life. We have noticed this in the records of old wills, where more was given to one and less of property to another, as they were without a trade or had learned one. They believed with the Arabs that "he who brings up a son without a trade, brings him up to be a thief." So when Mr. Boardman died, at the end of two years, it was deemed so great a misfortune to Philip H. Blumpey, that an old merchant sympathetically asked him: "What will you do now?" The lad had lost a friend, but not his courage, and replied: "There yet remains some place for me in the world." His proper place he soon reached. For two years, or to 1836, he was a clerk in the grocery store of Isaac H. Boardman, in Market Square, at the head of Greenleaf's wharf; and after that, for eight years, he was in the grocery store of John Osgood, on the corner of Liberty street. With the experience of ten years, in 1844, he commenced business for himself on the corner of State and Temple Streets, and there he has remained for forty-four years, quietly earning annually more than he spent, which is the real secret to wealth. Some people predicted evil to him, because the location was away from the centre of trade. They mistook the fact that the man makes the place, not the place the man. The first year his gross sales were $10,000, third year $25,000, and later, when prices advanced during the Rebellion, they reached $60,000, and the average of the whole forty-four years has been $40,000, which is a very good retail business out of the large cities. His success has been in this: that he was an expert in the quality of his goods, and would sell only the best; then he so established his integrity that his customers believed they were buying what he said he was selling; and their confidence he has never lost. He prospered, therefore, because industry and fair dealing deserves to prosper.

But this has not been his only business, or the most profitable. Twenty-five years ago there was scarcely a rich man in the town who had not become so by investments in shipping; and in 1855 he turned his attention to navigation, taking an interest in the ship "George West," Robert Couch, master and part owner. She sought a cotton freight in New Orleans. Captain Couch fixed his terms and laid up the ship in the Mississippi till his figures were reached. At Liverpool she was taken for China on French account, and made a very handsome voyage, returning to England, where she sold at a high price, when gold was at from seventy to eighty per cent. premium. It was one of those rare chances where the value of the ship is buried beneath her income. His second venture was with the ship "Josiah L. Hale," sailing first under command of Edward L. Graves, and later under Capt. David P. Page, in cotton carrying. His third was in the ship "Tennyson," which, returning from India, loaded with jute, went down in a storm in the Indian Ocean, and Capt. Graves and his crew, except four or five men, were swallowed in the sea. The saved floated on the cabin-house several days without food or water before they were rescued by a passing ship. His next ship was named "Whittier," for our New England poet, Capt. William Swap in charge. She was lost on a coral reef on the coast of China, in going from one port to another. His last was the ship "Nearchus," Capt. Pierce, named for the famous Greek admiral, who lived in the time of Alexander the Great. She was soon sold, during the Rebellion, to a prominent house in New York. Since that, shipping, before profitable, has been ruinous to those engaged in it.

Mr. Blumpey has never sought office. He has declined flattering political offers, and confined himself entirely to business or what was allied to it. He was some years a director of the Merchants' Bank, and is now its president; and for thirty years he has been a trustee of the Five Cent Savings Bank, and a director of the city railroad ever since it was built. In his own business he has acquired an estate that satisfies an honorable ambition.

His domestic life has been happy, for home has been his heaven. He is a husband devoted to his wife, Anna Maria, daughter of the late Capt. Enoch Gerrish; and no father could be kinder or more affectionate than he to his daughter Anna, who passed away just as she came to mature life, or to his only son, Philip Henry, Jr., now a partner with him in business.

REV. ARTHUR J. TEELING,[1]

Pastor of the Church of the Immaculate Conception, Newburyport.

The history of the church committed to his care gives necessarily the best biography of a true priest. His best energies are devoted to her. Her success is but the fulfillment of his duty. The most important events then in the life of Rev. Arthur J. Teeling, the pastor of the Church of the Immaculate Conception,

[1] By Miss K. A. O'Keeffe.



Arthur J. Telling

Newburyport, have already been recorded in the preceding account of that church, to whose interest the best years of his life have been devoted. There remain now but a few events of his personal history to be mentioned.

Descended from a family which in every way possible had testified its devotion to its suffering mother-land, particularly during the desperate attempt made by the people of Ireland in 1798 for self-government, Rev. Arthur J. Teeling was born in Dublin, Ireland, the 10th of December, 1844, and came to this country in the summer of 1847. From that time until his departure for college he lived in the immediate vicinity of Boston, attending there the public school—most of the time, the Chapman school, at East Boston—until he was twelve years of age, and then the Jesuits' school, which was at first on Hanover Street, Boston, afterwards at the corner of Portland and Traverse Streets. He remained there four years, and displayed an aptitude for learning that led to his being sent to the Lavelle University at Quebec, of which, at that time, the present Cardinal Taschereau was director. During his three years' stay at that institution he won for himself a high rank in scholarship.

The time for the choice of a profession having arrived, he determined—as those who had long known him had always expected—to prepare himself for the priesthood. In September, 1864, he accordingly entered the Provincial Seminary at Troy, which was that year opened, being one of a group of ten from the Boston diocese. This was the first group that entered the seminary, and of the number, Father Teeling is now the only survivor. Here, also, as at Quebec, he won the esteem and affection of his fellow-students, not one of whom was ever in trouble or difficulty without being sure of the sympathy and, if possible, the assistance of Arthur Teeling.

His theological course completed, he was ordained June 6, 1868, by Bishop McFarland, of Hartford, since deceased. His first Mass was celebrated the following Sunday at East Boston, where his parents then resided, after which he was sent for a few months as assistant to Rev. Father Sheridan, at that time the pastor of St. Vincent's Church, on Purchase Street, Boston, now pastor at Taunton, Mass. Toward the close of that year he was sent as assistant to Rev. John O'Brien, then pastor of St. Patrick's Church, Lowell, of whom he cherishes the most pleasant recollections. While in Lowell, Father Teeling, in addition to his other duties, was most active in organizing a Temperance Society, through which much good was accomplished. He remained there until his appointment to the pastorate of the Catholic Church at Newburyport.

The state of the church on his arrival in this city, in August, 1871, and his subsequent course, have already been recorded here, and we need not again refer to them.

Just before assuming the heavy task of freeing the church entirely from debt and consecrating it he took quite an extended trip to Europe, Egypt and the Holy Land. He sailed from New York early in April, 1878, going directly to Liverpool, thence to Paris and to Venice, whence he sailed to Alexandria, in Egypt, arriving there the 30th of May. At Alexandria he was joined by his friend, Rev. John Swift, of Troy, New York, who had gone thither by way of California and the Pacific Ocean, they having agreed at parting, six months before, that they would meet there on that day. Together, they then visited the pyramids of Egypt; and going thence to the Holy Land, paid the homage of their devotions to the places rendered sacred by the life, suffering, death and resurrection of our Saviour; and only those who have listened to the lectures several times since delivered by both gentlemen on their travels there, can judge of the impression these venerated places made upon them. They then visited all the principal cities in Europe, and at Rome had an audience with the present Holy Father, Pope Leo XIII. They also went to the principal places in the British Isles. Ireland, in particular, was most extensively traveled by Father Teeling, who spent eight weeks there, leaving not one of its counties unvisited, and very few of even its most unimportant places, if one might judge by his intimate knowledge of every place there that can be mentioned. In a word, he made an exhaustive study of its condition, the knowledge of which has been since made excellent use of in connection with the present Irish national affairs in this country.

Father Teeling's return in November, 1878, was most enthusiastically welcomed, as may be seen from the following extract from the *Newburyport Herald*, dated Thursday, November 7, 1878:

"A WARM WELCOME TO FATHER TEELING.

"Certainly the most captious could not find any fault for lack of warmth or enthusiasm in the welcome extended to Father Teeling after his six months' absence in Europe, on his return home, at half past seven on Wednesday evening. Thousands assembled at the Eastern Depot, and it was with difficulty that the police could prevent a rush to greet Father Teeling as he alighted from the train. A grand procession was then formed of all the Catholic societies and prominent citizens, all of whom carried torches, making quite a display; and all along the line of march they were greeted with numerous displays of fire-works, especially noticeable at the headquarters of the various societies. At City Hall the rush to get in was so great that one or two persons narrowly escaped being crushed, but the admirable management of Father McNulty prevented anything of this sort in going out. The exercise consisted in an address of welcome by Rev. J. J. McNulty, which was responded to in a very felicitous strain by Father Teeling, who gave some account of his travels, particularly in the Holy Land and in Rome, where he was empowered by the Pontiff, Leo XIII., to extend the Apostolic Benediction to the society at Newburyport. He also spoke of his trip through Ireland in a way that was most entertaining to his hearers. The meeting then broke up with cheers."

Of Father Teeling's many duties, there is none in which he is more interested than in the proper instruction of the children of his parish. Convinced that education without religion is often but a mighty weapon for evil in the hands of those who, in after years, may be strong to wield it against God and

country and mankind generally, there seems nothing he is unprepared to do, no sacrifice he is unwilling to make, to advance the interest of his school.

He is also much interested in the Irish question, and has taken a most active part in the present agitation of the subject by the people of the Irish race, and has been one of the public speakers at all the great demonstrations connected with the movement, not only in this city, where he has organized and presided over them, but also in Boston and other places. While in general sympathy with all the Irish leaders, the single-heartedness and devotion of Michael Davitt have won his particular admiration; and in few places was the "Father of the Land League" more enthusiastically received than in Newburyport by Father Teeling and his people. He was much interested in the Parliamentary Fund collected in 1885, and as the *Boston Pilot*, dated March 20, 1885, says:

"The following letter from Father Teeling, the respected pastor of Newburyport, to Mr. John Boyle O'Reilly, tells its own honorable and hopeful story:

"NEWBURYPORT, MASS., March 15, 1885.

"MY DEAR FRIEND:—By personal solicitation I have collected to the present date $250 for the $5 Parliamentary Fund. I have on my list, paid subscriptions, fifty of the most prominent Protestant gentlemen of the city of Newburyport, city officials, bank officers, etc. My list thus far is composed of Protestant gentlemen only. Next Wednesday night (St. Patrick's) I will put the question of subscription to the Parliamentary Fund to the members of my own congregation, as on that evening we are to have an entertainment in our hall for the benefit of the schools. When I will have completed my work for the $5 Parliamentary Fund, I will send you all the money and names. I think, from the present outlook, that Newburyport will have the honor of paying for one member in the British House of Commons to advocate Home Rule.

"Yours very truly,

"ARTHUR J. TEELING."

It is not, however, in exclusively Irish or Catholic affairs that Father Teeling is interested. No one could be more American in love for country or in interest in its welfare. Too public-spirited not to be interested in all public matters, he is no blind adherent of any plan or party, but endeavors always to stand himself, and to use his influence for the principles and the men he considers purest, ablest and best. A most devoted Catholic, and intolerant of any interference in his own or his people's religious rights, he is nevertheless on the most friendly terms with his Protestant townspeople; and no public affair is considered complete unless participated in by Father Teeling. He was one of the speakers at Newburyport's two hundred and fiftieth anniversary, June 10, 1885, he and Rev. Dr. Spaulding being the two gentlemen to respond to the toast: "The Clergymen of the three towns." On that occasion Father Teeling was thus introduced by the presiding officer, Hon. John J. Currier:

"Ladies and Gentlemen:—You are well aware that at the present time a large number of our citizens are earnest and devout members of the Roman Catholic Church. We recognize the power and the influence of its clergy, and I may say invite the Rev. A. J. Teeling, of the Church of the Immaculate Conception, Newburyport, to speak of the work the clergy of that church have accomplished."

The remarks that followed were very highly spoken of, as was also his address at the Grant Memorial the August following. Father Teeling is a ready speaker, a strong and forcible writer, his style being terse and concise, and bespeaking mental strength, sound judgment and intelligence of thought. Firm and decided when decision is necessary, he has not fulfilled his many duties without having made enemies, to whose criticism, however, he appears wholly indifferent; while at the same time his kind, genial disposition has won him many faithful and devoted friends.

His comprehension of the needs of the community is evinced by his membership in nearly every society here designed to ameliorate its ills or advance its interests; such as the Humane Society, the Association for the Establishment of the Old Men's Home, the Corporation of Institution for Savings and several others. He is also a justice of the peace for the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, having been so appointed May 8, 1883, by Governor Benjamin F. Butler, after having been for several years previous justice of the peace for Essex County, through appointment of Governor Alexander H. Rice, May 2, 1876.

Concluding, as we commenced, by asserting that a true priest is best judged by the condition of his church, we quote as a summary of this imperfect sketch of the pastor of the Church of the Immaculate Conception, Newburyport, the following extract from a tribute to him that recently appeared in the *Newburyport Germ*:

"Apart from the labors of the school, the pulpit and the altar, Father Teeling has exercised a kindly care for all the families and persons in the parish of more than four thousand souls, and no other four thousand within our knowledge have so rapidly advanced in wealth, education and public positions and influence. He may well be proud of what he has done, and when invited to other fields reply: 'These are my people and from them I cannot be divided.'"

ALEXANDER CALDWELL.[1]

Alexander Caldwell, the senior member of the firm of A. & George J. Caldwell, is a well-known and highly-esteemed citizen of Newburyport, the city in which he was born, educated and lived all his days. When a Greek orator, in ancient times, was thrice asked to name the first essential element in eloquence, three times he replied—"action." If we were three times asked what was fundamental to individual brilliancy, virtue, and greatness, we should reply—a good ancestry. This we find with Alexander Caldwell. His ancestors were Scotch-Irish, the Scotch predominating. They were simply born in Ireland, but were Scotch in their industry, frugality, bravery and religion. They were liberal in their ideas of government, as Calvinists ever are; and what theories we may cherish or abstract ideas we may entertain, America has had no better citizens from Europe, and bred none better at home, than the Scotch-Irish and their descendants. In the South they have been of the Andrew Jackson and John C. Calhoun stamp, men of strong minds and brave actions. In the North they have attained

[1] By George J. L. Colby.



Alex Caldwell

eminence in war and peace, as have the Starkes, the Cilleys, the Butlers, the McNeals, the Millers and others. In the battles for liberty they have been the bravest, as Bunker Hill, Bennington and New Orleans can attest. They have felt the old Scotch blood swelling in their veins and pulsating at their hearts, and proved themselves worthy of the fathers who followed Wallace and Bruce to battle. The history of Calvinism has been the story of freedom. Right or wrong in their faith, the Calvinists have set limits to the authority of kings and to the power of priests. They have had no confessors, no liturgies and no pastors who were above the people.

From such a people, from over the ocean, came to America, in 1650, the ancestors of the Caldwell brothers. One of them, James, was born on the passage, and the other, Alexander, was a child born after their arrival in this country. Their parents first settled in Dunbarton, N.H., probably on the invitation of their kinsfolk, many of whom settled in the valley of the Merrimac above us, where they founded towns, cleared farms and gave us Christian civilization in the place of the wilderness. In the course of time Alexander Caldwell drifted down to Newburyport, then one of the half-dozen chief towns of Massachusetts, having much wealth and an extensive foreign and domestic trade. Indeed, the quarter of a century from 1785 was the golden age of Newburyport; and for the whole country above us to the Canada line this was their principal market, and this the point to which the youth of the interior migrated. Young Caldwell found employment in a distillery, in the manufacture of New England rum, which was then the common drink of the people. There was very little whisky, beer or ale, which have since been substituted. Then everybody drank "new rum." The clergy, the magistrates, the deacons and the people drank it. The battles of the Revolution had been fought on it; the great religious revivals sanctioned it. It was furnished in all the work-shops, on the farms, and on board the ships, at least twice a day; and on the visit of neighbors it was deemed a mark of respect to offer and to drink it. Still, there was no more drunkenness then than now, and no more people died from it, as it is the most healthy of the strong drinks in use. Be that as it will, Alexander Caldwell, the first of that name in the town, learned to distil it; and built the distillery a century ago, which has been owned and operated by the Caldwells ever since. He died in 1832, at the age of eighty-five, full of years, having a good record for industry, sobriety and integrity.

Up to about the time of his death this was a large industry in this town, as it was in the country at large. We had a great fleet of vessels running to and fro between Newburyport and the West Indies—the English, French, Spanish and other islands. We were exporting to them fish, lumber, provisions and agricultural products, and importing coffee, sugar, molasses and other merchandise. Many persons are living who remember when the wharves for the whole length of the town were covered with molasses casks, which largely went to the distilleries, which then numbered ten or a dozen, equal to the whole number of distilleries in the United States now. To-day there is only one in Newburyport, eight in Massachusetts, and eleven in the whole country; and those are not running to one-half their producing capacity; and of what is produced, one-half or more is exported chiefly to heathen lands, and two-thirds the other half is used for medicinal and mechanical purposes. Very little is used for a beverage. Over sixty-two million people do not drink one-half as much, not one-quarter, as did the population of the country when there were six million. But we are considering now only its historical relations.

Some two years before Alexander Caldwell died, in 1832, the business had passed into the hands of his son John, who was born in 1783, and had previously been a ship-master. He died in 1859, aged seventy-six, and the town lost one of its best citizens. He had quite a number of brothers, most of them engaged more or less in distilling. Joseph was a distiller at Portsmouth, N. H. James, so recently deceased that many will remember him, was in dry-goods on State Street; Alexander, a distiller, at New Orleans, wealthy before the Rebellion, during which he died; Abner, who was a distiller in Dover, N. H., and later in trade and commerce on Ferry wharf; and William, for a time a merchant at New Orleans, and after with his brother-in-law, William Wheelwright, in South America. At one time two of those brothers were engaged in distilling at Norfolk, Va. They have followed the business of the first Alexander Caldwell in five states of the Union. They were such men as we have known them in this city, intelligent, upright, public-spirited, of good repute, some of them eminent for their piety, active in the Presbyterian and Congregational Churches, and more than usually particular in the training and education of their children. We call to mind the regular attendance at the Prospect Street Church of Captain John Caldwell and his liberality in parish contributions. His wife was a devout member of the church and his children were in their seats as regularly as their Scotch ancestors had been at church, back to the days of John Knox.

John Caldwell had five sons and one daughter. The daughter married into one of the first families of Worcester County. William W., the oldest son, is now an *attaché* of the *Boston Press*. He was prepared for college at Dummer Academy, graduated at Bowdoin College; and has a creditable place among American poets. John G. Whittier declared him the best lyric poet in New England. Two volumes of his poetry have been published. Joseph is in business in Philadelphia John is a grocer in town; and Alexander and George J. are of the third generation

at the old distillery, which has come down in the family and been operated by them for a hundred years, all that time maintaining the reputation of producing the best liquor of its kind in the United States. This, however, is partly, chiefly we suppose, owing to the water used in distillation. The banks of the Merrimac, on the south side, for a long distance, are full of springs, the water tinctured by the substances through which it passes; and the well furnishing water is supplied by one of those springs. It is inexhaustible; so much so that a steam fire-engine makes little impression on it. This establishment, covering an acre of land, with a bonded warehouse attached, is not only a source of wealth to its proprietors, but is a valuable auxiliary to the national treasury. Its highest Federal tax bill was in 1873, when it paid over $300,000—more than a thousand dollars a day for every working day of that year.

But Alexander Caldwell, whose portrait is here given, now sixty-two years old, has not confined himself to one line of business. From his purse and by his personal influence he has invested and generously contributed for the public good—for the growth of the town. By him ships have been built and sailed, and most of the corporate industries have found in him a stockholder and director. We name cotton manufactures, paper manufactures, carpet manufactures, hat-making, the silver-ware business and others there have been, or are, of more or less note. He has been a busy man—twenty-five years a director of the Ocean Bank, not for himself, but that its operations might be useful to young men and encourage trade. His charities have been large and many. The deserving poor have found in him a friend, and needy ones had the benefits of his open hand. He has accumulated a large estate. The firm of Alexander & George J. Caldwell stands first on the list of tax-payers in Newburyport, and that is but a fraction of what they pay through the corporations and by investments beyond the limits of the city. He has a high personal character, unblemished for integrity in business, and his kindness, intelligence, and generosity give him a wide popularity.

GEORGE MONTGOMERY, M. D.

Montgomery is a name distinguished in English, Irish and American history. It is a family that has given to the world profound scholars, eminent statesmen, brave warriors, and poets who have done honor to the age in which they lived and the language in which they wrote. Doctor Montgomery is in the same line of descent with General Richard Montgomery, who died on that memorable night of December 31, 1775, when he led an attack at the capture of the city of Quebec, and had victory within his reach, as, with his two aids, he fell before the only gun fired in defense at the second barrier to his progress into the city. An unfortunate place that for great military chiefs. It was there that the gallant Montcalm fell in 1759, which lost an American empire to France; there that the brave General Wolfe died in the hour of his triumph, and the joy of England was mingled with mourning at the cost of her victory; and there that Montgomery died on the day of his country's greatest need of his services, at the opening of the war for independence. Three braver men seldom, if ever, led the armies of their respective countries.

Doctor George Montgomery was born in Strafford, New Hampshire, in 1834, and is now in the prime of his days and at the meridian of his usefulness, having an extensive and lucrative professional practice in Newburyport. He sprung from one of the oldest settlers in New Hampshire, from the very first at Strafford. The Montgomerys went there and built their log cabin and cleared their farm in the depths of a wilderness gloom. Over the ocean waves they came to better their fortunes, seeking liberty, political and spiritual, under institutions of their own forming, elective and free, where the voice of the people should be the law. They made themselves a home amid the wildest solitudes of nature. They felled the forests with their own strong hands, their trusty shot-guns within reach; for the contest was with nature unsubdued and the savage foe untamed. Their energy, persistency and courage were all put to the severest test. Theirs was the toil of the field and the toil of battle—the protection of their crops and the protection of their hearths and home-roofs. Men and women shared common labors and common perils; these, with the hardships of climate and the newness of life upon a soil unbroken till then, impressing and moulding them and their children, made them heroic. Not a State of the Union has produced a better people than New Hampshire; none more stable in opinion or more determined for their rights. This is especially true of those descended from the Scotch-Irish, and the Montgomerys are not the least among those families.

Dr. Montgomery was the son of John, born on the ancestral acres, where had before been bred men not unknown to fame—men of science and learning, who had filled most of the local or town offices and seen service in both branches of the Legislature. His mother was Eliza, daughter of Joshua Otis, and from that union, Montgomery-Otis, came what might have been expected by hereditary descent, a precocious son, who, at the age of seven years, was admitted to the academy on Strafford Ridge. Then and there he commenced the study of Latin under that eminent preceptor, Dr. Abner Ham, whose fame as a scholar and teacher filled all the region round-about. According to the custom of the times, academy students taught the public schools in the towns within easy distance during the long vacations in the winter, and thus we find George Montgomery, a lad of thirteen, teaching, and perhaps applying the rod—the emblem of authority—in a school of forty-two



Geo Montgomery M.D.



E. H. Shaw

pupils, some of them men grown, and giving the utmost satisfaction to all parties interested, so much so that he was retained for the next year's school.

In the same year, 1851, he commenced his medical studies with Doctor Charles Palmer, now residing at Ipswich. He attended lectures first at the Bowdoin Medical School, in Brunswick, Maine; was one term at the Jefferson Medical College in Philadelphia, and graduated at Bowdoin in May, 1854. Immediately after he further and practically pursued his studies at the Massachusetts General Hospital, where he proved himself an expert in surgery, as he since has a successful practitioner of medicine.

Then he was lacking almost a year of his majority; he was a fine-looking young man, above the average height, straight, well-formed, with an open countenance, mild eyes and a blooming cheek, flushed with youthful beauty. To l splendid physical development and an air of intelligence he added an irreproachable moral character, which most becomes a physician, who must be the confidant of his patients; nor has he lost these general and essential qualities now at fifty-three. Since that, hard labor has slightly bent his form, which has become heavier, more full and bulky as the years have gone by.

His first professional practice commenced at Gilmanton Iron Works, New Hampshire, in 1855, when he was twenty-one years old, in partnership with Doctor Otis French. His popular manners and success in practice soon built up a large business, which he continued seventeen years, when, succeeded by Doctor John F. Young, he settled in Newburyport. Previously, however, fired by his ardent patriotism, he served his country one year during the Rebellion, with the Twelfth New Hampshire Regiment, in the field. Held in esteem by his professional brothers, he has received from them marks of confidence and respect. In 1884 he was the delegate for Massachusetts to the American Medical Association, which met at Washington, and he is now the delegate sent to the International Medical Congress, which will meet in Washington in September.

Doctor Montgomery has been attached to other fraternal associations. He was made a Free and Accepted Mason by Winnipesaukee Lodge, at Alton, N. H., in 1863, and has been an Odd Fellow of Quascacunquen Lodge, at Newburyport, since 1873.

In his domestic relations he has been happy. He has been twice married,—first to Miss Frances A., daughter of Hon. Jonathan T. Coffin, of Gilmanton, N. H., by whom he had four children. She died at Newburyport, a beautiful lady, beloved and lamented. In 1880 he married Mrs. Lydia Forbes, who had been a teacher in the public schools, and was a lady of wealth, known in the church for her devotion and liberality. Surrounded with friends, in the fullness of his strength, with patrons who have absolute confidence in his skill, Doctor Montgomery apparently has many years of happiness and usefulness before him.

EDWARD PAYSON SHAW.[1]

Mr. Shaw stands in the front rank of the business men of Newburyport to-day. He was born here in 1841, and therefore is forty-six years old, though appearing younger. He is a fine-looking man, well formed, above medium height, with light hair and complexion, sunny eyes, a hopeful countenance unruffled by cares or doubts; vigorous and brave, he is one of the most pleasant and agreeable gentlemen to be met with in the whole length of the town. He shows in his every movement the celerity and strength of the mind that has place in his material form. He carries about him a glow of enthusiasm for whatever he undertakes that would illuminate and move to action a whole town, unless it were completely paralyzed or clean gone in the decay of consumption. He was named for the celebrated clergyman of Portland, Me., whose eloquence electrified a generation gone by and left his name in all the churches. His father was Major Samuel Shaw, a man of integrity and piety, one of the best-known drivers of the Eastern Stage Company, which, three-quarters of a century ago, filled the place and performed the uses of the Eastern Railroad to-day. From early boyhood, as long as Samuel Shaw was able to do anything, he was a "Knight of the Whip," and so popular with the traveling public that when he lost his stable by fire, years after he had retired from stage-driving, old friends, some of them graduates of Harvard College, and other men of means, who rode with him long years before, tendered him a purse of money that covered his entire loss. He was major in the militia when General Lowe commanded the citizen-soldiers of Essex, and Colonels Daniel Adams and Jeremiah Colman, and Major David Emery were in service.

Edward P. Shaw, his youngest son, of whom we treat, was born to him by his third wife, Abigail, daughter of Richard Bartlett, who was a brother of Hon. William, vulgarly called "the Jew," because of his great wealth, being a millionaire and at one time the richest man of the State. When we come to his Bartlett blood, we can account for E. P. Shaw's great tact in trade and his ability as a business man. He takes to it as naturally as a duck or Newfoundland dog does to the water.

After he had been trained a time in our public schools, spent a year under "Master" George Titcomb, then a celebrated school-teacher, and passed a couple of terms in the academy at Loudon, N. H., impatient of delays, he tried one season at fishing, but soon discovered that he knew more of horses than of sea-going vessels. At the age of fourteen years we find him mounted on a hack-box, drawing the reins over prancing steeds, following the occupation of his father. The next year, at fifteen, he was licensed by the mayor and aldermen as a suitable person for the business. At eighteen he owned his own horses and

[1] By Geo. J. L. Colby.

carriages and had a hack-stand at the Merrimac House, which within a few weeks, he has purchased, becoming the proprietor of premises where he began business on his own account, where he used the first horses he ever owned, and where he gave his first note—minor as he was—for the first carriage he ever had.

At twenty-two he made another change—bought out Lovett's Boston Express, which he ran under the name of Shaw's Boston Express, till he was thirty years old. During this time we remember one thing concerning him which elevated him to our highest esteem. His father had grown old, feeble and infirm, but, affectionate and dutiful, the son did not forget his least want or pleasure; and may the gods forget the son who does! He deserves to have his eyes picked out by the young eagles. Edward P. Shaw, was not of that class; mornings, weather permitting, he could be seen leading the almost helpless old gentleman across the street to his office, and there arranging for him a seat, where he could see the passing people and hear the rattling wheels of carriages, the sound of which, reviving the memories of the past, was as sweet music in his ears. After he made his rounds, in attending to business, and was to leave on the cars, again he could be seen carefully assisting his father home. Such was his love and tenderness to his parents; and so long as God holds human destinies in His hand, great will be the reward of such kindness. It was like the man; he makes a little heaven of home, and never forgets or turns back on a friend.

It was during his experiences as an expressman that he made the acquaintance of the Jaques family—two brothers, farmers, and their two sisters, one of whom, Anna, inherited the property of the others, and became the founder of the "Anna Jaques Hospital," the most beneficent institution in the city. They made him their agent to sell the produce of their farm in Boston, and to purchase what goods they required; and so faithful was he in those matters that they depended upon him to invest their spare money and the dividends of stocks owned. He was their trusted financial agent, having absolute power to act on his own judgment, as he would for himself. The total of his business transactions for them exceeded a quarter of a million dollars, running, as it did, through twenty years. So judicious was his action that never a dollar was lost by him; and so wise his investments that never a dividend was passed on any stock he purchased. They grew rich, and when the bachelor brothers died he was appointed administrator of their estates, which were inherited by the maiden survivor, Anna, by whose charities many persons were benefited, and benevolent and religious institutions strengthened.

In 1871 Mr. Shaw sold his express and succeeded William H. Swasey in the firm of Sumner, Swasey & Currier. This was an old, well-established flour and produce house, doing a large business at home, having favorable connections in other States, and owning shipping engaged in foreign and domestic commerce. In 1879 he purchased and became sole owner of Commercial wharf,—the property with the business there centering,—and was also largely in real estate; owned dwelling-houses, and had erected on the site of the house in which he was born the large block called "Shaw's Hall," most of which has been devoted to the uses of social organizations, no less than nine such societies occupying it to-day. His own residence, where he has lived since 1875, "Woodland Place," is one of the finest estates in the city or county. It is on elevated ground, overlooking the town and the sea, having suitable buildings, and covering twelve acres of level, fertile land, devoted to flowers, vegetables, and fruit to the extent of over a thousand trees.

It was in 1875 that the silver-mining fever broke out in this vicinity, causing wide-spread excitement; and possibly, had the location been amid the craigs of the Rocky Mountains or in the river bottom of California, it might have been of enduring benefit. In connection with W. W. Chipman, an experienced miner, and Hon. E. G. Kelley, Mr. Shaw purchased the property since known as the Merrimac Silver Mine, with other tracts of adjacent territory, from which they realized very handsomely. They sold the Merrimac mine to New York parties, the consideration named being the round sum of one million dollars. One hundred thousand was paid in cash. The deed, recorded in the county registry at Salem, is for the largest sum on the records in the lapse of two hundred and fifty years. The fact that silver ore could be obtained in paying quantities was as well established as it has been in nine out of ten of the "rich finds" in the Mountain and Pacific States of the West. But very soon the new operators were short of funds, and divided among themselves. Lawsuits followed, attachments were made, and finally the works were abandoned to the harpies of law and plunder; and now the buildings, machinery, and fifty tons of ore ready for smelting, are going to total destruction.

In 1881, and also in 1882, he was in the Legislature. He had previously served in the City Council, but he inclined to trade more than politics, and about this date he established the People's Line of Steamers, which he has run to good profit ever since. He now has three steamboats—two connecting with the railroads at the mouth of the harbor and one for other uses. He has been heard to say that he never owned a sailing vessel that did not lose money, or a steam craft that did not pay good dividends.

In 1884 he organized the Black Rocks and Salisbury Beach Railroad, which, by steamers, connects with the Newburyport and Amesbury Street Railroad, and with other railroads running east, west or south. This beach road is chiefly owned by him now, and he has a charter for its extension to Hampton, N. H., which



H. McCross.

will be utilized in 1888, and thence it will probably be continued to Rye Beach and Portsmouth.

Mr. Shaw was the first contractor with the United States government in building the jetties at the mouth of the Merrimac River, to deepen the water on the bar and make Newburyport a harbor of refuge. The work, not completed, is still continued. In 1882, to further this project, he opened a quarry in the upper ward of the city, and has quarried and furnished one hundred thousand tons of stone. The preparation for the work required twenty thousand dollars, and two hundred men were on the contract.

In 1886 Mr. Shaw sold his interest in the Newburyport and Amesbury Railroad to parties in Boston and Salem, and at once proposed to build a similar road to and on Plum Island, which he has completed the present summer. In thirty days he built two miles of road on the island, with a steamboat pier extending into the Merrimac River, and had the cars running, remodeled and enlarged the Plum Island Hotel, reconstructed the bridge and draw connecting the island with the mainland, and prepared for laying the rails, three miles, to Market Square, to connect with the trains to Amesbury. This enterprise required a capital of forty thousand dollars in cash and forty thousand dollars in bonds, of which he holds one-quarter part, and the whole commands a premium in the market. Not satisfied with the above as a full year's work, he purchased the Merrimac House, in this city, formerly called the "Wolfe Tavern," in honor of General Wolfe, who died in the capture of Quebec, under whom was a company from Newburyport, commanded by William Davenport, who was its first landlord, which name he has restored; put forty men at work to repair, repaint and refurnish, and has leased it to Mrs. J. C. Philbrick & Son, proprietors of the Farragut House, Rye Beach, so popular in years past.

Mr. Shaw was the Republican candidate for Representative to the Legislature at the recent election, and as evidence of his great popularity he received two hundred and fifty more votes than any other nominee of the party.

His latest and most extensive business venture is the organization of the "Newburyport Car Manufacturing Company," with an ample capital and a board of directors, of which he is the president. He has leased extensive property and commenced the erection of new buildings, and designs to make this one of the largest of the city's industries.

We doubt if there is a young man in the county of Essex who can show a better record for enterprise and industry, and all the time he has moved about as placid and apparently as unconcerned as though he had nothing to do and was a simple observer of passing events. Be sure that he has not neglected his home in his busy life, for no man loves his home better or is more devoted to his wife and children. He has an ample fortune, should he retire to-day, and is surrounded by friends who appreciate him for noble and manly qualities. Industry was born in him, work is his life, and improvement in what surrounds him gives joy to his soul. Hannah F. Gould, the poet, in her famous "Epitaphs," said of Caleb Cushing: "Now he is dead he will be pushing," and these words could as appropriately apply to Edward Payson Shaw.

CAPTAIN HENRY M. CROSS.[1]

Henry M. Cross is among the foremost of the young men of Newburyport. He was born in Gorham, Maine, in 1843, son of Doctor Enoch Cross—a much-esteemed citizen, and the oldest practicing physician in the county of Essex—and his wife, Charlotte Pettingell, daughter of Moses Pettingell, of Salisbury, N. H. The Crosses are of good stock and have been noted from the days of the French and Indian Wars for their skill and bravery as soldiers. Originally from Ipswich, the great ancestor of the line to which Henry M. Cross belongs settled on the banks of the Merrimac River, in Methuen, and purchased his land of the Indians, the extent of the purchase being as much as he could walk around in one day, "from sun to sun." There he built his house, there his descendants have dwelt to this day, and there, by the old Cross ferry, Dr. Enoch, now eighty-eight years old, was born. He removed to Newburyport when his youngest son, Henry M., was an infant. It is a family of remarkable longevity, several of them living to the age of ninety and ninety-five years.

Henry M. Cross was well educated in the schools of Newburyport, and was one of their best pupils. In 1858, when fifteen years old, he graduated at the Brown Latin School, prepared for college, and, in 1860, having pursued a higher course of mathematics, with advanced literary and scientific studies, he graduated from the Putnam High School. He came from school well prepared for the study of law, which he had chosen for his profession, and read for a year and more in the offices of Hon. E. F. Stone, recently member of Congress, and Hon. John N. Pike, judge of the Police Court.

In the mean time the War of the Rebellion had burst forth, and in the intense excitement thereby occasioned, Mr. Cross, ardent in his patriotism, would rush to the field of battle. At first he failed to pass the examining board from physical inability. He was very youthful in appearance, slim and light in weight, but he did not perceive his inability to perform a soldier's duty, and upon the raising of the Forty-eighth Massachusetts Regiment, commanded by Colonel Eben F. Stone, he was accepted as a member of Captain Woodward's company, which was largely composed of young men who had been pupils of the captain when he was teacher of the High School. They were at once ordered to the South, and took part in the campaign against Port Hudson, where was seen some of the hardest fighting of the

[1] By George J. L. Colby.

war. We say no more than every member of his regiment will admit—some of them brave to recklessness—that there was not a braver soldier among them than Henry M. Cross. When a call was made for volunteers to storm the rebel fortifications—a most hazardous undertaking—he was among the first to respond. The assault was disastrous, and the dead and wounded, including the lieutenant-colonel of the Forty-eighth, covered the field in front of the Confederate works. Mr. Cross had his cartridge-box shot away, but fortunately escaped all personal injury. The regiment remained in the field till the surrender of Port Hudson, beyond the time of their enlistment, when he returned home in 1863. Immediately after he obtained a lieutenant's commission, re-entered the service in the Fifty-ninth Massachusetts Regiment, and went through the entire series of battles in the early part of the campaign in Virginia, in 1864, from the Wilderness and the severe fighting at Spottsylvania to the battle on the North Anna River, May the 24th, in which engagement he was made a prisoner. That ended his field service. Then followed the hardships, sufferings and dangers of the Confederate prisons, far worse than the hazards of battles, extending over nine months. First he was shut up in Libby Prison, in Richmond, which was a house of death to so many Northern soldiers. They might have written over the door, "Who enters here never returns." Thence he was sent to Macon, then to Savannah, and finally taken to Charleston, S. C., with a large number of others, to be put under the fire of the Federal batteries, with the expectation that this exposure would stop the bombardment of the city. From Charleston he was sent to Columbia, thus making the rounds, not as an inspector of prisons, but as a sufferer at every step. While a prisoner he twice escaped, and was twice recaptured. Finally he was paroled and sent to Wilmington, N. C., in March, 1865, but remained in the Union army till August of that year. His army life was heroic. He won the commendations of every commander under whom he served. He was among the youngest and the best, soldiers from this State.

The war ended, and peace once more smiling upon the country, he returned to Newburyport; but not to his law books. He had an inclination for trade—a taste for commercial affairs; and immediately formed a partnership with Mr. Newman Brown, the oldest dealer in coal in the city—giving what leisure time he had to the insurance business. In 1866 he married the eldest daughter of Hon. Albert Currier, of Newburyport. In 1867 he accepted an engagement in Hartford, Ct., as a special agent and adjuster for the North American Fire Insurance Company, in which position he continued two years. Then he purchased the coal business of Mr. Newman Brown, who retired; and selling the property to the Philadelphia and Reading Coal and Iron Company, became the superintendent of their business at Newburyport for ten years. During that time the coal sales increased from 10,000 tons per annum to 80,000, which was profitable to him and them. Desiring to have more control of his own time, he resigned, continuing the same business with Fred. L. Atkinson, till, outside business continuing to increase, he retired altogether from the trade. Since that he has been engaged in large corporate enterprises, in land, lumber and cotton, at the South. Most of his time is now spent on the Lower Mississippi, at Arkansas City, Ark., and below. He is connected with a Boston corporation which has an extended tract of land, some of the most valuable in the Southwest, on which timber is being felled and dressed for the markets, thus opening a trade important to that section of country. Having visited most of the Southern States, he feels assured of their great prosperity in the near future, from the richness of the soil, their mineral wealth and other natural advantages.

Having his residence in Newburyport, this city has been pleased, as often as circumstances would permit, to avail herself of his abilities and qualifications for public life. Seven years he was a director of the Public Library, for which his fine scholarship and extensive reading fitted him. Five years he served in the City Council; one year an alderman and one president of the Common Council. Two years—1883–84,—he was in the Legislature, actively participating in the debates on the most important questions, being a leading Democrat, and winning the confidence and applause of all parties. The next year he was a candidate for State treasurer, and after a canvass of the State, during which he spoke for the Democrats in all sections of the Commonwealth, he ran more than three thousand votes ahead of his ticket. His friends hold him in reserve now for the Congressional nomination, when an opportunity to elect him shall appear. He has developed a good degree of statesmanship and fine oratorical powers, few men commanding more attention from an audience. He is thoroughly sound in principles, adhering to the platforms of Jefferson, Madison and other fathers of the Republic. He has no tendency to Socialism, which is so rapidly pervading the country; is opposed to a protective tariff; is firm against all unnecessary and unconstitutional taxes; opposes the unlawful interference of the Federal Government with the States; or of the States with the counties and towns; or of the towns with individual rights and duties.

ANTHONY STICKNEY JONES.[1]

Anthony Stickney Jones was born in Pembroke, N. H., July 12, 1802, the only child of David Wheeler Jones, of Boston, and Marcy (Stickney) Jones, of Newburyport. Mr. Jones, the senior, was Welsh by the blood of his ancient house, but had been born in

[1] By George J. L. Colby.



Anthony S. Fries

Concord, Mass., to which his mother had fled from contiguity with the English, then in possession of Boston and making her residence their headquarters. After the birth of her son some thirty days, he being born July 4, 1776, the great day in our calendar when the republic was declared, she returned to her home and was admitted to her residence on Bedford Street, which is now owned by her grandson, Dr. Anthony S. Jones. Originally a machine-shop was attached to the rear of the dwelling in which Mr. Jones worked with a relative, Robert Turner, in making cut nails, then first coming into use; and here being injured in lifting iron, he was ordered by his physicians to Vermont, whence he came down to Pembroke, N. H., where he married his wife, Marcy Stickney, in 1801. She was in the seventh generation from William Stickney, who emigrated from the parish of Stickney, nine miles from Hull, England, whence he sailed for America. He was at Boston in 1638, and one of the original settlers of Rowley in 1639, of whom Gov. Winthrop wrote: "They are godly men, and most of them of good estate." William Stickney was a man of property and much influence, but of little education.

William's second son was Amos, who was the great-great-great-grandfather of Dr. Jones. He was a weaver at Rowley, in the first fulling-mill on this continent, in a town which, Winthrop said, "exceeds all others in the manufacture of cloth." Later he set up his business on the Parker, in Newbury, but he owned land in what is now Newburyport.

Amos had a son John, likewise a weaver, on the Artichoke River, where he owned land. He was also a soldier, defending Haverhill against the Indians in 1708. He owned land in Newburyport near the Smith brick-yard and common pasture. John had eight children, the fifth being Joseph, who is styled a mariner and a joiner; owned a part of Long (now Bartlet) Wharf, the lower side adjoining that of Edward Presbury, who was a shipwright living in the court on the upper side of the road, and was father-in-law to Hon. Jonathan Greenleaf. Also he sold five acres of land on High Street to John Lowell and Jonathan Jackson, being the same as that on which the Dexter and Johnson houses were built. He seems to have been wealthy, as were the Stickneys, from the first.

Joseph's eldest son was Anthony, who married Dorcas, the daughter of James Davenport, whose wife was Sarah Franklin, sister of Ben. Franklin, the statesman and philosopher. We find these Christian names, Anthony and Dorcas, often in the records of the Stickney family, and now comes in the surname of Franklin. This Anthony appears to have been a man of high position. He was a member of what is now the Unitarian Church; was a lieutenant of a Newbury company in the State of New York, fighting the French and Indians in 1756; held the same place in an alarm company of 1757; was a captain in the expedition against Canada, under Gen. Amherst, in 1760; he was a chaise-maker when Newbury was the leading town in that business in the country; later he was in Chester, N. H. He was a citizen of marked ability and patriotism, learned and wealthy. From his wife, the daughter of Sarah Franklin, the sister of Ben. Franklin, whose favorite niece she was, her great-grandson, Dr. Anthony S. Jones, has an engraved likeness of the printer-patriot, done in Paris, with his autograph on the back-side: "For Dorcas Stickney, of Newbury."

Anthony Somerby Stickney, son of Anthony, last named, was the grandfather of Dr. Jones by his daughter Marcy. He was a cooper, had a shop on Long Wharf and a house in which he lived on Federal Street. He removed first to Chester, and then to Pembroke, N. H. Franklin thought much of his relatives in Newburyport, and often visited and corresponded with them. He requested Anthony Somerby Stickney to name his first son for him, which, being done, he bequeathed to him a silver tankard of the weight of sixty Spanish dollars, inscribed: "Legacy by will of Benjamin Franklin to Benjamin Franklin Stickney." Anthony Somerby Stickney, by contract, furnished the timber that was wrought into the hull of the famous frigate "Constitution," a part of it coming from Bow, N. H., and another part from the Governor Dummer farm, in Newbury.

Benjamin Franklin Stickney, uncle of Doctor A. S. Jones, was a distinguished man, though peculiar in his "notions." He moved to Pembroke, and then to Bow, N. H., where he had a large landed property. He was a justice of the peace and postmaster at Bow, was a scholar of note, learned in mineralogy, chemistry and natural history. From New Hampshire he went West; was Indian agent at Fort Wayne, where the Indians called him their "white father." He was in the battle of New Orleans, and was complimented by General Jackson for his bravery. He became wealthy, and in 1802 married a daughter of General Starke, of New Hampshire, who told the soldiers at the battle of Bennington,—"We will be victorious or Mollie Starke this day becomes a widow." By Mary Starke he had five children, in whose veins was the blood of Franklin and Starke combined. He named his two sons One S. and Two S., and his three daughters, Maryland, Indiana and Louisiana. He believed in electricity more than even his uncle, Benjamin Franklin, for he held that a man would never die if he kept his animal electricity; but as he did die, though at a great age, he must have lost his electricity.

Tenacity to earth-life is one of the characteristics of the ancestors of Dr. Jones. His mother lived to be ninety years, and many of the family have endured to from eighty to one hundred years. Moses Stickney, who died at Jeffrey, N. H., on his farm, at the foot of the Grand Monadnock, in 1852, was one hundred years, three months and nine days old. Dr. Jones is now eighty-six years, with no ap-

parent cause of death for years to come. He was the only child of his mother, who was a young lady of seventeen years when Washington rode past her residence, on Federal Street, in 1790, and her life, combined with her son's, exceed the life of the Republic by more than five years. The utmost care was taken with his early education, and, on the advice of Professor Francis Brown, of Dartmouth College, who was a relative and frequent visitor of the family, he was put to the study of Latin and Greek, and was quite proficient in the translation, when a mere child, at the school of that celebrated teacher, Michael Walsh, where he was in the same class with Caleb Cushing. Later he had the benefit of instruction by another well-known teacher of that day, "Master McPhail." He did not, however, pursue his studies beyond the public and private schools of Newburyport, which were second to none in the State. He turned his attention chiefly to natural science. He was an expert in geology, and for years Professor Hitchcock, of Amherst College, in his survey of the State, engaged his assistance on his Essex County staff. He also had a love for astronomy, and was invited to join a party of scientific gentlemen, many years ago, in their observations of the annular eclipse of the moon, from the highest peak of the Green Mountains. More than anything else, however, he devoted himself to chemistry, in which he become so proficient as to rank with the best chemists of the country; and he kept up his studies and investigations to a very late period. This fitted him for his profession and business in life, as a druggist and apothecary; and very early he had the honor of receiving a diploma from the College of Pharmacy, and classed with the first men in his business, as David Henshaw, Dr. Lowe and Sampson Reed, of Boston, who were his fast friends. Doctor Jones, in trade, first bought out Dr. Nathaniel Smith, and had his store opposite the "Shambles," on Market Square. He moved from there to the corner of State and Essex Streets, and then to the corner of State and Middle Streets, where he remained many years, till he retired in 1858, with a competency of this world's goods. It was in that store that Oliver Putnam made his will, by which the world has the Putnam Free School. It was afterwards rewritten by Caleb Cushing. Dr. Jones was a witness to it, and presented it to Probate.

Dr. Jones was an active Free Mason in the times that tried Masonic souls, and is to-day the oldest Free Mason in this city; made in St. Peter's Lodge when he was twenty-one years old, or in 1823. He was one of the signers of the well-known "Declaration of the Free Masons of Boston and vicinity," issued in 1831, and was invited to the banquet on the semi-centennial celebration of that declaration, which was signed by fifty-seven Masons in Newburyport, of which number to-day he is the only survivor. Caleb Cushing, Rev. Dr. Morse, Judge Marston, Dr. R. S. Spofford, Hon. Eben Bradbury, Dr. Brickett, William Woart, and all the rest have passed to the higher degrees of the Supreme Lodge above, and he alone remains to testify to what Masonry was in the days of the fathers.

In his early life Dr. Jones took an active part in public affairs; as in the Fire Department, for which, through Henry Frothingham, then the representative, he obtained the charter for its organization, under which it has acted. Likewise, before he was of age, he obtained the signatures and forwarded the petition for the incorporation of the Institution for Saving, designed to encourage the poor in their small accumulations, it not being foreseen that its deposits would ever reach the millions. In the same way he was one of the founders of the Newburyport Insurance Company. He was ever ready to act for the public good, and to seize upon any new things for the same purpose. He built the first ice-house in town; and he sold the first kerosene oil, which was as much before the whale oil and tallow candle as electricity is before it, for illuminating purposes. Further details might be tiresome.

Trained by a pious mother, Dr. Jones early became a member of the church; and when Sunday-schools were instituted he was secretary of the first organization, at the court-house, that in a very few Sundays numbered over six hundred members, and in his class, as pupils, were William Lloyd Garrison and Isaac Knopp, who soon after led the anti-slavery revolution. A similar school was held in the school-house on Marlboro' Street on Saturdays and Sundays, in which he was a teacher, while he was himself a scholar in Dr. Spring's Saturday evening Bible class, designed to aid the general movement. At first the family attended the Harris Street Church; but offended by political preaching on Sundays, though they were Democrats as strong and stern as Parson Giles himself, they removed to the Old South, and listened to the saintly Dr. Dana; but when the Whitefield society was formed, from personal friendship for its first pastor, the late Rev. John Emerson, Dr. Jones became an earnest worker and liberal contributor to that movement.

He has participated in most of the religious and charitable operations of the day, and following the example of his mother, who was much interested in the Orphans' Asylum of former times, has been especially attentive to the wants of children, having adopted or himself provided for a large number who looked to him as to a father. Thus he has proved his faith by his works and can see and feel that he has not lived in vain.

WILLIAM RICHARD JOHNSON.[1]

Under this head we propose to give a sketch of the Johnson family; an old family, if any can be called such in America, and one of the best and most sub-

[1] By Geo. J. L. Colby.



Wm. R. Johnson

stantial in the county of Essex. How far back they may be traced, we know not. Maurice was a member of Parliament for Stamford in 1523. Abraham had three sons,—Isaac, William and Edward, who came to America in 1630. In that year Isaac was at Salem, a close friend to John Winthrop, and ranking in the class of Winthrop in education and wealth. He was afterwards among the settlers of Boston. His wife, Arabella, was a daughter of the Earl of Lincoln, and the ship in which she came was named "Arabella," in honor of her. He was the wealthiest of the founders of Boston.

Edward was the founder of Woburn, and a man of much importance in the colony. He owned land in Boston, which is now the church-yard of King's Chapel, and he was the first person there interred. He was a man of letters, author of the "Wonder-Working Providence," a history of New England from 1628–52.

William Johnson, from whom those in Newbury sprang, first settled in Charlestown, where he married Elizabeth Story; and thence came to the banks of the Merrimac, where he commenced shipbuilding near the foot of Ship Street, living in what is called the Johnson house, probably the oldest on Water Street. He was the father of Nathaniel, who was the father of William, born in 1671.

William married Martha Pierce in 1696. She lived on what is now known as the Little farm, originally the Spencer farm, belonging to John Spencer, one of the early settlers of Newbury, a man of much wealth and high character, who returned to his English home, conveying this farm to his kinsman Pierce, the father of Martha. His lands extended from High Street to the river, but northward there was only one house to Ship Street; that was at the foot of Lime Street. A lonely journey must it have been to young Johnson going a-wooing Miss Martha, a two miles' tramp along the river and through the woods, when darkness was upon the earth. The Johnsons and Pierces were among the first families of the new town. To William and Martha Johnson were born six children,—three sons and three daughters. Eleazer, the youngest son, was born in 1697. His eldest son, William, was a clergyman, graduated at Harvard, and became the first pastor of the Second Church in West Newbury; and another was Eleazer, born in 1720.

Eleazer Johnson, the son of Eleazer, continuing the ship-building on the banks of the Merrimac, was a very remarkable man, energetic, intelligent and the strongest man in the town. He could lift a half-ton of iron with his hands, and would carry timber against three ordinary men. He was as patriotic as he was strong, and fitted to be the leader of men. In the exciting times just before the Revolution of 1776 he was to Newburyport what Sam Adams was to Boston. We have heard old men, born before independence, claim that the Revolution was started and nursed in the Johnson ship-yard. It is unquestionably true, and it was on his suggestion and under his leadership that the ship-carpenters, then the most numerous class of workers in town, twice burned tea—all they could find in town—before the "Mohawks" mixed theirs with the salt water of Boston harbor. He marched at the head of that band of patriots, his broad-axe upon his shoulder, under the blows from which the oaken door fell in. He stood at the head of the "Sons of Liberty" when by his side was his neighbor, Jonathan Greenleaf, whose "silver tongue" fired the public heart, while Rev. Jonathan Parsons, in the "Old South" pulpit, denounced British tyranny, till the people organized their company for Bunker Hill in the broad aisle and in front of the communion table in his church.

To such a father, and to his wife, Elizabeth Pierce, in full sympathy with him, were born nine children, five of them sons of the heroic caste. Philip, born in 1743, was in the battle of Bunker Hill, and later vexing the enemy on board a privateer. William Pierce, master of the "American Hero," in the French West Indies in 1776, hearing that the war had commenced, loaded his vessel with arms and ammunition and made all haste to Boston with such needed supplies for the patriots defending their liberties. Nicholas was in the privateer navy of the country, and at the close of the war was the first man to float the "Stars and Stripes" over the waters of the Thames in London. Eleazer, the third of that name, commanded a privateer during the war, was captured by a British man-of-war, and suffered in the infamous "Old Mill" prison. Joseph, born in 1742, died before the Declaration of Independence, in 1775.

All of these sons partook of the spirit of the times and of the character of their father. They were brought up in the ship-yard, swinging the axe in their youth, and embarked on the seas, commanding the ships they sailed. To be the master of a ship then was also to be a merchant, for they were the buyers and sellers of their cargoes; and most of them, after building ships and sailing ships, retired to their own counting-rooms.

Joseph, whose line we are to follow, had four children, of whom three were sons, and only one, Eleazer (the fourth Eleazer), born in 1773, had children. He married Sarah Newman in 1797, and she bore him nine children. In general character and pursuits he was like his ancestors whom we have described. He was a shipwright, then at sea, and in the War of 1812–15 was captured and confined in Dartmoor prison, which so many Americans entered to die. Later he was a merchant, and finally president of the Mechanics' Bank. He died in 1847, leaving only one son, Richard, born in 1813, of all his nine children, with descendants, to continue the line of his family.

Richard became a master mariner, and among his voyages carried to Charleston, S. C., stone for the foundation of Fort Sumter, since so famous as the point at which the inter-State war of 1861 commenced. Another fact will indicate the commercial difference

of Newburyport now and a half-century ago. Then ships sailed direct to their points of destination in the various nations; and they brought to our wharves their return cargoes from Europe, the East and West Indies, and, in fact, from all parts of the world. So it happened that Richard Johnson, who commenced sea-life at sixteen and continued till he was forty, was at New Orleans, London, and Havre in France, before he had ever seen Boston or New York. He married Mrs. Fannie B. Woodbury, of Beverly, in 1852, and died in 1872, leaving two children,—Caroline Elizabeth and William Richard. The last-named, born in 1855, is now the sole representative of the Johnsons from Joseph through Eleazer and Richard.

We have said that Captain Richard Johnson married Mrs. Woodbury, of Beverly. She was the daughter of Dr. Nathaniel Bradstreet, a very skillful and popular physician at Newburyport, who, two years prior to his settlement here, had served as surgeon on the United States sloop-of-war "Merrimac," commanded by Captain Moses Brown. This was when war was anticipated with France. In 1800 he entered upon professional duties, living in the "Parson Spring" house on Titcomb street, which at that day was an elegant estate, with a large, beautiful garden in the rear. He died in 1828, from yellow-fever taken from a vessel when he was acting as port physician, and from him it was caught by a daughter, who also died therefrom. Now his grandson, William Richard Johnson, the last of the Johnsons of his family line, is also the last of the Bradstreet family, to which his mother belongs, descended from Governor Simon Bradstreet: and as Governor Bradstreet married Anne, daughter of Thomas Dudley, Governor of Massachusetts colony, our young townsman has in his veins the blood of the Earls of Lincoln mingled with that of the heroic Johnson, and also of two Governors who ruled the colony for a score of years. Anne Dudley, the wife of Governor Simon Bradstreet, was the first American poet. Her works were published in London, and became so popular that she was styled the "tenth muse." She was the mother of eight children, to whom she refers in the following lines:

> "I have eight birds hatch't in the nest,
> Four cocks there were, and hens the rest;
> I nurs't them up with pains and care,
> For cost nor labor did I spare;
> Till at last they felt their wing,
> Mounted the trees and learned to sing."

William R. Johnson, whose portrait we present, was born in the mansion-house on High Street, adjoining what is called the Dexter house, where "Lord Timothy" lived and held court. That house was built by Judge Charles Jackson, of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts. By its side is the Johnson house, built by the very distinguished Judge John Lowell, from whom it passed to the Tracys, who there entertained the most distinguished visitors from Europe—Talleyrand, Louis Philippe and Lafayette among the number partaking of his princely hospitality. From John Tracy, Captain Eleazer Johnson purchased it in 1809, and has transmitted it. William R. Johnson, the present proprietor, was educated in our public schools; graduated at the Putnam, and as he is of studious habits, is a well-educated gentleman. Having the care of a large estate he has engaged less in public affairs than he otherwise might have done, but he has not failed to encourage any business enterprises that would advance the interests of the city. He has been in the shoe business, is a stockholder and director of the Bayley Hat Company, is a director in the Merchants Bank, and a trustee in the Five Cents Savings Bank. He has especially devoted himself to the introduction of the electric lights, and invested his money that the city might have the best street lights yet invented, indicating his desire to keep step with the progress of the age. He has served the city two years in the Common Council and two years as an alderman. He has also been one of the leading members of the Masonic fraternity, was made a Mason in St. John's Lodge in 1877, and has been its Master; is a member of King Cyrus Chapter, and has been its High Priest; belongs to the Newburyport Commandery of the Knights Templar, and has been its Commander. Personally popular in his manners, liberal in opinions, devoted to his native town, having in himself the strong will and conrage of the Johnsons combined with the courtly politeness of the Bradstreets, he apparently has a brilliant future before him.

GOV. JOSIAH BARTLETT.

Gov. Josiah Bartlett was a man of singular greatness, goodness and simplicity. His ancestry was honorable, brave and generous. The name Bartlett in England is illustrious and titled from the conquest until now. Courage, self-sacrifice and generosity, with great mental activity, have ever been characteristic traits of the family.

In our Indian and colonial wars, as well as in the conflict to preserve the Massachusetts charter by deposing and imprisoning Andros two centuries ago, they have honorable mention, the only soldier going alone from Newbury to Boston in the darkness of the night being Samuel Bartlett, who took part in the overthrow of Andros.

Josiah Bartlett was born at Amesbury, Massachusetts, November 21, 1729. He was the fourth son of Stephen and Hannah Webster Bartlett, whose ancestors came from England to Newbury, Mass., in 1634.

At the age of sixteen he began the study of medicine, having acquired sufficient knowledge of Greek and Latin.

After five years of hard study he commenced practicing at Kingston, N. H., and established a reputation during the prevalence of *angina maligna* in 1754, introducing treatment with Peruvian bark, in opposition to common usage.

In 1765, Dr. Bartlett was elected to the Legislature of New Hampshire from Kingston, during the arbitrary administration of the royalist Governor, Wentworth. He would not submit to the will of a man whose object, next to self-aggrandizement, was the subjection of the people of New Hampshire to British tyranny. Governor Wentworth appointed Dr. Bartlett to judicial office, commissioned him colonel of the New Hampshire regiment and vainly sought by every blandishment of self-interest and honor to attach him to the royal cause, which was still powerful in New Hampshire, as backed by the haughty Wentworth.

The Governor dissolved the Assembly he could not control, but the Commitee of Correspondence addressed circulars to the towns, and their delegates assembled at Exeter and elected Dr. Bartlett and John Pickering delegates to the first Continental Convention in 1774, at Philadelphia.

Neither could be spared at this juncture of the New Hampshire conflict. Dr. Bartlett's house, with its contents, was burned, his military and judicial commissions revoked by Wentworth, but in his poverty he was more than a match for the haughty Governor, who was soon after compelled to take refuge on a British man-of-war. Thus ended forever British rule in New Hampshire.

Then Bartlett and Pickering, who, with Sullivan and Starke, had organized the minute-men of New Hampshire, leaving their professions and their families in poverty, mounted their horses and rode to Philadelphia, where they met the Colonial Congress in 1775.

Before leaving, they had established a patriotic colonial government, and framed a test oath to exclu le the Tories.

In September, 1775, Dr. Bartlett took his seat in Congress, and applied himself day and night with such energyas seriously to impair his health.

In 1776 he was re-elected, and became the first signer of the Declaratio n of Independence. He was the first called upon for his vote and his signature.

Rebellion against Great Britain, without an arms factory or powder-mill, with the rich men of our colonies, many of them, Tories; against the most opulent stubborn and warlike nation in the world, whose fleets had shorn France of her colonies, was like the leading a forlorn hope, and required the courage of such men as once held the pass at Thermopylæ.

In the autumn of 1777 the terror inspired by Burgoyne's army called for the utmost exertions of Bartlett, Pickering and Starke to protect New England from hostile incursions. Bartlett rode everywhere, rallying troops to the support of Starke, with whom, in his persecution, he deeply sympathized. He had secured the commission as brigadier-general for his associate, Whipple, and both were personally with Starke at the battle of Bennington. The long rides through forests and over rough mountains, and the swift gathering of this little host which at Bennington first checked the power of Burgoyne, would make a thrilling volume The Congress of 1778 was the last in which Bartlett took part.

In 1779 he was appointed chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas in New Hampshire; in 1782 associate judge of the Supreme Court, in 1788 chief justice of the Supreme Court of New Hampshire. The same year he was a member of the convention that secured the ratification of the Constitution of the United States.

In 1789 he was elected first United States Senator, which he declined; he was elected President of New Hampshire in 1790 and first Governor under the new constitution in 1793.

In January, 1794, he sent to the Legislature the following farewell address:

"*Gentlemen of the Legislature,*—After having served the public for a number of years to the best of my abilities in the various offices to which I have had the honor to be appointed, I think it proper, before your adjournment, to signify to you and through you to my fellow-citizens at large, that I now find myself so far advanced in age, that it will be expedient for me, at the close of the session, to retire from the cares and fatigues of public business, to the repose of a private life, with a grateful sense of the repeated marks of trust and confidence that my fellow-citizens have reposed in me, and with my best wishes for the future peace and prosperity of the State."

Brief indeed was the repose of private life so desirable to a man so actively engaged in the conflicts of the American Revolution.

An attack of paralysis terminated the life of Governor Bartlett on May 19, 1795, in the sixty-sixth year of his age.

Bartlett performed at once the work of the scholar, eminent physician, soldier, bold patriot, organizer of a new State, jurist, Congressman, member of National Naval Committee, chief justice of New Hampshire, its President and its first Governor. Fortunate was he as the first to give his vote and signature to the Declaration of Independence. Not another American name unites all these attributes.

He succeeded in every department, and was universally loved and mourned by all who knew him. As incorruptible as Washington, progressive as Jefferson, courageous as Starke, he was a fit type of the men who sentineled our northern borders and lighted the beacon-fires of liberty from her mountains to the sea.

No royal Governor in wealth and capacity surpassed Wentworth; no patriot member of the Continental Congress sacrificed more or was more impoverished than Bartlett by the awful conflict. Offered honor ease and affluence by Wentworth, he left his family, in the wilderness, and preferred death on the scaffold, if need be, for the rights of all men,—a hitherto unattained Utopia. Therefore, countless millions in succeeding ages will honor the first signer of the greatest act of man.

Scarcely less grand than his station among the immortal signers is the record of his early life as a physician.

He first introduced Peruvian bark (quinine) in the treatment of disease and first succesfully stayed the

malignant throat distemper, a fatal plague that was sweeping all before it. He introduced the modern treatment of fevers, and his successful experiments caused wide-spread comment regarding the old-fashioned, horrible treatment, which denied both food and cooling liquids in fevers.

The New England Medical Society, of which he was a corporate member, for such daring innovations first suspended him from membership, but within a year elected him president.

The multitudes who have since received the benefits of modern treatment, of which he was pioneer, can best appreciate the courage and greatness of these discoveries by a humble country physician.

He achieved greatness by his unaided genius, while the dignity and beauty of his character softened the asperities of the rugged contests in which he was successfully engaged during an entire life devoted to humanity.

As brave as he was tender, as loving as he was daring, as wise as he was skillful, in honor preferring others, resigning the highest office in the gift of a State he had saved, he persisted in declining the office of United States Senator, to which he was immediately unanimously elected, and retired to private life universally beloved.

Contrast the simplicity, courage and usefulness of this great man with the selfish ambitions of those who usually make history—who have slaughtered or enslaved mankind.

The signers of the Declaration completed the greatest act of man. From the darkness of despotism, from the gloom of never-ending failure to realize human aspirations for equal rights, they looked forward through this Declaration, as Galileo through the first telescope, to a new heaven and a new earth of equal rights for man. The extension of suffrage, of free schools, churches, invention, have accomplished more since that period for the moral, intellectual and material advancement of man than all previous history.

The substitution of a government of choice is rapidly superseding governments of force, and the countless millions that shall come after will look upon this act and epoch as the dividing line between these opposite forms of government, and will honor increasingly the immortal signers of what shall prove a universal Magna Charta to man.

Until recently Massachusetts has taken little notice of this, her illustrious son.

The first was the gift to the Andover Theological Seminary, also to the West Newbury Church of Bartlett's honored ancestors, of duplicates of the old Liberty Bell of Philadelphia, that first proclaimed "Liberty throughout all the land, unto all the inhabitants thereof."

These bells, with his name thereon, were cast in honor of Josiah Bartlett by order of Mr. and Mrs. E. M. Boynton, she being a great-granddaughter.

About two acres of land in the village of Amesbury is the house-lot where Bartlett was born. It has been purchased in his honor for a public institution. The Bartlett Home for Old Ladies is nearly completed, where the shields of Massachusetts and New Hampshire will arch above his gentle features in marble, decorated by the flag of a republic he helped create.

A still higher honor is the completion in Europe, at an expense of $10,000, of a bronze statue presented by Jacob R. Huntington, Esq., an able and enterprising man, the first carriage manufacturer of Amesbury, who is himself descended from a family illustrious in the Revolutionary struggle.

Two were Continental generals, one Governor of Connecticut and signer of the Declaration of Independence, and the list of Huntingtons who have occupied high stations, both civil and military, is too long for insertion here.

J. R. Huntington's public spirit thus associates his name forever with that of Amesbury's greatest son.

The unveiling of the statue will take place on July 4, 1888, in the presence of the New England Governors and other distinguished guests. The oration by Hon. R. S. Spofford, the poem by John G. Whittier, will fittingly crown the greatest celebration of Independence Day in the annals of the ancient, patriotic and goodly town of Amesbury.

HON. MICAJAH LUNT.[1]

Hon. Micajah Lunt, whose portrait we give, was born in Newburyport, April 22, 1796. He was a lineal descendant of Henry Lunt who came from England and was one of the original grantees in the settlement of Newbury, in 1635, and who died there in 1662. His grandmother, wife of Abner Lunt, of Newbury, was Mirriam Coffin, a great-great-granddaughter of Tristram Coffin, the elder of that name. His mother was a daughter of Daniel Giddings, of Ipswich, Chebacco. His father was Captain Micajah Lunt, of Newbury, to whom we might apply the trite saying, "Like father, like son," the same in name, the same in action, both merchant ship-masters, both facing their country's foes upon the seas, both merchants after retiring from the quarter-deck, and both eminently successful in their pursuits and lives.

The elder Micajah was one of the patriotic soldiers of the ill-fated expedition sailing from this port, in 1779, to drive the English from their lodgment on the Penobscot River, which ended in the burning of the American ships to prevent their falling into the hands of the enemy, when he, with others, found their way back, on foot, through the untrodden wilderness—a journey of toil and suffering. Immediately afterwards we find him on the armed brig "Palias," warring upon British commerce; taking or being taken, as the chances of war were; now a prisoner

[1] By George J. L. Colby.



Michael Hunt

released in Spain, and now a second time a prisoner in the West Indies, and a third time taken and thrust into an English prison in New York, and again on the twenty-gun ship "Intrepid," carrying one hundred and twenty men, which brought a cargo of ammunition and other military supplies from France to Baltimore. Thus he devoted four years to the service of his country in the "volunteer navy" (as the privateers really were) of the War of the Revolution, vexing the enemies of American Independence.

His son Micajah was educated in our common schools and in his father's counting-room. In 1813, when but seventeen years of age, in our second struggle with the "mother country," a war for the freedom of the seas, he shipped on board the "Argus," Captain Parsons, the first letter-of-marque from this port in the War of 1812–15, which took three prizes. He was also on board the brig "Essex," of Newburyport, of twelve guns, commanded by Captain William Nichols, when she captured the British letter-of-marque "Carrisbrook Castle," of sixteen guns, a prize of great value. At the early age of nineteen years, in 1815, he was commander of the brig "Olive," and made his first voyage to Nantz, France. It should be remembered that to be master of a ship then, was not alone to be navigator of the ship, but, also, a merchant trusted to sell the cargo out, and purchase the return cargo. It is the more noticeable, therefore, that such a trust and so much confidence should be placed in a person lacking two years of his majority, but he was found fully competent and was successful.

Micajah Lunt was an apt scholar, was a master as an accountant, and was often called upon by corporations in which he was interested, and individuals, to unravel and make straight their puzzling accounts and records. He never failed to improve an opportunity, at home or abroad, to acquire information that would qualify him for all demands of duty. So when at Nantz, finding it inconvenient not to be able to converse in the French, he learned the language, and became an excellent French scholar. In the same manner he made himself acquainted with the history of the countries he visited, the habits of the people, and especially the commercial possibilities; all this he supplemented by extensive reading, and thereby, with his good taste, strong intellect and retentive memory, his knowledge of men and experience in the world, he became one of the best citizens, useful to the public and very interesting in private life. As a merchant he held a very high rank; he was not long at sea before he acquired a competency for a more extensive sphere of action on the land, and at middle life had his warehouse and his offices as a ship merchant on Ferry wharf, which was also a resort of ship-masters—retired or active—seeking his valued advice. So great was the confidence reposed in his discernment and judgment, that men were ready to join him in any business enterprises, and so successful was he, that he was one of a half-dozen men, the most wealthy citizens of Newburyport.

He was a man of large public spirit, ever keeping in view the interests of the town, cherishing a deep love for its prosperity; its great industries found him ever ready to lend a helping hand. He was one of the largest ship-owners and often invested with others to aid that business, which, prior to the Rebellion, was the great one in the town. He was the foremost man in the whaling company which, promised to do for us what it did for New Bedford. When cotton manufactures were introduced, he invested largely in them, and for quarter of a century was president of the Bartlett Steam Mills, a large establishment for those times, giving to it his personal attention. He was for twenty years president of the Merchants' Bank; and for some ten years president of the Savings Institution, holding millions as deposits He was an early director of the Eastern Railroad, in which Newburyport held much stock. For twenty years he was president of the Marine Society, an institution for the special benefit of sea captains and their families, and donated two thousand dollars to its treasury. So he was called many times to offices of trust and responsibility in corporations in Newburyport and other towns. For politics he evinced no ambition, but he served one year in the Legislature as Senator for Essex County, almost against his wish, and declined a re-election. Still he was a firmly pronounced Whig in the days of that party, but always conservative. In religion he was liberal—an active and generous supporter of the Unitarian Church.

He was twice married—to Hannah Gyles Mulliken, daughter of Samuel Mulliken, in 1826, who died in 1829 without children; and again in 1831 to Mary Johnson Coffin, daughter of Edmund Coffin, of Newbury, a lineal descendant of Tristram Coffin, in the same degree as her husband. She survived him until June 19, 1878.

They had seven children, of whom only two survived him—Edmund Sydney Lunt, of New York, and Mary Coffin, wife of E. O. Shepard, of Boston, the well-known lawyer.

Micajah Lunt always resided in Newburyport, and from 1838 dwelt in the residence on High Street, built by Judge Edward St. Loe Livermore, father of Harriet Livermore, and there passed most happily the later days of a well-spent and beautifully rounded life, surrounded by those he loved and who loved him, and there he died in his seventy-eighth year, January 8, 1874.

At his burial service Rev. T. B. Fox, his former pastor and close friend, said "the best tribute to him is his remembered life, which for three-score and more years has been his daily eulogy. His thorough honesty in thought, affection, word and deed made him a true man in all relations. He left no shadow or stain on his memory."

CHAPTER CXLVII.

WEST NEWBURY.

BY WILLIAM T. DAVIS.

It is not proposed in the following sketch of West Newbury to go farther back than the incorporation of the town, except in such particulars as may be necessary to show the causes which led to it. Unlike that tendency to centralization which, in later times, has characterized our people, in the early days of Massachusetts towns, when farming interests were predominant, and the possession of lands was eagerly sought, the tendency of new settlements was to scatter over available territory, and here and there to build up new communities, too far from their municipal centre to be long contented with old municipal ties. As Massachusetts has been gradually throwing off its agricultural garb and assuming the character of a trading and manufacturing commonwealth, the tendency to centralization has increased, until many of the small farming townships are losing their population and suffering a depreciation of their estates, which is only in a few instances checked by an overflow, from larger cities and towns, of men of culture and wealth, seeking places of health and retirement, during at least the warmer months of the year.

In the tendency of a population to spread itself over a large territory, the old town of Newbury furnished no exception to the general rule. The many hillsides and valleys, with which the western section of Newbury abounded, with their stately landscapes and sunny slopes, soon tempted the settlers to seek among them their permanent homes. Pipe-Stave, Archelus, Long, Crane-Neck, Meeting-House and Indian Hills, had at an early date attracted about them a population not far inferior to that of the original settlement. As early as 1685 these remote inhabitants of the town of Newbury, began to feel inconveniences which demanded some action for their relief. On the 10th of March in that year they presented the following petition to the town of Newbury:

"The humble request of some of the inhabitants of this town desire and intreat that you would be pleased to grant us your consent, approbation and assistance in getting some help in the ministry amongst us, by reason that we doe live soo remote from the means, great part of us, that we cannot, with any comfort or convenience, come to the publick worship of God; neither can our families be brought up under the means of grace, as christians ought to bee, and which is absolutely necessary unto salvation; therefore, we will humbly crave your loving compliance with us in this, our request."

This was the first movement in the direction of the formation of a new parish, but the records of the town are silent as to any action taken on the petition. In 1688, however, a meeting-house appears to have been built at the Plains by the people of the West District, regardless of the wishes of the old parish of Newbury. This house was thirty feet square and was built at the charge of sixteen persons. It has been thought by some that this meeting-house was built in 1686, but the following extract from the will of Joseph Moring, a soldier, dated November 5, 1688, seems to be conclusive that at that date the house had not been erected: "I give to the new town in Newbury twenty pounds to help build a meeting-house, if they do build one; if they do not build one, then I give twenty pounds toward a building or repairing the meeting-house now standing in Newbury." Again, in February, 1690, the people of that district asked the town to make some provision for a minister amongst them. The committee of the town to whom the request was referred, reported "that considering the times as troublesome and the town being so much behind with Mr. Richardson's salary, the farmers and the neck men being under greater disadvantages upon many accounts, do desire and expect, if such a thing be granted, that they should have the same privilege to provide for themselves, which we think cannot condnce to peace, therefore desire the new towne to rest satisfied for the present."

At a town-meeting held on the 11th of the following month "fifteen men belonging to the west end of the town, after stating that it was well known how far they had proceeded as to a meeting-house, left two propositions with the town, one that the town would agree to support two ministers, so that one could preach at the west meeting-house, or that the town would consent to have the ministry amongst them upon their own charge, and that the town would lovingly agree upon a dividing line between them, that so they might know what families may now belong to the west meeting-house."

No action appears to have been taken on these propositions, and steps were taken by the parish to settle a minister without further delay. When this movement came to the knowledge of the town, it was voted at a meeting held on the 14th of July, 1691, "that understanding that several of the inhabitants of new towne are about calling Mr. (Edward) Tompson to be their minister, the towne do manifest their dislike against it, or against any other minister whom they should call, until ye church and towne are agreed upon it, looking upon such a thing to be an intrusion upon ye church and towne."

In October of the same year a petition was presented to the General Court by the west end people "to be established a people by themselves for the maintenance of the ministry among them," and in December the town voted against the grant of the petition and chose a committee to oppose it before the General Court. As may be supposed, such a disagreement could not long exist without arousing ill feelings on both sides. So great an excitement prevailed in consequence of the action of the town, that great bitterness of spirit was aroused, and Joseph Bayley, one of the west end men, was indicted for calling the committee appointed to consider their petition devils incarnate. It was neither the first nor the last occasion where a religious quarrel proved to be the most unrelenting and severe.

The first sign of yielding on the part of Newbury was exhibited at a meeting held on the 29th of December, 1692, when a committee was chosen "to enquire after a suitable person to preach to the west end and to keep school." On the 12th of May, 1693, the town voted "that Mr. John Clarke be called to assist Mr. Richardson (the Newbury minister) in the work of the ministry at the west end of the towne, to preach to them one year in order to farther settlement and also to keep a grammar school."

The town, in their remonstrance against the petition of the west end people, said:

"That a long difference has existed between the people of Newbury and those in the west end of the town about calling a minister, that the west end people had called Mr. Edward Tomson to preach to them without acquaintiog the minister, church or towne with their proceedings in that affair, the which, when our town did understand that they were about to bring him into town, the town being met to consider of it by their vote, did declare that they were against his coming, or any other, until the church and town were agreed; yet they persisted in their design, and brought him in, and when he was come in our minister warned him to forbear preaching till the church and towne were agreed; yet he presumed to set up a lecture and preach without any allowance of ministers, church or town, which, when the church did understand, they did call him to account, and declared their dislike of his irregular proceeding, yet he hath persisted in these irregularites to the great distmrbance of our peace, and since, upon the request of severall of the inhabitants of the west end of our towne, called another minister, Mr. John Clark, who hath accepted of the call, and yet there are severall who refuse to accept of him, pretending they are bound to said Tomson, which agreement they made when the rest of their neighbors were about to make application to the town, which was since the late law was made to direct the town to call the minister."

The west end people, in their reply, requested

"the goverour and council to pity and help them, to ease them of a heavy burden of travel on God's day. We have been (they said) endeavoring above these five years to have the publick worship of God established among us on the Lord's day for reasons such as these: The bulk of us live four miles from the ould meeting-house, some six or seven. Our number is about three hundred. Few of us have horses, and if we could get down to the ould meeting-house, it is impossible it should receive us with them, so that many lay out of doors, the house is so little. Some of us have groaned under this burden this thirty years, some grown old, some sickly, and, although we were favored with the liberty granted by King James the second, and had erected an house to the worship of God on our own cost and charge, and acquainted the two next Justices with our intent before we built the said house, a committee of five were appointed to come on the place; but before they had finished their work the Governor arrived, which caused them to desist. We complained to the Governor, who granted us a protection from paying to the ould meeting-house, then countermanded it. The towo had a meeting—they intend to delude us by granting the help of a schoolmaster at sometimes for one yeare. We believe our neighbors would be glad to see us quite tired out. We beg the honorable court to establish peace among us, a rational dividing line."

On the 5th of July, 1693,

"the towne gave in theyr votes for the choyce of a minister for the west end of the towne in order to a full settlement in the work of the ministry, and Mr. John Clarke was then chosen and not one vote against him."

Against this vote twenty-five persons of the west end entered their protest on the ground that they already had a minister. In February, 1694, twenty pounds in money and fifty pounds in grain was voted by the town to Mr. Clark, but Mr. Clark declined, and Mr. Christopher Toppan was invited in his place. Mr. Toppan agreed to preach for a year, and the town voted to give him forty pounds in money and four contributions annually.

On the 31st of December, 1694, another concession was made by the town, and a committee of five was chosen to "draw up articles and proposals in order to setting off part of the west end of the towne as a separate parish," and on the 18th of December, 1695, five acres of land on the east side of Artichoke River and one acre of land near the west meeting-house were granted to the west inhabitants when they saw cause to remove the meeting-house to the place specified by the town. The final result of the long controversy was that, October 26, 1698, a church was gathered and another meeting-house built at Pipe-Stave Hill, and November 10th Samuel Belcher was ordained as its minister. Thus the first step was taken which, more than a hundred years later, led to the formation of a new town. What became of the old meeting-house on the "plain," a locality now within the limits of the city of Newburyport, is doubtful. It is probable, however, that it was sold, and that the tradition that it was used as a barn is correct. Until January 28, 1824, this parish was called the Second Parish of Newbury; but at that date, five years after the incorporation of West Newbury, its name was changed by an act of the General Court to the First Parish of West Newbury.

Mr. Belcher was born in Ipswich in 1638, and graduated at Harvard in 1659. He served until 1714, when he removed to Ipswich, where he died the following March.

John Tufts was ordained June 30, 1714, and served until his dismission, in 1738. He was a native of Medford, a graduate of Harvard in 1708, and died in Amesbury in August, 1750.

Thomas Barnard, born in Boston in 1716, and a graduate of Harvard in 1732, followed August 31, 1739, and served until January 15, 1751. He afterwards practiced law for a short time, and was a representative to the General Court of Newbury in 1755. He was finally again settled in the ministry in Salem, and there died August 15, 1776.

On the 20th of February, 1751, Moses Hale was ordained, and served until his death, January 15, 1779. He was nephew of Rev. Moses Hale, of the Byfield Church, and graduated at Harvard in 1734.

On the 20th of November, 1782, True Kimball was ordained. He was born in Plaistow, N. H., January 28, 1757, and graduated at Harvard in 1778. His ministry continued until April 4, 1797.

Samuel Tombe, a native of Salem, N. Y., followed, and served seven years. His successor, Ebenezer Hubbard, a native of Marblehead, and a graduate of Harvard in 1805, was ordained May 11, 1809, and served until October 16, 1811.

Gilbert T. Williams, born at Fog's Manor, New Jersey, October 8, 1761, and a graduate of Dartmouth in 1784, was installed June 1, 1814, and dismissed September 26, 1821.

After an interval of five years, Henry C. Wright, a native of Sharon, Connecticut, was settled June 21, 1826, and dismissed July 7, 1833. He died in Pawtucket, R. I., August 16, 1870.

Benjamin Ober, born in Beverly April 4, 1805, and an Amherst graduate, was settled January 1, 1834, and was dismissed December 25, 1835.

After another interval extending seven years, during which Moses Welsh and N. W. Sheldon supplied the pulpit, Henry Augustus Woodman, of Newburyport, was ordained November 30, 1842, and, on account of his ill health, was dismissed March 20, 1844. The present meeting-house was built during the interval between the pastorates of Mr. Ober and Mr. Woodman.

Horatio Merrill, from Maine, a graduate of Dartmouth, was settled May 7, 1845, and dismissed August 11, 1847. During the next nine years the church was without a pastor, and on the 5th of March, 1857, Charles Dickinson Herbert was installed, followed by N. Laselle in 1869. The present pastor is Rev. Mr. Pike.

In 1729 the inhabitants of the upper part of the West Parish in Newbury built a meeting-house on Meeting-House or Silloway's Hill, which is described as being "fifty feet by thirty-eight and twenty foot stud." With the full consent of the Second Parish they were set off as a separate parish and organized September 1, 1731, as the Fourth Church in Newbury. The four churches were the old First Church in the old town of Newbury; the Second Church, established in the West District, on the 26th of October, 1698; the Third Church, organized in 1725, in what is now Newburyport, as its First Church; and the new church at the west end. At the time this meeting-house was built only a single house was standing on the hill, which was occupied by Stephen Morse. Several were built soon after, all of which are now standing, except one which was taken down, and another which was burned in 1884. This meeting-house was built without a chimney and had no means of heating it.

On Meeting-House Hill lived Simeon Chase, a descendant of Aquila Chase, and graduate of Harvard in 1767, who spent his life in teaching both public and private schools, and won great reputation as an instructor. He died in 1829, at the age of eighty-four years.

After the removal of the meeting-house, Daniel Silloway became possessor of the entire hill, and it has in recent times borne his name. Mr. Silloway was a carpenter by trade, but he preferred farming, and the acres cultivated by him secured him more than a competency. He was thrown out of his carriage and killed while riding down the hill, more than twenty years ago, and during the long settlement of his estate the farm suffered from neglect and waste, from which, in the hands of Mr. Jennings, it has only recently recovered.

The first pastor of this church was William Johnson, born in Newbury, May 31, 1706, and a graduate of Harvard in 1727. He was ordained September 15, 1731, and served until his death February 22, 1772. David Toppan, the successor of Mr. Johnson, was ordained April 18, 1774. He was born in Manchester, Massachusetts, April 21, 1752, and graduated at Harvard in 1771. In June, 1792, Mr. Toppan accepted the appointment as Hollis Professor of Divinity at Harvard, and was inaugurated in his professorship December 26, 1792, receiving a degree of Doctor of Divinity in 1794. He performed his new duties with an increasing reputation and died August 27, 1803.

The successor of Mr. Toppan was Leonard Woods, born in Princeton, Mass., June 19, 1774, and ordained over this church December 5, 1798. Mr. Woods was intended by his father to be a farmer; but owing to his feeble constitution, his path was directed to the ministry. He studied first with the pastor of his native town, and, after a short term at the Leicester Academy, finished his preparatory course under Ebenezer Adams, afterwards professor in Dartmouth College. He graduated at Harvard in 1796 with the highest honors, and his oration at commencement, as well as that three years later, when he took the Master's degree, were both published. After leaving college, he taught school at Medford eight months, after which he studied theology, and was approbated by the Cambridge Association in the spring of 1798. The parish voted to give him five hundred dollars at settlement, and four hundred dollars a year, with eight cords of wood annually and the use of the parsonage lands. Permission also was given him to visit his parents two Sundays in each year. His pastorate continued until September 28, 1808, when he was inaugurated Professor of Theology at the Andover Theological Seminary. His professorship closed in 1846, and he died at Andover, August 24, 1854.

After the departure of Dr. Woods, an interval of eight years elapsed, during which the church was without a pastor. At the very close of this interval, in 1815, a new meeting-house was built on its present location. It was dedicated January 3, 1816. On the 12th of June, 1816, John Kirby was settled, born in Middletown, Conn., June 30, 1783, and a graduate of Union College in 1807. In 1818 he sailed for Charleston, S. C., to regain, if possible, his impaired health, and the vessel in which he sailed being wrecked on Ocracoke Bar on the coast of North Carolina, he was washed overboard and drowned on the night of the 5th of December in that year.

Elijah Demond, of Rutland, Mass., where he was born November 1, 1790, was ordained March 7, 1821. He graduated at Dartmouth in 1816, and at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1820. He served about five years, and was dismissed September 3, 1826.

Paul Couch was ordained March 21, 1827. He was born in Newburyport, June 20, 1803, and graduated at Dartmouth in 1823. His ordination followed

soon after his graduation from the Andover Seminary in 1826. He was dismissed at his own request August 18, 1828, and after several short pastorates, he was settled over the First Congregational Society in Stonington, Conn., where in 1885 he had preached for twenty years, and was still in active service.

John Quincy Adams Edgell was ordained September 19, 1832. He was born in Westminster, Vt., August 15, 1802; graduated at the Vermont University in 1827 and at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1831. He was dismissed October 27, 1853, and for some years, until his death, acted as agent and assistant secretary of the Society for Promoting Collegiate and Theological Education at the West.

Davis Foster succeeded Mr. Edgell, and was ordained November 1, 1855, remaining until his resignation, September 1, 1867. He was born in Hanover, N.H., October 26, 1822, and graduated from Dartmouth, in 1849, and from the Andover Seminary in 1855. During his pastorate the removal of the meeting-house to its present position, which has been referred to, was made.

Another interval occurred after the resignation of Mr. Foster, during which the church was without a pastor, and which was not terminated until the installation of Seneca M. Keeler, on the 13th of June, 1872, who was dismissed in 1878, and followed by M. A. Doherty. Rev. Francis H. Boynton is now supplying the pulpit.

These parishes, the only ones which had been organized in what is now West Newbury at the date of its incorporation, have been sketched somewhat in detail because they formed the nucleus round which a population gathered, which in time saw that its property and welfare demanded that the management of its affairs should be entrusted to its own separate municipal government. The first movement towards the incorporation of a new town appears to have been made in 1794, and in that year the town of Newbury voted to set off the three northwesterly parishes into a separate town by themselves, and to choose a committee of nine persons, to see it equitably done, and on April 7th voted to choose a committee to petition the General Court to set them off. This vote was reconsidered on the 23d of April. One of these three parishes was the Fifth Parish, incorporated in 1761, and located on the plains east of Artichoke River, and now a part of Newburyport.

No further action was taken until 1819. At that time the population of the town of Newbury was 4950, of which 1279 were resident within the district proposed to be set off. There was no striking dissimilarity in the occupation of the two parts of the town; most of the people in both were engaged in farming and the industries of both were small. Carriage-building and the manufacture of horn combs were carried on to a certain extent, but the value of the product was much less than at a later period. Many men of substance and character were resident in the westerly section, whose families in one or another branch have become prominent in the Commonwealth. The Emerys, the Robinsons, Moultons, Pillsburys, Littles, Tenneys, Tukesburys, Smiths, Newells, Bayleys, Poors, Browns, Stanwoods, Kimballs and Ordways were men who knew in what direction to seek the welfare of their community, and were conscious of their capacity to regulate their own concerns. On the 18th of February, 1819, the following act of incorporation was passed by the General Court:

"AN ACT TO INCORPORATE THE TOWN OF PARSONS.

"*Sec.* 1. Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives in General Court assembled and by the authority of the same: That all that part of the town of Newbury in the county of Essex which lies within the following bounds to wit: Beginning on the river Merrimac where the river Artichoke empties into the same, and thence running up the said river Artichoke and through the middle thereof about 577 rods and 22 links to the New Log so called; thence running south 25 degrees east about 360 rods to the boundary line between the first and fourth parishes in said town of Newbury; thence running south 52½ west by the said parish line to the southerly side of the road leading from Newburyport to the West Parish of Rowley; thence running on the southerly side of said road to Great Rock so called; and thence by the southerly side of said road to Johnson's corner, 528 rods and 2 links; thence running by the boundary line of the 3d Parish of Newbury 385 rods and 24 links to the boundary line of the town of Bradford; thence by said Bradford line to the said river Merrimac; thence down said river Merrimac to the bound first mentioned; be and the said part of said town of Newbury hereby is incorporated into a town by the name of Parsons, and invested with all the powers, privileges and immunities, and subject to all the duties and liabilities to which other incorporated towns are subject by the constitution and laws of this Commonwealth.

"*Sec.* 2. Be it further enacted that the said town of Parsons shall be holden to pay one-third of all taxes which have been heretofore assessed by said town of Newbury and remain unpaid at the time of the passage of this act, and also the like proportion of all debts due and owing by said town of Newbury.

"*Sec.* 3. Be it further enacted that the said towns of Parsons and Newbury shall respectively support and maintain the several persons and their families and all such as shall have a derivative settlement under them or any of them who are now chargeable and mentioned as allotted to said towns respectively in a certain schedule thereof, entitled a statement of the expense of the poor of the town of Newbury agreed to on the 11th day of February, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and nineteen, and signed by the committee of the said town of Newbury of the one part and by the committee of divers inhabitants of the 2d and 3d Parishes of said Newbury being petitioners for the incorporation of said Parsons of the other part; and all other persons who shall hereafter be found chargeable to said towns shall be supported and maintained by them respectively, according to the general laws in this behalf, provided always that nothing in this act shall be construed to affect any agreement heretofore made between the towns of Newbury and Newburyport respecting the support of paupers; but the said town of Parsons shall contribute its just proportion of all sums of money which said Newbury shall pay by force of such agreement; said proportion to be ascertained by the State valuation from time to time made of the said towns of Parsons and Newbury.

"*Sec.* 4. Be it further enacted that the inhabitants of the said town of Newbury shall have, hold and enjoy to their own use and benefit forever all the real and personal estate belonging to the said town at the time of the passage of this act, excepting any real estate which may fall within the limits of the town hereby incorporated, and the said town of Parsons shall pay to the said town of Newbury the sum of $4100 within twelve months from the period last aforenamed.

"*Sec.* 5. Be it further enacted that the said town of Parsons shall contribute its just proportion to be ascertained as in the third section of this act of the expense of making a certain highway lately laid out in said Newbury and known by the name of Noye's Road whenever the said town of Newbury shall be compelled to make the same.

"*Sec* 6. Be it further enacted that any Justice of the Peace of said county of Essex is hereby authorized to issue his warrant, directed to any freeholder in the said town of Parsons, requiring him to warn the inhabitants thereof to meet at the time and place therein appointed for

the purpose of choosing such town officers as towns are by law required to choose at their annual meetings."

The name of the new town specified in the act not proving satisfactory to its people, on the 14th of June, 1820, the General Court passed the following:

"ACT TO CHANGE THE NAME OF THE TOWN OF PARSONS.

"Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives, in General Court assembled and by the authority of the same, That the name of the town of Parsons, in the County of Essex, shall cease, and the said town shall hereafter be called and known by the name of West Newbury, any law to the contrary notwithstanding."

Pursuant to the foregoing act of incorporation sundry inhabitants made application to one of the justices of the peace within the county, as follows:

"*To Daniel Emery, Esq., one of the Justices of the Peace within and for the County of Essex:*

"We, the subscribers, freeholders and other inhabitants of the town of Parsons, judging a Meeting of said inhabitants to be necessary, do hereby request you to issue a warrant for the calling of a meeting of said inhabitants, to be holden at the East Meeting-House, in said town, on Monday, the 8th day of March next, at one o'clock in the afternoon, to act on the following articles, viz.:

"To choose a Moderator to govern said meeting. To choose a Clerk, Selectmen, overseers of the Poor, and other town officers, as the law directs.

"Parsons, February 24, 1819.

"Moses Brown.	John Kimball.
Joseph Bayley, Jr.	Caleb Kimball.
Benjamin Merrill.	Charles Kimball.
Edward Hogan.	Benjamin Stanwood.
Joseph Stanwood.	David Ordway, Jr."

The warrant was duly issued, and at the meeting held on the 8th of March, 1819, Daniel Emery called the town to order, and was chosen moderator, and Thomas Hills was chosen clerk.

A board of three selectmen was chosen, and the following list shows who have served on the board from the incorporation of the town to the present town:

1819. Daniel Emery.
Joseph Stanwood.
Thomas Chase.

1820. Joseph Stanwood.
Thomas Chase.
Wm. Pilsbury.

1821. Joseph Stanwood.
Eliphalet Emery.
Edmund Little.

1822. Eliphalet Emery.
Moses Newell.
Edmund Little.

1823. Moses Newell.
Eliphalet Emery.
Joseph Stanwood.

1824. Eliphalet Emery.
Samuel Tenney.
Thomas Chase.

1825. Samuel Tenney.
Eliphalet Emery.
David Ordway, Jr.

1826. Eliphalet Emery.
Samuel Tenney.
Moses Newell.

1827. Samuel Tenney.
Eliphalet Emery.
David Sawyer.

1828. Samuel Tenney.
Thomas Chase.
Eliphalet Emery.

1829. Addison Brown.
Eliphalet Emery.
David Sawyer.

1830. David Sawyer.
Moses Newell.
Samuel Carr.

1831. Moses Newell.
David Sawyer.
Samuel Rogers, Jr.

1832. Samuel Rogers, Jr.
Daniel Moulton.
Otis Little.

1833. Moses Newell.
Samuel Rogers, Jr.
John Coker.

1834. Moses Newell.
Samuel Rogers, Jr.
Otis Little.

1835. Otis Little.
David Sawyer.
Eliphalet Emery.

1836. Eliphalet Emery.
Moses Newell.
Otis Little.

1837. George Thurlow.
Eliphalet Emery.
Hanson Ordway.

1838. David Sawyer.
George Thurlow.
Otis Little.

1839. Otis Little.
Eliphalet Emery.
Samuel Rogers, Jr.

1840. Samuel Rogers, Jr.
Otis Little.
Lucien A. Emery.

1841. Moses Newell.
Eliphalet Emery.
Hiram Rogers.

1842. Eliphalet Emery.
Edmund Little.
Moody Brickett.

1843. Moses Newell.
Moses Carr.
John Coker.

1844. Thos. S. Ordway.
Moses Newell.
John Bartlett.

1845. Edmund Little, Jr.
Ira Blake.
Samuel Rogers, Jr.

1846. Eliphalet Emery.
Moses Newell.
Edmund Little, Jr.

1847. Moses Newell.
Eliphalet Emery.
Hanson Ordway.

1848. Moses Newell.
Hanson Ordway.
Edmund Little.

1849. Moses Newell.
Wm. H. Collin.
Moses P. Stanwood.

1850. Thos. S. Ordway.
Edmund Little.
Benj. Edwards.

1851. Moses Newell.
John L. Plumer.
George Emery.

1852. Eliphalet Emery.
N. F. Emery.
David Smith.

1853. Nehemiah F. Emery.
Eliphalet Emery.
Ichabod Titcomb.

1854. Ichabod Titcomb.
N. F. Emery.
John Moody.

1855. N. F. Emery.
M. H. Poor.
Ichabod Titcomb.

1856. Ichabod Titcomb.
Moses Newell.
Stephen C. Noyes.

1857. N. F. Emery.
Ichabod Titcomb.
Calvin Rogers.

1858. Geo. Emery.
N. F. Emery.
Samuel N. Bailey.

1859. N. F. Emery.
Ichabod Titcomb.
Thos. C. Thurlow.

1860. Ichabod Titcomb.
N. F. Emery.
Moses Newell.

1861. N. F. Emery.
Ichabod Titcomb.
Eben P. Stanwood.

1862. Ichabod Titcomb.
Moses Newell.
N. F. Emery.

1863. Wm. Merrill.
Geo. Emery.
Dean R. Stanwood.

1864. Geo. Emery.
Wm. Merrill.
N. F. Emery.

1865. Wm. Merrill.
N. F. Emery.
Dean R. Stanwood.

1866. Dean R. Stanwood.
Wm. Merrill.
Geo. W. Carr.

1867. Samuel Rogers.
Wm. Merrill.
Jos. Newell.

1868. Samuel Rogers.
Dean R. Stanwood.
Wm. Merrill.

1869. Geo. W. Carr.
Wm. Merrill.
Chas. W. Ordway.

1870. Geo. W. Carr.
Chas. W. Ordway.
Edmund Little.

1871. Wm. Merrill.
Chas. W. Ordway.
Geo. W. Carr.

1872. Chas. W. Ordway.
Geo. W. Carr.
Edmund Little.

1873. Chas. W. Ordway.
Geo. W. Carr.
Edmund Little.

1874. Chas. W. Ordway.
Henry T. Bailey.
John M. Poor.

1875. Chas. W. Ordway.
Henry T. Bailey.
John M. Poor.

1876. Same.

1877. Chas. W. Ordway.
Henry D. Lay.
Henry T. Bailey.

1878. Same.

1879. Chas. W. Ordway.
Henry D. Lay.
Richard Newell.

1880. Same.

1881. Same.

1882. Chas. W. Ordway.
Jos. Watson.
Richard Newell.

1883. Same.

1884. Same.

1885. Same.

1886. Same.

1887. Same.

The following persons have presided as moderator of the annual town-meetings:

Daniel Emery.....1819–20	Benj. F. S. Griffin.....1847–48
Dean Robinson.....1821–23	Moses Newell.....1849–51
Samuel Tenney.....1824	Dean Robinson.....1852
Dean Robinson.....1825–29	Moses Newell.....1853
Daniel Emery.....1830–31	Dean Robinson.....1854–55
Dean Robinson.....1832–39	Moses Newell.....1856–57
Otis Little.....1840	Dean Robinson.....1858–60
Moses Newell.....1841–46	Geo. W. Carr.....1861

Nehemiah F. Emery.....1862–65	Moody E. Boynton..... 1879
J. Gardner Tewksbury 1866–70	Moses C. Smith.....1880
Haydn Brown.....1871	Lawrence H. Bailey.....1881
James H. Durgin. 1872	Moses C. Smith.....1882–86
Isaac N. Lane.....1873	Ezekiel G. Nason.....1887
Haydn Brown.....1874–78	

The town clerks have been as follows:

1819–33. Thomas Hills.	1886–87. Eben P. Stanwood.
1834–85. John C. Carr.	

At a town-meeting held on the 18th of March a committee of three, consisting of Daniel Emery, Joseph Stanwood and Thomas Chase, was appointed to meet a committee of the town of Newbury and settle all legal demands under the act of incorporation. At the same meeting the school districts were established and at the two meetings all town officers necessary to perfect the municipal machinery were chosen.

Up to and including 1856 the town system prevailed in the choice of Representatives to the General Court. During that time the following Representatives were chosen in West Newbury in the years set against their names:

1819–21. Daniel Emery.	1838. Benjamin Edwards.
1822. No Representative.	Moses Carr.
1823. Joseph Stanwood.	1839. None.
1824–25. Daniel Emery.	1840. George Hosum.
1826. Moses Newell.	1841. Moses Newell.
1827–28. Daniel Emery.	1842. None.
1829. Eliphalet Emery.	1843. None.
1830. Daniel Emery.	1844. Enoch Bailey.
1831–32. Eliphalet Emery.	1845. Otis Little.
1833. Samuel Carr.	1846. None.
1834. Samuel Carr.	1847. None.
Eliphalet Emery.	1848. None.
1835. John E. Bartlett.	1849. None.
Moses Carr.	1850–51. Benjamin Edwards.
1836. Moses Carr.	1852. None.
Moses Emery.	1853. John C. Carr.
1837. Hanson Ordway.	1854. None.
John C. Carr.	1855. Joseph Z. Gordon.
	1856. Benjamin Edwards, Jr.

In the election of 1850 a singular state of things existed. The whole number of votes was 246 and 124 was declared necessary for a choice. Mr. Edwards had 123. Three of the 246 votes were for John B. Alley, who was a candidate for Congress, and the meeting voted to throw out these three votes, leaving the whole number 243, of which 122 would be necessary for a choice. The effect of this was the election of Mr. Edwards, and he was declared chosen.

From 1857 to 1866, inclusive, the district system prevailed, and Newbury, West Newbury and Rowley formed the Seventeenth Representative District of Essex County. The Representatives from this district were as follows:

1857.—Benjamin Edwards, Jr., of West Newbury.
1858.—Gorham P. Sargent, of Newbury.
1859.—Moses T. Whittier, of Rowley.
1860.—Calvin Rogers, of West Newbury.
1861.—Nathan Adams, of Newbury.
1862.—Amos Bishop, of Rowley.
1863.—Eben P. Stanwood, of West Newbury.
1864.—Wm. M. Rogers, of Newbury.
1865.—Edward H. Potter, of Rowley.

From 1866 to 1875, inclusive, Amesbury, West Newbury and Salisbury formed the First District of Essex County, and the following were the Representatives:

1866.—Amos Buswell, of Salisbury; Addison A. Sawyer, of Amesbury.
1867.—J. R. Huntingdon, of Amesbury; J. G. Tewksbury, of West Newbury.
1868.—Joseph N. Clark, of Salisbury; Wm. H. Haskell, of Amesbury.
1869.—William Merrill, of West Newbury; Wm. H. Ames, of Salisbury.
1870.—John Hume, of Amesbury; Charles L. Allen, of Salisbury.
1871.—B. F. Sargent, of Amesbury; James H. Durgin, of West Newbury.
1872.—Charles W. Morrill, of Salisbury; Richard F. Briggs, of Amesbury.
1873.—Joseph M. Eaton, of Salisbury; Moses Carr, of West Newbury.
1874.—William Chase, of Amesbury; Charles M. Brown, of Salisbury.
1875.—George W. Morrill, of Amesbury; Enoch Sawyer, of Salisbury.

From 1876 up to 1887, inclusive, Amesbury, Salisbury, West Newbury and Merrimac have formed the Eighteenth District of Essex County, and the following Representatives have been chosen:

1876.—Orlando S. Bailey, of Amesbury; Frederick W. Merrill, of Salisbury.
1877.—James D. Pike, of Merrimac; Samuel Coffin, of Salisbury.
1878.—Albert S. Adams, of Amesbury; Orin Warren, of West Newbury.
1879.—William Smeath, of Amesbury; Charles P. Collins, of Salisbury.
1880.—Benjamin L. Fifield, of Salisbury; Richard Newell, of West Newbury.
1881.—Albert Sargent, of Merrimac; Oliver A. Roberts, of Salisbury.
1882.—Mark D. T. Steene, of Amesbury; David L. Ambrose, of West Newbury.
1883.—John L. Little, of Salisbury; John B. Judkins, of Merrimac.
1884.—Alexander H. Huntingdon, of Amesbury; M. C. Smith, of West Newbury.
1885.—Hiram Walker, of Salisbury; George O. Goodwin, of Merrimac.
1886.—Alexander Smart, of Merrimac; John H. Paisland, of Amesbury.
1887.—John C. Risteen, of Amesbury; Charles Goss, of Amesbury.

At the time of the incorporation of West Newbury its industries were unimportant, yielding a product of not more than forty thousand dollars per year. They have increased largely since, and consist chiefly of establishments for the manufacture of shoes and combs. The comb manufacture was the earliest perhaps of all, dating back to the year 1770. It originated in an enterprise projected by Enoch Noyes, a farmer, for the manufacture of horn buttons. He worked in the kitchen of his house during the winter, having as his only tools a hatchet, a saw, a bit of glass and a woolen polishing rag. After the battle of Bennington he hired a Hessian comb-maker, who was a deserter from Burgoyne's army, who taught him the use of the grail, the guarrett and other contrivances for the manufacture of combs and their preparation for the market. The business thus begun by Mr. Noyes has been continued by his son, grandsons and great-grandsons. About the year 1830 there were twenty-five or thirty shops in West Newbury in which combs were made, and the manufacturers would take them to Boston and sell them and bring back horns in their one-horse wagons. There are now but two establishments; but these, by the use of steam, turn out a much larger product than all

the older ones combined. These two are those of S. C. Noyes & Co. and H. G. O. & T. M. Chase. The largest of these is that of S. C. Noyes & Co., in which are some machines invented by Haydn Brown, by which horn-combs are made equal to ivory in appearance and beauty of finish.

The manufacture of carriages, once quite extensive, has to a large extent disappeared and become established at Amesbury, on the other side of the river.

The manufacture of shoes is carried on to a moderate extent, the only establishment at present being that of James Durgin & Son, an enterprising and successful firm.

The two parishes existing at the time of the incorporation of the town have been already referred to. At the present time there are other religious societies which should be mentioned. On the 15th of February, 1832, Micajah Poor, Joseph Perry, Jesse Noyes, Samuel Gould, Simeon Pilsbury, William W. Perry, Giles Woodman, Joseph J. Bailey, David Clefford and Samuel Stickney and their associates were incorporated into a society by the name of the First Methodist Episcopal Society in West Newbury and Newbury. This society built a meeting-house in West Newbury, near Great Rock; but the society is now located over the line in Newbury, and the meeting-house was either taken down or moved.

On the 16th of April, 1868, Moses P. Stanwood, Moses H. Poor and James B. Kelley and their associates were incorporated as a religious society under the name of the West Newbury Chapel Association. This association was merely auxiliary to the First Parish, and the chapel is used in connection with its Sunday-school and other parochial services.

A Baptist society was organized not many years ago, which is situated on one of the many pleasant spots on the land formerly owned by the Poore family. Many years ago the trustees of Andover Theological Seminary bought the same lot for the location of their building; but, for some cause, the deeds never passed. The land was presented to the Baptist Society by Sewell S. Chase, and the meeting-house erected on the lot is creditable to the society and the town. At present the society has no settled minister.

A Catholic Church has also been erected within a few years, and is now presided over by Father Murphy, in connection with other neighboring churches.

The other associations worthy of note are the West Newbury Farmers' Club—an enterprising association which holds annual meetings of great interest—and the West Newbury Mutual Fire Insurance Company, incorporated March 22, 1849, of which William Merrill is president, and Henry T. Bailey secretary.

In the War of the Rebellion West Newbury performed her full part. Soon after the incorporation of the town, a company of infantry was raised and attached to the regiment of which Colonel Samuel Tenney, of that town, was commandor. This company was successively under the command of Captains Bailey, Otis Little, Joseph Goodrich and Hanson Ordway. About the same time, a company of cavalry was organized under Captain Uriah Bailey, and attached to the regiment commanded by Colonel Moses Newell. This company was subsequently commanded by Thomas Chase, John Pearson and Joseph Little. Both of these companies were disbanded long before the war.

In 1852 a battalion of rifles was raised by Ben: Perley Poore, of which Company A, of West Newbury, commanded by Moses P. Stanwood, was a part. Major Poore was made its commander.

On the 29th of April, 1861, the town appropriated ten thousand dollars for a war-emergency fund, and voted to pay to each member of the rifle company belonging to West Newbury ten dollars a month while in active service and ten dollars a month to the family of each. In addition to this appropriation, one hundred and fifty dollars was appropriated for uniforms. The rifle company was afterwards the nucleus of Company A of the Nineteenth Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers for three years.

In July, 1862, it was voted to pay $150 to each soldier enlisted for three years, and on the 15th of August it was voted to pay the same bounty to nine months' men. On the 30th of August it was voted to increase the bounty to $300. During the whole war the number of men furnished by the town was two hundred and sixty-seven, of whom twelve were commissioned officers. The quota of the town was two hundred and thirty-three. The war expenditures, exclusive of State aid, were $36,240. The amount of State aid paid, which was reimbursed by the State, was $21,058. The population of the town at the time was two thousand and eighty-eight, and its valuation less than a million dollars. The following is a list of separate enlistments in the town taken from the rolls at the State-House and containing only two hundred and thirty enlistments.

It is probable that the remaining thirty-seven covered credits for the town's share of enlistments made by the State,—

Ben: Perley Poore, Major.
Daniel B. Abbott.
George H. Chase.
David Atkinson.
Calvin F. Brown.
Daniel P. Brock.
Francis B. Emery.
Edward Knight.
George H. Morrill.
Lewis F. Morrill.
Charles L. Noyes.
Samuel Oliver.
Riland W. Sawyer.
John W. Stevens.
John McAleer.
Eben P. Stanwood, Lieut.-Col.
Moses B. Merrill, Capt.
Wm. T. Woodburn, Sergt.
John W. Hogg, Sergt.
Ebenezer Carlton, Corp.
Joshua Ordway, Musician.
Hosea W. Ordway, Wagoner.
Daniel B. Abbott.
Jeremiah M. Adams.
Horace N. Bailey.
Warren Balch.
Daniel P. Brock.
Richard T. Carter.
David W. Clary.
Daniel F. Connell.
John Donavan.
Francis B. Emery.
Charles S. Gilman.
Joshua Hills.
Thomas G. Hills.
Richard Hudson.
Wm. B. Jewett.
Harlan P. Johnson.
Lucius C. Johnson.
James E. Kelley.

Henry G. Marsh.
John A. Morse.
Joseph Morse.
Thomas E. Moylan.
Wm. H. Nelson.
Jos. O. Noyes.
John O'Laughlin.
Charles E. Preble.
Elbridge A. Richardson.
Wm. Ryan.
Isaac A. Short.
James H. Short.
Calvin J. Stevens.
Charles A. Whiting.
Julius R. Wilson.
Luther P. Blaisdell, Sergt.
Wm. H. Gould.
George E. Coffin.
George A. Jewett.
Henry C. Logan.
Frank McGuire.
George Robinson.
John Ryan.
Wm. Thompson.
John Watson.
Wm. H. Wilson, Jr.
James Foye, re-enlisted.
Laurentio Bailey, Corp.
John Donovan.
Charles W. Gowen.
Richard Lynch.
James Porter.
Edmund T. Pillsbury.
John G. Coffin.
George T. Smith.
Phineas B. Carleton.
John Clancy.
Michael Clancy.
Benj. T. Noyes, Capt.
Warren A. Galencia.
Wm. W. Reed.
Joseph Rhodes.
Patrick Dunn, Sergt.
Abner Gould, Sergt.
Horace Ruddock, Sergt.
Thos. B. Parker, Corp.
Ira W. Poor, Corp.
Wm. M. Nichols, Musician.
Benj. A. Applebee.
Charles W. Bradstreet.
Alfred H. Dennet.
Benj. W. Edwards.
Daniel W. Hoyt.
Nathaniel Rogers.
Sawyer Rogers.
Augustus H. Spiller.
Franklin L. Walker.
George Woodbury.
John Bradley.
Jos. W. Gilman.
Wm. H. Nelson.
Jos. Elbridge, Corp.
Wm. Atkinson, Sergt.
Wm. B. Carleton, Corp.
Frank W. Bailey.
Charles C. Bridges.
Luther C. Bridges.
Charles S. Gilman.
Walter J. Pope.
Robert S. Edison.
Charles Nutting.
James Flaherty.
Joseph H. Smith.
Joseph Smith.
Wm. Henry.
John Leonard.
Paul Giddings.
Charles Culver.
Patrick Nulty, re-enlisted.
John M. Brown.
Daniel Farrington.
Luke Dolan, Corp.
John Smith.
Isaac H. Boyd, Major.
Moses P. Stanwood, Capt.
Francis Osborne, 1st Lieut.
Giles D. W. Johnson, 1st Lt.
Sherman S. Robinson, 2d Lt.
Samuel A. Bridges, 2d Lieut.
John McCannon.
Wm. Atkinson, sergt.
Edward W. Bartlett.
Charles Bradley.
Gorham Coffin.
Patrick Dunn.
Rufus H. Chase, corp.
Charles P. Coffin, corp.
Wm. A. Kennett, corp.
Charles L. Noyes, corp.
Wm. C. Tuson, corp.
Wm. Young, corp.
Charles H. Fowler, wagoner.
Charles F. Appleton.
Edward B. Bartlett.
James Booth.
Osgood Brown.
Daniel W. Carleton.
Everett Carleton.
Samuel Carleton.
Moses F. Carr.
Owen Carr.
John G. Coffin.
Wm. J. Curtis.
Nathaniel W. Davis.
Augustus Grant.
Isaac G. Hagar.
Charles Hudson.
Jonathan Hudson.
George A. Kennett.
Stephen D. Kennett.
John McCannon, re-enlisted.
James McIntosh.
Levi C. McKiostry.
Charles W. Merrill.
Theron P. Newhall.
Gilmao F. Nichols.
Stephen Noyes.
Otis Pearson.
James Porter.
John Preble.
Philip Roth.
John W. Sargent, Jr.
Alexander L. Short.
Ogden H. Smith.
Samuel Sylvester.
Irving E. Walker.
Hugh M. Osborne, corp.
George Y. Bradley.
Wm. Fee.
Wm. Osborne.
George W. Rogers.
Shubael D. Rogers.
Wm. T. George, sergt.
Wm. C. Foster, corp.
Eben Colby, re-enlisted.
Samuel Downer.
John F. Fowler.
Henry E. Palmer.
Edmund H. Jacques, corp.
John J. Jacques, corp.
Wm. Dawkins.
Moses C. Little.
Abram A. Dow, corp.
George F. Coffin.
Simeon S. Steele, unassigned.
Charles Kelley.
Henry Curtis, unassigned.
James Harmon, unassigned.
Orin Warren, assist. surg.
John Towser.
Daniel Farrington.
Charles F. Appleton, 2d lieut.
Walter Sneadon.
Luke Dolan, corp.
John Smith.
Orin Warren, surg.
Frank Duggin.
Wm. Dawkins, Jr.
Robert Archibald.
Warren K. Bailey.
Wm. Bohanon.
Charles S Brigham.
Wm. P. Goodwin.
Peter Johnson.
George Thompson.
Lowell S. Bullens.
Jeremiah Canon.
Edward Finley.
Edward Greenwood.
Lyman H. Hardie.
James Hickey.
Martin H. Lawless.
James Robinson.
Hugh O. Toy.
James Tracey.
Edward Turner.

West Newbury is chiefly distinguished as a farming town and few towns in the State can boast of better farms or better methods of tillage. There are so many of these farms that it is difficult to mention any without doing injustice to those which may be omitted. It will be sufficient, in order to show the extent of the farming interest, to mention the farms of Cyrus K. Ordway, George J. Pierce, Richard Newell, Charles S. Bradley, Dean R. Stanwood, Thomas C. Thurlow, Thomas G. Ordway, William Bryant, Horace Moody, E. Moody Boynton, Moses M. Ridgeway, Moses H. Poor, and the Indian Hill farm and the Jennings farm on Silloway Hill.

Among those who were born either in West Newbury or within its territory before its incorporation, there are a few the incidents in whose lives are accessible and may without any invidious distinction be mentioned in this narrative.

Rev. John Tufts, to whom reference has been already made as pastor of the First Church in West Newbury from 1714 to 1738, published during his ministry a small book of tunes, entitled "A very Plain and Easy Introduction to the Art of Singing Psalm Tunes, contrived in such a Manner as that the Learner may attain the skill of singing them with the greatest ease and speed imaginable." This was the first publication of the kind in New England and was severely criticised by those who were wedded to old customs. The singing in the churches at that time was usually by rote and not more than four or five tunes were used. The most common were "York," "Hackney," "St. Mary's," "Windsor" and "Martyrs." The book of Mr. Tufts contained twenty-eight tunes, with rules which made their learning easy, and was looked upon as a daring and unjustifiable innovation. One critic said concerning it, "Truly I have great jealousy that if we once begin to sing by rule the next thing will be to pray by rule and preach by rule, and then comes popery."

Dean Robinson was born at Andover, Mass., on the 18th of April, 1788. He studied in the common schools, in the North Parish Academy at Andover, and finished his classical education under the tuition of Rev. Dr. Peter Eaton, of West Boxford, a graduate of Harvard in 1787. For a time he taught school at Danvers, and then studied medicine with Dr. Thomas Kittridge, of Andover. In April, 1811, he made a per-

manent settlement in the West District of Newbury, and there for fifty years he devoted himself to the practice of his profession. He became a member of the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1815 and was entered as a retired member in 1848. He was a prominent member of the Masonic order and one of the founders of the Essex County Agricultural Society, of which he was for many years an officer.

He continued his practice until he was so feeble in body as to be obliged to be carried to the bedside of his patients, a chronic spinal affection having induced partial paralysis of his limbs. He was looked up to as authority by his brothers in the profession, esteemed by the community and beloved by those who had been cured or solaced by him in their sufferings and pains. He died at his residence on Pipe-Stave Hill, in West Newbury, on Saturday, the 24th of August, 1863, at the age of seventy-five.

Samuel Moody was born in West Newbury in 1837, and through life devoted himself to the cultivation of an inherited estate, on which he died on Wednesday, July 25, 1877. He was one of the leading agriculturists in Essex County, and met with success in his occupation, which his judgment and skill deserved He was a man of the purest character, a devoted son, a kind friend, an estimable and respected citizen. It was said of him after his death that there was a "a daily beauty in his life that dispensed contentment, happiness and joy to all within its reach."

Cornelius Conway Felton was born in that part of Newbury which was incorporated in 1819 as West Newbury, November 6, 1807. He was the oldest son of Cornelius and Anna (Morse) Felton. The residence of his father was in the Lower Parish of West Newbury, next to the house in which Moses Brown, a wealthy merchant of Newburyport was born, and not far from the birthplace of Bailey, the author of Bailey's Algebra, in the neighborhood of Brown's Springs, and near Pipe-Stave Hill. He attended the Bradford Academy, and afterwards the town school of Saugus, to which place his father removed in his boyhood. In 1822 he was sent to a private school at North Andover, under the charge of Simeon Putnam, where he fitted for college. He graduated at Harvard in 1827, having during a portion of his junior year taught mathematics in the Round Hill School, at Northampton. After leaving college he taught in the Livingston County High School, in Geneseo, New York, and occupied the position of tutor in Latin at Harvard in 1829, of tutor in Greek in 1830, and Professor of Greek in 1832. In 1834 he was appointed Eliot Professor of Greek, and occupied that position until 1860, when he was inaugurated president of the college. He received the degree of Doctor of Laws from Amherst in 1848, and from Yale in 1860. He died at the house of his brother in Chester, Penn., February 26, 1862.

His brother, Samuel Morse Felton, a graduate of Harvard in 1834, at one time president of the Philadelphia, Wilmington and Baltimore Railroad, was his brother, and the latter was the father of Samuel M. Felton, Jr., who, at the age of thirty-one years, was made president of the Erie Railroad corporation.

Mr. Felton was widely known among scholars, not only as a professor, but as an author, editor and translator of foreign literature. In 1833 he published an edition of Homer with notes, in 1840 a translation of Menzel's "German Literature," a Greek reader with notes, in 1841 the "Clouds of Aristophanes," in 1845 the "Panegyricus of Isocrates" and the "Agamemnon of Æschylus," in 1849 a translation from the French—Guyot's "Earth and Man"—and the "Birds of Aristophanes," in 1852 a selection from the writings of Professor Popkin and a volume of selections from the Greek historians, in 1855 a revised edition of Smith's "History of Greece" and an edition of "Lord Carlisle's Diary" in Turkish and Greek waters, in 1856 a selection from modern Greek writers, a compilation of a work on Greek and Roman metres, and a memoir of General Eaton in Sparks' "American Biographies." He was also a prolific writer for the *North American Review*, the *Christian Examiner*, and other magazines.

At the reception of the sons of Newburyport in that city on the Fourth of July 1855, Mr. Felton one of the invited guests, thus alluded to the place of his birth :—

"It is now nearly forty years—how my heart trembles while my tongue relates!—since, in early childhood, I was borne away from the place of my birth, caring little or nothing to what distant shores the currents of life were drifting me. I have but seldom visited Newbury since; but the scenes which first met my eye were impressed on my memory too deeply to be forgotten. The old training-field, where an ancestor of mine distinguished himself as sergeant in a military company, was to me another Campus Martius; the beautiful Merrimac flowed in my imagination, like the broad and boundless Hellespont of Homer; and Pipe-stave hill rose like the Grecian Olympus to the sky. Indeed, when recently I had the rare pleasure of dashing on board a British steamer through the allied fleets of France and England, as they stretched, in double line from Tenedos to Troy—the most magnificent spectacle the eye of man ever gazed upon—it seemed to me the renowned Hellespont was hardly so broad and boundless as my native river in the memories of my childhood."

Leonard Woods was the son of Rev. Leonard Woods, who was settled over the Second Church in Newbury (now the First Church in West Newbury) in 1798, and was born in what is now West Newbury November 24, 1807, in the same month with Professor Felton. He graduated at Union College in 1827, the same year that Mr. Felton graduated from Harvard, and, after acting as tutor at the Andover Theological Seminary and professor of the Bangor Theological Seminary, became president of Bowdoin College in 1839, and, serving until 1866, was occupying the president's chair of one of our leading colleges while Mr. Felton was occupying the chair of another. Like his townsman, he was the author and translator and editor of several works, though in a somewhat different field of literature from that in which Mr. Felton was engaged.

Colonel Daniel Moulton was born in the West District of Newbury in 1792. He died at the old family homestead near Great Rock, in West Newbury, September 13, 1878, having occupied the homestead eighty-four years. He was one of the most prominent, active and enterprising men in that community, and was the last in that neighborhood of the old militia colonels, among whom were Colonel Coleman, Colonel Adams and Colonel Newell. His wife, who was a Spofford (of Georgetown), died two years before him, and three children survived him—Daniel E. Moulton, of Georgetown; Mrs. H. Sawyer and Mrs. I. Titcomb, of West Newbury.

Eben Carter Bailey was born in the West District of Newbury March 15, 1818, the year before its incorporation as a separate town. After leaving the public schools he was apprenticed to George Hosum, a leading shoe manufacturer, and when he had arrived at his majority he was employed a year by Mr. Hosnm, and then taken into partnership. He subsequently married a daughter of Mr. Hosum, and the firm was removed to Boston. After the final dissolution of the partnership Mr. Bailey continued the business in Boston, retaining his residence in his native town.

Aside from the vocation of a busy and successful merchant, Mr. Bailey pursued the avocation of an agriculturist and was deeply interested in the Masonic order, of which he was a prominent member. Major Poore said of him, in the *Newburyport Herald*, after his death, which occurred at West Newbury, that "he was an affectionate husband, a kind brother, a sincere friend and a cheerful giver to the deserving poor." He died April 29, 1881.

James Smith was born in the West District of Newbury in 1792, and died in the old homestead at Crane Neck April 23, 1882, at the age of ninety years. Mr. Smith was the sixth in direct descent bearing the name of James, and the fourth who lived on the Crane Neck farm, his great-grandfather James having bought it of John Kent, of Kent's Island, in Newbury, about 1720. The first American ancestor of the Newbury family was Thomas Smith, who came in the ship "James," and settled in Ipswich in 1635. Three years later he went to Newbury and located and occupied the farm on which the subject of this sketch died, it having passed in its descent through John Kent, above mentioned. The son of Thomas Smith was James, who was drowned at Anticosti in the expedition against the French at Quebec in 1690. James, the son of James, was born in 1670, and married Jane Kent, of Kent's Island. His son James was born in 1696, and inherited from his grandfather, John Kent, one hundred acres of land on Crane Neck Hill in the Upper Woods,—then a hunting-ground of the Indians. The last James built the house which formed the back part of the house which descended to his son James, whose sixth son was the James whose sketch is here written. The father of the last James married Prudence, daughter of Edmund Little, whose estates also have come down in a line of Edmund Littles, and are now owned by his great-great-grandson. A sister of the last James Smith married Edward Toppan, of Newburyport, whose children live now, or have until very recently lived, on the same farm to which there has never been a deed. It has remained in the family ever since the first division of lands, and has always borne the name of the Toppan farm.

Ebenezer Bailey was born in what is now West Newbury June 25, 1795. He was the son of Paul and Emma (Carr) Bailey, and on both his father's and mother's sides belonged to families which had for many generations lived in the valley of the Merrimac. He was the youngest of four children, and was selected by his father, who was a small farmer, for a collegiate education. He graduated at Yale College in 1817, and shortly after opened a private school at New Haven, where he also entered his name for the study of law in the office of Hon. Seth P. Staples. After only a short residence in New Haven he accepted the position of tutor in the family of Colonel Carter, at Sabine Hall, Richmond County, Va., where he remained a year, returning to West Newbury in the winter of 1818 and '19. He then opened a private school at Newburyport, and married Adeline, daughter of Allen Dodge, of that town. In 1823 he was appointed head master of the Franklin Grammar School in Boston, and in 1825, the year of his marriage, was the author of the prize ode read at the Boston Theatre on Washington's birthday. In November, 1825, he was appointed teacher of the Boston High School for girls, and in December, 1827, opened a young ladies' private high school in Spring Lane, in Boston.

In 1830 he was one of a committee to draft a constitution for the organization of the American Institute of Instruction, and about the same time was a member of the Boston City Council and a director of the House of Reformation. While living in Boston he was also a frequent contributor to the *Boston Courier*, and, becoming a popular lecturer, was for a time president of the Boston Lyceum. In 1831 he compiled the "Young Ladies' Class-Book" and "Bakewell's Philosophical Conversations," and in 1833 he published what is known as "Bailey's Algebra," a work on which his fame chiefly rests. In 1838 he opened a private school for boys in Roxbury, which he removed in 1839 to Lynn. He died of lock-jaw in Lynn July 28, 1839.

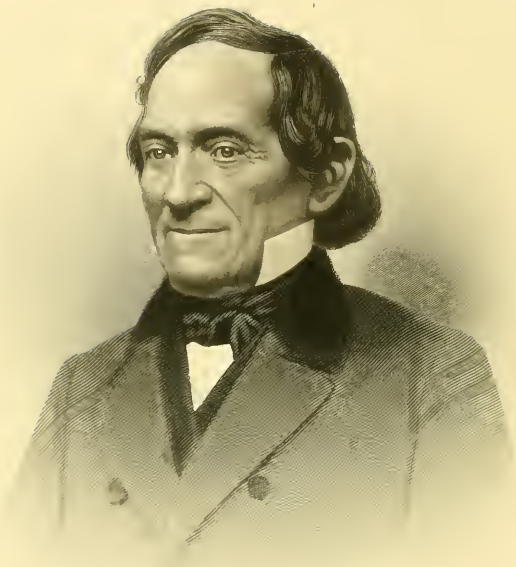
The native of West Newbury whose name is more familiar to the readers of this sketch than that of any other was Major Ben: Perley Poore. He was born in that town November 2, 1820, and was the son of Col. Benjamin Poore, who was the sixth lineal owner of Indian Hill farm, of which Major Poore was the seventh and last. In 1650 the broad acres of "Great Tom Indian" came into the possession of

John Poore, the first American ancestor of the family, who built the house on the farm, which, with additions and alterations, has been held under the original Indian deed, and has passed from father to son through seven generations. The farm derived its name of Indian Hill from early battles on that spot between the Indians and the settlers. The Poore family is said to have been of Norman origin, and John Poore, the emigrant ancestor, was descended from Philip Poore, a brother of Richard Poore, bishop of Salisbury, who planned and caused to be erected the famous Salisbury Cathedral. The original house on the Indian Hill farm was a copy of an old English manor, and as wing after wing and tower after tower have, from time to time, been added to it, it has assumed a shape and appearance unlike any structure to be seen elsewhere, but strictly in harmony with the broad cosmopolitan and antiquarian tastes of its late proprietor, and suggestive of the rich and rare collection of ancient furniture and relics and curiosities crowded in its rooms and halls. It would be an almost endless task to describe the collection, an adequate idea of which nothing but an exhaustive descriptive catalogue could give. The portraits of his ancestors, their coats-of-arms and the swords they wore, Franklin's printing press, portions of Egyptian mummies, relics of the Pilgrim Fathers, stair-cases and fire-places from historic houses, pulpits and pews from famous meeting-houses, a bedstead on which Napoleon slept, ancient armor, cross-bows of an early age, Masonic emblems and jewels, albums of countless autographs, vases from Herculaneum, old china by Watteau, swords of Bunker Hill, and order-books of the Revolution are but few of the articles making up this rare museum, but are sufficient to suggest its extent and quaintness and value.

Major Poore received his early education in the Dummer Academy, from which he graduated in 1832, at the age of twelve years. In the catalogue of the academy he is mentioned as belonging to New York, as at that time his father was engaged in business in that city. In 1831, while at school, he went to Europe with his father, and while there visited Sir Walter Scott, for whom Major Poore's younger brother, who died in California, was named. After finally leaving school he served a few years' apprenticeship at the printer's trade, which, however, he never pursued. At the age of sixteen he became a newspaper correspondent, and at that time, in 1838, he wrote his first letter to the *Boston Atlas*, a journal to which, as a letter writer, he was attached for many years. From 1838 to 1840 he edited the *Southern Whig*, at Athens, Georgia, and in 1840 was *attaché* of legation to H. W. Hilliard, at Brussels. In 1844 he went to Paris, where he remained until 1848, acting as the agent of Massachusetts to collect facts from the marine and colonial departments of France touching the history of the Commonwealth. The results of his labors filled ten folio volumes, and were highly commended by the Legislature. While in Paris he wrote a series of letters for the *Boston Atlas* and the *Hartford Courant*, which at that time, when our people were less familiar than now with European affairs, attracted the attention of intelligent readers, and were considered authoritative upon the subjects of which they treated.

On his return from Europe he edited for a time the *Boston Daily Bee* and the *American Sentinel*, becoming, however, in 1854, the Washington correspondent of the *Boston Journal*, in which capacity, with more or less frequency, he wrote under the signature of "Perley" until his death. In 1854, also, he became secretary of the United States Agricultural Society and the editor of its journal. He was clerk of the Senate Committee on Foreign Relations while Charles Sumner was its chairman, a period of about ten years. Afterwards, for many years until his death, he was clerk of the Printing Records Committee, but all the while keeping up his correspondence and familiarizing himself with everything connected with Washington, Congress, its members and its current business. He published an account of the conspiracy trial in 1865, and in 1867 his invaluable "Congressional Directory." Other works published by him were "The Life of General Taylor" in 1848, "The Rise and Fall of Louis Philippe" in the same year. "The Early Life of Napoleon" in 1851, "The Agricultural History of Essex County" at a later date, and his "Reminiscences." Major Poore died in Washington May 29, 1887, leaving a widow, who was Miss Virginia Dodge, of Georgetown, in the District of Columbia.

Among the residents at various times in West Newbury may be mentioned, in addition to those already referred to, Nathaniel Emery, an old Jeffersonian Democrat, and a fearless and independent man who opposed the division of the town; his two sons, Eliphalet and Nicholas, who moved across the Artichoke in order to keep their residence in Newbury and afterwards returned; Caleb and Joseph Kimball, enterprising farmers; Edward Worth; Nathan Rogers, who lived at Surinam, near the head-waters of the Artichoke; Joshua and David Ordway, grandsons of Hananiah Ordway, who killed the Indian on the Garrison Farm at Zion, near Indian Hill; Joseph Kelly, the tobacconist, who lived at Mount Misery, between Surinam and Zion; David Morse, the blacksmith, one of whose daughters was the mother of Professor Felton; Thomas Huse Everett, whose mother was a sister of Thomas Huse, who gave his farm in West Newbury to his namesake; Nat Hale, a cabinet-maker; and John Chisemoni, a carpet-weaver, who lived by the road-side in Coker Lane. There was also Major Moses Moody, whose three daughters married Judge Crosby, of Lowell; Dixie Crosby, at one time Professor of Surgery in Dartmouth College; and Professor Smith of the Gilmanton Theological Seminary. His farm was opposite the First



Parish Church, and has been in later years owned by Moses Moody Ridgway. Daniel Emery and Moses Newell were leading citizens, and for many years were prominent in town affairs.

The schools of West Newbury have always been good and liberally supported. There are now in the town two hundred and ninety-five children between the ages of five and fifteen, and provision for their education has been made by the establishment and maintenance of one high school, one grammar school, seven mixed schools and one primary school, supported at an expense to the town, in 1886, of $3560.19.

The population of the town in 1885 was eighteen hundred and ninety-nine, and its valuation in 1886 was one million ninety-six thousand eight hundred and fifty-four dollars. While its population has been gradually diminishing, its property has been gradually increasing, and with its good soil, its delightful situation, its existing horse-railroad communication with Haverhill, and a promised communication with Newburyport, it may be safely predicted that from this time forth it will increase in population, prosperity and wealth.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

DR. DEAN ROBINSON.[1]

In this day of multiplicity and great variety of doctors (so called) male and female, of different schools of medicine or no school at all, one can hardly imagine the dignified position of a well-instructed, competent physician seventy-five years ago, entering upon the practice of his profession with zeal and enthusiasm. The duties of such an one, especially if located in an agricultural town, were more arduous, in some respects, than would those of a country practitioner now be. At that time there were no railroads, with steam-power, in this State; no telegraphs, no telephones.

Much of the mechanical and agricultural work was done without the aid of labor-saving machinery, now so convenient to lighten the toil of the artisan or farmer.

The country doctor of old time was obliged to be a druggist—to keep on hand a store of medicines, and carry those required for his patients on his professional visits. He had to contend with all sorts of wind and weather, riding or driving over rough roads frequently; neither could he summon his professional brethren for a consultation as rapidly as if the facilities for communication were greater. He also was obliged to work without the help of many agents which the increased discoveries of chemistry have introduced, and with rougher surgical instruments than those now in use.

But if the physician's labors *were* more arduous, with less pecuniary recompense, yet, if he performed them *well*, he was certain to receive more respect and esteem from the community than a good man, of the same profession, can expect in this irreverent generation. Seventy-five years ago the minister and the doctor were looked up to with veneration. And this very consideration served as a stimulus to a man of correct feeling and high principle to "walk worthy" of his "vocation."

A young man of this description, Dean Robinson, M.D., with his family, settled, in 1811, in the western part of the town of Newbury, Mass. (now West Newbury). The first house he occupied is situated about half a mile above the bridge over the Artichoke River, on the road from Newburyport to Haverhill.

A letter in the writer's possession, dated April 22, 1811, written by a lady in the vicinity mentions "our new doctor" as the occupant of the house referred to above.

The opinion of a person who, with a friend, visited the new comers, is given, that they "were elegant and desirable neighbors," who received their visitors with great politeness and entertained them handsomely.

This first impression made upon the neighbors by the doctor and his family was correct, and increased and deepened as years rolled on.

Dean Robinson, the son of John and Sarah Robinson, of Andover, Mass., was born on the 15th of April, 1788. His father was not living when he came to Newbury, but his mother resided in the house with him. The writer remembers her as a gentle and dignified old lady. Her son reverenced and loved her to an unusual degree. She must have been very careful in training him in habits of industry, truth, and with religious principles.

Dean Robinson attended the common schools in his native town when a boy, and subsequently the academy in North Andover. Afterward he became a pupil of the Rev. P. Eaton, of Boxford, a learned and excellent Congregationalist minister, for whom he always entertained a high esteem. Mr. Robinson was for a time a teacher in Danvers, and was much respected by his pupils. It was customary at that time for young men preparing for a profession to teach school, in order to defray their own expenses for instruction; and in many cases this discipline had a good effect upon their own characters, and gave them much knowledge of human nature.

Mr. Robinson studied medicine with Dr. Thomas Kittredge, of Andover, a celebrated physician in the country.

He married Mrs. Elizabeth F. Farnham, *nee* Lovejoy, of Andover, a young widow, with two children, who found a kind father in Dr. Robinson. One of these, a daughter, was married to Dr. Asa Story, of Manchester, Mass., and died in 1874, beloved and

[1] By Mrs. M. H. Emery.

respected. The son, Mr. Jacob Farnham, always made his home with his mother and step-father, and became an esteemed and useful citizen in the town of West Newbury, which was incorporated as a separate township in 1819.

Mrs. Robinson was truly a helpmeet for her husband. By the wise management of her household and untiring industry she greatly assisted him in acquiring a handsome property. Both Mrs. Robinson and the doctor always were remarkable for hospitality.

The doctor's only child, a daughter, was born in the house near the Artichoke River. Before Dr. Robinson's entrance into West Newbury, Dr. Poore, I think, occupied the whole professional ground. Some other physicians came to the place, but remained but a short time. Though there was enough work for two physicians, it was natural that the old doctor should feel somewhat sensitive at the appearance of a young brother in the profession. But so considerate and courteous was Dr. Robinson towards his senior, that they became, in time, good friends, and the younger attended the elder in his last sickness. The friendship between the two doctors and their families is continued to the present time by their descendants.

The writer is indebted to the late Major Ben: Perley Poore's obituary of Dr. Robinson for much of the material for this sketch. Dr. Robinson soon gained a good practice, which constantly increased, and with it his experience and reputation.

After some years of success he purchased a larger house about a mile above his first residence, where he lived many years. Here his daughter was married to Mr. Samuel Moody. While living at this place the doctor probably did the greater part of his professional work. He was now one of the best physicians in the county. He endeavored to keep up with the improvements of the times. He was a very "clear-headed" man, and his advice was often sought by his medical brethren. His practice was not confined to his own town, but extended to Newburyport, Georgetown, Amesbury and other neighboring towns. His patients, many of them, became his warm friends. His presence in a sick-room, as the writer recalls it as a youthful memory, brought hope and promise of relief to his patient. He would, after proper inquiries and examination and a few moments of apparently deep thought, prepare his medicine and give directions in a manner to inspire such confidence that no one would *dream* of disobeying them. In a serious case he liked one person to take the responsibility. "Who stands nurse?" he has been heard to ask. There were no *trained* nurses at that time. Dr. Robinson was particularly attentive to patients among the poor and needy. If the instances of his gratuitous services and contributions of medicines and delicacies to the destitute had been recorded, the list would probably be long.

Dr. Robinson became a member of the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1815. He was recorded as a retired member in 1849. He also belonged to the Essex North Medical Society, of which he was one of the founders. The increase of mechanical business in the western part of the town brought increase of work for a physician, and Dr. Boyd settled in that locality, He died of consumption after a few years' practice, and Dr. Robinson was a kind friend to him in his last illness.

In 1842, Dr. Robinson purchased the farm on Pipe-Stave Hill, once the residence of Hon. Tristram Dalton.

Dr. and Mrs. Robinson, for a number of years, enjoyed this beautiful estate, and their house was a delightful resort for their friends, who were very numerous. Their hospitality was also extended to strangers. It was not unusual for persons to come from some distance to consult the doctor, and to wait for him if he were absent on his rounds of visits, in which case refreshments were offered them, if the delay were long, no hotel being accessible.

The doctor was fond of agriculture, and superintended the work on his farm with success. He delighted especially in the cultivation of fine fruit. This business, which many would consider laborious, was, to the doctor, a relaxation from his medical work. He was one of those industrious men born in the last century, who made *change of work* recreation.

He kept good horses, and was more careful for their comfort than his own, as he would return after his long drive, leave his tired steed to rest, and soon set off again with a fresh horse. As Major Poore wrote, he "continued to visit his old families, and to consult with the junior members of the profession, until he had to be borne in others' arms to the bedside of the patient."

For some years before his decease he was troubled with a chronic affection of the spine, which increased until he was unable to walk without assistance. He bore the affliction, heavy as it was for one of his active habits, with fortitude and patience. At the same time his wife was becoming very feeble, although she survived him more than two years.

For some time the doctor was confined to his bed. His last illness was cheered by the loving care of his daughter and her husband, his stepson and his grandson, who attended his grandfather with rare and unselfish devotion.

His medical brethren were attentive, and his rector, the Rev. Dr. Horton, of St. Paul's, Newburyport, visited him, and, with prayers and administration of the Holy Communion from time to time, brought the consolations of religion to him while deprived of the ability to worship in church.

But the end came at length. In the words of his friend, the late Major Poore: "After devoting half a century of his earthly existence to the wants of the



Faithfully Yours,

Ben: Perley Poore

sick and suffering, Dr. Robinson's strength gradually faded away, under a chronic spinal affection; but his mind retained its vigor until he gently sank into his last sleep." His death occurred August 22, 1863.

Another friend writes:

"By the death of Dr. Robinson, the community has lost a valuable man. He possessed a very discriminating mind, coupled with an intense common sense, which gave to his judgment a value in most of the ordinary affairs of life, to which but few men attain. He was also a 'Beloved Physician,' as was well attested by the crowd of weeping friends, who assembled . . . at his late residence on Pipe Stave Hill, to pay the last tribute of respect to his mortal remains, and to sincerely sympathize with a bereaved and heart-stricken family."

From a notice in a local paper:

"At a meeting of Essex North District Medical Society, held at Haverhill, Oct. 5, 1863, the subscribers were chosen a committee with instruction to express through the public papers their high sense of the eminent professional standing and social worth of our late associate, Dr. Dean Robinson, of West Newbury.

"The Committee, in behalf of the Society, adopt, and subscribe the following resolutions:

"*Resolved*, That by the death of our respected friend, Dr. Robinson, the community have sustained the loss of an active and useful citizen,—the sick, of an intelligent, skillful and excellent physician,—and we, his companions, are deprived of one whose professional opinions we ever respected, and whose long connection with this Society, his devotion to its interest, the ability and zeal with which he discharged his duties, and his cheerful, manly and honorable demeanor h s won him the respect and esteem of those who are, and have been, members of this Society, and who demand of us this tribute of regard.

"*Resolved*, That we express to his family our deep sense of their irreparable loss, and our sympathy with them in their bereavement, and our wish ever to unite with them in cherishing his memory.

"(Signed) "JEREMIAH STOFFORD.
"KENDALL FLINT.
"H. PERKINS."

MAJOR BEN: PERLEY POORE.

Ben: Perley Poore belonged to one of the oldest families of the town of Newbury, his ancestor, John Poore, having settled on the River Parker in 1635. He came from Wiltshire, England, where his family had been eminent in church and State; Herbert Poore, bishop of Sarum, having assisted at the coronation of King John, and united with the barons in wringing from his unwilling hands the Magna Charta.

By his petition and his influence with King Richard I. his See was removed from Sarum to Salisbury, and his brother, Richard Poore, was his successor; through whose zeal and ability the building of Salisbury Cathedral was commenced. He laid the first stone on April 28, 1220, and preached the first sermon at its consecration, on St. Michaelmas day, 1225.

In Amesbury, England, from which our Amesbury derived its name, lived the great ancestor of the family, Philip le Poer, and from him for more than thirty generations the family has been easily traced.

In 1650 John Poore purchased Indian Hill and the land surrounding it from the Indians. It is one of the finest estates in Essex County, and overlooks the land and sea for a long distance.

The grandfather of Major Poore was Daniel Noyes Poore, an eminent physician, who graduated at Harvard in 1777. He was the classmate and friend of Rufus King, and the two assisted in planting the elm tree which now stands on the lawn in front of the house at Indian Hill.

Colonel Benjamin Poore, the father of Ben: Perley, married the daughter of Allen Dodge, of Hamilton, Mass., and from her family came his name of Perley, of which he was proud, since his maternal ancestors were also of English descent, in direct line from Pierre Dodge, of Chester, whose name appears in the "Book of Heraldry" as rewarded with arms by Edward I. for valiant services in 1306.

Colonel Poore resided, during his early married life, in the town of Newburyport, and it was there, in 1820, that his son Ben: Perley was born. He afterward continued his mercantile business in the city of New York, and he sent his boy alone, at the age of seven years, to Newburyport to visit his relatives, as a test of his precocious self-reliance, and the journey was safely performed.

He afterwards removed to Indian Hill, and became devoted to rural pursuits, making his home a model farm.

He was repeatedly rewarded by the State for his zeal in agriculture and for his own importation of a breed of Short-horn cattle, which were carefully preserved in their purity by his son, and they still adorn the pasture-land of the place.

He removed, with his family, to San Francisco, and was settled there in business; and, being sent as agent for establishing a line of steamers to Hong Kong, he was shipwrecked and drowned on the return voyage.

Major Poore passed his youth at Indian Hill farm, where he also acquired a love of rural life, which never left him. His father was justly proud of him, and in 1831 he accompanied his parents to Europe, where he met many distinguished men of the day, including Walter Scott, in his home at Abbotsford, Thomas Moore and General Lafayette.

The impressions of that journey, made so early in life, were always stamped upon his memory and gave an impetus to his future career.

On his return home he entered Dummer Academy, in which institution he always took great interest, and a few years previous to his death delivered an historical address there upon the dedication of a new dormitory. After leaving there he went to Worcester, Mass., and studied the art of printing for two years, and, acquiring journalistic tastes, he subsequently went to Athens, Ga., and became editor of the *Southern Whig* from 1838 to '40.

In 1841 he accompanied the Hon. H. W. Hilliard, Minister to Belgium, as an attache to the legation, and during his residence abroad he was the agent of the State of Massachusetts to obtain original historical matter for the archives of the State. Ten large folio volumes testify to his industry, and are evidences of his skill as a penman, in which he took

great pride, and his copy has been the joy of every compositor who has been called upon to compose the thousands of columns contributed by him to the public press.

After leaving the legation at Belgium, he went to Paris, by the advice of his father, to perfect himself in the French language, with the intention of practicing law in New Orleans, which project, however, he afterwards abandoned. He traveled in Greece, Asia, Palestine and Egypt, and made two visits to Constantinople, and while in the Holy Land he bathed in the Jordan, sat on the Mount of Olives and broke bread with the pilgrims within the gates of Jerusalem. He crossed the Great Desert of Sahara and lost one attendant during a siroceo. On arriving in Egypt he was disappointed in not receiving an expected draft, and was almost without money. He was very anxious to visit the Nile and the Pyramids, and applied to a banker for assistance, explaining his position; being a Free Mason and having an honest countenance, his appeal was heard, and an answer was promised that evening. The book of "English Heraldry" was consulted, and, finding his story true, there was no delay in advancing the required sum; and on his return from the journey his draft from the Rothschilds was received, and matters were settled to the gratification of all parties.

He managed his travels so as to spend Holy Week in Rome, where he received the blessing of the Pope. He returned from Europe in 1847, and continued his connection with the *Boston Atlas*, and in the winter of that year commenced his career as a "Washington Correspondent" on that paper. In 1848 he entered warmly into the Presidential election, and published a life of General Zachary Taylor, the Whig candidate, and was also editor of the *Boston Bee*.

In 1849 he was married in Georgetown, D. C., to the daughter of Francis Dodge (an uncle of his mother), who was a native of Hamilton, Mass.

In 1850 he edited the *American Sentinel* in Boston, through which he ventilated his passion for native Americanism, as he was intensely patriotic.

The care of a newspaper was irksome, but the correspondence was a delight; and his success on the *Atlas* led to greater fame on the *Boston Journal*.

From 1854 he resided in Washington during the sessions of Congress as correspondent of that paper; and, having unlimited freedom in its columns, added much to its value and importance as an influential journal.

As an evidence of his passion for the art of printing, it may be mentioned that at his home he rejoiced in an amateur printing office, of somewhat pretentious proportions; he was the owner of a Ramage press, with a stone bed and wooden platen,—four pulls to a sheet,—once worked by Benjamin Franklin, and he occasionally indulged in "jobs" that were not only creditable, but evinced the perfect compositor and tasteful mechanic.

When he entered upon reporting the proceedings of Congress by telegraph, so that the news should be printed in Boston as early as in Washington, it was soon adopted universally in the larger cities, rendering the Washington reporters a power in the land, and the senior member, Major Poore, was their chief.

Apart from the newspaper he also had a literary career. Soon after his return from France he published the "Rise and Fall of Louis Philippe" and the "Early Life of Louis Napoleon," and later he gave us the lives of Grant, Logan and Burnside.

He was clerk of the Committee on Foreign Affairs in the United States Senate, and was the trusted friend of the committee generally, but was especially appreciated by Senator Charles Sumner, its chairman.

They had many tastes in common, and the Major was always a welcome guest at his table, the invitations to which were generally written "Pot-luck at 6." There, on such occasions, while inspecting his rare volumes and curios, the Senator often remarked that he found Major Poore the most intelligent appreciator of his collection. At the last dinner eaten by Mr. Sumner, Major Poore was one of the few personal friends present, and late that evening he was hastily summoned to the bed-side of his friend, where he remained until the great statesman breathed his last. In 1878 he contributed to the *National Review* a paper on "Sumner's Place in History."

He was clerk of the Printing Committee of the Senate for twenty years, and compiled annually the "Congressional Directory," and also, by order of Congress, "Our Diplomatic Relations," "Federal and State Constitutions," "Colonial Charters and other Organic Laws of the United States" and "The Catalogue of Government Publications." Meanwhile he was writing for the *Agricultural Reports*. He also supervised the indices to the *Congressional Record*, a class of work in which he was an expert. In 1880 he wrote a series of articles for the *Atlantic Monthly* entitled "Reminiscences of Washington Life," and his last work, published in 1886, was "Perley's Reminiscences," in two volumes, of rare interest.

His devotion to agriculture was supreme, and when he was sixteen years of age he planted at Indian Hill, with his father, a row of thirty-nine chestnut trees, which are still in a thriving condition; and at the age of thirty-nine he planted thirty-nine elms, and a tree every year after, for twenty years, making fifty-nine elms, which are now vigorous and beautiful. He continued to add to the beauty of the farm, and received the prize of one thousand dollars offered by the State Agricultural Society for the best ten acres of trees raised from seed. He was always identified with the agricultural interests of the State, and was secretary of the National Agricultural Society for many years.

Few men have lived who have been more uniform-

ly industrious. He had none of those qualifications which adapt a man to idle hours. He had his hours of comparative repose, but they were not hours of idleness. A change of work was his only recreation. He passed from the hurly burly of Washington life, from the turmoil of political dissensions, from the sharp competition of telegraphic correspondence, from the hospitalities of the capital to his home at Indian Hill, but he never reclined under his own roof or beneath the trees of his beautiful home, except when, as a host, he extended agreeable civilities to his many friends. His trees, his farm, his books, his correspondence, his autographs, his collection of Revolutionary relics, his clippings from the newspapers claimed his attention. He was not pressed for time, and while he was not deficient in method, he passed from the consideration of all these different interests so rapidly that, had it not been for his great love for the work he had temporarily in hand, one might have wondered how he found any recuperative effect in his change from the banks of the Potomac to the banks of the Merrimac. The demands made upon him during these vacation seasons, when Congress was not in session, never ceased, for he was so many-sided in his tastes and possessed such a fund of general knowledge that he was not at a loss for information to impart whether the gathering was literary, agricultural, masonic, military or antiquarian in its nature. He was a welcomed guest wherever he went, for he had a fund of anecdotes and volumes of unwritten reminiscences in his mind, which came at his bidding to appropriately illustrate every topic and to enhance the enjoyment of every occasion.

His association with the leading statesmen of the past forty years was more intimate than that ever enjoyed by a Washington correspondent. He was in the best sense a helpful man to even those who were his superiors in special attainments. His retentive memory enabled him, on many important occasions, to prevent misstatements being made by those who consulted him, and he was justly regarded as the best authority upon any subject to which he had given his attention. "The Major never made a speech in the Senate of the United States," said a Senator to us a few years since, "but how many speeches would have been Poore's if quotation marks had covered the facts and points which he contributed." He never betrayed a trust, and in his presence no topic, however important, was discussed in bated breath by the Senators, for his loyalty was unquestioned.

One of the amusing evidences of the Major's eccentricity, and yet characteristic of his entire sincerity in fulfilling his obligations, was manifested by what was known as "The Great Wheelbarrow Feat." In June, 1856, shortly after the nomination of Fremont, the Major made a bet of a barrel of apples with Colonel Robert I. Burbank that Mr. Fillmore would obtain more votes than Colonel Fremont in Massachusetts, it being agreed that the loser should propel the apples on a wheelbarrow from his own residence to that of the winner. After the election in November the Major, satisfied that he had lost, notified Colonel Burbank that he should pay the bet and perform the task of wheeling the barrel from West Newbury to Boston. Colonel Burbank offered at once to release the Major from his engagement, but he was young and muscular, and he felt that to retire from the field would be ignominious. He occupied a portion of three days in accomplishing his work. He was escorted up State Street by the Boston Fusileers and a crowd which packed the street. He delivered his barrel to Colonel Burbank in front of the Tremont House amid the cheers of thousands, and was the recipient of a dinner in the evening.

Major Poore had a natural love for a military life, and as a student of tactics he acquired great proficiency. He was the commander of a boys' company when quite a youth, and while at the South he gave considerable attention to the militia. He held several staff appointments during his editorial career in Boston.

With much labor and expense he organized and commanded the First Rifle Battalion of Massachusetts, which was the first corps to tender their services to President Lincoln in 1861. He was first major and then lieutenant-colonel of the Sixth Massachusetts Regiment, rendering important services in keeping the way open from the North to the capital. Later he returned to his duties in Washington in poor health, but Governor Andrew declared that his dispatches to the *Boston Journal*, and other services in Washington were worth a regiment in the field, as he was there known as the soldiers' friend.

Prominent among Mr. Poore's characteristics was his devotion to the Masonic Fraternity. It was prior to the year 1860 that he received, at Paris, France, the Thirty-second Degree of the Scottish Rite, and after that time he was an Honorary Member of the Supreme Council, and was promoted to the Thirty-third Degree. He was loved and honored by thousands of Masons who never knew him personally. On the farm, which was his home for so many years, he made a lodge in the open air, among the trees that he had planted when a boy,—a lodge duly proportioned, with seats of stone and an altar of stone, on all sides enclosed by a thick set hedge,—which had, by a regular meeting held there, been duly consecrated. And here, to show how Mr. Poore was appreciated by his fellow Masons, it may be stated, that Albert Pike, the gifted poet, on the 29th day of May, 1887, as Grand Commander of the Masonic Fraternity, issued a manifesto in honor of Mr. Poore, which was exceedingly complimentary to the departed, and full of the noblest sentiments. One of the paragraphs in Mr. Pike's manifesto is as follows: "We who are Masons cannot think of Brother Poore as dead; but only as one gone far away from us, into an unknown realm, from which no return to us is possible; but

into which we shall follow him in a little while, and be happier in the renewed intercourse of affection, because of the temporary separation. Nature must have her way, and we must for a time lament this new loss and deprivation, and speak of him regretfully, and sadly remember him in our lonely self-communings." And again, after alluding to his faith in Masonry, Mr. Pike says: "In that faith our Brother labored here, and firm in that faith he died; no man or woman in all the world being poorer because he had lived, and no one's life made cheerless by loss of faith in God's goodness, or of hope of immortality by any word he ever wrote."

"Twice overwhelmed by anguish in his later years, by the deaths which left him childless, of his daughters grown to womanhood, and beloved by him with an unmeasurable love, he bore with patient courage and resignation these terrible afflictions. Death has mercifully spared him the sharper agony of being left wholly alone in his old home to mourn over another grave, and we offer the desolate widow the sympathy of our brotherly love." Then followed the order that for sixty days all the Brethren should wear the badge of sorrow for an Inspector General deceased.

The last literary work performed by Major Poore was the preparation of a history of the "Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company," of Boston, an organization two hundred years old, of which he was Past Commander, and long an influential member. It was on the day that he delivered, in person, the manuscript to the printer in Washington that he was stricken down with faintness at the National Capital, from whence he was conveyed to the Ebbitt House, which had been his winter home for a great many years. After an illness of two weeks, during which time he received every possible care and attention from his devoted wife and relatives, his sincere friends, Mr. and Mrs. C. C. Willard, as well as from his physicians, Doctors Baxter and Harrison, he breathed away his life in perfect peace on the morning of the 30th of May, 1887, and was buried by the side of his two daughters near Indian Hill.

A leading feature of Mr. Poore's character was his disposition to help his fellow-men, often giving away his money while denying himself comforts that he needed. During his sojourn in Georgia he identified himself with the Methodist Church, but as years progressed he sided with the Protestant Episcopal Church, and at all times and in every place never failed, as occasions occurred, to manifest his regard for the Christian religion.

His survivors are his widow and his two sisters, now living at Indian Hill Farm, and his only grandchild, the son of his younger daughter, who was the wife of Frederick S. Mosely, of Newburyport, Mass.

In the note-book carried by Major Poore was found pasted the following touching verse, which, perhaps, may be appropriately quoted in thus closing the life of one of Essex's faithful sons:

"When I am dead and gone
And the mould upon my breast,
Say not that he did ill or well,
Only he did his best."

SAMUEL MOODY EMERY.

Samuel Moody Emery was born A.D. 1804, in that part of Newbury, Mass., which in 1819 became a separate town, now called West Newbury. His father, Moody Emery, was a descendant of John Emery, Jr., who with father, mother, sister, uncle and other friends, came to Newbury in 1635.

John Emery, Sr., was one of the "original grantees of land" in the town, "declared, December 7, 1642, to have proportionable rights in all waste lands, commons and rivers undisposed, &c."[1] He also had a portion of land granted him, "called the greene, about three akers, being more or less, &c., only the twenty rods [is] reserved in said land for a burying-place, &c." The price of this land was three pounds.[1] He lived at the old settlement for some years, but in the latter part of his life resided in West Newbury.[1]

At this time, the western part of the town was called the Commons or Upper Woods.[1]

In 1644 "there was laid out unto John Emery, Jun., fourscore akers of upland, bee it more or less, joyneing unto Merrimacke River on the north and running from the mouth of Artichoke River unto a marked tree by a swamp, &c."[1]

John Emery or his father must have had much land added by purchase or grant to this "fourscore akers," which was, at one time, deeded by him to his father, and again given back to the son. Before John, Jr.'s death he was a large landed proprietor in West Newbury and owned land in Haverhill.

In the year 1679 "the town," on March 3d, "granted unto John Emery, junior, twelve acres of land on the west side of Artichoke River, provided he build and maintain a corn-mill, to grind the town's corn from time to time, and to build it within one year and a half after the date hereof, and so forth."[2]

He was also granted three acres on the east side of the river to build the mill, on certain conditions.

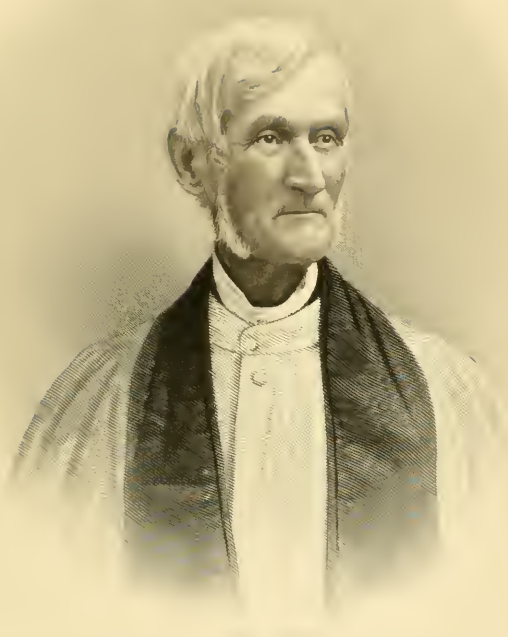
The "Mill" property was afterwards sold by Stephen Emery, Esq., who married Hannah Rolfe, and built a new house on the old farm.

He was the grandfather of Moody Emery—the father of Samuel M. Emery, whose mother's name was Abigail Prescott, from New Hampshire.

Samuel was a delicate child, requiring much care. When about the age of twelve years he was brought low by a severe illness, from which he slowly recovered.

The first school Samuel Emery entered was a very primitive one, presided over by a lady called by her pupils Ma'am Jewett.

[1] See Coffin's "History of Newbury," pp. 292, 48, 301, 392, 36, 41.
[2] Coffin's Hist., page 121.



Saml M. Emery

Some of Miss Jewett's pupils did her much credit in their after-lives. Her school assembled in her bedroom, in a building a little below Brown's Spring, on the opposite side of the road.

After leaving Miss Jewett's, Samuel attended the district school near his home.

Although West Newbury was an agricultural town, with a few mechanical industries, it was not unusual, occasionally, for a boy to seek for a liberal education. Samuel Emery, the son of old John, Jr., was a graduate of Harvard in 1691, probably the first from West Newbury.

There must have been an inclination for reading cherished by some of the people of this town, for there was an old library in the East Parish, where books requiring much perseverance to be thoroughly studied, were found, such as "Rollin's Ancient History," "Tillotson's Sermons," etc.

A few young men, of whom Samuel was one, began to collect a circulating library, to contain more modern and attractive books than the old one. This library lived several years.

Evidently, there was a strong movement in the minds of some West Newbury boys towards a better education than they could obtain at home, between the years 1823 and 1834, with this result: Cornelius C. Felton graduated at Harvard in the class of 1827, Samuel M. Emery in that of 1830, Robert A. Coker in 1831 and Samuel M. Felton in 1834.

Mr. Emery was prepared for college at Phillips Exeter Academy, and always retained a love for that institution. He entered college in 1826. While there he studied as one in earnest.

One of his class-mates wrote of him after his decease: "So early as college life he developed his high-toned character and stainless reputation." He must have stood well as a scholar, to have a "part" at commencement, in a class like that of 1830.

For several years succeeding his graduation Mr. Emery was employed, the greater part of the time, in teaching. On March 8, 1831, he engaged as master of the classical department of the academy at Northfield, Mass., where he remained for two terms. From Northfield, accompanied by a cousin, one of the pupils of the academy, he walked nearly to Boston, finishing the journey to Newburyport by water.

From October, 1831, to August, 1833, he was instructor of the "High School for Young Ladies" at Portsmouth, N. H.

He was baptized in St. John's Church by Dr. Burroughs, September 2, 1832, and confirmed the next Sunday, in the same place, by the Rt. Rev. A. V. Griswold, bishop of the Eastern Diocese.

Mr. Emery was brought up as a Congregationalist, but was, for some time previous to his baptism, dissatisfied with the religious system to which he had been accustomed.

After leaving Portsmouth he took a room at Cambridge, and studied theology under the direction of the Rev. Dr. Coit, then rector of Christ Church, Cambridge, and subsequently under that of Rev. Dr. Wainwright, rector of Trinity Church, Boston, afterwards provisional bishop of New York.

While preparing for holy orders Mr. Emery continued to instruct pupils.

In the winter of 1835 he was employed by a gentleman in Lancaster, who was obliged by his duties in the Legislature of the State to leave some students from Harvard, who had been placed under his care. President Quincy engaged Mr. Emery to take charge of them during this gentleman's absence. He became much attached to these young men, and one of them became his intimate friend.

He returned to Cambridge, and on July 28, 1835, was admitted to the holy order of deacons, with two other candidates, in (old) Trinity Church, Boston, by the Right Rev. Bishop Griswold. He was presented by the Rev. William Croswell, then rector of Christ Church, Boston, in which church the newly-ordained deacon preached his first sermon.

After officiating occasionally in Boston and neighboring towns, he was engaged, in December, to assist the rector of Trinity Church, Chatham (now Portland), Conn., a beautiful town on the Connecticut River, opposite the city of Middletown.

From Mr. Emery's private journal I extract the following entry, dated Dec. 12th:

"Reached Chatham, after a journey of about three days, and entered upon the duties of 'journeyman,' assistant minister to Rev. William Jarvis, disabled by laryngitis."

Mr. Emery was elected to the rectorship of Trinity Church, Chatham, in April, 1837, and was advanced to the Holy Order of Priests in the same church, on Whitsunday, May 14th, by the Right Rev. T. C. Brownell, bishop of Connecticut.

There was in 1837 but one church (Episcopal) in Middletown, and one in Hartford. The nearest churches were at Middle Haddam and Glastonbury. Meriden was near enough to admit of exchanges between the rector there and the one in Chatham. I notice in Dr. Emery's journal two instances in which he walked home from Meriden, a distance of some ten miles.

There was no livery stable in Chatham at that time, but Mr. Jarvis and other parishioners were very willing to lend horses and vehicles to the rector, and he sometimes rode or drove to distant parts of the parish or to other towns. An old gentleman, a parishioner, favored him so often with his horse, that Mr. Emery was *taxed* for the animal, of which he was supposed to be the owner. Mr. Emery would tell this story with great amusement.

He was very fond of children and young people, and attracted them by his cheerfulness and good humor. But he believed in discipline.

He gave the Sunday-school a large share of his attention. He was usually present at its sessions.

Mr. Emery often preached three times on a Sunday, and occasionally on week-days. He frequently, in the early part of his work, held evening services in private houses, where he had aged or infirm parishioners, or where families resided at a considerable distance from church.

On the 17th of November, 1841, Rev. S. M. Emery was married by the Rev. Dr. Morss, rector of St. Paul's Church, Newburyport, to Mary Hale, only surviving child of Eliphalet and Sarah (Hale) Emery, of West Newbury, Mass.

Eliphalet Emery, Esq., resides on the old farm given to John Emery, Jr., in 1644. He was a prominent citizen of West Newbury, son of Nathaniel and Sarah (Short) Emery, and grandson of Stephen and Hannah (Rolfe) Emery, mentioned above, as grandparents of Moody Emery, the father of Rev. Samuel M. Emery. Consequently Mr. and Mrs. Emery's fathers were own cousins.

On June 2d of this year the name of a part of the town of Chatham was changed to Portland.

Rev. S. M. Emery and his wife were blessed with seven children, six of whom survive their honored and lamented father. Abbie Prescott died in childhood.

He was a "lover of hospitality" in the simple way in which a country clergyman forty years since could show it, and never ceased in after-years to practice it as he had ability. His house was open to his parishioners, his brethren of the clergy, and strangers and friends from out of town.

During the last twenty years of Mr. Emery's residence in Portland the number of the clergy in the vicinity was greatly increased. The Berkeley Divinity School, in Middletown, incorporated in 1854, and the removal of the Rt. Rev. Bishop Williams to the house formerly occupied by the Rev. S. M. Jarvis, D.D., produced great changes.

The chapel of "St. Luke the Beloved Physician," erected by a lady in memory of her husband, for the use of the Berkeley School, was opened to the public.

Christ Church, Middletown, assumed the name of "Holy Trinity," and a church in the southern part of the town was built which bears the name of "Christ Church," South Farms; and chapels followed in various distant parts of the town or neighboring villages, served by professors or students of the Berkeley School.

The Rev. Dr. Goodwin, of Holy Trinity, was an intimate friend of the Portland rector, and they often exchanged pulpits. Dr. Emery was on very pleasant terms with the Middletown clergy and often received a "labor of love" to assist him in his services. He had many warm friends among them—some of them much younger than himself.

He was for some time a trustee of the Berkeley Divinity School, and held the office until he left the State.

During most of his residence in Portland he was one of the Board of School Visitors for the public schools of the town.

He was very much interested in the education of the young, from children in the primary school to students in college, or divinity school. He prepared a number of young men for college, and instructed one, through the freshman year.

He received the degree, "*ad eundem*," of M.A. from Trinity College in 1838, and of S.T.D. from the same institution in 1864.

Dr. Emery prepared most of his sermons with care. He had not acquired the habit of extemporaneous speaking, and never willingly trusted to his memory, without notes. He was an earnest preacher, and usually commanded the attention of a congregation, sometimes, when roused and excited by his subject, rising to eloquence.

His advice was asked often in regard to secular as well as spiritual matters, and all sorts and conditions of men were represented from time to time in his study.

He had been in the habit of officiating occasionally in the eastern part of the town. He inaugurated a mission there, with the approval of the bishop, and the help of a Berkeley student, son of the late bishop of Mississippi, now the Rev. Stephen H. Greene, of St. Louis.

Before Dr. Emery left Portland he had the satisfaction of seeing the corner-stone of the "Chapel of St. John Baptist" laid by Bishop Williams, and of returning next year to be present at its consecration. This chapel is connected with Trinity Parish, and the rector is expected to celebrate the Holy Communion once a month within its walls. One of the Berkeley students reads service every Sunday when no clergyman is present.

He resigned the rectorship of Trinity Church on Easter Monday, 1870, and preached his "farewell sermon" the first Sunday after Trinity, June 19th.

In the course of the summer the whole family were settled on old John Emery's farm, situated on the Merrimac and Artichoke Rivers, in West Amesbury.

Dr. Emery did not wish to be rector of another parish, but desired to be engaged in the work of the ministry. He assisted other clergymen, and filled vacancies in parishes.

Near the close of this year the Rev. George D. Johnson was elected rector of St. Paul's Church, Newburyport. Dr. Emery, who remembered him as a student in Middletown, enjoyed his society keenly, and was occasionally able to assist him in the parish.

While residing in West Newbury, four miles from St. Paul's Church, Newburyport, when not engaged elsewhere, Dr. Emery usually held a service in the evening, on Sundays, at his house, and often a little congregation of neighbors attended. The rector of St. Paul's approved of this service, and once came out and preached. Occasionally, other clergymen, visiting at the house, would assist by preaching.

Dr. Emery superintended the public schools in West Newbury from 1871 to February, 1874.

Early in November, 1873, the whole family removed to Newburyport.

He had the pastoral care of St. Paul's Church, Newburyport, at one time, while the rector was absent in Europe.

In June, 1880, Dr. Emery was present at the fiftieth anniversary of his class, the survivors of which, were invited to a dinner at Judge Warren's in Boston, one of their number. He also attended commencement and the commencement dinner at Cambridge, and seemed to renew his youth amid old scenes.

He was minister in charge at St. James' Church, Amesbury, for about two years, while residing in Newburyport.

In the spring of 1882, Dr. Emery and family returned to their West Newbury home.

He was now hardly strong enough to officiate in public, but usually held divine service in his house, for the benefit of those necessarily detained from church.

He became interested in his farm, and was very thoughtful of the comfort of those employed by him.

He officiated twice at funerals during this last year of his life.

On Sunday, August 12, 1883, he read the services with much energy, and on the 13th and 14th appeared cheerful and active.

He conversed pleasantly with visitors who came to see him, and spoke of improvements he hoped to make on the farm. On the 15th he was not well, but walked about a quarter of a mile, and dined with the family.

In the afternoon he became very ill, but towards evening seemed partially relieved. His physician, who was sent for, left him late at night, as he seemed quiet. In the morning he was alarmingly worse, and no efforts to help him were availing, until at about ten o'clock he quietly entered into rest.

During his short illness he recognized his family and the rector of St. Paul's, who was sent for to attend him by his bedside. He repeated the Lord's Prayer audibly with the others, and responded "Amen" to the prayers offered.

His death called forth many tributes of love and esteem from friends in different parts of the country, and sympathy with the bereaved family.

The funeral was attended on the following Monday at St. Paul's Church, Newburyport, by seven clergymen besides the rector, Rev. E. L. Drown. A large congregation of sorrowful friends were present.

His body was laid to rest in the Belleville Cemetery, with the holy service of the church. On one part of this cemetery is the site of Queen Anne's Chapel, the first Episcopal Church in Newbury, near which may still be seen the head-stone, at the grave of the Rev. Matthias Plant, the minister of Queen Anne's Chapel, and the first rector of St. Paul's.

The bishop of the diocese, prevented from being present at the funeral, wrote a letter of condolence to the family, in which he expressed great esteem for Dr. Emery and sorrow for his loss.

At the next convention of the diocese, in June, 1884, the bishop, after mentioning Dr. Emery's long service in Connecticut, said. "In times of necessity he has rendered good service since, notably in his long term of care of St. James', Amesbury, at a time of complete business prostration in that village. Devout, wise, humble, charitable, strong in the faith, Dr. Emery was a man to make friends with all who knew him."

The Rev. Mr. Harriman, rector of Trinity Church, Portland, wrote soon after Dr. Emery's death: "As I enjoy the prosperity of this old and firmly-planted parish, I often acknowledge my indebtedness to the wise master-builders who preceded me, and I feel that others have labored and I have entered into their labors. In these days of change and short rectorship we need to learn the secret of success which enabled Dr. Emery to labor thirty-five years in one place."

From a minute adopted by the vestry of Trinity Church I extract the following:

"From 1835 to 1870 he broke the bread of life to feed the flock of God committed to his care; he went in and out among us, as a faithful imitator of the Good Shepherd, and an example of the believers in word, in conversation, in charity, in faith, in purity.

"Two generations of parishioners remember with gratitude his gentle, kindly ministrations, and look to see him receive the crown of life when the Chief Shepherd shall appear."

An elegant and massive stone church occupies the ground on which the old one built in 1830 stood. A fine organ, the gift of parishioners and many other friends, some from out of town, in memory of Dr. Emery, with a brass tablet set in the wall near it, stands on one side of the chancel.

It was used for the first time publicly at a memorial service nearly a year after Dr. Emery's death, when the rector then in office—the Rev. Mr. Harriman—preached a commemorative sermon from Neh. iv. 6.

The Holy Communion was celebrated, and a very large congregation, not only of parishioners, but also others from different places, participated in the solemn service, and all seemed anxious to show their loving appreciation of their deceased pastor. A memorial window is soon to be placed in the Chapel of St. John Baptist.

"The memory of the just is blessed."

CORNELIUS CONWAY FELTON.[1]

Cornelius Conway Felton, the eldest son of Cornelius Conway and Anna (Morse) Felton, was born in Newbury, Massachusetts, November 6, 1807. His parents gave their children the heritage of their own superior intelligence and moral worth; but were able to bestow on their higher education little beyond their hearty sympathy and encouragement. While Cornelius was still a child they removed to Saugus, and lived in the near neighborhood of Dr. Cheever, grandfather of the present Professor of Anatomy in Harvard University. The doctor, finding young Felton a boy of excellent promise, gave him his first lessons in Latin, and furthered his advancement by every means within his power. Felton was fitted for college under the tuition of Simeon Putnam, of North Andover, who had high and well-merited reputation as a classical teacher.

He entered Harvard College as a freshman in 1823. He took at once and maintained through his college course a foremost place in his class; was second to none in the department of ancient languages, and manifested the power of rapid acquisition and the scholarly tastes that distinguished him through life. At the same time he won the cordial friendship of all who were brought into intimate relations with him; and they were such friends as he was glad to hold ever afterward in the dearest regard. No one can have ever passed through the ordeal of student-life with a character more transparently pure. Temptation, indeed, had for him no meaning. He loved society, but only the best; and his own influence was from the first refining and elevating. He had an elastic spirit, and bore the burdens of his early life easily and cheerily; yet they must have been heavy. He was dependent mainly on his own industry, with the very slender aid then given by the college to meritorious students; and he worked in the library in vacations, taught school, and resorted to every honorable means for replenishing his scanty resources, all the while practising a more rigid economy than would seem credible to a student of the present day.

Immediately on graduating he went to Geneseo, New York, with two of his classmates, to take charge of an academy founded by Mr. James Wadsworth, well-known as a munificent patron of learning. He remained there two years, and then returned to Cambridge as a tutor in Latin. In 1830 he was appointed tutor in Greek; in 1832, College Professor of Greek; and in 1834, Eliot Professor of Greek Literature. He had in these successive offices the occupation most congenial with his taste, and one for which no man could have been more eminently fitted by the cast of his mind, the direction of his studies, and his enthusiastic love of the literature of which he was the teacher and expositor. He was by no means rigid or exacting in the class-room, and an indifferent scholar was put by him under no compulsory pressure; but those who were ready to learn received from him the most ample aid, and derived from their intercourse with him the strongest stimulus to persevering industry. At the same time his genial disposition and his fellow-feeling with young life, which never waned, made him a favorite teacher with all who came under his charge.

The only important episodes in this period of his life were European tours and sojourns, in 1853 and 1856. On both these occasions he not only visited Greece, but traveled in the country extensively and with close observation; made himself acquainted with the leading men, especially with those concerned in the revival of letters and the diffusion of knowledge; and became conversant with the institutions and the public life of the kingdom. What a man gains by travel depends mainly on what he carries with him,—on his knowledge of the fit topics for research and inquiry; and probably no American has ever been in Greece who was more thoroughly versed than he in all that could be known of the past, or better qualified to form an accurate judgment and estimate of the present and the future, of a people so long depressed and down-trodden, yet with so rich a heritage of ancestral fame.

In 1855 Mr. Agassiz established in Cambridge a school for young ladies; and Mr. Felton, though with his full tale of college duties, became a teacher and lecturer in that institution, and contributed very largely to its success and prosperity.

When, on the resignation of Dr. Walker in 1860, the presidency of Harvard University became vacant, Mr. Felton was elected as his successor; and in their votes the governing boards simply ratified the unanimous choice of the whole community. In this office it can hardly be said that he met the expectations of his friends; but their disappointment was one of surprise and admiration. He had previously led the quiet life of a scholar, absorbed in books and literary labor, with few relations of business with the outside world, and with no opportunities for testing his executive ability; and it was anticipated that he would adorn the headship of the college by the rare grace and beauty of his spirit, character and culture, rather than that he would take upon himself the unnumbered prosaic details of duty and service which then made the presidency of Harvard College as arduous and as multifarious a charge as could well be devised or imagined. But with an intense feeling of responsibility, as for a most sacred trust, he entered upon a thoroughly energetic administration, giving his personal attention to all concerns that could rightfully come under his cognizance, seeking full knowledge of the work of the teachers, exercising a watchful vigilance over the students, and making himself felt, not merely as a gracious and kindly presence, but as an active and action-compelling force in every department of the university. He even be-

[1] By Rev. A. P. Peabody, D.D.



R. B. Felton

came a strict disciplinarian when it was his duty to be so, though it was manifest that in the infliction of penalty he suffered more than those who deserved and needed it. His labors were rendered more severe and exhausting by the growing discontent with the stereotyped and obsolescent methods of our New England colleges, and the movements toward a broader culture and a higher intellectual life, in which he was in the front rank of the leading minds. With his unresting assiduity, he was oppressed by a painful sense of the vast interests devolved upon his discretion and ability, and by the constant accumulation of demands upon his time and strength, which grew more and more numerous and urgent from his habit of giving heed to every claim, and of assuming every burden that he was asked to bear.

But his overtasked vigor of body yielded under the incessant strain and tension. Symptoms of heart-disease, which had already given his friends some uneasiness, became more decided and alarming from the time that he exchanged his sedentary habits for a more active life. Early in 1862, during the winter vacation, he was induced to seek relief and recreation by a change of scene and surroundings, and he visited his brother at Thurlow, Pennsylvania. Here his disease advanced rapidly to a fatal issue. After an attack in which his death was expected from moment to moment, he seemed for a little while convalescent. On the 26th of February, the first day of the new term, I received a letter from him, dictated when respiration and utterance were intermittent and laborious, telling me that he had been at the point of death, but now began to hope for prolonged life; expressing fervent gratitude to the Divine Providence; and asking me to beg the college Faculty, in the name of the Infinite Love, to be lenient and merciful in certain cases of discipline that had been laid over from the preceding term. That same evening I read the letter to the Faculty, obtained the desired vote, and had hardly reached my home when I received a telegram announcing his death.

Mr. Felton filled a very large and, in some respects, a unique place in our world of letters. It is seldom that an adept in one department is a proficient in all the essential branches of liberal culture. This, however, was true of him. While as a classical scholar he had no superior, he was versed in the languages and familar with the best literature of modern Europe, was largely conversant with natural science, and had a highly educated and nicely critical taste in the entire realm of art. The ability that he showed in many and diverse directions, had its scope been narrower, would have been accounted as genius of a very high order; but in its breadth and versatility it was more than genius. Within the largest bounds of a liberal education no demand was made upon him that found him incapable or unprepared; and whatever he did he did so well that he seemed to have a special adaptation for it.

As a writer he was easy and graceful, brilliant in metaphor, rich and apt in illustration, and, whenever his subject permitted, affluent in wit and humor. He often wrote too rapidly to do himself full justice; but when the occasion required and leisure served, he had at his command a style of finished elegance and beauty.

He was often false to his own reputation in his unstinted kindness to others. No one ever applied to him for aid in literary labor of any sort without receiving all and more than all the assistance he desired. He would put aside work of his own that he was anxious to finish, to look up authorities, to furnish working material, to revise manuscripts, to correct proof, for those whose only claim upon him was their need; and of course the report of his generosity was constantly multiplying his would-be beneficiaries. Had he converted to his own use all the time, thought and study that he contributed to fame in which he had no share, posterity might have admired him more; but his own coevals would have loved him less.

Indeed, those who knew him best feel that no man could have been more lovable than he. He can never have made an enemy, or forgotten or lost a friend. In society he was genial and mirthful, full of anecdote, talking so admirably well that his friends would have been content to be mere listeners, yet never willing to assume more than his due share in conversation. There was a native refinement, an unstudied delicacy in his manners and his social intercourse, indicating an inward life on a high plane, and by unobtrusive example and influence constantly tending to elevate the prevailing tone of sentiment and feeling around him. To those most intimate with him it was impossible that he could be replaced. We have not seen, and may not hope ever to see, his like in this world.

With a temperament that might have seemed pliant and ductile, no man was ever more strongly intrenched than he within the defenses of a true, quick, sensitive and discriminating conscience. No unworthy compliance ever cast a transient shadow even on his early youth. We who knew him from boyhood could recall when he went from us not an act or a word which we would wish to forget. He was firm in the right, and no power on earth could make him swerve from his conviction of duty. His force of character, hidden on ordinary occasions by his gentle, sunny mien, showed itself impregnable when put to the test. He never shrank from the most painful duty; and in prompt decision and fearless energy for difficult emergencies he seemed no less worthy of supreme regard than for those amiable qualities which made his daily life so beautiful.

It can hardly be needful to say that a character like his could have had no other foundation than matured Christian faith and principle. He was unfeignedly reverent and devout. He loved the wor-

ship and ordinances of religion, and gave them the support of his constant attendance, his unfailing interest and his earnest advocacy. He took from Jesus Christ the law of his life, breathed in His spirit, trusted in His gospel of salvation and immortality, and looked to Him for guidance through the death-shadow into the everlasting light.

Mr. Felton's literary activity was incessant; but he seems to have had very little ambition to appear before the public in his own name and on his own sole account. It may be doubted whether he ever published anything except at the solicitation of others; and he was thus often led into partnerships in which his share of the labor far exceeded that of the revenue, whether of fame or of material recompense.

In 1844 he published an edition of the "Iliad," with very valuable English notes, and with Flaxman's illustrations.

In 1840 he prepared a Greek Reader, with English notes and vocabulary. This continued long in use, perhaps is not yet out of use, and is probably to be preferred to any other similar text-book, in the fitness and range of its selections, in the facilities which it furnishes, and in those which it wisely fails to furnish for the student.

In the same year he contributed to Ripley's "Specimens of Foreign Literature" a translation of Menzel's work on "German Literature," in three volumes.

In 1841 he published an edition of "The Clouds" of Aristophanes, with an introduction and notes. This has been republished in England.

In 1843 he contributed very largely to a work on "Classical Studies," edited by Professors Sears and Edwards; and also to Professor Longfellow's "Poets and Poetry of Europe."

In 1844, in connection with Professor Beck, he made a translation of Muuk's "Metres of the Greeks and Romans."

In 1847 he published editions of the "Panegyricus" of Isocrates, and of the "Agamemnon" of Æschylus, each with introduction and notes.

In 1849 he translated Professor Guyot's work, entitled "The Earth and Man." In the same year he issued an edition of "The Birds" of Aristophanes, with introduction and notes, which was reprinted in England.

In 1852 he published a selection from the writings of his predecessor, Dr. Popkin, with a most happily written memoir. In the same year he issued a volume of selections from the "Greek Historians."

In 1856 he published a series of selections from modern Greek writers, in poetry and prose.

He contributed to Sparks' "American Biography" a "Life of General Eaton."

In addition to these works, he published many lectures and addresses. His aid was constantly sought by the editors of various periodicals, to which he was a large contributor. If we remember aright, his earliest writings of this sort were literally labors of love for the *American Monthly Review*, edited by the late Professor Sidney Willard,—a work designed to give a fair and truthful statement and estimate of current American literature, which had an early death solely because it was too honest to live. He was a frequent contributor to the *North American Review* and to the *Christian Examiner*. He wrote for Appleton's "New American Cyclopedia" several long and elaborate articles, particularly in his own special department.

But the works most characteristic of his mind and heart, of his ability, scholarship, taste and sentiment, were not designed for publication, and were not issued till after his death, when they appeared under the editorship of the writer of this memoir. They are "Familiar Letters from Europe," and "Greece, Ancient and Modern." The former was a small volume of letters of travel, written to his family with no ulterior purpose, yet with a fidelity of description, a vividness of comprehension, and a charming spontaneity of graceful diction, that not only needed no revision, but would have suffered damage by any endeavor to improve them. The latter comprises four courses of Lowell "Lectures on Greece," in two large octavo volumes. We doubt whether there exists in our language any other work on Greece that comprehends so much, and is at the same time so entirely the outcome of the author's own study, thought and observation. As the lectures were hastily written, many of them on the eve of delivery, it was thought desirable to verify references and translations; but this labor proved to be almost needless. There was in his manuscript the strange blending of a chirography bearing tokens of hot haste, and a minuteness and accuracy showing that his materials were at his command at momentary notice; though a large portion of them were such as seemed to require elaborate research. There is no reason why these volumes should not live and last, as at once of profound interest to the general reader and of essential service for the special study of the Greece that was and the Greece that is.

Mr. Felton was an active member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, and of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. He was also a member of the New England Historic Genealogical Society, and of various literary and scientific bodies, in all of which he bore as large a part as his busy life rendered possible. He was for several years one of the Regents of the Smithsonian Institution, and a member of the Massachusetts Board of Education; while he manifested equal efficiency and diligence in the less conspicuous office of a member of the School Committee of Cambridge, where his services are commemorated in a school-house that bears his name. He was a corresponding member of the Archæological Society of Athens. He received the degree of



S. M. Tetlow

Doctor of Laws from Amherst College in 1848, and from Yale College, in 1860.

Mr. Felton was twice married,—April 12, 1838, to Mary, daughter of Asa and Mary (Hammond) Whitney; and in September, 1846, to Mary Louisa, daughter of Thomas Graves and Mary (Perkins) Cary. He left two sons and three daughters.

SAMUEL MORSE FELTON.[1]

Samuel Morse Felton, the son of Cornelius Conway and Anna (Morse) Felton, was born at West Newbury, July 17, 1809. At the age of fourteen he became clerk in a grocery store in Boston, devoting his scanty leisure to study, with the purpose of preparing himself for college. In 1827 he became his brother's pupil at Geneseo, N. Y., and there completed his preparation for advanced standing in Harvard College, entering the sophomore class in 1830. In college, while supporting himself by teaching, he distinguished himself as a scholar in a class containing a remarkable number of men who became eminent in literature and science. On graduating in 1833, he still continued to do double work, taking charge of an academy in Charlestown and studying law at the same time. But impaired health warned him of the necessity of a change, and led him to seek more active employment. He chose the profession of a civil engineer, for which he was admirably fitted, both by rare ability and attainments as a mathematician, and by a maturity of practical wisdom seldom found in one who has lived chiefly among books and students. He entered the office of Loammi Baldwin in 1835, and succeeded to the business of his office on his death, in 1838.

In 1841 Mr. Felton built a railway from Boston to Fresh Pond in Cambridge, and in 1843 he commenced the construction of the Fitchburg Railroad, followed by that of the Vermont Central and other connecting railways. On their completion he became superintendent of the Fitchburg Railroad, and continued to hold that place till, in 1851, he was chosen president of the Philadelphia, Wilmington and Baltimore Railroad. This road was in a very bad condition, unprofitable, in need of extensive repairs and of thorough reorganization in every department.

In the measures which Mr. Felton found necessary he encountered serious opposition, and obstacles that at first seemed insurmountable. But he understood his ground, and maintained it with strenuous purpose and unyielding energy. His plans were laid with careful deliberation and with the wisdom which long experience gave, and the result was that the road became and has not ceased to be second to none of the great thoroughfares of travel, in construction and equipment, in facilities of transportation, and as a safe investment for capital.

By Rev. A. P. Peabody, D.D.

In 1861 this road, as the only direct means of communication between the northeastern portion of the country and Washington, became an object of attack by the secessionists, so that its president's unslumbering vigilance was demanded at every point. A plot had been skillfully planned for the assassination of President Lincoln on his way through Baltimore, immediately before his inauguration. This plot Mr. Felton, with still greater skill, unearthed and baffled, and it was solely through his agency that our patriot chief magistrate reached the chair of state. Our limits will not admit of a detailed narrative of this achievement. It deserves, and can hardly fail to secure a permanent place in the history of the country. Suffice it now to say that no greater service was rendered to the loyal cause during the war, and that Mr. Felton's part in it evinced a keenness of penetration, a command of resources and an intensity of will-power, which, in a more conspicuous field, would have won for him extended and enduring fame. Subsequently, the burning of bridges on this road by the rebels threatened the entire suspension of travel and intercourse, and especially of the transportation of troops and military stores between the North and Washington,—a danger which Mr. Felton averted by opening a more easily defended route through Annapolis.

Probably no man in the country ever endured a heavier strain of brain and muscle, of wearing thought and unresting activity, than Mr. Felton bore during the fourteen years for which he held this office. He had hardly completed his reforms in the administration of the road, when he was overtaken by the cares, anxieties, responsibilities and perils forced upon him by the Civil War. Early in 1865 a stroke of paralysis, occasioned wholly by overwork, compelled him to resign. After a few months he recovered, to a good degree, his health and his working power, and he then became, and still is, president of the Pennsylvania Steel Company, the earliest establishment in the United States for the manufacture of steel rails. This is now one of the largest manufactories in the country, and is conducted not only for the benefit of the stockholders, but with the most humane and philanthropic regard for the improvement and well-being of the operatives.

Mr. Felton's professional reputation is shown in his appointment by Governor Andrew, in 1862, as a member of the Hoosac Tunnel Commission, and by President Grant, in 1869, as one of the Commissioners to inspect and report upon the Pacific Railroads, then just completed. He has served as a director in several important railroad corporations. The esteem in which he is held among men of liberal professions other than his own is manifested in his election, for several successive years, to the presidency of the Harvard Club, in Philadelphia.

In private life, Mr. Felton's character stands out in pure white light, without even a transient shadow. Stainless purity, unswerving integrity, large-hearted

benevolence, and those (so-called) lesser, yet not less important, traits that are the charm and blessing of home and of social intercourse, endear him to all who know him. No man can have more or warmer friends than he, and, unless in the inevitable collisions of business, he can never have made an enemy.

Mr. Felton has been twice married,—in 1836, to Eleanor Stetson, of Charlestown, who died in 1847, and in 1850, to Maria Low Lippitt, of Providence. By his first wife he had three daughters; by his present wife he has had one daughter and three sons. He has been very happy in his family, with children devoted to his comfort and happiness, and with sons who are relieving him of such portions of his care and labor as have become onerous with his advancing years.

HON. HAYDN BROWN.[1]

Brown is a name that is, and well may be, familiar in this town. The first white child born in Newbury was Mary, daughter of Thomas and Mary Brown, who, living to be eighty-one, died and left, as the record reads, "a good report as a maid, a wife and a widow." There were at least four men named Brown among the first settlers. Of all their descendants there is no one better known to-day in West Newbury, where he was born and has always lived, than Haydn Brown; and we call to mind no one who better knows the town itself; is more intimate with its history and traditions, or more in love with its green hills, its fertile fields, its beautiful river, skirting its whole length, with crystal waters opening their mirror-face to the trees, shrubs and all else that crowd its banks or cast their shadows from the skies.

He was "self-made," as the New Englanders term it; and, if so, does credit to his own workmanship, for he is solid, sensible, strong-armed and level-headed. His Christian name, as that of his brother Handel, indicates that he is from a musical family, and that is the fact, though his life has been too busy in sterling, manly work to indulge much in fine arts or mere accomplishments, though they may refine and elevate society. It has been his lot to dare destiny and snatch victory as a brave man may, when the odds are against him. Commencing life under grave disabilities, all of material wealth he has earned, and all the reputation he enjoys he has won in hard contests. Our fates are not in our stars, but in ourselves; not luck, but pluck conquers every time.

At fifteen, Haydn Brown, with the slightest education, was left to begin life's battle alone; for we must always remember that the world is against the young aspirant till he has received the baptism of the contest without their assistance, though all will cheer, as with throats of brass and tongues of iron, when he has overcome opposition, and feeling the inspiration of success, could get along very well without them.

Finding nothing to do at home, he went to Newburyport on foot, with all his effects in the historic cotton handkerchief, to make his fortune. Vainly seeking some employment to his taste, he drifted along the wharves, and, when his last dollar had been reached, shipped on board a fishing "smack," for less per month than one of his age would now expect per week; but it was a school of industry. At the end of the voyage, this incident occurred, which awoke the dreaming boy to a higher life. It was necessary for him to sign his name, in receiving his wages. He was confounded. He had looked poverty in the eye without quailing; he had faced the storm on the seas; he had worked hard to perform his duties; but now he hesitated, but finally made an unsightly scrawl. The owner of the vessel, in a sympathizing tone, said: "Young man, you ought to go to school!" This remark, in sorrow, not in anger, uttered, overpowered the lad and rings in his ears to this day. He has often said they were the most eloquent words he ever listened to, though on both sides of the Atlantic he has since heard distinguished orators. He went home to West Newbury discomforted, but not disheartened, for he had met the exigency and determined the future. That winter he went to school, and before the grass was green, or the May flowers peeped from under the snows, he had mastered Walsh's arithmetic, committed every rule of the grammar to memory so thoroughly that he remembers them, *verbatim*, to this day; spent his nights in reading history (he has not read his first novel yet) and was sawing wood in the spring to pay his bill. Thus heroically he started his mental train, and has kept the cars in motion ever since. Afterwards he attended the academies at Pembroke and Lebanon, N. H., and, had the means been at hand, would have entered college. Failing in that—fortunately, perhaps, for a good mechanic should never be lost in a poor preacher, or a good merchant killed in a dunce of a lawyer—he turned himself to industrial and commercial pursuits.

West Newbury is the place where comb-making commenced in America, and where it has been continued to this time. To that he gave attention for five years, and there he started business on a small scale, for himself. Later, in 1846, he joined the firm of S. C. Noyes & Co., and has there continued. This is the largest and most successful business firm the town has ever had. It is widely known, its principal market being New York, and thence extending to all parts of the country. Its integrity and financial ability are beyond question. Its senior member, S. C. Noyes (deceased within a few months) was deemed the richest man in the town, and now Mr. Brown occupies the same position. Fifty years have brought great changes to this industry. Those men at their start found only the rudest contrivances called machinery. Even steam did not enter into their calculations. The power of the shops was in the human hand and human foot, but to-day—in this age of

[1] By George J. L. Colby.



Hayden Brown

progress—they have all the improvements that have come to other industries, and they have some of the finest machinery in the country, nearly all of which has been of their own invention, or by persons of their own families. The factory of S. C. Noyes & Co. is the model of its kind in America. Nor has it confined its operations to horn-combs, but the invention of machinery to cut the teeth of fine rubber combs was theirs, and the first combs of that variety were made by them. They have given employment to a large number of hands, and done as much for the progress of their town and the general elevation of society as any business house or firm has ever done. As they accumulated wealth not needed in their home business, they invested in shipping,—the building and owning of a large number of sea-going vessels, ships and schooners, engaged in the fisheries or coastwise and foreign commerce, sailing between Newburyport and Boston.

In local affairs Mr. Brown has never turned a deaf ear to what affected the masses of the people. Remembering his want of early education, he has been untiring in his efforts to make the public schools all they should be; realizing how much he was indebted to the reading of books (for he has been a great reader of history and travels, works on philosophy, politics and religion), he led the way to the establishment of a public library. The town depending largely upon agriculture, he was one of the founders of the local agricultural society, and for many years was its president; has delivered frequent addresses before it, and liberally aided its annual course of winter lectures for a quarter of a century. He had always dealt liberally, not withholding charities from the deserving, and never turning a hungry man away in his hunger. A worker from his very childhood, he has aided labor, scorning the distinctions of race, color or creed. Politically he belongs to the school of Sumner and Wendell Phillips, voted for James G. Birney for President in 1844, and for every Republican candidate for that place from that day. In 1875 he was himself elected to the State Senate, and as an indorsement of his neighbors, received the largest vote ever cast by the town; and in the following year he was re-elected by an increase of nearly two thousand votes in the district. In religion he believes and practices what commends itself to his reason and conscience. He is a lover of nature in all its varied forms. The sunlight on the hills gives him pleasure. The stars and the earth give him gladness. He sees fitness and wisdom in the animals, birds, fishes and insects, and studies their habits. On any one or all of these topics he is the best authority in this locality. He grows eloquent in discoursing on horticulture and floriculture, and loves his garden, its fruits and flowers. Above all things material, and without formality or display, he loves justice and mercy, charity and temperance, honesty and morality, and is a man of pure life and correct habits. He believes in what renders man wiser and better; and what is more and above this, he wants to see and know.

HON. E. M. BOYNTON.[1]

He has never sought any public station, but has been identified with unpopular but successful reforms in which he was leader of a forlorn hope against the most wealthy and powerful monopolies, against press, politicians, parties and every form of ancient and intrenched prejudice.

For fifteen years at intervals of a world-wide business, self-founded, he devoted much money, time and eloquence to reformation of the prevalent ideas as to money, regulation of railroads, immigration and the reservation of lands for the actual settlers, and is satisfied now to see his unpopular ideas accepted by both political parties and his monetary principles settled in his favor forever by the United States Supreme Court.

He has achieved a national reputation as a speaker, writer and inventor, and is the only one who ever represented the New York Board of Trade at the meeting of the united Chambers of Commerce of Great Britain in 1877, by them invited.

In 1876, at Philadelphia, the Emperor of Brazil called twice upon Mr. Boynton. A public test of Mr. Boynton's new lightning saw was ordered by the commissioners of all nations there represented, and a twelve-inch diameter log of gum-wood was sawed off in ten seconds by hand, by the two Boynton brothers, Alfred and Charles. These M cutting saw-teeth were the first scientific and practical gain in the cutting points of reciprocal saw-teeth, used for cross-cutting etc., in the world, and the genuine or imitation are still sold or used in nearly every country.

Mr. Boynton was the first largely to substitute these saws for axes, and the *American Agriculturalist* in speaking of them declared they saved annually to the people in the United States, fifty million dollars.

They were awarded the highest prizes wherever exhibited, also the first awards of the World's Fairs at Philadelphia and at Sydney, Australia.

He has received some fifteen patents relating to saws and wood-working machinery. His compartment ship patents were arranged, using compartments instead of knees, substituting great economy, strength and safety. Six of them were used in the conveyance of eighty cars on their decks through rocky and hitherto unnavigated rapids of the Merrimac, and no scow or car was ever lost, although frequently pierced by obstructions. A similar system of metallic construction is now being applied to ocean steamers. In 1885, Mr. Boynton, after examining the shallow harbors of the Gulf of Mexico, as a paid expert, patented his jetty and harbor construction system, which Captain

[1] The following sketch of Hon. E. M. Boynton has been condensed from public sources, and especially from the King's County (Brooklyn N. Y.) History.

Eads pronounced a great improvement over his heretofore matchless New Orleans jetties. The Eads system used six or more enormous rafts and layers of timber mattresses, framed and trenailed together with willow brush filling between them and huge artificial stones to hold these wooden embankments down firmly for a sea-wall.

This enormous expense is avoided, and the danger from the teredo worm lessened by the substitution of two very slanting rows of piles, placed snugly side by side, and leaning together, penetrating deeply into the mud and forming two slanting dams back to back, above the sea or harbor, dividing the resistance of sea, which curls at their base as upon a slanting shore. This mole, beginning at the shore, is during construction filled with willows and other brush drawn beneath the linked crest of the pile triangle by a cable chain belt, to which masses of willows and other brush are fastened. This is drawn in with sand and mud to any desired pressure and solidity, while the exterior walls of pile timber, having been soaked in tanks of petroleum, are secure from worms.

A harbor may thus be constructed securely and cheaply at any river mouth, or upon any shallow ocean shore where no river exists.

These patents are soon to become the property of a large company for harbor work in America and Europe.

In March, 1887, Mr. Boynton began issuing the mechanical patents of his Bicycle Railway System, which has now been secured patent protection in Europe, Asia, Africa, North and South America and Australia.

A company of five million dollars' authorized capital has been organized at No. 32 Nassau Street, New York, of which he has been elected president, he and his family being the largest owners, with many distinguished men as share-holders.

The most experienced railway and civil engineers have given their opinions that this system means as great a revolution and advance in rapid and economic railway transportation, as the present system is over the old stage-coach and baggage-wagons or as the large bicycle over the boy's velocipede.

By placing posts at the side of existing railways and projecting rails sixteen feet above trains, nearly four feet wide, and thirteen feet deep, with the increased lightness and strength of a board turned edgewise, will require but one-tenth the weight to convey the same passengers and freight, saving in power tenfold; freights will be conveyed at less than the cost of water transportation, while the power applied to speed for passengers will enable the doubly enlarged and rapid wheels to cross the continent, if necessary, from New York to the Pacific in a day with absolute safety, the trains being grooved below and above, with double flanged wheels moving on a single rail with bicycle spindle-wheels, rounding the sharpest curve without loss of power; the saving in weight of ten to one is thus multiplied by a several fold, saving in friction over the present system.

This is to be effected without interference with the present railway system, while using jointly their tracks until substitution of the lighter and more economical trains has been completed.

Arrangements for the engine, cars, and one or more experimental roads, are in progress and will soon be completed, and it is confidently predicted it will give Mr. Boynton a name with the great inventors of the age, who have advanced civilization, and lightened the toil of millions.

The Boyntons in England appeared in possession of numerous strongholds at Scarboro', Rawcliffe, Shrewsbury and other places previous to the conquest, and being Normans, submitted to William the Conqueror and saved their estates. They gave endowments to literary and religious institutions in York and elsewhere, and at Shrewsbury their castle was the point of gathering for the English lords and gentry at the first battle of the Wars of the Roses, where so many were slain, from their indiscretion under Hotspur in not waiting for Glendower and the Earl of Northumberland. John Boynton's castle was taken, himself, Gerald Heron and Archbishop Scrope executed, but the property and title were not confiscated and remain to this day. Later they were adherents and protectors of Wickliffe, the Luther of England.

Strickland Boynton's ship was piloted by Sebastian Cabot in the first discovery of North America, in 1498.

Other members of the family distinguished themselves in the Crusades, and in the wars with France were honored for services rendered at Crecy, Poictiers and Agincourt.

One of the Boynton castles entertained Queen Henrietta Maria with such a display of gold and silver plate that she subsequently confiscated the plate, leaving her portrait in pawn for its repayment when her husband, Charles I., should secure peace.

Sir Matthew Boynton's two sons, William and John, came to Essex County, Mass., with the Rowley gentry, in 1636. Sir Matthew at this time owned Burton Agnes and many other valuable estates in the North of England; commanded Scarboro' Castle and the troops of the Scottish border; was the sheriff of Yorkshire and member of Parliament.

In 1638 John Boynton, his son, purchased from Governor Dummer two hundred acres on the Parker River, Newbury, which continued in the family two hundred years.

From John and William, sons of Sir Matthew Boynton, all of that name in America are believed to have descended.

Some of them are distinguished in military and civil life, but in general they have been more noted as inventors and for intellectual and moral qualities.

The annealing of cast-iron, known as malleable iron, the invention of hot-air furnaces, and many other valuable inventions are of Boynton origin.



Eben Moody Boynton

Hon. Eben Moody Boynton, the subject of this sketch, was born in Harrisville, near Cleveland, Ohio, July 23, 1840, and came to Massachusetts in his childhood. His father, Alfred Boynton, and mother were natives of Newburyport, descended from those who first landed two hundred and fifty years before,—the Boyntons at Rowley, 1636; the Moodys at Newburyport, 1635,—his mother, Abigail Moody, being descended from William Moody, who first landed at Newburyport, whose father, Rev. William Moody, was a brother of Sir Henry Moody, of Garsden, Wiltshire, England.

The Moody family has been eminent for piety, learning, patriotism, intellectual force and public influence, both in England and America. One of the family was elected president of Harvard College, was for many years pastor of the Old South Church, Boston, did much to enlighten his brother-in-law, Chief Justice Sewell, as to the errors of the witchcraft delusion, and thus saved many lives. Another of the family was the first principal of Dummer Academy, in Newbury, the oldest founded academy in Massachusetts. Deacon Joshua Boynton, an ancestor, was chairman of the board of control of that institution.

Another member of the Boynton family was the first teacher at Rowley, an associate preacher with Rev. John Phillips, ancestor of the Governor Phillips family, who founded the famous Phillips Academies and Andover Theological Seminaries. The last surviving pupil of Master Moody, of Dummer, Enoch Boynton, was famous for introducing silk culture into New England. He died some thirty-two years ago, at the age of ninety years. To this great-uncle, the subject of this sketch first came from his birth-place on the Western Reserve in Ohio. He was a great favorite with Enoch Boynton, who resided in Newbury, where the lands of his ancestors had been occupied by his family in unbroken succession from the first settlement of the town. The original mind and inventive genius of Enoch Boynton made a deep impression on the child of thirteen.

Mr. Boynton's social relations have been singularly fortunate and happy. His summer home is on Pipe-Stave Hill in West Newbury, Mass., overlooking Newburyport and the lovely valley of the Merrimac, whose tidal waters sweep the base of the eminence. His parsonage farm was once the property of that eminent patriot, Caleb Moody, who was imprisoned by Governor Andros for resisting the revocation of Massachusetts' charter. His residence tower commands a view of forty mountain peaks, including Mount Washington and of the ocean far and wide. The first Senator of the United States from Massachusetts, Senator Dalton, and his brother-in-law, Hooper, resided here and entertained many distinguished French exiles after the French Revolution, among whom were Louis Phillippe, afterwards King of France; M. de Talleyrand, minister of Napoleon; and the young poet Brissot, who here wrote his sketches of the beautiful scenery.

Within a half-hour's drive are the birth-places of the poet Whittier, Governor Josiah Bartlett, Hon. Caleb Cushing, William Lloyd Garrison, Caleb Moody, Major Benjamin Perley Poore, John Newell, and the homes of the ancestors of Lowell, Longfellow, Parsons and other distinguished men; while just below, on a beautiful island, is the residence of Harriet Prescott Spofford. James Parton, the historian, resides a mile further, in Newburyport, opposite the old home of Dr. Tyng. The castellated house erected and for six years occupied by the British minister, Sir Edward Thornton, looks out from Laurel Hill, near by the property of Captain Henry W. Moulton and his literary family.

Mr. Boynton came to his present place of residence when he was fourteen years old, to reside with Mrs. Susan Coker, a sister of Mrs. General Peabody, of Newburyport, who had in her household her nephew, George Peabody, the famous London banker and philanthropist, during his early manhood. The influence of Mrs. Coker and her daughter Catharine was of value to young Boynton in the formative age, and when he married she gave him the Peabody clock as a souvenir of the distinguished banker.

In 1873, on May 1st, Mr. Boynton married Anna Bartlett Gale, the only daughter of Dr. Stephen M. Gale, of Newburyport, connected through her father with Governor Josiah Bartlett, the first signer of the Declaration of Independence,—he being her great-grandfather,—and the Websters; on the side of her mother, Hannah Whittier Johnson, with the Johnsons and the family of J. G. Whittier, the poet. She is a lady of high literary and musical culture, uniting these pursuits with domestic tastes. Among their friends are numbered some of the best people in the land. Their union has been blessed with four promising daughters. That their summer home is one of rare beauty and happiness we can testify from personal knowledge.

In 1877 he purchased the side-wheel, one hundred and twenty horse-power, steam tug, the "Charles L. Mather," of New York, and ran it to Newburyport, and began experimenting to open the Merrimac River for navigation to Lawrence, Mass. He sent to Lowell the first scow-load of coal ever received there by water from the harbor of Newburyport, from the Philadelphia and Reading coal pocket; towed it to Lawrence, and passed it through the canal to Gen. B. F. Butler, at Lowell, Mass. Mr. Boynton has since expended over fifty thousand dollars from the revenues of his saw business in opening up the navigation of the Merrimack, with a view to giving cheaper coal and lumber freights and water transportation to the large manufacturing cities on its banks, where about five hundred thousand tons of coal are used annually, and manufactures aggregating $100,000,000 annually are produced. The improvements

of the channel, and the delivery of eighty thousand dollars' worth of coal by water, caused the railways to reduce their freights in carrying coal to one-half the former charge, on the plea of competition. An opposition so formidable has thus far prevented sufficient capital being embarked to complete an enterprise fraught with so much benefit to the three hundred thousand people engaged in manufacturing near the summer home of Mr. Boynton; thoughtful men predict that the measure must ultimately prove a great success. The transportation of coal by steam upon the Merrimac, as far as Haverhill, Mass., was first begun by Mr. Boynton and associates in 1864, and has been a constant success ever since, all the coal to Haverhill and the lower towns being now received by water, an indication of the result which enlarged channels and facilities will give to the great manufacturing cities above Haverhill in the near future. In order to admit the deeper draft coal steamers, and open the port for foreign commerce, Mr. Boynton first proposed to the United States Government the construction of jetties at the mouth of the Merrimac, in a letter addressed from his store in New York, of which the following is a copy:

"OFFICE OF E. M. BOYNTON,
NEW YORK, Nov. 18, 1879.

"HON. GEORGE W. MCCRARY, *Secretary of War*,
Washington, D. C.

"Dear sir:—I want a preliminary survey of the mouth of the Merrimac River near Newburyport. It is desired to extend the narrow channel between Plum Island and Salisbury, continuing it in the same width out to twenty-five feet depth in the sea. By driving double rows of piles and forming jetties, the shifting sands that obstruct the harbor will be prevented, and the confined channel, instead of spreading like a fan, as it now does, and changing in every storm, will be rendered as deep as it is between Plum Island and Salisbury, where for a mile and a half it averages thirty-five feet in depth.

"Coal steamers of one thousand tons arrive and depart twice each week at great peril, bringing about one hundred thousand tons of anthracite coal this year. About five hundred thousand tons are used in the valley, the population of which is nearly half a million people. About one hundred millions of dollars' worth of products are sent away annually, and it is desirable that the coal and lumber, corn and cotton, in which the entire country is interested, shall have free access. The government has already accomplished much in river improvements, which goes for naught unless the harbor be rendered accessible. I will furnish steamers and men, and pay all the expense, if you will request General Thom to meet me and make the preliminary survey. The coast survey furnishes the principal data needed. I have consulted General Thom, who is alive to the vast importance of the interest involved and the pressing need of immediate action. With great respect, I remain

"Yours, very truly,
(Signed) "E. M. BOYNTON."

Although this plan was at first objected to on behalf of the government by General George Thom, chief of engineers U. S. A., on the ground of the magnitude of the cost of the necessary boring, sounding, surveys and current observations, undaunted by the prospect that on account of these objections the work would be delayed for years, and the refusal of the War Department to accept his offer to pay for preliminary surveys, Mr. Boynton next procured copies of the surveys of the United States Navy of 1851 and of 1878, and on February 16, 1879, he forwarded copies of the same, showing the changes of sand at the harbor bar, and giving the data necessary for appropriations. Ten days later the Secretary of War forwarded to Mr. Boynton the approval of General Thom and of the War Department, of his project for constructing jetties at Newburyport, at the mouth of the Merrimac, estimating the cost of granite work as not to exceed six hundred thousand dollars, and an appropriation was secured, after one rejection, by the committee, of fifty thousand dollars to begin the work. The adoption of Mr. Boynton's plan was complete, and over one hundred thousand dollars has since been expended, and granite jetties extend respectively five hundred feet from the southern shore and fourteen hundred feet from the northern shore, and are to be extended four thousand and twenty-five hundred feet respectively, thus compressing the immense waters of the Merrimac and tidal currents by a harbor in the ocean, with an entrance one thousand feet wide. This is the first work of the kind in the section, and its completion will be a monument of granite, as enduring as the continent, to Mr. Boynton's labors in behalf of the Merrimac Valley and the ancient historic city of Newburyport.

In 1877 Mr. Boynton was selected by Messrs. George Opdyke, William Orton, Peter Cooper, John Williams and other members of the executive committee of the New York Board of Trade, to represent the city of New York at the meeting of the Association of Chambers of Commerce of Great Britain, at Westminster Palace Hotel, London, in February of that year.

The courtesies received at our Centennial by the commissioners of the British Association mentioned, led to the invitation, in response to which Mr. Boynton was commissioned, and he was the first to take part as a delegate from the United States in that distinguished body. He participated actively in debate during three days' sessions.

Speech of Mr. E. M. Boynton, of New York, at the Dinner given by the Association of Chambers of Commerce of the British Empire, at the Westminster Palace Hotel, London, England, February 21, 1877, Lord Salisbury presiding.

"His experience of England was a succession of surprises. On his first night here he had been permitted a seat on the floor of the Parliament House, and listened to the very instructive debate on Indian finances, trade and resources. And here we listen to the noble Lord Salisbury, who was the delegated absolute ruler of that wonderful land, Solomon, in all his glory, ruled less than ten millions of people; Xerxes never fifty millions; imperial Rome, scarce ever a hundred millions; and at my side is a Christian Governor-General of India, who rules absolutely two hundred and fifty millions, ten thousand miles away. It crushes a Republican to think of such personal responsibility. What it would be to feel it he did not know; but he was sure that the Bible, which Queen Victoria gave as the secret of England's greatness must be his guide, and that God his helper, to succeed in meeting his responsibility. He was glad to know that not one of the sixty thousand Englishmen in India could strike the poorest native without liability to answer before a magistrate to English law.

"America is free. They had some civil troubles, from abolishing an ancient institution—slavery—in fifteen States. The work of freedom it took England six hundred years to accomplish has been completed in the past twelve years. Statesmanship was, however, springing up in those States; the love of peace and pride of country found new expres-

sion recently, where least expected. Neither execution nor confiscation followed their war, in which three million soldiers sincerely battled. No right hands of the conquered were severed on the scaffold; all would now shield the nation's honor if threatened from abroad; while their President slept securely without soldier or sentinel.

"Mr. Boynton did not wonder at our pride of country, this beautiful land, filled with such memories as cluster round Westminster Abbey. Yet the poets, statesmen, heroes, scholars and history of Britain, were shared by their children in America. His ancestors came from Britain to Massachusetts two and a half centnrirs ago, yet more and more was England honored in New England and the United States—your great dead men walk and breathe the air of America. The church and the school were abroad in his country, and the masters of English literature were read quite as much there as are hers Longfellow and Whittier and Bryant and Holmes. We have no such grand antiquities of human hands in America; but if any here present landed at Halifax, they might ride in one direction four thousand miles, *en route* to their Pacific States—visit New York, the commercial port of the continent, and other large young cities—crossing wide States and prairies of limitless fertility —sweep on swift palace trains and over many mountain ranges higher than the Alpine passes trod by Hannibal and Napoleon. Yet they had a few antiquities. When Adam was young their great California redwood trees had sprouted. (*Applause.*) When the morning stars sang the song of creation their Niagara joined in the chorus. (*Applause*). England owned the Canadian, we the American half of that four thousand feet wide of mingled falling waters. And, as he had often looked at the blended mountain of spray that rose to the clouds from Niagara, the sun-blaze on its forehead, linking the rainbows round its throne, was to him a symbol of perpetual peace between England and America; to promote such peace and reciprocity and good-will should ever be the object of his life" (*Applause*).

Mr. Boynton received invitations to many cities and towns in Great Britain, and was presented to Her Majesty, Queen Victoria, and the Royal family at Buckingham Palace. His speeches at London and afterward at the Plymouth meeting attracted great attention, and he received thirty invitations which he could not accept.

After visiting France and Italy, and examining various engineering works of harbor and river improvements, Mr. Boynton returned. He was tendered a dinner by the New York Board of Trade, which he declined. He received the thanks of the president, Hon. George Opdyke, in tones of highest eulogy. In sad contrast, Mr. Boynton, with Messrs. Francis B. Thurber and John F. Henry, afterward constituted a committee to draft eulogies upon the life and character of President Opdyke upon his death, which occurred June 12, 1880. December 15th, following, as delegate of the Board of Trade to Washington, Mr. Boynton took a prominent part in the discussion of important measures, and introduced the chairman of the Committee on Commerce, Messrs. Reagan, of the House of Representatives, and Beck, of the Senate, at the banquet he'd December 17th.

Mr. Boynton was at that time contesting member of Congress *versus* George B. Loring, from the famous Sixth Massachusetts Essex County District. He had reluctantly permitted his name to be used as that of an independent and national candidate, and supposed that he had been defeated by less than one hundred votes; but the discovery of a much larger number of illegal votes led General Butler and Hon. Caleb Cushing to believe Mr. Boynton elected, and it took two years to decide the matter. He refused to make any terms with either of the old parties, and therefore was prevented from obtaining the seat to which these able counselors, and such men as General Weaver (a minority of the committee), General Regan and Alexander H. Stephens, declared him entitled.

The question was not finally decided until just before the inauguration of President Garfield, thus giving Mr. Boynton two years of Congressional observation, which has proved of great value to him, and had the effect of thoroughly disgusting him with politics.

Mr. Boynton took part in the inauguration of President Garfield, as his last political act, and has since devoted himself to literature and farming. He sold out his patents in 1882 to an incorporated company at 36 Devoe Street, Brooklyn. They were valued at three hundred thousand dollars; having the preceding year, under his own management, earned sixty-three thousand dollars gross, and thirty thousand dollars net profits, and whatever discouragements in manufacturing or losses may hereafter occur, the Lightning saws up to that date had been an unquestioned success the world over.

Mr. Boynton was nominated for member of Congress by the National and the Democratic party in Essex County, in 1880, in a district which, with one exception, has been almost unanimously Republican (since the days when Rantoul and Choate and Cushing represented it), yet Mr. Boynton received about two thousand more votes than had previously been necessary to elect—the largest vote ever given a Democratic Congressional candidate in that district. It being Presidential year, the Republican party prevailed, although many Republicans preferred Mr. Boynton; and his opponent's native city, Newburyport, though overwhelmingly Republican, gave Mr. Boynton a large majority, showing how high was the estimation in which he was held by his neighbors and townsmen. Extracts are annexed from a Congressional speech of Hon. Mr. Boynton, which has been pronounced to contain the best defense of the Fourteenth Amendment to the Constitution which has ever been given, and it is predicted that the extension of suffrage by Massachusetts in conformity therewith is only a question of time. We copy from the *Congressional Record* of January 21, 1881:

* * * * * * *

"Summer secured the adoption of the fourteenth amendment, which you would now nullify if you refuse to vindicate its majesty and power in accordance with its sacred provisions.

* * * * * * *

"The people, North and South, stretch out their hands to you to right their wrongs and give them back their liberties and suffrages. For four long years we have plead with our rulers, and thundered at the gates of the State capitol, calling upon them to do what they have promised, by passing the enfranchisement United States Constitutional amendments, to do. Enfranchisement is just, for on the consent of the governed rest our liberties. It promotes manhood to annually select the rulers by a free ballot. It stimulates love of country. It prevents plots and revolutions against the State. It promotes public morals by enlisting all the citizens in the public welfare. It gives security, happi-

ness and prosperity to all classes by giving equal rights, equal privileges and equal burdens. You need not fear the influence of the poor and of the ignorant, for even that is divided in support of candidates selected by the cultured, the wealthy and the influential.

"Equality had its birth in the soul of man, in the teachings of Christ, in the Declaration of Independence. Manhood suffrage is an American invention, and the first realization of universal freedom. Egyptian learning, Grecian art, Roman power and organization are surpassed in the free manhood of America. Its establishment has given to us, alone among the nations of the earth, eighty thousand free pulpits, not one supported by the State. It has given to us, first among the nations, three hundred thousand free schools, all supported by the State. The only titles of nobility issued are a quarter of a million patents to the poor inventors, who so advance our material wealth. To us alone, among the nations of the earth, it has given freedom from the armaments of Europe and the taxation of tyrants. It has taken off the load that crushes out the liberty and happiness of every other nation in Christendom. Here, with labor doubly rewarded in America (partially on account of our tariff), it is fast teaching the European peasant the folly of being obliged to carry a soldier on his back.

"True, France learning financial wisdom from the captured treasury books of ancient Venice, despite the changes of empires and republics, has been eighty years without a panic. France may therefore teach the legislators of this land financial self-reliance and the beneficence of full legal tender paper money. And England, with the sovereignty of the ocean in her grasp and needing no defense except her bulwarks that float upon the stormy sea, may instruct us to protect our commerce by subsidizing peaceful navies to carry our mails and limitless productions. But we can teach them more than France and England are learning of real self-government and the extension of suffrage, for manhood suffrage is the strongest form of government. It is broad-based as the Pyramids and as enduring. It teaches the millennium of peace; it teaches the fraternity of nations. There are but two forms of government on earth—voluntary and involuntary.

"Through blood and tears we have settled forever, I trust, the question of our form of government in favor of universal freedom. A million brave and sincere lives and eight billions of treasure have been paid for this amendment to the Constitution of our Republic. Wise or unwise we cannot go back now.

"Will Massachusetts reward the tens of thousands of her heroes who were compelled, because they could not read and write, to make their mark on the muster-roll as well as on the battle-field—will she reward them by disfranchisement? I ask the men who represent Massachusetts on this floor, will they disfranchise the men who went out to give their lives for the Union? The bones of many of those men lie bleaching on our battle-fields, but their comrades who have returned—will you disfranchise them because they were compelled to make their mark on their receipt-roll of payment for their blood? You insisted on their enfranchising four million of slaves by their valor.

"Shall the black slave be made a free man and the white citizen in Massachusetts be made a slave? What would you say if the South were to copy your example? You cannot escape history by defying your official oaths to enforce and defend this sacred provision of the Constitution. It is now for the first time brought to your attention, and the ages will point at you in wonder and witness your untruthfulness if you sanction the cruel enforcing laws of 1874, disfranchising one hundred thousand white citizens of Massachusetts they have sworn to protect by accepting the amendment and the apportionment law of 1872.

"Shall we do this when we are about to celebrate our first century of freedom, which has accomplished more for mankind, more for his moral nature, with three free pulpits to one of any other nation; more intellectually, with three free schools to any other nation's one; more materially, with three inventions to any other nation's one; more for peace, with fifteen school-teachers to a soldier; when we have accomplished more for mankind in our first century than has been accomplished by sixty centuries of monarchical and aristocratic government? Apply the laws of Massachusetts, and you will disfranchise a majority of the voting population of the South. You destroy all the protection given by the ballot to one-third, ay, to more than one-third of the fifty millions of this nation.

"Will you bid men pay taxes on all that they consume and produce and not give them representation? Will you bid them produce billions by their toil and refuse the citizenship guaranteed by the fourteenth amendment? Will you enroll this great heroic army, larger than the army of XERXES, larger than any other army that was ever gathered in the world—will you enroll this great heroic army of voters in your national militia throughout this broad domain, subject to draft in your defense, and yet give them no vote in disposing of their property and lives?

"Men of Massachusetts, dare you take this responsibility? Loring has quoted young Ohio, the daughter of Massachusetts; Ohio does not do this deed of disfranchising weakness and wickedness. Iowa does not perform this infamy. Maine does not disfranchise her people. New Hampshire, adjoining Massachusetts, with a similar people in every respect, does not find it necessary. Shall Massachusetts dim the luster of her heroes, go back upon the teachings of her history, give the lie to her professions? Shall she act the part of those rulers in Judea who, when Jesus was crucified, would not enter the judgment hall for fear of being defiled, yet when the stern and bloody Roman governor said, 'I find no fault in him,' cried out 'Let him be crucified! Give us Barabbas, the robber!'

"Men of Massachusetts, shield not yourselves behind your illustrious names. As well might Loring, petitioning for national appointment, go to the gravestones of our ancient Salem for names to secure it as to seek to answer the points of law and fact in this case by taking refuge behind the history, the fame and the glory of our ancient Commonwealth. Massachusetts is not that little space between the hills of Berkshire and the sands of Barnstable; she is now the fifteen million of descendants, whose warehouses are in every portion of the Republic from Maine to San Francisco; it is the liberty-loving men of America, it is the ideas that come down to us from the scaffold of Sidney, from the words of Locke in his exile, from the pilgrims and Puritans, from John Hancock, Adams, Warren, from James Otis, insisting that taxation without representation is tyranny, speaking for universal manhood suffrage in the old cradle of liberty. I adjure you, by all her immortals and by the kindred revolutionary heroes of Virginia, by the Sumters and Marions of South Carolina, by every battle-field of the Revolution, by the liberty won in our last sad, fratricidal strife, that you be true to your official oaths, be true to the genius of American liberty and manhood suffrage, and true to the destiny of this the great master republic of our world.

"You stand at the dividing line between a free and a restricted ballot. Beside you are vast syndicates and giant corporations that urge you to disfranchise the people; that urge you to make the people weak and helpless; that urge you to take from millions of citizens of the United States their lawful rights and erect an empire.

"Now, after you have put the 'freedman's prayer' into the Constitution of my country, do you propose that Massachusetts, of illustrious name and fame, shall be used to wipe out all the war has won? Do you refuse to hear and redress this first breach of the charter? Have the two old parties—republican and democratic—united like Herod and Pilate, like Scribe and Pharisee, to punish those standing up for liberty and justice here in the last court of freedom—here in the Congress of the country? The men who won England's Magna Charta could not read or write. The blood of poor men ransomed and enlarged the charter of American freedom and nationality.

"The United States census of 1880 shows that from the same population three men voted in Maine and New Hampshire, Ohio and Indiana, where only two voted in Massachusetts, in a population of similar intelligence and employment. If Maine, that up to 1820 shared and illustrated the history of Massachusetts, safely gives equality, why cannot the mother State? Does it dim the splendor or retard the success of Ohio because she does not refuse a vote to the poorest freedman in her borders? Have we not in America's three hundred thousand free schools, academies and colleges, security that intelligence shall rule, without making the poor and unfortunate tremble at the loss of his manhood suffrage? The eloquent words of Senator HOAR, of Massachusetts, in accepting the presidency of the national republican convention at Chicago, June 3, 1880, were fitly cheered by the delegates of every State and Territory, and have before and since been echoed by the President-elect. I quote the Senator:

"'The key-note of every republican platform, the principle of every republican union, is found in its respect for the individual man. Until that becomes the pervading principle of every part of the Republic, from Canada to the Gulf, from the Atlantic to the Pacific, our mission is not ended.

"'The Republic lives, the republican party lives, but for this: that every man within our borders may dwell secure in a happy home, may cast and have counted his equal vote. Until these things come to pass the mission of our party is not accomplished, nor its conflict with its ancient enemy ended.'



Orin Warren.

"Had the equality proclaimed in our immortal Declaration of Independence been real, a million men would not have died to write freedom in the Constitution. Two hundred thousand black men fought for their liberty. The colored people alone outnumber our nation when it won independence. You legislate for our fifty millions to day, for the five hundred millions that will celebrate our next centennial. No power can compel you to do justice and keep your oath at freedom's altar. Will you refuse and dim the splendor of the hero-crimsoned flag that is destined to gather in all the States of the New World—destined to teach law and liberty, peace and fraternity to all mankind. That flag is alike for the lowly and the strong; touching earth, it sweeps the stars.

"The uncounted generations that have come and gone, the slow advance of freedom through sixty centuries, the mistakes that have darkened history warn us vigilantly to guard the summit of man's liberty, our Constitution so dearly won. The morning gilds our mountain heights of freedom, when eclipsed by noon it shall only make the men that held their passes immortal."

This appeal for suffrage to the disfranchised soldiers of Massachusetts has been honored by a repeal of Massachusetts' disfranchising law as applied to them.

Mr. Boynton was the advocate of suffrage and reforms in money; was without any large organized party like the Democratic and Republican, yet received ten thousand three hundred votes. Eight thousand legal votes under United States laws were excluded by Massachusetts. A large number of illegal votes were counted for Loring, who claimed a few score votes more as illegally allowed him. The South denied the excuse of Massachusetts nullifying the amendment. Both old parties united against Boynton unless he would join them.

In 1885 Mr. Boynton, at the Worcester Convention of the Republican party, made an earnest protest of the duty of Massachusetts to obey the fourteenth amendment of the Constitution. That year the Massachusetts Constitution was amended to conform to the national suffrage law; but as it required two years and a submission to the people and two-thirds majority every step, it has since by a few votes been defeated in the House after passing the Senate; but the end is certain—either the national Constitution must be obeyed by all the States in the Union or suffrage abandoned, and the sooner Massachusetts obeys the Constitution will she be able to ask a similar compliance by the Southern States,—no question is more vital than suffrage.

ORIN WARREN.

Orin Warren, at this time, 1888, is the principal physician in the town of West Newbury.

An account of his ancestry and early life is furnished by two family friends, whose descriptions are so graphic that parts of each paper will be given verbatim.

"The subject of this sketch was born in Fryeburg, Oxford County, Me., January 20, 1833, of American parents, and tradition hath it that in early days his paternal ancestors were of a warlike people, who, for some political offence, were driven from Scotland into Wales. Thence," some of the family "embarked for the New World of America."

The early death of Dr. Warren's grandparents cut off the source of further information, and we are only able to gather that they were a religious people of the Baptist persuasion and hard-working farmers."

His mother's ancestry is described as "Puritan of the most straitest sect." He is a direct descendant of Elder Brewster, of "Mayflower" and Plymouth fame

That the grandfather and grandmother were of a hardy and determined stock goes without saying, when we know that about the year 1792 they mounted their horses, and, with one little child, the mother of the subject of this sketch, started from Shirley, Mass., following a bridle-path for scores of miles to the then district of Maine. Settling upon a farm in Fryeburg, in the valley of the Saco River, they coaxed from the soil a living, and brought up, with good religious and educational privileges, a family of eleven children.

Dr. Warren's parents both, at times, earned a living as teachers of district schools, his father at one time occupying an unused cooper's shop for a schoolroom, and his mother acting as pedagogue in half of a barn, left vacant for school purposes.

Of hardy and self-reliant extraction, these parents asked of the world only a chance to earn an honest living for themselves and their seven children. Consequently Dr. Warren was early taught that to labor was honorable, and that at school or at home there was always business to be attended to.

The other friend writes of Dr. Warren as one "born of parents who gained a competency by their untiring industry, economy and energy; the children were largely the fortunate recipients; all the necessaries and conveniences of life were theirs, without encouragement to anything of superfluous indulgence. Self-sacrifice, enterprise, devotion to right and duty were characteristics prominent in the lives of Dr. Warren's parents.

"A full determination to give all the members of their household such religious and intellectual privileges as should be favorable to their early development, and secure to them the highest possible good for their lives and the future, was fully evident.

"The subject of our sketch was the fourth in a merry and musical group of seven, and well calculated for a leader in mirth and song. Naturally of a cheerful disposition, the bright side of life was peculiarly his, and words of courage and good cheer fell from his lips."

This statement is indorsed later by the words of his wife, who says, in regard to this cheerful temperament: "It has been a great help to him in the trying life he has had."

The friend continues: In the quiet and cultured village of Fryeburg, Me., was his home; the place, embosomed among the hills, upon the banks of the strangely crooked and picturesque Saco, is beautiful

for situation, and readily reminds one of the truthful poem, commencing,—

"From Agiocchook's granite steeps."

The educational advantages of Fryeburg have been for a long series of years superior, as Dartmouth and Bowdoin have supplied active and efficient principals for its far-famed academy, where Dr. Warren pursued a thorough course of study.

Notwithstanding his noteworthy ancestry, his favorable surroundings and helpful early associations, there was much left for him to accomplish by his own application, zeal and perseverance, and that these were wisely directed, his subsequent career of usefulness and prosperity abundantly attests.

Dr. Warren began the study of medicine in 1854 with Dr. C. H. Dana, in Laporte, Pa., continued with Dr. Towle, of Fryeburg, and in the Portland School of Medicine. He pursued his studies further by attending two courses of lectures at Maine Medical School, Brunswick, and two more courses at Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, where he graduated, March 9, 1858. He spent one season at Deer Island Hospital, Boston Harbor. He came to West Newbury to reside July 14, 1859.

On June 5, 1860, he was married, at the South Congregational Church, Boston, by the Rev. E. E. Hale, to Eliza A. Sawyer, daughter of Ezra and Eliza Sawyer. He became a member of the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1861.

This year, 1861, is memorable for the beginning of the great Civil War, by the attack upon Fort Sumter. The call of the President for seventy-five thousand men to put down the insurrection was altogether inadequate, and was followed by other calls as the magnitude of the Rebellion was made evident. The loyal people arose as one man to preserve the Union of all the States, to save the country from division.

Young men earnestly enlisted in the army, and physicians fresh from their medical studies, or having already begun practice, were anxious to do their part in the good work, and at the same time gain experience in surgery, though at the risk of their lives and the pain of separation from their dear friends at home.

Dr. Warren was one who responded to the nation's call.

On the morning of September 12, 1861, he received an order to report to Surgeon-General Dale at the State-House, Boston, Mass., in the afternoon. That afternoon he started for Annapolis, Md., commissioned as assistant surgeon of the Twenty-first Massachusetts Volunteers. He left Annapolis with Burnside's expedition for Roanoke Island, January, 1862. He was present at the battle of Roanoke, February 8, 1862, and at that of Newbern, March 14th; also at that of Camden, April 19th, where he was left with the wounded and taken a prisoner.

A week after this Dr. Warren and his patients were sent, *via* the Dismal Swamp Canal, to Norfolk, where the wounded were paroled and sent to Fortress Monroe, and the doctor was unconditionally released by General Huger, of the Confederate army.

"This was the day," writes Dr. Warren, "after the memorable battle between the 'Merrimac' and the 'Monitor.' I was invited on board the 'Monitor' by the officers, who were in hopes that I had some information as to the condition of the 'Merrimac.'"

It seems the place to introduce here an extract from a letter written by Surgeon-General Dale to Dr. John Flint, dated March 17, 1862: "I send you here the following item from a letter of the hospital steward of the Twenty-third Massachusetts Volunteers. From the 11th of February to the 6th of March the patients were under the immediate care of Assistant Surgeon O. Warren, of the Twenty-first Massachusetts, who labored night and day, using every means in his power, and often depriving himself of comfort that the wounded should have what they needed."

This was done at the General Hospital. Dr. Hitchcock, on his return from Roanoke, made particular mention of Dr. Warren's devotedness and efficiency.

"Depriving himself of comfort" was not a sentimental compliment. Subsisting for three days on a hard-tack and a sweet-potato, while attending to the wounded, required much forgetfulness of self.

Dr. Warren returned to his regiment as soon as a transport left for Newbern. Shortly after his return he was taken ill with dysentery, which continued long after his retirement from the army.

Early in June he received a letter from Adjutant-General Schouler, stating that he had been recommended for promotion, and received a commission as surgeon, dated June 9, 1862, in the Thirty-third Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.

On November 30, 1862, he was appointed surgeon of Second Division, Eleventh Army Corps, on the staff of General Steinwehr, and December 18, 1862, was appointed surgeon-in-chief for the same division.

On account of impaired health, before mentioned, Dr. Warren resigned his position in the army, April 1, 1863, and returned to West Newbury to practice his profession and regain his health. Dr. Robinson, who had been for more than fifty years the prominent physician of the place, was now aged and in declining health, though with sound mind and judgment. September 2, 1863, he "rested from his labors." Dr. Warren had Dr. Robinson's approval and succeeded to much of his practice.

It is a blessing to the country towns in New England that all men well read in the science of medicine and skilled in surgery do not go to the large cities to practice.

The sphere of a country physician is not a small one if he improve his opportunities, as his practice is not confined to one town, but he has a circuit sometimes for miles around. He can avail himself of the privilege of easy access to the great centres of busi-

ness and literature, which was denied to his fathers in the profession similarly situated. Though he must drive many weary miles in his rounds of visits, he has beautiful scenery to enjoy and pure air to refresh him after trying watches in the sick-rooms.

The ancient respect for the office of the physician has not entirely faded out from the country towns, and in many instances among our intelligent people "our doctor" becomes the honored friend of families he has visited for years.

Dr. Warren brought from the army to West Newbury more experience in surgery than he could have acquired in many years as a general practitioner. He has gained a well-deserved reputation as a skillful physician and surgeon. He is remarkable for attention and kindness to his patients.

The high estimation in which his truth and integrity are held by the people among whom he dwells are shown by the trusts committed to him in various business matters of importance, and also by his election to the office of Representative to the General Court of Massachusetts from the district in which West Newbury is situated.

This latter office he would not have accepted had not he required relaxation from the arduous duties of his profession. He became a member of Free and Accepted Masons in May, 1876. He was one of the charter members of Post 151 of G. A. R.

Dr. Warren has an extensive practice and a pleasant home in the Western Parish, where his wife and only daughter assist him gracefully in his social duties.

May he long be blessed with health and prosperity to continue the good work of "healing the sick," in which he has been so faithful and so much respected and esteemed.

ELIPHALET EMERY.

Eliphalet Emery was born in that part of Newbury which is now West Newbury, September 5, 1781, and was the son of Nathaniel and Sarah (Short) Emery, of that town. He was born, lived and died on the paternal estate, on which his first American ancestor, John Emery, settled on his arrival from England, more than two hundred years ago. The estate was preserved in all its length and breadth during the life of Mr. Emery, and has descended from him unimpaired to his heirs. His education was that of a farmer's son, such as the common schools of Newbury furnished, with the added advantages derived from a course of study in Dummer Academy.

His chosen profession was that of a farmer, inspired partly by the ambition to own and improve his ancestral acres and partly by the natural tastes for agriculture which he had inherited with his land. Possessing the habits of industry, accuracy, thoroughness, promptness and fidelity, guided by a quick and sound intelligence, he stood through life in the front rank among the farmers of the county and State.

Nor did he permit the bounds of his possessions to limit his vision and narrow his mind. Public affairs, those of his town, of his State and of the nation, were subjects to which he applied his mind, and which, in their turn, expanded and strengthened his intellect. He was a member of the Board of Selectmen of West Newbury, after its incorporation in 1819, from 1821 to 1853, with the exception of thirteen scattering years. In 1829–31 and 1834 he was chosen a representative to the General Court, and in all matters affecting the interests and welfare of his town he was active and influential. He was especially active during the war, though then beyond the allotted age of man, and the financial condition of West Newbury during that trying period owed much of its soundness to his sagacity and skill. One who knew him well said at the time of his death, "that he died beloved by his friends, respected by his townsmen and all who knew him; and that his record was that of a faithful, upright and honest man."

He married, April 4, 1820, Sarah, daughter of Rev. Moses Hale, of Boxford, and granddaughter of Rev. Moses Hale, of West Newbury. Companions in married life for many years, they were not long separated by the hand of death. Mrs. Emery died March 4, 1865, and her husband April 20, 1869.

CHAPTER CXLVIII.

HAVERHILL.

BY HON. JOHN B. D. COGSWELL.

Haverhill, England, and the Wards.

The Indian name of Haverhill was Pentuckett. The early English settlers called it Haverhill, in compliment to their first minister, Rev. John Ward, whose family had, for several generations, been identified with the town of Haverhill in England. The New England town long since surpassed its original in importance. Within a few years there has been a pleasant interchange of hospitality between prominent representatives of the old town and descendants from the first settlers of the new.

Haverhill in England is situated partly in Suffolk and partly in Essex County, which have long been distinguished by the zeal for Protestantism cherished and manifested in their towns and villages. Indeed, the spirit of non-conformity ran riot there during the Commonwealth. August, 1641, an order was published by the House of Commons for taking away all scandalous pictures out of churches. William Dowsing, of Stratford, was Parliamentary visitor of Suffolk churches, under warrant from the Earl of Manchester, general of the Eastern Counties. January 6, 1643, he

was at Haverhill. "He broke down," he says, "abont one hundred superstitious pictures; seven Fryars hugging a nun; the picture of God and Christ; and divers other very superstitious; and two hundred had been break down before I came. We took away the Popish inscriptions . . . and we beat down a great stone cross on the top of the church." On that day, John Ward was ministering, peacefully and profitably, in the little hamlet upon the banks of the Merrimac.

The English Haverhill is twenty miles southeast of Cambridge and fifty northeast of London. In 1887 it had a population of 3684, having nearly trebled during the present century. Its principal industry is a manufactory of checks, cottons and fustians, carried on in the Chauntry Mills. It has a market on Wednesday. The places of worship are St. Mary's Episcopal, the old Independent, Congregational Chapel, Primitive Methodist, Baptist Chapel, Gospel Room. Municipal functions are administered according to the English complicated system, by local school and burial boards, the Petty Sessions and the County Court.

The voluntary associations are not unlike, at least in name, those with which the American town is familiar. There is a Literary Institute; a Mutual Improvement Society, a local parliament in connection with it; a Choral Union; a Practicing Society; the Liberal Association; Bible and Blanket Societies; the Maternal Institute; a Book Club; Burial and Benefit Societies; the Odd Fellows; Ancient Shepherds, Ancient Druids, Good Templars, Bands of Hope, Brass and String Bands, Banks, penny and other; Cricket and Foot-ball Clubs, a Volunteer Fire Brigade. Lastly, there are local poets, who sing:

> "On the green turf, in verdant paths and vales,
> With cowslips washed by many a gurgling rill,
> Grows the pale primrose in sequestered dales,
> With eglantines, adorn fair Haverhill."

And so on through many stanzas.

The Wards, who thus become a link between the Haverhills of old and new Essex, were an able and high-spirited family. John Ward, the first, who graduated at Christ College, Cambridge, preached at Haverhill and afterwards at Bury. He was suspended by his bishop "for not yielding to wear the surplice." After suspension, he returned to Haverhill, where he died, October, 1598. Upon a mural tablet in the chancel of the church in which he preached, there is said to be a quaint inscription in Latin, of which the following is a translation:

> "Grant some of knowledge greater store:
> More learned some in teaching;
> Yet few in life did lighten more,
> None thundered more in preaching."

This "Painful minister," as he was styled, had three sons,—Samuel, Nathaniel and John, all in the Church, of whom, according to Fuller in his "Worthies," people used to say that "all of them put together would not make up his abilities."

Nathaniel Ward, the second son, born at Haverhill about 1578, died minister at Shenfield, Essex, England, about 1652. He graduated at the Cambridge University in 1603, and was bred a lawyer; traveled on the Continent in Russia and Denmark, in the company of certain merchants; devoted himself to divinity, and became rector of Standon in Hertfordshire. He was connected with the Massachusetts Company in 1630. Brought before Archbishop Laud for non-conformity in 1631 and silenced in 1633, he came to New England in 1634, and became pastor of the church at Agawam or Ipswich, resigning in 1636, on account of impaired health. In the year following the settlement of Haverhill in America, the General Court availed itself of his former legal studies and great experience, for the preparation of the "Body of Liberties," the first code of laws established in New England. It embodied the fundamental declarations of Magna Charta, which, expanded and more precisely expressed, were proclaimed in the Massachusetts Constitution of 1780. At the close of 1646, Nathaniel Ward returned to England. Early in the next year he published at London his famous politico-religious tract, "The Simple Cobler of Aggawam." He preached before the General Court of Massachusetts and the House of Commons in England. Able, satirical and eccentric, he is especially entitled to mention in this place, as the originator of the movement which led to the settlement of Haverhill.

John Ward, son of Nathaniel, was a man of very different character, perhaps more attractive. He was born November 5, 1606, probably at Haverhill, though possibly at Ipswich, England. Like his father and grandfather, he was educated at Cambridge, taking his degree of A.B. in 1626 and of A.M. in 1630. He came to America in 1639, and apparently made his home for a time in Ipswich, with or near his father. Governor Winthrop, in his history, under date of February 29, 1641, mentions the arduous journey from Piscataqua to Agamenticus (now York, Me.,) of Mr. John Ward, with three others, "Who was to be entertained for their minister, and though it be but six miles, yet they lost their way and wandered two days and one night without food or fire, in the snow and wet. But God heard their prayers." Probably it was not so much this rough experience as the earnest desire of his father, which prevented Mr. Ward's settlement in Agamenticus, and brought him to Haverhill, where he probably took up his permanent residence in the autumn of 1641. He had already had experience in the ministry in England. Cotton Mather has drawn his picture with great detail in the Magnalia. He describes him as "learned, ingenious and religious. He was a person of quick apprehension, a clear understanding, a strong memory, a facetious conversa-

tion, an exact grammarian, an expert physician, and, which was the top of all, a thorough divine; but, which rarely happens, these endowments of his mind were accompanied with a most healthy, hardy and agile constitution of body, which enabled him to make nothing of walking on foot a journey as long as thirty miles together. Such was the blessing of God upon his religious education, that he was not only restrained from the vices of immorality in all his younger days, but also inclined unto all virtuous actions."

The learned Cotton proceeds to characterize this athletic and accomplished young English divine as also modest and retiring, temperate in diet and sleep, sober in apparel, dutiful and generous to his parents, not ambitious of public display, but truly unostentatious, and prudent in managing the affairs of his church and parish, ever seeking the best advice and guided by it. "Through his humility and reservation, it came to pass that, as he chose to begin his ministry in old England at a very small place, thus when he came to New England he chose to settle with a new plantation where he could expect none but small circumstances all his days."

It is quite easy to believe that so admirable a person, thus plentifully endowed with gifts and graces, both of soul and body, might have entered into a profitable matrimonial alliance. We are not therefore surprised when we learn that John Ward "had great offers of rich marriages in England. Yet he chose to marry a meaner person whom exemplary piety had recommended." If that were the only consideration entering into the young Puritan minister's scheme of life, it could scarcely be regarded as a love-match. But, although she was so unsparing of his faults "that he would compare her to an accusing conscience," and although "she would often put upon him the duties of secret fasts, yet she ever pleased him wonderfully. He lived with her for more than forty years, in such a happy harmony, that when she died he professed that in all this time he never had received one displeasing word or look from her. When she met with anything in reading that she counted singularly agreeable, she would still impart it unto him. For which cause, when he lost his mate, he caused these words to be fairly written over his table-board—'*In Lugenda Compare, Vitæ Spacium Compleat Orbus,*'" an apparent abandonment to grief of the future span of life hardly consistent with the severe self-constraint previously ascribed to him. "And there is this memorable passage to be added. While she was a maid there was ensured unto her the revenue of a parsonage worth two hundred pounds per annum, in case that she married a minister. And all this had been given to our Ward, in case he had conformed unto the doubtful matters of the Church of England, but he left all the allurements and enjoyments of England, choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God in a wilderness."

The "meaner person," who nevertheless would have brought such comfortable preferment to her husband, if he had been contented to abide an amenable clergyman of the Church of England, was Alice Edmunds, thus, according to Cotton Mather's testimony, quite able to exert a highly beneficial influence in her own household. Their children were two,—Mary, who married Benjamin Woodbridge, and Elizabeth, who married Nathaniel Saltonstall, first of Ipswich and afterwards of Haverhill. Both of these daughters had children, and among the descendants of John Ward, the first Haverhill minister, have been and are some of the ablest men and some of the brightest and most benevolent women of New England.

Alice Edmunds Ward died at Haverhill, March 24, 1680. John Ward, seventy-four years old and deeply stricken by the loss of his companion in exile, made his will on the 27th of May following. Said the aged minister:

"O Lord, into thy hands commit I my spirit. *Credo languida fide, sed tamen fide.* I give to my beloved son, Benja. Woodbridge, and to my beloved daughter, Mary, his wife, one parcell of land, containing thirty acres, more or less, lying att the norwest end of the towne of Haverhill, in N. England. . . . I give to my beloved son, Nathl. Saltonstall, and to my beloved daughter Elizabeth, his wife, my house and land adjoining thereto, commonly called the house lott, lying in the town of Haverhill. . . . Lastly, I constitute and appoynt my beloved son, Saltonstall, the Executor of this, my last will and testament."

The instrument, however, was not apparently executed till a few months before his death.

"Signed and sealed in the presence of us,

"WILLIAM WHITE.
"THOMAS EATON.
"BENJA. ROLFE.

"Jan. 23, 92-3, owned before John White."

Rev. Benjamin Rolfe, of Newbury, the colleague and successor of Mr. Ward in the ministry, came to Haverhill in the latter part of 1689, having been chaplain to the forces sent to Falmouth, Me., from July 14 to November 14 in that year.

Cotton Mather loved to color his characters highly, for good or evil. But John Ward, of Haverhill, was undoubtedly a pious, prudent, exemplary clergyman. He retained the respect and affection of the people during his long pastorate of more than fifty years, and his learning, virtues and sacrifices became to them a standard of what a Christian minister should be and suffer, if need were. The town records, if read between the lines, would indicate that Mr. Ward was capable of certain demonstrations of high spirit in his old age, when arrangements were in progress about the settlement to be made for Mr. Rolfe. Cotton Mather would have regarded them as only the proper expression of dignity inhering in the priesthood. Mr. Rolfe, on the day of his ordination, could say of his deceased predecessor: "These four years past have been the happiest and most profitable to me of my whole life. I have had the counsels of wisdom and experience, the admonitions of a father and friend, and an example constantly before me of undissembled virtue, ardent piety and burning zeal."

And so we may well permit the author of the "Magnalia" to conclude his panegyric: "This diligent servant of the Lord Jesus Christ continued, under and against many temptations, watching over his flock at Haverhill more than thrice as long as Jacob continued with his unkle—yea, for as many years as there are Sabbaths in the year. On November 19, 1693, he preached an excellent sermon, entering the eighty-eighth year of his age, the only one that ever was, and perhaps ever will be, preached in this country at such an age. On December 27th he went off, bringing up the rear of our first generation." Had Cotton Mather personally known the patriarch of Haverhill? He might easily have done so, for he was about thirty-one years of age when Mr. Ward died, and had been for more than eight years joint pastor with his father, Increase Mather, of the North Church in Boston.

Samuel Sewall, who, a few months before, had entered in his diary comforting news about Mr. Ward's health, received from "Son Saltonstall," at the Council chamber in Boston, now recorded, under date of "December 28, 1693-4, Mr. Ward, of Haverhill, is buried, 87 years old."

That loyal and beloved son of Haverhill, John G. Whittier, in his "Leaves from Margaret Smith's Journal," describes a supposed journey of his heroine with her relatives, the Rawsons, of Newbury, to make a visit at the house of Nathaniel Saltonstall in Haverhill, where they are entertained in a manner indicating not only refined hospitality, but a condition of high comfort, if not affluence. There is a glimpse of the venerable minister, John Ward. Such a visit, in the world of actual events, must have been made earlier than 1679, if at all, for on the 1st of July in that year the unfortunate Rebecca Rawson was married in Boston to the pretended Sir Thomas Hale, and undertook her unfortunate voyage to England.

In 1679 the first meeting-house of Haverhill, a very small and rude building, was standing in the burial-ground now more pretentiously called Pentucket Cemetery. Mr. Ward and his son-in-law, Saltonstall, lived in the immediate vicinity and possibly in the same house. There was the estate, "commonly called the house-lott," which Mr. Ward gave to his daughter Elizabeth and her husband by will, and which had been granted to Mr. Ward by the town of Haverhill. For something like a century after, generous hospitality was administered there by his prosperous and somewhat aristocratic descendants. The estate was long known as "The Buttonwoods," and is still much admired for its sightliness and beauty of prospect. Between the burial-ground and "The Buttonwoods," on Eastern Avenue, there stands (1887) a small building, which, it is suggested with a certain semblance of plausibility, was the dwelling-house of John Ward. It was doubtless erected either by him or his immediate successors in the enjoyment of the estate. But it is certainly a very different structure from the homes of the well-beneficed clergy of the Church of England, even two hundred and fifty years ago.

CHAPTER CXLIX.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

What Scientists say of the Geology of the Region—The Fauna and the Flora of Haverhill.

WHAT has been written by an eminent geologist of another locality may be aptly applied to Haverhill. Says Professor Shaler, of Harvard University, in the "Memorial History of Boston:"

"The topography, the soils and other physical conditions of the region about Boston depend, in a very intimate way, upon the geological history of the district in which they lie. The physical history of the district is closely bound up with that of all Eastern New England. At successive times, and especially just before the human period, and possibly during its first stages in this country, the land was deeply buried beneath a sheet of ice. During the last glacial period, and perhaps frequently in the recurrent ice times, of which we find traces in the record of the rocks, the ice-sheet for long periods overtopped the highest of our existing hills, and ground away the rock-surface of the country as it crept onward to the sea. During the first stage of the last ice-period, this ice-sheet was certainly over two thousand feet thick in Eastern Massachusetts, and its front lay in the sea at least fifty miles to the east of Boston. At this time the glacial border stretched from New York to the far North, in an ice-wall that lay far to the eastward of the present shores, hiding all traces of the land beneath its mass.

"These successive ice-sheets rested on a surface of rock, already much varied by the metamorphism and dislocations to which it had been subjected. Owing to the fact that ice cuts more powerfully in the valleys than on the ridges, and more effectually on the soft than on the hard rocks, these ice-sheets carved this surface into an amazing variety of valleys, pits and depressions. We get some idea of the irregularity of these rock-carvings from the fretted nature of the sea-coast over which the ice-sheets rode. When the last ice-sheet melted away, it left on the surface it had worn a layer of rubbish often a hundred feet or more in depth. As its retreat was not a rout, but was made in a measured way, it often built long irregular walls of waste along the lines where its march was delayed. . . .

"The lower part of the Merrimac Valley is a mountain trough that has been similarly carved out, and there are others traceable still further to the northward. . . .

"After the ice had lain for an unknown period over this region, climatal changes caused it to shrink away slowly and by stages, until it disappeared altogether. As it disappeared it left a very deep mass of waste, which was distributed in an irregular way over the service, at some places much deeper than at others. At many points this depth exceeded one hundred feet."

In a recent lecture delivered in Boston, in the Lowell Institute series, on the "Ice Age in North America," Prof. G. Frederick Wright is reported as saying in substance:

"In connection with the lines of drainage of New England, we can best discuss the Kames. This is a Scotch word which is applied to the peculiar gravel ridges found in many regions and in New England in abundance. Their formation is a matter of much discussion. There are no large barriers separating many adjacent water-sheds in New England to-day, and ice-barriers must have caused great changes in the river-beds and lines of drainage. But for ice-barriers the Merrimac would enter the Atlantic near Boston at this time. The Kames often extend across valleys, following down the slope on one side and up the other, and also have been ingeniously traced across lake bottoms.

"Beside the glacial terraces of our present stream, we have in the so-called Kame system still further evidence of the existence of temporary lines of drainage, determined by ice-barriers during the continuance of

the glacial period. New England is gridironed by a system of gravel ridges deposited by glacial streams, to a great extent independent of the minor features of the present topography. In these and in the terminal moraines we study the skeleton of the continental ice-sheet as intelligently as the anatomist can study the skeleton of a dissected animal."

In writing of "Pre-historic Andover," in Bailey's "History of North Andover," the same learned observer (presumably) says:

"The marks of the glacial epoch in Andover are open to inspection before every man's door.

"A later glacial deposit (now known in scientific circles as Kames) is represented in Andover by such formations as 'Indian Ridge.' Kame is a Scottish word, meaning sharp ridge."

Hills about Great Pond (Lake Cochichawick) are not, as might be expected, rocky elevations, but are vast heaps of unstratified, compact clay, containing scratched pebbles and gravel, and littered over with angular boulders, transported from the north. These elevations have been named by Prof. Hitchcock, "Lenticular Hills," from their peculiar lens-shaped outline as seen upon the distant horizon. This series of hills continues to the northeast, as far as Portsmouth, N. H.

Dr. Hitchcock wrote in 1842:

"Our moraines form ridges and hills of almost every possible shape. It is not common to find straight ridges for a considerable distance. But the most common and remarkable aspect assumed by these elevations is that of a collection of tortuous ridges and rounded and even conical hills, with corresponding depressions between them. These depressions are not valleys, which might have been produced by running water, but were holes, not unfrequently occupied by a pond.

"In 1874 the writer ascertained that this belt of ridges extended through the whole length of the town of Andover. Kames frequently pass over the lenticular hills where their height is less than two hundred feet, and descend into shallow depressions, crossing river valleys without ceremony. Still later investigations brought to light a parallel belt of gravel ridges reaching the sea at Beverly, and continuing north through Topsfield, Boxford and Haverhill, far into New Hampshire.

"In passing from Andover to New Brunswick, the traveller crosses more than thirty Kames.

"These are all, however, less clearly defined and more subject to interruption than the Andover or Haverhill series.

"The most probable theory of the origin of these remarkable ridges is that they are somewhat of the character of medial moraines and mark the course of the surface flow of water during the last stages of the melting ice-sheet.

"The ice had doubtless been thousands of feet in depth, and when the material composing the Kames was deposited, still filled most of the depressions and lingered in such transverse valleys as that which the Merrimack follows in the lower part of its course. Superficial streams, swollen by the action of the summer sun, would at that period flow with great violence, during the hot season, and their course would be marked by vast accumulations of coarse gravel, which would in some places be lodged in the channel, in others spread out over masses of ice. Finally, as the last masses of the lower stratum of ice melted, the gravel thereon would settle down from the ice (as dirt does from snow-drifts in the spring) into the irregular forms in which we find these ridges.

"Haggett's Pond (Andover) doubtless marks a depression where the ice lingered while a Kame-stream deposited in a temporary lake the sand-plains in the South towards Tewksbury. Pomp's Pond was preserved from filling up by a similar mass of ice. . . . The basin of Great Pond, in North Andover, was formed in a different manner. In this case the lake is hemmed in by lenticular hills, one of which partially dams its natural outlet. Lenticular hills have also in many places below North Andover determined the course of the Merrimack River."

A moraine is defined to be "A line of rock and gravel extending along the sides of separate glaciers, and along the middle part of glaciers formed by the union of one or more separate ones."

Even the unlearned can apply these observations to that portion of the Merrimac Valley in which Haverhill is situated, and especially to the lake region in the easterly part of the town, in the vicinity of Saltonstall and Kenoza.

It has been written by a competent observer:

"The changes in the fauna of the region immediately surrounding Boston, wrought by civilization, are merely such as would be expected to occur in the transformation of a forest wilderness into a thickly populated district, namely, the extirpation of all the larger indigenous mammals and birds, the partial extinction of many others, and the great reduction in numbers of nearly all forms of animal life, both terrestrial and aquatic, as well as the introduction of various domesticated species and those universal pests of civilization, the house-rats and mice. The only other introduced species of importance are the European house-sparrow and a few species of noxious insects."

The early chroniclers enumerate among the animals of this region, the "Lyon" (catamount or panther), the bear, moose, deer, porcupines, raccoons, beaver, marten and otter. Wood said of the moose: "There be not many of these in Massachusetts Bay, but forty miles to the Northeast there be great store of them." All these animals mostly have disappeared, although rumors occasionally float down from New Hampshire of great sport in "coon hunts," and abundance of deer are still to be found in certain seasons in the south-eastern counties of Massachusetts. "Smaller species occur in greatly reduced numbers, like the muskrat, mink, weasels, shrews, moles, squirrels and the various species of field mice."

The great auk was found along the Lower Merrimac when the fathers came, and its bones occur in the Indian shell-heaps at Ipswich and along the coast. Swans and cranes are said to have been abundant. Of the former, Morton said, "there are of them in Merrimac River and in other parts of the country, great store at the season of the year." Formerly there were great quantities of sea-fowl, as far from the coast as Haverhill, and the cry of the bittern and other water birds is still to be heard about the lakes in the eastern part of the town. Geese, ducks and especially pigeons, were in vast profusion in the early day.

Of reptiles, a competent writer says, in reference to this vicinity:

"The antipathy to snakes, which so generally impels their destruction at every opportunity, has left few of them in comparison with their former number. The rattlesnake, the only dangerous species, found now only at a few localities, was formerly much more generally dispersed. The draining of ponds and marshy lands has greatly circumscribed the haunts of frogs, salamanders and tortoises, which at many localities have become nearly extirpated."

These observations are certainly correct of Haverhill in the main; but the voice of the batrachian has not yet wholly died out of the land.

The waters of the town were full of fish two centuries and a half ago. Codfish, bass and mackerel could be had at the mouth of the river. Morton said of the "Basse:"

"There are such multitudes that I have seen stopped into the river (Merrimack) close adjoining to my house with sand at one time, so many as will load a ship of one hundred tonnes."

The same writer talks about mackerel "18 and 19 inches in length and seaven in breadth."

"There is a fish (by some called shadds, by some allizes) that at the spring of the yeare pass up the rivers to spawne in the ponds: and are taken in such multitudes in every river, that hath a pond at the bed, that the inhabitants doung their grounds with them. You may see in one towneship a hundred acres together, set with these fish, every acre taking a thousand of them."

Another old writer says:

"In two tydes they have gotten one hundred thousand of these fish (meaning shad and alewives) in a wayre to catch fish."

This was written of the River Charles; but the same report might have been given of the Merrimack River at Haverhill. Was not East Haverhill known as "Shad Parish?" And was it not often stipulated in the indentures of apprentices, through the humane thoughtfulness of parents and guardians, that they should not be obliged to eat salmon oftener than six times a week? Wood wrote, from his observations as early as 1633:

"Much sturgeon is taken on the banks of the Merrimack, twelvo, fourteen, eighteen feet long, pickled and sent to England."

The Indians called the river, "Monomack," or the River of Sturgeons. The fall of the stream at Pentuckett (Haverhill), Pawtucket (Lowell), Namoskeag (Manchester) and Pennycook (Concord) were favorite resorts at the fishing season for the different communities or tribes of Indians. From them the whites learned the use of fish for manure, or, as they expressed it, to "fish corn."

The towns lower down the river seem to have monopolized the sturgeon fishery; but the curing and exportation of salmon and alewives was long a Haverhill industry. Before the days of bridges and dams, the falls of the Merrimac were famous for salmon, and its tributary streams for alewives. Haverhill, from its favorable situation at the head of sloop navigation and tide-water, and at the first falls of the river, was not only one of the earliest and latest engaged in the fisheries, but also the largest. In the year 1654 the town granted liberty to Stephen Kent "to place a wear in Little River, to catch alewives or any other fish." At the town-meeting of March 6, 1657, John Hutchins, of Newbury, was granted liberty to set a wear in the Merrimac, "at the little island above the town by the falls." He was to have the use of the island and the flats to dry his fish. In return, he was "to sell fish to the inhabitants of the town for such pay as the town can make,"—that is, by way of barter for their products,—and was to supply them for their own use, at market prices, in preference to others. His fish-works were to be finished within two years.

Salmon were formerly sold habitually in the town for four or five cents a pound, and were often unsalable at that price in the height of the fishing season. These fish were of the finest; but as the streams and outlets of the ponds became obstructed, and their waters defiled, by dams, mills and bridges, the supply of salmon rapidly diminished till, at the present time, notwithstanding all the care of the State's fish commissioners, but few are taken in the Merrimac, and those sadly inferior.

It is not thought that shad were much used as food in the early day, being principally employed for manure. The *New Hampshire Gazette* of May 13, 1760, announced:

"*Shad*—One day last week was drawn by a net at one draft Two Thousand Five hundred and odd Shad Fish out of the River Merrimack near Bedford in this Province. Thought remarkable by some people."

After mills began to be built, the town found it necessary to adopt regulations, so that fish might have an opportunity of passing up the streams to spawn. In 1722 and for more than a hundred years after, persons were chosen at the town-meeting to see that the "fish courses" were kept clear. In 1801 twelve fish wardens were chosen—the first officers under that name—for the purpose of regulating the fisheries and preventing the obstruction of the fish courses. In 1802 the town petitioned the General Court to regulate the alewife fishery. They declare the present mode of catching the fish to be very destructive and that but little advantage accrues to the inhabitants from it. They asked that the exclusive right to the fisheries within its limits may be given to the town. Their petition was granted.

In 1809 the town sold the right to fish in its several streams at auction, and this continued the custom so long as the privilege was thought worth buying. In 1814 there were four privileges sold,—*i. e.*, at Hale's Mills, at Thomas Duston's Meadow, at Enoch Bradley's mill-pond and a privilege near John Carleton, Jr.'s. The amount paid for all was fifty-four dollars. But the town-people were to be supplied for their own use at twenty-five cents per hundred. In 1815 the privileges sold for $91.35; but after that the value and bids began to dwindle.

The bodies of fresh water within the limits of Haverhill were originally filled with fish. The largest of them, for instance, once abounded with white and red perch, and pickerel of the largest size were frequently caught there. Of late years, as the population has much increased and extended itself from the centre, the angles, have grown more numerous and the fish have correspondingly diminished. But still, numerous boys range the shores in the season with extemporized fishing-rods and enjoy as unalloyed pleasure as their great-grandfathers, who, indeed, were mostly too busy to go fishing for fun. Shoemakers, if not skillful, are eager sportsmen, and the borders of Great Pond still shelter "Chowder" parties. In 1859, indeed, that fine body of water was formally re-christened by the name which, to the aboriginal visitors, indicated the abundance of its finny occupants:

"Lake of the Pickerel! let no more
The echoes answer back Great Pond,

But, sweet Kenoza, from thy shore,
And watching hills beyond:

And, Indian ghosts, if such there be,
Who ply, unseen, their shadowy lines,
Call back the dear old name to thee,
As with the voice of pines.

The paths we trod when careless boys
With manhood's shodden feet we trace."

It was a happy thought to invite the "barefoot boy," whose dreams of beauty had been so often indulged along its margin, to act as sponsor and impress the moral of the place and hour.

"And, Beauty's priestess, thou shalt teach
The truth, so dimly understood,
That He who made thee fair, for each
And all designeth good."

The four lakes of Haverhill have exercised an incalculable influence for good upon the health and taste of its inhabitants.

As the hand traces this line (December 10, 1887), joyous cries attract the ear, and the eye involuntarily wanders over the adjoining sheet of water, where flying figures prove that the schoolboys have not forgotten how to improve the Saturday holiday by "going up to Plug Pond, skating."

Game-birds abounded in the Haverhill woods when the Puritans took possession. The wild turkey was in great abundance; but in 1672 one wrote: "The English and the Indians having now so destroyed the breed, so that 'tis very rare to meet with a Turkie in the woods." However that may have been, a young soldier in camp, under General Washington, at Cambridge, who afterwards was a famous Haverhill merchant, entered in his diary, under date of January 26, 1776, "We bought a wild Turcy that weight 17¼ lbs., and had it for supper."

The earliest historian of Haverhill wrote: "In these woods (of Great Pond) the coy partridge is found, and various other kinds of game, which affords a pleasant amusement and healthy exercise to those who are skilled in gunnery;" and, in later days, to some wh om the widest charity could hardly comprise in that class. There are, in the great cities, some who delight to recall the days when they shot woodcock in the thickets about Plug Pond.

In the East Parish, game has thriven as well as poetry. Indeed, there can scarcely be imagined a region better adapted to be the haunt of the sportsman and the poet alike than that which may be called "Whittier's Country." There are the old homestead and "Country Bridge," and the "Countess' Grave," and many another spot which the reader of the most beautiful of American idyls loves to recognize. From the river to Brandy Brow and the Newton road there are unfrequented woodland paths, groves pathetic with the melancholy sough of the pine trees; great, lonesome hills; streams, sometimes running clear and smiling in the open forest and again hidden in impenetrable thickets. In the more desolate days of autumn the leaves "rustle to the eddying gust and to the rabbit's tread."

"And now, when come the calm, mild day, as still such days will come,
To call the squirrel and the bee from out their winter home,—
When the sound of dropping nuts is heard, though all the woods are still,
And twinkle in the smoky light the waters of the rill."

There is a great charm about these scenes (not unfelt, let us hope, even by the keen hunter) over which genius has shed

"The light that never was on sea or shore."

Notwithstanding the multiplication of sportsmen, there are still coverts known to the initiated in the North Parish, as well as the East, where it is possible to bag a respectable number of birds.

Mirick wrote, fifty-five years ago,—"Before the town was settled it was covered with an immense and, in some places, almost impenetrable forest, except the lowlands, or meadows. These were cleared by the Indians, perhaps centuries before the discovery of America, and they were covered with a heavy growth of grass, which grew so exceedingly thick and so very high that it was impossible to discover man or beast at a distance of five rods. They resembled the celebrated prairies of the West in everything, except extent. Every autumn the Indians set the dried grass on fire, so that they might more easily kill the deer which came to feed on it the next spring. On account of the grass, they were prized above all other lands by the first settlers, for there they procured hay for their flocks, and they were divided into small lots and distributed among them. The forest was filled with various kinds of small birds. Innumerable flocks of ducks resorted to the ponds, and the timid loon was seen sailing majestically in their waters. The wild deer reposed in the shady groves or bounded over the hills, followed by the eager hunter. The loud bark of the raccoon was heard, and the wily fox was often seen leaping through the woods. But the worst enemy, of the beast kind, to the infant settlement, was the cruel and voracious wolf. They sometimes roamed the woods in droves, trotting like dogs, and in some of their excursions destroyed large numbers of sheep. At one period they had become so bold and troublesome that a large plot of ground was enclosed near the common and used as a pasture for the sheep. Shepherds were likewise appointed to protect them, and at night they were collected into a close fold or pen. Hardly a day passed in which depredations were not made; and almost every night their dismal howlings broke upon its solitude."

Wolves were very destructive to the swine and cattle, as well as sheep. As early as 1630 the General Court ordered bounties for their destruction. The wolves appear to have been unable or unwilling to leap fences in pursuit of cattle, a trait the settlers soon learned to profit by. Wood, speaking of the "necke of land called Nahant," says, "for the present it is only used to put young cattle in and *weather*

goates and swine, to secure them from the wolves; a few posts and rayles from the lower water-markes to the shore, keeps out the wolves and keeps in the cattle." The same practice was resorted to in Boston, where the neck was fenced across—"So that a little fencing will secure their cattle from the wolves."

As late as 1717, in February, occurred the greatest fall of snow, lasting from the 20th to the 24th, recorded in the annals of New England. During the snow great numbers of deer came from the woods for food, followed by the wolves, which killed many. Previous to 1662 both the colony and the county had offered large bounties for wolf-heads, but in that year the town of Haverhill offered in addition forty shillings for every wolf killed. In 1685 Amesbury repealed its provision for paying a similar bounty, and the Haverhill people soon after took the same action, apparently being fearful that all the wolves would come into their town to take advantage of the bounty or that they would be obliged to pay for wolves actually killed in Amesbury. (See Whittier's "Leaves from Margaret Smith's Journal.") The selectmen, however, were authorized to pay such sums as they should agree upon in particular cases. Two years after, a regular bounty of fifteen shillings was offered for every full-grown wolf killed within the town's limits, and seven shillings sixpence for each young one. In 1696 the town granted Timothy Eaton, for killing a full-grown she-wolf, on the ox-common, a special bounty of ten shillings, "since he declares it was a bitch-wolf and that she will not bring any more whelps."

Chase says, "Among the records for this year (1695) we find a copy of a receipt from the state (provincial) treasurer for 'eight wolves' heads, at eight shillings sixpence, in full for thirty thousand pounds' assessment.' Something of a discount we think.'" Afterwards and for many years, the bounty was twenty shillings a wolf, and as late as 1716 five full-grown ones were killed in the town.

The wolves long since ceased to trouble the sheep in Haverhill, but the fox survives in the parishes and refuses to be exterminated, notwithstanding great successes occasionally reported to that end. On one of the last days of the very latest November a triumphant hunter was seen passing the North meeting-house, bearing under his arm a splendid fox, whose noble brush would, in one of the English counties, have been gallantly awarded to some spirited Di Vernon and been considered ample recompense for all the expenditure of fine horses, costly pack of hounds, grooms, huntsmen, whippers-in, and the destruction of crops, which a hard run after Reynard entails.

Professor Gray, in treating of the flora of Boston and its vicinity (and he takes the environs of Boston to include the counties of Norfolk, Middlesex and Essex) declares that long after the ice-age

"our coast must have been at one time clothed with white spruces; then probably with black spruce and arbor vitæ, with here and there some canoe-birches and beeches; and these, as the climate ameliorated, were replaced by white and red pines, and at length the common pitch-pine came to occupy the lighter soils; and the three or four species of oak, the maples, ashes, with their various arborel and frutescent associates, came in to complete the ordinary and well-known New England forest of historic times.

"Even without historical evidence, we should infer with confidence that New England before human occupation was wholly forest-clad, excepting a line of salt marshes on certain shores, and the bogs and swamps not yet firm enough to sustain trees.

"The Indian tribes found here by the whites had not perceptibly modified the natural vegetation; and there is no evidence that they had been preceded by any agricultural race. Their inconsiderable plantation of maize, along with some beans and pumpkins,—originally derived from much more Southern climes, but thriving under a sultry summer,—however important to the raisers, could not have sensibly affected the face of the country; although it was said that 'in divers places, there is much ground cleared by the Indians.' But, whatever may have been the amount of their planting, if the aborigines had simply abandoned the country, no mark of their occupation would have long remained, so far as the vegetable kingdom is concerned."

Very little is said by the chroniclers about Indian planting in Haverhill. Doubtless there had been something of the kind. But Indian cultivation was very superficial. The labor was generally performed by the squaws and with very rude and imperfect implements. The warrior disdained labor. Therefore what Mirick has said about the Indians "clearing" the meadows, as quoted upon a former page, must be taken with much allowance, as far as it implies any substantial clearing off of the forest; the Indian was too lazy to do anything of the kind.

Among the trees new to the settlers, Professor Gray mentions the flowering dogwood, the sassafras, the tupelo and the hickory; and, among evergreens, the hemlock-spruce and what the colonists improperly called the cedar—the white pine; among the larger shrubs, the magnolia and rhododendron, the larger sumach, the hawthorns, the azaleas, the *epigœa* or Mayflower, blueberries and huckleberries.

"The influx of European weeds was prompt and rapid from the first, and has not ceased to flow; for hardly a year passes in which new-comers are not noticed in some parts of the country."

The earliest intelligent account of the plants of this country were by John Josselyn, published in 1672 and 1674. Josselyn's observations were principally made at Scarborough, Maine, not far east of Haverhill. The next was by Rev. Manasseh Cutler, of Essex County (The Hamlet, Ipswich), published in 1785. Presumably, therefore, substantially all the plants they enumerated were to be found in Haverhill.

Josselyn gave a list of "such plants as have sprung up since the English planted and kept cattle in New England." Among these naturalized plants he names sorrel, spearmint, ground-ivy, tansy. Perhaps it surprises almost everybody to learn that the barberry is not a native of New England, but is an intruder. It grows abundantly in some localities in the East Parish.

The European willows, the white poplar, the Lombardy poplar, the English elm, the horse-chestnut, the ailanthus, the Norway maple and spruce, the

European larch, the lilac and the snowball are all importations and are well naturalized in Haverhill. It has been said that when the white settlers took possession of the town, it was well-wooded. There are no longer extensive forests and most of the wood used is brought from adjoining towns. The oak, it has been said, predominates. There are, also, the walnut, sycamore, elm, locust, hemlock, spruce, ash, white and black birch, willow, alder, wild black cherry, plum, white and pitch pine, and a few white and rock maple.

On the hillsides grew spontaneously (and some of them in abundance) the whortleberry, blueberry, strawberry, raspberry, the vine and bush blackberries.

Somewhat later than 1750, Hugh Talent, a gay and popular Irish fiddler, who hired as a servant with Judge Richard Saltonstall, planted in front of the latter's residence certain sycamore trees, which thrived and were famous for almost a century. May 23, 1748, the judge petitioned the proprietors of common lands in Haverhill for about one-fourth acre of land south of his homestead, "where he had lately planted some Button Trees." The petition was granted, and the trees continued to flourish long after the estate had passed from the Saltonstalls to the Duncans, who still own it. Mirick wrote, in 1832, "The sycamore, or buttonwood, as it is more frequently called, attains to the greatest size. About twenty of them are now standing on the banks of the Merrimac, before the mansion of the widow of Samuel W. Duncan, and, together with the willows which adorn the bank of the river for some distance, make a delightful shade. This appears to be a favorite retreat of the citizens of all classes, and on the pleasant evenings of summer, it is frequently thronged." But at last a disease attacked these sycamores, as many others in different localities of Massachusetts, and the glory of the "Old Buttonwoods" became a matter of tradition and history.

There are a few who still remember the pleasant greetings, the village gossip, and perhaps, even the flirtations, beneath their grateful shade. When, a year or two since, an elderly lady who had been a belle in her youth, revisited Haverhill after an absence of many years, it was observed that her recollections of the village were indistinct, save the beauty of the walk beneath the buttonwoods and the splendor of the sunsets as seen from Golden Hill!

What became of Hugh Talent, who, by his skill and ability as a fiddler and success as a tree-planter, thus made his name a household word in the town, and enhanced its gayety for a hundred years? Judge Richard Saltonstall, his master, died at the old residence in 1756, and was buried in the ancient place of sepulture, reserved by the forefathers. His eldest son, Col. Richard, born in 1732, at the outbreak of the Revolution, adopted the King's side, and died in England, a voluntary exile from his beautiful home and the land of his birth. But who was "Hugh Talent," who, in 1776 was denounced as a Tory, at Pelham, N. H.? Was not he, perchance, the hero of the fiddle and the Buttonwoods, in his old age, sympathizing with the politics of his young master, whom he taught so long ago to keep time to the twanging of his bow, and who, with the officiousness of a boy, helped him to plant the twenty sycamores before rebellion was dreamed of.

CHAPTER CL.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

Description of Haverhill—its Topography.

THE beautiful natural situation of Haverhill has been always and universally acknowledged. Its southern boundary, the Merrimac River, though not the largest, is confessed to be the most picturesque stream in New England. It flows through more than one hundred miles of rich and fertile country. It is the most noted water-power stream of the world, on which, with its tributaries, there is probably more power utilized than in any other drainage basin of equal size in America. The head of tide and of navigation for coasting vessels is a few miles above Haverhill, but small river boats can ascend as far as Lawrence. Above that point there is no navigation on the river, although there are long stretches of still water behind the dams supplying water-power; and although the idea of rendering the stream navigable even to Manchester has been broached, the cost of the undertaking has prevented any steps being taken to carry it out. Considerable sums have been expended by the general government in opening a channel, and by private enterprise in attempts to develop a successful steam navigation to Lawrence, but at present they appear to be abandoned.

Seventy-eight thousand six hundred net horse-powers were utilized in 1880 on the Merrimac and its tributaries.

The drainage basin has been deprived of its forests to a considerable extent, and, except in the upper portions, scarcely any part of it can be called thickly wooded.

The average fall of the stream is 2.45 feet per mile. Though this is not a large fall, the greater part of it occurs within short distances at six places, giving rise to its noted and remarkable powers.

The mean annual rainfall over the basin of the Merrimac River, is, according to the Smithsonian charts, about forty-three inches of which ten fall in spring, eleven in summer, thirteen in autumn and nine in winter. This distribution is evidently very favorable for a constant flow.

As regards accessibility, it is sufficient to refer to the

map, which shows that the stream is followed closely by the railway through its entire length. No river can be more favorably situated in this respect.

"From the mouth of the river to Haverhill Bridge, a distance of seventeen miles and a half, there is a navigable depth of twelve feet at ordinary high-water. Thence to the head of Mitchell's Falls, a distance of four miles, is a depth of four and a half feet, in ordinary stages of the river with the mill water at Lawrence running. Above the Falls the effect of the tide is not noticeable. Mitchell's Falls are of no value for water-power, the fall varying with the tide, and only amounting to six or eight feet." So says a writer upon the water-powers of the United States, in volume sixteen of the census of 1880.

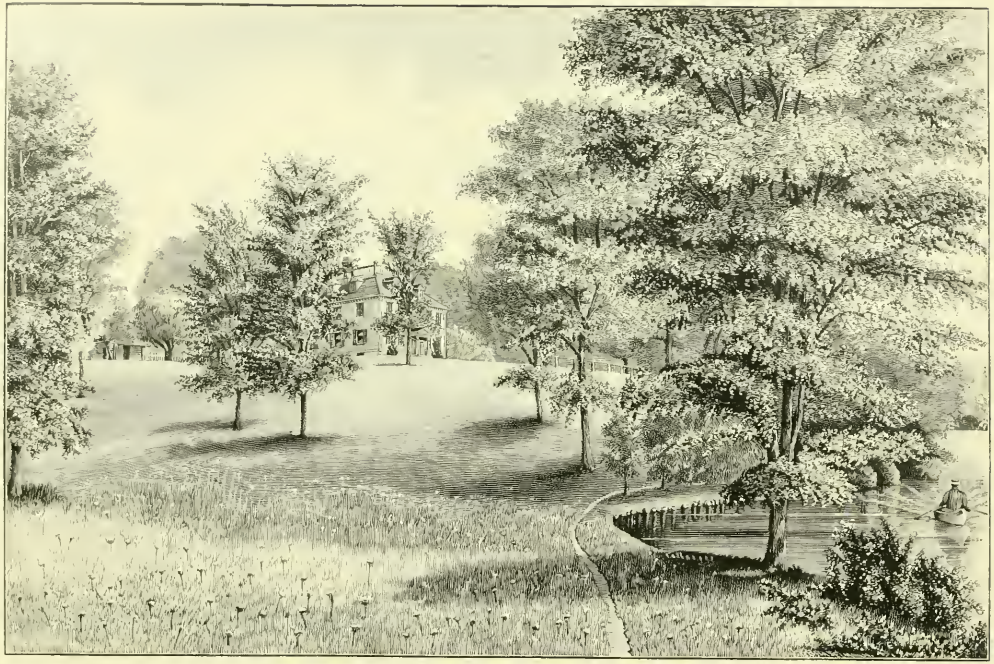
The earliest mention of the Merrimac was by Sieur De Monts, who wrote from the banks of the St. Lawrence, in 1604: "The Indians tell us of a beautiful river far to the south, which they call the Merrimack." Its abundant fisheries and fertile planting-grounds were exceedingly attractive to them at the appropriate season of the year. The falls of the river were their special places of resort. The Northern Indians called it Merrimack, said to mean a strong place—a place of strong currents. The Massachusetts Indians called it Monomack, a place of islands, or, according to others, the place of sturgeon—from the abundance of fish. Champlain discovered the river June 16, 1605.

On the opposite side of the river from Haverhill are Bradford, Groveland and West Newbury, whose green hills and thriving and attractive villages are objects always delightful and refreshing to the eye. On the east Haverhill is bounded by Merrimac, on the north by Salem, Atkinson and Plaistow, N. H., and on the west by Methuen. Merrimac, previously known as West Amesbury, was incorporated in 1876; Amesbury, called by the first settlers Salisbury Newtown, was incorporated in 1668; and Salisbury, first known as Colchester, was originally settled about 1638, and incorporated in 1640. Salisbury began two years before Haverhill, was for nearly thirty years its eastern boundary, extending along the river to the sea. As we have seen, Amesbury was first carved from it, and, after an interval of more than two hundred years, Merrimac from Amesbury. In the "abstract of the census of 1860," prepared in the office of the Secretary of State by George Wingate Chase, the historian of Haverhill, which is annually published in the Manual of the General Court, there appear half a dozen towns, the precise date of whose incorporation is not given. Haverhill is one of them; Bradford is another. The date of the incorporation is given thus: "—— —— 1645." In the early colonial days the act of incorporation was not so formal a thing as at the present day, and frequently consisted merely in some official recognition of the new plantation, as the attendance of a deputy, the appointment of a constable, the reception of a petition. Thenceforward it was usually received into the general scheme of government, as a matter of course.

The northern line of the town of Haverhill is also the boundary between the States of Massachusetts and New Hampshire. The Indian deed, executed in 1642, granted to its inhabitants a tract of land extending eight miles from Little River to the west, six miles to the north and six miles to the east from the same. When the General Court established its boundaries, twenty-five years after, the town assumed nearly the form of a triangle, each angle of which was about fifteen miles in length. The extreme northern point, or "North-westerly angle of Haverhill," was once familiarly known as "Haverhill Peke," This was a very large township. It included a large part of the territory of the present municipalities of Methuen and Lawrence, in Massachusetts, and Salem, Atkinson, Plaistow and Hampstead, N. H. But the town bounds have not been altered since 1741, when the State line was run.

Thus clipped in extent, Haverhill still is about nine miles in length, upon the river, and three in breadth, from the river northwardly. Its latitude is 42° 47′ north; its longitude is 71° 4′ west from Greenwich. Its maximum altitude is about three hundred and twenty-five feet. The distance to Boston is thirty miles, or by rail thirty-three; to Portland, seventy-two and seven-tenths miles, or by rail eighty-three. The Boston and Maine Railroad passes through it, of which there is a branch connecting it with Georgetown, Newburyport, Salem and the whole eastern division of that system. It is connected with both Bradford and Groveland by bridges. The river has a width of six hundred feet, and a depth of eight feet in the channel at high water. Water communication is open to coasting vessels of two hundred tons, which ply to Maine for pine and lumber, to Rockport for granite and to Philadelphia for coal. Vessels are towed by steam-power up from Newburyport, at the mouth of the river. Small pleasure steamers ply between the city, Newburyport and the adjacent beaches. Small steamers of light draught have ascended the river to Lawrence. Says a writer in the last "United States Census Reports" (not always consistent and perhaps sometimes fallible): "The rapids above the city extend up about a mile and have a fall of nine (9) feet in this distance. They are in two sections."

There are fifteen thousand two hundred acres in Haverhill, eleven hundred and seven of which are covered with water. The remarkable statement has been made that the amount of unimprovable land is only thirteen acres. Perhaps there is none; but there is certainly a good deal more which is not improved. What that writer subsequently adds is doubtless correct: "But few towns can show so small a number of acres of unimprovable land or land of decidedly inferior quality." Much land is under a high state of cultivation. The soil consists of a light loam, gravel



SALTONSTALL HOUSE, LAKE SALTONSTALL.

RESIDENCE OF WM. G. HOWE,

HAVERHILL, MASS.

and clay, with granite and common rock in considerable abundance. Clay is very abundant, is found a few feet below the surface, and, owing to its retention of moisture, renders the soil damp and heavy; with drainage and cultivation the soil is made productive, especially for potatoes and other vegetables. The city proper slopes abruptly towards the river, and the natural drainage is good. The balance of the territory is undulating, with several hills rising here and there, but not connected.

The highest recorded summer temperature is 100°; highest summer temperature in average years, 95°; the lowest recorded winter temperature 20°; lowest winter temperature in average years, 10°. Fogs roll up the river during the spring and fall, causing dampness and some sickness, but no malaria. The marshes are not large enough to have any perceptible effect on the climate, while the elevated lands are considered healthful. The east winds from the ocean are frequently cold and damp, while the west winds are dry and genial.

There are four bodies of water, which have been already referred to in another connection. They were once called ponds, but have been rechristened as lakes, with more or less success. Ayer's Pond, so-called, because in the beginning several persons of that name settled near its western extremity, and, till recently, owned and cultivated a great deal of land adjoining, is the smallest, covering an area of forty-one acres. It is situated about half a mile from the Merrimac, nearly north from that portion of the village originally settled. Portions of its bottom, especially at its western extremity, were formerly covered with mud, but its sources of supply are springs bubbling up through the sand. Its appearance has been much improved by the Aqueduct Company, which now has the control of all the ponds as the water supply of the city. At its southern point a dam or "plug" has long existed, to which its surplus water was formerly drawn to supply the mills on the brook connecting it with the Merrimac. Hence the name of "Plug" Pond, which, superseding the original, is perhaps that by which it is still best known. It will, however, be eventually recognized as Lake Saltonstall, in memory of a family formerly and for a long time the most distinguished in Haverhill, where the name is no longer borne, although there are a number of descendants in the female line. After the "Buttonwoods" passed out of the possession of the famiiy. Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall built, and, in 1789, finished his new house upon Merrimac (then Water) Street, west of Main. There were then but few houses in that part of Water Street, and the view was open to the river upon the south. There Dr. Saltonstall died in 1815. Subsequently to the death of his daughter, Mrs. Isaac R. Howe, her son, William G. Howe, removed the family residence to the beautiful northern slope of Plug Pond, where it awaits the near approach of its centennial, which happens to be that of the inauguration of the constitutional government of the United States and the locally famous visit of President Washington to Haverhill. On the east of Lake Saltonstall, upon the elevated land overlooking it, is Birchbrow, the picturesque residence of Mr. Thomas Sanders, whose family also represent the first minister, John Ward, and Nathaniel Saltonstall, the best known citizen among the first settlers. In the vicinity of Lake Saltonstall is "The Highlands," a district only opened recently for the better class of residences, but now being rapidly occupied for that purpose. Evidently the day is close at hand when all that lovely lake region will be filled with handsome villas, and will be the haunt of sight-seers who will wonder why its unsurpassed beauties were not earlier appreciated.

Pass over the steep hill which separates Lake Saltonstall from its sister lake, and you emerge upon the high table-land where opens a superb view of Kenoza, once "The Great Pond," and rechristened under very happy auspices some thirty years since, as has been already told. On the heights stands "Mimekeni Towers," a magnificent situation, whose advantages were discovered and developed by Dr. James R. Nichols, of Haverhill, now owned and occupied by the family of Mr. William G. Webb.

Lake Kenoza is the largest of the four lakes of Haverhill, having an area of two hundred and thirty-four acres. South of this noble sheet of water was laid out the great ox-common before 1650.

From Mimekeni Towers we look down also upon Lake Pentucket, once "Round Pond" or "Belknap's Pond." This is a remarkably beautiful body of water, singularly pure and limpid. It has an area of thirty-eight acres.

Saltonstall, Kenoza and Pentucket are within half a mile of each other. Kenoza is a mile and a half from Haverhill Bridge, in a northeasterly direction. Pentucket is about one mile northerly from the bridge. The water in these lakes is about one hundred and fifty feet above the bed of the Merrimac. The natural outlet of Round Pond lies towards the southwest, through which, by the way of the Merrimac and Little Rivers, salmon and other fish passed up, according to their season, to deposit spawn. The direction of this outlet of water was long ago artificially changed towards Plug Pond to secure the surplus water for the mills upon Mill Brook. Since the Aqueduct Company acquired the ancient mill privileges upon Mill Brook the later outlet has also been discontinued.

The only outlet from Lake Kenoza is Fishing River, which flows northerly from its northwestern extremity, and up which the alewives used to crowd in spawning time. It has latterly been utilized to increase the supply of water for manufacturing purposes upon the mills below by drawing off water from the lake in the dry season. This privilege was granted to Mr. Ezekiel Hale, Jr., in 1835, who erected a flume at the outlet of the lake and deepened the bed of the stream.

Once, and for many years, there was a corn-mill upon this stream, about half a mile from its mouth. The first mill was built by William Starlin, probably about 1684. He sold it to Thomas Duston in 1697, from whom it descended to his son Timothy.

Creek Pond is in the West Parish, about three miles northwesterly from the bridge, and has an area of one hundred and seventy-five acres. Some beautiful groves adorn its borders, and there are excellent farms in its vicinity. It was once well-stocked with fish, and a favorite resort of sportsmen. Its outlet, Creek Brook, runs due south to the Merrimac, and was long noted for its alewives. It was originally known as Merrie's Creek, probably from Joseph Merrie, who was in the town as early as 1645. Creek Pond begins to be known as Crystal Lake in modern transformation, a name of which it is not unworthy, as its waters are remarkably transparent, and the bottom even and sandy. On Creek Brook, or Merrie's Creek, there were long two mills, one at the outlet of the pond which was first a grist-mill, and later a hat-factory, the other a grist-mill near the Merrimac, and long known as "Bradley's Mill."

These four ponds, so long valuable for their supply of fish-food and water-power, are invaluable to the modern city as furnishing an almost unrivaled supply of pure and abundant water, which is, as yet, controlled by a private corporation.

Fishing River, flowing northerly into Plaistow, gradually bends to the southwest and empties itself into Little River, so-called by the Indians and early settlers to distinguish it from the Merrimac or "Great River." Little River rises in Plaistow and Kingston, N. H., enters Haverhill a little east of the Atkinson line, and flows southeasterly to the Merrimac, entering it at Washington Square, one-fourth of a mile west from Haverhill Bridge. Near the State line there has been, for a hundred and fifty years, a grist-mill on this stream, long known as "Clark's Mill." A fourth of a mile from its mouth, at Winter Street, there was for two hundred years a saw-mill, whence the stream was generally called "Sawmill River." Nearer its mouth was long a grist-mill. The saw and grist-mills ceased operations years since, but at the bridge, which at the extremity of Winter Street crosses the stream, Ezekiel Hale established a "cotton yarn manufactory" at the beginning of the present century. Later flannels were manufactured there, and the same manufacture is still carried on upon the locality by M. T. Stevens & Sons.

East Meadow River rises in Newton, N. H., enters Haverhill about three-fourths of a mile east of Brandy Brow Hill, and, passing through beautiful and sequestered woods and thickets, makes it way nearly south to the Merrimac, emptying into it at "Cottle's Creek." As early as 1693, Joseph Peasly built a mill on this stream, near the Amesbury line, and a saw and grist-mill have been maintained there almost constantly since by his descendants. In 1757, Anthony Chase built a saw-mill about half a mile from the mouth of the stream, and a few years after a grist-mill and fulling-mill. These were in operation for many years. John Chase, son of Anthony, built and carried on for a long time a fulling-mill, about one mile above his father's mills. About 1790, or a little later, Thomas Johnson built a grist-mill about one-fourth of a mile from the Merrimac, known as "Johnson's Mill."

There are no chains of hills in this town, the eminences being generally detached. Nobody ever thought of calling any of them mountains, though some are prominent and pretty steep. There are Johnson's Highlands, Golden Hill, Silver Hill, Turkey Hill, Job's Hill, Brandy Brow Hill and the Great Hill. Golden Hill is said to have once been called Golding's Hill, from a person of that name who owned or lived near it. Its base is about twenty rods from the Merrimac and it rises three hundred and twenty-five feet above the river, about a mile east of Haverhill Bridge. The prospect of the island in the river, long called Clement's, of Groveland, Bradford and the city itself is certainly a picture of great beauty and animation.

Counterpart of Golden Hill is Silver Hill, also called from a former owner, about three-fourths of a mile west of Haverhill Bridge, three hundred feet above the Merrimac, which flows by its southern base. The lower portion has become known as Mount Washington, over which residences are rapidly extending. For ten years the city has been steadily growing in that direction. From the summit of Silver Hill are seen the valleys of Little River and the Great River, the picturesque town of Andover, Lawrence and Methuen,—prosperous children of Haverhill,—the North and West Parishes, scenes of the early Indian warfare, with the distant mountains. If precedent is needed for admiration of these views, it is historically asserted to have been set by the beloved father of his country, who gazed

> "On the Hills of Gold and Silver,
> Running round the little town,"

with undisguised admiration.

Turkey Hill, north of the East Parish meeting-house, is an irregular group, rather, of hills, from which the river valley is seen to great advantage with the East Meadows, of which so much is read in the town records. Job's Hill is at the north, overlooking the birth-place of the venerable poet, Whittier. These hills, it is imagined, are little visited. They are rugged and solitary, within a short distance of a very busy and thriving community.

Various conjectures, all of them rather unsatisfactory, assume, in the books, to account for the somewhat startling name of Brandy Brow Hill. It is the most northerly point of the town. Its vicinity was long famed for its excellent and abundant pine timber. At the top of Brandy Brow is a great rock,

marking the corners of four towns,—Plaistow, Amesbury, Newton and Haverhill.

Perhaps the most ambitious passage in Chase's "History of Haverhill" is that in which he describes the view from Great Hill, one mile north of Lake Kenoza, the highest eminence in town and the second highest in Essex County. He says: "Portions of more than twenty towns in Massachusetts and nearly or quite as many in New Hampshire are easily distinguished by the naked eye. To the east stretches the broad Atlantic, whose deep blue waters, dotted with the white wings of commerce, are plainly seen from the Great Boar's Head to Cape Ann. Near its edge and partially hidden from our sight by Pipe-Stave Hill in Newbury, are seen the spires and many of the houses of the city of Newburyport. To the right the eye can distinctly trace the outline of Cape Ann, from Castle Neck to Halibut Point. With the aid of a glass several villages upon the Cape are made visible. As we sweep around from east to south, nearly all the most prominent hills in Essex North can be distinctly seen and easily identified. To the south and southwest, portions of the villages of Groveland, Bradford, Haverhill, North Andover, Andover and Methuen and the city of Lawrence can be seen peeping above the intervening hills. To the southwest, the Wachusett; to the west, the Monadnock; and to the north, the Deerfield Mountains are easily distinguished. To the northwest, the village of Atkinson, with its celebrated academy, is spread out in bold relief. To the northeast is seen the top of Powow Hill in Salisbury,—so named from its having been selected by the Indians for their great 'powows,' long before the white man gazed upon the waters of the Merrimack from its summit. Turning again to the south, we notice, almost at our feet, the beautiful Lake Kenoza, glistening in the sun like a diamond encompassed by emeralds. Once viewed, the memory of this lovely landscape will never be effaced.

"'The faithful sight
Engraves the image with a beam of light.'"

CHAPTER CLI.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

Settlement of Haverhill—Indian Deed—First Settlers.

In three months, in 1638, no less than three thousand settlers arrived in Massachusetts. This great press of new-comers, who naturally repaired, in the first instance, to the places where their friends, previously landed, had established themselves, caused considerable inconvenience. They could not well be accommodated. Besides, it no doubt seemed as if half England were coming over. The Anglo-Saxon greed for good land was roused; there was but little available for immediate cultivation. Most of the good land was heavily timbered, and it would be the work of many years to clear it. Without land and without the successful cultivation of lands there could be no products to form the basis of trade and commerce. The years 1639, 1640 and those immediately succeeding, witnessed something like a land speculation in the new colony. After those years, the civil war in England and the brighter prospects it opened to the Puritans checked immigration to New England, and many even returned to their old homes. But it is estimated that in 1640 there were already in New England over twenty thousand persons, or four thousand families. In Ipswich and Newbury, in 1639, there were large numbers of immigrants from Ipswich, Newbury, Lynn, Haverhill and the vicinity of those towns in the easterly part of England. All these people were eagerly looking out for good places to settle in.

We who revere the character of our ancestors, the settlers of New England, when we think, talk and write of them, are in danger always of passing into extremes. We are indignant with those who seize upon the instances of their bigotry, intolerance and cruelty, wilfully or ignorantly to accuse them of inconsistency and hypocrisy. On the other hand, we are apt to err when, in moments of exaltation, we extol them as always and altogether saintly and heroic.

The enterprises which they undertook, and the courage and consistency with which they conducted them, were indeed wholly admirable. The story of the Pilgrims of Plymouth will never cease to be blazoned. The firmness and cool calculation with which Winthrop and his associates covenanted together, with their persons, families and properties, "to pass the seas," marks the voyage of that company as a great event in history. Not in either case simply because it required vigor and manliness and valor to leave home and dear old England, sail over stormy seas and explore the wilderness. The old Greeks had done that; the Vikings had done that; their own ancestors, the Danes and Saxons, had done that. They perhaps did not know the story of Lief Erickson, the Northman, but they had read or heard all about the voyages of Columbus, and the Cabots and John Smith. They were not the first to sail or to explore in America or in New England. The peculiarity of their undertaking was, that they set out not as voyagers, adventurers or traders, but, as Dudley, Winthrop and the rest expressed themselves in the famous agreement at Cambridge, England, August 26, 1629,—"to inhabit and continue in New England." They sold everything in the mother country, converted their property, tore up their domestic ties by the roots, and went to Massachusetts to stay. They did not seek to make fortunes and return to Europe to enjoy them, but they went with the determination to attack the wilderness, to overcome it, to plant new settlements

where they hoped in time to obtain something of the comfort and the order of the old. What else did they go for? Many of the Massachusetts settlers were already men of property and substance; many of them had homes and families which were dear to them. They must abandon the first and put in peril and subject to hardship the last. What they hoped, then, finally to gain for themselves, their families and posterity by the great removal, was a shelter and a hiding-place for civil and religious liberty, both then in danger of being destroyed at home. As Winthrop wrote: "The Church hath noe place lefte to flie unto but the wildernesse." And the farewell letter from the "Arbella" of April 7, 1630, asks the prayers of the "Reverend Fathers and Brethren" left behind, and promises to return them from "our poor cottages in the wilderness, overshadowed with the spirit of supplication, through the manifold necessities and tribulations which may not altogether unexpectedly, nor, we hope, unprofitably, befall us." These expressions show the character of the enterprise. They were laboring under no illusions; let us not fall into any. They were not idealists; they did not sail away into Utopia; they left the persecutors; they did not ask the persecutors to go with them. They sought to save themselves; they did not undertake to save the world. They meant to establish a government, if the King of England would leave them in peace, in which they and those who thought with them could enjoy the liberty of soul and body which they considered ought to be inherent to an Englishman. They and those who thought with them—not those who differed from them. And if the result of their labors has been the establishment of a happy asylum for people of all sorts of belief, it is a result unexpected and undesired by them, though the natural outcome of their own independence and self-sacrifice.

They took care to say in this farewell letter parenthetically, "We are not of those that dream of perfection in this world," and, it may be supposed that if they had anticipated the criticisms of posterity, some of them might have warned us not to expect in their conduct the perfection of consistency. Others of them would plainly have denounced toleration as "Carrion." Just as the stern Gov. Thomas Dudley wrote Sir Richard Saltonstall, "God forbid our love for the truth should be grown so could that we could tolerate errours." In common fairness, we must take the Puritans according to their own expressed limitations. And when we once understand that they came hither only to establish a home for themselves and such as were in accord with them, we are in a position to judge their doings intelligently.

The next thing to appreciate about the early settlers of this region is that they were men of common sense. They believed in prayer, morning and evening and at all times, but not as a substitute for intelligent human effort. They trusted in God and kept their powder dry. They did not expect to find it in good condition when the Indians attacked them, if they did not preserve it from dampness by due personal care. They did the best they could themselves in the first place, and then asked God's blessing upon their labors. They meant to succeed in the great emprise which had brought them to America. The only way in which they dreamed of success was by every man doing the best he could for himself and so for all. They had no notions of a common stock, and no intention that the industrious should support the idle in idleness. Justice would be the wisest charity. To nourish infant communities and to support a struggling common-weal, each person must put forth his abilities and be taxed, and also protected according to the result. The improvident must suffer the consequences; hence, very few instances will be found in our early history of any community of labor, save in isolated cases, for a very short time or for objects of public concern. The lands were divided in severalty and each man went to work to improve his own.

Land being the great object of desire and means of profit, the shrewd men made the most of their opportunities of acquiring it. They *prospected* the wilderness, they sought out desirable tracts towards which they directed immigration. Simon Bradstreet, for instance, was (to use a modern English phrase) a great promotor. He lived at Ipswich, at Andover and at Salem. He helped lay out the town of Salisbury. And he received grants of land in the former places which became valuable. Doubtless his services were useful, too, from his intelligence, experience and influence.

The Puritan ministers were very influential and especially at the beginning. They were potential, not only in spiritual but in temporal matters. In return, the people provided for their earthly needs, fairly if not generously, according to their ability. But there were sometimes unseemly squabbles on the subject of the minister's compensation. Tithes could not be thought of as a mode of providing it, for that was the method of the Church of England, from which they had come out. It is rather remarkable, indeed, that they should have reserved parsonage or glebe lands, after the English custom, as they did in most of the new settlements. They certainly did not leave the clergy to contributions, nominally voluntary, but morally compulsory. There was always a stated compensation, a formal contract. The pastor was a "settled" minister.

The clergyman from his stand-point recognized the necessity of looking out for himself. He was not a celibate; he had a family usually and a home. He had children. The State did not provide for their education and he must do it himself. He meant there should be schools and a college, and that learning should not die out in New England. To secure these things, he must be independent.

The Puritan clergyman in New England generally

became a farmer by compulsion, and cultivated his glebe land himself. Sometimes he was shrewd enough to *prospect*, also, and obtained valuable tracts of land by grant. Some of the early ministers of Essex County laid the foundation for considerable wealth in this way.

In 1634, Nathaniel Ward, the projector of Haverhill, was at Ipswich, as pastor of the church there. In 1639 his son, John Ward, followed him across the sea, probably bringing his wife with him.

Giles Firmin, Jr., would appear to have come to Massachusetts in Winthrop's company, as his name appears in the list of the members of the First Church in Boston, appended to the covenant adopted Aug. 27, 1630. One writer, however, says he came in 1632. His father was "a godly man, an apothecary of Sudbury in England," wrote Winthrop. The younger Firmin had studied at the University of Cambridge, and was learned in medicine. He first taught medicine and surgery in New England. Afterwards he removed to Ipswich, where he was a successful physician, and married a daughter of Nathaniel Ward.

December 22, 1639, Nathaniel Ward wrote to Governor Winthrop: "One more request, that you wd not pass yr. promise nor give any encouragement concerning any plantation att Quichichack or Pentuckett till myself and some others either speak or write to you about it, which shall be done so soon as our counsels and contrivalls are ripened."

Four days after, Dr. Firmin wrote Governor Winthrop, who was at this time in pecuniary embarrassment, resulting from the fraud of his bailiff, to which Firmin alludes in the beginning of his letter by way of introduction and then proceeds to the main business of it. He had doubtless known Governor Winthrop well during his residence in Boston.

"My father-in-law Ward, since his son came over, is very desirous that we might sett down together, and so that he might leave us together if God should remove him from hence. Because that cant be accomplished in this town, is very desirous to get mee to remove with him to a new plantation. After much persuasion used, considering my want of accomodation here (the ground the town having given mee lying 5 miles from mee or more), and that the gains of physick will not find me in bread, but besides apprehending that it might bee a way to free him from some temptations, and make him more cheerful and more serviceable to the country or church, have yeedded to him. Herein as I desired your counsel, so do I humbly request your favor, that you would be pleased to give us the libertye of choosinge a plantation; we think it will be at Pentuckett or Quichichchck by Shawshin (Andover): so soon as the season will give us leave to goe, wee shall inform your worship which we desire; and if that by the court of election wee cannot gather a company to begin it, wee will let it fall. We desire you will not graunt any of them to any before wee have seene them. If your worship hath heard any relation of the places, wee should remaine thankful to you if you would be pleased to counsel us to any of them."

Firmin proceeds to ask the Governor's advice upon the following state of things:

"The towne (Ipswich) gave mee the ground (100 acres) upon this condition that I should stay in the towne 3 years or else I could not sell it. . .

"I would entreat your counsel whither or no I can sell it. Further I am strongly set upon to study divinte. My studies else must be lost: for physick is but a meane helpe. . . "GYLES FYAMIN.

"Ipswich, 26, 10th, 1639.

"Wee humbly entreat your secrecy in our desires."

Winthrop probably advised Firmin that the town of Ipswich could revoke the grant if he did not comply with the condition on which it was made, which probably was the consideration that he should practice his profession as a physician for three years there. Or the practice itself may have become more lucrative. At all events, the Doctor, who was then twenty-five years old, was made a freemen in that year, remained in Ipswich fifteen years and was an elder of the church there. In 1654, he returned to England. He fulfilled his intention of studying theology, was ordained in England and became rector of a church there, continuing, nevertheless, to practice his early profession, and dying at the ripe age of eighty-three years, and thus Pentucket lost the opportunity of welcoming an able doctor to its forest glades. "Few Books" it is said "have been oftener printed or more read than Firmin's 'Real Christian.'" Firmin also wrote to the Governor: "Some of us will view Pentucket in the spring, because every one that hath seen it give it such commendation for a small town; the way also thither being passable for a great pinnace; only my fear is that Passatonnaway living there sometimes, he will hardly be bought out for a little."

Firmin further writes that Ward hath been offered the place at Marblehead: "Divers inducements he hath to return to England but his wife is wholly against it, and he is willing, if he might but have any employment, to stay still." From a letter written by Nathaniel Ward to Governor Winthrop, it would appear that he, himself, had at the time some idea of joining the "plantation" himself (doubtless Pentucket), but was deterred by the season and the anticipation of hardship. This was probably in the season of 1640–41, after the first pioneers had taken possession.

Ward pressed very vigoronsly the object he had so much at heart. He had written again earnestly to the Governor,—"We are led to continue our suite concerning the plantation I have lately mentioned to you; (our company increases apace from divers towns of very desirable men) whereof we desire to be very choice. This next week, if God hinder us not, we propose to view the places, and forthwith to report to you; in the mean time we crave your secrecy and rest. We have already more than twenty families of very good Christians proposed to goe with us." And why not? Why should not good Christians have good lands? Did not God's chosen people enter into the Promised Land?

Mr. Ward and his son-in-law, Dr. Firmin, however, went to work about this business much as this world's people would have done. They certainly plied the Governor industriously and with art. Sometbing, however, of consideration was due to Nathaniel Ward at this time, for he was probably then preparing the famous "Body of Liberties," which, having been revised and altered by the General Court, and sent

into all the towns for consideration, was again revised and amended by the Court, and finally adopted in 1641. It was a great service to Massachusetts, which need not grudge Ward the six hundred acres granted him by the General Court in 1643. It was to be laid out as near to Pentucket (Haverhill) "as conveniently may be." It is said, however, that it was allotted to him in Andover, and that he transferred it to Harvard College in payment of a debt. Though so sharp about the Pentucket plantation, he seems to have been improvident or unfortunate. And so the projector himself disappears from the annals of Pentucket.

At the session of the General Court held at Boston on the 13th of the succeeding May (May 13, 1640), a petition was received from Mr. Ward and Newbury men, for permission to begin a new plantation on the Merrimac, which petition was committed to the governor (Dudley), deputy-governor (Bellingham) and Mr. Winthrop, Sen., "to consider of Pentucket and Coijchawick, and to grant it them, provided they return answer within three weeks from the 21st present, and that they build there before the next courte." The petition itself is probably lost. Mr. Ward and his associates selected Pentucket, and probably went to work at once, as at the next session of the court (October 7th of the same year), a committee was appointed to view the bounds between Colchester (Salisbury) and Mr. Ward's plantation."

Mr. Felt, in his history of Ipswich, under the date of 1640, says: "Mr. (Nath'l) Ward, with some men of Newbury, is conditionally allowed to form a settlement at Haverhill or at Andover. This privilege was improved, and the former plantation was chosen before October. His chief object in obtaining such a grant was to prepare a residence for his son, who became an estimable minister there."

Under the date of 1641 Mr. Felt writes, "Rev. John Ward, Mr. John Favor and Hugh Sherratt went from Ipswich to Haverhill;" and Allen, in his biographical dictionary, like Mather in the Magnalia, states that he was settled at Haverhill in that year.

In reference to these transactions, some writers have confounded Nathaniel Ward and John Ward together. But there can be no reasonable doubt that Nathaniel Ward conducted the negotiations and was the original projector of the settlement at Haverhill. He certainly never lived there himself, though he may have visited the place before his return to England in 1646.

The first mention of Mr. John Ward in the town records of Haverhill, is a note at the bottom of the page, under the year 1643, stating that on the 29th September, 1642, he had "sixteen acres of land laid out to him for a home-lot, with all the accommodations thereunto belonging."

The "Good Christians" who came to Pentucket in 1640, and began in the early summer of that year the plantation, soon and ever since known as Haverhill, were from Newbury and Ipswich, and were twelve in number. Their names were: William White, Samuel Gile, James Davis, Henry Palmer, John Robinson, Christopher Hussey, John Williams, Richard Littlehale, Abraham Tyler, Daniel Ladd, Joseph Merrie, Job Clement. The last four were from Ipswich.

The first houses were erected near the spot where afterwards was the meeting-house, and the old burying-ground, now called Pentucket Cemetery. At the session of the General Court, in June, 1641, a committee was appointed to set out the bounds of Salisbury and Pentucket, *alias* Haverhill; they are to determine the bounds which Mr. Ward and his company are to enjoy as a town or village, if they have six houses up by the next General Court, in the eighth month" (October).

This does not necessarily imply that more than six houses may not have been already, in fact, built, but that six should be the minimum number which the committee would be authorized to regard as a substantial compliance with the general intention of the Court. Other settlers undoubtedly joined the pioneers in the season of 1641.

The first recorded birth was that of John, son of John Robinson, in 1641, who lived but three weeks. The second was a son of the same, in 1642, who lived but one week. John Robinson was a blacksmith, who removed to Exeter in 1657.

The third child born was Deborah, daughter of Tristram Coffin, in 1642, who lived six weeks. The winter of 1641-42 was unusually severe. Boston Harbor was frozen over, so that it was passable for horses, carts and oxen for six weeks. Doubtless the hardships of the beginning were uncongenial to human life, but the statistics soon began to improve. For the first twenty years, or from 1641 to 1661, inclusive, there were one hundred and fifty-eight births and thirty-three deaths, giving a net increase from that cause, in that period, of one hundred and twenty-five.

Giles Firmin had written to Governor Winthrop, doubtless in 1639, that he feared that Passatonnaway, living at Pentucket sometimes, "will hardly be bought out for a little." This was Passaconnaway, chief of the Pennacooks, titular sovereign or overlord of the Pentucketts, the Indian tribe who had their home in the region which is now Haverhill. The seat of the Pennacooks was at Concord, N. H. They were the most powerful tribe in the valley of the Merrimack, and Passaconnaway was their "Great Sachem." He was accounted a mighty powow, or sorcerer. Fortunately he was friendly to the English, and lived to a great age. Gookin saw him at Pawtucket (Lowell) "when he was about one hundred and twenty years old." He died about 1665, and was succeeded by his son Waunalancet, who abdicated his sovereignty and retired to Canada about 1677. The remnant of the tribe then elected Kaucamaugus, a grandson of Passa-

connaway, who was disaffected to the English, and did them much mischief between 1676 and 1691.

Passaconnaway's residence at Pentuckett probably consisted in occasional visits to the falls in the fishing season, to receive the tribute and homage which the tribes of the Lower Merrimack were in the habit of paying him.

The Pentucketts had once been quite a numerous tribe. Their principal village is supposed to have been on the banks of Little River, not far from its mouth. This was a situation well suited to their tastes and habits, and especially convenient for water-transportation, of which they were so fond. Their burial-ground was where Grand Army Hall now stands, on the north side of Merrimack, near Emerson Street. Here, once, a number of Indian skeletons were unearthed when a cellar was being excavated, and in that vicinity Indian arrow-heads, mortars and other relics were formerly frequently found. When Mr. Ward's company came to Haverhill in 1640 scarcely any of the Pentucketts remained. They had probably been largely swept away in the great pestilence which, about 1613, desolated their tribes, from the Kennebec to Narragansett. The patriarch, White, of Dorsetshire, England, in the "Planter's Plea," published in 1630, says: "The land affords void ground for more people than England can spare, on account of a desolation from a three years' plague, twelve or sixteen years past, which swept away most of the inhabitants along the sea-coast, and in some places utterly consumed man, woman and child, so that there is no person left to lay claim to the soyl which they possessed."

The records of Haverhill contain few allusions to the Indians, and those very scanty. Some mention of a "wigwam" is made in 1650, 1660 and 1685 in the west part of the town. In 1664 allusion was made to an "Indian Wire," in Fishing River, and the "Indian Bridge" over Spicket River. "Old Wills Planting-Ground" is referred to in the records of the General Court for 1662. This is considered to have been on the east side of the Spicket River, within the original bounds of Haverhill.

Mr Firmin's letter shows that the projectors expected to purchase the Indian title to Pentuckett, but the first settlers probably found so few aborigines in the neighborhood upon their arrival, that they scarcely thought it worth while to interrupt their busy labors to negotiate with them or rather, perhaps, to hunt them up for that purpose. But a circumstance occurred which had the effect to awaken their apprehensions, or stir their scruples.

In September, 1642, the Governor received intelligence from Connecticut, "that the Indians all over the country had combined themselves to cut off the English." This was to be done by surprise, in small parties, soon after the harvest had been gathered in. The Governor and Council thinking it advisable immediately to disarm all the Indians within their jurisdiction, a warrant was sent to Ipswich, Rowley and Newbury, "to disarm Passaconnaway, who lived by Merrimack." Forty armed men set out to execute it, in a heavy rain and on the Sabbath. They did not get the chief, but they took his son, with his squaw and child, and undertook to conduct them prisoners to the settlements. He, however, escaped and fled to the woods. Either for this reason or on account of certain miscarriages in the conduct of the affair, or most probably, perhaps, because the expedition had failed of its principal object, the Governor and Council sent a friendly messenger to bear their apologies to Passaconnaway for the arrest of his dependants and to explain the reason for their order of disarmament. The chieftain condescended to be pacified. The squaw and her child (by some writers said to be a wife and son of Passaconnaway himself) were sent back. "Accordingly about a fortnight after," says Winthrop, "he sent his eldest son to us, who delivered up his guns."

No massacre occurred though the plot had doubtless existed. And it is significant that on the 15th of the following November (1642) the Indian title to Pentucket was apparently extinguished. At all events, there is no trace in the records and no tradition of any subsequent Indian claimants.

On that day, Passaquo and Saggahew, with the consent of Passaconnaway, sold to the inhabitants of Pentucket, in consideration of three pounds and ten shillings, all the lands they had there: "that is eight myles in length from y^e^ Little Rivver in Pentucket Westward: six myles in length from y^e^ aforesaid Rivver northward: and six myles in length from y^e^ aforesaid Rivver Eastward, with y^e^ Ileand and y^e^ river that y^e^ ileand stand in as far in length as y^e^ land lyes by as formerly expressed: that is, fourteen myles in length," and "all y^e^ right that we or any of us have in y^e^ said ground and Ileand and Rivver: and we warrant it against all or any other Indians whatsoever unto y^e^ said inhabitants of Pentuckett, and to their heirs and assigns forever."

Passaquo and Saggahew each made their mark of a bow and arrow. The deed is witnessed by John Ward, the minister; Robert Clements, Tristram Coffin, Hugh Sherratt, William White and Thomas Davis, who made his "signe." The witnesses were all inhabitants, and, of course all interested in the deed. It will be observed that it purports to convey not only all the right that Passaquo and Saggahew themselves had, but that also which "any of us have," *i. e.* any Indians, with warranty against all Indians whatsoever. There has never been any litigation, probably, in which it was necessary closely to scan this Indian deed. It is probable that both grantors and grantees had in mind, as the point of departure, the site of the Indian village on Little River. In after years there was much discussion as to the east and west boundaries of the town. The inhabitants evidently always supposed themselves entitled to have

all that could be implied from the deed, whilst the general court was inclined to narrow their bounds. But it does not appear that there was ever any discussion where the northern boundary should be fixed, except as incidental to the great quarrel between New Hampshire and Massachusetts. The language of the deed is: "Six myles in length, from ye aforesaid river northward." Probably both parties had in mind, six miles north from the site of the Indian village at Little River.

But the charter of "the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England," granted "all that part of New England lying between three miles to the north of the Merrimack and three miles to south of Charles River." Under this charter, the Massachusetts people claimed that their northern boundary was three miles to the north of the northernmost part of the Merrimac, and from that point to extend east and west. They therefore, in 1639, explored the river and fixed upon a rock, which they called Endicott's Rock, near the outlet of Winnipiseogee Lake, as the northernmost part of the river, and a tree three miles to the northward of that rock as the place where they were entitled to begin to run their east and west line. This claim was somewhat modified, it is true, in 1678, to a claim of three miles north of the river, according to its course, and through its whole length. But why did it never occur to the Haverhill people who, in the early days, were very anxious to have a great township, similarly to claim that the Indian deed granted the inhabitants land extending to a point six miles northerly from the source of the Little River, from which to run an east and west line for a northern boundary? This would have very much enlarged the limits of the town. Probably, as has been suggested, it was always understood that the point of departure was the chief home of the Indians aforetime upon Little River.

This Indian deed was not recorded till April 29, 1671—when it was entered in the County records for Norfolk, to which Haverhill then belonged.

April 1, 1681, it was recorded at Ipswich in Essex County records. On the outside it is indorsed: "The purchase from the Indians by Haverhill men Recorded." In the previous year (1680) somebody was thoughtful enough to ensure a certain degree of authenticity in perpetual memory of the transaction. Nathaniel Saltonstall, the town clerk, copied it into the town records and appended the following testimony:

"The Rev. Teacher, of ye church and towne of Haverhill; Mr. John Ward, William White and Tho. Davis do testifie that Haverhill towneship, or lands then by ye Indians called Pentuckett, was purchased of ye Indians as is mentioned in ye deed in this paper contained, which is entered upon record and that we were then inhabitants at Haverhill and present with ye Indians, Passaqua and Saggahew, (who were ye apparent owners of ye land, and so accounted) did signe and confirm ye same: and that then, wee (with others now dead) did signe our name to ye deed, which land we have ever since enjoyed peaceably, without any Indian molestation from the grantors or their heirs. Taken upon February ye 4th, 1680, before Nath. Saltonstall, assist.

"Lieut. Brown and Lieut. Ladd both affirm upon oath that what is entered in the records for Haverhill as the deed of purchase from the Indians of Haverhill Township or lands, of which the deed above written is a true copy, was, and is, a true copy, extract or transcript of the original deed given by the Indians. Taken upon oath February the 4th, 1680, before me, Nath. Saltonstall, assist."

The Indian deed was long in the possession of the descendants of William White, but was deposited with the town records twenty years ago.

Of John Ward, the first witness to the Indian deed, much has already been said.

Robert Clement came from England early in 1642, landing at Salisbury, and probably soon establishing himself at Haverhill, with his wife and four children,—John, Lydia, Robert and Sarah. Another son (Job) had preceded him. His youngest daughter, Mary, remained at Coventry, in Warwickshire, till about 1652, when she joined her family here, and soon married John Osgood, of Andover.

Robert Clement was the first deputy to the General Court (1645–1654), when he was succeeded by John Clement. He was also associate judge, commissioner to administer the oath of fidelity to the inhabitants, to set off public lands, etc. He was evidently regarded as an upright and able man. He died in 1658, on the spot where he first settled, aged about sixty-eight. He then owned the first grist-mill built in the town, which was appraised at thirty pounds. Tristram Coffyn and William White inventoried his property at about £450.

His son, Robert, was the first cooper in Haverhill. He married Elizabeth Fane in 1652, by whom he had eleven children. He also held town offices, was a large land-holder, and lived near the location of the Exchange Building, on Water Street.

Job Clement was a tanner, and married Margaret Dummer,—the first marriage in the town.

John Clement was a farmer. He married Sarah Osgood.

This family were for a long time prominent in town and county. Several generations have lived upon the estate in the North Parish, still owned by descendants of Robert Clement, one of whom is city physician in 1887.

Tristram Coffyn was born in 1609, in Brixam parish, Devonshire, in England. He came in 1642, in the same ship with Robert Clement, near whom he settled. He brought with him his mother (who died in Boston), two sisters, his wife and five children. Tradition has it that he was the first person who plowed land in Haverhill. He did not remain very long here, but removed to Newbury, where he was licensed to keep an ordinary and also to keep a ferry over the Merrimac. He is said subsequently to have removed to Salisbury and thence to Nantucket, where, and indeed, throughout the United States, his descendants are very numerous.

Hugh Sherratt, as we have seen, came from Ipswich in 1641, with John Ward. He first had land assigned to him in the Pond plain, which he relinquished, and

in 1650 he was granted a house-lot "over the little river," it is supposed on the westerly side of what is now Washington Square. He was always unfortunate in his pecuniary affairs. In 1662 he was licensed to keep an ordinary and to "sell strong water and wine at retail." Our ancestors generally called distilled spirits "strong waters." We may judge that Sherratt was accounted a sober and discreet person, for our ancestors wisely intrusted that dangerous traffic only to persons of approved character. But he was still unfortunate. In 1677, being then in his ninety-ninth year he had lost the remnant of his property and sought relief from the town, which agreed with Peter Brewer to keep him for five shillings a week, one half to be paid in breadstuff and the other in meat. The following is worth reprinting to show how poor the towns-people were after it had been settled nearly forty years. Upon "a motion to know who would lend corn or meat to the town for the support of Hugh Sherratt, and they to be paid by the next town-rates, several engaged as followeth: Robert Emerson, bacon; Joseph Emerson, beef, 6 lbs.; Daniel Ela, beef, 12 lbs.; Samuel Gile, beef, 6 lbs.; Henry Kingsbury, Indian, 1; John Page, Jr., Ind., and meat 2 lbs.; Thomas Eaton, 18 lbs. meat or corn; Robert Ford, Jr., ½ Ind.; Bartholomew Heath, pork, 4 lbs.; Thomas Davis, pork, 4 lbs., butter, 1 lb.; Michael Emerson, pork, 4 lbs.; Thomas Whittier, turnips, 1; Robert Ayer, pork, 6 lbs.; Daniel Hendrick, meat, 2 lbs.; Peter Ayer, 3 lbs. meat or corn; Thomas Ayer, Jr., 1 lb. meat.

Poor old Sherratt died September 5, 1678, aged one hundred years, enjoying the melancholy distinction of being the first centenarian in the town. It is to be hoped his old fellow-traveller, minister Ward, accorded him the customary honor of a sermon with appropriate exercises, on his hundredth birthday.

William White was born in 1610 (it is said in Norfolk County, England), and came to New England in 1635, going first to Ipswich and, in the same year to Newbury, with Rev. Thomas Parker and his company. He owned a farm in Newbury as late as 1650, and after his death, his widow moved back to Ipswich, where she died. Mr. White settled on what is now Mill street, on land still owned by his descendants, who have been very numerous. He became a large landholder. He had one son, John, who died before him, leaving a son John, who married Lydia Gilman, of Exeter. They had six sons and six daughters, whose progeny has been "exceedingly numerous." In that generation there were three marriages with the Phillips family, of Andover. Some of the descendants of John and Lydia White have been among the wealthiest, as well as the most enterprising and influential townsmen.

William White died September 28, 1690. He was a steady citizen and a zealous church member. His property was inventoried at five hundred and eight pounds, ten shillings and he bequeathed the odd ten shillings, by will, to "Mr. Ward, my teacher in Haverhill."

Thomas Davis, whose mark is affixed to the deed, was a sawyer, from Marlborough, England, and married before emigrating. He is supposed to have been a brother of James Davis, one of the first company of settlers. He came to Newbury in 1641, and to Haverhill early in the spring of 1642. As early as 1720 there were nineteen families of that name in Haverhill.

CHAPTER CLII.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

Building of the Town.

THE colony was divided into four counties, May 10, 1643. They were Essex, Middlesex, Suffolk and Norfolk. To Norfolk were assigned the towns of Haverhill, Salisbury, Hampton, Exeter, Dover and Strawberry Bank (Portsmouth). The courts were holden alternately at Salisbury and Hampton. There was probably no reason why the so-called incorporation of the town should not have taken place at once. But it probably chanced that the settlers did not want anything from the General Court immediately. They were all busy in breaking up their lands and making their houses. Nobody was anxious to go as a deputy, and, in fact, none was sent till several years after.

Haverhill remained in Norfolk county until New Hampshire was separated from Massachusetts, in 1680, when Haverhill and Salisbury were assigned to Essex county, and Norfolk county ceased to exist. The present county of Norfolk was incorporated in 1793.

Mirick says, "the first lawful town meeting was holden this year (1643)." But, doubtless, meetings had been held before for the transaction of business, and business certainly had been transacted. Now there was, perhaps, a little time to take breath, and it seemed proper that affairs should be conducted with a little more formality. So a clerk was chosen, a record book provided, and minutes of the doings were made. The General Court had passed a law, also, requiring a record of births, marriages and deaths to be regularly kept in each town.

Richard Littlehale was chosen "town recorder" and "clerk of the writs,"—a court established in towns to try "small causes," where the amount at issue did not exceed forty shillings. By an act passed in 1638, the General Court was, from time to time, to appoint in each town in which there should be no resident magistrate, three persons as commissioners of small causes, two of them to constitute a quorum. The General Court appointed annually, in each town, a clerk of the writs, who was authorized to grant

attachments and summonses, take replevin bonds, and issue summonses for witnesses. Single magistrates and commissioners of small causes, or town courts, were invested with substantially the same powers as a justice of the peace. The selection of Richard Littlehale as clerk of the writs had probably no other effect than to designate him as a suitable person to receive the appointment from the General Court. It was, in all likelihood, the custom to appoint the town clerk also as such officer.

The date of the first meeting recorded is November 6, 1643, and the first vote passed was to prevent unnecessary destruction of timber.—"Voted, that no man shall fall or cause to be fallen any timber upon the common but what he shall make use of within nine months next after it is fallen, or otherwise it is and shall be forfeited." At the same meeting they passed a vote of great importance.—"That there shall be three hundred acres laid out for house lots, and no more; and that he that was worth two hundred pounds should have twenty acres to his house-lot, and none to exceed that number; and so every one under that sum to have acres proportionable for his house-lot, together with meadow and common and planting-ground, proportionably." This land was called an "accommodation grant," and this vote was the foundation of the land system of the town—the key to the manner in which the great tract of land acquired under the deed from the Indians was ultimately all parcelled out among their white assigns and successors. As has been intimated, neither Passaquo nor Saggahew nor any other Indian ever disputed the validity of the Indian deed; and there appears, too, absolutely no room for any sentimental regret or scruple on their behalf.

At a town-meeting holden the 6th of the following February, it was voted "that all landholders shall pay all publique rates, according to their number of acres that they hold to their house-lots; and if any man shall buy one acre of meadow, one acre and a half of planting ground, or one acre of commonage to his house-lot, he shall pay proportionably for every acre of commonage with the house-lot." The theory of ownership and distribution of lands was apparently the following:—

The townsmen of 1643 had, by foresight, energy and influence, obtained leave of the General Court to begin a plantation in a most desirable location, They had fairly purchased of the Indians a very large tract of territory. They held it legally and equitably, subject to the demands of the general government for the common weal, and the adjustment of bounds between them and their neighbors by competent authority. It was their property. They were the proprietors. They could divide it at such times and in such proportions as they saw fit. Such parts of it as were allotted to any particular one of them, he and his heirs and assigns would thereafter own in severalty. In other words, the persons then here were "ye inhabitants of Pentuckett," to whom the Indians had sold. They had not bought for the benefit of all the persons who might flock to Pentuckett to profit by the advantageous grant they had obtained. If they chose, however, they could admit any person to their association and a participation in its privileges. And it must be said, that the logic of the early settlers seems substantially to have prevailed. There came a time when their heirs and assigns assumed to be owners of all the lands remaining undivided, and, although fiercely opposed, maintained their claim with ultimate success. They held "proprietors" meetings, had their clerk and moderator, kept records, made grants, carried on successful litigation, and had their own way. Then the organization quietly died out.

The allotments of 1643 were evidently based upon notions like the following. The settlers were few in number, they were in the wilderness. They had no immediate apprehension from the Indians, as has been seen. But they could not forget the terrors of the Pequot war, then recent. Their first necessity was to remain together, for mutual convenience, succor and support. This was probably also their first impulse and instinct. Thus only could they all enjoy the ministrations of the word from their teacher, Mr. Ward. Their "house lotts," therefore, must be near each other, in a compact body. And the most natural place for the village, was, of course, the bank of the river. There they had landed. They had doubtless brought their scanty household goods up the stream in such a "great pinnace" as Giles Firmin had written Governor Winthrop about. By the river must be at first their infrequent communication with the great world of the older settlements.

Three hundred acres were accordingly laid off for the home lots, along and back from the river bank. But the immediate margin of the river was reserved for the present. The houses faced the river. The highway ran in front of them. The nearest body of fresh water was the pond, which soon became known as Ayer's, afterward Plug, pond. Its outlet was a brook which ran southwardly to the river, entering it at a point where was the landing and where the little hamlet began to be. The first grist-mill was undoubtedly on that stream, and it was then and always after known as "Mill Brook," till it ceased to be. Up to 1860 and later, it continued to be used for the same purpose.

The mill brook came to be the centre of the little village. The land about the lower course of the brook was reserved for public uses. It came to be known as the "Mill Lot."

When lands were laid out afterwards, the Mill Lot had its share in the apportionment. The Mill Lot was the ground now occupied by Linnwood and Pentucket cemetery and the tract between Pentucket cemetery and Mill Street, which was granted out of the original Mill Lot. The houses grew up about the Mill Lot; the settlers worshipped in private

houses, doubtless, in bad weather, but in pleasant, they met under the branches of a great tree which stood, probably, upon the Mill Lot. The dead were buried there in all probability, almost or quite from the very beginning.

The first settlement was, therefore, on the lower part of the present Water Street. That, in fact, was the town for nearly two hundred years. Fortunately, a tract was reserved for public uses, substantially if not formally, from the site of what is now Haverhill Bridge, to the site of what is now Winter Street Bridge, over Little River. Thus they had a public reservation, and an irregular row of scattered houses on Water Street. The sixteen acres allotted Mr. Ward for a home lot in 1642 were below the Mill Lot.

February 27, 1643, it was "voted that Job Clements shall have a parcel of ground, not exceeding one quarter of an acre at the Mill Brooke, being bounded forth by the Free-men to sett him up a tann-house and tann-fatts upon, to him and his heirs forever," It has been conjectured that a corn-mill was already built there. A tannery, like the corn-mill, always stood there afterwards. Job Clements was the first tanner in the town, and his tannery was near the mouth of the brook.

It had been thought prudent that only three hundred acres should be appropriated, in the first instance, to house lots, of which no man was to have more than twenty acres, nor any man to have so much unless he was worth two hundred pounds. Two hundred pounds estate, then, receiving twenty acres, those of less estate were to receive proportionately. The gardens, if any, were doubtless expected to be at the home lots. But the best land may not have been at the house lots and though there might be gardens cultivated by the women, and by men in leisure hours, the great stress and labor of the little community was to be directed to agriculture and cattle raising. The pioneers probably brought some cattle with them, at all events there were some here, which speedily multiplied, after their kind. There must, therefore, be planting ground and pasture. Where should these be laid out to best advantage?

It has been said that the Indians in some localities, used to burn the grass in the autumn that the deer might not hide in it from the hunter in the spring. The trees in such spots, were originally scanty or killed by the Indian fires. There the grass grew lush and strong, a treasure much prized by the pioneers. They cut and stacked it in the proper season, hauling it home mostly in the winter when the snow lay deep on the ground. These were the "meadows." They lay along what was afterwards known as East Meadow River in the East Parish; the "Pond Meadow," in the region of Lake Kenoza; "Hawkes Meadow," in the West Parish; "Creek Meadow"; the Spicket or "Spiggott" meadows in what are now Methuen and Salem, N. H., and in other parts of the town.

The early planting grounds were in the "Great Plain" or "The Plain," below the village, and up the "Great River," the Merrimack.

For pasturage was taken the land of inferior quality, and partly covered with trees and bushes. This was commonage. Then there were lands densely covered with timber. That its value was appreciated from the first can be understood from the vote adopted November, 1643, and many subsequent of similar character. Doubtless the destruction of timber was nevertheless, great and wanton.

There was land enough and for all; the great difficulty was in its distribution. No man had a farm in the sense in which it is now understood. He had a house and garden in one place, planting-grounds for culture elsewhere, meadows in still other spots, and commonage everywhere. To illustrate the way in which the land was first distributed, we will take the example selected by Chase in his History of Haverhill, a copy from the town records:

"1659, Daniel Ladd's accommodations. Six acres of accommodations. Four acres to his house lot, more or less; Robert Clements' bounding on the east, and Henry Savage on the west. Five acres in the plain: William White on the east and John Williams on the north; nine acres up the Great River, Thomas Ayers on the east and George Browne on the west. Four acres of meadow in the east meadow, more or less: Joseph Peasly on the south and George Browne on the north; one acre and a half of meadow in the pond meadow: James Davis, Sen. on the south and Robert Clement, Jun., on the north. One acre of meadow at Hawkes meadow: John Davis on the south and Thomas Whittier on the north."

"Daniel Ladd's 2d division containing 27 acres of upland, be it more or less; with sixteen acres of ox-common and a half, bounded by George Corley and John Hutchins on the west; by a black oak, a white oak, a red oak and a walnut on the south; by a walnut and a white oak on the east; by two white oaks and an ash on the north. Three acres of meadow lying on Spicket River, bounded by Thomas Davis on the south and Robert Clements on the north, and one spot of meadow at Primrose Swamp, and another spot at the east meadow, at the head of the meadow that was John Davis's adjoining to his own. For the land that was taken off Daniel Ladd's 3d division, we added a piece on the north side of the highway, round the meadow that was Goodman Hale's bounded by the highway and Merries Creek. Third divisiou of meadow containing three acres, be it more or less, bounded by John Page on the south, a pine on the east, his own uplands on the west, and uplands on the north of the said meadow lying in Mistake Meadow."

"Daniel Ladd doubtless found farming quite a different thing from what most farmers of the present day find it. His house-lot was in the village; his planting ground in two places,—a part of it in 'the

plain' from one to two miles east of the village, and the other part 'up the great river,' at least as far on the west of the village, while his meadow lands were in seven lots and as many distinct meadows. East Meadows was in the easterly part of the town, three miles from his home-lot, while Spicket Meadow was at least eight miles in the opposite direction. Pond Meadow was two miles northeast; Hawkes' Meadow some three miles west; Primrose Swamp two miles northwest, and Mistake Meadow somewhere in the westerly part of the town."

Daniel Ladd had a home lot of four acres, "more or less." It would appear that he should have had six. As much as his house-lot fell short of "six acres of accommodations," was made up to him elsewhere in quantity or quality, it may be supposed. As a matter of fact, he had in all forty-one acres of upland or planting ground, "more or less:" twelve acres and a half of meadow, "a piece" and two "spots" of the same, sixteen acres and a half of ox-common—in all and of all kinds, seventy-four acres, with certain remnants thrown in.

Daniel Ladd was one of the twelve pioneers of 1640, had children and died in 1693.

As we have seen, lands were divided according to estate, except that no account was made of any estate over £200. After the assignment of land, taxes were levied at first according to the amount of land each man had. If he purchased meadow, planting-ground or commonage, he should pay proportionally. The right of purchase and sale seems to have been always recognized; but at least in the beginning, the town undertook to exercise some supervision over such transactions, probably to make sure as far as possible that unworthy and unsuitable persons were not admitted to their association. Thus at the meeting of April 16, 1649, "it was acknowledged by John Robinson that Daniel Ladd had bought six acres of accommodation of him which the town granted him, approved on by the Selectmen."

It was not till 1650 that the valuation of each man's property, under the vote of November 6, 1643, was entered in the town records. It is inserted here for the sake of convenience. It professes to give the names of those to whom land had previously been allotted. It is valuable as far as it goes, but there are some obvious omissions, and neither dates nor valuation should be taken as more than approximately correct.

1641. John Favor	....	1645. Christopher Hussie	....
1641. John Robinson	....	1645. Daniel Hendrick	£120
1642. John Ward	£80	1645. Henry Palmer	60
1642. Tristram Coffin	....	1645. George Corliss	....
1642. Hugh Sherratt	50	1646. Thomas Dale	....
1642. William White	50	1646. James Davis	200
1642. Thomas Davis	....	1646. John Ayer	160
1642. John Williams	80	1646. Daniel Lad	40
1643. Abraham Tyler	60	1646. Joseph Peaseley	....
1643. Richard Littledale	40	1646. John Davis	....
1644. Henry Savage	....	1646. Thomas Davis	100
1644. Job Clement	....	1646. Thomas Davis	100
1646. James Fisk	....	1649. Christopher Lawson	....
1646. William Butler	..	1649. Richard Omsby	£70
1646. Bartholomew Heath	£140	1649. Wm. Holdridge	....
1647. Samuel Gile	40	1650. Robert Ayer	40
1648. Thomas Linforth	....	1650. John Ayer, Jr	80
1648. John Eaton	80	1650. Thomas Ayer	....
1648. Thomas Whittier	80	1650. John Chenarie	....
1649. George Goldwin	....	George Brown	80
1649. Goodman Moice and three sons	....	John Hoit	....
1649. Abraham Morrill	....	Goodman Hale	....

The following table contains the valuation of those to whom house-lots had been laid out at different times, but whose names do not appear in the records previous to 1650. Some of them it will be seen were among the first settlers:

Robert Clement, Sr	£50	Thomas Eaton	£40
John Clement	35	Edward Clarke	40
Matthias Button	60	Robert Swan	30
Steven Kent	200	John Haseltine	40
James Davis, Jr	60	John Johnson	90
Peter Ayer	60	John Carleton	90
Richard Singletary	60	Joseph Johnson	50
John Huckins	480	John Page, Jr	40

Names against which no amount is placed, are those of persons as to whom no record has been found of a house-lot being laid out to them. Some of them, no doubt, purchased the right of others to lands. But, on the other hand, the clerks were often negligent and did not realize how eagerly their work would be scanned in two or three hundred years. Sergeant Abraham Palmer was town clerk of Charlestown in 1638 and began to compile the "Book of Possessions," which was continued to 1802. The outcome was Wyman's "Genealogies and estates of Charlestown," the fruit of nearly forty years application to the subject, published in 1879, the year after the author's death. It is a work which is supposed to account for every inch of land upon that historic peninsula. The digression by which reference is made to it here, will be pardoned through the hope that this mention will fire some young antiquarians of Haverhill to emulation, who will not be discouraged by Mr. Wyman's premature decease. He certainly will not be if he is prepared to devote forty years to such a task! Such labors, indeed, appeal to the enthusiasm of but a small class of persons; but, they are none the less admirable and useful,

It would appear from a vote of October 29, 1646, that the sixteen acres laid out to Mr. Ward, in 1642, was a part of the three hundred intended for house-lots. "Voted by all the freeholders at a lawful town-meeting, that Mr. Ward, our teacher's land, shall be rate free for his ministry during his life, if he continue minister to the plantation, provided he use it himself, but if he sell, let or set any of it to hire, it shall pay rates proportionably with our own; and that forty pounds per annum shall be paid him by the remainder of the three hundred acres for his ministry."

Edward Johnson, the chief founder of Woburn, in his "Wonder Working Providence of Zion's Saviour

in New England," wrote: "The town of Haverhill was built much about this time, lying higher up than Salisbury upon the fair and large river of Merrimac; the people are wholly bent to improve their labor in tilling the earth and keeping of cattel, whose yearly increase encourages them to spend their days in these remote parts. The constant penetrating further into this wilderness hath caused the wild and uncouth woods to be filled with frequented ways, and the large rivers to be overlaid with bridges passable both for horse and foot; this town is of a large extent, supposed to be ten miles in length, there being an overweening desire in most men for meadow-land, which hath caused many towns to grasp more into their hands than they could afterwards possibly hold; the people are laborers in gaining the goods of this life, yet they are not unmindful also of the chief end of their coming hither; namely, to be made partakers of the blessed ordinances of Christ, that their souls might be refreshed by the continued income of his rich grace, to which end they gathered into a church-body and called to office the reverend Mr. Ward, son to the former named Mr. Ward, of Ipswich.

"With mind resolved, run out thy race at length,
Young Ward, begin, whereas thy father left,—
Left hath he not, but breathes for further strength;
Nor thou, nor he are yet of hope bereft.
Fruit of thy labor, thou shalt see so much,
The righteous shall hear of it and rejoice;
When Babel falls by Christ's almighty touch
All's folk shall praise him with a cheerful voice.
They prosper shall that Zion's building mend,
Then Ward, cease not with toyle the stones to lay,
For great is he thee to this work assigned,
Whose pleasure is, heaven's Crown shall be thy pay."

The pioneer of Woburn looked upon the pioneers of Haverhill as dwelling in the wilderness; yet, it cannot but excite a smile to read of the "frequented ways" and "large rivers overlaid with passable bridges." For many years the ways of Haverhill were nothing but paths, perhaps not always easy to trace, and the bridging of "Little River" taxed its utmost resources. But certainly Haverhill was a frontier town and an outpost of civilization for many years.

"To raising towns and churches new in wilderness they wander,
First Plymouth, and then Salem next, we placed far asunder;
Woburn, Wenham, Redding, built with little silver mettle—
Andover, Haverhill, Berris-Banks, their habitations settle."

Haverhill is named in Rev. John Eliot's "Description of New England," written in 1650.

Three years ago (1884) there was discovered in England the "Description of New England," written about 1660, by Samuel Maverick, the early settler of Noddle's Island or East Boston. He says: "Four leagues up this river (Merrimack) is Haverell, a pretty towne, and a few miles higher is the towne of Andover—both townes subsist by husbandry.

"Seaven miles to the southard of Hampton is Merrimack River, on the mouth of which, on the north side, is seated a large towne called Salisbury, and three miles above it a village called Old Salisbury, where there is a saw mill or two. The commodities the towne affords are corne, cattle, boards and pipe staves."

It did not take the settlers of New England very long to find out what they had accessible for foreign commerce. There was fish, there was lumber. Both commodities were in demand in the West Indies. Fish could be sold at a profit in the Catholic countries of Southern Europe. 1643 was a year of famine, but, wrote Winthrop, "the merchants had great success in the sale of their pipe-staves and fish. The 'Trial,' of Boston, made a good voyage, which encouraged the merchants and made wine, sugar and cotton very plentiful and cheap." Cotton came from Barbadoes. Molasses also came back from the West Indies and was early distilled into rum. Of that business, in after days, Haverhill had her share. The great statesman, Burke, said of New England rum: "They are more famous for the quantity and cheapness than for the excellency of their rum."

The primeval oaks began to be cut down and hewn into timber or ritted for staves, which were shipped to the West Indies and there made into pipes. Pipe-Stave Hill, in West Newbury, by its name, is a reminder that that and the other noble hills in this vicinity were once covered with great trees that fell before the pioneer's axe, and helped create the infant commerce of the Merrimack Valley. Hence, the unavailing care with which the early settlers of this town endeavored to protect the splendid forests they found here, consistent with a well regulated use for legitimate and open trade.

January 13, 1645, the town voted "that every inhabitant that will, may make upon the common, for every acre of house-lot which he hath, one hundred of pipe-staves and no more; provided he fall no timber for the same within two miles of the house-lots." In 1646, the same privilege was granted; but if any person felled more trees than his proportion or within the prescribed limits, he should pay five shillings, for the use of the town, for each offense. This vote would have given several persons the opportunity to prepare about two thousand staves in each of the years.

March 3, 1648, it was "voted that all men shall have liberty to fell or let stand any tree or trees which standeth at the end of his lot, next the street or great river; and if any man shall fell any such tree unto whom it doth not belong, he shall pay for every tree five shillings, to be paid unto him at the end of whose lot it did grow." This was on Water Street, where the house lots had been laid out. It is quite probable the pioneers did not expect to have any buildings on the water side. No grants of land were made on the south side of the highway for a long time.

In after years votes were frequently passed for the preservation of timber. Thus, in 1668, a fine of ten shillings was imposed upon any person who should

fell a white, red or black oak-tree, " within the town's limits, for staves, heading, logs for boards, or anything else for transportation, without leave from the Selectmen from year to year." But so much depredation continued by unauthorized persons, that a town-meeting was called a few years after, (January 1, 1674) expressly to consider the matter. It was voted unanimously that timber for staves, heading, ship-timber or frames of houses, should not be transported out of the town, or even "brought to water-side." At the ensuing March meeting a surveyor of boards and culler of staves were chosen for the first time. James Pecker was chosen to the first, and Robert Clement to the latter, office. These precautions doubtless had some effect, but only postponed the evil day. The American forests were doomed, and succeeding generations will expend much time and labor in attempts to replace them.

At the town-meeting of March 14, 1645, it was voted "that every inhabitant may keep for every acre that he hath to his house-lott, either an horse-beast, ox, or cow, with a foale or calfe, with a year old, a two year old and a three year old, until they shall be of the age of three years and a halfe, upon the commons appointed by the greater part of the freemen, and no more." This vote permitted the pasturage upon the public lands of one mature animal, with four young animals, for each acre of house-lot. Two or three persons, then, could pasture each a hundred creatures, if they desired. The commons was then all such land as had not been granted to any individual.

In 1645, there were, apparently, thirty-two landholders in the town; of these, twelve had come in 1640; two with Mr. Ward, in 1641; the Clements, Coffin, and Thomas Davis, in 1642, or earlier. The names of the others were Henry Savage, Daniel Hendrick, William Butler, John Ayer, Sr., John Ayer, Jr., Joseph Peaseley, George Corliss, Nathaniel Wier. James Fiske, Thomas Hale, James Davis, Jr., John Eaton, Bartholomew Heath and John Davis. All but Savage, Butler, the Ayers, Fisk and Eaton, were from Newbury.

John Ayer had three brothers who soon joined the settlement: Robert, Thomas and Peter. The latter settled in the northwesterly part of the town, afterwards the West Parish, where Ayer's Village perpetuates the name. The others settled in the vicinity of Plug (long called Ayers) Pond. In 1832, Captain John Ayer, 2d, was already of the sixth generation living on the same spot. The Ayers became so numerous that in 1701 it was supposed nearly one-third of the inhabitants of the town were of that family, and they have since scattered themselves over the entire Union. They were "a fearless, athletic race of men," mostly farmers.

George Corliss came from England to Newbury about 1639, being then about twenty-two years old. He was from County Devon. In 1645, he married at Haverhill, Joanna Davis, a native of Wales. This was the second marriage in the place. The name was then generally spelled Corle or Corley. He was enterprising, and, about 1647, built a log-house on his land, about three miles west of the village, on property now owned by Charles Corliss, his descendant in the seventh generation. It was put up on a sunny knoll, near a little brook. Traces of the cellar are still visible. Corliss acquired a large landed property. He owned, it is said, land on both sides of the old "Spicket Path" for a distance of more than three miles. His daughter was Mrs. Mary Neff, Hannah Dustin's nurse, and her companion in the famous captivity. George Corliss died October 19, 1686, having made his will the day before.

Joseph Peasley (afterwards Peaslee) also came from England to Newbury, where he was made a freeman in 1642. Many of his descendants, of the same name, still live in Haverhill and the adjoining towns. He lived in the eastern part of the town, where also resided his only son Joseph and his grandson, Colonel Nathaniel Peaslee, a merchant and large landholder, for many years very influential in town affairs. John G. Whittier is descended from Joseph Peasley, who was also an ancestor of the Badgers and Cogswells of Haverhill and New Hampshire. Among his descendants have been a chief justice of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts, a Governor of New Hampshire, representatives in Congress and many others prominent in public life.

Joseph Peasley was, in certain ways, a conspicuous man. The church records call him a "gifted brother," and he was reputed to have some skill in the practice of medicine, which his son Joseph inherited, whom Chase calls "a physician." The difficulty with Joseph Peasley was, that he had not been licensed either to preach or to practice medicine. He was very fond of exercising his gifts by way of exhortation, and undertook to minister to the needs of the people of Salisbury Newtown (Amesbury) as a lay-minister. This was not acceptable to the "Standing Order." The ministers were always jealous of their prerogatives and Peasley was a thorn in their side. He was regarded as a nuisance, although his most illustrious descendant speaks of him as a "brave confessor."

About 1654 Joseph Peaseley and Thomas Macy were arrested and fined for preaching, not being ordained ministers. The court forbade their exhorting any more. Lieutenant Robert Pike, of Salisbury, declared that "such persons as did act in making that law, did break their oath to the country, for it is against the liberty of the country, both civil and ecclesiastical." For this unguarded expression, he was disfranchised by the General Court and heavily fined. At the next May court a petition was presented from a large number of the inhabitants of Hampton, Salisbury, Haverhill and Andover, praying that Pike's sentence might be remitted. The

General Court was outraged that "so many persons should combine together to present such an unjust and unreasonable request," and appointed a committee to call the petitioners together "and require a reason of their very unjust request." At the next November court orders were issued to summon sixteen of the petitioners to give bonds in the sum of ten pounds each to appear and answer for their offense before the County Court. Says Chase, "None of the Haverhill signers were included in the order. *They had acknowledged their offence.*" Three years afterward Pike "humbly desired the court, his fine being paid, to release him from the other part of his sentence," which it was pleased to do. Chase naturally remarks, "The whole case is an instructive one." The following are the names of the Haverhill signers to the original petition in behalf of Pike:

"HAVERHILL.

"James Davis.	John Heth.	Robbert Eres.
Joseph Peasly.	Job Clements.	George Corlis.
Tristram Coffin.	Abraham Tyler.	Bartholomew Heth.
Peter Coffin.	John Williams.	Edw. Clarke.
John Davis.	John Williams.	James Davis, Jr.
John Eaton.	Thomas Davis.	Theophilus Sachwell
Thomas Eaton.	Joh : Eyeres.	Tho : Whittier.
Robert Clements.	James Fiske.	Tho : Dow.
Thomas Belfore.	Dan : Hendrick.	Joseph Davis.
John Webster.	Stephen Kent.	Peter Ayre.
George Brown.	Richard Singltary.	Samuel Gild.
Ephraim Davis.	Henry Palmer.	Robbert Swan."
Richard Littlehale.		

A few of these names have disappeared from the town, although descendants of all the signers may be here, bearing other names. It will be observed that some of the signers were among the most influential and substantial of the people, and probably all were respectable. The three brothers (presumably) Ayer, all spell their name differently, and neither spells it as is now habitually done. The "gifted" Peasley is himself one of the signers. He may have been no more inclined to martyrdom than his neighbors.

This list is as remarkable, for the names it does not, as for those it does contain. Some of the townsmen, whose names are absent, were devoted friends of the "Standing Order." It is probably not too much to say that the most influential one of all would not have signed the petition if he had been asked, Minister Ward. It would be too much to expect that a priest would go against the prestige of his own anointment. Besides, such proceedings were accounted disorderly. Massachusetts was hardly ready for exhorters when Whitefield came, nearly one hundred years later.

Joseph Peasely is accounted the first Quaker of Haverhill. His son, Joseph, was a Quaker, as were, at least, one branch of the Whittiers, descended from him. When the second meeting-house was accepted by the town—October 24, 1699—"Joseph Peaseley, &c., moving that the Town would allow him & others to meet at the new meeting-house for and in their way of worship; which is accounted to be for Quakers: it was read and refused to be voted upon." Very likely there was some contemptuous laughter as the significance of the motion came to be understood in the town-meeting: but it is pleasant to add that there is no trace of any active persecution or molestation of the Quakers in Haverhill.

It is possible the elder Peasely may have been what in more modern phrase would have been called a "come-outer," rather than a Quaker. He died in 1660-61. His son, born in Haverhill in 1646, died in 1723. It would seem as if the first Joseph must bear the odium of the following transaction, recorded by Mirick under the date of 1658:—"Joseph Peasly was fined 40*s.* by the Court, for beating Peter Brown, and 20*s.* for abusing Timothy Swan—all to be paid in 'corne.'" It would be interesting to know if the poetic phrasing of the transaction, given by Mirick, was the effusion of a Quaker poet of the lineage of Joseph Peasely.

Thomas Whittier came to Haverhill from Newbury about 1646, bringing a swarm of bees which had been given him by the will of Henry Rolfe, of that place, who called them his "best swarm."

Job Clement was made a freeman at Ipswich Court January 30, 1647, and sworn constable for Haverhill. He is regarded as the first. Richard Littlehale, who was town clerk, was also made sexton, though as yet there was no meeting-house. In 1646 the town voted that "Richard Littlehale should beat the drum on the Lord's Day morning and evening, and on lecture days, for which and also for writing public orders, he is to have 30 shillings; he is also to beat the drum for town meetings." This was of course to call the people together: but in 1652, the town voted "that Abraham Tyler shall blow his horn in the most convenient place, every Lord's day, about half an hour before the meeting begins, and also on lecture days, for which he is to have one peck of corn of every family for the year ensuing." In 1653, they reverted to the first practice and directed Edward Clark to beat the drum on the "Lord's days and lecture days." These incidents allured the early historians of Haverhill into a mild jocoseness.

In 1645, there were fourteen church members in Haverhill—eight males and six females—to whom Mr. Ward had ministered for several years, and they were anxious to be recognized as a church, and that he should be ordained as their pastor. The church members at Andover (a plantation a little younger) were in the same situation. A council of the neighboring churches had therefore been convened for September 19, 1644, to meet "at Rowley (the forementioned plantations being then but newly erected, were not capable to entertain them that were like to be gathered together on that occasion). But when they assembled most of those who were to join together in church fellowship at that time, refused to make the confession of their faith and repentance, because, as was said, they declared it openly before in other

churches, upon their admission into them. Whereupon the messengers of the churches not being satisfied, the assembly broke, before they had accomplished what they intended. But in October, 1645, messengers of churches met together again, on the same account, when such satisfaction was given, that Mr. John Ward was ordained pastor of the church in Haverhill, on the north side of the said Merrimack, and Mr. John Woodbridge was ordained pastor of the church at Andover, on the south side of the same." Haverhill was the twenty-third town settled in the colony and its church was reckoned the twenty-sixth.

It has been incidentally mentioned that Mr. Ward's salary was fixed at forty pounds, with immunity from taxes. October 29, 1646, at the same meeting, the first selectmen were chosen: they were Thomas Hale, Henry Palmer, Thomas Davis, James Davis and William White. In 1636, the General Court had enacted that "every particular township should have power over its own affairs, and to settle mulcts upon any offender, upon any public order, not exceeding twenty shillings, and liberty to choose prudential men, not exceeding seven, to order the affairs of the town." These officers were at first called "the seven men," then "towne's men," then "towne's men select," and finally by natural evolution "Selectmen." Said Rev. Richard Brown in his diary, "they were chosen from quarter to quarter by papers to discharge the business of the town, in taking in, or refusing any to come into town, as also to dispose of lands and lots, to make lawful orders, to impose fines on the breakers of orders, and also to levy and distrain them, and were fully empowered of themselves to do what the town had power for to do. The reason whereof was, the town judged it inconvenient and burdensome to be all called together on every occasion."

The General Court was thus early engaged in efforts to equalize taxation. At the November session of 1645 it adopted the following schedule for the towns: —"Cowes of four year ould and upward, £5; heifers and steers betwixt 3 and 4 year old, £4; heifers and steers betwixt 2 and 3 year ould, fifty shillings; and between 1 and 2 year old, 30s.; oxen four year old and upward, £6; horses and mares 4 year old and upward £7; 3 year ould £5; betwixt 2 and 3 year ould. £3; yearlins, £2; sheepe above a year ould, 20s.; asses above a year ould, £2."

Houses, lands and all other visible estate, real and personal, were to be valued according to what they were worth in the several places where they were, proportionate to the above price for cattle, etc. It will be observed that the General Court was only able to equalize the value of live stock by reckoning one beast as of as much worth as another, and then abandoned all other property in despair to the judgment of the town raters. Hay and corn growing were not to be rated. Towns were required to choose one of their freemen, who with the selectmen, should yearly make a true valuation of all ratable property in their several limits. This was the origin of assessors as town officers.

May, 1647, the records of the General Court declare:—"The town of Haverhill having chosen Robert Clements, Henry Palmer and Thomas Hale to end small causes they are alowed."

At the same Court John Osgood (Andover), and Thom: Hale were appointed "to lay out the way from Andiver to Haverell; and James Davis, Jun., and Antho. Staniell (doubtless of Exeter) from Haverhill to Excetter." A committee was also appointed to "view ye ryver, and make returne to ye Courte of ye necessity and charge of a bridge,"—at the next session. But it does not appear that any report was ever made about the matter. Chase thinks the river referred to was the Merrimack. This scarcely seems possible, as there was not yet a ferry. At the September Court (County), 1647, the town was presented for not having a ferry and at the next March Court it was "enjoined to provide a boat for the convenience of passengers" within a reasonable time, "under a penalty of 40s. and fees." The town afterwards appointed Thomas Hale to keep the ferry. The ferriage was to be "one penny for a passenger, two pence for cattel under two years old, and four pence for each as were over that age." The ferry was established at the place still known as the "old ferry-way," a little east of the foot of Kent Street. The people had always passed over the river at this place, but this was the first established ferry. The bridge was almost one hundred and fifty years off, and the ferry has been again resorted to within a few years while the bridge was being rebuilt.

"The overweening desire in most men after meadow land," of which Johnson wrote, early manifested itself here. May 10, 1643, the General Court granted the town "a parcel of meadow land about six score acres more or less, west of Haverhill about six miles." In 1637, the inhabitants petitioned the General Court for a tract of land to enlarge the town. The following is the very reasonable answer of the court, at its session of October 27: "In answer to the petition of Haverhill, ye Courte conceiving such vast grants to be greatly prejudicial to ye publick good and little if at all advantageous to particular townships, apprehending four miles square or such a proportion, will accomodate a sufficient tract of land; in such a case thinke meete a committee be chosen to view the place and returne their apprehensions to ye next General Courte, to which end, with the petitioners consent, they have nominated Mr. Dummer, (Newbury); Mr. Carlton, (Rowley); John Osgood, (Andover); and Ensign Howlet, (Ipswich); or any two of them, provided Ensign Howlet be one to do it." This was not at all what the petitioners wanted. They already claimed under the Indian deed a tract much larger than four miles square, and to that territory they always clung with

tenacity. They wanted more, not less; and when the General Court in appointing the committee which was doubtless a satisfactory one in its make up, announced a restrictive principle by which the committee should be guided, they had already enough of the committee and we hear no more about the affair. In this year the town was assigned the letter H. as a town mark for branding its cattle upon the near quarter.

The court also directed the inhabitants qualified to vote to meet and choose "some meet person for the place of Sergeant to exercise them" in military drill.

All able-bodied men were required to train in each town on Saturday by a law passed as early as 1631. By a law passed in 1640, the lads from ten to sixteen years of age were ordered to be "instructed upon ye usual training days, in ye exercise of arms, as small guns, halfe pikes, bowes and arrows, &c." Theoretically, the colony was always under martial law, Every town had its train band with officers, its rendezvous and organization in case of sudden attack; its watches and scouts. The settlers never attended town-meetings or religious worship without taking their arms with them. Nor was it regarded as prudent that a man should go to work in the field without carrying along his gun. At meeting, the men entered last and made their exit first, that they might be ready to protect the women and children in case of attack. Hence, by way of survival, the curious custom of rural New England, under which the women and children occupy the interior portion of the pews, and the men and the imitative big boys linger on the ontside of the edifice until the service is about to begin.

At the beginning of the settlements in New England, the Indians might easily have destroyed them, with less effort than they afterwards put forth unsuccessfully. As has been said, pestilence had depopulated the tracts at first occupied by the white men, and the colonists had opportunity to establish themselves. When the Indians at last went to war, it was already too late. Dissensions also among the Indians prevented the successful concentration of their forces. The swift and sudden rout and almost complete extermination of the Pequods in 1737, ensured peace for thirty-eight years. Yet the wise legislation of the colonies proceeded upon the theory that every settlement was in constant siege and every settler a man-at-arms, who could never safely lay his armor off. The advantage of this training was found when the terrible war broke out, known as King Philip's. When Haverhill began, there was a long period of tranquillity. There were only a few straggling Indians in the vicinity. John Eliot and others were commencing their good work among the savages. His converts, known as the praying Indians, were permitted to go to and fro among the settlements and were regarded as harmless. Under these circumstances, military discipline doubtless became somewhat lax and the people restive under its restraints. But it was all that saved them when, later, the day of trial came.

Meantime, the little hamlet was growing in tranquillity. Henry Palmer and others had taken grants of land in the plain north of Pond Meadow. A house or two had been built near the spot where Stevens' Mills stand. It was felt that the time had come to build a meeting-house; and at the March meeting, 1648, it was "voted that the meeting-house shall stand on the lower Knowle at the lower end of the Mill Lot." It was put up that season and finished in the following autumn. It was twenty-six feet long, twenty feet wide, of one story, without galleries or cupola, facing the river, upon the little elevation midway between the north and south bounds of Pentucket Cemetery. Twenty-five years ago people were living who remembered its foundation stones. The settlement now had a public building, in which, according to the custom of the times, the town-meetings were held and its business transacted. When need arose, it was a fort as well. But it was a very simple structure, though doubtless well timbered. March 3, 1655, it was voted that "Thomas Davis shall have three pounds allowed him by the toune, for to ground-pin and daub it; provided that Thomas Davis provide the stones and clay for the under-pinning; the toune being at their own expense to bring ye clay into place for ye plastering of ye walls up to the beams." Lime mortar was not yet in general use; lime was manufactured from oyster and clam shells. Limestone was first discovered at Newbury, in 1697, where large quantities of lime were manufactured for a century after.

In 1659 population had so far increased that it was necessary to enlarge the meeting-house, and a committee was appointed for that purpose and to repair it, "and to finish it and make seats in it, and also to sell land for to pay the workmen, not exceeding twenty acres in the cow-common."

In the following year it was ordered that the land behind the meeting-house should be reserved for a burial-ground. It seems to be quite certain that burials had previously taken place there, this vote being only a formal dedication of the spot. At the same meeting, ten acres of meadow and two hundred acres of upland were granted for a parsonage to Mr. Ward and his successors.

In the beginning, there were probably no pews; but in 1665 it was voted that Mr. Ward with three others, "should plan and seat the inhabitants of Haverhill in the seats built in the meeting-house."

The pressure of new comers continued, and in 1666 it was voted "yt John Hutchins shall have libertie to build a gallery at ye westend of ye meeting-house and to take any of ye inhabitants of ye town to joyne with him, provided yt he give noteise to ye towne, whether he will or noe ye next training day, soe yt any of ye inhabitants of ye towne yt hath a minde to

joyne with him, may give in their names; and yt there is none but ye inhabitants of ye towne is to have any interest in ye said gallery." The last proviso seems a little inhospitable; but it will be observed that non-residents are not restricted from attending public worship, but only from acquiring proprietary interests at a time when the pressure for sittings was great.

The next year (1667) it was voted that the inhabitants should keep the places assigned them by the committee, under the penalty of two shillings, six pence, and the selectmen were instructed to enforce this rule against everybody but John Hutchins, who was apparently permitted to roam at will through the west gallery. That great work, however, may have been still incomplete, for at the annual meeting in 1673, "John Hutchins, having built galleries in the meeting-house, was allowed to sell seats or privileges in the same to any one."

It has been said the meeting and town-house was also designed as a fort. It contained a magazine of war material after 1672, when the selectmen were ordered "to provide, at the town's cost, a place in the meeting-house, according to law, to secure the town's stock of powder and other ammunition."

Early in 1675, when the whole colony began to shake with apprehension of Indian War, a town-meeting was called (February 19th) to consider what measures should be adopted. Fortifications had formerly been built about the great public edifice, but in the general feeling of security they had been suffered to fall into decay. Now it was voted that "the selectmen shall forthwith cause the fortifications (around the meeting-house) to be finished; to make port holes in the walls, to right up those places that are defective and likely to fall and to make a flanker at the east corner, that the work, in case of need, may be of use against the common enemy."

The meeting-house, however effective it might have proved as a fort, was insufficient in its accommodations for worship, and, in June, 1681, it was resolved to build a gallery for the women, who, in those days, generally sat apart from the men. Nothing seems to have been done in pursuance of this vote, for the record of the annual town-meeting in 1684 contains the following: "A complaint being made to the town for want of room in the meeting-house for women when they come to hear the word of God preached, and that care be speedily taken about the same; the town (by their act upon June 24, 1681, having taken care for such a gallery and appointed persons to take care thereof and to get it to be made at the town's cost) do refer this matter to the same committee, empowering them to get the same built, desiring them forthwith to proceed upon the work to have it finished, that no excuse of that kind be made by any persons that do or shall absent themselves from the worship of God."

In the summer of the same year (July 30th) a town-meeting was called to see about the seating of the inhabitants in the meeting-house, "alterations and divers deaths" having made some new arrangement necessary. The selectmen were made a committee for "the new seating or placing of persons in the seats in the meeting-house." It was voted that if any refused to occupy the seats assigned them by the selectmen, they should "forfeit a fine of twelve pence in corn" for each day's neglect or refusal; and, "to prevent any objection of others," another committee was chosen to seat the selectmen.

The building of a meeting-house, the conduct of public worship, the choice of a minister and the extent and manner of his support, attendance at "meeting" Sundays and lecture days, with the greater or less degree of comfort associated with it during the many long hours of compulsory waiting, constituted a great portion of the life of all the people in the early days of New England. Save for town-meeting and training days, it was practically their whole public life, and as all antiquarians know, the dispositions of seats in the meeting-house, depending largely upon social distinction, was a matter of vast importance, often creating heart-burning, which even the lapse of years could not wholly assuage.

When the meeting-house was built, the General Court thought it high time that the town was equipped with the ordinary municipal appliances of civilization—as it was then understood. In 1649 it was accordingly ordered to erect a watch-house, pound and stocks, immediately. Nothing is said in this order or in the town records about a whipping-post; probably the whipping-post came in with the stocks. The pound was erected on the public ground,—the "mill-lot,"—near the meeting-house, and probably the stocks were put up there too, according to the colony custom. The whipping-post came in Boston as early as 1639, and stood in front of the First Church. The stocks were built the same year by Edward Palmer, and when he sent in an extortionate bill for building them, the court ordered him to be set in them for an hour himself. Whipping was well thought of in those days. In 1645 the governors of Harvard College caused Henry Dunster, the first president, with his own revered hand, to whip in public, the sons of two eminent ministers, for a grave offense. Corporal punishment, in the vicinage of that ancient institution, is no longer administered by its officials, at any rate. The last stocks and whipping-post stood on the Haverhill Common, at the east end of the meeting-house, about ten rods north of the southern entrance of the present park, till near the close of the last century. The whipping-post formed a part of the stocks. It was about twelve to fifteen inches in diameter, and set in the ground at an angle of about forty-five degrees. The offender was secured upon the upper side of this post, and lashes were given by a "cat" of stout leather thongs. In 1860, Mrs. Stebbins, an old lady of eighty-two, distinctly remembered

seeing a man whipped, who broke into Mr. Duncan's store, about the year 1784. His loud outeries made a deep impression upon her mind. Moses Wingate had a reminiscence of a more cheerful character. He remembered the whipping, by Sheriff David Bradley, of an offender, who afterwards serenely offered to "take as many more for half a pint of rum."

In 1649, the town of Newbury endeavored to entice away Job Clement, the tanner, by an offer of a freehold, if he would carry on his trade there for four years, letting the shoemakers of that town "have the first proffer on the forsaking of his leather, making as good pay as others." He, however, remained in Haverhill.

Good settlers were always welcome, and skilled workmen were frequently offered a bonus to come. In 1650 the town granted John Hoitt, of Ipswich, three-fourths of an acre of land and the "clay pitts," on condition that he became an inhabitant. These clay pits were in the West Parish, near the land of George Corliss, and are still known by that name. The first colonists imported brick, and it was naturally an object to have brickmakers resident. Chase thinks the pits were dug, and perhaps worked, before Hoitt came, but that can only be a conjecture.

John Clement and Stephen Kent planted orchards about this time. The first is believed to have been a little north of Linwood Cemetery, probably under the shelter of the neighboring hills, and the second where Samuel W. Ayer formerly lived.

Two barns were built on the land afterwards known as the "Common," by Bartholomew Heath and Joseph Peasley. This indicates good progress in agriculture. In this year there were forty freemen in town, of whom nineteen had taken the oath of fidelity. The year previous the town had chosen Thomas Hale constable, not the first in the town, but probably the first chosen by the town. At this time, also, began the first of the many changes of land. January 7, 1649, we learn from the records, there had been complaint by some who had had land out in the plain (east of the village), that it was "not fit for improvement." Probably a portion of it, having now been cultivated for several years and being originally light, began to show signs of exhaustion. The town gave them liberty "to lay it down" and take up land in some other place. In 1650, Hugh Sherratt, Bartholomew Heath, James Fiske and John Chenarie, laid down their land in the plain, and had "it laid out over Little River, westward." But about this time Joseph Peasley had leave to lay down his land over Little River and to take up in the plain, and Samuel Gild also chose in the plain. After this, there were many such changes. Some of them were doubtless due to mere caprice; but, probably, the larger portion, to more substantial reasons. The settlement was regarded as a success, and began to assume an appearance of stability. Men began taking their families away from the village and building their houses elsewhere. When they had once fixed upon a spot for a permanent home it was discovered that land in so many localities, far separated, was a serious inconvenience. Changes, therefore, were made, tending to enable each man to bring his parcels nearer together. But it was many years before this could be accomplished and anything like symmetrical farms could be formed. It is no wonder the attention of the people was so much taken up at the town-meetings by frequent applications for leave to make exchanges and for approval of them. The mode of making grants in the beginning, caused so many inconveniences and perplexities, the real wonder is they did not all lose their heads together.

At the request of the town, the General Court appointed Henry Palmer, Thomas Davis and Job Clements to "end small causes," and also appointed and empowered Robert Clements to give the oath of fidelity. The town also petitioned the Court "for the graunt of an iland lying in the Rivur Merrimae agaynst some part of their towne, contayning about 20 or 30 acres." Their request was acceded to, "unless Mr. Ward or any other shall make any cleare title from this court within three years to the sayd iland."

The town directed that the name of every freeholder should be kept in the town's book, and that he should attend town-meetings, when lawfully warned; and having "lawful warning he is to come within half an hour after the meeting is begun, and continue till sunset if the meeting hold so long, under the penalty of half a bushel of Indian corn or the value of it." Three years before, John Ayer, Sr., and James Fiske had been fined "for not attending the town-meeting, in season." In 1659 it was ordered that if a town-meeting was publicly warned on a lecture day, it should be considered a sufficient notice. The lecture was at first weekly, afterwards monthly, and it was almost as obligatory to attend meeting on that day as on the Sabbath itself.

The great ox-Common had been laid out before 1650, and in 1651 it was ordered that it "shall be for the use of them who live upon the east side of the mill brook, and for as many as will join with them." "They that live upon the west side of the mill brook shall have liberty to have an ox-Common westward for them, and as many as will join with them, which common is to be laid out in a convenient place, as shall be judged meet by the major part of the town."

At a meeting January 1, 1651, it was agreed that those who had land in the plain or below it, "butting upon the great river, should have liberty to make use of the bank next to the river for a fence for the space of four years: and also such as have land over the little river, west, should have the same liberty so far as Thomas Hale's lot."

An instance of the supervision the town intended to exercise over new-comers is to be found in the

vote of that year: "agreed that James Pecker should be an inhabitant with us, and that he shall have a four-acre lot (house-lot) with accommodations proportionable to it, which lot is to be bought of Bartholomew Heath for eight pounds. James Pecker doth promise to come and be an inhabitant with us by June, 1653." He probably came accordingly, dying in Haverhill, in 1696. The only children of his recorded, were four daughters, but there were male citizens of the name here long after. James Pecker kept a tavern for many years, and, when he died in 1657, his widow succeeded him. About 1760 Matthew Soley had it for a little while, and then Jeremiah Pecker carried it on. Bartholomew Pecker, a native of Haverhill, was a good Revolutionary soldier, said at one time to have been a member of Washington's Life Guards. He loved New England rum too well. That he presented himself to Washington's notice on his visit to Haverhill in spite of vigorous opposition, that his old chief recognized him, saying: "Bart, is this you?" and gave him a gold piece, is apparently as authentic as any other incident of that memorable occasion. "Pecker Street" and "Pecker Hill," will always preserve the name of the graceless veteran whom his townsmen were ashamed of.

In this year George Brown and Daniel Hendrick were appointed to lay out the highway between Haverhill and Salisbury, and Theophilus Shatswell to join the men from Rowley, and lay out a road between that town and this. The last was not approved by the County Court at Ipswich till 1686.

Up to this time there had been no saw-mill, and the people were compelled either to hew all the boards and planks used for building or else to bring them from Newbury; in either case, the inconvenience was great. There was plenty of timber, plenty of water-power and an ardent desire for a saw-mill of their own. December 1, 1657, it was voted that a saw-mill should be "set up by Isaac Cousins and such others of this town as shall join with him: the town and they agreeing upon terms, viz: that they shall not make use of any timber within three miles of the meeting-house: *Item*—That all timbers without the compass of three miles from the meeting-house should be free for the use of the saw-mill: they paying the twelfth hundred to the use of the town in general. *Item*—That the town for their use shall have boards and planks at three shillings per hundred for such pay as is merchantable. The town also reserving to themselves a liberty to make use of what timber they stand in need of, though it be without the three mile compass from the meeting-house." December 15, 1651, "Granted by the major part of the inhabitants that Isaac Cousins shall have a sixth part of a saw-mill or mills: and that Mr. Clement (Robert), Job Clement, Stephen Kent, William White and Theophilus Shatswell shall join with him, together with any others that they shall agree with, provided that Mr. Coffin (Peter Coffin, of Exeter) have liberty to have a sixth part of it, if he come to be an inhabitant of this town. This mill is to be set up upon the river, called Thomas Hale's river" (Little River at Winter Street).

This grant was more explicit than that made two weeks before, naming all the parties recognized and the location. They were to set up the mill by April, 1653. They had liberty to set up a second mill by April, 1654—"If they set them not up by these times above mentioned, then this grant is to be disannulled. . . . The proprietors have power, if they see cause, to remove one or both these mills up or down the river."

December 16, 1651, "voted and granted by the inhabitants that there shall no saw-mill be set up while these forementioned saw-mills are going." At the same time a committee was chosen to lay out ground for the use of the saw-mill "for a Pen," to be "returned to the town when the saw-mills are done." A six acre house-lot, with all accommodations proportionable, "was granted to the above mentioned Isaac Cousins, provided he lived in town five years following his trade of a smith." Three hundred and six acres had now been laid out in house-lots, or accommodation grants.

Three days had thus been spent in adjusting the most important matter of a saw-mill. Cousins was a blacksmith, as we have seen, the first in the town. He did not, however, fulfill the conditions of his grant, and in 1653, it was transferred to John Webster, upon similiar terms. John Webster came from Newbury, and returned there after four years. His brother, Stephen, a tailor, removed from Newbury to Haverhill soon after, and is supposed to have been the ancestor of all the Websters of Haverhill and the many emigrants of that name.

A lot of land not exceeding four-score acres, was also granted to the proprietors of the saw-mill as long as they kept it in use. This lot was on the west side of Little River or Sawmill River, as it then began to be called.

In 1656 the town voted to cancel all these grants and privileges, if the present saw-mill or some other did not cut boards enough for the town by midsummer. In 1658 all former grants and privileges were declared forfeited, and Thomas Davis, one of the owners of the mill, John Hutchins and Daniel Hendricks were granted the privileges appertaining to the old mill if they put up a mill and supplied the town within twelve months. But no mill was built, and the next year the voters declared the privilege forfeited.

Notwithstanding all these difficulties Daniel Ladd and Theophilus Shatswell, in 1659, having received liberty from the town in consideration of five pounds a year, built the first saw-mill upon Spiggot (Spicket) River, now in Salem, N. H.

The old saw-mill at Little River was still a source of disquietude. The town had more than once de-

clared the privileges forfeited, but the mill owners seem to have paid little attention to such decrees.

In 1660 a committee was chosen to request the executors of Mr. John Clements to repair the mill or "desert the place." If they refused the committee were to "force them by law." Probably the mill was repaired, for in 1664 the owners of the saw-mill were allowed the use of one hundred acres to pasture their oxen, paying an annual rent of "100 boards."

In 1665 additional grist-mill accommodations were needed. "The corn-mill now in Haverhill is not sufficient to answer the town's end for to grind the town's corn," and a committee was chosen to confer with John Osgood and Andrew Greeley, its owners, "to know whether they will maintain a sufficient mill or mills," or to agree with others. Bartholomew Heath and Andrew Greeley agreed with the committee "to repair the mill that now is by September next, and if this mill proves insufficient to answer the town's end, then to build another by September following," and so to maintain sufficient corn-mills with skillful millers, good mill-stones, storeroom for bags, "with lock and key, & also we do engage not to grind for any other town or towns to the hindrance of any of the inhabitants of Haverhill." In consideration of all which the town agreed, November 4, 1665, that Heath and Greeley should have land "in the street on both sides of the brook at the end of Michael Emerson's lot, to set another mill on or any other place on the town's land." Also that the town would not give leave to any others to set up any mill upon the town's land.

When, in 1669, the bridge over Little or Sawmill River was out of repair, it was considered that "the present saw-mill owners were engaged to do it;" yet when Thomas Davis, in open meeting, said, "I will not," a committee was chosen to "compound the matter with Davis and to build a new bridge." The inhabitants were all called upon to contribute proportionally of their labor towards constructing it.

September 17, 1669, a special meeting was called about a corn-mill, "the town being wholly destitute of any. Andrew Greeley, in whose hands the mill was, being about to carry on a mill at the East Meadow River, upon the motion and desire of the town, did promise to take the frame down at the Little River & bring it up & raise it at the place where the former mill was (Mill Brook); many of the inhabitants at the same time promising to allow him freely some help towards the taking the frame down and raising it again."

But the trouble continued, and March 6, 1671, it was voted "that John Haseltine or any other man have liberty to build a mill to grind corn in the town of Haverhill, either upon the west river, called the saw-mill river, or upon east meadow river."

In 1675 the town voted to prosecute the owners of the saw-mill for not keeping their agreement. This came to nothing, and the fact probably was that more mills were needed.

In 1678 Richard Bartlett, of "Almsbury," by unanimous vote, was "granted the privilege to set a saw-mill in Haverhill, on the North Meadow River," on condition that he should pay the regular rates (taxes): "deliver at our meeting-house 1000 merchantable per year," should sell to the Haverhill people at three shillings per hundred, and secure the town from any damages recovered by present saw-mill owners on account of the new mill and damages to meadows.

Five years later it was voted to allow Joseph Kingsbury, Samuel Hutchins, Robert Swan, Jr., and Josiah Gage to build a saw-mill on Merries Creek below the bridge. Guided by past experience, the town expressly reserved the right to allow others a similar privilege on the same stream.

At the same meeting, 1683, it was proposed to Andrew Greeley to build another corn-mill, which he refused to do, "and declared before the town that he knew there was a necessity for the town to have another corn-mill, & that he was not at all against their having of one set up, provided it be set upon any other brook or stream." Whereupon Stephen Dalton "propounded for liberty to build a corn-mill," which request was granted.

In 1684 William Starlin was given leave to set up a corn-mill at Fishing River, with reservation of the right to allow any others to put up mills on the same stream. The town granted Starlin ten acres of land "for encouragement." Starlin, in 1697, deeded it to Thomas Dustin.

For years, negotiations were pending with different persons—Andrew Greeley, Nathaniel Whittier, Joseph Peasley and Peter Patie—about building a grist-mill at East Meadow River. It was finally erected, soon after 1696, at a place afterwards long known as Johnson's mill about one-fourth of a mile from the mouth of the stream, by Samuel Currier and Joseph Greeley, to whom the town allowed the use of ten acres of land.

In 1705, John Swan and Jonathan Emerson, were granted the privilege of setting up a grist-mill, on Little River. This is supposed to have been built midway between the mouth of the river and the Winter Street bridge.

At the next annual meeting, John White was allowed to build "a fulling mill on Mill brook, near his own dwelling-house." This was the first mill of that kind.

We hear very little more about saw and grist-mills. At last the land had rest. Probably natural competition took care of the whole matter in the end.

In 1651, it was voted "that all the meadows shall be laid out by the 12th of June next, to each man his proportion according to his house lot." It was also "ordered that Hugh Sherrat, Theophilus Satchwell, Bart Heath, James Fiske, and Daniel Ladd,

shall view the upland that is fit to plough, by the last of March or the tenth of April next, and that they bring in their intelligence to the town by that time." It was further ordered, "that all the undivided land after all the meadows and second division of plough land is laid out, shall remain to the same inhabitants the proprietors of the three hundred and six acres, to every one according to honest and true meaning, all commons remaining in general to them."

The last was a vote of great importance in the history of the town. It had been settled more than ten years, and the title from the Indians to the inhabitants of Haverhill had been made about ten years before. The town was fairly prosperous, and new settlers had come; more were likely to do so. The new comers would in a short time outnumber the pioneers. Now that a division of all the meadows and a second division of plough land was about to be made, the question evidently arose to whom will belong the large quantity of land (commons) that will still remain undivided. Shall it remain to such as have participated in previons divisions, namely,—the proprietors of the three hundred and six acres of house-lots, accommodation grants, or shall it be regarded as the estate of all the inhabitants, whoever they may be, now or hereafter; whether fairly or unfairly, the town by the above vote, expressly and clearly declared that the commons should "remain" and be the property of the then proprietors of the house-lots. In after years, when the population had much increased, such a vote could not have been carried. Its validity was indeed stontly contested and with a good deal of plausibility. There was much wrangling, a good deal of rough and tumble fighting and many law-suits. The "proprietors," as the lot holders and their successors came to be called, organized themselves, kept records and held their meetings for many years. They made many grants, but probably their expenses absorbed the proceeds. In other towns also, similar controversies raged for years, but the victory generally remained with the proprietors or commoners, as may be observed at Salisbury at the present time where the "Commoners" are asserting their title to the beach without dispute.

The second division of plough land was made June 7, 1652. The division commenced at the head of Pond Meadow, and extended north, east and west. The lot-layers received for their services two pence an acre or ten shillings each. Forty-one persons received a share in the division, each having "his proportion either in quality or quantity of his lot, according to the discretion of the lot-layers."

Following are the names of those who received a share in this division, or as the records have it, "The lots or draughts for the second division of plough land, with the number of each man's accommodation."

	Acres		Acres
1. John Davis	6	22. Daniel Hendrick	
2. James Fiske	4	23. Thomas Davis	8
3. Matthias Bulten	6	24. Richard Ormsbie	5
4. Bartholomew Heath		25. Robert Ayer	5
5. Abraham Tyler	4	26. Henry Savage	4
6. John Ayer, Sr	8	27. George Broune	10
7. Henry Palmer	9	28. William Holdridge	5
8. Edward Clarke	4	29. Mr. John Ward	8
9. Robert Clement	6	30. George Corlis	7
10. Hugh Sherratt	12	31. Theophilus Satchwell	6¼
11. John Woodin	4	32. John Williams	8
12. Thomas Perry	5	33. John Chemarie	4
13. Thomas Whittier	7½	34. James Pecker	4
14. Stephen Kent	22½	35. Thomas Ayers	9
15. Joseph Peaseley	12	36. Samuel Gild	10
16. John Ayer, Jr	8	37. Daniel Ladd	6
17. Thomas Linforth	6	38. James Davis, Jr	10
18. Richard Littlehale	4	39. Job Clement	6
19. Isaac Cousins	8½	40. John Clement	8
20. William White	7	41. James Davis, Sr	10
21. John Eaton	10		

In the second division of meadow land, made in 1653, there were forty-eight lots drawn. About the same time the island just below the village was divided into forty-five lots. The names and the bounds of each man's lot are given in the Commoner's Book of Records, but entered there under the date of 1727.

A third division of upland, or plowland, was also ordered to be laid out; this was situated west and north of West Meadow, in the West Parish.

Only three Estates equalled the valuation of two hundred pounds, and received, according to the vote of Nov. 6, 1643, a house lot of twenty acres, the limit allowed—those of James Davis, Steven Kent and John Hutchins. John Hutchins' valuation indeed, was four hundred and eighty pounds, but he got no more land for the excess over two hundred pounds.

In 1650, the General Court passed a law forbidding any person whose estate did not exceed two hundred pounds, to wear any gold or silver lace or buttons great boots, silk hoods, ribbons or scarfs, under a penalty of ten shillings. In 1653, the wife of John Hutchins was presented to the court for wearing a silk hood; "but upon testimony of her being brought up above the ordinary way was discharged." But the wife of Joseph Swett being also presented at the same time and for the same offense, was fined the ten shillings, not being qualified by estate for such vanities. In 1664, the General Court remitted to John Hutchins, late constable of Haverhill, a sum for corn collected for taxes and burned up while in his hands. Stephen Kent, notwithstauding his considerable property, was not always a satisfactory citizen. In 1652, he was fined in the County Court, at Hampton, ten pounds "for suffering five Indians to be druncke in his house and one of them wounded."

He petitioned the General Court for relief without avail, for it was ordered "that Stephen Kent within one month shall pay the said tenne pounds to the selectmen of Haverhill, who shall therewith satisfy for the cure of the Indian." He petitioned then to have the fine reduced, but without success. The fine was a heavy one, but the harboring and debauching

of the Indians was a serious offense, for which Kent, a few years later, would have suffered more than a pecuniary penalty. He doubtless has given his name to Kent Street, near the old ferry.

Matthias Button was a Dutchman who came to Salem with John Endicott in 1628. He was in Ipswich in 1639, and came to Haverhill about 1646. In 1662, William Simmons who had been the ferryman for five years previous, was voted "the overplus in the constable's hands of the country rate, to satisfy him for the curing of Matthias Button." This is the first mention of a doctor on the records, although as has been said, Joseph Peasely is reported to have practised medicine, probably among his neighbors. Button was an uneasy creature. He first lived in the village, then west, then east of it, and finally was living in a thatched house near the present residence of Mr. Thomas West, where he was burned out in 1671. In 1663, he had married Elizabeth Duston. His son, Daniel, as is supposed, was in Lothrop's Company—the Flower of Essex—and was killed at Bloody Brook by the Indians Sept. 18, 1675. Button gave to Rev. Thomas Cobbett, (minister at Ipswich about thirty years) some of the facts communicated by him to Increase Mather, concerning the early troubles with the Indians. Button died in 1672 very old.

About 1651, the road ever since known as Mill Street was laid out; and for more than a hundred years, it was known as the "Great Road" leading into the village.

In 1652, the town voted Mr. Ward, the "Teacher," a salary of fifty pounds; also, "that if any one or more shall be disenabled to pay his proportion, that then the rest of the inhabitants shall pay it for him or them to Mr. Ward."

In that year the General Court changed the time for elections in towns from November to March; and with the exception of a short period, the town meetings were held in March, so long as there were town meetings.

A prison, the second in the colony, was that year built at Ipswich. Haverhill donated four pounds seven shillings, to Harvard College. According to the custom of their Saxon ancestors, the flocks and herds were pastured together; and in 1652, James George was appointed town's herdsman; his pay was twelve shillings and six pence a week, in Indian corn and butter. "He was to keep y^e^ herd faithfully as a heard ought to be kept; if any be left (strayed) on the Sabbath when y^e^ town^s^ worship, they who keepe are to goe y^e^ next day, doing their best indeavore to find them." He was not permitted to turn his flock into the pasture on the Sabbath, until the "second beating of the drum"—when the people would be gone to meeting.

In 1654 died Thomas Dow, the first adult to die in the settlement.

The ox-common (south of Kenoza) was enlarged and the whole ordered to be fenced. "All those that will join in the fencing of it, shall have a proportion in it according to the fence they make and maintain, provided that none shall keep more than four oxen in it." Thirty-four persons helped to build the fence and were entitled to keep an equivalent of ninety-two oxen within it. Only oxen, steers and horses were to pasture there. There were other ox-commons, but none so large as this. Some were of only a few acres, for single individuals; others for a number. But this was the great ox-common.

There being no ferryman in 1655, the General Court ordered Robert Haseltine, of Bradford, to keep a ferry, charging "4*d.* a person, if they pay presently; and 6*d.* if bookt; and keepe entertainment for horse and man, for one yeare, unless the General Court take further orders." The year previously the General Court enacted that ministers should be respectably maintained in the several towns; in case of neglect the county courts were directed to assess a tax for that purpose. Notwithstanding the liberal vote of 1652 as to Mr. Ward's salary, there were some, as speedily as 1656, who thought it exorbitant. So great was the disturbance that the council of magistrates intervened August 14th, 1656. Difficulties also existed at Salisbury. The order recites the existence of differences in the two churches, that the council has hereto advised them to convene councils from the neighboring churches to which they have not inclined, and orders the churches in Boston, Cambridge and Ipswich, to send each of them respectively two messengers to meet at Haverhill, August 27th, at 8 o'clock A. M., and "at Salisbury the day after their issuing or rising from Haverill for ye ends above exprest." Mr. Robert Clements, of Haverhill, and Mr. Samuel Hall of Salisbury, "shall take care for the entertainment of the sayd councill & all persons concerned therein who shall be sattisfied by the Treasurer." One member of the council was that able but bigoted John Norton, who had been colleague at Ipswich with Nathaniel, John Ward's father, and who, in this very year, was called to the first church in Boston, whom the Quakers scornfully called "the chief priest."

There were other than pecuniary difficulties at Haverhill, as appears from the minutes of the council which, upon the second branch, Chase prints at length. There were knotty points of casuistry, which may be more briefly stated. Henry Palmer, a member of the church in Haverhill, having been by a public arbitration censured as a delinquent in point of defamation of Robert Swan, a member of the Rowley Church, was it the duty of the church of Haverhill "to take church notice thereof?" and the council held that it was. But, second, the church at Haverhill is not concluded as to its determination by "the censure of ye arbitratours, . . ." "Because their institution, meanes & ends are divers."

Third. Goodman Palmer did well in presenting the

case, and "there was too great appearance of mu h iniquity on Goodman Swain's part." Yet as "the witnesses are detected of such falsehood" as renders them incompetent to establish a matter before the church; therefore "Goodman Palmer was not without sin." The acknowledgment hereof is commended to Brother Palmer; "so we desire it may be accepted of the church, and that in such manner as his infirmity herein (too common unto ye best) being forgiven, all regular zeale against sin both in them and others may receive due encouragement."

This case does not require a positive decision whether or not Robert Hazleton gave testimony on oath or not. If it was so taken, it is of no consequence to the church, "Before which a matter is not to stand without two or three witnesses." There being then so much for the negative, and no positive testimony, save that of Thomas Aires, the church cannot receive it as a truth.

"Hence wee conceive the act of Thomas Aires, in charging and urging the prosecution of those Brethren in a church way, who said it was not taken, and that to the Hindrance of the celebration of ye Lord's Supper, then intended to be irregular and in the nature of it of much ill consequence."

The Council subsequently reported to the General Court that "through the blessing of God the differences were in a good measure composed, and their ministers settled amongst them." They decided that Mr. Ward should be paid fifty pounds per annum, in wheat, rye and Indian corn. They also specified how Mr. Ward's rate should be made and collected. Men were to be appointed yearly "to cut, make and bring home his hay and wood," who were to be paid out of his salary."

For these gracious determinations, the next Court directed the constable of Haverhill to levy by way of rate, on the inhabitants of Haverhill, the sum of £12, 19s. for the satisfaction of Mr. John Clements for the charges expended in Haverhill "about the Council."

These events do not seem to have prejudiced the people against Mr. Ward. At a meeting in 1660, ten acres of meadow and two hundred acres of upland were set apart as parsonage land for Mr. Ward and his successors, and when, in 1669, he made a complaint of want of wood, the town voted to add ten pounds to his salary (making it sixty), and that the Selectmen should annually expend it in procuring him cord-wood at six shillings per cord. This provided for about thirty cords, a liberal, but not extravagant allowance, for those days of great open fires.

It appears that at this time the first half of Mr. Ward's salary was paid by a "collection of estates" in August, and all other charges were paid by "a collection of estates in November or December, annually." Upon notice by the Selectmen, every man should bring in to them an account of his estate; if he refused or neglected to bring in an account, or brought in a false one, it was "in the power of the Selectmen to rate such persons by will, and doom as they please upon account of their defect."

Michael Emerson came into the town in 1656, and settled near the White house on Mill Street. He was offered a grant of land if he "would go back into the woods," which he did. He settled not far from the corner of Primrose and Winter Streets. The land south of Winter Street was part of the tract originally granted him, and Emerson Street preserves his name. He married Hannah Webster, and his eldest daughter, Hannah, marrying Thomas Duston, became, easily, the most famous woman Haverhill has produced. Capt. Nehemiah Emerson, a descendant of Michael, marched on the "Lexington Alarm," leaving his work behind him. He rose from a private to be captain, serving through the whole Revolutionary War, and visiting his home but once. There were also four of his brothers in that army. Chase is authority for the statement that General Washington specially commended Capt. Emerson to a well-known citizen of Haverhill, in later years.

It has been mentioned that William Simmons was ferryman from 1657 over the "Great River." The town directed that if he had only a canoe, he was to ferry single persons for two-pence, and cattle for four-pence each; but if he provided a suitable boat, he should have six-pence a head for cattle, two-pence for sheep and hogs, and three-pence for strangers.

William Simmons was the only new-comer who shared in the third division of meadow, laid out in 1658, at the rate of half an acre to an acre of accommodation, when forty-one persons drew lots.

At that meeting it was voted that if any person had no convenient road to his upland or meadow, upon complaint to the town, two men should be chosen to lay one out for him, whose charges should be defrayed by the town. So many of these roads were laid out that in after years committees had to be sent out to hunt some of them up.

The first deed, apparently, brought to record, was one from Thomas Sleeper and wife to William White, October 11, 1659.

In that year a fourth division of upland was laid out beyond Spiggot River (Spicket), now partly in Salem, N. H. It was to be bounded south by the Merrimac, north by Shatswell's pond, west by the town's bounds, and to run eastward until all the lots were drawn. There were forty-nine lots, of which all but three were drawn. They were a mile long, at the rate of twenty acres to one of accommodation land or house-lot.

The old settlers had begun to draw the lines and to fortify and prepare to defend their titles. In this year they voted that no man should be taken into town as an inhabitant or "town-dweller" without the consent of the town. Also, that none should vote in town affairs without the consent of the town, except as the law gave them the right.

John Clement was probably the first citizen of Haverhill who sailed for Europe. He was drowned on the outward voyage, in 1659, and his brother John was appointed administrator, who seems to have visited England and Ireland in the discharge of his duties.

Notwithstanding their best efforts, the inhabitants were still without a blacksmith in 1658, when Mr. Ward and nineteen others bought Joseph Jewett's house and land for twenty pounds, which they gave to John Johnson, before of Charlestown, provided he would live here seven years, following the trade of a blacksmith, and promising not to work for anybody who refused "to pay towards this purchase until they bring under the selectmen's hands that they will pay." Unlike his predecessors, John Johnson kept his agreement. The house was on the site of the present Exchange building, Water Street. Till 1853, the estate was occupied by the family of Bailey Bartlett, who was a lineal descendant of John Johnson. For two hundred years blacksmithing was carried on in the town almost or quite constantly by some of his descendants, near the spot of his original location.

John Heath, Thomas Lilford and Daniel Ella are names appended to the Johnson agreement, which we have not before met.

At the session of the General Court, in October, 1647, it had been enacted that every township numbering fifty householders should forthwith appoint some one to teach the children to read and write, "whose wages shall be paid either by ye parents or masters of such children, or by ye inhabitants in general, as ye major part of those that order ye prudentials of ye towne shall appoint."

When any town should increase to the number of one hundred householders, they should set up a Grammar School, where youth might be fitted for the university. In case of neglect by any town for a year to discharge this duty, it should pay five pound to the next school "till they shall perform this order."

In 1647 the town of Haverhill had not fifty householders. It was fourteen years before it provided a schoolmaster, and there were periods afterwards in which it obviously neglected its legal duty. As late as 1816 a distinguished native of the town wrote: "This town has never been remarkable for its liberal support of schools. . . No other provision has ever been made for schools than is required by law." That was seventy years ago, and it is believed much has since been done to remove that reproach, if it were then deserved.

The first instructor employed by the town was Thomas Nasse, a peripatetic schoolmaster, who, at different times, taught in Chebacco Parish of Ipswich (now Essex) and at Newbury, where he died, May 18, 1691. His salary was ten pounds from the town, and what he could obtain by private arrangement, from the parents or guardians of his pupils. He kept school in Haverhill from 1660 to 1673, and perhaps later. Previous to 1670 the school had been kept in some private house, but in that year order was taken for the building of a school-house "as near the meeting-house that now is as may be, which may be convenient for the keeping of a public school in & for the service of a watch-house, & for the entertainment of such persons on the sabbath days at noon as may desire to repair thither, & shall not repair between the forenoon & afternoon exercises to their own dwellings, which house is to be erected upon that which is now the town's common land or reserved for public use."

Voluntary contributions were expected for building the school-house, but if not sufficient, they were to be laid aside, and the whole charge paid by a public rate upon the inhabitants. William White, Peter Ayers and Nathaniel Saltonstall, all were put in charge of the business, which perhaps, did not look altogether promising, as Master Nasse's salary for 1668 was then in arrear, and was not paid till some time afterward.

In 1672 it was voted "that the Selectmen shall hire Thomas Nasse for a schoolmaster, to learn such as shall resort to him to read and write as formerly, who shall be the settled schoolmaster for the town until the town take further order, provided that they do not allow the said Thomas Nasse more than ten pounds by the year, he having the like liberty to agree with the parents or masters of those that come to him as formerly." Next year the salary was "taken off, and no more to be allowed or voted for." It was perhaps thought that the amount received from parents or masters was sufficient for his compensation. The schoolmaster, probably, did not find it such, and threw up the job; for the records of Ipswich Court, for March, 1687, contain the following: "The court having called the presentment of Haverhill for not having a schoolmaster, according to law, in their towne, & finding that there is some provision made for the present, for teaching children, they are released upon that presentment; but the court judging that what is now done and provided by them doth not answer the law, nor is convenient to be rested in, doe order that the town, before the next court at Ipswich, provide an able and meet schoolmaster, that may constantly attend that service, as is usual in such cases, and that the scoole be kept neare the centre of the town." The last proviso would indicate that here, as in many towns at that period, the school was made to meander about, for the convenience of the neighborhood or the master.

It may be conjectured that the town's compliance with the order of the court was merely perfunctory. For ten years the records were not burdened by any reference to a school.

November 9, 1685, a meeting was held "in order to supply, and the pointing a fit person to keep school

in this Town, and make it his only employ to instruct the children or young men, or any of the inhabitants of Haverhill, in reading and in writing, and in cyphering;" and the selectmen were given full power to provide such a person, and agree with him to keep school until the next annual meeting, provided they did not agree to give him, on the public account, more than four pounds in corn till that time. And the following agreement is recorded under the same date:

"We whose names are underwritten have agreed with Mr. James Chadwick to keep the school, to endeavor to teach such as shall resort to him, as they shall desire to read, or write, or cypher, or all of them, until the next annual meeting in February next, for which service of his he shall be paid by the town in general three pounds, besides what he shall have or agree with the scholars for, or their parents or masters, or for want of agreement the said Mr. Chadwick, in his demands not to exceed what usually is paid in other places for schooling, viz.: to have by the week for a Reader 00. 04, & for a writer 00. 06 (six pence).

"Dated November 9, 1685, by us. ROB'T. AYER. SAM. DAW. JOSI'H. GAGE. } *Selectmen.*

"And consented unto by the other 2.

"JNO. PAGE, JUN. SIM. WAINWRIGHT." } *Selectmen.*

The vote and the agreement closely followed the lines of the law of 1647. The vote also indicates that some of the adult inhabitants might possibly be expected to avail themselves of the schoolmaster's abilities.

At the next annual meeting, the selectmen were directed "to agree with Mr. Chadwick or any other person, to make it his employ to keep school in Haverhill for the year ensuing." In 1695, the selectmen were ordered to attend to the settling of "Schools of learning" in town, and to "settle a suitable schoolmaster according to law."

The "Schools of learning" were hardly those of Padua or Paris, and we may judge, from the proceedings of the year 1700, that the town was not inclined, even yet, to go any further in this direction than the law imperatively required. In that year, a building was ordered to be erected for watch-house, schoolhouse, and for any other use to which it might be appropriated. It was built on what is now Main Street, near the top of the hill, and faced the Merrimac (on the then commons).

June 3d, a grammar school was ordered to be established immediately, and Mr. Richard Saltonstall was appointed to procure a suitable instructor. In July, thirty pounds were raised to be appropriated for that purpose: and the selectmen were ordered "to write a letter to the scholar that Richard Saltonstall had treated with or some other meet person, to write him to come and be the schoolmaster for this town of Haverhill." The step was a bold one, but their courage failed them, for September 12, 1701, at a meeting called to see about a schoolmaster, when "The question being moved by some of the inhabitants whether the town is obliged by the Law to be provided with a Grammar schoolmaster—Yea or no; the Town answers in the negative and therefore do not proceed to do it, because they do not find they have the number of one hundred families or householders which the law mentions."

Among the town charges for 1701, appears the following item: "to the schoolmaster £6," which was ordered paid.

June 5, 1702, the selectmen being ordered to get a schoolmaster for this year "with all the speed they possibly can," engaged one Mr. Tufts and agreed to pay him thirty-four pounds for his services. One's wonder at this hitherto unexampled liberality is checked upon finding that the town had been once more presented for being destitute of a school, and, notwithstanding this spasmodic effort, was made to pay its fine.

July 21, 1703, a meeting was held to see about a schoolmaster, which was adjourned to August 18th, and then to September 15th, when, "After much discourse about getting a schoolmaster, the town, in consideration of their troubles with the Indians, resolved to do nothing in the premises." Other towns, also urged the same disability, and, in November, 1705, the General Court made an order, exempting all towns of less than two hundred families from keeping a grammar school for three years, on account of the general impoverishment caused by the Indian Wars.

Slight efforts were made to supply the lack of public grants by private enterprise. September 2, 1707, Thomas Ayer petitioned the commoners "for a small piece of land to set a house on near the meeting-house that so said Ayer's wife might be the better accommodated for the keeping of school to teach children to read." The selectmen were empowered to lay him out a piece for that purpose, to enjoy during her life-time. Alas! Ayer's wife, born Ruth Milford, with her youngest child, Ruth, was killed by the Indians, August 29, 1708. The disconsolate widower, marrying the widow Blasedell, they gave to their only child, in 1711, the name of the massacred mother and child.

Obadiah Ayer kept a school half the time in 1710 and 1711, for which the town paid him £15 each year. His did not rise, however, to the dignity of a grammar school, as he only taught "reading, writing and cyphering."

Obadiah Ayer, of Haverhill, graduated at Harvard in 1710.

Much is said, in these days, about the general disposition to neglect civic duty, especially as to municipal affairs. Our fathers took summary measures to check this tendency. We have seen two respectable citizens fined for not getting to town meeting in season. In 1650, it was voted that the name of every freeholder should be kept in the town's book, and he should attend town meeting when legally named: "and having lawful warning he is to come within half an hour after the meeting is begun and continue

until sunset if the meeting hold so long, under the penalty of halfe a bushel of Indian corn or the value of it."

It has been stated that in the beginning, it was voted that lands should be divided according to the estate possessed by each man, up to two hundred pounds, and that rates or taxes should be assessed according to the land allotted to each. There being only one or two persons who reached the maximum of estate, and only one, so far as appears whose property went beyond it, this was a sufficiently convenient and equitable way of making taxes. At first all were shareholders, partners. Then there began to come in persons without estate, of whom not much account was taken at first. But, as their number increased, the original settlers and partners finding that their township was popular and that new settlers were arriving fast enough so that there was no longer occasion to offer them inducements, came to the not unnatural conclusion that those who had ventured out into the wilderness and endured privations, ought to enjoy the fruit of their enterprise. In other words, they determined that to them, their heirs and successors alone, belonged not only the lands already divided, but the common lands still remaining. Notwithstanding great opposition, to be dealt with more at length in another place, they carried their point, and maintained their ground. But this condition of things, while it recognized them as owners of all the lands, left them as such liable also to bear in taxation all the burdens of the community. It was necessary to take another step. Accordingly, in 1657 it was voted that if any person moved into town who was not a freeholder, he should be taxed for the support of church and State, according to his "visible estate," or by estimation of the Selectmen.

In 1662, the great ox-common was divided into lots which were distributed to those entitled to pasture in it; and although smaller ox-commons continued to exist, every man had a right to have his share set off to him in severalty, and the tendency now was strongly toward individual ownership.

The following order, adopted by the town of Ipswich, March 15, 1660, shows very clearly that historically the general course of things in the colony was such as we have indicated for Haverhill. The pioneers in the day of small things offered inducements by the grant of lands to insure themselves useful citizens and good neighbors; when their towns became firmly established, they looked upon new-comers with jealousy, as seeking to obtain privileges they had not labored for, and determined to secure the residue of their common lands to themselves. "For as much as it is found by experience, that the common lands of this town are overburdened by the multiplying of dwelling-houses, contrary to the interest and meaning of the first inhabitants in their granting of house lots and other lands to such as came among them; to the end such inconveniences may be prevented for the future, it is ordered that no house, henceforth erected, shall have any right to the common lands of this town, nor any person, inhabiting such house, make use of any pasture timber or wood growing upon any of said common lands, on pretext of any right or title belonging to any such house hereafter built, without express leave of the town. It is further ordered, that the Seven men, in behalf of the town, petition the next General Court, for the confirmation of this order." In accordance with the petition thus outlined, and, undoubtedly in concurrence with the desires of the major and most wealthy and influential portion of Haverhill and other towns similarly situated, the General Court passed a law, May 30, 1660, that "no cottage or dwelling shall have commonage, except those now built, or which may be by consent of the commoners or towns."

The passage of this law caused the beginning of a practice to record the erection of dwelling-houses in the town books, as is shown by this extract from the Haverhill records:

"*Cottages:* Whereas, the law provides for the prevention of the great inconvenience and damage that otherways would accrue by those persons that have built houses or cottages upon the common or their own land, since 1660, that have not lawful right thereunto, to the great prejudice of the house proprietors. Therefore we whose names are hereunto subscribed, do judge it meet for the prevention as aforesaid, and do here set down the names of those that have built houses upon the Common of Haverhill, or their own land, since the year afore said.

Samuel Davis,	Thomas Whittier,	Stephen Webster,
James Davis, Jr.,	Abraham Whiticker,	James Peacker,
John Swaddock,	Samuel Coulby,	Daniel Ladd, Jr.,
Samuel Gilde, Sen.,	Samuell Currier,	Mathias Button,
Nathaniel Smith,	Benjamin Page,	Stephen Dow,
Will Neff,	John Page, Jr.,	John Eyer,
	Joshua Woodman.	

(Signed) George Browne, Daniel Lad, Jr, John Haseltine, Joseph Davis. Selectmen of Haverhill, in the year 1668"

It will be observed that the Selectmen do not undertake to decide whether any of these persons, or if any who, were entitled to a right of commonage. They simply record the fact that they had built houses since 1660, because the law of 1660 provided that no dwelling-house thereafter built should have commonage unless built by consent of the commoners or the town. Some of the builders, as we know, were already commoners, some, probably were not, and would not be entitled to commonage without special vote. But there was now a point of departure. Every builder, since 1660, must establish his right of commonage; it could not be presumed in his favor. From another point of view—the historical and to the genealogist—these lists are of great value, as showing who were residents of the town at the time and when they built their houses. This record is continued at subsequent dates:

"A list of more houses that are and fall under the law made in '69, prohibiting them from the privileges in common lands.

Joseph Davis,	Robert Ford,	John Kingsbury,
Daniel Ladd, Sen.,	Isaac Colbie,	Thomas Ayers,
	Joseph Johnson.	

"As attest, Henry Palmer, George Brown, James Pecker, Robert Swan, Steven Webster, Selectmen in 1669."

"A list of more houses built which fall under the law made 1660, which prohibits them from privileges in Common lands.

James Kingsbery,	Gilbert Wilford,	Philip Eastman,
Thomas Duston,	Math. Harriman,	Josiah Gage,
Dan Lad, Jr., 2d.	Rob Emerson,	Jno. Hartshorn,
Thomas Davis,	Joseph Peasly,	Tho. Hartshorn,
Peter Green,	Joseph Page,	Widdow Ayers,
Joseph Hutchins,	Josiah Heath,	James Sanders,
Samuel Hutchins,	Nicholas Browne,	Jno. Heath, Jr.,
Stephen Webster, 2d	Samuel Ladd,	Samuel Bilknap,
Thomas Eastman,	Nathan Singleterry,	Peter Brewer.

"This account was entered January 20th,'75, by the Selectmen William White, George Brown, Daniel Hendricks, Thomas Eatton, Selectmen in 1675."

"February the 1st, 1677. An account of more cottages erected since January, 25, '75.

Thomas Duston,	Rob Hastings,	James Saunders, 2d
John Robie,		Ezra Rolf.

"As Attest, Henry Palmer, Andrew Guile, George Brown."

"More cottages erected since February, 1st, '77.

Sam Ayers,	Thomas Duston, 2d,	John Whittier,
Joseph Kingsbery,	John Williams,	John Haseltine, Jr.
Amos Singletery,		Benj. Singletery.

"This account was entered January 13th, 1679, by order of Henry Palmer, George Browne, Daniel Hendricks, Robert Emerson, selectmen."

"More cottages erected, entered Feb. 27, 81.

"Nath. Haseltine, Jno. Johnson, Jun., Jno. Stockbridge, Saml. Dalton, John Clement."

Where the selectmen say these house-holders are prohibited from privileges in common lands, they simply mean *may be* prohibited. Thus, Daniel Ladd, Senior, Peasley and others, whoever has read the preceding pages can easily select as among those who had received "Accommodation Grants," and therefore were entitled to commonage; but the fact of erecting houses after 1660 put them upon proof to establish their title, if ever questioned.

Thomas Duston, mentioned twice in the above list, is Thomas, husband of the famous Hannah. He sold a house to Peter Green, above named, in 1676. He was married December, 1677, and Chase conjectures that the second house which he appears to have built, was erected in the summer of that year, and was the one in which he lived at the time his wife was taken prisoner in 1697.

The business of granting lands, of "laying down" lands granted, and "taking up" others, consumed so much time at the town-meeting that in 1663 it was voted there should be a general town-meeting holden on the first Tuesday in March annually, "for the granting and selling and exchanging of lands or commonages, if the town see cause, and therefore it is hereby ordered that all the other towns or other meetings whatever, after this day is ended, shall be and are hereby prohibited from acting upon those grants of lands or commonages." The first Tuesday in March continued to be the time for holding the annual meeting until 1675, when it was changed to the last Tuesday in February.

Before this time great trouble had been occasioned by the failure frequently to make record of land grants at the time when made—thus Samuel Gild's grant of 1663 was not entered until 1690. In 1664, this evil was rectified, and two years after it was ordered that all who claimed to own land in the town should bring in their title to the same, that it might be duly examined and approved. The word *farm* appears in the records for the first time in 1663, showing that matters were becoming settled. The next year the selectmen were authorized to sell land to pay the expense of building a pound, which was the first, notwithstanding the order of the court in 1649. It was of wood, and stood near the meeting-house.

In 1664, John Carleton succeeded Richard Littlehale as town recorder and Clerk of the writs, holding those offices till 1668, when he was succeeded by Nathaniel Saltonstall, who remained in office till 1700—thirty-two years. At the May session of the General Court, 1668, and in answer to a petition, Capt. Nathaniel Saltonstall was authorized to join persons in marriage—an office which our fathers preferred to have performed by the magistrate rather than by the clergy. Previous to 1664, there were thirty-seven marriages in the town.

In 1664, a list was prepared showing that there were sixty-four freemen in town headed by "Mr. Ward our preacher." That year a cow-common was laid out, extending from Little River to North Meadow, thence to East Meadow.

In 1665 a road was ordered laid out from "Holt's Rocks," just below the present Rocks Bridge to the Country Bridge, in the East Meadow. "Holt's Rocks" took their name from Nicholas Holt one of the first settlers of Newbury, after of Andover, who kept the first bridge near the Rocks. In 1667, a highway "down the valley to Holt's Rocks" was ordered. This year, 1665, Nathaniel Saltonstall was chosen captain of the militia company, and George Browne, ensign. The officers were young and doubtless infused new vigor into the military force. The flag was a ground field-green, with a red cross, "and a white field in ye angle according to ye ancient custom of our own English Nation, and the English plantations in America, and our own practice in our ships and other vessels, by order of ye Major General." October, 1669, the General Court ordered "that George Browne be left and James Parker ensigne to Haverhill military company, under the conduct of Nathaniel Saltonstall, Esq."

This year, November 17, there was a "thanksgiving for relief from drouth, and lengthening out the harvest." The highway from Haverhill Ferry to Topsfield was accepted at Ipswich Court.

In successive years, the duties of the selectmen were defined. By a vote of 1666, they should "have power to act in any prudential affairs according to the laws of the country, excepting in the disposing of lands." Two years later it was voted that one of the former selectmen should be re-elected each year; but the next year this rule was dispensed with, and, at the next annual meeting repealed. In that form it was probably found impracticable to determine which one should enjoy the honor and glory of office, not so much desired then as now. Thus, when Thomas

Whittier was chosen constable it was voted that he should be excused provided he presented some one to take his place whom the selectmen should declare satisfactory. In 1770, Henry Palmer, refusing to act as constable after being chosen, "was fined according to law." At this time the selectmen were directed "to provide a herdsman or herdsmen, and bulls for the use of the town." Those who lived without the compass of Pond River and the Great Plain fence, were to "pay 6*d.* a head for privileges of herdsmen and bull."

In 1669, the town set forth by vote the powers of the selectmen at length, and again in 1670. Substantially, they were as follows: 1. To order and appoint when Mr. Ward's salary should be paid, levy rates for same, and to take them by distress if not paid otherwise. 2. To observe all orders of the town, and collect all fines. 3. To pay all debts of the town by fines due or by rates in general. 4. To make all rates necessary to defray the town's debts. 5. To call town-meetings at discretion. 6. To see that all laws of the country were observed and kept. 7. To act in all prudential affairs of the town according to law. 8. To observe all orders of the town as near as they can.

In July, 1667, was laid out still another quantity of "accommodation" land. The following is a list of the names to whom it was allotted, and the number of acres to each:

	acres.		acres.
"Mr. Ward	26	Goodman Williams	6
James Davis, Sr. & Jr.	20	Job Clements	5
George Browne	14	Hugh Sherratt	8
John Eaton, Sr.	10	John Robinson	4
Henry Palmer	9	Goodman Butler	4
Robert Eyre	4	Henry Savage	4
Oldgood Eyre	8	Joseph Merrie	5
John Ayres	8	George Corley	5
Wm. White	5	Mill Lot	6
Goodman Peasley	12	James Pecker	2
Goodman Gnile	4	Richard Littlehale	4
Goodman Tiler	4	Mr. Coffin	10
Mr. Clements, John & Job	40	John Renington	4
Old Goldwine	8	Robert Swan	2
Goodman Heath	10	John Hitching's	6
Andrew Grealy	6	Daniel Ella	2
Goodman Noise	4	Joseph Johnson	2
Thos. Haile	20	John Davis	6
Thos. Davis	18	Job Clements	3
Goodman Ladd	6	Daniel Hendricks	3
		John Robinson	6

At the annual meeting of 1668, "John Johnson was chosen Moderator for the present meeting." This is the first time a moderator is mentioned in the records, though one was regularly chosen afterwards. Perhaps the new town clerk Nathaniel Saltonstall many have been more precise than his predecessors. Indeed, he seems to have been an excellent clerk, although he indulged himself in occasional comments upon the town proceedings, sometimes in Latin, what the historian Gibbon calls "the obscurity of a learned language." On one of these occasions, the town by vote directed the clerk's comment to be expunged from the record.

At the same meeting, a committee was chosen, to whom the inhabitants were to "make known by what title they lay any claim to any land in the town."

Several persons were fined for being absent from the town meeting.

It was ordered "that what papers should be brought to the Recorder to be entered in the town book of Records, it shall be in his power to record them, provided that Ensign Brown, James Davis, Jun., and Robert Clements, Jr., give their assent." The recorder was much annoyed by requests to record papers which should be recorded elsewhere or were not worth recording anywhere. Thus he prefaces the record of certain deeds with this note: "The copy of several deeds, which to satisfy the grantees, are entered, who they are told that it is no legal county record of Deeds."

Henry Kingsbery and John Renington are names first found in the records this year.

The town once passed a vote restricting ownership of seats in the meeting-house to inhabitants; but the following was much more hospitable in temper. The town, by a major vote, did make choice of Andrew Greeley, sen, to keep the ferry at Haverhill; provided that he agree and will carry over the inhabitants of the town and the inhabitants of the town of Merrimack (Bradford) over against us, for three pence an horse and a penny a man; and that he will carry all ministers over free that come upon visitation to us, and in particular Mr. Symes (of Bradford) and that, if the inhabitants of the town over against us do come over to meet with us on the sabbath days, they shall have the free use of the ferry boat or boats, for the occasion, without paying anything." Greeley was also to pay forty shillings to Mrs. Simons, the widow of the former ferryman.

The town meetings at that time often commenced as early as 7 A.M., and were never adjourned to a later hour than 8 A.M. Debate was abundant and notwithstanding the early hour of meeting, it frequently took three days to transact the business. Still they managed to convince each other at last; for it being the recorder's custom to give the names of those who "dissented" from any vote passed, very few are ordinarily found in the minority. About this time it was resolved that no vote passed after sunset should be valid.

It is recorded in 1671, "Robert Emerson, Ephraim Davis and John Heath, Jun., desiring to take the oath of fidelity to this colony, it was administered to them by N. Saltonstall, Commissioner." No one was allowed to vote for magistrates or deputies unless he had taken the freeman's oath, or "oath of fidelity." A man might be a freeholder and not a freeman. A freeman according to this understanding, was one who, had taken the freeman's oath, and a freeholder was one who either by grant, purchase or inheritance, had become entitled to a share in the common and

undivided lands of Haverhill. But it seems all the inhabitants were permitted to vote for town officers and to raise money. In 1631, it was enacted in the Massachusetts colony that only church members should be admitted freemen. As late as 1676, five-sixth of the men in the colony were not voters, because not church members.

In 1673, the clerk was directed to enter "in the book" all the previous orders and grants of the town, "which stand in loose papers and sheets." There has always been great difficulty in studying the early records of the town from this fact that many of them were written on such "loose papers" and were recorded without reference to their respective dates, while some were without date. Doubtless their strict chronology has not always been followed in the annals.

At Hampton Court in 1672, it was ordered that John Littlehale of Haverhill, who "liveth in an house by himself, contrary to a law of the country whereby hee is subject to much sin; and having had information of some of his accounts which are in no way to be allowed of but disproved and discountenanced," "doe forthwith, at farthest, within the time of six weeks next after the date hereof, remove himself from the said place and solitary life and settle himself in some orderly family in the said towne and bee subject to the orderly rules of family government in said family (unless hee remove out of the said towne within the time) and if he doe not perform this order as aforesaid, then this Courte doth order that the Selectmen doe forthwith order and place the said John to bee in some orderly family as aforesaid, which if he shall refuse to submit unto, then these are in his majestie's name to require the Constable of said town upon his knowledge of it or information, to apprehend the person of said John and carry him to the house of correction in Hampton, there to bee kept and sett to work untill he shall be freed by order of authority; and this order shall bee a discharge and security."

John, son of Richard Littlehale, the pioneer, was born at Haverhill in 1650, one of twelve children. Our fathers did not approve of bachelors, and, in many ways, imposed absurd penalties upon them by by-laws and in other ways—as, for instance, by compelling them in one town to kill an extra number of blackbirds and crows. It was their policy, of course, to increase the population of the wilderness. In the present instance, the father had twelve children, the son was like to have none. Besides, the solitary life tended to disorder, and in this case, the intimation is that Littlehale "was subject to sin" in fact as well as from situation. Nothing is known to his discredit, except what may be inferred from the order of the Court. He escaped the threatened penalties by entering "some orderly family;" but he had not been ordered to marry and did not do so for forty-four years, when, being sixty-six years old, he took a wife and had two children.

So much has been said of the duties of the selectmen that it should be added they were also "to have some one to sweep the meeting-house duly, decently and orderly." For all their services they were to receive annually fifty shillings, distributable amongst them, "to each man according to his services."

March 1674, John Keyzar of Salem, was granted a piece of land, with privileges on the common, etc., if he would come "and set up his trade of tanner." This he did and in 1682 the grant was confirmed to him and his heirs forever. In 1683, he was publicly admonished by the moderator of the town-meeting for keeping his tan-vats open by which cattle and swine had been killed; "and in special that mischief may not come unto children, which may occasion his own life to come upon triall." Two years after Keyzar asked leave to sell his land; but the town informed him "that they did and do expect the conditions therein mentioned to be attended, or else the said John may leave the same to the town, with the buildings and improvements by him made thereon, to the town for public use."

The town records this year for the first time state that meetings were called by the "writ of the selectmen, published and placed on file." The publication was by affixing a copy of the warrant to the door of the meeting-house, in which, of course, the meetings were held.

The Court empowered the selectmen, upon their petition, to "bind out young ones into sarvice"—provided their indentures met the approval of "worshipful Major Saltonstall."

From the records of the County Court in 1673, 1674 and 1675, have been extracted the minutes of sentences imposed upon residents of Haverhill: Nathaniel Emerson was "admonished for being in company with Peter Cross and others, at Jonas Gregory's, and drinking of stolen wine." "Robert Swan was fined 20*s.* for being drunk and cursing." "Michael Emerson was fined 5*s.* for his cruel and excessive beating of his daughter with a flayle swingel, and kicking of her." We may be sure no punishment would have been imposed upon a father for beating his child unless the correction had been "cruel and excessive." Parental authority was jealously upheld. This daughter was Elizabeth Emerson, who lived to incur the extreme penalty of the law for crime. "Two daughters of Hannah Bosworth were fined ten shillings each for wearing silk." Daniel Ela was fined ten shillings for profanity, and two shillings more for his "reviling speeches."

In 1675 Haverhill was rated twenty-fifth of the forty-nine towns of the colony. That year the time of holding the town meeting was changed to the last Tuesday in February.

At that meeting Michael Emerson was chosen to "view and seal all leather in the town." In 1677

Emerson "complained," probably because the duties were burdensome or disagreeable, and Andrew Greely was "joined with him."

The next year, Feb. 27, 1676, William Thompson asked to be "accepted a townsman, to dwell here and follow his trade of shoemaking," but the town refused to have him "by a clear and full vote." In 1677 Peter Patie, a married man whom the town had "hitherto accounted of as a journeyman shoemaker," "making a motion to the town to grant him a piece of land to settle upon," his motion according to law was rejected. The moderator also declared to him "that it was the duty of the Grand Jurymen to look after him."

Patie was probably an irresponsible person. In 1680 he was presented to the Court for being absent from his wife for several years, and in the following year he was presented for having another wife in Virginia. Nevertheless, Peter "stuck." November 8, 1682, Peter Patre married Sarah Gile and had eight children by her. This is supposed to be the same as Peter Patie. In 1694 he was chosen constable by a "plentiful, clear and legal paper vote." As late as 1710 he was the regular ferry-man at "Patie's Ferry."

Notwithstanding this cold welcome to shoemakers, others soon applied. At the annual meeting in 1679, "upon the request of Benjamin Webster and Samuel Parker, two young men and shoemakers, that the toune would give them libertie to live in this toune to follow the trade, having hired a house to that end; the toune by their vote doe grant their motion and accept of them so as to live in toune and follow the trade of shoemaking."

Daniel Ela, who in 1677 had been licensed to keep an ordinary for one year, but had been unable to avail himself of the privilege on account of the small-pox in his family, had liberty from the Court to sell "Wine, Beer, Cyder and provisions to horse and man, or travilers in Haverhill."

The town voted in 1679 to choose a committee to look after the accounts of the selectmen for the preceding year; also, that a committee should be chosen for that purpose every year thereafter.

From the records of the General Court for 1680, it appears that Haverhill, with twenty-one other towns, had failed to pay a subscription in aid of Harvard College–either that made as far back as 1652 or some other later. The Court ordered the selectmen of the delinquent towns to inquire into the affair and report, under a penalty of twenty pounds. Nothing more appearing about it, the long delayed subscription was probably paid.

Pastor Ward, having lost his wife March 24, 1680, probably gave intimation of his desire to be relieved in part from ministerial care. The record says: "At a town meeting Dec. 22, 1680, held after lecture, Nath'l. Saltonstall, Lieut. Broune, Tho. Whittier, Wm. White and Dan'l Ela were chosen a committee 'to look out for and agree with and obtain forthwith and procure upon the best terms they can get, some meet and able person to be a present help and assistant to Mr. Ward, our minister, now in his old age, in the work of the ministry in preaching.'"

From the beginning it had been the custom to have a weekly lecture,—in most towns on Thursday, but in Haverhill from an early date, on Friday. The services commenced about 11 A. M. About 1750 the weekly were superseded by monthly lectures.

The committee thus chosen were also instructed "to look out a place for a convenient situation for a minister," and "to agree with anyone upon purchase or exchange of land, or if they meet not with a bargain to their mind, then to set out such of the town's common land as they shall judge most convenient for a place for the ministry."

June 24, 1681, the committee reported that not finding any suitable place on purchase or exchange, John Haseltine, Senior had "given two acres to the town for the perpetual use of the ministry," and that they had laid out a piece adjoining it for the same purpose. Their doings were approved, and the land was granted for that purpose "forever." This land was situated north of the present Winter Street, and between Little River and the common. The gift was apparently the first private donation in this town for public uses.

The committee reported that they had not been able to get a new minister, whereupon another committee was chosen in their place, with instructions to do so, "they taking the advice of Mr. Ward, our present aged minister." Josiah Gage was agreed with, to build a house for the new minister.

All these movements came to nothing for the present. Josiah Gage did not build the house, and in 1682, a committee was chosen to find somebody else to do it. At a special meeting April 4th, a committee was appointed "to treat with Samuel Dalton or John Stockbridge for either of their houses which they have of late erected in town," for the use of the new minister. In this movement towards novelties, a new meeting-house began to be talked about. At the June meeting of the previous year, a proposition to take action was voted down, says the recorder, "by the additional and willful votes of many prohibited by law from voting." The gallery vote for women was probably a compromise between the parties. The subject again came up in March, 1682, but without result.

In June there was another meeting, "called at the request of Mr. Ward" "to see about a new minister." Ten pounds were raised to get one.

In July, the town let the "parsonage farm" to Daniel Bradley, for twenty-one years, Mr. Ward probably having given it up, on account of age and ill-health.

September 18th, there was still another meeting about a new minister. It was voted "to proffer Mr.

Jeremiah Cushing or some other meet person that may be agreed upon, £100 in corn or provisions, besides the £60 proffered for annual salary during Mr. Ward's life," to be raised as a town rate and paid "part money, part wheat, part rye and part Indian Corn, all good, dry, sweet, clean and merchantable." The committee previously chosen was continued "to carry on designs with Mr. Cushing, whom the town hath had some experience of." Three weeks later, it was voted to buy of Samuel Simons his house and nine acres of land for the use of the ministry, for which they agree to give him "forty acres near Fishing River, and £30 in wheat, rye and corn." They also voted to give Mr. Cushing, in addition to previous offers, "four cow-common rights" and "twenty cords of wood at his house annually."

In 1683, at the annual meeting, it was decided to send a messenger to get an answer from Mr. Cushing, unless he would "please to come and give us a visit, that we may receive answer from himself." It was voted to raise one-half of the hundred pounds offered him, immediately; also to buy "the house where Henry Palmer lived and died, for the use of the ministry forever." The price to be paid was twenty acres of land "towards Great Pond," said to be the first time that body of water is mentioned by name in the records. In June there was another meeting. It was called to consider Mr. Cushing's settlement, but all its time was engrossed about the proposition for a new meeting-house. All favored the new meeting-house, but there was an irreconcilable difference of opinion about its location. In favor of building a new meeting-house upon the old site were Sergeant John Johnson, Mr. John Ward, minister, Nathaniel Saltonstall, Lieutenant George Browne, William White, Thomas Whittier, John Whittier, Robert Emerson, Robert Clement, Jotham Hendrick, James Davis, Sr., Daniel Ela, John Page, Sr., and Samuel Shepherd, in all fifteen. Many of these, as we know, live on or near the present Water Street and in the vicinity of the old meeting-house. The following "were against the settling of the meeting-house where the meeting-house now stands (forever) but that this meeting-house that now is may stand as long as is convenient: "Thomas Davis, Daniel Lad, sen. Sam[l]. Gild, Peter Ayer, Onesiph[s] Mash, sen. John Haseltine sen. Micha. Emerson, Geo. Corlis, Rob. Ford, Sam[l]. Simons, Tim. Ayers, John Robie, Sam[l]. Hutchins, John Corlis, Sam[l]. Ayer, Thomas Duston, John Hartshorne, Thos. Ayer, Joseph Kingsberry, John Gild, Sam[l]. Kingsberry, Joseph Hutchins, Stephen Webster, Nath[l]. Haseltine, Tho. Hartshorne, Rob[t]. Swan, sen., Will[m] Neff, Josiah Gage, Ezekl Lad, Rob[t] Swan, Jun., Philip Eastman, Henry Kemball, Joseph Johnson, Mat Harriman." Total, thirty-four.

And in this last list we find the names of those who, like Michael Emerson, had gone "back into the wood," such as the Ayers, Mash (Marsh) the Corlisses, Duston, Neff, etc., etc.

Mr. Cushing, so much desired, who probably had preached in Haverhill and pleased the people, did not accept their invitation. He afterwards became pastor of the church in Scituate.

October 27, 1683, another meeting was called about settling a minister. It was first voted to dismiss the former committee and next, to choose a new committee "to procure a person to join with Mr. Ward in the work of the ministry at Haverhill." This committee, the third upon the subject, was composed of Corporal Peter Ayer, Corporal Josiah Gage and Robert Swan, Sr.

At the annual meeting in 1654, Daniel Ela and William Starlin made a "proffer to the town to sell their livings, house and land, for a situation for a minister or the ministry," and a committee was chosen to treat with them "in the time of intermission, before the afternoon" and report. On their report, the town declined Ela's offer as "too difficult too comply with and perform," but decided to treat further with Starlin, through the committtee, who were to report at an adjourned meeting, next day. It was then voted to give him one hundred pounds for his house and land as follows: "Ten acres of land at the Fishing River, near to Robert Emerson's," convenient "for the setting up of a corn mill there," at three pounds per acre; and the remaining seventy pounds to be paid in merchantable corn, in two payments, for which a rate was ordered.

Subsequently, (1686) Daniel Ela offered to sell his "housing and land by the meeting-house" to the town for a parsonage, and to take as part pay, the house and land previously purchased of William Starlin; but, after long debate, the town declined to treat with him.

In 1682, for the first time, the moderator was chosen by "a paper vote," and it was determined that in the future the selectmen should be chosen in the same manner, "one at a time." This was the beginning of written ballots for town officers. In 1684, it was ordered that in choosing selectmen, votes should be brought in "for five several distinct persons in one paper at one time, cut between the names, so that they may hang together; and when all the papers so brought in are sorted, those five men that have the greatest number of votes, as it is usual in the public elections on nominations for the country, shall be the men who are chosen to serve for the selectmen for the year ensuing." But in 1687, this order was rescinded, and "the former ancient practice of putting in for but one person at a time ordered to be attended to." The other method was probably too complicated for the slenderly trained arithmeticians of that day.

When the selectmen of 1685 were chosen, it was found that a majority were not freemen, as the law required, and "without reflection or disrespect, Daniel Bradley was left out and Josiah Gage chosen in his room."

There had been "a beaten way" before, but at this time, a highway was laid out 'from Amesbury meeting-house by Country Bridge to Haverhill." A highway was also laid out "above Spicket as far as Haverhill lands go in that direction." One had been previously laid out here, but, by disuse, it had become "uncertain."

At the annual meeting in 1683, Francis Wainwright, a merchant of Ipswich, obtained leave for his son Simon to settle in town, and use timber to build him a house and a "Ware-house." Simon immediately came to Haverhill and was probably the first trader in the town.

West Bridge, at Sawmill River, was so much damaged by floods this spring, that the town chose a committee to rebuild it.

Daniel Ela was fined forty shillings by the court for ill-treating his wife, and William White complained of him for cruelty to her again the next year.

In 1686, a committee, "by virtue of an order from the Selectmen," reported that the following "had trespassed upon the Town's ways and common land by their fencing of them in:" Joseph Greelee, Joseph Peasley, Samuel Pearson, Samuel Shepherd, Daniel Ela, Edward Brumidge, Sergeant Johnson, Peter Patie, Lieutenant Browne or S. Ford, Benjamin Singletry, John Gild, Robert Swan, Stephen Davis, Daniel Hendrick, John Davis, Edward Clarke, Stephen Dow, Abraham Belknap, Thomas Davis, John Whittier. About this time, a rule was adopted that all petitions to the town should be in writing.

The town permitted swine to go unyoked if their owners would be responsible for damages.

In 1687, Joseph Peaslee being chosen constable by paper-votes (or written ballots, now first employed for other offices than moderator and selectmen) "made his plea for freedom," *i. e.*, asked to be released from that duty. Not being permitted to decline, he moved that a second constable be chosen "because the town was large and many lived remote, so that one man could not well do the work of warning meetings and gathering of rates alone." John Ayer, Jr., was accordingly chosen second constable. They were permitted to divide their wards and work as they might agree. They could not agree at all, and the town released Ayer and left Peaslee to do all alone. Soon after, however, and for many years, two constables were regularly chosen.

The first mention of sheep is in 1684, when "the Proprietors of the Great Plain, thinking to lay-down the said field for some years to be improved for a sheep-pasture," the town gave leave for them to fence it, choose officers, and make all necessary regulations for that purpose." In 1887 it was ordered:—"It being the interest and desire of the inhabitants, for the sake of back, belly and purse, to get into a stock, and a way to keep a stock of sheep, in which all endeavours hitherto have been invalid and of no effect, for a further trial: The Selectmen have hereby power granted them to call forth the inhabitants capable of labor, with suitable tools, and in suitable companies, about Michaelmas, to clear some land at the town's end, sides, or skirts, as they in their discretion shall think meet to direct, to make it capable and fit for sheep with the less hazzard; and he that is warned as above, and doth not accordingly come and attend the service, shall pay a fine of two shillings per day."

"With the less hazzard," shows that sheep were still in great peril from the wolves. Amesbury had repealed the forty shillings bounty for wolf-heads two years before.

But Coffin estimates that in 1685 there were over five thousand sheep in Newbury. Shepherds were employed and hurdles used in pasturing them. The commons of Haverhill were admirably adapted to sheep husbandry.

What the boundaries of Haverhill should be occupied the attention of its first settlers largely for many years. October 7, 1640, the General Court appointed a committee "to view the bounds between Colchester (Salisbury) and Mr. Warde's plantation." This was "to view." At the next June court, a committee was appointed "to set out the bounds of Salisbury and Pentucket, alias Haverhill." In May, 1643, the Court granted the new town a parcel of meadow-land, "west of Haverhill about six miles." In 1647, the inhabitants having petitioned the General Court for a tract of land to enlarge the town, that body, in reply, expressed, in effect, an opinion that "four miles square or such a proportion, will accommodate a sufficient tract of land;" and appointed a committee to view the place and report. This was not at all what the petitioners wanted. The Indian deed gave them much more than this, and their desire was to be enlarged and not contracted in space. They wanted a great town. Nothing came, therefore, out of this application. The matter was dropped.

But in 1650 the General Court again appointed a committee to settle the bounds of Haverhill and Salisbury; and in December of that year Haverhill appointed a committee to meet a similar committee from Salisbury, "to agree with them, if they can, and to lay out the bounds between us." The town committees were unable to agree, and at the May Session, 1651, the General Court appointed a new committee to lay out the bounds of Haverhill, which reported in October, and their report was confirmed. The order of confirmation recites the former determination to confine the town to four miles square, "or such a tract of land," and the late appointment of a committee of four, "or any two of them, to lay out theire said boundes, which Joseph Jewett and William Wilder havinge done accordinge to the Courtes graunt, this Court (at the request of the inhabitants of Haverhill) doth confirm their said bounds, as they are now layd out by the persons above mentioned." The actual bounds determined upon are not given. A

cursory inspection of this order would lead to the conclusion that the committee had set off a tract substantially four miles square, in which the inhabitants had acquiesced. But we know the eager desire of the people for a great town exhibited long afterwards. Whence we cannot but come to the conclusion that the words, "or such a tract of land" really covered, in their estimation, a much larger quantity of land. At all events this definite settlement was very soon disturbed again. May, 1654, Haverhill sent in a new petition about its bounds with Salisbury, stating that a "great mistake" had been made in the prior running of the line, to the disadvantage of Haverhill. The committee appointed to investigate the matter reported in September that such a mistake had been made, as "we find acenolaged by both parties," and recommended that a new line should be run. The report was accepted in October. But this by no means ended the matter, which continued to be agitated until 1667, when the General Court made the following order: "As a final issue of all differences between the two towns of Haverhill and Salisbury Newtown, in reference to their bounds, the Court having heard what all parties could say therein, judge meet to confirm the line which was run by the committee and the agreement of both towns, beginning at the rear of Holts Rocks, near Merrimack River's side, and running up on the N. W. line, as they apprehended to Brandy Brow, and from thence to Darby Hill, and so to a white pine about a mile further, marked H. S., and this is to be the dividing line between them."

One would have supposed Haverhill bounds were now pretty well settled; but when in 1660, the General Court granted Major General Dennison a tract of land "on the other side of Merrimack, about sixe miles above Andover," it was found that Haverhill claimed the land as within the bounds of their town. Whereupon the court ordered "that the townsmen of Haverhill be required by warrant from the secretary to appear at the next sessions of this court, to show a reason why they have marked bound trees at so great a distance from their town up Merrimack River, and also to give an account of the bounds of their town, and upon what right they lay claim to so long a tract of land."

The town appointed James Davis and Theophilus Shatswell "to answer the warrant of the General Court concerning the bounds." Their compensation was fixed at "ten groats per day each," three shillings, four pence.

Davis and Shatswell attended to their commission; but would appear to have failed in establishing the town's claims, were one to judge only from the following order of the General Court: "This Court having in October, 1660, granted Major General Dennison six hundred acres of land (formerly granted) to be layed out beyond Merrymack River, a litle above old Will's planting ground, which land was then claymed by the towne of Haverhill, as within their bounds, for which they, by their atturnays, summoned to appeare at that court did alleadg severall pleas, which the court then judged invalid, and notwithstanding the same, they then graunted the six hundred acres, provided it were not within seaven miles of Haverhill meeting-house, which sayd sixe hundred acres being since laid out, as above exprest by George Abbot and Thomas Chandler, and returned to this court, is allowed and confirmed." That is to say, the claims of Haverhill were disallowed and the Dennison grant, not being within seven miles of Haverhill meeting-house, was confirmed. It will be remembered that, in Indian deed, Little River was the point of departure, and the grant was to extend eight miles westward from that stream. But the General Court now established the meeting-house as the point of departure, which was three-quarters of a mile east of Little River. This was then an apparent curtailment of the tract granted in the Indian deed of one mile and three-quarters. But the end was not yet. In the General Court records for October, 1664, is found the following order: "For an issue in the case in difference between Major Generall Dennison and the towne of Haverhill, relating to their bounds, the Court judgeth it meete to confirm the bounds of Haverhill, not extending upon the river above eight miles from their meeting-house, and doe confirm unto Major Generall Dennison his farm as it is now laid out." Another mile is now granted to Haverhill, notwithstanding the recent firmness of the General Court, and the western bound of the town was now within three-quarters of a mile of the apparent extreme limit established by the Indian deed. It is probable that the Dennison grant, when laid out was found to leave room for this extension, and the General Court yielded to the importunity or diplomacy of Haverhill representatives.

But the town had in fact already granted lots to some of its inhabitants still further west, and when the Dennison grant was laid out, it was obliged to give land in place of them elsewhere.

The bounds appear to have been as unsettled as if nothing had ever been done about them; and at the May session of 1666, the court appointed a new committee of three "to run the bounds of the town of Haverhill and make return thereof to the next session of the court." The report was made at May session, 1667, by a single member of the committee, John Parker, of Billerica, and is as follows:

"In obedience to an order of the honored Generall Court, dated the 23d of May, 1666, Thomas Noyes, of Sudbury, Lieftenant Challice, of Salisbury, Newtowne, John Parker, of Billirikey, did meete at Haverhill the 31st day of October, 1666, to runn the bounds of Haverhill, according to order committed unto us. Wee began at the meeting-house and runne a due west line just eight miles; there wee reared up a heape of stones, and from thence runn a due south lyne to Merrymacke River, and stated a due north lyne from the sayd heape of stones to meet with and close the line northwest from the bound at Merrimack River that divides between Haverhill and Salisbury, which bound is just two miles and fower-score poles from Haverhill meeting house, which lyeth about east north-east, and there we cease our worke at that time for want of

the order wherein that lyne was prefixt betwene Salisbury and Haverhill from the sayd bounds at Holt's Rocks; then the sayd committee did appointe to meete again to finish the work about the bounds upon the first second day of May next following. This worke was donne by Thomas Noyse, deceased, and refused to be subscribed unto by Lieftenant Challice, being left alone to make his returne to the honord Court by him who is your servant wherein you shall command.

JOHN PARKER."

The General Court approved of this report, as follows: "The Court doe approove of this returne of the bounds of Haverhill, so farr as the same was stated by Ensigu Noyse and the rest of the Committee appointed thereunto before the death of Ensigne Noyse; but as for the bounds between Haverhill and Salisbury New toune, it is settled as this Court hath determined this session."

The order of the General Court, under which this committee acted, is couched in the following language: "not extending *upon the river* above eight miles from their meeting-house." It has been said that, under the Indian deed, Little River was the line from which to measure the extent of the grant, and a fair construction would probably have found the western bounds by following the river. The General Court substituted the meeting-house for Little River, and ordered their committee to run out the eight miles upon the river. The committee did nothing of the sort. They ran a line *due west* from the meeting-house, and, marking the point thus found with "a heape of stones," they ran a line from it due south to the Merrimac, and started a line due north from the heap of stones to meet the line between Haverhill and Salisbury, running northwest from Holt's Rocks. They appear also to have measured the distance between the meeting-house and Holt's Rocks, finding it "just two miles and fowerteen score poles" east-northeast, or two miles, four thousaud six hundred and twenty feet in a straight line.

The reading of their order by the committee gave the town a much larger area than it would have obtained by following the sinuous course of the river. A difference was made of at least four miles upon the river, and Haverhill got a tract of land equal to about four miles by twelve, more than the General Court meant to give them, and more than they could have got by the most liberal construction of the Indian deed. They had their own way at last; they had a great town. Consequently we hear of no more complaint about the bounds, except that the committee, having only "started" the line north from the heap of stones, eight miles due west of the meeting-house, had not run it out to meet and close the line, running northwest from Holt's Rocks. Accordingly, in 1674, the town directed the selectmen to attend to the matter immediately. The selectmen employed Jonathan Danforth, a well-known surveyor, to finish the work begun in 1667. His report, made to the General Court, at its May session, 1675, is as follows:

"At the request of the Selectmen of Haverill the bounds of the said towne were perfected as followeth: from Hoult's rocks wee ran due northwest, according to the compasse, not allowing any variations, allowing Amesbury their full and just bounds, as hath been determined by the honoured Generall Court: all the other lynes on the west side of the plantation wee ran from Merremack River due north untill it ent with the first lyne, where wee erected a great pillar of stones: this last lyne was sett out and begun to run by Ensigne Noyes and Sargant John Parker at eight miles distance from Haverill meeting-house, upon a due west lyne, which is according to the grant of the Generall Court: the running lynes on both sides of the plantation were well bounded by markt trees and heaps of stones. Layed out by

JONATHAN DANFORTH.
Surveyor."

The General Court approved of this return. And thus the bounds of Haverhill Town were perfected. As thus defined it was nearly a great triangle, with its base upon the river. The length of the northeast angle was about fifteen miles; of the west line rather more; and an air-line from Holt's Rocks to the southwest corner would have been also about fifteen miles.

"If we start," says Chase, "from the site of the first meeting-house (in the old burying-ground), and run a line due west eight miles, it will bring us to a point about four miles northwest of Methuen Village. A line due south from this point will pass a little over two miles to the west of the village and strike the Merrimac River, about three and a half miles above the upper bridge at Lawrence, and within about one and a half miles of the present southwest corner of Methuen. This last-named line was the old western bound of Haverhill, as confirmed in 1667 (and 1675), and continued till 1725," when Methuen was set off from it principally.

The town then included the largest part of Methuen (and Lawrence), a large part of Salem, Paistow and Hampstead, N. H., and all of Atkinson.

A learned lawyer, writing of the principle on which these colonies were founded, has said that it required, while the inhabitants of a town "should remain a part of the whole, and be subject to the general voice in relation to all matters which concerned the whole colony, they should be allowed to be what their separate settlements had made them: namely, distinct communities in regard to such affairs as concerned none but themselves." As early as March, 1635–36, the General Court had declared that "particular towns have many things which concern only themselves and the ordering of their own affairs, and disposing of business in their own town." Therefore they were permitted "to dispose of their own lands and woods, with all the privileges and appurtenances of the said towns, to grant lots, and to make such orders as may concern the well-ordering of their own towns, not repugnant to the laws and orders here established by the General Court; as also to lay mulcts and penalties for the breach of these orders, and to levy and distrain the same, not exceeding the sum of twenty shillings; also to choose their own particular officers, as constables, surveyors for the highways, and the like." These powers and others subsequently granted to the towns by the General

Court, we have now seen exercised by the inhabitants of the youthful plantation of Haverhill. The bounds had been settled after long effort; the lands had been granted, farms established, records orderly kept, the church gathered and the meeting-house erected, schools established, comfort secured, their own vine and fig-tree planted, whereunder every man could sit. The town was builded, after the slow, substantial New England pattern.

CHAPTER CLIII.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

Indian Alarms—Under Andros—Settlement of Mr. Rolfe as Minister—Preparations for Defense—The New Charter—Building of the Second Meeting-House.

For thirty years from its beginning, the little settlement at Haverhill had been blest with peace and prosperity. There had been no discouragements or privations, save those necessarily attending a pioneer enterprise in the wilderness.

The people had been permitted substantially to manage their own affairs. They had even secured by persistence the object of their supreme desire—a great territory. The inhabitants were a sturdy community. They were of one stock. With scarcely an exception, they were Englishmen. There were even no Scotchmen. One may suspect that Michael Emerson was an Irishman. Tradition says that Joanna Davis, the wife of George Corliss, was a native of Wales. None of the settlers were from the Continent of Europe. And what in this way was true of Haverhill, was true of New England as a whole. It was a homogeneous people. It is a trite remark that no county of England was so English as Massachusetts. The population of New England in 1640, when immigration substantially ceased, has been estimated as high as 26,000. It is believed their descendants at the present time number fifteen millions, or one-quarter of the population of the United States. The people of Haverhill were solid English yeomen, with respectable intelligence. Crime was not unknown, but was not rife among them. They were a God-fearing, sober people. It may be declared without fear of contradiction, that in 1675 the village of Haverhill was superior to the average community in rural England. Narrow and bigoted, there was nevertheless about them a certain elevation, born of the motives with which they had come to America and the enterprise in which they had been engaged. They were sturdy, resolute, self-reliant.

Their isolation in the wilderness had made them watchful of danger, and the policy of the government had created and maintained military discipline and the habit of constant preparation for defense. But the settlers of Haverhill, in the first generation, can have entertained no very acute apprehension of peril from Indian warfare. As we have seen, they found few natives here. They had wisely bought the Indian title for what it was worth. Sir Edmund Andros, indeed, afterward said of the Indian deeds, "that their hand was worth no more than a scratch with a bear's paw." But Andros' favorite theory was, that all titles must come from the King. After the loss of the charter in 1684, at a town-meeting held June 18, 1685, in Boston, a committee was charged with the duty of buying any claim, "legal or pretended," which the Indians might advance to "Deare Island, the Necke of Boston, or any part thereof." An Indian title might be a feeble instrument, but it was better than nothing. As the Haverhill pioneers found few or no Indians upon the spot, they had no collision with them afterwards, and apparently, little annoyance from them. There were doubtless straggling parties or individuals who disturbed the inhabitants living without the village, just as "stragglers" and tramps have frightened the women and children of the country in modern times. Some trade was carried on with them, and when they could procure fire water they were quarrelsome and dangerous. It was the colony policy to forbid, or at least to restrain, the sale of liquor to the Indians. A law was passed at November Court, 1654, prohibiting all persons, except those specially licensed, from selling "any Indian or Indians either wine or strong liquor of any sort," under a penalty of 20*s.* per pint, and in that proportion for all quantities, more or less. Henry Palmer, of Haverhill, and Roger Shaw, of Hampton, were the only persons so licensed in the whole county of Norfolk.

In 1646, Eliot began his noble labors among the Indians, and before King Philip's War some thousands of them had been gathered into villages, and were known as Praying Indians. A great work had doubtless been done among them. But of course many of the Praying Indians had assumed only the thinnest varnish of civilization and Christianity. Many of them were pilferers and vagabonds. However the whites may have differed as to the extent of the change worked in them by the missionaries, they generally agreed in considering the Praying Indians as harmless. Thus they obtained the dangerous privilege of roaming about the settlements at will. They got fire-arms and ammunition. Some of this class were afterwards the most dangerous enemies of the whites. Among them was Simon, who figures in the local annals of Haverhill and the vicinity. He found his haunts in this town and Amesbury. In 1672 he and another Indian named Samuel were fined five pounds "for stealing Englishman's horse." When the war broke out, he is said to have improved the opportunity to get vengeance upon those against whom he had a grudge, and became the terror of the neighboring

settlements. One writer speaks of him "As the arch-villain and incendiary of all the Eastern Indians." And yet Hubbard tells us he spared an old woman at Portsmouth, "because he said she had been kind to his grandmother."

Previous to 1675 the settlers in general regarded the Indians with indifference or contempt. There had been little sympathy with the efforts of Eliot, Gookin, Bourne, Mayhew and a few other self-sacrificing men to Christianize and civilize them. They were regarded in the main as worthless creatures, and, on the whole, an obstruction to the enjoyment of the land by God's chosen people. But there had been no general cruelty or oppression practiced towards them, and the law, theoretically, treated them as it did the whites. Now from this state of apathy there was a bloody awakening.

Alarm began to be felt in Haverhill early in 1675. Rumors of threatened hostility among the Indians were flying thickly. It had been the custom, in the early days, to have some semblance of a fort in every new settlement. The trees, which had been felled to clear the ground, were used for protection. Thus, at Cambridge, the present college yard and common were originally inclosed and fortified by palisades, the trees being driven closely into the ground and their tops united by birch withes. Within this inclosure the people could take refuge, and the cattle could be driven in at night.

Some time previously a fortification had been built around the meeting-house at Haverhill, but it had been suffered to fall into decay. At a meeting called February 18, 1675, to concert measures suitable to the danger apprehended, it was ordered that "the Selectmen shall forthwith cause the fortifications to be finished, to make port-holes in the walls, to right up those places that are defective and likely to fall and to make a flanker at the east corner, that the work, in case of need, may be made use of against the common enemy."

Daniel Ladd, Peter Ayer and Thomas Whittier were appointed to designate what houses should be garrisoned; and the "old brush and top wood" on the common was ordered to be burned—to prevent the concealment and stealthy approach of the Indians.

Hostilities did not actually commence for some time after. At about four P.M. June 21, 1675, an express reached Governor Leverett in Boston from Governor Winslow, of the old colony, informing him that on Sunday, the day before, the people of Swansea had retreated to their block-house, on account of Indian approach. Leverett, an old soldier of the English Civil War, had, before the 28th, sent three hundred foot and eighty horse, besides arms, ammunition and provisions, to the aid of the Plymouth men. A fast was appointed for the 29th of June in Massachusetts. The General Court furnished the militia in the frontier towns with arms and ammunition, and ordered forifications and garrisons to be made ready, without delay.

The sufferings of Plymouth colony in King Philip's War were terrible. The debt she incurred was supposed to amount to more than all her personal property. But it was paid to the last penny. Twelve or thirteen towns were destroyed in what is now Massachusetts. Six hundred dwelling-houses of the English were burned. Massachusetts had a population of about twenty-five thousand; she lost five or six hundred men, at least one-tenth of her fighting force.

Very little injury was done in the immediate vicinity of Haverhill. But the alarm and distress were dreadful. March 19, 1676, came the news that the Indians were crossing the Merrimac at Wamesit (Lowell). Couriers were at once despatched to Ipswich for aid. Major-General Dennison wrote to the Governor that there was great alarm in Andover and Haverhill, and that he was sending up sixty men. Fortunately, this rumor proved unfounded. But the people of Andover wrote the Governor April 7th, earnestly craving aid, and informing him that their town had been twice attacked and the people had begun to move away. May 2d Ephraim Kingsbury, of Haverhill, was killed by the Indians—the first, it is supposed, slain by them in the town, but the particulars have been lost. The next day, May 3d, Haverhill Simon, with two other Praying Indians, made a murderous attack, the story of which belongs more properly to the history of Bradford.

John Littlehale, of Haverhill, is said to have been killed by the Indians September 18, 1675. King Philip, the origin and brain of the Indian assault, was killed August 12, 1676. The following winter a truce was concluded with the Eastern Indians.

The terror of Northeastern Massachusetts, which suffered less in King Philip's War than its southern and western portions, may be inferred from a proposition under consideration by the General Court March 23, 1676, to build a fence of stockades (palisades) or stones, eight feet high, between the head of navigation on the River Charles and the Concord River, at Billerica, for the protection of Essex County and part of Middlesex. And the court ordered one able and fit man from each of the towns proposed to be included, to meet at Cambridge March 31st, to survey the ground, estimate the expense and report in writing how it might be prosecuted and effected, and what each town should pay, etc. Nearly all the towns reported.

Capt. John Hull, the mint-master, was also treasurer of the colony. He made entry in his journal August 24, 1676, of £24 16*s.* 8*d.*, paid on account of "Haverhill Towne" soldiers, according to "Sundry acceptances," in sums of from five shillings to seventeen shillings and ten pence. Their names were Samuel Huchins, Nathaniel Haseltine, Samuel Aires, John Keisar, John Clements, Amos Singletens (Singletery?), Nathaniel Lad, Daniel Lad, George Brown, John John-

son, Philip Esman, Benjamin Singleterry, Thomas Durston, Thomas Eastman, Thomas Hartshorn, Richard Allin, Robert Swan, Henry Kemball, Benjamin Grealey, Jonathan Henrick, John Corly, John Roby, Samuel Ladd, Thomas Kinsbury, Robert Swan, John Haseltine, Samuel Notts, Joseph Bond—twenty-eight in number. These were doubtless all drafted men, *i. e.*, from the militia of the town. In all our early wars, drafting was the recognized mode of filling up the military quota. There was then nothing opprobrious in drafting or being drafted. To fight, when necessary, was the duty of every able-bodied man, just as it was to vote, to pay taxes, to hold office, to go to meeting. The law provided how all these obligations should be discharged. Duty was not only honorable, it was compulsory. All belonged to the militia who were able to discharge its functions. This was a matter of course. But all could not be spared, or were not needed for the field. Then all took an equal chance, and those drawn out must march. This was a matter of course, too, and simple enough, according to their ideas. Nor does it appear to have involved any discredit to procure a substitute if a drafted man's business or health or convenience required his presence at home. Volunteering had not, in those days, as in more recent, a magic sound, and duty, rather than sentiment, controlled mainly the citizen's conduct, in war as well as in peace. And they fought grimly against the heathen foe, as men under the special protection of Jehovah. When Captain Mason had exterminated the Pequots, he wrote: "Thus was God seen in the Mount, crushing his proud enemies."

July 12, 1777, Saltonstall, of Haverhill, and others of Bradford and Andover, petitioned the General Court for "more provision for protection, on account of present appearance and warning of danger."

In response, the court ordered one-fifth of the men to be kept continually on scout, taking turns, so that all should bear their part. The towns were, in effect, told to protect themselves. This was correct, so far, for King Philip's War had fallen as lightly on these towns as almost any in the colony, although they had doubtless suffered terribly from anxiety and alarm, through their exposed situation. Houses were garrisoned and scouts kept upon the watch night and day. As late as 1684 thirty-five troopers were kept constantly on the move on the borders of Haverhill, Amesbury and Salisbury, and the foot companies in each town were constantly in readiness.

In October, 1675 the Court ordered a special tax of £1533 to pay the expense of the war with the Indians. Boston paid £300; Charlestown, £180; Dorchester, £40; and Roxbury, £30. The proportion of Haverhill was £18. This was hard to get, and a town-meeting was called November 18th "to allow the inhabitants to make staves enough to pay the eight rates required by the country, so as to save bread corn, which men cannot well live without."

The issue of King Philip's War culminating in the complete overthrow of the Narragansetts, secured permanent peace with the Indians for Southern New England. Their power was broken. As an element of danger they were destroyed in that section. By midsummer in 1678 there was peace everywhere and quiet everywhere in that region. Henceforward the Indian only disturbed New England when he came down from the North as an ally and through the instigation of the Frenchman. And to that danger, Haverhill, as a frontier town, was exposed for forty years longer. Her reign of terror had hardly begun. But for a little while after King Philip's War there was tranquillity. Confidence returned in a measure and the much harried colonists hoped to enjoy the fruits of their labor.

From 1675 to 1678 the town had been too much disturbed by the Indian war to attend to anything else, but in 1683, 1684 and 1686 they found time in the annual meetings to listen to land claims by Job Clement, Robert Swan, Sr. and others, and charges and counter-charges of wrong about land bounds between John Gild and Lieut. Johnson and between Robert Swan and Lieut. George Brown.

Robert Swan was early in Haverhill and a lot-holder, but he seems to have been often in hot water. The famous Council of 1656 thought "there was too great appearance of much iniquity on Goodman Swan's part in this matter." He was probably a passionate man. In 1666 he was fined by the County Court "30*s.* for striking John Carleton several blows," whilst Carleton was fined £3 for striking him. In 1673 the town ordered him to "pull down" a ditch he had made across one of the town's highways or be prosecuted. In 1674 he was fined 20*s.* for being drunk and cursing. July 2, 1694, there was a special meeting at which it was voted to resist Swan's claim to the meadow laid out for the ministry. But he apparently had the confidence of the people, after all. He served in King Philip's War, was on the committee with Mr. Ward in 1683 to procure an associate pastor, and in 1686 on the committee to view disputed or uncertain bounds. He was highway surveyor in 1692, and deputy to the General Court in 1684. In 1689 his sons Samuel and Joshua were brought before Major Nathaniel Saltonstall as a magistrate, upon a complaint for cutting down some of Simon Wainwright's best apple trees. Swan sent the major a notice which Myrick prints, forbidding him to proceed with the examination, and insinuating his opinion that if the major took it, it would "be altered when it comes to corte." February 17th following, the magistrate entered at court a complaint against Swan "for a high contempt of authority and endeavoring to hinder him in the execution of his office as magistrate, and casting abominable, wicked reflections upon him to ye high defamation of his name." But Swan's sons avenged the public upon him. They appear to have had a feud with Wainwright, for

Samuel, the son, was, in 1690, tried, convicted and sent to jail for wantonly stabbing Capt. Simon Wainwright's valuable horse with a half-pike. The testimony of Samuel Ingalls is worth reproducing as a matter of justice to old Swan, and illustrative of the parental discipline of that day. He says: "I and Samuel Swan was at work together in the field of Robert Swan, Jun., and Goodman Swan, Sen., came to us and asked us to goe into the hous with him, and then he asked Sam'l why he stabbed Mr. Wainwright's horse. Samuel said nothing. Then said his father to him what is the reason yo doe wickedly in sinning against God in abusing the dum creature, and his father was so grievd at it yt he weped, and then he said I am resolved I will give you coreksion, and then he pulled off his close to his shirt and took a stick as big as a good ordinary nailing rod, and then he took Sam'l by one hand and streek him as hard as he cable to strike and streek him many blows. His father was a considerable while beating him and Samuel cryed out and beged of his father vari much yt he would heat him no more."

Simon Wainwright, as we have seen, came to Haverhill in 1683, and six years later he seems to have had a valuable orchard.

It may be noted, as an indication of advancing taste and an appreciation of something besides absolute necessity, that in 1676, the selectmen were ordered to remove the pound from the burying-ground to a "more suitable and convenient place."

The town, apparently, was not called upon to support any poor or unprovided person until 1671—72, when Robert Emerson and his wife brought to the annual meeting the orphan child of Richard and Hannah Mercer, and desired the town to take care of it and also pay them for nursing it above a year past. The townsmen listened to their cries, seconded, perhaps, by the child's, and ordered the selectmen to "provide for it and pay Robert Emerson what they should find due him; also, to address the County Court next at Salisbery to have order from them and counsel how to dispose of the said child, and maintain the same."

The second centenarian, Richard Singletary, died October 25, 1687, aged one hundred and two ye ars.

In 1666 occurred perhaps the first in Haverhill of a class of offenses with which the Puritans contended in vain—the County Court fined John Barnard and his wife for incontinence; of course, before marriage. The man was fined three pounds, and the woman four shillings.

It has been truly said that the dreariest period in the history of New England was the period between 1684 and 1688. On the 18th of June in the former year a decree in the High Chancery Court of England annulled the charter of Massachusetts. In February, 1685, Charles the Second died of a stroke of apoplexy. His successor, James the Second, conceived the idea of uniting all the American governments, as far as possible, under a single head. Very able American jurists have been of the opinion, studying the case calmly after nearly two hundred years, that the decree in Chancery was not legally effective to forfeit the charter. It made no difference; the colony was not in position to contest it. The news that the charter was condemned filled the colony with gloom. May 12, 1686, the last election according to the provisions of the charter took place. May, 14, the "Rose" frigate arrived in Boston with news that Joseph Dudley had been appointed president of a provisional government, which included Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Maine and the King's provinces. December 19, 1686, arrived at Boston as permanent Governor, Sir Edmund Andros, whose name and memory are profoundly hated in New England, and whose administration, under the control of the gloomy and bigoted James, is by the modern writers called "The Usurpation of Andros." Andros proceeded upon the assumption that, by the resumption of the charter, all government was annulled. He said; "there is no such thing as a town in the whole country." He levied a tax of twenty pence on each poll and one penny in the pound upon "all the late colonies and provinces toward defraying the public charges of government." Some towns asked to be excused from paying the tax; others refused. Haverhill, Salisbury, Rowley and Andover were fined for disobedience. In September, 1688, a special Justice's Court was ordered to "make inquiry in the several towns of Gloster, Haverhill and Boxford, and examine and bind over such persons as have been factious and seditious there and contemptuously refused to obey and execute the warrants of the Treasurer." Simon Wainwright, of Haverhill, who had made twenty barrels of cider from his own orchard in 1688, had twenty-five barrels taken from him by Andros' excise officers. It appears that the town had not appointed a commissioner to meet at the shire-town to assist in making rates for the county; wherefore Onesiphorous Mash (Marsh), the town constable, was obliged to give bond and pay a fee of five pounds, three shillings, to some officer, that he would appear and answer at Salem. Daniel Bradley, a selectman, was compelled to pay five pounds one shilling, for a similar bond, on the same account. Our poor but thrifty fathers complained bitterly and with reason that they were obliged to pay illegal and unheard-of fees during Andros' short-lived government.

In this time of distress a fresh Indian war broke out at the Eastward, fomented by the intrigues of the French. In November, 1688, Andros organized a force of seven or eight hundred men, and marched into the Eastern country. He built several forts, but found no enemy. For this expedition Joseph Emerson and Jacob Whiticker were drafted from Haverhill, on their return making depositions concerning abuse and maltreatment before their townsman, Nathaniel Saltonstall, as assistant.

Samuel Ayer, constable, writing to the General Court, under date of February 11, 1689, in answer to a citation requiring the town to appear and answer to the charge of "withholding one-half their proportion of rates," says: "I pray you consider our poor condition. There are many that have not corn to pay their rates; many more that have not money; to strain (distrain) I know not what to take; We are a great way from any market, to make money of anigh thing we have, and now there is not anigh way to transport to other places. I pray you consider our poor condition."

April 4, 1689, came the glorious news that William, Prince of Orange, had landed in England. April 18th the people in Boston were all alive. In the south end the cry was that the north enders were all in arms; and in the north end the same story about the south end flew from lip to lip. The people who ran to arms seized Randolph and others obnoxious to them: old Simon Bradstreet, the last Governor under the charter, and such of the former assistants as were at hand, were brought to the Council chamber, whither Andros, most unwillingly, was conducted to be informed that he was deposed. A revolution was accomplished. On the 20th a provisional Council was organized, which called a convention of two delegates from each town. May 9, 1689, sixty-six delegates met. The convention invited the old officers to resume government, which they declined to do. A new convention was then called for May 22d, at which fifty-four towns were represented. This convention repeating the request of the former, the old governor and officers resumed their former places and everything went on tranquilly.

May 26th came the eagerly-welcomed news of the accession of William and Mary.

Haverhill made the following answer to the invitation to attend the second Convention.

"HAVERHILL, May 20, 1689.

"By an express from ye Council for safety, etc., dated May ye 10th, 1689, The town being meet, do unanimously, nemine contradicente, declare yt they think it most eligible and safe to wait for information from ye Crown in England, according to promise and declaration, so yt we may ye better know wt we may at present do: and do pray yt ye Council, now in being for safety of ye people and Conservation of Peace, do take care effectively in all publique affairs and in all imergences. And we do hereby further declare yt we will be assistant in ye charges yt shall come unto, both wh our persons and estates, so yt ye persons that are, or shall be, put into hold be effectually secured and have not too full a libertie of visitors, either made or Remade, whereby they may escape, we we hear hath been attempted.

"This was read, noted and passed, nemine contradicente, as attest.

"N. SALTONSTALL,
"Recorder."

Nathaniel Saltonstall, the recorder, was already a member of the provisional Council of Safety, having been an assistant in the last year's government under the old charter.

Cornet Peter Ayer was chosen to represent the town in the convention. The temporary organization under the old charter was continued by authority from England, and elections were held under it, everything going forward peacefully in the administration of affairs. But the clouds of savage warfare were gathering again about the northern frontier townships.

August 13, 1790, a small party of Indians made their appearance in the northerly part of Haverhill and killed Daniel Bradley. Near by, Nathaniel Singletary and his eldest son were at work in the field. Approaching after their crafty, secret fashion, they shot Singletary, who fell dead. The son, attempting to flee, was overtaken and made prisoner. After scalping the elder Singletary, the Indians began a rapid retreat, but their prisoner managed to escape from them and returned to his home the same day. Nathaniel Singletary was a squatter on the parsonage lands in what is now the northwesterly part of the town. As late as 1860 traces of the cellar of his house could still be seen on land then owned by Benjamin Kimball, on the Parsonage Road. Bradley was killed on that road, not far from the present Atkinson railroad station.

About the same time two men were killed at Andover. It appears that men from abroad had, early in the season, been stationed at Haverhill to aid in its protection; but on July 22d at least a part of them (those from Rowley) were ordered home on account of the "busy season of the year."

The later attacks, however, caused an appeal to the General Court for assistance, and, August 29th, the Ipswich horse were ordered here, as a place of rendezvous.

October 17th the Indians made another foray, when they wounded and took prisoner Ezra Rolfe, who died three days after. Rolfe lived near the present line of Plaistow, not far from the present North Parish meeting-house.

No further attacks or alarms occurring that year, the people began to breathe freely again.

In the latter part of 1689, Rev. Benjamin Rolfe, who was born at Newbury, 1662, and graduated at Harvard 1684, was employed as an assistant to Mr. Ward and seems to have given satisfaction. His tribute to the senior pastor has been already referred to, and he himself was undoubtedly an upright, prudent, pious man, diligent in his calling.

At a town-meeting January 20, 1690, it was voted to give Mr. Rolfe "forty pounds per annum in wheat, rye and Indian to join and assist Mr. Ward," and after Mr. Ward's death the town would "further allow what shall be rational." According to the recorder, there was much opposition to this vote, so that it was reconsidered and the intimation is that "Mr. Ward and his son Saltonstall" (son-in-law, Nathaniel Saltonstall, who was recorder) left the meeting, on account of this opposition. During their absence the town voted to pay Mr. Rolfe the above sum for one year, with his diet or board, and that Mr. Ward should have his full salary, provided he, at his own cost, boarded Mr. Rolfe. In the margin

of the record it was written "£20 taken from Mr. Ward for Mr. Rolfe's diet in —90 without consent." The action of the town in causing certain lines of comment upon the record to be expunged shows that there was considerable irritation about the matter. Mr. Ward, as we have before seen, desired to be relieved in his old age by an assistant, and there is no evidence that Mr. Rolfe was personally disagreeable to him; indeed, the inference is quite to the contrary. The probability is, that Mr. Ward either thought the people were now of sufficient ability to provide for the salary of the assistant without deduction from his own and that it was their duty to do so, or else that they proceeded about the business rather uncourteously and without proper consultation with himself. The old ministers, who were settled for life, were regarded as having a contract, almost indissoluble without their consent.

It is pleasant to note that Mr. Rolfe continuing in his labors for nearly two years, the friction seems to have disappeared, and an honorable adjustment was made between all parties concerned.

October 25, 1692, a meeting was held to consider the permanent settlement of Mr. Rolfe as colleague with Mr. Ward. The question "whether Mr. Benj. Rolfe, whom this town hath had experience of in the ministry near three years, shall be the man pitched upon for that work and to be our settled minister in Haverhill," was decided in the affirmative "by a full vote," and a committee was appointed to agree with him. A meeting was called December 5th, to hear the report of the committee, when a letter from Mr. Rolfe, dated November 21st, was read. The letter, which treats of temporalities in a very judicious manner, is printed by Chase in full. The town thereupon voted "that Mr. Benj. Rolf, who hath for about three years been an help here, in the work of the ministry with Mr. Ward, if he please to settle here in the ministerial work, shall have & hereby hath that piece of land freely bestowed upon him as his own proper estate, which was laid out by the Town's Committee, June 24, 1681, and approved of, near where Nathaniel Smith formerly lived, and is also joining to that two acres which was given by the town to Samuel Wilcot." This was the land referred to in a former chapter as given by John Haseltine for the perpetual use of the ministry, to which was joined a certain piece of commons for the same purpose. The town now also directed the selectmen to treat with the owners about buying Wilcot's two acres, to be added to the rest.

January 30, 1693, another meeting was called to see if the town would confirm its vote to settle Mr. Rolfe, as objections had been made to the former meeting, "because of the shortness of warning." The town now declared that "by a full vote, it is renewed, allowed of, confirmed, made, and to be stood unto for the full and free vote of the inhabitants of Haverhill." Apparently they were in earnest.

Mr. Rolfe was granted the free and full improvement of the parsonage farm and meadow, then on lease to Mr. Bradley, so long as he continued in the town as their minister, and also of the parsonage land bought of William Stirling, besides what was otherwise appointed him for his annual salary. It was also voted to lay him out, with all convenient speed, ten acres of good meadow, for his free use while he remained their minister.

The "Parsonage Farm," it will be remembered, had been leased, in July, 1682, for twenty-one years, to Daniel Bradley, who was presumably the Daniel Bradley chosen selectman in 1685, and left out because not a freeman, but acting as selectman in 1688, and killed by the Indians on the "Parsonage Road," August 13, 1690. William Starlin's house and land was bought by the town, it will be remembered, in 1684.

The settlement of a minister was indeed a most solemn and momentous transaction at the period when the town was the parish and transacted business relating to the church in town-meeting.

This important affair now rested until May 8th, when a town-meeting was called "for the people to join with the church and take care for the providing necessaries for Mr. Rolf's ordination to office in this town." This mention "of the people" in this connection shows that a new order of things was beginning, very slowly, to be evolved.

After choosing a moderator, "the town resolved to stop in the proceedings till they knew what Mr. Ward would abate of his yearly maintenance."

Then a proposal in writing from him, dated November 13, 1692, was read, in which he offered, in case of settlement of an assistant minister, to

> "Abate to the town of what they ought to pay to me by covenant and town orders, all, excepting only twenty pounds in corn, and fifty cords of current merchantable cord wood, to be paid as formerly, annually, during my life: viz., ten pounds in merchantable wheat, and ten pounds in merchantable Indian, and fifty cords of oak and walnut wood, to be laid in at my house, and corded by one thereto appointed at the Town's charges; for time as followeth, viz.: Half in October, annually, and the other half in February, annually. Provided, that all arrears be truly paid me and that myself and estate I be exempted from all rates; and that the Town do appoint one or two men to attend at my house upon a set day to receive and take account of what shall be brought in, and set the price thereof if it be not merchantable, that so it come not in pitiful driblets as formerly.
>
> "And in case the conditions be not performed within the year, by the 2d of February annually, then the whole sixty pounds to be paid annually, according to town orders already made, and so proportionably.
>
> "JOHN WARD."

This is a business-like document, pertinent and probably reasonable, and shows that the old minister had still his wits about him. The reference to the "pitiful driblets" seems a little unkind whe none remembers how poor the town in its infancy was, as shown by the meagre bids towards supplies for the support of old Hugh Sherratt, made in 1677, when Peter Ayer bid "3 lb. meal or corn," and Thomas Ayer, Jr., "1 lb. meat." And in the present year of grace there has come to light a diary kept by a min-

ister settled within the limits of Mr. Ward's old parish nearly a century after Mr. Ward's proposal, which shows that he was receiving his salary in similar pitiful driblets with apparent equanimity.

When the letter had been read a committee was appointed "to go and see what Mr. Ward will abate, &c.," who, by "word of mouth," brought back substantially the same proposition, which the town accepted. A vote was then passed that "care shall, at the Town's charge, be taken for a place and provision for entertainment at Mr. Rolfe's ordination," provided it did not exceed ten pounds; but, as "Several men proclaimed against it with great violence," the vote was *nulled*.

Then the agreement made by the town's committee, who were Robert Ayer, Peter Ayer and Steven Dow, with Mr. Rolfe, was approved and confirmed. It is printed in full by Chase, and, in effect, provides, 1, for the payment to Mr. Rolfe of an annual salary of sixty pounds in wheat, rye and Indian corn, "at the price of the grain in the Country rate, at the time of payment," the whole "to be paid to him or his order, in Haverhill, by the 2d of February annually."

2. "That Mr. Rolf, out of his sixty pounds, is to provide personal quarters for himself as he shall think good."

3. That at the "Town's charge, in convenient season annually, there shall be laid in for him a sufficient quantity and stock of good, sweet and dry and sound hay, for the keeping his horse through the winter, at such place in Haverhill as he shall appoint."

Mr. Rolfe had already written a letter dated April 29, 1693, in which he accepted the terms proposed, with the additional suggestion that the town should grant "also to me a supply of wood as soon as I shall stand in need of it. And if it please God so to order it that the whole work be devolved upon me, or to bring them out of those difficulties that, by occasion of the war, they are now under: They grant to me such a supply as that whereby I may so live as a minister of the gospel ought to live, and be able, without distraction by wants, to discharge my duty as a minister of Christ to God and yourselves. Thus I say I do express myself willing to settle among you with a true intention and true affection."

Mr. Rolfe touches delicate subjects with great propriety of expression, whilst judiciously anticipating future contingencies. Besides the business provisions, it is noticeable that he makes two conditions of a different character, viz.: "1st. So long as the people of God here do continue in the profession of the true faith and peace of the gospel. Acts 2 : 42. 2d. So long as I may have the liberty of my ministry among them." Mr. Rolfe, who was as yet a bachelor, married Mehitabel Atwater March 12, 1693–94, and six children had been born to them before the occurrence of the great catastrophe in their lives and in the life of the town.

Mr. Rolfe was ordained January 7, 1693, but the senior pastor had been already ten days laid to rest in the burying-ground near the little church, and perhaps under the great tree beneath whose wide-spreading branches he had preached in his early prime when the pioneers gathered in the fresh, magnificent forest of Pentucket.[1]

Mr. Rolfe had been thus happily settled in a period of comparative tranquillity from Indian alarms. But when the annual meeting was held in 1690, there was a period of deep anxiety. No business was done except to elect officers. News arriving of the destruction of Schenectady and other places in New York, a town-meeting was held March 24th, "to consider what is to be done for the present security of the place against the enemy, by sending for help abroad, *or to draw off*." The selectmen were given "full powers in all respects," and then, the recorder says, "A small discourse was opened about the then state of the Town, how to stand against the Enemy, and to see for a livelihood for hereafter, if lives of the people should be spared. But it soon ceased and was given over, and nothing done that was to satisfaction in that affair, the people being out of the way for their own subsistence; and therefore the Moderator declared the meeting closed."

The suggestion which, in the first panic, had found its way into the warrant for the meeting to see if the town should be abandoned and the people move away into the circle of safety, giving up so much of the frontier of defense, evidently was put away as too cowardly, and requiring too much of sacrifice. Folks could not leave their smiling plantations and their hard-earned homes. Things were gloomy enough. The suggestion about a "livelihood" and "subsistence" probably referred to the anxiety felt lest the stealthy and skulking Indians, lurking about the outer edge of the settlement, would make it impossible for them to cultivate their fields or gather in their harvests. However, it was evidently concluded to stay and abide the result. The first, most pressing necessity obviously was to provide for the personal safety of their families; and the measures to be adopted to that end were wisely left in the hands of the chief executive officers,—the town's select,—the selectmen.

No new or original measures of defensive warfare

[1] The time and place of John Ward's marriage to Alice Edmunds, about whom Cotton Mather says so much, has only recently become known.

In the "Marriage Licenses granted by the Bishop of London," printed from Colonel Chester's MS. copy by the Harleian Society in 1887, vol. 25, p. 227, is this entry,—

"1636, May 24, John Ward, Clerk, of Hadleigh Castle, Essex, Bachelor, 26, & Alice Edmunds, of Oakham, Co. Kent, Spinster, 24, consent of her father, Nicholas Edmunds, at St. Leonard's, Foster Lane."

"Oakham" is Alkham, near Dover, England.

This localizes Alice Edmunds and fixes the date of the marriage, but if John Ward's age is correctly given in the marriage license, "26," he was born about 1610, and not in 1606, as Cotton Mather stated, and was not as old as has always been understood.

were adopted. Precautions were taken which before had been resorted to in other places, and not here because of the happy immunity which the town had enjoyed in its infancy.

The selectmen appointed six garrisons and four houses of refuge, besides watch-houses. If they were not all established at once, all were about the same time. The garrisons and refuges were houses selected because of their convenient situation fo rthe families to resort to in case of alarm, and because they were somewhat adapted to defense against the quick, impatient attacks of the savages.

One of them was the house owned by Onesiphorous Mash, Sr., the ancestor of all the Marshes. He had built this house in 1684, and the ground was long known as "Mash's Hill," afterwards "Pecker's Hill." The house stood on the north side of the road, halfway up the slope. One account says the garrison was commanded by Jonathan Marsh, but it is generally believed by Sergeant John Haseltine. He had under his command seven men—Onesiphorous Mash, Sr., Onesiphorous Mash, Jr., Nathaniel Haseltine, Eben Webster, Joseph Holt, Thomas Ayer and Joseph Bond.

Another was commanded by Sergeant John Webster. This was very probably near the river, about three-fourths of a mile east of Haverhill Bridge. Webster had under him eight men—Stephen Webster, Samuel Watts, Nicholas Brown, Jacob Whittaker, John Marsh, Robert Ford, Samuel Ford and Thomas Kingsbury.

The third garrison house was owned and commanded by Jonathan Emerson; in 1860 a portion of it was standing on the northwest corner of Winter and Harrison Streets.

The fourth was commanded by James Ayer, and stood nearly opposite the house known, thirty or more years ago, as that of Captain John Ayer (2nd), on Pond Street, near the west end of Plng Pond.

The fifth was commanded by Joseph Bradley, probably the brother of Daniel Bradley, who was killed by the Indians this year. It was situated in the northerly part of town. No trace of it remains.

The sixth was owned and commanded by Captain John White, and was situated near the present White house, on Mill Street, nearly opposite Linwood Cemetery. He had six men to his garrison—Stephen Dow, Sr., Stephen Dow, Jr., John Dow, Edward Brumidge, Israel Hendrick, Israel ——, Jr.

Two brick houses belonging to Joseph and Nathaniel Peaselee, in the easterly part of the town, towards Rock's Bridge, and the houses of Major Nathaniel Saltonstall and Capt. Simon Wainwright were designated as houses of refuge. A few soldiers were stationed in each of them, under the command of their owners. Two watch-houses were also built, one of which stood on Main Street, near where John Dow lived some years since. The other was on the bank of the river, on Water Street, a few rods east of the "Duncan Place."

The houses of Joseph and Nathaniel Peaselee were supposed to be still standing when Chase wrote, in 1861. He says: "The former was owned by the late Nathan Sawyer, and stands a short distance east of the latter, which is now owned and occupied by Captain Jesse Newcomb, and is situated about two miles east of Haverhill Bridge."

Saltonstall's house was on the site of the well-known Duncan house, an estate which, from the settlement of the town till after the Revolution, was in the possession of his family. Captain Simon Wainwright's house stood on the site of the "Emerson House," opposite Winter Street Church.

The school-house which then stood in the burying-ground (Pentucket Cemetery), was also used as a watch-house. Many private houses were likewise barricaded, and the people, generally, were, or were supposed to be, on the alert and always ready to defend themselves.

Says Mirick: "Most of the garrisons, and two of the houses of refuge (those belonging to Joseph and Nathaniel Peaselee), were built of brick, and were two stories high; those that were not built of this material had a single laying of it between the outer and inner walls. They had but one outside door, which was often so small that but one person could enter at a time; their windows were about two feet and a half in length, eighteen inches in breadth and were secured on the inside with iron bars. Their glass was very small, cut in the shape of a diamond, was extremely thick and fastened in with lead instead of putty. There were generally but two rooms in the basement story, and tradition says that they entered the chamber with the help of a ladder, instead of stairs, so that the inmates could retreat into them and take it up if the basement story should be taken by the enemy. Their fire-places were of such enormous size that they could burn their wood sled-length very conveniently; and the ovens opened on the outside of the building, generally at one end, behind the fire-places. They were of such dimensions that we should suppose a sufficient quantity of bread might be baked in them to supply a regiment of hungry mouths."

Many families who lived in the outskirts of the town removed with their families to the vicinity of the garrisons or houses of refuge. Thus tradition says that the Dows, father and son, moved near the garrison house of Capt. John White, under whose command they were.

The Indians had a peculiar whistle for signal to each other, which was often heard in the neighboring woods. The younger Dow alone could imitate it, and often concealed himself, and tried to decoy the Indians within range of the bullets of the white soldiers. But it appears he never imitated the wild call well enough to fool the Indians, however much his friends may have admired the success of his mockery.

April 7th another town-meeting was held, "to consider what may & and is to be done as to sending to the Council or General Court for their affording help to this place by soldiers, as it is a frontier town, exposed to great danger, &c." It was voted to send a petition asking for, "upon the Country's charges, 40 men, at least, to be a constant daily scout, to keep out without the utmost garrisons, and in constant service, so as to watch the enemy and prevent & surprise them, or give notice to others within, that they may be encouraged to do somewhat in order to future livelyhood, and in case of need to stand for their lives." Cornet Peter Ayer was "particularly made choice of to present, prefer & prosecute" the petition, in answer to which soldiers were sent from Newbury and other places to Haverhill, Amesbury and Salisbury. Newbury was, of course, less in danger than those towns which sheltered it from savage assaults on the north, yet even there fifty-one persons kept watch every night. Wild rumors everywhere were afloat. Isaac Morrill was arrested at Newbury May 29, 1690, and sent to Ipswich for trial. It was believed that he was enticing Indian and negro servants to steal a vessel, go to Canada, raise a force of four or five hundred Indians and three hundred Canadians, come down between Haverhill and Amesbury over Merrimac River, near "Indian River, by Archelaus hill, on the backside of John Emery's meadow, and destroy. And then they could easily destroy such small towns as Haverhill and Amesbury."

The danger was sufficiently real without panic-raising rumors.

July 5th eight persons were killed at Exeter; two days after, three at Amesbury. July 10th, after the news reached him, Major Nathaniel Saltonstall sent a letter from Haverhill to the Council at Boston, asking help:

"I can, as I wrote by Lt. Johnson, of Almsbury, on Monday last, say that Havll: hath as much need of present & settled assistance as any place; I beseech you cast us not off, or give us comand to draw off. I do not think it much to avail, but as a present satisfaction, yt men visit. us affr mischief is done us, for before yy can be with us ye enimie is hidden or gone, & nothing to be done but for ye men to return, unless yy would stay as men in service, or occasion shal offer. Indeed ye charge is grt; but tho: all are not, yet some are willing to bear their part. Foot men are most advisable & serviceable, & so, in ye end, it will be found, excepting only a very few to be imployed in carrying or fetching newes; men complain more of difficulty to provide for horses than for many more men.

"The Lt. be your counsellor & guid in all these difficulties; let us have a speedy dispatch of the Posts, Philip Grele & Wm. Hely, both of Salisbury, yt I may give accot: to yn yt send to me. I am not in a capacity to help you, but want men for or necessary defence; & orders to keep or own men to duty upon their peril & for their being sent to Boston for judgmt according to yr desert, yt is some of ym;

"I am, gentlemen, your true servant,

"N: Saltonstall."

The savages filled the woods in every direction. It was not safe to leave the vicinity of the garrisons or to be anywhere out of doors unarmed. The gun must be within reach of the hand; even so, surprise was frequent.

August 31st Samuel Parker and a small boy were cutting hay at the meadow in the East Parish, when a party of Indians surprised and shot Parker. The little fellow escaped by hiding himself in the tall grass, and, running from the sound and smoke of the guns, brought home the doleful news. October 10th the General Court ordered that "Maj. Saltonstall do dismiss home the scout of ten troopers appointed to be employed between Haverhill & Salisbury by direction of the said Major for security of said towns in the time of harvest." On the 22d of the same month they ordered that all the garrison soldiers posted in the towns of Haverhill, Salisbury and Amesbury be forthwith dismissed. The theory was that on the approach of winter the Indians, living far to the east and north, would retire before the approach of inclement weather and deep snow. This generally was the case, yet winter attacks sometimes happened.

To add to the distress of the Haverhill people, small-pox, then an enemy terrible in fact and horrible in imagination, broke out among them. A pest-house was established on the hill east of the house where Joseph Bradley formerly lived. Only a few died—Mirick says six.

June 16, 1691, John Robie was killed by the Indians in the North Parish. His wife dying a few days before, leaving him with seven children, the oldest not quite eleven years old, he took the little motherless creatures to a house of refuge. Returning with cart and oxen and his boy Ichabod, he had arrived midway of the present North Parish burying-ground, near the spot where the Clement house stands, when he was shot. Ichabod was taken prisoner, but escaped and got back safely. Saltonstall wrote Major Pike, of Newbury, "June 15, 1691, 12 at night," that Robie was killed about two hours before sunset, "near the woods near Bradley's." He probably refers to Joseph Bradley's garrison.

In the same foray Nathaniel Ladd was shot and soon died of his wounds.

Hutchinson, in his history, says that in October of this year "a family was killed at Rowley and one at Haverhill." The name of the latter is not known. July 18, 1692, Hannah Whittiker, wife of Abraham, was killed.

In August John Keezar was mowing in the Pond Meadow, when an Indian, who had possessed himself of his gun, which he had left beside a tree, mockingly took aim at him: "Me kill you now." Nevertheless, Keezar, plucking up courage from desperation, ran toward him with loud cries, brandishing the glittering scythe. Unaccustomed, probably, to such an offensive weapon, the Indian dropped the gun and fled, swiftly pursued by Keezar, who, overtaking him, plunged the scythe in his bowels. John doubtless thought the only good Indian was a dead Indian.

In response to an urgent call late in the season, Sir William Phipps, the first royal Governor under the new charter, ordered, November 1st, twelve soldiers

to be sent from Newbury to Haverhill. Happily, there were no assaults that year.

A new era came in with the second charter. The form of town government became more complicated, new officers were created, the name of town recorder was changed to town clerk. It will be profitable, therefore, to repeat the roll of town officers chosen at this election in 1692,—

"Lt. John Johnson, Moderator; Nathaniel Saltonstall, Town Clerk; Ensign Thomas Eatton, Cornet Peter Ayer, Sergt. Robert Ayer, Sergt. John Page, Nathaniel Saltonstall, Selectmen; Robert Swan, Sen., Samuel Currier, James Sanders, Ensign John White and Sergt. Josiah Gage, Highway Surveyors; Michael Emerson, Leather Sealer; Ensign Thomas Eatton, Sealer of Weights and Measures; Sergt. Josiah Gage, Lieut. Samuel Ayer, Sergt. John Haseltine, Captain George Browne, William Starlin and Joseph Johnson, Sen., Tythingmen; for viewers of fences, for the west side of the Sawmill River, Ensign Samuel Hutchins, Onesiph. Marsh, Sen.; between the west bridge and Mill Brook and northward as far as Ephraim Gild's, John Johnson, Samuel Emerson; between the Mill Brook and Great Plain, Eph Roberts, Israel Hendricks; for the Great Plain and fields below that, to the extent of Haverhill bounds, on that quarter to the eastward, Amos Singletery, John Whittier; for the northern farms about William Starlin's and in that quarter, Joseph Johnson, Sen., Christopher Bartlett; Steven Dow Sen., Grand Juror; Daniel Lad, Jun., for Jury of Trials."

Joseph Peaseley, by vote, was permitted to put up a saw-mill "at the head of East Meadow River, upon the stream by or near Brandy Brow." This was the second Joseph Peaseley. The mill he built and its successors have always been known as "Peaseley's Mills," and almost always owned by persons of that family.

Only one person, Jonathan Franklin, appears to have been killed by the Indians in the town this year.

At the annual meeting in 1694 the town refused to elect tythingmen, as well as a hayward, culler of staves, field-drivers and house-officers; but a few weeks afterwards a town-meeting was held, "by the order of the Sheriff," to choose a deputy to the General Court and tythingmen. Probably the tythingmen were chosen regularly afterwards. It was their duty to keep order in church, and their office was frequently no sinecure. The old records in many of the towns are full of references to the choice of officers to keep the boys in order at meeting. The tythingman was usually armed with a long stave to reach and punch the heads of unruly youngsters. There are people still living here who remember the tythingmen.

July 30th a meeting was held, by "command of the country," to choose assessors; and Capt. Simon Wainwright, Ensign John White and Cornet Peter Ayer were chosen and sworn—being the first board of assessors. Previously, a commissioner had been chosen to act with the selectmen in making valuations. All the town officers were this year sworn to perform their duties faithfully, for the first time.

The Indians had now made little disturbance for two years, but they made many desperate attacks the present season. September 4th, Joseph Pike, of Newbury, deputy sheriff of Essex, travelling with one Long, between Amesbury and Haverhill, in the execution of his office, fell into an Indian ambuscade, near the north of Pond Plain, and was killed with his companion. "The enemy lay in a deserted house by the way, or in a clump of bushes, or both."

In 1695 the annual meeting was held the first Tuesday in March, according to an act of the Great Court. A town treasurer was chosen for the first time. Lieut. Samuel Ayer was the person thus honored. Mr. Rolfe, now married, asked for wood and the town voted him fifteen cords a year, for three years. John Gild offered the town sixteen pounds for "the side hill adjoining Great Pond," which they voted to take. He agreed to pay "one-third current money, one-third good Indian corn and one-third good, fat neat cattle, fit for slaughter." This shows an advance in the condition of the town.

For a variety, there was a little dispute about Amesbury bounds. But the people were tired of that subject, and directed the selectmen to see that the matter was settled forthwith.

As we have seen, the recorder formerly made an entry that a motion to build a new meeting-house was voted down, improperly and fraudulently. The old meeting-house had become entirely inadequate to hold the people, notwithstanding all expedients to accommodate them. Doubtless, the Indian troubles had much to do with the indisposition to move in the matter.

This year it was voted at an adjourned meeting that the meeting-house "be forthwith repaired so far as is necessary for our present use of the place; till we be better fitted and provided with a new one." Then the question was put, "whether, when the town builds a new meeting-house, it shall be set in the same place where the old house stands?" The town voted no. The question was then put, "whether the new meeting-house for this town, when built, shall be set upon the common land, near John Keyzar's and Lieut. Johnson's new dwelling-places." This was decided "plentifully in the affirmative," only Captain Browne, John Whittier and Samuel Currier dissenting. It was then voted that "a new meeting-house shall be built forthwith, with what speed may be," and a committee was appointed to treat "with men abroad" about doing the work, and to report their proposals to the town. But in May, 1696, a meeting was called to see if the town would build or repair. It was voted to build, and a new committee was chosen "to look out a workman that can and will engage to do the work by the lump or great, for money." They were "to look and view some meeting-houses for dimensions," and then propose the work to undertakers, at home or abroad.

July 28th the committee reported that they had "been abroad at several towns, taking dimensions of several meeting-houses, and taking an account of the cost of them," and "after bartering with divers workmen," they had found Sergeant John Haseltine,

the most inclinable to build of any one. "Haseltine offered to build a house fifty feet long, forty-two feet wide and eighteen feet stud, finishing the same within and without, with seats, pulpit, galleries, windows, doors, floors and stairs," after the pattern of the Beverly meeting-house, and doing the sides after the style of the Reading meeting-house, finding all material, for four hundred pounds in money. After long debate about the site, and the price proposed, the dimensions recommended were approved and the meeting ended.

A special meeting was next called for April 10, 1697, when it was voted that "there be a meeting-house forthwith framed," and "chose a committee to agree with Sergeant John Haseltine, or any other man, about the work." They should agree for everything, even "to the turning of the key," for four hundred pounds in money. There should be a "turret for a bell," and it was agreed the house should stand "at the place by Lieutenant John White's and Mr. Samuel Dalton's."

Everything was now settled. But nothing was settled. In June there was another meeting when, "after much discourse and difference about the place where the new meeting-house should be erected," it was voted to call another meeting, which was held, accordingly, July 5th. Upon the matter of location "paper votes were called for," with the following result: "For the old place that now is 25. For the Common land near Keysar's 53." A new committee was chosen to go on with the work, within the money limit formerly agreed on. Captain Samuel Ayer, Corporal Peter Ayer and Ensign John Page constituted it.

Does anybody suppose the matter was now finally settled? He is much mistaken. July 4, 1698, another meeting was called "by warrant from a justice of the peace," on petition of eight inhabitants, who asked that a committee be raised "to hear all pleas on both sides, and determine where the new frame should be raised." Thirty-three others joined in this request. Then the moderator called for the names of those opposed to such a committee, "which was drawn and brought in," numbering sixty-three: whereupon the moderator declared that the vote was against raising such a committee, and the meeting dissolved. The work going on, a meeting was called late in the year by the selectmen, to consider "whether the people should meet this winter at the old meeting-house or at that which is of new, erected at Widow Keyzar's." John Keyzar has evidently been called from earth during this protracted controversy. The heroic tanner will relate his exploit with the scythe no more. "Votes were called for by personal appearance and entering their names." Something like modern practice at political conventions when suspicion of fraud prevails. "Thirty-four persons entered their names for meeting at the new house as soon as the glass windows are finished & set up," while eighteen voted for continuing in the old meeting-house, "till a new meeting-house be quite finished."

The selectmen were appointed "to determine the places and what room shall be allowed to such as shall desire to have pews in the new meeting-house: and to whom it shall be allowed: they being at the cost for the making of them for their own use as is usual in other places: any other form for seats formerly thought of notwithstanding." The clerk records that "much discourse was held about pulling up the seats in the old meeting-house to set up at a new place for the present meeting-house; but it was fully opposed and reasons given & therefore not put to vote."

Notwithstanding the vote to move to the new meeting-house as soon as the windows were in, it was not in fact done. A meeting was called for October 24, 1699, "for the further consideration and settlement of the affairs belonging to the new meeting-house." The committee last chosen (selectmen) reported that room had been allowed eight persons to make themselves pews in the new meeting-house at their own cost. These were Captain Simon Wainwright, Captain Samuel Ayer, Nathaniel Saltonstall, Sergeant John Haseltine, Lieutenant John White, Widow Hannah Ayer and son, Ensign John Page, Sergeant Josiah Gage.

Seventy-eight persons had voted upon the great test question of locality—probably very near the full voting strength of the town. Those who voted for the old lot by the Mill Brook, were naturally mostly those who lived on Water Street and in the East Parish, like Saltonstall, the Whittiers, Peaseley, Sanders, the Curriers, and so on. Those who voted for the new location more to the westward and on the Common, now the present City Hall Park, were largely those living nearer to Main Street, to the west, over Little or Sawmill River, and in the outskirts of the town, like John Johnson, the Ayers, Marshes, Emersons. One or two of the most important men in the town, like John White and Simon Wainwright, did not vote at all. Chase has printed these lists, which are of value. Twenty persons, headed by Nathaniel Saltonstall, protested against further proceedings after the question of location was decided against them.

At the meeting October 24th a committee was chosen to go and inspect the new meeting-house and report whether it was done according to agreement, and whether the town ought to accept of it. The committee were Nathaniel Saltonstall, Simon Wainwright, John White, John Whittier, Daniel Ela. Saltonstall and Ela had been against the location of the new house. Wainwright and White, to some extent, neutral. The committee's report, presented to the same meeting, will be found in Chase. The report was drawn up by Saltonstall. The committee reported that the dimensions were all greater than

the contract called for: that the outsides were "well fitted and comely." . . . "We cannot but say, we like and well approve of the work; and therefore we humbly propose to the town, now assembled, to accept of the same as to the work and workman's part, in said covenant, his additions being much for the better." . . . "And we again do pray that the town will accept of his work with thankfulness to him for his care & pains, & take care that the Town's part for payment be also faithfully & reasonably performed." Upon reading this report "The town by their unanimous vote, without any one voting to the contrary, granted their acceptance of the committee's return, above written, and of a new meeting-house accordingly." It was then formally voted that the new meeting-house should be the place where the people should "meet and attend for the constant worship of God." November 20th a meeting was called to choose a committee "to place or seat the people in the new meeting-house, that they may know where to sit & and not disorderly crowd upon one another, and be uncivil in the time of God's worship." A committee was then chosen to seat the first committee, "so that there may be no grumbling at them for picking for and placing themselves." But suppose there should be a little log-rolling between the two committees?

The seating committee were subsequently allowed six shillings each for the discharge of that duty.

It was finally voted that "Capt. Samuel Ayer and Nath. Saltonstall be, and are hereby empowered to the best advantage they can, to dispose of our old meeting-house, for the public benefit of said town, for the use of a school-house, or a watch-house, or a house of shelter, or shed to set horses in, for all or any one or more of them, as they can meet with chapmen." And thus passed away the glory of the first meeting-house, which had also been during its period of usefulness, the only public edifice of Haverhill. The erection of the new—a building of large cost and importance for that day—undoubtedly taxed severely the resources of the town. It will have been observed that all proceedings about it had been taken by the municipality as such. The town was the parish, as yet. It is not surprising that there should have been differences of opinion as to the location of the new house. Since religious societies were entirely separated from the towns, such troubles have not been unknown. Piety, in former times, was frequently insufficient to resist the temptation to discord, which the building of a new house for public worship presented. The old ministers used to pray for unity, and were very fervent in thankfulness when they got it.

It will be remembered that eight pews had been built by some of the wealthiest and most substantial citizens of the town. The committee for seating did not interfere with these. They assigned places only upon the "long seats," the rude common benches. But there was a good deal of choice in locality, nevertheless, as to warmth, light, convenience of hearing and proximity to the minister, and people were seated according to their age, importance and social standing. Once seated, they kept their places, under penalty of a fine. When service lasted from nine o'clock in the morning to four or five in the afternoon, with only an hour's intermission, it was important, especially to old folks, whether they could hear and whether they sat in a draught.

There is an interesting view of the second meeting-house in Chase's history. The building near it, was probably, he says, one erected in 1723, for a watch-house and school-house. The account he gives of the view, is the following: It was painted after a steeple had been added to the meeting-house, probably between 1750 and 1766, upon a panel over the mantelpiece in the front room of the "Harrod House," a famous tavern in its time, which stood a little north of the present City Hall. The panel was cut out to preserve the painting and is supposed to be still in the possession of a descendant of the family, unfortunately not a resident of Haverhill. The "Harrod" will be again mentioned in another connection.

The building of the new meeting-house undoubtedly gave Haverhill, in 1701, an importance among the neighboring towns of Essex it had not before enjoyed. It was a great effort, and showed the growing prosperity of the young town. It was very fortunate that after so much discussion and dissension, all should have ended in harmony and good feeling. All honor to Sergeant John Haseltine, the first great master builder of Haverhill, who, in the language of the committee of inspection, "appeared to be honest and honestly faithful to his word."

CHAPTER CLIV.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

Indian Attacks—The Great Descent—Effects of Indian Warfare.

THE Indians made a foray upon the town in August, 1695, when two persons were wounded. It is said they were children of Abraham Whittaker, whose wife, Hannah, was killed by the Indians in 1692. In 1705, the town directed the selectmen to pay Dr. Bradstreet for the cure of Whittaker's children, and another person "for digging a grave for some of the said Whittaker's family, which were killed by the Indians."

In this foray the Indians carried away two boys, Isaac Bradley, aged fifteen, and Joseph Whittaker, aged eleven, who were at work in the field, near Joseph Bradley's house, in what is now the North Parish. Whittaker lived on the Derry road, west from Bradley's. Isaac was small in size, active and shrewd.

Joseph was over-grown, slow-witted and clumsy of movement. The Indians took these boys to Lake Winnipiseogee, where they were placed in a family consisting of a man, his squaw and several children. Here they became sufficiently acquainted with the Indian language to learn that they were to be taken to Canada in the spring, when they determined to escape. Isaac, however, was very ill with fever, recovering only through the care of his squaw mistress, who was kind to both boys. It was consequently April before they were able, on a bright moonlight night, to put their plan in execution. Isaac was naturally leader, by his greater age, intelligence and enterprise. Taking a supply of moose meat, bread and their master's fireworks, they started in a southerly direction, running through the night and hiding in a hollow log at dawn. Pursued by a party of Indians with dogs, they only escaped detection and recapture by the friendly shelter of the log and by sacrificing all their meat to the dogs, who were too busy devouring it to betray their presence to the Indians as they passed by. Resuming the journey at night in a different direction from that taken by their pursuers, the boys pressed on their weary way as fast as their strength would permit. When their bread was gone, they ate roots, buds, berries, with such rich morsels as a raw pigeon and turtle. They did not dare to make a fire for fear its smoke would be seen by Indian enemies. Once, indeed, they came suddenly upon an Indian encampment, seeing the savages seated around the fire, and retreating precipitately under cover of the darkness. Coming to a stream, Isaac had the good sense to follow its meanderings, believing it would bring them out to a settlement. Joseph's strength and courage failed him, and Isaac literally drew and carried him towards succor. On the ninth night of their flight, they came out at Saco Fort. Isaac found his way back to Haverhill, whilst poor Joseph, seized by raging fever, was long ill at the fort and till brought home by his father after much suffering.

August 15, 1696, Jonathan Haynes, who lived in the westerly part of the town, was reaping in a field near Bradley's Mills, while his four children—Mary, Thomas, Jonathan and Joseph, were picking beans in a field near by, when they were surprised and taken captive by the Indians. Mary was eighteen years old; Thomas, sixteen; Jonathan, nearly twelve, and Joseph, seven. The Indians took them to Pennacook (Concord, N. H.), where they separated, dividing their prisoners. One party received Bradley and his eldest son, Thomas, and started for their haunts in Maine. Soon after reaching there Haynes and his son escaped. The father, after two or three days, exhausted by want of food and by fatigue, was unable to continue. Thomas, persevering, reached Saco, where he obtained refreshment, and, returning, was able to revive his parent with the joint stimulus of food and hope. They both returned safely to Haverhill. The children were taken to Canada, and sold to the French for servants. The tradition is that Mary was drawn upon a hand-sled. It is believed she was ransomed the following winter with one hundred pounds of tobacco. Chase says she afterward married John Preston, of Andover, and removed to Connecticut. October 12, 1730, she signed a deed at Windham, in that State.

The boys never returned. A deed of 1731 speaks of them as still in Canada. And Chase says that three brothers named Haynes, of Haverhill, who were in the Canada expedition in 1657, found their relatives, the captives, who were identified, though they could no longer speak English, were contented and refused to leave Canada. They must then have been old men, aged respectively seventy-three and sixty-eight. Mirick says that "Joseph Haynes, a relative," visited the captives.

Mirick and Chase do not agree about the names and sex of the children who were carried away, or as to their ultimate fate. It is surprising that both of them assign to Joseph, a little lad of seven, the role of rescuing the father in the wilderness. Certainly this feat must have been performed by Thomas, the eldest, and is sufficiently creditable to a sturdy youth of sixteen. Besides, it appears from a petition to the Governor and Council, under date of April 17, 1701, that the following Haverhill captives were still missing: Daniel Bradley, aged seven; Abigail Kimball, aged eight; Philip Cod, aged six,—all taken March 15, 1697; *Jonathan Haines*, aged twelve; *Joseph Haines*, aged seven,—taken August 15, 1696; and Abraham Whittiker, aged eight or nine, taken in August, 1691.

March 15, 1697, a party of about twenty Indians made a bloody and sweeping attack upon the westerly part of the town. Their retreat was as swift as their assault, so that although the rumor of destruction soon reached the village, and an armed party marched forth in pursuit, it was unavailing. Nine houses were plundered and burned, in defense of which their owners were slain. Twenty-seven persons were killed, of whom fifteen were children, and thirteen were carried away captive. The following are the names of the killed: John Keezar, his father, and son, George; John Kimball and his mother, Hannah; Sarah Eastman; Thomas Eaton; Thomas Emerson, his wife, Elizabeth, and two children, Timothy and Sarah; Daniel Bradley, his wife, Hannah, and two children, Mary and Hannah; Martha Dow, daughter of Stephen Dow; Joseph, Martha and Sarah Bradley, children of Joseph Bradley; Thomas and Mehitable Kingsbury; Thomas Wood and his daughter, Susannah; John Woodman and his daughter, Susannah; Zachariah White and Martha, infant daughter of Thomas Duston.

The first house attacked was that of Thomas Duston. His wife, Hannah, was the eldest daughter of Michael Emerson, and was at this time not quite forty years old. She was the mother of thirteen chil-

dren in all, the twelfth of whom was a babe of six days old at the time of the descent. She was still in bed under the care, as nurse, of Mary Neff, the daughter of George Corliss, who married William Neff. Neff had gone off in Andros' Eastern expedition, and died at Pemaquid, February, 1688. Corliss gave Mrs. Neff, by will, the farm (as is supposed), now occupied by William Swasey, on Broadway.

Duston was at work in the field, and seeing the enemy at a distance, ran home. There were seven children capable of doing something for themselves, of whom the eldest, Hannah, was over eighteen, and the youngest, Timothy, was two years and a half. Directing these to fly towards the garrison-house (probably Marsh's, at what is now Pecker's Hill), about a mile distant, he hastened to see what could be done for his wife and the infant. But the Indians were swiftly approaching, doubtless uttering their horrible war-whoops; and, as we are told, in all the savage glory of war-paint, armed with guns, "their tomahawks drawn for the slaughter and their scalping-knives unsheathed and glittering in the sunbeam." Recognizing the impos-ibility of rescuing the sick wife, and possibly bidden to do so by her (though no account says so), he determined to attempt to save at least one of the children. Hastily mounting his horse, he rode after them, armed with his gun, and overtook the flying group about an eighth of a mile from his door. Unable to determine which one to save, he dismounted from his horse and faced a little party of Indians who had pursued him. Recognizing his air of resolution, they hesitated to approach a desperate man. Accordingly, Duston, encouraging his children to press on towards the garrison, and keeping his horse as a barrier between himself and the savages, continued the retreat in good order, and reserving his fire, whilst the Indians, skulking behind trees and fences, fired without effect. Thus keeping the foe at bay, he reached the place of safety, when the Indians doubtless appreciated that their time for retreat had arrived, and the victorious but distracted father lodged in garrison the children whom he doubtless looked upon as already orphaned by the death of their mother. In the mean time the main body of Indians captured Mrs. Neff, who was attempting to escape with the babe; and entering the house, directed Mrs. Duston to rise, doubtless by furious gestures. She had scant time for toilet; indeed, it is said, she had only secured one shoe for the terrible journey before her, when the red men, seizing what they wanted, set the house on fire. They had no time to lose, for they doubtless expected a speedy attack from the village, and rallying to retire, they hastened to rid themselves of encumbrances. Such of the captives as were leg-weary or lagged in the march, were tomahawked and abandoned. An Indian seized the Duston babe and dashed its brains out against an apple tree. Of this there cannot well be any doubt, because, for a hundred years after there were aged females who said they had often eaten fruit grown upon the fateful tree. But upon the farm of John James Marsh (formerly Jeff Emery's), near Creek Pond, now Crystal Lake, there used to be shown a rock against which it was said that the Indians had struck the poor little babe. Notwithstanding her weakened state from illness, Hannah Duston travelled a dozen miles or so that day, and in the keen March wind, the weather happening to be extremely cold, kept on with her savage captors through alternate snow, ice and mud. It is related that the women reached their destination in comparatively good health. Such was the hardihood of the pioneer women of New England. Their halt was made at last at a small island, now known as Dustin's, at the mouth of Contoocook River, six miles above the State-House, at Concord, N. H. In the family of the Indian who claimed them as his special property, were twelve persons—"two stout men," three women and seven children.

They were converts of the Catholic priests, and performed their devotions, morning, noon and night, with scrupulous care. Cotton Mather himself, cannot but observe the irony of the situation as he records; "Indeed these Idolators were, like the rest of their whiter brethren, Persecutors, and would not endure that these poor women should retire to their English prayers if they could hinder them." Yet they treated with kindness their unhappy captives; who found here another captive, an English youth, named Samuel Leonardson, taken prisoner at Worcester a year and a half before. It was intended to take the prisoners to Canada, and sell them to the French, according to custom. They were told also, that when they arrived at an Indian town, they would be stripped and made to run the gauntlet. Although they had unflinchingly endured so much, the prospect of these further indignities was insupportable to the women. They determined to escape, and Hannah Duston, who doubtless suggested the idea, planned the method, which was carried into execution on the 30th or 31st of April, after a stay of five weeks at the island. The Indians looked upon Leonardson, who had lived so long with them in apparent contentment, as one of their own family, and through him Mrs. Duston obtained from one of the Indians, in social chat, much needed information where to strike an enemy in order to kill him instantly and how to scalp a man. Everything being in readiness, an hour before the break of day, the two women and the boy, armed with hatchets, began their attack upon the sleeping Indians. Mrs. Duston killed her master, and young Leonardson killed the man who had taught him where and how to strike. One squaw, whom they had wounded sorely, yet managed to escape; also a little Indian boy, whom they had intended to spare and bring away with them. Then gathering up what small stock of provisions the wigwam afforded, the gun of the master,

and the tomahawk with which she had killed him, scuttling all the canoes save one to impede pursuit, Mrs. Duston embarked her command in the remaining one, to voyage down the Merrimac. Before proceeding far she suddenly recollected that they had neglected to avail themselves of the information how to scalp neatly, which they had procured from the dead Indian. Expressing her fears that the neighbors would not believe their whole tragic story without the bloody evidence of the scalps, they returned to the wigwam, took the ten scalps, and, wrapping them in a piece of linen cloth brought from her house at the time of capture, resumed their perilous voyage. It was indeed perilous. The squaw and child who had escaped, would as soon as possible report what had happened to neighboring Indians, who would be sure to pursue. Besides, they were thinly clad and illy supplied with food. However, they did not lose courage, having been favored so far. They kept a good-look out: at night, two slept and one paddled. And thus in due time they reached home and presented themselves to their friends who had given them up for dead.

After recovering from their fatigues, the now famous returned captives repaired to Boston, accompanied by Thomas Duston, the gun, the tomahawk and the ten scalps. Duston presented to the General Assembly a petition for recompense on account of "the just slaughter of so many of the Barbarians," and his own misfortunes, "having lost his estate in that calamity." Twenty-five pounds were voted Duston; twelve pounds ten shillings to Mary Neff, and twelve pounds, ten shillings to Samuel Leonardson. Hannah Duston had the honor of being interviewed by no less important a reporter than Cotton Mather, who gives the whole story in the "*Magnalia*," in his usual graphic, staring fashion. Thomas Duston was, quite probably, son of Thomas Duston, of Dover, N. H. The name is first found in the records of Haverhill, as the builder of a cottage before 1675; as soldier in King Philip's war (August, 1676); in the list of cottagers before February 1677: and again, in the list of cottages built between February, 1677 and January 1679, is the name of Thomas Duston second. The record of town meetings, first presents the name in 1682.

It may be conjectured that Thomas Duston and Thomas Duston second in the cottage lists, are the same. Duston lived in a small house at the time of the attack. Moses Merrill, who was living in 1860, remembered the cellar as a boy, and showed the site to Chase, the historian. Duston was building a new brick house at the time of the attack.

The name was originally Durstan; in the town records it is generally spelt Duston, but occasionally Dustan and Dustin. Dustin is the most common form at the present time, Mirick writes of him: "Thomas Dustin was a man of considerable ingenuity, and tradition says that he had a vast deal of mother wit." It is pretty clear that at the time of the attack, he lived on the west side of Little River. August, 1697, three months after Mrs. Duston's return, Thomas Duston bought of William Starlin the land Starlin had bought and received by grant of the town in 1684. This land was at the Fishing River and east of Little River, near the northerly end of Primrose Street. The consideration was one hundred pounds, and tradition says the scalp-money was part of it. The town records, March 4, 1701–'2, mention "the highway that leads to Tho. Duston's mill." In 1723–'4, Duston lived on the Starlin estate. Duston was living in March, 1729. The date of his death is uncertain, as is that of his wife. It seems to be known, however, that she survived him some years, living, after his death, with her son Jonathan, who resided on the southwest part of the original Thomas Duston farm. From 1715 to 1721–'2, Duston was moderator of most of the Proprietors' meetings.

Duston's feat has been commemorated in poetry and prose. President Dwight, of Yale College, in his "Travels," has a spirited account of the retreat and defense of the flying children.

Some years since a monument was erected on Duston's (or Contoocook) Island in the Merrimack, in memory of this bold slaughter and escape.

In 1855 a Duston Monument Association was formed in the West Parish of Haverhill, which resulted in the erection of a suitable monument, dedicated in June 1861. Unfortunately, the Association had incurred debts which were not liquidated, and in 1865 the monument was actually taken on execution and removed, and has been, it is said, erected as a soldier's monument, in another town of Massachusetts. This was a mortifying incident. But on the 25th of November, 1879, a statue, erected upon the Common in front of the City Hall, at the cost of the late Hon. E. J. M. Hale, was donated by him to the city in honor of Hannah Duston, and accepted in its behalf in appropriate resolutions of the City Council.

The famous tomahawk is said to have been lost in the woods long afterwards. The Indian gun, remaining in possession of the male line of Hannah Duston's descendants till 1859, was then presented to the Duston Monument Association. It has since found a resting-place at the City Library; but it is understood that the trustees have recently surrendered it to a descendant whose claim to its possession was considered well-founded. The Duston descendants are numerous and highly respectable. After the terrible alarm and massacre, the town authorities awoke vigorously. It has been said that Thomas Duston was at the time building a new brick house. This was appointed a garrison, and Duston himself its commander, as appears by the following order:

"To Thomas Dustin, upon the settlement of garrisons, April 5, 1696–97. You being appointed master of the garrison at your house, you are, in his Maj'n (Majesty's) name, required to see that a good watch is kept at your garrison both by night and by day, by those persons hereafter named, who are to be under your command and inspection in building or repairing your garrison: and if any person refuse or neglect their

duty, you are accordingly required to make return of the same, under your hand, to the Committee of Militia in Haverhill. The persons appointed are as follows: Josiah Heath, sen., Josiah Heath, jun., Joseph Bradley, John Heath, Joseph Kingsbury, and Thomas Kingsbury.

By order of the Committee of Militia,

SAMUEL AYER, Capt."

It will be observed by the date that Hannah Duston was still in captivity, nothing as yet being known of her fate.

Mr. Duston was, for the time, largely engaged in brick-making. The business, however, was carried on at great risk, because the Indians were almost always lurking about, watching their opportunity. The clay-pits were only a short distance from the garrison, but the savages were so bold that a file of soldiers constantly guarded the men who brought the clay from the pits to the yard near the house, where it was made into bricks.

Considering the remarkable character of Mrs. Duston's exploit, and the Indian's disposition to revenge losses incurred in such a manner, it would not have been surprising if special efforts had been made to recapture her and wipe out so deadly an affront.

It may be observed that Mather in the "Magnalia," presents to us Mrs. Duston's own views of her feat in its moral aspect. "Being where she had not her own life secured unto her, she thought she was not forbidden by any law to take away the life of the murderers by whom her child had been butchered." Being without the pale of the law, she was a law unto herself. Mirick, in his history informs us that "various opinions are afloat concerning the justness of this truly heroic deed." He intimates that perhaps the strict moralist would not approve the act. It may be apprehended that, in Hannah Duston's day, such scruples would have found little favor. A descendant of hers, recently deceased at an advanced age, came to Haverhill in 1880 to delight his eyes with an inspection of the then newly erected monument, and to traverse the scenes to him hallowed by her former presence. When he was asked in a rather delicate and guarded manner what he thought, morally and æsthetically, of the killing and, more especially of the scalping which did not appear to have been necessary for safety and which some squeamish people might even regard as wanton—whether it was in his judgment a slight departure from the normal delicacy and sensibility, so beautiful in woman—the veteran's eye glared and with a voice of thunder he replied, "Not a bit on't—I *glory* in her spunk!"

Mirick has a story that one of the Indians ravaging to and fro, stole the first town-book of records. Retreating up the river with a few others, the party found a yoke of oxen in the westerly part of the town, now Methuen, cut out the tongues of the poor beasts, struck up a fire and broiled them. Then, continuing their rapid return towards the north, they left the town-book behind them either by accident or design. It was speedily found, but so damaged with water that many of the records were illegible.

Chase does not believe these anecdotes, for plausible but not conclusive, reasons—first, because Nathaniel Saltonstall, who was then town clerk and had been for a long time, would have had this record in his possession, and the Indians did not penetrate within about two miles of his house in the village. But he concedes that the book might have been in the possession of the family of John Carleton, the second town clerk from 1664 to 1668, who lived west of the village. He does not think, however, that an Indian would make "prize of an old record-book when there were so many other things within his grasp far more attractive and valuable to savage eyes." But the Indian, who could neither read nor write, might regard the book covered with characters illegible to him as the white man's fetich and carry it away either as the method most effectually of annoying his enemies, or in the vague hope of deriving some unknown virtue from its possession. But probably the following transactions taken from the town records will serve better to make the matter clear than any conjecture, however aided by ingenious reasoning.

March 3, 1673–74, Mr. George Browne and Thomas Whittier were appointed to overlook the transcript of book No. 1 copied into book No. 3, as made by the town clerk. May 15, 1674, they reported the transcript to be "consonant and agreeable to the said old book," and that there was no need for the town to use the old book, but should commit it to the town clerk, who adds this memorandum in Latin, with which he was fond of garnishing his records: "Vera copia oppidanis publicita; et tradita, et iis conscripta et approbata, qua nunc scriptis meis deposita est. Nathaniel Saltonstall, recorder."

The book being thus traced to the town clerk, who evidently means in this manner to acknowledge its receipt and deposit, it is hardly probable it should have been permitted to stray off again into the West Parish.

This original record book is in the town archives at City Hall. Considering its great age and rough usage, it is in a state of respectable preservation. In 1848, when a new town hall was completed, a safe was purchased for the better preservation of the town records; and the first two books of the records were ordered to be copied. Chase writes: "The latter task was performed in a most faithful and beautiful manner by Mr. Josiah Keeley."

Mr. Keeley's work is beautifully executed; but it is not a copy, it is an *abstract*. The ancient record is crabbed and difficult, but not undecipherable; and the experts in such writing at the present time would have made literal copies. Mr. Keeley seems, however, to have got the sense of the orders for all practical purposes.

The Haverhill town records have, upon the whole, been exceedingly well kept and preserved. There is a loose leaf, the history of which is told in the

records:—"March 10, 1717-18. At a town-meeting in Haverhill by adjournment, Captain John White brought one leaf of town-book and delivered it to Moderator, who delivered it to town-clerk to put it into the town-book, and note when it was returned; and was accordingly done by John Eaton, Town-Clerk, and this is the leaf that was brought by Captain White." The leaf is still safe in the custody of the present excellent City-Clerk.—March 22, 1697, the Massachusetts Assembly adopted the following order: "Whereas, it is reported that Colonel Saltingstall hath been very negligent of his duty as colonel, and that the late damage at Haverhill, wherein about forty of his majesty's subjects were killed and captured by the heathen enemie, besides six houses burnt and much spoile, and y^t the said Colonel did not (as he might, when he had notice of the enemies approach) take care to draw them into Garrison; nor encourage the pursuit of them when persons offered; that his Honor will be pleased to make inquiry into the said affair, and see that there may be due animadversions, which may be a proper means to prevent the like miscarriages."

This order was adopted a week after the massacre, when doubtless many idle rumors were flying about, and there was the usual disposition to blame somebody. "His Honor" was William Stoughton, then Lieutenant-Governor and acting Governor, an old associate of Colonel Saltonstall. There may have been "due animadversion," but there is no record of it, and the Colonel retained his command.

This order recites the burning of six houses. Mather, whom Drake and others have followed, says, "about half a dozen houses;" a cotemporary journalist (Fairfield) entered in his diary that the Indians "burnt nine houses," Saltonstall, Myrick, Chase and other local writers, agree upon nine.

February 22, 1798, a party of Indians, early upon the war-path, made an attack in Andover, killing five and capturing five, returning through the westerly part of Haverhill. Here they captured in ambuscade Jonathan Haynes and Samuel Ladd, with their eldest sons, Joseph Haynes and Daniel Ladd. They each had an ox and horse team, with which they were hauling home hay from the extreme western part of the town, where it had been stacked since the preceding summer. The savages killed the elder Haynes, because "he so old he no go with us" —too infirm—and Ladd, who had a stern face, "because he so sour." Chase repeats a tradition that the savages camped at night in "Mill Meadow," a mile and a half north-east of World's End Pond. Here they killed the oxen, cutting out their tongues and other select pieces, to carry along in their homeward march. Chase is of the opinion that this incident has been transferred by Mirick to the Duston affair of a year previous, with exaggerated details, and so that the Indians were not guilty of cruelty to living animals, as had been charged.

The young men were carried to Pennacook, where they were kept some years till ransomed. Ladd was terribly disfigured by the savages with powder, being caught in an abortive attempt to escape. A descendant of Haynes has an ornamented staff, which his master gave him upon his return from captivity in token of regard.

March 5th a party of about forty Indians made a second raid on Andover, killing five persons and burning two houses and two barns, with the cattle in them. "On their return," says Hutchinson, "they made spoil on Haverhill." This is supposed to have been the burning of the house and buildings of Philip Eastman.

A treaty of peace had been made in the preceding autumn between the English and French (September 20, 1697), known as the peace of Ryswick, and soon after the last injuries the Governor of Canada notified the Indians to bury the hatchet. It was quite time for the poor English in such exposed settlements as Haverhill. They now had a little breathing space in which to cultivate their land and increase their flocks, sleeping tranquilly at night without hearing the war-whoop.

In this interval a building was erected (1700) on what is now Main Street, near the top of the hill, and facing the Merrimack, for a watch-house, schoolhouse, or any other public use. In this year, for the first time, the town referred claims against the town to a committee to audit, instead of considering each one by itself in town-meeting.

At the annual election in 1701, John White was chosen town clerk in place of Nathaniel Saltonstall, who had served since 1668, a period of thirty-three years. He had doubtless been an admirable clerk, though he sometimes presumed upon the citizens' ignorance of Latin to interpolate irrelevant comments in that language. This year the town remitted Joseph Peaseley his rates on account of his loss by fire.

At a special meeting in 1702, it was voted to levy a rate or tax of £31 12*s.* 00*d.*, to defray the town's indebtedness for the previous year. In this amount were included £6 for the schoolmaster, £2 10*s.* for the selectmen's salary, and six shillings for "time and money spent to obtain a schoolmaster." Ten pounds was voted Mr. Rolfe for wood, and "four public contributions," which had first been given him the previous year, and were annually continued till his death. Such contributions, of one sort or another, were taken every Sunday towards the close of service, their object being previously explained by one of the deacons. The people proceeded to the "deacon's seat," and deposited their offerings in due order,—first the magistrates and dignitaries, then the elders, and lastly the common people. After the benediction all the people remained standing, whilst the minister marched down the aisle, followed by his family, and gravely bowing on either side.

In 1698 a clerk of the markets was first chosen—

Ensign Thomas Eatton, who continued as such till 1706.

At the annual meeting in 1703 Captain Richard Saltonstall petitioned the town for liberty to run a fence "from the pound cross over the spot where the old meeting-house formerly stood to his fence," and to "feed on the burying-place," viz., to pasture animals upon it, or else that the town should fence in the burying-place by itself, which the townsmen voted to do, when the old meeting-house had now been removed.

May 4, 1702, England declared against France and Spain, the war known in Europe as the "War of the Spanish Succession," but in America as Queen Anne's War. It was not long before the French and the English colonies in America were involved in it; notwithstanding the previous peace, it appears that in March and April, 1700, Capt. Samuel Ayer had twenty soldiers under his command, who were in constant service here. March 16th twenty men were sent from Ipswich to Haverhill. Early in 1702, the House of Representatives ordered snow shoes to be provided for the militia in the frontier towns, that they might be prepared to resist and pursue Indian depredators in the winter.

At the approach of war an additional garrison was ordered in the house of James Sanders, who lived at or near the foot of "Sanders'" Hill, in the northeasterly part of the town. James is thought to have been a son of John, who came from the parish of Dainton, Wiltshire, England.

Mirick says that early in the spring of 1701, the Indians attacked the garrison house of Jonathan Emerson, at the northwest corner of the present Winter and Harrison Streets. He may have antedated the time of the attack; but indeed, some straggling party may have anticipated the war, and made an assault without direction from their French masters. The garrison repulsed the attack without loss, whilst it is said that two Indians were killed, whom the redmen carried away and threw into the "deep hole," near the brick-yards. In the winter of 1704, February 8th about three or four o'clock in the afternoon, a party of six Indians surprised the northern garrison at Joseph Bradley's, rushing in at the open gates. Jonathan Johnson, a sentinel, shot and wounded the foremost, and Mrs. Bradley, who had a kettle of boiling soap on the fire, threw a ladleful of it over the unhappy savage, whom the "subsequent proceedings" interested no more. The savages at once killed Johnson, and took prisoners Mrs. Bradley and four others. Three whites escaped unhurt, and the Indians probably fearing to be surprised in their turn, commenced a precipitate retreat. The weather was bitter and the snow deep, whilst the unhappy captives were overweighted with a heavy burden. Mrs. Bradley lived for many days on bits of skin, bark, ground-nuts, wild onions and lily-roots. In such a miserable plight she gave birth to a child, deep in the forests. When the child cried the Indians thrust hot embers in its mouth. In mockery of the rite of baptism, they gashed its forehead with their knives; and, during her temporary absence they piked it upon a pole. At last the party arrived in Canada, where the Indians sold Mrs. Bradley to a Canadian for eighty livres.

She was treated kindly by the family of which she thus became an inmate, and in March, 1705, her husband went to Canada, and redeemed her. Tradition among deseendants relates that he travelled on foot, accompanied only by a dog that drew a little sled, whereon was a bag of snuff, a present from the Governor of Massachusetts (at this time Joseph Dudley) to the Governor of Canada. The reunited couple voyaged from Montreal to Boston, and returned to Haverhill in safety.

The old writers said this was Mrs. Bradley's second captivity; and tradition added that when the Indians rushed into the garrison, one of them cried out, exultingly, "Now Hannah, we got you." There was a good deal of confusion about the second captivity, but there seems to have been no doubt that in the summer of 1706, the year after the return of Bradley and his wife, their garrison was again attacked in the night time. It is said they, their children and a hired man, were the only persons within it. But the moon shone brightly and they could see the red men silently and watchfully stealing near. They all armed themselves, and Mrs. Bradley, in her desperation, declared to her husband, that she had rather be killed than taken prisoner again. The savages, rushing against the door, tried to break it in and partially succeeded, when Mrs. Bradley shot and killed the foremost, who was struggling to crowd himself in at the opening. Baffled in this first attempt, the Indians, as often occurred when their first leap failed, retreated like the wild beasts of the forest, whose habits in their warfare they often seemed to have copied.

This was not Mrs. Bradley's first captivity, as appears from the State Archives. In 1738, Hannah Bradley, of Haverhill, petitioned the General Court for a grant of land, in consideration of her former sufferings among the Indians and her "present low circumstances." That body granted her two hundred and fifty acres of land which was laid out to her in two lots, May 29, 1738, in Methuen, by Richard Hazen, a noted Haverhill surveyor.

Shortly after, Joseph Neff, a son of Mary, petitioned for a similar grant, in recognition of his mother's service in helping Hannah Duston to kill "divers Indians." He says his mother was "kept a prisoner for a considerable time," and "in their return home (they) past thro the utmost hazard of their lives and suffered distressing want being almost starved before they could return to their dwelling." Neff was granted two hundred acres of land. In aid of his petition, Mrs. Bradley made the following

deposition which establishes the fact that she had been taken prisoner March 15, 1697, with Mrs. Duston, and traveled with her at least as far as Pennacook :

"The deposition of the Widow Hannah Bradley, of Haverhill, of full age, who testifieth and saith that about forty years past the said Hannah together with the widow Mary Neff were taken prisoners by the Indians and carried together into captivity and above penny Cook the deponent was, by the Indians, forced to travel further than the rest of the Captives, and the next night but one, there came to us one Squaw, who said that Hannah Duston and the aforesaid Mary Neff assisted in killing the Indians of her Wigwam, except herself and a boy, herself escaping very narrowly, shewing, to myself and others, seven wounds as she said with a Hatchet on her head, which wounds were given her when the rest were killed, and further saith not. her

HANNAH X BRADLEY."
mark

August 4, 1704, Joseph Page and Bartholomew Heath were killed at Haverhill by the Indians, and a lad with them had a narrow escape.

The distress occasioned by Indian alarms was such that the town directed the selectmen to petition the assembly for abatement of that year's taxes. The next year a constant watch was kept day and night. In June Governor Dudley directed Colonel Saltonstall to "detach twenty able soldiers of the Newbury militia, and have them rendezvous at Haverhill on July fifth." These orders were given, and July 17th Saltonstall writes Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas Noyes, of Newbury, a severe letter, complaining of the physique of the "able soldiers," sent as "a considerable number of them appeared to be but boys or children, and not fit for service, blind, in part, and deaf and cross-handed." August 4th he writes again to Noyes in the same strain.

"Some idea," Chase truly says, "of the dangers and alarms of those years, and the great exertions made for the security of the frontier towns, may be had from the large number of soldiers ferried across the Merrimac at a single place, Griffin's Ferry, opposite the present village."

In 1707 Griffin would appear to have ferried over, at different times, two hundred and eighty-four men and nearly as many horses; in 1708 one hundred and eighty men and thirty-one horses.

June 24, 1707, Joseph and Ebenezer Page, sons of Joseph, were killed in Haverhill. In August another attack was made, in which Nathan Simonds, of this town, and Jonathan Marsh, of Salem, were wounded.

Early in the spring of 1708 intelligence was sent to Governor Dudley at Boston that a French and Indian force, consisting of eight hundred men, was about marching for some one of our frontier settlements. Upon the receipt of this news, he "ordered guards in the most exposed places of both his provinces." Four hundred Massachusetts militia were posted in New Hampshire. A patrol was kept up from King-ton to Dover, and scouts were continually upon the move. To Haverhill were sent about forty men, commanded by three Salem officers—Major, afterward Colonel, Turner (a principal merchant of that place, and for many years a member of the council), Captain Price and Captain Gardner. Soon after their arrival they were posted in the frontier houses and the garrisons. The following is the French account of the Canadian expedition. It is copied from Father Charlevoix's "History of New France." "This expedition had been decided upon in a great council held at Montreal with the chiefs of all the Christian Indians settled in the colony, and other Abenaquis were to join with a hundred picked Canadians, besides a great number of volunteers, chiefly officers in our troops, making in all four hundred men. Messieurs de St. Ours des Chaillons and Hertel de Rouville were to command the French, and the Sieur Boucher de la Perriere was to lead the Indians. As it was important to keep the project secret till the moment when the warriors should start and to march rapidly, it was arranged that the two first named commandants should proceed by the St. Francis River with the Algonquins, the Abénaquis of Bekancourt, and the Hurons of Lorette, and that La Perriere with the Iroquois should go by Lake Champlain: that all should meet at Lake Nikisipigue (Winnipisiogec), where the Indians bordering on Acadia were to be at the appointed time. Various incidents well-nigh defeated the expedition, and delayed the march of the warriors. At last, on the 26th of July, they started; but Des Chaillons and Rouville, on reaching the St. Francis, learned that the Hurons had turned back, because one of their men had been accidentally killed, apparently while hunting, the rest believing, from this, that the expedition would be disastrous. The Iroquois, whom La Perriere was conducting by way of Lake Champlain, soon followed this example, under the pretext that some of them were sick, and that the malady might easily spread through the whole force.

"De Vaudreuil (Governor of Canada), to whom the commandants wrote, communicating this desertion and asking his orders, replied that even if the Algonquins and the Abénaquis of Bekancourt should also abandon them, they should nevertheless keep on and make a dash at some isolated place, rather than return without doing something. Des Chaillons imparted this letter to the Indians, who swore that they would follow wherever he might lead them. They accordingly set out to the number of two hundred, and after marching one hundred and fifty leagues by impracticable roads, reached Lake Nikisipigue, but found no Abénaquis there from the Acadian border, those Indians having been obliged to turn their arms elsewhere.

"They then resolved to march against a village called Hewreuil (Haverhill), composed of twenty-five or thirty well-built houses, with a fort, in which the Governor resided. This fort had a garrison of thirty soldiers and there were at least ten in each house. These troops had but just arrived in the place, having

been sent by the Governor of New England, who, on hearing of the march of the French, had sent similar detachments to all the towns of that district.

"Our braves were not dismayed on learning that the enemy were so well prepared to receive them, and no longer trusting to a surprise resolved to make it up in valor. They rested quietly all that night and the next day, one hour after sunrise, drew up in battle array. Rouville made a short address to the French to exhort all who had any quarrels with each other to be reconciled sincerely and embrace, as they all did. They then prayed and marched against the fort. Here they met with a vigorous resistance, but at last entered sword in hand and set it on fire. All the houses were also well defended and met the same fate. About a hundred of the English were killed in these attacks; many others, too slow in leaving the fort and houses, were burned in them, and the number of prisoners was large. There was no booty, as no thought was given to it till everything was consumed by the flames. Moreover, the sound of drum and trumpet was heard in all the neighboring villages, and there was not a moment to be lost in securing their retreat.

"It was conducted with great order, no one having more provisions than were needed for the homeward march. This precaution was even more necessary than they imagined. Our men had scarcely gone half a league, when, on entering a wood, they fell into an ambuscade formed by seventy men, who, before uncovering themselves, fired every man his shot. Our braves stood this volley without flinching, and fortunately it did no great damage. Meanwhile all behind was full of horse and foot, in close pursuit, and there was no course but to trample down those who had just fired on them.

"They took this course without hesitation; each one threw down his stock of provisions and almost all his baggage and without losing time with fire-arms at once rushed to close quarters. The English, taken aback by this sudden attack from men whom they supposed they had thrown into confusion, were routed themselves and could not rally; so that, except ten or twelve who escaped by flight, all were killed or taken.

"Nescambionit (an Indian warrior whom the English writers call Assacambuit), who had returned from France the year before, always fought near the commandants, performing wonders with a sabre presented to him by the King. He received a musket-ball in the foot. In the two actions we had eighteen men wounded, three Indians and five Frenchmen killed—among the last, two young officers of great promise, Hertel de Chambly (Rouville's brother) and Vercheres. During the last combat, several of the prisoners taken at the attack on Hewreuil (Haverhill) escaped.

"All the rest praised highly the kind treatment shown them by their captors during the retreat, which was effected without accident, after the encounter just mentioned, and various incidents, related of some of the officers and volunteers, were more honorable to them than the signal proofs they had given of their bravery. I was one of the first to learn them, because I was at Montreal, at the very port, when the party landed there about the middle of September. Great praise was given especially to the Sieur Dupuys, son of the Lieutenant Particulier, of Quebec, who had carried his humanity so far as to carry the daughter of the King's Lieutenant at Hewreuil a good part of the way, the girl being almost unable to walk.

"The inaction of the English youth, much more numerous than the French, surprised men in Canada and one of the prisoners was asked the reason. His answer revealed the true cause of the remissness of the Iroquois led by La Perriere on his last expedition. This man said that it was not the fault of the young men of his nation that they had not raised war-parties against the French this year; that more than five hundred of the most alert had asked and obtained leave of the Governor-General of New England, but that as they were on the point of marching, they received counter-orders in consequence of a letter from the Governor of Albany to his general.

"In this letter, he added, the Governor stated that he had just gained control of the Christian Iroquois, who had assured him that no Indian would ever again take the war path against the English; that it was thus useless to go to any expense to attack the French, who, reduced to their own forces, were in no position to undertake anything, so that they might rest assured that the English colonies would henceforth enjoy perfect tranquillity, which was all they desired.

"This same prisoner also said that it was believed at Hewreuil (Haverhill) and all the cantons, that the party that laid waste that village was merely a detachment from a force of sixteen hundred men, of which the main body was not far off; that the same thing was said at Boston and that throughout New England they were constantly under arms, which exhausted the people greatly. It was ascertained from another prisoner that the Governor of Albany had recently made considerable presents to the Christian Iroquois."

It would appear that the French Governor-General of Canada, the Marquis de Vaudreuil, whilst sending his detachments of French and Indians against the English settlements in New England, had pursued a conciliatory policy towards Peter Schuyler, whom Charlevoix calls the Governor of Albany. He was accordingly much disgusted to find that Schuyler had been intriguing with the Catholic Indians and had warned Governor Dudley of the expedition which resulted in the attack on Haverhill. Charlevoix continues: "On his side, the Governor-General complained warmly to the Governor of Albany that

while he left his district and all New York undisturbed, out of consideration for the Dutch and for him personally, and this with a view of keeping the Iroquois to a neutrality no less advantageous to the English colonies than to New York, he (Schuyler) not only kept constantly stimulating the cantons to take up arms, but was building a fort in the Mohawk canton, and laboring to debauch from him the Indians domiciliated in the centre of the French colony."

October 8, 1708, about three weeks after the return of the Haverhill expedition to Canada, Schuyler replied to Vaudreuil: "As for the belt which I sent with a view to prevent the Indians from taking part in this war, carried on against the government of Boston, I must avow the fact, but I was impelled to it by Christian charity. I could not help believing it my duty to God and my neighbor to prevent, if possible, these barbarous and pagan cruelties, which have been but too often perpetrated on the unhappy people of that province." "Petre Schuiler," comments Father Charlevoix, "was a very worthy man, and here expressed only his real sentiments; but he was sufficiently aware of all that had occurred during the last fifty years in that part of America to know that it was the English who drove us to the stern necessity of letting our Indians act as New England did theirs. He could not be in ignorance of the horrors to which the Iroquois had gone at their instigation during the last war; that even at Boston the French and Abénaquis held as prisoners were treated with an inhumanity little inferior to the cruelties of which he complained so bitterly. . . . It was also easy to prove that neither the French nor their Indians had ever resorted to the cruelties he reproached them with, except in retaliation; and that before determining to resort to this means to stop the barbarities used by the Iroquois to our officers, our missionaries and our settlers, and the ill treatment to which the Bostoners subjected our allies and our own people, the most illustrious in New France had long been allowed to shed unavailing tears." . . .

"It was not only in Canada that the English sought to turn against us the Indians, whose esteem and affection we were always more successful than themselves in securing."

In this manner, the accomplished Jesuit presents the French side of the issue of responsibility for Indian atrocities. And having now read the enemy's account of the descent upon Haverhill, let us turn to that transmitted to us by the English writers and local tradition. Discrepancies will of course be observed. Charlevoix received his narrative from the returning Frenchmen, who doubtless magnified their own exploits. Besides, the English accounts are confused and difficult to reconcile. People who lived in the time of our Civil War, and are familliar with its literature, will not be surprised that we have not a clear narrative of this affair, which happened in the gray of the morning in an obscure frontier hamlet, one hundred and eighty years ago.

Thus, Charlevoix says the attack was made "one hour after sunrise." The local accounts say that on Sunday morning, August 29, 1708, *at break of day*, the French and Indians passed the frontier garrisons undiscovered and were first seen near the pound by John Keezar, who was returning from Amesbury. John Keezar was a wandering cobbler, the son of John Keezar who was killed in the Indian attack of March 15, 1697. The original pound, as we know, stood near the meeting-house. In 1773 the town voted "to build a stone pound in the corner of the parsonage pasture, near Captain Eames." This pound stood on the west side of Main Street, about midway between White and Fourth. Probably the pound of 1708 may have stood lower down, but near the present line of Main Street. Keezar ran into the village and alarmed the sleeping and unguarded inhabitants by firing his gun near the meeting-house. Another account assigns the honor of discovery to one Hutchins who was out stealing milk. Still another to a young man, who went up on the common to catch his horse, for an early start (on the Sabbath!) for a distant town, but who unluckily went to hide his sweetheart before he told the people. An old tradition says that the assailants came down along the present line of Concord Street, east of Round Pond. Upon that route they would have shunned the garrison houses, and would be quite likely to come within the observation of John Keezar, returning from Amesbury. At any rate, they speedly whirled into the village, uttering wild yells, with shrill whistling, and dressed in hideous war-paint. It is well known that the Frenchmen, who so easily assimilated themselves to the Indian habits and thus acquired the extraordinary control over them to which Charlevoix alludes, frequently adopted the Indian war-dress. Nothing could be conceived more horrible and distracting. No wonder the savages seemed like red demons to our ancestors. The first victim was Mrs. Smith, shot whilst flying from her house to a garrison. The enemy broke up into small parties, to do their bloody work more quickly and effectually. There was no fort and they attacked none.

The first assault was made at the house of the pastor, Rolfe, which stood at the corner of the present Main and Summer Streets, where the venerable Dr. Moses Nichols lives (1888). The house was garrisoned by three soldiers, who behaved like poltroons, and who even, it is said, begged their foes for mercy, which they did not deserve and did not get.

Mr. Rolfe, an athletic man, in the prime of life, awakened by the savage yells, jumped out of bed and placed his back against the entrance door, which the enemy were trying to break in. Calling in vain on his guard for help, he was wounded in the elbow by a ball passing through the door. Still he resisted till, finding the door giving way, he fled through the

house and out at the back-door. The Indians overtook him at the well and gave him swift despatch with their tomahawks. Some roved over the house for plunder and victims. Mrs. Rolfe was killed by a hatchet stroke in the brain, and her youngest child, Mehitabel, an infant, snatched from her protecting arms, was dashed against a stone near the house door.

Hagar, supposed to have been a negro slave, saved by her courage and dexterity two of the Rolfe children—Mary, a girl of thirteen years, and Elizabeth, who, three days later, attained her ninth year. At the first alarm Hagar took the children into the cellar, covered them with tubs and then hid herself. The enemy rushed to and fro in the cellar and even trod upon the foot of one of the girls who had the resolution not to cry out. They drank from the milk-pans, dashed them upon the cellar floor, and took meat from the barrel behind which Hagar was crouched. In after-years these girls were accounted remarkable women. Mary married Colonel Estes Hatch, of Dorchester. Elizabeth married Rev. Samuel Checkley, of Boston, minister of the New South (Church Green). Her daughter Elizabeth married Sam Adams, the patriot, and John Lothrop Motley, the historian, was one of her descendants. There were two other children—Benjamin and Francis, aged respectively twelve and six at the time of the massacre. December 22, 1735, the House of Representatives granted to Benjamin Rolfe, for himself and other children, heirs of Benjamin Rolfe, a plot of land in Lunenburgh, not to exceed six hundred acres and not to interfere with any former grant. This, of course, was in consideration of the sufferings and losses of the family in the descent on Haverhill.

Anna Whittaker, a girl of eighteen, probably in attendance as nurse to Mrs. Rolfe, hid herself in an apple chest, under the stairs. She lived to be seventy-four years old, was a famous midwife, was twice married, and at her death had one hundred and twelve descendants. She probably often told the story of the wonderful escape, and it seems likely that in her old age she dreamed that she had saved Mary and Elizabeth's lives; but the laurels of poor black Hagar were not thus to be stripped from her.

Thomas Hartshorne lived a few rods west of the meeting-house—the new one, on the Common, now City Hall Park. He and two sons were shot just after leaving the house, and a third son was tomahawked as he came out of the door. Mrs. Hartshorne and the rest of the children, save one, escaped notice by going into the cellar, closing the trap-door over them. The enemy swarmed through the house for plunder, and finding an infant on a bed in the garret, threw it out of the window, on a pile of clapboards. It was picked up unconscious when all was over. When this infant had become a man of lofty stature and great strength, the neighbors used to joke him, saying that the Indians *stunted* him when they threw him from the garret window.

Lieut. John Johnson lived where his descendant, Bailey Bartlett, lived, and the Exchange Building on Water Street now is. When a party of the enemy made their appearance, he and his wife were standing in the doorway; with them was Ruth, wife of Thomas Johnson 2d (son of his son, Lieut. John, 2d) who had in her arms a babe a year old. Johnson and his wife were shot down where they stood, and Ruth Johnson, flying through the house, was killed in the garden at the rear, where the Osgood block stands. Tradition says that the babe was found, clinging to the dead mother's breast. Johnson was a deacon and the town records show that he was a useful and respected citizen. Chase says that he is supposed to have descended from Captain Edward Johnson, the famous author of the "Wonder Working Providence of Zion's Saviour," before quoted. This would be "important, if true," as a distinguished antiquary used to observe; but Chase gives no evidence in support of the suggestion.[1] Edward Johnson came over with Winthrop in 1630. Returning to England a little while, he was in Charlestown for a few years (1636–42), and then became the chief founder of Woburn. Deacon John Johnson was the original blacksmith, who came to Haverhill in 1658. He was seventy-five (75) years old.

Mr. Silvers' house, within ten rods of the meeting-house, was rifled and burned. The watch-house, on Main Street, built seven years before, was attacked but successfully defended.

The house of Captain Simon Wainwright, the merchant, stood directly opposite the Winter Street meeting-house. He was shot at the first assault. Mrs. Wainwright unbarred the doors and admitted the assailants. After a little parley, she left them under the pretense of procuring them money, and escaped with all her children, save a daughter who was taken captive. A party of soldiers were quartered in the chambers, and made a resolute defense, driving off their assailants. They made an ineffectual attempt to fire the house, but took with them three prisoners. Meantime, the soldiers killed from the windows two Indians, who were skulking behind a rock while they fired. Buried in the field, the floods exposed their bones only a few years ago.

Swan's house stood on White's lot, near the Winter Street meeting-house. The old Revolutionary soldier, Captain Nehemiah Emerson, used to tell the tale of its defense, as he got it from his grandfather, who, on the day of the great fray, lived in the garrison house of *his* father, Jonathan Emerson. The Swans had children, in whose defense and their own, they determined to hold out as long as possible. Two Indians attempted to break down the door, which they had barricaded with their bodies. Hard pressed, Mr. Swan, a timid man, thought it would be best to yield

[1] It is not true. St. John Johnson was oldest son of William Johnson, of Charlestown. He was born in England in 1633 and came in his mother's arms to Charlestown the next year. See "Genealogical Register," January, 1879.

and not exasperate the foe. But Mrs. Swan was resolute, and when the foremost Indian was forcing his way in, she ran her spit, three feet long, through his body. The disheartened savages retreated spiritless, but whether *spitless* or not, the chronicles do not vouchsafe to tell us.

Simon Wainwright, as we have mentioned, came from Ipswich. His father, Francis, was famous for his exploit in the Pequot War, when, being attacked by two Indians, and breaking the stock of his gun, he killed them both with the barrel. Simon was an influential and very prosperous citizen. In those days the traders were likely to get what ready money there was about. Was the rumor of it so great that even the Canadians had heard of it who asked his wife for money? There was a story that he had a great chest packed tightly with Spanish dollars. He buried a good many of his dollars in his life-time, and there has been considerable digging at different times to find it, but in vain. For the information of treasure-seekers, it is deemed proper to mention here that the dollars will be found in the space "bounded by Little River on the south and west, Winter Street on the north, and the easterly line of the lots on the easterly side of Emerson Street on the east."

April 29, 1710, Widow Mary Wainwright petitioned the General Court from Haverhill to take some care for the redemption of her daughter, "a long time in captivity with the French of Canada," "before Canada be so endeared to her that I shall never have my daughter more." The indorsement on the petition is: "In the House of Representatives read and recommended 12th June." May not this captive girl have been "the daughter of the King's Lieutenant," whom the Sieur Dupuys, according to Charlevoix carried "a good part of the way"?

Nathan Simon's house was attacked and he was wounded in the arm by a ball. He shot two Indians and the attacking party retired.

Sibley, the late well-known antiquarian of Harvard College, states in his history of Union, Me., that there was a tradition of the Sibley family that Samuel Sibley, the ancestor, was killed by the meeting-house. Sibley, was from Salem and was probably one of the soldiers under Major Turner.

These various attacks were made about the same time by separate small detachments of the invaders.

One of them had set fire to the rear of the new meeting-house, constructed, as we have seen, at so great an effort. Its loss would have been almost irreparable. Fortunately, a wholesome diversion occurred just at this time. Mr. Davis, a bold and quick-witted man, going behind Mr. Rolfe's barn, which was near the house, struck violently with a great club, and with outcries and words of command, shouted, "Come on! Come on! We will have them." The stragglers still remaining in Mr. Rolfe's house took alarm and, after a hasty and fruitless attempt to fire it, ran forth crying: "The English are come." Doubtless the raiders had been warned by their leaders that their success depended upon a surprise, and the work must be rapid on account of the soldiers in garrison houses at their rear. And about this time Major Turner actually arriving with his company of soldiers, the whole force commenced a rapid retreat, taking with them a number of prisoners. Mirick says the retreat commenced about sunrise. The opportune Davis ran to the meeting-house, and, with the aid of a few others, put out the flames and saved the building. The Sibley tradition declares that Samuel, the ancestor, was killed while throwing water here. It might have been a last, straggling shot.

The town was now roused and taking to arms. Joseph Bradley (probably the commander of the North garrison) collected a small party and secured the medicine box and packs of the enemy, which they had left about three miles from the village. The spot is said to have been a short distance north of the house of Deacon Carleton, in the West Parish, about half a mile north of the place where the subsequent fight took place.

Captain Samuel Ayer, a strong and fearless man, collected a party of about twenty men and pursued the enemy, coming up with and attacking them as they were about entering the woods, when they faced about and gave battle. Captain Ayer was soon reinforced by another party, led by his son, making the whole number of townsmen about sixty or seventy. After a smart fight which lasted about an hour, they retook some of the prisoners, and the French force retreated in haste, leaving nine of their number dead on the field. Mirick declares that their sufferings were so great, on account of the loss of their packs and the consequent want of food, that many of the Frenchmen gave themselves up as prisoners; and some of their own captives were dismissed with a message that if they were pursued, the rest should be put to death. Probably there were some stragglers in the rapid retreat; and we have seen that Charlevoix admits the escape of "several" of their prisoners "during the last combat."

The French account states also that their people threw down their packs of provisions in order to carry on the last fight with greater ease, and makes no mention of the packs having been left behind in the outskirts of the town and taken by the English. Mirick claims that the French left thirty of their number dead, in both engagements, and many were wounded whom they carried with them. Perhaps some Indians were killed of whom no exact roster was made. Governor Dudley, in his address to the Assembly, says: "We might have done more against them if we had followed their tracks." This might well be. The French were in a very critical condition, at such an immense distance from home. The attack had been a bold one and they were fortunate

they did not pay a terrible penalty, in their retreat being cut off entirely.

One may conjecture that each party had seen enough of the other.

Captain Ayer was killed in the engagement, before the reinforcing party arrived. He was shot in the groin, and bled so profusely his son did not recognize him. Captain Ayer was a deacon, also one of the selectmen, and an active, resolute and worthy man. He lived near Plug Pond.

The local historians make the number of killed belonging to Haverhill as sixteen,—Mr. Rolfe, wife and child, Mrs. Smith, Thomas Hartshorne and three sons, Lieut. Johnson and his wife Catherine, Capt. Wainwright, Capt. Ayer, John Dalton, Ruth, wife of Thos. Ayer, with one daughter, and Ruth, wife of Thomas Johnson 2d. Probably about the same number were carried away as prisoners.

Joseph Bartlett, of Newbury, about twenty-two years old, who was stationed as a soldier at Capt. Wainwright's house, was taken prisoner, and after his return from Canada published a very interesting account of his adventures. He was absent over four years. The General Court allowed him £20 15*s.* for his charges and expenses. He was taken in the Wainwright house, in company with Mary Wainwright and another soldier named Newmarsh. Soon after the retreat began a Salem soldier named Lindall was knocked in the head. The attack by Capt. Ayer's party so demoralized the French that they broke up into small parties, which did not unite again for three days. During that time they traveled hard. When they reached Lake Winnipiseogee, the French and Indians separated. Bartlett was taken by the Indians. However it may have been with the former, the Indians suffered for lack of food. Bartlett seems to have had his share of what was going. He appears not to have been treated unkindly, except by the squaws. Perhaps the Indian women may have hated the English, against whom their husbands fought and at whose hands they sometimes fell, as the English women hated the Indians. As a rule, the Indians treated their captives tolerably well, except in case of sudden provocation or terror. This was ordinarily a matter of policy, as they intended to sell them to the French for servants. The aged, sick and infants, with whom they did not care to be embarrassed, they certainly made short and brutal work of.

Pike, in his journal, says that "many soldiers belonging to Salem were here slain." Among them was William Coffin, to whose widow, Sarah, the General Court granted £5, "on account of the remarkable forwardness and courage which her husband, William Coffin, of Salem, distinguished himself by, in the action at Haverhill, where he was slain."

When the fighting was over and comparative calmness had arrived, the day was far advanced. It was midsummer and sultry, and the dead must be speedily buried. Some, no doubt, were put in earth where they fell. Coffins could only be made for the most important. In the burial-ground a large pit was dug, where several were laid away together. Mr. Rolfe, his wife and child, were placed in one grave, near the south end of the ground. A respectable monument was erected to their memory, with suitable inscriptions, which, in the course of a century and a half, became illegible. In 1848 an appropriate monument and inscriptions were erected by the care of the women of Haverhill, who were engaged in restoring the "old burying ground" to a condition of becoming decency. The old Latin epitaph to Mr. Rolfe was recarved and is as follows: "Clauditur hoc tumulo corpus reverendi, pii, doctique viri, Benjamin Rolfe, ecclesiæ Christi quæ est in Haverhill, pastoris fidelissimi: qui domi suæ ab hostibus barbare trucidatus. A laboribus suis requievit mane diei sacræ quietis, Aug. XXIX, Anno Domini MDCCVIII, ætatis suæ XLVI."

Samuel Sewall, then judge of the Superior Court, entered in his diary, under the date of 1703-04: "Febr. 8, a garrison house is surprised at Haverhill by six or seven Indians." This was the attack in which Hannah Bradley was taken prisoner.

"Lord's Day, Aug. 29, 1708. About 4 P.M. an express brings the news, the doleful news of the surprise of Haverhill by 150 French and Indians. Mr. Rolf and his family slain, about break of day. Those words ran much in my mind, I will smite the Shepherd and the sheep shall be scattered. What a dreadful scattering is here of poor Haverill flock, upon the very day they used to have their solemn assemblies! Capt. Wainwright is slain."

May 1, 1697, the judge made entry: "Hannah Dustan came to see me; gave her part of Connecticut flax. She saith her master, whom she killed, formerly lived with Mr. Rowlandson at Lancaster. He told her that when he prayed the English way, he thought that was good, but now he found the French way was better. The single man showed the night before to Sam'l Lenarson how he used to knock Englishmen on the head and take off their scalps, little thinking that the captives would make some of their first experiments upon himself."

September 25, 1708, there was an alarm, but no attack. Colonel Saltonstall wrote the Governor and Council on the 27th "that a party of the enemy, to the number of about thirty, were discovered in the town on Saturday night, but that he soon gave the alarm, drew a number of soldiers together, and had repelled and driven them back without suffering any loss." The Boston *News Letter* of October 4th says of this affair,—"Some few skulking Indians were discovered in the town in the night, and the alarm being made, they were soon frighted, and drew off without doing any mischief."

October 18th Jonathan Emerson, Jonathan Eatton and William Johnson, selectmen, petitioned the General Court for abatement of a part of the town tax.

They set forth the assaults upon the town, "damnifying us to ye valne of about (£) 1000 lb. beside (which is more) loss of lives, thereby reducing us to great extremity and distraction, discouraging of hearts of many amongst us who are upon designs and endeavors to remove, whereby our condition is rendered in some measure comparable to yt of David's & ye men with him when Ziklag was spoiled. Considering also in conjunction therewith ye extreem charges we must be exposed unto (if our town stands) in building strong garrisons. Now settling a minister, &c." The court ordered an abatement of thirty pounds from their tax.

In 1711 we find that the parsonage house was prepared and *fortified* at an expense of £11 14*s.* 6*d.* The garrisons and houses of refuge were kept in order. A company of soldiers, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Richard Saltonstall were armed, equipped and exercised. June 19, 1710, the General Court ordered these men to be equipped with snow-shoes. Snow-shoes were also supplied to the North Militia Regiment of Essex. Chase gives a list of fifty-six of these snow-shoe men who lived in Haverhill.

August 27, 1712, a foot company of fifty men was ordered raised and posted at Haverhill.

Queen Anne's War closed April 13, 1713, with the peace of Utrecht, and on the 13th of July following a treaty was made with the Indians at Portsmouth, embracing the tribes from the Merrimac to the St. Johns. By this treaty the English were to enjoy their old settlements, without claim or molestation from the Indians, while the latter reserved their ancient rights of hunting, fishing and fowling. The government was to establish convenient trading-houses, where the Indians could obtain supplies without the extortion and imposition formerly common. The next spring a ship was sent to Quebec to exchange prisoners.

Hutchinson estimates that "from 1675 to 1715 5000 to 6000 of the youth of the country had perished by the enemy or by distempers contracted in the service."

The peace with the Indians did not last long. Fresh troubles arose with the Eastern tribes, and in 1717 it was necessary to have a confirmation of the treaty of 1713. The Jesuit priests, notably Father Ralle, who had his station and mission chapel at Norridgewock, were held to be responsible for stirring up the Indian hostilities. Three times an attempt was made to capture him. August 23, 1724, the English surprised and destroyed his settlement, and the body of the good priest was left upon the ground near the cross, scalped and outraged. Whatever, however, may be said of Father Ralle, his death broke the power of the Norridgewocks and led towards a permanent peace. Previously, in 1722, Brunswick, Me., was destroyed, and great alarm sprang up all along the frontier.

August 10, 1722, the selectmen were ordered "to build a good fort round Rev. Mr. Brown's house with what speed they could." The people did not mean to lose a second good minister. The town clerk journeyed to Ipswich on horseback to get nails for the fort, and two quarts of rum—a very moderate quantity—were used for the raising, at an expense of four shillings. In the spring of 1724 the enemy seemed to be omnipresent. They were scattered all over the country in small parties, plundering, murdering and spreading terror in every direction. A constant watch was kept. In July Colonel Noyes, of Newbury, was directed to send twelve men to Haverhill and six to Amesbury, to serve as scouts. September 15th "John White, Capt.; Richard Kimball, Capt.; Jonathan Woodman, Capt.; and Richard Hazzen, Lieut.," wrote to the Governor from Haverhill, strongly urging the sending a strong party to Lake Winnipiseogee, to surprise and utterly break up the Indians in that region.

The last important passage of arms in these hostilities was at Pequawket, or Pigwacket (Fryeburg, Me.), in May, 1725. The long Indian hostilities had trained Indian fighters among the English as hardy, as wary and cunning as the savages themselves. John Lovewell, of Dunstable, was one of the most noted, and raised a party of volunteers for this expedition which numbered forty-six men besides himself, including a chaplain and surgeon. The chaplain prayed morning and evening. He was Frye, of Andover, and the doggerel in which his name is commemorated illustrates the spirit of the time:

> "They wounded good young Frye,
> Who was our English chaplain.
> He many Indians slew,
> And some of them he scalped
> While bullets round him flew."

Four of Lovewell's men were from Haverhill,—Abiel Asten, Ebenezer Ayer, Doctor William Aver and Zebediah Austin. Asten was living in 1790, at a great age, in that part of old Haverhill now Salem, N. H. Austin lived in what is now Methuen. He got back too, for he married in 1729. These Haverhill men probably joined Lovewell's party here, where the expedition was furnished with supplies by John White, who had charge of the stores kept here, to supply the soldiers. They marched away about April 27th. After the famous fight with Paugus and his men at Saco Pond, only a few wounded, exhausted men were left to crawl away. But nobody dared hang upon their trail. After the famous fight the power of the Eastern Indians steadily declined, and the Abenaki chiefs signed, at the Council chamber in Boston, December 15, 1725, a treaty of peace which was long respected, and other tribes acceded to it at Falmouth (Portland) in 1727.

Even after Lovewell's fight the terrors of Haverhill continued. A scouting-party was in service during September and October, 1725. Joshua Bailey and Jonathan Woodman wrote to the Governor

August 30th that Indians had recently been "lurking in the woods; guns heard, etc." The men were called "centinels," and a line of them were kept constantly posted on the frontier of the town to keep watch and give alarm if need be. In 1723 John Clement had asked to be relieved from paying the rent of the Parsonage Farm for the previous year because he had been driven off by the war.

We have arrived at a time when the troubles of the Haverhill people, growing out of hostilities by the Indians, were at last drawing to a close. There were still French and Indian Wars, and Haverhill men fought in them. But the town was now safe. Notwithstanding the fear and annoyance inspired by the savage, the line of settlement was moving to the north. Haverhill ceased to be a frontier town and was itself protected by other towns.

The story of the Indian forays upon Haverhill was told by Mirick in his history of the town with considerable vivacity. Sixty years ago a respectable amount of tradition remained upon the lips of the old people still living, which he was fortunate enough to catch and reduce to permanent form. In the West and North Parishes there were those who, sitting in the corners of the great open fire-places of winter nights, had heard, with breathless attention, their grandsires' tales of how the Indians came down.

In 1795 Rev. Abiel Abbot was ordained as minister of the First Church in Haverhill. He was an admirable scholar and a fine writer, with literary tastes. Interested in the early history of the town, he set himself speedily to do his share towards preserving its annals. Judith Whiting, who was a big girl when the great descent was made, was still living. When the Haverhill bridge was completed in the fall of 1794 the old woman walked over it unaided. Mirick says she was then in her hundredth year. She failed to complete the century, lacking twelve days when she died. But she was full of the Indian lore, and Mr. Abbot received its narratives from her lips and reduced them to writing.

This period in the town's annals has been dealt with with great, and perhaps disproportionate detail. But it is not only the romantic, but the critical period. The townspeople often talked of "drawing off,"—abandoning their property to the savage foe. Probably they never really meant to do that; they were made of sterner stuff. But they might have been obliged to go. An attack like that of Hertel de Romilles, made ten or twelve years before, would almost have exterminated them. The French commanders were men of superior enterprise and skill, far abler than the English. And as Charlevoix has truly told us, they, with the assistance of the astute and indefatigable Jesuits, were much more successful in the management of their Indian allies. They appreciated the Indian character. They were not disgusted by his brutal traits, or they were much more successful in concealing their disgust. The Jesuits lived with their converts; they ate and slept with them. This even the good apostle Eliot could not do. He would have given his life to save them, in this world and the next; but his stomach would not bear their food, and the heat, the filth and the vermin of their wigwams overpowered him to faintness. From the Gulf of St. Lawrence to the Pacific Ocean, the Frenchman, whether colonist, pioneer, warrior or trapper, has been gay and contented, with his Indian wife and his copper-colored children. Under Frontenac and Vaudreuil, New England was long harried and tormented. Then the enterprising Frenchman built a whole line of forts from the St. Lawrence River to the Gulf of Mexico; and until the triumphs of Pitt and the death of Montcalm, upon the heights of Abraham, it was not certain that the Gaul would not drive the Anglo-Saxon into the Atlantic Ocean. True, the Englishman was driving his roots deep into the soil. The Frenchman was full of military fire and ambition; his rival was cultivating the earth and increasing his resources. He had, at least, the longest purse, and the heaviest battalions for war.

The Catholic religion and the priest's simple baptism—the Mass and the cross—suited the American savage better than the severe austerity and the subtle theology of Calvinism. No wonder Hannah Duston's master "found the French way better."

The patient consideration of our fathers' relation with the Indians, is the more necessary in order to comprehend the permanent effect it had upon the character of the New England people.

The leading living representative of the first Massachusetts Governor says: "The spreading of the Gospel and the conversion of the heathen were foremost in the contemplation of the New England Fathers." Before leaving England, in 1629, in "The Conclusions for New England," Winthrop wrote: "It will be a service to the church of great consequence to carry the Gospell into those partes of the World, to helpe on the comminge of the fulnesse of the Gentiles." But the Massachusetts colonists found very few Indians in their immediate neighborhood; they were very busy themselves, and they postponed carrying the Gospel to a more convenient season.

Then came the Pequot War, and the stern and inexorable destruction of that tribe, infusing the wholesome terror of the white man's power and resolution, which kept the peace for more than a generation. These were the years in which the beneficent works of Eliot and his associates were wrought; but, as has already been intimated, those labors were not regarded with universal favor. But they made the presence of the Praying Indians familiar in the white settlements. Familiarity bred contempt. The Indian was lazy; he was always willing to be drunken. Meanwhile, he sold his peltry to the traders, he got guns and ammunition and learned how to use them. When King Philip's War broke out, these besotted loafers, familiar with the English towns and ways, became dangerous.

As villages burned and war-whoops sounded, the terror and rage of our good fathers were intense and equal. They seem to have determined to rid themselves of their noxious neighbors as far as possible. They killed as many as they could, and they reduced a large number of the rest to slavery. These terrible measures did their perfect work in Southern New England. There was no more Indian warfare in that region. The Indians of the Islands and the Cape, who stayed at home during Philip's War, though he was their overlord, ever after lived at peace with their white neighbors, and have been treated not unkindly by them. But peace has been more fatal to them than war. Not a man of absolutely pure Indian lineage remains among them.

The scene of Indian hostilities was now transferred to the North, and the people who suffered lived in the outskirts of the English settlements, like the men of Haverhill.

The men of Haverhill found few or no Indians in the territory of Pentucket. They took alarm at the first rumor of outbreak and bought the Indian title of those who had or claimed the right to sell it, with the professed assent of the tribal chieftain. Their dealings with the natives were certainly very slight, apparently nothing. They were poor themselves and hard-working, but they were contented and were steadily progressing when King Philip's War broke. Then, though not themselves immediately involved in its horrors, they began to feel all the anxieties of war. Rumors came thick and fast. They could almost see the flame and smoke of the burning villages at night. And soon their turn came, too.

Involved as these unlucky American colonists were in the dynastic quarrels of Europe, they were obliged to participate in a horrible warfare at the caprice of their sovereigns.

It must be supposed that Ward and White and Clement, their associates and their children, did not consider that they had done any wrong to the red men. The red men to whom the forests and streams of Pentucket once belonged had passed away. The survivors had sold their title. Their enjoyment of these thousands and thousands of acres had been only transitory, for a little hunting and a little fishing in its season, and the rude cultivation of a few acres near the mouth of Little River.

The white man, on the other hand, was making the wilderness bloom and blossom as the rose. In the half-century of his occupation he had subdued more acres than all the red men of New England would skim over, with their clam shell hoes and skin-deep cultivation, in a thousand years. He had brought in the European civilization; he was attaining contentment and abundance; he was looking on to gain luxury and refinement in due time. Most of all and best of all, he was doing God's appointed work. There was no doubt about that.

Who were these Indians again, who came with terrible war-whoop and painted faces and unfathomable savagery? They were not the original Pentuckets—most of them had never seen Pentucket till they came to plunder, slay and scalp. They were the Abenakis of the East, the wild Hurons and Algonquins of the distant North, who traversed great wildernesses to attack a peaceful and unoffending people. They were not Praying Indians, such as we had formerly contemplated with amused and undisguised contempt. They were pagans, heathen; worse, they were the creatures of Romanism, the puppets of the hated Jesuit priests. They were idolaters.

They came to burn the cabin, to scalp the women, to throw red-hot embers into the mouths of babes. They harried the settlements, not only to destroy property and make life insecure—they made life a torment. It was not worth having at such a price—of perpetual vigilance. The husband went forth to the field, to the village, to the town-meeting—what agony to the wife, living on the edge of the cleared lands, when he did not return at sunset! And to the husband and father, accidentally and imperatively delayed. What anxiety! how slow the good horse is! As he climbs the last hill, shall he see his dwelling in flames? Shall he find it in ashes, wife and the little ones already far on the way to the wilderness and Canada as captives?

Again, the Indian fought by surprise, approaching by stealth till near his prey, and then springing upon it with leaps and bounds and the cries of the beasts of the forest. It was the fashion most of all repulsive to the open, straightforward, bull-dog nature of the Englishman, though after a generation he learned to match the red man at his own arts.

And now what wonder that the frontiersman came to look upon his Indian foe as he looked upon the noxious creatures of the forest—the rattlesnake whom he crushed beneath his heel, the wolf for whose head he offered bounties? Rev. Solomon Stoddard, of Northampton, wrote to Governor Dudley in 1703: "They don't appear openly in ye feeld to bid us battle; they use those cruelly that fall into their hands; they act like wolves and are to be dealt with all as wolves." And so Mr. Stoddard proposed that the English "may be put into ye way to hunt ye Indians with dogs as they doe bears."

There was nobody in that day to point out the general good treatment of captives by the savages—their scrupulous respect to the chastity of their female prisoners. In truth, their clemency and their fantastic humors were too uncertain to make the position of a captive with them altogether pleasant. Still, a pretty good brief could be made in their behalf and from their point of view, in looking over their transactions with the Haverhill people. But there was nobody then certainly who could be invoked "to put yourself in his place." Even now, one needs be careful. As the historian Palfrey, who had made a painstaking study of the Indian character, wrote of Father

Ralle, the Jesuit whom "the Bostoners" slew and scalped. "Men of this century not in danger of the tomahawk which his zeal lifted against the wives and children of a hundred years ago, can afford to be just to his good qualities, such as they were, and to be sentimental over his grave."

We shall not be sentimental. It was a case of self-preservation. One party or the other had to go to the wall. It was a question of the survival of the fittest. It would ill-become the descendants of old Haverhill to doubt that in this case, the fittest survived.

There certainly is no trace of resentment towards the French Canadians, a hundred of whom apparently came here in arms on the fateful Sunday morning in August, one hundred and eighty years ago. Their descendant is in Haverhill to-day. He is welcome, and, it is believed, is doing good and is being done good unto.

But the people from 1675 to 1730, the Hannah Dustons and Hannah Bradleys and the children they bore in those terrible days of bloodshed, captivity and terror, and the generations who listened to the night-mare tales of Indian atrocities, became deeply imbued with impressions of the cruelty, treachery and worthlessness of the Indian character. The fifteen millions of people descended from the New England pioneers, have carried these impressions to the Pacific slope, and they are not extinct to-day. The Indian philanthropist is actuated, no doubt, by the highest motives of humanity, and, in the immeasurable superiority of our race and civilization, we cannot do too much to save the fragments of the people, whom we have practically dispossessed of the continent. But the ordinary American is very listless about the cause.

The door through which Pastor Rolfe was wounded, was preserved until destroyed by fire, nailed up in the porch of the First Parish meeting-house.

The indirect influence of the Indian wars upon the morals of the community was unfavorable. All war is demoralizing. The presence of the garrison soldiers was not propitious. Danger, anxiety, desperation, do not ordinarily promote temperance or self-restraint. If a man strikes a sturdy blow in the hour of peril, his frailties will be overlooked for a while. And what is overlooked in him, is apt to become chronic in the community. Haverhill was not the same orderly, devout society in the eighteenth as it had been in the seventeenth, century.

Even in perilous times people occasionally smile, and it would seem that grim-visaged war sometimes smoothed his wrinkled front, even at the garrison-houses. As at Jonathan Marsh's fort on Broadway, when the brave sentinels fired till their ammunition was about gone, at a supposed Indian discovered within the palisadoes, and found in the morning it was only an old maid's petticoat, hung on the clothes' line to dry!

Or at Thomas Duston's garrison, when Joseph Whittaker surprised the state of Mary Whittaker's feelings towards himself by feigning to have thrown his person in despair into the fortress well. Still more pleasant is it to read of Thomas Whittier, a Friend, and the ancestor of the most eminent Friend in the world, who lived near the garrison house of James Sanders, but would not seek shelter there for himself and family at night-fall, as was the prevailing custom. He built no palisade wall about his house, he never carried a gun with him, and he always treated the Indians kindly. In return, they never molested him or his. Thus it happened that in the evening when the family gathered about the chimney corners, and the fitful shadows danced, guttural whispers were heard outside the rude windows. Keen eyes shone like fireballs, and copper skins glistened. But no fear was ever felt, and no harm was ever done. The tradition is a charming one; we may as well believe it, as nobody has ever had the hardihood to deny it!

CHAPTER CLV.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

Witchcraft—Crime—War about the Commons.

It has been said, with some pride, that the witchcraft delusion of 1692 had no currency either in Haverhill or Newbury. But among the "Witchcraft Papers" in the clerk's office of Essex County is a power of attorney to Stephen Sewall "to procure us a copy of the act in favor of us in respect of our reputations and estates and to act for the reception of what is allowed us, and to transact any other thing referring to the premises on our behalf that may be requisite or convenient." This paper is signed, among numerous others, by Joseph Emerson, in behalf of his wife, Martha Emerson, of Haverhill. The inference would naturally be that Martha Emerson had, at some time, been implicated in those unhappy proceedings. Stephen Sewall was clerk of the court at Salem and brother of Judge Sewall, who sat in the trials at Salem, and afterwards made confession in the Old South Meeting-House. As to Newbury, Cotton Mather, in his "Remarkable Providences," gave an account of the "troubles preternatural" in the house of William Morse, of Newbury, Mass., in 1679, for which Mrs. Morse, in 1680, was sentenced to be hung, though she was never executed.[1]

If no witchcraft prosecutions originated in Haverhill, it could not boast an entire immunity from

[1] On the 27th of September, 1692, John Shepard, of Rowley, was bound over to Court for assisting to convey Mary Green of Haverhill, a person charged with witchcraft, out of Ipswich jail.

criminals and crime. Samuel Sewall, December 25, 1674, entered in his all-containing diary that "Samuel Guile, of Havarel," had committed at Amesbury a capital offence against chastity. September 25, 1691, he records: "Elizabeth ———, of Havarill, is tried for murdering her two female bastard children. September 26.—She is brought in guilty by the jury, Mr. Crisp, Foreman. Mr. Stoughton was not in Court on Friday afternoon when the trial was, and went off the bench on Saturday."

"Thursday, June 8, Elizabeth Emerson, of Havarill, and a negro woman were executed (at Boston), after lecture, for murdering their infant children. Mr. Cotton Mather preached from Job 36: 14; made a very good sermon to a very great auditory." Elizabeth Emerson was that unhappy daughter of Michael Emerson whom he beat so cruelly in 1674. The town recorder entered in his records the birth of her two illegitimate children, May 8, 1691, and adds: "The mother lay long in prison, but at the long run, in the year 1691, as I take it, was executed at Boston for the murthering of the two babes, or one of them."

Mention has been made of the action formerly taken to secure the town's undivided lands to the original proprietors and their heirs and assigns. In 1705, on motion of Captain Samuel Ayer, a declaratory motion was carried,—"That before any vote or act pass for the disposing of the land or timber in Haverhill, it may be known who by law have right to vote in the affair." A committee of five were chosen "to run lines and settle bounds between individuals and the Common lands," and "the moderator gave notice of a meeting of the proprietors of the common or undivided lands in Haverhill for April 2." April 2d, "at a meeting of the Commoners," the old committee chosen to examine the claims of persons to these lands was dismissed, and a new one was chosen: Captain Samuel Ayre, John White, Joseph Peaseley, Sr. And this committee was ordered "to do it as speedily as possible." The commoners did not meet again till July 21, 1707, when nothing was done except to adjourn to September 2d. A committee was then chosen to prosecute all trespassers on the common-lands, and the town clerk was empowered, as "clerk of the Proprietors in Haverhill Commons," to execute a power of attorney for the committee, who immediately began suits against several persons.

In the spring of 1709, another Commoner's meeting was held, at which John White, who was town clerk, was also chosen "Proprietors Clerk," and it was voted to hold a meeting on the first Tuesday in April, annually. It appears, from the record of this meeting, that at a former meeting the committee previously chosen for that purpose had reported the names of all those who were entitled to vote as proprietors of common land. The same person being clerk for the town and also for the commoners, the record of their meetings was kept in the town book of records until April 13, 1713, when they began keeping them in a separate book and so continued until they ceased to meet as such. Having now organized themselves as a separate body, and denying the right of a town's man in the Commons, unless he also represented one of the original proprietors, by purchase or descent; the absurdity of keeping their records with the towns', must speedily have become apparent. In 1711, the Commoners "voted and granted that the cow common may be fenced in from the Pond Bridge, and so by Ephraim Guile's, and as far as the river runs by Ephraim Roberts' sawmill and so to Thos. Duston's"—that is, the fence followed the stream from the outlet of Lake Kenoza to Duston's, which was near the junction of Fishing and Little Rivers. The Cow Common continued in this direction to "the Lane by Jonathan Emerson's"—Winter Street,—But the Commoners were not to be allowed their claims without any challenge. At the annual town meeting, in 1719, it was voted "to make all the inhabitants of this Town, proprietors in Common lands according to the changes they have borne in the town in the time of the war;" and a committee was chosen "to examine what every man paid to the rates, in the time of the war in this town." This was a proper form for the non-commoners to test the question, but the proposition was never carried out. In June, 1719, "Upwards of twenty of the inhabitants and Free-holders" petitioned the selectmen to call a town meeting "to prevent the disposing of any more of the common-lands belonging to said Town by a few men contrary to a former vote of said Town;" and also, "to choose a committee to prosecute any that have or shall encroach upon any of the lands, at the Town's cost." The selectmen refusing to call a meeting, a warrant was issued by "Joseph Woodbridge, Justice of the Peace." Nothing was done at the meeting so called, except to dismiss all committees previously chosen by the town, and to choose a new committee to prosecute encroachments upon the common lands of the town. From this it appears that the non-commoners had determined to try conclusions with the commoners, or those who claimed to own the common lands. This was a vote of war, and the dispute upon the subject waxed warm. The commoners were refused the key of the meeting-house to hold their meetings in, and, after organizing at its door, they adjourned to the tavern of James Pecker, where they held subsequent meetings. This was natural enough. It was hardly to be expected that the voters whom they proposed to exclude from any participation in the common lands, would permit them to hold their meeting to effectuate that purpose in the town's building.

At the annual meeting in 1720, the town unanimously voted to make the following proposal to the commoners: "That the inhabitants or non-commoners so called, should have their right in all the common or undivided lands in said Haverhill, lying on the west side of the way from William Johnson's to

Jonathan Clough's, in proportion with the commoners according to the rates and taxes they have borne from the year 1694, to the year 1714.

"Nathan Webster was chosen to prefer this request to the commoners or proprietors of the common land in Haverhill."

This was clearly a weakening on the part of the non-commoners; it seems like a recognition of the claim of the commoners to prefer such a request to them. And accordingly, at an adjourned meeting May 29, "the commoners' answer to the town's proposal was brought into the town meeting and read; and the commoners therein signify to the town that they can't see reason to grant their proposals at present." The non-commoners now made an effort to recover their lost ground. The first vote at the next town meeting was "to sell some common-land to pay the town's debt or charges." The second was: "voted and granted that that tract of land lying beyond Hoghill Mill, that lyeth within our Township not intruding on the fourth division land, shall be laid out to those men that have been out in long marches in the time of the war, and to others of the inhabitants of this town that will make speedy settlement on the same." A committee of five was chosen to lay it out forthwith, in fifty acre lots. At a meeting in July, Samuel Haseltine was granted a piece of common-land for work done in "enlarging the galleries of the meeting-house." Various other grants and sales of common-lands were made at the same meeting. Probably they considered that the commoners had rejected the olive branch held out by themselves; and were prepared now to throw down the gauntlet of defiance. At the next meeting they voted "to defend the land that they have sold or shall sell"; also to "bear all the charges that any man or men shall be put to, to defend the land that he hath bought or shall buy of the town, by any suits in law until the title of said land shall be tried out." At an adjourned meeting December 11, another great step was taken about common lands: "Voted and granted that the common-land in Haverhill, except the cow-common and the land beyond Hoghill Mill, shall be laid out into rate lots, according to the charges or rates that every persons in this town has paid from the year 1692 to 1712, except those persons that removed out of the town in the time of the war; and excepting some land to make good old grants, if any do appear to be justly due from the town."

"Voted and granted that every five pounds that has been paid in public charges of rates in this town by any person within the time above mentioned shall draw one acre of land in the rate lots; and so proportionally according to what sum they have paid within the time above prefixed. A committee was chosen to take an account of the rates paid during the year specified, and also to lay out the land according to the above votes."

Of course, these proceedings lead to the inference that the proprietors and their representatives, who now called themselves the commoners, had entirely lost control of the town-meetings. The new-comers now outvoted them. The non-commoners had begun by granting lands to the soldiers, next to actual settlers. They now proposed to divide the remaining lands among the rate or tax-payers during the Indian troubles, proportionately to the tax paid, with an exception which shows that there were some persons who were faint-hearted during the war, and moved out of town.

In the mean time the commoners were going forward, as if assured of their rights. At their meeting January 2, 1721, Samuel White and William White, eldest sons of John White, were granted permission to set up a grist-mill and a fulling-mill on Sawmill River. They desired to remove their mill from Mill Brook to the river, because of the scarcity of water during a part of the year at Mill Brook. This defect of Mill Brook was in part remedied at least when an outlet was made from Round Pond into Plug Pond, thus increasing the water available for the brook, its outlet. And at the same meeting a fifth division of land was ordered, to include all the undivided lands in the town, except the cow-common.

At a meeting in February the "island or islands just above Spicket Falls" were sold to Asa and Richard Swan for two pounds ten shillings.

At a meeting in June the following petition was presented, which is of importance historically:

"Haverhill, June 26, 1721.

"To ye commoners or proprietors of ye common lands in Haverhill, ye petition of Ebenezer Eastman, of ye sd Town, humbly sheweth yt for as much as Trading by sea is one way whereby I expect to gett my living and furnish out my good neighbors with many such necessarys of life as are most convenient, and ye Incouragment of shipping being of very great consequence and a great interest to this town as well as my own, I would humbly request yt I may have liberty to erect a wharfe some what above ye house where I now dwell, yt soe navigation may be promoted, and yt Thereby ye whole town of Haverhill as well as myself may receive an annuall Income Thereby, and you infinitely oblidge your humble petitioner.

"Ebenezer Eastman."

This is doubtless the first proposition to build a wharf in Haverhill; and, indeed, is said to contain the first reference to commerce, or "trading by sea." It is believed Eastman was the first who made a business of trading on the river. When Mr. Rolfe's successor was ordained, Deacon White brought the wine and sugar on horseback from Boston. The lime for plastering the parsonage-house, in 1719, was hauled from Newbury by oxen, and the town clerk went to Ipswich on horseback to get nails for the building of the watch-house. We know that Simon Wainwright had traded in town before 1708, and he probably kept some nails, sugar and wine; but for great enterprises like those to which we have just referred, it is evident that special expeditions were thought advisable. And taking all these things into consideration, with the silence of the records, it seems altogether probable that hitherto there had

been but little, and no regular, use of the river in a commercial way.

The lots in the fifth division of land were drawn November 20, 1721. The list is of great importance, as showing once more the original proprietors or their representatives. It is as follows:

"The first lot to Jno. Ayer.
2. Mr. Clemens' Executors.
3. Mr. Joseph Jewitt.
4. Jno. Page.
5. Thomas Davis.
6. Jno. Williams, sen.
7. Robert Ayer.
8. James Davis, jun.
9. Tho. Whittier.
10. John Johnson.
11. Thomas Sleeper.
12. Henry palmer.
13. Willm. Holdrig.
14. Stephen Kent.
15. Proprietors.
16. Sam[ll] Guile.
17. To Rob[t] Clement or Jno. Clement right.
18. Georg. Brown.
19. Matthais Button.
20. Dan[ll] Hendrick.
21. proprietors.
22. Obadiah Ayer, on his father Jno. Ayer's right.
23. Wm. White.
24. Tho. Linforth.
25. Mr. Jno. Ward.
26. Joseph Peasly.
27. Jno. Dow, purchased from Mr. Coffin's Right.
28. peter Ayer.
29. Richard Singletery.
30. Jno. Ayer.
31. Jno. Hutchins.
32. Wm Simons, on the right of Jno. Davis.
33. Rob. Swan.
34. Jno. Chenary.
35. proprietors.
36. Richd. Littlehale.
37. Tho. Eatton.
38. To Nath[ll] Ayer, on his father John Ayer's right.
39. Edward Clark.
40. Dan[ll] Lad.
41. James Davis, Sen.
42. James fisk.
43. Georg Corliss.
44. John Eatton.
45. Barthoil Heath.
46. Theophilas Satchesell.
47. proprietors.
48. hew Sherratt.
49. Abraham Tyler.
50. To James Presse's Right."

All these names, except seven, are to be found on the town records within three years from the date of the Indian deed, and before the town was incorporated. Those names are Jewitt, Whittier, Johnson, Sleeper, Linforth, Eatton and Pressey; and almost all of these seven were here early. The proprietors, in the view of these people, were, as has been said before, the heirs and assigns of the original proprietors. Thus, Mr. Ward was represented by the heirs who took under his will; William White, Joseph Peasley and others by their heirs, children and grandchildren; John Dow had bought Tristram Coffin's right, and so on. The purchasers or grantees of specific lands were only entitled to those particular tracts; they had nothing to do with undivided lands. "The inhabitants of Pentucket," as intended in the original deed, were the members of the original company, or those shortly after admitted with their free consent, and by their undoubted act and volition, to the association. On the other hand, the non-commoners, so-called, being those whom the proprietors excluded from their association, claimed that the lands had been granted to the inhabitants of Pentucket that then were, or at any time should be. The lands might all have been granted at once; if any remained undivided, then every inhabitant had a right to vote in their disposition. It must be remembered that proceedings had formerly been taken to ascertain titles: as when, March 4, 1667–68, Captain Saltonstall, Henry Palmer and George Browne were appointed a committee "to whom the inhabitants shall make known their title every Second-day in the week in this month of March, upon forfeiture of two shillings per man; and the fines shall pay the said committee for their time and the remainder to the town." The long-headed pioneers were laying the foundation for these subsequent proceedings of the proprietors.

Having no longer Indian wars, the people had more leisure for domestic contention, and the proprietorship of the common lands was the occasion of long and angry controversy.

It would appear that the town-books, or some of them, were borrowed and retained without right and explanation during the progress of this affair. They were, doubtless thumbed a good deal, and, perhaps, injured, during these private searches. At the annual meeting in 1721 it was voted "that there shall be a committee chosen to prefer a petition to the General Court for redress, in behalf of the damage that the town sustained by the town-books being part of them cut and torn out." This was probably a minatory move—or what in modern slang is called sometimes *bluff*—and was not expected to lead to any action. It quite certainly did not.

The proprietors appear to have been consistent in their action. They doubtless believed themselves in the right, legally, and perhaps morally, and they continued to dispose of the common lands accordingly. The new comers, although growing more numerous, had less wealth and influence, proportionally. Some of the proprietary families were growing wealthy for the times.

The following incident, related by Mirick, exhibits the acrimonious state of feeling: "The Commoners had fenced a certain part of the ox-common with split rails. This was very much disliked by the non-commoners living in the north part of the town, and they determined to be revenged. They soon concocted a plot, and a small party assembled near Flaggy Meadow on the night appointed to execute it, carried the rails into large piles and set them on fire. The loss of the rails was but trifling when compared with the other damage done by the fire. The earth was dry, and it ran through the woods, and continued to burn for many days."

The largest and most valuable of the remaining tracts of land undivided was that laid out in 1665 as a cow common. A part of it had been fenced off, and its proportions had been much curtailed, but it was still a large and valuable tract of land. According to the vote of March 7, 1665, all the land *within* the following bounds was forever to be a cow-common: "Within the bounds of Fishing River; and from thence to a brook that goeth to the hither north meadow; and from thence as the cart path goeth, to the meadow of Bartholomew Heath, which was formerly George Corliss's meadow; and from thence to the East Meadow river, and so within the bounds of the east meadow river down to the Great River." It

appears from the vote already given about fencing a part of the cow-common, that it originally extended on the west substantially to the present crossing of Little River by the Winter Street bridge; then sweeping round to the north and east to East Meadow River, and then south to the Merrimac, encircling the village and the planting lands. The proprietors had discussed the proposition to lay out the remainder into lots and dispose of them.

Five town-meetings were held about 1723, to consider the inhabitants' claim to these lands, without a vote being reached. The marginal reference to one of them says that it was "precious time spent for naught." The feeling was becoming very bitter. September 2, 1723, the town chose a committee to confer with the commoners, "in order to make some agreement about common lands in Haverhill," and the meeting adjourned, to hear their report.

The town committee asked for "a proposition, in order to make peace." At the adjourned meeting the committee reported that no reply had been received from the commoners, and another adjournment was had. At the next meeting it was reported that the town's overture had been propounded to the commoners at one of their meetings, and was "met with silence and nothing more." But December 5, 1723, several of the proprietors petitioned for a proprietor's meeting, as follows:

"*To Jno. White, Esqr: proprietor's clark, greeting:*

"Whereas there are severall persons in ye town of Haverhill of long & ancient standing in ye Town, who, by reason yt they have little or no Right in ye Common lands, either by Themselves or claiming under Their Ancestors, are very uneasy att ye division and disposall of said lands to and among ye proprietors and reall owners of itt. Therefore wee, ye subscribers, proprietors, Taking into Consideration ye damage of Contention, and yt peace may be made, we request yt There may bee a meeting of ye proprietors to bee att ye meeting-house in Haverhill, on Monday, ye sixth day of January next ensuing, att ten of ye clock in ye forenoon, for Reason following: first, yt if ye proprietors see cause They chuse a comittee to debate ye matter with such persons who have been of long & ancient standing in ye Town, Though They have little or noe right To any Comon lands, either by Themselves or Ancestors & To see upon what Conditions such persons will be satisfied & To make report to ye proprietors soe yt they may Give them some lands if They see cause.

"Secondly, yt They chuse a Comittee To debate with such persons who lay claim to Rights not yett allowed To see what will satisfie Them & make report Thereof to ye proprietors yt soe They may act upon itt if They see Cause."

The meeting was held accordingly, and Deacon James Ayer, Nathaniel Peasly and Richard Hazzen were chosen a committee to meet the non-proprietors and ascertain what would satisfy them.

The petitioners did not propose that the proprietors should surrender a jot of their legal claims; but they were a minority in the town and their position was doubtless a very uncomfortable one. Their scheme, as will be observed, was to make friends by granting lands to a considerable number of individuals, and thus bring them over to their own party, expecting to secure their influence and support when they had got such concessions for themselves as they desired. Possibly there was also some real sympathy for ancient settlers who yet had no legal rights in common lands.

Of the committee appointed, James Ayer represented the large family of that name, who, as we know, were very early in the town. Nathaniel Peasly was grandson of Joseph the first, and son of Joseph the second. He was for many years an important and influential citizen. Richard Hazzen was a leading land surveyor, a man of determined character, and for a long time was active in the land troubles of the town.

This committee met the non-proprietors at the tavern of Cornet James Pecker on the 28th of January, and February 5th reported to the proprietors the following as the result of their "debate:" "Jno. Sanders did declare and say yt as to ye comons They were in ye hands of ye law & yt hee was easy with ye determination of ye Law; for if ye town lost, his right with ye comons would be as good as now." That is to say, Sanders, having no benefit now of the commons, could not be worse off in any case, and for his part, was willing to abide the result of the litigation.

"Joshua Swan would not bee easy unless they would grant him 15 acres between Sam'l Davis & Job Clements."

"Matthew Harriman, Jun'r, declared yt hee would be uneasy unless all ye fences erected on ye cow comon were demolished and itt lay according to ye vote of ye ancient fathers & ye proprietors' records, Burnt."

"William Johnson would not be easy unless They would fling up ye cow comon."

"All those above accounted are unreasonable in their demands & soe (we) acted nothing upon it."

"All ye other persons under written to ye number of about 39 persons, Though They had noe material objection against ye division of ye Comons, yett since They had bore charges, lost friends by ye Indians, &c., did desire some particular pieces of land upon ye proprietors' grant of which They would bee easy & for ye future rest contented & proceeded to request as followeth (viz)." These individuals asked, some the grant of common rights, but the larger number specified pieces of land in severa'lty, from two to twenty acres in extent.

Upon the reading of the report of the committee, the proprietors "voted yt ye several parcells of land petitioned for or desired by ye several persons according To ye return of ye sd committee, Bee herehy granted To them on This condition yt They rest satisfied & contented with ye division of ye Comon land according to ye proprietors' order, & yt for ye future They appeare In all Town meetings unless hindered by extraordinary Casualty & doe oppose By voate & argument all such persons and voates as any way disturbe or hinder ye proprietors in Their peaceable Injoyments of Their lands divided or undivided & yt they Indeavor to hinder any farther process in law about ye same & farther peace & unitie again as far as may

be & yt They Assighn (Sign) Artickles agreeable to this voate betwixt themselves & the committee which shall be appointed for ye purpose, before ye said land Bee laid out To them. And yt ye particular persons To whom ye land is granted shall pay ye Committee yt have been allready Impowered about having ye proposalls of severall persons for land to be Given them & also What further charge ye Committee may be att about ye same, for ye laying of itt out & for recording ye same. This was voated & granted By a full voate."

A committee was then chosen to draw up the proposed articles, and on the persons with whom the committee should agree according to the above vote signing them, the committee were to lay them out the lands they asked for.

This was a close bargain, whatever may be thought of the morality of it, as a matter of public policy. The proprietors had received a large accession of strength, and there was quiet for awhile. But the disturbance broke out afresh when the proprietors actually decided to divide the cow-common into lots and lay out highways through it. In the warrant for the annual town-meeting for March 2, 1725, are the following articles: "2. And to see whether ye town will chuse a Committee to draw money out of ye Town Treasury to seport one or more of ye Comoners to take a method in law to recover their Rights from ye Incroachments of ye Comoners. That it may yt lie in Comon as by ye Cow Comon grant made in March, 1664–65. 3. And to chuse a Comittee to prefer a petition to ye General Assembly to acquaint ye Honorable House with ye irregular method of ye Comoners in their last actions abought ye Cow-Comon, and to see what ye towne may think proper on yt account and to doe it on ye Town's Cost."

Upon the town-meeting day referred to, the proprietors, doubtless finding themselves in a minority, withdrew, organized a separate meeting and chose a separate set of town officers. Captain Joshua Bayley was moderator of the party remaining at the meeting-house; Captain John White of the seceders. The former body chose Ensign Thomas Whittier, John Sanders and Anthony Colby a committee under the second article of the warrant, and the same persons, with the selectmen, who were Captain Joshua Bayley, James Sanders and Christopher Bartlett, a committee under the third article to petition the General Assembly.

The next meeting of the non-proprietors was held April 8th, upon a warrant signed by Benjamin Stevens, "one of his majestie's justices of ye County of Essex," in answer to a petition to him "signed by more than fifty hands." The proposition was, "To see whether the Town will Impower ye Selectmen of Haverhill, or chuse a Comittee to prosecut on ye town's cost, to final issue any of ye faction that are Indevoring to disturb and disquiet ye Town Clark in his peacable Improvement of ye town Books! . . . And to prosecut any persons yt by color of their Election in ye meeting, where Capt. White pretended to be moderator yt shall presume to act as such officer." Upon the first article, Captain Joshua Bayley, James Sanders, Thomas Haines, Daniel Bodwell and Christopher Bartlett were chosen a committee to prosecute "any of yt faction." It was then declared by an unanimous vote that the officers chosen at the preceding meeting, naming them, should be supported through any difficulty that might arise in executing their respective duties; that "ye small party where Capt. White pretended to be a moderator on March 2, 1724–25, was not according to the town's will, nor according to ye consent and former practice of our Town;" that "The Town doe declare against Mr. Richard Hazzen, Jr., his being town clerk;" and "that the selectmen should prosecute to final issue any person or persons that, by color of his Election in the meeting aforesaid," should presume to act as such officer. The meeting then adjourned for two weeks, at which time "some discourse passed," but no vote was taken. There were meetings twice afterwards, adjourning on both occasions without doing any business—the last being held June 21st, after action was taken under the following direction.

The non-proprietors appealing to the General Court, it adopted the following order June 4, 1725:

"Whereas, at the anniversary of the town-meeting in the town of Haverhill in March last, there happened to be two contending parties who assembled at the meeting-house, and did there and then choose two sets of town officers, whereby great difficulties arose in the said town, and considerable expense occasioned in the law; and it is feared that no good government can be supported unless some speedy care can be taken to prevent these disorders. For preventing whereof, and to put an end to said strife, it is ordered by this General Court that Joshua Swan and Nathaniel Peasley, constables for the town in 1724, be and are hereby required to warn the freeholders and other inhabitants to assemble at the meeting-house in Haverhill on the ninth of June at ten o'clock A.M., and then and there to choose all the town officers which the law requires to be chosen in the month of March annually; and that Richard Kent, Esq., be desired to be present at the said meeting; and he is empowered to moderate the affairs, and no other person be allowed to vote but such as are lawfully qualified; and that the proceedings of both parties at the aforesaid meeting of March 2d are declared null and void, and the charge to be borne as this Court shall order."

A meeting was accordingly held June 9th, over which Richard Kent, Esq., of Newbury, presided as moderator. In the morning there was some debate, but no vote was taken. At the adjourned meeting in the afternoon the moderator directed votes to be brought in for a town clerk. Few were thrown, however, and the moderator did not declare that anybody was chosen, but adjourned the meeting to June 23d.

The General Court, upon report of this impotent conclusion, passed the following resolves June 15, 1725:

"*Resolved*, that whereas by special order of this court, the town of Haverhill was assembled on the 9th inst. for the choice of town officers, and no other than a town clerk was chosen, although he was not declared by the moderator, and said meeting having been adjourned, notwithstanding the other town officers were to be chosen the same day,

"*Resolved*, that John Eaton be and is hereby declared Town Clerk for Haverhill, according to the choice made the ninth of June, as aforesaid, and that the freeholders (&c.) assemble at the meeting-house in Haverhill, according to the adjournment, and that they then and there choose

all other town officers, and that Richard Kent, Esq., hereby declared moderator of the meeting, be directed to administer the oath by law appointed to John Eaton and the other officers to be chosen, any law, usage or custom to the contrary notwithstanding."

The action, as well as the language, of the General Court would now be regarded as arbitrary, and in violation of well-settled custom. In modern times such questions are relegated to the courts of law. The General Court treated the disturbance at Haverhill in the fashion in which the general political committee of the leading party in our chief town in Massachusetts now conducts its affairs. If a ward caucus breaks up in confusion, or splits into separating factions, a member of the General Committee is sent to hold another caucus, and decide questions peremptorily, and a squad of policemen is secured to support his decisions. However, the action of the General Court may have proved salutary. There was no more trouble. It was probably understood that no nonsense would be allowed, and for some reason this action would seem to have been regarded as favorable to the proprietors. The other party appears to have practically given up the contest. The proprietors had other difficulties afterwards, but they arose from other causes and with different persons.

The town-meeting met, according to adjournment, and completed the election of its officers.

Henceforward, the town records are no more burdened about these affairs. The meetings of the town and those of the proprietors of common and undivided lands were held separately and the records were kept in separate books. The officers were chosen separately, though frequently the same persons held office under the town and the proprietors at the same time. The proprietors held their meetings for nearly forty years after; granted, sold and exchanged the undivided lands. Their rights seem to have been fully recognized. They eventually triumphed in all litigation, of which they had a great deal.

These proceedings of the Haverhill factions would somehow appear to be familiar, and to anticipate transactions which have been heard of elsewhere in later days. There have been many stormy town-meetings here in past times.

Captain John White, moderator of the proprietors' meeting, before named, was grandson of William, the pioneer. In 1725 he was sixty-one years old, and father of a large and highly respectable family.

Captain Joshua Bailey, moderator of the town-meeting, was born (according to Chase) October 30, 1685, and was for many years one of the principal men. He was moderator and selectman from 1724 to 1734, and moderator in after-years. He was pretty certainly a physician. "Dr. Bayley" is mentioned in the records in 1718. In 1722, "Dr. Bayley" went to Boston for soldiers. He married Elizabeth Johnson, the granddaughter of the first John Johnson, about 1715, and there were seven children born, all daughters. He was moderator of the first regular meeting of the First Parish, November 24, 1729. Honorable Bailey Bartlett was his grandson, and in his sketch of the latter, Chase says that Dr. Joshua Bayley had been a distinguished surgeon in the British navy before becoming physician in the village of Haverhill. This is the tradition of descendants. He was probably the first educated physician in Haverhill, his predecessors having only certain natural gifts in that direction, with some experience.

CHAPTER CLVI.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

Settling Ministers—Slavery in Haverhill—Emigration and the Beginning of Disintegration—Local Incidents.

WITHIN three weeks after the tragic death of Mr. Rolfe a meeting was called, September 15, 1708, to see about a new minister, and a committee was chosen to supply the pulpit "for the present and for the coming winter." Mr. Nicholas Seaver preached during the winter and spring following. The town desired him to settle, and offered him annually twenty pounds in money and forty pounds in corn. Afterwards they voted to add one hundred pounds in money to their former offer, "to be improved by him in settling himself with a house, and the use of all the parsonage land." June 14th the town voted to give him four contributions annually and twenty cords of wood, still in addition. He made counter-proposals, which the town declined, June 21, 1709.

Mr. Richard Brown preached next, whom the church, "by a unanimous vote, not one person then present dissenting, made choice of to be their minister and pastor if he may be obtained." This is the earliest preserved record of any distinct *church* meeting. The same day a town-meeting was held, in which it was unanimously voted "to concur with the church" in the selection of Mr. Brown for a minister, and a committee was chosen to treat with him, and also "to treat with the administrator for the purchase of the late Mr. Rolfe's house." December 7th, a committee reported upon the latter business, and it was voted to purchase the house, the price paid for which, and for all Mr. Rolfe's land, was three hundred pounds.

Mr. Brown declined the invitation. He had preached twenty-four Sabbaths, and was succeeded by Rev. Joshua Gardner, whom the town unanimously voted to invite, May 15, 1710. In October a church-meeting was held, at which he was unanimously chosen; and at a town-meeting, the same day, the action of the church was unanimously concurred in. The salary voted was seventy pounds per

annum, payable "one-half in good passable money and the rest in good merchantable corn, at money price, or in good passable money & the use of all the Parsonage Housing & lands & meadows." Mr. Gardner accepted the offer in a letter which was read in town-meeting December 11th, and "very well accepted." He was ordained January 10, 1711, the town paying twenty pounds for the expenses of the occassion.

In 1709 the new meeting-house began to be too small, and about thirty men and thirteen young ladies were given leave by the town to build pews or seats. John White had leave "to set up a shed on the outside of the window at the west end of the meeting-house, to keep out the heat of the sun there."

Mr. Gardner was a young man of great talents and brilliant promise. At the annual meeting in 1715, the town voted that Mr. Gardner might have a weekly contribution if he desired it, so that he might have some money "before the town rate was raised for him." A committee was chosen to join with him in leasing the parsonage farm for twenty years, "if he lives so long."

Two weeks afterwards Mr. Gardner was dead, and a town-meeting was held, March 28th, to consider finding some one to succeed him. One of his successors, Mr. Barnard, thus spoke of him, years after: "Mr. Gardner, who is warm in the hearts of a few of you to this day, was soon ripe for heaven, according to the account which was handed down of him. He was not suffered to remain long by reason of death. Neither prayers nor tears could detain him from his inheritance above. In a few years he finished his course with joy." Mr. Gardner died March 21, 1715. He graduated at Harvard at twenty years, and was ordained at twenty-three. Great expectations were entertained of him. His epitaph calls him "a man good betimes;" he made a profession of religion at thirteen years.

The town voted to pay the expenses of his funeral, which amounted to £34 9*s*. 6*d*.

This year the town's old book of "Grants & Order" was found to be lost, and a committee was chosen to find it. The committee each spent three days in the business and the whole expense was £4 16*s*.

John White attended on the committee two days, and James Sanders made a journey to Salem to hunt the volume up. The book was finally found and ordered delivered to the town clerk. Probably it had been taken by some person in the course of the litigation or preparations for it, about the common and undivided lands.

In 1711, John Swett, a native of Newbury, was appointed ferrymen at the Rocks, where it is said there were not then more than two houses. Indeed, it is believed that on account of the Indian wars the population of the town had increased but little in thirty years.

The next year the town abated half the ministerial and school rates of Henry Bodwell and eight others, living in the part now Methuen, on account of their difficulty in attending upon either meeting or school, by the reason of the great distance.

Petitions also began to be received from persons living in remote parts of the town for schools in their own locality. Thus, in 1711, Joseph Emerson and fifteen others asked for a school-house in the northwest part of the town, near Job Clements', and a school one quarter of the year, "that they might have the benefit of having their children brought up to learning as well as the children of those that live in the centre of the town." John Sanders and eighteen others living in the northeasterly part of the town asked for a school-house and school "near the house of Mr. John Whittier, on the common, between the two bridges & between the house of Daniel Ela and the Country road." Both petitions were granted and the selectmen were ordered to provide a school-master; whilst a committee was chosen to build the school-houses, which were to be "20 ft. long, 16 ft. wide & 8 ft. stud & finished so as may be comfortable & convenient." In 1714 a petition was received from Peter Green and eleven others, asking for a school-house in the northwesterly part of the town, "between Hoghill and the brick kill bridge," but the request was denied, because "very few, if any, persons voted for it."

Obadiah Ayer, who taught the school in the village for a number of years about this time, was a son of Captain Samuel, who was killed in the fight with the French and Indians, August 29, 1708. Obadiah, born in 1689, graduated at Harvard in 1710 and studied for the ministry. He was a man of talent and power, but subject to occasional attacks of mental alienation, when he was cared for in Boston, it is said, at lodgings provided for him by his particular friend, John (?) Hancock.

In 1713, instead of electing tythingmen, the selectmen and constables were ordered "to regulate the conduct of disorderly boys on the Sabbath in the meeting-house."

Eleven more women asked permission in 1714 to build a "women's pew" in the meeting-house. The matter was referred to the selectmen.

At the same meeting the selectmen were "desired to seat the *negroes* in some convenient place in the meeting-house, if they can." The pew was established, and afterwards there was always a "negro pew," as long as there were negroes. The "negroes" were slaves, though generally called "servants."

After the Indians taken in King Philip's War, who were regarded as rebels against the government, were sold as slaves, there was not much said against slavery for a long time in Massachusetts. They sent rum and pipe-staves to the West Indies and rum and trinkets to Africa, and brought back a few slaves. Some slaves were brought to Boston in slave vessels. The

courts held that the Constitution of 1780, declaring all men free and equal, liberated the slaves. There is a letter in the Massachusetts archives from Chief Justice Sergeant, of Haverhill, on this subject.

Just before the Revolution, when people were all talking about the rights of man, men's consciences began naturally to grow more tender about holding fellow-beings in subjection, no matter by what name the relation was called. In fact, the slave in Massachusetts was generally a house servant or chore boy. Sometimes they were employed on the land. A few of the most intelligent were sail-makers, ship-carpenters and blacksmiths.

In 1763 slaves were more numerous than at any other time. There were then 5214 blacks, or 45 to 1 of the population, but among them were some freemen.

"Hopewell, an Indian servant of John Hutchins," died in Haverhill in 1668. Mr. Rolfe's "negro woman," Hagar, who saved the children from the Indians, "owned the covenant and was baptized," with her three children, by Rev. Mr. Gardner in 1711. In 1723 Rev. Mr. Brown had an Indian servant, as appears from his own entry, "Baptized Phillis, an Indian girl, servant of John and Joanna Brown." In 1728 Mr. Brown baptized "Mariah, negro servant of Richard Saltonstall." March 29, 1709, Colonel Richard Saltonstall's house was blown up in the night time with powder, as was supposed through the vindictive agency of a negro wench in his family, whom he had severely corrected for some misbehavior. The Indian troubles not being over, his house was still garrisoned with soldiers, but no lives were lost.

Rev. Mr. Bacheller, of the West Parish, had a negro, who died March 24, 1785, —"Nero, servant to ye Revd Mr. Bacheller." He had another named "Pomp," of whom stories are told. There were "negroes" or servants in the East as well as the West and First Parishes. Miss Rebecca I. Davis has recently, in her "Gleanings from the Merrimac Valley," printed interesting notes about some of the last of these slaves—Prince and Nancea, servants of Amos Davis, and Peter, whose name is commemorated in "Peter's Ridge."

The children of these negro servants were generally regarded as incumbrances, and given away when weaned, like puppies.

In 1674 there were in Haverhill twenty-five slaves, "of sixteen years old and upwards." Speaking materially, this indicated a very comfortable degree of prosperity and substance. Slaves were entered as property in the town valuation lists from 1750 to 1776. In 1761 Rev. Samuel Bacheller and Joseph Haynes, of the West Parish, bitter and life-long opponents, owned slaves. In 1753 John Cogswell, John Dimond, Benjamin Harrod, John Hazzen, Colonel Richard Saltonstall, William Swanten, John Sawyer and Samuel White owned slaves in the First Parish; Moses Clements, Nathaniel Cogswell, James McHard, Samuel White, Samuel White, Jr., and John White in 1766. In the East Parish, Greelee, Morse, Peaslee, Hardey, Tyler and Moors owned slaves in different years.

Chase prints a bill of sale dated Haverhill, August 23, 1742, in which, for the consideration of one hundred and fifteen pounds, Nathaniel Cogswell, "trader" (Water Street), sells and warrants his "negro boy, Cæsar," to Samuel Phillips, Jr., of Andover, "trader." The latter was Samuel Phillips, of North Andover, son and descendant of the eminent ministers of Andover, Rowley and Watertown, himself the father of Lieutenant-Governor Phillips, through whom much of his substance was devoted to founding Phillips Academy and the Theological Seminary. Eminent piety, usefulness and slave-holding were at that time quite compatible in Massachusetts.

In 1714 a town-meeting was adjourned, because of a "great fire in the woods, whereby the hay was in general and great danger." This was doubtless the hay cut in the summer in meadows adjoining the woods and left to be hauled home on sleds in the winter.

The stocks probably wanted repairing this year, there being an item—"iron for the stocks, 3*s.* 10*d.*"

In 1714 the bounds of the town were renewed by Samuel Danforth, son of Jonathan, who had settled them forty-seven years before.

After 1693 highway surveyors had been regularly chosen, but it is believed no money was paid by the town for highways, excepting for building and repairing bridges, until 1715, when "Jotham Hendrick, surveyor," was allowed six shillings for "mending the highway." After that melancholy precedent, highway expenses became habitual. It probably will be admitted, however, that Haverhill highways have been proverbially inferior to those of most of the towns in Essex County. A lack of suitable material has doubtless been a principal cause of this habitual condition. In 1887 very considerable highway improvements were carried on. If the work has been done with due economy, although burdensome to the city's finances, it will hereafter be regarded as money well expended. No wise community will indulge in the extravagance of imperfectly-constructed and ill-repaired highways.

After Mr. Gardner died the pulpit was supplied by various "candidates," among whom were Mr. Robert Stanton and Mr. Jonathan Cushing. July 27, 1716, at a church-meeting to choose a minister, Mr. Cushing received 20 out of 35 votes; and at a town-meeting, held the same day, he received 102 out of 136 votes. This vote probably shows about how many male church members and how many voters there were in the town at that time, as no business could be more important in their view. The town voted to offer Mr. Cushing the same salary they had given Mr. Gardner. It appears, however, there was a minority, who not only preferred Mr. Stanton, but were very much

opposed to Mr. Cushing; so another meeting was called to hear what the minority had to urge. Then a committee was chosen to consult the Revs. Leverett and Brattle, of Cambridge, under whose advice a committee was chosen to treat with Mr. Fiske, who had also preached in the town. But they could not agree upon Mr. Fiske, and so resort was again had to the Cambridge divines. January 22, 1717, there was a meeting "to hear the advice of the Rev. Mr. Leverett (president of Harvard) and Mr. Brattle." The record does not tell us what their advice was, but the following was the first vote passed at the town meeting:

"Voted that the Rev'd Mr. Moody, Mr. Parson, Mr. Wise of Chebacco, Mr. Wells, Mr. Tappin & Mr. White, be desired with the Rev'd Mr. Barnard, Mr. Cushing, Mr. Symes & Mr. Tufts, in keeping a day of humiliation in our great affairs, on Wednesday, the sixth day of February next."

A committee was chosen to invite the ministers before named, and to receive their advice, and also to make provision for their entertainment on the day of the fast. Shall we hope that the "entertainment" was Lenten, as well as the day?

The outcome of the fast was that the church selected the Rev. Joseph Parsons, of Lebanon, for minister. Then a town-meeting was called (May 28th) to consider the matter. Mr. Parsons was at this time preaching in Haverhill, but as "a great many people were unsatisfied about his leaving his church at" Lebanon, papers were read in the town-meeting; among them, the determination of a council acquitting him "from crimes laid to his charge," and approving of his removal. The town voted that they were satisfied, and chose him as minister by a vote of 65 to 48, offering him a salary of one hundred pounds, with the use of the parsonage land and buildings. The minority, however, were so strongly opposed to his coming that at a meeting called August 13 the town reconsidered its former vote, with only one dissenting voice. This looked kindly, and a meeting was called October 30th "to forgive all past offences that have been given among us concerning the settlement of a minister, and agree in love and peace to consider and agree upon a suitable person to carry on the work of the ministry among us." The moderator, Ephraim Roberts, proposed that all who wished to signify "their desire for peace and love one towards another, and for the sending of a minister to preach with us," should move to the east end of the meeting-house. And all, except three or four, moved over. The meeting then adjourned. There had been a love-feast. Still there was another meeting November 12, but after "considerable discourse," it adjourned without accomplishing anything.

Sunday, October 21, 1716, was a very dark day, with much smoke, such as our generation has seen within a few years, though perhaps darker.

And Cotton Mather and others have told us great stories about the prodigious snows between the 18th and 24th of February, 1717.

Early in February, 1718, Mr. "Samuel Chickley" was unanimously made choice of for their minister, to whom, two months afterward, the town gave a formal call, with an offer of one hundred pounds salary, and the use of all the parsonage land east of Sawmill River. They did not include the land west of the Sawmill River because they were now beginning to anticipate the future, "not knowing but what they may in some convenient time settle another minister there." Mr. Checkley declined the offer and became the minister at Church Green, in Boston.

Mr. John Brown, of Little Cambridge (Brighton), came next as a candidate, whom in October the people unanimously invited to settle with them, offering to him the same salary as before to Mr. Checkley. Mr. Brown, who graduated at Harvard in 1714, accepted the invitation, and was ordained May 13, 1719. He married Joanna, daughter of Rev. Roland Cotton, of Sandwich. She was a great-granddaughter of the famous minister, John Cotton, of Boston, and also of John Ward, of Haverhill, through the latter's daughter Elizabeth, wife of Nathaniel Saltonstall. Pastor Brown and his wife had ten children—six sons and four daughters. Four sons, educated at Cambridge, became ministers. Two died very young, of one of whom a good judge said he had "raised in his friends the fairest hopes." Thus the grand old ministers paid their debt to learning, in educating their children. One of Mr. Brown's daughters married Rev. Edward Brooks, some time minister of North Yarmouth, Maine, through whom he had descendants, not only wealthy and distinguished, but some far away from the orthodox standard he upheld here.

The General Court, in 1718, granted the ferry known as Swett's to Haverhill and Newbury for forty years. The town granted all its right to John Swett if he would ferry over the inhabitants for "a penny a single person, and four pence for a man and horse."

In 1717 "Deacon John Haseltine" was moderator of one of the meetings about settling a minister, and afterwards was of all the meetings when ministerial business came to be considered, though not at other times. John White was also deacon at the same time and is said to have usually entertained the ministers, probably at his new house, still standing on Mill Street, opposite the cemetery, one of the oldest houses in Haverhill, and probably, of its age, the best preserved. Somebody in those days, in every town, had to keep what was known as the "Minister's Tavern."

In 1718 there came to Boston one hundred and twenty families from the North of Ireland. They were descended from Scotchmen who emigrated to Ireland about the middle of the seventeenth century. They were rigid Presbyterians, and, in the latter

days, are very proud of being known as "Scotch-Irish." April 2, 1719, sixteen families landed from boats at Haverhill. Unluckily, the boats capsized, and men, women and children were upset in the river, much to the amusement of the villagers, who seem to have despised the poor Irishmen, whose appearance and speech probably seemed to them uncouth and outlandish. One of their own countrymen had written some years before, "But Lord! to see the absurd nature of Englishmen, that cannot forbear laughing and jeering at everything that looks strange."

Hearing of a fine tract of land about fifteen miles away, called Nutfield, from the abundance of chestnut, walnut and butternut trees, the men left their families in Haverhill and went to view the place. Being well pleased with it and finding it unappropriated, they concluded to locate there, having before had authority from the Assembly to make a settlement elsewhere. Building rude huts, they removed their families and took possession of their new homes April 11th (O. S.). In 1722 their settlement was incorporated by the name of Londonderry, in memory of the famous siege. They introduced the potato into this region. Tradition says that William White first planted them in Haverhill; but when he had raised four bushels, did not know what to do with so many.

There were afterwards dealings and quarrels between the Haverhill and the Nutfield people, and a branch of one at least of the Londonderry families has had strong root here for more than a century and is regarded as "to the manor born."

In July, 1719, Henry Bodwell and others petitioned the town to grant or set them off a certain tract of land lying in the township of Haverhill, that so they might be a township or parish, but the request was denied. This was the beginning of a movement for a new town in the far west of Haverhill, which was only reasonable, but which was, of course, opposed as long as possible, according to the almost invariable usage in such cases.

At March meeting, 1719, Joshua Swan, Henry Bodwell and twenty-six others, petitioned the town to set aside and grant for "a privilege for the ministry" about "fifty or sixty acres" in the west end of Haverhill, near "bare meadow," "together with a piece of land lying on a hill called meeting-house hill, in times past reserved by our forefathers for the use of the ministry, (and) which might in hard times make a convenient parsonage." This petition was granted "according to the proposals therein made," and in July following a committee was chosen to lay out the land. It is pleasing to observe that commoners and non-commoners laid aside their quarrels in this instance and made the grant by common consent.

October, 1720, a meeting was held to see about the town's proportion of the £50,000, "bank money," granted by the General Court in 1720. Trustees were appointed to receive it, and were directed to let it out to individuals, inhabitants, in sums of £10 to £20, at five per cent. interest, payable annually. Like most grants of the character, it proved a delusion and a snare, and made trouble only.

This year there was a new "seating of persons in the meeting-house." Death and changes had probably made it necessary. It took the committee four days. How long it took a second committee to seat the first, we are not told.

There seems to have been peace in church matters for a time after the settlement of Mr. Brown. Feeling had run very high. During the previous difficulties the people had at one time (1717) consulted some of the neighboring ministers—Revs. Thomas Symmes of Bradford, Moses Hale of Newbury, and Edward Payson of Rowley, who in their reply thought it "advisable" that the town should lay aside "their awful animosities." What with church quarrels and commons quarrels, the frequently occurring and stormy town-meeting must have given them plenty to think and talk about. After the questions about commons lands were settled—and there came a time when there were no more commons to fight about—there were plenty of other questions: the setting up of new towns, loss of territory, establishment of parishes. A Haverhill town-meeting doubtless exhibited a fierce democracy.

In 1720, the old writers say, "tea began to be used in New England." Some friend sent to Mr. Gile, of Haverhill, a pound of tea. His wife had heard that it was to be cooked by an infusion of water, so she set all of her tea boiling in a pot of water. Then, under the impression that it was to be used after the fashion of a vegetable, she added a solid piece of corned beef—with a result which can only be imagined.

Coffee, Chase says, came in later. A party of gentlemen, about 1757, "put up"—not registered—at Lieutenant Ebenezer Eastman's tavern. They had brought a quantity of coffee with them as a luxury, which they transferred to the landlady to be prepared. Too proud to confess her ignorance, Madame prepared it as she did her beans, by soaking a due time in cold water, and baking in the bean pot. Nevertheless, from a comparatively early day, the people of Haverhill village got into comfortable circumstances, and a few of them had relations with the great world at Boston. There have been well-reputed taverns in Haverhill in former days, at least as early as the period we are now speaking of. New Hampshire began to be settled, people passed to and fro, and Haverhill, seated at the crossing of the river, was a convenient stopping-place. In 1718, Samuel Sewall, who had for twenty-five years been a justice of the Superior Court, was promoted to be a chief justice. Going circuit next year, he makes the following entry in his diary: "May 11, 1719. Set out with

Scipio " (negro 'servant') " for York. . . . Got over the ferry to Haverhill about sunset. The river there is very charming. Eat excellent salmon at Pecker's, carried a bushel of oats with us to Kingston, where we baited. Then took leave of Capt. Jno. Wainwright, our pilot." This was undoubtedly John, the son of Simon, killed by the Indians in 1708.

It has been mentioned that February 6, 1716, a great council and fast was held about the ministerial difficulties. " Rev. Mr. Moody's" name heads the list of ministers. A short time before, Judge Sewall minuted in his diary: " December 31, 1715–16. Mr. Moody of York goes home. Came in last night at 10. Is to preach at Haverhill to-morrow." One may conjecture that at this visit Mr. Moody suggested the solemn fast " for wisdom of heaven."

In 1723 three new school-houses were ordered built—one in the north part of the town, one in the northwesterly and the other in the westerly. It was also voted to hire a school-master, " to move for the town's benefit to the several parts of the town." Richard Hazzen kept school " three quarters "—one quarter at the house of Widow Mary Whittier. He was paid eleven pounds per quarter.

Four young gentlemen of the East Parish, Nathaniel Peaslee, Jr., and others, asked leave to erect a seat in a " vacant place" in the meeting-house. They lived so far away " that, at anytime being belated, we cannot get into any seat; but are obliged to sit squeased on the stairs where we cannot hear the minister and so get little good by his preaching, though we endeavor to ever so much." Several young women asked a similar privilege to build a pew of their own. These were two Hazzens, two Clements, two Peaslees and Rachel Sanders.

Abiall Messer was allowed to keep a ferry near his house for five years. Messer lived, doubtless, in what is now Methuen.

In 1723 the selectmen ran the lines of Haverhill with the selectmen of Kingston, N. H., which then joined it.

In this year the town refused Captain Joshua Bayley, Ebenezer Eastman and others, liberty to fish in the river with a net, of which this is the first mention.

In the spring of 1724, Stephen Barker, and others, of the extreme west, petitioned the General Court for a new town, to be formed out of that portion of Haverhill above Hawke's Meadow Brook. The town appointed Capt. John White agent to oppose the petition. This, as has been intimated, has always been the course of things in Massachusetts. The Haverhill planters wanted a " Great town." They had one, but could not properly govern it. The people could not come ten miles to Sabbath and town meetings, and lectures, not to speak of schools. But the old town resisted dismemberment. Partition has ever been resisted as long as possible in such cases, and countless woes predicted, both for old and new. The old people are willing to do anything rather than let the children go and try their own fortune.

Thus, in November, 1725, the inhabitants of that section petitioned the town for a school there, which was voted; also " ten pounds to pay a minister to preach there," if they got one that year. Still, the people above Hawke's Brook wanted to be a town of themselves, and the General Court made them one by the name of Methuen, December 8, 1725. Four years afterward a church was formed there and Rev. Christopher Sargeant was ordained its pastor, November 5, 1729. In January following, the society petitioned the " Proprietor, of the common and undivided lands in Haverhill, and that part of Methuen formerly contained within the ancient bounds of Haverhill," for a parcel of land for a parsonage. The proprietors not only gave them the land for a parsonage, but gave the minister a piece for himself.

In May, 1737, the inhabitants of the " second parish in Methuen, being about to build a meeting-House," also asked the Haverhill proprietors for land. The proprietors voted them fifty acres, and also voted fifty to their first ordained minister. These lands were all in Methuen.

Indeed, the proprietors, when they had triumphed over their enemies, appear to have conducted their affairs in a very liberal way. It is much to their credit that they recognized themselves largely as trustees for the public, bound to make handsome grants for beneficent objects of general concern.

Methuen, the oldest daughter of Haverhill, is thus one hundred and sixty-three years old. Its territory was principally set off from Haverhill, with the addition on the west of a strip of land between Haverhill and Dracut, not previously comprised within the limits of any town. The portion of the city of Lawrence north of the Merrimac, was a part of Methuen and originally of Haverhill. That part of Lawrence has a large population, which cannot here be given; but Methuen had, in 1880, four thousand three hundred and ninety-two inhabitants. Its historian is informed that a brick from the old " Bodwell house," bore upon it the date of 1660. The name had become familiar upon the Haverhill town records before the separation, and has recently become familiar to the country, in the person of one of the descendants of that house too soon cut off from great usefulness, whilst Governor of a neighboring State.

In 1719, the town of Haverhill ordered the burial-ground to be suitably fenced with boards, and a convenient gate erected and swung on hinges. The present generation may still take lessons from the past. Hardly a name is mentioned in these pages that has not its representatives there. The learned and pious and grave ministers were all buried in that consecrated spot. For nearly two centuries it was the burial-

ground by distinction. Valor, excellence, beauty—all make that dust. Within its limits the first meeting-house, the old fort, the primal school-house stood. Everything makes the place interesting, in memory of the fathers, but it seems to have small interest for their children.

The new pound was ordered built in 1725. As has been suggested, the former may have stood nearer the river. In this year Mary Pearsons was warned out of town, "she having nothing to live upon," says the recorder. The authorities exercised intense watchfulness to prevent any poor persons becoming chargeable to the town. They usually served a formal notice on everybody who came, to go away again. Between 1724 and 1770 thirty were ordered off, of whom this apprehension was entertained. Thus, December 8, 1724, eighteen shillings was allowed Nathl. Peaslee, constable, for warning Mary Mash out of town and for carrying her out of town by a warraut from Justice Woodbridge to Bradford constable, and for his assistance about it, and for the same service about Thomas Club.

"To Christopher Bartlett, for cleaning ye fish courses, 1724, 8 shillings." "Voted & allowed: Gratis: for John Sanders, for ye year past, and until this day as Representative for ye town, £4-0-0." The following vote explains itself: "Haverhill, Mch. 2, 1724–5, voated & granted yt ye new Book this day Brought into ye town meeting, shall be a book to enter ye town's acts & orders therein by ye Town Clerks, & so as they, from time to time, may be chosen att ye annual town meeting

"Voated & granted yt the new book this day Brought into ye town meeting as above, shall be delivered to John Eatton, this day chosen town clerk, for to enter the town's acts & orders therein, yt are already passed or this day be made."

"Pecker's" tavern has been mentioned, but in 1728 the town thought two were "sufficient for the town's benefit," and appointed Lieutenant Ebenezer Eastman and John Swett to keep them—the latter at Holt's Rocks. Nathaniel Saltonstall wrote a letter to the Quarter Sessions, December 26, 1696, about licenses, worth reading to-day.—Notwithstanding the conservative action of the town on the application of the western people, to be permitted to form a new town, the period of disintegration and emigration began before 1725.

In 1721 about a hundred persons from Portsmouth, Exeter and Haverhill, petitioned the General Court for liberty to settle in the northerly part of Nutfield, Londonderry. In the following year, a few families removed to Chester.

In 1720, Captain Ebenezer Eastman and several others of Haverhill explored the lands in the vicinity of Pennacook (Concord, N. H.), and delighted with its rich intervales, petitioned the General Court for a grant of them.

The grant of the "Plantation of Pennacook" was finally made January 17, 1725, under what were considered very stringent conditions, to secure a solid and respectable settlement. One of them was to cut through a road from Haverhill to the new settlement. The court appointed a standing committee of nine "to bring it forward." The committee met at Haverhill in February, 1725, for the purpose of admitting settlers. One hundred were admitted to be of the company, to each of whom was allotted a right in the township, and three lots were reserved, one for the first settled minister, one for the parsonage, and one for the "use of the school forever." In 1726 the General Court appointed a committee to lay out the lands of Pennacook, which was headed by John Wainwright, of Haverhill.

In 1727, Ebenezer Eastman, of Haverhill, moved the first family from Haverhill to Pennacook. He was a man of great energy of character. Born here, 1781, he was son of Philip Eastman, who was taken captive by the Indians in 1676, and whose house and buildings are said to have been burned by them in 1698. Ebenezer Eastman was in the expedition to Port Royal, and in Admiral Walker's unfortunate expedition up the St. Lawrence River in 1711; in 1745 he was at the reduction of Louisbourg. Meanwhile, as we have seen, he had "traded by sea," kept tavern, explored Pennacook, and led off in its settlement, becoming one of its most useful citizens.

There were thirty-six Haverhill men among the one hundred admitted by the committee to be of the Pennacook settlement. Of these were some of the leading and most useful citizens of the town. Dr. Bailey, several of the Ayer, White, Clement, Davis, Hazzen, Johnson, Peaselee, Pecker, Page, Sanders and Whittier families. Some of these were men of property, who entered into the affair as an investment, or for a provision for sons, complying with the conditions of clearing land and building houses. The relations between Haverhill and Pennacook, or Concord, were intimate for many years.

These movements had doubtless taught the townsmen greater consideration for settlers in the outskirts. Thus the petition of ten persons living in the east part of the town, for leave to worship at the Amesbury meeting-house, was allowed in 1726. The next year families living in the northern and western parts of the town were permitted to hold meetings for worship in each of those localities during the winter season. This did not satisfy the north, and, June 18, 1728, the town voted that the northerly part of the town should be set off into a separate precinct or parish, on condition that the inhabitants within it should determine in a month's time where to build their meeting-house, and settle an orthodox minister as soon as possible. The meeting-house was built the same year. The next year twenty-nine members of the church had leave to organize themselves as a church at what is now Salem, N. H. In 1730 twelve

persons were allowed to pay their "minister's rate" in Amesbury.

As movements were in progress to break up the town, the town was inclined to break up some other organization. In 1726, at an unwarned meeting, held after the annual town-meeting, Captain Joshua Bayley was chosen a committee to join with any persons chosen by neighboring towns, "to use all proper means to get the County of Essex divided." The reason given was that the shire-town was so distant. Nothing came of the proposition. In 1693 several towns had petitioned for a division of Essex County. The House passed an act for the purpose, but the Governor and Council would not concur. In 1736 a similar proposition was made, without success, and since then the subject has been several times ineffectually agitated in the Merrimack Valley towns, on at least one occasion with an ambition to make Haverhill shire-town of the new county. When, February 4, 1679, the General Court made an order, transferring Haverhill and other towns from Norfolk County back into Essex, the town clerk entered a copy of it in the town-book, with this certificate: "This is a true coppy of the original sent up to be published, which was posted in Haverhill, 18 : 2 : 79. As attest, Nath'l Saltonstall, Record'r for Haverhill." At the present moment the town is as likely to remain in Essex as at any time for the last two hundred and nine years.

In 1726, the town voted Mr. Brown, the minister, four yearly contributions, in addition to his salary. The next year the town, at his request, "double floored" one of the rooms, "very cold in the winter," "ceiled overhead" another, and, of its own volition, "repapered the great room."

In May of this year the town voted to raise and repay immediately into the province treasury one-fifth of the "Bank Money."

The year 1727 was long memorable in the traditions of the Merrimac Valley. First, on account of "a mighty tempest of wind and rain," Saturday and Sunday, September 16th and 17th, which destroyed a large amount of property, sweeping off "near two hundred load of hay" from the marshes of Newbury.

"A most terrible, sudden and amazing earthquake" began Sunday, October 29th, the shocks continuing with abated violence for some months. The Rev. Mr. Plant, of Newburyport, in his account of these shocks, says: "On the nineteenth (November), about ten at night, a very loud shock and another about break of day, somewhat *here* abated, but at Haverhill a very loud burst, making their houses rock, as that overnight did with us. It was the Lord's day in the evening." Between January 1 and May 22, 1728, over thirty shocks are recorded. Coffin, in his History of Newbury, "has noted nearly two hundred earthquake shocks near the Merrimac, between 1727 and 1770. May 22, 1728, was observed by the church in Haverhill as a day of thanksgiving "for the great mercies of the winter past under the earthquakes."

The bounds of the North Parish or Precinct of Haverhill, as established by the General Court, August, 1728, should be given here as a matter of historical interest: "Beginning at the Westerly end of Brandy Brow, on Almsbury Line, from thence to the northerly end of the hither North Meadow, as it is commonly called, thence to the fishing river, and so down the fishing river till it comes to the Bridge by Matthew Harriman's, then running westerly to the bridge over the brook by Nath'l Marble's, and then a straight line Northwest one quarter of a point North, to the bounds of Haverhill, taking all the land within the town of Haverhill, north of that line." The North Parish, as thus defined, included almost the whole of Plaistow, about half of Hampstead and the whole of Atkinson.

At a special meeting called for that purpose in 1729, the town voted to raise fifty pounds towards the cost of supporting the province agent in England. Other sums were afterward appropriated for a similar object.

At the annual meeting a proposition was rejected to raise one hundred pounds for school money. The same proposition was renewed without success the next year, with the modification that half the money should be appropriated for the support of "the Grammar School near the meeting-house." The "Grammar School" was supported all the time, but held in different parts of the town. Common schools were kept a few weeks each, in different parts of the town.

The town gave the "North Precinct" ten pounds in 1730 towards the support of a minister, and the parish invited one Mr. Haynes to settle, who declined. They then invited Rev. James, son of Rev. Caleb Cushing, of Salisbury, who accepted, and was ordained the following December. Nov. 1, 1730, forty-six members of the First Church were dismissed, for the purpose of uniting in a church state in the North Precinct.

This year three "Overseers of the Poor" were chosen for the first time. Chosen annually till 1735, the office was then discontinued, and its duties relegated to the board of selectmen. The office of overseer was not revived until 1801.—The North Precinct asking for a grant of land for their new minister, the proprietors allotted him a piece containing about twenty-nine acres. Joseph Whittier and Moses Hazzen, in 1731, petitioned the proprietors for leave to build a wharf on the Merrimack, near Mill Brook. It was granted on condition that they kept the two bridges near them in repair "forever," paid fifty pounds, and built a good wharf, at least one hundred feet wide, from the highway to low water-mark. In 1732, the town voted to give the "proffit (rent) of the Parsonage Farm" to the North Parish until there should be another parish in town. They voted to "take an exact list of the Poles and estates" in town,

choosing a committee to do it. "Christopher Bartlett was paid six shillings, one day valuation estates."

June 18,1733, Henry Springer, who professed that he was desirous of carrying on the trade of a ship carpenter, petitioned the proprietors to grant him land for a "building yard" "betwixt the highway by the burying-place and the River, or where the vessell now stands upon the stocks." This petition was granted, provided he "should settle and carry on the trade of a ship's carpenter, or that some other person build in the same place in his room, and no longer." This was pretty certainly the first of ship-building as a regular business.

In March, 1734, the proprietors granted to Richard Saltonstall the large island in "Island Pond," containing about two hundred acres—one-half in consideration of valuable services he had rendered them, the other half to be paid for by him at thirty shillings per acre. Island Pond was still in Haverhill.

In 1734 and the two following years, there was a terrible pest of "catterpillers" in Haverhill and Bradford, and a part of Methuen, Chester and Andover, "and in many other places near Haverhill." They entirely devoured all the foliage finally, but in the beginning specially affected that of the red and black oak. Dr. Joshua Bailey left an account of them.

In 1734 the town consented that the inhabitants of the easterly part should be set off into a parish by themselves, and the line was accordingly run. But when the petitioners went to the General Court to get the proceedings legalized, there was such a sharp opposition from a minority that the court sent them home again.

The people in the westerly part made a similar application with better success and the west land was set off into the West Parish. A meeting-house was completed the following autumn. It stood east of the present meeting-house, where Timothy J. Goodrich lived in 1861. So says Chase.

In 1734 the Haverhill proprietors gave land to the North Parish for a burying-ground. It is still used for the same purpose, and is on the Atkinson road, near the Clement estate.

The next year the town for the first time voted "to mend and repair the highways by a rate." The prices for labor were fixed at four shillings per day for a man, and two shillings for a yoke of oxen; the surveyors to judge what a day's work was. But no *separate* sum was voted to be raised as a highway tax till 1754.

In July, 1735, Rev. Samuel Bacheller was ordained as pastor of the West Parish. Seventy-seven members of the First Church were dismissed to form the new one. The next year the proprietors gave the parish forty acres of land, and Mr. Bacheller seventy for his own use. At the annual meeting the town also voted to divide the income from all the parsonage land west of Sawmill (Little) River equally between the North and West Parishes.

In October the proprietors voted to survey and divide all the meadows lying in common in the town. Each was to receive his proportion, according to the original grant of "accomodation" land he represented.

In May, 1735, a Mr. Clough, of Kingston, N. H., who had examined a hog dead of a throat disease, was himself suddenly attacked with a swelling of the throat, living but a few days. Three weeks after three children in his neighborhood were attacked in a similar manner, and lived but thirty-six hours. From this beginning the disease spread rapidly to the eastern colonies and to New York on the west, which it did not reach for two years. Between June, 1735, and July, 1736, nine hundred and eighty-four persons died in fourteen towns of New Hampshire. Its particular mortality was with children. It appeared in October, 1736, in Haverhill, and swept off more than one-half of all the children under fifteen years of age. In many families not a child was left. Fifty-eight families lost one each; thirty-four, two each; eleven lost three each; five lost four each, and four lost five each. One hundred and ninety-nine died in this town, of whom only one was over forty years of age. The disease was attended with a sore throat, white or ash-colored spots, an efflorescence on the skin, great general debility and a strong tendency to putridity.

A layman would naturally conclude that this distemper was similar to the modern diphtheria. Physicians have written upon the disorder, although the writer is not aware that any one contemporaneous with its ravages did so. Rev. John Brown, of Haverhill, who lost three children, published an account of it in a large pamphlet, which must now be very rare.

The same disease appeared in 1763, in a milder form.

In 1737, the town voted to build an almshouse instead of supporting the paupers in private families. Next year the vote was renewed, and in 1738 it seems to have been constructed. It stood just below Mill Brook on the river side. But the new system did not satisfy them, and in 1746 the town voted to sell the almshouse and go back to the old plan.

The line between Haverhill and Methuen was not finally settled till 1738, when it was run by the selectmen of the two towns.

About this time a new ferry was established about a mile and a half below the Chain Ferry, but it was soon after removed a mile up the river. November 6, 1738, James McHard petitioned the proprietors for leave to build a still-house on "a small vacancy of land betwixt the parsonage land and Merrimack River by Mr. Pecker's." They gave him permission, provided he built within three years. It stood on Mill Brook. This was a rum distillery, and the first one in town.

In the summer of 1740 there fell a vast amount of

rain. The succeeding winter is thought to have been the most severe known since the settlement of the country. There were twenty-seven snow-storms. In November and early in December there were great and continuous rains, producing a freshet, which, according to the journalist Plant, "was not known by no man for seventy years." In this town the water rose fifteen feet, and floated off many houses. December 12th the river was closed with ice, and before January 1st loaded teams, even with eight oxen, passed from Haverhill to the long wharf at Newburyport.

A church was formed in that part of Haverhill now Salem, N. H., in 1740, of which Rev. Abner Bailey was the first minister. He died in 1798.

When the northerly part of the town was erected into a separate precinct in 1728 the town ceased to be the parish. All that remained after the North Parish was set off was known as the "South" or "Old Parish," still later as the "First Parish." Parochial business was no longer transacted in town, but in parish meetings, the first of which was held November 24, 1729, by virtue of a warrant from Richard Saltonstall, justice. John Eaton was chosen clerk. From that time on the organization was regularly kept up.

In March, 1730, the parish voted to "give to ye Revd. Mr. Brown ye timber of the forte yt is about his house, to despouse of it as he pleaseth." The fear of Indian enemies had passed away at last.

In that year the petitions of the East and the West that money might be "raised by ye parish yt they might hire a minister to preach to ym in ye winter season, on bad traviling," were refused. 1732 the parish enlarged the burying-place by purchasing half an acre of land adjoining it.

In December, 1733, the parish voted to hire another minister, "to assist Mr. Brown for three months this winter." His health had long been failing, and the care of such an enormous parish would require a man of herculean strength. But the East and West had evidently improved the opportunity to press their respective claims. At the first meeting about an assistant there was "considerable discourse" and "some hard words," but no vote; while at the next meeting the vote was passed to hire an assistant, and then votes to procure and pay ministers for both the East and West sections the winter following. There had been a compromise.

The following February, propositions were made in parish meeting to erect two new parishes and build two new meeting-houses one near the house of Nathaniel Merrill, Jr., and the other near that of Richard Hazzen. It was also proposed to set off to Amesbury West Parish those living near Amesbury line, and to the North Parish those who could most conveniently worship there. All these propositions were rejected. Four weeks later a vote was passed to set off those living east of a line from Elisha Davis' to the "pond bridge," and so on by the brook to the North Parish line, into a new parish. Twenty-two persons living within the bounds of this new parish, as proposed, dissented from the vote; and, as we have already seen, their opposition prevailed at that time with the General Court, and the East Parish was not set up till some years after. Then there was "great Debat" and "some hard words" again, but finally a committee was chosen to set off a parish "at the west end of the old or South Parish." The General Court erected this parish at once, but its bounds were matter of dispute for several years.

As early as 1720, Pastor Brown had been for several months unable to preach, the town providing a substitute. From 1733 to 1742, being in a "weak state of health," the parish provided for his pulpit supply for weeks and sometimes for months at a time. At last consumption claimed its long-besieged prey, and the good man died December 2, 1742. The parish, with fine liberality, voted to raise one hundred pounds, old tenor, to defray the expenses of his funeral, which was to be delivered to "Madam Brown, to be used at her discretion."

Of Mr. Brown his successor wrote: "Mr. Brown, my immediate predecessor, whose praise was in the churches while he abode in the flesh, and whose memory is still precious with the serious and judicious for his talents, goodness and assiduous labours, early appeared old by reason of a thin and slender constitution, and, emaciated with cares and pains, seemed burthened with life before the time." Mr. Brown was forty-six years old. His epitaph declares that "as he was greatly esteemed in his life for his learning, piety and prudence, his removal is very justly lamented as a loss to his family, church and country. He was an Israelite indeed, in whom there was no guile"

After the death of Mr. Brown the church and people were happily united in the Rev. Edward Barnard, who was ordained April 27, 1743. He belonged to one of the great ministerial families of New England. His father and grandfather were ministers of the First Church in Andover in succession. His brother, Rev. Thomas Barnard, of Newbury and Salem, was considered one of the most profound, liberal and excellent of the ministers. They all graduated at Harvard. Thomas Barnard preached the ordination sermon for his brother Edward. His topic was, "Tyranny and Slavery in matters of religion cautioned against; and true humility recommended to ministers and people." It is a sermon of great ability, clearness and liberality. It was printed in Boston for Samuel Eliot, of Haverhill. Dr. Bayley wrote in his journal: "April 16, 1743 (O. S.). Great snow-storm—eleven inches on a level. Rev. Barnard ordained."

Mr. Barnard's salary was fixed at one hundred ounces of silver, or its equivalent, annually, together with the use of all the parsonage land and buildings, except one lot near the river (where Merrimac Street now is), and also "a reasonable support and main-

tenance when by ye providence of God he shall be disabled from ye work of ye ministry, so long as he remains our minister." This was an excellent provision, for the times.

The next great agitation in the parish was about the first bell, imported expressly from London in 1748. The parish voted £65 1*s.* 6*d.*, old tenor, to procure it. After much discussion, it was finally "voted to Hang the Bell on the top of the meeting-house, and build a proper place for that purpose," and "to raise one hundred pounds, old tenor, towards defraying the charges of building the Steeple and Hanging the Bell." The belfry was built on the top of the meeting-house, and the bell-rope descended to the broad aisle. It was voted "to ring the bell at one of the clock every day, and at nine every night, and on Sabbaths and Lectures." The first bellman was Samuel Knowlton. March 26, 1753, the parish voted that Benjamin Harrod should take down and dispose of the old bell, and provide a "new one of about 500 lbs." In time the old meeting-house became so much decayed that the bell could not be rung with safety, and it was therefore taken down and hung on two pieces of timber placed crosswise at the top, upon the hill, near the parsonage house (corner of Main and Summer Streets). Mirick says it was first hung in that fashion. John Whiting succeeded Samuel Knowlton as bellman, and to him succeeded his widow, Judith Whiting, who had charge of bell and meeting-house many years, dying in 1795, not quite a hundred years old, after crossing the Great Bridge and telling her budget of Indian stories.

In 1734 the inhabitants of the easterly part had failed to be set off into a separate parish because of the opposition of some of their own number. In 1743 the attempt was renewed in a petition to the General Court of Nathaniel Peaslee (who had headed the petition nine years before) and fifty-four others, who recite the incorporation of Methuen in 1725, of the North Parish in 1728, and the West Parish in 1734. "And now may it please your Excy. & Honrs., the meeting-house now in the old parish stands but a mile at furthest off the West Parish Line, & the said meeting House stands near six miles from the East End of said Parish, & we have petitioned to the said Parish for some ease in this matter, & no help can be obtained," . . . signing themselves, "Your poor distressed Petrs."

June 1, 1743, the petitioners were ordered to serve the First Parish with a copy of the petition, "that they may show cause (if any they have) why the prayer thereof should not be granted." June 9th, Joshua Bayley and Captain James Pearson were chosen to make answer in behalf of the first or "Oldest Parish." They set forth in their answer what was formerly done and failed to be done, on account of the opposition of "many of the inhabitants on the easterly side of that line;" that "in the month of May last there was a vote passed to divide ye Parish, and a line was fixt which we hoped might make a peace in the Parish (tho at the same time we are humbly of the opinion that the whole Parish will make but two verry lean Parishes when divided). . . . It appears to us that we have been tenderly thoughtful in what we have done relating to a divisional line, having set off near one-half of the land & near sixty families, yea, all that have desired it except two or three men which, by our own act, may go with their estates to the new Parish if they please." . . . They solicit "a tender regard to the old Parish that was once the Center of a verry large town, is now become (by the loss of almost all Methuen & three separate Parishes) to be very small." June 14th, these petitions were read, and a committee was appointed to visit Haverhill, view the parish, hear the parties and report. September 9th, the committee reported in favor of the petitioners, and the parish was set off accordingly.

In November of the same year the first parish meeting of the East Parish was held "at the house of Nathaniel Whittier, deceased." A committee was appointed to select a location for a meeting-house, who reported at an adjourned meeting a recommendation that it be erected "at the south side of Turkey Hill, near the south-east end of the hill." The report was accepted, the work was begun, and meetings were held in the meeting-house by the following September, though it was not actually finished until a few years before it was torn down in 1838, nearly a century after. Alterations and improvements were made at different times. Until about 1816 the two sexes sat apart during meeting. The first artificial heating was in 1829. In 1745 the town granted the East Parish parsonage land valued at twelve hundred pounds, old tenor. When the house was ready to be used, the parish invited the neighboring ministers to fast and pray with them "for ye divine direction, in order to give a person a call to settle among them in the work of the ministry." September 6, 1744, was the day appointed. After the meeting the ministers recommended Mr. Benjamin Parker as well qualified. Accordingly, October 4th, a call was given to Mr. Parker. The parish voted to give him the use of the parsonage land; to build him a parsonage house and barn; to pay him one hundred pounds, old tenor, and seventy pounds provision pay, annually, for the first three years, and, after that, to increase the provision pay to one hundred pounds per annum. The call was accepted, and Mr. Parker was ordained November 28, 1744, at which time the church was gathered, consisting of sixteen male members. Mr. Parker entered in its records that "the inhabitants of the precinct had constant preaching for some time previously." In March, 1745, a parish committee requested Mr. Parker to wait a time for them to build the parsonage house they had engaged to furnish him with. His answer was, "no, he would not," and, before the next October,

the house was finished. It was nearly opposite the meeting-house, and was long used for its original purpose. In 1748 the parish built a school-house about six rods northerly of the meeting-house, and laid out two burying-grounds,—the first "between Jonathan Marsh's barn and Gravel Shoot," the other "in the corner of Richard Colby's land, nearest country bridge," both of which places are still used for the purpose. After a few years the school money was divided into two parts, and one school was kept at Gideon George's, another at Joseph Greele's, till the town was divided into small districts. Tradition has said that in 1750 there were but four houses at Rocks Village.

In 1743 the proprietors granted Edward Flynt leave "to finish a vessel he had put up on the banks of the river near his house," and also to put up any others during the proprietors' pleasure.

John Ayer had recently built a tan-house "on land given to him by the proprietors for that purpose in the rear of his father's garden," and had also built a bridge across the stream near it. In consideration that he would *forever* keep the bridge in repair, the proprietors granted him the piece of land west of his tan-house. This was not far from the west end of Plug Pond, probably bordering on what is now Kenoza Avenue.

In 1744 the town voted to divide the parsonage land into lots. A highway two and a half rods wide was laid out through the lots "to near the mouth of Little River and over said river." The expense of the bridge was to come out of the sale of the lots. This highway was what is now called *Merrimac Street*, now one hundred and forty-four years old. The lots were laid out on the north side only, and numbered from east to west, the lot cornering on Merrimac and Main Streets —long known as "White's Corner"—being "Lot Number One."

It is, of course, deeply to be regretted that this highway was made so narrow. The town had exhausted itself upon one great highway in the early day—that from Sanders' Hill to the Merrimac, above Holt's Rocks—which was twelve rods wide, and made the town much trouble. In 1754 it was cut down to four rods in width, and the land thus thrown out, nineteen acres and eighty-two rods, was sold to various persons along the line of the road.

In 1733 the proprietors had given John Gage liberty to set a blacksmith's shop near the river and Springer's ship-yard; and now, Edmund Greenleaf obtained liberty to set up such a shop near Edward Flynt's ship-yard.

In 1745 the town allowed Thomas Cottle to establish a ferry near his house, as he represented that the ferry might be "sarvicable to the town and other travailers," and proposed to ferry the town's people one-fourth cheaper than strangers. There were thus five ferries over the Merrimac between the village and Holt's Rocks—*i.e.*, Griffin's, on Water Street, near the foot of Lindell; Mullikin's, at the chain ferry; Pattee's Ferry; Cottle's, at Cottle's Creek, on the mouth of East Meadow River; Swett's, at Holt's Rocks.

In 1746 the town voted to exempt the First, or "old," Parish from paying anything for any other school in town, provided they would keep a grammar school constantly in their parish, at their own expense. The year before a grammar school had been begun there. —The tax-collectors were usually the constables. As we have noted, there was originally but one constable, who, when chosen, must either "stand," procure an acceptable substitute, pay a penalty of five pounds, or get excused, which the town was rarely in a mood to allow. After a while there were two constables, one for the lands and people east of Little River, the other for those west. Finally, there was one constable to a parish. At first the constables were not allowed any pay; in 1780 it was voted to allow them a poundage of fourpence on twenty shillings collected. Each parish now collected its own ministerial tax. In the First Parish the system of collection was frequently as follows: a contribution was taken up every Sabbath afternoon at the close of service. In the early days everybody went up to the deacon's seat, depositing his offering, the dignitaries beginning. It is said this custom went out about 1665. Afterwards the contributions were collected. Every contributor inclosed his money in a piece of paper, on which he wrote his name, and the amount contributed, with the object to which he wanted it devoted. If he wished it apportioned to his tax, it was so credited. When no name was written on the paper the offering was understood to be for the minister, and so disposed of. As we have seen, special contributions were sometimes taken up for his benefit. There are religious societies to-day within the limits of the "Ancient Parish," which are supported entirely upon the principle of voluntary contribution.

The following is a brief list of persons residing in this town in 1747, with their occupations. It was gleaned from petitions and other papers in the State Archives, and is of some value as showing what trades were carried on:

"James Pecker, an a Potecary; Edmond Mors, a shoemaker or cordwinder; Daniel Appleton, Joyner; James Parson, Husbandman; John Byenton, Black Smith; Grant Webster, Marchant; Jonathan Webster, Hatter; Andrew Fwink, Shipwrite; Nathaniel Knolton, Tayler; Mr. Trask, Brick Layer; Ebenezer Hale, Cordwinder; William Hancock, Farmer."

In 1748 occurred one of the overmastering agitations about town affairs. At the annual meeting, March 1st, Nathaniel Peaselee was declared elected moderator. Samuel White and fifteen others, ineffectually protesting "that he was not chosen according to law," retired, and those who remained elected town officers, and transacted the other business. Henry Springer and fifty-eight others asked the General Court to investigate the matter, on the ground that illegal votes were received and legal rejected. The petitioners chose John Sanders and Peter Ayer to present their

case. With the petition were sent fourteen depositions signed by twenty-eight other inhabitants, in support. Joshua Sawyer and others deposed, September 17th, that no list was used to show who was entitled to vote till some time after Peaslee began to act as moderator. To these petitions the selectmen of 1747 and 1748 and seventy-two others replied that the petition "contained false and abusive statements," that many of the petitioners were new-comers and contentious people; "that John Sanders was greatly prejudiced against moderator Peaslee, because the latter had exposed and prevented the former from obtaining more money from the Province than belonged to him, by a false account; the moderator was duly and legally chosen, and had the Rev. Mr. Barnard open the meeting with prayer; and many of the petitioners were not qualified to vote, and some were not even residents of the town."

There was another petition, dated March 29, 1748, signed by twenty-seven "freeholders and inhabitants," who say that they were not present at the annual meeting on account of the great depth of snow, but had heard of the proceedings, and prayed that the petition of Sanders and others be not granted.

These petitions were referred to a committee, which reported "that the town-meeting held on the first day of March be sett aside and that the selectmen for the year 1747 grant a new warrant for the choice of all ordinary town officers that Towns by law are enabled to choose;" the meeting to be held some time in April. The report was accepted.

A town-meeting was accordingly convened April 26th, at which all the officers chosen March 1st were re-chosen, except Thomas Duston selectman in place of Moses Clement. "John Pecker and others" dissented, because this was not done "according to law."

May 25, 1748, Richard Saltonstall and forty-one others, memorialized the General Court, to the effect that "the affairs of the second meeting were conducted with more wickedness, partiality and premeditated corruption than the first;" that the selectmen (who were also assessors) had made a "pretended valuation, by which they disqualified some of the opposite party, and admitted others who were clearly not entitled to vote—all for the purpose of carrying their own points in the choice of officers; that the cause of all the uneasiness among the inhabitants, was the belief that the Selectmen, or some of them, had combined with the Town Treasurer (who was also Town Clerk) to Imbezell large sums of the publick money & apply it to their own use." They therefore prayed for a new meeting, to be presided over by a disinterested moderator, and that the transactions of the last meeting be set aside. The General Court ordered the petitioners to serve the selectmen and moderator with a copy of their petition, and June 15th, was assigned to hear the parties. In their answer the selectmen deny any attempt at partiality, and declare that the memorial is false and vexatious. But it appears that June 17, 1748, Nathaniel Sanders and Joseph Patten for the memorialists and the selectmen for the respondents, made an agreement for peace on the following terms: the memorialists to drop their petition, on condition that a new town-meeting be held, and that a disinterested committee be chosen to settle with the town treasurer, on which committee no selectman or member of a former committee should be placed. However, the General Court's committee heard the case in part in June, postponing its consideration further to September, when they made a report, recommending that the proceedings of the second meeting should be set aside, and declared null and void, and a new meeting should be called; and that as no valuation had been taken the present year, "according to law," the valuation of 1747 should be taken as the rule for determining the right to vote. The General Court adopted the report, and appointed John Choate, Esq., of Ipswich, to act as moderator of the meeting. Accordingly, a meeting was held November 22d, when Col. Choate acted as moderator, and the same persons were for the third time elected as town officers! And then the war came to an end. But if our fathers' opinions of each other, as expressed to the General Court, are to be taken as correct, their descendants have invented nothing in the way of bad politics.

Colonel Nathaniel Peaslee, the moderator, grandson of Joseph the first and son of Joseph the second, born in 1682, was a merchant and a large landholder. He was much employed in the town's business, serving many years as selectman and moderator. He was representative to the General Court nine years in all, and longer than any other man in the town's history save David How.

This year—1748—a motion was made to build a school-house in every parish, but it was negatived. In 1723 the town had voted to build a number, but they may not have been built, or all of them.

During the war of 1744–48 Haverhill men were out. Some were at the taking of Louisburg, but the muster-rolls of that expedition do not give place of residence or enlistment of those engaged in it. In 1748 nine Haverhill soldiers were stationed at Scarborough, Me., as sentinels.

In 1749 a proposition was made to hold the town-meetings half the time in the West Parish, and the other half in the East—but it was voted down. Probably that arrangement would have inconvenienced almost everybody.

The summer of this year was made miserable by intense drought, caterpillars and similar pests, accompanied with great heat.

In 1751 it was voted that a grammar school should be kept in each parish four months in the year. This was probably a spasmodic effort, occasioned by intimations that the town was in danger of prosecution for not keeping such a school, as the law required. In fact, the next spring Nathaniel Peaslee was chosen

to appear and answer a presentment against the town, for not being provided with a "grammer-school master;" and another, for not keeping "Hawk's River Bridge in repair."

In 1752 great alarm was occasioned by the appearance of small-pox in neighboring towns, and John Cogswell and Samuel White were appointed to assist the selectmen to use every means to prevent its entrance into this town. Special constables were appointed to serve necessary warrants. But the disease was not to be barred out by their puny barriers, and in 1755–56 several persons died with it.

In this year the change in computing time, from "Old Style" to "New Style," went into effect in England and its colonies by act of Parliament.

In 1753 a tax was laid upon coaches, chariots, chaises, calashes and riding-chairs. These were all then clumsy vehicles. The chaise was large, heavy-wheeled, square-topped. Only wealthy people had them, and they were only used on very important occasions—like a wedding or an ordination. A calash was like a very clumsy wagon-seat, set upon a heavy pair of low wagon-wheels, with shafts attached. In 1754 there was one chaise and nine calashes in Haverhill. In 1755 eighteen calashes were returned. Everybody rode on horseback, upon saddle and pillion, or walked.

CHAPTER CLVII.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

The Boundary Line Dispute—Frontier Warfare—Demise of Proprietors of Common Lands.

From the first settlement of Massachusetts there has been an intermittent controversy about a portion of its northern boundary. The charter of King Charles the First granted all "that part of New England lying between three miles to the north of the Merrimack, and three miles to the south of the Charles River, and of every part thereof in the Massachusetts Bay, and in length between the described breadth from the Atlantic Ocean to the South Sea." What was meant by the words "three miles to the north of the Merrimack, and of every part thereof?" The grantees construed the words as authorizing them to find a beginning for their line at the point three miles due north from the northernmost point of the Merrimac. They accordingly sent out an expedition in 1639 to follow up the river. The commissioners selected a rock near the place where the Merrimac issues from the Winnipiseogee Lake as the northernmost point of the river, and marked it (ever since known as Endicott's Rock). They then proceeded three miles north from the rock, and there selected a certain tree as their extreme northern bound. Three miles south of the mouth of the Charles, and of every point thereof, would, of course, form the southern boundary. These lines would be extended to the Atlantic Ocean on the east, and the South Sea on the west. From the tree, three miles north of Endicott's Rock, a line, extended east to the Atlantic, and west, so far as it was judicious to do so, would take a respectable portion of what is now Maine, and a large share of New Hampshire and Vermont. True, a considerable part of the territory embraced in the patent, according to this construction, had been already granted to John Mason and others, and as the patentees approached the Hudson River on their way to "the South Sea," there might be other difficulties in the way of enforcing the title. But at the time referred to, neither Mason nor other individual patentees were in a position to enforce their claims as against Massachusetts. She accordingly granted lands and townships, according to her own interpretation of the charter. Haverhill, as we have seen, extended fifteen miles from the Merrimac.

The New Hampshire patentees, on the other hand, asserted that the northern line of Massachusetts could not at any point extend more than three miles north of the middle of the channel of the Merrimac. In 1677, at a meeting before the King and Council, the agents for Massachusetts reduced their claims to a jurisdictional line three miles from the river, according to its course; that is, the line, beginning three miles north of the mouth of the Merrimac should run parallel with the river at that distance to Endicott's Rock, thence three miles to the tree before mentioned, and thence due west to the South Sea. This was a large abatement from the first claim, and it seems to have been considered that the more moderate pretension was well founded. Massachusetts, however, continued to exercise jurisdiction over those parts of the towns already granted, as Haverhill and Amesbury, that were more than three miles from the Merrimac, and New Hampshire complained without avail.

The charter of 1692, however, prescribed the northern boundary of Massachusetts in different language, "extending from the great river commonly called Monomack, alias Merrimack on the north part, and from three miles northward of the said river to the atlantic or western sea." Did this mean three miles northward from every point of the river? Did it confirm or restrict the bounds of the original charter? About 1720, at any rate, New Hampshire began to claim that the line should commence at a point three miles north of the month of the Merrimac, and thence run due west. This would have cut off considerable of the territory originally claimed by Massachusetts, but it would have left the whole of more than twenty New Hampshire towns and parts of others, including the present city of Nashua, in Massachusetts.

When Londonderry was incorporated, in 1722, the enterprising Scotch-Irish people soon begun to have

difficulties with the people living in the northwesterly part of the original grant of Haverhill.

The same year, a committee was appointed by the General Court of Massachusetts to inquire into encroachments upon lands to the north of Merrimac, belonging to the towns of Salisbury, Amesbury and Haverhill, over which Massachusetts, of course, was exercising jurisdiction, according to her original grants. Kingston, in New Hampshire, claimed that her grant included lands in the northeastern part of Haverhill, and there was trouble along the whole northern border.

In November, 1726, a petition was presented to the General Court from Orlando Bayley, Jacob Rowell, and several others from Haverhill and Amesbury, in which they set forth that they have been prosecuted at law for land they had held for sixty years, on pretense that it was in the town of Kingston and province of New Hampshire. Writs in trespass had been served upon the petitioners on the ground that their land was "more than three miles from Merrimac River," and these cases were tried in New Hampshire.

The General Court informed their agent in London about these complaints, and voted that the Governor should remonstrate to the General Court of New Hampshire against the proceedings and ask that they might be stayed and all such, until the question of boundary was determined.

In February, 1728, however, the Council made an order reciting a petition of Richard Hazen, Jr., James Pecker, Ebenr. Eastman and Nathaniel Peaslay, all of Haverhill, in behalf of its inhabitants, "setting forth that notwithstanding the Ancient Grant of the sd Town, the many confirmasions and settlements of their Bounds by the Government, divers of the inhabitants of Londonderry, within the Province of New Hampshire, have encroached upon the Petitioners' lands, mowed their meadows, cut down and destroyed their Timber, and erected several Houses on their Lands and have prosecuted the inhabitants of Haverhill, in the said Province of New Hampshire, for improving their own lands, and therefore praying relief from this Board," and as it appeared to the board that there was great danger that the inhabitants in the two provinces would use violence on each other unless they are speedly discountenanced by their respective governments, "for preventing whereof, voted, that the Inhabitants of this Province bordering on the dividing Line and claiming Lands there be directed not to make any new Settlement on the said Lands or any improvements whatsoever thereon, and to desist from all proseeutions in the Law till the further order of this Government for the settlement of the said Line, Provided the Government of New Hampshire do give the like or some other effectual directions."

It appears from the Council records of that year that Nathaniel Peasley was twice allowed money from the province treasury to defend himself against suits in New Hampshire—ten pounds and thirty pounds,—and that John Wainwright and Richard Saltonstall were granted twenty pounds to prosecute trespassers on province lands in Methuen.

The land in dispute between people in Haverhill and people of Londonderry lay in what were known in Haverhill as the "fourth division" and the "fifth division" lands, especially the latter. The "fifth division" had been laid out in lots January, 1721, as we have seen, by the proprietors of Haverhill. The grantees of the proprietors had entered upon the lots, cultivated and improved them. Thus collisions had arisen between them and the men of Londonderry claming the same lands. The proprietors of Haverhill supported their own rights and those of their grantees with great resolution; and after the proprietors had successfully asserted their rights against the non-commoners in their own town, and had conciliated opposition, in the manner already related, they seem to have had substantial moral support from the inhabitants of Haverhill in maintaining their grants against the claims and petty warfare of the people of New Hampshire. Not that there appears to have been much to choose between the contending parties. The New Hampshire people brought suits in their own courts against the Massachusetts men, whom they regarded as trespassers. The Massachusetts men retaliated. Assaults were committed and fights occurred, which caused the participants to be arrested, fined and imprisoned in either State. Indeed, there was a long and angry border warfare—all the more bitter because rights of property were involved, and each party doubtless sincerely believed itself in the right.

It is rather difficult to see how the claim of Londonderry could be upheld morally or in the law, because Wheelwright's deed of 1719 bounds its grant on the eastward "upon Haverhill line." Haverhill bounds had been established since 1667, and everybody could ascertain where "Haverhill line" was. It was a matter of record. However, this is immaterial to our purpose.

At a meeting of the Haverhill proprietors held in January, 1729, a committee was chosen to prosecute, "to final issue," all trespassers on the common lands; and another to perambulate the west line of the town. The reason of the latter action was that the west line of the town was the western boundary of the "Fifth Division Lots." They were in the northwesterly part of the town, the angle, or, as it was called, the "Peke of Haverhill."

At a meeting of the proprietors April 7, 1729, "Wm. Mudgete did remonstrate to the proprietors that he has lately been at great cost and charges in defending his title to certain lands in the fifth division, which were, and still are, claimed by the Irish, and that the matter is now in the law undecided." He therefore prayed that the proprie-

tors would "reimburse him what he has expended in removing the said Irish out of his house." A committee was appointed to examine his accounts and report. And at a subsequent meeting, Mudgett was allowed forty-four pounds, seventeen shillings and six pence from the proprietors' treasury.

The same year, however, August 27th, the inhabitants of Londonderry petitioned the Governor and Council of New Hampshire,—"Inasmuch as the Inhabitants of the Towne of Haverhill do often disturb sundry of your petitioners in their quiet possession of their lands granted them by their charter, under their pretentions of a title thereto," they pray for assistance, on account of the "Lawsuits which are daily multiplied by them."

The records of the General Court of Massachusetts show that June 29, 1731, the House received "A petition of Nathan Webster and Richard Hazzen, Jr., Agents for the Proprietors of the town of Haverhill, setting forth their Ancient and Legal right to the Lands they possess in said Town, as also the late encroachments of the Irish people settled in the Province of New Hampshire, who have cutt down and carried away great quantities of their Hay and Timber and other ways disturbed them in the improvement of their lands, Praying relief from this Court." Paul Dudley, afterward chief justice, reported from the committee to which this petition was referred that, inasmuch as there was a hopeful prospect of a speedy settlement of the line, the Governor should be directed to issue a proclamation, directing the inhabitants of both provinces to forbear molesting each other for the present year. The House adopted the report, but the Council refused to concur, and "voted, that inasmuch as there are Courts of Justice established by Law before whom affairs of that nature are properly cognizable, the Petition be dismissed."

Soon after this, commissioners of the two provinces met at Newbury to negotiate, but without success. The New Hampshire commissioners then appointed John Rindge, a merchant of Portsmouth, agent to present a petition to the King, whose appointment was confirmed by their House of Representatives October 31, 1731.

The King issued an order at last, submitting the matter to a board of commissioners, compo-ed of five councilors from each of the governments of New York, Rhode Island and Nova Scotia. The tribunal was not regarded as favorable to Massachusetts, as she had at the moment some controversy with the two former about boundaries, and the latter was thought to be prejudiced against her. Connecticut, which Massachusetts had proposed, was rejected, because of a supposed bias in her favor.

The time and place for the meeting of this commission was August 10, 1737, at Hampton, N. H.

At a meeting held May 17, 1737, Haverhill chose Colonel Richard Saltonstall, Mr. Richard Hazzen and Deacon James Ayer "to wait upon the Commissioners and represent the affairs and boundaries of the town to them, provided the Proprietors of the undivided lands pay the expense of the committee." Saltonstall and Hazzen had already been employed by the proprietors.

In the manuscript docket of Colonel Saltonstall, as justice of the peace for the county of Essex, is the record of two cases, heard before him March 15, 1735, at Haverhill, in both of which "Richard Hazzen, *et al.*," are plaintiffs, which are quite certainly a part of the proceedings by which the Haverhill proprietors were endeavoring to protect their grantees. They were actions of trespass, and in both of them the respective defendants plead in abatement—"1. That the justice before whom the tryall is, is a party concerned. 2*ly*, that neither the originall Right to which this Land mentioned in the Writt is laid out, nor the number of the Lott are mentioned in the Writt." These pleas were overruled, and the defendants respectively plead not guilty. One of them, by the consideration of the justice, recovered "double his cost occasioned by the prosecution;" in the other case, "It is considered that the plaintiff recover forty shillings sued for in the writt and costs of court, taxed at 12*s.* 7*d.*," from which judgment the defendant appealed. The proprietors' agent lost one case and won one before the magistrate.

The Assemblies of the two provinces met at Hampton Falls and Salisbury respectively, on the day of the meeting of the commission, and Governor Belcher, who was Governor of both provinces, appeared with considerable military and other pomp. The commission decided upon the eastern boundary of New Hampshire, which had also been in earnest dispute, but the question as to the boundary dependent upon the original and second charters of Massachusetts Bay was left as they found it. By agreement, it was submitted to the King in England.

New Hampshire employed as agent, John Tomlinson, who retained one Parris as solicitor—a man of skill and shrewdness. Massachusetts employed Colonel Edmund Quincy, as agent, a man of high character, but he died in England in 1738, of the smallpox by inoculation. Her interests then fell into the hands of Wilks and Partridge, who are accounted to have been much inferior in diplomatic ability to the managers for New Hampshire.

In a letter written by Richard Hazzen, the agent of the Haverhill proprietors, May 9, 1737, he says: "I should earnestly request that endeavors might be used that a line from Endicott's Tree to three miles north of Merrimack River at ye mouth might be ye dividing line of the Provinces which we take to be the true intent of the Charter; but the Province having put in a different claim, we forbear to mention it." This was a novel scheme for finding a boundary line, and had not, perhaps, much to recommend it. And, as Hazzen admits, it was just as well to forbear men-

tioning it, for the province had long before intimated that it would be satisfied with much less. But New Hampshire also would have been satisfied with much less than she received, through the award of the King.

This town and the other towns interested, sent petitions directly to the King, setting forth their rights as they conceived them under the ancient grants. All of which was of no avail. The decision of His Majesty, King George the Second, much to the mortification of Massachusetts and the inhabitants of the towns claiming jurisdiction under her, was entirely in favor of New Hampshire.

April 9, 1740, a decree of the King in Council passed the seals, by which it was adjudged, ordered and decreed "that the northern boundary of the province of Massachusetts Bay is and be a similar curve line, pursuing the course of Merrimac River, at three miles distance on the north side thereof, beginning at the Atlantic Ocean and ending at a point due north of a place in the plan returned by the commissioners (the commission already referred to), called Patucket Falls, and a straight line drawn from thence due west across said river till it meets with His Majesty's other governments." Pawtucket Falls is now the city of Lowell, and a continuing line following the course of the Merrimac west of that point would shortly turn towards the north. Doubtless one reason for the decision was the desire to avoid collision as far as possible with claims under other patents.

The King's decree was sent to Governor Belcher, with instructions to apply to the respective Assemblies of New Hampshire and Massachusetts, to unite in making the necessary provisions in running and marking the line conformably to the decree, and permitting the Assembly of either province to proceed *ex parte* if the Assembly of the other should refuse. The Assembly of the province of Massachusetts declined having anything to do with the matter, but the Assembly of New Hampshire made the necessary appropriation for running and marking the line. Walter Bryant was therefore appointed by Governor Belcher and the Council March 12, 1741, to run the boundary between New Hampshire and Maine (then a part of Massachusetts). March 16, 1741, Governor Belcher appointed George Mitchell to run the curve line from the Atlantic Ocean to a point three miles due north of Pawtucket Falls. Governor Belcher also issued a warrant or order to Richard Hazzen, directing him to cause the line to be run from a point three miles north of Pawtucket Falls till it reaches His Majesty's other governments. George Mitchell had already been employed in drawing maps for the use of the commission. Richard Hazzen was without doubt the agent of the Haverhill proprietors, but he was not employed about that part of the line in which they and their grantees were interested, but in running that part of it west of Pawtucket Falls.

George Mitchell ran and marked his line in February, 1741, made a map of the river from the Atlantic to Pawtucket Falls, and March 8, 1741, at Portsmouth, New Hampshire, made oath to a statement written upon the back of the map that the survey "is true and exact to the best of his skill and knowledge, and that the line described in the plan is as conformable to His Majesty's determination in Council as was in his power to draw, but finding it impracticable to stick to the letter of said determination, has in some places taken from one province, and made ample allowance for the same in the next reach of the River."

In the month of March, 1741, Hazzen ran and marked a line from the point about three miles north of Pawtucket Falls, across the Connecticut River to the supposed boundary line of New York, on what was supposed to be a due west line from the place of beginning. By this line, under the King's decree, it is said that New Hampshire received a territory of about fifty-five miles by fourteen, more than she had claimed before the commissioners.

Bryant and Hazzen were both directed to allow ten degrees variation for the needle. Hazzen's line was fifty-five miles long; Bryant's was one hundred and twenty miles long. If Hazzen, by this variation, therefore, took anything from New Hampshire improperly, Bryant must have taken much more improperly from Maine for the benefit of New Hampshire. Bryant's line was run, and has since been accepted as the true boundary line between New Hampshire and Maine.

Mitchell and Hazzen's line, thus run in 1740, under the authority of Governor Belcher and the New Hampshire Assembly, at the expense of New Hampshire and in the absence of Massachusetts, is the only line ever run between the two governments. Returns of the surveyors were lodged in the office of the Board of Trade in Great Britain, by Governor Belcher, and returns were also lodged in the offices of the respective secretaries of each of the provinces, the latter of which have disappeared.

After the King's decision was made known, Thomas Hutchinson, of Boston, petitioned His Majesty "to direct that the several Line townships, which by the Line directed to be run by his Majesty's order in Council of ye 9th April, 1740, will be cut off from the Province of Massachusetts Bay may be united to that province." And it appears that the towns interested —Haverhill and Amesbury—also petitioned in their own behalf.

May 7, 1741, Gov. Belcher wrote to the Board of Trade in England, "concerning a difficulty arisen upon ye construction of his Majesty's Judgment respecting ye Boundaries betwixt ye Province of Massachusetts Bay and that of New Hampshire."

Belcher recites the King's decree and proceeds: "Your lordships will be pleased to observe that it is called the *Northern Boundaries of the Massachusetts*, but not the *Southern of New Hampshire*, nor the *Divis-*

ional Line between the two Provinces. From this the people of both Provinces say, the lands from the Northern Boundary of Massachusetts, till they meet the Southern Boundary of New Hampshire, and so further westward, are not under any jurisdiction or Government, nor can the lands already ungranted between these lines be granted for the Incouragement of New Settlers. If the matter remains thus, it may soon produce disorders and confusion between the King's subjects, now settled upon some part of those lands, who look upon themselves in a state of anarchy."

To enforce his suggestion, Belcher refers to the different wording of the decree where it prescribes the other boundary (between New Hampshire and Maine) the language there being, "And as to the Northern Boundary between the Said Provinces, the Court resolves and determines that the Dividing Line, etc." No answer appears to have been made to Governor Belcher's inquiry. The difficulty was probably regarded by my Lords of Trade as rather imaginary than real, and as partaking of the nature of a quibble.

The King's decree was undoubtedly intended to fix the dividing line or boundary of both provinces. Greater precision in language might have been had, and doubtless the point suggested by Gov. Belcher was made much of by those disappointed at the King's decision, and may have raised illusory hopes of something more to be done, while it added to the confusion and perplexities of the poor people in the disputed territory. New Hampshire taxed the inhabitants there as soon as the line was run. Those portions of Haverhill and Amesbury falling north of the new line were incorporated by the General Court of that province into a district, under the name of "Haverhill District," which continued until it was divided and incorporated into towns.

The instructions given Benning Wentworth, who at this time was appointed to succeed Belcher as Governor of New Hampshire, cite the King's decree without comment as fixing the limits of his jurisdiction. George Mitchell's construction is not necessarily of much importance, but in the title of his map he writes of "describing Bounds between his Majesty's Province of New Hampshire and the Massachusetts Bay, agreeable to his Majesty's Order in Council."

Dec. 8, 1742, Gov. Benning Wentworth, of New Hampshire, wrote to the Board of Trade, referring to the petitions to restore to Massachusetts the inhabitants who had been set away from it against their expectation and desire—"unless it should be his Majesty's pleasure to put an end to applications of this nature, it will be impossible for me to carry his Royal Instructions into execution." "New Hampshire sits down by his Majesty's determination, and has showed the greatest obedience thereto by paying the whole expense of running and marking out the boundaries in exact conformity to the Royal determination, and therefore thinks it a great hardship that Massachusetts should lead them into any new charge in a dispute that had subsisted near four-score years, and which has been so solemnly determined." The Legislature of New Hampshire also begged the King not to allow any change in the boundary line. Gov. Wentworth and New Hampshire had their own way. The boundaries marked out "in exact conformity to the Royal determination" have never been disturbed, but never agreed upon between the two provinces or the two States. The supplemental chapter of history about this boundary is certainly an amusing one.

In 1825 Massachusetts appointed a commission to act jointly with a commission to be appointed by New Hampshire, to ascertain the boundary between the two States. January 31, 1827, the Massachusetts commissioners made their report to Governor Lincoln, in substance as follows: In July, 1825, upon information from his excellency that the State of New Hampshire had acceded to the proposals of Massachusetts, to run and ascertain the boundary line between their respective States aforesaid, and had appointed commissioners for that purpose, they put themselves in communication with the New Hampshire Board, and met them about the business intrusted to both boards. They recite the disappearance of the returns of the surveyors of 1741 from the American offices and say: "But it was now agreed by the commissioners from each State that a line existed as the same was reputed, known and acknowledged as well by the authorities of the town on each side of said line as by inhabitants and others residing in the vicinity thereof. We, accordingly, commenced the survey," a surveyor and assistant surveyor being appointed by the Massachusetts commissioners and similar agents by the New Hampshire commissioners. "And we began at a large stone in the marsh, . . . which stone is three miles and two hundred and twenty rods northerly from where the Merrimack River now enters the Atlantic Ocean; thence by several courses and distances we ran thirty-four miles and twelve rods to a point or station called the Bonndary Pine, which is, by an actual measurement, two miles and three hundred and thirteen rods (5164½ feet) due north of a point in Pawtucket Falls, called the great pot-hole place; thence we proceeded west by the reputed line fifty-five miles, etc., . . . which is a corner of New Hampshire and Vermont."

Meeting again, October 27th, at Nashua, in New Hampshire, when the surveyors' minutes and plans on both sides were compared, "no doubt remained but the line, as originally run and marked by George Mitchell, from the Atlantic Ocean to the place called the Boundary Pine, two miles, three hundred and thirteen rods due north of Pawtucket Falls, was ascertained and found. And that the line due west from that station to the point on the west bank of the Connecticut River, as the same had been originally marked and returned by Richard Hazzen, was in like manner ascertained and found."

Whereupon the Massachusetts invited the New

Hampshire commissioners to "reduce the same to a convention, and to proceed to erect durable monuments at each angle between the Atlantic Ocean and the boundary pine, and also at the end of the lines of the several towns," "in order to prevent future mistakes concerning the same."

"But this proposal was rejected by the commissioners from New Hampshire. They proposed to us to run and mark a new line, proceeding from the Station north of Pawtucket Falls due west, as the same should be now ascertained, to the River Connecticut, to terminate, as they stated, two miles, three hundred and two rods south of the aforesaid point on the west bank of Connecticut River, which included the meeting-house in Northfield, Massachusetts, and to join with them in a survey of the Merrimac River, from the ocean to the said station against Pawtucket Falls, in order to ascertain whether the line aforesaid, as originally run, was more than three miles in all parts thereof distant from the river, leaving this line for a subject for future discussion after the survey should be made. The commissioners from Massachusetts did not go into a full consideration of the fitness of either of these measures being unanimously of opinion that their powers did not extend to the altering of any line, or ceding any portion of the territories of Massachusetts, but were confined to ascertaining the existing line between the two States, as the same had been originally run and marked by George Mitchell.

"The Commissioners from New Hampshire then informed us that they should proceed, *ex parte*, to survey the river.

The commissioners of 1825, therefore, failed to come to any agreement. But, in order that the line they had found might not be lost, Massachusetts caused granite monuments, fourteen inches square by four feet in height, to be erected at every angle in the line, and at the intersection of all town lines. This work was done in 1827 by Varnum, assistant-surveyor for the Massachusetts commissioners in 1825, and these monuments have marked the line ever since.

In 1882, in the course of a perambulation of the boundary line between the city of Haverhill and the towns of Plaistow and Atkinson, in New Hampshire, some of the monuments referred to were found, and this, leading to the discovery that no boundary line between the two States had ever been agreed upon, an application was made to the Legislature of Massachusetts, which resulted in the appointment of three commissioners by each State, authorized to ascertain and establish the line. Copies of maps and documents have been obtained from the Public Record Office, in England, giving the history of the whole subject, with copies of Mitchell's maps and lines. The line run by Mitchell and Hazzen in 1741 is fully identified, and that has ever since been the jurisdictional line between the two States, obnoxious as it was to Massachusetts, and vastly more favorable to New Hampshire than she had ever dreamed of. New Hampshire alleges that a mistake was made in the survey by Hazzen in 1741, by which that State was deprived of a strip of land about three miles wide, on the Connecticut River, and terminating in a point in the town of Dracut, opposite what is now the city of Lowell, containing some fifty thousand acres. New Hampshire also appears to assert that Mitchell's line was wrong, because he only claims to have made a *practicable* line three miles from the Merrimac, having "in some places taken from one Province, and made ample allowance for the same in the next reach of the river." The New Hampshire commissioners claim that the proper line under King George's famous decree is one "*every part of which* is three miles due north of the corresponding part of the river, and is represented by an unbroken line." New Hampshire wants, or rather her commissioners want, to be absolutely accurate, and apparently that the line to which Massachusetts submitted with such reluctance one hundred and fifty years ago, because it stripped her of so great a territory, should be disturbed upon the theory that the New Hampshire agents, acting under her own direction, did not take quite so much land as they were mathematically entitled to. The demand looks a little ungracious, to say the least.

King George's decree only settled the jurisdictional question. It was a condition of submission of the dispute to the decision of the King, that private property should not be affected, and this condition was incorporated into the decree. Questions of title were therefore left to be settled by the law.

In September, 1741, after the lines were run, the Haverhill proprietors chose a committee to prosecute all trespassers on the common and undivided lands, whether they were north or south of the New Hampshire line, or in that part of Methuen formerly Haverhill; and they continued to sell and grant lands on the north side of the new line.

On the other hand, the inhabitants of Londonderry petitioned the General Court of New Hampshire to newly run the lines of their town, as "your petitioners for several years past have been very greatly disturbed and incroached upon in their possessions and in defence of the same has expended from time to time in the Law near two thousand Pounds against the inhabitants of Massachusetts Bay." They complain that the last "carry off the small part of the timber that is yet growing there."

The sort of proceedings that were indulged in by both parties may be conjectured from circumstances like the following: In April, 1735, John Carlton and his brother George (sons of Thomas, of Bradford) petitioned the proprietors of Haverhill to make them some consideration for the services of themselves and teams "when constable Pecker went to fetch off those that were Tresspessers on that part of Haverhill com-

mon beyond the Island Pond," as they had done to others that went at the same time.

The historian of Londonderry says: "Sometimes an inhabitant of this town, when employed in these meadows, would be seized and carried away by individuals from abroad, who laid in wait for the purpose. Thus a Mr. Christie, while mowing in a meadow, was seized and carried to Haverhill, without being allowed to apprize his family of his situation.

"It also appears that civil processes were commenced and carried on before the courts in Massachusetts, as they held their sessions at Newburyport and Ipswich, and that certain individuals were actually committed to prison under the arrests which were made by the claimants in that province. We find frequent charges made for attendance at court at Ipswich, also a vote of the town to pay the expenses of individuals imprisoned, and to perform for them the necessary work required on their farms during their imprisonment."

After many years of these troubles, we find Richard Hazzen, of whom we have heard so much, petitioning the General Court of Massachusetts, May 31, 1753, to the effect that "upon the running of the divisional line between the provinces, about one-third part of the lands belonging to the ancient town of Haverhill fell to the northward of the said line and within the province of New Hampshire," the government of which "claimed, not only the jurisdiction of these lands to the North side of the line, but also the property (contrary to the order of the Crown), and endeavoured to ouste all the inhabitants, which were more than one hundred families, settled by Haverhill, to the Northward of it, and take away their property by force of arms, the people of Kingston and Londonderry oftentimes coming in Clans to the Number of forty or fifty at a time, and one hundred or more, to fence in our lands, build on them, &c."

That the petitioner, having some lands on the north side of the line himself, and seeing the distress the Haverhill people were in, moved into New Hampshire and aided them in their lawsuits, "which have now lasted almost ten years." He had made one hundred and thirty journeys to Portsmouth and sunk a thousand pounds. "Notwithstanding, he has had such success that no one Haverhill man has lost his estate nor are any new settlements made upon us, no new suites Commenct, and but two depending and them before the Governor and Councill." Meantime he had been obliged to mortgage his estate and asked relief. The General Court voted to loan him four hundred and sixty-eight pounds free of interest for five years, upon security. But it is believed that he never got the money, dying next year.

The proprietors were put to large expenses in sustaining their grantees, as their records show. Thus: January 15, 1748–49, one hundred pounds was voted "towards defraying ye action before ye King and Council wherein Nathaniel French (Kingston) is appellant, against Thomas Follonsbee and others, (Haverhill), appellees."

December 16, 1751, Henry Sanders was voted twenty pounds "to carry on his case against Wheelright at Portsmouth," (a suit under the Wheelright deed). June 29, 1752, Edward Flint was voted thirty pounds "to carry on his case against Londonderry at Portsmouth," and forty pounds more in November, 1753, "to continue his case." January 1, 1753, fifty pounds was voted to prosecute trespassers on the land previously granted "the first minister of Timberlane, now called Hampstead." November 20, 1758, four hundred and seventy-eight pounds, twelve shillings, New Hampshire old tenor, was voted Nathaniel P. Sargeant "for his services in David Heath's and other cases."

By the running of the new line, in 1741, one-third of the population, territory and property of Haverhill was cut off from it. Taken in connection with the loss of Methuen in 1725, more than one-half of its resources was stripped from it. Under instructions from the town, the selectmen took a list of the polls and estates falling into "New Hampshire province according to Mr. Mitchell's Line."

Two hundred and fifteen polls or taxable persons, one hundred and fifty-eight houses, nine mills, four hundred and fifty-eight acres of mowing, three hundred and eight of planting, one hundred and fifty-two of pastures and nineteen of orchard, two negroes, two hundred and thirty-nine oxen, three hundred and forty-six cows, one hundred and thirty-five horses and twenty swine had fallen on the north side of the line. Three hundred and forty-six heads or polls, two hundred and fourteen houses, seven mills, eleven hundred and twenty-six acres of mowing, seven hundred and fifty-one of planting, seven hundred and twenty-three of pasture, and one hundred and twenty-five and a half of orchard, ten negroes, two hundred and sixty-six oxen, five hundred and forty cows, one hundred and eighty-four horses and one hundred and twenty-eight swine fell south of the line.

Hampstead, N. H., incorporated January 19, 1749, was formed of two parts cut off from Haverhill and Amesbury respectively. It was originally Timberland or Timberlane, on account of the abundance of its timber. Richard Hazzen, the indefatigable agent of the Haverhill proprietors, removed to Hampstead and was one of its leading men. His nephew, Captain John Hazzen, removing from Haverhill to Hampstead and staying there a few years, led a company to found a new town on the Upper Connecticut, which, though his influence received the name of Haverhill. Many Haverhill people settled there.

Plaistow, a large part of which was originally in Haverhill, was incorporated February 28, 1749. The first settlers were nearly all from Haverhill. Charles Bartlett and Nicholas White were prominent among them. The meeting-house of the First Church, originally the North Precinct of Haverhill, over which

Rev. Mr. Cushing was pastor, fell a few rods north of the State line in 1741. Two-thirds of the inhabitants went with it. The minister's house and the greater part of the land belonging to the parish remained in Massachusetts. Difficulties arose in consequence, some of the parishioners on the south refusing to pay their minister's rate, for an alleged want of power to raise it. Whereupon the General Court of Massachusetts, April 7, 1753, created the portion south of the line into a parish with all the powers thereto appertaining. Atkinson was set off from Plaistow, and incorporated September 3, 1767. All its territory was originally from Haverhill. The Pages, Dows and others, its first settlers, were all of Haverhill. They went there about 1727 or 1728, after the Indian Wars. The relations between Atkinson and the mother town have always been and still are very intimate. Many Haverhill youths were educated at its famous academy, which celebrated its centennial in 1887. Atkinson is still an admirable specimen of the pure, unmixed, New England country town.

Salem, N. H., was incorporated as a district soon after the line was run in 1741, and as a town in 1750. Policy Pond, partly in Salem and partly in Winham, was once Haverhill Pond.

The "Proprietors of the Common Lands" had held an important position in the town affairs, as has been set forth at great length, but they had sustained much litigation, their lands had been mainly disposed of and the organization was falling into decay. In 1748 they informed the General Court that "A Common Right" was worth only three pounds, old tenor, and they were ready to sell at that price. They say that when the old grants are all made good, they "don't think one penny will fall to the Proprietors." Nevertheless, the proprietors and their descendants held on to their "Rights" with great tenacity. They were like "French Spoliation Claims" at a later day. Something unexpected might turn up about them at any time. Peter Ayer owned two common rights, which descended to five daughters. One of the daughters divided her fifth of the two rights among her own four daughters.

The title to a great deal of land in the once immense township came from the "Proprietors." In 1739 they disposed of forty-seven parcels of land, many being given to parties applying for them. In 1749 the "Proprietors agreed & voted yt all their Right, propertee & interest yt they have in the land lying betwixt ye head of ye lotts & Merrimac River, from Capt. John Pecker's wharfe down to ye plaine gate, so called (excepting a road all along by ye head of ye lotts so wide as ye Town shall think proper), be & hereby is given, granted & appropriated to ye use & benefit of sd town within ye Massachusetts, to be disposed of as the said town shall see cause; with this proviso, that the said Town do Disalow & Discontinue the said road, laid out by the selectmen from Kent's lott down to ye plain gate, on February 11, 1724–5: this above voted in the affirmative." Pecker's wharf was near the mouth of Mill Brook, and the Plain Gate, so called, was some distance east of Mill Street.

In 1751 there still remained to the proprietors the strip of land between Water Street and the river, extending from the bridge to Mill Brook, excepting a few small lots, previously granted. There was then suddenly a great demand for lots to build wharves upon. Enoch Bartlett wanted a lot to build a wharf "against the house of Joshua Bailey, Esq." This was the first lot below the present bridge. Seven or eight wharf lots were granted lower down. Richard Hazzen obtained a lot for a building yard "below Mill Brook." He now lived in Hampstead, and was probably going to bring some of the famous sticks of "Timberland" to the river for vessels. In 1759 the proprietors granted to Jonathan Buck all their rights and privileges in the Mill Brook, "below the Great Road." The "Great Road" was Mill Street. Buck owned the land on the west side, and one Morley the land on the east side of Mill Brook. Jonathan Buck, David Marsh, Enoch Bartlett, Isaac Osgood, James Duncan, James McHard "and others" of Haverhill were, in 1760, granted six townships in the province of Maine, between the Penobscot and St. Croix Rivers. But Buck was the only one of the petitioners who settled on the lands. He was one of the founders of the town of Bucksport.

The numerous applications for wharves above mentioned indicate the beginning of a general interest in commerce by the people. Agriculture was ceasing to be their entire dependence.

In 1759 Samuel Blodgett put up "pot and pearl-ash" works on Mill Brook. They were among the earliest of that kind, continuing in successful operation many years.

In 1754 the town for the first time voted a specific sum of money for repair of highways; one hundred pounds was the amount. Two shillings a day were allowed for a man, and the same for oxen "with a good cart or plow," or eighteen pence for oxen alone.

A proposition was also made to appropriate a specific sum for schools. It was rejected that year, but carried the next. Fifty pounds were then appropriated for their support the current year; the parishes were to receive their proportion of the money.

1755 was long famous as one of "excessive heat and drought," and for the most violent earthquake ever known in North America. In the same year and in the month of November occurred the terrible earthquake that shattered the city of Lisbon.

In 1760, there was again a severe drought in Eastern Massachusetts, and the following winter there was a great scarcity of grain in this vicinity. Joseph Haynes, of the West Parish, made a journey on horseback to Connecticut, where, in the vicinity of Hartford, he made arrangements for a cargo of corn, which, later, he brought to Haverhill, selling it for

food and seed only, and refusing to sell for speculation or to those not in actual need.

In 1760 the town gave a lease to the ferry at Holt's Rocks for ten years to John Swett, whose father had kept it already for forty years.

In the summer of 1763 the bridge over Little River, where Winter Street crosses it, was rebuilt. The following materials were provided: two gallons and three quarts of rum, two pounds and a half of "Shugar," one hundred and twenty-one feet of two-inch plank, one hundred and thirty feet of two and a half inch plank, and twenty feet of white oak timber.

In 1764 the town voted down a motion to divide the parsonage lands among the four parishes.

In the custody of the city clerk of Haverhill are some of the records of the proprietors of common lands. An early book, the first entry in which is of the date of February 25, 1722–23, seems to have been bought at the "Boar's Head in Cornhill, near Stock's market, Boston." The last entry in that book is of October 15, 1745. During the latter days of the organization, Colonel Nathaniel Peaslee was largely chairman of their committees and moderator of their meetings, and his grandson, Joseph Badger, Jr., was for years their clerk. From September 5, 1755, to November 20, 1758, there were no meetings. In 1759, Badger, the clerk just named, was a committee to settle with the claimants under the "Mason" patent for the township of Salem, N. H. The last entry of Joseph Badger as clerk is April 4, 1763. In the spring of that year he emigrated to Gilmanton, N. H., a new settlement, where he became a very influential citizen. January 31, 1763, doubtless in anticipation of his departure, Nathaniel Peaslee Sargeant was elected clerk. He was another grandson of Colonel Nathaniel Peaslee, whose daughter Susanna married Rev. Christopher Sargeant, first minister of Methuen. Young Sargeant, who graduated at Harvard in 1750, was soon after a practicing lawyer in Haverhill and so remained until appointed justice (afterwards chief justice) of the Supreme Court. June 6, 1763, at an adjourned meeting, Nathaniel Peaslee, moderator, swore the new clerk to his faithful performance of the duties of his office. "The meeting was at ye House of Mrs. Hannah Foster, inn holder, of Haverhill." The last record is as follows, and marks the quiet demise of a long, busy and powerful organization. Colonel Peaslee, the moderator, was more than eighty-one years old.

"Essex ss. Haverhill, October 10th, A.D. 1763. This being the time to which ye Props. meeting was adjourned, the Moderator did not come, and so this meeting ended, of course.

"Att. Nathl. Peaselee Sargeant, *Props. Clerk.*"

CHAPTER CLVIII.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

The French War—Five Club—Theological War in the West Parish—Coming of Hezekiah Smith and Formation of the Baptist Society—The First Church and Parish—Minister Barnard.

The Seven Years' War between France and England (1756–1763) again embroiled their American colonies. Haverhill seems to have borne her part. There were a few townsmen in the expedition to Nova Scotia, when the "Neutral French" were deported from Acadia. Some of those unhappy people fell to the share of Haverhill, in the general distribution. In 1759 the town paid twelve pounds ten shillings towards the support of eight persons assigned to it, who were all women and children. In 1756 Capt. Edmund Mooers led thirty from the first company in the town in the expedition to Crown Point; Maj. Richard Saltonstall seems to have led about thirty from the second company. The poll-tax of those in service was remitted to the town by the province. The same men served frequently on a number of different occasions, when calls were made. Capt. Mooers seems to have served substantially through the war. Capt. Henry Young Brown, of Haverhill, served through the whole war with such usefulness that in 1770 the General Court made him a grant of eleven thousand acres on Saco River, near Fryeburg to which he removed and where his descendants have resided.

Maj. Saltonstall, entering the service in 1756, was a major in the army at Fort William Henry, at its capitulation on August 9, 1757, enduring his share of fatigue and terror from the shameless assaults of the Indians. He commanded a regiment from 1760 to the close of the war, and was soon after made sheriff of the County of Essex. He was regarded as a good officer.

In 1757 there were three foot companies in Haverhill. The first company was composed of 133 men, residents of the First Parish; the second of 131 men, residents of the West Parish, of which Maj. Saltonstall was then captain; the third of 56 men, residents of the East Parish. There was besides the Alarm List, including all between the ages of sixteen and sixty years, who were exempt from ordinary military duty, but liable upon emergencies to be called out for duty in their own town. The Alarm List in the First Parish carried 40 names, with the minister, Rev. Edward Barnard, at the head; in the West Parish, 16 names, with Pastor Batcheller at the head; in East Parish, 9 names, headed by Rev. Benjamin Parker.

On the "Last Alarm for the Relief of Fort William Henry," August "ye 16th," 1757, Ensign Joseph Badger, Jr., led as far as Worcester a detachment of 29 men from the first company, Lieut. Currier 10 from the third, and Lieut. Bradley probably 22 from the second.

Dr. James Brickett, then a young man, was surgeon's mate in Col. Frye's regiment from March 30, 1759, to July 30, 1760.

In 1758 there were 28 townsmen in Col. John Osgood's regiment. Capt. John Hazzen had a company for the reduction of Ticonderoga and Crown Point.

In 1759 there were 54 Haverhill men in Col. Bagley's regiment. At least 44 were in service in 1760. Between November 2, 1759, and January 7, 1763, there were 117 Haverhill men in service, but not all different persons, some having served and been discharged several times. Some of them shared in the great glory of the fall of Quebec and the conquest of Canada.

By a valuation taken in 1767, it appears there were "478 Polls ratable, 27 Polls not ratable." The valuation was exceedingly low. "Thus 281 Dwelling-Houses" were valued at £5 each. There were "44 work houses," "2 Distill Houses," "3 warehouses," "3320 superficial feet wharf," "19 mills," "10 servts for life at 40*s.* each," £4768 13*s.* 2*d.* trading stock, "242 tuns of Shiping," "£3855 12*s.* 2*d.* Money at int. a 6 p c't.," 186 horses, 252 oxen, 716 cows, 1315 sheep, 59 swine, 1040 cow pastures, 13,765 bushels grain, 2736 barrels cider, 916½ tons English hay, 945 do. meadow hay. The whole valuation was £4791 13*s.* 4¾*d.* It must, however, be remembered that this was only the annual value, or worth per year, of lands, houses, money, live-stock and servants "for life."

In 1767 the first powder-house was erected, eight feet square.

Feb. 22, 1768, a Fire Club was organized and fire wardens were chosen. The latter were Cornelius Mansise, Enoch Bartlett, Samuel White, Esq., and Isaac Osgood. The object of the "Fire Club" was to assist in extinguishing fires, and "in saving and taking the utmost care of each other's Goods," upon such occasions. There were originally only eighteen members, each of whom provided bags and buckets. The only officers were a moderator and a clerk. New members were admitted only by unanimous consent, and the number was limited to twenty-five. Afterwards they enlarged their aims, by the protection of each other's goods from theft, and the pursuit of thieves, and the recovery of drowning persons and drowned bodies. The society included most of the leading citizens from 1768 to 1822, and was, no doubt, a useful organization, not only for social purposes, but as a centre of organization and effort. The annual supper was kept up long after the activity of the society had ceased, and was an important event in the life of the village. The first fire-engine was bought in 1769, by a company formed for the purpose. Cornelius Mansise was the first captain, with fourteen assistants. The engine was bought, as well as kept in repair, by private subscriptions. March 19, 1770, according to the record, the company "took the engine out, worked her, and put her in again;" in the evening "met at Capt. Bradley's for refreshments, etc."

In 1769 "salt works" were put up on Mill Brook by James Hudson, to whom the town voted, for encouragement, £13 6*s.* 8*d.* But he was not successful.

In 1771 Nathaniel Walker and William Greenleaf were chosen "Weighers of Bread." Fifteen years after the office was joined to that of "Clerk of the market," chosen annually for many years. In 1786 the selectmen were ordered to regulate the size of all bread sold.

In 1773 there was a great tornado between Salisbury Point and Haverhill.

At the annual meeting in 1774 it was voted that the two schools should be kept in the year to come, "the one a Grammar School, and the other an English School," probably in the First Parish only.

At that meeting, John Eaton retired, who had been a faithful town clerk for fifty-seven years. "Clark" Eaton lived below the "Buttonwoods," opposite the river. He was succeeded by John Whittier, but when Whittier declined a re-election in 1778, the townsmen chose Eaton once more. He declined, being considerably over eighty years old.

For years there was great alarm about the small-pox. Vaccination was not yet resorted to, and there was great difference of opinion about inoculation. In 1777 the town refused to build a hospital for inoculation or to permit one to be built at individual cost. The next year the townsmen voted to permit inoculation and then "revoked" the vote, and "voted to prosecute those persons that have taken the small-pox by inoculation in this town, or any that shall take it in future, without consent of the town first obtained." Three weeks later it was "voted to allow the inhabitants of the town to be inoculated at the hospital or houses near it." Tradition says the "Pest House" was near Kenoza Avenue, opposite the estate of Mr. Thomas West, whose ancestor, Dr. Kast, had charge of small-pox patients there. Inoculation was then regarded as a very serious affair. When small-pox was prevalent panic ruled the hour.

No chronicler would venture to pass over the year 1780, as that of the "cold day" and the "dark day." No one now living in Haverhill can remember either, but many, doubtless, have heard them described by those who remembered them well. Of the winter, Bailey Bartlett wrote in his journal: "Snow so deep and drifted that breaking a path on the common, we made an arch through a bank of snow, and rode under the arch on horseback."

For almost a century the town was the parish, and for more than a century the First Parish and its meeting-house was the centre of the municipal, ecclesiastical and social life of the place. The "Standing Order" ruled supreme for just a century and a quarter. But no historical sketch of the town would deserve the name which should fail to allude, however briefly, to the manner in which sectarianism came in.

The West Parish, incorporated by the General

Court in 1734, was organized April 16th, and a meeting-house, at the corner of Broadway and Monument Streets, was ready for occupancy early in October of the same year. Seventy-seven members, dismissed from the First Church for the purpose, were constituted the Third or West Parish Church October 22, 1735. Just two weeks later, Rev. Samuel Bacheller was ordained pastor. Mr. Bacheller graduated at Harvard in 1731. He was always regarded as an able and cultivated man. But from the beginning there were some dissatisfied with his settlement and watchful for occasions to excite prejudice against him. Yet there was no serious difficulty until 1755, when, after a settlement of twenty years, Mr. Bacheller preached a sermon, taking as his text the dying words of our Saviour, "It is finished," in the course of which he intimated the opinion, which was pounced upon as a heresy, "that the blood and water which came from Christ when the soldier pierced his side, his laying in his grave, and his resurrection, was no part of the work of redemption, and that his laying in the grave was no part of his humiliation." Joseph Haynes, the leader of the opposition to Mr. Bacheller, who has heretofore been mentioned in a connection highly honorable to him, a man of strong natural parts and an able controversialist, had the address to seize at once the opportunity. "When this doctrine was delivered over three times in one sermon, the minister was interrupted and told before the congregation that he preached exceeding false divinity." There was a very acrimonious contest upon the subject, which agitated the parish, the town and the neighboring churches for years. The Haverhill association, known as the "Minister's Meeting," upheld Mr. Bacheller. In 1757, Haynes published an anonymous pamphlet at Portsmouth, of eighty-eight pages, entitled "A discourse in order to confute a heresy delivered and much contended for in the West Parish in Haverhill and countenanced by many of the ministers of the adjacent parishes . . . . In this discourse their most material arguments to support their doctrine are answered and their doctrine proved to be corrupt. That the blood and water which came from Christ had a cleansing and redeeming virtue in it; and that his lying in the grave was his humiliation and a part of the sacrifice for sin; and that his resurrection is a powerful means by which we are raised from a state of death in sin to newness of life; and the meritorious and efficacious cause of the Resurrection of the body; and consequently all of them must have a joint influence in the work of Redemption, is proved. By a Lover of the Truth and a Hater of Falsehood."

A "Vindication" of the association, with an "Appendix," apparently by Mr. Bacheller himself, was published, also a dialogue by Rev. Henry True (minister at Hampstead), to which Haynes issued a "Reply" of eighty-eight pages, printed at Portsmouth in 1758. The matter was finally submitted to a council consisting of nine churches, called by the West Parish Church and pastor. The council met by adjournment September 19, 1758, when twenty charges, involving both Mr. Bacheller's conduct and doctrines, were laid before it. The council sat four days, and decided that the charges were not sufficiently supported. Col. John Choate, of Ipswich, another strong-minded layman, who was a member of the council, differed from his associates, and published his "Reasons of dissent." Little vital interest as the controversy has at the present day, it is of importance to the student of history, as showing to what the constant study of doctrinal theology had brought the keen, hard-headed people of New England. Dogma had become their intellectual food. And one cannot help thinking that, in this case, the pews were willing to show what they could do against the pulpit. April 17, 1759, the council met again by adjournment, when Mr. Haynes laid before them some "Friendly Remarks," in which he criticised the first decision. Yet a re-examination of the charges effected no substantial change in the result.

Neither did the decision of the council quiet the parish. Between April, 1760, and July, 1761, eight meetings were held, at all of which votes were passed more or less insulting to Mr. Bacheller. And as it was evidently hopeless to expect a reconciliation, the pastoral relations were dissolved by a council October 9, 1761.

These disputes did not effect the estimation in which Mr. Bacheller was held by his fellow-townsmen. They sent him to represent them in the General Court in 1769 and 1770, at the very beginning of the pre-Revolutionary struggle. He lived to a great age.

This controversy left its stamp upon the West Parish. Its effects have perhaps never been effaced. Joseph Willard, afterwards president of Harvard College, was invited to become the pastor and accepted the call, but was never ordained. Tradition says that the council refused to settle him over a people so turbulent. January 9, 1771, after an interval of ten years, Rev. Phineas Adams was ordained the second pastor. Mr. Adams was an eminently catholic, conciliatory and prudent man, whose ministry lasted thirty years,—till his death, in 1801. Yet one of his brother ministers, after attending "ministers' meeting" with him about 1786, wrote in his diary that the dissensions were such, it was scarcely possible "Brother Adams" could remain with his people.

About three years after Mr. Bacheller's pastorate came to an end, Rev. Mr. Tingley was supplying the pulpit of the West Parish. Under the date of July 27, 1764, a young minister entered in his diary: "After service (at New Rowley,—now Georgetown). I went with Tingley to Haverhill, and preached for him in the afternoon in the West Parish, from Ezek. 33: 11. The Lord was with me." This was Rev. Hezekiah Smith, then twenty-seven years old, who,

born on Long Island, had graduated at Princeton in 1762. When nineteen years old, he had been converted and baptized by Rev. John Gano, an eminent Baptist clergyman, a denomination then poor, derided and despised. At college young Smith had fallen under the influence of President Samuel Davies, whose pulpit eloquence, when in Virginia, had been the model and the inspiration of Patrick Henry. Immediately after graduating he had made an extensive evangelizing tour through the Southern provinces. In one year he rode four thousand two hundred and thirty-five miles on horseback and preached one hundred and seventy-three sermons, often to crowded and deeply affected congregations. September 20, 1763, he was ordained as an Evangelist at Charleston, S. C. During the spring and summer of the next year, he was preaching in Eastern New England, and thus reached the West Parish of Haverhill. Some weeks after he returned, preaching and exhorting there. He wrote in his diary: "God was with us of a truth." "Tues. 28th, went to Hampstead, and preached for the Rev. Mr. True, who behaved well. The assembly was very solemn. After service I went home with Mrs. White in Haverhill town, wife of John White." This was "Marchant" (merchant) White, a leading and wealthy citizen of Haverhill, whose house, built in 1766 and then beautiful and showy, is still standing on Water Street, next the Exchange Building, though shorn of its former pomp of portico and pillars and its terraced gardens in the rear.

Mr. Smith continuing to preach in the West Parish, the meeting-house was now crowded with attentive hearers. He was a powerful and impressive preacher. One who had known him from his own childhood, but had no partiality for him, wrote long afterwards: "Dr. Smith preached without notes; his voice was uncommonly strong and commanding and his manner solemn and impressive. He was esteemed an able expositor of the Scripture. His learning was not extensive, but he was possessed of excellent sense and a thorough knowledge of human nature." A meeting of the society was soon called, and a committee was appointed to wait upon the popular preacher, with an invitation to become the pastor of the West Church. Says his biographer: "As he at first declined, they urged their request until he was compelled to tell them frankly, what no one had until then even expected, that he was a Baptist. This, of course, ended the matter, as also his further services as a stated or permanent supply in that parish." Full of discord as they were, they were at least united in devotion to the "standing order." The writer before quoted says: "It was not then known that he was a Baptist (a circumstance never forgotten by many), but his friends formed a society for him and built him a meeting-house in the First Parish, after he had declared his peculiar opinions, although many of his hearers never professed to change theirs."

Evidently there were those who could not forgive Mr. Smith that he had stolen their hearts before they knew of his connection with an unpopular sect. But there were those in the village of Haverhill, or, as it was then called, "Haverhill Town," who had become deeply interested in him, and were determined to support him at every hazard. The circumstances were really somewhat difficult and the situation critical. The conservative element had heretofore ruled in ecclesiastical affairs in Haverhill. There had been no favor to separatism or any disposition to schism. Since the quenching of Joseph Peasley there had been no tendency to what was considered disorder. Revivalism and revival preaching were discouraged. It is well known that when George Whitefield came first to New England there was great difference of opinion as to the treatment which ought to be accorded to him. His wonderful eloquence was regarded by some as sensational and disorganizing. The conversions which occurred under his preaching they denounced as unreliable; they wanted nothing of the "great awakening." There were many pulpits to which he was not admitted. Some clergymen welcomed him gladly and rejoiced in his wonderful work. Tradition tells us that Whitefield came twice to Haverhill, and was on both occasions the guest of the White house, on Mill Street. On the first occasion he did not preach in town at all, there being an indisposition to allow him to preach in the meeting-house. On the second visit he preached to a great congregation in the open air, on the piece of ground in the highway near the upper end of the cemetery. The authorities of the town (so the story runs) sent him a warning to depart out of town. Instead of complying with their request, he read their letter at the close of his afternoon discourse, and observing, "Poor souls! they shall have another sermon," proceeded to give notice that he should preach at the same place, *at sunrise* the next morning. He kept his word and addressed a large audience. There is a venerable lady of the town who remembers with vivid distinctness the account which her aunt, a daughter of the White homestead, used to give of the great revivalist's Haverhill meetings on that spot.

The people who had been moved by Whitefield were not afraid of being called Separatists, or New Lights, or Anabaptists. Some of them happened to be among the most respectable and wealthy people of the town. James Duncan, son of George, one of the Scotch-Irish settlers of Londonderry, long a trader in Haverhill, and who lived till 1818, dying at ninety-two years of age, furnished his house (now the site of the Currier Block on Main Street) for a meeting January 1, 1765, "where several friends met and agreed that night to begin a private society or meeting." So Mr. Smith wrote in his diary. "Squire" Samuel White, the three John Whites—Captain John, Merchant John and Master John—William

Greenleaf, Deacon Whittier, Peter Carleton and Simon Ayers, of the West Parish, were either at this meeting or in sympathy with its objects. They were obliged to form what Mr. Smith calls a "Private Society," because the law did not recognize a Baptist Church as entitled to any rights of property, or as having any corporate existence. Long after, in 1793, the "First Baptist Society in Haverhill" received a special act of incorporation. The "Private Society" soon provided a temporary place of worship, and, that being overrun, built an excellent meeting-house in 1765.

The trouble was that all persons were obliged to pay the regular parish tax unless they could obtain exemption in the manner provided by law. This society was obliged to procure certificates from three other Baptist Churches acknowledging them to be one of the regular Baptist congregations before their own officers could give to individuals certificates of their frequent and usual attendance at their church upon the Lord's day, in order that they might be exempted from paying a proportionable part of the ministerial taxes raised by law in the parish. Indeed, Merchant John White, a constant worshipper with the Baptists, though not a church member, was obliged to pay his regular parish tax to the "standing order" at the end of an expensive lawsuit.

Before obtaining a place of worship of their own Mr. Smith's friends had asked the use of the First Parish meeting-house at such times as would not interfere with the service of the pastor. They requested the parish committee to call a parish meeting to consider the subject. The committee declined. Application was then made to John Brown, Esq., justice of the peace, who thereupon issued a warrant for a parish meeting "to see if the parish will vote that any ordained or gospel minister shall or may preach in said meeting-house at any time when it does not interfere with the Rev. Mr. Barnard's public exercises." The parish refused to grant permission.

In 1796 the Baptist Society made an effort to secure for themselves a share in the parsonage lands, but without success. They continued their efforts, indeed, in this direction, up to 1818.

Nevertheless, and perhaps in great measure because of the persistent opposition to them, this Baptist Society grew strong and flourished. It accomplished a great missionary work abroad, and assisted in forming and rearing many infant churches, especially in New Hampshire and Maine. Mr. Smith was an early, earnest and influential friend of Brown University and one of its fellows from the beginning, finally receiving from it, in 1797, the honorary Degree of Doctor of Divinity. His pastorate lasted more than forty years, during which three hundred and five persons were admitted as church members. When Dr. Smith died, in 1805, after a ministry of forty years, funeral honors were paid him by all classes and denominations, in a sincere and respectful spirit. No man ever accomplished a greater work in the town of Haverhill. The church and society he gathered, after furnishing material for several others, is still strong and flourishing. November 22, 1883, the society dedicated a new meeting-house on Main Street, the largest and most costly among the Protestant houses of worship, which has been entirely paid for. This is the fourth meeting-house, the first three having been located on "Baptist Hill," on Merrimac Street. In 1865 the centennial of the first was observed in a very successful manner, when an admirable historical address was delivered by Rev. Arthur S. Train, who had been the fourth pastor. Other ministers, well known and much respected, were Rev. William Batchelder, Rev. George Keeley (an Englishman by birth), known as "Father" Keeley, Rev. Stephen P. Hill, Rev. Augustus H. Strong, Rev. George W. Bosworth, Rev. Henry C. Graves. Rev. W. W. Everts, Jr., is the present pastor.

"The peace of the town," says another, "was long disturbed by this event, but Mr. Smith conducted himself with great prudence, and gradually obtained general esteem and respect. He was eminent among the clergy of his denomination. . . . As a husband, parent, friend and neighbor, he was highly exemplary. He had traveled much, was several years a chaplain in the army, was extensively known, had many warm friends, and was considered by all as an accomplished gentleman."

The reply by the parish committee to the request for a meeting about the use of their meeting-house by the Baptists, dated December 19, 1764, closes as follows:

"And considering that the request is by such persons as have of late appeared disaffected in the public concerns of the parish, and absented themselves from the instituted ordinances in said house on the Lord's day, and that they have itching ears, following after preachers of a different sect in religion, heaping one Anabaptist preacher upon another, without offering, as we can learn, to make any objection against our teacher, either that his life is irreligious or immoral, or that his preaching or doctrines are repugnant to the gospel, and as they have followed after those Baptist preachers, and by word and practice endeavored to support their tenets, may we not well suppose it to be their intention to introduce such? which we think would be a great infringement upon the Constitution and order of the church, by law established in the parish. And we are also of the opinion, that the door so opened, would produce very bad consequences, by the holding of evening lectures, which are oftentimes attended with a confused noise and indecent gestures, and that the house would, as we fear, be made the theatre for enthusiasts and fanatics to act all the wild and extravagant tricks in, for the propagating of the like in others. We therefore determine not to warn a meeting, as requested.

"HAVERHILL, December 19, 1764."

It was a complaint of the Baptists that their opponents indiscriminately called them Anabaptists, as above, thus identifying them with all the wild outrages of Munster. The committee objected to "the holding of evening lectures." It is said the celebrated Dr. Emmons, of Franklin, objected to Sunday-schools, first, that they were unnecessary by reason of his preaching and weekly catechising, but specially

because, in the next place, his people would want to be "gadding about" to evening meetings.

The records of the First Church show that, March 9, 1766, Susanna White was refused a letter of dismission, in order to unite with the Baptist Church in this town. "If she will finally withdraw, we must leave her with our Master, according to whose unerring judgment she must stand or fall, determining to follow her with our prayers to the God of all Grace for his enlightening spirit to rectify her mistakes and lead her in the way everlasting."

The records of the First Church contain much that is instructive and interesting.

Dr. Smith's biographer says that the organization of the Baptist Society quickened the zeal of the Congregational Church of the First Parish, which had for several years been discussing the propriety of building a new meeting-house. It had, indeed, been agitated as early as 1761. It was finally erected in 1766. Its dimensions were not to exceed sixty-six feet in length and forty-eight feet in width. For the first time the whole of the ground floor was occupied with pews, which were appraised by a committee and sold at auction. The general men's seats and women's seats were thereafter in the galleries alone.

This house was set "at the northerly side of the old meeting-house, as near to it as may be convenient." It was about midway of the common, and was surmounted by a steeple at the easterly end. It is said to have cost more than a thousand pounds. It was finally taken down in 1837. The year before the house was built (1764) it was voted that the revision of Psalms by Tate and Brady, with the largest impression of Dr. Watts' hymns, "be sung in public in this parish."

In 1774 Mr. Barnard died, having been pastor thirty-one years. Eliot, in his biographical dictionary, wrote of him,—"He was a most accomplished preacher. His popular talents were not eminent, but his discourses were correct and excellent compositions, and highly relished by scholars and men of taste. He was a fine classical scholar, and excelled in poetry as well as prose. It was much regretted that he did not publish more, as what he did publish was so acceptable. His sermon *upon the Good man* would do honor to any divine." A number of his sermons were printed, among which were the election sermon, 1766; the sermon before the convention of ministers, 1773; ordination and fast sermons. "The expectations of his friends were excited when proposals were issued to publish a volume of his sermons in 1774, the year of his death," and they were selected by Mr. Cary, of Newburyport (whose ordination sermon he preached), but the Revolutionary War breaking out, they were not printed.

A distinguished native of Haverhill, whose own family was divided by the religious differences to which he alludes, wrote,—"The latter part of Mr. Barnard's life was disturbed by divisions made in his society by New-lights and Baptists, who accused him *of not preaching the gospel* and *of not being converted*, but the greatest and most respectable part of his flock remained faithful to their pastor to the last." This is the other side of the shield. Doubtless the Baptists, who deemed themselves wronged and persecuted, were bitter and acrimonious. In a sermon, preached a few months before his death, Mr. Barnard said,—"During the time which I have spent in public service it would be very strange if nothing hard and grievous had occurred, especially considering the cavilling spirit of the age, and the too general proneness to censure without bounds. Doubtless I have had my faults, for which I would ever seek remission through the blood of the everlasting covenant. But wherein I have been unreasonably aspersed, conscious of innocency, it may be calmly borne. . . . This day I see an assembly whose cordial affection to me I ought not to doubt." "Their affection," writes the authority before quoted, "was not to be doubted; their grief at his death was sincere; their children have been taught his praises." The parish chose a committee to take charge of his funeral, and afterward erected a monument over his grave. They also allowed his widow the free use of the parsonage house, with land and pasturage, until the settlement of another minister.

It is rather amusing at this distance of time to observe that whilst the parishioners of Mr. Barnard were so much afraid of the Baptist "tenets," they had been gradually falling into heresy under the teachings of their justly beloved pastor. Mr. Barnard ranked with the Arminians, like others of the highly respectable Merrimac ministers of his day. In doctrine he was much more nearly what at the present day is called liberal than the intruder, Mr. Smith, who was, we may suppose, entirely Calvinistic, except in the doctrine of baptism. "These clergymen and others," says a competent writer, "gradually departed from the Calvinistic system, and forebore to urge or to profess its peculiar tenets, although they did not so expressly and zealously oppose them as many have done in later times. . . . They did not insist, as a preliminary to the ordination of a young man to the Christian ministry, on his professing a belief of the Trinity, or of the five points of Calvinism."

In the Essex Institute, at Salem, hangs a portrait of this eminent and worthy man. He wears the clerical gown and bands and the great wig, which were the fashion of his time. His face is full and rather florid, his expression dignified as became his profession. He looks as if he had profited by those creature comforts which his diary shows that his parishioners were so fond of showering upon him.

From Rev. Thomas Barnard, the first of Andover, 1682, by his son, John Barnard, of Andover North Parish (together seventy-five years), his grandson, Thomas, pastor at Newbury and Salem, and his

great-grandson, Thomas (son of the last), of Salem, there was an unbroken line of ministerial succession in Essex County of one hundred and thirty-two years.

CHAPTER CLIX.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

The Revolutionary War—Visit of Washington.

A FEW days before the Stamp Act was to go into effect, at a town meeting specially warned for October 14, 1765, "special instruction," to the representative, Col. Richard Saltonstall, were adopted. They declared the belief of his constituents that the Stamp Act was unconstitutional; "which, with the extensive power lately granted to Courts of Admiralty, are great Infringements upon our rights & liberties." They recommend the representative "to promote & procure the repeale of said act as best for the nation in general;" that damages by riotous assemblies be satisfied agreeable to the law of England by the town "where permitted to be done and not by the province in general;" to use his influence that there be no excise on coffee or tea; "that excise be taken off from the private consumption of liquors, & that it be not more than fourpence on the gallon to licensed persons."

July, 1766, Gov. Wentworth, of New Hampshire was appointed surveyor-general of all His Majesty's woods in North America, under the act to protect white pine trees from fifteen to thirty-six inches in diameter for the royal navy. In February, 1772, Samuel Blodget, of Goffstown, N. H., was appointed deputy surveyor for a district in which Haverhill was included, and the seizure and confiscation of lumber under this act much aggravated the prevailing discontent.

September 1, 1768, a town-meeting was called "to see if the town approves of the proceedings of the late House of Representatives in not Rescinding" the famous resolution under which the circular letter to the other colonial Assemblies had been adopted; and "the thanks of the town were voted to the Gentlemen of the House of Representatives for defending the liberties of the people." The Haverhill representative was one of the seventeen who had voted to rescind; the town's action was therefore an implied censure to him, although his popularity and merit in all probability alone protected him from direct reproof. It is significant, however, that the next year the town sent a pronounced Whig as its representative. The new representative, Rev. Samuel Batcheller, was also appointed a committee to represent the town in the convention of delegates from the towns to be held in Boston, September 22, 1769. He was directed, "in every constitutional way and manner consistent with our loyalty to our sovereign, to oppose and prevent the levying or collecting money from us not granted by ourselves or our legal Representatives." April 9, 1770, severe resolutions were adopted as to those persons who offer for sale or purchase British goods imported contrary to the agreement of the merchants of Boston, and Thomas West, Deacon John Ayer, Capt. William Greenleaf, Nathaniel Peaslee Sargeant, Esq., Nathaniel Walker, John Young and James Carr were appointed a Committee of Inspection to see that such agreements were kept.

July 28, 1774, it was voted not to "buy or purchase any goods or merchandise of any person which shall be imported contrary to the general agreement of the Colonies in General Congress." "Resolved, that we will not import, purchase, send or consume any East India Tea, until the Duty imposed upon importation into the Colonies shall be taken off; & the port of Boston opened." A Committee of Correspondence with Boston and other towns was also appointed.

Sept. 5, 1774, a military company, called the Artillery Company, was organized as an independent body, outside of the three militia companies. The members doubtless realized that war might not be far off. Dr. James Brickett was chosen captain; Israel Bartlett, lieutenant; Joshua B. Osgood, ensign; Edward Barnard, clerk and sergeant. Bailey Bartlett, Israel Bartlett, Thos. Cogswell, Nathaniel Marsh, Doctor Brickett and Nathaniel Walker, ambitious of proficiency in drill, sent to England for a copy of the "Norfolk Militia Book," which they received in due course, and for which they paid £6 15*s*. The company engaged a drill-master, met for exercise at the "Distill Houses," adopted a smart uniform—that known afterwards as the Continental—and, May 24, 1775, "voted to meet sun an hour high for the future," which seems to have been the last of the company. Real war was now beginning, and the members either voluntarily entered the service or had enough to do in meeting the drafts upon them for actual service. Sept. 15, 1774, the townsmen "voted to buy 800 lbs. powder, with balls and flint answerable as the town's stock." At an adjourned meeting, Oct. 10th, it was voted that "the constables are to pay no more money into the Province Treasury until further orders from the town."

Haverhill was a strong Whig town. There were, however, a few Tories, as they were then called—Loyalists, as we can afford to call them now. The best known of these was Col. Richard Saltonstall, of a distinguished family in the province and town, born 1732 and graduated at Harvard in 1751. At twenty-two, he was commissioned colonel of the militia regiment in which Haverhill was included. Serving in the French War with credit, he appears to have been under the command and so come under the influence of Gen. Timothy Ruggles, afterwards known as the Tory Chief of New England, a man of great ability

and resolution. Appointed sheriff of Essex County soon after the war, his associates were probably largely with the crown officials. He was unmarried and lived hospitably at the family residence. He was popular in the town as long as circumstances would permit, and represented it in the General Court from 1761 to 1768, inclusive. His action in voting for rescinding in 1768—one of the seventeen held up to popular ridicule and contempt—the people could not well overlook. If the townsfolk had been inclined to overlook it, the leaders of the liberty party would not have permitted. Scarcely the redoubtable Ruggles even was able to retain his seat with a devoted constituency.

Even afterwards and during the war, Col. Saltonstall might have remained unmolested. But he probably was imprudent, and assumed somewhat upon old popularity and influence. In the summer of 1774, Timothy Eaton, who was an ardent Whig and one of the town Committee of Correspondence, headed a large party which called on Col. Saltonstall to inform him that his action and language were disagreeable and must be abated.

The colonel was at first a little inclined to ride the high horse, but probably realizing the senselessness of attempting to resist such a mass of people, he wisely changed his tone, assumed a pleasant and jocose air, however difficult it may have been, and offered hospitality to his uninvited guests, which they accepted with enthusiasm. Accordingly they departed in good humor, without violence or insult. Any other course would only have resulted in deep humiliation and affront. Brigadier Ruggles was the only high Tory who escaped contact with the organized Sons of Liberty with dignity. Tact and good humor had saved Col. Saltonstall, but he doubtless realized that he could no longer remain in Haverhill and preserve his past attitude. Within a few days he had sought shelter with his friends in Boston, then filled with British troops. He soon went to England, where, more fortunate than many of his fellow-exiles, he speedily received a pension from King George in recognition of his loyalty. He never returned to America, dying in England in 1785. His half-brother, Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall, who graduated at Harvard in 1766 and fell under different influences, returned to Haverhill to practice medicine before the outbreak of the war, joined the Artillery Company of which we have spoken, and was a consistent, though never prominent Whig. He spent a long life in his native town, respected and beloved. A younger brother of Doctor Saltonstall, Leverett, swayed by the example and advice of Col. Saltonstall, to whom he had been in the habit of looking as a mentor, obtained a commission in the British army, was captain of a company in Cornwallis' Southern campaign, and died at New York in 1782. Thus families were divided. Rev. Moses Badger, of Haverhill, half-brother of General Joseph Badger, who was active on the patriotic side, a graduate of Harvard (1761) and an Episcopal clergyman, had married a sister of Col. Saltonstall, was a Loyalist and served as chaplain on the King's side. The property of Col. Saltonstall and Mr. Badger, was confiscated in 1776. In Curwen's diary, there are glimpses of Col. Saltonstall, living in modest, but apparently dignified retirement in London. These were the two principal Loyalists of Haverhill. Samuel White and Joseph Haynes were delegates from this town to the first Provincial Congress; Nathaniel Peaslee Sargeant and Jonathan Webster to the second and third.

The town raised money by voluntary subscription for the sufferers in Boston through the Port Bill.

In general, the town followed the guidance of the Boston committees and the Continental Congress. It voted to raise minute-men, and to pay them when drilling, giving them bounties when called into service. The roll has been preserved. The town engaged a drill-master for them.

On the day of the Lexington alarm, one hundred and five men—nearly one-half the whole militia force—marched out. Nehemiah Emerson was on a roof on Main Street, helping to put out a fire. He joined the minute-men, and came home but once till war was done, serving lastly as captain.

Dr. James Brickett, who had been out in the French War, gathered the minute-men on the news of the British march to Concord. He was soon lieutenant-colonel of Frye's regiment (May 20th), and commanded it at Bunker Hill in the illness of his superior officer. He was himself early wounded and injured, but remained in care of the wounded. Tradition says, that when he was coming off the field after his hurt, he met Dr. Warren just going on, to whom he transferred his arms. They were both ardent patriots, and Warren's example of glorious death was worth more to his country than the life of almost any man he left behind him.

The excitement of the Lexington alarm on the 19th of April was enhanced in Haverhill, by the anxiety and loss occasioned by a great fire (for that day) which had raged on the 16th of April on Main Street, ravaging from Court Street to White's Corner.

Two days after a burlesque alarm, which has been called the "Ipswich Fright," a cry that "The British are coming," spread ludicrous panic from the bay to the Coos country. The people waited around the common all night, ready to fly to the hills at a moment's warning. And the startled folks at the East Parish must long have remembered the "hemlocks" at the east side of the Great Pond, under whose coverts they lay concealed till dawn dispelled their terrors!

But sterner work than this was at hand. Seventy-four Haverhill men were in the battle of Bunker Hill, of whom two were killed. David How and Samuel Blodget, afterwards well known in the town, were in the battle, the former not yet quite seventeen years old.

Thomas Cogswell had been an active member of the Artillery Company, and on the 19th of April, 1775, entered service as captain of a company in the Massachusetts line; was afterwards major, lieutenant-colonel and wagon-master-general. January 7, 1781, General Washington wrote of him upon a question of promotion: "And I do further certify that Major Cogswell has been always represented to me as an intelligent, brave and active officer."

Hezekiah Smith, the Baptist minister, was able, by distinguished patriotic service, to allay at least some portion of the prejudice from which he had suffered. With the consent of his people, he entered the service as chaplain of Colonel Nixon's regiment. He was with the army at Cambridge, before Bunker Hill. He was in some of the most important battles of the war. His fame as a preacher ran through the army, and he was often summoned to officiate for the regiments of other States. Chaplain Smith was at the surrender of Burgoyne, and preached to his brigade at Tappan, the day before Major André was executed. Recalled to his pastoral work by the people who had loaned him to the cause, he resumed his labors with them again in the latter part of October, 1780, preaching from the text: "For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee."

In 1775 a post-rider was established between Cambridge and Haverhill, with a post-office here.

Like all the towns in Massachusetts, with at most one or two unhappy exceptions, Haverhill pledged herself to the Continental Congress in case of their declaring independence of Great Britain, "with their lives and fortunes to support them in the measure."

In September, 1777, a volunteer detachment turned out to reinforce the Northern army, arriving in ample season to witness the surrender of Burgoyne. General Brickett accompanied this party as a volunteer, and by General Gates was put in command of about five hundred militia to guard a division of General Burgoyne's army from Saratoga to Prospect Hill, in Charlestown. Massachusetts never paid him, because he was not in her service, and the United States never paid him, presumably because he had not been regularly mustered into service. Israel Bartlett kept a journal of this march, which is printed in Chase's history.

The town seems really to have discharged itself of patriotic duty during the Revolutionary War at least fairly well. Perhaps it should have even higher praise, for there is no evidence of grumbling or despondency. And the demands were very great; scarcely was one quota filled, when another was called for. There were so many emergencies that life must have seemed full of them, and to contain nothing else. All this was terribly aggravated by the wretched want of regularity and system.

When all the men had gone and all the money had been sent, Congress made requisitions for all the clothing and all the beef. As to the men, it is claimed that Haverhill was deficient only one man in all the drafts. That did very well. Blankets, shoes, stockings and shirts were called for and rendered. Between December, 1780, and June 22, 1781, requisitions were made upon Haverhill for 45,570 pounds of beef, which were obeyed.

There was the same terrible depreciation and loss of State and Continental currency, of course, here as elsewhere; the same abortive attempts to regulate the price of commodities.

In the midst of war the people were trying to make a Constitution for the State of Massachusetts. June 8, 1778, the town gave seven votes for and sixty-three against the Constitution sent out by the Legislature, which the people rejected by a great majority. May, 1779, the town held two meetings to see if it wished a State convention, for the purpose of forming a Constitution. At both meetings the vote was no. Nevertheless, as a majority of the towns voted yes, precepts were issued for a convention at Cambridge in September, 1779. August 5th, Isaac Redington was chosen moderator and Nathaniel Peaslee Sargeant delegate to the convention. May 2, 1780, that noble instrument—the Constitution of Massachusetts—was submitted to the voters. General Brickett was moderator. He counted the voters present and found there were one hundred and nineteen. After "considerable debate" the meeting adjourned to May 8th, when there were one hundred and seventy-five voters present. The great subject of debate was the third article of the Bill of Rights, regulating religious worship. The Baptists and others objected to the provision that moneys paid for the support of worship and religious teachers should be paid, in the absence of special request, "towards the support of the teacher or teachers of the parish or precinct in which the said moneys are raised." The Baptists wanted no favoritism; they wished all sects served alike. This "was a subject of much altercation and considerable time was spent in arguing upon it." "91 voted to have it stand, and 85 voted for an amendment." "This last vote was reconsidered by a majority of 64 and on a second Tryal there were but 40 for the article and 104 against it." Then Judge Sargeant proposed one plan of amendment and Mr. Smith another. Seventy-nine voted in favor of the former and sixty-six for the latter. Then there was another adjournment.

At the adjourned meeting it was moved to amend chapter six, so that the Governor, Lieutenant-Governor, Councilors and legislators should swear, on taking office, that they respectively believed in the Christian *Protestant* religion. Eighty-five voted for the third article; sixty-nine against it." Mr. Smith then offered an amendment, which was agreed to. And then the town voted that, notwithstanding the amendment they had adopted, they preferred to take the Constitution as it was rather than have it come again to the people. They evidently were fatigued

with their labors. But the Constitution had been agreed to by a large majority of the towns, so that Monday, September 4, 1780, there was an election for the first time of State officers under it. The vote did not show much interest. For Governor, John Hancock had forty-seven votes, and James Bowdoin, forty-one.

When, in 1778, the Articles of Confederation proposed by Congress were submitted to the people, they chose a committee of which "Hon. Judge N. P. Sargeant was the first named, and adjourned for one week, when certain votes were passed," probably in a form reported by the committee. One of them puts a finger upon the weak spot of the proposed confederation, which brought ruin to the fabric: "Voted, as the opinion of this town that it appears necessary some plan or mode should be added to the Confederation for compelling such states as shall be defective in raising men or money for the common defence to perform their duty."

One precedent was established for other wars, when the town chose a committee of ten "to supply the families of such non-commissioned and private soldiers as are in the Continental service." Thomas West was first named on the committee.

"Greenleaf's Tavern" was long familiar to the townspeople. It was kept by Lieut. William, who entered service as a private in 1776, and did not come out till 1783, with the reputation of a brave officer.

In 1781 the currency had so depreciated that, having more than ten thousand pounds of it in the treasury, the town concluded not to receive any more for taxes. Seventy-five paper dollars would buy one silver one. Nathaniel Bradley charged the town £14 8 *s.* for four mugs of flip. "To 3 half mugs for myself, £5 8*s.*" Nobody was willing to serve as constable, town clerk or treasurer.

The discontent about taxation, debt and poverty, fostered among the ignorant by artful men, brought about Shay's Rebellion in 1786. In the Autumn, the town of Boston sent out a circular letter to every town in the State, "concerning the common interest of the country." A committee, of which Gen. Brickett was chairman, reported a response October 10th, which was adopted by the town. It is an admirable document, prudent, thoughtful, patriotic. The rebellion, as is well known, was crushed as soon as vigorous measures were resorted to.

In 1789 it was "voted to choose a committee to inspect the schools." This was the first ever chosen, and it consisted of the settled clergymen, the selectmen, Isaac Osgood, Esq., Hon. Nathaniel P. Sargeant, Mr. John White, Capt. Francis Carr and Capt. Samuel Merrill. After this the committee was continued, and next year were "desired to recommend such rules and regulations in the schools as they shall think proper."

And November 4, 1789, was the visit of Washington, the stay at the Mason's Arms, or Harrod's Tavern, "a brown old building standing on the site of the City Hall; "the calls of ceremony at Bailey Bartlett's, the sheriff, and at Mr. John White's, whose son had married the daughter of Washington's friend, Senator Tristram Dalton, of Newburyport. Hezekiah Smith's biographer says that the President called upon the chaplain too.

He paid a visit to the duck factory of Samuel Blodget. Perhaps all will not recall the fact that Washington Square and Washington Street are named in honor of his visit. The general acted in his usual practical manner when his principal entry in the diary about the town, was a mention of the "Duck manufactory, upon a small but ingenious scale." He certainly walked through the town, for he says so in his diary. And perhaps he would have made a more grandiloquent entry in his journal than the following if he had realized it would be reprinted in all the books, even after a hundred years: "The inhabitts of this small village were well disposed to welcome me to it by every demonstration which could evince their joy."

Two days before, another gentleman had entered in *his* diary: "Monday, ye 2d Nov., 1789. I went to see Blodgett's spinning and weaving works & they beat everything. The old man is really proud of it.

"They tell me they have a prospect yt. Gen. Washington will be in town this week."

General Washington called at Parson Smith's, and the other diarist, who was a parson of the "standing order," called on Mr. Smith, for fear some of his proper tythes should escape him. "I called on Mr. Smith; talked about giving certificates to people who only pretend to be Baptist. Mr. Smith says he will be honest—and the men shall not be sheltered who are not honest also."

A hundred years ago, the tendency was to exalt Washington as a demi-god. In the early part of this century, historians and biographers treated his character and fame as if he were an idol, whose shrine was only to be approached by the worshipper prone upon the earth and with averted face, lest blindness should punish the too audacious gaze. Now there are persons who boldly say they are going to tell everything about Washington. They are about to strip the veil off from that august countenance. Well, that will do no harm either. It will work no injury to him nor will it strip humanity of one of its most precious jewels. At the worst, it will only be known that he was not an image carved of stone; that in his youth, the blood ran very red in his veins; that he had strong passions and an imperious will; and that he could be profane upon provocation. The grand result will remain that experience and familiarity with great affairs, taught him self-control. The fact will remain that in him were abnormally blended the firmness of a soldier and the prudence of a judge. As a king or emperor, he would have come near

being to mankind what the ignorant Russian is taught to believe his Czar is—father and God. As President of a free people, he will never cease to deserve and receive reverence, for the sublime self-abnegation with which he put aside guilty ambition, and himself set the highest example of obedience, both in letter and in spirit, to the laws he may be said to have preserved. To the people of the modern city, as of the "small village," he will still be the Father of his Country!

CHAPTER CLX.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

Business after the war—Chief Justice Sergeant—Other prominent men—Progress of events.

THE Marquis de Chastellux, one of the French generals under Count de Rochambeau in America during the Revolutionary War, wrote thus near its close of this place and its vicinity: "The North Parish, or North Andover, is a charming place, where there are a great number of very handsome houses, a quantity of meadows and fine cattle. Almost on quitting this handsome township you enter Bradford, where night overtook us, and we traveled two or three miles in the dark before we reached Haverhill Ferry. It was half-past six before we had crossed it and got to Harward's (Harrod's) Inn, where we had a good supper and good lodgings. At Haverhill the Merrimac is only fit for vessels of thirty tons, but much larger ones are built here, which are floated down empty to Newbury. Three miles above Haverhill are falls, and higher up the river is only navigable for boats. The trade of this town formerly consisted in timber for ship-building, which has been suspended since the war. It is pretty considerable and tolerably well-built; and its situation in the form of an amphitheatre on the left shore of the Merrimac, gives it many agreeable aspects."

Jedediah Morse's "Gazetteer," printed in Boston in 1797, says of Haverhill that it has "a considerable inland trade." "It lies chiefly upon two streets, the principal of which runs parallel with the river. Vessels of one hundred tons burden can go up it. Travelers are struck with the pleasantness of the situation; and a number of neat and well-finished houses give it an air of elegance; . . . three distilleries, one of which has lately undergone a laudable transmutation into a brewery. Some vessels are annually built here, and several are employed in the West India trade. A manufactory of sail-cloth was begun here in 1780, and is said to be in a promising way. The trade of the place, however, is considerably less than before the Revolution. The whole township contains three hundred and thirty houses, and two thousand four hundred and eight inhabitants." The "Gazetteer" was probably a little behind the times, as such works are apt to be. The trade of the town was much injured by the War of the Revolution; but in 1797 it was again prosperous. Ship-building was carried on with renewed energy. There were two ship-yards in the village, and one at the "Rocks," the last of which, however, was discontinued about 1800. Persons living in 1860 could remember when three vessels were launched in a single day at the village. In 1810 nine vessels were built and fifty to sixty men were kept constantly employed in the yards. The vessels were ships, brigs, sloops, schooners and snows.

There was considerable inland trade and foreign commerce. Several Haverhill merchants were direct exporters and importers between New England, England and the West Indies. The smaller vessels, especially in the latter trade, came up the river to the town. The larger came either to Boston or Newburyport, and their goods were transferred to Haverhill in snows or other small vessels, or in gondolas from Newburyport.

The town's exports were corn and grain, beef, fish, lumber, pearl-ashes, linseed oil, tow cloth and other things. Flax-seed was sent to Ireland, pot and pearl-ashes to England and Ireland. All sorts of goods came back from London, sugar and molasses from the West Indies. A part of the latter was converted into rum at the distilleries. A large part of the imported goods were sent into the country by ox-teams, great numbers of which were employed, and which brought back rural products.

Among the principal merchants were John White, Benjamin Willis, James Duncan, James Duncan, Jr., and Isaac Osgood.

John White and his fine mansion on Water street, have been spoken of before. He owned the only chaise in Haverhill when Hezekiah Smith came here. "Sept. 20, 1764, went with John White in his chaise to Newbury." The old hall and stairs in John White's house on Water Street are fine and well preserved to-day. Though no longer owned by the White family, a portion of it is occupied by a venerable and interesting lady whose memory is well stored with the town's unwritten lore.

Mr. Willis was a son of Capt. Benj. Willis, a ship-master living at Charlestown before the Revolution. Taken prisoner by the British and carried into St. Eustacia, in the West Indies, he came home after exchange to find his house burned by the British, and his family refugees in Haverhill, where, when peace came, he was largely engaged in shipping. The son, going out to London as a young man, supercargo of his father's vessel—the good brig "Benjamin and Nancy"—secured the confidence of John Dickinson, a merchant there in a large way, by whose advice and assistance he started with a full stock of foreign goods, and became a large and successful importer in Haverhill.

James Duncan, already named, started as a pack-peddler, but was settled in Haverhill before 1750, and

as we have already had occasion to notice, had in a few years become a man of some importance. His son James succeeded him in business, carrying on both a domestic and importing trade, and also interested in shipping. He built at Lebanon, N. H., a store, potash-works and a mill for grinding flax-seed. In twenty-six months he sent over $90,000 worth of goods by the great ox-teams to the Lebanon store. Mr. Duncan is said to have been a man of good business talents and enterprise, who, without the advantages of early education, had acquired much general information. He was Major Duncan of the militia and commanded the cavalry companies which escorted Washington, in 1789, from Boston to the New Hampshire line. He died in 1822, at sixty-five.

Isaac Osgood came from Andover to Haverhill long before the Revolution. His store was a wooden building with gambrel roof, which stood a few rods east of the bridge. He was at first in the West India trade; after the war, in the London. He built and operated "Osgood's Still-house," which afterwards was a brewery, and, falling into the hands of John Dickinson, of London, before referred to, he gave it to the younger Willis, by whom it was torn down, and in 1811, Willis, Warner Whittier, Kimball Carleton and James Hazeltine built upon the site the first brick block of the town. The Bannister brick block was built in 1815.

Isaac Osgood died in 1791 and was succeeded in business by his son Peter.

The town valuation in 1790 was $1,519,411.

Samuel Bean was "post-rider" from Boston to Concord, N. H., carrying letters and newspapers on horseback. He passed through Haverhill going and returning, making the whole route once a week. One Gage started a two-horse coach about this time from Haverhill to Boston, only running it when he had passengers enough. Robert Willis remembered that when, in September, 1792, his mother took her children to Boston to be inoculated with the small-pox, they went over the Haverhill ferry just as the sun was rising and crossed Charlestown Bridge after the lamps were lighted—a journey of about twelve hours. In 1793 a coach was running regularly twice a week. It left the ferry in Bradford "at 6 o'clock precisely, expecting to reach Boston before one." "Fare, 3*d.* per mile." Judge Samuel Blodgett was doubtless the projector. Soon a stage ran in connection with it twice a week to Concord.

In August, 1811, Morse & Fox began running a coach twice a week between Haverhill and Salem. In March, 1818, the Haverhill and Boston Stage Company began operations, continuing them until, in 1837, the railroad was opened to Boston, when its name was changed to the "Boston and Eastern Stage Company." Before the advent of steam-cars there was a daily and semi-weekly "stage" between Boston and Haverhill, a daily to and from Newburyport, Lowell and Methuen, Exeter and Dover, and a semi-weekly to and from Concord, N. H., and Salem.

In 1790 the town, on the petition of Judge Sargeant, granted leave for "trees to be set out on the public land"—the common—and the trees were probably sycamores, long since removed.

Nathaniel Peaslee Sargeant was at this time easily the most eminent citizen of the town. He bore the name of his grandfather, Colonel Peaslee, of Haverhill, whose daughter, Susanna, married Rev. Christopher Sargeant, the first minister of Methuen, who lived to a great age and was long known as "Father" Sargeant. Young Sargeant graduated at Harvard in 1750 and was early here in practice. He was perhaps the first regularly educated lawyer who practiced in this town. He had influential connections, was the attorney of the Haverhill proprietors, who had extensive and important law-suits on hand, in which intricate questions were involved. He was studious, and doubtless early made money and reputation. He was never a brilliant advocate, but had a high reputation as a judicious, learned and upright lawyer. He was a safe and moderate Whig; probably his temperament did not permit him to be an ardent one. But he enjoyed the full confidence of his townsmen, and represented them in the Second and Third Provincial Congresses, and in the House of Representatives in 1776. He was one of the first justices appointed at the reorganization of the Superior Court at the outbreak of the Revolution, holding that position till he succeeded William Cushing as chief justice in 1790. He had a very high standing for ability and candor as a judge. In 1788–89, when the Federal Constitution was trembling in the balance, he addressed an able letter in its favor to his cousin, General Joseph Badger, of Gilmanton, N. H., a member of the Constitutional Convention of that State, which was thought to have had considerable influence in aid of the ratification.

Mirick says, "We have heard much in his praise from the lips of the aged."

Judge Sargeant married a sister of the famous Timothy Pickering, of Salem, who was thought to have been a great acquisition to the limited but good society of the village. Her fair, large grave-stone thus far defies time and vandalism in the old burying-ground. When she married Judge Sargeant she was widow of the Rev. Dudley Leavitt. One can still hear from the lips of aged ladies that the grave chief justice was a great favorite in society. One of the ministers, exchanging at Haverhill took tea at his house and entered in his diary: "The judge was very entertaining." He lived opposite the common, on the site of the Unitarian meeting-house. His house, which was removed to make a place for it, may still be seen by the curious on Spring Court, in a good state of preservation. Judge Sargeant died October, 1791.

In 1791, General Brickett and others petitioned, "to

have the trees lately set out in the Training Field removed," but no action was taken on that article.

Hitherto, swine had run at large, but a district, including the village, was now marked out, within which they were warned not to trespass.

In 1790 the town adopted an admirable code of regulations for the government of the grammar schools, which were reported from the school committee by Samuel Walker. The next year Mr. Walker was chairman of a committee to divide the town into school districts.

In 1791 the town, contrary to its usual custom, sent two representatives to the General Court, "provided it should not be any expense to the town." Samuel Blodget was the member chosen under this queer arrangement, and the next year, at the town-meeting, he counted out on the table the money he had received for his services. He wanted to go to the Legislature, to further a scheme of his own, of which he had many. It is a pity his example was not more followed at the present day, when gentlemen who are dying to reach the Legislature for personal ends are yet cunning enough to make their fellow-citizens conceive the brilliant idea of morally coereing them to consent to an election, at great supposed personal loss and discomfort.

Samuel Blodget, long known in Haverhill, seems to have been a remarkable man. Born in Woburn, he was at the taking of Louisburg in 1745, and as we have seen, at the battle of Bunker Hill, doing good service there. He was in Haverhill before 1748, established pot and pearl-ash works in 1759 here conducting them some years successfully. For some years before the Revolution he was judge of the Inferior Court in Hillsborough County, New Hampshire. He was an ingenious mechanic. Raising a valuable cargo with a machine of his own invention from a ship sunk near Plymouth, he afterwards went to Europe to raise Spanish galleons and the war ship "Royal George" in England; but the obtuse authorities would not allow him to make the attempt. We have heard of the duck manufactory in Haverhill, where he also ran coaches and had many other projects. Leaving Haverhill in 1793, he began Blodget's canal at Amoskeag Falls, where he spent several years and all his property, trying to make the canal in the river and to lock the falls, but without success. In 1791 he tried to persuade the General Court to encourage home manufactures. Judge Blodget seems to have been a visionary, chiefly because he was in advance of his times. He tried to bring about things impracticable of accomplishment.

His favorite scheme was to live forever. He was temperate and active; he slept with open doors and windows in the severest weather, and he had gradually hardened his body by abstaining from the use of overcoats, mittens, gloves and such appliances. He was eighty-five years old, vigorous and cheerful, when unluckily, early in 1807, he took a severe cold riding from Boston to Haverhill on a stormy night in an open sleigh, and died of consumption in the following August. Some of his schemes have been worked out; that for immortality is still open for perfection.

In 1793, the town, which was usually moderately Federal in politics, adopted resolutions approving President Washington's proclamation of neutrality. September 6th, E. Ladd and S. Bragg issued the first newspaper, called *The Guardian of Freedom*. It was a weekly, at nine shillings per annum, and edited by Benjamin Edes, Jr. It was of the town politics, Federal.

In 1794 was completed the great bridge, considered at the time a wonder of skill. In 1796 President Dwight, of Yale College, wrote of it: "No bridge which I have ever seen, except that over the Piscataqua, can be compared with this as a fine object to the eye. The arches, above and below, have a degree of boldness and grandeur unrivaled in this country." It was undoubtedly an important undertaking, taxing the resources of the little town; but alterations in it were necessary before many years. It was rebuilt in 1808. It is perhaps unnecessary to say it was a toll bridge, and could not have been built otherwise at that time.

Merrimac Bridge, at the Rocks, was built in 1795. It was a thousand feet long, being the longest upon the river. Neglected by the proprietors, it was swept away by the ice in 1818. A new bridge was built in 1828, and has been repaired within a few years.

President Dwight was much interested by the fact that there had long been a floating island in Plug Pond; this was undoubtedly the case, but it broke up at last, about 1800.

In the Boston Public Library is a bound volume containing a sketch of Haverhill Bridge, made by Robert Gilmer, of Baltimore, under the following circumstances, to accompany his unprinted "memorandums made in a tour of the Eastern States, in the year 1797": "At four o'clock on Monday I got into the stage and returned to Boston by the way of Exeter and Haverhill, both of which are very pretty little villages, especially the latter, which is situated very pleasantly on the banks of the Merrimack. Across the river is thrown one of the new constructed bridges, like that of Piscataqua, only this has three arches instead of one, and the work which supports the whole is above instead of being just below the bridge. I had time enough before dinner to step to the water's edge and take a sketch of it. While I stood there, with my drawing-book resting upon a pile of plank which happened to be convenient, and intent upon my work, I did not observe the tide, which rose to my feet; and, on looking down, perceived myself up to my ankles in the river. The water rose so gradually that I did not feel it, and never suspected that it could be the case."

Under the lead of Bailey Bartlett, the town, in 1796, adopted a memorial to the national House of Repre-

sentatives, urging its carrying out the provisions of the Jay treaty. And in 1798 the town presented to President John Adams, by Mr. Bartlett, then Representative in Congress from the district, an address congratulating him on the course of his administration, to which the President made an appropriate reply.

In this year the first written school report to the town was made by Rev. Hezekiah Smith, who was chairman of the school committee for the First District. The committee for this district was at that time always a large and able one, which paid much atttention to its duties.

In 1798 it appears by the list of householders and dwelling-houses belonging to or occupied by them, exceeding in value the sum of one hundred dollars, that the most valuable residence was that of Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall, built on Merrimac Street in 1789, now removed to Lake Saltonstall, which was valued at $3000; John White's at $2600; Bailey Bartlett's at $2000; Hannah Woodbury's, $1500.

Of Haverhill village in 1794, Dr. Jeremiah Spofford thus wrote in 1860: "It consisted at that time of Merrimack, Water and Main Streets, and the only brick building in the village was part of Sheriff Bartlett's house, so long and so lately and so well occupied by Dr. Langley. A row of small wooden stores occupied the river bank, above the bridge, in one of which David Howe, Esq., and in another, Moses Atwood, father of Harriet (Atwood) Newell, kept stores at that time.

"About this time a three-story brick store, perhaps sixty feet long and forty feet deep, was built by Mr. Howe and Phineas Carleton, on the west side of Maine Street, of which Mr. Howe occupied what is now two stores or about forty feet square, and Mr. Carleton twenty by forty, and from Mr. Carleton's store, which was the southerly one, it was vacant land to the corner. From the corner lot a house had been burnt some years before, belonging, we think, to Esquire (Samuel) White, a citizen long well-known, and possibly yet remembered by some in Haverhill.

"The old First Parish and the Baptist Churches then furnished ample accomodations, although a much larger proportion of the people then were constant attendants at church than at present.

"Mr. Shaw preached at the Congregational and Mr. Smith at the Baptist Church. Mrs. Shaw was a Smith, and sister to the wife of President John Adams." Haverhill was indeed most fortunate in the character of its ministers in long succession. She had had for the old church, Ward, Rolfe, Gardner, Brown and Barnard. To the latter, after three years, succeeded the Rev. John Shaw, who graduated at Harvard in 1772, and was ordained in 1777. He was son of the Rev. John Shaw, of Bridgewater, and younger brother of Rev. Oakes Shaw, minister of Barnstable for forty-seven years, and father of Lemuel Shaw, the great chief-justice of Massachusetts.

Mrs. Elizabeth Shaw was perhaps the most remarkable of three famous sisters, daughters of Rev. Mr. Smith, of Weymouth. Admirable women as were her sisters, Mrs. Abigail Adams, wife of the second President, and Mrs. Cranch, mother of Judge Cranch, there were many who awarded the palm of superiority to the handsome, dignified and most notable wife of the Haverhill pastor. Her influence over the society of the village was large and good. Mr. Shaw was a good scholar, and so much did her relatives and friends prize the advantage of their united talents and influence that there were always some youths about the parsonage preparing for college. Among these were the sons of John Adams, one of whom afterwards married one of the handsome daughters of Joseph Harrod, the inn-keeper; William Cranch, who returned to Haverhill, after graduating to practice law under the auspices of Chief Justice Sergeant, till he removed to Washington, where he became himself chief justice of the Circuit Court for the District of Columbia. Cranch joined the Haverhill Fire Club in 1792. He took in Haverhill the law business of Mr. Thaxter, a relative who had deceased. This must have been John Thaxter, who joined the Fire Club in 1785.

In 1874 John Quincy Adams, then seventeen years old, wrote from Auteuil, France, to William Cranch, his cousin: "I have serious thoughts of going in the spring (to America), so as to arrive in May or June, stay a twelvemonth at Mr. Shaw's (who I hope would be as kind to me as he has been to you and is to my brothers), and then enter college for the last year, so as to come out with you." The scheme was carried out, and young Adams became a pupil of Mr. Shaw.

Mr. Shaw was Calvinistic in his theology, and thus, perhaps, his influence tended to counteract that exercised by his predecessor, the Arminian Barnard. But Mr. Shaw, though intelligent, amiable, hospitable and charitable, was not a forcible man. He died very suddenly in 1794, and the town adjourned its meeting to attend his funeral.

There were still some relics of the old days. The seats in the meeting-house were equipped with hinges and usually turned up in prayer-time, that the occupants might lean against the railing during the long petitions, after which they were apt to shut down with a bang. So the following vote passed in the parish in 1791: "Voted that Coll. James Bricket, Deacon Joseph Dodge and Doct. Saltonstall be a committee to speak to the Rev'd. Mr. Shaw that he would speak at some convenient season unto the Peopel that they would let their seats down without such Nois." In the same year "a pew for the women to sing" was built in the gallery of the meeting-house; and it was voted "that the company of singers should choose such Persons among them Selves to Lead in the Musick and Regulate the same as they shall think proper."

Dr. Dwight seems to have thought well of the peo-

ple. He says, "The manners of the inhabitants, in general, are very civil and becoming. Those of the most respectable people are plain, frank, easy and unaffected. Both the gentlemen and ladies are well-bred and intelligent, and recommend themselves not a little to the esteem and attachment of a traveller. We saw at the church a numerous congregation, well dressed, decorous and reverential in their deportment."

After Mr. Shaw's death, the church and parish seemed still to be fortunate. They unanimously invited the Rev. Abiel Abbott, of Andover, who accepted and was ordained June 3, 1795. Mr. Abbott had been a distinguished scholar at school and at Harvard, where he graduated in 1792. He had been an assistant to his brother, Benjamin Abbott, the famous principal of Phillips Exeter Academy, and then principal of Phillips, Andover. He wrote much and published much, and what he wrote was exceedingly admired.

When Washington died there was a town-meeting, January 9, 1800, "at the request of James Brickett and others," to see what measures should be taken. February 22d, Mr. Abbott delivered an eulogy before the inhabitants in the meeting-house on the Common, which was printed and much admired. But, much to the regret of his people, he insisted upon a dismissal in 1803, on account of inadequacy of salary. He died in 1828, minister at Beverly.

When he began to preach, Mr. Abbott was a Trinitarian in views; but eventually his opinions changed and he became a decided Unitarian. Many of the Haverhill Society, not a majority, were in sympathy with him. But there was as yet no breach between the two wings.

Rev. Joshua Dodge was ordained in 1808, remaining till 1827, when he, too, asked for a dismissal, and was succeeded in 1828 by Rev. Dudley Phelps, of Andover. Mr. Phelps was a man of talents and convictions,—social and genial in private life, but bold and aggressive in public. He entered with zeal into the new temperance and anti-slavery movements. Before long there was dissension, as might be expected. Some funds had accumulated and a series of intrigues to get possession of them ensued, not very creditable to any of the parties concerned. Eventually, a sum was paid to certain seceders who were in sympathy with Universalism. The orthodox members withdrew, forming what afterwards became the "Centre Congregational Society," organized April 27, 1833, which erected a meeting-house the next year. They were largely the church, taking away the Trinitarian doctrines, but none of the money. Out of this society again grew, by separation in 1859, the "North Congregational Society." The secession of the Calvinists from the First Parish church and society left the organization, the records and the funds in the hands of the Unitarians. The society quit-claimed to the town its interest in the Common in 1837, and built a new house on the ground north of it, at the corner of Main Street.

The second pastor of the church in the North Precinct, Rev. Gyles Merrill, ordained March 6, 1765, was one of the most excellent of the ministers of Haverhill. He remained pastor till his death in 1801, after a ministry of thirty-seven years. He was orthodox, sufficient in learning, prudent in conduct, simple, kindly and beloved.

The first Sunday-school was collected in the First Parish in July, 1817, when Rev. Mr. Dodge was minister there. The school was large and the work successful.

In October, 1804, a committee, of which Bailey Bartlett was chairman, was appointed to draft By-Laws, which were adopted in the following December. Some were to be in force only in the "compact part of the village."

The first powder house was built on the north side of Powder House Lane (now White Street) in 1805. It was about eight feet square. The second was built on Golden Hill, about 1845.

The town was opposed to the embargo, and, indeed, to most of the measures which led to the War of 1812. But the Haverhill Light Infantry, organized in 1810, performed a tour of duty at South Boston, in 1814, in a handsome manner. This company had a high reputation for discipline and military skill. It disbanded in 1841. The "Hale Guards," afterwards "The Guards," were also, for years, an efficient company.

In 1812 the first musical organization, known as the "Haverhill Musical Society," was formed. It is said the first singing school was held in the same year.

Fortunately for the town, the immediate horrors of war were not experienced by it in the War of 1812. But the news of peace caused the greatest rejoicing to a people whose trade and commerce had been cruelly interrupted.

Ship-building was never quite the same again afterwards that it had been before. Captain William Caldwell carried it on from about 1735 to 1740, when the "North Bend," of about four hundred tons, was launched.

At different periods efforts have been made to remove obstructions in the river above and below Haverhill, with the expectation of developing manufactures and increasing commerce, but they have not been very successful. The town did not have an almshouse or poor farm until 1820. There was a singular reluctance to abandon the old and unfeeling methods. But ever since there has been a gradual improvement, and it is believed this establishment is highly satisfactory at the present time.

Bailey Bartlett, Moses Wingate and Charles White represented the town in the convention of 1820 to revise the Constitution.

CHAPTER CLXI.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

Educational, Reformatory and Business Movements—Men and Families—The Saltonstalls.

In 1827 the Haverhill Academy was dedicated—an institution which was of great usefulness for many years, till superseded by the high school. The thorough history and progress of schools in the town would consume time and space not compatible with the scope of the present work, interesting subject as it is.

There was great agitation and excitement when the first temperance society was formed upon the principle of total abstinence. It was called the Society for the Promotion of Temperance in Haverhill and Vicinity, and it was organized February 5, 1828. Rev. Gardner B. Perry, of East Bradford, was president; Rev. Dudley Phelps, of the First Parish, was vice-president; Abijah W. Thayer, then connected with the *Gazette*, was secretary and treasurer. They were bold and uncompromising men, and their course was an aggressive one. Neither was the opposition slight which they encountered. On account of the resolute attitude assumed by Mr. Thayer in the *Gazette*, the circulation fell off from one thousand to six hundred copies weekly.

March 24, 1831, the "Youths' Temperance Association of Haverhill and Bradford" was organized, thirty-seven signing the constitution the same evening. Elias T. Ingalls, still living, was chosen president.

In 1833 the temperance people took the question into town politics. In 1842 the selectmen were instructed not to grant licenses for the sale of intoxicating liquors. A committee was appointed to prosecute such dealers as would not retire from the business. Captain William Caldwell's distillery was sold to Alfred Kittredge about 1836, who put out the fires on the night of taking possession, and built the Kittredge Block upon the site in 1840. Credit for these initiatory movements towards temperance is largely allotted to Isaac R. Howe and William Savory.

The people were doubtless much surprised when it was announced that town-meetings could no longer be held in the First Parish meeting-house without paying for it. They had been held in the meeting-house for nearly two hundred years. It may have seemed that the world was coming to an end. At all events, the town refused to pay thirty dollars a year for the privilege. So the next meeting was held in the West Parish meeting-house; and the next, after that, in the East Parish meeting-house. Then there was a meeting in the Baptist meeting-house, and then in a variety of places till the Town Hall was built, in 1847. The subject had been agitated since the First Parish proposed to charge rent for its meeting-house. The Town Hall cost over sixteen thousand dollars, twice as much as was first expected. It was built on the "south part of the Harrod lot, so called"—where the Mason's Arms used to be. In 1848, the town voted to allow the county the free use of the hall for the County Courts, if the latter should be removed from Ipswich to Haverhill. In 1859 the town of itself was thought to have outgrown the hall, without the aid of the county, and an able committee was appointed to consider the subject and report. January 7, 1861, a plan was reported and work was immediately begun. The result was the present City Hall, the cost of which was estimated at forty-two thousand dollars. It was not built too soon. It has served the needs of the place very well for twenty-seven years; but much greater expansion of the town, its business and its population, would revive the cry of 1849, that the place has outgrown its municipal edifice.

In 1828 the first steamboat on the river—the "Merrimack"—began running between Haverhill and Newburyport. But after several years the enterprise was abandoned as unsuccessful. In fact, steamboating on the Merrimac has never been a prosperous business for a great length of time. The building of a railroad between Haverhill and Newburyport ruined it. But it is being again taken hold of by keen business men, and it may be inferred that the amount of pleasure travel on the beautiful stream has and will be sufficient to warrant proper boats being run in a decent and comfortable manner.

The Merrimack Bank was incorporated in 1814, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. The Haverhill Institution for Savings was organized in 1829.

Haverhill has had its full share of charitable, educational and literary institutions. The women of the town have been especially active and successful, these many years, in organizing, conducting and supporting, worthy enterprises of all kinds. In connection with such affairs, the names of Mrs. James H. Duncan, Mrs. Rufus Longley and Mrs. Isaac R. How, were long prominent. Thus, in 1829, they were managers of the Infant School Society, for the instruction of very young children. The work was successful.

The Haverhill Lyceum was formed February 25, 1830, with James H. Duncan, Esq., president; James Gale, Esq., recording secretary; and Isaac R. How, Esq., corresponding secretary. This was succeeded by the Haverhill Athenæum, in 1852, and that by the Haverhill Library Association.

In 1834 agitation commenced about continuing the railroad from Andover to Haverhill. The first meeting was held January 5th, at the Eagle House, James H. Duncan, chairman; Alfred Kittredge, secretary. October 26, 1837, the road was open to the Merrimac, at Bradford.

The first anti-slavery society was organized April 3, 1834. Hon. Gilman Parker was president; A. W. Thayer, recording secretary; John G. Whittier, cor-

responding secretary. A female anti-slavery society was formed soon after, and before long similar societies were formed in other portions of the town.

The Essex County Anti-Slavery Society was formed June 10, 1834,—Rev. G. B. Perry, president, and John G. Whittier, corresponding secretary. The American Anti-Slavery Society was organized in May, 1833.

These movements did not pass unnoticed and unopposed. One Sabbath evening, August, 1835, an anti-slavery meeting, which was to have been addressed by Rev. Samuel J. May at the Christian Union Chapel, was broken up by a mob.

After 1836 the first parish bell ceased to be regularly rung at noon and nine o'clock in the evening. To some of the old people, the tongue of time seemed to have stopped.

The Haverhill Female Benevolent Society was incorporated as early as January 13, 1818. It has done, and still is doing, a noble work.

The "Fragment" Society was organized 1825.

In 1816 one wrote: "Haverhill is not so handsome a town as its local situation deserves. But the chief care of its first settlers was to shelter themselves from the severity of the climate and to defend themselves against their savage enemy, and it is not strange that they did not consult the beauty of their settlements. The river or Water Street, is too near the bank. The number of ordinary buildings on the lower side of the street interrupts the view from the houses, and injures the appearance of the town from the opposite shore. A road parallel to the river might be laid out on the brow of the hill, which would open a range of beautiful house-lots overlooking the street below and commanding a most extensive prospect. This has long been wanted, for building lots are scarce."

Such a road or street was opened soon after, when Summer Street was begun from Main. In November, 1836, it was extended from Kent to Mill Street, and Webster Street was laid out.

When, in 1837, the town appropriated one thousand dollars to obtain a quit-claim of the interest of the First Parish in the common, an additional sum was made up by subscription. The parish sold the land "for the use of the town, as an ornamental common." But the ladies of the place had much to do with its final inclosure and improvement. Unworthy as it is of an enterprising town, it is much better than nothing.

In the same year there was a great agitation about the disposition to be made of the surplus revenue to which the town was entitled. It was about twelve thousand dollars. Three thousand dollars was applied to the payment of the town's debts; one thousand dollars was loaned to the First School District; and the balance being invested in stocks of the Merrimac and Haverhill Banks, the interest was annually apportioned to the districts for the support of common schools.

In 1838 many new streets were laid out and named.

Mr. Moses E. Emerson began doing an express business to Boston every day, and in a small way, in the autumn of the same year.

Rev. William Miller produced a deep excitement in this town and its vicinity in 1839 and '40, by his lectures, predicting the destruction of the world by fire in 1843.

In 1855 a large school building was built on School Street. Judge Isaac Ames, afterwards judge of Probate for Suffolk County, taught in a former building on this spot, and later Dr. John Crowell was happily and successfully associated with the school for a number of years.

In 1841 the town accepted the act of the General Court establishing a Fire Department.

January 24, 1842, John Quincy Adams presented in the National House of Representatives the petition of Benjamin Emerson (2d) and others, of Haverhill, for the peaceful dissolution of the Union. The object of the movers in the affair is stated to have been a desire to expose the hollow character of Southern threats of disunion. The petitioners obtained abundant notoriety and the ultimate effect was excellent, as establishing the right of petition.

In 1846 Linwood Cemetery was bought and laid out by a company. This led to efforts by ladies, prominent among whom were Mrs. Dr. Longley and Mrs. Jeremiah Stickney, by which more than one thousand dollars was raised to beautify and improve the old burial-ground. The money was admirably expended, and perhaps the suggestion may be pardoned that there is ample room for another generation to do likewise.

The fraternity of Shenstones, of which Isaac Ames was president and Thomas M. Hayes secretary and treasurer, was organized in October, 1847.

The name of Rev. Arthur S. Train, a beloved minister of the Baptist Society, is often mentioned as active in this work.

In 1854, on motion of Hon. James H. Duncan, the town adopted a preamble and resolutions, protesting against the adoption of the Kansas-Nebraska Bill.

In 1858 the streets had been lighted for the first time by gas. Merrimac Street was paved from Main to Washington Square in 1858. Soon after the paving of Water Street began.

In 1859 the old Fish House lot at the Great Pond was beautified and the sheet of water re-named in accordance with the suggestion of John G. Whittier, who had been asked to select a new name, which he did in his well-known and charming poem of "Kenoza."

It has already been mentioned that David How was at the battle of Bunker Hill, not yet quite seventeen years old. He was born at Methuen in 1758. The gun which it is understood he carried at Bunker Hill, is in the possession of a relative in Haverhill. David How was always a strenuous advocate

of the merits of Colonel Prescott as the real leader in the battle.

December 27, 1775, David enlisted in the Continental army for one year. He was at Harlem Heights and at Trenton, where he took from a Hessian soldier his gun and knapsack; the spoils of war are still in the possession of his descendants.

After the war young How, who had married, went to New London, N. H., where he bought and partly cleared a piece of land, intending to be a farmer; but as his wife was dissatisfied, he gave it up and came to Haverhill. He had learned something about currying with his grandfather Farnham at Andover, and in the basement of a small shop on Water Street he began that business, in a very humble fashion. But he was polite, honest and industrious, and he is said to have been ready, from the days of his soldiering, to trade in anything. He was sure to succeed and he did succeed. Gradually he began to deal in other things besides leather, and eventually he was the largest trader in the town.

From Water he removed to Merrimac Street. Then he built stores for himself on Main Street. Finally he went back to Merrimac, where he superintended building the Bannister Block, in which he owned two stores himself.

He kept leather and exchanged it for shoes. Then he manufactured shoes himself. In the War of 1812 he sent his own team to Philadelphia with a quantity, making a handsome profit. Perhaps as much as anybody, he is entitled to be called the father of the shoe business. During the second war with Great Britain, it is said, he was offered one hundred thousand dollars for the goods in his store and refused it.

When he got rich, Mr. How bought lands and farmed them himself. He was too busy to oversee his laborers and his great farming operations were carried on at a loss. Then he took other people's money to invest and did not invest it profitably. People had unlimited confidence in him and said he was good "as the bank." When they had money they took it to David How to keep for them He allowed interest on money which brought no increment to him. He gave twenty-five thousand dollars, it is said, for a great river farm in Bradford.

This conduct of farming operations was useful to others if not to himself. He loved to see the grass grow. He used plaster abundantly and was proud of his green fields, and of the great fatted oxen he sent to market. There are many old orchards of his planting. In old age he has still loved to ride out in his antique chaise to his farm in the West Parish.

Along with his pride in his farms, was his pride in his stores. "You can get anything at David How's," was the proverb of the country side. "You cannot buy a hog-yoke there!" was the retort of one to another. "I'll bet yer on't," was the ready response and they adjourned to try their fortune. "Bring down them hog-yokes from the attic," was the prompt response to the unwilling buyer, and several different patterns were submitted to his inspection.

The beginning of the end came at last. David How had been rich, as people supposed. He had made his money legitimately; but when he received all the money brought to him and invested it in unproductive property, rather in expensive farming operations, whilst he was expected to pay interest on the principal, the result was certain whenever people should press for their money. Probably there was some sudden call, an estate to be settled, a sum to be made up in haste. When there was delay, a cry went up the country-side that David How had failed. Then there was a panic, attachments and executions.

It is said that there were a hundred suits, with heavy attendant costs. And so the fruits of a long and successful period of prosperity were wasted. But no one lost confidence in the old man himself. People never forgot that he had been liberal, charitable, the friend of the poor in the best sense, by employing them.

Mr. How was the first president of the Merrimack Bank, a large stockholder in the Haverhill Bridge and was generally interested in business enterprises. He never advertised. Probably his reputation was worth more to him than his neighbors' advertisements to them. A moderate Federalist, he represented the town for years in the Legislature. Apparently he was elected when nobody else could get through. He was illiterate, for want of early educational opportunities, but respected for his shrewdness and good qualities. He lived to a great age—almost till the famous monument upon the battle-ground was finished, where he fought—dying in 1842, at eighty-four years.

David How sent one son to college (Isaac Reddington How), who graduated at Harvard in 1870, and was a good classical scholar. He studied law with Hon. George Bliss, of Springfield, and Hon. William Prescott, of Boston. He practiced in Haverhill, and was regarded as a well-read lawyer. He was for some years partner with his brother-in-law, John Varnum. But son was never so unlike father. He was unpractical, was at first indifferent to his profession, then took a positive dislike to it, and would have nothing more to do with its engagements. His tastes led him to literature and speculative thought. He was a socialist before there was any socialism. His sympathies were with all reforms, but he was not sufficiently aggressive to be dangerous. His aspirations were ardent for the progress and happiness of all men. He wrote much, had a good deal of miscellaneous information, was highly upright, and, with a more positive character, would have been an eminent citizen. His two sons—Nathaniel S. Howe, known as Judge Howe, and Francis S. Howe (Harvard, 1852)—both lawyers, are freshly remembered in Haverhill.

Bailey Bartlett was a conspicuous man in Haver-

hill for many years. He was descended from the Bartletts of Newbury. His maternal ancestor was that John Johnson who came to Haverhill to be its blacksmith, and was killed in his old age by the Indians, on the famous Sunday morning in August. John Johnson, oldest child of William Johnson, was born in England in 1633, and came in his mother's arms to Charlestown, Mass., in the following year. He was twenty-six years old when he removed to Haverhill. August 29, 1708, he was in his seventy-sixth year. His third wife was seventy years old, and Ruth Johnson, wife of Thomas Johnson, son of John Johnson, Jr., was with the aged couple, having in her arms her baby, Lydia, one year and six months old. Her husband was absent, and so escaped. Lieutenant Johnson and his wife were shot down at once in the doorway, or just outside of it. Ruth Johnson fled through the house, pursued by an Indian, and in the garden the savage cleft her head with his hatchet. The child escaped observation, apparently. Perhaps it was concealed in the folds of its mother's dress. When search was made after the fight was over it was discovered unharmed, and at the dead mother's breast. Growing up, Lydia married Jeremiah Gile, of Haverhill. She died in Enfield, N. H., at the age of seventy-four years, leaving descendants. Ruth Johnson, the mother, was the child of Daniel Bradley, who, with his wife and two children was killed in the Hannah Duston raid, in 1697, when she herself was carried away a captive, being about nine years old. A descendant of John Johnson writes in the "Genealogical Register:" "In the Haverhill old cemetery, called Pentucket, the writer, some forty years ago, after long search, found and kneeled at Ruth's humble grave. The gray, moss-covered head-stone bore the following simple but touching inscription: 'Ruth ye wife of Thomas Johnson, died Aug. ye 29, 1708, and in ye 21 year of her age. Once wt ye Indians in captivity, after 'twas her lot in their hands to dy.'"

John Johnson's granddaughter, Elizabeth, married Dr. Joshua Bailey, whose daughter, Anna, the wife of Enoch Bartlett, gave her family name to her only child. Bailey Bartlett was born in Haverhill about 1750. His father kept an English goods store and so did the son till 1789. He received only the ordinary common-school education of the times, which was poor enough; but he was very fond of reading, and must have improved his leisure with no common zeal. He must also have been a man of good manner and possessed of tact, for we always hear of him in good company. He loved agriculture and mechanics, and was an early member of the State and County Agricultural Societies.

We hear of him as an early and devoted friend of John Adams, a fellow-boarder with him and with Sam. Adams, when the Declaration was adopted. He heard it proclaimed in Independence Yard, July 14, 1776, and long afterwards used to relate that it was received by the crowd, not with cheers, but murmurs. In 1781–84 he represented the town in the State House of Representatives, and declining a re-election, he received the townsmen's thanks for faithful service. In 1789 he was in the State Senate. He was a member of the convention that ratified the Constitution of the United States and of the famous Constitutional Convention of 1820. July 1, 1789, Governor John Hancock presented him the commission of sheriff of Essex County in a very complimentary manner, and he retained that office for the remainer of his life, except for a little more than six months, from December, 1811, to June, 1812, when he was superseded by Governor Gerry, who was himself removed as soon as the people got a chance at him. Even during this interval, the people of Essex County elected Mr. Bartlett treasurer of the county. During his shrievalty of forty years he always enjoyed the reputation of being a faithful, efficient, considerate, charitable and humane officer. He was liberal in hospitality. A warm partisan, he was also a warm friend, capable of magnanimous acts to political opponents. In 1797 he succeeded Judge Bradbury, of Newburyport, as Representative in Congress of Essex North—serving in the last Congress holden at Philadelphia and the first in Washington. He witnessed the contest between Jefferson and Burr for the Presidency. Isaac Parker, after justice and chief justice of the Supreme Court, was a fellow-member and room-mate of Baily Bartlett. Sheriff Bartlett, at the age of eighty, was in attendance upon the Supreme Court at Salem in 1830, in the famous White murder trials of that year. Excessive fatigue was thought to have hastened the death of both the chief justice and his faithful executive officer. Nineteen days after the death-sentence of Knapp, the sheriff was no more.

It should be added that he was a Federal candidate for elector in 1824, and served in that capacity in 1828. He had fifteen children, of whom eleven survived him and one is living still in Haverhill, who several years since noted the centennial of her father's marriage to Peggy White. One daughter married Consul "Jarvis," of Wethersfield, Vt., noted many years ago as the importer of merino sheep; another married Dr. Rufus Longley, the eminent physician of Haverhill for many years; two daughters were the first and second wives of Hon. Joseph E. Sprague, of Salem, well-known as a politician and writer; Gen. William F. Bartlett, the gallant soldier of the Rebellion, was his grandson.

Bailey Bartlett's life was spent conspicuously before the public, and it would be indeed astonishing if he had entirely "'scaped calumny." But all men seem in conspiracy to speak well of him, and certainly his activity in town affairs entitles him to generous treatment in any historical sketch of Haverhill.

Dr. Rufus Longley, just mentioned, entered but not graduate at Harvard College, receiving his medical degree at Dartmouth. He began to prac-

tice medicine in Haverhill in 1812 and was very successful. He was forty-three years a doctor and it is rather remarkable that his very first patient in the town was also his last one. Probably it is not invidious to say that he was more distinguished as a physician than any other who has practiced in the town. His professional engagements did not permit him to be a candidate for political office, but he was nevertheless Federal elector in 1840. He was an active and zealous Federalist and Whig. He held some business positions, as president of the Savings Institution, and he was president of the Merrimac Bank at the time of his death. He was Master of the Merrimac Lodge of Free Masons from 1817 to 1826; and from 1852 to his death, in 1854. Dr. Langley was much respected by his juniors in the profession.

Hon. Israel Bartlett was a cousin of Sheriff Bartlett. He was a goldsmith by trade. He was a member of the Artillery Company, saw some service in the Revolution, was in early life active in military matters and always prompt and faithful in town, office and business. In 1810, and from 1816 to 1821, he served the State in the Senate. He was a worthy man, if not a strong one; for many years a member of the First Church, and taken away at last at the great age of ninety.

General Brickett was regarded as an excellent physician, and his son, Dr. Daniel Brickett, was a highly respectable one. Almost all these men lived on Water Street in their day, still the important one of the town.

Hon. James H. Duncan was son of James Duncan, the merchant, but through his mother a descendant of William White, the pioneer of Haverhill. He was born, and always lived in Haverhill, and for a long period was probably estimated abroad and at home as its first citizen. An extended notice of him will be found in another part of this book. He was always a person of some distinction, entering life under favorable auspices; and when he was admitted to the bar of the Supreme Court of the United States at Washington, no less a person than Daniel Webster stood sponsor for him. He was Representative three years in the General Court, State Senator three and member of Congress from 1848 to 1852. In manners, Mr. Duncan was very courteous. He was always highly esteemed by his fellow-townsmen, and exercised, it is said, an almost unequaled influence as a debater in the often turbulent town-meetings.

The Marshes have been a numerous and highly respectable family, individuals of which deserve particular mention. Some notice has been taken of them in another place. In the public library are several sermons occasioned by the death of Rev. John Marsh, pastor of the First Church in Wethersfield, Ct., who was born in Haverhill, and died in 1829, in the seventy-ninth year of his age and forty-eighth of his ministry.

Moses Atwood was, at the close of the last century, a large and much respected merchant, who lived in a house just west of the Unitarian meeting-house. His daughter, Harriet, was born there October 10, 1793. When a little more than eighteen years of age she married, here, Rev. Samuel Newell, one of the first missionaries sent out to India by the American Board. As Harriet Newell, she has been an object of interest all over the world to many thousands who never heard the name of her birthplace. Dying in the Isle of France, when little more than a girl, her monument proclaims truly, "her name lives and in all Christian lands is pleading with irresistible eloquence for the heathen." Seventy-five years after the death of Harriet Newell, her memory was strangely revived to the public by the death of her brother, Charles Atwood, born at Haverhill in 1803, and graduated at Yale in 1821, who was admitted to the Boston bar more than sixty years before his death. A learned lawyer in certain specialties, he was also in certain directions an accomplished scholar.

John Varnum, born in Dracut in 1778, is understood to have been of the same family with the eminent Senator and Speaker Varnum, whose portrait has just been presented by Massachusetts to Congress and received with distinguished honor. Graduated at Harvard in 1798, he was a law student with the famous Judge Jeremiah Smith at Exeter and commenced to practice in Haverhill in 1802. He was soon successful. Generous in temper, honorable in practice, and unaffected in manners, he conducted lawsuits without asperity, neither giving nor taking wounds that festered. Though an ardent Federalist, he escaped much of the personal bitterness which characterized the politics of that day. He served in the State Senate in 1811, and in Congress from 1826 to 1830. Isaac R. Howe was his law partner at this time. They had married sisters, daughters of Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall.

The impression one gets of John Varnum is that though a man of excellent qualities he had not quite enough iron in his composition. Yet he participated in one acrimonious political campaign when Caleb Cushing attempted to defeat him for Congress. The brilliant young aspirant was himself overwhelmingly defeated as a rebuke for his unscrupulous political methods. This was one of the most famous Congressional contests in the famous Essex district. After his Congressional career closed, Mr. Varnum removed to Lowell and thence to Michigan, where he died, 1836.

Leonard White was the son of John White, the merchant, and was born about 1767, dying October, 1849, at eighty-two. "Leonard White, ejus Liber 1782," written in his own beautiful copper-plate, is the legend in his "Thesaurus Linguæ Latinæ," upon which the eye rests whilst the hand traces this line. He was then fitting for college with Parson Shaw, and William Cranch was one of his fellow-students. They graduated at Harvard in 1787, and John Quincy

Adams came here from France, as he had promised, and joined them. Josiah Quincy, the most venerable public man in Boston in our time, was Leonard White's fag in college.

Peter Eaton, born in the West Parish, and one of the earliest pupils of Phillips Andover Academy, afterwards the judicious and beloved pastor of Boxford, was in the same class. Stephen Peabody Webster, also of the West Parish, the first graduate of Atkinson Academy to enter college, was in the class of 1792. He lived long in Haverhill, N. H. William Smith Shaw, son of the minister and founder of the Boston Athenæum, graduated in 1798.

Leonard White began life in a brilliant way, socially. He was the son of a rich man and he married the daughter of Tristram Dalton, of Newburyport, granddaughter of "King" Hooper, of Marblehead. But he was himself neither brilliant nor ambitious. He was modest, kindly and faithful in the discharge of every duty. Much regarded by his townsmen, he was frequently honored by public trust. He served largely upon the school committees, was many years town clerk and treasurer, was in the Legislature in 1809, and a member of Congress from 1811 to 1813. Then he became the first cashier of the Merrimac Bank, serving in that position for a quarter of a century. In the parlor of one of his descendants his portrait hangs, looking out with youthful expression and cheery smile.

James C. Merrill and Samuel Merrill, sons of Gyles Merrill, the good parson of the North Parish, fitted together at Phillips Exeter Academy, and graduated in the same class at Harvard in 1807. Both were excellent classical scholars. One was better in Greek; the other in Latin. Both studied law. Samuel practiced in Andover. Many a school-boy remembers his long cloak and grave demeanor. James studied with Varnum, practiced in Boston, and was long judge of the Police Court. To the last he kept up his Greek, and in that department was one of the eminent scholars of New England. Of Judge Stephen Minot and his sons, something is said elsewhere. Chase speaks highly of Theodore Eames, a native, who graduated at Yale in 1809; was a teacher, a successful lawyer in Salem, and afterwards, till his death in 1847, judge of the Police Court in Brooklyn, N. Y.

A word more should be added of Rev. Moses Badger, from an historical point of view. He was son of Joseph Badger, a merchant of Haverhill, and half-brother of General Joseph, of Haverhill and Gilmanton. Moses graduated at Harvard in 1761. The Badgers, according to tradition, owned the farm next to the West farm on Kenoza Avenue, now Winnikeni Towers. Moses Badger abandoned the Puritan faith which brought his ancestors to America, and became an Episcopalian clergyman and an enthusiastic propagandist. From 1767 to 1774, when he became a Loyalist refugee, and subsequently chaplain of Delancey's battalion, in the British army, he was a missionary of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel. It is reasonably conjectured that he first conducted the services of the Episcopal Church in Haverhill. After the war he was rector of King's Chapel, in Providence, where he died in 1792.

In 1795, Ichabod Tucker joined the Haverhill Fire Society. He was then, and for some years after, a practicing lawyer here; afterwards he removed to Salem and was for many years the much respected clerk of the courts for Essex County.

Jeremiah Pecker, of Haverhill, who graduated at Harvard in 1757, was also a Royalist. After the Revolution he taught school at St. Johns, N. B., where he died in 1809.

Osgood Carleton, born in Haverhill 1742, died in Boston 1816. He served in the army of the Revolution and was an original member of the Society of the Cincinnati. After the war he taught mathematics in Boston, and published many maps—among them one of the State in 1801, by order of the General Court. He made various maps and plans of Boston. Moses Emerson born at Haverhill 1717, graduated from Harvard 1737, was a merchant and seems also to have been a "schoolmaster."

Charles Short, LL.D., who died in New York in 1886, was born in Haverhill in 1821, in the Haseltine house, on Water Street. He graduated at Harvard in 1846, with high honors. He spent his life in teaching at Phillips Academy, Andover, Harvard College, in the Roxbury Latin School and in Philadelphia. He was some years president of Kenyon College, Ohio, and was lastly Professor of the Latin Language and Literature in Columbia College. He had a high reputation as a writer and was without doubt the most distinguished scholar of Haverhill extraction.

Many years ago an excellent historical sketch of Haverhill was printed, now not much known, of which it was rather unfairly said, "that it was all about the Saltonstalls." It would be impossible to write of the town in its earlier history without having something to say of them. The name, indeed, has already frequently occurred in the present description, but only incidentally. Some notice of the family occurring elsewhere, only such brief mention will be made of it here as may be found practicable.

Sir Richard Saltonstall, as is well known, came out with Winthrop in 1630; but the following winter being very severe, and he advanced in age, he returned to England in the following spring. He, however, retained an interest in the welfare of the country, and his famous and admirable letter to Cotton and Wilson, the Boston ministers, exhibits a fine spirit of tolerance, showing at any rate that from the other side of the Atlantic he saw the politics of the Massachusetts colony in larger perspective than perhaps was possible for the men here. Something of the same kind of credit is due to his son Richard, of Ipswich, who, after several long absences in England, finally also died there.

His son Nathaniel was born at Ipswich about 1639. Sibley thinks he prepared for college at Ipswich Grammar School, under the celebrated master Ezekiel Cheever. He married Elizabeth Ward, at Haverhill, December 28, 1663, and from their union are descended all the Saltonstalls of America.

August 29, 1664, in consideration of natural affection and of this marriage, his father conveyed to him about a thousand acres of land in Ipswich and in Chebacco Parish. May 3, 1665, he was admitted freeman. In 1671, and from 1673 to 1678, inclusive, he was "invested with magistratical powers for the year ensuing, in the County of Norfolk." In 1665–68 he was an associate for the County Courts in Norfolk. In October, 1677, the General Court appointed him one of the committee of supervision "of the new brick building at the college." October, 1680, the General Court ordered "that the Essex Regiment should be divided, and Major Nathaniel Saltonstall should have command of the militia in Newbury, Rowley, Bradford, Andover, Topsfield, as also Salisbury, Amesbury and Haverhill."

In February, 1681–82, Edmund Randolph included him among those whom he called a faction in the General Court, and a warrant was accordingly issued against him; although, in 1676, in answer to several heads of inquiry concerning the present state of New England, he had mentioned Saltonstall as among the "most popular and well-principled military men . . . who only wait for an opportunity to express their duty to his Majestie."

In 1666, and 1669 to 1672, Saltonstall had been, by election of the freemen of Haverhill, its deputy to the General Court.

As has been said elsewhere, he was of the Provisional Council formed April 20, 1789. He was judge of the Inferior Court of the Pleas for Essex, and held that place till his death, May 21, 1707, after a half-year's consumptive illness. Samuel Sewall, who gossips about everybody, gives us a little glimpse of him and relates an incident, creditable to both of them. It is well known that he was appointed one of the judges of Oyer and Terminer for the trial of cases of witchcraft; that he did not sit in the witch cases in 1692, and was "very much dissatisfied with the proceedings of it." Upon which one writer has remarked, "Saltonstall left the bench, but ought he not, as the friend of justice, to have been upon it." That would have been heroic, but would have required a good deal of moral courage. Perhaps he had not the martyr's spirit. He at least was superior to the supreme silliness and wickedness of the business, if he did permit his conduct to be modified by prudential considerations. Gurdon Saltonstall was the oldest son of Nathaniel, born at Haverhill, March 27, 1666. He graduated at Cambridge in 1684 with great distinction, being also the first graduate furnished by the town. He became a minister and was ordained pastor of the church at New London, Connecticut. But in 1707 he was chosen Governor, and continued in that office till his sudden death in 1724. And here one must remark of Governor Saltonstall that if one-half part of the eulogies pronounced upon him are to be taken in earnest, he was certainly the most exalted person this town ever produced—or perhaps any other. It is not intended to reproduce any of these panegyrics here, but they reach all points. He had, they say, Imagination, reasoning, eloquence, discrimination, readiness, charming manners, a goodly person. Besides, he was just as good as he was great. He was, moreover, a strong opponent of Episcopacy.

We begin to understand something of the exalted tributes to Governor Saltonstall when we read that he "was an advocate of rigorous ecclesiastical authority, always striving to exalt the ministerial office, to maintain its dignity and to enlarge the power of ecclesiastical bodies, which gave him unbounded popularity among his clerical brethren"—who made public opinion in those days. But with all allowances, he was clearly an accomplished and remarkable man, who impressed himself deeply upon his cotemporaries.

Richard Saltonstall, second son of Nathaniel, graduated in 1695. He always lived at Haverhill, and held civil and military office.

Nathaniel, the youngest son, also graduated in 1695 and was tutor. He is highly spoken of in family tradition, but died young.

Richard, son of Richard last named, was born in 1703 and graduated in 1722. He was colonel in the militia at twenty-three. Drake says he was a scientific and practical farmer. In 1736 he was appointed judge of Superior Court, holding that position till his death, in 1756. It has been necessary to mention his name quite frequently in this narrative. His character was eminently respectable. In 1741, while the court was in session at York, Maine, the celebrated Rev. Samuel Moody, of that place, produced the following:

> "Lynde, Dudley, Remington and Saltonstall,
> With Sewall, meeting at the judgment hall,
> Make up a learned, wise and faithful set,
> Of God-like judges, by God's counsel met."

Judge Saltonstall had three sons of whom we have had occasion to speak,—Colonel Richard, the Loyalist and refugee; the youngest half-brother Leverett, who died in the British army; and Dr. Nathaniel, descended through his mother from the patriotic Cooke family of Boston. Dr. Saltonstall was an excellent man, who practiced his profession in Haverhill respectably and liberally for many years. He enjoyed the esteem of his fellow-citizens, and when he died in 1815, they voluntarily closed their stores and suspended business. Of Dr. Saltonstall's three sons,—Leverett, Nathaniel and Richard,—the first and last graduated at Harvard. All removed from the town.

Leverett began the practice of law in Haverhill, but soon transferred his office to Salem. He was a dis-

tinguished man and a loyal townsman, but his career is fully sketched elsewhere.

So many of this family have graduated formerly from Harvard whilst residents of Haverhill, that the following circumstance should perhaps be mentioned, as given by Sibley in his "Harvard Graduates": There is no family but the Saltonstalls which has sent seven *successive* generations to the college—*i. e.*, Nathaniel, graduated 1659; Richard, 1695; Richard, 1722; Nathaniel, 1766; Leverett, 1802. Leverett, 1844; Richard Middlecott, 1881; Henry, son of Sir Richard Saltonstall and uncle of Nathaniel, of Haverhill, made nine generations.

In position, prestige, official station and education, the Saltonstalls were undoubtedly the most distinguished family of the town during the provincial and colonial period and until the Revolution brought forward new men.

Richard Hazzen, of Harvard, 1717, may have been the surveyor and land agent before spoken of.

Edward Barnard, Harvard, 1774, was the son of the minister of the First Parish, and Phineas Adams, 1793, was the son of the minister of the West Parish. Benjamin Greenleaf, the noted teacher and arithmetician, graduated at Dartmouth in 1813. He was born in Haverhill, September 25, 1786.

In 1827, Capt. William Baker, a native of Haverhill, died at Providence. He had been a Continental soldier, and in his old age enjoyed a pension. In 1775, when twenty years old, he worked for one Hall, a distiller, in Cole Lane (now Portland Street), Boston. The British soldiers were in the habit of lounging about this distillery, and Baker heard some of them in convivial conversation talk of the proposed march to Concord. He got the first news of it through the lines to Richard Devens, of Charleston, who started Paul Revere upon the famous ride.

Some of the Haverhill ministers, whom death has removed within a few years, have formerly been very dear to the hearts of their parishioners. Among them may be named again Rev. Dr. Train, of the First Baptist Society, a useful and scholarly man; Rev. Dr. George W. Bosworth (yet unburied while this line is written), of the same; Rev. Benjamin F. Horsford, of the Centre Congregational, to whom a tribute is paid elsewhere; Rev. Raymond H. Seeley, for twenty-five years the accomplished and beloved pastor of the North Congregational Society; Rev. Dr. J. W. Hanson, of the Universalist, war chaplain of the "Sixth" in the War for the Union; Rev. T. T. Munger, and Rev. H. E. Barnes, of the Centre, and many others. Rev. Henry Plummer was a native of Haverhill, born February 22, 1794. He preached, largely in Haverhill, for nearly forty years, without salary or regular compensation, and was believed to have done much good.

CHAPTER CLXII.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

Episcopacy—Sketches in Brief—The Churches and Their Present Work.

THE Rev. Charles Arthur Rand, of Trinity Church, who was shipwrecked in the "City of Columbus," was a peculiarly high-minded and devoted man. Rev. Dr. S. C. Thrall, one of the former rectors, is remembered for humor, eccentricity and learning.

From the day when Moses Badger, a young graduate of Harvard, embraced Episcopacy and received ordination, one hundred and twenty-five years ago or so, it would seem that there were occasional efforts to build up an Episcopal Church in Haverhill. Rev. Rana Cossit, licensed by the bishop of London to officiate in New England, March 27, 1773, is registered in Fulham records as incumbent of "Haverhill Parish." But it was only in Partibus. Our fathers, the Saltonstalls, the Badgers and all the rest of them, hated and feared Episcopacy. They regarded it as the source of all their woes, and a constant menace to their institutions. And when all the clergymen of that church, like Badger himself, became loyalists, or "Tories," they doubtless thought their gloomy prognostications justified. But times and men change. Some of the descendants of the Puritans appear to find special consolation in the ritual and services of the church their ancestors abhorred. And Trinity, seems to be highly prosperous and even strongly rooted under the efficient rectorship of Rev. David J. Ayers.

October 25, 1869, the town celebrated the hundredth birth-day of Hon. Moses Wingate. He was much in town office. He had been often on the school committee, twenty years postmaster, four years representative in General Court, and was in the Constitutional Convention of 1820. A Jeffersonian Democrat in youth, he nobly rounded out his career by voting for Abraham Lincoln at ninety-five. He died June 5, 1870, aged one hundred years, seven months and twenty-one days. A Mason for sixty-six years and Master Mason in 1813–14, on his centennial day he saw his son, the Rev. Charles Wingate, made a Mason.

In 1875 Charles Wingate built upon the homestead estate of his father the Episcopal Free Church of St. John, the Evangelist, where he is the officiating clergyman. He and his wife devote their life and strength to the work, and to the charitable and moral efforts they cluster about it. And under whatever discouragements, they yearly in September, with renewed gratitude and serene trustfulness, gather about them the friends of the church and of the poor, to celebrate the "Harvest Home."

Among the names held in regard in the town of men with useful or agreeable qualities, or both, must be named James Gale, Phineas Carleton, Colonel

Charles White, Rufus Slocomb the expressman, Eleazer A. Porter, Charles Porter, Ezekiel Hale, Caleb Hersey, Moses D. George. And doubtless many more equally deserve mention.

Benjamin Emerson and David P. Harmon are said to have been earnest anti-slavery men, and warm, courageous friends of the slave.

Edward G. Frothingham was a native of Newburyport, but had lived here many years, when he died, September 17, 1876, at the age of sixty-five years. He had been assistant assessor of internal revenue, and for nearly thirty years was editor and proprietor of the *Gazette*. Ill health had latterly compelled him to retire from active business, and much curtailed his usefulness.

A person who, for almost fifty years, has been in the way of hearing about Haverhill men would be strangely neglectful were he to omit mention of Alfred Kittredge. In his day he was identified with almost all the progressive movements of the town, —business, moral, social. He was an able man and a decided man, and the community always knew where to find him. At the time of his death, May 1, 1877, he was, at seventy-one, editor and proprietor of the *Haverhill Gazette*. In the conduct of a paper, he clearly exhibited the same qualities which distinguished him in private.

Dr. James R. Nichols, so recently deceased, after a residence of more than fifty years, has been largely known abroad as well as at home. A self-made and self-educated man, he displayed great pertinacity and achieved remarkable success. Prosecuting medical studies under difficulties, he obtained his degree at the Dartmouth Medical College. At Winnikeni Towers he built up one of the most beautiful estates in New England. As an officer of many educational institutions and business associations, member of the State Board of Agriculture, and director of the Boston and Maine Railroad, his time was much engrossed, and his name became familiar to the public. As an author, he was successful. "Fireside Science" and "Chemistry of the Farm" have been much read, and his last book,—"Whence? What? Where?"—received great attention, and has passed through eleven editions.

Haverhill has had an art club, of which little is heard at the present time.

Harrison L. Plummer is a son of the soil, whose "wandering steps" have "inclined" almost everywhere. He paints portraits with as much facility and success in Seville as in Haverhill. Some of his likenesses are certainly remarkable, and the fine portrait of John G. Whittier painted for his schoolmates at Haverhill Academy, of which the Public Library is custodian, will always be evidence of his skill.

Mr. O. R. Fowler, a landscape painter, has put upon canvas scenes made familiar by the muse of Whittier—his home, or "Fernside," as many of his admirers love to call it, the school-house of his boyhood and "Country Bridge." The East Parish and the Lake region, have furnished inspiration for many artists, some of them distinguished.

A good many years since, Mr. Hazen Morse, an eminent engraver, established his residence in the town, bringing a hospitable family, several members of which were endowed with artistic taste and skill. One of his sons, still living, enjoyed in his youth the companionship and instruction of Washington Allston and other eminent artists, at home and abroad. It has been thought by loving friends that too great sensitiveness alone may have prevented his signal success in that field. He has, however, been well known and esteemed in architecture. Just as the new year was coming in, another of this family died suddenly in Boston. Mr. Henry D. Morse was identified with Haverhill from his early youth. An enthusiastic sportsman, he knew every sunny glade and bosky dell within her borders. Early skillful as an engraver of gold and silver, his artistic instinct and love of beauty in color made him love precious stones, and he is admitted to have possessed a taste in this department almost unrivaled. He began the business of diamond-cutting in America, mastered the secrets of Amsterdam, and became a rival of its methods. Nay more, he invented mechanism which is said to have revolutionized the business. He had, moreover, rare gifts as a painter. Besides, he possessed that brightest jewel, "spotless reputation."

Hon. Charles J. Noyes, Speaker of the Massachusetts House of Representatives, a native of Haverhill, is noted elsewhere. Governor E. F. Noyes, of Ohio, minister to the French Republic during President Hayes' administration, has had intimate relations with the town in former years.

On Kent Street, in 1839, was born Henry Bacon, whose father was then pastor of the First Universalist Church. At first employed in a book store in Boston, afterwards a volunteer in the Thirteenth Massachusetts and wounded, he began his real career when, at twenty-five years, he entered the studio of Cabanel at Paris. In 1866 and the following year, he studied with Edward Frere at Ecouen. His first picture was exhibited at the Salon in 1870.

"Boston Boys and General Gage" was first exhibited at the Salon of 1875, and next year at our Centennial Exhibition; "Franklin at Home," was in the Salon of 1876. Of late years Bacon has shown pictures in a different class—like "Bidding Good Bye" and "The Burial at Sea."

An event well worth pausing an instant to note was the opening of the Academy of Music, on the site of the three Baptist meeting-houses, Merrimac Street, September 17 and 18, 1884, under the management of Mr. James F. West, who has done much to create and gratify taste in the town; whose wife, Mrs. Julia Houston West, has also pleased many thousands, here and elsewhere, by her noble voice and elevated style as a singer. The seating capacity of the academy is

one thousand five hundred. In point of approaches, convenience and management, it is fully up to the deserts of the town, and should be regarded as a piece of exceptional good fortune. Still, the best way to achieve success is to deserve it.

Did space permit, a chapter should be devoted to social influences in Haverhill, and to the circumstances which at one time gave to its society a certain tone and distinction. It is not generally known that during the siege of Boston a number of wealthy and cultivated people, driven out of the city, found shelter here. Entreated kindly and hospitably, they never forgot the kindness they had received, and in later and happier days they revisited the pleasant little village by the Merrimac and reciprocated its hospitalities. Some whom the stress of war drove hither, lingered permanently in the happy valley. But to explain these circumstances would require more of detail than is now permissible.

It is a curious circumstance that in the early days of the Revolution a part of the library of Harvard would appear to have been brought hither for safe keeping, and that it seems to have been at one time suggested to move the college here also.

It will soon be thirty years (May 15, 1888) since the following advertisement appeared in the Haverhill *Gazette:* "John James Ingalls; att'y & counselor at Law: office with J. J. Marsh, Esq., in Duncan's Building, cor. of Water & Bridge Streets." Within a year appeared the following in the same paper, May 13, 1859: "John James Ingalls, Attorney at Law, Lawrence, Kansas." That is twenty-nine years ago, and it will very soon be fourteen years since Mr. Ingalls took his seat in the United States Senate, where he is now serving his third term, and over whose deliberations he presides with admirable dignity. His unquestioned ability is appreciated nowhere more highly than in his own constituency, who regard him with undiminished confidence and increased admiration. Senator Ingalls was born in Middleton, a few miles from Haverhill, December 29, 1833, but his family connections were here; here he passed his youth and early manhood, and here his venerable father and his immediate family reside. No record of his career is needed, and no eulogy of his deeds or merits will be attempted. He simply receives the recognition to which he is fairly entitled, as the most distinguished representative of Haverhill, in public life.

But the most eminent and best-beloved son of Haverhill is also the most eminent and best-beloved son of Essex County—nay, of the Commonwealth and of the nation. It would not be necessary to name him, for this work can go into no household where John Greenleaf Whittier is not enshrined an honored and familiar guest. No Essex County man is so obtuse or so spiritless as not to claim participation in his pure fame. No schoolboy in the land is so ignorant as not to know that on the 17th of September, 1887, a simple and unique testimonial was presented to the aged poet to mark the popular recognition of the fact that eighty years ago he was born at the hillside foot in the East Parish of Haverhill. To attempt to detail the events of the life of Whittier, or to point out his merits, would be to insult the intelligence of the readers of this page. The reason why the right is claimed to speak of him here is, that his ancestors were among the earliest settlers of the town, and that it holds his birth-place. What his own feeling has been about that spot, let the aged poet delineate for himself: "The old farm-house nestling in its valley, hills stretching off to the south and green meadows to the east; the small stream which came noisily down its ravine, washing the old garden wall, and softly lapping on fallen stones and mossy roots of beeches and hemlocks; the tall sentinel poplars at the gateway; the oak forest, sweeping unbroken to the northern horizon, the grass-grown carriage path, with its rude and crazy bridge—the dear old landscape of my boyhood, lies outstretched before me like a daguerreotype from the picture within which I have borne with me in all my wanderings." The only education which schools gave the farmer's boy he received at Corlis' Hill, and during the brief time he was at the Haverhill Academy. He was an early contributor to the *Haverhill Gazette* and at one time its editor. Nearly sixty years ago he thought to write the history of the town. From infancy he drank in its legends, and, though a sincere Quaker, he understood and would have done justice to the motives and policy of its founders. In 1835 the town sent him to the Legislature—the only position of the kind he ever held. And whilst its Representative, he did a thing without instructions from his constituents, which, at this late day, they will not repudiate. William Lloyd Garrison was lodged in jail in that season to save his life from the fury of a Boston mob. Nevertheless, in the afternoon he had two visitors, one of whom was Greenleaf Whittier, the Haverhill Representative. In 1885, when Whittier's portrait was unveiled, he wrote Major Sheldon: "Few marks of esteem have given me so much satisfaction, proving as it does that I am not without honor among 'mine own people,' where, indeed, I most desire and value it." And on the 16th of January, 1888, he sent in aid of the new City Hospital, of Haverhill, a substantial and welcome recognition of its latest charity.

At the moment of this writing there are suggestions that the old homestead should be purchased and sacredly preserved as the memorial of a gifted poet and noble man. It is fortunately now the property of a gentleman who duly appreciates the honor his title-deed confers upon him. There is no decay there, nothing to offend the taste of those who love and honor the grand, good songster of the people and of liberty. It is the substantial, well-preserved farm-house in which his ancestors were born, lived and died. Were it desirable to place the homestead in a public trust, it

could easily be done. The suggestion was made in Haverhill many years ago, and the last words spoken at the unveiling of his portrait were these : "I used to think that the public-spirited people of Haverhill should unite in an effort to secure the birth-place of Whittier, as it were a shrine for the visiting of his admirers. But it is unnecessary. The East Parish, nay, the whole valley, is his monument !"

Among the social agencies of Haverhill, should, perhaps, be mentioned the Monday Evening Club, organized November, 1860, for intellectual and social purposes, composed of professional and business men. It has celebrated its twenty-fifth anniversary, is still flourishing, and is accredited as the parent of several similar organizations in other cities.

The Fortnightly Club is a junior association, of much the same purpose and scope.

General William F. Bartlett was born at Haverhill, June 6, 1840, and died at Pittsfield, December 17, 1876. His career was brief but brilliant. A member of the junior class at Harvard, his political sympathies and the maturity of his mind can be judged by his writing to a friend, April 17, 1861 : "I have stuck up for the South all along." That very day he enlisted in a militia battalion. Afterwards he received a captain's commission in the Twentieth Massachusetts. He was at Ball's Bluff, lost a leg at Fair Oaks, Va., May, 1862 ; after was colonel of Forty-ninth Massachusetts—part of General Augur's division in Louisiana. At the assault of Port Hudson he was wounded in wrist and heel. Returning to Massachusetts, he organized the Fifty-seventh Regiment, and was wounded at the battle of the Wilderness, taken prisoner, and in the Libby prison at Richmond. He was brigadier-general June 20, 1864, and assigned to the Ninth Corps. After exchange he was breveted major-general. One account says he was also captured at the affair of the Crater. After the war Gen. Bartlett engaged in the iron manufacture at West Stockbridge, Mass., and at Richmond, Va. He considered himself an Independent Republican, and declined the Democratic nomination for Governor of Massachusetts in 1875.

General Bartlett was a young man of spirit, courage and high personal honor. His was the material of which successful soldiers are made. Though indifferent to the cause of the Union at first, he was faithful to his flag even unto death. His high gallantry, desperate wounds, cruel sufferings and early death make him the ideal hero of Massachusetts in the War for the Union.

In studying the history of Haverhill, it is painful to read about the dissensions which rent the parishes in turn. In the First Parish, Dudley Phelps forced the fighting which resulted in his own dismissal, in the separation of eighty-nine of the ninety-one members of the church, and the formation of the Centre Congregational Church. As a consequence, the parish has ever since been Unitarian. High authority has soberly admitted : "It has been given as the opinion of some candid observers, that the division might not have occurred, and the whole body might have remained substantially orthodox, had the minister of that day been one who could be nominally orthodox and at the same time not constitutionally and internally controversial." And a wise observer added, "There is reason to believe that this is not the only instance in which a New England Unitarian Church originated in a reaction against an utter angular and pugnacious orthodoxy." The temper in which these reflections are made, at any rate, is admirable.

After the death of the Rev. Phineas Adams, dissension reigned supreme in the West Parish for a long time. There was war between the orthodox element and the opposition ; there was quarreling also about funds ; but at last there was a truce and the combatants separated. As a consequence, there came an opportunity to hold "Exercises commemorative of the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the West Congregational Church," October 22, 1885, published in a neat pamphlet. The "Historical Discourse," by the pastor, Rev. John N. Lowell, and indeed all the proceedings, were very interesting.

In the North Parish there has also been a contest about dogmas and funds, carried on with less bitterness. In the long legal and legislative struggle for control of the parish funds the Congregationalists were defeated, and there also is quiet now. A church was built in 1878, where the Rev. T. E. St. John has preached for a number of years. The non-orthodox or liberal elements are gathered there. The orthodox people have recently dedicated a new chapel.

In the East Parish, dissension began with quarrels about the salary of Rev. Benjamin Parker before the Revolution ; it was much aggravated when Mr. Parker took the Tory side, as was alleged, and at last the connection between him and his parish was dissolved. From 1797 to 1826, during the pastorate of Rev. Isaac Tompkins, there was harmony. He was a decided Calvinist, but a well-read, able and prudent man, unexceptionable in demeanor.

The Second Baptist Society was organized in the East Parish in 1821, and the meeting-house was built in 1822, and dedicated February 22, 1823. The semi-centennial was commemorated January 3, 1872.

The Riverside Congregational Church is an offshoot from the Fourth Congregational or old East Parish Church. Rev. Albert Donnell is the acting pastor.

The First Universalist Society was organized March 17, 1823, and built its first meeting-house, in 1825, on Summer Street, then newly opened. The society has had a number of interesting and talented pastors.

The Winter Street Congregational Church had a brilliant but brief history—1839 to 1860.

The Third Baptist Church was organized in 1858, and the Free Will Baptist Church in the same year. The latter, in 1860, purchased the meeting-house of

the Winter Street Congregational Society, recently disbanded.

On the second Sunday in September, 1850, Mass was celebrated in Haverhill by Rev. John T. McDonnell. Previously, the town had received a few visits from the officiating priest at Lawrence. July 4, 1852, a new church was dedicated and a commodious house for the priest was built. In 1859 the church was enlarged.

A sketch of the large and substantial new church, St. James' Catholic, will be found elsewhere. For several years Rev. Father O'Doherty has administered the affairs of this parish with extraordinary ability.

The French population of Haverhill has largely increased of late years. It is stated as two thousand nine hundred and seventy-two, but this is thought to be an overestimate. The Society of St. John the Baptist, organized February 23, 1870, to support sick and bury deceased members, had, in October, 1887, one hundred and fifty-four members.

The Church of St. Joseph, Rev. Fr. Oliver Boucher pastor, has cost about thirty-two thousand dollars, and will seat eleven hundred persons. Schools are conducted in connection with it by the Sisters of Charity from Ottawa, Canada.

The South Christian Church was organized April 9, 1806. Its membership in 1887 was one hundred and four. Rev. John A. Gross has been pastor since June, 1885.

January 22, 1888, the public were invited to attend divine worship at the following churches and places of gathering: Trinity Church, Rev. D. J. Ayres, rector; West Parish Congregational Church, Rev. J. N. Lowell, pastor; First Parish (Unitarian), Rev. T. E. St. John, pastor; Mt. Washington Baptist Church, Rev. L. A. Freeman, pastor; Wesley Church, Rev. C. W. Taylor, pastor; Fourth Congregational Church, East Parish; Church of Christ, G. A. R. Hall; St. James' Catholic Church, Rev. Father O'Doherty, pastor; St. Joseph French Catholic Church, Rev. Father Boucher, pastor; Second Baptist Church, Rocks Village, Rev. O. D. Ordway, pastor; Grace Church, Rev. B. B. French, pastor; Portland Street Church, Rev. Welcome E. Bates, pastor; Salvation Army; Centre Church, Rev. Edwin C. Holman, pastor; First Baptist Church, Rev. W. W. Everts, Jr., pastor; Church of St. John the Evangelist, Rev. Charles Wingate; Riverside Church, Rev. A. Donnell, pastor; South Christian Church; First Spiritualist Society at Unity Hall; J. William Fletcher at Brittain Hall; Advent Christian Church, Walnut Street, G. W. Sederquist, pastor; North Church, Rev. N. Boynton, pastor; Gospel temperance meeting in First M. E. Church, addresses by Rev. Mr. Farley; Summer Street Church, Rev. J. C. Snow, pastor; Winter Street Free Baptist Church, Rev. C. A. Hilton, pastor. The Calvary Baptist Church, on Ashland Street, had just settled a new pastor, Rev. Mr. Roberts, lately from Liberia.

Many things indicate a harmony of feeling and unity for work that would perhaps have been impossible at any previous period in the history of the town. Thus, one reads with admiration, and gratification as well, the story of the organization of a Pastors' Association and of proceedings at its meetings. Taking up the report of a recent Conference, it is found that letters of regret at inability to be present were read from an Episcopal and a Universalist clergyman. A Unitarian minister made a report, which was accepted. It was voted to hold a union meeting on Thanksgiving Day in a Methodist meeting-house. The pastor of that church, a Congregationalist, and a Free-Will Baptist clergyman, were appointed to arrange the order of exercises. And a committee, comprising a Methodist, a Baptist and a Christian clergyman, was appointed to select a subject for the next meeting. If such a meeting could by any possibility have been held fifty years ago, the participants could not have looked their parishioners in the face, any more than the Roman augurs could look at each other without laughing.

It would be neither possible nor profitable to compare the work of different denominations or churches. But it is a pleasant thing for the writer of a general sketch like this to be able to record that from an unprejudiced stand-point, he believes that all the regularly organized churches are doing a good work, especially with the young. And there is need enough of it in this place, as in every other. The pastors of most of the leading churches are young men, highly educated, energetic and emulous in doing good. They have the loftiest stimulus for individual and united Christian endeavor.

What work could be so noble?

There is a burning question which it would be impertinent to discuss in this place—that of parochial schools. The experiment is now being tried in Haverhill upon a large scale. It will be watched with deep interest.

Certainly all who love the common weal will admit that it is no time to lower the standard of the public schools. There is every inducement, on the other hand, to hold it higher and still higher.

It seems to be admitted that the first superintendent of schools in the city has done excellent work, and general regret is expressed that he is about to pass to another scene of labor. May the city be equally fortunate in his successor! His report for 1887 will soon be in the hands of the citizens, and will be much more valuable than any imperfect sketch attempted here, upon insufficient knowledge, would be.

It is gratifying to observe an increasing disposition to do justice to the work of the Catholic clergy with the great congregations over which their influence is so extensive. And the candid admit that this influence is exerted with great efficiency in the cause of temperance and of law and order.



REV. JAMES O'DOHERTY, PASTOR. P. W. FORD, ARCH'T.

ST. JAMES' R. C. CHURCH,

HAVERHILL, MASS.

CHAPTER CLXIII.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

History of Haverhill Newspapers—Associations, Charitable and other—Business and Public Corporations—Manufactures—Position of City.

GREAT pains had been taken to search the files of Haverhill papers, from the earliest date and wherever accessible. Copious notes were taken, in the hope of presenting a good deal that might be novel and interesting, and of being able finally, somehow, to digest the results of Haverhill journalism in a brief essay. But the limits of our sketch forbid such an effort at the present time.

It has already been mentioned that the first newspaper—the "*Guardian of Freedom*"—appeared September 6, 1793. Chase, in his history, has given a full sketch from that initial point of the changes of control and the vicissitudes of the journals themselves. For the reason already given, we will not attempt at this time to follow him, but refer the curious reader to his chapter upon the subject. Some observations may perhaps be profitably made upon the characters of some of the men connected with these papers at different times.

In 1824 Nathan Burrill sold the printing business and the paper—the *Haverhill Gazette*—to Isaac R. Howe. Mr. Howe edited and published the paper until October, 1826, when he engaged the services of Abijah W. Thayer to edit and superintend the publication.

But during a part of the two years, E. W. Reinhart was the editor and John Varnum was joint proprietor with Mr. Howe. Both Varnum and Howe have, perhaps, already been sufficiently spoken of. Mr. Howe probably purchased the paper in the interest of Varnum, who was at that time in Congress, and who, as we have intimated, had eager young rivals who grudged him the seat. Varnum and Howe were law partners and connected by marriage. One of them was indolent and luxurious, the other somewhat chimerical. However, they were well educated gentlemen and conducted the paper in excellent tone and temper, though hardly with what would now be called enterprise. Reinhardt was a man of considerable ability and wrote good articles. After leaving Haverhill, he drifted about the country, starting a number of papers without much success.

In February, 1827, Mr. Thayer purchased the establishment and changed the name of the paper to the *Essex Gazette*. He was a printer by trade, and had previously superintended the publication of the *Gazette*. He had then lived several years in Maine, also connected with a newspaper there, the *Independent Statesman*, of Portland. After his return to Haverhill, he resided here from October, 1826, to July, 1835. He was active and eager, as well as positive about everything. Mainly through his efforts, occasional Episcopal services were held between 1833 and 1835. He was a live man. Chase says that "his *Gazette* was the *first political* paper that ever came out in advocacy of total abstinence from intoxicating liquors, and the second *of any kind, either in America or in the world*." There were then twenty-nine places where liquor was openly sold, but in five years there was only one where it was supposed to be sold secretly. Mr. Thayer's wife, who died within two or three years, was well known in Haverhill, where she had family connections. She was a very interesting woman, of strong convictions, and sympathized warmly with her husband. "I always," she said not long before her death, "did what I could to uphold my husband in his work." After their removal to Philadelphia, John G. Whittier lived for a time in her family. Mrs. Thayer and her husband took a deep interest in him, and her husband exerted himself in behalf of advanced education for the young farmer. She always spoke of Mr. Whittier with the affectionate interest of an elder sister. One of their sons, a journalist, was some years consul-general in Egypt; another, James B. Thayer, is professor in the Law School at Cambridge.

Mr. Whittier was connected with the *Gazette* from January to July, 1830, and from May 4 to Dec. 17, 1836.

In 1835, Erastus Brooks, who had learned the trade of a printer in Portland, of Mr. Thayer, bought the *Gazette* of him. As is well known, the *Gazette* held high rank under Mr. Thayer's management. Mr. Brooks ultimately went to New York and made a success of the *Express*.

For many years, Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, of Groveland, was connected in some way with the *Gazette*. He was a ready and interesting writer.

In July, 1864, Rev. Thomas G. Farnsworth started the *Essex Banner and Haverhill Advertiser*, as a Democratic weekly paper.

Eben. H. Safford, who was a printer, came to Haverhill about 1834, and soon became connected with the *Banner*. William Taggart was editor and joint proprietor from Jan. 6, 1838, until March 11, 1843, when Mr. Safford took the sole charge and proprietorship of it, so continuing until his death, with the exception of a short interval when James Buchanan was President. The paper was always Democratic. Mr. Safford died Dec. 12, 1887. It is announced that the paper will continue to be carried on by his daughter.

Jan. 1, 1859, Z. E. Stone began to publish the *Tri-weekly Publisher*, an independent paper. In 1859, D. P. Bodfish and A. L. Kimball began to publish a weekly paper called the *Essex County Democrat*.

Chase says that on the 1st of July, 1861, four newspapers were published in the town, with an aggregate circulation of a little over four thousand copies per week. They were the *Haverhill Gazette, Essex Banner, Tri-weekly Publisher* and *Essex County Democrat*.

The latter was a short-lived publication. The *Tri-weekly Publisher* continued till July, 1878, when its publication ceased. Its list and good-will were sold to the *Bulletin*. In 1861 Mr. E. P. Hill became connected with the paper and so continued for several years. Mr. Hill is a veteran journalist, who, Moore says, in his "Historical Notes on Printing," wrote his first newspaper article for a campaign sheet in New Hampshire in 1846.

Thomas Tileston was connected with the *Merrimac Intelligencer*, in Haverhill, from Nov. 5, 1814, till Jan., 1818. Tileston went to New York, helped to found the great wholesale shoe house of Spofford & Tileston, became a famous merchant and the friend of famous men.

Nathaniel Greene was Isaac Hill's first apprentice in the *New Hampshire Gazette*, at Concord. In 1818 Burrill & Tileston turned over the *Merrimac Intelligencer* to Greene as a gift. It died in a few weeks. In 1818 Greene started the *Essex Patriot*, which he published for three years, when he sold it out. Afterwards, in 1821, he got to the *Boston Statesman*, and success.

The first daily newspaper ever published in Haverhill was the *Daily Bulletin*, established by A. J. Hoyt & Co., July 1, 1871. The following January the *Weekly Bulletin* was issued. The present proprietors, I. L. Mitchell and Warren Hoyt (Mitchell & Hoyt), purchased the property Sept. 17, 1875, since which time its growth has been steady and constant. The *Tri-weekly Publisher* was merged into the *Bulletin* in 1877–78. Since its beginning the paper has from time to time been enlarged from six columns to nine. At the present time its certified circulation is stated at over 2500 copies *per diem*, while the weekly prints over 3000. The paper has always been Republican.

January 7, 1837, the *Essex Gazette* being then published by Dr. Spofford and John H. Harris, the name was changed to the original one—*Haverhill Gazette*. December 28, 1838, Mr. Harris became associate editor as well as proprietor and publisher. July 5, 1839, he bought the interest of Dr. Spofford, who retired. May 1, 1840, Mr. Harris sold the establishment to Wm. E. P. Rodgers, who edited and published the paper till October 1, 1843, when he transferred it to Mr. Edward G. Frothingham. It was successively Whig and Republican. About the year 1854, Mr. E. P. Hill became a contributer to the *Gazette*, so remaining through the Fremont and Lincoln campaigns. In 1869, Mr. Frothingham sold the paper to Alfred Kittredge, who changed it to a semi-weekly, continuing to be its proprietor and editor till his death, May 1, 1877. In the following June it was sold to Dr. F. J. Stevens; and in June, 1878, it was changed from a semi-weekly to a daily and a weekly, but it was not a success. The establishment was sold at auction, April, 1878, to Drs. O. D. Cheney and C. D. Hunking and Mr. Amos W. Downing. In 1879 it was sold to Messrs. Bridgman, Gay & Co., who continued it as a morning daily and weekly, connecting with it a portion of the time an evening edition in the name of *The Telephone*. In 1882 it was purchased by Messrs. F. A. Howard and A. A. Hill, who soon enlarged it and continued it as an evening daily and weekly until July, 1886, when it was again sold to the Haverhill Gazette Publishing Company—A. A. Hill, publisher and editor, Seth C. Bassett, business manager; with Austin P. Nichols as the other member of the company. It is now continued as an evening two edition daily, and a weekly. The paper has passed through many hands, but it has to-day a larger circulation and more widely extended influence than at any previous period of its history.

The Haverhill *Daily Laborer* is published by the Knights of Labor Co-operative Publishing Company, organized September 3, 1884, with a capital of $10,000 in shares of $500. President, Wm. A. Robertson; Manager and Editor, Mr. M. E. Parker. The circulation September 17, 1887, was 2976 and was increasing. Its platform is well-known.

The Haverhill papers were never as well conducted as now, and never as enterprising. It is unfortunate that the people of the town do not feel more local pride in their journals. Perhaps there may have been in the past some circumstances in the history of the papers to excuse indifference, but at present the leading papers seem to be striving to deserve public favor. On the other hand, there is nothing that benefits a town so much as a good newspaper.

The Haverhill Woman Suffrage Association was organized February 7, 1878, with the object of securing "to women full equality of rights, political and legal, with men; and to educate them for the intelligent exercise of the highest duties of citizenship." The present number of members is about seventy-five.

The Female Benevolent Society, now in active operation for about seventy years, continues in a prosperous condition. Its membership is three hundred and thirty-three. Its income is derived from rent, interest on bequests, annual donations from friends, collection at the anniversary and membership dues. It has always enjoyed and deserved the public confidence.

The Old Ladies' Home is a charity which has won its way very modestly and unobtrusively. As far back as 1856 the sum of $100, net result of a levee held in aid of the poor, was put in savings bank as the beginning of a fund. A society was duly incorporated as the Haverhill Charitable Society. Mrs. Stephen Minot framed the constitution. The original members numbered forty-two, afterwards increased to two hundred. Funds were accumulated by the yearly dues of members, an annual entertainment and occasional lectures.

March 6, 1858, it was voted to change the constitution so that instead of raising funds to aid the deserving poor, the object of the society should be that of providing a home for aged indigent women of Haver-

hill, and afterwards the name was changed to the Old Ladies' Home Association.

For years funds were obtained by a May Fair. In 1874 the association bought a suitable lot of land on Main Street, and in 1876 built a home at a cost of about $10,000. It was dedicated October 18, 1876. Seven inmates were received the first year, twenty-one up to the present time; eight have died.

The property of the association was reported May 1, 1887, at $28,060.41, exclusive of the Home. President for 1887, Mrs. John Crowell; Secretary, Mrs. Jones Frankle. Excellent reports are heard of the good management of the Home and the comfort of its inmates.

A brief sketch of the origin of the Elizabeth Home for destitute children is given elsewhere. The society has $13,381.71 invested in mortgages and savings bank, the Elizabeth Home, a house on Pond Street and one on Sixth Street. In 1885 its receipts were $1838.23, its expenditures $1876.39, leaving a deficiency of $38.16. In 1887 the deficiency was $130.43. Those who were at the annual levee of the society in 1887 are not likely soon to forget the happy, contented faces of the children, the neatness and comfort of the Home, and the apparent excellent management of the executive committee and resident officers. There are ninety-one life members and two hundred and seventy-nine annual.

February 13, 1882, the city of Haverhill accepted an act of the Legislature, authorizing the city to erect and maintain a hospital, to receive donations therefor, and to elect a board of trustees for its management. Under the will of Hon. E. J. M. Hale, the trustees of his estate placed at the disposal of the trustees of the hospital the sum of $50,000 and an estate on Kent Street. The latter not being considered suitable for the purposes of a hospital, the trustees were authorized by a decree of the Supreme Judicial Court to sell that land upon certain conditions to fulfill the trust. The trustees were taking steps to that end when James H. Carleton, Esq., tendered them for their purposes the estate known as Midlake Farm on Kenoza Avenue, consisting of a fine house with suitable buildings and seven and a half acres of land, all being entirely eligible. The trustees were thus enabled to fit up a cottage hospital, regarded as sufficient for the needs of the city for many years.

The house, remodeled and supplied with admirable equipments, was dedicated to its work Thursday, December 29, 1887. Many donations were made with the greatest cordiality, to supply whatever was needed for the beneficent charity. Within less than a week a terrible railway accident at Bradford more than taxed the entire resources of the new hospital, causing universal congratulation that it was in readiness with its appliances to alleviate suffering.

This was not the first important gift of Mr. Hale to the city. January 29, 1873, he addressed the mayor and City Council, proposing to found a public library and convey a specific lot of land on Summer Street for the site of it, with $30,000 in money, provided an equal sum of money should be raised and paid to the trustees to be appointed within six months, and that the city should bear the current expenses of the library. The conditions were accepted and the money raised. A board of trustees was elected, with Mr. Hale at the head. The building was erected at the cost of $49,543.32, and is, on the whole, well adapted to the purpose. It was dedicated November 11, 1875, with appropriate exercises. Mr. Hale thereafter gave liberally to the institution in money, books and works of art, and by his will $50,000 as a fund, the income to be expended in the purchase of books, and a similar amount, the income to be applied to maintenance.

On January 1, 1888, the fund remained unimpaired, whilst the total number of volumes reached nearly 45,000. Edward Capen, the librarian in charge from the beginning, places all frequenters of the library under personal obligations to him by his thoughtfulness and care, and the number availing themselves of its privileges must be constantly increasing.

The Haverhill Aqueduct Company was one of the earliest organized in the country—in 1802. The source of supply was Round Pond. The conduits employed were wooden logs of four-inch bore. These primitive pipes met for many years the demand for water, but the great pressure of one hundred and twenty feet fall from the Pond to Water Street caused frequent breaks in them; so many and expensive repairs were required each year as largely to absorb the receipts. In 1842 the company began replacing the wood with iron pipes. These giving a surer supply, the water-takers rapidly increased. In 1856 the mill rights to draw down the waters of Plug Pond were purchased. Eleven years later application was made to the Legislature for increased powers, which were granted by the act of 1867, as well as the right to take and use the waters of Plug and Kenoza Ponds in addition to Round Pond. Before the end of the year, Plug Pond was connected with the company's service. Hitherto the supply had been wholly by gravitation, but as building was rapidly going forward towards the highlands about the ponds, it was necessary to provide a reservoir and pumping engines to raise water for this section. In 1879, this high service was completed. The same year the Silver Hill Aqueduct, a small plant supplying a few families on the west side from springs, was absorbed.

Four years later application was made to the Legislature for the right to take and use Crystal Lake, on the west side of the city, which was granted in 1886. The company now has a model aqueduct, surpassed by none for the purity of water and abundance of supply. The sources of supply are all fed by springs, and are uncontaminated by any polluted streams flowing into them. By an ingenious system of pipes and water-gates, the service is so sub-divided that it is practically three aqueducts, either of which in emer-

gency can temporarily supply the city, or the three can be united. At present the company has thirty-two miles of street mains. All its departments are splendidly equipped, and its capacity is ample to supply abundant water for a city many times larger than the Haverhill of to-day.

In a cotemporary diary is the following entry: "Haverhill Aqueduct built summer 1803 by Mr. Moses Bricket."

We have observed that in the early history of the town the waters of Plug Pond, flowing through Mill Brook, were largely used as the source of water-power. This continued down to a comparatively late day. The Upper Mill, as it was called, was built by William White, father of James D. White, in 1816. He sold it to Col. John Woodman. It then fell into the hands of the Savings Bank, from which Samuel and James D. White bought it in September, 1846. About 1856 they sold their rights, as above stated, to the Aqueduct Company, who sold the land to Linwood Cemetery, thus extinguishing Mill Brook, with its traditions of mills and manufactures, and the occult meaning of Plug Pond.

There was formerly a pond at the foot of Mill Street, on the south side of Water. A tannery was carried on there by Col. Woodman.

The Haverhill Gas-Light Company was incorporated by act of the Legislature, February 12, 1853. The return for the year ending June 30, 1887, shows total sales of gas 36,024,700 cubic feet, or an average of 98,697 feet per day. The charge to consumers was $1.80 per 1000 feet. The company supplied 319 street lamps, burning an average of six hours per night, at the price of five cents per night for each lamp. December 15, 1887, the price of gas to consumers was reduced to $1.70 per 1000 feet, with a discount of twenty cents for payment before the 10th of each month. The company at the latter day supplied 217 street lamps, burning on an average eight hours per night, at a price of 6¾ cents per lamp per night (about 119 having been displaced by electric light).

November 1, 1887, the amount of deposit in Haverhill Savings Bank was $4,355,745. The amount of deposit in the City Five Cent Savings Bank was $866,629.

The Haverhill Co-operative Savings Bank made its ninth annual report November 1, 1886. The bank was chartered August 20, 1877, and began business September 3, 1877. The shares earned interest at the rate of seven per cent. the previous year (1885), and the same was passed to the credit of the shareholders. The secretary, J. A. Page, wrote some little time since: "The Haverhill Co-operative Savings Bank was the second to receive a charter, and has been very successful during the ten years of its existence. It has at present about six hundred shareholders. In 1882 the assets of the bank were only $30,000. Now they are very near $100,000, nearly all invested in dwelling-houses of moderate cost. The borrowers are generally persons of small or moderate incomes, who could not otherwise build houses and pay for them. The demands for loans is constant and increasing.

"A second co-operative bank has just started in Haverhill. Our bank has sustained no losses."

December 7, 1787, the capital stock of the National Banks in Haverhill was as follows: First National $300,000; Haverhill National, $200,000; Essex National, $100,000; Merrimack National, $240,000; Second National, $150,000.

In the summer of 1877 the Haverhill and Groveland Street Railway was built from the Boston and Maine station in Haverhill to the Groveland end of Groveland Bridge, three miles, and was equipped with four cars and eight horses, carrying daily about four hundred passengers. Its capital stock was $24,000.

In September, 1884, it was extended one mile in Groveland to Savaryville, and its capital stock was increased to $32,000. In the summer of 1886 it was extended from Savaryville to West Newbury, Haverhill to Bradford, and in various parts of Haverhill, increasing its tracks to about fourteen miles. The company now run thirty-eight cars and one hundred and five horses, and carry daily about twenty-five hundred people. The capital stock is $144,000.

The capital invested in the manufacture of wool and fur hats in Haverhill and Bradford, is stated by a competent authority to be $500,000; employing some 400 persons; and manufacturing daily between four and five hundred dozen. The value of the annual production is stated at from $850,000 to $1,000,000.

Stevens & Co., at their Haverhill mill, have ten sets woolen machinery; their product is 800,000 yards a year of ladies' dress goods. They consume 500,000 pounds of wool; employ 159 hands; and their pay-roll is $5000 per month.

This mill is the successor of mills formerly carried on by the Hales upon the same spot at Little River. Ezekiel Hale first made cotton goods there about the beginning of the century. In 1804, he established a woolen factory there. His son, Ezekiel, succeeded him, and in due course, his son, the late E. J. M. Hale, became associated with him.

We may remark that the early trades or manufactures carried on in the town, and to which it gave some encouragement, do not seem to have taken any permanent foothold. The rum distilleries, the growth of which here, at one time excited the animadversion of Boston, long since disappeared, partly, at least, owing to an awakened moral sentiment on the subject. Ship-building is gone. The hat and the shoe manufacture, which struggled up of themselves, alone seem to have had sufficient vitality to survive competition.

Chase thinks hats were manufactured to a considerable extent one hundred years ago. He believes that Jonathan Webster may have made hats as early as 1747. The Appletons, for several generations, carried on the business at the corner of Main Street and Mechanics' Court.

One Ladd had a shop a long time before 1800, next south of the City Hall. Nathan Webster, who learned the trade of his brother, Jonathan, who had learned it of Stephen Webster, carried on the business on quite a respectable scale, in 1815, at the southeast corner of Moore and Water. At first, it is true, he only had two apprentices, but afterwards he employed six to eight, with more than twenty journeymen and twenty girls. In 1835 Nathan Webster went into partnership with his brother David, who had also manufactured since 1818.

Isaac How, brother of David How, was the first hat manufacturer in the West Parish, near the foot of Scotland Hill. His sons, Phineas and Isaac, carried on the business quite largely for many years. Phineas had a hat factory at the outlet of Creek Pond. Isaac How, Jr., about 1835, made forty to fifty dozen per day.

In 1830 31 Mirick wrote that hats were manufactured to the amount of one hundred thousand dollars annually. Isaac How's son-in-law, John Ayer, learned the trade and carried on business for himself, near Greenleaf's Corner. His son-in-law, Jonathan Crowell, succeeded him in business finally at Ayer's village, to which John Ayer had removed. Crowell continued the business for more than forty years, till he died in 1860. He was then manufacturing, under the style of Jonathan Crowell & Co., about eight hundred dozen hats a month, worth about six dollars and a half per dozen, and employing about fifty persons.

In 1860 there were several firms carrying on the manufacture at Ayer's village. Isaac How and others in the West Parish formerly made wool hats, which they carried for sale to Boston, Salem and other places, on horseback or in boxes slung below the axles of a pair of wheels with shafts attached. Ladd, Appleton and Marsh, in the main village, made hats of the fur of the beaver, and ordinary hats of the raccoon and muskrat. The best fur hats would cost about seven dollars. A man bought one when he got married and expected it to last him the remainder of his life. Then there were cotton-plush hats with pasteboard bodies, and "napped" hats. Finally the Hows and Mitchells moved into the village of Haverhill, where Greenough, Cook & Co. had begun manufacturing about 1830. Others followed and gradually the business died out at Ayer's village and in the West Parish. The Haverhill Hat Company and William B. Thom & Co. have carried on the business on a large scale for a long time. The business is very active in town at present.

The last vessels built in the town were by John C. Tilton, in his yard on River Street, above the railroad bridge. The keels were laid in 1874, and the vessels launched in 1875. They were the "Lucy Jane" and "Eliza Ann."

Chase says the first shoemaker in town was Andrew Greeley; but he mentions no fact to sustain the assertion, which he must base upon tradition, though he does not even say that. Other writers have had a good deal to say, by way of joke and otherwise, because the town would not admit William Thompson and Peter Patie to settle and become freemen. Of course the fact of their being shoemakers was not the cause of their exclusion, but the fear that they would become paupers. They had no property, and were thought to be "tramp" shoemakers. It is possible the fathers did not see the necessity of encouraging shoemakers so directly as blacksmiths or millwrights. The latter were obliged to have a plant. The shoemakers could "whip the stump," viz., go around from farm-house to farm-house, with their kit, and stop long enough to make up the boys' shoes for a year to come. They were rovers like John Keezar, coming home from a cobbling sojourn in Amesbury, at dawn on that mild Sunday morning when the French and Indians swooped down.

The farmer, too, in the beginning, made his own shoes or certainly mended them. He kept his own little bits of leather and was a jack at all trades. A few years ago a very rich farmer died at a great age in another town of the State, who had never worn shoes not of his own making; he bore a well-known colonial name and had always lived after the ways of his fathers. Gradually the tramping cobblers settled down and had shops and kept a little leather, "living like other folks." Then the traders and all the people carried on business by barter. The traders took calf-skins and others; what so easy as to sell these to the shoemaker, taking pay in shoes? and when he made a quantity he would take his pay "out of the shop;" it was an enlargement of trade. In this way, Moses Gale came to advertise in August, 1795, that he had "several thousand" fresh and dry hides which he would exchange for shoes, giving credit for the hides till the shoes could be made. The shop-keeper could sell a few from his own place of business, and send a few to Salem and Boston; but how to find a channel to ship off more? Moses and James Atwood kept a store and took in shoes. During the War of 1812 they sent a wagon-load of shoes to Philadelphia and found it paid very well. Chase says Mr. Atwood afterwards removed to Philadelphia and started the first wholesale shoe house there. Later, others followed and made money, and others went to other cities and did the like. Some have it that David How made the first foreign venture. If there was anything left in him of the unlicensed sutler of 1776, it would not take him long to discover that there was money in it.

Aroet M. Hatch was in the shoe business here in 1812. He had married a sister of Paul Spofford, of Georgetown. The two went up to Salem, New Hampshire, and began to make shoes. After a year, or about 1817, they came back to Haverhill, and manufactured as Hatch & Spofford, in the Bannister Block.

The town got into ladies' foot-wear trade early. In 1814, Chase & Cogswell sold "ladies' black morocco

shoes, with heels; ladies' colored morocco shoes, with heels; and ladies' colored and black sandals, with heels." Amos Chase sold roan ties in 1810, made by himself.

Phineas Webster is considered to have been about the first to manufacture shoes by the wholesale and do nothing else. This was not far from 1815. At first he exchanged his shoes with Danvers tanners and curriers for morocco and leather. They packed them in boxes, barrels, tea-chests, hogsheads, and shipped them on the little coasting vessels to Philadelphia and Baltimore, where they were exchanged for produce. Arrived there, where the people soon learned the kind of goods brought, the skipper would hoist up a barrel of shoes and dicker them off. If he were a "dreffful smart Yankee," he soon, doubtless, discovered some local trader whom he made his agent. Distribution was the great problem.

Samuel Chase began to manufacture here about 1815; Warner Whittier, at least as early as 1818, manufactured extensively and was followed in the business by his son, the present Warner R. Whittier.

Thomas Tileston, the printer, as we have said, went to New York as early as 1818, where, in connection with Paul Spofford, he started a commission business, and received consignments of Haverhill-made boots and shoes. It put them in the way of fortune and was of great value to the Haverhill makers. Thirty years after, Spofford & Tileston sent out into the West young men whom they had educated in business and who made fortunes in their turn by selling Haverhill shoes, and engaging themselves as pioneers of manufacturing in that then new region.

In 1817 it is said there were probably two hundred shoemakers in town. Daniel Hobson, in 1828, made "Hobson's pumps."

In March, 1832, there were twenty-eight shoe manufacturers in the town, of whom at least sixteen kept "English and West India goods." There was profit on those, if not on the shoes—probably on both.

Jesse Harding was the first morocco dresser in the town.

Mirick says that in 1830 a few houses manufactured over one million dollars. He adds that the combs manufactured in 1831 would exceed thirty thousand dollars, and employed about one hundred persons.

Leather gloves had been made quite extensively a few years before, and about thirty had been employed in making plated ware for saddles. The first "turned" shoes were made by a Philadelphia "tramping jour.," who worked long enough in Charlestown for James Gardner, of Bradford, to give other people facilities of finding out the art, which made a great sensation in the trade.

Rufus Slocomb began to run a two-horse "baggage waggon" in 1818, between Haverhill and Boston, to carry freight. One of the writers says that the tythingmen, stopping him for driving on the Sabbath (and there was indeed a great crusade on that subject at this time and many county meetings), asked him what his name was. "My name," said Rufus, "is Slowcomb and fast-go," and with that, whipping up his horses, he was out of sight in a moment. He did not use horses altogether, however. One day in the spring of 1836 he had full loads out of town for forty-one horses and eight oxen. In that year he made one hundred and fourteen trips, carrying 26,955 cases shoes.

In March, 1837, there were forty-two shoe manufacturers and fourteen tanners and leather dealers. But the financial panic of that year was a disastrous blow to the shoe interest, from which it did not recover till the discovery of gold in California.

In 1857, there were more than ninety shoe manufactories, eighty-two of which were located in the central village. Besides, there were eighteen innersole and stiffening manufactories. In 1859 the number of manufactories in the village was ninety. In 1860, the assessors returned ninety-eight shoe factories, and two boot and shoe; of these, nine were at Ayer's village.

Not counting those carried in passenger trains, the books of the Boston and Maine show that in 1860 it carried 67,856 cases by freight train; 93,856 cases was the estimate for the total shipment of that year, the value of which was estimated at $3,754,240. In 1875 there were not far from 150,000 cases. The arrest of trade and collapse of Southern credit, at the beginning of the war, prostrated many old manufacturers.

The only general strike ever occurring here was in 1860, of about six hundred operators, but it did not continue long.

The first steam mill was built by David P. Harmon and Sewell E. Jewett, located near the line of the Boston and Maine Railroad.

After enterprising young men began to go West as jobbers of shoes, they speedily demanded to have their shoes sent to them in better shape—that is, sorted and sized—and that was a change in the mode of distribution which the Haverhill manufacturers had to learn and did learn.

As early as 1843, they made a speciality of slippers, mostly heelless and made by hand; also, of pumps, very popular in the South. In 1855 fancy-colored shoes were in demand. From 1858 on, Haverhill has annually made millions of pairs of fancy heeled slippers, low-cut shoes and ladies' boots.

"Previous to 1857 the uppers were stitched by hand—mostly by the wives and daughters of the country shoemakers—and at their homes. But in that year the Singer sewing-machine was introduced into Haverhill. The first cost four hundred dollars and was used in the shop of Moses How."

In 1859 came the Blake sewing-machine, improved by McKay. "At last, ten machines were pronounced good and sent out. Nine of these were moderately

successful, and of these nine, Mr. Moses How, of Haverhill, had one, the first brought to this place."

Long before the introduction of machinery, Haverhill was known almost exclusively by its light goods, women's shoes, and men's and women's slippers.

January, 1887, there were one hundred and seventy shoe manufacturing houses in Haverhill.

Haverhill is one of the eleven cities in the United States producing to the value of $3,000,000 and upwards of boots and shoes.

Connected with the various departments of the shoe industry in this town in 1887, there were—shoe contractors, 11; shoe crimping, 1; findings and supplies, 5; manufacturers, 166; shoe nail and tack makers, 2; shoe pattern makers, 6; shoe stitchers, 38; shoe stock (prepared), 2; shoe tool manufacturers, 3; slipper and shoe trimmings, 6; soles, tops and stiffenings, 42; paper box manufacturers, 4; cut sole leather, 4; heel contractors, 27; heel manufacturers, 36; leather board, 2; leather dealers, 12; leather remnants, 2; machine button-hole makers, 6; machines (boots and shoes), 14; blocking edges, 1.

"In the shoe factory," observes Colonel Carroll D. Wright, in his report on the factory system of the United States, "is to be seen the perfect adaptation of the manufacture of goods, by perfect, harmonious processes."

One or two things seem to be admitted about the shoe business of Haverhill "in the trade"—first, that in the classes of goods she chooses to produce and put upon the market, she is unsurpassed for taste and finish; second, that in Washington and adjoining streets she has the finest shoe quarter and factories to be found in the country.

The shipment of shoes from the city for 1882 was 158,442 cases; 1883, 194,874; 1884, 194,761; 1885, 226,358; 1886, 232,217; 1887, 228,269. Falling off for 1887, 3946 cases; but, owing to the manner of packing, it is more seeming than real.

When, April 19, 1861, the Hale Guards, Company G, Captain C. P. Messer, were hastily summoned to go to the front, as they had already pledged themselves to do, they were escorted to the common and to the station by the surviving members of the old Haverhill Light Infantry. Company G was in the first battle of Bull Run, where one Haverhill man, Hiram S. Collins, was killed; James A. Shaw was wounded, and taken prisoner at the same time.

May 2d, a meeting was called at Music Hall, to make provision for the families of volunteers. A resolution offered by Hon. Alfred Kittredge, proposing to raise ten thousand dollars for the families of volunteers, was passed, and Alfred Kittredge, J. B. Swett, Levi Taylor and seven others, were appointed a committee to provide for them. Other appropriate resolutions were adopted.

April 22, 1861, the ladies organized a Relief Society in the chapel of the North Congregational Church. May 3d it adopted articles of association, and took the name of the "Soldiers' Relief Society of Haverhill and Bradford." In this work the ladies of the parishes and Ayer's village joined with hearty goodwill. Mrs. E. P. Hill held the position of president until the last year of the war, when Mrs. Daniel Harriman became her successor.

The first work of the society was, to supply clothing and comforts to the families of the volunteers. First, were the Hale Guards, Captain C. P. Messer; next, Company D, Captain A. J. How; Company F., captain Luther Day; Company E, Captain McNamara. They supplied Captain Day's company with a full uniform, and two other companies with an undress uniform.

After Antietam, succor was extended to Company G, Captain Gibson; also to Companies "F" and "G" of the Fiftieth. Captains Samuel W. Duncan and Geo. W. Edwards; to Captain E. F. Tompkins' company, of the Seventeenth, and Captain Boynton's, of the Sixtieth. Contributions were made to the "Sanitary Commission;" the New England Rooms, New York; the Cooper Shop Hospital, Philadelphia; the Massachusetts Soldiers' Relief Society, at Washington.

In 1862 bounties were voted.

Early in July, 1862, intelligence was received of the death of Major Henry Jackson How, before Richmond. The town adopted resolutions, and requested his battle sword to be placed near the speaker's stand, and inscribed the "Battle Sword of Henry Jackson How, who fell in front of Richmond while defending the Constitution and Flag of his country." Major How fell at the battle of Glendale, before Richmond, June 30, 1862. "Major How," wrote General Schouler, "served in the Twenty-second Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers, and was one of the bravest and most promising of our young officers. He graduated at Harvard College, and was killed at Glendale, before Richmond, June 30, 1862, nobly facing the foe."

The subject of a Soldiers' Monument was early agitated. James H. Carleton, J. V. Smiley, E. T Ingalls, O. H. Roberts, J. P. Gilmore, Alfred Kittredge and E. P. Hill, were members of the committee upon the subject. On the place of location, James H. Duncan, William Taggart and Caleb Hersey were the committee. In March, 1868, a plan was reported, to cost $6000 for monument and $1000 for inclosing the same, which was accepted, and James H. Carleton, J. V. Smiley, C. P. Messer, Henry T. Fitts, J. K. Jenness and D. Smith Kimball were constituted the building committee. A contract was made with Charles H. Weeks, of Haverhill, as sculptor and architect.

One hundred and eighty-six names are upon the monument, with room for fifty more. The monument was dedicated July 5, 1869, the address being delivered by Hon. George B. Loring, of Salem.

The number of men raised by Haverhill was about 1300, giving a surplus of eighty-five in excess of all claims. Seventy-three were commissioned officers

embracing six field officers, five of whom were credited to its quota and one to Boston, as follows: General William F. Bartlett, noticed elsewhere. The other five were, Colonel Wm. B. Greene, of the First Heavy Artillery; Colonel Jones Frankle, of the Second Massachusetts Heavy Artillery (this officer was captain in First Heavy Artillery Regiment, major in the Seventeenth Regiment, and came out of the war brigadier-general of volunteers by brevet); Colonel Charles P. Messer, of the Fiftieth Regiment; Major Luther Day, of the Seventeenth Regiment; Major Andrew Jackson How, of the Nineteenth Regiment (who fell before Richmond); Lieutenant-Colonel Henry Splaine, of the Seventeenth Regiment.

The town raised and expended to carry on the war, exclusive of State aid, $118,135.49.

The total amount raised and paid out for State aid, refunded by the Commonwealth, was $114,542.24.

May 15, 1869, the town accepted the city charter, by a vote of 671 yeas to 141 nays. September 1, 1869, the town accepted an act of the Legislature to unite Bradford with Haverhill in a city by a vote of 212 yeas to 67 nays. But Bradford voted no.

Monday, January 3, 1870, Warner R. Whittier, the first mayor-elect, took the oath of office, administered by Alfred Kittredge, justice of the peace.

David B. Jenney was unanimously elected city clerk, and has been unanimously re-elected at every successive election since that time.

Mayor Whittier was re-elected in 1871, and his successors have been: Levi Taylor, in 1872, who was re-elected but resigned; J. V. Smiley, in 1873 and 1874; Alpheus Currier, in 1875; Joseph K. Jenness, in 1876 and 1877; Nathan S. Kimball, in 1878 and 1879; Charles Shapleigh, in 1880 and 1881; Moses How, in 1882 and 1883; Calvin H. Weeks, in 1884; Joseph H. Sheldon, in 1885; Calvin H. Weeks, in 1886; Joseph H. Sheldon, in 1887; and George H. Carleton, in 1888.

January 22, 1743, the house of Dr. H. Brown, at Holt's Rocks, was burned, and his daughter, twenty-three years old and a son of Dr. Currier, perished.

Sunday, April 16, 1775, an alarming fire swept away all the west side of Main Street, from the present Court Street to White's corner on Merrimac Street. Seventeen buildings were burned, embracing a brick tavern owned by John White, stores of Deacon Joseph Dodge and James Duncan, and a distillery. October, 1827, the house and barn of Daniel Appleton and the barn of Hon. James H. Duncan, on Main, not far from Court Street, were destroyed by fire.

On the morning of January 1, 1847, the meeting-house of the First Parish was entirely destroyed.

Sunday morning, November 16, 1873, a fire broke out in Washburn Block, near Washington Square, extending to the brick shoe manufactories on Washington Street. By the energy of the Fire Department and with prompt aid from Lawrence it was at last subdued. Thirty-five business firms were burned out, and the loss was estimated at $150,000. Two men—Mr. Amos Heath, of Bradford, and Mr. Amos George, of Haverhill—lost their lives in trying to save their property. This was the most important fire in the annals of Haverhill, until February 17, 1882, when, just before midnight, a fire broke out in a wooden block on the north side of Washington Street. Valuable aid was received from Newburyport and Lawrence and the fire was at last stayed, but not until it had destroyed property estimated at more than $1,080,000. Joseph St. Germain, a fireman, was killed by a falling chimney. Another person, named Whittier, was seriously injured and long disabled, but ultimately recovered. Apprehensions were expressed by a few that this very serious disaster had so crippled the town that it would have great difficulty in recovering from the shock. This, however, was not the prevailing expression, which was one of courage and even buoyancy. Business soon became active again, and the object of the sufferers was to resume operations in the old localities as soon as possible. This was largely accomplished before the first anniversary of the fire, and in a most satisfactory manner. Beautiful and substantial buildings had been erected in place of those destroyed, and the anniversary of the outbreak was celebrated by a spirited banquet at the Eagle House. Through the exhibition of pluck and energy made by the sufferers, they won the sympathy of the entire business community of the country. The fire, distressing as it seemed, is generally admitted to have been a blessing in disguise. July 4, 1876, the National Centennial Anniversary was observed with considerable display and much enthusiasm. In the afternoon a very appropriate and valuable oration was delivered by Dr. John Crowell before the city government and the public generally, at the City Hall.

The limits assigned to this sketch have already been over-passed. It is as well, perhaps, that space does not allow recapitulation of recent events, which are apt to seem disproportionately large, till the lapse of time has thrown them into proper perspective. Yet the writer regrets very much not to be able to use material placed at his disposal with friendly courtesy. He trusts not to seem indifferent to politeness, especially of those who furnished valuable information about the Masonic, Odd Fellows and other charitable and friendly organizations; as Major How Post 47, G. A. R. One word may be pardoned in reference to the work which has been done in the past towards elucidating the history of Haverhill.

In 1816, Leverett Saltonstall, born in Haverhill, and much attached to the place of his nativity, wrote an excellent sketch, which was published in the proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society. It is not otherwise accessible to the public. It was limited in scope, but made an excellent beginning.

In March, 1830, John G. Whittier, then conducting the *Essex Gazette*, and a young man of twenty-

three, issued proposals to publish a history of Haverhill, in one volume of two hundred pages, duodecimo; price, eighty-seven and one-half cents a copy. He undoubtedly found that the sacrifice of time and of money involved in the scheme would be too great, and so abandoned the project. He, however, with characteristic kindness, placed the material which he had collected at the disposal of B. L. Mirick, a young man employed in the store of Mr. John Dow, as clerk, who, in June, 1831, issued a prospectus for a history of the town. It appeared in March, 1832, at the price of one dollar; although it bears the marks of haste, it is in the main a spirited narrative and very creditable to the compiler. The style is sometimes too florid. Chase's book (1861), notwithstanding some inaccuracies, is a valuable one. He was out of health, and would doubtless have corrected certain errors himself, had he lived. His book will always be an indispensable basis for work in the same direction. But town histories require infinite patience about detail, and perennial revising. Although seeming to himself to have exercised reasonable caution, the writer of this sketch, is perfectly aware that he may have committed egregious blunders, for which he asks pardon in advance. E. P. Hill, a few years since, wrote valuable sketches of this and neighboring towns.

The two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the settlement of Haverhill will soon be here, (1890). Perhaps some self-sacrificing person will mark the auspicious occasion by a careful and complete history.

The following is substantially a copy of the soldiers' record of the town of Haverhill, kept by the town clerks, in accordance with law; corrected by comparison with the military records and other sources:

Complete record of the name of all the soldiers and officers in the military service, and of all the seamen and officers in the naval service of the United States, from Haverhill, during the Rebellion, begun in 1861, together with authentic facts relating to the military or naval career of each soldier, seaman and officer—made out, with additions from time to time, in conformity with the statutes of the Commonwealth, approved March 7, 1863, and April 29, 1863.

VOLUME 1.

"This record comprises volumes as follows:

It is commenced by the undersigned (city or town) clerk, in the month of December, 1863—appointed clerk March, 1844, ceased March 7, 1864.

A. B. JAQUES.

COPIES OF TWO ACTS.

An act to preserve a record of our soldiers and officers, approved March 7, 1863.

An act in addition to (as above), approved April 29, 1863.

First corps enlisted for three months was Company D, Fifth Regiment, enlisted April 16, 1861; mustered May 1, 1861; Carlos P. Messer, captain.

LIST OF THREE MONTHS' MEN.

Messer, Carlos P., capt., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Dean, George J., 1st lieut., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Smith, Daniel F., 2d lieut., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Palmer, Charles H. P., 3d lieut., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Salter, Thomas T., 4th lieut., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Thompson, John J., 1st sergt., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Edwards, George W., 2d sergt., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Palmer, James M., 3d sergt., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Mills, John F., 4th sergt., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Salter, Wm., 1st corp., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Wallace, George W., 2d corp., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861; slightly wounded at the battle of Bull Run; seized and upheld the flag with a shout when color-bearer fell dead.

Hoyt, Van Buren, 3d corp., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861; Q.-M. Dept. May 20 to July 3, 1861.

Haynes, Daniel J., 4th corp., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Sawyer, Leonard, Jr., musc., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Wight, Orlando S., musc. and priv., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Privates.

Beckford, Eben B., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Bowen, Charles, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Bromley, Lyman P., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Bromley, Orrin B., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Burnham, Charles, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; Q.-M. Dept June 1 to July 3, 1861; must. out July 31, 1861.

Caswell, Joseph A., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Coles, Thomas J., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Collins, Hiram S., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; killed at Bull Run July 21, 1861.

Collius, Enos, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Colby, John, Jr., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; disch. June 2, 1861, disability.

Cook, Wm. P., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; disch. June 2, 1861, disability.

Davis, Stephen H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Dawson, Frank, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Dodge, Orrison J., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Edwards, Nathl. M., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Emerson, Edward H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Fogg, George E. F., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must out July 31, 1861.

Foster, George B., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Fowler, Samuel W., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Frost, James, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Gould, Albert H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Gould, Royal D., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Greenleaf, Matthew N., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Gushee, Franklin A., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Hatch, Joshua J., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Hersom, Greenleaf, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Holmes, Varnum E., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. C, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Jackson, Hiram H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Judge, Charles W., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Kief, Thomas, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Kiernan, Frank T., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; disch. June 2, 1861, disability.

Knowles, Charles K., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Livingston, Murray V., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Meserve, Ebenezer, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Mills, Wm. H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Murch, Charles, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Noyes, Abiel S., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Osgood, Joseph H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Parmelee, Henry H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Pecker, John B., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Phillips, Leonard W., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Philbrook, David T., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Ray, Albert F., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Richards, Fitz J., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Shaw, James A., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; wd. and taken pris. at Bull Run; paroled and exchanged May 27, 1862.

Shute, Alonzo M., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Smith, Henry J., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31 1861.

Smith, Nahum F., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Stanley, Harrison, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Steele, Wm. H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Stimpson, John F., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Stowe, Andrew F., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Taylor, Henry, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Tuttle, Hiram O., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Wyman, George P., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Of these, thirty-seven re-enlisted in different organizations.

Adams, John, private, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 11th Regt.

Arnold, S. P., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.

Austin, George O., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; must. out corp. Jan. 8, 1864.

Austin, John, private, enl. Aug. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 11th Regt.

Arnold, Thomas F., private, enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1861.

Armstrong, Wm. J., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1861.

Allen, Elbridge B., private, enl., April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. July 14, 1862.

Ayer, Otis S., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 27, 1861, disability.

Adams, Wm. H. H., private, enl. Aug. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; died Nov. 23, 1862, Philadelphia, Pa.

Allbright, Henry, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; taken pris. at Ball's Bluff; disch. Feb. 3, 1863.

Abbott, James H., private, enl. Sept. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. sergt. Oct. 5, 1864.

Appleton, Samuel R., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 17, 1864.

Adams, John Q., mus., enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. April 22, 1864, disability.

Ayer, Edmund B., sergt., enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Feb. 6, 1865, disability.

Adams, Stephen C., sergt., enl. Aug. 3, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862; died at Spring Hospital, Md., Sept. 26, 1862.

Allen, James M., sergt., enl. Sept. 19, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Co. Unattached H. A.; must. out at exp. of term.

Austin, Elmer M., enl. March 17, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. I, 59th Regt.; missing in action at Shady Grove, Va., June 3, 1864.

Austin, John Gage, enl. Feb. 24, 1864, 3 yrs., 16th Batt.; must. out June 27, 1865.

Abbott, Wm. W. enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Atwood, Bradley, private, enl. Aug. 20, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Aldrich, Ambrose D., private, enl. Aug. 26, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Abbott, Parker P., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Aldrich, John W., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Anderson, Alfred W., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must out Aug. 24, 1863.

Anderson, Frank, private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Burnham, Wingate, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., 1st H. A.; must. out July 8, 1864; re-enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Barry, Joseph, private, enl. June 11, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 9th Regt.; wd. July 1, 1862; disch. Sept. 1, 1863.

Bedell, Joseph W., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; no record after enlistment.

Boynton, Isaac A., mus., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. Aug. 14, 1862; re-enl. Aug. 18, 1862; private for 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Bickum, Charles H., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt. (after Co. E, 1st H. A.); disch. Nov. 6, 1863; re-enl. Nov. 6, 1863, Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.

Brown, Wm., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. I, 1st H. A.); must. out Dec. 6, 1863; re-enl. as corp. Co. I, 1st H. A. Dec. 7, 1863; died of wds. April 29, 1865, at Washington, D. C.

Blackburn, John, private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. —, 12th Regt.; must. out July 8, 1864.

Brown, James S., private, enl. July 5, 1861, Co. I, 14th Regt. (after Co. L, 1st H. A.); must. out Dec. 6, 1863; re-enl. corp. 1st H. A. Dec. 7, 1863; must. out June 14, 1865.

Beardsley, John F., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. K, 1st H. A.); pro. to corp.; 2d sergt. Co. K, 1st H. A. July 5, 1861; 2d lieut. June 10, 1862; 1st lieut. Aug. 8, 1863; capt. June 23, 1864; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.

Byron, Wm., private, enl. Feb. 20, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. L, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. March 31, 1863, disability.

Byron, Treffron, private, enl. Feb. 20, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. L, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out Feb. 22, 1864; re-enl. private, Co. L, 1st H. Art. Feb. 23, 1864; died of wds. May 30, 1864.

Burnham, Charles, private, enl. March 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); re-enl. private, Co. M, 1st H. A. March 21, 1864.

Boardman, Elbridge, private, enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.

Barteaux, David W., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; died Dec. 26, 1862.

Badger, Stephen L., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Bailey, Charles P., private, enl. March 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out March 1, 1865, as com. sergt. 1st H. A.

Brown, George A., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out as corp. Aug. 3, 1864.

Bradley, Enoch M., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Burke, Thomas, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Dec. 12, 1863; re enl. private, Co. F, 17th Inf. Dec. 13, 1863.

Brickett, Addison, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. A, 17th Regt.; disch. June 30, 1865.

Butters, Jonas S., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Dec. 16, 1863, disability.

Blunt, Charles H., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Nov. 24, 1862, disability.

Boyle, Thomas C., enl. Jan. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt.; disch. April 10, 1865, in Co. D.

Boharman, Wm., private, enl. April 30, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 17th Regt.; pro. to corp; disch. June 10, 1862, disability.

Brown, John H., Jr., enl. Jan. 30, 1862, 3 yrs., 19th Regt.; died March 1, 1865, at New York.

Butters, Charles (2d), muc., enl. Sept. 17, 1861, 3 yrs., 19th Regt.; disch. Aug. 7, 1862, by order of war dept.

Balch, George W., private, enl. Dec. 31, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; disch. Feb. 20, 1863, disability.

Benson, Joseph, sergt., enl. Aug. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; disch. Feb. 3, 1863, disability.

Brown, Francis J., enl. Sept. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 22d Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. Feb. 15, 1864.

Brosnahan, Patrick, enl. Dec. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.

Burns, Wm., private, enl. Nov. 27, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; disch. Jan. 1, 1863; re-enl. Co. K, 6th Regt. V. R. C. June 16, 1864; disch. Nov. 18, 1865.

Barry, Patrick, private, enl. Nov. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; died May 3, 1863, at Baton Rouge, La.

Barrett, Farnham, private, enl. Oct. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 30th Regt.; trans. to Co. F, same Regt. Feb. 25, 1862; died Nov. 11, 1862, at New Orleans.

Boyle, Thomas, private, enl. Oct. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 30th Regt.

Balentine, Elijah, private. enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; trans. to 4th Cav.; re-enl. private, April 16, 1864, Co. L, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Brown, Edward Q., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; disch. Oct. 15, 1862, disability.

Bailey, Orrin A., enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.; must. out Sept. 24, 1864.

Blanchard, Truman C. enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.; re-enl. April 16, 1864, Co. L, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Bond, James S., private, enl. Nov. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 32d Regt.; disch. May 29, 1863, disability.

Blake, Hubbard, private, enl. July 29, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. F, 1st H. A.); disch. Dec. 31, 1863, to re-enl.; re-enl. Dec. 31, 1863, Co. F, 1st H. A.; disch. Aug. 26, 1865; exp. of service; Co. M.

Burkett, Ambrose, private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. I, 1st H. A.); must. out of service July 8, 1864, Co. I, 1st H. A., as absent wd.

Brickett, George W., private, must. in Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. B, 1st H. A.); killed at Spottsylvania May 19, 1864.

Ball, George W., private, enl. July 30, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. March 3, 1863, disability.

Bemis, John M., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Jan. 23, 1863, disability.

Brickett, James T., private, enl. July 24, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Blake, John P., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Bromley, Lyman P., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 17th Regt.; disch. Feb. 27, 1863, disability; re-enl. 1st sergt. Co. G, 4th Cav. Jan. 27, 1864; died March 14, 1864, at Haverhill.

Burpee, Nathaniel B., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out of service Aug. 3, 1864; exp. of service.

Bailey, Luther S., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; must. out as sergt. June 9, 1865.

Barrows, Theodore P., private, must. in Aug. 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; died Oct. 31, 1862, near Antietam, of fever.

Batchelder, Wm. S., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Feb. 14, 1863, disability.

Bennett, George, private, enl. July 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.

Bly, Ezra, private, enl. Aug. 8, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 28, 1862, disability; re-enl. Sept. 10, 1864, V. R. C.; must. out Nov. 30, 1865; order of war dept.

Burbank, David, private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 40th Regt.; disch. Jan. 20, 1863, disability.

Burbank, Percival E., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 11, 1863, disability.

Burr, Henry O., corp., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam June, 1863, in hosp. at York, Pa.; trans. to V. R. C. Feb. 14, 1864; disch. July 27, 1865, surg. certif., disability.

Brooks, Frederick D., 2d lieut., enl. July, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; pro. 1st lieut. Aug. 16, 1862; wd. at Antietam; res. Jan. 22, 1863.

Bond, Charles E., private, enl. May 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 32d Regt.; died of fever at Mill Creek Hospital Sept. 15, 1862.

Boles, Miles, 3 yrs.

Burnham, Charles A. (residence at Haverhill), 3 yrs., 2d N. C. Regt.

Brown, John, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.

Burns, Patrick, 3 yrs., Co. K, 40th N. Y. Regt.

Bean, Edward, 3 yrs., Co. C, 2d N. H. Regt.

Bassett, Albert S., 3 yrs., 1st Vt. Cav.

Brooks, Charles A., 3 yrs., Co. K, 9th Maine Regt.

Blaisdell, Isaac C., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Oct. 17, 1861, disability.

Bond, James, private, enl. Dec. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 16th Regt.; killed in action at Gettysburg, Pa., July 3, 1863.

Brown, Charles S., enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Bowles, Charles G., private, enl. Feb. 13, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt.; disch. March 16, 1863, disability.

Bickum, J. W., private, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Barron, John, enl. Oct. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; died July 23, 1864, in prison, Andersonville, Ga.

Boardman, Albert, must. in July 4, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. Oct. 26, 1864, to Co. M, 32d Inf.; must. out June 29, 1865; exp. of term.

Bartlett, Jeremiah, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out to re-enlist and re-enl. Nov. 25, 1863; died May 7, 1865, Jacksonville, Fla.

Bowley, Oliver S., enl. July 25, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out to re-enlist, and re-enlisted Dec. 29, 1863, quota H in Co. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.

Bond, George W., enl. Nov. 7, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. M, 1st H. A.; disch. March 2, 1864.

Bailey, Ryland F., enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt. must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Boynton, David, 2d lieut., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; pro. 1st sergt. Nov. 29, 1862; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. July 23, 1864, capt. 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864

Burnham, Walter J., enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Berry, Joseph, private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.

Bucklin, John C., private, enl. Oct. 4, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Benson, Samuel B., corp., enl. Aug. 13, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Burleigh, Mosca C., private, enl. Sept. 11, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Barlow, Noah O., private, enl. Sept. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Bailey, Stephen W., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1862; 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Buckley, Francis, enl. Sept. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 2d H. A.; trans., to 17th Regt. Jan. 9, 1865; disch. from Co. A June 30, 1865; order of War Dept.

Butters, Silas, private, enl. Oct. 15, 1862, 9 months Co. H. 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Burnham, Wyman P., enl. May 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 1st Regt.; disch., disability, Oct. 2, 1862.

Bartlett, Edward B., enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; must out June 6, 1865.

Buck, Alvah W., enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 1st H. A.; must. out Juoe 17, 1865.

Bragdon, Luther, enl. Aug 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; disch. July 16, 1865.

Batchelder, Arthur N., enl. Aug. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Booth, John E., private, enl. Dec. 8, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav; disch. Oct. 9, 1864, disability.

Beals, Jas. H., private, enl. Dec. 30, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. F, 1st Cav.; must. out June 26, 1865.

Buckley, Florence, private, enl. Nov. 1, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; must. out June 29, 1865.

Bell, John W., private, enl. Jan. 5, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 4th Cav.; disch. July 28, 1865.

Barry, Wm., private, enl. Sept. 22, 1864, 1 yr., 7th Batt.; died at Mobile, April 20, 1865.

Bodwell, John W., private, enl. Sept. 22, 1864, 3 yrs., 7th Batt.; disch. July 15, 1865, G. O.

Brady, Thomas, private, enl, Dec. 19, 1862, 3 yrs., 12th Batt.

Beals, Henry J., private, enl. March 17, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. I, 59th Regt.

Brickett, Addison, enl. Sept. 29, 1864, 1 yr., Co. A, 17th Regt.

Beals, Wm. T., must. in April 2, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. I, 59th Regt.; trans. Jan. 15, 1865, to V. R. C.

Bickum, Benj. F., must. in March 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out and re-en. March 24, 1864; hosp. steward Aug. 1, 1864; must. out July 31, 1865.

Bean, John F., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Bradley, Alphonzo H., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864; re-en. Jan. 2, 1865, Co. C, 1st Batt. Frontier Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Bradley, Francis S., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864; re-en. Jan. 2, 1865, Co. C, 1st Batt. Frontier Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Berry, Patrick, must. in March 3, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 19th Regt.; must. out Dec. 21, 1863, to re-enl.

Brown, Ahlen, must. in Feb. 25, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. G, 19th Regt.; must. out Feb. 27, 1864; reg't recruit.

Barry, Martin, must. in March 3, 1862, 3 yrs., 19th Unassigned recruit; no further record.

Bly, Ezra J., enl. Sept. 12, 1864, 1 yr. 29th Unattached H. A.; must. out June 16, 1865.

Burnell, James B., enl. Dec. 26, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; died May 14, 1865.

Burnham, Moses E., corporal, enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr, Co. B, 1st Batt'n, Frontier Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Boucher, Michael, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 11th Regt.; pro. sergt.-maj. March 4, 1863; must. out to re-enl. Jan. 4, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 5; sergt.-maj., 1st lieut. July 23, 1864; capt. April 12, 1865; must. out July 14, 1865, as 1st lieut.

Babbridge, Wm., enl. Nov. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Balch, Chas. T., enl. Nov. 13, 1864, 1 yr. 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Barnard, Wm. H., must. in Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Bradstreet, Josiah F., must. in Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Barnes, John G., capt., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-en. Nov. 13, 1864; capt. 17th unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Carney, John, private, enl. May 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 2d Regt.; disch. Dec. 23, 1862, disability.

Carmody, Cornelius, private, enl. June 11, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 9th Regt.; wounded July 1, 1862, at Malvern Hill; wounded Dec. 13, 1862, at Fredericksburg; must. out June 23, 1864, exp. of term.

Carleton, Dulman J., private, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt., disch. Dec. 26, 1863, disability.

Crane, Samuel H., private, enl. June 26, 1861; 3 yrs., Co. C, 12th Regt.; disch., disability, Dec. 17, 1861.

Condry, Warren, must. in July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. E, 1st H. Art.), absent, wd., May 19, 1864; must. out July 8, 1864.

Chin, John, enl. July 5, 1861, Co. E, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. E, 1 H. A.,); must. out Nov. 5, 1863, to re-enl.; re-enl. Nov. 5, 1863, Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865, in Co. A.

Cushman, Richard P., 2d lieut., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. F, 1st H. A.); pro. 1st lieut. Jan. 9, 1862; dismissed July 25, 1863.

Cutler, Abalina B., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. H, 1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864.

Collins, Geo. L., private. enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. K, 1st H. A.); must. out Nov. 5, 1863, to re-enl.; re-eo. as corp., quota of Bradford, Nov. 5, 1863, killed in action June 18, 1864, near Petersburg, Va.

Collins, Wm. H., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. K, 1st H. A.); must. out Nov. 6, 1863, to re-en.; re-en. Nov. 6, 1863; died of wounds June 17, 1864, at Washington, D. C.

Cussack, Wm., enl. Sept. 9, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. B, 1st H. A.); must. out Dec. 14, 1863, to re-enl.; re-enl. Dec. 5, 1863, Co. B, 1st H. A.; died Feb. 10, 1865, at Annapolis.

Curier, Jeremiah S. (Jesse), enl. July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out as Jesse, Aug. 3, 1864.

Coffe, John, corporal, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt. must. out as private Aug. 3, 1864.

Campbell, John, private, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Dec. 8, 1863, disability.

Chase, Henry, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out to re-enl. Dec. 5, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 5, 1863, Co. E, 17th Inf.; must. out July 11, 1865.

Connolly, Timothy, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 5, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864, Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865.

Connolly, Henry, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Collins, Wm. H., as wagoner, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 31, 1864.

Colbath, Levi F., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. in Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865, by order of War Dept.

Cuvier, Samuel M., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; died March 22, 1862, at Baltimore, Md.

Crooker, George W., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Chapman, John C., private must. in Sept. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch., disability, Jan. 30, 1863; died Ayer's Hill, July 3, 1863.

Cloutman, Benjamin, corporal, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; died of disease July 26, 1862.

Chase, Geo. H., private, enl. Oct. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed in actioo June 27, Gaines' Mills, Va.

Calder, Geo. F., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. April 26, 1862, disability.

Cayne, John, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, Co. H, 22d Regt., 3 yrs.; died.

Collingill, John, private, enl. Sept. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed before Yorktown, April 6, 1862.

Carr, Almus B., private, enl. Sept. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 27, 1862, disability.

Chesley, Benj. F., 2d lieut., enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; com'd Aug. 21, 1861; resigned Dec. 27, 1861; re-com'd 1st lieut., Co. H, 59th Mass. Regt. March 3, 1864; com'd capt. March 25, 1865; trans. to 57th Mass. Regt.; must. out Aug. 8, 1865.

Chase, Augustus S., private, enl. Jan. 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; wd. at Fredericksburg, Va., Dec. 13, 1862; disch. Feb. 28, 1863, disability.

Carleton, Daniel W., private, must. in Aug. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; disch. Oct. 24, 1862, disability.

Clements, Hazeo, enl. Sept. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Feb. 13, 1863, disability.

Carleton, Everett, private, must. in Aug. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; missing at Antietam; trans. Nov. 6, 1863, to V. R. C.

Collingill, Chas. H. M., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Feb. 22, 1862; re-en. Dec. 15, 1863, 2d H. A., Co. M.; disch. June 26, 1865.

Cowell, Isaac H., private, enl. Oct. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H. 22d Regt.; disch. Jan. 18, 1862. disability.

Chase, Rufus K., private, enl. Oct. 1, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H. 22d Regt.; disch. April 26, 1862, disability.

Chipman, Thomas B., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt., disch. Nov. 11, 1862, disability.

Chipman, Freeman, private, enl. Oct. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; disch. Dec. 6, 1864.

Colby, Francis, private, enl. Nov. 9, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; disch. April 2, 1862; re-en. V. R. C. July 11, 1864.

Carey, Thos., must. in Jan. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 30th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1865.

Casey, Thos., must. in Jan. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 30th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1865, (probably same as above).

Chase, Wm., corporal., enl. Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.; pro. sergt. Jan. 1862, and 2d lieut. May 12, 1862; resigned Feb. 9, 1864.

Colby, Wm., enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, Cav., trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.; must. out April 20, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. April 21, 1864, Co. L, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Christian, Chas. H., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., 4th Regt.; afterwards Co. M, 1st H. A.; must. out July 8, 1864; exp. of term.

Christian, Wm. M., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt.; (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864.

Clark, Leverett C., 3 yrs. 19th Regt.; (no record of him in office of adjutant-general).

Colby, Geo. W., must. in Sept. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 19th Regt.; died of wds. Oct. 5, 1862, Smoketown, Md.

Colby, Eben. private, enl. Aug. 12, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. C, 19th Regt.; must. out to re-enl. Dec. 21, 1863; re-en. Dec. 22, 1863, private Co. C, 19th Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Crafts, Eliphalet P., private (corporal), enl. Aug. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 4, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864, Co. E, 17th Regt.; died in Co. C, in rebel prison, Richmond, Va., March 26, 1864.

Clement, John A., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. July 10, 1864, disability.

Curtain, Thomas W., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 5, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864, Co. A, 17th Regt.; died of disease, June 6, 1864, at Greensboro, N. C.

Colby, Thomas W., private, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Dec. 8, 1863, disability.

Chase, John A., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt.; disch. Nov. 16, 1862, disability; (rejected).

Cogswell, John C., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Chipman, Geo., 3 yrs, 17th Regt. (no record in adjutant-general's office).

Carr, John E., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Dec. 31, 1862, disability.

Cheever, Geo. B., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 8, 1862, disability.

Cochran, Wm. N., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Dec. 22, 1862, disability.

Cogswell, Edward, private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd at Antietam; disch. Jan. 16, 1863, disability.

Cram, Samuel H., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 35th Regt.; disch. Sept. 18, 1863, disability.

Colby, John L., private, enl. Jan. 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; disch. June 9, 1862, disability; (was also in 2d or 7th N. H. Regt.)

Cuvier, Francis, 3 yrs., 33d Regt. (no record in adjutant-general's office).

Carleton, Wm, 3 yrs., Co. K. 10th Maine Regt.

Carleton, Geo. W., must. in Oct. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 22d Regt.

Cadmus, Wm., 3 yrs., Co. C, 6th N. H. Regt.

Collins, Chas. A., 6th U. S. Regulars.

Carr. Chas. E., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt.; (afterward Co. F, 1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864.

Crostoe, Wm., enl. Aug. 28, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt.; (afterward Co. F, 1st H. A.); must. out to re-enl. Nov. 28, 1863; re-enl. Nov. 28, 1863, Co. F, 1st H. A.; must. out July 27, 1865, disability.

Cliee, Thos., sergt., enl. Oct. 9, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.

Colby, Wm. W., must. in July 15, 1863, Co. D, 18th Regt.; killed May 8, 1864, at Laurel Hill, Va.

Chase, Benj. W., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.

Carr, Mark, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Carney, Chas. G., private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Coffin, David R. B., corporal, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Coffin, Cyrus V., wagoner, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Chase, Eustis, private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Colby, John E., private, enl. Aug. 10, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Cayne, John, private, enl. Aug. 30, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Clough, Wm. R., private, enl. Aug. 10, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Carr, Geo. W., private, enl. Sept. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.

Cook, Justin T., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863

Clark, Cyrus H., enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Connelly, Patrick, enl. Nov. 16, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; missing in action since April 20, 1864; died Nov. 6, 1864, at Andersonville, Ga.

Conners, James O., enl. Nov. 30, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. K, 2d H. A.; disch. Sept. 23, 1865.

Croston, Frank, enl. Sept. 5, 1864, 1 yr., Co. I, 2d H. A.; trans. to Co. A, 17th Regt. Jan. 17, 1865; disch. June 30, 1865.

Carleton, Wilton H., enl. Sept. 10, 1864, 1 yr., Co. I, 2d H. A.; trans. to Co. D, 17th Regt., Jan. 17, 1865; must. out June 30, 1865, as Wilton H. in Co. D, order War Dept.

Carr, Moses F., enl. Sept. 19, 1864, 1 yr., Co. H, 2d H. A.; must. out June 26, 1865.

Callahan, Thos., enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C. 2d H. A.; trans. to Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, order of War Dept.

Cook, Geo. M., enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out as sergt. June 17, 1865.

Clifford, Daniel A., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out as corporal June 17, 1865.

Colburn, Josiah H., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Capron, Darius, private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Cassey, John, private, enl. Sept. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Co. Unattached H. A.; must. out June 16, 1865.

Cranshaw, James W., corporal, enl. Feb. 5, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; must. out as corporal June 29, 1865.

Crosby, John F., private, enl. Nov. 5, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; corporal Oct. 1, 1864; wd. and prisoner Oct. 24, 1864; disch. June 19, 1865.

Cogger, Thos. E., private, enl. Nov. 13, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Connor, John, private, enl. Nov. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; pris. Oct. 24, 1864; disch. July 10, 1865.

Chase, Lauren M., private, enl. Nov. 30, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Clough, Wm. H., q.m.-sergt., enl. Jan. 5, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Carleton, Fred. O., private, enl. Dec. 29, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. D, 4th Cav.; vet.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Colby, Enoch W., private, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. K, 32d Regt.; disch. Dec. 21, 1862, disability.

Clarendon, Edward H., private, enl. May 9, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. I, 26th Regt.; died of wds. Oct. 17, 1864, at Winchester, Va.

Coffee, John, private, enl. Sept. 17, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Crocker, Cyrus, B. W., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; disch. June 30, 1865.

Clough, John W., 1 yr., 11th Regt.

Chaquette, Paul, private, enl. Sept. 9, 1864, 1 yr. Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Cahill, Jas., private, enl. March 2, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. G, 59th Regt.; trans. to Co. G, 59th Regt. June 1, 1865; must. out July 30, 1865.

Chase, Geo. S., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Chase, Jos., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; com.-sergt. Aug. 5, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Colby, Stephen W., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Crane, Fredk. A., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Cobb, Geo. H., must. in Oct. 13, 1862, 9 months, Co. H, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Cannody, Michael, must. in Aug. 3, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. D, 28th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Chow, Charles W., must. in Dec. 9, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st H. A.; trans. to V. R. C. Dec. 1, 1864.

Colby, Geo. M., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Cronen, Cornelius, enl. Sept. 20, 1864; V. R. C.; no record of must. out.

Calef, Josiah R., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Call, Thos. S., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Carlton, Jas. W., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Davidson, Willard O., private, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; died at Mt. Pleasant Hospital July 27, 1863.

Davis, A. M., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; disch. for disability as Daniel M., Oct. 20, 1862, (Daniel M. in adjutant-general's report).

Downing, John, private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; must. out July 8, 1864.

Davis, Franklin, private, must. in June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; twice wd., at Antietam; must. out July 8, 1864.

Drew, Arthur L., com. sergt., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., 14th Regt., non-com. staff (afterward 1st H. A.); com. 2d lieut. Feb. 15, 1862; dismissed Nov. 19, 1863.

Demeritt, John W., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt.; (afterward Co. F, 1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864.

Dearborn, Jas. M., Co. K, 14th Regt.; (no record in adjutant-general's office).

Dimnels, Moses P., private, enl. Feb. 24, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterward 1st H. A.); must. out to re-enl. Feb. 24, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 25, 1865, Co. M, 1st H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.

Dimuels, Chas. H., private, enl. Feb. 24, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M 14th Regt. (afterward Co. M, 1st H. A.); disch. Feb. 19, 1863; disability.

Downing, Jas., private, enl. March 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. M, 1st H. A.); must. out Mch. 9, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. March 10, 1864, as sergt., Co. M, 1st H. A.; disch. for pro. in U. S. troops as 2d lieut. Aug. 7, 1865.

Dewhirst, Horsfall, musician, must. in Aug., 1861, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 30, 1862. order of War Dept.; re-enl. Aug. 4, 1863, Co. C, 2d H. A.; died Oct. 31, 1864, Newbern, N. C., in Co. F.

Dwinnels, Philip, private, enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Dwinnel s, Wm., enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Dougherty, George, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 6, 1861, disability.

Downing Daniel, 1 yr., Co. E, 17th Regt. (no record at adjutant-general's office).

Dearborn, John S., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; wd. in North Carolina Dec., 1862 (Foster's Expedition); must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Day, Luther, captain, enl. July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; com. Aug. 21, major Dec. 29, 1863; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Derby, Geo. W., musician, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Oct. 5, 1862, disability.

Dresser, Alonzo, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 11, 1863, disability.

Dearborn, Hazen S., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Doe, Chas. A., enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Davis, Chas. A., enl. Sept. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; wd. in North Carolina, Dec. 1862 (Foster's Expedition).

Davis, Chas. H., enl. Sept. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 11, 1864, Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865.

Dawson, Frank, private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. to 1st U. S. Cav. Oct. 31, 1862, as sergt.

Dwinnels, Daniel, private, enl. Sept. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. July 8, 1862, disability.

Downing, William, private, enl. Sept. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt., died July 2, 1864, at Beverly Ford, Va.

Dickey, Isaac L., private, enl. Feb. 10, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; disch. March 6, 1863, disability.

Davidson, Edward F., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; drwd. near Amboy, N. J., Oct. 10, 1861, in service.

Dempsey, Wm. J., private, must. in Oct. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 22d Regt.

Dodge, William H., private, enl. Nov. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 24th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 2, 1864, Co. D, 24th Inf'; died Oct. 23, 1864, at De Camp Hospital, New York.

Downey, Daniel, enl. Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 28th Regt.; wd. in Wilderness May 5, 1864; must. out as absent Dec. 19, 1864.

Donnelly, John, private, enl. Oct. 26, 1861, 3 yrs, Co. H, 28th Regt.; wd. May 12, 1864, at Spottsylvania; must. out Dec. 19, 1864, exp. of term.

Donnelly, Peter, private, enl. Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; killed at Antietam, Sept. 17, 1862.

Davis, Moses, private, enl. Oct. 12, 1861, 3 yrs, Co. G, 30th Regt; disch. April 2, 1862, disability.

Durant, John, private, enl. Nov. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; disch. Dec. 6, 1864; re-enl. March 31, 1865, in 31st Regt., unassigned; must. out May 6, 1865, by order of War Department.

Donovan, Thos. H., private, enl. Nov. 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; died as corporal July 1, 1865, Florence, S. C.

Darling, Leonard N., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch., disability, in Co. F, July 10, 1863.

Dwinnels, Geo. H., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt.; disch. Oct. 28, 1863, disability.

Daley, Wm., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out. Aug. 3, 1864.

Duyer, Jas. M., private, must. in Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Oct. 27, 1862, disability.

Dyman, Patrick, private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Davis, Daniel G., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt., disch. Feb. 7, 1863, disability.

Dean, James F. G., sergeant, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 7, 1862, disability.

Dresser, Augustus W., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; died; no date.

Dresser, Wm. M., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch., disability.

Dresser, Albert L., private, enl. Aug 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. June 18, 1865, disability.

Drew, Herbert M., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862, shot entirely through both breasts and lungs, dying instantly; body recovered and buried from Town Hall, Haverhill, Sunday, Oct. 12, 1862; Testament in his pocket stained with his blood.

Drew, Daniel F. M., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Oct. 28, 1863, disability.

Drew, Chas. A., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Jan. 24, 1863, disability.

Dunn, Charles M., sergeant, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; trans. to 29th M. V. as sergeant; must. out as sergeant in Co. G, July 29, 1865.

Day, Horace, 3 yrs., Maine Regt.

Dearborn, Geo., 3 yrs., 4th N. H. Regt.

Dresser, Chas. I., 3 yrs., Co. C, 2d N. H. Regt.

Dresser, John, 3 yrs., Co. C, 2d N. H. Regt.

Dodge, John N., 3 yrs., Maine Cav.

Davis, Stephen H., 3 yrs., Maine Regt.

Dodge, Chas. W., 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt. (no record at adjutant-general's office).

Duncan, Samuel W., captain, enl. April 28, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; com'd Aug. 28, 1862; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Davis Chas, A., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.

Davis, Geo. S., private, enl. Sept. 14, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge, La., May 29, 1863.

De Rochment, Daniel P., private, enl. 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out as corporal Aug. 24, 1863.

Davis, Eliphalet, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Davis, John, private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out as corporal Aug. 24, 1863.

Dalcy, Bartlett F., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.

Daley, Alfred H., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must out Aug. 23, 1863.

Davis, George M., enl. Oct. 4, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. Jan. 27, 1864, Co. E, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Davis, Chas. A., must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 30th Regt.; absent since July 13, 1864.

Dias, Robert, must. in March 31, 1865, 3 yrs., 31st Regt., unassigned recruit; must. out May 6, 1865, by order of War Department.

Dias, John, private, enl. Dec. 15, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. M, 2d H. A.; must. out Sept. 3, 1865.

Davis, Richard H., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 2d H. A.; trans. to 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. E, June 30, 1865.

Daley, Daniel, private, enl. Sept. 7, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 2d H. A.; trans. to 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. F, June 30, 1865.

Daley, Bartlett F., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1864, 1 yr., Co. F, 2d H. A.; must. out June 26, 1865.

Damon, Jairus L., private, enl. Dec. 14, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. E, 2d H. A.; disch. June 16, 1865.

Dowe, Frank A., private, enl. Aug. 23, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Doyle, Michael, private, enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. L, 3d Cav.; must. out in Co. K, Sept. 28 1865.

Danforth, Otis, private, enl. Dec. 8, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; disch. July 28, 1864, disability.

Derwin, Thos., private, enl. June 23, 1864, 3 yrs., 4th Cav.; unassigned; disch. July 16, 1864, disability (rejected recruit).

Douglas, Wm., private, enl. July 23, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. D, 15th Regt.; trans. to navy April 23, 1864.

Dolan, Barney, private, must. in Nov. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; must. out to re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 2; wd. Oct. 19, 1862; must. out July 5, 1866, absent.

Dudley, Albert H., must. in July 1, 1865, 3 yrs., Co. F, 1st H. A.; prisoner of war June 22, 1864; must. out July 8, 1864.

Downes, Chas. H., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Dodge, Chas. B., must. in Aug. 9, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 13th Regt.; must. out. Aug. 1, 1864.

Davis, Albert A., must in Jan. 27, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Davis, Alvin A., 1st sergeant, enl. Jan. 27, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Donnelly, Peter, enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Donnelly, Patrick, enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 20, 1865.

Dale, Herbert A., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Dalton, Pierce, enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Darwin, Thos., must. in Jan. 14, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. C, 59th Regt.

Davis, Arthur T., enl, Nov. 11, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Dearborn, Geo. W., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Durgin, James N., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Emerson, Joseph R., corporal, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; disch. Oct. 18, 1863, disability; re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864; trans. to 36th Co., 2d Batt. V. R. C.; disch. Sept. 4, 1865.

Evans, Horace B., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; died of wds. received June 25, 1864 (as sergeant).

Ellsworth, Daniel W., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; must. out July 8, 1864.

Elliot, Samuel H., private, enl. June, 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; must. out Feb. 16, 1863, as absent, sick, since Aug. 30, 1862; re-enl. June 6, 1863, as private Co. D, 1st Batt'n H. A.; must. out Sept. 12, 1865.

Ethier, Joseph, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs,. Co. E, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. E, 1st H. A.); must. out Nov. 25, 1863; re-enl. Nov. 25, 1863, Co. E, 1 H. A.; must. out July 31, 1865.

Emery, Aaron, private, enl. Feb. 24, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. M, 1st H. A.); previously enlisted in Co. G, 30th Regt.; not must.; disch. for disability Nov. 6, 1862.

Elliott, Wm., private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Oct. 21, 1863, disability, as corporal.

Ellis, Thos., private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 5, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864, Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. A, July 17, 1865.

Emerson, Edward, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.

Evans, John W., private, enl. Sept. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Dec. 22, 1862, disability.

England, Charles H., private, enl. Sept. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 17, 1864.

Emerson, Isaiah F., enl. Feb. 18, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. July 18, 1862, disability.

Eaton, Geo., wagoner, enl. July 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Evans, Robert, enl. Aug. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., sharpshooters, 1st Co.; disch., disability.

Edwards, Nathaniel M., private, 3 yrs., Sewell's Engineer Corps, New York; pro. to 2d and 1st lieut. (was in 3 months' service.)

Ellis, John M., corporal, enl. Aug. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; pro. to 2d lieut. from 1st sergt. Sept. 8, 1864; 1st lieut. Nov. 29, 1864; trans. to 29th Regt.; must. out July 29, 1865.

Ellis, George W., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.

Emerson, Wm. H., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G. 35th Regt.; disch. March 25, 1863, disability.

Ellsworth, John N., Jr., 3 yrs., Co. K, 3d Vt. Regt.

Elder, Albert, 3 yrs.

Ellsworth, Josiah A., 3 yrs., 28th Regt.

Ell-worth, Chas. S., 3 yrs., 18th Regt.

Eaton, Chas. J., 14th Regt.

Emery, Samuel C., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Emerson, Albert, private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. Aug. 20, 1864, 1 yr. in Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Eaton, Eugene G., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Eaton, Albert C., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Edwards, Geo. W., private, enl. March 8, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; com'd captain July 19, 1862; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.

Eaton, Daniel W., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Emerson, Geo. R., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Ellis, Sebastian, private, enl. Sept. 2, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; disch. Dec. 14, 1862; minority.

Eaton, Wm. H., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Earle, Joseph M., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Eaton, Willis G., private, enl. Sept. 22, 1864, 3 yrs., 7th Batt'y; disch. July 12, 1865, G. O.

Everson, Geo. E., corporal, must. in March 4, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. G, 59th Regt.; killed in action June 17, 1864.

Eddy, George C., private, enl. Nov. 27, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; died Oct. 18, 1864, at Millan, Ga.

Emery, Ivory, private, enl. Nov. 28, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. F, 1st H. A.; died in Andersonville Prison, Aug. 7, 1864.

Eaton, John G., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Evans, Chas. R., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out. Nov. 30, 1864.

Eddy, George B., must. in Oct. 13, 1862, 9 months, Co. H, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Eaton, Minot H., must. in May 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 2d Regt.; must. out and re enl. Dec. 30, 1863; must. out July 14, 1865.

Fuller, Charles G., private, enl. May 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 1st Regt.; wd. several times and taken pris. at Bull Run July, 1861, at Culpepper Hosp., 1 month, and then in Libby Prison; paroled in 1862 and returned home; disch. Nov. 5, 1862.

Foster, Phineas, private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; must. out July 8, 1864.

Frost, George B., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; must. out April 22, 1864; traus. to 5th U. S. Cav.

Folsom, Daniel W., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. F, 1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864.

Fletcher, John H., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. F, 1st H A.). re-enl. Dec. 5, 1863, Co. F, 1st H. A.; died Nov. 25, 1864, U. S. Gen. Hosp.

Fercald, Nehemiah C., private, enl. March 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H A); must. out Aug. 25, 1865.

Flanders, Francis C., private, enl. March 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. M, 1st H. A.); disch. from Co. M, 1st H. A. Dec. 7, 1862, disability; enl. in Co. D. 17th Regt. July 12, 1864; disch. Sept. 7, 1865; re-enl. June 7, 1864, V. R. C.; disch. May 22, 1865, disability.

Flaherty, Edmond, wagoner, enl. July 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. April 3, 1863, disability, as private.

Fleming, Murtz, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; pris. of war in Co. H; must. out Jan. 1, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 2, 1864, Co. E, 17th Regt.; died April 1, 1864, in Rebel Prison.

Folsom, Charles E., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out as sergt. Aug. 3, 1864.

Frost, Julius B., 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; no record at office of adjutant general.

Furber, John G., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Fletcher, Francis, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. July 12, 1862, disability.

Fowler, Samuel W., corp., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Dec. 22, 1862, disability.

Fogg, George F., corp., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Nov. 23, 1862, disability; re-enl. Co D, 1st Cav. Jan. 25, 1864, 3 yrs.; must. out June 29, 1865.

Frankle, Jones, must. in Aug. 1, 1861, as major for 3 yrs. in 17th Regt. (capt. 1st H. A. July 5, 1861; disch. July 24, 1861); pro. col. 2d H. A. May, 1863; must. out Sept. 3, 1865, brevet brigadier-general.

Farnsworth, Sylvester P., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. to 3d Batt. June 2, 1863; must. out Sept. 16, 1864.

Frye, Wm. L., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs. Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed in action June 27, 1862, Gaines' Mill, Va.

Fitts, Henry T., private, enl. Sept., 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt. must. out Sept. 18, 1861.

Foster, Israel, private, enl. Sept. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 1, 1862, disability.

Fairbank, Henry A., private, enl. Sept. 4, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 20th Regt.; taken pris. at Ball's Bluff; must. out Dec. 20, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 20, 1863; must. out July 26, 1865, absent.

Fifield, Lorenzo, enl. Sept. 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; died June 9, 1862, Gaines' Mill, Va.

Fountain, Archer N., private, enl. Jan. 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; died of wds. Aug. 7, 1862, at Yorktown, Va.

Fellows, Horatio, private, must. in July 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 19th Regt.; must. out Jan. 20, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 20, 1864; Co. C, 19th Regt.; killed in action June 6, 1864, at Cold Harbor, Va.

Flynn, John, private, enl. Aug. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; taken pris. at Ball's Bluff; must. out Feb. 17, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 18, 1864, Co. H, 20th Regt.; must. out July 16, 1865.

Foster, Charles A., private, must. in Aug. 30, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; taken pris. at Ball's Bluff; killed June 1, 1862.

Fitts, Stephen W., private, enl. Oct. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. March 1, 1863, disability.

Frink, Robert, private, enl. Sept. 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Feb. 1, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 2, 1864, Co. H, 22d Regt.; drowned April 2, 1864, at Havre de Grace, Md.

Frink, George, private, enl. Sept. 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; died June 9, 1863, at Potomac Creek, Va.

Floyd, Benjamin, private, enl. Oct. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed at James Mills June 27, 1862.

Fletcher, Andrew J., enl. Sept. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Sept. 5, 1862, disability.

Frothingham, George F., private, enl. Sept. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Nov. 22, 1862, disability.

Frothingham, Charles H., private, enl. Sept. 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. and re-enl. Feb. 1, 1864, in same Co.; trans. Oct. 26, 1861, to Co. M, 32d Regt.; must. out June 29, 1865.

Ford, Dennis, private, enl. Dec. 17, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; must. out Dec. 13, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 28, 1865, to 14th Batt., 3 yrs.; must. out June 15, 1865.

Flaingham, Wm., private, enl. Nov. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; died Oct. 9, 1862, at Carrollton, La.

Fountain, Jonas, must. in Jan. 27, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 31st Regt.; must. out Feb. 15, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Feb. 16, 1864, Co. I, 31st Regt.; must. out Sept. 9, 1865.

Foss, Henry G., enl. Sept. 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; taken pris. while on picket Jan. 20, 1863, near Hartwood Church, Va.; paroled; disch. May 1, 1863, disability.

Flanders, Charles H., private, enl. Sept. 16, 1861, Co. D, 1st Cav.; must. out Oct. 3, 1864.

Forbes, Augustus S., private, must. in May 7, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. B, 1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864.

Forbes, Henry S, private, enl. Aug. 9, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. B, 1st H. A.); died Andersonville, Ga., July 27, 1864.

Fowler, John F., must. in Aug. 12, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. C, 19th Regt.; must. out Aug. 28, 1865.

Ford, Horace K., private, must. in Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Foller, Patrick, private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 28, 1862, disability.

Fernald, Simeon M., enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Oct. 30, 1862, disability.

Fitts, Jacob W., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt. pro. sergt., 1st sergt., 2d lieut. Jan. 14, 1865; must. out June 9, 1865.

Flanders, Leonard H., corp., enl. Aug 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. March 5, 1863, disability.

Foot, Samuel, private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 12, 1862, disability.

Foss, Alfred A., private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; must. out as sergt. June 9, 1865.

Fuller, James A., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. for disability.

Folsom, Horatio, 3 yrs.

Frothingham, John L., 3 yrs, Co. G, 3d Md. Regt.

Fannim, Barrett, must. in Nov. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 30th Regt. (but see Farnham Barrett).

Farr, Ammi, 3 yrs., 5th N. H. Regt.

Follett, 3 yrs.

Fuller, John S., Jr., 3 yrs., N. Y. Regt.

Flanders, Charles E., must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Dec. 7, 1863, to re-enl.

Felch, Daniel M., 2d lieut., enl. March 19, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. April 1, 1863, disability.

Foss, Wm., private, enl. Sept. 4, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864.

Foss, Wm. A., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864.

Flanders, Burton, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864.

Flanders, Edward D., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864.

Fittspatrick, John, private, enl. Sept. 7, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864.

Fowler, Gilbert S., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864.

Fuller, Wm. B., enl. Sept. 2, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864.

Farnham, Hiram H., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864; re-enl. June 16, 1864, V. R. C.

Flanders, Jesse, private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

French, Moses E., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Farrington, Moses C., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Flint, George W., private, enl. Nov. 27, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; died Sept. 11, 1864, at Andersonville.

Frye, John L., private, enl. Dec. 21, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. C, 2d H. A.; must. out Sept. 3, 1865, absent sick.

Floyd, George E., private, enl. Dec. 1, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; died Jan. 26, 1864, at Andersonville.

Fitts, Walter Gage, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out to re-enl.; re-enl. Nov. 24, 1863; disch. Nov. 23, 1864, disability.

Flanders, Benjamin G., private, enl. Dec. 9, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. K, 2d H. A.; must. out Sept. 3, 1865.

Frye, Henry C., private, enl. Dec. 16, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. O, 2d H. A.; must. out Sept. 3, 1865.

Fish, Charles H., corp., enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

French, Aaron H., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Foster, Edward H., private, enl. Sept. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Unattached H. A.; must. out Sept. 16, 1865.

Fegan, Wm., private, enl. Sept. 1, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Unattached H. A.; must. out Sept. 16, 1865.

Fellowa, Rufus J., private, enl. June 24, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. L, 4th Cav.; died Nov. 26, 1864, at Varnia, Va.

Foye, James H., private, enl. Nov. 29, 1864, 1 yr., 4th Batt.; must. out Oct. 14, 1865.

Farnham, George H., enl. Dec. 4, 1861, 3 yrs., 23d Regt.; hospital steward; died April 5, 1862, at Roanoke Island, N. C.

Follausbee, John W., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, 11th Regt.; must. out July 17, 1865, absent sick.

Fitts, Leroy B., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Fowler, Edward D., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

French, Frank P., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Fielden, Andrew H., corp., enl. July 22, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Frye, Albert A., must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; died Dec. 28, 1861, at Baltimore.

Fowler, Edmund B., must. in Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

French, Geo. F., must. in Sept. 20, 1864, V. R. C.; no record of must. out.

Flint, Charles H., must. in Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Flint, Ira T., must. in Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Gilman, Frank, must. in June 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 10th Regt.; disch. April 1, 1863, disability.

Gale, Marcus, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; no record after enlistment.

Grant, John S., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; must. out as sergt. July 8, 1864.

Greenleaf, Wm., corp., must. in June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 11th Regt.; must. out Aug. 18, 1862; disability; re-enl. July 1, 1864, V. R. C.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865, order of war dept.

Gale, Eben P., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. E, 1st H. A.); disch. May 7, 1862, disability.

Goodwin, Timothy, enl. March 12, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. March 13, 1865.

Greeley, Jameson, private, enl. March 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. M, 1st H. A.); must. out March 27, 1864; re-enl. March 28, 1864, Co. M, 1st H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.

Goss, Charles P., private, enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Godfrey, Peter, corp., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out July 11, 1865, in Co. C; exp. of service.

Gartside, James H., private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Aug. 20, 1862.

Godfrey, John, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Godfrey, Joseph, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. in Co. E, 17th Inf. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out in Co. B July 14, 1865.

Goggio, John, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt. must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Getchell, Daniel L., 1st sergt., enl. Aug. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; 2d lieut. Dec. 24, 1862; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Gilman, Adoniram (2d), corp., enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 4, 1864; re enl. Jan. 5, 1864, as sergt. Co. F, 17th Inf.; must. out July 11, 1865.

Gardiner, Albert G., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Gilman, Wm. E., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; sergt.; disch. Sept. 25, 1861, disability; re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; disch. Co. B July 11, 1865.

Gale, Albert, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. in Co. F, 17th Regt. Feb. 29, 1864; must. out in Co. A July 22, 1865, absent sick.

Gilman, James W., private, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out June 9, 1864, order of war dept.

Gilman, Rufus, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Gilman, Mark L., private, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 2, 1862, disability.

Gardner, David W., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 25, 1861; re-enl. in Co. A, 4th Cav. Dec. 25, 1863, 3 yrs; pro. corp. Nov. 1, 1865; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

George, John S., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; in hosp. at Newark, N. J., Aug. 31, 1862; disch. Oct. 8, 1862, disability.

Gray, George N., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. March 16, 1864.

George, Willard K., must. in Jan. 25, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 19th Regt.; disch. May 24, 1862, disability.

Greene, Asa W., private, enl. Jan. 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 19th Regt.; trans. Sept. 26, 1863, to V. R. C.

Greenleaf, Albert H., private, enl. Aug. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; must. out Dec. 21, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 22, 1863, in Co. A, 17th Inf., as wagoner; must. out June 30, 1865.

George, Leonard W., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. May 21, 1862, disability; re-enl. June 24, 1864, V. R. C.; must. out May 1, 1865.

Gale, Nathan, enl. Sept. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Sept. 3, 1862, disability.

Goodwin, Wm. P., private, enl. Oct. 1, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; in hosp. at Newark, N. J., Aug. 3, 1862; disch. Nov. 25, 1862, disability.

Goulding, Patrick, private enl. Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; disch. Jan. 4, 1862, disability.

Gilman, Charles P., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.

Goldsmith, Wm. H., enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt.; pris. June 22, 1864; must. out July 8, 1864.

Goldsmith, Lucius R., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. I, 1st H. A.); disch. July 5, 1864, absent sick.

Gage, Edmund C., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. B, 1st H. A.); killed at Spottsylvania May 19, 1864.

Gentiss, Asa, private, Co. B, 40th N. Y. Regt. (Mozart regiment).

George, Wallace T., must in Aug. 12, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. C, 19th Regt. as 1st sergt.; pro. Oct. 5, 1863, to 1st lieut.; resigned Feb. 13, 1865.

George, Henry B., enl. Aug. 15, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. April 23, 1863, disability.

George, Henry O., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 16, 1862.

Gilnes, James A., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Oct. 6, 1862, disability.

Gile, Andrew J., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.

Goodwin, George K., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Feb. 6, 1863, disability; re-enl. Sept. 13, 1864, V. R. C.; must. out Nov. 20, 1865, order of war dept.

Guptil, Robert, private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, disability.

Goodrich, Hazen B., enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. to re-enl. as U. S. hosp. steward Jan. 23, 1865; must. out in U. S. A. Dec. 30, 1865.

Greene, Wm. B., must. in July 5, 1861, as col., 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); resigned Oct. 11, 1861.

Goldsmith, Melvin H., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); exchanged pris. of war Feb., 1865.

Goodell, Walter S., sergt., enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out as 1st sergt. Aug. 24, 1863.

Gibson, Albert D., corp., enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Gordon, Edward, private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Gilman, Lucas B., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; died on passage home Aug. 2, 1863.

George, Arthur L., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Gould, Royal D., sergt., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 31, 1864, Co. B, 1st Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Graham, Sylvanus C., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Gale, Henry, private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Goodrich, Walter, private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Graham, James W., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; trans. to U. S. A. Dec. 27, 1862.

George, Townsend P., enl. Nov. 4, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863; re-enl. July 29, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out July 11, 1865.

Goodwin, Henry K., private, enl. Nov. 21, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; disch. July 5, 1865, disability.

Gordon, Wm. L., corp., enl. Nov. 23, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; died July 5, 1865, at Andersonville.

Goss, James M., private, enl. Oct. 14, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. B, 1st Batt. H. A.

Goodrich, Preston M., private, enl. July 26, 1864, 3 yrs., 1st Cav.; unassigned; never joined.

Green, Thomas, private, enl. Sept. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Unattached H. A.; must. out June 16, 1865.

Greenough, Henry A., private, enl. Feb. 19, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. G, 2d Cav.

Godfrey, John T., enl. Jan. 26, 1864, 3 yrs., 2d Cav.; rejected Jan. 29, 1864.

Goodwin, John C., private, enl. Jan. 7, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 4th Cav.; disch. June 28, 1865, disability.

Gasson, Edward F., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1861, 1 yr., 13th Batt.; disch. June 16, 1865, by general order.

Gasson, Frederick L., private, enl. Sept. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 13th Batt.; disch. June 16, 1865, by general order.

Grant, Joshua, private, enl. Sept. 26, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, by order of war dept.

Gallagher, Patrick, must. in Sept. 20, 1861, 1 yr., Co. E, 61st Regt.; must. out July 5, 1865.

George, Llewelyn, corp., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

George, Charles D., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Grant, Solomon, private, enl. Nov. 16, 1864, 1 yr., 2d Unattached Inf.; must. out July 7, 1865.

Gage, Alfred F., must. in Dec. 9, 1862, 3 yrs., 1st Unassigned Regt.; no record after enlistment.

Gorman, Patrick, must. in Sept. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. C, 2d H. A.; trans. Jan. 9, 1865, to Co. E, 17th Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865, by order of war dept.

Green, Wm., must. in Jan. 2, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. C, 28th Regt.

Gale, Charles A., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Harmon, Woobury S., private, enl. May 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 1st Regt.; disch. Feb. 17, 1862, disability.

Heath, Henry, sergeant, enl. Jan. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt. pro. to 2d lieut. May 16, 1862; 1st lieut. May 4, 1863; dismissed Feb. 15, 1864.

Heath, J. Wesley, corporal, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; died at Washington, D. C., in hospital, Nov. 1, 1862.

Hammond, Chas. W., private, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; died in hospital, at Washington, D. C., Sept. 29, 1862; buried from Town Hall, Sunday, Oct. 5, 1862; first soldier's funeral in town during the war.

Hoyt, Wm. C., private, enl. June 4, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 7, 1862.

Hall, Rufus F., enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 12th Regt.; disch. Oct. 18, 1862.

Haddock, Oliver, enl., June 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; disch. Sept. 10, 1863, disability.

Hunkins, H. M., enl. Aug. 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt.; (afterward Co. E, 1st H. A.); must. out Nov. 5, 1863, to re-enl.; re-enl. Nov. 6, 1863, Co. F, 1st H. A.; died of wds. May 20, 1864, at Spottsylvania, Va.

Hoyt, Geo. C., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. F, 1st H. A.); must. out Nov. 5, 1863, to re-enl.; re-enl. Nov. 6, 1863, Co. F, 1st H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.

Hodgsdon, Jas. F., private, must. in July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt.; (afterward 1st H. A.); disch. Aug. 5, 1863.

Heard, Reuben F., private, enl. March 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterward 1st H. A.); died of wds. received June 17, 1864.

Hunkins, Horace, private, enl. Aug. 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th; re-enl. Nov. 6, 1863; died of wds. May 20, 1864, (probably same as H. M. Hunkins, above.

Hanson, Wm. H., musician, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr. Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Harrigan, Thos., private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 7, 1862.

Hennessey, John, private, enl. July, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 24, 1862, disability.

Hennessey, Daniel private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; no record after enl.

Hill, John B., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; pro. sergt.-major June 14, 1862; com'd 2d lieut. Aug. 13, 1862; 1st lieut. May 21, 1863; must. out March 11, 1865.

Hall, Stephen W., musician, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. May 28, 1863, disability; re-enl. Nov. 13, 1864, musician, 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Haynes, Wm. C., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; pro. corporal; must. out private, Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 26, 1865, (Hancock's Corps), U. S. Vet. Vols.; disch. Jan. 26, 1866.

Harriman, John S., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Hewitt, Samuel G., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; died at Newbern, N. C., April 22, 1862, (Baltimore, Md.).

Houston, Benj. F., 3 yrs., 17th Regt.

Hodgskins, Stephen W., private, enl. April, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Hunkins, Ensign L., private, must. in Sept. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; trans. to U. S. Signal Corps Nov. 30, 1863; must. out Feb. 13, 1864, U. S. Signal Corps; discharged August 17, 1865.

Hewes, Geo. W., private, enl. Jan. 3, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864. Co. A, 17th Inf., as q.m.-sergt; pro. to 2d lieut. June 16, 1865; must. out as q.m.-sergt. July 11, 1865.

Haynes, Daniel J., sergeant, enl. Oct. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; com'd 2d lieut. Sept. 6, 1862; died Oct. 20, 1862.

Haddock, Leonard H., corporal, enl. Sept. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. July 31, 1862; disability; re-enl. 1st Cav. Jan. 28, 1864, in Co. H, 22d Regt.; never must. and rejected Jan. 29, 1864.

Haseltine, Chas. H., private, enl. Sept. 11, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out as 1st sergt. Jan. 20, 1865; disability.

Hicks, Joseph, private, enl. Jan. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. April 9, 1864, disability.

Hills, Chas. H., private, enl. Feb. 10, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 19th Regt.; must. out Dec. 21, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 22, 1863, Co. B, 19th Regt.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Hayes, Jas., enl. Jan. 25, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 19th Regt.; disch. Oct. 29, 1862, disability.

How, Henry J., captain, enl. Aug. 3, 1861, 3 yrs., 19th Regt.; com'd major Aug. 3, 1861; killed in battle at Nelson's Farm, near Richmond, June 30, 1862.

Heath, Reuben P., private, enl. May 29, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; disch. Feb. 24, 1863, disability; re-enl. in Co. H, 2d H. A., Nov. 28, 1863, 3 yrs.; died Oct. 23, 1864, at Newbern, N. C.

Hoyt, John L., sergeant, must. in Aug. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; missing at Antietam; died of wds. July 5, 1863.

Holden, Levi, private, enl. Sept. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 27th Regt.

Hewins, Otis W., private, enl. Oct. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; disch. April 2, 1862, disability.

Heath, Daniel S., private, enl. Oct. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; died Oct. 6, 1862, at New Orleans.

Hatch, Alfred B., private, enl. Nov. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; disch. April 2, 1862, disability.

Hogan, Thos., must. in Dec. 17, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; died Dec. 25, 1862, New Orleans.

Hamilton, James, private, enl. Oct. 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; must. out Jan. 22, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 23, 1864, Co. D, 1st Cav.; must. out as sergeant June 29, 1865.

Holmes, Marnum E., sergeant, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., 1st Cav.; must. out. Sept. 24, 1864; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav

Hill, Geo. H., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; must. out Sept. 24, 1864; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.

Haynes, Nathan W., corporal, must. in Sept. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., 2d Co. Sharpshooters; killed in action as sergeant. May 30, 1864, (Jan. 4, 1863, at Washington, D. C., adjutant-general's report).

Heath, James H., must. in July 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 19th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Dec. 21, 1863, Co. C, 19th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Heath, Jas., private, 3 yrs.

Hanson, Joseph, private, July 28, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 32d Regt.; disch. June 13, 1863, disability.

Harlow, Joseph W., enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt.; must. out March 18, 1865.

Hobourn, John (probably), private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. B, 1st H. A.).

Ilyburn, John, disch. April 19, 1864, disability.

Hardy, Geo. W., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt.; must. out July 5, 1865.

Howard, George H., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 2 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. B, 1st H. A.); disch. June 10, 1862.

Hobbs, Alonzo, private, must. in Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. June 11, 1863, disability.

Haines, Andrew J., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. June 22, 1863, disability.

Hubbard, James, private, must. in Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; disch. Jan. 3, 1863, disability.

Hagan, Hugh, private, must. in July 30, 1862, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. in Co. A, 2d H. A., for 1 yr., Sept. 5, 1864; disch. June 2, 1865.

Hardy, Joseph C., private, enl. July 8, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; pro. to 2d lieut. Sept. 6, 1864, and to 1st lieut. Nov. 29, 1864; must. out June 9, 1865.

Harmon, Walter S., private, enl. July 25, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Feb. 3, 1863, disability.

Hammond, Geo. K., private, enl. July 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch.

Harriman, Ira F., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; must. out June 9, 1865.

Hackett, Wm., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Jan. 17, 1862.

Hall, Jesse F., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Feb. 17, 1863, disability.

Heath, George W., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Dec. 13, 1862, disability; re-enl. July 23, 1864, as corporal, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Heath, Francis O., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Jan. 13, 1863, disability; re-enl. and appointed.

Head, Addison, private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. March 31, 1863, disability.

Hewett, John C., sergeant, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Jan. 23, 1863, disability.

Hodges, Thorndike D., sergeant, enl. July 26, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 35th Regt.; pro. to 2d lieut. Jan. 1, 1863; disch. May 30, 1863; com'd in Wilde's Brigade.

Hoyt, Henry A., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam.

Humphrey, Edward, 3 yrs.

Hill, Chas., 3 yrs., 11th N. H. Regt.

Hersom, Greenleaf, must. in Jan. 24, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 17th Regt.; disch. May 31, 1863, disability.

How, James C., asst. surg., 3 yrs., New York.

Hewins, Otis W., 3 yrs., Co. G, 26th Regt.

Huntress, John, 3 yrs.

Hunkins, H. W., private, 2 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.

Houston, Andrew J., must. in Dec. 7, 1863, 3 yrs. Co. H, 2d H. A.

Harlow, Jos. M., private, must. in Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt.; disch. Nov. 8, 1864, disability.

Hoburn, George, private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt.

Howard, Eben. M., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. C, 14th (afterward Co. C, 1st H. A.). disch. Jule 8, 1864.

Howes, Alonzo, 3 yrs. 17th Regt.

Harris, Robert, 1st lieutenant, must. in Jan. 9, 1862, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.

Hanson, John W., enl. Sept. 4, 1862, 9 months, 6th Regt.; com. chaplain Sept. 1, 1862; must. out June 3, 1863; re-com. chaplain 6th (60th) Regt., 100 days, Aug. 4, 1864; must. out Oct. 27, 1864.

Hassall, Robert, enl. Nov. 11, 1862, 9 months, 50th Regt.; com. chaplain Nov. 8, 1862; resigned March 10, 1863.

Hurd, Ira, sergeant, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, 50th Regt.; com. 2d lieut. Nov. 9, 1862; must. ont Aug. 24, 1863; re-com. 1st lieut. Co. I, 60th Regt., 100 days, July 23, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Harmon, Geo. K., corporal, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hanson, Acel, private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hunkins, Warren O., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out. Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. and appointed sergeant Co. I, 60th Regt., 100 days, July 23, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Howard, Wm. S., private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hunt, Geo. W., private, enl. Aug. 20, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Haynes, Jackson, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hanrahan, Jas., private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.

Haddock, Chas. H., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hill, Andrew J., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Howe, Jas., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hatch, Joshua, Jr., sergeant, Aug. 6, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hill, Chas. H., sergeant, enl. Aug. 15, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Holt, Joseph F. sergeant, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hammond, Henry G., musician, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Havens, Silas F., private, enl. Sept. 2, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 24 1863.

Haseltine, Wm. L., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Harwood, Andrew J., private, enl. Aug. 26, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hoyt, Benj. S., Jr., private, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 24, 1863 ; re-enl. corporal 17th Unattached Inf., Aug. 5, 1864 ; must. out Nov. 12, 1864.

Hoyt, Samuel P., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 24, 1863 ; re-enl. Feb. 9, 1864, Co. D, 57th Inf. ; died Nov. 14, 1864, City Point, Va.

Howe, Edwin M., private, enl. Aug. 26, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hoyt, Ezra, private, enl. Sept. 2, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hubbard, Oliver S., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hoyt, Geo. N., wagoner, 1st H. A.

Hunkins, John N., must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hunkins, Harry F., enl. Oct. 4, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt. ; died at Baton Rouge, July 4, 1863.

Hall, Benj. F., enl. Nov. 4, 1862, 9 months, 50th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hammond, Walter S., must. in Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs, Co. H, 32d Regt. ; no further record ; trans. to 35th Regt.

Hinds, Simon D., must. in Jan. 5, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. B, 59th Regt. ; trans. June 1, 1865, to Co. B, 57th Regt. ; must. out July 30, 1865 ; absent, sick.

Hurd, Wm. H. H., private, enl. Nov. 27, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A. ; prisoner June 22, 1864.

Hawkins, Lewis, private, enl. April 29, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. K, 1st H. A. ; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.

Hosum, Geo. W., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. D, 2d H. A. ; died Sept. 11, 1863, at Newbern, N. C.

Haley, John, private, enl. Sept. 5, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 2d H. A.; trans. to 17th Regt. ; disch. June 30, 1865, in Co. E, by order of War Dept.

Holden, Geo. A., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, Co. M, 4th H. A. ; must. out June 17, 1865.

Hackett, Chas. F., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A. ; must. out June 17, 1865.

Harwood, Henry V., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A. ; must. out June 17, 1865.

Hargreaves, Daniel R., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A. ; must. out June 17, 1865.

Hoyt, Geo. W., private, enl. Feb. 18, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 1 Batt'n H. A. ; must. out Feb. 24, 1865.

Hoyt, Geo., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. B, 1 Batt'n H. A. must. out June 29, 1865.

Healey, Daniel, private, enl. Sept. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Unattached H. A. ; died at Ft. Strong Hosp. Jan. 12, 1865.

Huse, Nathan, private, enl. Jan. 27, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. C, 1st Cav. ; must. out as bugler June 29, 1865.

Holbrook, Leroy A., corporal, enl. Dec. 31, 1861, 1 yr., Co. L, 3d Cav. ; must. out in Co. E, Sept. 28, 1865 ; also enl. July 23, 1864, as private, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt. ; must. out Nov. 30, 1864, exp. of service.

Hammond, Chas. H., private, enl. Dec. 1, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav. ; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Hinds, Lorenzo, private, enl. Nov. 30, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav. ; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Hall, Frederick A., private, enl. Sept. 22, 1864, 3 yrs., 7th Batt'y ; must. out July 12, 1865, G. O.

Huntress, Wm. H., private, enl. Feb. 5, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. F, 59th Regt. ; trans. to 57th Regt. ; must. out in Co. F, July 30, 1865.

Hall, Samuel A., private, enl. July 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 28, 1864.

Harris, Charles, private, enl. Sept. 16, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. B, 11th Regt.

Haseltine, Richard, private, enl. Nov. 19, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 30th Regt. ; disch. March 30, 1862.

Hause, David, must. in Sept. 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. E, 61st Regt. ; must. out June 4, 1865.

Hicks, Joseph T., must. in Nov. 27, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A. ; must. out Aug. 16, 1865, in Co. A.

Hall, Hendrick, private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt. ; must out Nov. 30, 1864.

Hanson, Isaac, private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt. ; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Holt, Abbot L., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt. ; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Holbrook, Leroy A., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt. ; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Hoitt, Jos. S., must. in Dec. 7, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A. ; died Aug. 31, 1864, at Andersonville.

Hartly, Wm. H., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav. ; must. out June 30, 1865.

Huse, Edward E., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. A, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav. ; must. out June 30, 1865.

Harriman, Chas. M., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav. ; must. out June 30, 1865.

Hogle, Lucius, enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. D, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav. ; must. out June 30, 1865.

Harney, James, enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. D, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav. ; must. out June 30, 1865.

Holt, F., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., 1st Batt'n Front. Cav. ; 1st sergt. ; pro. 2d lieutenant May 13, 1865 ; must. out June 30, 1865.

Hardy, Geo. N., enl. Nov. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf. (corporal) ; must. out June 30, 1865.

Haley, Jeremiah, enl. Nov 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf. ; must. out June 30, 1865.

Hardison, John F., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf. ; must. out June 30, 1865.

Harris, Wm. H., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 16th Unattached Co. Inf. ; must. out June 30, 1865.

Hood, Hiram D., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf. ; must. out June 30, 1865.

Hood, Samuel, enl. Nov. 14, 1861, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf. ; must. out June 30, 1865.

Judson, Isaac P., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt. ; killed at Antietam.

Jackson, Wm., must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 17th Regt. ; disch. Feb. 27, 1863 ; re-enl. Sept. 2, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. L, 4th Cav. ; corporal, Nov. 1, 1865 ; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Johnson, Charles B., private, enl. Feb. 24, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. M, 1st H. A.) ; must. out Feb. 24, 1863 ; re-enl. Feb. 25, Co. M, 1st H. A. ; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.

Johnson, Horatio, private, enl. Feb. 26, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. M, 1st H. A.) ; taken prisoner at Gettysburg, must. out Feb. 28, 1864 ; re-enl. Co. M, 1 H. A., Feb. 29th ; disch. March 31, 1865, disability.

Jones, Samuel W., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt. ; disch. Dec. 4, 1862, disability.

Johnson, Harrison, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt. ; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Johnson, Wm. H., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt. ; must. out Feb. 1, 1864, to re-enl. ; re-enl. Feb. 2, Co. H, 22d Regt. ; trans. Oct. 26, 1864, to Co. M, 32d Regt. ; must. out June 29, 1865.

Jaques, Edwin H., 3 yrs., 19th Regt.

Jaques, John I., 3 yrs., 19th Regt.

Jaques, Melvin F., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt. ; wd. at Antietam ; trans. to V. R. Corps, May 28, 1864.

Jenness, Wm. B., enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt. ; wd. twice at Antietam ; disch. Dec. 31, 1862, disability ; (name not found in report of adjt.-gen.).

Jeuness, Joseph K., private, enl. Dec. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., 11th Regt., New York ; pro. to 2d lieut. Aug. 9, 1864 ; 1st lieut. March 25, 1865.

Johnson, George L., private, enl. Sep. 17, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; died June 3, 1862, at Gaines' Mill, Va.

Judge, Charles W., 1st sergt., enl. Sept. 1, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt.; disch. Jan. 31, 1863, disability; Dec. 30, 1864, re-enl. as sergt., 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Jeffers, Geo. W., enl. July 17, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. D, 3d H. A.; trans. to Co. I, 12th Inf.; drafted before enl.; trans. June 26, 1864, to 39th Inf.; no further record.

Johnson, Edwin L., corporal, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; died at quarantine below New Orleans, Feb. 27, 1863.

Jacobs, Wyman N., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge, July 7, 1863.

Johnson, Charles L., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.

Johnson, Charles H., private, enl. Aug. 20, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; disch. Jan. 5, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 4, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; disch. June 26, 1865.

Johnson, Henry H., private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out as corporal Aug. 24, 1863.

Johnson, Wm. F., enl. Aug. 26, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; musician; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Johnson, Frank H., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; disch. Dec. 6, 1862; re-enl. in Co. D, 1st Cav., Jan. 26, 1864, for 3 yrs.; must. out June 29, 1865.

Jacques, Henry, private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Jenness, Sumner G., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Nov. 19, 1862, Boxford.

Jackson, William, enl. Sept. 2, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. L, 4th Cav.; corp. Nov. 1, 1865; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Johnson, O-good, must. in Feb. 4, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 59th Regt.; no further record.

Jaques, E. Newton, private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Jewett, Wm. H. (2), must. in Feb. 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. C, 19th Regt.; died July 1, 1862, Harrison's Landing, Va.

Josleyn, Wm. N., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Kimball, Varnum A., private, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; must. out June 24, 1864.

Kidder, Chas. H., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; must. out July 5, 1864.

Kenney, Thomas, private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.

Kimball, Charles H., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; died Oct. 3, 1862; buried from Music Hall, Haverhill, Oct. 7, 1862.

Kittredge, Frank S., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. I, 1st H. A.); must. out Dec. 6, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 7, Co. I, 1 H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.

Kennedy, Thos. H., private, enl. March 13, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. M, 1st H. A.); died of wds. July 31, 1864, at Washington, D. C.

Kimball, James, enl. Aug. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 16th Regt.; disch. Jan. 5, 1863, disability.

Kemp, Samuel R., private, enl. May 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Kimball, Charles W., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; trans. to Co. E; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Kelly, Joseph G., sergt., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864; 2d lieut. June 16, 1865; must. out in Co. A July 11, 1865, as 1st sergt.

Kenney, Dominick, private, must. in July 31, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt., pro. corp.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 4, 1864, as sergt. Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. C July 11, 1865.

Keif, Joseph P., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Jan. 18, 1863, disability; re-enl. Co. L, 4th Cav., Sept. 18, 1864, for 1 yr.; corp. Jan. 1, 1865; sergt. May 21, 1865; disch. June 21 (May 26), 1865, G. O. of War Dept.

Kimball, Charles A., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Dec. 2, 1863, disability.

Kenniston, Nathl. F., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Kimball, John T., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Kelly, James N., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; in hosp. at Newark, N. J., Aug. 31, 1862; dropped from rolls July 29, 1863; (but elsewhere record of Kelly, James N.; must. in Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. M, 32d Regt.; must. out June 29, 1865; exp. of term).

Kimball, Charles A., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Feb. 22, 1862, disability.

Knowles, Charles K., sergt., enl. Sept. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; pro. 2d lieut. Dec. 16, 1862; wd. at Gettysburg; died of wds. July 13, 1863; buried at Haverhill July 30, 1863.

Kenniston, Royal F., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. Aug. 7, 1862.

Kerrigan, Wm. E., sergt., enl. Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; wd. June 16, 1862; trans. V. R. C. Oct. 28, 1863; disch. Dec. 13, 1864.

King, Peter, corp., enl. Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; must. out Dec. 19, 1864.

Kimball, Charles, private, enl. Sept. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 30th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge, La., Sept. 9, 1863.

Kaler, Cornelius, private, must. in Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav. (Kaler first enl. private in Co. D, 5th inf.; must. out July 31, 1861); must. out to re-enl. Dec. 31, 1863; re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; sergt. Co. D, 1st Cav.; 2d lieut. 5th Cav. March 1, 1864; declined com'd 5th Cav.; re-enl. 1st lieut. 5th Cav. March 8, 1864; capt. 5th Cav. April 30, 1864; must. out Oct. 31, 1865.

Keif, Thomas, corp., must. in Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; must. out April 20, 1864; re-enl. sergt. Co. L, 4th Cav. April 21, 1864; 2d lieut. April 6, 1865; 1st lieut. July 13, 1865; must. out Nov. 20, 1865; afterwards entered the navy.

Kendall, George S., 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d Vt. Regt.

Kelley, Edward P., private, enl. Aug. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; must. out June 9, 1865.

Kenney, Silas W., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. as sergt. June 5, 1863, disability.

Keenan, Frank T., sergt., enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Nov. 22, 1862, disability.

Kimball, Daniel S., private, enl. Aug. 8, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; pro. 2d lieut. Nov. 29, 1864; 1st lieut. Jan. 19, 1865; must. out as 2d lieut. June 9, 1865.

Kingman, George H., 3 yrs., 19th Regt.

Kimball, Daniel, 3 yrs.

Kendall, George S., 3 yrs., Berdan's N. Y. Sharpshooters.

Kassoo, Wm. W., 3 yrs., Co. B, 2d N. H. Regt.; in hosp. at Newark, N. J., Aug. 31, 1862.

Kelly, Isaiah, must. in Dec. 9, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st H. A.; died Aug. 2, 1864, at Haddington Hospital, Va.

Kelly, David M., private, enl. Aug. 2, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; q.m.-sergt. Nov. 12, 1862; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. in Co. I, 60th Regt., 100 days, July 23, 1864; q.m.-sergt. Aug. 5, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Kimball, Charles A., corp., enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.

King, Patrick, private, enl. Sept. 8, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863; re-enl. July 11, 1864, Co. D, 2d H. A.; must. out Sept. 3, 1865.

Kelly, James N., must. in Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. M, 32d Regt.; must. out June 29, 1865.

Kimball, Moses, private, enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. L, 3d Cav.; must. out in Co. E, Sept. 28, 1865.

Kelly, Charles A., private, enl. Sept. 21, 1864, 3 yrs., 7th Batt.; must. out July 12, 1865, G. O.

Knox, John H., private, enl. Feb. 27, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. G, 59th Regt.; pris.; must. out June 3, 1865, order of War Dept.

Kimball, Marcus, private, enl. July 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; must. out Feb. 24, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Feb. 25th; disch. May 14, 1865, as sergt. Co. A.

Kelly, Thomas B., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Kelly, James, must. in Dec. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 28th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Jan. 2, 1864, private, Co. C, 28th Inf.; pro. to principal musician Dec. 1, 1864; must. out June 30, 1865.

Kimball, Edward S., must. in Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 3, 1865.

Kent, Charles E., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, Co. C, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Kelley, George W., must. in Dec. 9, 1863, 3 yrs. Co. I, 1st H. A.

Kimball, Charles N., must. in Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Kimball, Walter B., must. in Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Kingsley, George W., must. in Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Lancaster, F. A., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; taken pris. at Gettysburg; pro. sergt.-major from corp. Dec. 14, 1863; pro. 1st lieut. May 11, 1864; must. out July 8, 1864.

Liberty, Peter, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs. Co. E, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. E, 1st H. A.); must. out and re-enl. Nov. 28, 1863, Co. E, 1st H. A.; disch. Nov. 25, 1864, disability.

Lawson, Francis E., private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Jan. 10, 1862.

Lawton, Joseph W., private, enl. July 25, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 4, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865.

Leonard, George C., private, enl. Sept. 7, 1861, 3 yrs, Co. H, 22d Regt.; pro. corp.; disch. Oct. 27, 1862, disability.

Lord, John W., private, enl. Sept. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Sept. 24, 1862, disability.

Lord, James H., muc., enl. July 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. in same Co. Dec. 21, 1863; must. out June 30, 1865.

Lake, Joseph W., private, enl. Aug. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.

Livingston, Henry B., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 9, 1862, disability.

Lee, Hugh, private, enl. Dec. 1, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; disch. Dec. 2, 1863.

Lynch, Henry, enl. April 19, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 29th Regt.; no record after enlistment.

Locke, Reuben L., private, enl. Nov. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., 4th Batt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 3, 1864; must. out Oct. 14, 1865, as corp 4th Batt.

Liggett, John, private, enl. Nov. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., 4th Batt.; disch. Feb. 25, 1863, disability.

Lamb, Lawrence, private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. E, 1st H. Art.); died of wds. June 19, 1864, Petersburg, Va.

Little, Moses C., 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; killed at Fredericksburg Dec. 11, 1862.

Lane, Henry H., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. C, 17th Regt.; disch. Nov. 25, 1862; rejected.

Lord, Charles H., private, must. in July 23, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 11, 1863, disability; re-enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; disch. June 10, 1865.

Leach, Benj. F., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 12, 1862, disability.

Longfellow, Edward P., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Nov. 28, 1862, disability.

Lufkin, Elbridge, corp., enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch., disability.

Le Bosquet, James, private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Jan. 22, 1863, disability; died at Haverhill, 1863.

Locke, J. K., private, must. in Aug. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., 19th Unassigned Regt.; no record after enlistment.

Livingston, Murray V., bugler, enl. Sept. 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; disch. and re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864, Co. D; must. out June 29, 1865.

Le Bosquet, Albert, private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863; re-enl. and app. sergt. in Co. I, 60th Regt., 100 days, July 23, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Ladd, Thomas E., private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Littlefield, Hazen S., private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Leonard, John, private, must. in Oct. 4, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.

Lee, George Oscar, corp., enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Lane, Lawrence, private, enl. Sept. 5, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 2d H. A.; trans. to 17th Regt. Jan. 16, 1865; disch. in Co. F June 30, 1865, order of War Dept.

Livingston, Edward H., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Liberty, Joseph, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out and re-enl. Nov. 28, 1863; killed in action June 16, 1864, at Petersburg, Va.

Laundry, Joseph, private, enl. March 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 1st H. A.

La Paint, Joseph, private, enl. April 25, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Batt. H. A.; must. out Sept. 12, 1865.

Loung, George P., private, enl. March 22, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. A, 2d Cav.; must. out July 20, 1865.

Lovejoy, Edwin B., private, enl. Sept. 22, 1864, 3 yrs., 7th Batt.; must. out July 12, 1865, G. O.

Lovejoy, Daniel H., private, enl. Aug. 12, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 40th Regt.; disch. as corp. June 25, 1864, disability.

Lyons, John, must. in Dec. 2, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. K, 3d H. A.; must. out Sept. 18, 1865.

Larkins, Charles O., enl. Sept. 17, 1864, V. R. C.; must. out Nov. 30, 1865, order of War Dept.

Littlefield, Joseph A., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Morse, George W., sergt., enl. May 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d Regt.; must. out Dec. 30, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 31, 1863; pro. 1st lieut. Co. H, 2d Inf. June 9, 1865; must. out July 14, 1865.

Murphy, Dennis, private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 12th Regt.; must. out as sergt. July 8, 1864.

Merrill, George L. (Lemuel S.), private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; disch. March 12, 1863.

McKown, John B., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out and re-enl. Nov. 24, 1863; died Nov. 18, 1864, Millen, Ga.

McCoy, Patrick, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864, in Co. L.

Merrill, Henry S., com. sergt., enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; pro. 2d lieut. July 3, 1862; resigned May 11, 1863.

McNamara, Michael C., capt., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; com. Aug. 21st; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Marony, James, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; com. 2d lieut. Aug. 21, 1861; pro. 1st lieut. Jan. 31, 1862; resigned Aug. 12, 1862.

Mulvey, Henry, corp., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out as sergt. Aug. 3, 1864.

McCarty, Thomas, corp., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Mahoney, John, private, must. in Nov. 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; wd. at Winton, N. C., July, 1863; no further record.

Masterson, John, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Melindy, George, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. in Co. D, 2d H. A. Aug. 29, 1864; trans. Feb. 9, 1865, to Co. H, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865.

McGrath, Thomas, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; pro. corp.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864; must. out. in Co. A June 11, 1865.

McKane, Patrick, private, enl. April, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Moyle, Bernard, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Aug. 3, 1864.

Mulligan, Michael, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 6, 1861, disability.

McKana, Patrick, private, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Dec. 5, 1861, disability.

Morse, Gardner S., enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Metcalf, Edward D., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Metcalf, George A., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Murray, Thomas, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Meader, Charles F., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out to re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864, as corp. Co. B; trans. to Co. G; must. out as sergt. July 11, 1865, Co. F.

Manning, Byrne, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.

Mitchell, James S., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861; must. out Feb. 1, 1864; re-enl.; trans. to 32d M. V.; must. out as corp. Co. M, June 29, 1865.

Mahoney, John (2d), 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.

Morse, John H., private, must. in Jan. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt.; disch. Feb. 17, 1863, disability.

Marden, Henry F., corp., enl. Jan. 9, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt.

Mills, Charles E., private, enl. Feb. 18, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt. (had before enl. private Co. D, 5th Inf. May 21, 1861; must. out July 31, 1861); wd. in North Carolina Dec., 1862 (Foster's Expedition); must. out Feb. 19, 1865.

Mills, John E., musician, enl. Feb. 26, 1862, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.; disch. Oct. 3, 1862, order of War Dept. (had before served 3 months), May 1st to July 31, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt., musician.

Moses, John, enl. Feb. 14, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Dec. 21, 1863; must. out June 30, 1865.

McQuestion, Clinton, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 20th Regt.; pris. at Ball's Bluff, long at Richmond; killed at Antietam.

Morrill, John W., private, must. in Sept. 29, 1861, 3 yrs, Co. H, 20th Regt.; killed at Wilderness, Va., May 6, 1864; returned as (Merrill).

McIntosh, James, private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; in hosp. at Newark, N. J., Aug. 31, 1862, blind; disch. Sept. 3, 1862, disability; died Oct. 14, 1862, at Newark.

Manning, Timothy, enl. Aug. 15, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. C, 40th Regt.; must. out May 13, 1865, order of War Dept.

Meagher, John F., private, enl. Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; died of wds. at Washington.

Manning, Thomas, private, enl. Oct. 29, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 30th Regt.; died Aug. 20, 1862, at New Orleans.

Merrill, Joseph W., private, enl. Nov. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; corp.; disch. Dec. 8, 1863, disability.

McCarty, Patrick, private, enl. Nov. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; must. out July 6, 1866.

Morse, Horace, enl. Dec. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L (Unattached Co.), 3d Cav.; disch. for promotion July 5, 1863; 2d lieut. 97th U. S. Colored Inf; resigned July 19, 1864.

Mahoney, John (3d), private, enl. Nov. 4, 1861, 3 yrs., 4th Batt.; must. out and re-enl. Dec. 25, 1863; must. out Oct. 14, 1865.

Moody, Elhaner H., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.; disch. May 11, 1863, disability.

Moore, Martin, private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out July 5, 1864.

Morse, Frank, private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. April 4, 1863, disability.

Marden, George O., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; died Jan. 1, 1865, at Andersonville, Ga.

Millett, Wm F., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. July 17, 1863, disability.

Merrill, James L., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; trans. to signal corps Aug. 1, 1863.

Meader, John L., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 10, 1863, disability.

Morse, Henry M., private, enl. July 25, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Jan. 30, 1863, disability.

Monetts, Luther, private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 2, 1864; must. out in Co. B July 11, 1865.

Marsh, Martin L., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Dec. 19, 1862, disability; re-enl. in Co. D, 1st Cav. Feb. 19, 1864; must. out June 29, 1865.

McClain, Charles D., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Feb. 6, 1863, disability.

Merrill, Charles A., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt. must. out June 28, 1865, disability.

Merrill, Edmund N., private, must. in Aug. 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; enl. as private in 33d Regt. and trans. to 35th Regt.; pro. com. sergt. Aug. 21, 1862; disch. March 12, 1863; died at home May 16, 1863.

Morrill, Edward H., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; pro. 2d lieut., 35th Regt. April 5, 1863; must. out Sept. 24, 1864; 1st lieut., 61st Inf. Sept. 22, 1864; must. out June 4, 1865, brevet capt.

Morse, Sylvester, private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Jan. 24, 1863, disability.

Murray, Joseph, 3 yrs.

Murray, David B., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Nov. 22, 1862, disability; re-enl. and appointed corp., Co. I, 60th Inf., 100 days, July 23, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Mills, Wm. W., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out July 5, 1865.

Morrill, Wm., private, must. in Sept. 30, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 15, 1863, disability; re-enl. in Co. F, 2d H. A. Sept. 5, 1864, 1 yr.; must. out June 26, 1865.

Morse, Hiram, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.

McFee, Hamden, 3 yrs.

Monson, James H., 3 yrs.

Magoon, Samuel A., must. in Sept. 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 26th Regt.; disch. June 22, 1862, disability.

Morse, Charles C., 2d lieut., enl. Feb. 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 17th Regt.; disch. March 23, 1863; resigned.

Mahoney, John, Jr., private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. April 3, 1863, disability.

Morrison, John, private, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed at Gettysburg July 3, 1863.

McGuire, Thomas, 20th Regt.

Messer, Carlos P., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, 50th Regt.; com. col., Nov. 11, 1862; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Mealy, Nicholas J., private, enl. Oct. 31, 1861, 9 months, Co. C, 50th Regt. (in 3 months Co.); must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

McDermitt, Hugh, private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; wd. at Port Hudson, La., June, 1863; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

McWilliams, Samuel, private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

McQuestion, Simeon, private, enl. Aug. 30, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

McLaughlin, Frank, private, enl. Sept. 7, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. corp., Co. C, 17th Regt. Sept. 16, 1864; must. out June 30, 1865, order of War Dept.

Morse, James W., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; disch. Jan. 5, 1863.

Merrill, George W., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out as sergt. Aug. 24, 1863.

Murphy, Timothy, private, enl. Oct. 20, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1864; re-enl. Sept. 17, 1864, Co. C, 17th Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865, order or of War Dept.

Moulton, Geo. L., private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Mace, Daniel W., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Mackey, Andrew J., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; died April 9, 1863, at Baton Rouge.

Merrill, Howard M., private, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Morrison, Augustus G., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. in Co. M, 4th H. A., Aug. 20, 1864, 1 yr.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Mulheren, Hugh, private, enl. Aug. 15, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Murray, Hugh, private, enl. Sept. 17, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

McKenna, Edward, private, enl. Sept. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Marsh, Jos. W., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 25, 1863.

Morrill, Chas. L., must. in Dec. 5, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 59th Regt.; trans. June 1, 1865, to Co. A, 57th Inf.; must. out Aug. 5, 1865; order of War Dept.

McQuade, John, private, enl. Sept. 5, 1864, 1 yr., Co. I, 3d H. A.; must. out June 26, 1845.

McCarty, Wm., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 1 yr., 29th Unattached H. A.; must. out June 16, 1865.

Martin, F. Orin, corporal, enl. Aug. 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

McCarthy, Wm., enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Co. Unattached H. A.; must. out Sept. 15, 1865.

McElvay, Thos., private, enl. Jan. 11, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

McGaffey, Henry, private, enl. Sept. 17, 1861, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 20, 1865, order of War Dept.

Miller, Benj., Jr., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1864, 1 yr., Co. O, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, G. O.

Miner, Chas. A., private, enl. Sept. 13, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, G. O.

Masterson, Thomas, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out to re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; Jan. 2, 1864, re-enl.; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865.

Murphy, Daniel, private, enl. Aug. 5, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, by order of War Dept.

Moody, Edward, private, enl. May 16, 1864, 90 days, 13th Unattached Inf.; must. out Aug. 15, 1864.

Moulton, Newlan, private, enl. May 16, 1864, 90 days, 13th Unattached Inf.; must. out Aug. 15, 1864; re-enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Martyn, Chas. A., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

McCoy, Frank, private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Merrill, Alphonso T., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Merrill, Francis, private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Merrill, Walter, Jr., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Morrison, Noah H., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Morse, Stephen E., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

McLaughlin, Jas. R., must. in Oct. 13, 1862, 9 months, Co. H, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Magueut, Oliver, enl. Dec. 26, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; must. out. Nov. 14, 1865.

Miller, Frank C., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Miller, Robt., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Miller, Edward O., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

McEvay, Michael, enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr. Co. C, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Morris, George H., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Morgan , Wm. H., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., Unattached Co. Inf. (17th Regt.).

Moulton, Newlan, enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., Unattached Co. Inf. (17th Regt.); must. out June 30, 1865.

Noyes, William H., private, enl. June 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. July 1, 1863.

Noyes, George D., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; must. out July 8, 1864.

Noyes, John, Jr., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 13th Regt.; must. out Aug. 1, 1864.

Newton, Thomas F., sergt., enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; pro. 2d lieut. Oct. 28, 1861; 1st lieut. July 3, 1862; disch. July 11, 1865.

Nagle, Richard, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; died at Baltimore, Jan. 1, 1862.

Norman, Michael, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Jan. 18, 1862, disability.

Norton, Richard E., corp. enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out as sergt. Aug. 3, 1864.

Norton, William S., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; corp.; disch. Oct. 5, 1862, disability.

Norton, John, private, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.

Nelson, William H., private, enl. Sept. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 22d Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. Nov. 15, 1863.

Newman, Randall P., must. in Oct. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 17th Regt.; must. out Dec. 5, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 6, 1863; corp.; must. out July 11, 1865.

Naighan, Daniel, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Needham, J. Austin, private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); died at Andersonville, Ga., Sept. 19, 1864.

Nesmith, Clarence E., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. Jan. 7, 1863, order of war dept. disability.

Nichols, George M., 3 yrs., 32d Regt.

Norris, Albert G., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); died Aug., 1864, at Andersonville, Ga.

Norris, Lyman F., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); prisoner at Gettysburg; at parole Annapolis, Md.; died July 5, 1864, at Andersonville, Ga.

Netter, Martin, private enl. Aug. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Dec. 1, 1862, disability.

Nichols, Walter, private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; trans. to V. R. C. March 21, 1864.

Noyes, Ariel S., sergt., enl. Feb. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Feb. 16, 1864; sergt.; wd in Co. C, March 8, 1865; must. out June 21, 1865; absent as corp.

Nevins, Michael, 3 yrs., Co. F, 40th Regt. N. Y.

Noyes, Hiram N., corp., enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must out as private Aug. 24, 1863.

Nicholas, Addison D., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out as private Aug. 24, 1863.

Nason, Edward A., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt, must. out as private Aug. 24, 1863.

Norwood, George, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.

Noonan, Michael, corp., must. in Sept. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 35th Regt., must. out June 9, 1865.

Nute, George W., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 1st H. A.; must. out Nov. 6, 1863, to re-enlist: re-enl.; must. out June 2, 1865; absent in Co. M.

Nibbs, Henry W., private, enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. L, 3d Cav.; must. out in Co. E, Sept. 28, 1865.

Norton, David T., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864; re-enl. Dec. 30, 1864, Co. A, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30. 1865.

Nichols, Frank B., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Nelson, Benj. S., enl. Nov. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf. (corporal); must. out June 30, 1865.

Osgood, James M., orderly sergt., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); com. 2d lieut. Nov. 21, 1861: 1st lieut. Jan. 18, 1862; disch. May 27, 1862; re-enl. as private at Georgetown Aug., 1862.

Osgood, Orlando F., private, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs.; disch. Dec. 7, 1861, by G. O. No. 91; re-enl. Feb. 20, 1862, Co. E, 1st H. A.; trans. to Co. H, 19th Invalid Corps Oct. 27, 1863; disch. Feb. 20, 1864, surg. certif. for disability.

O'Hara, John, corp., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. for disability Nov. 30, 1862.

Orell, Maxim, private, enl. Sept. 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 17, 1864.

O'Connor, Patrick, private, enl. Nov. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; must. out Feb. 12, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 13, 1864, sergt., Co. G, 30th Regt.; must. out July 5, 1866.

Ordway, Calvin B., enl. 3 yrs., 31st Cav.

Osgood, Samuel O., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. May 30, 1863, disability.

Osgood, Joseph H., private, enl. July 22, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. June 11, 1863, disability; re-enl. Co. D, 1st Cav. Jan. 27, 1864; disch. June 6, 1865, disability.

O'Brian, Thos., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Apr. 23, 1863, disability.

Orberton, Wm. W. S., corp., enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Osgood, Jacob, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Ordway, Hazel E., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

O'Meeley, Michael, private, enl. Sept. 2, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.

O'Conner, Timothy, private, enl. Nov. 30, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; disch. Dec. 15, 1863, disability; rejected recruit.

Osgood, Geo. H., private, enl. Sept. 30, 1864, 3 yrs., 7th Batt.; must. out July 12, 1865, by G. O.

Orall, Geo. W., private, enl. June 27, 1864, 1 yr., Co. H, 17th Regt.; died Apr. 23, 1865, at Morehead City, N. C.

Ordway, Alvin B., enl. Oct. 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st Cav.; pro. corp. July 7, 1863; sergt.; must. out Nov. 7, 1864.

Ordway, Albert H., mue., must. in Aug. 5, 1864, 100 days, 17th Unattached Inf.; must. out Nov. 12, 1864.

Oldson, Jos. H., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Co., Unattached Inf.: must. out. June 30, 1865.

Phillips, Wm., private, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; wd. before Richmond; must. out June 24, 1864.

Page, Edgar B., private, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; pro. sergt.; must. out Dec. 28, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 29; pro. 1st lieut. July 23, 1864; capta n; Oct. 9, 1864; disch. Apr. 11, 1865.

Place (Johns), Jos. H., private, must. in June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; trans. to V. R. Corps Nov. 24, 1863.

Page, Walter S., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; trans. to 5th U. S. Art. Nov. 11, 1862.

Pillsbury, John M., July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.), hosp. steward; disch. Oct. 31, 1861, disability.

Parshley, Chas. H., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out and re-enl. Nov. 25, 1863; disch. July 28, 1865.

Priest, Johnson, private, enl. Jan. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. L, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. Apr. 30, 1864, disability

Parker, Geo. E., priv., enl. Mar. 14, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. Oct. 21, 1863, disability.

Parmelee, Henry H., private, enl. Mar. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); sergt.; died of wds. recd. June 22, 1864.

Pitts, Henry H., enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out July 3, 1864; absent, sick.

Peahody, Joel, private, enl. Feb. 21, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. L, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out Feb. 22, 1865.

Putnam, Alfred, sergt., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th 3d Regt.; disch. as private Aug. 31, 1863, disability; re-enl. for 1 yr, Co. A, 17th Regt., Sept. 6, 1864; disch. in Co A June 30, 1865, G. O.

Place, George H., corp., enl. April 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out as 1st sergt. Aug. 3, 1864.

Pinkham, Vincent T., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. May 28, 1863, disability.

Pattee, Harrison M., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1861.

Peirce, Frank C., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Pitez (Pick), John, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Peirce, Samuel W., private, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. June 30, 1863, disability.

Philbrook, David T., sergt., enl. Sept. 19, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed June 27, 1862, at Gaine's Mill, Va.

Palmer, George F., private, enl. Sept. 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Nov. 14, 1862, disability.

Pervear, James K., private, enl. Aug. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th, trans. to 4th U. S. Art. Oct. 23, 1862.

Perry, Samuel T., private, enl. Oct. 1, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 13, 1862, disability.

Plummer, Daniel L., enl. Sept. 1, 1861, 3 yrs., 3d Batt.; must. out Sept. 16, 1864.

Pemberton, Lewis E., private, enl. Sept. 3, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 23d Regt.; disch. May 19, 1862, disability.

Phillips, James, enl. Oct. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 28th Regt.; killed at Chantilly Sept. 1, 1862.

Page, Charles, private, enl. Oct. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 30th Regt.; disch. March 8, 1864, disability.

Parker, Niles G., sergt., enl. Sept. 19, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L 1st Cav.; lieut. in 1st So. Car. Colored Vols. about Jan., 1863; disch. Feb. 25, 1863.

Pervere, George H., private, enl. Aug. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt; disch. March 7, 1863, disability; re-enl. Sept. 19, 1864, Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865; order of war dept.

Peirce, Darius, private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Peirce, Levi K., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.: must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Philbrick, Isaac H., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; must. out June 9, 1865.

Pemberton, Davis E., 3 yrs., Co. B, 20th Regt.

Porter, Frank A., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; killed on picket, Nov. 29, 1863, at Knoxville, Tenn.

Palmer, Joseph B., private, enl. Feb. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. July 4, 1863, disability.

Page, Benjamin H., 3 yrs., Co. A, 77th N. Y. Regt.

Parker, Edgar A., private, enl. March 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; trans. to new organization.

Pecker, John B., corp., enl. March 10, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. June 28, 1864, disability; re-enl. March 27, 1865, Co. B, 62d Regt.; must. out May 5, 1865.

Phillips, Leonard W., sergt., enl. Jan. 25, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; trans. to new organization; died Oct. 5, 1864, in rebel prison (Co. H).

Palmer, Daniel S., private, enl. Feb. 15, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 11th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out Feb. 29, 1864; re-enl. same day; died Aug. 29, 1864, at Brattleboro, Vt.

Poor, John M., 1st sergt. enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Pearson, Thomas J., sergt., enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Patteo, Joseph L., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Pettengill, Alpheus J., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Pearl, Joshua K., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Payson, Daniel G., corp., enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Poor, Moses, private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Parker, Israel, private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; died at sea Feb. 4, 1863.

Pettengill, James W., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Pratt, Abell H., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Pinkham, Warren F., private, enl. Aug. 15, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. and appointed sergt. Co. I (100 days) July 23, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Pearson, Levi, private, must. in Oct. 7, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 8th Regt.; disch. Nov. 22, 1863, disability.

Purcell, Martin, must. in Sept. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 35th Regt.; must. out June 9, 1865.

Phillips, John, private, enl. Nov. 27, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; disch. Aug. 16, 1865, in Co. A.

Pagette, Joseph, private, enl. Nov. 27, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; died at Andersonville Oct. 14, 1864.

Proctor, Allen C., private, enl. Dec. 9, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. K, 2d H. A.; must. out as corp. in Co. H. Sept. 3, 1865.

Pearey, Joseph L., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Pettengill, George, private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Perley, Charles W., private, enl. Dec. 4, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Philbrick, Walter S., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, G. O.

Poor, George W., must. in Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 4th Cav.; must. out to re-enl. April 15, 1864; re-enl. April 16th as sergt. Co. L; pro. quar.-mas.-sergt. Feb. 21, 1865; 2d lieut. April 7, 1865; 1st lieut. July 8, 1865; must. out as 2d lieut. Nov. 14, 1865.

Phillips, George, private, enl. Dec. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. K, 5th Cav. (colored); must. out (absent) Oct. 31, 1865.

Perry, James E., private, enl. Nov. 18, 1864, 1 yr., 4th Batt.; must. out Oct. 14, 1865.

Parker, Eugene, private, enl. Oct. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 30th Regt.; disch. Dec. 6, 1861, disability.

Pinkham, Varnum F., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Powers, James H., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Patten, Thaddeus, must. in Oct. 13, 1862, 9 months, Co. H, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Proctor, Frederick, must. in Oct. 13, 1862, 9 months, Co. H, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Pond, Caleb S., mustered in Sept. 17, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. A, 2d H. A.; died Nov. 16, 1864, at Plymouth, N. C.

Pike, Edward P., must. in Aug. 22, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Poor, Luke, enl. Aug. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Powers, James, enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. D, 1st Batt. Front. Cav.; must. out. June 30, 1865.

Perkins, Hamilton L., enl. Nov. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf. musician; must. out June 30, 1865.

Pierce, Silas T., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Pierce, Thurston W., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Powell, Nathaniel, enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Prescott, John R., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Quero, Andrew, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864.

Quimby, John W., private, enl. Aug. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; disch. June 7, 1863; re-enl. Sept. 19, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 26, 1865, by order of war dept.

Roswell, James, private, 3 yrs., Co. G, 1st Regt.; disch. Georgetown, D. C., July 19, 1861, disability.

Rogers, William H., must. in June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; must out as corp.; trans. to Sig. Corps.

Rigg, George E., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; must. out July 8, 1864.

Riley, Judson, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); taken prisoner at temporary hospital, near Fairfax, Va., Aug. 28, 1862; disch. March 10, 1862, disability.

Renaud, Elysie, enl. Feb. 24, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. L, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out Feb. 21, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 22, 1864.

Regan, Daniel, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; wd. at North Carolina December, 1862 (Foster's Expedition); must. out Aug. 3, 1864; 4th sergt.

Rivers, Henry, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Dec. 4, 1863; re-enl same day; wd. at Washington, N. C., April, 1863; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865.

Rooke, Cornelius, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Roswell, John, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. Sept. 22, 1864, 7th Bat.; must. out Sept. 21, 1865.

Richards, Dearborn F., corp., enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Aug. 12, 1862, disability.

Runney, Ezra, private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Dec. 28, 1861; re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865.

Remmick, Charles F., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Apr. 23, 1863; re-enl. private, Co. H, 2d H. A.; Nov. 25, 1863, 3 yrs.; drowned in Potomac River April 24, 1864.

Rogers, Silas H., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; must out in Co. A, July, 1865.

Roach, Morris, private, enl. Dec. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Dec. 26, 1862; re-enl. July 13, 1864, V. R. C.; must. out Nov. 30, 1865, by order of war dept.

Roach, Cornelius, private, enl. Nov. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 28th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; disch. June 30, 1865, in Co. A; wd. Dec. 13, 1862, Aug. 17, 1864, March 25, 1865.

Robertson, Allen, private, enl. Nov. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; died Aug. 11, 1862 at New Orleans.

Robertson, Charles, Jr., private, enl. Oct. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 30th Regt.; died at Marine Hospital, N. O., Dec. 9, 1862.

Ray, Albert F., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; sergt. Sept. 23, 1861; sergt.-maj. Sept. 23, 1861; 2d lieut. June 28, 1862; 1st lieut. Jan. 27, 1863; detached Batt'n. Aug. 4, 1863; capt. Jan. 19, 1864; maj. May, 1865; must. out Nov. 4, 1865, as capt.

Roswell, James, private, enl. Sept. 19, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; disch. Oct. 26, 1862, disability.

Ryan, Michael, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Reynolds, Moses W., private, enl. Dec. 17, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 22d Regt.; miss. Aug. 27, 1862; re-enl. June 29, 1864, V. R. C.; no further record.

Remick, O. H., private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); killed May 19, 1864, at Spottsylvania, Va.

Rich, Samuel G. B., private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. Jan. 19, 1864, disability.

Richardson, Christopher C., private, enl. Aug. 8, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. Aug. 8, 1863, disability.

Rowe, George W., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; must. out June 9, 1865; Nov. 15, 1864, 3 yrs., 2d Batt. L. A.; disch. Aug. 11, 1865.

Rollins, Frank, private, enl. Oct. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt. disch. March 27, 1863, disability.

Ryme, Thomas, 3 yrs.

Roberts, George A., 3 yrs. Md.

Rollins, John, private, enl. March 14, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt.; must. out March 13, 1865.

Richards, Fitz J., corp., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Jan. 21, 1863, disability.

Richards, George, corp., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 17, 1864.

Riley, Thomas D., private, enl. Sept. 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Dec. 19, 1862, disability.

Reed, William O., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 20th Regt.; taken pris. at Ball's Bluff; must out in Co. D, 20th Bat., Aug. 21, 1864.

Ross, John H., private, enl. Sept. 4, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; disch. Apr. 9, 1863, disability.

Rich, Thomas P. (Josiah?), private, enl. Aug. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt., disch. Apr. 12, 1862, disability.

Rumney, John F., private, enl. Aug. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; taken pris. at Ball's Bluff; paroled 1862; disch. May 15, 1862.

Roake, Daniel, private, enl. Sept. 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 21, 1862, disability; re-enl. June 19, 1864, V. R. C.; must. out Dec. 11, 1864, disability.

Russell, Moody S., private, enl. Oct. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 26th Regt.; disch. Nov. 9, 1863, disability.

Roberts, Oliver A., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; pro. sergt.-maj. Sept. 20, 1862; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Robert, William P., 1st lieut., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; dismissed Nov. 10, 1865.

Ross, Franklin, private, enl. Aug. 22, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Reed, Elbridge G., private, enl. Aug. 30, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Regan, James, private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 60th Regt.; must. out as corp. Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Ricker, Frederick L., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out August 24, 1863.

Rand, Leonard, private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; pro. com. sergt. Sept. 20, 1862; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Richardson, Russell O., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Richardson, Charles F. private, enl. Nov. 27, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; disch. June 27, 1865.

Rankins, Jesse, private, enl. Nov. 2, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; disch, June 20, 1865.

Ryan, Patrick, private, enl. Nov. 12, 1863, 3 yrs, Co. H, 2d H. A.; killed in action Nov. 20, 1864.

Roberts, Benjamin G., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1864, 1 yr., Co M, 2d H. A.; trans. to 17th; died in Co. F, June 25, 1865, at Greensboro, N. C.

Roberts, Charles A., private, enl. Oct. 1, 1863, 3 yrs, Co. G, 3d H. A. must. out Sept. 18, 1865.

Reynolds, Orlando C., private, Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. E, 3d Cav.; pro. 2d lieut. Feb. 8, 1865; capt. Oct 5, 1865; must. out as 2d lieut. Sept. 28, 1865.

Roberts, George H., 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.

Rogers, David, private, enl. Oct. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 26th Regt.; disch. Sept. 16, 1862, disability.

Rascatt, Jay, private, enl. Sept. 6, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, by G. O.

Richardson, Christopher, Jr., private, enl. Nov. 15, 1864, 3 yrs., 2d Batt'n; must. out Aug. 11, 1865.

Richards, Charles G., private, Dec. 30, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. C. 59th Regt.; died of wds. Dec. 4, 1864, in Key Hospital.

Russ, Frank H., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Rehill, Thomas, must. in July 30, 1864, 3 yrs., 28th Unassigned Regt. No further record.

Robie, Chas. F., must. in Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. A, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Ramsey, Thomas C., must. in Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Ring, James C., must. in Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out as 2d lieut. June 30, 1865.

Ryan, Michael, enl. Oct. 22, 1864, V. R. C.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865, order of war dept.

Ricker, Leonard, must. in Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Scott, George M., 3 yrs., 10th Regt.

Stevens, James, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; must. out June 24, 1864.

Stevens, John M., enl. June 30, 1864. No record after enlistment.

Savage, Charles H., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864; absent, sick.

Smith, Frederick, enl. July 5, 1861, Co. B, 14th Regt. (1st H. A.); must. out Dec. 3, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 4th; died of wds. June 24, 1864.

Smith, Rufus G., private, July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt. (1st H. A.); must. out and re-enl. Nov. 5, 1863; must. out in Co. A, Aug. 16, 1865; absent.

Saunders, Joseph, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A).

Simpson, James A., private, enl. Feb. 22, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (1st H. A.); disch. April 17, 1863, disability.

Scott, John F., must. in Feb. 28, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st H. A.; must. out Feb. 28, 1865.

Scott, John W., 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (1st H. A.) Probably same as last preceding.

Smith, Aloys T., must. in Aug., 1861, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 30, 1862, order of war dept.

Splaine, Henry, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt., com. 1st lieut. Aug. 31, 1862; capt. Jan. 31, 1862(?); major Aug. 4, 1864; lieut.-col. Aug. 10, 1864, colonel June 16, 1865; must. out as lieut.-col. July 11, 1865.

Splainer, James, 1st sergt., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; com. 2d lieut Jan. 31, 1862; 1st lieut. Dec. 24, 1862; capt. Aug. 10, 1864; major Aug. 4, 1864; must. out July 11, 1865.

Splaine, Hubert, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E. 17th Regt.; must. out August 3, 1864; re-enl. Sept. 13, 1864, Co. A.; must. out June 30, 1865, G. O.

Smith, John, 2d sergt., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Stevens, Chas. M., private, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E 17th Regt.; disch. Aug. 31, 1862, disability.

Stevens, Casper, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Snee, Peter, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Spinney, Elbridge H., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. July 1, 1862, disability.

Stevens, Leonard S., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch, May 3, 1863, disability.

Simonds, Thos. B., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. Sept. 22, 1864, private, 7th Batt.; never joined; enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. A, 17th Regt., corp.; must. out June 30, 1865, in Co. F, order of war dept.

Steele, Simon S., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 4, 1864; must. out July 29, 1865, in Co. B, absent, sick.

Silver, John, private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864, corp.

Stewart, Chas. H., private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. May 30, 1863, disability; re-enl. Feb. 5, 1864, Co. D, 1st Cav.; must. out June 29, 1865.

Stewart, Geo. E., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 11, 1863, disability.

Stevens, Chas. W., enl. Mar. 30, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. F. 17th Regt.; disch. Apr. 24, 1862, disability; re-enl. Nov. 30, 1863, Co. E, 1st H. A.; died at Andersonville, Ga., Sept. 19, 1864.

Smith, Jos. E., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1865 (4?); re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; must. out July 11, 1865, in Co. B.

Stewart, Jas. C., private, enl. Sept. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. May 30, 1864, disability.

Salter, Thos. S., 1st lieut., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed at Gaines' Mills, Va., June 27, 1862.

Shute, Alonzo M., 2d lieut., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; com. 1st lieut. July 10, 1862; resigned service Nov. 25, 1862.

Salter, Wm., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Nov. 22, 1862, disability.

Steele, Wm. H., sergt. enl. Sept. 17, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; pro. 2d lieut. Dec. 16, 1862, 1st lieut. May 22, 1863; must. out Oct. 17, 1864.

Saunders, Alonzo C., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 11, 1862, disability.

Sylvester, Chas. H., private, enl. Sept. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. Jan. 5, 1864.

Steele, Wm. J. M., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Feb. 9, 1863, disability.

Steele, Geo. A., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; taken prisoner June 27, 1862; paroled July; returned to Co. Aug. 20, 1862; must. out to re-enl. Dec. 25, 1863; re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; killed in action June 3, 1864.

Sawyer, Leonard, Jr., muc., must. in Feb. 26, 1862, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 30, 1862, disability.

Stott, Geo. H., private, enl. Dec. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt.; must. out Feb. 10, 1862, disability.

Sargent, Benj. A., private, enl. Feb. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out Feb. 29, 1864; re-enl. Mar. 1, 1864, sergt. Co. A; trans. to Co. F; must. out July 11, 1865.

Scammall, Michael, private, enl. Aug. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; wd. at Gettysburg; trans. as sergt. to V. R. C. Sept. 17, 1863; disch. to re-enl. Dec. 21, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 22d; must. out June 6, 1865.

Sherwood, Duncan, private, enl. Aug. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; wd. at Gettysburg.

Stevens, Charles M., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 19th Regt.

Shehan, Daniel, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Splaine, Edward, must. in Oct. 22, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 1st Batt. H. Art.; must. out June 29, 1865.

Shehan, Wm., private, enl. Jan. 3, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; killed in action at James' Island, S. C., June 17, 1862.

Smith, Barney, private, enl. Dec. 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co, G, 30th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1864; re-enl. for 3 yrs., same Co.; disch. July 5, 1866.

Stackpole, Daniel, private, enl. Nov. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; disch. Jan. 2, 1862, disability.

Stacy, Moody K., enl. Oct. 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st Cav.; trans. to Co. I, 4th Cav.; must. out Dec. 31, 1863; re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.

Sargeot, Alfred M., sergt., enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.; must. out Apr. 20, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Apr. 21st, corp., Oct. 5, 1861; sergt., Nov. 3, 1862; 1st sergt., Jan. 1, 1864; 2d lieut., Nov. 15, 1864; resigned May 11, 1865.

Stockbridge, Liudley H., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav; pro. sergt. June 25, 1862; trans. to V. R. C.; disch. Mar. 30, 1865, to enl. in Co. 10, V. R. C.; com. 2d lieut. 4th Cav. Feb. 1, 1865; 1st lieut. Apr. 23, 1865; resigned July 21, 1865.

Stevens, Isaiah, private, enl. Sept. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; disch. May 11, 1863, disability.

Short, James, private, enl. Dec. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; supposed killed at Chantilly, Va., Sept. 1, 1862.

Shea, John, private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; died of wds. at Newbern, N. C., Feb. 6, 1863.

Shea, Patrick, enl. 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Smith, Calvin W., private, enl. Aug. 8, 1862, 3 yrs., 20th Regt.; no record after enlistment.

Saley, Peter G., private, enl. July 22, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864, corp., Co. E.

Stanley, Moses N., private, enl. July 10, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864, Co. C; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865.

Sweeney, James, private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; died.

Sargent, George F., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Coal Harbor, Va., June 6, 1864.

Sargent, Harrison P., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam.

Sanborn, Lewis T., corp., enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. as sergt. Sept. 8, 1863, disability.

Shaw, Andrew F., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Mar. 25, 1863, disability; re-enl. June 16, 1864, Co. D, 13th Regt., V. R. C.; disch. by G. O. Nov. 13, 1865.

Spaulding, Leonard V., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 8, 1862, disability.

Stover, Martin L., sergt., enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wounded at Antietam; disch. Dec. 23, 1862, disability.

Stover, Abner D., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; appointed ensign Nov., 1862; disch. for promotion; promoted acting ensign U. S. N. Dec. 23, 1862.

Shaw, James A., private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs, Co. G, 35th Regt.; was 3 months man; prisoner at Bull Run, paroled June, 1862; re-enl. July 21 at Haverhill, afterwards at Georgetown; must. out June 9, 1865.

Sawyer, Frank, 3 yrs, Maine.

Simmington, Thomas, 3 yrs., Co. B, 7th Regt. N. H.

Stevens, Samuel F., 3 yrs, Co. F, 17th Regt.

Sheys, Bryant, private, enl. Jan. 31, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. July 10, 1863, disability; re-enl. Sept. 1, 1864; unassigned recruit, 2d H. A.; rejected Oct. 8, 1864.

Stewart, Richard, 3 yrs.

Stimpson, John F., private, enl. Mar. 14, 1862, 3 yrs, Co. G, 17th Regt.; must. out as sergt. Apr. 2, 1863, disability.

Sullivan, John M., private, enl. Aug. 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 18th Regt.; disch. Aug. 11, 1862, disability.

Shean, John, must. in Dec. 7, 1863, 3 yrs., 2d H. A.; must. out July 18, 1865.

Splain, Thomas, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Smith, Jasper, 3 yrs., Co. E, 32d Regt.

Story, John B., private, enl. Dec. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st Batt'n; changed to 32d Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. Feb. 18, 1864.

Smith, William, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th (1st H. A.); trans. to V. R. C. Jan. 3, 1864.

Sargent, Charles A., private, must. in Dec. 9, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Feb. 7, 1863, disability.

Sullivan, Bartholomew, private, 3 yrs., Co. E 17th Regt.

Sawyer, Addison B., enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, 50th Regt.; hospital steward Nov. 12, 1862; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Stover, Joshua M., sergt., enl. Aug. 20, 1862 9 months, Co. F. 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. and appointed 1st sergt., Co. I, 60th Regt. (100 days), July 23, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Swett, Phillip C., corp., enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F. 50th Regt.; must. out. Aug. 24, 1863.

Sargent, Benjn. G., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.

Sawyer, Ira O., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Sawyer, Horace, private enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Stickney, Charles H., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; wounded at Port Hudson, La., June, 1863; died of same in hospital at Baton Rouge, June 20, 1863.

Sheldon, Otis E., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Spencer, John C., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; died at quarantine Apr. 9, 1863.

Stewart, Walter, private, enl. Aug. 20, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Stowe, Andrew F., 1st sergt., enl. Mar. 15, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; com. 2d lieut. Oct. 16, 1862; resigned May 15, 1863.

Sargent, Nuna, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Scates, Isaac S., private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 17th unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1864.

Spencer, Dennis, private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Stevens, James I., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Sargent, William, corp., must. in Mar. 12, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. H, 59th Regt.; must. out June 13, 1865, supernumerary.

Simmons, James, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out Nov. 28, 1863, and re-enl. same day; must. out Aug. 16, 1865, in Co. A.

Shaw, Charles H., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out and re-enl. Nov. 25, 1863; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.

Simpson, William, private, enl. Dec. 2, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. G, 2d H. A., died in Andersonville Sept. 22, 1864, Co. H.

Seelye, Charles H., private, enl. Dec. 4, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. G, 2d H. A.; died pris. at Andersonville, Ga., Aug. 14, 1864.

Shay, John, private, enl. Dec. 7, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; died pris. at Andersonville, Ga., Sept. 4, 1864.

Snee, Patrick, private, enl. Dec. 1, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; disch. June 19, 1865, disability.

Snell, Charles E., private, enl. Nov. 2, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; pro. capt.; died at Annapolis, Md., Dec. 4, 1864.

Stanton, Michael, private, enl. Sept. 10, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. G, 2d H, A.; must. out Sept. 3, 1865.

Sargent, Amos B., private, enl. Dec. 8, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st H. A.; disch. Dec. 16, 1864, disability.

Slits, Henry, private, enl. Sept. 19, 1864, 1 yr., Co. G, 2d H. A.; disch. June 26, 1865.

Shirley, Daniel, private, enl. Nov. 19, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; died Oct. 26, 1864, at St. Augustine, Fla.

Savage, John, private, enl. Nov. 13, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.

Stewart, John W., private, enl. Dec. 12, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865, absent, sick.

Shanley, Thomas, private, enl. Sept. 22, 1864, 3 yrs., 7th Batt.; must. out July 15, 1865, G. O.

Sides, George S., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Stockbridge, Calvin R., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, G. O.

Simonds, Thomas B., corp., enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, in Co. F, order of war dept.

Sargent, Albert M., enl. Sept. 13, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt., disch. June 30, 1865; order of war dept.

Stevens, Charles, private, enl. Feb. 23, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. G, 59th Regt.; trans. June 1, 1865, to Co. G, 57th Regt.; must. out July 30, 1865.

Shannon, Frederick P., must. in Dec. 1, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. C, 1st H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865, Co. M.

Sylvester, Edward, corp. enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Simington, Samuel, private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Stewart, Charles P., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Stockman, Henry W., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Stevens, Edward G., must. in Sept. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 2d Regt.; must. out July 27, 1865.

Shehan, Daniel J., must. in June 11, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 9th Regt.; trans. Feb. 27, 1864, to V. R. C.

Splaine, William, corp., must. in Sept. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1863, disability, to Co. E.

Stevens, James, must. in June 11, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. I, 19th Regt.; died of wds. Sept. 20, 1864.

Smith, Moses E., must. in July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 1st H. A.; died Oct. 10, 1864, in Savannah, Ga

Smith, Rufus, must. in Dec. 7, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; killed April 20, 1864, at Plymouth, N. C.

Sheppard, Levi B., must. in Dec. 24, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. M, 2d H. A. (2d Major-sergt.); must. out Sept. 3, 1865.

Shutter, Allison, enl. Aug. 1, 1863, Vet. Res. Corps. No further record.

Sullivan, Dennis, enl. Sept. 20, 1864, Vet. Res. Corps. No further record.

Sherburn, Edward S., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Stickney, Joseph, enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Towle, Samuel K., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); com. asst. sur. 14th Regt. July 5, 1861; sur. 39th Regt. Feb. 26, 1862; must. out March 3, 1865.

Tarle, Van B. F., private, July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (1st H. A.); must. out Dec., 1863, to re-enl.; re enl. Dec. 4, 1863; died at Andersonville, Ga. Jan. 1, 1865.

Tate, James, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt. (1st H. A.); must. out Nov., 1863, to re-enl.; re-enl. Nov. 5, 1863; must. out Aug. 16, 1865, as sergt. Co. E, 1st H. A.

Taggart, Alfred G., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.

Tompkins, Enoch F., enl. July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 17th Regt.; com. 1st lieut. Aug. 24, 1861; promoted capt. Dec. 19, 1861; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. and recom. capt. Aug. 3, 1864; must. out July 11, 1865.

Taggart, John, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; prisoner of war since Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; died at Andersonville Prison, Ga., June 19, 1864.

Towle, William, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. June 22, 1863, disability.

Turner, William H., enl. July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; 2d lieut. Aug. 21, 1861; pro. 1st lieut. Oct. 28, 1861; disch. and resigned April 25, 1863; com. 1st lieut., 2d H. A. July 27, 1864; never must.; com. cancelled.

Tucker, John, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Tullock, William, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Titcomb, John E., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out as sergt. Aug. 3, 1864.

Thompson, John J., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; com. capt. Oct. 1, 1861; dismissed the service Nov. 22, 1862.

Thurston, Geo. O., private, enl. Sept. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H. 22d Regt.: disch. Nov. 1, 1862, disability.

Tandy, Richard M., private, must. in Feb. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Feb. 21, 1863; re-enl. Co. C, 59th Regt. Dec. 24, 1863; trans. V. R. C. Sept. 9, 1864.

Tilton, Warner W., sergt., enl. July 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; com. 2d lieut. June 20, 1862; 1st lieut. Feb. 27, 1863; disch. Nov. 23, 1863, disability.

Tenney, Benjamin P., private, enl. Aug. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; tran. V. R. C. Jan. 16, 1864.

Turner, Charles, band, enl. Sept. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., 22d Regt.; disch. Aug. 11, 1862, order of war dept.

Titcomb, Thomas P., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; rejected recruit Nov. 16, 1862.

Tilton, Alfred M., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Tibbetts, Russell S., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Tirrell, Phillip B., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Teel, Michael C., private, Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; trans. to V. R. C.

Thompson, George W., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G. 35th Regt.; disch. Feb. 25, 1862, disability.

Thompson, William H., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Oct. 30, 1862, disability.

Tilton, Caleb E., corp., enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; injured R. R. accident March 27, 1863, Alexandria, Va.; must. out Jan. 9, 1865.

Thompson, Nathan B., enl. 3 yrs., N. H.

Tileson, Albert O., enl. 3 yrs.

Trask, Julius, enl. 3 yrs., 1st Cav.

Tarbox, Charles H., private, enl. 3 yrs., Co. G. 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam.

Taylor, John, Jr., private, enl. July 10, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; died Nov. 9, 1861, Baltimore, Md.

Thurlow, Edwin, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out to re-enl. Feb. 28, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 29th; sergt. Co. B; disch. as sergt. July 31, 1865, order war dept.

Thompson, Levi P., enl. January 9, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; com. capt. Jan. 9, 1862; disch. Sept. 20, 1862; died Sept. 20, 1862.

Tuck, John A., mus., enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out August 24, 1863.

Thompson, Horace, private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Tucker, William, W., private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Tubbs, Edward S., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; corp.; trans. to 6th Ill. Cav. July 17, 1863.

Taylor, John H., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Thompson, Hazen V., enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Tappan, Edmund S., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Tucker, Francis W., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1962, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Thompson, Stephen M., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt., disch. Dec. 6, 1862, disability,

Thompson, Moses W., must. in April 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. G, 58th Regt.; died July 19, 1864, Andersonville.

Towle, Carrol M., private, enl. Nov. 18, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; disch. June 12, 1865, order war dept.

Toyiey, Charles W., private, Dec, 7, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.

Tuck, Chas. H., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must out June 30, 1865.

Veal, Gustavus D., private, enl., Oct. 4, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Ventelier, Joseph, private, enl. Nov. 28, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; trans. to V. R. C. July 23, 1864; trans. to navy.

Vamey, Wm. H., must. in Nov. 16, 1864, 1 yr., 2d Unattached Inf.; must. out July 7, 1865.

Veal, George W., must. in Aug. 4, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. C, 2d H. A.; must. out Sept. 3. 1865.

Warren, Warren W., 3 yrs., Co. K, 14th Regt.

Webb, William H., private, enl. May 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 2d Regt.; disch. July 6, 1862, disability.

Witham, Walter, private, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 11th Regt.; missing in action July 2, 1863.

Whittier, Charles, private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 12th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Jan. 16, 1863, disability; re-enl. June 3, 1864, V. R. C.; no further record.

Willey, James, private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; must. out July 8, 1864.

Welch, Charles R., 3 yrs., Aug. 6, 1861, Co. E, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A).

Woodward, Thomas T., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. Dec. 12, 1862, disability.

Weir, Alexander G., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out Apr. 12, 1864, disability.

Woods, John, private, enl. Feb. 20, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. L, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out to re-enl. Feb. 21, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 22, 1864; trans. to V. R. C. March 1, 1865.

Witham, Charles O., private, enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 11, 1861, disability; re-enl. Sept. 18, 1861, Co. B, 30th Regt.; no further record.

Webb, William, private, enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Apr. 24, 1862, disability.

Whittier, Francis private, enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out to re-enl. Dec. 17, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 18th; must. out in Co. A, July 24, 1865.

Wallace, David, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Wallace, John, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Webber, Henry B., enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; com. sergt. Oct. 12, 1862; must. out to re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 2, 1864; 1st lieut. Aug. 15, 1864; capt. Sept. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 31, 1864.

Woodman, John W., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, Co. F, 17th Regt., must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Welch, Joseph A., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; trans. to band Aug. 27, 1861; must. out as corp., to re-enl. Jan. 4, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 4th, as sergt. Co. F.; pro. 2d lieut. June 1, 1865; must. out as sergt. July 11, 1865.

Wallace, William, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.

Wharton, Martin S., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must out as corp. Aug. 3, 1864.

Woodington, William, private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 25, 1862, disability.

White, George A., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Whipple, George, private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. July 16, 1863.

Watson, Dana B., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 7, 1864.

Ward, Charles J., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed at Gaine's Mills, Va., June 27, 1862.

Webster, George L., private, enl. Sept. 11, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed at Gaine's Mills June 27, 1862.

Wells, Francis H., private, enl. Sept. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Jan. 12, 1862, disability.

Welch, Richard, private, enl. Sept. 9, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Nov. 12, 1863, disability.

Wilson, Abel R., must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 17th Regt.; must out Jan. 5, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. as corp.; must out in Co. B, July 11, 1865.

Wallace, Benjamin F., must. in Jan. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 19th Regt.; disch. Jan. 12, 1863, disability.

Woodward, William, private, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.

Woodard, William, private, enl. Sept. 4, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; disch. as Daniel Jan. 22, 1863, disability.

Woodward, Reuben L., 3 yrs., Co. C, 21st Regt.; disch. Sept. 10, 1862, disability ; record lost.

Willis, William H., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1861, Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. March 14, 1863, disability.

Worthen, Perley A., private, must. in Oct. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 26, 1862, disability.

Wilson, John H., private, enl. Aug. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1861.

Wheeler, Charles S., private, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Dec. 6, 1861, disability ; re-enl. June 11, 1864; V. R. C.; must. out March 1, 1865, disability.

Weeks, Charles E., enl. Sept. 30, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 24th Regt., must. out Jan. 1, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Jan. 2, 1864, as sergt.; must. out Jan. 20, 1866.

Woodbury, Joseph W., private, enl. Aug. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., 1st Batt'n.; disch. Nov. 16, 1862, disability.

Whittier, Lyman P., private, enl. Sept. 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; died at Port Royal, Beaufort, S. C., Sept. 8, 1862.

Wentworth, Hiram S., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; trans. to 4th Cav.; must. out Sept. 25, 1864.

Whittier, Kimball, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; disch. Jan. 24, 1863, disability.

Welch, Joseph S., private, enl. Aug. 9, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must out Oct. 17, 1864.

Walker, Franklin L., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Apr. 3, 1863, disability.

Ward, Nathaniel M., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 10, 1863, disability.

Willey, Edwin S., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Nov. 30, 1863, disability.

Wight, Orlando S., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.

Whitman, Frank M., corp., enl. Aug. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Spottsylvania; disch. Dec. 18, 1864, disability.

White, Albert H., private, enl. Aug. 8, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; must out as corp. June 19, 1865.

Willis, Alfred, private, enl. Aug. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt., disch. Feb. 11, 1862, disability.

Williams, Watson S., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam.

Woodman, Clarence H., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam.

Woodward, Horace F., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. March 16, 1864, disability.

Wise, John B., enl. Jan. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. K, 30th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1864, to re-enl., re-enl. Jan. 2d, prisoner ; disch. Jan. 20, 1865.

Webster, Wm. F., private, enl. Aug. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Jan. 24, 1864, by order Gen. Banks.

Wilson, Wm. T., enl. 3 yrs., 3d Md. Regt.

Wright, Joseph, enl. 3 yrs.

Walker, Henry, enl. 3 yrs., 5th N. H. Regt.

Wiggin, ———, enl. 3 yrs., 2d N. H. Regt.

West, Arthur W., private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Wallace, Geo. Wm., corp., enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; com. 1st lieut. Sept. 3, 1862 (was in 3 months' service); must. out Aug. 24, 1863 ; re-enl. Dec. 30, 1864, sergt., Co. B, 1st Batt. Frontier Cav.; Regimental Com. Sergt.; must. out May 29, 1865.

Webster, John L., corp., enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Whittier, Alvin N., corp., enl. Aug. 28, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.

Whitman, Geo. H., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Walton, Thos., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863 ; re-enl. Nov. 30, 1863, in Co. H, 2d H. A., 3 yrs. ; disch. June 19, 1865, disability.

Woodcock, Farnham P., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Williams, Jos., private, enl. Aug. 20, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge, La., April 15, 1863.

Walker, John H., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Walker, Wilson M., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Webster, John P., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 60th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.

Webb, Daniel, private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863 ; re-enl. Co. I, 60th Regt., 100 days, July 23, 1864 ; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Webster, Wm. W., private, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge Mar. 8, 1863.

Whittier, Wm. T., private, enl. Sept. 2, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863 ; re-enl. in Co. H, 59th Regt., Mar. 4, 1864 ; trans. to Co. B, 57th Regt.; must. out July 30, 1866.

Wallace, Wm. C., private, enl. Sept. 13, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge June 16, 1863.

Whittier, Wm. T., must. in Mar. 12, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. H, 59th Regt.; trans. June 1, 1865, to Co. H, 57th Inf.; must. out July 30, 1865.

Williams, John H., private, enl. Sept. 10, 1864, 1 yr., Co. I, 2d H. A.; trans. to 17th Regt.

Welch, John, private, enl. Sept. 5, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 2d H. A.; trans. to 17th Regt. Jan. 16, 1865 ; must. out June 30, 1865, order war dept.

Whiting, Chas. A., private, enl. Sept. 7, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Unat. H. A.; must. out June 16, 1865.

Weir, John C., private, enl. Dec. 23, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. B, 59th Regt.; must. out June 12, 1865, order war dept.

Warren, Henry A., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. E, 61st Regt.; killed in action at Petersburg, Va., Apr. 2, 1865.

Wardwell, Jos. M., corp., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Webster, Addison A., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Wilson, Wm. F., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Walton, Jos., must. in July 1, 1865 (?), 3 yrs., Co. F, 1st H. A.; died in rebel prison (no date).

Ward, Patrick, must. in Dec. 7, 1863, 3 years, Co. H, 2d H. A.; prisoner April 20, 1864 ; joined the rebel service.

Wood, Charles A., enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.

Whiting, Charles, enl. Dec. 29, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. L, 3d Cav.; must. out July 28, 1865, Co. E.

Whitney, Charles C., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. D, 1st Battn. Front. Cav. ; must. out June 30, 1865.

Wentworth, William F., must. in Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf. ; must. out June 30, 1865.

Wilder, Edward P., sergt., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. Nov. 13, 1864; 1st lieut. 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Walsh, James S., sergt., must. in Sept. 24, 1862, 9 months, Co. B, 48th Regt.; pro. to 2d lieut. July 8, 1863; must. out Sept. 3, 1863; re-enl. Nov. 13, 1864, 2d lieut. 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
Young, Joseph, 14th Regt.
York, Alfred J., private, enl. Feb. 10, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; disch. Oct. 24, 1862, disability; probably same; enl. Dec. 26, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; disch. June 20, 1865, disability.
Young, Osgood, private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; disch. Oct. 28, 1863, disability.
Young, George A., private, enl. Aug. 8, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.
York, John S., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 10, 1863, disability.

Recapitulation.

No. of men enlisted and credited to Haverhill's quotas, as per Adjutant-General's Report	1201
No. re-enlisted	218
No. enlisted in 21st U. S. Colored Troops	40
In the Naval service	174
Total	1633

Record of Colored Troops in Haverhill Quota.

Twenty-first Regiment; Three Years' Service.

Bates, Horace, Turkey Creek, S. C., enl. Aug. 11, 1861.
Baity, Caisar, Beaufort, S. C., enl. Aug. 13, 1864.
Balber, Jacob, St. Marys, Ga., enl. Aug. 4, 1864.
Barber, Abram, Edgefield, S. C., enl. Aug. 4, 1864.
Baulding, Abram, Savannah, Ga., enl. Aug. 21, 1864.
Chisholm, Jeff, Beaufort, S. C., enl. Aug. 8, 1864.
Campbell, James, Washington, N. C., enl. Aug. 12, 1864.
Cummings, Hannibal, Savannah, Ga., enl. Aug. 17, 1864.
Caps, Anderson, Johnson Co., N. C., enl. Aug. 20, 1864.
Conan, Thomas, Wilmington, N. C., enl. Aug. 13, 1864.
Davis, Robert, Charleston, S. C., enl. Aug. 17, 1864.
Freeman, Edward, Nassau, Fla., col. Aug. 4, 1864.
Fogas, Brutus, Hilton Head, S. C., enl. Aug. 23, 1864.
Gillard, Hector, Hilton Head, S. C., enl. Aug 22, 1864.
Green, Jack, Beaufort, S. C., enl. Aug. 15, 1864.
Holmes, William, South Carolina, enl. Aug. 23, 1864.
Hamilton, James, Pelton, S. C., enl. Aug. 25, 1864.
Jones, Paul, Liberty, Ga., enl. Aug. 12, 1864.
Jackson, John, Beaufort, S. C., enl. Aug. 16, 1864.
Jenkins, William, Beaufort, S. C., enl. Aug. 15, 1864.
Johnson, Isaac, Beaufort, S. C., enl. Aug. 22, 1864.
Jenkins, Cyrus, Edisto, S. C., enl. Aug. 24, 1864.
Mack, Moses, Charleston, S. C., enl. Aug. 15, 1864.
McNeil, Morris, South Carolina, enl. Aug. 20, 1864.
Pringle, Moses, Beaufort, S. C., enl. Aug. 10, 1864.
Palito, J. Amos, St. Helena, S. C., enl. Aug. 11, 1864.
Price, Simon, Savannah, Ga., enl. Aug. 21, 1864.
Robinson, Peter, St. Helena, S. C., enl. Aug. 10, 1864.
Rivers, Ned, Solar, South Carolina, enl. Aug. 25, 1864.
Spaulding, Lewis, Georgia, enl. Aug. 8, 1864.
Shoebread, Ned, Charleston, S. C., enl. Aug. 13, 1864.
Simmons, James, Charleston, S. C., enl. Aug. 17, 1864.
Small, Ned, South Carolina, enl. Aug. 15, 1864.
Smith, Alexander, Richmond, Va., enl. Aug. 23, 1864.
Ward, Augustus, Savannah, Ga., enl. Aug. 15, 1864.
Wilson, Robert, Lancaster, Va., enl. Aug. 17, 1864.
Wallis, Henry, North Carolina, enl. Aug. 22, 1864.
Wright, Samuel, Charleston, S. C., enl. Aug. 23, 1864.
Washington, William, Charleston, S. C., enl. Aug. 23, 1864.
White, Jerry, Hilton Head, S. C., enl. Aug. 22, 1864.

Record of Seamen and Officers in the Naval Service, quota of Haverhill.

Anderson, George, ent. service Nov. 10, 1862, on Colorado.
Andrews, Alden C., ent. service Oct. 27, 1862, on Colorado.
Asselm, Herman, ent. service Oct. 24, 1862, on Colorado.
Anderson, John, ent. service Nov. 14, 1862, on Western World.
Arrington, Edward, ent. service Nov. 17, 1862, King Fisher.
Adams, Charles, ent. service Nov. 18, 1862, King Fisher.
Aldrich, John W., ent. service May 9, 1864.
Blake, James.
Bailey, Stephen, served on Huron.
Bums, Matthew, served on Huron; ent. service Aug. 5, 1862.
Barney, Charles S., act. ensign, ent. service Jan. 29, 1863; 1863 com. Buckthorne; 1864, Neptune; pro. act. master; disch. Oct. 3, 1865.
Baker, John H., ent. service May 19, 1863; served steamer Cambridge, act. ensign, 1863; disch. act. master Sept. 16, 1865.
Bailey, Stephen W., ent. service Nov. 29, 1861; served on North Carolina.
Balkham, William, Nov. 1, 1862, on Colorado.
Berry, James W., Oct. 30, 1862, on Ossipee.
Bush, Oliver P., Oct. 3, 1862, on Huron.
Bennett, Stephen, Nov. 1, 1862, Colorado.
Bailey, Sylvanus C., Nov. 4, 1862, Huron.
Bullock, Edgar O., Sept. 29, 1863, Niagara.
Bryan, Thomas, Aug. 5, 1864.
Blood, Edwin J., Sept. 5, 1864.
Canavan, John, Oct. 18, 1862, Colorado.
Croone, John, Oct. 18, 1862, Colorado.
Cook, Patrick, Oct. 22, 1862, Colorado.
Camps, Andrew, Oct. 24, 1862, Colorado.
Conner, Maurice, Oct. 25, 1862, Colorado.
Chaples, Albion, Oct. 27, 1862 Colorado.
Chase, Charles, Oct. 27, 1862, Colorado.
Connell, George W., Nov. 1, 1862, Colorado.
Corne, Samuel, Oct. 28, 1862, musician.
Clayton, James, Oct. 29, 1862, Colorado.
Cassidy, John, Nov. 3, 1862.
Colby, William H., Nov. 4, 1862, Colorado.
Craig, John W., April 24, 1864.
Codin, John, July 28, 1864.
Dorsey, Edward, July 21, 1864.
Duffey, Patrick, August 17, 1861.
Finney, Joseph.
Foster, George B.
Griffin, Solomon, April 26, 1864.
Godfrey, John.
Hanlon, Thomas.
Hamler, George W., May 2, 1861.
Hartford, Sobriska E., May 3, 1861, "Mississippi."
Hutchinson, Christopher, May 3, 1861, "Bainbridge."
Hicks, Abram, May 2, 1861, "Colorado."
Haley, Dennis, May 4, 1861.
Hall, Joseph, May 3, 1861, "Mississippi."
Hart, Oliver H., May 3, 1861, "Bainbridge."
Haggerty, William, May 2, 1861, "South Carolina."
Hauldsback, Albert, May 4, 1861.
Hunt, John, May 4, 1861, South Carolina.
Harvey, Charles, May 7, 1861, South Carolina.
Howard, George A., May 7, 1861, Mississippi.
Harney, William, May 6, 1861, Colorado.
Harvey, Michael, May 4, 1861, Mississippi.
Hare, James, May 4, 1861, Massachusetts.
Hartley, Alston, May 4, 1861, Massachusetts.
Harrigan, Bartholomew, May 6, 1861, 3 years on Colorado; discharged September 16, 1863.
Hickey, John, May 3, 1861, Mississippi.
Hodgkins, James E., May 3, 1861, Mississippi.
Horan, John, May 8, 1861, South Carolina.
Honan, Jeremiah, May 8, 1861, South Carolina.
Haley, John, May 9, 1861, Bainbridge.
Hackett, Philip, May 8, 1861, Mississippi.
Howard, Marcus, May 9, 1861, Mississippi.
Hurse, Luther Page, May 10, 1861, Mississippi.
Hanson, Charles G., May 8, 1861, Mississippi.
Haley, Nathaniel B., May 13, 1861, Mississippi.
Harmon, John W., May 13, 1861, Mississippi.
Hartley, Thomas, May 13, 1861, South Carolina.
Havney, Robert E., May 14, 1861, Susquehanna.
Houston, Salomon W., May 14, 1861, Massachusetts.
Hamlet, Philip, May 14, 1861, South Carolina.
Howard, Charles S., September 12, 1862, Sabine.
Haley, Henry, September 29, 1872; released by writ of hab. corp. October 20, 1862.
Hayes, Patrick, September 29, 1862, Onward.
Harvey, Frederick F., October 1, 1862, Colorado.

Harris, John, October 2, 1862, Ossipee.
Harris, Charles W., October 4, 1862, Ossipee.
Hanson, Andrew, October 3, 1862, Ossipee.
Haggerty, John, October 3, 1862, Ossipee.
Hawes, Walter, October 7, 1862, Ossipee.
Hayes, James, October 3, 1862, Ossipee.
Herl, James, October 6, 1862, Colorado.
Harrington, Patrick, October 8, 1862; taken by writ of hab. corp. October 17, 1862.
Hart, James Gage, October 9, 1862.
Homer, Thomas, enl. October 7, 1862, on Colorado.
Hallen, James, enl. October 11, 1862, San Jacinto.
Holmes, James, enl. October 11, 1862, Colorado.
Hamilton, William H., enl. October 13, 1862, Colorado.
Holm, George T., enl. October 8, 1862, Colorado.
Hayes, Patrick, enl. October 13, 1862, Colorado.
Higgins, Ellen L., enl. October 16, 1862, Colorado.
Hendricks, Edward, enl. October 15, 1862, Colorado.
Hart, Michael, enl. October 15, 1862, Colorado.
Harvey, Samuel, enl. October 21, 1862, Onward.
Hare, William, enl. November 1, 1862, on Ossipee.
Hayes, John, enl. November 1, 1862, Huron.
Hawkins, Joseph A., enl. November 3, 1862, Huron.
Huso, Frank G., enl. May 5, 1864, on Sabine.
Hanlon, Thomas, enl. July 25, 1864.
Hanlon, James, enl. July 25, 1864.
Harrogan, John, enl. August 17, 1864.
Irwin, James V., enl. September 19, 1862, on Sabine.
Isbrester, John, enl. May 6, 1861, Mississippi.
Joy, Emerson G., enl. May 2, 1861, South Carolina.
Jones, John H., enl. April 24, 1861, Mississippi.
Jeffrey, Jehiel, enl. May 3, 1861.
Jones, Merrick, enl. May 3, 1861, Mississippi.
Jenning, Thomas, enl. April 30, 1861, Mississippi.
Johnson, Charles, enl. May 3, 1861, Bainbridge.
Johnson, William, enl. May 7, 1861, Colorado.
Johnson, Benjamin, enl. May 11, 1861, South Carolina.
Johnson, George, enl. April 13, 1861, Mississippi.
Jackson, Benjamin F., enl. May 11, 1861, South Carolina.
Jenness, John, enl., May 13, 1861, Massachusetts.
Johnson, William, enl. May 4, 1861, South Carolina.
Johnson, Charles H., enl. November 26, 1862, King Fisher.
Jackson, Wm. H., enl. Sept. 18, 1862; trans. to New York, Oct. 9, 1862.
Jenkins, James, enl. Sept. 23, 1862; trans. to New York Oct. 9, 1862.
Johnson, Peter, enl. September 28, 1862, Sabine
Johnson, Wm., enl. Sept. 24, 1862; trans. to New York Oct. 9, 1862.
Jacobson, Jacob, enl. September 25, 1862, Onward.
Johnson, Nathaniel, enl. September 30, 1862, Onward.
Johnson, John, enl. October 3, 1862, on Colorado.
Jackson, Joseph, enl. October 8, 1862, Colorado.
Johnson, Simon, enl. October 9, 1862, Colorado.
James, John, enl. October 10, 1862, on Colorado.
Jameson, John, enl. October 14, 1862, Colorado.
Jones, Isaac, enl. October 20, 1862, Colorado.
Johnson, John, enl. November 4, 1862, Colorado.
Jayne, John, enl. November 14, 1862, on King Fisher.
Jaques, Edmund, enl. November 22, 1862, King Fisher.
King, J. Glancy, enl. May 11, 1861, on Colorado.
Kerr, George, enl. May 11, 1861, Mississippi.
Kiefe, Thomas, enl. May 14, 1861.
Kendall, Patrick, enl. April 19, 1861.
Kellock, Edward, enl. May 11, 1861, South Carolina.
Kelly, John, enl. May 7, 1861, Mississippi.
Kimball, Augustus, enl. May 7, 1861, Colorado.
Kimball, William W., enl. July 24, 1861, Sabine.
Kelly, James, enl. Sept. 12, 1862; trans. to New York Oct. 9, 1862.
Kalean, John, enl. Sept. 16, 1862; trans. to New York Oct. 9, 1862.
Kirk, Andrew, enl. September 11, 1862, on Sabine.
Keaton, Robert H., enl. Sept. 11, 1862; trans. to New York, Oct. 9, 1862.
Knight, Henry H., enl. Sept. 10, 1862; trans. to New York Oct. 9, 1862.
Keene, Thomas, enl. April 29, 1864.
Kennedy, Dennis, enl. June 6, 1864.
Kimball, Frank.
Lynch, Michael, enl. August 11, 1864.
McCarty, John, enl. February 7, 1862, on Katahdin.
McVay, Charles Page, enl. September 3, 1864.
McGrash, Terrance, enl. August 12, 1864.
McKenney, Patrick, enl. August 2, 1864.
Murphy, Daniel.
Mayson, Edward.
Nabro, Pedro, enl. February 12, 1862, on San Jacinto.
Norton, Henry C., enl. May 3, 1864.
Nichols, Ebenezer M., enl. September 20, 1864.
O'Leary, Cornelius.
Rundlett, James M., enl. September 8, 1864.
Ross, John R., enl. April 31, 1864.
Shea, Charles, enl. December 30, 1861, on Hartford.
Sturtavant, George C., enl., July 27, 1864.
Scannell, John.
Todd, Albert.
Tilton, David.
Tasker, Lewis.
Whipple, Henry, enl. February 13, 1862, on Katahdin.
Whitney, George D., enl. February 11, 1862, on Chocorua.
West, Walter H., on Nightingale; died on that ship off Pensacola, Florida, September 23, 1863, of yellow fever.
White, John.

CHAPTER CLXIV.

HAVERHILL—(*Continued*).

APPENDIX.

Population of Haverhill.

1765	1,980	1830	3,896	1865	10,740
1790	2,408	1840	4,336	1870	13,092
1800	2,730	1850	5,877	1875	14,628
1810	2,682	1855	7,932	1880	18,472
1820	3,070	1860	9,995	1885	21,745

Act of Incorporation as City, March 10, 1869. In 1875 State Census gave population, 14,628. In 1885 State Census gave population, 21,795. Increase in ten years, 7167. Percentage of increase, 49.00. Average percentage of increase in the State, 23.66. Brockton had 96.47 percentage of increase; Holyoke, 71.56; Malden, 51.31; Lynn, 10.70.

Haverhill is fifteenth in relative rank of cities and towns in the State, as to population, leading Gloucester, Brockton, Newton, Malden, Fitchburg, Waltham, Newburyport and Northampton.

The villages are Riverside, Rocks Village, Ayer's Village, East Parish, North Parish, Tilton's Corner, West Parish.

The total foreign born in Haverhill, in 1885, was 4161; percentage, 19.09. In 1875 the percentage was 14.68.

In 1885 there were 10,455 males, 11,340 females. Percentage of males, 49.97; of females, 52.03.

There were 5623 voters; non-voters, 229; aliens, 894; total, 6746. Of voters, 4903 were native born, 720 foreign born and naturalized. Voters were 83.35 per cent. of polls.

There were 4947 families; average size of family, 4.41.

There were 3681 dwelling-houses,—3491 of wood, 185 of brick, 5 of wood and brick; 61 dwelling-houses unoccupied.

There were 48 males and 88 females—total, 136—over 80 years of age.

Place of birth.—Native born were 17,634; born in Massachusetts, 10,595; in New Hampshire, 6015; foreign born, 4161; in Canada (of English extraction), 324; in Canada (French extraction), 1183; born in England, 320; in Ireland, 1556; in Nova Scotia, 392.

In 1888, Nicholas Costello, of Haverhill, was said to be the oldest person in Essex County and in the State, being 104 years old.

There were 65 persons, in Haverhill, known to be over 80.

Haverhill City Government for 1888.

Mayor—George H. Carleton.
City Marshal—Daniel W. Hammond.
Alderman-at-Large—Augustine M. Allen.
Aldermen—Ward 1, George H. Appleton; Ward 2, George A.

Greene; Ward 3, Jackson Webster; Ward 4, Alonzo Way; Ward 5, Wm. Nason; Ward 6, W. W. Potter.

Common Council—Ward 1, E. W. Flanders, E. B. Savage; Ward 2, George D. Ayer, Samuel W. George; Ward 3, Dennie Rainville, Albert Dean; Ward 4, Arthur E. Fernald, Wm. Bray; Ward 5, Daniel S. Chase, Dudley P. Corser; Ward 6, Edward A. Fitts, Horace M. Sargent. Daniel S. Chase, president; George W. Noyes, clerk.

City Clerk and Treasurer—David B. Tenney.

City Solicitor—Wm. H. Moody.

Superintendent of Highways—Orrin L. Sargent.

Chief Engineer and Superintendent of Fire Alarm—Edward Charlesworth.

Collector of Taxes—Jesse H. Harriman.

Assessors—Charles W. Morse, Ira O. Sawyer, Thomas Lahey.

City Physician—G. Coburn Clement, M.D.

Superintendent of Public Library—Edward Capen.

Board of Health—John F. Croston, the city physician *ex-officio*, and Jesse Simonds.

City Messenger—James P. Conner.

Highway Department.

In his inaugural Mayor Carleton said of the Highway Department:

"There has been expended during the past year for,—

6352 feet of sewers	$15,545.28
Sidewalks and crossings	21,610.52
Street lights	8,832.78
Outlying districts	5,342.85
Bridges	2,577.26
Winter Street bridge, about	11,500.00
Sundries and District No. 1	31,109.07

Making with the pay rolls for December 24th and 31st, to be added to this amount, the unprecedeoted sum of $97,036.60, as compared with $49,956 for 1886. The estimated cost of the Summer Street improvement was $7560; of Portland Street improvements, $1069.30; of Main Street improvements, $3621; and of Locust Street improvements, $823."

Of the bridge between Haverhill and Bradford, that it had recently been inspected by a competeot engineer, who reported,—

"This bridge is a costly and intricate machine, requiring the nicest adjustment of all its parts, and should always be kept in complete order. He advises to strengthen the cross bracing of the end posts of all fixed spans; keep the bridge in good adjustment and well painted; keep the roadway floor smooth and strong and avoid increasing its weight; remove snow promptly; prevent fast driving.

These suggestions being observed, he considers the bridge safe."

Police.

"The police force consists of 1 marshal, 1 assistant marshal, 1 captain of night-watch, 1 sergeant and 19 patrolmen. The pay of the policemen has been raised from $2.25 to $2.50 per day, involving an additional expense for the ensuing year of about $2000 per annum. The cost of this department for 1887 has been $21,924; for 1886 it was $18,863."

City Hospital.

Of the City Hospital and School, he said,—

"This institution, for which we are indebted to the generosity of the late Hon. E. J. M. Hale, and our esteemed fellow-citizen, Hon. James H. Carleton, was opened with appropriate exercises Wednesday, December 27th, and is now ready for use. It has a capacity for 25 beds. The estimated annual cost of maintaining the hospital is $5000, while the income from invested funds will probably fall short of $3000, leaving about $2000 to be supplied by donations, as by the terms of the bequest. This institution can never become a charge upon the city. I would earnestly recommend this most beneficent charity to the consideration of all who desire to aid in the relief of suffering humanity.

The hospital fund amounts to	$56,687.50
Estimated value of Kent Street property	7,500.50
	$64,187.50
Less estimated outstanding bills	4,187.50
	$60,000.00"

School Department.

"The condition of our schools is generally very satisfactory. In June, 1885, a superintendent of schools was elected and assumed the duties of his office the following September. It was claimed by the advocates of such an office that not only would the efficiency of our schools be promoted, but that it could be done with no increase, and, possibly, a decrease of expenditure. Both these claims have been fully sustained. There has been a marked improvement in the schools, especially in the lower and grammar grades, in which a very large majority of our children receive their entire education. New methods have been adopted, greater enthusiasm has been aroused and it is believed that our schools will compare favorably with those of other cities of the Commonwealth. The cost of the school for the past four years is as follows:

	Total Cost.	Av. No. Pupils.	Cost per Pupil.
1884	$66,604.31	2934	$22.79
1885	68,650.49	3374	20.32
1886[1]	66,300.84	3588	18.48
1887	65,302.95	3549	18.40

The slight decrease in the number of scholars the past year is due to the opening of Parochial schools, September 1st."

William E. Hatch resigned as superintendent of schools, and Albert L. Bartlett was elected, to serve from February 1, 1888.

Valuation and Taxation.

The total valuation of Haverhill in 1887 was	$16,246,412
Valuation of personal property was	4,383,219
Valuation of real estate was	11,863,193
The total number of polls was 6579, showing a decrease of four from 1886.	
The personal valuation showed an increase of $124,979; the real estate valuation an increase of $715,310.	
Total number of tax-payers	7,971
Value of buildings taxed in 1887	$5,895,400
Value of land taxed in 1887	5,967,793
Number of dwellings taxed in 1887	3,901
Property exempted from taxation	$764,700
Divided as follows:	
Houses of religious worship	391,900
Benevolent and charitable institutions	182,800
Literary institutions	190,000

Presidents of the Common Council of Haverhill since City Charter.

Moses How	1870	Richard Webster	1880
James F. West	1871	Thomas E. Burnham	1881
George H. Carleton	1872-73	Jesse H. Harriman	1882
Henry H. Johnson	1874	George H. Dole	1883
Isaac E Smith	1875	James E. Moran	1884
Gilman L. Sleeper	1876	George H. Bartlett	1885-86
Timothy Hurse	1877	Fred. J. Connolly	1887
Charles W. Morse	1878-79	Daniel S. Chase	1888

Town Clerks.

Richard Littlehale	1643-64	Phineas Carleton, clerk and treasurer	1782-99
John Carleton	1664-68	John Cogswell, clerk and treasurer	1800-01
Nathaniel Saltonstall	1668-1709	Joseph Dodge, clerk and treasurer	1802-03
John White	1701-15	Leonard White, clerk and treasurer	1804-10
John Wainwright	1716	James Duncan, Jr.	1811
John Eatton, clerk 57 years, and treasurer 54 years	1717-73	Moses Wingate, clerk and treasurer	1812-11
John Whittier, clerk and treasurer	1774-77		
Joseph Dodge, clerk and treasurer	1778-81		

[1] First year of superintendent

Leonard White, clerk and treasurer..... 1815
Moses Wingate, clerk and treasurer..... 1816-17
Leonard White, clerk and treasurer..... 1818
Moses Wingate, clerk and treasurer..... 1819-20
Leonard White, clerk and treasurer..... 1821-31
James Gale, clerk and treasurer..... 1832-36
Thomas G. Farnsworth, clerk..... 1837
Leonard White, clerk and treasurer..... 1838-39
Josiah Keeley, clerk and treasurer..... 1840-41
William Taggart, clerk and treasurer..... 1842-43
A. B. Jaques, clerk and treasurer..... 1844-64
Calvin Buttrick, clerk and treasurer..... 1864-65
William B. Eaton, clerk and treasurer..... 1866-69
David B. Tenney..... 1870-88

Representatives from Haverhill to Congress and the State Legislature.

Members of Congress from Haverhill.

1797-1801. Bailey Bartlett.
1811-13. Leonard White.
1826-30. John Varnum.
1848-52. James H. Duncan.

State Senators from Haverhill.

1789. Bailey Bartlett.
1810. Israel Bartlett.
1811. John Varnum.
1816-21. Israel Bartlett.
1828-31. James H. Duncan.
1833. Gilman Parker.
1844-45. Alfred Kittredge.
1848. Ezekiel J. M. Hale.
1853. Nathaniel S. Howe.
1857. Caleb D. Hunking.
1860. Christopher Tompkins.
1866. Charles J. Noyes.
1871. Nathan S. Kimball.
1876. Jackson B. Swett.
1877. Jackson B. Swett.

State Representatives from Haverhill.

1645-54. Robert Clement.
1654. John Clement.
1660. John Davis, 2d session.
1661-66. None.
1666. Nathaniel Saltonstall.
1667. Henry Palmer.
1668. William Davis.
1669-72. Nathaniel Saltonstall.
1672. George Brown.
1673. Humphrey Davy, 2d session.
1674. Henry Palmer.
1675. George Brown.
1681. Daniel Hendrick.
1682. None.
1683. Peter Ayer.
1684. Robert Swan.
1685-86. Peter Ayer.
1687-89. None.
1689-90. Peter Ayer.
1691. John Johnson.
1692. George Brown.
Samuel Hutchins.
1693. Daniel Ladd.
Thomas Hart.
1694. Daniel Ladd.
1695-96. Peter Ayer.
1697. John Page.
1698. Peter Ayer.
1699. Richard Saltonstall.
1701. John White.
1701. Samuel Ayer.
1702. John White
1703. John White, 1st session.
John Haseltine, 2d session.
1704-5. Samuel Watts.
1706-7. James Saunders.
1708. John White.
1709. James Saunders.
1710-13. John Haseltine.
1713. John White.
1714. John Haseltine.
1715-16. John White.
1717. Amos Singletary.
1718. John Saunders.
1719. John White.
1720-26. John Saunders.
1726-27. James Saunders.
1728-29. Richard Saltonstall.
1730-33. Nathan Webster.
1733-34. William White.
1735-36. Richard Saltonstall.
1737. Nathaniel Peasley.
1738. Richard Saltonstall.
1739-42. Nathaniel Peasley.
1742. Richard Hazen.
1743. Richard Saltonstall.
1744-45. Philip Haseltine.
1746-49. Nathaniel Peasley.
1749-50. Nathaniel Saunders,
1751. John Haseltine.
1752-53. Nathaniel Peasley.
1754. Richard Saltonstall.
1755-61. David Marsh.
1761-69. Richard Saltoostall.
1769-70. Samuel Bachellor.
1771-76. Jonathan Webster, Jr.
1776. Jonathan Webster.
Nathaniel P. Sargent.
1777-81. Jonathan Webster.
1781-84. Bailey Bartlett.
1784-85. Samuel White.
1786. Nathaniel Marsh.
1789-90. Nathaniel Marsh.
1791. Francis Carr.
Samuel Blodgett.
1792-96. Francis Carr.
1796. None.
1797-98. Nathaniel Marsh.
1799. Benjamin Willis.
1800. Benjamin Willis.
1801. None.
1802-3. Francis Carr.
1804-6. David How.
1807-8. Jas. Smiley.
1809. Leonard White.
1810-11. Ebenezer Gage.
1812-19. David How.
1819. Charles White.
1820-23. Moses Wingate.
1823-24. Enoch Foot.
1825. Stephen Minot.
1827. Moses Wingate.
Jas. H. Duncan.
1828. Charles White.
John Brickett, Jr.
1829. Thos. Harding.
John Brickett, Jr.
Wm. Bachellor.
1830. Thomas Harding.
John Brickett, Jr.
Wm. Bachellor.
1831. Caleb B. Le Bosquet.
1832. Caleb B. Le Bosquet.
Thos. G. Farnsworth.
Ephraim Corliss.
James Davis.
1833. Caleb B. Le Bosquet.
Geo. Keeley.
Wm. Bachellor.
Thos. G. Farnsworth.
1834. Ephraim Corliss.
Thos. G. Farnsworth.
Daniel P. McQuesten.
Nathan Webster.
1835. Jacob How.
Jesse Smith.
John G. Whittier.
Leonard Whittier.
1836. James Davis.
Elbridge G. Eaton.
Ward Haseltine.
Nathan Webster.
1837. Jos. Ayer.
James Davis.
Elbridge G. Eaton.
Nathan Webster.
Ward Haseltine.
1837. Charles Carletoo.
Wm. D. S. Chase.
James H. Duncan.
Leonard Whittier.
1838. Charles Carleton.
Wm. D. S. Chase.
James H. Duncau.
Samuel Johnson.
1840. Jonathan Crowell.
Samuel Johnson.
Alfred Kittredge.
Robert Stuart.
1841. Jonathan Crowell.
Alfred Kittredge.
1842. Rev. Jas. R. Cushing.
Caleb Hersey.
1843. None.
1844. None.
1845. Hazen Morse.
1846. Daniel F. Fitts.
James Hale.
1847. None.
1848. Benjamin Page.
1849. None.
1850. Charles B. Hall.
Lemuel Leonards.
1851. None.
1852. Samuel Brainard.
John B. Nichols.
1853. Samuel Brainard.
John B. Nichols.
1854. None.
1855. Elbridge W. Chase.
Jesse Simonds.
1856. Truman M. Martyn.
Wm. Taggart.
1857. Jesse Simonds.
Wm. Taggart.
1858. James H. Duncan.
Nathan S. Kimball.
1859. Nathan S. Kimball.
James Russell.
1860. Levi C. Wadleigh.
George W. Chase.
1861. Levi C. Wadleigh.
George W. Chase.
1862. Calvin Butrick.
Gilman Corning.
1863. Calvin Butrick.
Gilman Corning.
1864. Charles G. Burnham.
F. J. Stevens.
1865. Charles G. Burnham.
Wm. Foss.
1866. Charles J. Noyes.
David Boynton.
1867. F. J. Stevens.
David Boynton.
1868. Charles W. Chase.
S. K. Towle.
1869. S. K. Towle.
Eben Mitchell.
Thorndike Hodges.
1870. C. J. Goodwin.
Henry A. Lord.
Luther G. Morrison.
1871. H. O. Burr.
Wm. E. Blunt.
1872. Wm. E. Blunt.
H. O. Burr.
A. R. Lancaster.
1873. Wm. E. Blunt.
A. R. Lancaster.
George J. Dean.
1874. Wm. E. Blunt.
Jas. H. Carleton.
1875. Wm. E. Blunt.
B. F. Leighton.
James H. Carleton.
1876. Oliver Taylor.
J. B. Swett.
John B. Nichols.
1877. John W. Tiltnn.
Oliver Taylor.
1878. Wm. A. Brooks.
John W. Tilton.
1879. Wm. A. Brooks.
D. Smith Kimball
1880. Levi Taylor.
Edwin Gage.
1881. Levi Taylor.
Edwin Gage.
Daniel T. Morrison.
1882. Daniel B. Cluff.
Edwin N. Hill.
1883. Daniel B. Cluff.
Edwin N. Hill.
1884. Calvin Damon
Charles H. Flint.
1885. Wm. H. Johnson.
Edward G. Frothingham.
1886. Wm. H. Johnson.
Edward G. Frothingham.
1887. J. Otis Wardwell.
Alden P. Jaques.
George H. Bartlett.
1888. J. Otis Wardwell.
Alden P. Jaques.

Post-Office.

The records of the post-office in the city show the following business transacted in the carriers' department:

Pieces delivered for the year ending Dec. 30, 1887	1,954,575
Collected	920,249
Total	2,874,824
Average per carrier	410,689
Pieces delivered for the year ending Dec. 30, 1886	1,771,508
Collected	815,548
Total	2,587,056
Average per carrier	369,579
Total for 1887	2,874,824
Total for 1886	2,587,056
Increase, or 11 per cent	287,768

Record for December 1887.

	COLL'D.	DELIV'D.
Mail letters	67,410	109,284
Local letters	8,706	
Mail cards	12,356	21,101
Local cards	6,420	
Papers, etc	7,005	78,764
	101,897	209,149
	209,149	
Total	311,046	

Money Order Business.

The following was the money order business done at the Haverhill Post-Office for the year ending December 31, 1887:

5403 Domestic orders	$68,948 72	
Fees on same	473 02	
1336 International orders	18,832 01	
Fees on same	229 60	
5308 Postal Notes	11,008 72	
Fees on same	159 24	
		$99,651 31
2383 Domestic orders paid	$32,325 14	
138 International " "	1,759 93	
1443 Postal Notes	3,304 60	
		$37,389 67
16,011 transactions, amounting to		$139,040 98

Of this amount, $62,000 was remitted to Boston.

Number of registered letters sent from this office during this year, 3501.

Officers-elect for 1888 *of Major How Post* 47, *Grand Army of the Republic, Haverhill.*

Com.—W. D. Wood
S. V. C.—Alonzo Joy
J. V. C.—James F. Clark
Q. M.—W. H. Johnson
Adjutant—J. M. Poore
Surgeon—E. G Frothingham
Chaplain—Lorenzo Frost
O. D.—P. F. Fitzgerald
O. G.—Joseph Marcoux
S. M.—Orin Dodge
Q. M. S.—Geo. F. Coffin
Auditors—A. Le Bosquet, H. B. George, W. H. Curtis

Relief Committee:

Ward 1—W. H. Ellison
Ward 2—G. F. Coffin
Ward 3—J. Lewis Webster
Ward 4—Frank Behr
Ward 5—Carl Jensen
Ward 6—Paul N. Hale
Bradford—J. F. Brown

The post is constantly gaining new members, and is in a flourishing condition.

Officers of the Major How Grand Army of the Republic Association for 1888.

Trustees—A. Le Bosquet, E. B. Savage, J. G. Scates, I. P. Jackson, W. H. Johnson, Lorenzo Frost, E. O. Bullock.
Clerk—J. G. Scates.
Treasurer—A. Le Bosquet.
Auditors—B. A. Sawyer, Geo. F. Coffin.
President—L. Frost.

Eighth Regiment Massachusetts V. M., Colonel Francis A. Osgood.

Company F, Haverhill—Captain, Benjamin H. Jellison; first lieutenant, Charles P. Damon; second lieutenant, G. Henry Page.

November 27, 1887, the meeting-house of the South Church, Washington Street, was occupied for the first time after remodelling and embellishing.

Officers of the Catholic Aid Society for 1888.

President—Rev. J. O'Doherty.
Vice-president—Mrs. Michael Roche.
Treasurer—Mrs. Mary Murphy.
Recording Secretary—Nellie Buckley.
Financial Secretary—Mary Desmond.
Reader—Mary Kennedy.
Janitress—Mary Driscoll.
Investigators—The Mrs. Kennedy, Connor, Roche, Neagle Ryan, Cronin, Flynn, Golding, and Mrs. O'Brien, Bradford.

December 31, 1887, the city treasurer, David B. Tenney, made the following statement of the city finances:

	Received 1887.	Paid 1887.
Highway	$4,003.40	$96,546.53
School	480.60	65,290.00
Poor	1,994.34	12,302.25
Fire	975.63	32,513.79
Police	2,589.10	21,924.92
Salaries		8,269 62
Contingent	20,553.03	10,300.38
Public Property	600.00	12,502.28
City Hall	880.75	4,472.36
Printing	104.50	1,779.48
Pub. Library	4,119.42	5,949.26
Health		1,856.90
Interest	2,537.05	19,789.57
State Aid	3,691.50	3,559.50
City Debt		26,000.00
Sinking Fund		8,800.00
County Tax		15,628.20
State Tax		18,099.00
Bank Tax		9,554.12
Loan	75,000.00	75,000.00
River & Wash. St. Imp	2,358.49	
Taxes	280,745.57	
Totals	$400,033.38	$449,929.26
Balance 1886	76,350.04	
Balance 1887		26,454.06
	$476,383.42	$476,383.42

Directors of National Banks for 1888.

Merrimac National Bank—Charles W. Chase, Moses Nichols, John B. Nichols, Dudley Porter, Samuel M. Currier, Philip C. Swett, Woodbury Noyes, Charles E. Wiggin, John L. Hobson.

Haverhill National Bank—A. Washington Chase, Daniel Fitts, James E. Gale, John E. Gale, John J. Marsh, Eben Mitchell, Thomas Sanders, Amos W. Downing, George A. Kimball, Thomas S. Endicott.

First National Bank—George Cogswell, Samuel Laubham, Levi Taylor, R. Stuart Chase, S. Porter Gardner, C. C. Griffin, J. H. Durgin, S. H. Gale, A. L. Kimball, E. G. Wood.

Essex National Bank—John C. Tilton, Leverett Kimball, John P. Randall, Ezra Kelly, Wm. Caldwell.

Second National Bank—John A. Gale, Geo. A. Greene, J. W. Vittum, John Pilling, Geo. H. Carleton, J. H. Winchell, George A. Hall, E. O. Bullock, John W. Russ, George E. Elliott, C. W. Arnold.

The *Shoe and Leather Reporters' Annual* for 1888 states that Haverhill has 162 shoe manufactories, 14 retail shoe dealers, 8 dealers in boot and shoe findings, 7 manufacturers of boot and shoe patterns, 2 dealers in upper leather remnants, 4 dealers in boot, shoe and slipper trimmings, 1 die cutter, three last and pattern makers, 7 dealers in cut soles and leather, 9 dealers in kid, goat and morocco, 51 dealers in soles, taps and stiffenings, 3 manufacturers of shoe boxes, 6 of shoe machinery, 3 of leather board, 9 heel manufacturers, 15 dealers in cement, 3 miscellaneous.

In the fifteen years following the adoption of the city charter, the following amounts were spent for city improvements of a permanent character:

Groveland bridge (1st)	$28,197.78
" " (2d)	26,904.85
Haverhill bridge	58,093.59
High School building	107,783.05
Currier " "	40,947.08
Broadway " land	16,665.25
Portland Street school building	14,177.69
Locust Street bridge	16,888.39
Marginal sewer	24,000.00
Washington Square	24,514.27
Water Supply	30,209.54
New school-houses, Bowley, Chestnut Street, Groveland Street	32,224 55
Court Street building	12,210.30
New almshouse	24,066.89
River Street improvements	32,393.97
Washington Street improvements	7,271 60
Total	$495,547.80

The Officers of the Haverhill Shoe and Leather Association for 1888.

President—S. Porter Gardner.

Vice-presidents—Charles E. Kelley, Harry W. Chase, Charles C. Griffin.

Secretary—W. W. Spaulding.

Treasurer—Warren Kimball.

Executive Committee—W. W. Spaulding, William Knipe, S. P. Chick, D. Sherwood, W. Kimball, T. S. Ruddock, H. W. Chase, Seraphim Leonard, J. H. Thomas, J. H. Winchell, C. C. Griffin, C. M. How.

Officers of the Haverhill and Groveland Street Railway Company.

Directors—Levi Taylor, Ira O. Sawyer, John A. Gale, Ira A. Abbott, William H. Smiley, John A. Colby, P. C. Swett.

Auditors—E. G. Frothingham, D. R. Bennet, G. L. Sleeper.

President—Levi Taylor.

Clerk and Treasurer—John A. Colby.

Officers of Masonic organizations in 1888.

Merrimac Lodge, F. & A. M.

W. M	Edward B. George
S. W	Charles B Wright
J. W	Frank S. Gage
Treasurer	Levi C. Wadleigh
Secretary	Gustavus H. Tibbetts
S. D	James H. Osgood
J. D	John E. Leighton
Marshal	James W. Harris
Chaplain	John J. Page
S. S	Nelson J. Hunt
J. S	Frank P. Stevens
I. S	Thomas W. Sargent
Organist	B. R. Downes
Tyler	E. Frank Horne

Haverhill Commandery.

E. C	George V. Ladd
G	Charles C. Osgood
C. G	W. A. Ordway
Prelate	L. A. Woodbury
S. W	Charles M. Heath
J. W	D. F. Sprague
Treasurer	W. A. Brooks
Recorder	Henry B. George
S. W	Charles N. Kelley
St B	Geo. O. Willey
Warder	E. W. Andrews
Third G	P. G. Ober
Second G	I. L. Mitchell
First G	Wm. M. Bowley
Organist	James E. Gale
Sentinel	E. F. Horne

Officers of the Children's Aid Society managing the Elizabeth Home, 1887–88.

President—Mrs. Irah E. Chase.

Vice-Presidents—The Mrs. M. B. Frothingham, M. H. Moore, M. F. Ames, N. Boynton, O. S. Lovejoy.

Hon. Vice-Presidents—The Mrs. J. H. Duncan, M. P. Chase, Daniel Harriman, M. E. Hosford.

Secretary—Mrs. J. N. Lewis.

Assistant Secretary.—Mrs. H. C. Johnson.

Treasurer—Miss Sarah M. Kelly.

Auditor—Ezra Kelly.

Directors—The Mrs. Isaac Davis, C. N. Kelley, Geo. Elliott, Wm. Sellers, P. C. Swett, Wm. E. Blunt, H. C. Tanner, J. Fred. Adams, A. W. Cram, R. Tappan, J. M. Nichols, S. S. Rogers, A. F. Kimball, F. W. Jacobs, J. B. Nichols, C. E. Kelley, J. V. Smiley, Gyles Merrill, A. M. Merrick, W. D. Wood, A. C. Brickett, Moses How, the Misses Mary C. Ames, Sarah M. Kelley, Caroline Duncan.

Advisory Committee—J. J. Marsh, Dr. I. E. Chase, Moses How, J. B. Nichols, A. W. Downing, Dr. J. R. Nichols.

Reference Committee—The Mrs. D. S. Dickinson, E. Kelley, Gardner Kennison, A. M. Merrick, H. C. Johnson.

Matron Committee—The Mrs. M. E. Hosford, J. M. Nichols, F. W. Jacobs, Charles Wingate, D. Harriman.

Clothing Committee—Mesdames J. V. Smiley, E. Fox, R. Tappan, M. J. Lackey, A. G. Todd, W. C. Lewis, A. C. Brickett, C. C. Brown, B. G. Dickenson, H. S. Folsom, D. B. Tenney, E. W. Andrews, N. Thom, Henry Merrill.

Basket Committee—Miss Elizabeth C. Ames.

Educational Committee—Mrs. W. E. Blunt.

Collectors—Mrs. Elbridge Tibbetts, the Misses Emma S. Elliott and Hattie F. Kelley.

Committee on Repairs—P. C. Swett.

Committee on Wholesale—H. C. Tanner, Mrs. H. C. Tanner, Mrs. M. H. Moore.

Committee on Coal—Mrs. R. Tappan, Mrs. A. W. Cram.

The local Board of Civil Service Examiners, January, 1888, was composed of Dudley Porter, chairman, Ira A. Abbott, secretary, and John A. Gale.

At the annual meeting of the Young Men's Christian Association, October 19, 1887, four hundred and seventy-nine members were reported, classified as follows: sustaining, 249; active, 101; associate, 138,—a net gain of ninety-four. Sixty-seven women members had been transferred to the auxiliary. Thirteen denominations were represented in the association. Nine receptions had been held, with an average attendance of one hundred and fourteen. The average evening attendance of young men was thirty-five. There had been twenty-seven sessions of the con-

gress for debating purposes, with an average attendance of thirty. There had been seven successful entertainments, with an average attendance of three hundred and sixty-two.

The following officers were elected for the ensuing year:

President—J. A. Hale.

Vice-President—Dr. J. Crowell.

Treasurer—Geo. Thayer.

Directors for one year—Dr. L. J. Young, G. L. Williams, J. Howard Miller, C. N. Rhodes.

Directors for two years—T. J. Morey, Prof. I. N. Carleton, J. W. P. Smith, J. S. Sumner.

Directors for three years—Thos. Sanders, H. M. Chase, S. A. Dow, A. R. Leighton, S. W. Carleton.

There had been 47 Friday evening meetings, 27 inquiry meetings, 40 sessions of the training class, ten open-air meetings, 52 Sunday afternoon meetings. At Ayer's village meetings, the average attendance had been 26. The gift of the Haverhill Gymnasium had been accepted by the association. There had been 132 new members this year against 75 the year before.

Merrimack Valley Steamboat Company.

Treasurer, Benj. I. Page; Directors, J. H. Farnsworth, James E. Gale, Eben Mitchell, Ezra Kelley, H. C. Tanner, Dr. James R. Nichols, Charles W. Chase. The president of the board is J. H. Farnsworth.

St. Jean Baptiste Society.

Chaplain—Rev. O. Boucher.

President—E. J. Poirier.

Vice-President—Mag. Bonin.

Finance Secretary—S. Roger.

Assistant Secretary—A. Guilbert.

Recording Secretary—A. Boucher.

Corresponding Secretary—W. Paquette.

Treasurer—M. D. Mercier.

Auditors—H. Houle, N. Lavallie.

Commanders—Joseph Gervais, A. Poirier.

Directors—H. Cote, C. Guilbert, G. Baril, C. Brissette, A. Chamberland.

K. of L. Co-operative Publishing Company.

Clerk—Daniel W. Hurley.

Treasurer—A. I. Pettengill.

Directors—Richard F. Sullivan, James E. Devoy, T. P. Loye, A. J. Nason, Wm. A. Robertson, Charles A. Gale, James Wilson, Frank Bigelow, Daniel Stevens, W. W. Sprague. The company publishes the *Haverhill Daily Laborer*.

The Teachers' Association for 1888.

President—W. E. Hatch.

Vice-President—C. E. Kelley.

Secretary and Treasurer—Fred. Gowing.

Executive Committee—Edward J. Cox, Charles W. Haley, Miss Lucy Ingram, Miss Jennie S. Edson, Miss Mary A. Tappan, Miss Sarah S. Noyes, Miss Abbie J. Meadowcroft.

Officers of John G. Whittier Council, Royal Arcanum, in 1888.

Regent—F. N. Flanders.

Vice-Regent—Warren Hoyt.

Orator—W. F. Thayer.

Secretary—E. H. Emerson.

Collector—Herman F. Morse.

Treasurer—Albert Le Bosquet.

Chaplain—W. H. Lawrence.

Guide—C. H. Worthen.

Warden—James Langley.

Sen.—B. F. Leighton.

Trustees—Alden P. Jaques, Walter S. Goodell, B. F. Leighton.

Del. to Grand Council—R. A. Grieves.

Officers of the Union Steamboat Company of Haverhill and Newburyport for 1888.

Directors—Oliver Taylor, C. W. Morse, Henry N. Sheppard, F. N. Keezer, Levi Taylor, J. F. Tilton.

Treasurer—G. M. Goodwin.

Clerk—C. H. Brown.

Building Committee—E. P. Shaw, George M. Goodwin, C. W. Morse, Fred. N. Keezer, G. F. Tilton.

Committee on By-laws—E. P. Shaw, C. W. Morse.

Trustees of the City Hospital.

George H. Carleton—*ex officio*—as mayor, Nathan S. Kimball, Addison B. Jaques, Amos A. Sargent, Samuel M. Currier, John Crowell, trustees; John Crowell, secretary.

Some Charitable and Mutual Benefit Societies.

Major How Relief Corps.
Mutual Relief Lodge, I. O. O. F.
Plymouth Rock Colony, P. F.
Court Pentucket, A. O. F.
Court Phœnix, A. O. F.
Major How Post 47, G. A. R.
Kenoza Lodge, D. of R.
Palestine Lodge, K. of P.
Burtt Lodge, A. O. U. W.
J. G. Whittier Council, R. A.
Enterprise Council, Jr. O. U. A. M.
Excelsior Lodge, K. and L. of H.
J. K. Jenness Camp, S. of V.
Haverhill Commandery, K. G. C.
Washington Council, O. U. A. M.
Mizpah Lodge, I. O. O. F.
Excelsior Council, A. L. of H.
Lincoln Relief Association.
Puritan Council, Home Circle.
Eagle Assembly, R. S. G. F.
Excelsior Lodge, N. E. O. P.
Pentucket Lodge, K. of L.

The eighth annual report of the Board of Health, for the year 1887, is comparatively satisfactory. The board is progressive in its views and action, and endeavors, each year, to hold up and sustain a higher standard of sanitary condition. From this report to the mayor and City Council, dated January 2, 1888, have been gleaned some facts and extracts of interest.

During the year past eighteen tenement-houses were ordered vacated on account of unsanitary condition, eleven of which were put in proper order and seven were vacated.

Night-soil is removed by a person under license, and at a price fixed by the board. Ashes and garbage are collected by the Highway Department, but the method of disposing of them is not satisfactory to the board, which believes they should be completely destroyed by cremation, or some other equally effective method. House-offal is collected by an agent, acting under contract with the board.

Only one complaint of an offensive trade was made to the board during the year.

During the current year it is intended to make a systematic inspection of all school buildings, with a view of determining their sanitary condition.

Most of the sickness from zymotic diseases is ascribed by the board to defective systems of house-drainage and poor workmanship. After careful study

of the theory and practice of some of the best known authorities on this subject, and comparison in the light of information obtained by their own experience, a code of regulations for the construction of house-drainage was framed and adopted by the board in October. They are believed to be practicable, and not too stringent.

Although diphtheria and scarlet fever were unusually prevalent in Massachusetts last year, there was a marked reduction in the number of cases reported at the office of the Board of Health in Haverhill. The whole number of cases of contagious diseases reported during the year was 258 against 362 in 1886. Of this number, 142 were diphtheria, 34 were scarlet fever, 72 typhoid fever, and 10 cases of measles were reported. The number of deaths was forty-five, five less than in 1886, and making 17.40 per cent. of the cases reported. By far the larger number of contagious diseases reported are from the poorer class of tenement-houses and in families, where, by reason of poverty and overcrowding, the necessities of isolation cannot be commanded.

The mortality records for the twelve months ending December 31st show that 1887 was one of more than average good health. While the population of the city increased, the number of deaths was less than in 1886. The whole number of deaths in the city was 465, exclusive of still births, as compared with 481 for the year previous. Estimating the mean population at 25,000, this represents an annual death-rate of 18.60 for every 1000 of population. This diminution in the death-rate has occurred chiefly in the constitutional class and the zymotic diseases, which class comprises those commonly considered to represent the sanitary condition of places, because in a measure preventable by the observance of sanitary regulations. The ratio of deaths in this division was 22.58 per cent. of all deaths against 25.36 in 1886, and varying in different wards from 10.00 to 38.46 per cent. This proportion of preventable deaths, although not so large as last year, is a good deal higher than it should be.

The disease which most largely contributed to mortality in this class was cholera infantum, which caused thirty-five deaths, which number, notwithstanding the unusually high temperature of the summer months, did not differ materially from that of the preceding year.

Under the constitutional class 97 deaths were recorded, or 20.86 per cent. of the total mortality. Cases of consumption numbered 72, or 15.27 per cent. of all deaths, as against 14.76 per cent. the year before.

From the local class were 189, or 40.64 per cent. Diseases of the heart caused 7.74 per cent. and acute lung diseases 8.62 per cent. of deaths from all causes.

The mortality in the development class, including 19 deaths from old age, was 51, or 19.67 per cent., and the number of violent deaths, or those caused by accident, negligence or suicide, was 16, or 3.44.

The number of deaths under five years of age was 162, or 34.84 per cent. of the whole number, as against 37.00 per cent. in 1886, and those under one year constituted 20.64 per cent.

The whole number of deaths occurring among French Canadian residents was fifty-nine. The census of the French Canadian population, taken under the supervision of St. John the Baptist Society in July, 1887, places that portion of the population at 2872; on this basis, with the total before given, the annual death-rate was 20.54 to the thousand. Consumption, the leading disease of the constitutional class, caused 15.36 per cent. of the whole number of deaths, and 33.89 per cent. were in the zymotic class.

The mortality among children under five years of age was 57.62 per cent. of the 59 deaths recorded, more than one-half; and 33.89 per cent. were under the age of one year. Owners of tenement-houses are growing to realize more and more the value of improved sanitary conditions, particularly in regard to the plumbing work in new buildings, the standard of which was raised very much during 1887, and they are more willing to give intelligent support to measures for the public health. Though great improvement must yet take place, before the sanitary condition of Haverhill can be regarded as satisfactory, the board believed that there was a better condition of things than ever before in its history as a city.

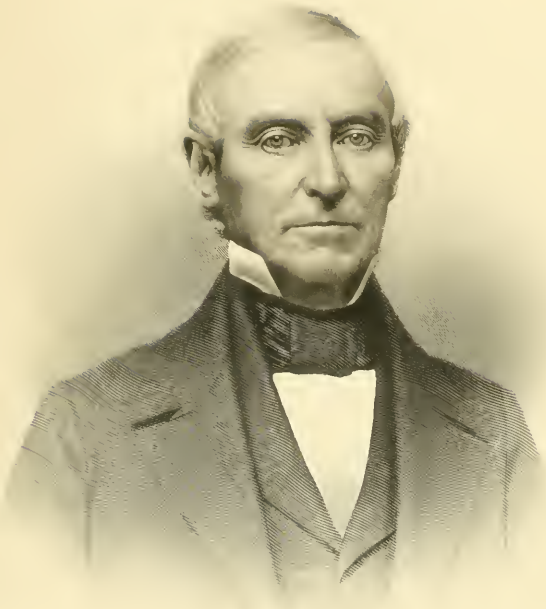
BIOGRAPHICAL.

ROBERT GREEN WALKER.[1]

The Walkers are a family long established in Haverhill, and many of its members have been much employed in the town matters. February 23, 1737–38, Nathaniel Walker married Lydia Ayer, both being of Haverhill. Their third son, James, was born January 17, 1748–49. This is undoubtedly James Walker, of whom Chase says that "he was of the sixth generation since the settlement of the town." During the Revolutionary War he was ensign in a company raised here, and it is said that on the night previous to the battle of Trenton, December 25, 1776, he commanded a detachment of men in charge of the boats employed to carry one of the divisions across the Delaware. From 1818 till his death, February 8, 1846, at the age of ninety-eight, Mr. Walker was a pensioner. In 1840 there were six pensioners still living in Haverhill—James Walker, at ninety, and David How, at eighty-four, heading the list.

Nathaniel Walker, the father, died April 10, 1775. In 1765 he was one of the selectmen. His fourth son, Samuel, born August 7, 1751, married Abigail Badger, of Haverhill. Their children were Samuel Ayer

[1] By John B. D. Cogswell.



Robert J. Walker

Walker, the late well-known auctioneer of Boston, and Robert Green Walker, born June 19, 1803, the subject of this sketch.

Nathaniel Walker, second son of Nathaniel, Sr., was born 1744, and married Hannah Peaslee, Oct. 17, 1771. Their eldest son, Samuel, born January 26, 1779, was probably that Samuel Walker, of Haverhill, who graduated at Dartmouth College in 1802.

Nathaniel Walker, the elder, is in the list of Haverhill tax-payers in 1741, and was enrolled in the militia in 1757. He was moderator of the town-meeting April 9, 1770, at the beginning of the troubles with Great Britain, when it was voted "that we will by all lawfull ways and means, exert ourselves and expose to shame and contempt all persons who shall offer to make sale of British goods imported conterary to the agreement of marchants, or that shall purchase such goods in this town, or be aiding or assisting to bring them Into it, till a general importation of such goods shall take place, and that all persons who shall violate or Counter act this vote and resolve, shall be rendered incapable of being chosen to any office of proffit or Honour in this town." And Nathaniel Walker, with Thomas West, Nathaniel Peaslee Sargent (afterwards chief justice) and others, were made "a committee to inspect and see that all salutary resolves and agreements with respect to such Goods be Duly obsarved, and to give notice & expose all who shall violate them; that their names may be remembered with infamy." . . . "The moderator dismissed the meeting."

July 28, 1774, "Nathaniel Walker, Jr.," was placed upon the Committee of Inspection upon the same general subject. He was a member of the Artillery Company, organized September, 1774, and, with Bailey Bartlett, Israel Bartlett, Thomas Cogswell, Nathaniel Marsh and Doctor Brickett, sent to England for a copy of the "Norfolk Militia Book," in which to study tactics.

In 1779 he was one of the town's creditors for money advanced to meet its expenses. Ten years before, in 1769, he was the "clark" of the company which organized to buy the first fire-engine. The three brothers, Nathaniel, James and Samuel, were members of the Fire Society. Nathaniel and Samuel both find a place in the valuation list of householders in 1798. In 1801 Benjamin Willis, Jr., Nathan Ayer, Samuel Walker, Jonathan Souther and Jesse Harding petitioned the town "for leave to conduct the water by means of an aqueduct, from the round pond, so-called, into this part of the town, for private and public convenience." This was the beginning of the Haverhill Aqueduct Company which was organized the same year under a general State law.

Nathaniel Walker, the elder, was a witness to one of the bills of sale by which the "negro boy Cesur" was transferred. July 10, 1739, Thomas Russ, of Suncook, "cordwainer," in consideration of one hundred pounds, sold his "negro boy named Cesur, being about seven years old," to Benjamin Emerson, of Haverhill, yeoman. June 16, 1640, Emerson sold him to Nathaniel Cogswell, of Haverhill, trader; and August 23, 1742, being now about ten years old, Nathaniel Cogswell sold him for one hundred and fifteen pounds to Samuel Phillips, Jr., of Andover, "trader" (the son of Reverend Samuel Phillips, first minister of the South Parish in Andover). Nathaniel Walker and Jonathan Buck (of Water Street) witnessed this last bill of sale. These were all highly respectable people, and the public conscience did not begin to be disturbed about domestic slavery for many years after.

Samuel Walker was ensign of Captain Thomas Cogswell's company, drafted for Continental service in 1775. He also marched, September, 1777, with a volunteer detachment to reinforce the Northern army. Samuel Walker was afterwards a prominent person in town affairs. For more than thirty consecutive years and to the day of his death he held positions of honor and trust. He was especially interested in the school system. October, 1790, he reported to the town, as chairman of a committee, a code of thirteen rules, which was adopted, for the government of the grammar schools in the town. They are printed by Chase in his history, in substance. They are very elaborate, even minute in character, and wholesome in tendency. The school committee of the First, or Centre District, a little later, was habitually composed of the sterling and most highly educated men of the town.

At a town-meeting, December 12, 1791, a proposition was made to divide the town into school districts, and a committee of twelve was chosen for the purpose, Samuel Walker being chairman. At an adjourned meeting, December 26th, the committee reported a recommendation that each of the four parishes be erected into a school district. The report was adopted.

The record of the First School District says: "In 1793 the town was divided into school districts. At the town-meeting, held on March 26th the following Gentlemen were chosen a Committee for District No. 1, viz: Rev. John Shaw, the Rev. Hezekiah Smith Bailey Bartlett, Esq., Samuel Blodgett, Esq., Samuel Walker, Joseph Dodge, Doct'r Saltonstall, Doct'r Brickett and William Cranch." Mr. Shaw was the minister of the First Church and Mr. Smith of the Baptist. Bailey Bartlett was sheriff and soon after Congressman. Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall and General Brickett were distinguished citizens, and William Cranch, then a young lawyer here, was afterwards chief justice of the District of Columbia. Samuel Walker continued to be chosen annually of this committee for a number of years. He died July 12, 1817.

Robert Green Walker was educated at the Haverhill schools, and at the Bradford academy, under the celebrated Benjamin Greenleaf. He went to Boston at

the age of twenty and found employment there; afterwards to the South, where he was engaged in traveling commercially for a year or two, making his headquarters at Charleston, South Carolina. About 1837 he entered into business in Haverhill with Moses E. Emerson, under the firm-name of Emerson & Walker. Their place of business was Bridge Street, and their neighbors there were William Smiley and Edmund Kimball.

June 30, 1835, Mr. Walker married Mary W. Emerson, of Haverhill, who died in 1872. Their only surviving child was Frances Abby, who married Charles Butters, of Haverhill, July 22, 1863. *Their* only child is Robert Green Walker Butters, at present (1888) a student at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology.

Robert Green Walker died suddenly February 19, 1862. He was interested in the first steamboat enterprise between Haverhill and Newburyport—the steamer "Merrimack," Capt. William Haseltine, which made her first trip from Haverhill April 8, 1828. The boat continued running, though quite irregularly, for several years, when the enterprise was abandoned.

Like his ancestors, Mr. Walker was for many years active and prominent in the affairs of the town. He was moderator of the town-meeting in 1846, and from that time till the day of his death was engaged in the town business.

He was on the Prudential (School) Committee from 1848 to 1857. He was selectman from 1851 to 1861, with the exception of two years, and during one of those the board employed him to keep the records and practically conduct the business, surrendering their compensation to him.

He was assessor from 1849 to 1854, inclusive. He was also road surveyor for many years.

In 1852, when party feeling ran very high, Mr. Walker was the only selectman chosen at the first meeting.

The reason why Mr. Walker was so much in the public employment is to be found in his great aptness and skill in the conduct of business of that character. He was neat, accurate and methodical, and had a decided taste for that kind of work. He took pride in doing it well. Again, his system and promptness were appreciated by the public. He had a genuine interest in the public schools, which endeared him to teachers and pupils alike; testimonials from them to that effect are highly prized by his family.

Mr. Walker took a similar interest in the affairs of the religious society with which he was a worshipper —the Centre Congregational. He was never weary of arranging details for its meetings and providing that everything should be done decently and in order.

In a word, he loved to be useful, and had a great capacity for taking trouble. The same tendency made him very valuable as a road surveyor. Emerson and other streets, bear witness to his efficiency in that department.

He was always ready to accept new methods, and never discarded a proposition simply because it was novel.

In 1859 the town appointed a committee to consider the subject of building a new town hall, to obtain estimates, make plans and report. Hon. James H. Duncan was chairman of the committee; Mr. Walker was the second named upon it, and took deep interest in the affair. January 7, 1861, the committee reported a plan, which was adopted, and measures were at once taken for the erection of a new building. During its construction Mr. Walker was indefatigable in his attention to details connected with it. This is the structure which, with some alterations, has so far served acceptably as the City Hall.

In private life Mr. Walker is spoken of as a genial and agreeable gentleman, whom it was always a pleasure to meet, ever social, with cordial manners and ready wit. One gentleman said, "I remember him as a tall, well-proportioned man, very courteous, though I thought a little reserved, and very well bred. He had great aptitude for public business, and in that respect, as in every other, much confidence was reposed in him. Too much cannot be said in judicious praise of Robert G. Walker."

Mr. Walker was a faithful, kind and indulgent husband and father.

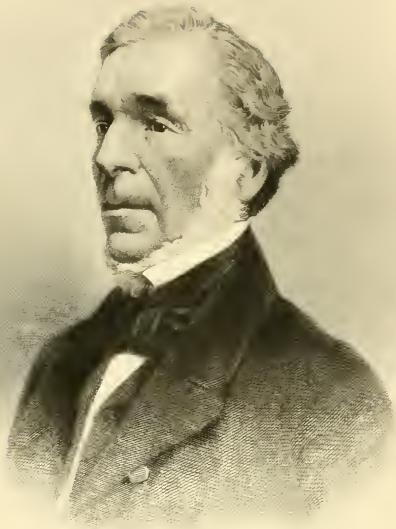
He was from an early day a member of St. John's Lodge of Masons in Boston.

It is characteristic of Mr. Walker's scrupulous care in all things that to him, according to the historian Chase, is to be ascribed the preservation of the invaluable roll of the "minute-men" of 1775, which had been "part of a parcel of loose papers in an old bag which had been kicked about the assessor's room for years." He rescued and carefully preserved it.

PAUL SPOFFORD.

Among her citizens who have been an honor to Haverhill, was Paul Spofford, the son of Joseph Spofford and Mary Chaplin. He was born in 1792, in the neighboring town of New Rowley, now Georgetown, and was sixth in descent from the Rev. John Spofford, appointed by the House of Lords in 1642, Vicar of Silkstone, in Yorkshire, and who resigned in 1662, when seventy-four years old, rather than at the sacrifice of his convictions become a conformist. The present Vicar of Silkstone, the Rev. W. S. Barker, in a recent letter to one of Mr. Spofford's family says:

"I enclose you an extract from Wilkinson's Worsborough which quotes the character of your ancestor." "Chapter 23, page 278, John Spofford, Vicar of Silkstone was 74 years of age when, refusing to comply with the terms of the Act of Uniformity, he resigned his living, and spent the few remaining years of his life at the house of Mr. Cotton, one of his parishioners, who



Paul Stafford

resided at Hawkhirst in Silkston. The character given of him by the biographer of the nonconforming clergy, is that he was a pious man, of competent parts and abilities, very plain in his preaching, holy in his life, facetious in discourse, and a lover of all good men."

The Spoffords had lived in Yorkshire from before the time of the conquest in 1066. At that date their ancestor's chief seat was in that county, where, and in the neighboring counties he had large possessions. A large portion of them were seized by that ruthless robber, William the Conqueror, and bestowed on William de Percy, one of his followers.

John Spofford, son of the vicar, and ancestor of the New England Spoffords, was one of the pilgrims who accompanied the Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, to this country in 1638, of whom their contemporary Governor Winthrop says, Mr. Rogers arrived in this country with about twenty families of his Yorkshire friends, "godly men" and "most of them of good estate."

The subject of our notice, until the age of nineteen worked upon his father's farm. His mother died when he was a child, but he had a kind and devoted father, and loving sisters, and it was a happy household.

As a boy he was fond of riding, shooting, wrestling, skating and other athletic sports; he had but little time for them, for there was plenty of work on his father's farm, and he was not one to shirk it. He had quite an inventive mind. When a mere child, he built himself a mill upon the little brook that ran through their place, and using a piece of tin which he had notched into a saw, and potatoes for his logs, he would saw out the slabs to the great delight of his little sisters. On one of the few holiday afternoons that fell to his lot, he obtained his father's permission to go duck-shooting. Taking with him Mr. Aubin, a man that worked upon their farm, he went to the Pond a mile or so distant, but when in the middle of it the boat upset, and as he could not swim a stroke, down he sunk to the bottom. The writer has heard him say that, as he lay there, he was free from pain, but that thoughts and memories rushed through his mind with such inconceivable rapidity that it seemed as if everything in his life was before him, and that he thought how his father and sisters would mourn when they should hear that he was drowned. But Mr. Aubin, who was an excellent swimmer, found him, after diving several times, and seizing him by the heel brought him to the surface, and got him ashore. He soon revived and was able to walk home, where a heartfelt welcome, a dry suit, and a good fire soon made him feel all right.

In 1812 he came to Haverhill as a clerk in a store. Soon after this his employer opened a general country-store in Salem, N. H., and Mr. Spofford went thither with him, but a good opening offering in Haverhill, they again returned to the city. While yet a clerk his employer chanced to be sick, at a time when it was necessary to go to Boston to buy a general assortment of goods. With many misgivings he entrusted this, to him all important matter, to his young clerk. In those days a trip to the city of Boston from the remote little village of Haverhill was a great affair. Mr. Spofford, though a county lad, probably on his first visit, spared no pains to justify the trust reposed in him. Fortunately he could carry in his mind the exact appearance of the goods shown him, the fineness of cloth, the color and grain of the sugar, the flavor of the tea, the pattern of crockery, indeed the appearance of the various articles needed for a general country-store, and by pricing each at several stores, he could judge which were the best bargains. So well did he perform his trust, that his employer always sent him afterwards to make the Boston purchases, and soon found it for his interest to promote him to a full partnership.

Much of their business was a barter-trade. At times some of the articles taken—such as shoes, hats, etc.—suited for the South, would accumulate. It was very desirable to find a ready outlet. Mr. Spofford decided to establish a commision-house for that purpose, and proposed to his friend, Thomas Tileston, then editor of the *Haverhill Gazette*, to join him. They formed a partnership, and, in the spring of 1818, founded the house of Spofford & Tileston, which in time became so well and favorably known through all the commercial world. In this age of steam and telegraph we cannot realize how formidable this undertaking must have been to them—the going so far from friends and home, unknown, with an untried business, and but slender means to make their way amongst strangers. What a contrast between leaving Haverhill now in the afternoon, arriving in New York in time for supper, after a ride of seven and a half hours in luxurious cars, and their journey.

They left Haverhill in May, 1818, in the stage-coach, at 7.30 A.M. The roads were bad and the whole day was consumed in getting to Boston. Early the next morning they left Boston by stage, and another day was spent in reaching Providence, R. I. The following morning they took stage, and by nightfall they reached Norwich, Conn. At an early hour the next day they embarked in the steamboat, and arrived at New Haven about eleven that night, and thought that they had made an excellent passage. They were transferred to another steamboat, which lay along side (I think it was the Fulton), and about noon next day were landed at Fulton Street, New York. Two or three years after this, Mr. Spofford was the only through passenger from Boston to New York. Only one stage came out from Boston that day. All his fellow-passengers had left by the time they reached Hartford, and at that city other passengers took their places. This stage was about forty-eight hours from Boston to New York.

Immediately on arriving in New York, Mr. Spofford secured a store in Fulton Street while Mr. Tile-

ston continued on as far as Philadelphia, and, I think, Baltimore, to see which of the three cities would be best for their permanent establishment.

The next day (Sunday), Mr. Spofford obeyed his father's injunctions by attending the Brick Church, of which Dr. Gardiner Spring, son of the Rev. Dr. Samuel Spring, of Newburyport, was pastor. From that day until his death, in 1869, he was a regular attendant of that church, and eventually became a member of it.

His partner, when he returned, a few days after, from Philadelphia, found him in full swing of business, and they wisely determined that New York was the place for them. Among their earliest customers were Spaniards, for at that time a low rate of duty permitted the shipment of shoes to Havana and Matanzas. They paid cash, and this young house of but small means saw that they should use every effort to keep and increase their custom by selling at small profit, and by great care in packing their goods. They soon won the confidence of their Spanish friends, and, on their return from Cuba, with their proceeds in produce, they were entrusted with the sale of coffee, sugar and molasses on commission. Having thus the control of considerable freight, they were induced, within a year or two, to place vessels in the Cuba trade. This, and the agency of the Boston packets, which they obtained about this time, was the beginning of a long and successful career as shipowners.

They boarded at Mrs. Street's, 115 Pearl Street, and at Bunkers'. Among their fellow-boarders were Jos. Kernochan, Henry and Daniel Parish and others who afterwards became very prominent in New York.

During this time Mr. Spofford and his partner had not neglected our Southern country, but they had found a large market for their goods in that direction, and with the like result of cotton, rice and other produce being consigned to them.

Their receipts of goods from Massachusetts on commission soon drifted into purchases for their own account, often paid for in leather. The frequent purchase of leather led them to importing hides from South America, and in a very few years they had six packets running regularly to Buenos Ayres and Montevideo. Meanwhile Spain had laid a heavy duty on American manufactures, so that the goods they formerly sold for Cuba could no longer be sent thither, but the firm had become fully established as importers of sugar and coffee. Their packets—the "Dromo," "Pharos," "Havana," "Cristobal Colon," "Adelaide," "Hellespont," "Caspar Hauser," "James Drake," and many others; and their captains, Benjamin Smith, Richard H. Ellis, Lane, Doughty, Richard Adams and others —were favorably known. For many years they did a very large business with that island. Sugar being an article of great consumption, and bearing a very heavy duty, it happened several times that the greatest amount of duty paid during the year at the New York Custom-House by any one importer was paid by Spofford & Tileston.

In 1845 Captain Michael Berry proposed to them the building an ocean steamship to run to Charleston, S. C. His many efforts to this end, with his owners and with all the other houses in that trade, had been in vain. They said that their fine packet-ships had handsome cabins, more than sufficient for all the travel. Only once or twice a year would they go full; generally, they could not get one-quarter of what they could accommodate. Why build a vessel that could carry every fortnight four times as many passengers as one of their largest ships? Where could he expect to get enough of them for even a small part of his room? And, as to freight, how could coal compete with wind. The steamship would cost more than five times as much as one of their packets, and every trip there would be a heavy bill for engineers, coal, wages and wear and tear on the machinery. Lastly, but by no means least, who in this country could build sea-going engines? This last really had great force. No marine engines and no sea-going steamers up to this time had ever been built in the United States. In building steamboats for river and inland navigation we excelled. In pleasant weather they could venture along the coast, prepared in case of storm to seek the first harbor. Years before this, a few trips had been made by steamboats between New York and Charleston, but the experiments ended in shipwreck and fearful loss of life. Once, many years before, a steamboat from a Southern port had succeeded in crossing the Atlantic, but none dare a second voyage.

Mr. Spofford and his partner considered the matter carefully. They could not see why marine-engines could not be built in the United States if machinists would inform themselves, and were well paid for their work. They saw at once that the uncertainty of the sailing vessel, which, even with good winds, was four or five days on the trip, and with calms or storms, might be twenty days, when contrasted with sixty hours, in which the steamship would make the run, would give them all the passengers that went by sea and a large number of those who then went by land. But they also saw that it would be useless to attempt it unless they were ready to spend money enough to build a stanch ship with powerful marine-engines that, regardless of weather, would go out at her appointed hour, and that would safely hold her way through the terrific storms that sometimes rage upon our coast.

In 1846 they built the "Southerner;" the contract for machinery was with Stillman, Allen & Co., of the Novelty Works, and for the hull with William H. Brown. The first trip was a success. On the second the "Southerner" encountered one of the worst storms that there had been for many years. Many persons were in great fear for her; but she passed through unscathed, lauded her passengers safely and

delivered her cargo in good order. She proved a very buoyant, easy ship, and then all felt that Americans had shown that they, as well as the English, could build marine-engines and ocean steamships that would stand the roughest weather. In a few months they contracted for a larger steamship, the "Northerner."

Aspinwall, Law, Sloo, Vanderbilt, Collins, Livingston and others, who afterwards became so prominent in the steam annals of the country, were upon the trial trips of the "Southerner" and "Northerner. When they saw the regularity of their trips, and the success that had attended the enterprise of Spofford & Tileston, they also built steamships for Liverpool, Havre, Aspinwall and other ports.

It shows how facilities for travel tend to its increase, when we see Spofford & Tileston commencing with a steamship of one thousand tons, trips once in two weeks, and schedule time of sixty hours, and find them at the outbreak of the Civil War with four splendid steamships, each of one thousand six hundred tons, so that twice a week they despatch a vessel with a schedule time of forty-eight to fifty hours. Besides which, on the south of Charleston, Savannah, and Norfolk on her north, each had their lines of steamships, and the travel by rail, also had greatly increased.

It was always a source of great gratification that during all this time not a single life was lost, none of their steamships were wrecked, nor, in fact, met with any mishap of moment. We think, therefore, that we may fairly claim for Haverhill the honor of having two of her former citizens the first in this country to build ocean steamships, and to run them successfully; and also that the enterprise of persons whose business education was commenced in Haverhill, immediately began a steamship development in the United States which soon threatened to wrest the supremacy from England, and which, had it received from our government aid similar to that bestowed by England upon her people, would make us to-day, at least her powerful rival, instead of being almost driven from the ocean.

In 1848, they bought the splendid line of Liverpool packets, "Sheridan," "Roscius," "Garrick," and "Siddons," ships of fine model, and when built considered very large. The line was profitable, but they were quick to see that larger ships could be run at about the same expense. They supplied their places with the "Webster," "Calhoun," "Henry Clay," "Orient," "Energy," and others, most of which they built. These were the largest ships in the Liverpool trade. When the great rush for California occurred in 1849, they were among the first to fit-up and send ships thither.

During the Civil War they were staunch supporters of the North, and contributed liberally to the cause. One of their steamships, the "Nashville," was seized by the Confederates, and, as a privateer, did much mischief. Some of their steamers entered the United States service. With the others they established a line to Havana, and when New Orleans was taken by our forces, their steamers were among the first to visit that city. They sent thither, as their agent, William J. Reid, a young man brought up in their employ, son of the Captain Reid of the "General Armstrong," who, in the War of 1812, so bravely defended his ship against an overwhelming British force.

On a trip to a neighboring plantation for a lot of sugar he had bought, a party of rebels attacked the steamer just as she was leaving. Reid was hit in several places, and a bullet passed through his neck, but being like his father, a man of great courage, he continued for a few moments to give orders, and succeeded in getting the vessel free. It was a terrible wound and it was many months before he recovered. Soon after the close of the war, Reid, having made a handsome property, came North, and the agency was discontinued.

Thus, besides the large inland and banking business of Spofford and Tileston, their shipping business was very extensive. In it, their flag, yellow, on a blue cross, the letters S T, white, was borne unsullied in the four quarters of the globe, and it always flew as the flag of American citizens, for they never yielded to the temptation of putting any of their vessels under a foreign flag, not even during the Civil War. On the contrary, they armed their Havana steamers, and obtained commissions in the United States Navy for the captains; and as for their other vessels, they trusted to the skill and prudence of their commanders,—Hill, Eldridge, Joseph J. Lawrence, Caulkins, De Peyster, French, Truman and others. Fortunately, with the exception of the Nashville, they all escaped capture.

In 1844, Mr. Spofford bought Elmwood, a beautiful country-place on the Sound, three miles from Harlem. There he passed half the year, and after a hard day's work in town, he would rest himself by hard work in the hay field, and the superintendence of his farm. I say rest, because, to him, the complete change of occupation, and the bringing back many of the associations of his boyhood, proved a rest, and without doubt prolonged his life, which, though it attained to seventy-seven, would probably have been yet greater had he not met with a severe accident in 1857. He was accompanying the daughters of his partner to the Italian opera, where for many years they had owned a box, and, as usual, together.

In his care for his young charges, he was struck down by a pair of horses which came rushing round the corner at a furious rate. He received a terrible blow on the back of the head. The young ladies fortunately escaped harm, and could aid him to his residence, which was near. Dr. Willard Parker, his family physician, congratulated him in his cheerful manner on his skull not being fractured, but enjoined

rest and quiet. He avoided alarming the family, but he well knew that no one could then tell what danger there might be of internal injury. The next morning, Mr. Spofford felt so much better, that he insisted on going to his office, but by mid-day he became unwell and returned home. For weeks his life trembled in the balance.

Every particle of his scalp sloughed off. To meet this tremendous drain upon the system, it was necessary at first to give him nourishment every two hours regardless of breaking his rest, or of the suffering, a change of position entailed. After a time minute red spots upon the skull, and then very minute filaments radiating from them, and by degrees a web of blood vessels, and then a new skin, and then a new head of hair was formed. Dr. Parker watched this development day by day, and to his professional eye it was most beautiful. Within three months Mr. Spofford was out, as active and apparently as well as ever. It was a most wonderful recovery. The Doctor attributed it to his having always lived a prudent, moderate life, and in no way, having impaired his splendid natural constitution; and to the most careful nursing of his devoted wife, aided afterwards by his sister, Mrs. Hersey, a resident of this city, and Miller, a nurse who had served in the Crimea under Florence Nightingale.

In 1864, Mr. Spofford had the great sorrow to lose his partner Mr. Thomas Tileston, his life-long friend. It was a sudden and terrible blow, but he bore up under it nobly, and continued actively engaged in business until his death, five years later. Then he had a stroke of paralysis, which in a few days ended in his death, October 28, 1869, at Elmwood. The funeral services took place on the 31st at his town residence. The Rev. Drs. Shedd, Murray, and Adams, and the Rev. Mr. Nixon officiated. Richard M. Blatchford, Jonathan Thorne, Shepherd Knapp, Levi A. Dowley, Thomas H. Faile, John David Wolfe, Robert L. Stuart, Jonathan Sturges, John D. Jones and William M. Evarts acted as pall-bearers. He was buried in Greenwood in his family vault which adjoins that of his partner Thomas Tileston.

The intimacy between the two partners was unusually close, and contributed much to their success. When they first came to New York they boarded together. On Mr. Tileston's marriage, Mr. Spofford was a member of his family until his own marriage. Then they took houses adjoining and exactly alike 522 and 524 Broadway. In the same block, three or four houses distant, one of their neighbors was John Jacob Astor. Fearing that their business would suffer by reason of their distance from their store, they in 1826 built two houses 37 and 39 Barclay Street, side by side exactly alike, and drew lots for a choice. The situation was beautiful; the lots were deep enough for pleasant gardens and in their immediate rear were the grounds of Columbia College, with their fine old buttonwoods. There they remained until 1840, when they moved to two houses, side by side, and exactly alike, which they had built at 733 and 735 Broadway. They occupied them for ten years, and then built at 2 and 4 East Fourteenth Street, at the corner of Fifth Avenue, two houses side by side and exactly alike, for which they again drew lots, and which they occupied until their deaths.

Mr. Spofford was for many years one of the council and treasurer of the New York University. He had been a director in the Erie, the Harlem and other railroads and companies; he was also director in various banks, fire and marine insurance companies and other institutions.

Both he and his partner were elected members of the Union Club, but the tastes of both were domestic, and they never accepted. They were, however, for many years members of the celebrated Hone Club, composed of a few gentlemen who dined once a fortnight at each other's houses. Amongst them were Philip Hone (their president), Moses H. Grinnell, Simeon Draper, J. Prescott Hall, Richard M. Blatchford, John Ward, George Curtis, Samuel Jaudon, James Watson Webb, Dr. J. W. Francis, Roswell L. Colt and A. C. Kingsland. There were a few honorary members — Daniel Webster. Thurlow Weed, Thomas Butler King, William H. Seward and one or two others—who dined with them when in town. Being very intelligent men, highly intellectual and leaders in their various pursuits, these reunions were very pleasant, and, though neither Mr. Spofford nor his partner ever held political office, at these meetings, they aided in shaping the course of political parties.

Mr. Spofford was a man of great coolness and nerve. When over seventy, while driving to Elmwood, one of his neighbors tried to pass him, but he maintained the lead until he came to where he was to turn from the main road into the one which led to his place. In order to turn he slackened his pace. His friend, but a few yards behind, was going at full speed, when his horse suddenly shied and brought one of his wheels in contact with the wheel of Mr. Spofford's light wagon, throwing it with great force high into the air, pitching him out on the other side. He picked himself up, and, calling to his horse, the well-trained animal stopped. His friend was greatly alarmed, and wished to take him home, but Mr. Spofford assured him that he could drive himself. He felt that something was wrong with one hand, but the other was all right; so he jumped into his wagon and drove home, a mile or so. His friend, however, would not be put off, but followed in his own wagon until he saw him at his gate all right. Mr. Spofford stopped at the stable to order a man to go for the doctor, and at his farmer's to give some directions about his crops, and then went to the house. He told his wife that he had met with an accident, and, though slight, had sent for the doctor.

His manner was so unconcerned she could not sup-



B. F. Hosford

pose that it was serious. The doctor found that both bones of his arm, at the wrist, were broken off short, and set them. The next day, Sunday, his family had hard work to prevent his going to church. On Monday he went to business at the usual hour, stopping at Doctor Parker's, who said that his arm was doing well, and that he would recover the full use of it; but that, while as strong as ever, the wrist would be slightly crooked, from the haste with which it had been set. He added that by resetting the difficulty could be overcome, but that it would be very painful, and was not necessary. Mr. Spofford thought otherwise, and then and there made the doctor perform the operation, and bore the pain, which was very great, without flinching. Then, with his arm in splints, well bandaged and in a sling, he went to his office, where, to his great surprise, his friend found him when he called to inquire how he was progressing.

Mr. Spofford's first wife was the niece and ward of the Hon. Jeremiah Nelson, member of Congress, from Newburyport. After her death he remained a widower for more than ten years, and then married a daughter of the Rev. Dr. Gardiner Spring. He left one daughter and five sons.

In manner he was very unassuming, quiet and retiring, very pleasant, rather slow of speech, but very witty, and quick to see the bearing of a remark. His judgment was excellent. He was a man of very kind, deep feelings, and very considerate of the feelings and welfare of those under him. He would at any time put himself to great personal inconvenience to do them a favor. He was always neat in dress and person, slightly under the average height, of spare wiry build, very healthy, and capable of great endurance, very quick and active in his movements, of dark complexion, very bright, sparkling black eyes and a pleasant smile that lit up his whole countenance. Until fifty years began to sprinkle his hair with grey, it was jet black, very glossy, fine and silk-like in texture, clustering around his head in beautiful curls. From early manhood he always wore whiskers, but never moustache nor beard.

REV. B. F. HOSFORD.

Among all the influences which, from the earliest period, have contributed to the moulding of institutions and the development of character in New England, none have been more powerful than that of its clergy. These, from the beginning, were noted as men of learning, ability and piety. They were the founders of schools and colleges; they left their impress upon Church and State; they were leaders in thought and action during times of peace and times of war.

A fit successor and representative of these worthies was the subject of this sketch, in whose character and career an old and a new era seemed to blend their elements. His boyhood was spent amidst the quiet of a new England country home. His early manhood brought him into contact with the activities of a growing manufacturing community. The period of his pastorate over the Centre Church in Haverhill extended from 1843 to 1865, the mid-period of the nineteenth century, an epoch marked by intellectual quickening, great inventions and stirring events in our national history. In all the movements of the age to which he belonged, he shared through a wide range of sympathies and a keen and vigorous intellect. Thus, while he had drunk of the mental and religious influences of the New England of the past, he was fully alive with the progressive spirit of a later day, and was peculiarly fitted for that office of spiritual teacher and leader which he held among the same people for nearly the space of a generation.

Benjamin Franklin Hosford was born in Thetford, Vt., November 11, 1817. The youngest of twelve children, he was reared with careful tenderness in the simplicity of his rural home, the remembrance of which he always held dear.

The beautiful associations of mountain and woodland, of orchard, meadow and river, of birds and flowers, became a part of his inner life, never to be outgrown. Still more was his character affected by the conscientious training of parents of intelligence and piety, and by the profound metaphysical preaching of a revered theologian, in the square-pewed meeting-house on Thetford Hill, in which families were seated according to rank or seniority, with the boys and girls occupying their respective galleries, guarded by a force of tithing men.

He fitted for college at the Academy of his native town, showing from the first the qualities which marked him through life. His school-mates bore witness to his quickness of apprehension, his enthusiasm for study, his fine tastes, ready powers of observation and quick sense of the ludicrous. The child was, in almost every respect, the father of the man.

He entered Dartmouth College, at Hanover, N. H. in 1834, and directly after his graduation there, began his theological course at Andover Seminary, which covered the usual period of three years, besides an additional year of post-graduate study.

He was ordained pastor of the Center Church in Haverhill May 21, 1845, and on July 28, 1845, was married to Mary Elizabeth Stone, of Saxonville, Mass.

Thus began his life-work, concentrated in one home and one parish, and carried on with all the force of a nature which knew nothing of self-seeking, while through it, like a beam of pure white light, shone the consciousness of the greatness of his high office.

His congregation was made up of varied elements. It contained many families endowed with a heritage of standing, wealth and culture, while there also came into church relations, more or less intimate, representatives of a more restless and less thoughtful

class, which the growth of manufacturing interests was attracting to Haverhill. It required no ordinary tact and wisdom so to adjust pulpit and social ministrations that all should be instructed and won.

It was not so much owing to any direct effort, as to a unity of feeling centering in affection for the pastor and confidence in the consistency of his life and teaching, that the difficult task was accomplished. Social distinctions were little mentioned or thought of, and a sympathy of interest existed, which has been largely perpetuated to the present day.

Into all the general interests of the thriving town the new minister entered enthusiastically. He became a member of the school committee while the public school was still in a formative state, and took a deep interest in their success, as well as in the individual advance of pupils of promise. In those days, the "Lyceum" was at its height of popularity, and Mr Hosford's lectures on astronomy, carefully prepared and illustrated by digrams, were a revelation of wonders to many hearers. In other departments of science he was almost equally an enthusiast; so that every ramble through field or forest revealed something to awaken his eager curiosity and suggest apt illustrations of truth, for lecture, sermon or informal talk. The love of nature, in general, was with him a passion, and his visits to the mountains or sea-shore were always fruitful in helpfulness and delight, both to himself and his people.

He found intense enjoyment, too, in classical music, for which he was endowed with exquisitely delicate susceptibilities, and it was largely through his instrumentality that Haverhill was favored with many fine concerts of the highest order of excellence.

All that was choice and noble in literature was dear to him, and both directly and indirectly, he led others to "give attention to reading." Thus his varied tastes and culture had a large and abiding effect upon the whole community, while they formed a store of resources from which he drew as a preacher. Yet all were brought into beautiful harmony by the subordination of all to his sense of responsibility as a shepherd of souls and a guide of lost and sinful men. A theology based upon the strong rock-foundations of the fathers had, as he presented it, a grandeur, solemnity and strength, which were yet full of yearning tenderness. All that vivid and poetic sensibility of his nature took fire when touched with the flame of the altar, and in its light and glow, the truths of an invisible and spiritual world became living realities to his hearers. He did not claim to be a logician or a theologian; he was not an orator in the strict sense of the word, and he had an utter abhorrence of anything like clap-trap or pretense. Yet his sermons, marked by patient thought and careful preparation, were transparent in style and diction, full of individuality, occasionally flashing into that characteristic wit which never lost dignity,—always simple, earnest and magnetic.

As he touched upon the loftier themes of religious truth, his face kindled and his voice thrilled, till his hearers were uplifted on the wings of his faith and spirituality.

The same characteristics entered largely into the less formal services of social meetings, while his prayers gave evidence of deep acquaintance and sympathy with human needs, as well as of personal nearness to the Father of spirits. In certain special occasions, to use the words of one who knew him intimately, "his supplications reached a sphere that was wholly unearthly, becoming awful for spirituality, resignation and rooted trust in God."

As the years rolled on and Mr. Hosford grew in intellectual and spiritual strength, his church gained in influence and numbers, sometimes with large additions, made after periods of special religious interest, but oftener through the steady ingathering of those who felt the attractive power of Christianity as shown forth in their pastor's words and life.

At the time of Mr. Hosford's settlement in 1845, the church embraced one hundred and sixty-eight members. During the fifteen years following, one hundred and seventy were added. In 1859, ninety-eight members were dismissed to form the North Church. There were constant accessions after that date, and at the time of Mr. Hosford's dismission in 1863, the membership numbered two hundred and fifty-two. Such a record of numbers, however, is only a slight indication of the power for good exerted by a faithful minister of Christ, and in the city where he so long labored, Mr. Hosford's influence still lives as an inspiring and elevating force.

His work as a writer was by no means limited to the production of sermons. He was the author of two interesting volumes, entitled "The Catacombs of Rome" and "The Footsteps of St. Paul." Through the entire period of his ministry he was a frequent contributor to the press. His published articles in newspapers and magazines covered a wide range of topics,—science, music, theology and criticism,—in all which he showed himself almost equally a master. These papers were marked by grace and versatility of style, and especially by a keen appreciation of the ludicrous, which appeared, now in the most playful of fun, and again in some thrust of satire, too good-natured to wound.

In Mr. Hosford, as in other sympathetic natures, this sense of humor lay side by side with a fine sensitiveness to the pathos of life. Both found utterance, not only through his pen, but still more in the daily intercourse of life, rendering him a most delightful companion, full of surprises, ready in repartee, unfailing in responsiveness to both the brighter and the sadder moods of his fellow-men.

What he was in social life it would be hard fittingly to express. His tall, erect figure, his black eyes, with the keen glance that seemed to look one through and through, his scholarly cast of features and his tho-



E. Bowley

rough manliness of bearing, made him, even externally, a marked man among a thousand. While dignified and somewhat reserved in manner, and impatient of anything that savored of display or conceit, his kindness and affection went out without reserve to all who had any claim upon them, and especially to the afflicted, the weak and the children and youth of his congregation.

The beautiful home, overlooking the windings of the Merrimack, was the centre of his earthly happiness. Here were born to him four children, of whom three—two sons and a daughter—are still living. When a precious child was taken away by death, at the age of seven, the father's grief for her was of an intensity that could never quite be comforted.

In striking outward events, the most complete and rounded lives are often almost wanting. The twenty years of Mr. Hosford's pastorate were marked by few startling incidents. The tide of human life in Haverhill ebbed and flowed, and the devoted pastor was a large part in it all, ministering at wedding and funeral ceremonies, standing by the sick and dying, taking the little child in his arms for baptism, welcoming into church-fellowship the young believer, who saw in the minister himself a type and likeness of that Master in whose footsteps he yearned to walk.

In 1861, as Mr. Hosford's health was beginning to wane, the War of the Rebellion broke out, causing an antagonism of feeling and interest that divided the North almost equally with the country as a whole, Haverhill proving no exception. Conservative though Mr. Hosford was by nature and principle, his sympathies were ardently on the side of the Union. During the declining years of his life his prayers followed those whom Haverhill sent forth to the strife, the triumphant end of which so many of them were, like himself, never to witness.

He spent two or three years in the pursuit of health, with varying hopes and fears, deepening at length into certainty that the end was near. In October, 1863, he was, at his own request, dismissed from the pastoral office which he had so long honored. Ten months later, August 10, 1864, his earthly course ended, after an illness which, in spite of long pain and languor, was radiant with a beauty and peace that made it the fitting culmination of a noble and holy life.

It is well that such a career should be held in grateful remembrance. Ending at the age of forty-seven years, it might seem to have been mysteriously cut short in its mid-day of usefulness. Yet Christian faith looks forward to the glorious possibilities of the life beyond death, while unbelief itself recognizes that such souls "join the choir invisible" of those who are immortal on earth through the ever-perpetuating influence of pure and lofty character and unselfish devotion to mankind.

EDWIN BOWLEY.[1]

Edwin Bowley was the son of Eben and Mary Nichols Bowley. He was born on the River road, in the East Parish of Haverhill, November 17, 1822. He died at his house on Emerson Street, in the city proper, June 11, 1884, wanting some months of completing his sixty-second year. His parents were poor, and his opportunities of education were exceedingly limited. He went when very young to live with Varnum Ayer, a farmer on Washington Street. The farm he thus worked upon as a boy, he bought years after, and made a very profitable investment of it. He afterwards went to work for one Buswell, who kept a grocery store on Water Street. He was later in the employment of Mr. Bartlett in the same business, to whom he and Mr. Eben Webster were successors in 1847. After several years of successful business Mr. Webster retired, and Martin V. B. Hoyt became a partner, the style of the firm being E. Bowley & Co. Later, Mr. Hoyt was succeeded by Carlos P. Messer, who continued with Mr. Bowley until the latter's death, but the firm-name never changed, and the familiar sign of "E. Bowley & Co." was not removed from Merrimac Street until August 22, 1884. During the many years of its display, there was never any time when the credit of the firm doing business under it was not undoubted, or when it failed to give satisfaction to its numerous customers.

Mr. Bowley had the sagacity to see the probable increase and prosperity of Haverhill from the beginning of his business career, and the courage to act upon his convictions. The large fortune he left at his decease was due to his real estate operations. He began to invest in real estate as early as 1846. And the first piece of land he bought is still in the possession of his family. He sold land in Haverhill the day bnt one before his death. On the same day he went to Newton and bought the well-known estate, called "The Travellers' Home." The whole number of parties to conveyances in which he was interested was one thousand three hundred and twenty-five. He made between six and seven hundred transfers of real estate. At his death, he owned seventy-eight parcels of land. The Grammar School on Mount Washington, where he toiled as a little lad, no one caring much whether he went to school or not, bears his name.

October 4, 1848, Rev. Arthur S. Train, then pastor of the First Baptist Church in Haverhill, married Edwin Bowley, "a trader by occupation, aged 26 years," to Miss Dolly C. Messer, of Haverhill. Mrs. Bowley was an invalid for years before her husband's death, but has always been respected as a very benevolent woman. They had three children,—Mary G., who married George A. Hall, of Haverhill; Sarah T., and William M., a grocer in Haverhill after his

[1] By John B. D. Cogswell.

father's death, and city alderman in 1886. Mrs. Hall died suddenly in Boston, January 22, 1888, leaving one son.

Mr. Bowley was never actively engaged in politics until the autumn of 1882, when he was unexpectedly nominated for the State Senate by the Democratic party, the district being regarded as strongly Republican. There was unquestionably some sneering at the nomination, on the ground of Mr. Bowley's supposed illiteracy and want of familiarity with public affairs. But he certainly had not sought the office, and some who knew him well, and who were familiar with his native good sense and good judgment, as well as with his intrinsic integrity, kindliness, prudence and modesty, had no fear but he could bear the test. And the result more than realized their most sanguine expectations. He was triumphantly chosen, and, although it might have been claimed that the first election was the result of accident or surprise, arising from an unexpected condition of politics, he was re-elected in 1883, and was therefore a member of the Senate at the time of his death.

In the first place, the unlooked for honor, worked no change in the man. He was the same simple, unobtrusive person as before. Secondly, his associates in the legislature, who had doubtless all heard something of his remarkable rise in condition from very humble circumstances, perhaps expected to meet an obtrusive and ignorant man. They found a quiet, simple gentleman, who sought nothing for himself, and only desired to learn how best to do his duty. The result was that in the Senates of 1883 and 1884, no one was more considered, none more esteemed and beloved, than Edwin Bowley. And of this, ample evidence will be given.

Soon after his first election, upon his sixtieth birthday, a considerable number of his friends without distinction of party, tendered Mr. Bowley a reception and dinner at the Eagle House. In the course of the proceedings, B. F. Brickett, Esq., who presided, presented Mr. Bowley, in the name of the company, with an elegant gold watch and chain. Speeches, expressing their high regard for the guest of the evening, were made by Mayor Moses How, W. E. Blunt, F. O. Raymond, Warren Ordway, (of Bradford), David B. Tenny (city clerk), E. B. Bishop, Raymond Noyes (who read a poem written by Mrs. John E. Brown), W. H. Moody, C. W. Morse, T. J. Taylor, D. C. Bartlett and others.

Shortly before taking his seat in the Senate, Mr. Bowley received from the late Hon. N. S. Howe, then at Washington, a letter with which he was naturally gratified, and from which we make an extract. "During the forty years of our acquaintance not for one moment that I am aware of, interupted by an inharmonious word or act on the part of either—I have never known or heard of anything on your part, inconsistent with the highest honor and integrity. To such men, the interests of the old Commonwealth may be safely intrusted, because they will endeavor to impress upon the public legislation the principles which have controlled their private life, and act from considerations of duty, without yielding to the weakness or wickedness of party demands and contaminations."

In the Senate of 1883, Mr. Bowley served upon the Committee on the Fisheries, and the Committee on Roads and Bridges. In 1884, he served on the same Committees, with the addition of that upon Woman Suffrage.

During the session of 1884, Senator Bowley was seized with severe illness which detained him at home, preventing his resuming his seat; but he apparently recovered from this attack, and seemed strong and active again. But he was fatally stricken on the morning of Tuesday, June 10th; and, although he lived till the next day, he gradually passed into a state of unconsciousness, from which he never rallied. His funeral on the afternoon of Saturday June 14th, was attended by a large concourse of people, including many from abroad, among whom were several of his Legislative associates.

The grocers of Haverhill and Bradford closed their stores as a mark of respect. The flag at City of Haverhill Engine House hung at half-mast.

Mr. Bowley was one of the originators of the Haverhill Iron Works, and served till his death as a director and its treasurer; September 15, 1884, the directors adopted resolutions reported by Messrs. Little and Thomas Sanders, expressing their "respect and esteem for him in every relation of life," in which they had been brought in contact with him.

Mr. Bowley was a member of the Bradford Farmers' Institute, which also adopted appropriate resolutions.

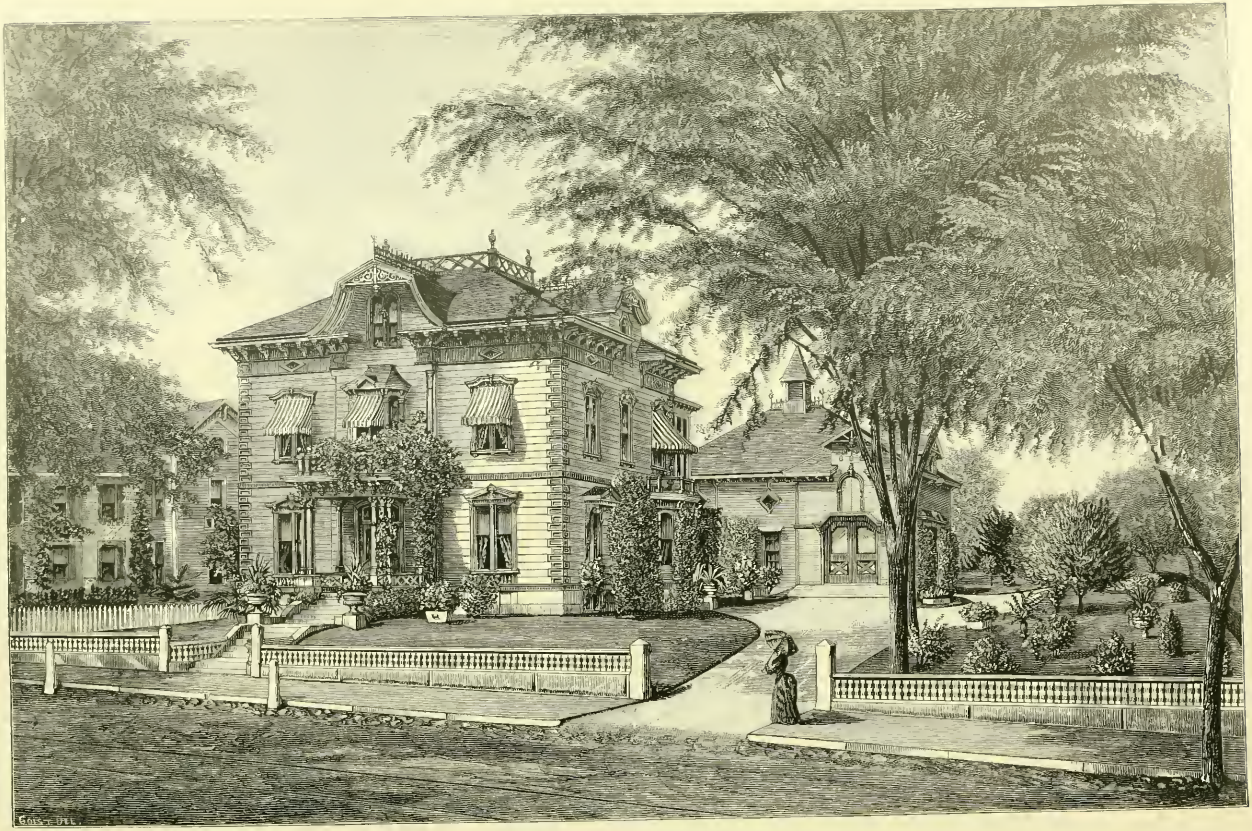
He was treasurer and a director of the Brown Hotel Company, and president of the Haverhill Steamboat Express Company.

In his domestic and social relations, Mr. Bowley was one of the kindest and most thoughtful of men.

During the hurry of breaking up at the close of the session of 1884 (June 4th), at half-past twelve P.M., twenty-one of the senators found time to write Mr. Bowley a joint letter, expressing their regret at his compulsory absence.

Hon. John D. Washburn, of Worcester, wrote of Mr. Bowley: "He was a straightforward and honorable associate." Senator Burt: "I had learned to love him for the true man that was in him." Senator Morrison, of Lowell, wrote: "I certainly most sincerely admired the man himself.

President Bruce of the Senate of 1884 wrote of him: "Whom I had learned to respect and esteem for the simplicity and purity of his character, and his conscientious discharge of every duty assigned him:" Senator Gilmore, of Cambridge, says: "His genial and unselfish intercourse with his associates will always be remembered with unfeigned pleasure." Senator Sessions, of Hampden, says: "I found him always



RESIDENCE OF THE LATE E. J. M. HALE,

HAVERHILL, MASS.



E. J. M. Hale.

affable, frank and companionable. His large experience and sound common sense made his opinion valuable to us all. We all loved and respected him, and every Senator felt his loss as a personal affliction."

Hon. George G. Crocker, president of the Senate of 1883, and Hon. A. E. Pillsbury, of the Senate of 1884, and president in 1886, also wrote expressing condolence and sympathy.

At the first reunion of the Senate of 1883, held April 1, 1885, resolutions were unanimously adopted, expressing their appreciation of Mr. Bowley's "services and character."

"*Resolved*, That in our intercourse with the deceased, we were always impressed with his sterling integrity, modesty, industry, sound judgment and interest in the welfare of the Commonwealth.

"*Resolved*, That we always found in him a kind friend, a genial companion, a safe and prudent legislator, and we sadly miss his presence on this occasion.

"*Resolved*, That to the family of our late associate, we offer our most tender sympathies, we join with them in mourning his loss and will ever cherish his memory."

These are tributes of which any man might be proud; but even better than these the thanks and tears of the poor, who always found in Edwin Bowley a kind employer and faithful friend.

This sketch was read to an active and leading citizen of Haverhill, who said: "That is all right, and I agree with the whole of it, but you might have made it a little stronger as to what Mr. Bowley did for Haverhill." "In what respect do you mean?" "I mean in the aid he rendered to poor and struggling men. I had particularly in mind the encouragement he gave young men about acquiring homesteads. He would sell a young man a lot on such easy terms that he was as good as a co-operative bank." "Do you not think that Mr. Bowley was a very good judge of human nature?" "Excellent; it amounted almost to an instinct;" and then he related an incident or two, illustrative of Mr. Bowley's shrewdness and tact.

E. J. M. HALE.[1]

Ezekiel James Madison Hale was born at Haverhill, March 30, 1813. Ezekiel Hale, his grandfather, born at Newbury, 1762, married in 1785, Phœbe Coburn, of Dracut. From Dracut, he removed to Derry, N. H., and thence to Haverhill. He was a pioneer in the manufacture of textiles. He made cotton goods very early. In 1804, he established a Woolen factory at Little River. His son, Ezekiel, born at Dracut in 1788, succeeded his father as a manufacturer. He married Hannah Church, daughter of Samuel Crookson, a retired merchant of Boston.

E. J. M. Hale fitted for college at Bradford Academy, under Benjamin Greenleaf, entered Dartmouth College in 1831, and graduated in due course in 1835. John Plummer Healey, the well-known lawyer of Boston, Harry Hibbard and Amos Tuck of New Hampshire, were among his classmates. He began to read law with Gilman Parker of Haverhill, but liking business better, he connected himself with his father's mills. As a boy and young man, he was quiet and studious. Being successful as a manufacturer, he purchased extensive woolen mills at Littleton, N. H., where he made flannels. Purchasing the mill privileges and factory at South Groveland, in 1859, he built two additional establishments, and concentrated his manufacturing at this point. The water power was improved and supplemented by steam-power. Continually extending his business, Mr. Hale purchased the remaining mill sites on the stream. Up to 1875, he constantly increased his buildings and enlarged his operations till the mills gave employment to four or five hundred operatives, and a village of about one thousand inhabitants grew up. Mr. Hale erected many blocks and single dwellings, occupied by the operatives. He did much to foster the growth of the village. He gave a lot for a Catholic church and helped to build it. The site and structure with the furnishing of the St. James Episcopal Church, were entirely provided by him.

Mr. Hale was the largest private manufacturer in the United States. He was a strong and able business man. He naturally was called to give his aid to many enterprises. He was many years a director of the Boston and Maine Railroad Company, and for some years of the Manchester and Lawrence. For twenty-three years he was president of the Merrimac Bank of Haverhill, giving it up shortly before his death. In 1848, he represented the district in the State Senate. February 3, 1837, Mr. Hale married Lucy Lapham, daughter of Benjamin Parker, a merchant of East Bradford, now Groveland. They had seven children—six sons and one daughter. Harry H. Hale of Bradford, born July 7, 1847, who is one of the trustees under his father's will, survives him. Mrs Hale died in March, 1856, and Mr. Hale, February 5, 1862, married her sister, Ruth C. Parker. Their only issue was, Edward, born May 29, 1863.

Mr. Hale's business success was proportioned to his abilities. He left a very large property, including valuable real estate in New York and Chicago. His mills are still carried on by the trustees of his estate.

His death occurred June 4, 1881. In charities, as in business, he was apt to be decided and even curt in his response to the numerous applications made to him for assistance; but some of those nearest to him say that his private benevolence was much more extended than the world knew. In his public benefactions, he was thoughtful and considerate, and took great care in studying details, that his gifts should work to the best advantage.

He took care to provide for the permanent support of a resident clergyman for the church he had built

[1] By John B. D. Cogswell.

at South Groveland, and a sermon was preached there on the first Sunday after his burial by his friend, the Rev. Charles Wingate, of St. John the Evangelist, Haverhill. Of his religious faith, Mr. Wingate could say: "Precious to him was the church, with her sweet communions, her solemn vows, her hymns of love and praise. Their serene and sober light cast its brightness over the joys and sorrows of many years, and cheered him when the shadows were gathering round his mortal path."

Some brief account has been heretofore given in these pages of the proposition made by Mr. Hale to the city of Haverhill January 29, 1873, in reference to the establishment of a public library, and of its acceptance by the city. August 1, 1873, the City Council elected six trustees of the library, who were E. J. M. Hale, James H. Carleton, James E. Gale, James R. Nichols, R. S. Chase and John L. Hobson. To these the mayor was joined, *ex-officio*. The conditions of the gift having been complied with, in November, 1873, plans for building were invited from architects, and the building was erected in 1874–75, accepted and occupied May, 1875. Mr. Hale himself was chairman of the building committee, and gave the matter much of his time and attention.

November 11, 1875, the building was dedicated. The mayor, Alpheus Currier, delivered the introductory address; prayer was offered by Rev. Dr. Seeley; a poem written by John G. Whittier, was sung; Mr. Hale himself gave an historical sketch of the library, showing that it had been built at a cost of less than fifty thousand dollars, and books purchased at a cost of about twenty thousand dollars, mainly under the care of James E. Gale, one of the trustees. Interesting addresses were made by Hon. Leverett Saltonstall, of Boston, General William F. Bartlett, of Pittsfield, Judge Charles S. Bradley, of Providence, R. I., Professor James B. Thayer, of the Dane Law School, Cambridge, all of whom were connected with Haverhill by birth or descent. A letter was read from John G. Whittier, who wrote: "Half a century ago, as I have good reason for knowing, there were few books to be had in Haverhill and vicinity. There were some not very readable volumes in the old Social Library. . . . I have travelled miles of a winter evening in search of a book." Governor Gaston was present on this occasion.

Edward Capen, who had been already for more than twenty years connected with the Boston Public Library, was appointed librarian by the trustees, November 23, 1874, and has ever since been in that honorable service. Under their joint care, the library has much increased and flourished. The good done by the Haverhill Public Library is inestimable. Thousands upon thousands will have reason to thank the memory of Mr. Hale for his thoughtful and judicious liberality. After much consideration, Mr. Hale also determined to found a hospital in his native city. To this end he himself purchased a site and procured needful steps to be taken by the city government. The Legislature passed an act which was accepted by the City Council February 13, 1882, authorizing the city to erect and maintain the Haverhill City Hospital. Mr. Hale left by will fifty thousand dollars for a hospital fund. The site being considered unsuitable was sold under authority of the Supreme Court by the trustees, and an estate presented to them by James H. Carleton, in 1886 was adopted for hospital purposes and formally dedicated December 29, 1887, when suitable addresses were made by Hon. Joseph H. Sheldon, the mayor, Dr. John Crowell, who gave an interesting historical address, and others. Within a few days, a frightful railroad accident in the vicinity, caused the resources of the establishment to be taxed to the utmost.

Mr. Hale by will left a fund of fifty thousand dollars for the maintenance of the library, and a fund of equal amount, the interest of which is to be applied to the annual purchase of books.

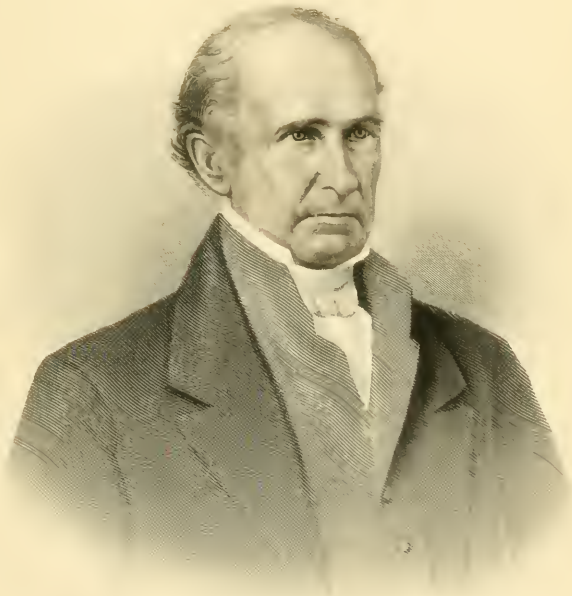
These thoughtful donations, made with equal liberality and discretion, will cause the memory of Mr. Hale to be ever held in respect in the place where he was born and lived by all right-thinking people.

HON. STEPHEN MINOT.[1]

The ancestor of the American Minots was Elder George Minot, son of Thomas Minot, Esq., of Saffron Walden, Essex, England, who came to this country about 1630, and settled at Dorchester, Mass.

His grandson, James Minot, graduated at Harvard College, studied divinity and physic, and settled in Concord, Mass., where his grandson, Jonas Minot, was born in 1735, and where he lived. A great part of the territory of Wilmot, N. H., was granted to him; he also owned other large tracts of land in New Hampshire, as well as in Vermont and Maine,—in all, some two hundred thousand acres. He had nine children. The eighth, Stephen, born September 28, 1776, is the subject of this sketch. His mother was Mary Hall, daughter of Rev. Willard and Abigail Hall, of Westford, Mass. He was prepared for college at Westford Academy, and graduated at Harvard in 1801. He studied law with Hon. Samuel Dana, of Groton, and was admitted to the Middlesex bar in 1804. He practiced his profession eleven months in Gloucester and Minot (now Auburn), Maine, and then removed to Haverhill, engaging in practice there. He was judge of the Circuit Court of Common Pleas for Essex County from 1811 to the repeal of the law creating it in 1820. During the years 1814 to 1816, inclusive, he lived in Methuen, where he owned and managed a manufactory. He was district attorney from 1824 to 1830. In 1825 he represented Haverhill in the Legislature. He retired from the practice

[1] By John B. D. Cogswell.



Stephen Monot



Ira N. Smiley

of the law in 1832, at the age of fifty-six. From 1818 to 1822, inclusive, he was a member of the school committee of the First District in Haverhill,—the centre village, where he resided. During the larger part of the time his associates were John Varnum and James H. Duncan, both afterward Representatives in Congress. The following extract from the records shows that at this period what was regarded as an important step in female education was taken: "1819, Apl. 17th.—The Committee met at the office of John Varnum, Esq. Voted that in order to afford the females who attend the Grammar School a better opportunity of instruction than they have hitherto had, said school should, from the first day of May to the first day of September, be kept at the following hours, viz.: The Boys shall attend from eight o'clock, A.M. to twelve o'clock A.M., and from two to four o'clock in the afternoon. The females shall attend from four to six o'clock P.M."

Mr. Minot married Rebecca Trask, of Bradford, in 1809. She was the mother of his three children,—Charles, George and Harriet. She died in 1832. In 1841 he married Ellen P. Gardner, who outlived him. He died April 15, 1861.

In early life Stephen Minot was a Federalist and a Whig; later, he was a Free-Soiler and Republican.

He was prominent in the Unitarian Society at Haverhill. During the period of anti-slavery excitement in that town, when the meeting-houses and public buildings were closed against abolitionists through fear of violence, Judge Minot tendered the use of the basement of the First Parish (Unitarian) meeting-house for discussion upon slavery.

Charles Minot, Judge Minot's oldest son, graduated at Harvard in 1828. In 1829 he was organist of the instrument then set up in the First Parish meeting-house, the earliest in the town. In 1832 he was a lawyer in Haverhill, and was afterwards superintendent of the Boston and Maine Railroad. He was always recognized as an able man.

George Minot, born at Haverhill, Jan. 5, 1817, was prepared at Haverhill and Exeter Academies, and graduated at Harvard in 1836. He received the degree of LL.B. at the Dane Law School at Cambridge, spent one year in the office of Rufus Choate, in Boston, and was admitted to practice in that city, where he remained until his death. He was an industrious and learned lawyer, especially known by his editorial labors. He reported Judge Woodbury's United States Circuit Court decisions, edited the United States Statutes at large, and nine volumes of English Admiralty Reports, and was the author of Minot's Digest, and the supplement thereto of the decisions of the State Supreme Judicial Court.

Harriet Minot (now Mrs. Pitman) of Cambridge, is well remembered in Haverhill as a leader of society there, and deeply interested in the anti-slavery cause, benevolent enterprises and the advancement of women. Her husband is Mr. Isaac Pitman, formerly of Providence, Rhode Island.

Soon after his death, Mr. Chase, the historian of Haverhill, thus wrote of Judge Minot: "His mind was clear in its perception and logical in its conclusions. Firm in purpose, exact and punctual in method and habits, of strict integrity, fearless in spirit, he was ever prompt to say or do whatever his judgment approved. He was a liberal supporter of the institutions of religion, whose ministrations he attended with great regularity, as long as his infirmities would admit. Of great regularity and temperance in his manner of life, in his private relations a true, affectionate, generous friend. In conversation, he was genial and rich in anecdote. During the latter part of his life, having withdrawn from professional labors, he spent much of his time in mathematical studies, in which he took great delight, and in reading the Latin classics."

He was not only an excellent mathematician, but a very respectable mechanic, was fond of music and familiar with early English literature. He was an excellent lawyer, and a shrewd, keen, clear-headed business man. His general capacity for affairs was always admitted. He was industrious, reliable and strictly truthful.

Perhaps the popular feeling in regard to him was, that he was a just, rather than a generous or a sympathetic man; but one who knew him intimately writes: "He was very generous to objects of charity which commended themselves to his sympathy. His gifts were bestowed so unostentatiously that few except the recipients were aware of them. Many poor spinsters and widows were his periodical beneficiaries for many years.

"He was undemonstrative, but he was an affectionate husband and a tender and devoted father and grandfather. He was a genuine lover of children."

Rev. Charles Wingate writes of Judge Minot: "I remember his personal appearance and that every one regarded him as a man of very sound judgment. He was always very calm and deliberate when giving his opinions."

The writer ventures upon the liberty of appending the following extract from a note written by John G. Whittier, dated Danvers, November 2, 1887:

"*Dear Friend:* In answer to thy note, I would say that I knew Judge Minot very well, in my younger days, as one of the leading men in my native town. He was an able lawyer, a dignified and cultivated gentleman of the old school. He was a man of remarkably sound judgment and strict integrity. I remember his large acquaintance with the old English classics and his ready citation of them in conversation."

JAMES VARNUM SMILEY.

The record of a good man's life, while it soothes the affections of all who loved and survived him, has the higher merit of encouraging the struggles and sustaining the virtues of those who, entering upon life with no other reliance than their own strong arms

and resolute hearts and honest principles, are cheered on their way by the example of success achieved and high character established under like circumstances by others.

Such a record properly may be made of the subject of this sketch, whose ancestors, five in number, came to America from Scotland in 1747, and settled in various towns of New England. These men were for the most part farmers, honest and industrious, making good citizens.

John, the direct ancestor of this branch, settled in Haverhill, Massachusetts. But little is recorded of him beyond the fact that he married and reared a large family of children, one of whom, *James*, was born in 1758. He grew to manhood, and married Sarah McFarland, April 29, 1781, and they had six children—three boys and three girls. At the breaking out of the Revolutionary War he enlisted as a soldier and was in many engagements. He was taken a prisoner, and, with a neighbor, William Sawyer, was carried to England and confined in a military prison for a long time. While here he opened a little store or shop, where he was allowed to supply his fellow-prisoners with such articles as necessity or fancy prompted them to buy. After long waiting, an arrangement was made for an exchange of one hundred of these prisoners, the choice to be made by lot. Smiley and Sawyer, who, during long confinement, had become fast friends, agreed to stick together, and unless both were drawn, neither would quit the prison. One after another the lucky names were announced, hope and fear alternating in the patriotic breasts of these friends, until the ninety-ninth name called was Sawyer's, while in Smiley's breast hope died out and prison life only seemed to remain. The one hundredth name drawn was that of James Smiley, and with feelings more easily imagined than described, these friends returned to their homes and to freedom under the Stars and Stripes, and often in the years which followed, recounted the incidents of this memorable exchange to their families and friends. Smiley's wife, Sarah, died May 23, 1823, and he followed her April 15, 1824. His second son, *James*, was born June 28, 1789. His business was that of a mason. He married Lydia Bradley November 25, 1813, and she bore him four children, two girls (both of whom died in infancy), and two boys—*James Varnum*, born April 1st, 1820, and *Charles*, born April 19, 1822. Charles, the only survivor of this family, is a merchant in Haverhill, and is unmarried. He places this portrait of his much-loved brother in the history of this city as a tribute to his memory and worth.

The boyhood of the subject of this sketch was spent in Haverhill, where in due time he attended school and became known to his teachers as a studious boy. He excelled in each of the branches of the common school, and desiring a more thorough education than could be obtained under existing circumstances, he went to the celebrated Pembroke Academy, in New Hampshire, for some time.

Returning to his native town, he was placed in charge of the Centre Grammer School as its teacher, where, for over twelve years, he remained, and where he became endeared to the whole community as a faithful teacher. Under the Buchanan administration Mr. Smiley was chosen postmaster at Haverhill, where he remained four years, when he went into business in company with A. B. Jaques, opening what has since for many years been known as the Haverhill bookstore, where he successfully continued up to the time of his death, December 17, 1883. August 2, 1855 Mr. Smiley was married to Sarah N. Davis, who still survives him. They had no children. In religion Mr. Smiley was a Baptist. He was a Democrat in politics, as were each generation of his ancestors. Mr. Smiley was very popular among the people of the town, and was elected to many positions of trust and honor, although belonging to the political party that was largely in the minority. He was assessor, chairman of the School Board and also of the Board of Selectmen, president of the Haverhill Gas Company and trustee of the Haverhill Savings Bank.

In 1873 he was elected mayor of the city of Haverhill and served for two terms, giving very general satisfaction. He was a prominent member of the Masonic fraternity, being connected with Merrimac Lodge, F. & A. M., Pentucket Chapter and Haverhill Commandery of K. T. He was successful in business, was liberal in response to the calls of benevolence, provided amply for those dependent upon him, was a good citizen, a faithful friend, and has left behind a memory of a life well spent.

JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER.[1]

In the town of Haverhill, near the boundary line of that part of Amesbury which was incorporated in 1876 as the town of Merrimac, stands an unpretending farm-house, whose antiquity alone attracts the attention of the traveller. About three miles from the Merrimac River the highway runs nearly east and west, and leading from it at right angles a country road stretches to the north. On the westerly side of this road, within sight from the highway, stands the house with its end to the road, facing south, with its barn and other out-houses standing on the other side of the road, forming with the house a cluster of buildings, through which the road must have been laid out at some period since their original erection. At the foot of the slope on which the house stands, a laughing brook winds its merry way to larger streams, which flow into the Merrimac, and thence to the sea. Undulating fields, green with summer harvests, or white with winter's snow, are broken here and there by patches of wood, which seem to have been de-

[1] By William T. Davis.



signed by nature's artistic hand to interrupt the monotony of the scene and lend it grace and harmony.

The front of the house with its two stories remains as originally built, except the window frames and glass, and lesser accessories, which, like the clothing of the human body, have felt the hand of repair or the pressure of fashion without alteration or change of the structure they adorn. The rear, once one story high, as if jealous of its rival on the other side, has been at some time raised to the height of the front, and faces the bleak, north winds of winter as proudly as its rival courts the summer sun.

This house was built by Thomas Whittier about the year 1688. At the age of eighteen Mr. Whittier sailed from Southampton for Boston, in the ship "Confidence" of London, John Johson, master, on the 24th of April, 1638, and not long after the settlement of Salisbury in 1640, became a resident of that town. In 1645 or thereabouts he married Ruth Green, and after a short residence in Newbury, removed to Haverhill in 1648. He first built a log house, in which he lived until the erection of the house above described, about a half a mile to the westward and northward.

Notwithstanding the inferences of various biographers of the subject of this sketch, there is not only no evidence tending to show that Mr. Whittier was a Quaker, but there is much to show that he was not. His social and official position all through the Quaker troubles is wholly irreconcilable with his belief in the Quaker creed. As late as the year 1680, he was one of a church committee to select an associate minister for the Haverhill Church, with which he was in full fellowship.

Mr. Whittier died, November 28, 1696, his wife surviving him until 1710. Of ten children, Joseph the youngest, was born May 8, 1669, and was married May 24, 1694, to Mary, daughter of Joseph Peasley, whose house, built of brick, brought from England, is still standing near the Rocks Bridge. Mr. Peasley was a Quaker, and in the absence of any proof that other branches of the Whittier family were inclined to Quakerism, it may reasonably be presumed that Joseph and his descendants may trace their faith to Joseph Peasley, the father of Joseph Whittier's wife.

Joseph Whittier died December 23, 1739, leaving nine children, of whom another Joseph, the youngest, was born March 31, 1716, and married Sarah Greenleaf of Newbury. The last Joseph died October 10, 1796, having had eleven children, of whom John, the tenth child, was born November 22, 1760, and married, October 3, 1804, Abigail, daughter of Samuel Hussey, of Somersworth, New Hampshire, and a descendant of Christopher Hussey, an early resident of Haverhill and afterwards of Hampton. At Hampton Mr. Hussey married a daughter of Rev. Stephen Batchelder, the first minister of that town. Mr. Batchelder was a man of remarkable personal appearance, with dark, deep-set eyes, which developed in an intensified form into the wonderful eye and brow of Daniel Webster, a descendant of one branch of his family, and in a milder and more spiritual form into the gentle but firm and unyielding expression of Whittier the Poet. It is not impossible that in quality of mind, too, both Webster and Whittier may have inherited from their common ancestor that love of nature which characterized them, and that imaginative power which, while it made one a poet, enabled the other to entwine columns of logic with wreaths of imagery, which, without the noble structure they served to ornament, would have found their fitting expression in verse, and stamped their author as the grandest poet of the age. There can be nothing more indicative of the poet's mind than that passage from the oration of Mr. Webster, when the corner-stone of Bunker Hill Monument was laid on the 17th of June, 1825: "Let it rise till it meet the sun in his coming; let the earliest light of the morning gild it, and parting day linger and play on its summit." Here he snatched the poet's pen and created a line which, if it had not been perfect prose, would have been perfect poetry. And so in his speech on the Presidential protest, we find that grand flight of the imagination, which only a poet's mind could reach, expressing the uprising of America in the War of the Revolution. "On this question of principle, while actual danger and suffering were as yet afar off, she dared to raise her flag against a power to which, for purposes of foreign conquest and subjugation, Rome in the height of her glory is not to be compared—a power which has dotted the surface of the whole earth with her possessions and military posts; whose morning drum-beat, following the sun and keeping company with the hours, circles the earth daily with one continuous and unbroken strain of the martial airs of England." Here, too, were it not for the column round which the wreath of imagery clings, it would stand on its own merits as the richest bloom of a poet's fancy.

This digression may be excusable as showing that the appearance of such men as Whittier and Webster is not sporadic, and that their beauty and grandeur are only culminations of a growth of generations and centuries. John Whittier was the father of the subject of this sketch. He lived on the ancestral farm, and was as comfortable in circumstances as the best class of farmers of that day. Social position in his time was not confined to cities and other thickly-settled communities, as at the present day, and outlying farms and estates dispensed generous hospitality and were the resorts of the most cultivated and best educated. John Whittier was a public-spirited man, and as a citizen, performed his full share of public service. Besides the circle of ordinary friendship which was often represented at his house, no "Friend" from far or near came into the neighborhood without receiving from him the right hand of fellowship and a sincere welcome. He had four children,—Mary, born Sep-

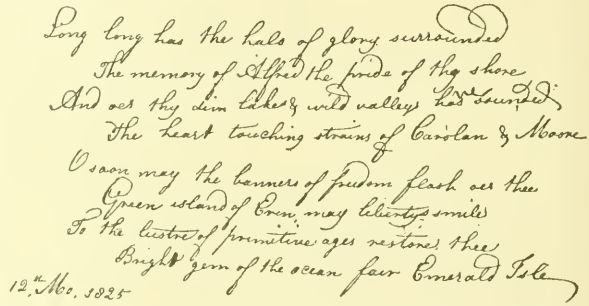
tember 3, 1806; John Greenleaf, born December 17, 1807; Matthew Franklin, born July 18, 1812; and Elizabeth Hussey, born December 7, 1815.

John Greenleaf Whittier was born in the old ancestral house, built by Thomas Whittier in 1688. He went at seven years of age to a school taught by Joshua Coffin of Newbury, situated on the country road, to which reference has been made, about a half a mile from the house. He was fond of reading, more especially books of biography and travel, and books of poetry do not seem to have made any decisive impression on his youthful mind. His work on the farm began at an early age, and with keen natural powers of observation, it is probable that the scenes of beauty about him furnished as large a share of influence on his future career, as his education in the public school. On the Sabbath his father and mother would, when it was possible, attend the nearest Friends' meeting-house at Amesbury, about eight miles away, and during their absence the incipient poet would wander in the woods and fields, satisfying his taste for the beauties of nature and making them all the stronger by indulgence. Referring to this period of his life he says in the poem entitled "The Barefoot Boy":

"I was rich in flowers and trees,
Humming-birds and honey-bees;
For my sport the squirrel played,
Plied the snouted mole his spade;
For my taste the blackberry cone,
Purpled over hedge and stone;
Laughed the brook for my delight,
Through the day and through the night,
Whispering at the garden wall,
Talked with me from fall to fall;
Mine the sand-rimmed pickerel pond,
Mine the walnut slopes beyond,
Mine, on bending orchard trees,
Apples of Hesperides."

At the age of fourteen he read a volume of Burns' poetry, which was perhaps the first poetry he had ever read, and like many a boy before and since, who has never become a poet, he began to make rhymes. His first productions were in imitation of Burns, and served as mere steps to the portals of the holy of holies, which he was destined to enter. His verses soon proved to be more than rhyme, and as his imagination grew in brilliancy and strength, they became more imbued with the poet's spirit. The story has been often told of the poem entitled "The Deity," which he sent anonymously in 1826, at eighteen years of age, to the Newburyport *Free Press*, of which Wm. Lloyd Garrison was editor, and of the joy and pride with which he first saw it in print. The story is further told of the visit of Garrison to his correspondent, and of his encouragement to the youth to train and develop his talents and secure a better education than that with which his parents had seemed content. It is doubtful how much of this story may be true, and whether, as has been claimed, Whittier owed to any appreciable extent to Garrison the decision which was finally reached in his family to send him to the Haverhill Academy.

The poem published in the *Free Press* has been often claimed as one of his very earliest productions. The writer of this sketch however, has in his possession a gift from Mr. Whittier, a leaf apparently torn from a blank book, containing a poem in three stanzas of eight lines each, entitled "The Deserted Fair One," another in five stanzas of eight lines each "To the Memory of William Penn," and the two closing verses of four lines each of a poem addressed to Ireland. These two verses, written at the age of seventeen, are dated 12th mo. 1825, and a *fac simile* of them is herewith presented:



In April, 1827, in his twentieth year, he went to the Haverhill Academy, then taught by Oliver Carlton, who died in Salem in 1882, and at the dedication of the new building of that institution, then occupied for the first time, Whittier wrote the ode sung on the occasion. At the close of his first term at Haverhill, he secured a school at West Amesbury, now Merrimac, which he taught during the winter of 1827, returning to the academy in the spring, where he remained six months. In 1828 he wrote for the *American Manufacturer*, a protectionist paper in the interest of Henry Clay, and in 1829 returned home to aid in carrying on the farm, where he continued until July, 1830. During all this time he wrote much in both prose and verse, and some of his poems were published in the newspapers of the day and read with approval. Most of these poems failed to reach the standard which he had set up for himself, and have been excluded from his published collections. Indeed, he has never reached that standard, and when recently asked by the writer of this sketch which of his poems was most satisfactory to himself, he replied that "all of them are so unsatisfactory to me it is difficult to decide."

During the first six months of 1830 he edited the



Jas. H. Carleton

Haverhill Gazette, writing articles at the same time for the *New England Review* of Hartford, of which he was afterwards for a year and a half the editor, as a substitute for George D. Prentice, who was temporarily absent from his post. During his editorship he published in the *Review* many of the poems, with which the world is familiar. Aside from his poetical labors he devoted time and labor to the support of Henry Clay and the "American system" and to the three great causes of Temperance, Freedom and Religion, or rather, perhaps, religion, which included the other two. In January, 1832, Whittier gave up his position at Hartford and returned home, where he remained a year, during which time he published a pamphlet in condemnation of slavery, of which subsequently an edition of ten thousand copies was published by Lewis Tappan, of New York, for gratuitous distribution. In 1833 he was a member of a National Anti-Slavery Convention in Philadelphia and one of its secretaries. In 1835 he was a member of the State Legislature, and at that time witnessed the mob, from whose clutches Garrison was with difficulty rescued. At this time he seems to have been in full sympathy with Garrison, and indeed there is some reason for believing that Garrison's early devotion to the anti-slavery cause was more or less inspired by Whittier himself. Until 1837 he remained at home engaged in the management of the farm, which after the death of his father in 1832, required careful attention. In 1837 he was chosen one of the secretaries of the National Anti-Slavery Society, and went to New York, where for three months he was associated with Henry B. Stanton and Theodore D. Weld. He then went to Philadelphia, where he was engaged to write for the *Pennsylvania Freeman*, of which in 1838 he became an associate editor. In 1840 he resigned and went to Amesbury, where his mother had taken up her residence, having sold the farm about five years before. Since that time Amesbury has continued to be his legal place of residence, though during the last few years since the death of his mother and the marriage of his niece, who was his devoted companion, he has spent most of his time at Oak Knoll, in Danvers, the residence of three sisters, his cousins, the grandchildren of one of his grandfather's brothers.

It has been said that up to a certain period Mr. Whittier was in full sympathy with Mr. Garrison. At that period their ways parted on the slavery question, though their friendship was never broken nor seriously disturbed. Garrison denounced the constitution and the union and opposed political action. Whittier believed that the slave-holders had constitutional rights or "wrongs," as he has been heard to say, and that while it was the duty of every lover of freedom to prevent the establishment of slavery in territories over which Congress had jurisdiction, Providence would point out some method of final emancipation for the slave. He was sufficiently an optimist to feel sure that other people were as conscientious as the Friends, who had rid themselves of slavery, and in good time would follow their example. Nor did he think it necessary or charitable to indulge in the denunciations uttered on the anti-slavery platform and the extravagant harangues of Garrison and Pillsbury and Phillips grated harshly on his ears.

In 1883 a complete edition of his poetical works was published, to which was attached a note by the author stating, "In these volumes for the first time a complete collection of my poems has been made. While it is satisfactory to know that these scattered children of my brain have found a home, I cannot but regret that I have been unable, by reason of illness, to give that attention to their revision and arrangement which respect for the opinions of others and my own after-thought and experience demand. That there are pieces in this collection which I would willingly let die I am free to confess. But it is now too late to disown them and I must submit to the inevitable penalty of poetical as other sins. There are others, intimately connected with the author's life and times, which owe their tenacity of vitality to the circumstances under which they were written and the events by which they were suggested."

This note was written for the edition of 1857, but, except so far as it refers to his illness, was as true in 1883 as at the earlier date, for many of the poems included in the volume were written after the edition of 1857.

Mr. Whittier passed his eightieth birthday on 17th of December, 1887, on which occasion large numbers of friends from Boston and elsewhere visited him at Oak Knoll, and paid their tribute of affection to one whose life had flowed like a pure and quiet stream, enriching and making glad all within its influence. On a cold day in January of the present year the writer spent an hour with him at his fireside and at his noonday meal, and few hours in a life of nearly three-score years and ten linger more sweetly in his memory.

JAMES H. CARLETON.[1]

The great-grandfather of Mr. Carleton, on the maternal side, was Dr. James Brickett, born in Haverhill in 1737 and dying there December 9, 1818, aged eighty-one years. He was an able and successful physician, practicing for many years and always enjoying the respect of his professional brethren. He was always known at home as "Dr. Brickett," but in the biographical dictionaries he is spoken of as General Brickett, in deference to his military rank. During the French War he served as surgeon's mate in Col. Frye's regiment for at least sixteen months, and perhaps longer. He was an ardent Whig, from the very beginning of the troubles with Great Britain. September 5, 1774, he was elected captain of the Artillery

[1] By John B. D. Cogswell.

Company in Haverhill, which was an infant school for the Revolutionary soldiers. During the whole of the struggle he served actively upon the town Committees of Inspection, Correspondence and Safety, of which he was usually chairman. He was also frequently a delegate to the various patriotic conventions.

He evidently hastened to Cambridge upon the Lexington "Alarm." April 26, 1775, he made out there the "list" or roll of Haverhill "Minute" men who had marched on the 19th, and received the money for them. May 20th he was commissioned as lieutenant-colonel in the Essex regiment, commanded by his former superior officer, Col. Frye. On the 16th of June, Col. Frye was absent on court-martial duty, and was also ill with the gout. Lieutenant-Colonel Brickett accordingly led the regiment to Bunker Hill, though he was disabled early in the action. Frothingham says: "Lieutenant-Colonel Brickett, a physician, was wounded early in the action, and, with the other surgeons, repaired to the north side of Bunker Hill and remained in attendance on the wounded." As Col. Frye was, after all, in the battle of Bunker Hill, it is quite probable he relieved Col. Brickett before the latter retired. July 5, 1776, Dr. Brickett was appointed by the Council, colonel of a battalion to be raised in the county of Essex and elsewhere, and July 11th, brigadier-general of forces to be sent to Canada. He took command of the Massachusetts troops at Ticonderoga, August 10, 1776. Mr. Carleton has his "Orderly Book" during this campaign, in an excellent state of preservation. The following will exhibit the characteristics of the man and soldier. In one of his brigade orders, after rebuking certain acts as destructive of discipline, General Brickett continues: "Every officer will therefore endeavor to keep up his dignity, and not by any mean, low, sordid behavior make himself contemptible and so lose his authority. Are we not come here for the defense of the liberties of America? Should we not exert every nerve in it? Good discipline makes you formidable, healthy, vigorous. For want of this, men soon grow insolent, sickly, enervated, and fit to serve neither God nor man." December 2, 1776, Gen. Brickett was president of a court-martial at Albany, for the trial of Arnold, on Col. Hazen's complaint. In September, 1777, he was at Saratoga as a volunteer at the time of Burgoyne's surrender, and, under appointment from Gen. Gates, commanded the escort which brought a portion of the British prisoners to Prospect Hill, in what is now Somerville. As he was not at the time regularly in the service of either the State or Continent, he was never remunerated for either pay or advances. This circumstance caused him great mortification, and he is said to have expressed his irritation in sufficiently forcible language.

General Brickett was often moderator of the town meetings, and from 1779 to 1782, was chairman of the Board of Selectmen, who were also assessors and overseers of the poor. He was chairman of the committee which reported an address adopted by the town of Haverhill, October 10, 1786, in reply to a circular letter addressed by the town of Boston to the other towns, in reference to the troubles then culminating in "Shay's Rebellion." Presumably, therefore, he was the author of the address, which is one of the finest of the cotemporary documents. The closing paragraph pledges Haverhill to uphold the laws: "We are ready, therefore, to join you in a firm, vigorous support of our Constitution, in the redress of grievances, and in promoting industry, economy, and every other virtue which can exalt and render a nation respectable."

General Brickett was evidently a man somewhat eager and impetuous. His was the spirit of a volunteer. The verdict of his townsmen about him in private life is thus expressed: "He was an obliging neighbor, a genial companion, a liberal and enterprising citizen, and a man of undoubted honor, patriotism and integrity." He never forgot his old military comrades, nor they him. His house on Water Street was always their resort, and there generous old-fashioned hospitality was dispensed, with a soldier's welcome.

General Brickett's son, Dr. Daniel Brickett, who was his associate and successor in practice, was a highly respectable physician and an esteemed citizen. Not so energetic as his father, his taste did not lead him towards public life. His daughter, Fanny Brickett, born September 23, 1793, died December 2, 1869, aged seventy-six. She married Phineas Carleton, of Haverhill, born 1786, who died October 5, 1866, aged eighty years and seven months. Their childred were Daniel Brickett Carleton, who died in 1848, aged thirty-two years; James H. Carleton, born March 9, 1818; Mary F. Carleton, born 1824, who married Dr. Kendall Flint; George and Ann Carleton, who died young.

Mr. Phineas Carleton was a man of retiring habits and methodical ways, who disliked and avoided the bustle and display attendant upon public position. It appears, however, that he joined the well-known Fire Society, January, 1814. He was a merchant on Water Street for many years, retiring from active business about 1840. He attained considerable celebrity as a manufacturing jeweller, his silverware being famous, far and near, for its solidity and workmanship. An obituary notice of Mr. Carleton, published in the Haverhill *Gazette*, concludes: "He bore a reputation for unbending integrity and untarnished honor, which gained for him the respect and confidence of the community."

With this worthy parent, Mr. James H. Carleton became early associated in the business we have named, carrying it on after his father's retirement, and even improving upon its traditions. Finally, a very critical condition of health, compelled his retire-

ment from active engagements of that character. Indeed, no sketch of Mr. Carleton would be correct, which should fail to state that for many years his constitution has apparently been so delicate that his intimate friends have always wondered at the amount of business he has managed to transact. Yet, doubtless much aided by his own courage and prudence, he has nearly attained the scriptural allotment of three score and ten.

About 1852 Mr. Carleton married Mary H., daughter of Isaac R. Howe, Esq., a formerly well-known lawyer of Haverhill. Through her mother, Sarah Saltonstall Howe, daughter of Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall, she was descended from Nathaniel Saltonstall, who married Elizabeth Ward, daughter of the first minister of Haverhill, Rev. John Ward. Mrs. Carleton was born March 25, 1819, and died September 2, 1882. She was a woman of good sense, humor and unaffected kindliness. Not behindhand in any of the town's charitable movements, she was specially interested in the Old Ladies' Home and the Ladies' Benevolent Society.

In 1847 Mr. Carleton was chosen a director of the Haverhill Aqueduct Company, in which circumstances had led him to take an interest. In 1856 he became its treasurer and general manager, a position he has retained till date. The career of this company has been briefly sketched in previous pages, and its success is recognized as phenomenal.

In October, 1847, a society was organized, called the "Fraternity of Shenstones." Its object was to provide means for setting out and taking care of "ornamental trees in the streets, squares and other public places in the town." The organization took its name, of course, from William Shenstone, the poet, who early in the last century devoted life and fortune to the embellishment of his beautiful paternal estate of the Leasowes, in Shropshire, England. Mr. Carleton was not so much engrossed with the ornamental functions of this ornamental tree-planting society as with its practical. He did not hold its offices, but he planted many trees as its representative. And he has his reward, for, as he passes under great elms, he can say, "this and this and these, were placed and watered by my hand."

Fifty or sixty years ago all the young people and some of the old were wont to go fishing and picnicing at Lake Kenoza (then Great Pond). When one of the land-proprietors complained of trespassing there, a number of citizens bought a perpetual license to resort to a pleasant point of land, near the northeastern extremity of the Pond. They put up a wooden building, and the place was long familiar, in a homely way, as the "Fish-house lot." But the building decayed and was burned, accidentally or in mischief, and the grounds were neglected. In the summer of 1858 an interest in the spot was revived, an informal meeting was called, at which Rufus Slocomb, who owned the fee of the land, proposed to transfer it to the citizens of Haverhill and Bradford for the nominal sum of one hundred dollars, on condition that it should be forever kept open as a place of public resort for the people of the two towns. The offer was accepted, and on August 31, 1859, a meeting was again called on the grounds. Report was made that the land had been purchased and enclosed by a fence, graded, ornamented by the planting of about two hundred and fifty trees, and made practicable by building a substantial stone house. Then there was an election of officers, and Mr. Carleton was chosen president, a position he has retained to the present year. It seems to have been considered that a new name was necessary, and, indeed, "Great Pond" is not a very distinctive one. Fortunately, somebody had thought of Whittier—and his poem of "Kenoza" will be recited along its shores, probably, till the present race gives place to some other, succeeding it. Afterwards, there were other festivities of christening and many famous gayeties in later years—among them, July 27, 1871, a grand picnic to the shoe and leather trade. But when, about 1876, river steamboating became the popular form of summer pleasuring, the old grounds began to be neglected once more. Alterations of the stone house by an additional story of wood were destroyed by a cyclone, and their restoration brought the association into debt, which Mr. Carleton had protected for many years. Jan. 13, 1888, a meeting was held at Mr. Carleton's house, at which he resigned his position as president, accompanying his retirement with a cancellation of all the debts (eighteen hundred dollars). Both the propositions, so coupled, and modified by the tender of generous hospitality, were accepted. A new list of officers was reported containing many of the old members of the association, as Dudley Porter, President: John P. Randall, 1st Vice-President, and E. P. Hill, Secretary, who has been such since 1859. This association has always been much in Mr. Carleton's affections, and he anticipates from the reorganization a new order of things and an opening up, through its influence, of the beautiful scenery about "Kenoza." But the muse of the Kenoza Lake Club's laureate will still be the most effective agency in that direction.

August 1, 1873, Mr. Carleton was chosen trustee of the public library, at the first election of such officers, and still continues to hold the position, which has been one of great usefulness and beneficence for the people of Haverhill.

In 1874 and 1875 he represented the town in the Legislature.

In youth Mr. Carleton was an active and zealous Whig; when that grand old party broke up he remained for some years in the conservative position of a Webster Whig, and then allied himself to the Democratic party.

In 1876 he was a delegate to the National Democratic Convention at St. Louis. In 1878 he was the un-

successful candidate of his party for Representative to Congress, and in 1881 for lieutenant-governor.

In 1864 he became a member of the Democratic State Central Committee, and by annual re-election still retains the position, being easily the dean of that most honorable body.

During the Civil War Mr. Carleton was no laggard in support of the government, by purse, and hand, and brain. In that connection the town honored him with several unique commissions, which he successfully discharged. He was deputed to solicit and bring to the City Hall, in *perpetuam memoriam*, the battle-sword of Major Henry Jackson How, who fell before Richmond, and whose name is fittingly preserved by the excellent post of the Grand Army, in Haverhill, and he was chairman of the committee for erecting the soldiers' monument, on which they inscribed for the citizens of Haverhill, the proud words, "in grateful tribute to the memory of those, who, on land and on sea, died, that the Republic might live."

A little more than a twelve-month ago, Mr. Carleton tendered to the trustees of the city hospital a very eligible estate for its location. The deed of gift was accepted by them, December 10, 1886, and the building was formally opened December 29, 1887. The excellent address of Dr. John Crowell, on that occasion, shows how gladly the trustees accepted Mr. Carleton's opportune offering.

Some persons knowing the intimate relations existing for many years between the late Mr. Hale and Mr. Carleton, are of the opinion that the latter had much to do with the suggestion, and ripening in the mind of Mr. Hale, of the beneficent thoughts which resulted in the public library and hospital of Haverhill. If happily this were the case, he has shown that he is more than willing, out of his own substance, to supplement the splendid donations of his dead friend.

Partly in pursuit of health and partly to gratify an intelligent curiosity, Mr. Carleton has been an extensive traveller, both at home and abroad. The precarious condition of his health has obliged him to spend many winter seasons in Florida where, unfortunately, he is almost as well known as at home.

Mr. Carleton is a strong partisan and a firm friend. He is a resolute and unyielding combatant, and will never be the first to cry "Hold, Enough!" It should, perhaps, be added, in justice to him, that in his own opinion, he is a very peaceful person, who has never done anything to provoke assault.

Whatever his qualities, they have made a very strong and favorable impression upon the people of Haverhill, who have known him, man and boy, from his youth up. Too positive not to have made enemies, it has been evident, on one occasion at least, that the majority of the citizens were in sympathy with him and gave him their confidence. They have found him pleasant and they believe him to be upright.

Certainly all must admit that for public objects and when there is public calamity, as after the great fire of 1882, Mr. Carleton is a generous giver. He is entitled to recognition as a public-spirited citizen.

In private and social life there is nothing but good to be said of him. He admits and discharges in advance all obligations. His acts of unsolicited friendship have been numerous. He is the most kind and considerate of neighbors. His hospitality is abundant and extended to all sorts and conditions of people, and it is administered cheerily. Solitary as he lives, infirm in health and with old age drawing on, there is still no more important factor in the domestic life of the town than James H. Carleton.

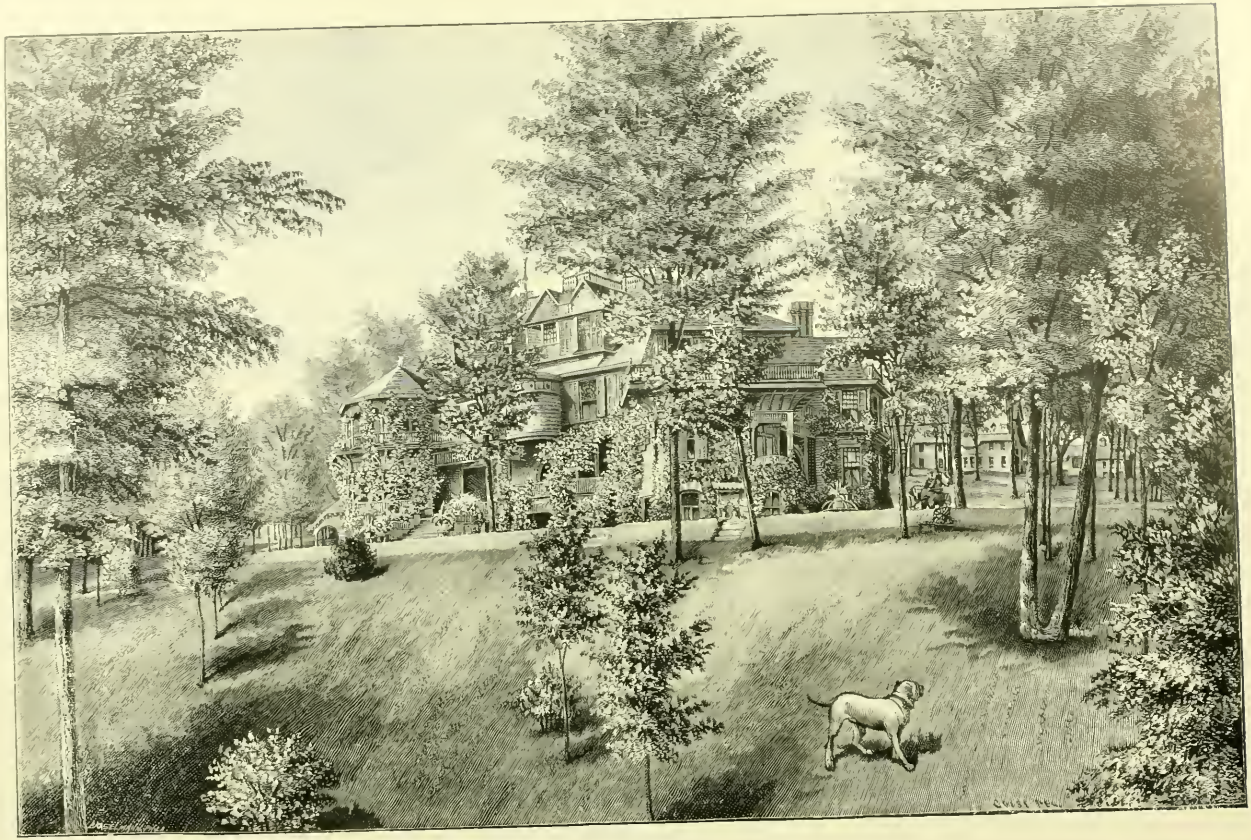
THOMAS SANDERS.[1]

Thomas Sanders is descended from Thomas Sanders, who settled in Gloucester, Mass., in 1702, and married a wife there in 1703, who lived to be ninety years old. He was a shipwright and carried on the business of ship-building extensively. In 1725 he commanded the government sloop "Merry Meeting." His oldest son, Thomas, was born in 1704. His descendant, Thomas Sanders, of Haverhill, has the commission granted to him, June 23, 1725, by Lieutenant-Governor William Dummer, J. Willard, secretary, as lieutenant of sloop "Merry Meeting," belonging to His Majesty's service," whereof Thomas Sanders (his father) is captain." This second Thomas spent a large part of his life in the service of the province, as commander of a government vessel. In January, 1745, he memorialized Governor Shirley for larger pay for himself and the crew of the sloop "Massachusetts," which he then commanded. The Governor, sending the memorial to the House of Representatives, says: "I am satisfied with the reasonableness of Capt. Sanders' request, and am extremely loath to lose so faithful and experienced an officer. I must desire you would give him such relief as may make him easy in the service." The House doubtless complied with Governor Shirley's request, for Captain Sanders was in the expedition to Cape Breton the same year, and had command of the transports in Chapeau Rouge Bay. He had eleven children. His son, Thomas (the third) of Gloucester, married Lucy, daughter of Rev. Thomas Smith, the first minister of Falmouth, Maine, (afterwards Portland). This Thomas Sanders fitted for college with Rev. Moses Parsons, of Byfield, the father of the chief justice, and graduated at Harvard in 1748. He was a merchant at Gloucester, represented that town in the House of Representatives from 1761 to 1770 inclusive, and was then a member of the Council till he resigned, in June, 1773. His son, Thomas, born in 1759, settled in Salem, and died a wealthy citizen of that place, June 5, 1844. He married Elizabeth Elkins, a lineal descen-

[1] By John B. D. Cogswell.



Thomas Sanders



"BIRCHBROW,"

RESIDENCE OF THOMAS SANDERS,

HAVERHILL, MASS.

dent of Peregrine White, the first born of New England. Leverett Saltonstall and Nathaniel Saltonstall, born in Haverhill, and sons of Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall, married two of his daughters. His oldest son, Charles, who graduated at Harvard in 1802, has his name preserved in Sanders' Theatre at the University. George Thomas, the youngest son, born October 30, 1804, graduated at Harvard in 1824, lived at Salem, and died May 1, 1856. He married Mary A. Brown, of Salem, and had two sons—Thomas, the subject of this sketch, and Charles Sanders, who is engaged in business in Boston.

Thomas Sanders, of Haverhill, is, therefore, the fifth in descent from the original Thomas, of Gloucester, who has borne his name. He was born at Salem, August 18, 1839, and married, June 6, 1866, Susie Bradley Howe, daughter of the late Hon. Nathaniel S. Howe, of Haverhill. Their children are George Thomas, born March 5, 1867; Mary Williams, born February 5, 1869; Nathaniel S. Howe, born February 13, 1871; Charles Bradley, September 24, 1878; Anne Elizabeth, April 23, 1880; Janet Rand, January 26, 1884; and Muriel Gurdon, born November 13, 1886.

Thomas Sanders has always been exceedingly fond of agricultural pursuits, and from extreme youth spent much time upon a farm which his father had owned in East Brookfield, Vermont. From 1856 to 1870,—that is from about the age of sixteen or seventeen years till he was thirty—be carried on this farm, which contained about five hundred acres. He used it for stock-raising, and is in the habit of saying that he was successful in that pursuit. No one can doubt his keen relish in the employment, who sees with what eagerness he always escapes from later occupations to turn again to his early Green Mountain home for a brief visit.

The growth of children needing education brought him to Haverhill, where, in 1870, he entered into the business of sole-cutting. He is now (1888) president of the Sanders Leather Company.

It is not extravagant, probably, to say that his establishment leads in the business of furnishing cut soles at wholesale. It is not intended to claim that he first furnished cut soles. But previous to 1870 every manufacturer cut soles for his own uses; now, no manufacturer does. Mr. Sanders' friends think that he had at least an important share in forwarding what is admitted to have been a great step in the progressive history of shoe manufacturing. He has erected large buildings on Washington Street, in the shoe district of Haverhill, near Railroad Square, and lets steam-power to a considerable extent. Though not carefully educated with a view to a business life, he has many excellent business qualities. He is prompt, punctual, reliable and has large executive ability. Circumstances made him acquainted, as early as 1873, with Professor Alexander Graham Bell, who has since become famous as the inventor of the telephone, and this acquaintance ripened into intimacy and friendship. Professor Bell, a Scotchman and not long in this country, had become favorably known as an instructor of deaf mutes, but was much absorbed in his system of visible speech. An earnest and eager student, he was projecting his keen intellect upon collateral lines, and Mr. Sanders, almost by accident, learned that he was speculating upon the possibility of transmitting articulate speech by electricity. Mr. Sanders, on his part, quickly appreciated the immense practical value of such an attainment, if it were possible. Much consultation and mutual confidence drew them together till they united their energies to work for an important end. The immediate result was that Mr. Bell relinquished his professional pursuits, and gave up his time to self-education in the required direction, and to experiments, which he prosecuted with a relentless energy and a triumphant success which scientists have admired, and the public and the law courts have heard a great deal about. For several years these experiments were carried on in Mr. Sanders' immediate neighborhood, and, indeed, in his own home. He found means to carry them on, even to the neglect and injury of his business and his private affairs. At one time Professor Bell and Mr. Sanders were equal partners in reference to all results to be obtained through the former's skill and researches. Subsequently, Gardner Green Hubbard, who became Professor Bell's father-in-law, was admitted as a third and an equal partner. The patent was obtained in 1876, and the world knows the ultimate triumph of the telephone. But these three owned jointly the patent and all of Professor Bell's rights and interests, in law and equity, till they were merged in the various corporations with whose history the world is so familiar. This is not the place, nor is it desired, to argue the merits of the Bell Telephone litigation; but it is intended explicitly to say that Thomas Sanders rendered firm and valuable support to Professor Bell in his years of experiment and straitened circumstances, as Professor Bell would probably be only too willing to admit. And it is proper to add that Mr. Sanders is a stanch believer in Professor Bell's absolute truth and integrity, under any and all circumstances.

In 1880–81, Mr. Sanders built on the Highlands a beautiful house, which he calls "Birchbrow," overlooking Lake Saltonstall. Here he has built up a fine farm embracing a considerable portion of the old "Great Ox-Common" of Haverhill. His avenues, barns and other buildings, with his well-cultivated fields, exhibit that thoroughness which is characteristic of all that Mr. Sanders does. It would be difficult to find an estate where so much has been accomplished in the same time with no greater outlay. In this charming home, a generous and refined hospitality is dispensed, which is at least appreciated by such as have had the good fortune to enjoy it.

On this property Mr. Sanders still enjoys his old

pursuit of stock-raising. He has a fine herd of high-bred Jerseys, and has raised some good colts. Mr. Sanders has had much to do with the management of the New England Agricultural Society, and in 1885 delivered the annual address before the Essex Agricultural Society, of which he is an active member. Mr. Sanders is connected with many corporations and societies. He is, and has been from the beginning, a director in the American Bell Telephone Company; he is a director, also, in the Brunswick Antimony Company, and in the Haverhill Bank; he is a director and treasurer in the Haverhill Iron Works, the business of which has much increased, so that the company is now prosperous.

He is a member of the Merrimack Lodge of Free Masons, and the Haverhill Commandery of Knights Templar; he is a director of the Haverhill Young Men's Christian Association, in the work of which he feels a deep interest, and devotes to it his time and energies; he is a member of the Haverhill Fortnightly and other clubs. But it is hardly worth while to extend this list, save to add that he is a warden and much interested in the temporal and spiritual prosperiry of Trinity Episcopal Church.

Socially Mr. Sanders, or "Tom Sanders," as hosts of people persist in calling him, is one of the most genial of men. Nobody is more popular in the town, and perhaps nobody ought to be more so, for he is very much in earnest about everything which can promote its prosperity or enhance its reputation. Political and municipal offices have been often tendered to him, but so far he has put the temptation easily by. He has hosts of friends who would be glad to demonstrate their regard for him. It is generally believed of him, that he is ready and anxious to do what good he can in the world.

DR. KENDALL FLINT.[1]

Thomas Flint, the emigrant ancestor, according to tradition, came to America from Wales. The first mention of him in Salem town records, is in 1650; but there is an opinion among the genealogists that he arrived earlier. He was among the first settlers of Salem village, afterwards South Danvers and now Peabody. He bought two hundred acres about six miles from Salem Court House, near Phelps' mill and brook, where the subject of this sketch spent his childhood and youth. The title deed to a part of this land was witnessed in 1662 by Giles Corey, who in 1692, when eighty-one years old, during the witchcraft madness, was pressed to death at Salem because he would not plead to the charge. His house stood upon land that after his death, became a part of the Flint homestead. This estate remains in the possession of heirs of Elijah Flint.

Thomas Flint, son of Thomas, lived upon this homestead. He was in King Philip's war, and was wounded in the swamp fight. He became a large land-holder, having purchased, between 1664 and 1702, more than nine hundred acres of land. He was a man in whom his neighbors had confidence and was employed to build the first meeting house in Salem village.

Captain Samuel Flint, sixth son of the last Thomas, received in the division of the estate, the house in which his father had lived. He was chairman of the committee chosen to promote the setting off from Salem of Salem village, as a separate town. When it was incorporated as Danvers, he was one of the first Board of Selectmen and through life was much in public business. There is a family tradition that he was out in the old French war, and, on his way home, in command of his company, encountered his son Samuel, who had taken advantage of his father's absence, to enlist in another company. "You rogue, where are you going? Come home with me," cried the father. Whether the story anticipates events or not, this son Samuel, who inherited his father's farm by will, was out as a minute man on the day of the Lexington battle. He seems to have entered the service almost immediately, having been eight months at the siege of Boston. He was killed at the head of his company, at Stillwater, October 7, 1777, and was the only officer from Danvers killed in the Revolution. He was only forty-four. The anecdote came down in the family that Captain Samuel 2d had a negro boy, named Primus, to whom he said, "Primus, if you will go to fight for the country, I will give you your freedom." And Primus accepted the challenge and went.

Major Elijah Flint, second son of the last named Samuel, received the homestead. He was a Whig in politics, a Puritan in religion and in private life a model farmer. The old house, having been enlarged and altered by various generations, was much modernized, and improved according to later ideas, by Thomas Flint, son of Elijah, a hardware merchant of Boston; but it was consumed by fire, June, 1874, much venerated for its antiquity and associations.

Dr. Kendall Flint, the youngest son of Major Elijah, was born February 4, 1807. In 1824 he began to fit for college at Hampton Academy, entering Amherst College in 1827 and graduating there in 1831. He entered Andover Theological Seminary the same year and remained in that institution till 1833, when declining health compelled him to return to his father's house, where a protracted illness of two years awaited him. His physician at last decidedly advised him to exchange the clerical for the medical profession, upon the ground that exercise in the open air might gradually restore his shattered health. The prescription was hard to take, but seemed inevitable. It was a great trial to this young man to leave the study of the immaterial and pass to the material side—to abandon theology and philosophy and the spiritual, and cross to the other side of

[1] By John B. D. Cogswell.



Kendall Flint M. D.

the gulf, to study experience, sensation and science. But once convinced that the step was necessary, he entered his name as a student with his attending physician, Dr. Osgood, of Danvers. Completing his medical studies, he received his degree in 1839, at the Harvard School in Boston. Early in 1840 he came to Haverhill and purchased the situation previously occupied by Dr. Augustus Whiting. Haverhill was then a comparatively small place, having, by the census of that year, a population of four thousand three hundred and thirty-six. June 28, 1842, he married Mary F., daughter of Mr. Phineas Carleton. They had two children—George Carleton, born November 26, 1848; died October 6, 1849, and Mary Howe, born April 23, 1853; died in 1855.

Dr. Flint entered upon the practice of medicine with a high sense of responsibility. He believed that the physician could do much to assist nature in saving life, to shorten the duration of disease, to relieve pain and suffering, and to help friends bear up under the responsibility which often seems like to crush them.

He adopted the allopathic practice, then generally ruling in the medical world. He was seldom disappointed in its results when it was properly admiuistered. But after he became master of the treatment and able to vary it, he avoided the harsher remedies, as blistering and bleeding, with such drugs as antimony and calomel, commonly employed at that time, and finally modified the treatment to a more specific form. When the great allopathic practice, that had come down from Hippocrates, Galen, Vesalius, Harvey, Hunter and Good, had swallowed up Thomsonianism, Hydropathy and all similar systems, which were merely one particular remedy used for all complaints, the question was asked, "What will it do with Homœopathy? Will it absorb that also?" The answer was, "No! for Homœopathy is founded on a principle which could be absorbed only by adopting the principle, and though that would enrich Allopathy by having two principles instead of one—to adopt it would compromise its dignity!"

In the American Encyclopædia, in the article Homœopathy, we read that "Hippocrates, the father of medicine, asserted that medicine sometimes acted according to the rule of similia and at others according to that of contraria, thus intimating the truth of both the allopathic law of contraria and the homœopathic law of similia." Although Dr. Flint mainly adhered to allopathy, he believed that there are cases best treated by the homœopathic rule, and these he sought out. And when the cholera visited this country, he used this treatment with perfect success in many cases. Many homœopaths use both systems on the principle that two legs are better than one. When all physicians do the same, the science of medicine will be more complete.

As Dr. Flint looks back over the fifty years of his practice, he sees some new views advanced with regard to the *healing power*. It is said that the efficacy of drugs, whether in large or small doses, depends, not upon their own peculiar healing nature, but upon the faith with which they have been freighted and weighted by those who have used them, and by the physician and patient now using them. And, moreover, it is said that no medicine or drugs are needed, and, in fact, no faith is needed by the patient—that the doctor or healer can cure, by his own faith, if supported by certain spiritual views and feelings, with their conscious union with the Infinite Spirit. These views have been put forth with great confidence and appear to be supported by abundant evidence from remarkable cases of cure.

Now these views of treatment are outside of medical science. They do not require either a knowledge of the human system, of the materia medica, or anything that is requisite in medical treatment. The cure is of a spiritual nature, not faith in medicine, but faith in a Divine union, with which, physicians as such, have nothing to do.

At the beginning of the civil war, Dr. Flint received an appointment as United States examining surgeon, whose duties were to examine volunteers, drafted men, and men claiming pensions. This very responsible position he held fifteen years.

At the commencement of the war, it was not realized that it cost the Government as much to fit out a man liable to break down at once as an able-bodied soldier. An army of duly examined soldiers are picked men, and in this respect the very flower of the country.

Many volunteers were deeply chagrined, because not being physically perfect, they could not pass examination. But when drafting was necessary, the same severe system of inspection prevailing, censorious persons often insinuated that the examining surgeon must be bribed to allow certain persons to escape whom he had refused to pass, because physically disabled. Examination for pensions is a very responsible duty, calling for an honest and capable class of men, who are well qualified as physicians and surgeons, can weigh well the evidence, and decide accordingly.

Dr. Flint, who suffered so much from ill-health as a young man, and has yet been able to do so much, has now been an invalid again for many years, and latterly compelled to abstain from active practice. Rigid diet and scrupulous care alone, have preserved his valuable life. Yet whoever sees him upon the streets of Haverhill, erect and even youthful in bearing, might well suppose him to be a man in the very prime of life. Yet his father was a boy of fourteen when Americans declared their independence, and a man of twenty-one when Great Britain acknowledged it. And the venerable doctor himself antedates Waterloo and the downfall of Napoleon. Placid and serene, he reads Bain and ponders the tendency of modern philosophy.

WILLIAM E. BLUNT.[1]

Among the citizens of Haverhill who have won distinction and honor in public life, and enjoyed to a large degree the long and uninterrupted confidence of the public, none have more merited it than William E. Blunt, a son of Joshua Blunt, who moved to Haverhill from Andover.

Mr. Blunt was born August 21, 1840, on Merrimack Street, near where the post office now stands. He received his early education in the public schools of the city, and by close and successful application, aided by private instruction, was fitted for college. His life at this time was not unmarked by a hard struggle. He worked during vacations and evenings at whatever was offered, to obtain the means for the prosecution of his studies. He began the study of law, and in due time was admitted to practice in the State Courts, and later, in the United States Court. He was appointed United States Assistant Assessor in 1866. Governor Bullock made him special justice of the Haverhill Police Court, which position he retained for many years. His own townsmen also elected him to the school board, and to the office of city solicitor. He declined the position of trial justice for juvenile offenders, tendered him by Governor Talbot, and in 1870 he was elected to the legislature. In this capacity he represented Haverhill continuously until 1876, when he declined further re-election. His services in the house were marked by signal ability, efficiency and faithfulness, and he soon became favorably known in other parts of the State. A modest young man, not seeking notoriety, he was only conspicuous at first by constant attendence, punctuality and diligence—the prime qualities of usefulness in legislation.—He rarely allowed personal considerations of any kind to interfere with his public duties, and for six consecutive sessions was never absent for a single day. Amiable and of pleasing address, he soon established valuable social relations with his associates, and when it was found that he was quick to discern the merits, bearings and relations of public matters, that he was honorable and straightforward, he was recognized as a valuable ally to any cause in which he took an interest. He was a firm friend and a dangerous opponent. Above all things he was trustworthy. As his valuable services became thus recognized, people applauded the good sense of the voters of Haverhill in keeping him in his seat year after year. He served upon the standing Committees on Probate and Chancery, the Judiciary, Claims, and was three years on the committee on Railroads, and that for re-districting the State as well as other important special committees. On the occasion of the memorable visit of President Grant and his Cabinet, he was a member of the reception committee. During this time he had won the esteem and friendship of some of the best men in the State, irrespective of party, who considered him an honest, sagacious and growing man. His good sense and tact in politics have made him invaluable as a counsellor.

In 1872, Mr. Blunt was delegate to the Republican National Convention at Philadelphia which renominated President Grant, with Henry Wilson for Vice-President. He served as secretary of the Massachusetts delegation. In 1875 the friends of Mr. Blunt presented his name to the Republican State Convention for nomination as secretary of State, when he received strong support. President Grant nominated him as postmaster of Haverhill, May 30, 1876, and he was promptly confirmed by the Senate. He was reappointed by President Hayes and by President Arthur without opposition, his present commission expiring May 17, 1888. Formerly very earnest in local politics and ever a warm Republican, since his appointment as postmaster he has felt himself constrained to refrain from active participation in political movements. He has been seen no more in caucuses or conventions. This course has been maintained by him with admirable consistency, even when there were great personal temptations to depart from it, and when apparently he might have done so with impunity. The very general acquiescence to his serving as a Republican under a Democratic administration is not alone due to his personal popularity, for he has rendered in that capacity very important service to the business men of the city and to the community at large. He has anticipated rather than responded to the wants of the people, and his efforts in behalf of better and increased mail facilities are justly appreciated. When he saw that the government was erecting public buildings, especially in the West and South, he at once set himself to work to procure an appropriation for one in Haverhill. It is due to his efforts alone that the Senate has twice passed a bill with an appropriation for this object, thus accomplishing what will be of value when circumstances are finally favorable. Noticing his efficiency, which indeed could not be well hidden, the Republicans of Haverhill made a spirited effort to secure Mr. Blunt's nomination to Congress in 1884. In it they were much aided by his personal popularity with all classes and in all parties. He received the hearty and united support of the northern section of the district, but was defeated, Colonel Stone, of Newburyport, who had held the position for two terms, securing the nomination by two majority. In 1886 a more determined effort was made, and his own city and the adjoining and outlying towns sent an undivided and earnest delegation in his behalf to the convention. General William Cogswell, of Salem, was the principal opposing candidate, and after a contest lasting from 10 A.M. to 5 P.M., without intermission, obtained the nomination on the twenty-seventh ballot by one majority. A gallant and satisfactory struggle had been made by Mr. Blunt's friends, and had it not

[1] By John B. D. Cogswell.



William E. Blunt



been for the fact that he refrained from taking a personal part in the contest, owing to official duties, the result would have doubtless been different. It is due to Mr. Blunt to also add that on both these occasions he acquiesced in the result with admirable good spirit, and supported and efficiently aided in the election of both Colonel Stone and General Cogswell. Mr. Blunt is yet in the early prime of manhood. He is an excellent man of business, and he has acquitted himself admirably in every position, public or private, in which he has been placed.

With his experience of life and affairs, he seems to have still before him a long and useful career. So far as his political prospects are concerned, it is moderate to say that in every contest in which he has been directly or indirectly engaged he has developed great personal strength; that such defeats as he has sustained were but the fortunes of honorable warfare, involving no personal discredit, and in no way diminishing his personal popularity. His wounds are but the scars of chivalrous warfare, and he is ready to do his duty as he may see fit in the future.

For the past five years Mr. Blunt has been president of the Kennebunkport Seashore Company, which owns some six hundred acres of valuable property at Cape Arundel, Me. As a citizen Mr. Blunt is public-spirited and liberal. In conduct and speech he is prudent. His convictions are strong and his opinions are tenaciously held, but not so expressed as to infringe on the rights or wound the feelings of others. In social life he is genial, generous and hospitable. It would, perhaps, be trite to say that he is a kind and considerate husband and father. Mr. Blunt is married, his accomplished wife being Harriet M., daughter of Daniel Harriman. He has two children,—Kate M. and Florence T.

The strongest traits in Mr. Blunt's character, in all the relations of life, are his reliability and fidelity. His is stanch and loyal. With his word goes his heart. In his self-sacrificing friendship he grants favors with a heartiness that doubles their value. No success can attend him, and no honors can be awarded to him, which will not be matters of sincere rejoicing to hosts of attached friends.

ALDEN POTTER JAQUES.

Alden Potter Jaques, who, for the past twenty-five years, has been recognized as one of the successful business men of Haverhill, was a native of Bowdoin, Maine, and sprang from an ancestry of sturdy yeomanry. In the colonial days of this country, three brothers, by the name of Jaques, emigrated from France to America and located in Newbury. One of the trio afterwards removed to Harpswell, Maine, and was one of the first settlers of that place, where he became a large real estate owner. For several years he was master of a merchant ship, and followed the sea, and finally found his grave in the ocean.

Isaac, a descendant of Capt. Jaques, grandfather of Alden Potter, removed to Bowdoin, where he accumulated a large property, and became a prominent and influential citizen. He was the father of three sons and one daughter. Stafford, one of the sons, married Harriet Potter, and to them were born five sons and two daughters. Alden P., the oldest of the sons, was born March 4, 1835. His younger days were spent on the homestead farm, and during the three winter months of each year of his boyhood and youth he attended the public schools of his native town. His father, being a contractor and builder, was absent from home a large part of the time, leaving his farm in charge of his eldest son as soon as he was old enough to conduct the place, until he was eighteen, when his ambition led him to seek his fortune in the world. Being quite skillful in the use of tools, he readily obtained a situation as a ship-joiner in Richmond, Me. He continued to follow that trade until the financial crash of 1857, when, ship-building having become a poor business, he engaged in house carpentering.

In 1858, Mr. Jaques married Harriet, daughter of John Car, of Bowdoin, Me., with whom he enjoyed life until she was called home, in 1865. This was his first great sorrow. In 1871 he married Miss Marci L., daughter of Leonard R. Avery, of New Hampton, N. H.; to them has been born one son, Walter H. Jaques. Soon after Mr. Jaques' first marriage he purchased a farm, on which he lived but one year, and in 1859 being desirous of a more active life, he removed to Haverhill, Mass., where he again engaged in carpentering, and, being a skillful workman, found constant employment in doing the finer kinds of finishing. His last work at this trade was done on City Hall, in 1862.

The shoe industry, being the chief business of the place, presented greater inducements and more remunerative wages; he therefore turned his attention to that, and, aided by his natural mechanical skill, he soon found an opening, and for a time he worked at the shoe bench until he engaged in shoe manufacturing in 1862, having formed a partnership with his brother-in-law, Randall A. Potter, the name of the firm being Potter & Jaques.

In 1870, Mr. Jaques, in company with John B. Nichols, purchased the large wooden building then standing on Washington Street, and known as the Coffin Block, also the Whipple House adjoining. In this building, in 1873, Mr. Jaques inaugurated an enterprise that has done more than any other to revolutionize the shoe industry in Haverhill, viz.: the application of steam-power to machinery for making shoes. At first this innovation was regarded by some as impracticable, but the advantage those who adopted it soon gained over their neighbors led to the general adoption of this force, and the erection of other engines in the shoe manufacturing section of the city, so that now the business that was at one time

scattered throughout the place is centralized and reduced to a system.

To Mr. Jaques also belongs the honor of being the first to succeed in making shoes in what is known as a string-shop. In this he was also followed by others, until now nearly every manufacturer has adopted this method. Mr. Jaques continued in the shoe business until the great conflagration in February, 1882, swept away his factory and other buildings in which he was interested. This destruction of his property only tended to stimulate him to erect more substantial buildings in place of his old ones, and to interest him more extensively in real estate and other enterprises. At present Mr. Jaques is a large share-owner in, and treasurer of, the Eastern Cattle Company, of Haverhill, which has an extensive and well-stocked ranch at Deer Trail, Col.

While he has been an active and successful business man, Mr. Jaques has always taken a lively interest in the welfare of the city and State where he resides. His fellow-citizens, realizing his talents and ability, have honored him by placing him in positions of trust and responsibility.

He has been twice elected a member of the General School Board, and in '85 and '86 was a member of the Board of Aldermen, and in that board was on several important committees.

In the fall of 1886, Mr. Jaques was elected one of the representatives from Haverhill to the General Court, where he was a faithful public servant, and was honored by being assigned to the special committee to represent the Commonwealth at the centennial celebration of the signing of the National Constitution. November, 1887, Mr. Jaques was re-elected to the General Court.

Mr. Jaques has long been a member of Haverhill Commandery of Knights Templar; Saggahew Lodge, F. and A. M., and of Mutual Relief Lodge, I. O. of O. F.

The subject of our sketch has proved the truth of the proverb: "Seest thou a man diligent in his business? he shall stand before kings; he shall not stand before mean men."

AMOS W. DOWNING.

The moral and intellectual features of different individuals are often as strongly marked as is their personal appearance. Each man exhibits a group of distinctive traits belonging to the mind or the heart, which, whether they are the offspring of some natural tendency or the result of education, enables him to perform his part with greater effect in a particular circle of action. Early in life the subject of this sketch gave promise of unusual achievement along the line of human endeavor. He was born in Middleton, N. H., March 31, 1838, and was the son of Samuel H. and Eliza D. Downing. Though tenderly attached to his home, the spirit of self-reliance and enterprise led him to leave it and strike out for himself at the age of fourteen. He learned the shoemaker's trade, which he followed steadily till his twentieth year. The horizon of the shoe-shop became too contracted for the activity of his brain, and he began to desire a broader field and bolder ventures. Just then the store-keeper of the town proposed to sell out, and made overtures to Mr. Downing. It was a surprise to him, for he had neither capital nor knowledge of the business. But the price was agreed on, his note was accepted, and he left the shoe-bench and became proprietor of the store. At once he mastered the new situation. He visited Boston, selected his supply-merchants, obtained the credit he sought without reference, and did a successful business there for four years, when, in 1864, he sold out his store, removed to Haverhill, Mass., and established himself in a first-class grocery business. His movements and methods, though a stranger, at once inspired confidence and won a liberal patronage. But he desired a broader sphere of enterprise, and one less occupied in that flourishing city, and commenced the leather business in the winter of 1867–68. For ten years his operations were limited to the retail trade, and were gradually extended. He then united with others in the manufacture of leather, connecting himself with the old and reliable house of B. F. Thompson & Co., of Boston, in which he is now an active partner. He is also the senior member of the firm of A. W. Downing & Co., having places of business in both Haverhill and Boston, and who do an extensive business in the manufacture of morocco.

Mr. Downing's remarkable success cannot be traced to inherited wealth, social position, the culture of the schools or to special training for the occupations which he has successively pursued. His powers were drawn out and stimulated by favorable circumstances, and he has achieved large measure of success in each of his varied undertakings. His insight into men and affairs is extraordinary. His habits and manner of life are pure and simple. His sympathies are broad and generous. That he has the respect and confidence of his fellow-citizens is evident from the numerous responsible trusts, both private and public, both financial and religious, which have been committed to him.

In 1859 Mr. Downing married Susan A., daughter of Captain Robert and Ann D. Grace, and she has been a true helpmeet to him in all the varied experiences through which their lives have run.



Amos W. Durning

CHAPTER CLXV.

BRADFORD.

BY JOHN B. D. COGSWELL.

Mr. Rogers' Rowley Plantation—Resources and Industries of the Town.

THE East Parish of Bradford was incorporated as a town by the name of Groveland, March 8, 1850. A part of Boxford, including more than three-fourths of Johnson's Pond, was annexed to Groveland, March 21, 1856. The history of Groveland has been written for these volumes by a highly competent gentleman, and it will not be necessary to treat of it in this sketch, other than as connected with the old town of Bradford.

The principal original contributions to the history of Bradford have been made by two clergymen, Rev. Dr. Gardner B. Perry, of the East Parish, and Rev. Dr. John D. Kingsbury, present pastor of the Congregational Church in Bradford. Dr. Perry, born at Norton, Mass., 1783, and graduated at Union College, was ordained pastor of the Congregational Church in the East Parish Sept. 28, 1814, dying at Groveland, Dec. 16, 1859. Dr. Perry was a man of great industry and usefulness, and was early allied with several reformatory movements, which worked great changes in society and opinion in Essex County. Dec. 23, 1827, in response to a call addressed to all those in Haverhill and vicinity interested in the promotion of temperance, he presided over a meeting in that place, which led to the formation of a temperance society, of which he was the first president, delivering an address upon the occasion. He was the first president of the Essex County Anti-Slavery Society, organized June 10, 1834, of which John G. Whittier was corresponding secretary.

On Forefathers' Day, 1820, he delivered at East Bradford an historical discourse containing a history of the town, which was published in 1821, at Haverhill, and reprinted in 1872. It contains a great deal of information about the first settlers of the town, its industries and churches, a considerable portion of which he had gathered from tradition. Dr. Kingsbury's "Memorial History" was prepared for the two hundredth anniversary of the First Church in Bradford, Dec. 27, 1882. This history exhibits the result of wide reading and abundant research, displayed in a vivid and picturesque manner. All subsequent investigators must be deeply indebted to these two productions. The writer of this imperfect compilation, hastens to acknowledge his unlimited obligations to both.

No one can read the early history of Essex County, without realizing how much the ministers had to do with shaping the settlements and controlling the conduct of the pioneers. The first projector of the Haverhill plantation was Rev. Nathaniel Ward, of Ipswich; indeed, it was at first known by his name. In a similar way, another clergyman was the chief promoter of the first occupation of the original territory of Bradford by Englishmen.

Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, born in Haverhill, England, was ordained pastor of the church in Ipswich in 1637–38, to succeed Mr. Ward, who, retiring from the active ministry there, yet remained some years longer, preparing the famous "Body of Liberties," and scheming about new and large plantations. Perry tells us that Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, who came to this country in the fall of 1638, and fixed himself at Rowley, which originally included Bradford, was influenced in doing so by a desire of being near and enjoying the society of Mr. Nathaniel Rogers, of Ipswich.

Ezekiel Rogers was a Puritan of the Puritans. Born at Wethersfield, England, in 1590, and private chaplain for a while, he was twenty years pastor of a church in Rowley, in memory of which the new plantation in Massachusetts was doubtless named—as John Smith had before anticipated would often be the case—"in memory of their old." He is said to have been an eloquent man and a forceful, if not a wilful. In 1643 he preached the election sermon, in which he maintained that the same person should not hold the office of Governor for two successive years. This was Democratic doctrine, at a moment when there was a certain leaning towards establishing the magistracy for life, of which Winthrop said "he was no more in love with the honor or power of it than with an old frieze coat in a summer's day." "It is a good observation," wrote Eliot, "and has been often repeated, that the election sermon is the pulse by which we can tell the state of the body politic."

Mr. Rogers had a singular variety of afflictions, in his declining years. He lost two wives, and the third, when she was left a widow, quarreled with his successor and his people. On the night after his third nuptials his house burned down, and he lost his goods and most of his papers. The last is supposed to have been an historical loss. Then he disabled his right arm by falling from his horse, and had to learn how to write with his left. But thanks, probably, to his land operations, he left considerable property, of which Harvard College had the largest benefit. To his friend, Rev. Zachariah Symmes, of Charlestown, (father of the first minister of Bradford), he wrote: "I am hastening home. Oh, good brother, I thank God I am near home, and you, too, are not far off." The masterful old man had no doubt about his future. "We shall sit next the martyrs and confessors." And so when he came to make his will, he gave vent once more to his cherished dislikes, among other things "of all the base opinions of Anabaptists and Antinomians, and all other Phrenetics, dolays of the times." He died in 1660, but, curiously enough, his scorn of sectaries, seems to have been largely participated

in, in this old parish of Bradford, all the way down through the centuries.

Mr. Rogers was accompanied to America by about twenty families from Yorkshire, but immigration was very large at that time, and, as he was probably a magnetic as well as energetic person, his company had much increased by the time his arrangements were completed, and he took at least sixty families to Rowley. There, for a few years, lands were cultivated in common, but that arrangement has never comported long with the genius of New England, and, before a great while, there was an allotment in severalty.

Probably there is not a village in America so little changed by the lapse of time as Rowley. There are the two or three streets upon which the exiles settled themselves,—Wethersfield, in recollection of the pastor's birth-place, and Bradford, to preserve the name of the substantial town in the West Riding in Yorkshire, from which others of them had come. These people were farmers, smiths and weavers. They soon reverted to their English ways, had great store of hemp and flax, built a fulling-mill and made cloth.

Rowley was incorporated September 4, 1639, when it was ordered by the General Court that "Mr. Ezekiel Rogers' plantation be called Rowley." May 13, 1640, it was declared by the General Court "that Rowley bounds is to be eight miles from their meeting-house in a straight line (westerly); and then a cross line diameter from Ipswich Ryver to Merrimack Ryver when it doth not prejudice any former grant." In October of the same year the court ordered "that the neck of land on Merrimack, near Corchitawick, be added to Rowley."

There seems to have been an original amicable arrangement by which the settlement of Rowley was to intervene with loving neighborship, between Ipswich and Newbury. But before long there was friction. In 1640, "Mr. Ward's Plantation," at Pentucket or Haverhill, was settled upon. But now the people of Rowley, under their strong leader—what one of the Essex County historical writers whimsically calls "The Rev. Ezekiel Rogers' Company"—was eager to stretch from the seashore to the Merrimack. Mr. Rogers was still in the prime of life—about fifty. He had traveled all through the promised land, and he earnestly desired to be added to the Rowley domain what is now Bradford Neck, and Head's Hill, with other lands, which he claimed were intended for Rowley, but had been assigned to Andover instead, by mistake or wrong. When he demanded its restitution of the General Court and was refused, he retired in high dudgeon, threatening to appeal to the elders. The "Elders" were, as a learned Congregationalist minister has written, "in the early days of New England, taken into express partnership with the civil power, in a manner greatly to exalt the sway which they would otherwise have had; and which on the one hand made it easy for them to realize, and easier on the other hand for them to attempt great things, in the way of public influence." No wonder they were rather topping in their manner.

Still, Mr. Rogers afterwards apologized for his heat; but he had his desire, the court giving way before his resolute demand. "A stranger," says Mr. Kingsbury, "passing through Rowley, asked him in the style of Puritan speech, are you the man that *serves* here?" "Serves! I am the man that *rules* here."

Mr. Herbert I. Ordway, a zealous antiquarian of Bradford, upon the two hundredth church anniversary, read the following extracts of letters from the clerical promoters of plantations, which, even at this distance of time, are interesting glimpses. Nathaniel Ward, whose somewhat greedy letters about Pentucket (Haverhill) may be perused in the present volume, nevertheless writes Governor Winthrop in this tone of studied moderation:

"Our neighbour towns are much greined to see the lauish liberality of the Court in giving away the countrye. Some honest men of our towne affirme that in their knowledge there are 68 towns in England within as little compasse as the bounds of Ipswich: I knowe neere 40 where I dwelt: Rowly is larger than Ipswich, 9 or 10 miles longe & will have other plantations within it, tributaries to it, & intend, as we heare, to stretch their wings much further yet, will spoile & Qutchicquite vtterly, if not Pentucket. We earnestly pray you to prevent it."

On the other hand, Mr. Rogers writes the Governor:

"Sir, there is one thing that is a newo trouble to vs: tbough the Court doe giue vs but three miles of the eight, that we go into the country, yet we heare that some wouldo take somewhat of from that. It seemeth they thinke vs very vnworthy neighbours."

Lastly, in another letter to Governor Winthrop, Mr. Rogers falls back upon another line of consideration, with which Mr. Ward was also familiar:

"You best know how oft we expressed ourselves & how plainly, concerning our desired bounds, as Ipsw. River & Merimack: without which we wouldo vpon no termes accept of a plantation here. Ipswich men desiring our neighbourhood couldo shewe vs little desireable here (except we purchased it at a deare rate), but the name of Merimack & some considerable places there, as a neck of land & the like . . . . . whereupon I wrote many letters to my friends in England, wherein I tolde them precisely our bounds; & the sound of Merimack we made not a little vse of."

These were both good men and famous ministers, such as Cotton Mather loved to eulogize in the "Magnalia," but they went about to enlarge the kingdom, much as modern lobbyists are accustomed to proceed. Eventually Mr. Rogers got his way.

Ancient Rowley included the present Georgetown, Boxford, a part of Middleton, Groveland and Bradford.

Boxford was known originally as "Rowley Village." That part of Rowley which is now Bradford was first the "Merrimac Lands," then Merrimac; sometimes, also, "Rowley Village by the Merrimac." Georgetown used to be called New Rowley. And thus Mr. Rogers' great plantation fell to pieces in the fulness of time.

Finally, two individual allotments of land were made to Rev. Mr. Rogers himself and to the Rev.

Samuel Phillips, his colleague. They were of three hundred acres respectively; both tracts were in that part of Bradford which is now Groveland. Mr. Phillips' tract was east of Johnson's Creek, and was bounded on the east by Mr. Rogers', which extended to the river. Twenty acres of meadow were also assigned to Mr. Phillips, and twenty-five to Mr. Rogers, in Jeremie's Meadow. For a few years the Rowley settlers had enough to occupy them in the original village by the brook-side. But when the village lands had been divided and the population of the town began to increase, there were some more adventurous who began to think of utilizing the Merrimac lands. Besides, Pentucket or Haverhill had now been settled some years. It was a prosperous, and hitherto peaceful village, not yet alarmed by the Indian war-whoop. Some of the original inhabitants were of Newbury, but others had been of Ipswich. There were occasions to pass to and fro, and doubtless some halted on the route and entered Rowley Village by the way of Bradford Street to exchange greetings. Thus the Rowley men would hear of the progress of Haverhill, of the new meeting-house "on the lower knowle," in the "Mill-Lot," with its lofty protecting stockade of smooth poles, sixteen feet high, of the excellent ministrations of Pastor Ward. In 1647 the town had been presented for not having a ferry, and the next year Thomas Hale was appointed to keep it, charging "one penny for a passenger, two pence for cattel under two years old, and four pence for such as were over that age." This has ever since been the "old ferry-way," a little east of the foot of Kent Street. The Haverhill people had crossed at that point from the beginning. But doubtless they were eager to have neighbors upon the south. Thus the long wilderness pathway would seem less wild and tedious. In the same year (1647) John Osgood and Thomas Hale were appointed to "lay out the way from Andiver to Haverell"—of course over Merrimac lands. In short, the time seemed to have fully come for an occupation, at least in a pastoral way. Accordingly it was determined that cattle should be pastured near the river, and an agreement was made by which the town allowed special privileges to those who were willing to serve it as herdsmen. The original agreement was made in 1649 to continue seven years, but there was some misunderstanding about it, and in 1652 the committee were directed to renew it, without, however, enlarging the original term of the contract. The town's committee were Matthew Boyes and Francis Parrott, who were associated with the selectmen, Richard Swan, William Stickney, William Hobson, Samuel Brocklebank and William Tenney—names afterwards familiar in the history of Bradford. The affair was evidently regarded as important. So it was, and especially from an historical stand-point. It shows who were the pioneers and with what views and inducements they came. Following is the agreement:

"Imprimis, that the Town of Rowley hath granted to the said Robert Haseltine, John Haseltine and William Wilde, each of them 40 acres of upland, to be laid out to them as convenient as may be without the great prejudice of the town.

"2d. The said town of Rowley hath granted to the aforesaid parties, each of them, to have commons for 20 head of cattle, which said commons they shall have liberty to fence in, wholly or in part, as they see cause. Provided, that the town of Rowley doth declare that they did restrain them from liberty to erect any more than three tenements upon any part of the aforesaid upland or commons.

"3d. The town hath granted to each of them 20 acres of meadow and which meadow and upland shall be laid out to them when they claim it, unless some Providence of God shall hinder

"4th. They have liberty to get, each of them, a thousand of Pipe-staves yearly, for the space of seven years, which years began in 1649.

"5th. They have liberty on the commons to cut firewood for their families as also timber for building, and for fencing in of their ground, provided, that they are not to fell any fencing stuff within a quarter of a mile of the pasture fence.

"They are to be freed from all towne charges for the lands, houses, four oxen, and six cows and four calves, each of them such a quantity, during the space of seven years, begun in 1649; also they have liberty to keep swine.

"For and in consideration of all the aforesaid privileges, granted by the town of Rowley to the aforesaid Robert, John, and William, and their heirs and assigns, they have covenanted with the same towne, for themselves, their heirs and assigns, sufficiently to look to the herd of cattle, that the towne of Rowley shall put into the pasture during the time of seven years. Provided the cattle be two years old and upward. Provided, also, the town shall give them 2s. by the day, for so much time as they shall spend about looking to said pasture."

"24. The said Robert, John, and William doth covenant with the towne to provide convenient diet and lodging, at different times, to any that the towne shall send to keep any herd there."

These were great privileges,—*i. e.* to each, forty acres of upland and twenty acres of meadow; right of commonage to each for twenty head of cattle, with liberty to fence the same; liberty for each to build a tenement, with license to cut timber for building and fencing, and to cut firewood for family use; license for each to cut a thousand pipe-staves yearly, for seven years; exemption from town taxes for seven years, for lands, houses and fourteen head of cattle each, as specified; and liberty to keep swine. In consideration of all which, they covenanted to look sufficiently to the herd of cattle, of two years and upwards, that for the space of ten years the town shall put into the pasture But for such care, they were to be paid at the rate of two shillings a day, according to time expended. And they agreed at all times to board any persons the town should see fit to send as herd-keepers. The restriction as to number of tenements, was doubtless intended to exclude any claim for allotment of additional commonage to other tenements.

The privilege of cutting one thousand pipe-staves each, annually for seven years, was a valuable one. Pipe-staves were becoming an important article of commerce with the West Indies and elsewhere. The town of Haverhill at times passed special rates, allowing the householders to cut pipe-staves, but not within two miles of the house-lots.

After some years William Wilde sold out his lands to the Haseltines, and to George Hadley, and went to Ipswich, where he died in 1662. John and Robert Haseltine were brothers. John was probably married

before coming to America. He had children before removing to Merrimac Lands.

Robert and Ann Haseltine, were married at Rowley in 1639, being the first marriage of the town. They had nine children, some born before, more after coming to the Merrimac.

John Haseltine had been made a "Freeman" in Rowley in 1640, and must therefore have been a church member, as the law then was. But his name does not appear later among the Bradford church members, and it is therefore thought that he removed over the river to Haverhill, and was Deacon John Haseltine of Mr. Ward's church.

A house-lot was laid out to John Haseltine in Haverhill about 1650, so that he did not personally remain very long in Bradford, if the above conjecture is correct. But he was represented here by a son or sons.

In 1643, at the first survey, house lots had been laid out to John and Robert Haseltine on Holmes Street, and to William Wilde on Bradford Street, in old Rowley.

The Haseltines have always been numerous and respectable, both in Bradford and Haverhill. But the original Haseltines who came over the seas with Rogers, though doubtless hardy and vigorous men, were probably illiterate. John could not write his name.

The Bradford land originally laid out to the Haseltines and Wilde, includes the west half of the village. "The lower corner" of this tract "is where the road turns by Jacob Kimball's." "Their meadow land is well known to this day as the Haseltine meadow." In 1658 Joseph Jewett had laid out to him the whole of Bradford Neck. One Glover settled near the cove by Lafayette Day.

In 1671, the following lots were laid out below the farm of Glover:

To	In right of	Rods wide at the river.
"Joseph Chaplin,		35 acres 11½
John Simmonds,	Widow Cooper,	42 " 12
Abraham Foster,	John Burbank,	37 " 12
John Simmonds,	Thomas Palmer,	36 " 14
John Simmonds,	Wm. Wilde and another,	66 " 27
John Simmonds,	Hugh Smith,	38 " 12
Jonathan Hopkinson,	Michael Hopkinson,	32 " 14
Samuel Boswell,	Wm. and John Boynton,	53 " 21½
James Dickinson,	Thomas Dickinson,	57 " 23
Deacon Jewett,	John Spofforth,	95 " 31½
Mrs. Kimball, Boston,	John Remington and Geo. Kilborn,	102 " 30
James Canada and James Barker, Jr.,	James Barker and William Stickney,	111 " 33½
John Boynton,	William Scales and Richard Wicom,	93 " 26"

These were the first settlers above the village, and their lots took in the land between Head's Hill and the Haseltine farm. Four lots were laid out below the village in the same year:

To	In right of	Rods wide at the river.
"John Watson,	Thomas Abbott,	50 acres 11
Widow A. Mightill,		215 " 72
Thomas Kimball, (number of acres not known).		
Widow Ann Hobson,		260 " 41"

This Thomas Kimball was killed May 3, 1676, during King Philip's War, by the three notorious Praying Indians, Symon, Andrew and Peter. Kimball lived on the road leading from what is now South Groveland to Boxford. The story is that the Indians were on the way to kill somebody at Rowley who they fancied had injured them; but finding the night too far spent, turned aside and sacrificed another instead. Something can be learned of Symon the leader, in the accompanying sketch of Haverhill. Thomas Kimball's wife and five children were carried away captive by Symon and his gang, but were afterwards set at liberty and permitted to return, through, it is said, the influence of Wannalancet, chief of the Pennacooks and steadfast friend of the white men, who, in 1677, retired to Canada. After her return from captivity, the widow Mary Kimball petitioned the General Court to protect her from the ruffian Symon, who had threatened to kill her and her children if she ever went back to her house. In October the court abated her taxes.

The Rogers and Phillips grants beyond Johnson's Creek are said to have been largely taken up by the numerous Hardys and Parkers. The lots at the east were very long and narrow, fronting upon the river and extending back several miles in some cases.

Of the allotments of lands, Dr. Perry wrote in 1820: "This town was at first laid out in lots running from the river to what is now called the Rowley line. These lots were of different widths, but the boundaries of most of them are easily discoverable by the course of the fences. And a sufficient number of them are still in the possession of the descendants of the first inhabitants to give any one much acquainted in town an idea sufficiently accurate of the places where the first people lived and the land they occupied." And the excellent doctor repeats "their names in order, beginning at the east end of the town." But it may be doubted whether at this day there would be much profit in attempting to give the list, save for the purpose of showing the method of division of lands. Even seventy years ago, some of the Christian names were uncertain. To recreate with accuracy the original land allotments, would be a task requiring patience, keenness and accuracy which few men possess.

It appears that, according to tradition, John and William Hardy were brothers, who came to America in the family of Governor Winthrop, as laborers, who, not finding employment for them, gave them at first land at Ipswich, which not suiting them, he permitted their removal to Bradford and obtained lands for them here.

Bradford, in its full proportions, was about eight miles long and three wide, containing about ten thousand acres.

The soil is generally very good. In 1820 there were still considerable quantities of salmon, shad,

bass, sturgeon, alewives and other fish in the Merrimac and its tributary waters, which, in the spring, were taken largely in seines. It could then be said, "the salmon caught here are esteemed the best of any taken in the waters of the northern states, and often fetch from seventy-five cents to a dollar a pound in the market in Boston. The quantity of fish is at present much less than formerly." In 1888 a fine river shad or salmon is a novelty.

March 23, 1808, a young gentleman of Haverhill, who kept a scrap-book, made this entry in it: "Seventeen hundred Bass were caught at one Hawl in Merrimack River, at the ferry way in Bradford." But it is to be feared neither the Fish Commissions nor societies for the protection of fish and game, will ever bring back those days of plenty.

For more than a century after the settlement of the town the principal reliance was upon the cultivation of the soil. In the eighteenth century there were many large orchards of apples, peaches, pears and plums. Dr. Perry, who, in 1820, had not yet entered into the temperance movement, seems to lament that there was not so much good "Arminian cider" made as formerly. This was so called in sportive allusion to the theological views of the first pastor of the East Parish Church, Rev. William Balch, himself a noted raiser of fruit.

In the eastern part of the town, traces of mineral wealth, as iron, coal and lead, were early discovered, but they never materialized to any useful extent. There were chalybeate springs, impregnated with iron, and there was an abundance of peat, formerly considerably used for fuel. From 1790 to 1820 the quantity of wood rather increased than diminished, and at the latter date the experiment of sowing acorns and walnuts for tree-raising had begun. Probably, at the present time, the quantity of standing wood is also increasing, as is the case almost everywhere in Essex County.

In 1820, farmers still highly prized the salt hay which they brought, in the season, by the river from the marshes near the sea; and its value in the enrichment of the land is dwelt upon by that keen observer, Dr. Perry, who takes occasion also to recommend the use of plaster of Paris, of which David How, of Haverhill, had made such profitable employment, at Golden Hill, on his great farm in East Bradford, and elsewhere.

Before the Revolution, there had been little trading in this town. There may have been a store in each parish, near the respective meeting-houses, where a few indispensable articles of groceries and hardware could be obtained. Moses Parker is said to have had the first store of any importance, which was in the East Parish. He kept a great variety of merchandise, exchangeable for country produce, and had considerable trade in New Hampshire. This may be supposed to be the same Moses Parker who, for some years after 1770, carried on successfully the manufacture of tobacco. In the early part of the present century there were quite a number of stores in the East Parish, where it was possible to obtain upon "good terms" most of the articles required in common life. Probably the inhabitants of the Upper Parish (now Bradford) always carried their trade largely to Haverhill, where there was from an early day considerable pretension to cosmopolitanism, as we are informed by Mrs. Emery, of Newbury, in her interesting "Reminiscences of a Nonogenarian."

Ship-building was begun by Mr. John Atwood, of Boston, in 1720. It is now a lost art.

Shubael Walker began tanning in the Upper Parish, soon after the settlement of the town. But in Dr. Perry's time that manufacture had concentrated itself in the East Parish, whence also it has now vanished.

The manufacture of straw, chaise-making, coopering, the making of chocolate, brass and pewter buckles, bricks, sleigh-bells, twine and thread, and various other things, were attempted with greater or less success at different times, but were all ultimately abandoned.

Greater success has attended the development of the valuable water-power of Johnson's Creek, "the greatest and, indeed, the only considerable means for water-works in this town, and it has been considerably improved for this purpose, for on it have stood, or are now standing (1820), four saw-mills, five grist-mills, three fulling-mills, two bark-mills." The first of these was a grist-mill, set up by Edward Carleton, the first person born in Rowley, or his father, probably about the year 1670. From that time on, saw and grist-mills were erected in different parts of the town. The descendants of Rowley, with their Yorkshire traditions, recognized the value of the Johnson's Creek power for cloth-making. Dr. Perry, with his wonted practical sagacity, adds,—"I take this opportunity to observe that though much use is made of the water of Johnson's Creek, yet a much more considerable advantage might be derived from it. Several mills more might, with perfect convenience, stand upon it." He suggests a carding-mill and another saw-mill.

"Indeed, it would be easy to show how enterprising individuals might get wealth, and the community be better served, by enlisting in their service, the force of this water, which God, in his goodness, causes to flow down this stream for the use of men."

The excellent clergyman did not live to see the great development of the water-power upon his favorite stream at South Groveland, by that able manufacturer, the late Mr. Hale. Mr. Hale was connected with the East Parish by marriage, and may have heard the old minister descant upon the prospective value of Johnson's Creek. He was a man who did not need much prodding in the direction of money-making. He was eminently keen and hard-headed.

Daniel Hardy, afterwards of Pelham, N. H., began to make shoes about 1760. He sent them to Portsmouth. Thomas Savory and Nathaniel Mitchell afterwards carried on the business extensively, sending their shoes to the Southern States and to the West Indies. About the time of the French Revolution Moses Savory and Mr. Gage entered upon the same business, and after that time shoemaking became "one of the most important articles in the business of this town."

In 1820 Dr. Perry could say: "Large quantities of shoes are manufactured here, and sent to the Southern and Middle States, the West Indies, etc. About one hundred and fifty men are constantly employed in this business, besides many who employ the winter in it, who, it is supposed, make fifty thousand pairs of shoes and boots yearly."

It is a curious circumstance, brought to light by Mr. Ordway, that when the town, March 3, 1775, sympathetically sent its contribution, through a committee composed of Abraham Parker and two others, to the sufferers by the Boston Port Bill, it forwarded "the small sum of £19 4*s.* 5*d.* in cash, together with thirty-four pair of shoes."

In 1792, Samuel Tenney, and soon after Uriah Gage, Timothy Phillips and William Tenney, were engaged in the manufacture of shoes in Bradford. Their markets were in Boston, Salem, Newburyport and Portland. They at first carried their goods to market on horseback. Shoes were largely sent to Salem, and thence shipped to the South and the West Indies. They began to be sold on commission in Georgetown, Philadelphia and elsewhere. From 1815 to 1837 the shoe manufacture of Bradford was important. But after the railroad reached Haverhill, in 1837, the Bradford manufacturers, before enterprising and successful within the limits of their own town, began to remove their establishments to Haverhill. In 1876 the centennial orator enumerated, as among the leading manufacturers of Haverhill, the following residents of Bradford: L. Johnson & Co., A. L. Kimball, John B. Farrar, Warren Ordway, Alfred A. Ordway, S. W. Hopkinson, Peter E. Pearl and John F. Merrill.

In 1882 the names of Montgomery, Hoyt, Johnson, Ordway, Webster, Sawyer, Farrar, Kimball, Day, Waldo, Merrill, Ford, Carleton, Durgin, Pearl, Toun and Hopkinson, were stated as among those who had been or were successful manufacturers and resident in Bradford,

The free bridge between Haverhill and Bradford, latterly the extension of the Haverhill and Groveland horse railroad to Bradford, made it easy and pleasant for large numbers of people to do business or find employment in the former town, whilst residing here. The building of a second bridge from the upper part of the village of Bradford to the manufacturing district of Haverhill, somewhat agitated within a few years, is probably only in abeyance at the present time. Increase of population and assured business would revive the demand with increased force. The course of things during the last few years, however, has not been favorable to expensive schemes of this character. The manufactories which improved railroad and other facilities concentrated thirty or forty years ago have, to a limited extent, been dismantled or quiescent during the last few seasons, whilst goods have been made in small towns here and there throughout the country. Of course, these conditions are counter to all recognized and familiar laws of trade, and can only be accounted for by exceptional circumstances, as labor disturbances or the apprehension of them. These problems will gradually work themselves out, like all others connected with the interests and progress of civilized man. Local pride and attachments, combined with the attractions of unsurpassed beauty of situation and natural wholesomeness of surroundings, will, it may reasonably be hoped, secure the continued prosperity of these two interesting communities so long living together in substantial friendship.

While the very great advantages of Bradford, as a place of residence, preserve and even augment its population by a healthful increase, it is not to be overlooked that there are also facilities connected with its situation in reference to the Merrimac River, and the parallel transportation system of the Boston and Maine Railroad, which are susceptible of great expansion by the application of business capital and energy. On the bank, between the railroad and the river, are already a large hat factory, an extensive coal and lumber yard, a large and successful paper mill and other enterprises.

Whether the two communities, which in 1869 and 1872 could not vote together "to form a more perfect union," will ever be legally consolidated, it were quite useless to discuss in this place. As Dr. Kingsbury happily observed in reference to the early friendship and intercourse between the towns: "The frequent visits to and fro have already begun that long friendship which, whatever names men may call them by, will make them one forever."

CHAPTER CLXVI.

BRADFORD—(*Continued*).

The Town is Erected—The Church is Built.

In one respect, old Rowley village appears to great advantage in comparison with many other towns of large territory and far-off, outlying settlements. The towns, or leading individuals who controlled their policy, loved power and hated to relinquish it. They dreaded to be diminished in importance. For a vari-

ety of reasons, as greater protection, development of the country, increase of trade and population, the young and adventurous were encouraged to go out into the wilderness, cut down the great trees and subdue the soil. If they were successful, as of course they almost invariably were, they soon had numerous young people growing up around them. They were too far away to go to school or to meeting. The mothers sighed as they remembered the privileges of their own youth in the older settlements or in dear old England, and saw their children growing up in ignorance and without the privileges of the sanctuary. Through their influence, and the fathers' sense of duty to their children, there began to be agitations in the town-meetings for the setting off of parishes and the building of new meeting-houses. But the outlying settlers were scattered and could not concentrate their influence. The residents of the central portion of the town, who knew each other well, and were in the habit of working together, almost always came off victorious, and sent them home discomfited, year after year.

Thus discontents were roused, and heart-burnings fostered. The only remedy was repeated trial, or an appeal to the General Court. That was expensive, and, to the rude, simple pioneers, seemed like starting for another world. Nobody in the remote districts was likely to know much about public business, or have any great aptness for transacting it. Besides, there was no opportunity to learn how. The village magnate, very likely a well-to-do trader, monopolized the offices. He was accustomed to visiting the shire-town—the capital. He could "afford" to go. Sometimes, however, the woodsmen learned the craft of the villagers and beat them with their own weapons —by union, combination or log-rolling. This was the case at Haverhill. The parishes combined were too strong for the central village, with all its wealth and trade, and array of professional men.

But in Rowley old town there was not so much of this selfishness and love of power exhibited as in many other towns. Thus we read that in 1669 the town voted that the inhabitants of Rowley village—Boxford—shall pay taxes like the other freemen, but may apply them, first to village expenses, and next to improve the minister's farm. Similar kindness was extended towards the dwellers on the Merrimac lands. Thus, when they went to the General Court in 1668, to talk about being set up as a separate town, instead of being confronted by fierce and relentless opposition, they were treated in a kind and considerate manner, with encouragement:

"In answer to the petition of the inhabitants of Rowley, living over against Haverhill, the Court having considered the petition, perused the town of Rowley's grant to the petitioners, heard Rowley's deputy, and also considering a writing sent from Rowley, with what els hath been presented in the case doe find that there is liberty granted to the petitioners by the town of Rowley to provide themselves of a minister and also an intent to release them from their township when they are accordingly provided, and therefore see not but this court may grant their petition to be a township provided they doe gett and settle an able and orthodox minister and continue to maynteigne him or also to remain to Rowley as formerly."

The providing a suitable minister and making provision to support him was, in the Puritan polity, a condition precedent to the erection of a parish or the incorporation of a town. Not only to prepare thus for the spiritual needs of the people, and so to forward one of the capital ends for which the founders had forsaken the land and Church of England, but also because the accomplishing of these things tended towards stability and permanence in the community. Whatever faith he is of or of no faith, the wise statesman will always recognize that the churches, with their organization and their work, are, in a land like ours, the strongest bulwark of the State.

Provision had already been made by anticipation on the "Lands," for the commencement of this great work. We have seen that the clerical pioneer of Bradford, Mr. Rogers, was a warm friend of Minister Zechariah Symmes, of Charlestown. Mr. Rogers had just passed to the exalted seat he had assigned himself; but doubtless he had been already consulted as to the organization of the new church and had pointed out the son of his old friend, just now eligible.

The elder Symmes, himself the son of a minister, was born at Canterbury, England, in 1599. He came to New England in 1634, in the same ship with Ann Hutchinson, and died in Charlestown in 1676. His son, Zechariah, born at Charlestown in 1637, graduated at Harvard, the first scholar of his class, in 1657. He was afterwards a fellow of the college. He had preached at Rehoboth (Pawtucket) from 1661 to 1666, and came to Bradford to preach in 1667. He was thus thirty years of age, and must have been in the maturity of his powers.

The father had been a man of great physical endurance, and his auditors must have needed a great deal also. Johnson recorded of him that on one occasion "he continued in preaching and praying four or five hours." Said the Scotch minister, when asked if he were not much fatigued after a similar effort: "Na, na, I waur as fresh as a daisy. But ye sud hae seen how tired the folk waur!"

Mr. Symmes, of Bradford, was a man of large stature He was a man of learning and piety; much respected. He lived forty years in Bradford, dying here March 22, 1707. When his first wife died, he married the Widow Dalton, born Mehitable Palmer, of Haverhill. Before his coming, the people on the lands had doubtless worshipped at Haverhill, and enjoyed the ministrations of the excellent Mr. Ward. They were therefore exceptionally fortunate.

For two years Mr. Symmes preached in a house or barn—perhaps sometimes in the open air, like Mr. Ward in the beginnings of Pentucket. Mr. Symmes could not administer the sacrament, because he had not been ordained. For this reason, most of the Bradford people at this time were members of the

Haverhill church and probably crossed over with the pastor on communion days, although Dr. Kingsbury thinks Mr. Ward may have crossed to Bradford sometimes to administer the sacred elements.

The Haverhill people entreated them hospitably. In town-meeting in 1669 they made choice "of Andrew Greely, Sr., to keep the ferry at Haverhill; provided that he agree and will carry over the inhabitants of the town, and the inhabitants of the town of Merrimack over against us, for three pence an horse, and a penny a man; and that he will carry all ministers over free that come upon visitation to us, and in particular Mr. Symes; and that if the inhabitants of the town over against us do come over to meet with us on the Sabbath days, they shall have free use of the ferry boat, or boats, for the occasion, without paying anything." Dr. Kingsbury wrote of the return of Mr. Symmes and his people over the ferry after communion: "I have thought if our ears were sufficiently acute we might catch, from the breezes on the river, the faint echo of the psalms they sung as they returned with devout and grateful hearts from the table of the Lord." One of the old diarists, whose entries make events life-like, wrote in his little book: "Returning from Andover, I crossed ye ferry; heard them sing well upon ye water."

The first meeting-house was built in 1670, and was probably a rude log house, like that at Pentucket—a wealthier plantation. It must have been of pretty good height, for in 1690 they built a gallery in it. We have seen that John Haseltine had given a lot for a meeting-house and burying-place. That was the old burying-ground on the road to the present Groveland. The meeting-house stood in the west corner of the lot and the dead were buried in the rear. The pound was located in another corner when the town voted, January 5, 1685, to build one the next spring, with gate, lock and key.

The first house in the town had been built near the same spot—the site of the first meeting-house at the old burial lot. August 17, 1681, when Mr. Symmes' wife died, the town chose a committee to state a burial-place "for his own proper use, according to Mr. Symmes' desire." That was on the east of the burial lot.

The first school-house was built upon the same site, which, as was customary, was the political centre of the town, dedicated to all public uses. This first school-house was twenty-two feet long, eighteen feet wide and seven feet posts.

Of course, the building of the meeting-house, and, indeed, all matters about the prudentials of the church, were town matters and ordered in the town-meetings, so long as there was only one parish. April 18, 1670, a committee, of which "Sargent" Gage was chairman, was chosen "for the ordering, setting up and furnishing of a meighting-house according to their best discretion for the good of the town."

January 9, 1671, Robert Haseltine, Ensign Chandler and Ghubal Walker were chosen to carry on the work and given power to call upon the inhabitants to come to aid "with hands or teams after legal warning," or in case of refusal, "then to pay double wages to be recovered by distress."

January 29, 1671, "at a general town-meeting," an agreement was made with Samuel Haseltine "to sweep the meeting-house one whole yeare," "and for his pains" he should have of every householder and voter "one peck of Indian corn, which is to be brought to his house."

As soon as Mr. Symmes was received as minister, and at the first town-meeting of which there is a record, not legal because the town was not yet incorporated but held with the kindly license of good Mother Rowley, the selectmen were directed to "finish the Minister's house according to Mr. Simmes' direction and to raise the pay by rate."

Persons were selected to procure his firewood, and to set fences about his house.

The first year he received forty pounds and the next fifty, which appears to have been fixed as his salary, until he was ordained, some years after. Half of this was to be paid in wheat, pork, butter and cheese, the other half in malt, Indian corn or rye. One writer inquires what the minister wanted with so much malt. But at that time, when everybody drank beer, malt was not only a staple article, but current in barter anywhere. The Harvard College accounts show that the students' bills were often paid in malt, in whole or in part.

The provision for payment in butter and cheese in part was rather an unusual one, and indicates a goodly number of milch cows in the town. In 1669 the town gave Mr. Symmes forty acres of common land at Indian Hill. And for many years it was customary to appoint a committee yearly to see that the minister's work was done, and to attend to such things as he might have need of. Indeed, as Dr. Perry observes, "provisions for the full and respectable enjoyment of religion, and for the comfort of those who ministered to them in holy things, formed a very prominent trait in the character of the first settlers in this town."

In 1699 the town voted that there should be an amendment of the disorder of persons sitting in the meeting-house. Five shillings was fixed as a penalty for every day of failure to sit where directed.

The next year rules were prescribed to the selectmen to guide them in seating persons. They were to have respect, first, to age; second, to voters; and third, to length of residence. The Massachusetts Senate still seats its members according to certain rules of a similar character.

In the second church, the people above sixty years were seated according to age, others according to the tax or rate paid. The men sat on one side, the women on the other. In this, as in other towns, special votes were often passed, giving certain seats to par-

ticular individuals, as, 1711–12, "voted that Goodman Spofford has liberty to sit in fourth sete before the pulpit, and his wife to sit in the third sete in the North East corner." Deafness or other infirmity often furnished the occasion for special seating privilege.

Lastly, children were seated by themselves, within reach of the tythingman's rod, to prevent disorder.

The hour for morning worship was as early as eight or nine o'clock. People who were tardy in arriving were to be fined.

In front of the pulpit sat the ruling elders, and before them the deacons, both facing the congregation.

The elders gave out the psalms, line by line, to be sung.

In the early days of the Massachusetts colony, sermons were not read from manuscript. That was too formal—too much like the rectors in England. The hour-glass stood before the minister, and when he had preached an hour he gave it another turn, if he were not done. Dr. Kingsbury says the sermons in Bradford Church were not very long, judging from the specimens preserved.

Simple reading of the Scriptures was not tolerated in the early day from the pulpit. It must be accompanied with comment or explanation otherwise it was too much like the Mass, singing or saying by rote.

The General Court had ordered, in 1677, that the selectmen in towns should appoint tythingmen to keep order on the Sabbath, and also to arrest such as violated it, as by unnecessary traveling. In the early part of this century a vigorous attempt was made in Essex and Middlesex Counties to revive the old law and restrain traveling.

The late venerable Samuel Hoar, of Concord, a Puritan in conduct, though liberal in doctrine, was much interested in this movement. His distinguished son, Senator Hoar, relates: "It is said that an old farmer in one of the northern towns of Middlesex County was looking, in melancholy mood, at the devastation in his woodland, made by the great September gale of 1815, when he suddenly exclaimed,—'I wish this tornado had come last Sunday!' 'Why so?' was asked. 'Because I should have liked to see as it came along up through Concord, whether Sam Hoar would have tried to stop it.'"

Notwithstanding what Dr. Kingsbury says of the brevity of Bradford sermons, the following vote is significant:

"Jan. 30, 1723. The Church voted, that they, having considered that the sleeping at meeting, and especially the laying down ye head to sleep, is a very great indecency and irreverent position in ye worship of God—for ye preventing of it for ye future, have thought it expedient to pass a vote, and accordingly agree that it shall henceforth be accounted an offence for any of ye Brethren of this church, or any of ye communicants, to put themselves into such an irreverent position as to lay their head on their hands, or seat, and that if any shall do so, they shall be observed and reproved, and that if they reform not, that they shall be publickly called forth before ye church stayed for that end, and admonished for such their offensive carriage."

In 1818 a vote passed unanimously in the East Parish, recommending to all to go into the meeting-house during the tolling of the bell on days of public worship, and to make as little noise as practicable in moving the falling seats. The last occasion was a great opportunity for mischievous boys.

January 7, 1672, "it was voted and granted that ye Towne name shall be Bradford." It was formerly supposed that the name was adopted in compliment to Governor Bradford, the historian of Plymouth. But among the original proprietors of Bradford were five families named Chaplin, Palmer, Smith, Dickenson and Jewett, to whom house-lots had before been laid out on Bradford Street, in the village of old Rowley. Tradition said these families came to America from Bradford, in the West Riding of Yorkshire, England. The names of Maximilian Jewett and Joseph Jewett have been found in the register of Bradford Church. They, doubtless, then came from Bradford, Yorkshire. Joseph Jewett owned, at one time, a large tract of land in our Bradford, and Shubael Walker and Robert Haseltine, early settlers, were his sons-in-law. Shubael Walker was the first town clerk, and it seems a very reasonable conjecture that, aided by his position, he influenced the townspeople to change the name from Merrimack.

Bradford was incorporated in 1675.

The religious or church history of Bradford is, in at least one respect, unique—in the long and remarkable course of preparation which was deemed necessary before the formal organization of the Church. The minister or teacher, Mr. Symmes, was of mature years, as we have observed, when he came to Bradford, and had been in charge of another church for a number of years. There were a sufficient number of professed Christians in the town, members of the Rowley, Haverhill and other churches. They prized the sacraments, which Mr. Symmes could not administer till he was ordained. In the meantime, the people, as has been seen, were able to support their minister and did support him. They had built a sufficient meeting-house, which, in fact, satisfied them for many years. Why, then, was there such an unaccountable delay—from 1668, at least, till 1682? Mr. Ward, of Haverhill, indeed, was absent from the council called to advise as to the organization of a church. Dr. Kingsbury suggests that his "absence may possibly be the key to the understanding of the reason why there was so much question about the propriety of forming the church. A large majority of these Bradford people are members of his church. It is possible that he wished to have nothing to say about the matter." But that seems hardly a sufficient or suitable reason for his absence or apparent indifference. The Haverhill Church had indeed extended a grateful hospitality to these stray sheep of other folds; but that would seem to be no reason why they should not be gathered together under the care of their own peculiar and suitable shepherd. New

churches were constantly forming in those days of rapid growth. In Boston and elsewhere, there were already many such examples. The time was not quite yet, but in its fulness, there would be many dowered daughters of the fruitful Haverhill church itself. The venerable Ward, of all men, would seem to have been peculiarly *the* man to give his blessing and good speed to these brethren and sisters, so long under his care, and now apparently especially called to set up a tabernacle for themselves, and be ready for greater activity and usefulness. But steps were taken with extraordinary gravity and self-searching:

"Jan. ye 11, 1781, the town chose a committee to advise and consult and act what in their best judgment they shall think mete for ye good of ye town as to ye settling ye Rev. Zecheriah Symmes in office." Mr. Symmes himself was chairman of this committee. And on the same day the committee was given full power to act in the premises.

On the same day, also, in pursuance, no doubt of his own request, it was voted that Mr. Symmes "have liberty, at his discretion, to call out any two men of the inhabitants of ye town to be with him in catechising ye youth, and to go with him to see who of ye heads of families or others will join to ye church." At a private fast held at the house of Brother John Tenney, October 12, 1682 (many months after the preliminary steps above detailed), "an instrument of pacification and mutual obligation to church union and order for ye future" was drawn up and signed by the professing Christians present, who call it a "preparatory help toward the gathering of a church in Bradford."

It is an extraordinary instrument, well worthy to be reproduced whenever any attempt is made to tell the story of Bradford. It will be observed that it clearly alludes to past discords and disturbances. But Dr. Kingsbury says: "It is impossible to know what the differences were which are so freely confessed." The instrument was not signed by the women, because that was not yet customary. Their not signing certainly was not extraordinary in this case, because long afterwards, when the second parish church was formed (Groveland) the women did not take part, but were received into the church after its organization.

"We whos names are subscribed, being awfully sensible that we live in an age wherein God hath, in part, executed that dreadful threatening to take place from the earth, and wherin Satan, that great makebate and author of confusion doth, by God's permission, exceedingly rage, even in the visible Church of God, and wherein that wicked one is sowing ye tares of discord, almost in every Christian society (ye sad effects of which, we that are ye inhabitants of Bradford have for some years past experimentally felt and have yet ye bitter remembrance of) we being now (through ye rich and undeserved mercy of God in Christ Jesus) under hopeful probability of settling a Church of Christ in Bradford, do take this occasion, as to express our hearty and unfeigned sorrow and humiliation for what unchristian differences have broken out among us to the dishonor of God's name, the grief of his Spirit, and to the obstructing of the work and kingdom of Jesus Christ, and to the hindering of our peace and edification—so also in the name of God, and by his gracious help, seriously and solemnly to engage and promise, for the future, to forgive and forget to the utmost of our endeavors, all former unchristian animosities, distances, alienations, differences and contests, private or more public, personal or social, that have arisen ever among or between us and others; to pass a general act of amnesty and oblivion on them all, and not to speak of them to the defamation of each other, at home in Bradford town, much less abroad in any other place; nor to repeat or revive them, unless called by scriptural rule, or lawful authority, to mention them for the conviction or spiritual advantage of each other. Besides we promise through the grace of God, that, in case God, in his most wise and holy providence, should permit any offences, for the future to break forth among us (which we desire God of his infinite mercy would prevent as far as may be for his own glory and our own good) that we will then conscientiously endeavor to attend to scriptural rules for the healing and removing of them, and those rules in particular, Lev. 19: 17, Matt. 18: 15; and to bring no matter of grievance against each other to our minister or to the Church, but in a scriptural and orderly way and manner. That we may be helped inviolably to observe this our agreement, we desire the assistance of each other's mutual both christian and church watch, that we may be monitors or remembrancers to each other of this branch of our covenant, as also the instant and constant prayers of each other, that God would enable us carefully to observe this instrument of our pacification and our conditional obligation to church union and order, that God's name may be honored by us and we may experience God's commanding his blessing upon us, even life forever more."

It seems to have been Mr. Symmes' custom to read this paper at intervals and ask renewed assent to it. This was done at a private fast, April 4, 1683. "At a private fast at my house," February 2, 1686; "at a private church fast at my house, December 22, 1698, (forefather's day), I read the above said instrument, there being but two of the males in full communion absent."

October 31, 1682, occurred the meeting of the council, called to advise whether a church should be formed. The council was composed of John Higginson of Salem, John Richardson of Newbury, William Hubbard, the historian, of Ipswich, John Hale, of Beverly, John Brock, of Reading, Mr. Symmes' brother-in-law, Edward Payson, the junior minister of the church at Mother Rowley, and Samuel Phillips, its senior pastor, progenitor of so much beneficence, public spirit and eloquence, of whose praises the world has been full.

In the guarded manner which was customary, clouding itself in scriptural language and allusion, the council returned an affirmative answer to the question, "whether minister and people should promote without delay, a coalition of themselves into a church society." The same council met, December 27th following, to complete the organization and ordain the pastor. The vote of the town by which it agreed to provide for Mr. Symmes' maintenance is very elaborate. The following is a part of it:

"We ye inhabitants of Bradford met together at a legal Town meeting, 13th of March, 1682 or 3, in thankfullness to God for his great mercy in setting up his sanctuary among us; do hereby engage our selves jointly and singly, and do engage our children after us as far as we may by our parental authority to endeavor to our, and their utmost power, to uphold ye faithful ministry of ye Gospel of Jesus Christ in the town of Bradford so long as we and they shall live, and for ye encouragement of the same to contribute a liberal and honorable maintenance toward it as the rule of ye Gospel doth require, to ye utmost of our and their ability which God shall be pleased to bless us and them with from time to time, and for ye encouragement of our present Minister we doe covenant and promise to give and allow to him so long as he shall continue with us as our Minister ye full sum of sixty pounds per annum, if God be pleased to preserve us in our present capacity, and to be paid in our present state annually as followeth.

"Ye first half in wheat and pork, butter and cheese, allowing at least to ye half, one pound of butter for every milch cow, and one cheese for a family, ye other half to be in malt, peas, Indian or rye, except what be willingly accepts in other pay.

"The first payment to be made ye 2nd Thursday in October, ye other payment to be made ye 3rd Thursday in March, and if any unforeseen providence shall hinder: then to take ye next convenient day ye week following.

"We further grant liberty to him to improve for his best advantage what land we shall accomplish, or obtain for ye Ministry."

It was agreed also that he should have commonage for ten head of cattle, sufficient fire-wood, he paying sixpence a cord for hauling, carting and cording it. It was, moreover, stipulated to furnish him with ten sufficient loads of good hay annually, fencing and yard stuff, "at a reasonable lay," and convenient highways to the several parcels of land they had given him, and to the five acres of meadow, and the forty acres of land "we bought of Benjamin Kimball," also two men from year to year to "the comfortable carrying on his affairs," and that all these things be duly and truly done without trouble to "our present minister." It was afterwards voted that no oil-wood, or poplar, or bass-wood, be brought to Mr. Symmes. Truly this was not only a liberal, but a generous and considerate provision. And there is ample reason to believe that the same tender and watchful care of their pastors has been very constantly extended by this church down to the present day. The history of the church is largely the history of the town.

Although the population is so largely increased, and although very many attend church and meeting in the larger town across the river, it is yet an important and significant fact that there is no other church organization and no other meeting-house in the town of Bradford, than that of the First Congregational Church. When Mr. Symmes grew old, about 1705, it was voted to engage some person to assist him. Mr. Hale was first invited and afterwards, Mr. Joseph Stevens, both of whom declined. Whilst such negotiations were in progress, Mr. Symmes died, and the usual pompous Latin inscription was cut upon his tombstone.

It so happened that just at this time, Zechariah Symmes' son, the Rev. Thomas Symmes, who had been preaching in the neighboring town of Boxford for some years, was leaving that people. He had been born in Bradford, in 1678, and graduated at Harvard in 1698. He had studied at Cambridge five years after graduating and had preached at Boxford five or six years, so that the Bradford folks must have been very familiar with him. He was now about thirty years old, nearly the same age as his laborious father when he came to Bradford. Perhaps, as often happens, he had not been quite appreciated in his birth-place. June 14, 1708, the town voted to hear him preach next, then a committee was chosen to go and invite him to "come and preach for some time," then "that he should be again invited," and at last, November 24, 1708, "Then voted and passed on the affirmative, that Mr. Thomas Symmes should be ordained with all possible spede."

This is not surprising, for Mr. Symmes, the second of Bradford, was a very interesting man. Increase Mather praised him, who had known him from his youth. He was attractive personally, from good looks, high spirit, accomplishments, varied learning, impetuosity. He had a fine voice, and was a good singer. He was hot-tempered and imperious, but was magnanimous and ready to confess a wrong. One may suspect he lived a good deal in extremes of high and low. When he preached the artillery election sermon, in 1720, which was printed, Rev. Dr. Colman, of Boston, wrote a preface to it, wherein he said: "May it prove as profitable in the reading as it was in the hearing; the preacher was unto us a very lovely song of one that has a pleasant voice and can play well on an instrument." The church records bear witness to his fervor. When there was any notable accessions to membership, he broke forth in praise and ascription to God in Latin phrase, which, perhaps, some of his people would have thought savored of the Romish priesthood and the mass: "*Soli Deo Triuni, sit omnis Gloria! Laus Deo! Gloria Deo in Excelsis! Gloria Christo!*" With so much that was good, noble and pleasing, he was always in hot water, says his biographer; "he wanted prudence in the economy of his family and a kind, winning manner of address with his parishioners. With a better salary than his neighbors, he lived and died poor, and he likewise kindled a party spirit in both parishes where he was settled. One matter in dispute was concerning church music." In the last particular, Mr. Symmes was correct in point of taste and doubtless accomplished good, but was too hot and rash in his manner of pushing the controversy.

The church records bear traces of his masterfulness, as when it was decided to choose ruling elders, by which Mr. Symmes probably meant elders that he could rule,—"At length I left it to them to choose one for ye upper end of ye Town (having first declared that if they chose ye two aged Deacons, I should not comply with it, if they would have no more). I then nominated for the East End, etc."

But when Mr. Symmes died, that good man, so opposite in character, Rev. John Brown, of Haverhill, who seems to have had a great admiration of him, preached his funeral sermon and wrote a very interesting account of him. He was buried in the old cemetery, doubtless in the lot chosen by his father, October 10, 1725. In the May before (8th) had befallen at Pigwacket the famous fight between Captain Lovewell's men and Paugus' party, in which four Haverhill men were engaged. Mr. Symmes had "improved" the occasion and preached a sermon which was published, part of the title of which was "Historical Memorial on the Fight at Pigwacket." A few years ago a sudden controversy springing up, upon an antiquarian point, caused the sermon to be hunted up, and revived the memory of the Bradford minister.

To this brilliant man succeeded Rev. Joseph Parsons, born at Brookfield in 1701, who graduated at Harvard in 1720; was ordained at Bradford in 1726, and died here in 1765. There was an excellent council when he was settled, and a "Great Ordination." Mr. Parsons, too, had his days of glory, when he preached before the artillery company and the General Court.

He did not favor Whitefield's preaching, and was one of the ten Merrimac Valley clergymen who protested to the Boston ministers against his being admitted to the pulpit.

About the time of Parsons' settlement had come also the period when the people in the eastern part of the town, having grown populous, were no longer willing to go up to the west end to meeting. There does not seem to have been a great deal of friction, when it was recognized that the separation was inevitable. The East Precinct was incorporated June 17, 1726, and the church was organized June 7, 1727. One hundred and one members were dismissed to form it. With them went both deacons, and thirty-three members by the name of Hardy. Rev. William Balch was the first minister of the Second Church. He graduated at Harvard in 1724, was ordained in 1728 and died in 1792, aged eighty-eight years. He was able, simple, benevolent and beloved; but there was once (about 1744) a storm in his parish, when nine members of the church declared themselves dissatisfied with his preaching on doctrinal points, and appealed to a neighboring church when their own sustained the pastor. A council was called, which sustained Mr. Balch and the church. Then there was a pulpit warfare between Mr. Balch and the ministers of Ipswich and Beverly, in which Mr. Balch was thought to have sustained himself ably. The result of the council was signed by the moderator, Rev. John Barnard, of Andover. But Mr. Balch was accused of Arminianism, and had not Mr. Barnard also the same tendency? His sons, Edward Barnard (of Haverhill) and Thomas Barnard (of Newbury and Salem), as well as his son-in-law, Dr. Tucker (of Newbury), and Mr. Balch himself, were all Arminian. Of the First Church in Bradford, however, Dr. Kingsbury says: "It has been supposed that the churches in this valley suffered from false doctrine during the time of the pastorate of Parsons and Williams. It was not true of this church. The pastors were faithful in preaching the truth." Undoubtedly, they were Calvinistic.

When Mr. Balch was about seventy-five years old, Ebenezer Dutch, of Ipswich, graduated at Dartmouth in 1776, was ordained as his colleague in 1779. He was not a man of so much learning and culture as the earlier Bradford ministers, but he was very ready and taking of speech, and it has even been said of him that he had "impassioned eloquence."

He had the valuable but dangerous gift of extemporaneous speech. He was eccentric and imprudent in his conduct, and, at one time in his career, too much immersed in worldly matters. Tradition says he was fond of swapping horses; but Dr. Perry records that he repented and made a blessed ending: "He that repenteth and forsaketh his sin, shall find mercy." Mr. Dutch died in 1813, and then Dr. Perry himself was ordained September 28, 1814. Dr. Perry was not only a good minister, but a very useful citizen. His labors in behalf of agriculture, for instance, were marked, and it is believed he received a prize for an essay on tree culture. He was an early friend of advanced education, and gave much attention to the schools of the town.

Rev. David A. Wasson, a graduate of the Theological Seminary at Bangor, was ordained as colleague with Dr. Perry in 1851. Mr. Wasson was a man of keen and incisive mind and an original thinker. He had also a native and genuine independence; but he was an extreme radical, and had strayed far away from Calvinism. The result might easily have been foreseen. He was not in his proper place, unless he could carry all the people of his parish with him. That was impossible. There was a hot controversy. Mr. Wasson was unmasked, as it was probably called. He resigned, taking a portion of the people with him. The seceders had an independent society or free church, but that was not very successful, and Mr. Wasson soon retired from it. He has recently deceased. Not prosperous in life, he probably had more original power of mind than any other of the ministers of Bradford.

The East Parish built its first meeting-house in 1726, and its second in 1790.

There has been a marked difference in the characteristics of the two parishes of Bradford. The elder has been invariably prudent, conservative, consistent. The younger parish, disturbed by two great dissensions, in the time of Balch and the latter days of Perry, has not been so peaceful. There has been schism, separation. There has been a greater tendency to radicalism. But there has been always a good degree of intelligence. The two parishes were separated after two hundred years of municipal life. Groveland was incorporated March 8, 1850. The relations between the people of the two towns are believed to be entirely friendly. There are, of course, many ties of consanguinity and old friendship to unite them. But yet the separation was wise, and probably it is not regretted by any considerable number of persons in either place.

CHAPTER CLXVII.

BRADFORD—(*Continued*).

Continued Story of Bradford Church.

THE fourth pastor of the First Parish was Rev. Samuel Williams, born at Waltham in 1743, graduated

at Harvard 1761, a distinguished mathematical scholar, and as such, sent with Professor Winthrop to Newfoundland to observe the transit of Venus. They sailed in the "Province Sloop," commanded by Captain Thomas Sanders. Samuel Williams was son of Wareham Williams, the minister of Waltham, who was carried off by the savages a captive, with his father, Rev. John Williams, of Deerfield, the little boy, Wareham, scrambling through three hundred miles of Indian trail. Young Williams was ordained at Bradford, November 20, 1765. He was, therefore, only twenty-two years of age, and, perhaps, was looked upon with scorn as a "boy" by some of the old ministers, who had been ordained late in life. Mr. Barnard, of Haverhill, who, though somewhat heterodox, was a man of great dignity of bearing, at the close of his address in giving the right hand of fellowship, seriously charged the congregation not to encourage tipsiness in the evening. "The wisest and best among us bitterly complain that our days of ordination are seasons of growing licentiousness."

Notwithstanding his youthfulness, Mr. Williams was, says Dr. Kingsbury, "eminently useful and acceptable as a minister." His reputation as a scholar brought him pupils who reflected credit upon him—among them, Dr. Barnard and Dr. Prince, the eminent minister of Salem. His most famous pupil, however, was Benjamin Thompson, better known by his title of Rumford, Count of the Holy Roman Empire, conferred on him by his patron, the King of Bavaria. Through him, his teacher, Mr. Williams, probably received German scientific honors.

The Revolutionary troubles were coming on and Mr. Williams, taking the popular side, was yet prudent and far-seeing. He appreciated the coming dangers. June 14, 1786, he was dismissed to become Professor of Mathematics and Natural Philosophy at Harvard. He received many literary and scientific honors, and, in his retirement, published a valuable history of Vermont.

For about forty years in the middle of the eighteenth century there were negro slaves on the roll of the Bradford Church—Cæsars, Sciscos, Pegs and Kates. One is "Argalus, servant of Joseph and Francis Parsons," the minister.

January 14, 1780, the church passed this vote to release Mr. Williams:

"Whereas the Pastor of this church, is invited and desired to accept of a Professorship in Harvard College which is of great importance to the public, therefore voted at his desire, to dismiss him from his Pastoral relation to this church."

June 5, 1781, Rev. Jonathan Allen was ordained his successor. He was of the class of 1774, at Harvard, and was thirty-two years old when ordained—thus redressing the balance which had been disturbed by his predecessor's youthfulness. He was a man of great personal dignity, with high ideas of the importance of the sacred office. He died in Bradford in 1827. Mr. Allen was known as the "parson," and was the connecting link between the old *regime* and the new. He was fond of dress and was one of the last of the "cocked-hats," Parson Alden, of Yarmouth, at ninety-two, being the very last. Parson Allen was not so stern as he looked; he was jocose and loved a frolic. He loved a glass of punch or toddy, too. Dr. Kingsbury tells an amusing story of his modified advocacy of temperance. But that movement, partial as it was and logically absurd, perhaps accomplished great good in New England. Men were not yet quite ready for the doctrine of total abstinence.

It is said that Parson Allen used to love to call his deacon and go to John Haseltine's dance hall (father of Ann Haseltine Judson, the missionary), to see the young people dance and disport themselves. But, in 1806, there was a great revival, and from that time Parson Allen was a different man. The probability is, that he was always a conscientious man, with a high sense of clerical responsibilities, but with a great love of sociability and reasonable fun. He was evidently much liked and respected.

It illustrates one phase of his character, that when, at the first exhibition of Atkinson Academy, 1788–89, the pupils gave something of a dramatic exhibition, he criticised it as "profane and obscene." He had aspirations which he did not carry out. February 17, 1790, he dined with Parson Peabody, of Atkinson, whose first wife was a sister of Deacon John Haseltine, of Bradford. Parson Peabody wrote in his diary: "I sang with Brother Allen. He borrowed my Edwards upon ye hill, and I believe thinks of writing against Spring."

In the early days of Mr. Allen's pastorate the ministers were generally convivial and had a pretty good time. September 23, 1789, there was a "General Training at Bradford. I went into ye field where they were trooping and training. They made a very pretty appearance, but exercised but very little. There was a vast number of people and among them a number of ministers."

Parson Allen had been a theological pupil of Rev. Mr. Judson, of Taunton, uncle of Rev. Adoniram Judson, the missionary to India, who married Mr. Allen's formerly gay young parishioner, Nancy Haseltine. When, in 1819, the movement began in Bradford Church, at the General Association of Massachusetts, which led to the formation of the American Board, and the marriage of Nancy Haseltine and Harriet Atwood, of Haverhill, to Judson and Samuel Newell, Parson Allen was doubtless deeply interested. February 5, 1812, he preached a sermon at Haverhill on the occasion of the embarkation of these two young women as missionaries. The great congregation sang his hymn beginning, "Go, ye Heralds of Salvation." Parson Allen's finest hymn was composed, Dr. Kingsbury says, in the revival of 1806,

"Sinners, will you scorn the message,
Sent in mercy from above?"

sung for the first time in Bradford Church, one of the

most pathetic and winning of all the hymns. Dr. Kingsbury alludes to the tradition that Whitefield could make his hearers weep by pronouncing the word, "Mesopotamia." It would be worth something at the end of one of the great revivalist's meetings to hear recited in that matchless voice.—

"Every sentence—oh, how tender!
Every line is full of love."

After Mr. Allen came Rev. Ira Ingraham, a man of boldness and clear convictions, who retired speedily from the pastorate because of the opposition to his strong advocacy of total abstinence.

Rev. Nathan Munroe is well remembered as a man of grave appearance yet genial address, of large information, much respected by his people and the community at large.

The Bradford Church is still a Puritan Church, holding fast the old doctrines, if it adopts the modern ways. It embalms many of the precious historical memories of the town.

Mention has been made of the first meeting-house, built in the year 1671. The second was built about 1706. Both of these stood in the old burying-ground, the first on the west side, the other east of it. Dr. Spofford, of Groveland, who lived to be past ninety-two, remembered the foundation of the second.

The third meeting-house, built about 1750 or 1751, stood on the common facing the south in front of the present edifice.

The fourth was dedicated October 8, 1834, on the site of the present. The fifth, now occupied, was built in 1848, and dedicated January 10, 1849. There have been two chapels, the first built about 1838, located nearly on a line with the front of the present church and about twenty-five feet west. The second and present chapel was dedicated November 23, 1879.

The Bradford Church records contain much that is interesting, and some things that are quaint. Here are two examples from the time of the first Mr. Symmes. The first is of the date of 1699.

"1st, Whether any church member that hath or shall be censured by this church and absolved on confession, yet shall through Satan's energy refuse to own their confession, ought not, ipso facto, be suspended by ye officer from ye Lord's table, and continuing absent after due means patiently used for their conviction and recovery, to be layed under the highest censure."

The thought of the unhappy professor, who, having made confession and been absolved, is then obliged to deny his confession of sin, "through Satan's energy," is worthy of analysis by the gloomy intellect of Hawthorne. The following is almost too simple for a smile:

"I gave notice that every one of ye communicants should come prepared with their money to contribute for ye elements ye next sacrament day, viz., 11 of 12, 1700.

"It was moved that every Br. that fetcht wine, should fetch ye bottle where it was deposited, and return it to ye same place, *i. e.*, seasonably. Br. Abraham said the best way to sweeten ye bottle was to fill it with salt water an hour or two, then empty it, and put up the wine."

Following are the names of the eleven pastors, and the two "ruling elders" of Thomas Symmes:

Pastors.

Rev. Zechariah Symmes, ordained December, 1682; died March 22, 1707.

Rev. Thomas Symmes, installed December, 1708; died October 6, 1725.

Rev. Joseph Parsons, ordained June 8, 1726; died May 4, 1765.

Rev. Samuel Williams, ordained November 20, 1765; dismissed June 14, 1780.

Rev. Jonathan Allen, ordained June 5, 1781; died March 6 1827.

Rev. Ira Ingraham, installed December 1, 1824; dismissed April 5, 1830.

Rev. Loammi Ives Hoadly, installed October 13, 1830; dismissed January 30, 1833.

Rev. Moses C. Searle, installed January 30, 1833; dismissed March, 1834

Rev. Nathan Munroe, ordained February 10, 1836; dismissed January 25, 1854

Rev. James T McCollom, installed January, 1854, dismissed September 20, 1865.

Rev John D. Kingsbury, installed January 11, 1866.

Elders.

Sergeant John Boynton and Deacon Samuel Tenny, chosen March 28, 1718.

Deacons.

David Hasseltine and Richard Hall, not properly chosen deacons, but nominated to provide elements for the Lord's Supper, November 2, 1802.

John Tenny, Joseph Bailey and Richard Hall, probably the first deacons, and chosen December 13, 1702.

Lieutenant Samuel Tenny and Sergeant Richard Bailey, probably a committee only, but possibly deacons, February 2, 1713.

Stephen Woodman and Moses Day, chosen January 24, 1728.

Joseph Hall, chosen May 30, 1730

Thomas Carleton, chosen October 31, 1742.

David Walker, chosen November 28, 1745.

Moses Day, chosen May 1, 1751.

Stephen Kimball, chosen January 18, 1754

Obadiah Kimball, chosen March 16, 1762.

Thomas Kimball, chosen April 21, 1767.

Thomas Webster, chosen ——, 1782.

Richard Walker, chosen April —, 1797.

John Griffin, chosen February —, 1804.

John Hasseltine, chosen June 18, 1807.

Jesse Kimball, chosen April 8, 1826.

William Day, Jr., chosen April 25, 1824.

David C. Kimball, chosen July 2, 1849.

Nathaniel Hatch and S. L. B. Spear, chosen August 31, 1860.

William K. Farrar, S. W. Carleton and A. L. Kimball, chosen October 26, 1869.

The first Sunday-school in Bradford was organized on the second Sabbath in May, 1814, at the "Old Red School-House," then the only school-house in the central part of Bradford. About thirty children were gathered at this first Sunday-school at the close of the afternoon service. The person foremost in the organization was Miss Mary Haseltine, eldest sister of Miss Abigail C. Haseltine, afterwards principal of Bradford Academy. Among her assistants were Miss Charlotte Gage and Miss Lydia Kimball.

Rev. Ira Ingraham, installed in 1824, took a great interest in the Sunday-school. After April, 1830, Deacon William Day, Mr. Isaac Morse and Mr. Benjamin Greenleaf (probably) were superintendents. The number of scholars was then probably something more than one hundred.

The first Sunday-school concert recollected by Mr. Harrison E. Chadwick, was in the old meeting-house on the common. From 1825 to 1829, Bradford was

the only place in all New England reporting a Sunday-school, except some of the colleges. These reports were made to the American Sunday-School Union at Philadelphia. From 1833 to 1846 reports were made to the Massachusetts Sabbath-School Society; since 1850, to the General Conference.

In 1887 the Sabbath-school connected with Bradford Church contained about three hundred and fifty members. The amount of money contributed yearly for its own and benevolent purposes, was about $300.

The Ward Hill school, in the west end of the town, was regularly organized in September, 1861. At present, it numbers about one hundred members, and contributes yearly about $75 for its own expenses and benevolent objects. The original, with the Haseltine library, numbers about five hundred volumes.

The new parsonage of the Bradford Church was built in the summer of 1886, at a total cost, including the land, of $6547.58.

The total membership of the church, January 1, 1887, was four hundred and seventeen. In 1886 it contributed for missionary objects, $267.93.

The following societies were connected with the church for benevolent work: Woman's Auxiliary of Foreign Missions, of the American Home Missionary Society, and Home Missionary Society; Parish Circle for local work; Young Ladies' Relief Society; Bee Hive (children's) Society.

The total value given by the above societies in 1886, in money, clothing and supplies, was $824.65.

CHAPTER CLXVIII.

BRADFORD—(*Continued*).

Indians and the Indian Deed—Roads and Schools.

Besides the killing of Thomas Kimball, in 1676, very little injury was ever done by Indians in the town of Bradford. When the Indian and French attack was made on Haverhill, in 1708, Nehemiah Carleton was shot from across the river. There was also a tradition that a workman employed in felling timber on the Haverhill side for the house then building, and owned in 1820 by Reuben Carlton, was also shot. But Bradford was protected from Indian attacks by Haverhill on the north and by the river. Still, there was always alarm and anxiety during the time of the Indian attacks, and Bradford soldiers had to march elsewhere. "Centinels" were stationed in the town itself.

There were three garrison-houses built at an early period, one of brick at the west end of the town, near the place where Rev. John Day's house stood in 1820. There was one where the parsonage was afterwards built, opposite the burial-ground. The third garrison was where Widow Rebecca Foster's house was in 1820, and this was palisaded, when they apprehended danger. The inhabitants often passed the night in these houses. There was also a block-house on the neck, near the falls, where the inhabitants watched by turns, when there were alarms. The Indians sometimes crossed the river near that point, when on their forays.

"Once," said Dr. Perry, "there must have been a considerable settlement of Indians in this town, as is evident from the number of bones found in and about the hill near Paul Parker's. The last of those who resided here was Papahana, who lived to a great age, in a hut near the mouth of Johnson's Creek; the people of the last generation knew him well. The name of the tribe to whom this settlement belonged is supposed to be the Pawtucket." It is supposed that in 1638, Masconomet or Masconomo, was fully satisfied for quit-claiming all his interest in Ipswich and Rowley. But at the beginning of the eighteenth century, Samuel English and Joseph English, his grandchildren, and John Umpee, his nephew, claiming to be his heirs, made a fresh demand, and an elaborate deed of release to the lands of Bradford was executed by them in 1701 to John Tenny, Philip Atwood and John Bointon, for themselves and the other freeholders and proprietors of Bradford. The consideration was £6 12*s*. The deed was attested by Nathaniel Saltonstall and Dudley Bradstreet, the magistrates of Haverhill and Andover, respectively, and was duly recorded.

The first committee upon roads in Bradford were Sergeant John Gage, Joseph Pike and John Griffin; but no labor was expended or money raised for roads till long after this date. Although the Bradford people had so many ties connecting them with the mother town, the road from Haverhill to Rowley was not laid out till 1686. It was eight rods wide. But before there had been paths. At that early day every man wanted his own road, "to mill, to market and to meeting."

Every town had its mark assigned to it in the early day when cattle roamed at will, in the woods and over the commons. That of Bradford was a bow and arrow, the arrow penetrating the heart.

The first vote of the town upon schools, that is recorded was in 1701, when the selectmen were ordered to provide a school, according to their discretion, and to assess the town for the expense of the same. The next year it was voted that those who sent children to school should pay two pence a week for those who learned to read, and four pence for those who learned to write, the additional expense to be paid by the town. The person's name who then kept was Ichabod. Did Washington Irving borrow his Ichabod Crane from the Bradford town records? The next school-master was Master White, who began in 1723, and received £24 10*s*. per year. His successor

was one Hobey, who was followed by a Mr. Merrel. All these persons kept through the year, most of them for several years each. Dr. Perry thinks they were well qualified for school-keeping. But the master, without doubt, passed from one neighborhood to another.

The following is a copy of one of the town votes on the subject of education: "March 24, 1710. The town ded then Impoure the Selectmen to imply wemen to teach letel children to read."

The first school-house was built on the meeting-house lot, twenty-two feet long, eighteen feet wide, seven feet posts, to cost twenty-five pounds. The building committee were Jonathan Woodman, Sergeant Robert Haseltine and Nathaniel Walker. All sorts of structures were put up on the meeting-house lot. There was at least one "nooning-house" built, where the people could warm themselves in the noon intermission and eat the food they had brought with them.

In 1820 there were seven school-houses in six districts, in which were kept twenty-four months of school annually by men; in summer, good provision was made for the instruction of small children. May 20, 1754, the town voted "to ye school-master, for four months sarvice, £8 17*s.* 9*d.*" "To Samuel Webster, for boarding said school-master one-third part of year, £4 10*s.* 8*d.*" That was probably the allowance of men's instruction for one portion of the town.

September 19, 1754, "voted to pay Master Eames for keeping school one-third part of last year, £8 17*s.* 8*d.*"

"Voted that forty pounds be raised for the school-master and his board."

"March 15, 1757, voted that the East Parish have five months' schooling in twelve for ye time being."

"March 16, 1761, voted to erect a school-house in ye centre of the town, as shall be found in ye following manner, viz.; from Newbury line to Andover line, and from Abraham Gage's to Samuel Hale's, and for money as shall be cast on the last town rate, and the vote passed in the affirmative."

"Voted that £13 6*s.* 8*d.* be raised to defray the charge of said building, £13 6*s.* 8*d.*" "Voted that Lieutenant Thomas Kimball, Lieutenant Nathaniel Parker and William Easman be a committee to find and prefix a centre according to the manner above prescribed."

The committee were afterwards voted "three shillings a peic for that sarvice."

The cost of erection was more than was expected, for the committee were voted £17 18*s.* 3¾*d.*

The above are examples of the ancient votes about schools, and are all that the record contains for the period covered by them.

June 7, 1805, the town accepted a report made by Moses Parker and others, a committee appointed for that purpose, for the better regulation of the town schools.

Dr. Perry's practical mind led him to suggest what, after long delay, was adopted everywhere: first, that school committees should be empowered to prescribe in all cases the books which should be used; secondly, that towns should furnish the necessary stationery to be used in schools.

At the beginning of the present century, when academies were springing up over New England, intelligent people began to be very uneasy in towns not so favored.

Thus in Bradford the following record explains itself: "At a meeting of a number of the inhabitants of the First Parish in Bradford, March 7, 1803, it was mutually agreed upon that a building should be erected for an academy, and the following persons became subscribers to defray the charges of building said house." The signers were a large majority of the heads of families in the parish. In three months the building was completed and the school was opened. The first principal was Samuel Walker, a native of Haverhill, and a graduate of Dartmouth College in 1802. Miss Hannah E. Swan was preceptress. The school was incorporated in 1804, with a charter conferring ample powers. After Mr. Walker, the preceptors were as follows: Samuel Greeley, 1803–4; Rev. Dr. James Flint, 1805; Rev. Dr. Abraham Burnham, who was much engaged in the great revival of 1806; Isaac Morrill, 1807; Samuel Peabody, 1808; Rev. Daniel Hardy, 1808–10; Rev. Luther Bailey, 1811; Hon. Samuel Adams, 1811; Richard Kimball, 1811–12; Rev. E. P. Sperry, 1812; Rev. Nathaniel Dike, 1812–14; Daniel Noyes, 1814; Benjamin Greenleaf, 1814–36, who was the last preceptor. After that time the school was established for the education of young ladies only, having previously been a mixed school.

There were thus, before Mr. Greenleaf gave the school some appearance of permanency, fourteen preceptors in a dozen years. No one of them, save Mr. Greenleaf, expected to make school-keeping a profession. There was therefore a lack of system and continuity in the service. Benjamin Greenleaf, a native of Haverhill, had graduated at Dartmouth College in 1813, and was engaged the same year in keeping school in his native town. He was certainly a very remarkable man, and made a deep impression upon all with whom he came in contact. Dr. Kingsbury says of him, justly and comprehensively: "A man of versatile talent, an enthusiast in teaching, a mathematician and author of world-wide fame, a Christian of simple and unquestioning faith and rigid virtue, a man of kindly susceptibilities, generous, unsuspecting, unalterable in friendship, a citizen pure, unselfish, upright, and a teacher devoted, upright and unwearied in labor." After retiring from the academy, Mr. Greenleaf was principal of the Bradford Teachers' Seminary till 1848.

Mr. Greenleaf was born September 25, 1786, and was descended from the Newbury family of that name.

His early opportunities for study were very meagre, and he once said: "If I ever offered up an earnest prayer, it was for rainy days that I might betake myself to books."

Chief Justice Perley, of New Hampshire, said of his old teacher: "He was an uncommon genius, in the sense of having peculiarities entirely his own, in the structure of his mind, the contour of his head and face, the expression of his countenance, his utterance, his manners, his motions, all his ways."

Mr. Greenleaf represented the town of Bradford in the Legislature in 1837, 1838 and 1839, where he earnestly supported all measures for the advancement of education, introducing orders for a geological survey and a natural history survey of the State. He was the author of many and valuable text-books.

Doubtless Bradford Academy was much indebted to him for the reputation it acquired during his term of service. Mr. Greenleaf died October 29, 1864, aged seventy-eight years.

When Mr. Greenleaf retired, Miss Abigail C. Haseltine, who had been preceptress since 1815, carried on the school for ladies only. She substantially continued principal till her death, only being relieved in her later years of its more active duties. She had great executive ability, self-possession and dignity of manner. When Miss Haseltine at last retired, her loss was severely felt.

A new Academy Hall had been built and dedicated April 15, 1841. In 1853 the semi-centennial was celebrated, which drew together fifteen hundred of the friends of the school.

After the retirement of Miss Haseltine, the academy was not considered fully prosperous again till it was conducted by Miss Abby H. Johnson, a native of Bradford, named for the former distinguished principal.

The fine new academy and dormitory was completed in 1869, and dedicated in May, 1870, amid great rejoicing of the friends of the institution. The school building, including boarding and school departments under the same roof, is located near the centre of an area of twenty-five acres. The view commands the valley of the Merrimac.

Miss Annie E. Johnson is the present principal.

This institution has been very fortunate in its trustees. Rev. Jonathan Allen was president of the board, 1803–27; Rev. Isaac Braman, 1827–43; Hon. Jesse Kimball, 1844; Hon. Samuel H. Walley, 1845–49; Benjamin Greenleaf, for several years from 1850. Then, when the aims of the school were broadened, Rev. Dr. Rufus Anderson, the secretary of the American Board, was induced to take the position. With him were associated Samuel D. Warren, Ezra Farnsworth, Rev. Nathan Monroe, Hon. E. S. Tobey, Hon. George Cogswell, Hon. William A. Russell, Rev. Dr. J. H. Means and others. After the new building had been erected, Dr. Anderson retired from the board and was succeeded by the Rev. Dr. James H. Means. Hon. George Cogswell is the present president of the board, with



BRADFORD ACADEMY.

whom are associated Samuel D. Warren, vice-president; Dr. John Crowell (of Haverhill), secretary; Rev. Dr. E. K. Alden, Hon. William A. Russell, Elbridge Torrey, Ezra Farnsworth, Rev. Dr. John D. Kingsbury, Rev. Dr. Means, Rev. Nehemiah Boynton (of Haverhill).

The institution is justly the pride of the town and is itself, no doubt, largely benefited by the excellent character of the town, in respect to beauty, healthfulness, general good order and good government.

Distinguished men lecture here, like Prof. Charles A. Young in astronomy. Indeed, it is the intention of the able and earnest managers that the school shall not be inferior to any in any department. Within the last year or two there has been great interest among the friends of the academy in the fine portraits which have been presented to adorn its walls,

as of Rufus Anderson, pupil in youth and president in age; of Harriet Newell and Ann H. Judson, the missionaries who were educated at the school; Hon. George Cogswell, who for more than fifty years has been connected with it and done so much to build it up; of Rev. Nathan Monroe, the former pastor of Bradford Church. It is believed the future of Bradford Academy will be brilliant and useful, even exceeding its past extraordinary record.

In 1821 Merrimac Academy was established in the East Parish, which for many years was successful.

In 1820 there were two libraries in the town. Among educational influences, Dr. Perry enumerated also at that time the Washington Benevolent Society, exclusively devoted to literary improvement.

April 2, 1813, the Philendian Society was formed in what is now Bradford. Its object was "to support female teachers" in places where they might be useful in the moral and intellectual training of neglected children. Parson Allen was much interested in this organization. Its membership embraced many women of Haverhill and Newburyport. Schools were established at Haverhill, Wenham, the Isle of Shoals and Byfield, where Mary and Abigail C. Haseltine were teachers. The results were considered eminently satisfactory. Long since superseded in its work, to recall it now is mainly valuable as showing the tone and spirit of Bradford women in the early years of this century.

The public schools of Bradford have also kept full step with the advance of progress. May 1, 1886, there were 554 school children, 167 being between the ages of five and eight and 387 between the ages of eight and fifteen. The increase over the previous year was nineteen. September, 1886, there were twelve schools, with a teaching force of fifteen. The number of recognized grades was eleven, viz.: two second primary, two first primary, six grammar and the high school. The high school was established in 1866.

From an early period in the history of this town, its public officers have been respectable and respected. One of its first town clerks, Shubael Walker, was a superior officer for the day in which he lived, being an admirable penman and accurate in the discharge of his duties. The town has generally reposed confidence in its selectmen, who appear, upon the whole, to have deserved it. The first selectmen were Sergeant John Gage, Robert Haseltine, Joseph Pike, John Griffin and John Tenny. Thomas Kimball was the first constable. And at the same meeting it was voted that the houses of Benjamin Gage and Thomas Kimball "should be legal places for posting up any order or other business of public concernment for the town." Contrary to the custom in most places, the meeting-house was not employed for such notifications until the division of the town into parishes.

In 1707 it was voted that there should be two constables instead of one, as before, the compensation to be divided between them. This was the first recognition of the growth of the eastern part of the town, leading to the division of town offices, employments and conveniences. About twenty years afterwards the town was divided into parishes; and thus things proceeded in the way of equitable division until, May 20, 1766, it was "voted that the one-half of the town meetings shall be held at the East Meeting-House in said town for the future." This was a most important vote, giving the clue to the course of things for nearly a century after, till the East Parish was set up as the town of Groveland, in 1850. But it is believed that this vote has not been printed before the present occasion.

Provision for order in the town meetings was also made on the very first occasion, when it was voted "that whoever did not appear at town meeting at the time set for such meeting, should pay sixpence for every hour that he was defective;" and if anyone in meeting should speak without leave obtained from the moderator, he should pay the same sum for every "offense." January 4, 1668, it was further "voted that when the town are assembled in town meeting, no one should leave the house without liberty obtained, under the penalty of twelvepence per hour, and that no act passed by the town after sunset shall be of value."

Dr. Perry claimed that in respect to health, Bradford had been as much favored as towns in general. So far as was known, there had never been a specific local disorder. One in ten of the deaths had been of persons more than eighty years old; Dr. Perry thought full one in eight since his residence in the place. That there were not so many persons of very great age at the time of his writing as before had been the case, he ascribed to the destructiveness of the French Wars, but more especially to the terrible destruction of infant and child life, through the awful throat distemper of 1736, which originated in Kingston, N. H., and of which the Rev. John Brown, of Haverhill, published an interesting account in a large pamphlet. This disease in one year carried off in the East Parish of Bradford, forty-seven children and nine grown persons. "And it is said," proceeds Dr. Perry, "that only two families entirely escaped the disorder, one of which was that of their reverend pastor." If they and he had known that across the river, in Haverhill, the Rev. John Brown, the historian of the disease, lost three of his children by it, there could not have been much generalization from the exemption of the Rev. Mr. Balch's children. In 1762, twenty-three persons died of the same throat distemper, in a short time; and in 1794, fifteen more.

In 1777 the small-pox appeared in the East Parish, and at that time, indeed, it was prevalent in this vicinity, perhaps brought from the army. Bradford built a pest-house, to which were removed those taken with the disorder. Fourteen had it, of whom ten died.

Of the seven thousand persons, who, according to his calculations up to and including 1820, had lived in Bradford, Dr. Perry estimated that 1284 had made open profession of religion.

In 1720 the town's expense was £60 16*s.* 4*d.* On an average for the ten years before 1820, it had been £900, which Dr. Perry estimated was raised at least as easily as the former taxes; whence, of course, the inference would naturally be drawn that the wealth of the place had increased in that proportion. It certainly has increased in at least as great a proportion in both towns since 1820. Dr. Perry exhibited the increase in the value of land since the early days by an incident which has been often repeated. Before Thomas Kimball settled in Bradford, probably about the year 1660 or a little after, he was driving a herd of cattle through on his way to Haverhill or Hampstead, when one of the land owners, probably Haseltine, offered to take his cattle at a high price and pay him in land upon the river, at eight pence an acre.

In 1810 the population of Bradford was 1369, and in 1820, 1650. When in 1850 the two parishes separated, they were, as nearly as possible, equal in population and valuation, Bradford had about 1300. In 1855, after the division, the population of Bradford was 1372. In 1875, its population was 2347, containing 413 dwellings and 531 families. It had an agricultural product of $43,635.

As a matter of curiosity and comparison, the industries of Bradford as returned in 1855, after the separation of Groveland, are here given. It is probably however, an approximation only.

BRADFORD.

"Saddle, Harness and Trunk Manufactories, 2; val. of saddles, &c., $1500; cap, $400; emp., 2.

"Boots of all kinds m'd., 75 pairs; Shoes of all kinds m'd., 20,000 pairs; val. of boots and shoes, $1000; m. emp, 12; f. emp., 11.

"Bricks m'd., 250,000; val. of bricks, $1250; emp., 3.

"Horses, 84; val. of horses, $9160; Oxen over three years old, 94; Steers under three years old, 30; val. of oxen and steers, $6235; Milch Cows, 258; Heifers, 30; val of cows and heifers, $8410.

"Butter, 17,060 lbs.; val. of butter, $4265; Cheese, 3825 lbs.; val. of cheese, $382; Honey, 325 lbs.; val. of honey, $60.

"Indian Corn, 142 acres; Indian Corn, per acre, 35 bush.; val., $5494.

"Wheat, 4 acres; Wheat, per acre, 18 bush.; val., $144.

"Rye, 17 acres; Rye, per acre, 20 bush.; val., $376.

"Barley, 2 acres; Barley, per acre, 25 bush.; val., $50.

"Oats, 98 acres; Oats, per acre, 40 bush.; val., $2352.

"Potatoes, 61 acres; Potatoes, per acre, 100 bush.; val., $5490.

"Onions, 1 acre; Onions, per acre, 30 bush.; val., $180.

"Turnips, cultivated as a field crop, 4 acres; Turnips, per acre, 150 bush.; val., $150.

"Carrots, 2 acres; Carrots, per acre, 300 bush.; val., $180.

"English Mowing, 1130 acres; English Hay, 1240 tons; val., $18,600.

"Wet Meadow or Swale Hay, 40 tons; val., $320.

"Apple Trees, cultivated for their fruit, 6850; val., $6580.

"Pear Trees, cultivated for their fruit, 420; val., $225.

"Shoes made the past year, 102,700.

Jack Screws, 200; val., $10.00."

In 1880 the population of Bradford was 2643; in 1885, 3106. The valuation in 1886 was, personal estate, $305,867.00; real estate, $1,274,020.00: total, $1,579,887.00—rate of tax, $15 per $1000. Total taxes, $25,472.44.

When the Boston & Maine railroad was opened to this town in 1837, the village contained but three streets, the Andover road and the Salem road, which unite at the meeting house and extend to Haverhill bridge—excepting the old Ferry Street.

The average expense of maintaining the town poor, from 1810 to 1820, was $839. About the last date, the town purchased a house and farm for their use, where it was expected they would be more comfortable and less expensive.

In 1882, on the two hundredth anniversary of the church organization, it was stated that the "actual necessities of the poor are so few that most of them are supplied from private distribution of charity. The town poor-farm was actually sold for the reason that the town had no paupers to live on it." But, March, 1886, $2000 was appropriated for the poor. The town paid for board, care, groceries, wood, boots and shoes, burial, etc. In a word, it has recurred to the methods of more than a century ago.

In 1752 there appear to have been two persons supplied with out-door relief—Martha Simons and "Mr. Pufer."

"Sept. 18, 1752, voted to Capt. Mullicken, for keeping Martha Simons from May 22 to — Sept.; providing her with showes (shoes) and an apron, £3 19*s.*

"To same, for keeping Martha Simmons twenty-seven weeks and one cotton Handkerchief, £2 19*s.* 5*d.*

"Stephen Kimball, for making one pair of showes and mending one payer for Martha Simons, 4*s.* 6*d.*

"March 16, 1756, voted and allowed to David Hall, for seven yards of too (tow) cloth for Martha Simmons and making them, 8*s.*

"Dec. 18, 1759, voted yt ten shillings be raised for clothes for Martha Simmons.

"March 9, 1763, Dudley Carlton, for Martha Simmons' coffen, 5*s.* 4*d.*

"To Benj. Walker, for diging her grave, 3*s.*

"To Obadiah Kimball, for a winding sheet, 3*s.*

"Sept 18, 1852, voted to Joseph Mullicken, for providing a shirt for Mr. Pufer, 6*s.*

"Voted to Joseph Kimball, for providing another shirt for Mr. Pufer, 6*s.*

"Voted to Philip Tenney, for two payer of gloes (gloves?) for Mr. Puffer's funeral, 4*s.*

"Voted to Joseph Mullicken, for rum and shugar that he provided for Mr. Puffer in ye time of his sickness, 10*s.*

"Voted to Joseph Kimball, for a sheet and shurt and cap to bury Mr. Puffer in."

And thus pauperism seems to have come to an end, temporarily. But the poor we have always with us.

At that time the selectmen were expected to keep a sharp look-out that strangers coming into town did not become chargeable to it; to prevent trouble of that kind, they generally warned them ont again immediately—which explains the following: "Bradford, Jany. ye 1, 1775; Peter Russell gives notice to selectmen that Alexander Montgomery has come from Andover to live with him—son of John Montgomery."

September 24, 1745, in town-meeting: "It was put to vote whether the town would abate the heads (polls) of such persons who are or have bin in his Majesties service this year & vote passed in ye negative."

The town was certainly not very liberal to such as

had come or were coming home from the famous Louisburg expedition of that year.

The following is the most suspicious vote, though it might be explained: "Dec. 18, 1759: voted to Joseph Mullicken for going to Newbnry Court and dining ye committee, & two ( ), £5 0*s.* 0*d.*"

1760-61. In these years there are many charges, about "the French." These were the poor Acadians, who were distributed about among the towns to provide for.

March 9, 1762," voted to Samuel Trask for building a oven for the French, 4 shillings; voted to Samuel Kimball for bricks and wood for ye French, March 15, 1763, £5 5*s.*0*d.*"

There has been some difficulty about tracing the stocks in Bradford; but March 19, 1763, "voted to Deacon Thomas Carlton for mending the town stocks."

May 17, 1773, the town voted to build a powder-house—probably at Head's Hill, which, it is believed was known as Powder-House Hill. The powder-house was stocked with ammunition. "Six half-barrels of powder, bullets and flints proportionable."

CHAPTER CLXIX.

BRADFORD—(*Continued*).

Bradford in the Wars.

It appeared from the journal of Captain William Kimball, who, during the French War of 1755, marched a company from Bradford to Stillwater, New York, that all his men returned to their homes in safety.

The same good fortune attended the company of forty men, commanded by Captain Nathaniel Gage, which was in the battle of Bunker Hill. Although stationed in a place much exposed to the enemy, not a life was lost. Tradition has brought down the story that this was one of the best disciplined and most effective companies engaged on that day, having been carefully instructed by an English deserter, who, in 1820, was still living in Haverhill.

Early in the troubles with Great Britain a town-meeting was held in the West meeting-house, January 7, 1773, to see what, if any, instructions should be given to the town's representative relating to the existing difficulties. The town chose a committee to report what should be done, and adjourned to six o'clock, P.M., the same day. Instructions were adopted to Captain Daniel Thurston, the town's representative in the General Court, informing him that his constituents felt "very great uneasiness at the infringements on our national and Constitutional rights, by many of the late measures of the British Administration, particularly of the taxation of the Colonies, and the granting of salaries to the judges of the Superior Court, measures adapted, as we apprehend, to lay a foundation in time to render property precarious, and to introduce a system of deception which we cannot but view with the utmost aversion, and to which we cannot submit while possible to be avoided. We recommend it to you as our Representative in General Assembly, to use your influence to obtain redress of all our grievances, and in particular to enquire whether the support of the Judges of the Superior Court has been adequate to their services, offices and station, and if not, to use your influence in obtaining suitable grants and establishments as may be thought sufficient to remove all pretence that government is not supported among ourselves—which was voted unanimously."

It will be remembered that most of the country towns on the patriotic side followed the bold and shrewd leadership of the Boston Committees, under the masterly management of Sam Adams. This vote certainly showed that Bradford was sound, and it remained so throughout the war.

The town was represented in the Provincial Congress, which assembled at Concord, October 11, 1774, by Captain Daniel Thurston, who was also chosen to represent the town in the Provincial Congress, held in the following February at Cambridge.

More ammunition was laid in store, and thirty pounds sterling were voted for that purpose, and this before open hostilities had commenced. The enlistment of minute-men now commenced, and these were drilled, equipped and paid by the town. The number of hours required for drill was increased from time to time, as the emergency seemed to demand, so that they might be ready to contribute their aid when needed. Town-meetings now were frequently held, adjourning often to the East or West meeting-house to hear reports from committees, vote supplies and encourage each other.

The town-meeting called May 23, 1775, was an important one. It was the first after the battles of Lexington and Concord. The Massachusetts army had appealed to the town for aid, and the articles needed were stated in a circular from a committee of supplies. The town was also called upon to choose a Committee of Correspondence, according to the recommendation of the Provincial Congress.

The supply for the army called for was voted and the committee chosen. This committee were instructed to return the names of those persons who deserted the Provincial service to the county committee, unless they returned to duty. Soon after the battle of Bunker Hill—June 28, 1775—being only eleven days after, another town-meeting was held, encouraging re-enlistment of the minute-men, and promising to pay them.

At a town-meeting held June 20, 1776, it was voted, apparently unanimously, to desire Dudley Carleton, the Representative in General Assembly, "as our rep-

resentative, to use your utmost endeavor that our delegates in General Congress be instructed to shake off the tyrannical yoke of Great Britain, and declare these United Colonies independent of that venal, corrupt and avaricious court forever—provided no proposals for a happy reconciliation be offered, which the honorable congress think proper to accept; and we hereby engage that we will, at the risk of our lives and fortunes, endeavor to support and defend them therein."

This town also lent its aid in securing the observance of the State act to prevent monopoly and oppression. Abraham Day, Jr., was chosen to guard the town against the danger arising from internal enemies. It would be impossible to give all the details of the various town-meetings, fifty or more in number, held to carry on this war. But the records abound in evidence of the zeal and readiness of the people to do their part, by voting supplies and furnishing men.

The town seems to have met the calls upon it during the war, for men and supplies, with at least reasonable promptitude.

The delegate from Bradford to the convention held at Cambridge, in 1779, to form a State Constititution, was Peter Russel, Esq. The new Constitution was accepted by the town after some discussion upon the third article.

The feeling against those who opposed the Revolution and left the country duriug the war, or conspired against it, was very strong; and a vote was passed instructing the Representative to use his utmost endeavors to prevent all such from ever returning to live again in this Commonwealth.

When the Rebellion broke out, the town of Bradford, at a meeting held April 26, 1861, voted one thousand dollars to be used for the benefit of soldiers volunteering, or called into the service. E. F. Brigdon and Georgo Johnson were chosen to act with the selectmen in the distribution of this money. It was voted that no soldier receiving aid from the town, should, for that cause, be subject to any disability as a citizen.

The selectmen were authorized to borrow money necessary to furnish State aid to the families of volunteers, in conformity with the laws of the Commonwealth. Money was raised to pay bounties in order to fill the quotas of the town. Bounties were also raised by private subscription. In 1863, town bonds were issued for the payment of aid to the families of deceased soldiers.

August 20, 1864, a unanimous vote of thanks was passed to the selectmen "for their energy and success in filling the quota of the town. They were authorized to use their own discretion in bringing home the bodies of soldiers killed in battle or dying while in service, and in defraying transit charges and funeral expenses. The town, at the close of the war, had a credit of thirty-one men, over and above all demands.

Four of the number were commissioned officers. The comrades annually decorate the graves of thirty-one who fell. The town expended $22,149.42 on account of the war, and $8,756.33 was raised in addition from private subscription, making a total of $30,906.05. $11,915.03 was paid out to the families of volunteers, which the Commonwealth refunded. The war debt of the town has been extinguished.

The women of the town worked with energy and zeal, to supply the needs of the soldiers and their families. They worked largely in co-operation with the women of Haverhill, as the "Soldiers' Relief Society of Haverhill and Bradford." Their cares for the suffering ceased only when there were no more to care for. During the war, the following were selectmen: In 1861, Richard Haseltine, Samuel W. Hopkinson, Leverett Kimball; in 1862, Edmund Kimball, John Perley, Samuel W. Hopkinson; in 1863, Samuel W. Hopkinson, Walter Goodell, Nathaniel Carleton; 1864 and 1865, Charles B. Emerson, John Perley, A. Judson Day. The town clerk, during all these years, was Nathaniel Hatch. The town treasurer in 1861 and up to August 19, 1862, was thence, till after the close of the war, Harvey M. Towle.

Judge Carter had four sons in the service.

Dr. George Cogswell's two sons, George B. and William, born in Bradford, served one as surgeon of the Twenty-ninth Massachusetts, the other, as Colonel of the Second (Brevet Brigadier-General, December 15, 1864).

The following is a record of soldiers and seamen, during the Rebellion, from the town of Bradford (being that preserved in the office of the town clerk):

Kelley, Samuel E., private, must. in July 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt.

Kimball, Frank H., private, enl. July 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Jan., 1863, disability.

Kimball, Leroy N., private, enl. July 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.

Day, Joseph Warren, private, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; pro. lieut. 1863.

Walton, Joseph H., private, must. in July 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 14th Regt.

Walton, Edward M., private, enl. Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed in action Jan. 3, 1864.

Carr, Charles E., must. in July 17, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt.

Mills, Joseph E., private, must. in Aug. 26, 1861, 3 months, Co. G, 5th Regt.; re-enl. in 17th Regt., drum-major; disch. by act of Congress Nov., 1862.

Holt, Francis E., private, must. in Sept. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.

Bean, Charles E., must. in June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 12th Regt.; supposed killed at Gettysburg.

West, James G., must. in March 1, 1842, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.).

Bickum, Charles H., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt.; re-enl. Dec., 1863, 3 yrs.

Bickum, Benj., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt.

Bickum, Jacob W., private, enl Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.

Parker, Wm., must. in Feb. 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt.; re-enl. Feb. 20, 1864.

Parker, Henry R., must. in July 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt.

Parker, Edward, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt., disch., disability.

Smith, William, must. in July 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 14th Regt.

Hall, Cyrus J., must. in Aug. 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; trans. to Invalid Corps Aug. 6, 1864 (State record, Sept. 30, 1864).

Couillard, Charles H., enl. Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Dec. 27, 1862, disability.

Banfield, Chas E., enl. in Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt. ; disch. Nov. 12, 1862, disability.

Morse, Sylvester P., private, enl. Aug. 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Jan. 24, 1863, disability.

Chadwick, Benjamin P., enl. Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 33d Regt.

Heath, George E., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt. ; died at Gettysburg Sept. 24, 1863.

Wills, John F., private, enl. Feb. 14, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 13th Regt. ; re-enl. 3 yrs., Feb., 1864.

Mills, Charles E , enl. July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.

Hanson, Peter, enl. Aug. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt. ; disch. Dec 9, 1862, disability ; re-enl. Dec., 1863, 3 yrs., Co. B, 59th Regt.

Eaton, George W., enl. in Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.

Lang, George H., enl. Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt. ; trans. to regular army.

Gale, Moses H., must. in Mar. 12, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 20th Regt.

Bruce, Norman, must. in July 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.

Kimball, Charles H., private, Co. I, 12th Regt. ; killed in battle.

Carter, Walter, private, enl. July 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt. ; sergt-major, 1863.

Carter, Robert G., private, enl. July 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H 22d Regt.

Lovejoy, George E., enl. Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt. ; re-enl. Feb., 1864, 3 yrs.

Morrison, John, enl. Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt ; probably killed at Gettysburg.

Phillips, Chas., private, enl. Aug., 1862, Co. H, 22d Regt.; wounded at Gettysburg July 3, 1863.

Day, Wm. H. H., private, enl. Aug., 1862, Co. H, 22d Regt.

Kimball, Eldridge, private, enl. July 1, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.

Kimball, Stillman, enl. Feb. 14, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt. ; disch. Sept. 1, 1862, disability ; re-enl. Co. A, 4th Cav. Nov. 19, 1863.

Kimball, John S., private, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt. ; killed in action May 14, 1864.

Kimball, Charles W., private, 3 yrs , Co. H, 22d Regt, ; disch., disability, April 11, 1863.

Phillips, Leonard W., private, enl. Jan. 25, 1862, 3 yrs , Co. D, 17th Regt.

Kimball, Moses G , private, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.

Jenkins, Benjamin A., private, enl. Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., 17th Regt

Morse, Harmon F., private, 3 yrs., 17th Regt. ; disch. 1863, disability.

McCollom, John H., 30th Regt., hosp. stew.

Locke, Oliver S., private, 3 yrs., 1st Cav. ; disch. 1863, disability.

Kalei, Cornelius, private, enl. 1861, 3 yrs., 1st Cav. ; pro. sergt. ; re-enl. Jan., 1864, 3 yrs.

De Witt, Merrill, private, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt. ; re-enl. 3 yrs. 4th Cav. 5th sergt. Nov. 1863.

Hodgden, James F., 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt. ; lost both arms ; disch. Sept. 10, 1863.

Holt, Edgar, private, enl. Auguet, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt. ; pro. corp.

Heckman, John, enl. July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.

Carter, Eugene, private, 8th Inf., 1st lieut ; grad. at West Point 1861.

Casly, Thos., enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., 17th Regt. ; disch. and enl. in navy Jan. 28, 1863.

Pressey, William E., 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.

Davis, Maynard R., private, 3 yrs , Co. E, 14th Regt.

Caswell, Phineas, private, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.

Brown, Albert M., enl. Aug. 20, 1862, 3 yrs , Co. C, 35th Regt.

Crostin, William, private, enl. 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt. ; re-enl. Dec., 1863, 3 yrs.

Collins, George S., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt.; re enl. Dec., 1863, 3 yrs.

Morse, Henry P., private, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt. ; disch. May 1, 1862 ; re-enl., sergeant, 17th N. H. Regt ; disch. April, 1863 ; re-enl. 1st Mass. H. A. Dec. 15, 1863.

Reynolds, George M., private, enl. 1861, 3 yrs., 2d N. H. Regt. ; disch. 1862 ; re-enl., Captain Herbert's Co. unattached heavy artillery at Marblehead, Nov. 23, 1863.

Stuart, Charles H., private, 3 yrs. ; disch., 1862 ; re-enl. 17th N. H. Regt., 1862 ; died in service.

Rogers, Tristram, private, 3 months, Co. G, 5th Regt. ; disch. exp. of service.

Cogswell, William, surgeon, enl. Nov. 19, 1862, 9 months, 50th Regt. ; disch. at exp. of term.

Rundlet, James H., lieut., enl. Nov. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; disch. at exp. of term ; served as signal officer.

Carleton, Benjamin P., enl. Aug., 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt ; disch. at exp of term.

Fogg, George, private, 3 months, Co. G, 5th Regt. ; disch. exp. of service.

Clough, George W., enl. Aug., 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; died at New York, Nov., 1862.

Hills, Henry C., enl. Aug., 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; disch. at exp. of term.

Hanson, John A., enl. Aug., 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; re-enl. in 59th Regt., Dec. 1863.

Kimball, Granville R., private., enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; died at Cairo, Ill.

Morse, George F., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; disch. exp. of term.

Poor, John S., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.

Perkins, Calvin G., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt ; disch. exp. of term

Peabody, Calvin, private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; disch. exp. of term.

Watson, George E., private, enl. Augnst, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt ; disch. exp. of term.

Pearson, Charles S., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; died in term.

Lucy, George, private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; disch. exp. of term.

Carleton, Orlando T., private, enl. August, 1862, nine month, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; disch. exp. of term.

Hodges, Noah C., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months Co. K, 50th Regt. ; disch. exp. of term.

Kimbell, M. Warren, private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; disch. exp. of term.

Libbey, Ira, private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; disch. exp. of term.

Myers, Joseph, private, enl. Augnst, 1862, nine months, Co., K, 50th Regt. ; disch. February, 1863.

Poor, Warren F., private, enl. August, 1862. nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; died at Cairo, Ill.

Peabody, Charles N., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; disch. exp. of term.

Raymond, S. H., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; disch exp. of term.

Morse, Edwin C., private, enl. Augnst, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; disch. exp. of term.

Crosby, Edward F., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K. 50th Regt. ; died on way home.

Peabody, Daniel A., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt. ; disch. exp. of term.

Heckman, David, private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. F, 50th Regt. ; disch. exp. of term.

Jenkins, S. H., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. F, 50th Regt. ; disch. exp. of term.

Graham, Rufus M., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. F, 50th Regt. ; disch. exp. of term.

Lozier, Edward H., private, enl. August, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; disch. end of term.

Lucy, Arthur W., private, enl. August, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; disch. end of term.

Heath, Charles K., private, enl. August, 1862, 9 months, 50th Regt. ; disch. end of term.

Eaton, James J., private, enl. Augnst, 1862. 9 months, 59th Regt.; disch. end of term.

Cole, James R., private, enl. August, 1862, 9 months, Co. I, 6th Regt. ; disch. end of term.

Kimball, Charles G., private, enl. Sept , 1862, 9 months, Co. H, 4th Regt.; disch. end of term.

Harris, Isaac B., enl. Nov., 1862, 9 months, Co. D, 48th Regt.; disch. end of term.

Lowry, Thomas, enl. 9 months, Co. D, 48th Regt.; disch. end of term.

Ford, Henry T., private, enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.

Brien, Wm., private, enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.

Blunt, Geo., enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.

McGinnis, John, enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.

McGinnis, Thomas, enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.

Kelley, Adam, enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.

Smith, Philip, enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.

Ewings, John, enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.

Sargent, Carlos R., enl. Sept. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., 2d Cav.; died of small-pox March, 1862.

Tanner, Edward, enl. 3 yrs.

Porter, John C., enl. 3 yrs.
Worthen, Perley A., enl. 3 yrs., V. R. C.
Follen, Patrick, enl. 3 yrs., V. R. C.
Whittier, Kimball, enl. 3 yrs., V. R. C.; disch.
Morse, Herman F., 3 yrs., Vet. Res. Corps.
Peabody, Charles N., 1 yr., H. A.
Poor, David N., Jr., 1 yr., H. A.
Hicks, James P., 1 yr., H. A.
Sheys, Bryant, 1 yr., H. A.; disch.
Buchanan, Alexander, 3 yrs.
Ordway, Nathaniel, 1 yr., H. A.; died at Newbern, N. C.
Graham, John L., 1 yr., H. A.
Eaton, George, 1 yr., H. A.
Foss, Robert, 1 yr., H. A.
Newhall, William H., enl. Dec. 19, 1864, 1 yr., 5th Batt.
Haseltine, William, enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Stevens, Robert M., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Stevens, William M., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Woodman, William, enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Morse, George F., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Trafton, William W., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Bailey, Ephraim, enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Bailey, Lawrence H., enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Abbott, Daniel B., enl. Jan. 1, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Bateman, Frank E., enl. Dec. 31, 1864, Co. B, Front. Cav.
Boynton, Isaac A., enl. Jan. 9, 1865, 3 yrs., Co. B.
Preston, Nelson, enl. Jan. 3, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, 5th Cav.
Taylor, Sullivan A., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Johnson, Albert C., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Godfrey, E. F., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Hooper, Geo. E., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Murphy, John H., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Dampsey, Michael, enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Sillsby, George E., Jr., enl. Nov. 30, 1863, 1st H. A.; trans. to Co. A July 31, 1865; absent, sick, since July 15, 1865; must. out in Co. A Aug. 16, 1865; absent, no discharge given.
Myers, Joseph, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. May 18, 1863, disability.
Morse, Edwin C., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Morse, George F., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Peabody, Calvin, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Peabody, Charles H., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Peabody, Daniel A., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Perkins, Calvin G., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Poor, Frederick W., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Poor, John S., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must out Aug. 24, 1863.
Raymond, Samuel H., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Watson, George E., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863
Carr, Charles E., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs, 1st H. A., Co. F; must. out July 8, 1864.
Croston, William, enl. Nov. 28, 1863, 3 yrs., 1st H. A., Co. F; disch. July 27, 1865, disability.
Parker, Edward, Jr., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st H. A.; disch. Feb. 8, 1863, disability.
Parker, Henry R., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st H. A.; must. out June 19, 1865.
Parker, William, enl. Feb. 19, 1852, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st H. A.; must. out Feb. 24, 1864, to re-enl.
Parker, William, enl. Feb. 25, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st H. A.; disch. Feb. 27, 1865, disability.
Casey, Daniel, enl. Nov. 20, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 3d H. A.; must. out Sept. 18, 1865.
Cogswell, William, enl. Nov. 11, 1862, 9 months; surg. 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Porter, John C., enl. July 13, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; must. out June 29, 1865.
Kimball, Elbridge, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt. Inf.

Hooper, George E., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. L, 3d Cav.; must. out Sept. 28, 1865, Co. E.
Dempsey, Michael, enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav., must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
Godfrey, Edward, enl. Jan. 2, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. L, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
Haley, Lewis, enl. Jan. 23, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. B, 5th Cav.; died June 16, 1864, Point Lookout, Md.
Nelson, Preston, enl. Jan. 3, 1865, 3 yrs., Co. M, 5th Cav.; must. out Oct. 31, 1865.
Stevens, Wm. M., corp., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt., Front. Cav.; disch. June 30, 1865.
Hazletine, Wm., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt., Front. Cav.; disch. June 30, 1865.
Stevens, Robert W., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt., Front. Cav.; disch. June 30, 1865.
Johnson, Albert O., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt., Front. Cav.; disch. June 30, 1865.
Tanner, Edward H., enl. June 23, 1861, 3 yrs., 11th Regt. Inf.; Unassigned Recruit.
Morse, Henry P., enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt. Inf.; disch. May 23, 1862, disability.
Day, Joseph W., 1st lieut., enl. Aug. 26, 1863, 3 yrs., 17th Regt. Inf.; disch. March 15, 1865.
——, ——, 2d lieut., enl. Sept. 30, 1862, 17th Regt. Inf.; and 1st serg. July 22, 1861.
Eaton, George W., enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
Graham, John L., enl. August 29, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. June 30, 1865, order War Dept.
Beckman, Jacob W., enl. August 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. August 3, 1864.
Eaton, James J., enl. January 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. February 14, 1862; disability.
Heckman, John H., enl. July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. August 3, 1864.
Peabody, Charles M., enl. September 29, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. G, 17th Regt.; disch. June 30, 1865, order War Dept.
Mills, John F., enl. February 14, 1862, 3 yrs, Co. H., 17th Regt.; disch. January 1, 1864, to re-enlist.
Bruce, Norman, sergeant, enl. August 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; trans. July 27, 1863, to V. R. C.
Hanson, Peter, enl. February 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; disch. December 9, 1862, disability.
Kimball, Moses G., enl. Aug. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; must. out Aug. 27, 1864.
Kimball, Stillman, enl. Feb. 24, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; must. out Dec. 3, 1862, disability.
Merritt, De Witt G., enl. Feb. 14, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; disch. Oct. 26, 1862, disability.
Gale, Moses H., corp., enl. Dec. 31, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. F, 20th Regt.; must. out July 14, 1865; private, March 12, 1862, Co. F, 20th Regt.; must. out Dec. 20, 1863, to re-enl. as above.
Carter, Walter, corp., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; sergt.-major, Jan. 25, 1863; Feb. 20, 1864, 1st lieut.; declined com.
Carter, Robert G., enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 4, 1864.
Day, Wm. H. H., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Feb. 1, 1864, to re-enl.; re enl. Feb. 2, 1864; trans. Oct. 26, 1864, to 82d Regt.
Holt, Francis E., enl. Sept. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; died Aug. 24, 1864; rebel prison.
Kimball, Charles W., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. March 31, 1863, disability.
Kimball, Frank H., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt., disch. April 1, 1863, disability.
Kimball, Leroy H., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 17, 1864.
Lang, George H., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. Oct. 26, 1862, to 1st U. S. Cav.
Lovejoy, George E., enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Feb. 1, 1864, to re enl.; re-enl. Feb. 2, 1861.; trans. Oct. 26, 1864, to 32d Inf.
Morrison, John, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed July 3, 1863, Gettysburg, Pa.
Phillips, Charles, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt., must. out Oct. 17, 1864.

Pressy, William L., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 17, 1864.
Sargent, Charles K., enl. Sept. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; died March 8, 1862, Washington, D. C.
Walton, Edward M., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Feb. 1, 1864, to re-enl.
McCollom, John H., hospital steward, enl. April 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 30th Regt.; must. out April 29, 1865.
Couelliard, priv., enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; must. out as corp. Aug. 17, 1862, disability.
Banfield, Charles E., priv., enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 12, 1862, disability.
Mills, Orlando W., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
Foss, Robert, corp., enl. Nov. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Infy.; must. out June 30, 1865.
Cole, James R., enl. Aug. 31, 1862, 9 months, Co. I, 6th Regt.; must. out June 3, 1863.
Heckman, David, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Graham, Rufus M., musician, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Jenkins, Samuel H. enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Lucy, Arthur W., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Tozier, Edward H., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Heath, Charles K., sergt., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Eaton, James W., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Rundlett, James H., 2d lieut., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Pearson, Charles S., sergt., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Carlton, Benjamin P., corporal, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.
Lucy, George, corporal, enl. Sept. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Carlton, Orlando S., enl. Sept. 19 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Clough, George W., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; died Nov. 22, 1862, New York.
Crosby, Edward T., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; died Aug. 2, 1863, at sea.
Hanson, John A., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Hills, Henry O., enl. Sep. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug 24, 1863.
Hodge, Noah C., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Kimball, Granville R., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; died Aug. 1863, Mound City, S. C.
Kimball, Warren M., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Libby, Ira, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
Hall, Cyrus J., private, enl. August 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. Sept. 30, 1864.
Morse, Sylvester P., private, enl. August 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Jan. 24, 1862, disability.
Whittier, Kimball, enl. August 25, 1864, V. R. C.; disch. Nov. 20, 1865, order War Dept.
Worthing, Perley A., enl. July 22, 1864, V. R. C.; disch. Nov. 21, 1865, order War Dept.
Abbott, Daniel B., enl. Jan. 1, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.
Kelley, Samuel E., enl. July 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt.

Record of Seamen and Officers in Naval Service.

Ordway, Allen W.
Buchanan, Wm., enl. June 14, 1864, 2 yrs.
Fenno, John, enl. June 10, 1864, 1 yr.
Hunford, Edward, enl. June 14, 1864, 2 yrs.
Powers, John, enl. June 27, 1864, 1 yr.
O'Leary, Patrick, enl. June 27, 1864, 1 yr.
Cavenaugh, Michael, enl. June 13, 1864, 1 yr.
Dunbar, Jefferson C., enl. June 11, 1864, 1 yr.
Stevens, Alonzo M., enl. June 11, 1864, 3 yrs.
Baldwin, Albert F., enl. June 14, 1864, 3 yrs.
Sampson, Robert, enl. June 8, 1864, 2 yrs.
Foley, Martin, enl. June 8, 1864, 2 yrs.
Bliss, Isaiah, enl. June 8, 1864, 3 yrs.
Boynton, Walter S., enl. June 27, 1864, 1 yr.
Gilman, Charles E., enl. August 17, 1861, 1 yr.
Mitchell, Charles, enl. June 15, 1864, 2 yrs.
Cahill, Peter, enl. June 15, 1864, 3 yrs.
Nudd, John H., enl. June 24, 1864, 3 yrs.
Bramhall, Charles H., June 24, 1864, 3 yrs.
Sawyer, Frank C., enl. June 27, 1864, 1 year.
Foss, Charles, enl. June 13, 1864, 1 yr.
McCarthey, Jeremiah, enl. June 2, 1864, 1 yr.
Howe, Geo. H. B., enl. Aug. 1864, 1 yr.
Dow, Albert H., enl. Aug. 1864, 1 yr.
Freeny, Wm., enl. April 18, 1864, 1 yr.
Newman, Wm., enl. April 18, 1864, 1 yr.
Chishane, Daniel, enl. April 18, 1864, 1 yr.
Dexter, James H., enl. April 18, 1864, 2 yrs.
Tabor, Otis, enl. April 16, 1864, 2 yrs.
Blake, Albion P., enl. April 19, 1864, 2 yrs.
Wallace, John, enl. April 16, 1864, 1 yr.
Jones, Benj., enl. April 19, 1864, 1 yr.
Heal, Isaac S., enl. April 19, 1864, 3 yrs.
Green, Franklin L., enl. June 16, 1864, 3 yrs.

The following names are credited to the town of Bradford in the official list:

Mills, John F., sergt., must. May 1, 1861, 3 mos., Co. D, 5th Regt; must. out July 31, 1861.
Mills, John E., musician, must. May 1, 1861, 3 mos., Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.
Kaler, Cornelius, private, must. May 21, 1861, 3 mos., Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.
Mills, Charles E, private, must. May 21, 1861, 3 mos., Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.
Mills, William W., private, must. May 21, 1861, 3 mos., Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.
Phillips, Leonard W., private, must. May 21, 1861, 3 mos., Co. D, 5th Regt; must. out July 31, 1861.
Rogers, Tristam G., private, must. May 21, 1861, 3 mos., Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

At the Centennial celebration of the Declaration of Independence, July 4, 1876, Hon. George Cogswell was President of the day; Chief Marshal, Major Eugene Carter; Reader of the Declaration, Dr. William Cogswell; Chaplain, Rev. J. C. Paine, of Groveland; Toast Master, Samuel W. Hopkinson, Esq. Harrison E. Chadwick, Esq., delivered a valuable historical oration. The declaration was read from the identical sheet sent to Bradford by the authority of Congress in 1776, and then read from the pulpit by Rev. Samuel Williams, then minister. After a collation, interesting speeches were made.

December 27, 1882, the two hundredth anniversary of the organization of the Congregational Church, in Bradford, was appropriately commemorated. The memorial address, by Pastor Kingsbury, has been much referred to in this sketch. It will be ever regarded as a storehouse of information as to Bradford town and church. All the proceedings were worthy of the deeply interesting occasion.

Few towns in America have preserved the traditions of the Fathers so carefully, and walked so strictly in their ways.

NOTE TO SKETCH OF BRADFORD.

One or two incidents overlooked in preparing the narrative will be adverted to in this place.

It has been heretofore said that in the time of Indian warfare, a guard was often kept at the block-house on the "Neck." The Indians evidently used to cross somewhere above that point, near the boundary line of Bradford and Andover.

Thus it is stated that in 1708 a company of "Centinels" was posted by Colonel Saltonstall (commandant of the militia for this district) at Bradford, from May 20th to October 7th; and another at Andover for the same time.

The land which the Rowley proprietors assigned for a parsonage in Bradford was to be "at all times forever hereafter for the use of the ministrie in that town, Merrimacke, and that it should never be the proper and peculiar right of any person or persons, any longer than while he or they were the orderlie minister of the aforesaid town of Merrimacke." When the first Mr. Symmes was established, the town gave him lands it had bought and a few acres donated by individuals. At his death, an amicable arrangement was made with his heirs, by which the land given to him, with the parsonage farm, house and buildings he had occupied, opposite the old cemetery, reverted to the town. These estates were doubtless improved by the different ministers until Rev. Ira Ingraham was installed colleague pastor with Mr. Allen, December 1, 1824, when an agreement was made with him under which the parish retained the beneficial use and the control of all parsonage or ministerial properties, from whatever source derived.

About the beginning of this century, Jonathan Chadwick gave the parish a State note of one thousand one hundred and seventy-five dollars, "the interest of which was to be applied to the support of a congregational minister in said society forever thereafter." February 10, 1804, an act of incorporation was obtained, by which a board of trust was created for the management of this and other funds. When the parsonage timber, wood and lands were sold, the proceeds were added to this fund, which increased till it yielded, in 1878, about four hundred dollars annually.

It would appear that Robert Haseltine, the pioneer, was the first man to keep an inn at Bradford, from the order of the General Court, September, 1655: "Ye Court being informed yt there is no ferry over Merrimack River, at Haverhill, the Court orders Robert Haseltine to keepe a fery over the said river: and to have of straugers 4*d*. a person if they pay presently: and 6*d*. if bookt: and to keepe entertaynement for horse and man, for one yeare, unless the General Court take further orders."

When Bradford celebrated the centennial of independence, July 4, 1876, the residence of Jacob Kimball, near the common, the "Old Tavern," was appropriately decorated.

During the present century the Washington Hotel was kept by D. C. Knowles for more than forty-five years, for thirty-three of which it was conducted on temperance principles.

It has been remarked, and it is certainly remarkable, that in a town like Bradford, with over three thousand inhabitants, there should be only one church and only one house for religious worship. With all allowance for the fact that many of its inhabitants attend public worship in Haverhill, it is yet a circumstance worth noting. In the sketch of Haverhill in this volume, a somewhat extended account has been given of the advent of the Reverend Hezekiah Smith, which resulted in the organization of the First Baptist Church. Before visiting Haverhill, Mr. Smith had preached at New Rowley (now Georgetown), in 1764. He seems to have excited interest there, and a few years after some people in that place became Baptists, evidently under Mr. Smith's influence. The movement probably extended into the easterly part of the town of Bradford. Perhaps the most severe entry in Mr. Smith's diary is the following: "June 13, 1765: I went to the Fast, kept at Bradford, and heard Mr. Flagg and Mr. Tucker (Newbury) preach. And in my opinion, souls are to be pitied who sit under their preaching. Then went home, and expected to have more stones thrown into my chamber that night, after the ministers had been reflecting so much upon myself and the people who separated from them. The night before, they threw one stone through the glass into my chamber, soon after I got into bed." That outrage was in Haverhill. The stone—a large one—is said to be in the possession of one of Mr. Smith's descendants.

"January 15, 1766. I went to Bradford, and preached at Mr. Pike's from Acts 17: 6, 'Those that have turned the world upside down are come hither also.' It was a very solemn meeting. Thursday, 16th, I went to Solomon Kimball's, in Bradford, and preached from, 'I will arise, etc.' But before service, Milliken, the sheriff, and several of the head men of the Parish, came to prevent my preaching, and threatened me very much, should I proceed. At last, when they were engaged in their opposing talk, I began service, upon which they held their peace and went out, leaving us to carry on the service without any more disturbance." In 1774 Mrs. Martha Kimball, in a letter to Reverend Isaac Backus, the Baptist historian, gave an account of this meeting. She says: "The Rev. Hezekiah Smith was shamefully treated by many of the people of Bradford, who came, headed by the sheriff, Amos Millikin, at a time when Mr. Smith was to preach a sermon in our house at the request of my husband, and warmly contended with him, and

threatened him if he did proceed. However, Mr. Smith went to begin service by singing, notwithstanding the noise, clamor and threats of the people. But one of their number snatched the chair behind which Mr. Smith stood, from before him; upon which my husband desired Mr. Smith to tarry a little till he had quelled the tumult; but all his endeavors to silence them were in vain."

Mrs. Kimball adds the following account: "In the year 1768, in a very cold night in the winter, about nine or ten o'clock in the evening, I was taken prisoner and carried by the collector in the town where I live (Bradford) from my family, consisting of three small children, in order to be put into jail. It being a severe cold night, I concluded, by advice, while I was detained at a tavern some hours in the way to jail, to pay the sum of about £4 8*s.* legal money, for which I was made a prisoner, it being the ministerial rate. The reason why I refused paying it before was because I was a Baptist, and belonged to the Baptist Society in Haverhill, and had carried in a certificate to the assessors, as I suppose, according to law. After I had paid what they demanded, then I had to return two miles to my poor, fatherless children through the snow, on foot, in the dead of the night, exposed to the severity of the cold."

May 4, 1781, Mr. Smith "formed a branch of the Church (Haverhill) in Rowley—Georgetown." So says his diary.

After the controversy in the East Parish of Bradford, about the alleged Arminian heresy of Mr. Balch, some or all those dissatisfied with the decision of the church and council "separated" themselves from the parish, bought a meeting-house of the Second Parish in Rowley, then building anew, and removed it into the East Parish in Bradford, where they set it up and held meetings without a settled minister. People converted by Mr. Smith to the Baptist way of belief joined them, and Mr. Smith mentions preaching from time to time, in the "North" meeting-house in Bradford. Those who frequented this meeting were principally residents of Bradford, Rowley and Newbury. After Mr. Smith formed the Rowley branch of his Haverhill Church, this meeting-house was taken back to Rowley and rebuilt there. This was about 1782. About 1785 this branch was set up as an independent church, Mr. Smith preaching a sermon on the occasion.

What was called "The Reformation in Haverhill and Bradford," began December 1, 1803, by a meeting at the house of John Marble, in Bradford, when Elder Elias Smith, of Portsmouth, preached. In 1805–6 forty-three persons were baptized in Bradford by Elders Smith and Jones. But when the church was organized it was established in Haverhill. Out of this movement grew the Christian Church of Haverhill.

The agreement in 1803 to build Bradford Academy had about thirty signers, who subscribed $1218.80 to put up the building. At the first term there were fifty-one pupils. In 1804 there were eighty-seven, of whom sixty were females. Afterwards one thousand four hundred and fifty dollars was subscribed in aid. The principal was not paid over, but the annual interest was guaranteed. About 1807 a subscription was also made, which was intended to yield an income of seventy-two dollars a year for twenty years. The amount was only paid, however, for five years, when the school became self-supporting. In 1817 there were one hundred and forty-seven pupils—sixty males and eighty-seven females. The high degree of intelligence and public spirit of the women of Bradford must largely be ascribed to the founding of this academy.

Daniel Noyes, who was preceptor in 1814, was afterwards a well-known druggist in Boston and always a warm and helpful friend of the academy.

The Merrimac Academy, established in 1821, in the East Parish, by the excellent Dr. Spofford and others, would certainly appear to a stranger to be an unwise and unnecessary movement, an excellent school being already in successful operation so near and in the same town. How much of the indisposition in that part of the town to support the Bradford Academy may have been due to the traditional friction and rivalry between the two sections of the town, it is not necessary to speculate. It is wonderful that both schools were sustained so long, and yet more wonderful that one has survived and grown strong. But the Merrimac Academy, also, did much good and was comparatively successful until about 1870, when it was merged in the Groveland system of public schools.

It is rather a curious than an important circumstance in relation to the early industries of Bradford, that there is said to have once been a pottery in operation on the Highlands, where common earthenware was made for a time.

In 1837, when the Andover and Haverhill Railroad was opened to Bradford, its leading shoe manufacturers are stated to have been Josiah Brown, Leonard Johnson, Samuel Heath, William Day & Company, J. P. Montgomery & Company, George K. Montgomery, Ordway & Webster, Humphrey Hoyt, Warren Ordway, Pressey & Fletcher and Guy Carleton, Jr., with Kimball Farrar in the leather business. These able business men gradually moved their plant to Haverhill, continuing to reside in Bradford, and this precedent has been followed ever since by the shoe manufacturers here.

After the Rebellion a small number of colored people settled in Bradford and organized a little church. Their location was soon changed to Haverhill, where they are known as the Calvary Baptist Church, on Ashland Street, and have recently settled the Rev. Mr. Roberts, formerly of Liberia.

In 1871 an organization was formed now known as the Bradford Farmers' and Mechanics' Institute.





The first president was Warren Ordway; Secretary, William Hilton; Treasurer, George W. Ladd. The president in 1888 is Lieutenant E. E. Bradbury. Its lectures and meetings for discussion are well sustained, and its annual supper and reunion are conducted with a liberality and unanimity worthy of and expected from a place so characterized by the public spirit as the fine old town of Bradford.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

HON. GEORGE COGSWELL.[1]

The story of this family has been told by Jameson in his elaborate work, "The Cogswells in America." The ancestor, John Cogswell, of Westbury Leigh, Wilts, England, a manufacturer of woolens, embarked at Bristol, May 23, 1635, with his wife and eight children, on the ship "Angel Gabriel." He was shipwrecked at Pemaquid, Maine, August 15th, but soon after was at Ipswich, where large grants of land were made to him at Chebacco (now Essex), for more than two hundred and fifty years cultivated by his descendants. Nathaniel Cogswell, great-grandson of John, born January 19, 1707, in Chebacco Parish, was in Haverhill early in life, and became a prosperous merchant on Water Street and a prominent citizen. He married, January 31, 1740, Judith, daughter of Joseph and Hannah (Peaslee) Badger. Joseph Badger descended from Giles, of Newbury, was also a merchant of Haverhill, who married a daughter of Colonel Nathaniel Peaslee. Nathaniel Cogswell had nineteen children, all of whom, according to Chase, were baptized in the meeting house of the First Parish in Haverhill. About 1766, Nathaniel Cogswell retired from business and went to live at Atkinson, where he gave the site for the first meeting-house, and was active in the business of the infant town. He had eight sons in the Revolutionary Army, who, in the aggregate, fulfilled a service of thirty-eight years—claimed as the longest rendered by any family in the country.

William, his tenth son, born at Haverhill, July 11, 1760, was a student in the family of his brother-in-law, Rev. Jonathan Searle, of Mason, New Hampshire, when the Revolutionary War broke out. Though not yet sixteen years old, he served from January 1, 1776, to January 1, 1777, in the company of his brother, Captain Thomas Cogswell, of Haverhill, Colonel L. Baldwin's regiment of Continental Infantry, and was at the siege of Boston. From January 1, 1777, to July 19, 1781, he was engaged in the study of medicine with Dr. (and General) Nathaniel Peabody, of Atkinson. Upon the last date he was appointed surgeon's mate and assigned to the hospital at West Point, where he was subordinate to Surgeon William Eustis, afterward Governor of Massachusetts. January 5, 1784, he was promoted to be surgeon-in-chief in charge of that hospital and, June 20, 1784, upon the reorganization of the army by Congress, under the direction of General Washington, he was made surgeon in-chief of the regular army of the United States, holding that position until August 12, 1785, when he resigned it and commenced the practice of medicine at Atkinson, New Hampshire. He had thus attained the rank of surgeon-general (or its equivalent) when less than twenty-four years of age, and given it up at twenty-five. July 22, 1786, he married his cousin Judith, daughter of General Joseph Badger, first of Haverhill and after of Gilmanton, New Hampshire. She attained her ninety-fourth year. Dr. Cogswell died at Atkinson, January 1, 1831. He was one of the founders of Atkinson Academy.

George Cogswell, his sixth son, was born at Atkinson, February 5, 1808. He received his early education at Atkinson Academy and studied medicine with his father. Dartmouth College, in 1830, gave him the degree of M.D. with the highest honors of his class, and in 1865 the honorary degree of M.A. He was also a private student with Professor Muzzey, of Dartmouth, and Dr. John D. Fisher, of Boston. In August, 1830, he commenced the practice of medicine at Bradford, continuing it successfully for many years, till obliged to retire from it by ill health. In 1841–44 he visited Europe, attending lectures in Paris, and studying in the hospitals of Paris and London. He had many medical students at Bradford and was considered a thorough anatomist. Within a few years he has performed capital operations. In 1844 he declined a medical professorship tendered him. He was active in forming the Essex North Medical Association, now merged in the Massachusetts Medical Society, under the title of the "Essex North District Medical Society," in which he not only retains his membership, but his interest, regularly attending its meetings and participating in its discussions. Dr. Cogswell had undoubtedly great natural gifts for his profession. A leading physician of Haverhill says: "He was the first physician in Essex North who made intelligent use of auscultation and percussion in the diagnosis of disease."

Dr. Cogswell was early active in the temperance and anti-slavery movements, and has been consistent in his devotion to the principles then adopted. He was a member of the Chapman Hall meeting in Boston, which organized the Republican party in Massachusetts, and is still contented to remain its adherent. He was a member of the Electoral College of Massachusetts in 1852 and 1868, which gave the vote of the State to General Scott and General Grant, respectively. In 1860 he was a member of the Massachusetts delegation in the National Republican Convention at Chicago, which nominated Abraham Lincoln for the Presidency. In 1858 and 1859 he was a member of the State Executive Council, Nathaniel P Banks being Governor. In 1862, President Lincoln appointed him collector of internal revenue for the Sixth

[1] By John B. D. Cogswell.

District of Massachusetts. President Johnson removed him in 1866, and President Grant reappointed him in 1870. He held the position till 1875, when the office was consolidated with other districts. It was one of the most important districts in the country, and Dr. Cogswell administered it with marked fidelity and accuracy.

He has been a member of the First Parish Congregational Church, in Bradford, since 1831, and has been constantly ready and active in upholding it and promoting its usefulness and prosperity.

He was one of the original members of the Haverhill Monday Evening Club, organized in 1860, for literary and social purposes. He was chairman at its first meeting and at its twenty-fifth anniversary, November 19, 1885.

Dr. Cogswell has been many years a trustee of Atkinson Academy, and he is a trustee of the Peabody Academy of Science at Salem. He is a member of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, and of the New England Historic-Genealogical Society. When the Union Bank, in Haverhill, was organized, in 1849, he was elected its president, and when it became the First National Bank, in 1864, he was chosen to the same position, still holding it in 1888. He has long been vice-president of the Haverhill Savings Bank, and was for a while actively engaged in railroad affairs and president of a railroad in Essex County. Indeed, for many years and in many different departments he has been much employed in public and private trusts.

In 1878, when seventy years old, Dr. Cogswell made an extended tour in Europe, visiting the World's Fair in Paris, and traveling in Switzerland, Germany, Belgium and Holland, as well as the rural districts of England, Scotland and Ireland. He had visited Italy in the spring of 1841. Notwithstanding his advanced age, he was still an energetic traveler, and an active and enthusiastic sight-seer. With all his other occupations, he has in his life time found leisure to indulge the taste for farming, conceived when living upon the New Hampshire farm in youth, and during his second visit to Europe found much to enjoy in this department. He has done good work as an agriculturist in former years in Bradford, at his home property and in other parts of the town, particularly on the high lands at "Riverside," sloping down to the Merrimac. Almost contemporaneous with his citizenship in Bradford was Dr. Cogswell's connection with Bradford Academy, of which he has been a trustee for more than fifty years. He was a warm friend of Benjamin Greenleaf, its former distinguished preceptor. Treasurer for the larger part of the time, he has been constantly and intimately associated with its administration, even within the last year or two. The excellent condition of its finances must be ascribed to his successful management during years of doubt and struggle. The institution is now out of debt, and well equipped. An extended account of its history is given elsewhere, but in this place may properly be claimed that Dr. Cogswell and his associates of the board, past and present, have given Bradford Academy fresh life, and have placed it upon an enduring foundation. He has been for some years, and still is, president of the board of trustees.

August 4, 1831, Dr. Cogswell married Abigail, daughter of Peter Parker, Esq., of East Bradford (now Groveland). She was born September 6, 1808, and died July 23, 1845. Their children were Abby Parker, born September 25, 1832, graduated at Bradford Academy, who married George F. Choate, of Salem, judge of Probate and Insolvency for the county of Essex. George Badger, born September 15, 1834, educated at Bradford and Gilmanton Academies, Dartmouth College, Harvard Medical School, was surgeon during the war, and for many years a successful physician at North Easton, Mass. His son, Charles H. Cogswell (Dartmouth College, 1880), is port physician of the city of Boston, being the third in regular medical descent from Dr. William, of Atkinson, and it is worthy of note that Dr. George Cogswell has several other grandsons, now prosecuting their studies with a view to increasing the ranks of the profession.

William Wilberforce, born January 22, and died August 5, 1837.

William, born August 23, 1838; educated at Phillips Academy, Dartmouth College and Dane Law School; lawyer at Salem and Boston; colonel Second Massachusetts and brevet brigadier-general in 1864; repeatedly mayor of Salem and member of both branches of the Legislature; at present, Representative in Congress.

Sarah Parker, born March 23, 1843; graduated at Bradford Academy. In 1846, Dr. Cogswell married Elizabeth, youngest daughter of Hon. Elisha Doane, of Yarmouth, Massachusetts. Their children were: Elisha Doane and Susan Doane, born Sept. 22, 1847. Susan died Nov. 29, 1847; Elisha died April 6, 1850.

Doane, born April 29, 1851; educated at Phillips Academy, (Andover,) Dartmouth College and Boston Medical School; at present farmer at Riverside.

Caroline Doane, born August 2, 1852; graduated at Bradford Academy.

Dr. Cogswell was naturally a man of great energy, and through life has been remarkable for accuracy, promptness and punctuality. He has doubtless taken just pride in fulfilling his engagements, of every character, as a son, husband, father, friend, citizen, public servant and private trustee. In all matters of public concern he has been liberal, both of time, thought and money. As a friend and associate, he is reliable. One of his neighbors frequently says: "The doctor always does better than he agrees."

As a host, he has always been hospitable and genial.

Few men can look back upon so long a life of uninterrupted usefulness, and few, upon the very verge of four-score years, are so much relied upon in public and parochial business, and social affairs.

APPENDIX.

SALEM.

GIDEON BARSTOW.

Gideon Barstow, son of Gideon and Anna (Mead) Barstow, was born at Mattapoiset, September 7, 1783; died in St. Augustine, Fla., where he had gone for the benefit of his health, March 26, 1852; married Nancy, daughter of Simon and Rachel (Hathorne) Forrester, who is now residing in Boston. He descended in the sixth generation from William Barstow, who, at the age of twenty-three, embarked for New England with his brother George in the "True Love," John Gibbs, master, probably from the West Riding in Yorkshire; he was in Dedham in 1636, a freeman in Scituate in 1649, and the first settler in the present territory of Hanover,—a noted man of his day and a great land-holder; died in 1668, aged fifty-six; through William[2], Benjamin[3], Gideon[4], Gideon[5]. Three or four of the later generations lived in Mattapoiset, and were largely engaged in ship-building. He first settled in Salem as a practicing physician, where he was considered skillful in his profession and attentive to its duties; afterwards a merchant engaged in foreign commerce; a member of both branches of Massachusetts Legislature; a Representative in United States Congress, 1821–23.

GAYTON PICKMAN OSGOOD.

Gayton Pickman Osgood, son of Isaac and Rebecca T. (Pickman) Osgood, was born in Salem, July 4, 1797; removed with his parents in early life to Andover, which was afterwards his place of abode; graduated at Harvard College, 1815; studied law with Benjamin Merrill, of Salem, where he began the practice of the profession; soon after returned to North Andover. He lived a retired life, and his range of study and reading was very extensive; several times elected a Representative in Massachusetts Legislature; Representative in United States Congress one term, 1833–35; married, March 24, 1859, Mary Farnham, of North Andover. He died June 26, 1861, aged sixty-four years.

JACOB CROWNINSHIELD.

Jacob Crowninshield, son of George and Mary (Derby) Crowninshield, was born at Salem, May 31, 1770; died at Washington, May 15, 1808; married June 5, 1796, Sarah, daughter of John and Sarah (Derby) Gardner (born 1773, died May, 1807). A brother of Benjamin W. Crowninshield see *ante*. A merchant in connection with his father and brothers at Salem; Representative United States Congress, 1802–08. In 1805 he was appointed United States Secretary of the Navy by President Jefferson; declined the position on account of ill health. In Congress he was specially valued for his knowledge of marine and commercial matters, which was extensive and accurate. He was prompt and diligent in the performance of his duties, and possessed amiable manners, an open disposition and a liberal heart.

LITERATURE.

The Rev. Daniel Dorchester, D.D., who was pastor of the Lafayette Methodist Church from 1869 to 1872, has published many volumes of rare merit and value in addition to his work in the parishes over which he has been settled: "Concessions of Liberality to Orthodoxy," 1878; "The Problem of Religious Progress," 1882; "The Liquor Problem in all Ages," 1884; "The Why of Methodism," 1884; "Christianity in the United States from the Settlement to the Present Time," 1888. His works are extensively read and quoted.

As an illustration of the literary taste of Salem and its intellectual activity, the list of lecturers employed by the Lyceum is very significent, and is a proper conclusion to this subject. The Lyceum was founded in 1830, and was opened by Hon. Daniel A. White, In the list of lecturers from that time to 1878 we find John Brazer, Stephen C. Phillips, Henry Colman, Alexander H. Everett, Henry K. Oliver, C. W. Upham, Edward Everett, Rufus Choate, John Pickering, Leverett Saltonstall, William Sullivan, James Walker, S. G. Howe, Caleb Cushing, Charles T. Jackson, James Flint, W. B. O. Peabody, George S. Hillard, Ralph Waldo Emerson, (twenty lectures), Charles T. Brooks, Nehemiah Adams, Wm. M. Rogers, Alexander Young, Horace Mann, Jones Very, Oliver Wendell Holmes, George Bancroft, Henry Ware, Jr., Geo. Catlin, Jared Sparks, Samuel Osgood, Orville Dewey, A. P. Peabody, Convers Francis, Geo. E. Ellis, Charles Francis Adams, John G. Palfray, John

Quincy Adams, R. H. Dana, Jr., Ezra S. Gannett, Henry Giles, O. A. Brownson, Alonzo Gray, George Putnam, Wendell Phillips, E. P. Whipple, Theodore Parker, Henry W. Bellows, James T. Fields, John S. Dwight, Mark Hopkins, Samuel Johnson, Jr., Charles Sumner, Anson Burlingame, O. B. Frothingham, Louis Agassiz, Daniel Webster, Henry D. Thoreau, Lant Carpenter, Sylvester Judd, Jr., George Vandenhoff, Frances Ann Kemble, Thomas Starr King, G. P. R. James, Leonard Wood, E. H. Chapin, T. W. Higginson, Charles E. Norton, Charles H. Davis, George Sumner, W. H. Hurlbut, George W. Curtis, Henry Ward Beecher, Bayard Taylor, Prof. Guyot, John Pierpont, James Russell Lowell, Park Benjamin, F. D. Huntington, Moncure D. Conway, Frederick H. Hedge—a most illustrious list, whose influence was felt for many years on the mind and heart of the town. When we consider that the Lyceum Hall would contain but about six hundred persons, we are the more surprised at the distinguished characters of its courses, and in the absence of any considerable remuneration for the lecturers, the success of the institution must be attributed to responsive culture and mental activity of the community. Many of the ablest lecturers contributed many addresses, conspicuous among whom was Ralph Waldo Emerson, who appeared on that platform twenty times in his brilliant career.

DANVERS.

BANKS.

Some pages in regard to the banks of the town were overlooked when the manuscript was delivered to the publishers; and the newspapers of the town were not spoken of in any separate paragraph. A few words follow concerning these topics.

The earliest bank established in Danvers, prior to the division of the town, was the *Danvers Bank*, incorporated February 26, 1825. The *Warren Bank* was incorporated March 5, 1832. Both are Peabody institutions.

The *Village Bank* was chartered by the Legislature March 31, 1836, in compliance with a petition dated "Danvers, January 18, 1836," and signed by John Page, Moses Black, Elias Putnam, Jeremiah Stone, Allen Putnam, Daniel P. King and Jacob F. Perry. The petition read as follows:

"The undersigned, Citizens of Danvers and the neighboring towns in the County of Essex, respectfully represent: That the inhabitants of the Northerly and Easterly part of said town constitute a village of between fifteen and twenty hundred persons, a large portion of whom are actively engaged in business requiring the facilities of a Bank; and also the towns of Beverly, Wenham and Topsfield are connected with them in business; that they are now compelled to travel several miles for the purpose of transacting bank business, and are subject to much inconvenience. Wherefore we pray that we and our associates may be incorporated as a Bank by the name of the Village Bank, with a Capital of one hundred and twenty thousand dollars, to be located at Porter's Plains (so called) in said Danvers."

The charter, granted in answer to this petition, was to extend to October 1, 1851.

The first meeting of the stockholders of the Village Bank was held "at Eben G. Berry's Tavern," on Friday April 22, 1836. Elias Putnam was chosen moderator and Moses Black, Jr., clerk. It was voted to accept the charter granted by the Legislature, and Elias Putnam, Jeremiah Stone and Eben Putnam were chosen to consider favorable locations for a banking-house. At adjournment, May 9th, the first board of directors were chosen, namely: John Page, Eben Putnam, Samuel Preston, John Perley, Elias Putnam, Daniel F. Putnam, Joseph Stearns, Amos Sheldon, Moses Black, Jr., Samuel Putnam, Nathaniel Boardman, Frederick Perley. It was reported "that Sleeper's house and land on the corner could be purchased for $3000, and that it would be a favorable place for a Bank," and later this estate was purchased for $2800.

It was a large brick building standing on the northwestern corner of the main square of the Plains village. June 6, 1836, it was voted "an Engraving be taken, representing the location and situation of the Bank and vicinity for a picture on the bills." Lithographic reproductions of the old cut, recently printed on the checks of the bank, give a very good idea of the square as it appeared fifty years ago. In the great fire of 1845 the Sleeper Building was ruined and a smaller brick edifice was erected near the spot, Maple Street being then widened at that point. This structure, to which an extension on the south side has lately been added, was used by the bank until, in 1854, the large and fine building which it now occupies was erected on the opposite side of the street.

A special meeting was held October 5, 1840, to consider the expediency of surrendering the charter. On the question "Shall the Bank be continued?" there were two hundred and twenty-three yeas to ninety-three nays. In March, 1843, on the same question, the records show that by a slight majority of the whole number of stock votes, it was decided to surrender the charter. Most of those in favor of retaining the charter refrained from voting, but brought the matter before the Governor and Council, who, after the evidence, decided "that there was not a legal expression of a majority of the stockholders in favor of surrendering the charter." The following December the question came up once more, when those who thought it expedient to close up the bank again failed of a majority.

By an act May 2, 1849, the charter was extended to January 1, 1875. An increase of forty thousand dollars capital was authorized April 28, 1853, and still another increase of forty thousand dollars was authorized March 28, 1854. The capital thus having been

raised to two hundred thousand dollars, a reduction was afterward authorized to one hundred and fifty thousand dollars, February 13, 1862. The occasion of this reduction was the large loss sustained through non-payment of Southern paper at the breaking out of the Rebellion.

The par value of stock was then reduced from one hundred to seventy-five dollars.

In the fall of 1864 measures were taken to organize the bank as an association for carrying on the business of banking under the laws of the United States, and its name was subsequently changed to the First National Bank of Danvers.

At the first meeting of the directors, May 10, 1836, Elias Putnam was chosen president of the bank, and he held the office until his death, July, 1847. He had been foremost to see and meet the need of the establishment of such an institution, and it was largely owing to his firm and manly support in critical times that its charter was not surrendered. For further particulars of the origin of the bank and Mr. Putnam's connection therewith, see the sketch of his life in preceding pages. Moses Putnam, the second president, held the office until his decease, when, October 13, 1856, Daniel Richards was chosen his successor, and his term of office, covering more than thirty years, likewise ended with his life. Gilbert Augustus Tapley, the fourth and present president, was elected November 22, 1886.

The first cashier of the bank was Samuel B. Buttrick, who continued in office until May, 1841, when he returned to Salem, his former place of residence, where he recently died at an advanced age and highly respected by his fellow-citizens. He was succeeded by William L. Weston, who occupied the position for about forty-three years, resigning his place in March, 1884. The present incumbent is Mr. Benjamin E. Newhall.

The present board of directors, 1888, consists of Edwin Mudge, Samuel P. Fowler, Gilbert A. Tapley, John R. Langley, Charles H. Gould, William M. Currier and Austin S. Richards. A complete list of directors, with their terms of service, here follows:

John Page	1836-39, 4 yrs.
Eben Putnam	1836-37, 2 yrs.
Samuel Preston	1836-45-48, 11 yrs.
John Perley	1836, 1 yr.
Elias Putnam	1836-46, 11 yrs.
Daniel F. Putnam	1836-38, 1861-5, 8 yrs.
Joseph Stearns	1836, 1 yr.
Amos Sheldon	1836, 1 yr.
Moses Black, Jr	1836, 1 yr.
Samuel Putnam	1836-40, 5 yrs.
Nathaniel Boardman	1836, 1 yr.
Frederick Perley	1836, 1 yr.
John Wright	1837-60, 21 yrs.
Joshua Sylvester	1839-52, 14 yrs.
Moses Black	1838-56, 19 yrs.
Daniel Richards	1840-86, 47 yrs.
George A. Putnam	1841-45, 5 yrs.
Aaron Putnam	1846-57, 12 yrs.
Joseph S. Black	1846-60, 15 yrs.
Moses Putnam	1847-55, 9 yrs.
Francis P. Merriam, of Middleton	1851-81, 29 yrs.
John A. Putnam	1851-81, 28 yrs.
Edwin Mudge	1855-88, 31 yrs.
John R. Langley	1855-60, 1882-88, 13 yrs.
Israel P. Boardman	1856, 1 yr.
Jacob Perry	1857-61, 5 yrs.
Israel H. Putnam	1858-60, 1861-84, 24 yrs.
Alfred Trask	1861, 1 year.
Samuel P. Fowler	1862-88, 27 yrs.
Gilbert A. Tapley	1862-88, 27 yrs.
Charles H. Gould	1882-88, 7 yrs.
William M. Currier	1885-88, 4 yrs.
Austin S. Richards	1887-88, 2 yrs.

DANVERS SAVINGS BANK.—Under the name of the Danvers Savings Bank, Moses Putnam, Samuel Putnam, Elbridge Trask, their associates and successors, were incorporated March 20, 1850. Its first president, Gilbert Tapley, served from April 26, 1850, to March 30, 1859; his successors, Rufus Putnam, April, 1859, to November, 1875; Israel H. Putnam, January, 1876, to April 29, 1884; Augustus Mudge, from last date to the present. William L. Weston, the first treasurer, was elected to that office and also secretary, May 7, 1850, and after a service of nearly thirty-four years, resigned March 3, 1884. Israel H. Putnam then accepted the position of treasurer, which he continues to hold. A. F. Welch, assistant treasurer since April 11, 1884, was formerly teller in the National Bank. The first deposit was made May 13, 1850; there were three hundred and sixty-four deposits during the first year, amounting to $31,646; and twenty-four payments, amounting to $2823.72; the first dividend amounted to $72.75. For the year ending May 1, 1887, there were 2015 deposits, amounting to $138,587.84. Liabilities, May 1, 1887,—Deposits, $1,065,621.57; profits, $32,061.90; guaranty fund, $33,300; total, $1,130,983.47.

NEWSPAPERS.

The earliest newspapers published in Danvers were printed in the South Parish (now the town of Peabody,) and will be found referred to under the history of that town. *The Danvers Mirror* was first issued by H. C. Cheever, in October, 1870. It led a more or less precarious existence until November, 1875, when it was purchased by C. H. Shepard & Co., the firm consisting of Charles H. Shepard and his sister, Mary E. Shepard. Printing and editorial rooms were at once fitted up by the new proprietors in the Ropes Block, where the paper has since had its home. Mr. Cheever removed from town after selling *The Mirror*, but some years later returned, and for a short time published a paper devoted to the interests of the "Greenback" party. For a time an edition of the *Peabody Press* with the heading "*Danvers Monitor*" had a limited circulation, and several amateur publications have had a short existence. With these exceptions, *The Mirror* has held a monopoly of the local journalistic field since its establishment. Since January 10, 1885, Mr. Shepard has been sole proprietor, and he has always edited the paper. He is a native of Stetson, Maine, and lived in Texas from 1857 to 1866, where he was in the drug business, which business he at first engaged in here, opening, in

July 1873, the new store, in which he was succeeded by E. C. Powers. *The Mirror* has won a deservedly high reputation among newspapers of its class. It is ably conducted and is kept scrupulously clean. Its editorials are always pronounced in their view and in politics are stalwartly Republican. Its files are very rich in material for local history, and have been freely drawn upon in the preparation of the present sketch of Danvers. Early in 1876 a "Centennial Number" was issued in reponse to the invitation of the Exposition managers, in the preparation of which much care was taken, to make a valuable compendium of the history and condition of the town. Chief among the articles of historic value which have been from time to time contributed is a long and exceedingly interesting series of letters, contributed by Rev. A. P. Putnam, D.D., entitled "Danvers at Home and Abroad." Many facts and reminiscences have been thus preserved by Deacon S. P. Fowler, the late Deacon Samuel Preston, Rev. M. K. Cross, the late Hon. J. D. Philbrick, the late William R. Putnam, Miss Hattie P. Fowler and others; while among the more frequent general contributors are the names of Hon. Augustus Mudge, Rev. C. B. Rice, Hon. Arthur A. Putnam, George F. Priest, Charles H. Peabody, Edwin Mudge, from a trip round the world; Miss C. L. Turner, from the Sandwich Islands; Miss H. E. Jenners, from Europe. "Quad" and "A. S. K." contributors of locals from the Centre and Port respectively, are G. F. Priest and A. S. Kelly. W. E. Osborn and H. M. Kenniston have been associated with the printing department from the first.

EDWIN MUDGE.

Edwin Mudge, a shoe manufacturer, born August 4, 1818, was educated at the public and private schools of Danvers and at Andover Academy; resides in Boston one-half of the year,—his firm, E. & A. Mudge & Co., having had a store in Boston for thirty years, to which he has devoted his time. He was one of the selectmen in 1852 and 1853, and a member of the Legislature in 1868 and 1869, contributing all his salary (sixteen hundred and eighty-eight dollars) towards erecting the soldiers' monument in both of the towns of his district, Danvers and Wenham. He has been a director of the Village Bank (now the First National), since 1854, and one of the vice-presidents of the Danvers Savings Bank for several years.

He has spent one year and a half in foreign travel, making three tours—the first to Great Britain, Germany, Switzerland and France; the second extended seven hundred miles up the Nile, through Palestine, Constantinople, Athens and Italy; the third, around the world *via* California through Japan, China, India, Egypt, Spain, France and England, his wife accompanying him upon the two former and his daughter upon all of them. He has always been a thorough temperance man in principle and practice, and in politics a strong Republican.

TOWN OF ESSEX.

A LONG WEDDED LIFE.

John Burnham, now eighty-nine years old (a descendant of the first John, who came in 1635), with his wife, now nearly eighty-one, commemorated the sixty-third anniversary of their marriage December 2, 1887, at their residence, near the North Church.

PEABODY.

WILLIAM KING.

William King, the ancestor of the King family in the vicinity of Peabody, at the age of forty, with his wife, Dorothy, and five children,—Mary, Katheryn, William, Hannah and Samuel—sailed from Weymouth, Dorsetshire, Eng., in March, 1635–36, for New England. He settled at Salem, and was admitted a freeman May 25, 1636. He received several grants of land, one of forty acres at Jeffrey's Creek (now Manchester-by-the-Sea), one of thirty acres at Royal Side, and one of forty acres in the northerly part of the territory now Peabody. His homestead was at Royal Side. In 1637 his name appears on the list of grand jurors He was a member of the First Church, and in 1637 he identified himself with the Antinomian movement, and coming into opposition to the ecclesiastical authorities, he was admonished to sever his connection with that sect, under penalty of being disarmed. It is interesting to note in this early ancestor the same characteristic of independence in thought and action which distinguished Daniel Putnam King.

Mr. King succeeded the Hon. Leverett Saltonstall as Representative to Congress. Mr. Saltonstall was at the time of his death the president of the Essex Agricultural Society, and Mr. King delivered an address before the trustees of that society, June 25, 1843, on the death of Mr. Saltonstall. Mr. King held, at different times, the offices of secretary, vice-president and trustee of the society.

While in Congress he was prominent as a member of the Committee on Revolutionary Claims, and among other efforts in behalf of the veterans of the War of 1812, he labored earnestly for the granting of pensions to wounded privateersmen, as pledged by the act of June 26, 1812.

On the 11th of May, 1846, on a bill declaring that a state of war existed between this country and Mexico, one hundred and seventy-four voted in the affirmative and fourteen in the negative, including in the latter John Quincy Adams, Ashmun, Grinnell, Hudson and Daniel P. King. This minority was named, in a spirit of ridicule, "the immortal fourteen;" but Mr. King more than once afterward, on the floor of the House, upheld his position at that time, and in

his speech of February 4, 1847, on the general appropriation bill and the Mexican War, he said in explanation of his course: "This is a war of conquest, a war for the acquisition of territory; and the fixed determination of the Administration is, that that territory shall be slave territory." In the same speech he said: "But the course of the true patriot, to me, appears plain; the proud waves of slavery must be stayed,—so far, no farther,—it must not invade another inch of free soil. . . .

"For once let the South know that some Northern men have Northern principles; that though they love their favor and approbation much, they love more the favor and approbation of their own neighbors and constituents, and still more the approbation of their own consciences. On this great question of the extension of slavery, with all its fearful consequences, let it never be said of any one representative of the Free States that he sold his vote, and, 'like the base Judean,' for a few pieces of dirty silver, threw away a pearl worth more than all prospects of political advancement—worth more than all prospects of earthly enjoyment."

Such language, and other equally outspoken sentiments in opposition to slavery in the same speech, at that period it required the highest courage to utter in Congress. In his speech of May 21, 1850, upon the California question and the ordinance of 1787, Mr. King reiterated his determination that by no act of his should one foot of slave territory be added to this country, and met the threats of disunion and civil strife with the most unflinching avowal of his principles, paying the highest tribute to the wisdom and statesmanship of Nathan Dane, the author of the famous ordinance of 1787.

In paying a tribute of respect to Mr. King in Congress, the Hon. Robert C. Winthrop said of him, "I can truly say that I have rarely met with a juster or worthier man, or with one more scrupulously faithful to every obligation to his neighbors, his country, and his God."

ERRATA.

Despite earnest efforts to make the sketch of Danvers in the preceding pages free from errors, a few have been noticed, as follows:

On page 426, ninth line of the second column, for "daughter of Governor Winthrop," read "granddaughter of Governor Winthrop," or "daughter of Governor Winthrop, the younger."

On page 440, near the end of the first column, at the commencement of the paragraph concerning the Mudge family, "1724" is a typographical error for "1624."

On page 448, last line but one of the second column, for "flight" read "fight," and on page 491, fourteenth line of the second column, "diary" should be "dairy."

On page 534, second column, the date of the sailing of the Eighth Regiment, November 7th, is given on the authority of Adjutant-General Schouler. A Danvers soldier says, however, the date was November 25th.

On page 522, in the sketch of Dr. Osgood, instead of "He was a son-in-law of Dr. Holten," read "He married a grand-daughter of Dr. Holten."

In the list of physicians of the town, the name of one of the most prominent resident practitioners, Dr. E. A. Kemp, does not appear. The writer cannot sufficiently blame himself for so strange and unpardonable an omission.

Page 547, second column, thirteenth line from bottom, read "is" for "was."

Page 552, first column, first line, read "men" for "man."

Page 563, first column, second line from bottom, read "solicitudes" for "solicitations."

Page 351, first column, eighth line from bottom, read, "In 1844, meeting."

Page 1795, first column, "of that city" should read "Lawrence."

Page 1882, first column, seventeenth line from top should read "In 1833 he."

INDEX.

A.

PAGE

Abbot, Abdel ..(ill) 711
Abbot Academy ... 1620
Abbot, John Emery ... 49
Abbott, Alfred A ... xlv
Abbott, Wm. E ...(ill) 767
Academies (see educational under town headings).
Adams, Benjamin ... 380
Adams family ... 949
Adams, John ... 813
Adams, William ...641, 813
Alcott, Wm. P ... 597
Allen, George H ...(ill) 376
Allen, E. W ... 53
Allen, Wm S ... lix
Alley, John B ...(ill) 360
Alley, Hugh ... 1411
Alling, Jas ... 1451
Amesbury ... 1495
Introductory ... 1495
Boundaries ... 1495
Surface and soil ... 1496
Settlement ... 1496
Saw-mills ... 1497
Townships ... 1498
First meeting-house ... 1499
First minister ... 1499
Indian raids ...1501, 1502, 1507, 1511
Schoolmasters ... 1503
Tything-man ... 1503
Society of Friends ... 1504
Taxes ...1504, 1505
Meeting-houses ...1506, 1507
Free school ... 1509
King George's War ... 1510
The ferry ...1508, 1512
Tornado ... 1512
War of Revolution ... 1513
Shay's Rebellion ... 1515
First President of the United States ... 1515
Small pox ... 1516
Carriage business started ... 1516
Iron-foundry ... 1516
Academy established ... 1517
War of 1812 ... 1517
Iron and nail company ... 1518
Masonic order ... 1518
Silk culture ... 1519
Manufacturing ...1520, 1521, 1524, 1527
War of the Rebellion ... 1522
Speedwell's death ... 1525
Hatting business ... 1528
Cotton and woolen manufacturers ... 1528
Carriage business ... 1528
Schools ... 1529
General matters ... 1529
Newspapers ... 1530
Post-office ... 1530
Biographical ... 1530

PAGE

Anderson, Galusha ... 55
Andrew, Chas. A ... xxxvi
Andrews family ... 1206
Andrews, John ... 1768
Andrews, John ... 226
Andrews, Mrs. Joanna ... 1194
Andros, Sir Edmund ... 10
Andover ... 1556
Early settlement ... 1556
List of settlers ... 1558
Division into North and South Parishes ... 1559
Inhabitants of ... 1560
Indian depredations ... 1561
Witchcraft (see also Witchcraft) ... 1562
Military ... 1564
French and Indian Wars ... 1564
Revolution ... 1570
Rebellion ... 1583
Resistance to taxation ... 1568
Formation of Constitution ... 1579
Powder-mill ... 1582
Washington's visit ... 1583
Loyalty of citizens ... 1583
Andover Company ... 1585
List of officers and privates ... 1585
Memorial ... 1588
Tablet in hall ... 1589
Grand Army of the Republic ... 1590
Topography ... 1590
Churches ... 1592
South Parish ... 1592
South Church pastors ... 1595
West Parish ... 1603
Pastors of West Church ... 1603
Methodists ... 1606
Baptists ... 1606
Protestant Episcopal Church ... 1607
Universalists ... 1608
Free Christian Church ... 1608
Catholic Church ... 1 589
List of native or resident ministers ... 1610
Schools ... 1611
Proprietors' fund ... 1612
Master Foster's School ... 1613
Punchard Free School ... 1613
Phillips Academy ... 1617
Abbot Academy ... 1620
Theological seminary ... 1623
Professors in the seminary ... 1631
Manufacturing and industrial ... 1641
Powder-mill ... 1643
Paper-mill ... 1644
Smith, Dove & Co ...1650, 1652
Ballard Vale Manufacturing Co ... 1654
Craighead & Kintz Co ... 1655
Tyer Rubber Company ... 1655
Banks ... 1655
Insurance ... 1655

PAGE

Appleton, Samuel ... xvi
Appleton, John ... xvi
Appleton, John, Jr ... 628
Appleton, Daniel ... 631
Appleton, Nathaniel ... 641
Appleton, James ... (ill) 659
Arey, Charles ... 46
Armitage, Jos ... 321
Atkinson, Benjamin ...(ill) 1552
Atkinson, Moses ... 1790
Attorneys ... xiii
Attwill, Richard I ... 318
Atwood, Edward S ... 5 2
Atwood, Julius W ... 598
Atwood, Moses ... 2011
Averill family ... 949
Avery, J. H ... 464
Ayer, John ... 1916
Ayres, Hannah ... 1194

B.

Babcock, Rufus ... 54
Babcock, Wm. R ... 46
Babson, Fitz J ... 1353
Bachelder, D. H ... 522
Bachelder, Henry M ... 114
Bachelor, George ... 1
Bachiler, Stephen ... 263
Badger, Milton ... 1600
Badger, Moses ... 2012
Bailey, Eben C ... 1864
Bail y, Ebenezer ... 1869
Baird, W. L ... 261
Baker, D. C ... 260, (ill) 355
Baker, Charles ... 602
Baker, Edward ... 250, 396
Baker, John I ... (ill) 766
Baker, Thomas ... 295
Balch, John ... 682
Balch, John ... 2
Baldwin, John R ... 261
Ballard, M. H ... 590
Ballard, Wm ... 394
Ballou, Hosea ... 56, 467
Bancroft, C. F P ... 1619
Bar of Essex County ... lx
Barker, James K ... 870
Barnabee, James ... 465
Barnard, Eleazar ... 62
Barnard, Thos ... 36, (ill) 49, 138
Barnard, Thos ... 1497
Barnard, Thomas, Jr ... 49
Barnard, Rev ... 1996
Barstow, Gideon ... 2111
Bartholomew, Richard ... 992
Bartlet, Wm ... (ill) 1804
Bartlett, Bailey ... 2009
Bartlett, Israel ... 2010
Bartlett, Josiah ... 1856

PAGE

Bartlett, Wm. F 2017
Bartlett, Wm 1767
Barry, Eugene 319
Bassett family 309
Batchelder family 850
Batchelder, H. F 523
Batchelder, Josiah 709
Batter, Edmund 991
Bayley, James 452
Bayley, Robert 1778
Beamen, C. C 53
Beane, Samuel C 41
Becket, Retire 106
Becket, Wm 106
Beede, Charles O (ill) 375
Beede, Edward M 601
Bell, Wesley K (ill) 673
Bench and Bar xv
Benjamin, Charles A 184
Bennett, Josiah Chase (ill) 369
Bennett, Samuel 293, 395
Bensel, James B 319
Bentley, Dr. Wm 13, 13, 138
Berry, Eben. G (ill) 566
Berry family 940
Berry, Thos. xviii, 630
Bertram, John 112, (ill) 233
Beverly 674
Physical features 674
Birds 676
Earliest white inhabitants 679
Early settlers 682
Chronology of events 683
First Church of Beverly 684
Incorporation 686
Narragansett War 688
Massacre of "Flower of Essex" 688
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft") 690
Pioneer families 693
Events of the 18th Century 695
Cleav's diary about Battle of Bunker Hill 701
Muster rolls 705
Notable persons 709
Mother churches 711
First meeting-house 714
Baptist Church 715
Third Congregational Church 715
Civil history 716
Banks 716
Libraries 717
Charitable societies 717
Insurance companies 717
Earliest Sunday-school in New England 718
Militia 718
Introduction of coal 721
Beverly Academy 721
Stage-coaches 724
Universalists 724
Mexican War 724
"The California Fever" 725
Whittier's poem on Rantoul, Jr 726
Beverly Insurance Co 727
Last survivor of the Revolution 727
Anti-Slavery Society 730
Beverly in the Civil War 730
Street railways 735
Methodist Society 736
Cemeteries 736
Longevity 736
Roman Catholic Society 737
Schools and education 738
Fire Department 743
Water-Works 743
Societies 744

PAGE

Post-office 745
Beverly Representatives 745
Shoemaking 747
Improvements 748
Census and statistics 750
Population 753
Biographical 754
Home of Moses Brown (ill) 755
Brown coat-of-arms (ill) 755
Biglow, Wm. 143
Birchard, Elijhalet 595
Blair, John J 1603
Blake, Lyman H 1139
Blanchard, Nathaniel 1479
Blancys, The 1478
Blatchford, Hy 52
Blatchford, John 1359
Blodgette, George B 1128
Blumpey, Philip H (ill) 1843
Blunt, Wm. E (ill) 2080
Blynman, Richard 1404
Boardman, Francis (ill) 1127
Bolles, E. C 56
Bolles, Lucius 54
Bomer, Jos Edward 599
Boston & Maine Railroad xcix
Boston, Revere Beach & Lynn Railroad. c
Boston, Winthrop & Shore Line c
Boswell, James A 403
Boswell, John A 1368
Botany and Zoology lxxviii
Bourne, Wm xviii
Bowditch, Nathaniel 11, 15, 140
Bowen, Duane V 61
Bowley, Edwin (ill) 2065
Boxford 957
First settlement 957
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft") 958
General description 958
Religious history 959
First Parish 959
Second Parish 960
Third Parish 962
Early physicians 958
Military 962
Early companies 962
King Philip's War 962
Revolutionary struggle 963
War of 1812 963
War of the Rebellion 964
Schools, libraries, etc 964
Business and manufacturing 965
Distinguished natives 966
Lists of town officers 967
List of Representatives 967
Biographical 971
Boynton, Ebenezer 812
Boynton, E M 1885, (ill) 1886
Boynton, Jonathan 812
Bracey, Thos 581
Bradbury, Ebenezer 1778
Bradbury, John M 664
Bradbury, Theophilus xxiii
Bradbury, Thos. 1455, 1456
Bradford 2083
Rogers' plantation 2083
Resources and industries of town 2087
Erection of the town 2089
Old settlers 2090
First meeting-house 2090
First school-house 2090
Early church history 2090, 2091
Indians and Indian deed 2091, 2107
Bradford Academy 2093, (ill) 2099, 2108
Merrimac Academy 2100, 2108
Small-pox 2100

PAGE

Population 2100
Military 2102
Roster of soldiers 2103
Centennial celebration 2108
Colored people's settlement 2108
Biographical 2109
Bradford Academy (ill) 2099
Bradford, Ebenezer 1138
Bradstreet, Anne 612
Bradstreet, Humphrey 1154
Bradstreet, Jonathan 811
Bradstreet, Nathaniel 1767
Bradstreet, Simon 1578, 1654
Braman, Isaac (ill) 859
Braman, Milton P (ill) 456
Brand, James 471
Brazer, John 50, 141
Breed, Allen 259
Breed, Andrews 260
Breed, Francis W (ill) 364
Breed, Isaiah (ill) 355
Breed, H N (ill) 67, 269
Breed, Stephen N 358, (ill) 358
Bremner, David 1365
Bridges, Robert 294
Briggs, Elijah 107
Briggs, Enos 107
Briggs, Geo. W 37
Brigham, Lincoln F lviii
Brocklebanks, The 812
Brockwell, Chas 44
Brooks, Chas. T 146
Brooks, Henry M 225
Browne, Samuel xvi
Browne, Wm xvi, xviii
Brown, Haydn (ill) 1884
Brown, Isaac 1225
Brown, Jonathan 1538
Brown, John, Sr 912
Brown, John B (ill) 641
Brown, Joshua 108
Brown mansion and arms (ill) 755
Brown, Moses (ill) 1808
Brown, Moses 709, (ill) 755, 1766
Brown, Nathaniel 226
Brown, Nicholas 395
Brown, Robert 18
Brown, Wm A (ill) 1249
Brown, Wm. G (ill) 668
Bruce, Chas. C 1739
Bubier, Samuel M 581
Buffum, James N 261
Burley, Edward 709
Burley, Wm 709
Burnham, Andrew 1191
Burnham, George P 1199
Burnham, Jonathan 1182
Burnham, Lamont G (ill) 1183
Burnham, Parker 1205
Burnham, T. H. P 1198
Burpe, Thomas 815
Burr, Austin 1699
Burrell, John T 46, 9, 691
Burrell, John xvi
Burrill, Theophilus xviii
Burrills, The 1478
Burroughs, George 452
Burton family 850
Buxton, John and Anthony 993
Byfield, Nathaniel 818

C.

Cabot family 709
Cabot, Joseph S 225
Caldwell, Alexander (ill) 1846
Calley, Samuel 226

PAGE

Calman, Henry 58
Carleton, James H ..... (ill) 2073
Carlile, Thomas 46
Carrier, Martha 1564
Caruthers, Wm 471
Chaffin, Aaron W 466
Chandlers, The 820, 821, 826
Chaplin, Jeremiah 461
Chase, P. M 522
Chase, R. F 474
Chase, Stephen 380
Cheever, Amos 1284
Cheever, Edward 400
Cheever family 642
Cheever, George B 53, 142
Cheever, Samuel 1065
Cheverns, John 56
Chipman, John xxiv
Choate, David 1203
Choate family 1207
Choate, John ..... xviii, 630
Choate, Joseph H 151
Choate, Rufus ..... (ill) xxxi, xcii, 15, 150, 1201
Churches (see churches under each town heading)
Church of All Saints ..... (ill) 756
Church of Immaculate Conception ..... (ill) 1795
Clapp, Dexter 44
Clark, Daniel 1198
Clark, De Witt S 49
Clark, Peter 137
Clark, Peter 454
Clark, Seth ..... 1469, (ill) 1468
Clark, Thomas J ..... (ill) 1469
Clarke, Wm 992
Claxton, Timothy lxxxiv
Cleaveland, Ebenezer 1361
Cleaveland, John P 48
Cleaveland, John 1167, 1168, 1172
Cleaves, Nathaniel, diary of 701
Clement family 1910, 1913, 1917, 1927
Clement, Harrison D 870
Cleveland, Charles D 142
Cleveland, Henry R 16
Cleveland, Richard J 147
Coss, Wm 1337
Coates, David 1752
Cobbet, Thos 265
Coffyn, Tristram 1910
Coggin, Jacob 591
Cogswell, Addison ..... (ill) 1208
Cogswell, George ..... (ill) 2109
Cogswell, Jno. B. D 1893, 2083
Cogswell, John 1154
Cogswell, Joseph G 642
Cogswell, Nathaniel xxix
Cogswell, Rufus 1194
Cogswell, Wm 226
Coit, Thos. W 46, 145
Colby, Abraham ..... (ill) 1170
Colby, Joshua 1544
Coldam, Clement 295
Cole, Robert 991
Colleges (see "Educational" under town headings).
Collyer, J. P 602
Colman, Henry 147
Colman, Moses ..... (ill) 1735
Conant, Roger 2, 19, 161, 681
Coolidge, Cornelius 1419
Cooper, Jas W 1364
Corbet, Thos 582
Corliss, George 1916
Cornelius, Elias 48, 140
Curtis, Zacheus 992
Curwin, Jonathan ..... xvi, 691

PAGE

County officers ..... viii, ix, x
Cranch, William xxix
Cressy, Oliver S 1226
Cromack, Joseph C 602
Cropley, Jacob M ..... (ill) 1126
Crosby, Alpheus 148
Cross, Henry M ..... (ill) 1851
Cross, Stephen and Ralph 1752
Crowell, Robert 1172
Crowley, Daniel 472
Crowninshield, Benj 11
Crowninshield, Edward A 149
Crowninshield family 111
Crowninshield, Jacob 11, 2111
Cummins, David xxxi
Cummine, Marin 153
Currier, John, Jr 1517, 1786
Currier, W. H. B 1441
Curtin, Enoch 313
Curwin, George 108
Curwin, George R 34, 44
Cushing, Caleb ..... xvii, (ill) xxxvii, 1451, 1790
Cushing, John N 1780
Cushing, Stephen 602
Cutler, Rev. M 1213, 1213, 1215, 1217
Cutler, Rufus 1225

D.

Dadman, J. W 602
Dalton, Tristam xxiv
Daly, Wm 57
Dame, Albert L 784
Dame, Chas. C ..... (ill) 1837
Dana, Daniel 1779
Dana, Joseph 589, 642
Dane, Francis 1225
Dane, Nathan ..... xxiii, 709
Danvers 424
Folly Hill 425
Cutting the cross from King's banner 425
Early settlers 425
Danvers Lunatic Hospital 428
Incorporation 441
Origin of town's name 441
Small-pox scare 443
Inoculation 441
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft") 453
Military 444
Revolutionary War 444
Events preceding the war 447, 448
Hutchinson's company 449
Page's company 449
Flint's company 449
War of the Rebellion 541
Danvers part in raising troops 535, 536
The monument 536
Co C, 7th Regt 537
1st Regt Heavy Artillery 539
2d Regt. Heavy Artillery 539
3d Regt. Heavy Artillery 539
4th Regt Heavy Artillery 540
5th, 6th, 7th and 8th Regts 540
13th and 20th Vet. Res. Corps 541
Ecclesiastical:
First church 452
List of church officers 458
Baptist denomination 459
Universalists 467
Maple Street Church 470
Officers of Universalist Society 472
Catholic 473
Episcopal 474
Methodist 474
Seventh Day Advent 475

PAGE

Educational:
Early schools 476
First Grammar School 476
School code 476
High Schools 480
Modern schools 482
Danvers Village 484
Early settlers in 485
Fire in Danvers 487
Danversport 488
Description of 489
Early settlers of 490
Tapleys and Tapleyville 494
Temperance 495
Fire Department 497
Anti-slavery movement 503
Railroads 508
The centennial 509
Division of Danvers 511
Industrial 518
Agriculture 518
Shoe business 519
Brick-making 520
Physicians 521
Attorneys 523
Danvers Lunatic Hospital 523
Literary societies 523
Bowditch Club 524
Danvers Women's Association 524
Secret societies 524
Civil history 525
Town clerks and records 526
Moderators 527
Representatives 527
Treasurers 527
Selectmen 528, 529
Civil War 531
Banks 2112
Danvers Bank 2112
Warren Bank 2112
Village Bank 2112
Danvers Savings Bank 2113
Newspapers 2113
Davis, Edward F 260
Davis, Edward S ..... (ill) 357
Davis, George L ..... (ill) 1693
Davis, Joseph ..... (ill) 377
Davis, Thomas 1911
Davis, Wm. T 161, 1535, 1694, 1706, 1869
Dearborn, Henry A. S xxviii
Delong, H C 469
Denison, Daniel 619
Denison, Joseph 601
Dennison, Jno 583
Derby, Caroline R 153
Derby, Elias Hackett ..... xii, 11, 14, 66, 71, 80, 83, 175, 1012.
Derby family 109
Dexter, Thomas 395
Dexter, Thomas 1409
Dexter, Timothy 1765
Dickinson, E. W 464
Dillingham, F A 469
Dinan, Jas 424
Dixey, Wm 251
Dodge, A W 1226
Dodge, Francis 1225
Dodge, Granville M ..... 556, (ill) 557
Dodge, Miss Mary A 1226
Dole, Richard 815
Donovan, Jno. C 612
Dove, Jno ..... 1651, (ill) 1652
Dow, Ezekiel 595
Dow, Moses 594
Downing, Amos W ..... (ill) 2082
Downing, Sir George 994

PAGE

Drinkwater, Arthur 463
Ducachet, Henry W 46
Dudley, George T. 578
Dudley, Samuel 1198
Dummer Academy 1719
Dummer, Richard 1717, 1719
Dunbar, Asa 36
Duncan, James H (ill) xlvi, 2011
Dungeon Rocks 314
Dunning, Wm. H. 1363
Dwinell, Israel E. 52

E

Eames, Ezra (ill) 1407
Eaton, Joseph W. 465
Eaton, Peter 2012
Eaton, Wm. W. 522
Eastman, C. L 602
Eddy, R 1298
Edwards, Bela Bates 1636
Edwards, Justin 1599
Elliott family 950
Emanuel Church (ill) 1290
Emerson, Brown 52
Emerson, John 1305
Emerson, Michael 1926
Emerson, Ralph Waldo 1154
Emery, Eliphalet 1893
Emery, George E 318
Emery, Samuel H 62
Emery, Samuel M (ill) 1876
Endicott, Capt. John 2, 425, 738
Endicott, Governor John, 6, 8, 19, 44, 161, 426, (ill) 228.
Endicott, Robert 710
Endicott, Wm 427
Endicott, Wm. C (ill) lii, 150
English, Philip 8, 44, 168, 691
Essex 1153
Introductory 1153
Persons of prominence from 1153
First English residents 1153
Original landholder 1155
Early inhabitants 1155
Musconomo's deed 1155
Indian cunning 1155
Attorneys and notaries 1159
Schools 1161
Improvement in general 1161
Industrial 1156
Farming 1156
Fishing 1157
Brewing 1157
Early boat-building 1157
Cordage 1158
Saw and grist-mills 1158
Ship-building 1158
Spar-making 1159
Printing 1159
Blacksmithing 1159
Wheelwright 1159
Painters 1160
Tanning 1160
Shoe manufacturing 1160
Cider-mills 1160
Provision dealers 1160
Express business 1160
Seed planting 1160
Ice business 1160
Churches 1161
First Church minister 1162
Second minister 1165
Whitfield's power as an orator 1166
Davenport the fanatic 1166
Church troubles 1167
Third minister 1168
Church of Separatists 1168

PAGE

First Baptist preaching 1176
First religious newspaper 1176
Universalist Society 1174
Military 1179
Pequot War 1179
King Philip's War 1179
Narragansett 1179
Indian troubles 1180
French War 1180
Battle of Bunker Hill 1181
War of 1812 1184
Soldiers in Rebellion 1185
Witchcraft (see also "Witcraft") 1188
Court proceedings 1187
Slavery in Chebacco 1187
Grave yard robbery 1188
Incorporation of town 1190
Town officers 1190
Post-office 1190
Physicians 1190
The professions 1191
Members of Legislature 1191
Temperance organizations 1191
Public commemoration 1191
Essex Branch Railroad 1192
Hog Island 1193
Centenarians 1194
Summer resorts 1195
Historical houses and localities 1195
Congregational Meeting-House 1197
Name Chebacco, significance of 1197
Grand Army 1197
Prominent persons 1198
Descendants of Jno. Cogswell 1199
Early surnames 1200
Biographical 1200
Conomo Point 1210
Miscellaneous 1210
A long wedded life 2111
Essex County:
Introductory i
Plymouth Council i
Massachusetts colony i
Courts i, ii, iii, iv, x
Organization of county iii
Population iv
County officers viii, ix, x
Lawyers xiii
Bench and bar xv
List of bar lx
Modes of travel lx
Science in Essex County lxxvi
Geology and mineralogy lxxvii
Botany and zoology lxxviii
Early Lyceums, spirit of lxxxiv
Miscellaneous xcvii
Salem 1
Lynn 249
Lynnfield 377
Saugus 391
Danvers 424
Ipswich 566
Beverly 674
Methuen 769
Georgetown 794
Lawrence 864
Middleton 929
Boxford 967
Topsfield 972
Peabody 989
Marblehead 1058
Rowley 1128
Essex 1153
Hamilton 1210
Wenham 1229
Manchester 1249

PAGE

Gloucester 1298
Rockport 1354
Nahant 1408
Salisbury 1441
Swampscott 1472
Amesbury 1495
Merrimac 1535
Andover 1556
North Andover 1657
Groveland 1694
Newbury 1708
Newburyport 1737
West Newbury 1860
Haverhill 1893
Bradford 2083
Essex Agricultural Society xcvii
Essex Institute lii
Essex North District Medical Society xcix
Essex South Medical Society xcix
Estes D. Gordon (ill) 1534
Estey family 950
Eveleth, Jos. 1194
Eveleth, Mary 61
Everleth, Jno 1283

F

Fabens, Wm xxxvi
Faris, Wm 1771
Farley, Michael 619
Farnham, Daniel xxiv, 1744
Faulkner, Enoch 1227
Fay, Richard S (ill) 363
Felt, Joseph B 142, 1218
Felton, Cornelius C 1868, (ill) 1889
Felton, Samuel M (ill) 1883
Fisher, Ebenezer 56
Fisher, Joshua 710
Fisher, Nathaniel 45, 141
Fisheries, Treatics of 1326
Fisk, Samuel 35, 46
Fiske, Wm 816
Fitch, Jabez 684
Fitz, Daniel 90, (ill) 655
Firmin, Giles 1907
Fletcher, James 470
Flint, Charles L (ill) 953
Flint family 950
Flint, Kendall (ill) 2078
Flint, James 43, 141
Flower of Essex 186, 249, 688
Folly Hill 424
Foster, Ann 1563
Foote, Caleb (ill) 247
Foote, H W 151
Forbes, Henry P 489
Forster, Israel (ill) 1298
Foster, Benj 459
Foster, Gideon 1044
Foster, Jedediah xxxvi
Foster, W H 198
Fowler, Edgar 523
Fowler, S. P (ill) 583
Frankland, Sir Harry 1073
Franks, James P 64
French, Jonas H (ill of rec.) 1372, (ill) 1551
French, Jonathan 1507
Frisbie, Levi 586, 642
Frost, W. G 841
Frothingham, Octavius B 50
Frothingham, Wm 403
Frye, Peter xviii
Fuller, Daniel (ill) 456
Fuller family 950
Fuller, Maria A 57
Fuller, Timothy 920

G.

PAGE

Galbraith, John. 603
Gale, Wakefield. 1363
Gallison, John xxv
Gallonp, Chas. W (ill) 1483
Gallonpe, Isaac F (ill) 568
Gardeus, Nicholas 1437
Gardner, F. A. 523
Gardner, A. P. (ports. of) 1226
Garrison, Wm. Lloyd (ill) 1782
Gause, Henry C. 154
Gedney, Bart. xxi, 691
Georgetown 791
Description of. 794
Topography 794
Land grants 798
Early pioneers. 799
Parish organization 817
Churches. 817
Education 821, 822
Schools. 822, 823
Library 824
Parish and religious movements. 825
General town history 830
Cemeteries. 842
Manufacturing interests. 843
Military history. 848
Modern history 852
Biographical. 859
Gibbs, Henry. xviii
Gibbs, Josiah W. 142
Giddings, John E (ill) 764
Gifford, B. R. 598
Gilbert, Addison (ill) 1353
Gloucester 1298
Settlement 1298
Growth. 1299, 1300
Government 1302
Churches. 1304
First Parish. 1304
Second Parish 1308
Third Parish. 1309
Fourth Parish. 1310
Fifth Parish. 1311
Universalists 1312
First Soc. 1313
Second Soc 1314
Fourth Soc 1314
Fifth Soc 1315
Sixth Soc. 1315
Seventh Soc 1315
Baptists 1315
Second Baptist Church. 1315
Methodists. 1316
Congregationalists 1317
Roman Catholics. 1318, (ill) 1519
Episcopalian 1321
Swedenborgian 1321
Post-office. 1331
Educational.
Schools. 1322, 1323
Lyceum. 1324
Libraries 1324
Newspapers 1328
Fisheries. 1325
Review of treaties 1327
Industries 1330
Shipbuilding 1330
Foreign and domestic trade 1334
Quarries. 1334
Granite companies. 1343
Military. 1333
Indian wars. 1333
Capture of Louisburg. 1333
Revolutionary struggle. 1334
Revolutionary soldiers. 1334, 1335
Privateering. 1336
War of the Rebellion. 1340
Rosters. 1341
Biographical 1351
Goodell, Jonathan W (ill) 370, 371
Goodell, Robt. 991
Goodhues The 1207
Goodhue, Benj. 11
Goodwin, Alfred E (ill) 1552
Goss, Thos 1359
Gould family 951
Gray, Wm. 11
Gray, John J. 57
Gray, Wm. 111
Greely, Adolphus W 1793
Green, Joseph. 453
Green, Thos. 460
Greenleaf, Simon. xxvii
Greenleaf, Jonathan. 1753
Griswold, Alex. V. 46
Grosvenor, David A., Jr 522
Groveland. 1694
Description 1694
Early settlers. 1694
Erection of meeting-house. 1694
Lists of early church members. 1695
Later churches 1696, 1703
School committee 1697
School buildings. 1697
Present school system. 1698
Military. 1698
Revolution. 1698
Rebellion 1701
Roster of soldiers. 1702
Incorporation. 1699
Town-meetings. 1700
Selectmen 1700
Moderators. 1700
Representatives 1700
Ferry 1703
Insurance company. 1703
Banks 1703
Industries. 1703, 1704
Biographical 1706
Gunnison, Wm. (ill) 1553
Gushee, Edward M. 46

H.

Hagar, D. B. 153
Hames, George F. 61
Hale, E. J. M. (ill) 2067
Hale, Benj. 1368, (ill) 1814
Hale, Rev. Edward E 21
Hale, John. 691
Hale, Josiah L. (ill) 1834
Hale, Moses 818, 1139, 1718
Hamilton 1210
Introductory. 1210
Divisionists 1211
Churches 1212
First Church built. 1212
Second Church building. 1213
Early history of 1214
Sabbath-schools. 1217
Church rebuilt 1219
First Congregational Society. 1220
Universalist Society. 1220
Asbury Camp-Meeting Association 1220
Schools. 1213, 1221
Incorporation 1217
Political. 1222
Military 1223
Revolution 1223
Rebellion 1224
Roster of soldiers from Hamilton 1224
Biographical. 1225
Population. 1227
Business interests 1227
Burial Grounds 1228
Miscellaneous. 1228
Hammatt, Abraham 612
Hanford, Chas. H. 603
Hanford, J. L. 602
Haraden, Jonathan. 12
Hardy, Jos. 106
Harmon, Nathan W xlvi
Harrington, Leonard B (ill) 246
Harriman, Jonathan 812
Harris, Samuel. 594
Hart, George D. 261
Haseltine family 2090, 2107
Haskell, Daniel H. 1784
Haskell, Wm. Henry (ill) 1554
Hathaway, Wm. F 1120
Hathorne, Wm. xvi
Hathorne, John xvii, 691
Haverhill. 1893
Name. 1893
Location 1893
The Wards. 1894
Early settlers 1895
Geology of. 1896
Fauna and flora of 1896
Topography of. 1901
Settlements 1905
The Pentuckets. 1909
Indian deed 1909
Building of the town 1911
First town-meeting. 1911
First-settlement. 1913
Churches:
First meeting-house. 1896
Early ministers. 1895
Their influence. 1906
New meeting-house. 1920
Resignation of Mr. Ward 1933
Settlement of Mr. Rolfe. 1944
New meeting-house. 1947
Settling ministers. 1971
Baptists 1996, 2017
Episcopacy. 2044
Church work. 2046
Congregationalists. 2047
Universalists. 2047
St. James' Catholic Church 2048
Division of lands. 1914
Valuation of early lands. 1914
Early commerce. 1915
Training-days 1919
Indians. 1919, 1938, 1941, 1942, 1946, 1949
Whipping post. 1920
Ox-common. 1921, 1929
Early orchards. 1921
Saw-mill. 1922, 1947
Grist-mill 1923
Laying out meadows 1923
First prison 1925
First death 1925
The ferryman. 1925, 1926
The blacksmith 1927
The schoolmaster 1927
Schools. 1927, 1928
Fines for neglect to attend town meeting. 1928
Duties of selectmen 1930
Length of town-meetings 1931
A freeman's oath 1932
The shoemaker 1933
Sheep-raising. 1935
Dispute about town boundaries 1936
Small-pox. 1946

PAGE

Witchcraft (see also "witchcraft")... 1965
War about the Commons 1969
Slavery in Haverhill..... 1973
Emigration 1976
Local events 1978
Boundary line dispute 1984
Frontier warfare..... 1990
French War..... 1992
Fire Club..... 1993
Controversy in West Parish 1995
Revolutionary War..... 1998
Visit of Washington..... 2001
Business after the War of Revolution 2002
Schools and societies..... 2007
The press..... 2019, 2020
Industries and manufacturing..... 2021
Civil war..... 2025
Rosters of soldiers and marines..... 2027
Population..... 2050
School and city statistics..... 2051
Town officers and representatives..... 2051
Grand Army..... 2053
Banks 2053
Societies..... 2054
Biographical..... 2056
Hawkes, Adam..... 395
Hawkes family..... 308
Hawthorne, John..... 322
Hawthorne, Julian 145
Hawthorne, Nathaniel.....14, 16, 143, 742
Hazen, John and Samuel..... 814
Hazen, Nathan W..... xxxi
Healy, J. J.....1320, (ill) 1319
Healy, J. W 595
Henchman, Nathaniel..... 266
Herrick, A. F 602
Herrick, Henry..... 709
Hewes, James T 38
Higginson, Anna..... 991
Higginson, Francis.....29, 136
Higginson, John.....xvi, 23, 32
Higginson, Stephen..... xvii
High, Wm. C..... c02
Hincks, Edward W.....(ill) 362
Hill, Wm. M..... 227
Hobbs, Clarence W 318
Hodge, Michael 1750
Hodge, Michael.....xxxvi
Hodgkins, Joseph..... 618
Hodges, Benj..... 67
Hodson, F... 468
Holbrook, Willard..... 595
Holbrook, Willard..... 1139
Holmes, Oliver W..... 1154
Holman, Edward..... 596
Holman, Sydney..... 403
Holroyd, John..... 464
Holt, Thomas..... 1173
Holton, Samuel.....445, 521
Holyoke, Edward..... 1072
Holyoke, Dr. Edward A.....10, 137, 169
Hood, George.....259, 260, (ill) 352
Hood, M. H.....(ill) 1414
Hood, Richard..... 1414
Hood, Richard..... 259
Hooper, Robert..... 447
Hopkins, Daniel..... 51
Hoppin, James M..... 151
Horton, Nathaniel..... 1769
Hosford, B. F.....(ill) 2063
Hosmer, George H..... 44
Hovey, George O..... .....(ill) 1352
How, David..... 2069
Howard, R. B..... 1364
Howe, Benj..... 596
How, Isaac R..... xxxvi

PAGE

How, Joseph S 769
Howe, Moses A 602
Howe, Nathaniel 644
Howe, W. G ..... (ill) 1303
Hubbard, Wm..... 582, 605
Hudson, Thomas..... 395
Humphrey, John.....294, 991
Humphrey, John..... 1473
Hunt, Ebenezer..... 522
Hunt, Wm..... 247, (ill) 236
Huntingdon, Arthur L..... 227
Huntington, Asahel.....xx, 226
Huntington, John..... 47
Hurd, Isaac..... 267
Hurd, Y. G.....(ill) 666
Huse, Thomas..... 1779
Hutchinson, Anne..... 6, 20
Hutchinson, Col. Israel..... 451

I.

Ingalls, Edmund.....251, 259
Ingalls, Francis..... .....254, 259, 1472
Ingersol, Richard..... 428
Ingersol, Nathaniel 428
Ingalls family..... .....951, 1479
Ingalls, Wm..... 1778
Ipswich..... 566
Description of..... 567
Indians and customs..... 567
Planters..... 568
Pioneers..... 569
Incorporation..... 569
Early settlers' names..... 570
Government and officers..... 571
Firemen..... 572
Hog-ringers 573
Fence-viewers 573
Town crier..... 573
Roads and turnpikes..... 574
Bridges and canals..... 575
Carriages 575
Mail service..... 575
Town-house..... 575
List of voters..... 576
Villages 576
Topography..... 576
Old pioneers 578
Ecclesiastical..... 579
Organization of the first church.. 579
Early pastorates..... 580
South Parish and Church..... 589
Linebrook Church. 591
Baptist Society..... 597
Methodist Episcopal Church ... 599
Unitarian Society 603
St. Joseph's Catholic Society..... 603
Educational..... 604
Grammar School..... 604
First teachers 605, 606
Manning school 607
District schools..... 608
Ipswich Female Seminary..... 610
Sunday-schools..... 610
Libraries..... 611
Books..... 611
Newspapers 611
The Burley Fund..... 611
Military 612
Pequod War..... 613
Philip's War..... 613
Cost of war..... 614
William's War. 614
Anne's, George's and French Wars..... 614
The Revolution..... 615
Shay's Rebellion.. 620

PAGE.

War of 1812. ... 620
War of the Rebellion 621
Soldiers' Monument..... 621
Roll of honor ... 621
Colonial period 625
Great Court..... 625
Ipswich Courts ..... .626, 631
Officers of..... 627
Jurisdiction of..... 627
Jail ..... .627, 632
Representative men..... 627
Resistance to tyranny 628
Provincial period..... 629
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft") 629
Early records..... 631
Leading men..... 632
County buildings..... 632
Industrial 634
Farming..... 633
Description of land..... 634
Productions..... 634
Statistics of..... 635
Fisheries..... 635
Commerce 636
Trades. 636
Grist-mill machinery 637
Saw-mills 637
Fulling-mills 637
Cloth manufacture..... 637
Woolen-mills..... 638
Lace manufacture..... 638
Cotton manufacture..... 638
Money 639
Benefactions and charities..... 639
Commons..... 640
Societies..... 640
Statistics of business..... 641
Absent natives 641
Biographical..... 647
Ireson, Benj..... 1101
Israel, Fielder..... 38
Ives, Stephen B..... xlv

J.

Jackson, Chas.....xxxii
Jackson, Jonathan..... 1748
Jackson, Patrick T..... 867
Jackson, Samuel C..... 1603
Jacques, Alden P..... .....(ill) 2081
Jeffrey, Wm..... 568
Jenners, Thos 1242
Jennison, Wm... 42
Jewett, David..... 1362
Jewett, Geo. B..... 151
Jewett, Jedidiah... 1138
Johnson, Caleb.....1414, (ill) 1412
Johnson, Chas. T 603
Johnson, David N..... 318
Johnson, Edward..... 1014
Johnson, Edward J..... 1408
Johnson, Ebenezer..... 1782
Johnson family. 309
Johnson, F. H..... 1149
Johnson, Francis. .....992, (ill) 1149
Johnson, John..... 1412
Johnson, Jonathan 1413
Johnson, Joseph ..... .(ill) 1413
Johnson, Samuel. 16
Johnson, Wm. F 200
Johnson, Wm. R . ...(ill) 1854
Jones, Anthony S..... ..(ill) 1852
Jones, Philip..... .....1432, (ill) 1532
Josselyn, Aaron 600
Joyslin, Wm. R..... 1139

K.

Kelly, Geo. W..... 1249
Kent, Richard, Jr 1716

PAGE

Keysar, Geo. 1475
Kibby, Epaphras 601
Kidner, Reuben 598
Kimball, Charles (ill) 661
Kimball, David T. 586, 647, 648, (ill) 648
Kimball, Edward D. (ill) 237
Kimball, Edward P. (ill) 654
Kimball, Jos. E. 645
Kimball, Josiah F. 319
King, Daniel, and family 1476
King, Daniel P. xl, (ill) 1046
King, James P. (ill) 1058
King, John G. xxx
King, Rufus xxviii
King, William 2114
Kittredge, Ingalls, Sr. 764, (ill) 765
Kittredge, Thomas 1678
Knapp, H. 469
Knapp, Jacob N. 1777
Knapp, Samuel L. xxviii
Knight, Frederick. 1149
Knight, Joel 601

L.

Ladd, Daniel 1914
Laird, Jos. H. 1603
Lamson, John 1190
Lander, Sarah W. 153
Lasell, Nathaniel (ill) 1532
Lawrence 861
Introduction 861
Description 861
Indians 863
Lawrence Bridge 865
The charter 866, 875
Water-power 867
Early manufacturing 869
Builders 870
Hotels 874
Early post-offices 875
List of early town officers 875
Tables of population 876
Representatives 877
Public buildings and parks 878
Cemetery 879
Fire Department 880
Water-works 880
Sanitary arrangements 881
Police and courts 881
Industrial School 883
Newspapers 883
Societies 883
Masonic 883
Odd Fellows' 884
Benefit Insurance 884
Benevolent societies 884
Grand Army 884
Musical societies 885
Y. M. C. A. 885
Flower Mission 886
Educational 886
Public schools 887
High School 887
Oliver Grammar 888
Packard School 888
Evening schools 888
Sewing-school 889
Training school 889
Private schools 889
Industrial 889
Lawrence Machine Shop 889
Bay State Mills 890
Washington Mills Company 891
Atlantic Cotton Mills Company 891
Pacific Mills 892
Lawrence Duck Company 893
Everett Mills Company 894

PAGE

Pemberton Mill Company 894
Lawrence Woolen-Mill 897
Arlington Mills 897
Lawrence Gas Company 897
Wright Manufacturing Company 898
Merrimac Braid-Mill 898
Globe Worsted-Mill 898
Prospect Worsted-Mill 898
Butler File Company 898
Lawrence Spindle Works 898
Lawrence Coffee and Spice Mills 898
Downing Rubber Company 898
Stanley Manufacturing Company 898
Card clothing 898
Bleachery 899
Spicket Mill 899
Wamsit Mill 899
Machine Company 899
Merrimac Machine-Shop 899
Stedman & Smith 899
Boiler Works 899
Brass Works 899
Williams & Smith 899
Manufacture of paper-mill machinery 899
Line Company 899
Wheel Company 899
Shuttle Companies 899
Beach Soap Company 900
Briggs & Allyn Manufacturing Company 900
Lumber Company 900
Flour-Mill 900
Merrimac Paper Company 900
Bacon Paper Company 900
Monroe Felt and Paper Company 900
Public Library 902
Churches 905
Lawrence West Congregational 905
Central Congregational 906
Eliot Congregational 906
Methodists 907
Baptists 907
Free Baptists 908
Parker Street Methodist Episcopal 908
First Unitarian 908
First Universalist 908
South Congregational 908
Presbyterian 909
St. James' and St. John's Episcopal 909
Second Baptist 909
Riverside Congregational 909
Bodwell Street Methodist Episcopal 909
German Methodist 910
St. Thomas' Episcopal 910
Roman Catholics 910
Lawrence in the Rebellion 912
List of volunteers who died in service 914
Soldiers' and sailors' monument 916
Roster of soldiers 918
Biographical 928
Lawrence, Abbott 867, 869
Lawrence, Chas. (ill) 556
Lawson, Deodat 452
Lawyers xiii
Leach, Ezekiel W. (ill) 1297
Leach, Thomas 1295
Lenvitt, Dudley 37, 47
Lee, Jeremiah 1085
Lee, Jos. 709
Leeds, Geo. 46
Lennox, Patrick (ill) 376
Leonard, Geo. 59
Leslie, Geo. 592

Lewis, Alonzo 317, (
Lewis, Jacob M.
Linall, Timothy x
Literature 135, 21
Little, Jacob 17
Littlehale, Richard 191
Livermore, E. St. L. lix
Lodge, John E. (ill) 1426
Longfellow 1425
Longstroth, Lorenzo L. 1601
Longley, Rufus 2010
Lord, Asa (ill) 647
Lord, Geo. R. 633
Lord, Nathaniel J. (ill) xliii
Lord, Nathaniel, Jr. (ill) xxx
Lord, Nathaniel (3d) 633
Lord, Otis P. (ill) xliv
Lord, Robert 628
Loring, Bailey (ill) 1687
Loring, Geo. B. 135, 148, 1657, (ill) 1689
Lothrop, Capt. 688
Lothrop, Thos. 683
Lovering, Hy. B. 261
Low, Abiel A. (ill) 243
Low, John 1198
Lowe, Chas. 50
Lowell, John xxiv
Lowell, John 868
Lowell, John 1755
Lowle, John 1716
Lunt, Ezra 1755
Lunt, George xli
Lunt, Henry 1717
Lunt, Micajah (ill) 1858
Lyceums lxxxiv
Lyford, John 44
Lynde, Benj. (1st) xvii
Lynde, Benj. (2d) xvii
Lynn 249
Population 249, 259, 461
Indians 250
Early Settlers 250
Names of early settlers 252
Origin of name 253
Natural features 253, 254
Productions 256
Divisions of territory 257
Civil history 258
City charter 260
Mayors 261
Taxation, etc. 261
Almshouse 261
Fire Department, etc. 261
Police Department 262
Water works 262
Banks 262
Post-office 262
Ecclesiastical 263
Churches:
First Church 263
Unitarian Congregational 268
Methodist 269
Baptist 269
Christian 269
Universalist 269
Second Advent 270
Protestant Episcopal 270
Roman Catholic 270
Swedenborgian 271
Educational:
Early schools 272
Quaker schools 273
Present schools 274, 276, 277
Libraries 277
Newspapers 278
Lynn Reporter 280

PAGE

Lynn City Item 280
Daily Evening Item 280
Lynn Ice 230
Industries :
Iron Works 280
Planting and fishing 282
Cloth manufacture 283
Shoes and leather 283
Miscellaneous mfrs 289
Electric lighting 290
Hat finishing 290
Ice business 290
Military :
Early Indian troubles 292
Persons of prominence 292, 296
King Philip's War 296
French and Indian War 296
The Revolution 296
War of 1812 297
Seminole War 297
Mexican War 298
War of the Rebellion 298
Grand Army of the Republic 298
Burial-places 299
Old burying-ground 300
Friends' Burial-Place 301
Eastern Burial-Place 304
Pine Grove Cemetery 304
St. Mary's (R. C.) Cemetery 304
Almshouse ground 304
Old families 306
Dungeon Rock 314
Lynn writers 316
Taverns 320
Lynn Hotel 327
Indian deed to Lynn 330
Lynn colonies 331
Slavery and its abolition 332
Secret societies 334
Drinking customs and temperance movement 335
Free public forest 336
Chronological mention 337
Lynn Regis 345
Biographical 348
Lynn, C. B 470
Lynnfield 377
Description of 377
Early settlement 378
Surface 378
Flora 379
Fauna 379
Ecclesiastical :
First Parish 379
Orthodox Evangelical Society 381
South Village, Congregational 381
Methodist 381
Newburyport Turnpike 385
Fires in the woods 385
Old currency 385
Gold and paper currency 386
Siamese Twins 386
Prize fighters 386
Golden spike 386
Epizootic 386
Surplus revenue 386
Forest Hill Cemetery 385
Statistics 387
Chronological events 390
Biographical 390

M.

Magee, James 67
Manchester 1249
Boundaries and topography 1250
Early settlers 1250

PAGE

Aborigines 1257
Annals, 1700 to 1800 1260
Annals, 1800 to 1887 1272
Churches 1282
Early church 1282
Baptist Church 1288
Staying over 1290
Tything-man 1290
Early houses 1291
Saw-mills 1292
Grist-mills 1292
Cabinet-making 1292
Shipmasters 1294
Longevity 1296
Valuation 1296
Biographical 1296
Mann, Ebenezer 107
Mann, Joel 53
Manning, Richard H. ..... (ill) 608
Mansfield, Andrew 307
Mansfield, Nathaniel B. ..... 248b, (ill) 248a
Map, outline, of county ..... (ill) i
Marblehead 1058
Indian history 1058
Indian relics 1060
First settlers 1060
Fishing industry 1061, 1063, 1075
Grants of land 1061
First ship built 1062
First meeting-house 1063
Ordination of Mr. Cheever 1065
Purchases from Indians 1066
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft") 1067
Superstitious beliefs 1067
The town in 1714 1070
Dialect of the people 1070
Pirates, capture of fishermen 1071
Town Hall built 1071
Small-pox scourge ..... 1072, 1076, 1078, 1081, 1100.
Fishermen's tax 1072
Agnes Surriage 1073
Whitefield's advent 1074
Fire Department 1075
French and Indian War 1076
Work-house 1077
Rules for hucksters 1078
Contests with the Crown 1078
Slavery in 1079
Resistance of sailors to impressment 1079
Destruction of Small Pox Hospital 1082
Oppression by the Crown 1083
Militia 1084
Minute-men 1084
British frigate in harbor 1085
Battle of Lexington 1085
Committee of Safety 1085
Landing of British on Homan's Beach 1085
First American privateer 1084, 1087
Death of James Mugford 1087
Loyalists punished 1088
Ship "Franklin" and her exploits 1087
Restoration of peace 1090
Glover's brigade 1090
Battle of Long Island 1091
General description of Marblehead regiment in war 1776 1091
Naval history of Marblehead in Revolution 1093
Visit of Lafayette 1098
Washington's visit 1098
Incidents of bravery 1098, 1099, 1100
Organization First Methodist Church 1098
First post-office 1099
Marblehead Academy 1099
Bank established 1100

PAGE

Fishermen pressed into British navy 110
The embargo 11
Skipper Ireson 1101
Seizure of Marblehead vessels 1101
Resolutions sent to Congress 1102
Light infantry organized 1103
Gerry elected Governor 1103
First Baptist Church organized 1103
War of 1812 1103
Sabbath-schools organized 1106
Second visit of Lafayette 1106
Columbian Society 1106
Shoe manufacture 1106, 1116
First newspaper 1107
Grand Bank incorporated 1107
Light-house 1107
President Jackson's visit 1107
Fire Department 1107, 1108, 1109, 1117
Universalist Society 1107
Schools 1107
Surplus revenue 1108
Stages 1108
Anti-Slavery Convention 1108
Seaman's Charitable Society 1107, 1108
Ship-building 110
Sons of Temperance 110
Roman Catholic 1110
Industries and manufacturing 1110
Civil War 1111
Fire in 1867 and 1877 ..... 1116, 1119
Grand Army of Republic 1117
Savings Banks 1117
Red Men's Society 1117
Abbott Hall 1118
Monument 1118
Abbott Library 1119
Reservoir 1119
Death of Garfield 1120
President Arthur's visit 1121
Lasters' Protective Union 1121
Street railways 1121
Marblehead as a summer resort 1122
Biographical 1122
Marland, Abraham 1045
Marsh family 2011
Marsh, John J. ..... (ill) liv
Marshall, Capt. Thos 291, 522
Marston, Benj ..... xv, ii
Marston, Stephen W. xxvii
Martin, Augustus B. ..... (ill) 371
Martin, George 1502
Martin, John 1 36
Martin, Josiah 324
Martin, Knott V. ..... 1120, (ill) 1127
Marvin, Josiah 403
Massachusetts colony 1
Massacre of the Flower of Essex 688
Mason, Chas 46
Mason, John 568
Mather, Cotton 1845
Mather, Nathaniel 136
Maule, Thos 136
McArthur, Jno. A ..... (ill) 370
McDaniel, Benj. F 59
McGilchrist, Wm 45
McIntire, Chas. C 1363
McQuade, Paul 57
Merchant, E. W ..... 1354, (ill) 1352
Merrill, Benjamin xix
Merrill, C. A 603
Merrill, Geo. E 55
Merrill, James C 2012
Merrill, Jas. Cushing xix
Merrill, Jas. H 1695
Merrill, Joseph 1195
Merrill, Samuel xxxvi

PAGE

Jerrill, Thos. T. ..(ill) 1551
errimac..... 1535
Description 1535
Early settlement..... 1536
First meeting-house..... 1536
First minister..... 1536
Names of settlers. 1537
Churches:
First church..... 1536
Early ministers.....1536, 1540
Congregational societies..... 1540
Baptist Society 1541
Methodist Society..... 1541
Episcopal..... 1541
Catholics..... 1542
Schools 1542
School Boards..... 1542
Military..... 1542
French War..... 1542
Revolution..... 1543
Shay's Rebellion..... 1543
War of the Rebellion 1544
Post-office..... 1544
Ferry..... 1544
Amesbury Manufacturing Co..... 1544
Fire Department..... 1544
Merrimac Savings Bank..... 1545
Amesbury Branch Railroad..... 1545
Incorporation of town..... 1545
Selectmen..... 1546
Town hall..... 1546
Public Library..... 1546
Masonic..... 1546
Odd Fellows..... 1546
Grand Army..... 1546
Y. M. C. Association..... 1546
Nat'l League of America..... 1546
Ladies' Relief Corps..... 1546
American Legion of Honor..... 1547
Representatives..... 1547
Manufacturing interests..... 1547
Merrimacport 1548
Biographical..... 1549
Messervey, Wm. S. 226
Metcalfe, Joseph..... 578
Methuen..... 769
Description of..... 769
Topography and geology..... 770
Indian relics..... 770
First whites..... 771
Early town proceedings..... ....775, 778
Revolutionary matters..... 779
Roster of soldiers..... 779
Early inhabitants..... 782
Early school systems..... 785
Churches of..... 786
Newspapers of..... 790
Cemeteries 791
Business interests..... 791
Biographical..... 792
Middleton..... 929
Description..... 930
Early grants..... 930
First settlers..... 930
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft")..... 931
Trial of John Willard..... 932
First ministers..... 933, 934
Methodists..... 937
Scarcity of money, 1740..... 938
Revolutionary incidents..... 939
Essex turnpike built 942
War 1812-1814..... 942
Selling the poor at auction..... 943
First manufactory..... 943
Graduates of colleges..... 944
Post-office..... 945

PAGE

Public-houses and stores..... 945
Cemetery..... 946-949
Public libraries. 946
Schools 947
Roads 947
Mills 948
Earthquakes..... 948
People of color..... 949
Genealogy of early settlers..... 949
Biographical 953
Mighills, The.....798, 817, 1139
Military :
In Salem..... 184
In Lynn..... 292
In Georgetown..... 818
In Lawrence..... 912
In Boxford..... 962
In Topsfield..... 979
In Marblehead..... 1111
In Rowley..... 1141
In Essex..... 1179
In Hamilton..... 1223
In Sangus..... 420
In Danvers..... 444
In Ipswich..... 612
In Beverly.....705, 718
In Methuen..... 779
In Middleton..... 942
In Peabody..... 1008
In Wenham..... 1238
In Gloucester..... 1333
In Manchester (see annals of Manchester).
In Rockport..... 1370
In Nahant 1417
In Salisbury..... 1453
In Swampscott..... 1485
In Amesbury.....1513, 1517, 1522
In Merrimac..... 1542
In Andover..... 1564
In N. Andover..... 1668
In Groveland..... 1698
In Newburyport..... 1734
In W. Newbury..... 1866
In Haverhill 1998, 2025
In Bradford..... 2102
Mills, Robt. C..... 55
Minot, Geo xlv
Minot, Stephen .....(ill) 2068
Mitchell, J. C..... 474
Modes of travel..... lx
Montgomery, Geo..... (ill) 1848
Montowampate..... 311
Mooar, George..... 1603
Mordough, John H..... 1219
Morgan, Wm. F.....(ill) 374
Morong, Thos..... 588
Morrill, Edmund.....(ill) 1470
Morrill, Geo. W.....(ill) 1533
Morrill, John.....(ill) 1471
Morse, John S.....(ill) 1549
Morss, Jos. B.....(ill) 1829
Morton, Marcus.....liii, lvii
Mosely, Ebenezer.....xxxvi
Motley, John L..... 1426
Mottey, Joseph..... 380
Moulton, Daniel..... 1869
Moulton, John T ..... 318, (ill) 374
Moulton, Robt..... 992
Moulton, Solomon..... 318
Moulton, Wm..... 1771
Mudge, B. F..... 260
Mudge, Edwin 2114
Mudge, Enoch.....317, 601
Mudge, Enoch R.....1480, (ill) 1490
Mudge, Ezra W..... .....260, (ill) 356

PAGE

Mudge family..... 440
Mudge, Robert R..... 298
Murray, John.....1170, 1307, 1312
Mussey, R. D..... 143

N.

Nahant..... 1408
Early traditions..... 1408
Early settlements..... 1409
Nahant in 1800..... 1415
Military 1417
War of 1812 1416
Civil War..... 1434
Hotels..... 1417
Steamboat landing..... 1418
Steamboats..... 1418
Sea serpent..... 1419
Incorporation..... 1423
Summer residents..... 1425
Fishing interests..... 1427
Industries..... 1430
Shipwrecks and storms..... 1430
Churches..... 1432
Schools 1432
Improvements..... 1435
Long and Short Beaches. 1436
Little Nahant..... 1437
Cemetery 1437
Cadets 1437
North Shore..... 1437
Iron mine..... 1438
Spouting Horn..... 1438
Bass Beach..... 1438
Pulpit Rock 1439
Conclusion..... 1441
Valuation..... 1441
Representatives..... 1441
Town officers..... 1441
Nash, Lonson..... xxxvii
Neal, Peter M..... 269
Needham, Sumner H..... 912
Nelson family.....840, 1130, 1767
Nelson, Henry M..... 794
Nelson, Jos..... 812
Nelson, Solomon..... 817
Nevins, David.....772, (ill) 792
Nevins, Winfield S..... 129
Newbury..... 1706
Introduction..... 1706
Early settlement..... 1707
Churches:
First Church..... 1707
Early ministers.....1711, 1712
Baptist Church..... 1714
Parish incorporated..... 1718
Friends' Society 1718
Congregational Church..... 1718
Byfield Church..... 1725
Methodist..... 1726
Plymouth Brethren..... 1726
Military..... 1708
Pequod War..... 1708
French and Indian War..... 1721
Soldiers in French and Indian War..... 1721
Revolution..... 1723
Soldiers in Revolution 1723
War of 1812..... 1727
Rebellion 1727
Rosters..... 1747
First mills.....1708, 1710, 1729
Incorporation and petition..... 17 9
Freeholders..... 1710
Early incidents..... 1711
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft")..... 1714
Old settlers..... 1716

PAGE

Town House.. 1718
Dummer Academy... 1719
West Newbury incorporated.. 1727
Schools.. 1728
Industries.. 1730
Ship-building.. 1730
Inventions.. 1732
Biographical.. 1733
Newburyport.. 1737
Incorporation.. 1737, 1738
Town officers.. 1739
Duties.. 1742
Stamp Act.. 1743
Early loyalty.. 1743
Committee of Safety.. 1744
First privateer.. 1748, 1763
Incorporators.. 1751
Industries.. 1756
Ship building.. 1758
Registry of vessels.. 1768
State Constitution.. 1760
Taxation burdensome.. 1761
Annoyance of French privateers.. 1762
Military.. 1744
Revolution.. 1744
Lists of Soldiers.. 1745
Privateers.. 1763
War of Rebellion.. 1791
Old settlers.. 1764
Visit of President Monroe.. 1772
Establishment of banks.. 1772
Essex and Merrimac Bridge.. 1773
Lafayette's visit.. 1774
Navigation laws of 1820.. 1774
Manufacturing interests.. 1775
Town officers.. 1777
Lists of vessels built.. 1787
Wards of the town.. 1788
Mayors of the town.. 1789
Rosters of soldiers.. 1792
Churches.. 1794
St. Paul's.. 1794
Church of the Immaculate Conception.. 1795
First Religious Society.. 1800
First Presbyterian.. 1801
Fourth Religious Society.. 1801
Second Presbyterian Church.. 1801
North Congregational Church.. 1801
Belleville Church.. 1801
Green Street Baptist Church.. 1801
Purchase Street M. E.. 1801
Washington Street M. E.. 1802
Newhall, Benj. F.. (ill) 422
Newhall, Edward.. (ill) 361
Newhall family.. 307, 381, 382
Newhall, Henry.. 355, (ill) 354
Newhall, Horace M.. 318
Newhall, Isaac.. 317, (ill) 359
Newhall, Jacob.. 325
Newhall, James R.. 49, 377, (ill) 350, 1472
Newhall, J. W.. 318
Newhall, Josiah.. (ill) 390
Newhall, Thomas B.. Hii, (ill) Iii
Newhall, Wilbur F.. 391
Newspapers (see "The Press" under the several town headings.)
Newton, B. F.. 598
Nicholet, Charles.. 33
Nichols, Andrew.. 522, 1046, (ill) 541
Nichols, Benj. R.. xxxi
Nichols, John.. 403
Nichols, Robert B.. 45
Nichols, Wm.. (ill) 1518
Niles, W. H.. (ill) Iiii
Norcross, A. F.. 1364

PAGE

Norris, John.. 15
Norris, Rev. Edward.. 92
North Andover.. 1657
Description.. 1657
Early settlers.. 1658
Manners and customs.. 1659
Early dwellings.. 1660
Ecclesiastical.. 1663
Early ministers and churches.. 1663
Civil and military.. 1668
Federal Constitution.. 1674
Civil War.. 1680
Industries.. 1684
Educational.. 1681
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft").. 1685
Associations.. 1687
Biographical.. 1687
Northend, Wm. D.. 180
Norton, John.. 581
Norwood, Seth.. (ill) 768
Norwood, Zacheus.. 324
Nourse, Rebecca.. 426
Nowell, Moses.. 1745
Noyes, Charles J.. (ill) hv
Noyes, Daniel.. 631
Noyes, Nicholas.. 34
Noyes, Thomas.. xvi
Nye, James M.. (ill) 360
Nye, Joseph W.. 318

O.

Ober, F. A.. 674
Ober, Richard.. 694, 728
O'Doherty, Rev. Father.. 2.18
Old modes of travel.. lx
Oliver, Andrew.. xvii, 137
Oliver, Benj. L.. xxxvi, 11, 141
Oliver, Daniel.. 143
Oliver, Henry K.. 15, 227, (ill) 238
Ordway, Aaron.. (ill) 929
Organization of county.. iii
Osborne, Theodore M.. 989
Osgood, Chas. S.. 63
Osgood, Gayton P.. xxviii, 1689
Osgood, Gayton Pickman.. 2111
Osgood, George.. 522
Osgood, Jos. B. F.. 226
Osgood, Samuel.. 1677
Otis, James.. 1581
Otis, Samuel A.. 1752

P.

Page, David P.. (ill) 1831
Paine, Nathan.. 600
Paine, Robert.. 578
Paine, Robert T.. 1768
Paine, Wm.. 605
Palfrey, Peter.. 2
Palmer Charles R.. 49
Palmer, Edwin B.. 588
Palmer, Henry.. 1919
Palmer, J. A.. 958
Park, Edwards A.. (ill) 1642
Parker, Henry G.. (ill) 1193
Parris, Samuel.. 4.3
Parsons, Harry.. 176
Parsons, James.. 1
Parsons, Jonathan.. 1764
Parsons, Obediah.. 267
Parsons, Theophilus.. (ill) xx
Patten, Charles B.. (ill) 1471
Patten, Robert.. (ill) 1531
Payson, Edward.. 1137
Peabody.. 980
Preliminary.. 989
Topography.. 989

I

Early settlers.. 1
Developments.. 1
Early troops.. 1
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft").. 1
Separation of Middle Precinct.. 1
Middle Precinct.. 1
Building of meeting-house.. 1
School tax and separation from Salem.. 1
District of Danvers.. 1
Manners and customs.. 1
Military.. 1
Revolutionary War.. 1
List of soldiers in Revolution.. 1
Military companies.. 1022,
Civil War.. 1
Lists of companies.. 1
Town resolutions.. 1
Lexington monument.. 1
The great fire.. 1
Centennial celebration.. 1
Growth of manufactures.. 1
East and West India trade.. 1
Banks.. 1
Insurance.. 1
Freemasons.. 1
Agriculture.. 1
Social changes.. 1
Education.. 10
Newspapers.. 1016
Temperance movements.. 1019
Old-time taverns.. 1020
The almshouse.. 1021
Female benevolent societies.. 1021
Aqueduct, water.. 1022
Industries of.. 1027
Valuation.. 1027
Schools.. 1028
Peabody High School.. 1028
Temperance reform.. 1028
Law and Order Society.. 1028
Soldiers' monument.. 1028
Representatives and town officers.. 1028
Societies.. 1029
Newspapers.. 1029
Fire Department.. 1029
Cemeteries.. 1030
Churches.
South Parish Second Congregational.. 1030
First Unitarian.. 1033
First Methodist Society.. 1034
Second Universalist Society.. 1036
Second Baptist Society.. 1037
Rockville Congregational.. 1037
West Congregational.. 1037
St. John's Roman Catholic.. 1039
St. Paul's Mission (Episcopal).. 1039
Peabody Institute.. 1040
Ebenezer Sutton Reference Library.. 1042
Grand Army Republic.. 1043
Old Ladies' Home.. 1044
Biographical.. 1044
Sources of information.. 1045
Peabody, Andrew P.. (ill) 757
Peabody, Elizabeth P.. 1
Peabody family.. 9
Peabody, Francis.. 15, 229, (ill 230
Peabody, Geo.. 510, 1051, 1770
Peabody, John.. 228
Peabody, Jos.. 12, 69, 112, (ill) 229
Pearson, Eliphalet.. 1643
Peaslee, Jos.. 1497, 1
Peaseley, Jos.. 1416
Peatfield, Jas.. (ill) 672
Perit, John.. 1437

PAGE

...ns, Dr. John ... 383
...ns family ... 1201
...ns, Jacob ... 1198
...ns, Jacob ... 1749
...ins, Jonathan C ... xliv, 145
...ins, John ... xix, 390, (ill) 391
...ins, Nathaniel ... 816
...kins, Thos. H ... 67
...ley, Asa ... 958
...ley, David T ... (ill) 669
...ley, John ... 597
...y, M. V. B ... 566
...y, Samuel ... 646.
...y, Sidney ... 957, 972, 1229
Gardner P ... (ill) 1704
...s, Andrew ... 932
...s, Hugh ... 6, 8, 31, 136, 186, 1230
...s, Austin ... (ill) 1639
...wick, John D ... 478
Academy ... 1617
Eben B ... (ill) 1191
family ... 1470
...ps, Samuel ... 1136, 1198
...ps, Samuel ... 1595, 1615, (ill) 4592
...ps, Stephen C ... 16, 225, (ill) 236
...ps, Stephen H ... (ill) xlviii
...ring, Henry ... 141
...ring, John ... xxiii, 15, 138, 993
...kering, Octavius ... xxv
...ckering, Theophilus ... 1162
...kering, Timothy ... 11, 13, 15, 137, (ill), xxii
...kett, John ... (ill) 767
...kett, Moses A ... 1100
...kman, Benj ... xix, xxii, 11
...ckman, Dudley L ... (ill) 231
Pickman, Wm. R ... 46
Pigot, Geo ... 44
Pierce, Benj ... 141, 146
Pierce, Chas. H ... 146
Pierce, Daniel ... xvi
Pierpont, John ... 1765
Pierson, A. L ... 151
Pierson, Wm. H ... 590
Pike, Daniel P ... 1784
Pike, Nicholas ... 1752
Pike, John ... 1139, (ill) 1150
Pike, Robt ... 1447, 1455
Pillsbury, Amos D ... 871
Pingree, Pavel ... 225
Pinson, Mary ... 312
Pinnei, Thos ... 813
Plummer, Benj ... 811
Plummer, Hezekiah ... 873
Plymouth Council ... i
Poole, Fitch ... 1053
Poor, Joseph ... (ill) 1057
Poore, Ben: Perley ... (ill) 1873
Pope, Joseph ... 429
Population ... 1
Porter family ... 438
Porter, Moses ... 450
Porter, Nehemiah ... 1168, 1191
Porter, Samuel ... xxxi
Porter, Thos. F ... 319
Potter, Daniel ... (ill) 673
Power, Thos. E ... 474
Poyen, John S ... (ill) 1555
Pratt, S. H ... 62
Prescott, Wm ... xix
Prescott, Wm. H ... 147
Prescott, W. H ... 1125
Press, The (see "Press" under town headings).
Price, Jonathan ... 521
Prince, John ... 36, 138, 1152
Proctor, John ... 991, 995

PAGE

Putnam, Alfred P ... (ill) 547
Putnam, Amos ... 521
Putnam, Archelaus ... 521
Putnam, Edmund ... 467
Putnam, Elias ... (ill) 542
Putnam family ... 431
Putnam, Hiram B ... 49
Putnam, Jacob ... (ill) 235
Putnam, James ... 522
Putnam, J. W ... 469
Putnam, Oliver ... 1767
Putnam, Samuel ... (ill) xxxii
Pynchon, Wm ... xxiv

R.

Raioni, Chas ... 474
Ramsey, Wm. H ... 44
Rand, Edward S ... 1769
Randall, Ephraim ... 403
Rantoul, Robert ... (ill) 728
Rantoul, Robert, Jr ... xli, 147, 724, xcii, (ill) xli
Rantoul, Robert S ... 152, lx, lxxxiv
Rawson, Edward ... 1716
Raymond, Geo ... 709
Raymond, John M ... 227
Reed, Nathan ... 11
Reed, Thos ... 991
Reyner, Humphrey ... 1136
Rhodes, Dea. Asa ... 398
Richards, Richard ... 307
Richardson, A. M ... 596
Richardson, Thos. P ... 260
Roads, Samuel, Jr ... 1058
Roberts, David ... 150, 226, 1225
Robinson, Dean ... 1867, (ill) 1871
Robinson, Jno ... lxxvi
Roby, Jos ... 401
Rockport ... 1354
General description ... 1354
First settlers ... 1358
Facts of interest ... 1359
Churches ... 1361
First minister ... 1361
Second Congregational ... 1364
Pigeon Cove Chapel ... 1365
Methodist Episcopal ... 1366
First Universalist ... 1367
Second Universalist ... 1368
Baptist Society ... 1368
Catholic Church ... 1369
Protestant Episcopal ... 1369
Military ... 1370
Revolution ... 1370
Privateering ... 1372
War 1812-15 ... 1374
Civil War ... 1389
Rosters of soldiers and histories of regiments ... 1390
Small-pox ... 1372
Drought, storms and sickness ... 1372, 1397
Fishing ... 1373
Fire Department ... 1373
Temperance and moral reform ... 1375
Women's Raid ... 1377
Fires ... 1378
Industrial:
Cotton-mill ... 1379
Oil-cloth ... 1379
Stone quarrying ... 1380
Post-office ... 1380
Banks ... 1383
Celebrations ... 1383, 1384
Rockport Railroad ... 1388
Town hall ... 1397
Rescue of three young men from drowning ... 1398

PAGE

Town Library ... 1398
Agriculture ... 1398
Rescued mariners ... 1399
Murder of Gilman ... 1399
Landing of the cable ... 1400
Deceased physicians ... 1402
A bomb-shell in church ... 1404
Deceased clergymen ... 1404
Newspapers ... 1404
Coal ... 1404
Ice ... 1404
Telegraph ... 1404
Insurance companies ... 1404
Lyceum ... 1404
California gold fever ... 1404
Y. M. C. A ... 1404
Almshouse ... 1405
Roads ... 1405
Cemeteries ... 1405
Secret societies ... 1406
List of veterans ... 1406
Biographical ... 1407
Rockwood, Otis ... 267
Rocky Hill Church ... (ill) 1468
Rogers, Daniel ... 630
Rogers, Ezekiel ... 796, 799, 1128, 1135
Rogers, Jno ... 583, 584
Rogers, Nathaniel ... 581, 584
Rogers, Nathaniel L ... 112
Rogers, Richard S ... (ill) 232
Rogers, Samuel ... 631
Rolfe, Benj ... 1895, 1942
Rollins, Jos. R ... 861
Ropes, Nathaniel ... xxiv
Rowell family ... 1530
Rowell, Jacob ... (ill) 1530
Rowell, Jno ... (ill) 1470
Rowe, Jos ... (ill) 1353
Rowley:
Formation of Rogers' Company ... 1128
Division of land into lots ... 1128
First settlers who obtained lots ... 1128
Original survey in 1661 ... 1133
Churches:
First Church ... 1135
Church of Byfield Parish ... 1139
Church of Bluebrook Parish ... 1139
Baptist Church ... 1139
First Universalist Parish ... 1139
Education in 1647 ... 1140
Military ... 1141
Revolution ... 1141, 1142
Shay's Rebellion ... 1144
War of 1812 ... 1144
Early volunteers ... 1144
Civil War ... 1141
Roster of soldiers ... 1145
Industrial ... 1148
Early enterprises and manufactures ... 1148
Glen Mills ... 1149
Town records and clerks ... 1149
Biographical ... 1150
Rowley, Edwin ... 2065
Russ, Jno. D ... 1199
Russell, Wm. A ... (ill) 901
Rust, Richard S ... (ill) 665

S.

Safford, Daniel E ... 1211, 1225
Sagamore, James ... 311
Salem:
Introductory ... 1
Early settlements ... 2
Hanging of Quakers ... 7
Whipping of women ... 7

PAGE

Manners and customs 9
Early reminiscences 10
First navy furnished 12
Near-sighted people 13
Social rank 13
Division of Congregational Society 15
War of 1812 15
Periods of city's progress 17
Ecclesiastical 17
Puritan character 19
Laying on of hands *23
The Covenant 24
Early ministers of First Church 29
Quakers 33
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft") 34
Persecution of Quakers 40
Commercial history 63
Early shipping interests 64, 65
Canton trade 66
India trade 71
Batavia trade 73
Sumatra trade 75
Manila trade 80
Isle of France trade 82
The Mocha trade 83
Madagascar trade 84
Zanzibar trade 84
Cape of Good Hope trade 86
Australian trade 86
Fiji Islands trade 86
South American trade 88
The West Coast of Africa trade 92
West India trade 93
Trade with Spain and Portugal 95
Miscellaneous trade 96
Mediterranean trade 98
Nova Scotia trade 101
Salem tonnage 102
Whale fishery 103
The coasting trade 103
The Custom-House 103
Collectors of customs 104
Marine insurance companies 105
Ship-building 106
Merchants of Salem 108
Banks:
The Essex 114
The Salem 114
The Merchants' 114
The Commercial 114
First National 114
The Exchange 114
The Asiatic 114
The Mercantile 115
Merchants' and Traders' 115
The Naumkeag 115
Bank of General Interest 115
North American 115
Salem Savings 115
Salem Five Cents Savings 115
Churches:
First Church 28, 29, 30
Tabernacle Church 36, 46
Confederate Church 36
Society of Friends 39
East Church 41
St. Peter's Episcopal 44
North Church 49
South Church 51
Howard St. (or Branch) Church 52
First Baptist Church 54
Free-Will Baptist Church 55
Universalists 55
Roman Catholic 56
Methodist Episcopal 57
Second Methodist 58

PAGE

Wesley Methodist 58
Independent Congregational 58
Central Baptist 59
Crombie Street Church 59
Second Advent 61
Grace Episcopal 61
Swedenborgian 61
Calvary Baptist 61
Seamen's Bethel 62
Colored people's church 62
Mormons' Society 63
Deaf-Mutes' Society 63
Lutheran Swedish 63
Literature 135
Defunct industries 139
Coal interests 159
Horse railroads 160
Railroads 161
Settlement 161
Boundaries defined 161
First town officers 162
List of selectmen 163
Essex County established 165
Early buildings 165a
Early town government 165a
Description of Salem and its industries in 1836 ..... 165a
City seal adopted 165b
The water system 165c
Witchcraft delusion (see also Witchcraft) 165a
Societies:
Literary and scientific 166
Salem Athenæum 167
Social Library 167
Philosophical Library 168
Athenæum 168
Plummer Hall 168
Essex Institute 169
Essex Historical 169
Essex County Nat. Hist. Soc. 170
East India Marine Society 175
Peabody Academy of Science 178
Salem Lyceum 179
Salem Fraternity 180
Young Men's Union 180
Salem Charitable Mechanic Association 180
Odd Fellows and Masons 180
Military:
Salem's early defenses 185
First engagement 185
Indian skirmishing 185
War against the French 188
Privateers 188, 192, 195, 196
Flower of Essex 186
Early wars 189
War of Revolution 190
Lexington and Bunker Hill 191
Raising of troops and building of forts 191
Subscriptions for a naval vessel 194
War of the Rebellion 200
Salem's gallant support 202, 203
Incidents of interest, enlistment, etc 202
2d Mass. Vol. Inf 203
9th Regt. Vol. Inf 204
23d Regt. Vol. Inf 204
19th Regt. Vol. Inf 204
24th Regt. Vol. Inf 204
11th Regt. Vol. Inf 205
40th Regt. Vol. Inf 205
17th Regt. Vol. Inf 205
32d Regt. Vol. Inf 205
35th Regt. Vol. Inf 205

PAGE

28th and 29th Regts. Vol. Inf 205
54th and 57th Regts. Vol. Inf 206
Sharpshooters 206
1st Regt. Mass Heavy Art 206
2d and 3d Regts. Mass. H. A 206
4th Regt. Mass Light Bat 206
5th and 13th Regts Mass. Light Bat 206
3d Regt. Mass. Cavalry 206
2d Regt. Mass. Cavalry 207
1st Regt. Mass. Cavalry 207
48th, 49th and 7th Mass. Militia Regts 207
4th Heavy Art 207
61st Inf 207
Frontier Cav 207
Enlistments in the navy 207
Lists of soldiers and privateers in early wars 1812, *et al.*, 208, 209, 210, 211
List of Mexican War enlistments. 211
List officers and soldiers War of the Rebellion 212, 21
Educational 1
Early free schools 1
First school-master 1
First school for girls 1
Boys' Latin School 1
Boys' and girls' high schools 1
Grammar and writing schools 1
Women's Reading School 1
Charity School 1
Colored children's schooling 1
Girls' education, disadvantages of 1
State Normal school for Girls 1
Private Schools 1
Schools of 1887 ..... 134, 1
Manufacturing 1
Leather 1
Strikes in 1
Cotton 1
Shoes 1
Jute bagging 1
White lead 1
Oil 1
Paints, etc 1
Type-writers 1
Cars 1
Gas Co 1
Electric Light Co 1
Miscellaneous 1
The Press:
Essex Gazette 1
Salem Gazette and Newbur
Newburyport Advertiser 1
American Gazette 1
Salem Gazette and Gener
vertiser 1
Salem Gazette 11
Salem Chronicle and Essex Advertiser 1
Salem Register 1
The Weekly Visitant 1
The Friend 1
Humorous publications 1
Gospel Visitant 1
Salem Observer 1
Salem Courier 1
The Hive 1
Ladies' Miscellany 1
Essex County Mercury 1
Salem Advertiser 1
Saturday Evening Bulletin 1
The Constitutionalist 1
The Landmark 1
The Light-house 1

PAGE

Essex County Democrat..... 126
The Harrisonian..... 126
The Whig..... 126
Genius of Christianity..... 126
The Christian Teacher..... 126
The Locomotive..... 126
Essex County Washingtonian..... 126
Salem Washingtonian..... 126
Independent Democrat..... 126
Voice of the People..... 126
Voice Around the Jail..... 126
The Evangelist..... 126
Essex County Reformer..... 127
Temperance Offering..... 127
Salem Oracle..... 127
Essex County Times..... 127
Free World..... 127
Salem Daily Chronicle..... 127
The Asteroid..... 127
Essex County Freeman..... 127
National Democrat..... 127
Union Democrat..... 127
Massachussetts Freeman..... 127
People's Advocate..... 127
Salem Daily Journal..... 128
The Essex Statesman..... 128
The Post..... 128
The Salem Evening News..... 128
Evening Telegram..... 128
Daily Times..... 128
Salem Public..... 128
Civil history..... 225
List of city officials..... 227
Biographical..... 228
ılisbury..... 1441
First settlements..... 1441
Boundaries..... 1442
Early grants..... 1443
Carr's Ferry..... 1445
Churches and schools..... 1446
Early incidents..... 1445, 1446
Early ministers..... 1451
Saw-mills..... 1452
Iron works..... 1452
Ship-building..... 1452
ndians..... 1453
ilitary..... 1453
Revolution..... 1453
List of soldiers..... 1454
Resisting the French..... 1460
War of 1812..... 1462
Soldiers in the Rebellion..... 1465
hcraft (see also "Witchcraft")..... 1456
ches..... 1456
first Cong..... 1456
ocky Hill Ch..... 1456, (ill) 1458
hristian Baptist Soc..... 1458
nion Evang. Soc. of Amesbury. 1458
First Baptist..... 1458
Methodist Soc..... 1459
Schools..... 1459
Salisbury Point..... 1459
Frigate "Alliance"..... 1460
ns in Salisbury..... 1462
officers..... 1463
raphical..... 1468
ll, Leverett, 15, 109, 225, (ill) xxxiv
ll, Nathaniel..... xix
ll, Sir Richard, xvii, 628, (ill) 2128, 2012
Jacob..... 601
Thomas..... (ill) 2076
, George P..... 261
Aaron A..... (ill) 1817
Francis..... (ill) 1554

PAGE

Sargent, Jonathan B..... (ill) 1551
Sargent, Nathaniel P..... xxiv
Sargent, Patten..... (ill) 1550
Sargent, William..... 1501
Saugus..... 391
Situation..... 391
Boundaries..... 391
Area..... 391
Settlement..... 391
Population..... 391
Saugus Centre..... 392
Cliftondale..... 392
East Saugus..... 392
North Saugus..... 392
Oaklandvale..... 392
Geology..... 392
Town-meetings..... 393
Town house..... 393
Almshouse..... 393
Cemetery..... 393
New Town Hall..... 393
East Saugus set off..... 393
Water pipes..... 393
Town clerks..... 394
Representatives..... 394
Valuation and taxation..... 394
Post-office..... 394
Early settlers..... 394
Indians..... 394
Fish..... 394
Marches..... 394
Appleton's pulpit..... 395
Farms of a hundred years ago..... 396
Ecclesiastical:
Old Parish Church..... 399
First Methodist Church..... 403
Cliftondale Methodist Episcopal Church..... 405
Saugus Centre Methodist Episcopal Church..... 406
St. John's Mission..... 406
First Congregational Society, Clifton..... 407
Industries..... 407
Iron-works..... 407
Mill-site in East Saugus..... 409
Prankor's Mills..... 410
Scott's Mills..... 411
Cliftondale tobacco business..... 413
Crockery-ware..... 413
Shoe business..... 414
Grain-mill..... 415
Brick-making..... 415
Early taverns..... 415
Roads and bridges..... 416
Salem and Boston Turnpike..... 417
Newburyport Turnpike..... 417
Horse-railroads..... 418
Educational:
Private schools..... 419
Ladies' seminary..... 419
Public schools..... 419
Cliftondale Library..... 420
Free Public Library..... 420
Free Masonry..... 420
Sons of Temperance..... 420
Good Templars..... 420
Fire insurance companies..... 420
Agricultural..... 420
Military..... 420
War of the Rebellion..... 421
List of soldiers..... 421
Grand Army of Republic..... 422
Biographical..... 422
Saunders, Daniel..... 865
Saunders, Daniel, Jr..... 873

PAGE

Savage, Sarah..... 154
Sawyer, Benj..... (ill) 1458
Sawyer Library..... (ill) 1324
Sawyer, M..... 1753
Schools (see "educational" under towns.)
Science in Essex County..... lxxvi
Scott, A. A..... (ill) 21
Scott, George H..... 588
Scripture, James O..... 46
Searl, Joseph..... 381
Searl, Wm..... 816
Sewall, Samuel..... xviii, 1896
Sewall, Stephen..... xviii
Sewall, Thomas..... 1189
Saahan, T. H..... 57, 473
Shatswell, Nathaniel..... (ill) 669
Shaw, Edward P..... (ill) 1849
Shepard, Jeremiah..... 265
Shepard, Samuel..... 1136
Shepherd, James..... 602
Shepherd, James W..... 594
Sherman, Edgar T..... lvii
Sherratt, Hugh..... 1910
Short, Charles..... 2042
Silsbee, Mrs. M. A..... 153
Silsbee, Nathaniel..... 11, 111
Silsbee, Nathaniel, Jr..... 235
Simpson, Michael H..... 1815, (ill) 1783
Skelton, Rev. Samuel..... 29
Smiley, Jas. V..... (ill) 2069
Smith, Capt. John..... 2
Smith, Chas..... 1556, 1602
Smith, Chas. N..... 603
Smith, D. D..... 468
Smith, E. A..... 603
Smith, Elias..... 1176
Smith, James..... 1869
Smith, John..... (ill) 1648
Smith, Mathew H..... 56
Smith, Peter..... 1649, (ill) 1648
Snow, J. W..... 522
Sombery, Anthony..... 1716
Southgate, Frederick C..... 646
Southgate, Robert..... 587
Spalding, Samuel J..... (ill) 1834
Spalding, W. R..... 872
Sparhawk, John..... 36
Sparhawk, Nathaniel..... 379
Spaulding, Joshua..... 48
Spaulding, Joshua..... 52
Spaulding, N. S..... 601
Spencer, John..... 1716
Spofford, Paul..... (ill) 2058
Spofford, Richard S..... (ill) 1785
Spoffords, The..... 819, 820
Sprague, John J..... 1782
Sprague, Joseph E..... xxix
Sprague, Jos. G..... 143
Spring, Gardiner..... 1765
Springer, John S..... 601
Staodish, Miles..... 2
St. Ann's Roman Catholic Church..... (ill) 1319
Stanton, Robt..... 42
Stearns, Artemus W..... (ill) 928
Steere, M. D. F..... (ill) 1535
Stickney, Jeremiah..... c, xliv
Stiles, David..... 929, (ill) 959
St. James' Roman Catholic Church..... (ill) 2018
St. Mary's Roman Catholic Church..... (ill) 910
Stone, Ebenezer..... 1784
Stone, Thomas T..... 37
Storrow, Chas S..... 869
Story family..... 1208
Story, Joseph..... xxix, 139
Story, Wm. W..... liv, lvii, 16, 149
Streeter, Gilbert L..... 115

PAGE

1483
1634
1073
(ill) 1655
1472
option 1472
settlers 1474
Egg Rock 1481
Sea-serpent 1482
Military 1484
War of Rebellion 1484
"Strodehurst" 1483
Soldiers' monument 1484
Statistical 1485
Agricultural 1485
Manufactures 1485
Annals from 1629 to 1886 1486
Biographical 1490
Swan, A 775, 776
Swan, Robert 1940
Swett, John B 1767
Swett, Samuel lviii
Swinerton, Job 931
Symmes, Timothy 585
Symms, Wm 1579
Symms, Z 2089
Symonds, Samuel 578, 647

T.

Talbot, George 57
Tapley family 494
Tappan, Wm. H 1249
Tarbox family 310
Tarbox, John K xlv, 877
Tasker, John xviii
Taylor, John L 1601
Taylor, Samuel H 1649, (ill) 1678
Teeling, Arthur J (ill) 1844
Tenny, Daniel I 1781
Thatcher, Thomas C 267
Thayer, L. B 602
Thompson, Charles P liv
Thompson, Edwin 318
Thomps James W 59
Thorndike, Israel 709, (ill) 754
Thorndike, John 991
Thorndike, Wm. and Albert (ill) 761
Thurston, Jonathan 816
Thurston, Jos 1340
Tilton, Frederick W 1619
Titcomb, Albert C (ill) 1839
Titcomb, Enoch 1753
Titcomb, Jonathan 1750, 1755
Titcomb, Moses 1753
Todd, Francis 1769
Tolman, John B (ill) 365
Tolman, Richard 470
Toppan, Chas 1779, (ill) 1843
Toppan, Christopher 1718
Topsfield 972
First settlement 972
Topsfield named 972
Incorporation 973
Division and boundaries of 973
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft) 974
Victims of the delusion 974
Modes of punishment 974
Railroads 974
Early cemetery 974
Paupers 974
Odd Fellows 974
United Workmen 974
Fire Department 974
Town Hall 974
Clergymen 975
Lawyers 975

PAGE

Physicians 975
Church History 975
Ministers 976-7
Methodists 978
Military 979
First companies 979
War of Revolution 980
War for the Union 980
Companies and men in Civil War 981
Schools, libraries, etc 981
Social Library 981
Public Library 981
Business, manufacturing, etc 982
Distinguished natives 984
Members Legislature 984
Town officers 984
Torrey, Chas. T 53
Towne, Chas. A 59
Towne, Peter 932
Townsend, Daniel 383
Tracy, Cyrus M 318
Tracy, Nathaniel 1748
Tracy, P 1753
Trash, Richard 1294
Trask, Alfred (ill) 565
Trask, Wm 960, 992, 993
Treadwell, John 266
Trevett, Robert W xlv
Trevett, Samuel R 1085
Tucker, Ichabod xxix
Tucker, Jas. W 1139
Tudor, Frederick (ill) 1420
Tults, Gardiner 318
Tufts, Jno 1867
Tultar, David 593, 1138
Turner, Christopher 107
Turner, Edward 55
Turner, Nathaniel 293
Tyler, Jno. P 594
Tyng, Dudley A 1756

U.

Upham, Chas. W 26, 37, 143, 225
Upton, Elijah (ill) 1056
Upton, Elijah W 1057, (ill) 1056
Usher, Edwin P 319
Usher, Roland G 261

V

Varum, Jno xxx, 2011
Vaughan, John A 46
Verryn, Joshua 992
Very, Jones 16, 146
Vezina, F. X 57
Vinton, P. M 603
Voorhees, Louis B 60

W.

Wade, Nathaniel 618
Wade, Thos 628
Wadsworth, Benj 454
Wagner, Jesse 603
Wainwright, Francis 579
Wainwright, John xviii
Walcott, Josiah xviii
Walden, Edwin 261
Walker, Richard 393, 395
Walker, R. G (ill) 2056
Wall, Henry 508
Walley, John 589
Ward, John 1894, 1918
Ward, Joshua H xliv
Ward, Nathaniel li, 580, 771, 1894, 1907
Ware, Benj. P (ill) 1125
Warren, Jonas 553, (ill) 552
Warren, Orin (ill) 1891

Waters, Jos. G
Waters, Thos. F
Wayland, John
Webb, Daniel
Webb, Stephen P
Webb, Stephen P
Webster, Daniel
Webster, Jonathan
Webster, Josiah
Weed, John
Welsh, Francis
Welsh, Moses
Wenham
First settlement
General history
Settlers of 1700
Early burial-places
Physicians
Apothecaries
First railroads
Post-office
Town hall
Fire Department
Newspapers
Churches:
Early churches and r
Baptist Church
Military
Indian troubles
Revolutionary period
War of 1812
War of the Rebellion
Schools, libraries, etc
Business interests
Distinguished natives
List of Representatives
List of town officers
Wentworth, Philip H
West Newbury
Incorporation
Early ministers
Meeting-house
Town-meetings and officers
Representatives
Industries
Churches:
First religious movements
Methodists
Baptists
Catholics
Military
War Rebellion
Rosters of soldier
Old settlers
Biographical
Wetmore, Wm
Wheatland, Henry
Wheatland, Richard
Wheatland, Stephen
Wheeler, Jonathan
Wheelwright, Isaac W
Wheelwright, John
Wheelwright, Wm.
Whipple Edwin P
Whipple, Mathew
Whipple, Solomon
Whitaker, Geo
Whitaker, Nathaniel
White, Alden P
White, Daniel A 15, 14
White, Leonard
White, John
White, Wm
White, Wm
Whiting, Samuel
Whitten, Frank R

PAGE

522
1216
1917
(ill) 2070
1479
1212, 1213
1754
lix
53
61
xxvii
952
931
593
226
4. 20, 30, 136

PAGE

Williams, William... 52, 59
Williams, Winfield S 470
Willis, Lemuel 56
Willson, Edmund B 17, (ill) 51
Willson, Edmund B 51
Wingate, P 1536
Winthrop, Gov 2, 4, 5, 1153
Winthrop, John, Jr 577
Wise, Daniel 601
Wise, John 1162, 1180
Witchcraft, 34, 165e, 453, 629, 690, 931, 958, 995, 1067, 1186, 1456, 1562, 1685, 1714, 1965.
Withington, Leonard (ill) 1733
Witter, Wm 1474
Wood, Aaron 958
Wood, Daniel (ill) 971

Wood, Daniel...
Wood, Mrs. Kate T...
Wood, John
Wood, Wm.
Woodbridge, Benj
Woodbury, John
Woodbury family
Woodbury, John 682, 693
Woodbury, John P (ill) 373
Woodward, Thos 385
Woods, F 603
Woods, Leonard 1868
Worcester, Dr Saml 27, 28, 48, 140
Worcester, Samuel M 48, 142
Worcester, Wm 1451
Wright, E. C 472

SEP '68

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS
0 014 076 757 8